





THE WORKS OF  
WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE

EDITED BY  
WILLIAM GEORGE CLARK  
AND  
WILLIAM ALDIS WRIGHT

MACMILLAN & CO LTD

*First printed (Globe 8vo) 1864*  
*Reprinted January and October 1865, 1866, 1867, 1871*  
*Glossary added 1873, 1874, 1875, 1878, 1880, 1881, 1884, 1887*  
*New Glossary added 1891*  
*Reprinted (Crown 8vo) 1895, 1900, 1904, 1907*  
*New Edition 1911. Reprinted 1919, 1921, 1923, 1924, 1926,*  
*1928, 1930, 1934, 1938, 1949, 1953, 1956*

MACMILLAN AND COMPANY LIMITED  
*Bombay Calcutta Madras*

## PREFACE

IN preparing the text of this volume, we have in general followed the same rules as in the so-called 'Cambridge Shakespcare': rules which we adopted originally after much deliberation, and of which the soundness has been confirmed by our subsequent experience.

As however the two editions differ in plan, the one recording in foot-notes all the various readings and conjectural emendations, the other giving only the text, we have in some particulars modified our rules.

For instance, in cases where the text of the earliest editions is manifestly faulty, but where it is impossible to decide with confidence which, if any, of several suggested emendations is right, we have in the 'Cambridge Shakespeare' left the original reading in our text, mentioning in our notes all the proposed alterations: in this edition, we have substituted in the text the emendation which seemed most probable, or in cases of absolute equality, the earliest suggested. But the whole number of such variations between the texts of the two editions is very small.

In this volume, whenever the original text has been corrupted in such a way as to affect the sense, no admissible emendation having been proposed, or whenever a lacuna occurs too great to be filled up with any approach to certainty by conjecture, we have marked the passage with an obelus (†).

## PREFACE

As in the larger work, we have numbered the lines of each scene for convenience of reference.

In the stage directions we have preserved as far as we could, consistently with clearness, the language of the oldest texts.

The Glossary has been prepared by the Rev. J. M. Jephson.

We trust that the title which has been chosen for the present edition will neither be thought presumptuous nor be found inappropriate. It seems indeed safe to predict that any volume which presents, in a convenient form, with clear type and at a moderate cost, the complete works of the foremost man in all literature, the greatest master of the language most widely spoken among men, will make its way to the remotest corners of the habitable globe.

WILLIAM GEORGE CLARK  
WILLIAM ALDIS WRIGHT

TRINITY COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE

*November, 1864.*

In 1891 a new Glossary was added which was four times as large as the one originally prepared.

In revising the present edition for the press it was found desirable to retain the original numbering of the lines, so as not to disturb the references in the Glossary, Schmidt's Shakespeare Lexicon, and Bartlett's Concordance to Shakespeare.

W. A. W.

# CONTENTS

	PAGE
THE TEMPEST . . . . .	1
THE TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA . . . . .	23
THE MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR . . . . .	45
MEASURE FOR MEASURE . . . . .	71
THE COMEDY OF ERRORS . . . . .	98
MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING . . . . .	117
LOVE'S LABOUR'S LOST . . . . .	142
A MIDSUMMER-NIGHT'S DREAM . . . . .	169
THE MERCHANT OF VENICE . . . . .	190
AS YOU LIKE IT . . . . .	215
THE TAMING OF THE SHREW . . . . .	241
ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL . . . . .	267
TWELFTH NIGHT ; OR, WHAT YOU WILL . . . . .	295
THE WINTER'S TALE . . . . .	319
THE LIFE AND DEATH OF KING JOHN . . . . .	349
THE TRAGEDY OF KING RICHARD II. . . . .	375
THE FIRST PART OF KING HENRY IV. . . . .	403
THE SECOND PART OF KING HENRY IV. . . . .	432
THE LIFE OF KING HENRY V. . . . .	464
THE FIRST PART OF KING HENRY VI. . . . .	496
THE SECOND PART OF KING HENRY VI. . . . .	525
THE THIRD PART OF KING HENRY VI. . . . .	557
THE TRAGEDY OF KING RICHARD III. . . . .	589

	PAGE
THE FAMOUS HISTORY OF THE LIFE OF KING HENRY VIII.	628
TROILUS AND CRESSIDA . . . . .	660
CORIOLANUS . . . . .	694
TITUS ANDRONICUS . . . . .	730
ROMEO AND JULIET . . . . .	756
TIMON OF ATHENS . . . . .	787
JULIUS CÆSAR . . . . .	812
MACBETH . . . . .	837
HAMLET, PRINCE OF DENMARK . . . . .	861
KING LEAR . . . . .	890
OTHELLO, THE MOOR OF VENICE . . . . .	934
ANTONY AND CLEOPATRA . . . . .	964
CYMBELINE . . . . .	1003
PERICLES . . . . .	1036

## POEMS

VENUS AND ADONIS . . . . .	1063
THE RAPE OF LUCRECE . . . . .	1076
SONNETS . . . . .	1095
A LOVER'S COMPLAINT . . . . .	1117
THE PASSIONATE PILGRIM . . . . .	1121
SONNETS TO SUNDRY NOTES OF MUSIC . . . . .	1123
THE PHOENIX AND THE TURTLE . . . . .	1126
GLOSSARY . . . . .	1127

# THE TEMPEST

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

LONSO, King of Naples.  
 EBASTIAN, his brother.  
 ROSPERO, the right Duke of Milan.  
 ANTONIO, his brother, the usurping Duke of Milan.  
 FERDINAND, son to the King of Naples.  
 GONZALO, an honest old Counsellor.  
 ARIEL, } Lords.  
 BANCISCO, }  
 ALIBAN, a savage and deformed Slave.  
 RINCULO, a Jester.  
 TEPHANO, a drunken Butler.  
 Master of a Ship.

Boatswain.  
 Mariners.  
 MIRANDA, daughter to Prospero.  
 ARIEL, an airy Spirit.  
 IRIS,  
 CERES,  
 JUNO,  
 Nymphs,  
 Reapers, } presented by Spirits.

Other Spirits attending on Prospero.

SCENE—A ship at Sea: an island.

## ACT I

SCENE I. On a ship at sea: a tempestuous noise of thunder and lightning heard.

Enter a Ship-Master and a Boatswain.

Master. Boatswain!

Boats. Here, master: what cheer?

Master. Good, speak to the mariners: fall 't, yarely, or we run ourselves aground: bestir, stir. [Exit.

Enter Mariners.

Boats. Heigh, my hearts! cheerly, cheerly, y hearts! yare, yare! Take in the topmast, and to the master's whistle. Blow, till thou inst thy wind, if room enough!

Enter ALONSO, SEBASTIAN, ANTONIO, FERDINAND, GONZALO, and others.

Alon. Good boatswain, have care. Where's the master? Play the men. 11

Boats. I pray now, keep below.

Ant. Where is the master, boatswain?

Boats. Do you not hear him? You mariners labour: keep your cabins: you do assist the storm.

Gon. Nay, good, be patient.

Boats. When the sea is. Hence! What now these roarers for the name of king! To him: silence! trouble us not.

Gon. Good, yet remember whom thou hast heard. 12

Boats. None that I more love than myself. You are a counsellor; if you can command the elements to silence, and work the peace of the present, we will not hand a rope more: your authority: if you cannot, give thanks to your lives so long, and make yourself out in your cabin for the mischance of the hour, if it so hap. Cheerly, good hearts! Out your way, I say. [Exit.

Gon. I have great comfort from this fellow: methinks he hath no drowning mark upon him; his complexion is perfect gallows. Stand fast, good Fate, to his hanging: make the rope of his destiny our cable, for our own doth little advantage. If he be not born to be hanged, our case is miserable. [Recount.

Re-enter Boatswain.

Boats. Down with the topmast! yare! lower, lower! Bring her to try with main-course. [A cry within.] A plague upon this howling! they are louder than the weather or our office. 13

Re-enter SEBASTIAN, ANTONIO, and GONZALO. Yet again! what do you here? Shall we give o'er and drown? Have you a mind to sink?

Seb. A pox o' your throat, you bawling, blasphemous, incharitable dog!

Boats. Work you then.

Ant. Hang, cur! hang, you whoreson, insolent noisemaker! We are less afraid to be drowned than thou art.

Gon. I'll warrant him for drowning; though the ship were no stronger than a nutshell and as leaky as an unstanch'd wench. 14

Boats. Lay her a-hold, a-hold! set her two courses off to sea again; lay her off.

Enter Mariners wet.

Mariners. All lost! to prayers, to prayers! all lost!

Boats. What, must our mouths be cold?

Gon. The king and prince at prayers! let's assist them,

For our case is as theirs.

Seb. I'm out of patience.

Ant. We are merely cheated of our lives by drunkards:

This wide-chapp'd rascal—would thou mightst lie drowning 15

The washing of ten tides!

*Gon.* He'll be hang'd yet,  
Though every drop of water swear against it  
And gape at widest to glut him.

[*A confused noise within: 'Mercy on us!—  
'We split, we split!—'Farewell my wife and  
children!'*]

'Farewell, brother!—'We split, we split, we  
split!']

*Ant.* Let's all sink with the king.

*Seb.* Let's take leave of him.

[*Exeunt Ant. and Seb.*  
*Gon.* Now would I give a thousand furlongs  
of sea for an acre of barren ground, long heath,  
brown furze, any thing. The wills above be  
done! but I would fain die a dry death. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *The island. Before PROSPERO'S  
cell.*

*Enter PROSPERO and MIRANDA.*

*Mir.* If by your art, my dearest father, you  
have  
Put the wild waters in this roar, allay them.  
The sky, it seems, would pour down stinking  
pitch,  
But that the sea, mounting to the welkin's  
cheek,

Dashes the fire out. O, I have suffer'd  
With those that I saw suffer: a brave vessel,  
Who had, no doubt, some noble creature in her,  
Dash'd all to pieces. O, the cry did knock  
Against my very heart. Poor souls, they perish'd.  
Had I been any god of power, I would  
Have sunk the sea within the earth or ere  
It should the good ship so have swallow'd and  
The fraughting souls within her.

*Pros.* Be collected:  
No more amazement: tell your piteous heart  
There's no harm done.

*Mir.* O, woe the day!

*Pros.* No harm.  
I have done nothing but in care of thee,  
Of thee, my dear one, thee, my daughter, who  
Art ignorant of what thou art, nought knowing  
Of whence I am, nor that I am more better  
Than Prospero, master of a full poor cell,  
And thy no greater father.

*Mir.* More to know  
Did never meddle with my thoughts.

*Pros.* 'Tis time  
I should inform thee farther. Lend thy hand,  
And pluck my magic garment from me. So:  
[*Lays down his mantle.*  
Lie there, my art. Wipe thou thine eyes; have  
comfort.

The direful spectacle of the wreck, which touch'd  
The very virtue of compassion in thee,  
I have with such provision in mine art  
So safely ordered that there is no soul—  
No, not so much perdition as an hair  
Betid to any creature in the vessel  
Which thou hear'd'st cry, which thou saw'st sink.

Sit down;  
For thou must now know farther.

*Mir.* You have often  
Begun to tell me what I am, but stopp'd  
And left me to a bootless inquisition,

Concluding 'Stay: not yet.'

*Pros.* The hour is now come;  
The very minute bids thee ope thine ear;  
Obey and be attentive. Canst thou remember  
A time before we came unto this cell?

I do not think thou canst, for then thou wast  
not  
Out three years old.

*Mir.* Certainly, sir, I can.

*Pros.* By what? by any other house or person?  
Of any thing the image tell me that  
Hath kept with thy remembrance.

*Mir.* 'Tis far off

And rather like a dream than an assurance  
That my remembrance warrants. Had I not  
Four or five women once that tended me?

*Pros.* Thou hadst, and more, Miranda. But  
how is it

That this lives in thy mind? What seest thou  
else

In the dark backward and abysm of time? So  
If thou remember'st aught ere thou camest here,  
How thou camest here thou may'st.

*Mir.* But that I do not.  
*Pros.* Twelve year since, Miranda, twelve  
year since,

Thy father was the Duke of Milan and  
A prince of power.

*Mir.* Sir, are not you my father?  
*Pros.* Thy mother was a piece of virtue, and  
she said thou wast my daughter; and thy father  
Was Duke of Milan; and thou his only heir  
And princess no worse issued.

*Mir.* O the heavens!  
What foul play had we, that we came from  
thence? 60

Or blessed was't we did!

*Pros.* Both, both, my girl:  
By foul play, as thou say'st, were we heav'd  
thence,

But blessedly help hither.

*Mir.* O, my heart bleeds  
To think o' the teen that I have turn'd you to,  
Which is from my remembrance! Please you,  
farther.

*Pros.* My brother and thy uncle, call'd  
Antonio—

I pray thee, mark me—that a brother should  
Be so peridious!—he whom next himself  
Of all the world I lov'd and to him put  
The manage of my state; as at that time 70  
Through all the signories it was the first  
And Prospero the prime duke, being so reputed  
In dignity, and for the liberal arts  
Without a parallel; those being all my study.  
The government I cast upon my brother  
And to my state grew stranger, being transported  
And rapt in secret studies. Thy false uncle—  
Dost thou attend me?

*Mir.* Sir, most heedfully.

*Pros.* Being once perfected how to grant  
suits,

How to deny them, who to advance and who 80  
To trash for over-topping, new created  
The creatures that were mine, I say, or chang'd

'em,  
Or else new form'd 'em; having both the key  
Of officer and office, set all hearts i' the state



To what tune pleased his ear; that now he was  
The ivy which had hid my princely trunk,  
And suck'd my verdure out on't. Thou attend'st not.

*Mir.* O, good sir, I do.

*Pros.* I pray thee, mark me.  
I, thus neglecting worldly ends, all dedicated  
To closeness and the bettering of my mind 90  
With that which, but by being so retired,  
O'er-prized all popular rate, in my false brother  
Awaked an evil nature; and my trust,  
Like a good parent, did beget of him  
A falsehood in its contrary as great  
As my trust was; which had indeed no limit.  
A confidence sans bound. He being thus lorded,  
Not only with what my revenue yielded,  
But what my power might else exact, like one  
Who having into truth, by telling of it, 100  
Made such a sinner of his memory,  
To credit his own lie, he did believe  
He was indeed the duke; out o' the substitution,  
And executing the outward face of royalty,  
With all prerogative: hence his ambition grow-  
ing—

Dost thou hear?

*Mir.* Your tale, sir, would cure deafness.

*Pros.* To have no screen between this part  
he play'd

And him he play'd it for, he needs will be  
Absolute Milan. Me, poor man, my library  
Was dukedom large enough: of temporal  
royalties 110

He thinks me now incapable; confederates—  
So dry he was for sway—w' the King of Naples  
To give him annual tribute, do him homage,  
Subject his coronet to his crown and bend  
The dukedom yet unbow'd—alas, poor Milan!—  
To most ignoble stooping.

*Mir.* O the heavens!

*Pros.* Mark his condition and the event;  
then tell me

If this might be a brother.

*Mir.* I should sin  
To think but nobly of my grandmother:  
Good wombs have borne bad sons.

*Pros.* Now the condition. 120  
This King of Naples, being an enemy  
To me inveterate, hearkens my brother's suit;  
Which was, that he, in lieu o' the premises  
Of homage and I know not how much tribute,  
Should presently extirpate me and mine  
Out of the dukedom and confer fair Milan  
With all the honours on my brother: whereon  
A treacherous army levied, one midnight  
Ato'd to the purpose did Antonio open  
The gates of Milan, and, i' the dead of dark-  
ness, 13  
He ministers for the purpose hurried thence  
And thy crying self.

*Mir.* Alack, for pity!  
Not remembering how I cried out then,  
I'll cry it o'er again: it is a hint  
That wrings mine eyes to't.

*Pros.* Hear a little further:  
And then I'll bring thee to the present business  
Which now's upon's; without the which this  
story  
ere most impertinent.

*Mir.* Wherefore did they not  
That hour destroy us?

*Pros.* Well demanded, wench:  
My tale provokes that question. Dear, they  
durst not, 140

So dear the love my people bore me, nor set  
A mark so bloody on the business, but  
With colours fairer painted their foul ends.  
In few, they hurried us aboard a bark,  
Bore us some leagues to sea; where they pre-  
pared

A rotten carcass of a boat, not rigg'd,  
Nor tackle, sail, nor mast; the very rats  
Instinctively have quit it: there they hoist  
us,

To cry to the sea that roar'd to us, to sigh  
To the winds whose pity, sighing back again,  
Did us but loving wrong.

*Mir.* Alack, what trouble 151  
Was I then to you!

*Pros.* O, a cherubin  
Thou wast that did preserve me. Thou didst  
smile,

Infused with a fortitude from heaven,  
When I have deck'd the sea with drops full salt,  
Under my burthen groan'd; which raised in  
me

An undergoing stomach, to bear up  
Against what should ensue.

*Mir.* How came we ashore?

*Pros.* By Providence divine.  
Some food we had and some fresh water that  
A noble Neapolitan, Gonzalo, 161  
Out of his charity, who being then appointed  
Master of this design, did give us, with  
Rich garments, linens, stuffs and necessities,  
Which since have steaded much; so, of his  
gentleness,

Knowing I loved my books, he furnish'd me  
From mine own library with volumes that  
I prize above my dukedom.

*Mir.* Would I might  
But ever see that man!

*Pros.* Now I arise: [Resumes his mantle.  
Sit still, and hear the last of our sea-sorrow.  
Here in this island we arrived; and here 171  
Have I, thy schoolmaster, made thee more  
profit

Than other princesses can that have more time  
For vainer hours and tutors not so careful.

*Mir.* Heavens thank you for't! And now,  
I pray you, sir,

For still 'tis beating in my mind, your reason  
For raising this sea-storm!

*Pros.* Know thus far forth.  
By accident most strange, bountiful Fortune,  
Now my dear lady, hath mine enemies  
Brought to this shore; and by my prescience 181  
I find my zenith doth depend upon  
A most auspicious star, whose influence  
If now I court not but omit, my fortunes  
Will ever after droop. Here cease more ques-  
tions:

Thou art inclined to sleep; 'tis a good dulness,  
And give it way: I know thou canst not choose.

[Miranda sleeps.  
I am ready now.  
Approach, my Ariel, come.

*Enter ARIEL.*

*Ari.* All hail, great master! grave sir, hail!

I come  
To answer thy best pleasure; be't to fly, 190  
To swim, to dive into the fire, to ride  
On the curl'd clouds, to thy strong bidding task  
*Ariel* and all his quality.

*Pros.* Hast thou, spirit,  
Perform'd to point the tempest that I bade thee?

*Ari.* To every article.  
I boarded the king's ship; now on the beak,  
Now in the waist, the deck, in every cabin,  
I flamed amazement; sometime I'd divide,  
And burn in many places; on the topmast,  
The yards and bowsprit, would I flame distinctly,  
Then meet and join. Jove's lightnings, the  
precursors 201

O' the dreadful thunder-claps, more momentary  
And sight-outrunning were not; the fire and  
cracks

Of sulphurous roaring the most mighty Neptune  
Seem to besiege and make his bold waves  
tremble,

Yea, his dread trident shake.

*Pros.* My brave spirit!  
Who was so firm, so constant, that this coil  
Would not infect his reason?

*Ari.* Not a soul  
But felt a fever of the mad and play'd  
Some tricks of desperation. All but mariners  
Plunged in the foaming brine and quit the  
vessel, 211

Then all afire with me: the king's son, Ferdi-  
nand,

With hair up-staring,—then like reeds, not  
hair,—

Was the first man that leap'd; cried, 'Hell is  
empty,

And all the devils are here.'

*Pros.* Why, that's my spirit!  
But was not this nigh shore?

*Ari.* 'Tis close by, my master.

*Pros.* But are they, *Ariel*, safe?

*Ari.* Not a hair perish'd;  
On their sustaining garments not a blemish,  
But fresher than before; and, as thou lovest me,  
In troops I have dispersed them 'bout the isle.  
The king's son have I landed by himself; 221  
Whom I left cooling of the air with sighs  
In an odd angle of the isle and sitting,  
His arms in this sad knot.

*Pros.* Of the king's ship  
The mariners say how thou hast disposed  
And all the rest o' the fleet.

*Ari.* Safely in harbour  
Is the king's ship; in the deep nook, where  
once

Thou call'dst me up at midnight to fetch dew  
From the still-vex'd Bermoothes, there she's  
hid;

The mariners all under hatches stow'd; 230  
Who, with a charm join'd to their suffer'd  
labour,

I have left asleep: and for the rest o' the fleet  
Which I dispersed, they all have met again  
And are upon the Mediterranean fote,

Bound sadly home for Naples,  
Supposing that they saw the king's ship wreck'd

And his great person perish.

*Pros.* *Ariel*, thy charge  
Exactly is perform'd: but there's more work.  
What is the time o' the day?

*Ari.* Past the mid season.  
*Pros.* At least two glasses. The time 'twixt  
six and now 240

Must by us both be spent most preciously.

*Ari.* Is there more toil? Since thou dost  
give me pains,  
Let me remember thee what thou hast promised,  
Which is not yet perform'd me.

*Pros.* How now? moody?  
What is't thou canst demand?

*Ari.* My liberty.

*Pros.* Before the time be out? no more!

*Ari.* I prithee,  
Remember I have done thee worthy service;  
Told thee no lies, made thee no mistakings,  
served

Without or grudge or grumblings: thou didst  
promise

To bate me a full year.

*Pros.* Dost thou forget 250  
From what a torment I did free thee?

*Ari.* No.

*Pros.* Thou dost, and think'st it much to  
tread the ooze

Of the salt deep,

To run upon the sharp wind of the north,

To do me business in the veins o' the earth

When it is baked with frost.

*Ari.* I do not, sir.

*Pros.* Thou liest, malignant thing! Hast

thou forgot

The foul witch Sycorax, who with age and envy

Was grown into a hoop? hast thou forgot her?

*Ari.* No, sir.

*Pros.* Thou hast. Where was she born?

*Ari.* Sir, in Argier. 260

*Pros.* O, was she so? I must

Once in a month recount what thou hast been,

Which thou forget'st. This damn'd witch

Sycorax,

For mischiefs manifold and sorceries terrible

To enter human hearing, from Argier,

Thou know'st, was banish'd: for one thing she

did

They would not take her life. Is not this true?

*Ari.* Ay, sir.

*Pros.* This blue-eyed hag was hither brought

with child

And here was left by the sailors. Thou, my

slave, 270

As thou report'st thyself, wast then her servant;

And, for thou wast a spirit too delicate

To act her earthy and abhor'd commands,

Refusing her grand hests, she did confine thee

By help of her more potent ministers

And in her most unmitigable rage,

Into a cloven pine; within which rift

Imprison'd thou didst painfully remain

A dozen years; within which space she died

And left thee there; where thou didst vent thy

groans 280

As fast as mill-wheels strike. Then was this

island—

Save for the son that she did litter here,  
A freckled whelp hag-born—not honour'd with  
A human shape.

*Ari.* Yes, Caliban her son.

*Pros.* Dull thing, I say so; he, that 'Caliban  
Whom now I keep in service. Thou best  
know'st

What torment I did find thee in; thy groans  
Did make wolves howl and penetrate the breasts  
(If ever angry hears: it was a torment  
To lay upon the damn'd, which Sycorax 290  
Could not again undo; it was mine art,  
When I arrived and heard thee, that made gape  
The pine and let thee out.

*Ari.* I thank thee, master.

*Pros.* If thou more murmur'st, I will rend  
an oak

And peg thee in his knotty entrails till  
Thou hast howl'd away twelve winters.

*Ari.* Pardon, master;  
I will be correspondent to command  
And do my spiriting gently.

*Pros.* Do so, and after two days  
I will discharge thee.

*Ari.* That's my noble master!  
What shall I do? say what; what shall I do!

*Pros.* Go make thyself like a nymph o' the  
sea: be subject 301

To no sight but thine and mine, invisible  
To every eyeball else. Go take this shape  
And hither come in 't: go, hence with diligence!

[*Exit Ariel.*]  
Awake, dear heart, awake! thou hast slept well;  
Awake!

*Mir.* The strangeness of your story put  
Heaviness in me.

*Pros.* Shake it off. Come on;  
We'll visit Caliban my slave, who never  
Yields us kind answer.

*Mir.* 'Tis a villain, sir,  
I do not love to look on.

*Pros.* But, as 'tis, 310  
We cannot miss him: he does make our fire,  
Fetch in our wood and serves in offices  
That profit us. What, ho! slave! Caliban!  
Thou earth, thou! speak.

*Cal.* [Within] There's wood enough within.

*Pros.* Come forth, I say! there's other busi-  
ness for thee:

Come, thou tortoise! when?

*Re-enter ARIEL like a water-nymph.*

Fine apparition! My quaint Ariel,  
Hark in thine ear.

*Ari.* My lord, it shall be done. [*Exit.*]

*Pros.* Thou poisonous slave, got by the devil  
himself  
Upon thy wicked dam, come forth! 320

*Enter CALIBAN.*

*Cal.* As wicked dew as e'er my mother  
brush'd  
With raven's feather from unwholesome fen  
Drop on you both! a south-west blow on ye  
And blister you all o'er!

*Pros.* For this, be sure, to-night thou shalt  
have cramps,

Side-stitches that shall pen thy breath up;  
urchins

Shall, for that vast of night that they may work,  
All exercise on thee; thou shalt be pinch'd  
As thick as honeycomb, each pinch more  
stinging

Than bees that made 'em.

*Cal.* I must eat my dinner. 330

This island's mine, by Sycorax my mother,  
Which thou takest from me. When thou  
camest first,

Thou strok'dst me and madest much of me,  
wouldst give me

Water with berries in 't, and teach me how  
To name the bigger light, and how the less,  
That burn by day and night: and then I loved thee  
And show'd thee all the qualities o' the isle,  
The fresh springs, brine-pits, barren place and  
fertile;

Curs'd be I that did so! All the charms  
(Of Sycorax, toads, beetles, bats, light on you!  
For I am all the subjects that you have, 341  
Which first was mine own king: and here you  
sty me

In this hard rock, whilst you do keep from me  
The rest o' the island.

*Pros.* Thou most lying slave,  
Whom stripes may move, not kindness! I have  
used thee,

Filth as thou art, with human care, and lodg'd  
thee

In mine own cell, till thou didst seek to violate  
The honour of my child.

*Cal.* O ho, O ho! would't had been done!  
Thou didst prevent me; I had peopled else 350  
This isle with Calibans.

*Pros.* Abhorred slave,  
Which any print of goodness wilt not take,  
Being capable of all ill! I pitied thee,  
Took pains to make thee speak, taught thee  
each hour

One thing or other: when thou didst not, savage,  
Know thine own meaning, but wouldst gabble  
like

A thing most brutish, I endow'd thy purposes  
With words that made them known. But thy  
vile race,

Though thou didst learn, had that in 't which  
good natures

Could not abide to be with; therefore wast thou  
Deservedly confined into this rock, 361  
Who hast deserved more than a prison.

*Cal.* You taught me language; and my  
profit on 't

Is, I know how to curse. The red plague rid you  
For learning me your language!

*Pros.* Hag-seed, hence!  
Fetch us in fuel; and be quick, thou't best,  
To answer other business. Shrug'st thou, malice!  
If thou neglect'st or dost unwillingly  
What I command, I'll rack thee with old cramps,  
Fill all thy bones with aches, make thee roar 370  
That beasts shall tremble at thy din.

*Cal.* No, pray thee.  
[*Aside.*] I must obey: his art is of such power,  
It would control my dam's god, Setebos,  
And make a vessel of him.

*Pros.* So, slave; hence! [*Exit Caliban.*]

*Re-enter ARIEL, invisible, playing and singing; FERDINAND following.*

*ARIEL's song.*

Come unto these yellow sands,

And then take hands;

Courtied when you have and kiss'd

The wild waves whist,

Foot it feately here and there;

And, sweet sprites, the burthen bear.

*Burthen [disperedly].* Hark, hark!

Bow-wow.

The watch-dogs bark:

Bow-wow.

*Ari.* Hark, hark! I hear

The strain of strutting chanticleer

Cry, Cock-a-diddle-dow.

*Fer.* Where should this music be? 't' the air or the earth?

It sounds no more; and, sure, it waits upon  
Some god o' the island. Sitting on a bank,  
Weeping again the king my father's wreck,  
This music crept by me upon the waters,  
Allaying both their fury and my passion  
With its sweet air: thence I have follow'd it,  
Or it hath drawn me rather. But 'tis gone.  
No, it begins again.

*ARIEL sings.*

Full fathom five thy father lies;

Of his bones are coral made;

Those are pearls that were his eyes:

Nothing of him that doth fade

But doth suffer a sea-change

Into something rich and strange.

Sea-nymphs hourly ring his knell:

*Burthen.* Ding-dong.

*Ari.* Hark! now I hear them,—Ding-dong, bell.

*Fer.* The ditty does remember my drown'd father.

This is no mortal business, nor no sound  
That the earth owes. I hear it now above me.

*Pros.* The fringed curtains of thine eye advance

And say what thou seest yond.

*Mir.* What is 't? a spirit?

Lord, how it looks about! Believe me, sir,  
It carries a brave form! But 'tis a spirit.

*Pros.* No, wench; it eats and sleeps and  
hath such senses

As we have, such. This gallant which thou  
seest

Was in the wreck; and, but he's something  
stain'd

With grief that 's beauty's canker, thou might'st  
call him

A goodly person: he hath lost his fellows

And strays about to find 'em.

*Mir.* I might call him

A thing divine, for nothing natural

I ever saw so noble.

*Pros.* [Aside] It goes on, I see,

As my soul prompts it. Spirit, fine spirit! I'll  
free thee

Within two days for this.

*Fer.* Most sure, the goddess  
On whom these airs attend! Vouchsafe my  
prayer

May know if you remain upon this island;

And that you will some good instruction give

How I may bear me here: my prime request,

Which I do last pronounce, is, O you wonder!

If you be maid or no!

*Mir.* No wonder, sir;

But certainly a maid.

*Fer.* My language! heavens!

I am the best of them that speak this speech,

Were I but where 'tis spoken!

*Pros.* How! the best? 430

What wert thou, if the King of Naples heard  
thee?

*Fer.* A single thing, as I am now, that  
wonders

To hear thee speak of Naples. He does hear me;

And that he does I weep: myself am Naples,

Who with mine eyes, never since at ebb, beheld

The king my father wreck'd.

*Mir.* Alack, for mercy!

*Fer.* Yes, faith, and all his lords; the Duke  
of Milan

And his brave son being twain.

*Pros.* [Aside] The Duke of Milan

And his more braver daughter could control thee,

If now 'twere fit to do't. At the first sight 440

They have changed eyes. Delicate Ariel,

I'll set thee free for this. [To *Fer.*] A word,  
good sir;

I fear you have done yourself some wrong: a  
word.

*Mir.* Why speaks my father so ungently?

This

Is the third man that e'er I saw, the first

That e'er I sigh'd for: pity move my father

To be inclin'd my way!

*Fer.* O, if a virgin,  
And your affection not gone forth, I'll make you  
The queen of Naples.

*Pros.* Soft, sir! one word more.

[Aside] They are both in either's powers; but  
this swift business 450

I must uneasy make, lest too light winning  
Make the prize light. [To *Fer.*] One word

more; I charge thee

That thou attend me: thou dost here usurp

The name thou owest not; and hast put thyself

Upon this island as a spy, to win it

From me, the lord on't.

*Fer.* No, as I am a man.

*Mir.* There's nothing ill can dwell in such a  
temple:

If the ill spirit have so fair a house,  
Good things will strive to dwell with't.

*Pros.* Follow me.

Speak not you for him; he's a traitor. Come;

I'll manacle thy neck and feet together:

Sea-water shalt thou drink; thy food shall be

The fresh-brook muscles, wither'd roots and  
husks

Wherein the acorn cradled. Follow.

*Fer.* No;

I will resist such entertainment till

Mine enemy has more power.

[Draws, and is charmed from moving.]

*Mir.* O dear father,  
Make not too rash a trial of him, for  
He's gentle and not fearful.

*Pros.* What! I say,  
My foot my tutor? Put thy sword up, traitor;  
Who makest a show but darest not strike, thy  
conscience 470

Is so possess'd with guilt: come from thy ward,  
For I can here disarm thee with this stick  
And make thy weapon drop.

*Mir.* Beseech you, father.

*Pros.* Hence! hang not on my garments.

*Mir.* Sir, have pity;  
I'll be his surety.

*Pros.* Silence! one word more  
Shall make me chide thee, if not hate thee.

What!

An advocate for an impostor! hush!  
Thou think'st there is no more such shapes as he,  
Having seen but him and Caliban: foolish  
wench!

To the most of men this is a Caliban 480  
And they to him are angels.

*Mir.* My affections  
Are then most humble; I have no ambition  
To see a goodlier man.

*Pros.* Come on; obey:  
Thy nerves are in their infancy again  
And have no vigour in them.

*Fer.* So they are;  
My spirits, as in a dream, are all bound up.  
My father's loss, the weakness which I feel,  
The wreck of all my friends, nor this man's  
threats,

To whom I am subdu'd, are but light to me,  
Might I but through my prison once a day 490  
Behold this maid: all corners else o' the earth  
Let liberty make use of; space enough  
Have I in such a prison.

*Pros.* [*Aside*] It works. [*To Fer.*] 'Come on.  
Thou hast done well, fine Ariel! [*To Fer.*]  
Follow me.

[*To Ari.*] Hark what thou else shalt do me.  
*Mir.* Be of comfort;

My father's of a better nature, sir,  
Than he appears by speech: this is unwonted  
Which now came from him.

*Pros.* Thou shalt be as free  
As mountain winds: but then exactly do  
All points of my command.

*Ari.* To the syllable. 500

*Pros.* Come, follow. Speak not for him.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

## SCENE I. Another part of the island.

Enter ALONSO, SEBASTIAN, ANTONIO, GON-  
ZALO, ADRIAN, FRANCISCO, and others.

*Gon.* Beseech you, sir, be merry; you have  
cause,

So have we all, of joy; for our escape  
Is much beyond our loss. Our hint of woe  
Is common; every day some sailor's wife,  
The masters of some merchant and the merchant  
Have just our theme of woe; but for the miracle,  
I mean our preservation, few in millions  
Can speak like us: then wisely, good sir, weigh  
Our sorrow with our comfort.

*Alon.* Prithce, peace.

*Seb.* He receives comfort like cold porridge.

*Ant.* The visitor will not give him o'er so. 11

*Seb.* Look, he's winding up the watch of his  
wit; by and by it will strike.

*Gon.* Sir,—

*Seb.* One: tell.

*Gon.* When every grief is entertain'd that's  
offer'd,

Comes to the entertainer—

*Seb.* A dollar.

*Gon.* Dolour comes to him, indeed: you have  
spoken truer than you purposed. 20

*Seb.* You have taken it wiselier than I meant  
you should.

*Gon.* Therefore, my lord,—

*Ant.* Fie, what a spendthrift is he of his  
tongue!

*Alon.* I prithee, spare.

*Gon.* Well, I have done: but yet,—

*Seb.* He will be talking.

*Ant.* Which, of he or Adrian, for a good  
wager, first begins to crow!

*Seb.* The old cock. 30

*Ant.* The cockerel.

*Seb.* Done. The wager!

*Ant.* A laughter.

*Seb.* A match!

*Adr.* Though this island seem to be desert,—

*Seb.* Ha, ha, ha! So, you're paid.

*Adr.* Uninhabitable and almost inacces-  
sible.—

*Seb.* Yet,—

*Adr.* Yet,—

*Ant.* He could not miss't. 40

*Adr.* It must needs be of subtle, tender and  
delicate temperance.

*Ant.* Temperance was a delicate wench.

*Seb.* Ay, and a subtle; as he most learnedly  
delivered.

*Adr.* The air breathes upon us here most  
sweetly.

*Seb.* As if it had lungs and rotten ones.

*Ant.* Or as 'twere perfumed by a fen.

*Gon.* Here is every thing advantageous to life.

*Ant.* True; save means to live. 50

*Seb.* Of that there's none, or little.

*Gon.* How lush and lusty the grass looks!  
how green!

*Ant.* The ground indeed is tawny.

*Seb.* With an eye of green in't.

*Ant.* He misses not much.

*Seb.* No; he doth but mistake the truth  
totally.

*Gon.* But the rarity of it is,—which is indeed  
almost beyond credit.—

*Seb.* As many vouch'd rarities are. 60

*Gon.* That our garments, being, as they were,  
drenched in the sea, hold notwithstanding their  
freshness and glosses, being rather new-dyed  
than stained with salt water.

*Ant.* If but one of his pockets could speak,  
would it not say he lies!

*Seb.* Ay, or very falsely pocket up his report.

*Gon.* Methinks our garments are now as  
fresh as when we put them on first in Afric, at  
the marriage of the king's fair daughter Claribel  
to the King of Tunis. 70

*Seb.* 'Twas a sweet marriage, and we prosper well in our return.

*Adr.* Tunis was never graced before with such a paragon to their queen.

*Gon.* Not since widow Dido's time.

*Ant.* Widow! a pox o' that! How came that widow in? widow Dido!

*Seb.* What if he had said 'widower Aeneas' too! Good Lord, how you take it!

*Adr.* 'Widow Dido' said you! you make no study of that: she was of Carthage, not of Tunis.

*Gon.* This Tunis, sir, was Carthage.

*Adr.* Carthage?

*Gon.* I assure you, Carthage.

*Seb.* His word is more than the miraculous harp; he hath raised the wall and houses too.

*Ant.* What impossible matter will he make easy next?

*Seb.* I think he will carry this island home in his pocket and give it his son for an apple.

*Ant.* And, sowing the kernels of it in the sea, bring forth more islands.

*Gon.* Ay.

*Ant.* Why, in good time.

*Gon.* Sir, we were talking that our garments seem now as fresh as when we were at Tunis at the marriage of your daughter, who is now queen.

*Ant.* And the rarest that e'er came there.

*Seb.* Bate, I beseech you, widow Dido.

*Ant.* O, widow Dido! ay, widow Dido.

*Gon.* Is not, sir, my doublet as fresh as the first day I wore it? I mean, in a sort.

*Ant.* That sort was well fished for.

*Gon.* When I wore it at your daughter's marriage?

*Alon.* You cram these words into mine ears against

The stomach of my sense. Would I had never Married my daughter there! for, coming thence, My son is lost and, in my rate, she too,

Who is so far from Italy removed  
I ne'er again shall see her. O thou mine heir  
Of Naples and of Milan, what strange fish  
Hath made his meal on thee?

*Fran.*

Sir, he may live:  
I saw him beat the surges under him,  
And ride upon their backs; he trod the water,  
Whose enmity he flung aside, and breasted  
The surge most swollen that met him; his bold  
head

'Bove the contentious waves he kept, and oar'd  
Himself with his good arms in lusty stroke  
To the shore, that o'er his wave-worn basis bow'd,  
As stooping to relieve him: I not doubt  
He came alive to land.

*Alon.*

No, no, he's gone.  
*Seb.* Sir, you may thank yourself for this  
great loss,

That would not bless our Europe with your  
daughter,

But rather lose her to an African;  
Where she at least is banish'd from your eye,  
Who hath cause to wet the grief on't.

*Alon.*

Prithee, peace.  
*Seb.* You were kneel'd to and importuned  
otherwise

By all of us, and the fair soul herself  
Weigh'd between loathness and obedience, at

Which end o' the beam should bow. We have  
lost your son,

I fear, for ever: Milan and Naples have  
Moe widows in them of this business making  
Than we bring men to comfort them:

The fault's your own.

*Alon.*

So is the dear'st o' the loss.  
*Gon.* My lord Sebastian,

The truth you speak doth lack some gentleness  
And time to speak it in: you rub the sore,  
When you should bring the plaster.

*Seb.*

Very well.  
*Ant.* And most chirurgically.

*Gon.* It is foul weather in us all, good sir,  
When you are cloudy.

*Seb.*

Foul weather?  
*Ant.* Very foul.

*Gon.* Had I plantation of this isle, my lord,—  
*Ant.* He'd sow't with nettle-seed.

*Seb.*

Or docks, or mallows.  
*Gon.* And were the king on't, what would I  
do?

*Seb.*

'Scape being drunk for want of wine.  
*Gon.* I the commonwealth I would by con-  
traries

Execute all things; for no kind of traffic  
Would I admit; no name of magistrate;

Letters should not be known; riches, poverty,  
And use of service, none; contract, succession,  
Bourn, bound of land, tilth, vineyard, none;

No use of metal, corn, or wine, or oil;  
No occupation; all men idle, all;

And women too; but innocent and pure;  
No sovereignty:—

*Seb.*

Yet he would be king on't.  
*Ant.* The latter end of his commonwealth  
forgets the beginning.

*Gon.* All things in common nature should  
produce

Without sweat or endeavour: treason, felony,  
Sword, pike, knife, gun, or need of any engine,  
Would I not have; but nature should bring forth,  
Of it own kind, all fowl, all abundance,

To feed my innocent people.

*Seb.*

No marrying among his subjects?  
*Ant.* None, man; all idle whores and  
knaves.

*Gon.* I would with such perfection govern,  
sir,

To excel the golden age.

*Seb.*

God save his majesty!  
*Ant.* Long live Gonzalo!

*Gon.* And,—do you mark me, sir?  
*Alon.* Prithee, no more: thou dost talk no  
thing to me.

*Gon.* I do well believe your highness; and  
did it to minister occasion to these gentlemen,  
who are of such sensible and nimble lungs that  
they always use to laugh at nothing.

*Ant.*

'Twas you we laughed at.  
*Gon.* Who in this kind of merry fooling am  
nothing to you; so you may continue and laugh  
at nothing still.

*Ant.*

What a blow was there given!  
*Seb.* An it had not fallen flat-long.

*Gon.* You are gentlemen of brave mettle;  
you would lift the moon out of her sphere, if she  
would continue in it five weeks without changing.

*Enter ARIEL, invisible, playing solemn music.*

*Seb.* We would so, and then go a bat-fowling.

*Ant.* Nay, good my lord, be not angry.

*Gon.* No, I warrant you; I will not adventure my discretion so weakly. Will you laugh me asleep, for I am very heavy?

*Ant.* Go sleep, and hear us. 190

[*All sleep except Alon., Seb., and Ant.*]

*Alon.* What, all so soon asleep! I wish mine eyes

Would, with themselves, shut up my thoughts: I find

They are inclined to do so.

*Seb.* Please you, sir,

Do not omit the heavy offer of it; It seldom visits sorrow; when it doth, it is a comforter.

*Ant.* We two, my lord,

Will guard your person while you take your rest, And watch your safety.

*Alon.* Thank you. Wondrous heavy.

[*Alonso sleeps. Exit Ariel.*]

*Seb.* What a strange drowsiness possesses them! 199

*Ant.* It is the quality o' the climate.

*Seb.* Why

Doth it not then our eyelids sink? I find not Myself disposed to sleep.

*Ant.* Nor I; my spirits are nimble.

They fell together all, as by consent; They dropp'd, as by a thunder-stroke. What might,

Worthy Sebastian? O, what might!—No more:— And yet methinks I see it in thy face, What thou shouldst be: the occasion speaks there, and

My strong imagination sees a crown Dropping upon thy head.

*Seb.* What, art thou waking?

*Ant.* Do you not hear me speak?

*Seb.* I do; and surely

It is a sleepy language and thou speak'st 211 Out of thy sleep. What is it thou didst say?

This is a strange repose, to be asleep With eyes wide open; standing, speaking, moving,

And yet so fast asleep.

*Ant.* Noble Sebastian,

Thou let'st thy fortune sleep—die, rather; wink'st

While thou art waking.

*Seb.* Thou dost snore distinctly; There's meaning in thy snores.

*Ant.* I am more serious than my custom: you Must be so too, if heed me; which to do 220 Trebles thee o'er.

*Seb.* Well, I am standing water.

*Ant.* I'll teach you how to flow.

*Seb.* Do so: to ebb

Hereditary sloth instructs me.

*Ant.* O,

If you but knew how you the purpose cherish Whiles thus you mock it! how, in stripping it, You more invest it! Ebbing men, indeed, 230 Most often do so near the bottom run By their own fear or sloth.

*Seb.* Prithce, say on:

The setting of thine eye and cheek proclaim A matter from thee, and a birth indeed Which throes thee much to yield.

*Ant.* Thus, sir:

Although this lord of weak remembrance, this, Who shall be of as little memory When he is earth'd, hath here almost persuaded,—

For he's a spirit of persuasion, only Professes to persuade,—the king his son's alive, 'Tis as impossible that he's undrown'd As he that sleeps here swims.

*Seb.* I have no hope

That he's undrown'd.

*Ant.* O, out of that 'no hope'

What great hope have you! no hope that way is 240

Another way so high a hope that even Ambition cannot pierce a wink beyond, But doubt discovery there. Will you grant with me

That Ferdinand is drown'd?

*Seb.* He's gone.

*Ant.* Then, tell me,

Who's the next heir of Naples?

*Seb.* Claribel.

*Ant.* She that is queen of Tunis; she that dwells

Ten leagues beyond man's life; she that from Naples

Can have no note, unless the sun were post— The man if the moon's too slow—till new-born chins

Be rough and razorable; she that—from whom? We all were sea-swallow'd, though some cast

again, 251

And by that destiny to perform an act Whereof what's past is prologue, what to come In yours and my discharge.

*Seb.* What stuff is this! how say you? 'Tis true, my brother's daughter's queen of

Tunis;

So is she heir of Naples; 'twixt which regions There is some space.

*Ant.* A space whose every cubit Seems to cry out, 'How shall that Claribel Measure us back to Naples? Keep in Tunis,

And let Sebastian wake.' Say, this were death That now hath seized them; why, they were no

worse 261

Than now they are. There be that can rule Naples

As well as he that sleeps; lords that can prate As amply and unnecessarily

As this Gonzalo; I myself could make A chough of as deep chat. O, that you bore

The mind that I do! what a sleep were this For your advancement! Do you understand

me?

*Seb.* Methinks I do.

*Ant.* And how does your content Tender your own good fortune?

*Seb.* I remember 270 You did supplant your brother Prospero.

*Ant.* True:

And look how well my garments sit upon me: Much fester than before: my brother's servants Were then my fellows; now they are my men.

Seb. But, for your conscience?

Ant. Ay, sir; where lies that? if 'twere a kibe,

'Twould put me to my slipper: but I feel not this dcity in my bosom: twenty consciences, That stand 'twixt me and Milan, candied be they

And melt ere they molest! Here lies your brother,

No better than the earth he lies upon, If he were that which now he's like, that's dead; Whom I, with this obedient steel, three inches of it,

Can lay to bed for ever; whiles you, doing thus, To the perpetual wink for aye might put This ancient morsel, this Sir Prudence, who Should not upbraid our course. For all the rest,

They'll take suggestion as a cat laps milk; They'll tell the clock to any business that We say befits the hour.

Seb. Thy case, dear friend, Shall be my precedent; as thou got'st Milan, I'll come by Naples. Draw thy sword: one stroke

Shall free thee from the tribute which thou payest;

And I the king shall love thee.

Ant. Draw together;

And when I rear my hand, do you the like,

To fall it on Gonzalo.

Seb. O, but one word. [They talk apart.]

*Re-enter ARIEL, invisible.*

Ari. My master through his art foresees the danger

That you, his friend, are in; and sends me forth—

For else his project dies—to keep them living.

[Sings in Gonzalo's ear.]

While you here do snoring lie, 300

Open-eyed conspiracy

His time doth take.

If of life you keep a care,

Shake off slumber, and beware:

Awake, awake!

Ant. Then let us both be sudden.

Gon. Now, good angels Preserve the king. [They wake.]

Alon. Why, how now? ho, awake! Why are you drawn?

Wherefore this ghastly looking?

Gon. What's the matter?

Seb. Whiles we stood here securing your repose, 320

Even now, we heard a hollow hurst of bellowing Like bulls, or rather lions: did't not wake you? It struck mine ear most terribly.

Alon. I heard nothing.

Ant. O, 'twas a din to fright a monster's ear,

To make an earthquake! sure, it was the roar Of a whole herd of lions.

Alon. Heard you this, Gonzalo?

Gon. Upon mine honour, sir, I heard a humming,

And that a strange one too, which did awake me:

I shaked you, sir, and cried: as mine eyes open'd,

I saw their weapons drawn: there was a noise, That's verily. 'Tis best we stand upon our guard,

Or that we quit this place: let's draw our weapons.

Alon. Lead off this ground; and let's make further search

For my poor son.

Gon. Heavens keep him from these beasts! For he is, sure, i' the island.

Alon. Lead away.

Ari. Prospero my lord shall know what I have done:

So, king, go safely on to seek thy son. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II. *Another part of the island.*

*Enter CALIBAN with a burden of wood. A noise of thunder heard.*

Cal. All the infections that the sun sucks up From bogs, fens, flats, on Prosper fall and make him

By inch-meal a disease! His spirits bear me And yet I needs must curse. But they'll nor

pinch, Fright me with urchin-shows, pitch me i' the mire,

Nor lead me, like a firebrand, in the dark (out of my way, unless he bid 'em); but

For every trifle are they set upon me; Sometime like apes that mow and chatter at me

And after bite me, then like hedgehogs which Lie tumbling in my barefoot way and mount

Their prickles at my footfall; sometime am I All wound with adders who with cloven tongues

Do hiss me into madness.

*Enter TRINCULO.*

Lo, now, lo!

Here comes a spirit of his, and to torment me For bringing wood in slowly. I'll fall flat;

Perchance he will not mind me.

Trin. Here's neither bush nor shrub, to bear off any weather at all, and another storm brewing; I hear it sing i' the wind: yond same black

cloud, yond huge one, looks like a foul bombard that would shed his liquor. If it should

thunder as it did before, I know not where to hide my head: yond same cloud cannot choose

but fall by painfuls. What have we here? a man or a fish? dead or alive? A fish: he

smells like a fish; a very ancient and fish-like smell; a kind of not of the newest Poor-John.

A strange fish! Were I in England now, as once I was, and had but this fish painted, not

a holiday fool there but would give a piece of silver: there would this monster make a man;

any strange beast there makes a man: when they will not give a doit to relieve a lame

beggar, they will lay out ten to see a dead Indian. Legged like a man! and his fins like

arms! Warm o' my troth! I do now let loose my opinion; hold it no longer: this is no fish,

but an islander, that hath lately suffered by a thunderbolt. [Thunder.] Alas, the storm is



come again! my best way is to creep under his gaberdine; there is no other shelter hereabout: misery acquaints a man with strange bed-fellows. I will here shroud till the dregs of the storm be past.

*Enter STEPHANO, singing: a bottle in his hand.*

*Ste.* I shall no more to sea, to sea,  
Here shall I die ashore—

This is a very scurvy tune to sing at a man's funeral: well, here's my comfort. [*Drinks.*]  
[*Sings.*

The master, the swabber, the boatswain and I,  
The gunner and his mate  
Loved Mall, Meg and Marian and Margery,  
But none of us cared for Kate; 51  
For she had a tongue with a tang,  
Would cry to a sailor, Go hang!  
She loved not the savour of tar nor of pitch,  
Yet a tailor might scratch her where'er she  
did itch:

Then to sea, boys, and let her go hang!

This is a scurvy tune too: but here's my comfort. [*Drinks.*

*Cal.* Do not torment me: Oh!

*Ste.* What's the matter? Have we devils here? Do you put tricks upon's with savages and men of Ind, ha? I have not 'scaped drowning to be afraid now of your four legs; for it hath been said, As proper a man as ever went on four legs cannot make him give ground; and it shall be said so again while Stephano breathes at nostrils.

*Cal.* The spirit torments me: Oh!

*Ste.* This is some monster of the isle with four legs, who hath got, as I take it, an ague. Where the devil should he learn our language? I will give him some relief, if it be but for that. If I can recover him and keep him tame and get to Naples with him, he's a present for any emperor that ever trod on neat's-leather.

*Cal.* Do not torment me, prithee; I'll bring my wood home faster.

*Ste.* He's in his fit now and does not talk after the wisest. He shall taste of my bottle: if he have never drunk wine afore, it will go near to remove his fit. If I can recover him and keep him tame, I will not take too much for him; he shall pay for him that hath him, and that soundly.

*Cal.* Thou dost me yet but little hurt; thou wilt anon, I know it by thy trembling: now Prosper works upon thee.

*Ste.* Come on your ways; open your mouth; here is that which will give language to you, eat: open your mouth; this will shake your shaking, I can tell you, and that soundly: you cannot tell who's your friend: open your chaps again. 89

*Trin.* I should know that voice: it should be—but he is drowned; and these are devils: O defend me!

*Ste.* Four legs and two voices: a most delicate monster! His forward voice now is to speak well of his friend; his backward voice is to utter foul speeches and to detract. If all

the wine in my bottle will recover him, I will help him ague. Come. Amen! I will pour some in thy other mouth.

*Trin.* Stephano!

*Ste.* Doth thy other mouth call me? Mercy, mercy! This is a devil, and no monster: I will leave him; I have no long spoon.

*Trin.* Stephano! If thou beest Stephano, touch me and speak to me; for I am Trinculo—be not afraid—thy good friend Trinculo.

*Ste.* If thou beest Trinculo, come forth: I'll pull thee by the lesser legs: if any be Trinculo's legs, these are they. Thou art very Trinculo indeed! How earnest thou to be the siege of this moon-calf? can he vent Trinculos? 111

*Trin.* I took him to be killed with a thunder-stroke. But art thou not drowned, Stephano? I hope now thou art not drowned. Is the storm overblown? I hid me under the dead moon-calf's gaberdine for fear of the storm. And art thou living, Stephano? O Stephano, two Neapolitans 'scaped!

*Ste.* Prithee, do not turn me about; my stomach is not constant.

*Cal.* [*Aside*] These be fine things, an if they be not sprites. 120

That's a brave god and bears celestial liquor. I will kneel to him.

*Ste.* How didst thou 'scape? How earnest thou hither? swear by this bottle how thou earnest hither. I escaped upon a butt of sack which the sailors heaved o'erboard, by this bottle! which I made of the bark of a tree with mine own hands since I was cast ashore.

*Cal.* I'll swear upon that bottle to be thy true subject; for the liquor is not earthly. 130

*Ste.* Here; swear then how thou escapedst.

*Trin.* Swum ashore, man, like a duck: I can swim like a duck, I'll be sworn.

*Ste.* Here, kiss the book. Though thou canst swim like a duck, thou art made like a goose.

*Trin.* O Stephano, hast any more of this?

*Ste.* The whole butt, man: my cellar is in a rock by the sea-side where my wine is hid. How now, moon-calf! how does thine ague?

*Cal.* Hast thou not dropp'd from heaven?

*Ste.* Out o' the moon, I do assure thee: I was the man i' the moon when time was.

*Cal.* I have seen thee in her and I do adore thee:

My mistress show'd me thee and thy dog and thy bush.

*Ste.* Come, swear to that; kiss the book: I will furnish it anon with new contents; swear.

*Trin.* By this good light, this is a very shallow monster! I afraid of him! A very weak monster! The man i' the moon! A most poor credulous monster! Well drawn, monster, in good sooth!

*Cal.* I'll show thee every fertile inch o' th' island;

And I will kiss thy foot: I prithee, be my god.

*Trin.* By this light, a most perfidious and drunken monster! when's god's asleep, he'll rob his bottle.

*Cal.* I'll kiss thy foot; I'll swear myself thy subject.

*Ste.* Come on then; down, and swear.

*Trin.* I shall laugh myself to death at this puppy-headed monster. A most scurvy monster! I could find in my heart to beat him,—

*Ste.* Come, kiss.

*Trin.* But that the poor monster's in drink: an abominable monster!

*Cal.* I'll show thee the best springs; I'll pluck thee berries;

I'll fish for thee and get thee wood enough.

A plague upon the tyrant that I serve!

I'll bear him no more sticks, but follow thee, Thou wondrous man.

*Trin.* A most ridiculous monster, to make a wonder of a poor drunkard!

*Cal.* I prithee, let me bring thee where crabs grow;

And I with my long nails will dig thee pig-nuts; Show thee a jay's nest and instruct thee how To snare the nimble marmoset; I'll bring thee To clustering filberts and sometimes I'll get thee Young scameles from the rock. Wilt thou go with me?

*Ste.* I prithee now, lead the way without any more talking. Trinculo, the king and all our company else being drowned, we will inherit here: here; bear my bottle: fellow Trinculo, we'll fill him by and by again.

*Cal.* [*Sings drunkenly*]

Farewell, master; farewell, farewell!

*Trin.* A howling monster; a drunken monster!

*Cal.* No more dams I'll make for fish;

Nor fetch in firing

At requiring;

Nor scrape trencher, nor wash dish:

'Ban, 'Ban, Cacaliban

Has a new master: get a new man.

Freedom, hey-day! hey-day, freedom! freedom, hey-day, freedom!

*Ste.* O brave monster! Lead the way.

[*Exeunt.*]

### ACT III.

SCENE I. *Before PROSPERO'S cell.*

*Enter FERDINAND, bearing a log.*

*Fer.* There be some sports are painful, and their labour

Delight in them sets off: some kinds of baseness

Are nobly undergone and most poor matters

Point to rich ends. This my mean task

Would be as heavy to me as odious, but

The mistress which I serve quickens what's dead

And makes my labours pleasures: O, she is

Ten times more gentle than her father's crabbed,

And he's composed of harshness. I must remove

Some thousands of these logs and pile them up,

Upon a sore injunction: my sweet mistress

Weeps when she sees me work, and says, such baseness

Had never like executor. I forget:

But these sweet thoughts do even refresh my labours,

† Most busy lest, when I do it.

*Enter MIRANDA; and PROSPERO at a distance, unseen.*

*Mir.* Alas, now, pray you, Work not so hard: I would the lightning had Burnt up those logs that you are enjoind to pile!

Pray, set it down and rest you: when this burns,

'Twill weep for having wearied you. My father Is hard at study; pray now, rest yourself;

He's safe for these three hours.

*Fer.* O most dear mistress, The sun will set before I shall discharge

What I must strive to do.

*Mir.* If you'll sit down, I'll bear your logs the while: pray, give me that;

I'll carry it to the pile.

*Fer.* No, precious creature; I had rather crack my sinews, break my back,

Than you should such dishonour undergo,

While I sit lazy by.

*Mir.* It would become me As well as it does you: and I should do it

With much more ease; for my good will is to it, And yours it is against.

*Pros.* Poor worm, thou art infected!

This visitation shows it.

*Mir.* You look wearily.

*Fer.* No, noble mistress; 'tis fresh morning with me

When you are by at night. I do beseech you—chiefly that I might set it in my prayers—

What is your name?

*Mir.* Miranda.—O my father,

I have broke your hest to say so!

*Fer.* Admired Miranda!

Indeed the top of admiration! worth

What's dearest to the world! Full many a lady

I have eyed with best regard and many a time

The harmony of their tongues hath into bondage

Brought my too diligent ear: for several virtues

I have I liked several women; never any

With so full soul, but some defect in her

Did quarrel with the noblest grace she owed

And put it to the foil; but you, O you,

So perfect and so peerless, are created

Of every creature's best!

*Mir.* I do not know

One of my sex; no woman's face remember,

Save, from my glass, mine own; nor have I

seen

More that I may call men than you, good friend,

And my dear father: how features are abroad,

I am skillless of; but, by my modesty,

The jewel in my dower, I would not wish

Any companion in the world but you,

Nor can imagination form a shape,

Besides yourself, to like of. But I prattle

Something too wildly and my father's precepts

I therein do forget.

*Fer.* I am in my condition

A prince, Miranda; I do think, a king;

I would, not so!—and would no more endure

This wooden slavery than to suffer

The flesh-fly blow my mouth. Hear my soul

speak;

The very instant that I saw you, did

My heart fly to your service; there resides,  
To make me slave to it; and for your sake  
Am I this patient log-man.

*Mir.* Do you love me?

*Fer.* O heaven, O earth, bear witness to this sound

And crown what I profess with kind event  
If I speak true! if hollowly, invert 70  
What best is hoded me to mischief! I  
Beyond all limit of what else I the world  
Do love, prize, honour you.

*Mir.* I am a fool  
To weep at what I am glad of.

*Pros.* Fair encounter  
Of two most rare affections! Heavens rain  
grace

On that which breeds between 'em!

*Fer.* Wherefore weep you?

*Mir.* At mine unworthiness that dare not  
offer

What I desire to give, and much less take  
What I shall die to want. But this is trifling;  
And all the more it seeks to hide itself, 80  
The bigger bulk it shows. Hence, bashful cun-  
ning!

And prompt me, plain and holy innocence!

I am your wife, if you will marry me;

If not, I'll die your maid: to be your fellow

You may deny me; but I'll be your servant,

Whether you will or no.

*Fer.* My mistress, dearest:

And I thus humble ever.

*Mir.* My husband, then?

*Fer.* Ay, with a heart as willing

As bondage e'er of freedom: here's my hand.

*Mir.* And mine, with my heart in't: and  
now farewell 90

Till half an hour hence.

*Fer.* A thousand thousand!

[*Exeunt Fer. and Mir. severally.*]

*Pros.* So glad of this as they I cannot be,

Who are surprised withal; but my rejoicing

At nothing can be more. I'll to my book,

For yet ere supper-time must I perform

Much business appertaining. [*Exit.*]

SCENE II. *Another part of the island.*

*Enter CALIBAN, STEPHANO, and TRINCULO.*

*Ste.* Tell not me; when the butt is out, we  
will drink water; not a drop before: therefore  
bear up, and board 'em. Servant-monster, drink  
to me.

*Trin.* Servant-monster! the folly of this is-  
land! They say there's but five upon this isle:  
we are three of them; if th' other two be brained  
like us, the state totters.

*Ste.* Drink, servant-monster, when I bid  
thee: thy eyes are almost set in thy head. 10

*Trin.* Where should they be set else? he  
were a brave monster indeed, if they were set  
in his tail.

*Ste.* My man-monster hath drown'd his  
tongue in sack: for my part, the sea cannot  
drown me; I swim, ere I could recover the  
shore, five and thirty leagues off and on. By  
this light, thou shalt be my lieutenant, monster,  
or my standard.

*Trin.* Your lieutenant, if you list; he's no  
standard. 20

*Ste.* We'll not run, Monsieur Monster.

*Trin.* Nor go neither; but you'll lie like  
dogs and yet say nothing neither.

*Ste.* Moon-calf, speak once in thy life, if  
thou beest a good moon-calf.

*Cal.* How does thy honour? Let me lick  
thy shoe.

I'll not serve him: he is not vallant.

*Trin.* Thou liest, most ignorant monster: I  
am in case to juggle a constable. Why, thou  
deboshed fish, thou, was there ever man a  
coward that hath drunk so much sack as I  
to-day? Wilt thou tell a monstrous lie, being  
but half a fish and half a monster?

*Cal.* Lo, how he mocks me! wilt thou let  
him, my lord?

*Trin.* 'Lori' quoth he! That a monster  
should be such a natural!

*Cal.* Lo, lo, again! bite him to death, I  
prithce.

*Ste.* Trinculo, keep a good tongue in your  
head: if you prove a mutineer,—the next tree!  
The poor monster's my subject and he shall  
not suffer indignity.

*Cal.* I thank my noble lord. Wilt thou be  
pleased to hearken once again to the suit I  
made to thee?

*Ste.* Marry, will I: kneel and repeat it; I  
will stand, and so shall Trinculo.

*Enter ARIEL, invisible.*

*Cal.* As I told thee before, I am subject to  
a tyrant, a sorcerer, that by his cunning hath  
cheated me of the island. 50

*Ari.* Thou liest.

*Cal.* Thou liest, thou jesting monkey, thou:  
I would my valiant master would destroy thee!  
I do not lie.

*Ste.* Trinculo, if you trouble him any more  
in's tale, by this hand, I will supplant some of  
your teeth.

*Trin.* Why, I said nothing.

*Ste.* Mum, then, and no more. Proceed.

*Cal.* I say, by sorcery he got this isle: 60

From me he got it. If thy greatness will

Revenge it on him,—for I know thou dar'st,

But this thing dare not,—

*Ste.* That's most certain.

*Cal.* Thou shalt be lord of it and I'll serve  
thee.

*Ste.* How now shall this be compassed?  
Canst thou bring me to the party?

*Cal.* Yea, yea, my lord: I'll yield him thee  
asleep.

Where thou mayst knock a nail into his head.

*Ari.* Thou liest; thou canst not. 70

*Cal.* What a pied nimny's this! Thou scurvy  
patch!

I do beseech thy greatness, give him blows

And take his bottle from him: when that's gone  
He shall drink nought but brine; for I'll not  
show him

Where the quick freshes are.

*Ste.* Trinculo, run into no further danger:  
interrupt the monster one word further, and, by

this hand, I'll turn my mercy out o' doors and make a stock-fish of thee.

*Trin.* Why, what did I? I did nothing. I'll go farther off. 81

*Ste.* Didst thou not say he lied?

*Ari.* Thou liest.

*Ste.* Do I so? take thou that. [*Beats Trin.*] As you like this, give me the lie another time.

*Trin.* I did not give the lie. Out o' your wits and hearing too! A pox o' your bottle! this can sack and drinking do. A murrain on your monster, and the devil take your fingers!

*Cal.* Ha, ha, ha! 90

*Ste.* Now, forward with your tale. Prithce, stand farther off.

*Cal.* Beat him enough: after a little time I'll beat him too.

*Ste.* Stand farther. Come, proceed.

*Cal.* Why, as I told thee, 'tis a custom with him, I th' afternoon to sleep: there thou mayst brain him.

Having first seized his books, or with a log Batten his skull, or paunch him with a stake,

Or cut his wezand with thy knife. Remember First to possess his books: for without them

He's but a sot, as I am, nor hath not One spirit to command: they all do hate him

As rootedly as I. Burn him his books. He has brave utensils,—for so he calls them,—

Which, when he has a house, he'll deck withal. And that most deeply to consider is

The beauty of his daughter; he himself Calls her a nonpareil: I never saw a woman,

But only Sycorax my dam and she; But she as far surpasseth Sycorax

As great'st does least. 110

*Ste.* Is it so brave a lass?

*Cal.* Ay, lord; she will become thy bed, I warrant.

And bring thee forth brave brood.

*Ste.* Monster, I will kill this man: his daughter and I will be king and queen,—save our graces!—and Trinculo and thyself shall be viceroys. Dost thou like the plot, Trinculo?

*Trin.* Excellent.

*Ste.* Give me thy hand: I am sorry I beat thee; but, while thou livest, keep a good tongue in thy head. 121

*Cal.* Within this half hour will he be asleep: Will thou destroy him then?

*Ste.* Ay, on mine honour.

*Ari.* This will I tell my master.

*Cal.* Thou makest me merry; I am full of pleasure:

Let us be jocund: will you troll the catch You taught me but while-ere?

*Ste.* At thy request, monster, I will do reason, any reason. Come on, Trinculo, let us sing. [Sings.]

Flout 'em and scout 'em  
And scout 'em and flout 'em;

Thought is free.

*Cal.* That's not the tune.  
[*Ariel plays the tune on a tabor and pipe.*]

*Ste.* What is this name?

*Trin.* This is the tune of our catch, played by the picture of Nobody.

*Ste.* If thou beest a man, show thyself in thy likeness: if thou beest a devil, take 't as thou list.

*Trin.* O, forgive me my sins!

*Ste.* He that dies pays all debts: I defy thee. Mercy upon us! 141

*Cal.* Art thou afraid?

*Ste.* No, monster, not I.

*Cal.* Be not afraid; the island is full of noises, Sounds and sweet airs, that give delight and hurt not.

Sometimes a thousand twangling instruments Will hum about mine ears, and sometime voices

That, if I then had waked after long sleep, Will make me sleep again: and then, in dreaming,

The clouds methought would open and show riches

Ready to drop upon me, that, when I waked, I cried to dream again. 150

*Ste.* This will prove a brave kingdom to me, where I shall have my music for nothing.

*Cal.* When Prospero is destroyed.

*Ste.* That shall be by and by: I remember the story.

*Trin.* The sound is going away; let's follow it, and after do our work.

*Ste.* Lead, monster; we'll follow. I would I could see this taborer; he lays it on. 160

*Trin.* Wilt come? I'll follow, Stephano. [Exeunt.]

### SCENE III. Another part of the island.

Enter ALONSO, SEBASTIAN, ANTONIO, GONZALO, ADELIAN, FRANCISCO, and others.

*Gon.* By'r lakin, I can go no further, sir; My old bones ache: here's a maze trod indeed

Through forth-rights and meanders! By your patience,

I needs must rest me.

*Alon.* Old lord, I cannot blame thee, Who am myself attach'd with weariness,

To the dulling of my spirits: sit down, and rest. Even here I will put off my hope and keep it

No longer for my flatterer: he is drown'd Whom thus we stray to find, and the sea mocks

Our frustrate search on land. Well, let him go. 10

*Ant.* [*Aside to Seb.*] I am right glad that he's so out of hope.

Do not, for one repulse, forego the purpose That you resolved to effect.

*Seb.* [*Aside to Ant.*] The next advantage Will we take thoroughly.

*Ant.* [*Aside to Seb.*] Let it be to-night; For, now they are oppress'd with travel, they

Will not, nor cannot, use such vigilance As when they are fresh.

*Seb.* [*Aside to Ant.*] I say, to-night: no more. [Solemn and strange music.]

*Alon.* What harmony is this? My good friends, hark!

*Gon.* Marvellous sweet music!

*Enter PROSPERO above, invisible. Enter several strange Shapes, bringing in a banquet; they dance about it with gentle actions of salutation; and, inviting the King, &c. to eat, they depart.*

*Alon.* Give us kind keepers, heavens! What were these? 20

*Seb.* A living drollery. Now I will believe That there are unicorns, that in Arabia There is one tree, the phoenix' throne, one phoenix

At this hour reigning there.

*Ant.* I'll believe both; And what does else want credit, come to me, And I'll be sworn 'tis true: travellers ne'er did lie

Though fools at home condemn 'em.

*Gon.* If in Naples I should report this now, would they believe me? If I should say, I saw such islanders— For, certes, these are people of the island— 30

Who, though they are of monstrous shape, yet, note,

Their manners are more gentle-kind than of Our human generation you shall find Many, nay, almost any.

*Pros.* [*Aside*] Honest lord, Thou hast said well; for some of you there present

Are worse than devils.

*Alon.* I cannot too much muse Such shapes, such gesture and such sound, expressing, Although they want the use of tongue, a kind Of excellent dumb discourse.

*Pros.* [*Aside*] Praise in departing.

*Fran.* They vanish'd strangely.

*Seb.* No matter, since 40 They have left their viands behind; for we have stomachs.

Will't please you taste of what is here? Not I.

*Gon.* Faith, sir, you need not fear. When we were boys,

Who would believe that there were mountaineers Dew-lapp'd like bulls, whose throats had hanging at 'em

Wallies of flesh? or that there were such men Whose heads stood in their breasts? which now we find

Each putter-out of five for one will bring us Good warrant of.

*Alon.* I will stand to and feed, Although my last: no matter, since I feel The best is past. Brother, my lord the duke, Stand to and do as we.

*Thunder and lightning. Enter ARIEL, like a harpy; claps his wings upon the table; and, with a quaint device, the banquet vanishes.*

*Ari.* You are three men of sin, whom Destiny,

That hath to instrument this lower world And what is in't, the never-surfeited sea Hath caused to belch up you; and on this island Where man doth not inhabit; you 'mongst men Being most unfit to live. I have made you mad;

And even with such-like valour men hang and drown

Their proper selves.

[*Alon., Seb. &c. draw their swords.*]

You fools! I and my fellows Go Are ministers of Fate: the elements, Of whom your swords are temper'd, may as well Wound the loud winds, or with bemock'd-at stabs

Kill the still-closing waters, as diminish One dowe that's in my plume: my fellow-ministers

Are like invulnerable. If you could hurt, Yourswords are now too massy for your strengths And will not be uplifted. But remember— For that's my business to you—that you three From Milan did supplant good Prospero; 70 Exposed unto the sea, which hath requit it, Him and his innocent child: for which foul deed The powers, delaying, not forgetting, have Incensed the seas and shores, yea, all the creatures,

Against your peace. Thee of thy son, Alonso, They have bereft; and do pronounce by me Lingering perdition, worse than any death Can be at once, shall step by step attend You and your ways; whose wraths to guard you from—

Which here, in this most desolate isle, else falls Upon your heels—is nothing but heart-sorrow & And a clear life ensuing.

*He vanishes in thunder; then, to soft music, enter the Shapes again, and dance, with mocks and mow, and carrying out the table.*

*Pros.* Bravely the figure of this harpy hast thou

Perform'd, my Ariel; a grace it had, devouring: Of my instruction hast thou nothing bated In what thou hadst to say: so, with good life And observation strange, my meaner ministers Their several kinds have done. My high charms work

And these mine enemies are all knit up In their distractions; they now are in my power; And in these fits I leave them, while I visit 90 Young Ferdinand, whom they suppose is drown'd,

And his and mine loved darling. [*Exit above.*]

*Gon.* I' the name of something holy, sir, why stand you In this strange stare?

*Alon.* O, it is monstrous, monstrous! Methought the billows spoke and told me of it; The winds did sing it to me, and the thunder, That deep and dreadful organ-pipe, pronounced The name of Prospero: it did bass my trespass. Therefore my son I' the ooze is boddied, and 100 I'll seek him deeper than e'er plummet sounded And with him there lie mudded. [*Exit.*]

*Seb.* But one fiend at a time, I'll fight their legions o'er.

*Ant.* I'll be thy second.

[*Exeunt Seb. and Ant.*]

*Gon.* All three of them are desperate: they great guilt, Like poison given to work a great time after, Now 'gins to bite the spirits. I do beseech you

That are of suppler joints, follow them swiftly  
And hinder them from what this ecstasy  
May now provoke them to.

*Adr.* Follow, I pray you. [*Exeunt.*]

# ACT IV.

## SCENE I. Before PROSPERO's cell.

*Enter PROSPERO, FERDINAND, and MIRANDA.*

*Pros.* If I have too austere punish'd you,  
Your compensation makes amends, for I  
Have given you here a third of mine own life,  
Or that for which I live; who once again  
I tender to thy hand: all thy vexations  
Were but my trials of thy love, and thou  
Hast strangely stood the test: here, afore  
Heaven,

I ratify this my rich gift. O Ferdinand,  
Do not smile at me that I boast her off,  
For thou shalt find she will outstrip all praise: 10  
And make it halt behind her.

*Fer.* I do believe it  
Against an oracle.

*Pros.* Then, as my gift and thine own acquisition

Worthily purchased, take my daughter: but  
If thou dost break her virgin-knot before  
All sanctimonious ceremonies may  
With full and holy rite be minister'd,  
No sweet aspersion shall the heavens let fall  
To make this contract grow; but barren hate,  
Sour-eyed disdain and discord shall bestrew 20  
The union of your bed with weeds so loathly  
That you shall hate it both: therefore take heed,  
As Hymen's lamps shall light you.

*Fer.* As I hope  
For quiet days, fair issue and long life,  
With such love as 'tis now, the murkiest den,  
The most opportune place, the strong'st suggestion

Our worse genius can, shall never melt  
Mine honour into lust, to take away  
The edge of that day's celebration  
When I shall think, or Phœbus' steeds are  
founder'd, 30  
Or Night kept chain'd below.

*Pros.* Fairly spoke.  
Sit then and talk with her; she is thine own.  
What, Ariel! my industrious servant, Ariel!

## Enter ARIEL.

*Ari.* What would my potent master? here  
I am.

*Pros.* Thou and thy meaner fellows your last  
service  
Did worthily perform; and I must use you  
In such another trick. Go bring the rabble,  
O'er whom I give thee power, here to this place;  
Incite them to quick motion; for I must  
Bestow upon the eyes of this young couple 40  
Some vanity of mine art: it is my promise,  
And they expect it from me.

*Ari.* Presently!

*Pros.* Ay, with a twink.

*Ari.* Before you can say 'come' and 'go,'  
And breathe twice and cry 'so, so,'  
Each one, tripping on his toe,  
Will be here with mop and mow.  
Do you love me, master? no!

*Pros.* Dearly, my delicate Ariel. Do not  
approach  
Till thou dost hear me call.

*Ari.* Well, I condescend. [*Exit.* 50]

*Pros.* Look thou be true; do not give dalliance

Too much the rein: the strongest oaths are  
straw

To the fire I' the blood: be more abstemious,  
Or else, good night your vow!

*Fer.* I warrant you, sir;  
The white cold virgin snow upon my heart  
Abates the ardour of my liver.

*Pros.* Well.  
Now come, my Ariel! bring a corollary,  
Fainter than want a spirit; appear, and partly!  
No tongue! all eyes! be silent. [*Soft music.*]

## Enter IRIS.

*Iris.* Ceres, most bounteous lady, thy rich  
leas 60

Of wheat, rye, barley, vetches, oats and pease;  
Thy turfy mountains, where live nibbling sheep,  
And flat meads thatch'd with stover, them to  
keep;

Thy banks with pioned and twilled brims,  
Which spongy April at thy hest betrimms,  
To make cold nymphs chaste: crows; and thy  
broom-groves,

Whose shadow the dismissed bachelor loves,  
Being lass-lorn; thy pole-clipt vineyard;  
And thy sea-marge, sterile and rocky-hard,  
Where thou thyself dost air;—the queen o' the  
sky,

Whose watery arch and messenger am I,  
Bids thee leave these, and with her sovereign  
grace,

Here on this grass-plot, in this very place,  
To come and sport: her peacocks fly amain:  
Approach, rich Ceres, her to entertain.

## Enter CERES.

*Cer.* Hail, many-colour'd messenger, that  
neer

Dost disobey the wife of Jupiter;  
Who with thy saffron wings upon my flowers  
Diffusest honey-drops, refreshing showers,

And with each end of thy blue bow dost crown 80  
My bosky acres and my unshrubb'd down,  
Rich scarf to my proud earth; why hath thy  
queen

Summon'd me hither, to this short-grass'd  
green?

*Iris.* A contract of true love to celebrate;  
And some donation freely to estate  
On the blest lovers.

*Cer.* Tell me, heavenly bow,  
If Venus or her son, as thou dost know,  
Do now attend the queen? Since they did plot  
The means that dusky Diis my daughter got,  
Her and her blind boy's scandal'd company 90  
I have forsworn.

*Iris.* Of her society

Be not afraid : I met her deity  
Cutting the clouds towards Paphos and her son  
Dove-drawn with her. Here thought they to  
have done

Some wanton charm upon this man and maid,  
Whose vows are, that no bed-right shall be paid  
Till Hymen's torch be lighted : but in vain ;  
Mare's hot minion is return'd again ;  
Her waspish-headed son has broke his arrows,  
Swears he will shoot no more but play with  
sparrows 100

And he a boy right out.  
*Cer.* High'st queen of state,  
Great Juno, comes ; I know her by her gait.

*Enter JUNO.*

*Juno.* How does my bounteous sister ? Go  
with me  
To bless this twain, that they may prosperous be  
And honour'd in their issue. [*They sing :*

*Juno.* Honour, riches, marriage-blessing,  
Long continuance, and increasing,  
Hourly joys be still upon you !  
Juno sings her blessings on you.

*Cer.* Earth's increase, foison plenty, 110  
Barns and garners never empty,  
Vines with clustering bunches growing,  
Plants with goodly burthen bowing  
Spring come to you at the farthest  
In the very end of harvest !  
Scarcity and want shall shun you ;  
Ceres' blessing so is on you.

*Cer.* This is a most majestic vision, and  
Hymenious charmingly. May I be bold  
To think these spirits ?

*Pros.* Spirits, which by mine art 120  
I have from their confines call'd to enact  
My present fancies.

*Cer.* Let me live here ever ;  
So rare a wonder'd father and a wife  
Makes this place Paradise.

[*Juno and Ceres whisper, and send Iris on employment.*

*Pros.* Sweet, now, silence !  
*Juno and Ceres whisper seriously ;*  
There's something else to do : hush, and be  
mute,

Or else our spell is marr'd.  
*Iris.* You nymphs, call'd Naiads, of the  
winding brooks,  
With your sedg'd crowns and ever-harmless  
looks, 130

Leave your crisp channels and on this green land  
Answer your summons : Juno does command :  
Come, temperate nymphs, and help to celebrate  
A contract of true love ; be not too late.

*Enter certain Nymphs.*

You sunburnt sicklemen, of August weary,  
Come hither from the furrow and be merry :  
Take holiday ; your rye-straw hats put on  
And these fresh nymphs encounter every one  
In country footing.

*Enter certain Reapers, properly habited : they join with the Nymphs in a graceful dance ; towards the end whereof PROSPERO starts suddenly, and speaks ; after which, to a strange, hollow, and confused noise, they heavily vanish.*

*Pros.* [*Aside*] I had forgot that foul conspiracy  
Of the beast Caliban and his confederates 140  
Against my life : the minute of their plot  
Is almost come. [*To the Spirits.*] Well done !  
avoid ; no more !

*Fer.* This is strange : your father's in some  
passion  
That works him strongly.

*Mir.* Never till this day  
Saw I him touch'd with anger so distemper'd.

*Pros.* You do look, my son, in a moved sort,  
As if you were dismay'd ; be cheerful, sir.  
Our revels now are ended. These our actors,  
As I foretold you, were all spirits and  
Are melted into air, into thin air : 150

And, like the baseness of this vision,  
The cloud-capp'd towers, the gorgeous palaces,  
The solemn temples, the great globe itself,  
Yea, all which it inherit, shall dissolve  
And, like this insubstantial pageant faded,  
Leave not a rack behind. We are such stuff  
As dreams are made on, and our little life  
Is rounded with a sleep. Sir, I am vex'd ;  
Bear with my weakness ; my old brain is  
troubled :

Be not disturb'd with my infirmity : 160  
If you be pleas'd, retire into my cell  
And there repose : a turn or two I'll walk,  
To still my beating mind.

*Fer. Mir.* We wish your peace. [*Exeunt.*

*Pros.* Come with a thought. I thank thee,  
Ariel : come.

*Enter ARIEL.*

*Ari.* Thy thoughts I cleave to. What's thy  
pleasure ?

*Pros.* Spirit,  
We must prepare to meet with Caliban.

*Ari.* Ay, my commander : when I presented  
Ceres,  
I thought to have told thee of it, but I fear'd  
Lest I might anger thee.

*Pros.* Say again, where didst thou leave  
these varlets ? 170

*Ari.* I told you, sir, they were red-hot with  
drinking ;

So full of valour that they smote the air  
For breathing in their faces ; beat the ground  
For kissing of their feet : yet always bending  
Towards their project. Then I beat my tabor ;  
At which, like unback'd colts, they prick'd their  
ears,

Advanced their eyelids, lifted up their noses  
As they smelt music : so I charm'd their ears  
That calf-like they my lowing follow'd through  
Tooth'd briars, sharp furzes, pricking goss and  
thorns, 180

Which enter'd their frail shins : at last I left  
them

*I* the filthy-mantled pool beyond your cell,  
There dancing up to the chins, that the foul lake  
O'erstunk their feet.

*Pros.* This was well done, my bird.  
Thy shape invisible retain thou still:  
The trumpery in my house, go bring it hither,  
For stale to catch these thieves.

*Ari.* I go, I go. [*Exit.*]  
*Pros.* A devil, a born devil, on whose nature  
Nurture can never stick; on whom my pains,  
Humanely taken, all, all lost, quite lost; 190  
And as with age his body uglier grows,  
So his mind cankers. I will plague them all,  
Even to roaring.

*Re-enter ARIEL, loaden with glistening  
apparel, &c.*

Come, hang them on this line.

PROSPERO and ARIEL remain, invisible. Enter  
CALIBAN, STEPHANO, and TRINCULO, all wet.

*Cal.* Pray you, tread softly, that the blind  
mole may not  
Hear a foot fall: we now are near his cell.

*Ste.* Monster, your fairy, which you say is a  
harmless fairy, has done little better than played  
the Jack with us.

*Trin.* Monster, I do smell all horse-piss; at  
which my nose is in great indignation. 200

*Ste.* So is mine. Do you hear, monster? If  
I should take a displeasure against you, look  
you,—

*Trin.* Thou wert but a lost monster.  
*Cal.* Good my lord, give me thy favour still.  
Be patient, for the prize I'll bring thee to  
Shall hoodwink this mischance: therefore speak  
softly.

All's hush'd as midnight yet.

*Trin.* Ay, but to lose our bottles in the  
pool,—

*Ste.* There is not only disgrace and dishonour  
in that, monster, but an infinite loss. 210

*Trin.* That's more to me than my wetting:  
yet this is your harmless fairy, monster.

*Ste.* I will fetch off my bottle, though I be  
o'er ears for my labour.

*Cal.* Prithee, my king, be quiet. See'st thou  
here,

This is the mouth o' the cell: no noise, and  
enter.

Do that good mischief which may make this  
island

Thine own for ever, and I, thy Caliban,  
For aye thy foot-licker.

*Ste.* Give me thy hand. I do begin to have  
bloody thoughts. 220

*Trin.* O king Stephano! O peer! O worthy  
Stephano! look what a wardrobe here is for  
thee!

*Cal.* Let it alone, thou fool; it is but trash.

*Trin.* O, ho, monster! we know what belongs  
to a frippery. O king Stephano!

*Ste.* Put off that gown, Trinculo; by this  
hand, I'll have that gown.

*Trin.* Thy grace shall have it.

*Cal.* The dropsy drown this fool! what do  
you mean 230

To dote thus on such luggage? Let's alone  
And do the murder first: if he awake,  
From toe to crown he'll fill our skins with  
pinches.

Make us strange stuff.

*Ste.* Be you quiet, monster. Mistress line,  
is not this my jerkin? Now is the jerkin unde  
the line: now, jerkin, you are like to lose your  
hair and prove a bald jerkin.

*Trin.* Do, do: we steal by line and level,  
an't like your grace. 240

*Ste.* I thank thee for that jest; here's a  
garment for't: wit shall not go unrewarded  
while I am king of this country. 'Steal by line  
and level' is an excellent pass of pate; there'  
another garment for't.

*Trin.* Monster, come, put some line upon  
your fingers, and away with the rest.

*Cal.* I will have none on't: we shall lose  
our time,

And all be turn'd to barnacles, or to apes  
With foreheads villanous low. 250

*Ste.* Monster, lay to your fingers: help to  
bear this away where my hogshead of wine is,  
or I'll turn you out of my kingdom: go to  
carry this.

*Trin.* And this.

*Ste.* Ay, and this.

*A noise of hunters heard. Enter divers Spirits,  
in shape of dogs and hounds, and hunt  
them about, PROSPERO and ARIEL setting  
them on.*

*Pros.* Hey, Mountain, hey!

*Ari.* Silver! there it goes, Silver!

*Pros.* Fury, Fury! there, Tyrant, there!  
hark! hark!

[*Cal., Ste., and Trin. are driven out.*]  
Go charge my goblins that they grind their  
joints

With dry convulsions, shorten up their sinews,  
With aged cramps, and more pinch-spott'  
make them

Than pard or cat o' mountain.

*Ari.* Hark, they roar!

*Pros.* Let them be hunted soundly. At this  
hour

Lie at my mercy all mine enemies:  
Shortly shall all my labours end, and thou  
Shalt have the air at freedom: for a little  
Follow, and do me service. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

### SCENE I. Before PROSPERO'S cell.

*Enter PROSPERO in his magic robes,  
and ARIEL.*

*Pros.* Now does my project gather to a head!  
My charms crack not; my spirits obey; and  
time

Goes upright with his carriage. How's the day?  
*Ari.* On the sixth hour; at which time,  
my lord,

You said our work should cease.



*Pros.*

I did say so,  
When first I raised the tempest. Say, my spirit,  
How fares the king and 's followers?

*Ari.*

Confined together  
In the same fashion as you gave in charge,  
Just as you left them; all prisoners, sir, 9  
In the line-grove which weather-fends your cell;  
They cannot budge till your release. The king,  
His brother and yours, alide all three distracted  
And the remainder mourning over them,  
Brinful of sorrow and dismay; but chiefly  
Him that you term'd, sir, 'The good old lord,  
Gonzalo;

His tears run down his beard, like winter's drops  
From caves of reeds. Your charm so strongly  
works 'em

That if you now beheld them, your affections  
Would become tender.

*Pros.*

Dost thou think so, spirit?

*Ari.*

Mine would, sir, were I human.

*Pros.*

And mine shall. 20  
Hast thou, which art but air, a touch, a feeling  
Of their afflictions, and shall not myself,  
One of their kind, that relish all as sharply,  
Passion as they, be kindlier moved than thou  
art?

Though with their high wrongs I am struck to  
the quick,

Yet with my nobler reason 'gainst my fury

Do I take part: the rarer action is

In virtue than in vengeance: they being  
penitent,

The sole drift of my purpose doth extend

Not a frown further. Go release them, Ariel. 30

My charms I'll break, their senses I'll restore,

And they shall be themselves.

*Ari.*

I'll fetch them, sir. [*Exit.*]

*Pros.* Ye elves of hills, brooks, standing lakes  
and groves,

And ye that on the sands with printless foot

Do chase the ebbing Neptune and do fly him

When he comes back; you demi-puppets that

By moonshine do the green sour ringlets make,

Whereof the ewe not bites, and you whose pas-  
time

Is to make midnight mushrooms, that rejoice

To hear the solemn curfew; by whose aid, 40

Weak masters though ye be, I have bedimm'd

The noontide sun, call'd forth the mutinous

winds,

And 'twixt the green sea and the azure vault

Set roaring war: to the dread rattling thunder

Have I given fire and rifted Jove's stout oak

With his own bolt; the strong-based promon-  
tory

Have I made shake and by the spurs pluck'd

up

The pine and cedar: graves at my command

Have wak'd their sleepers, oped, and let 'em

forth

By my so potent art. But this rough magic 50

I here abjure, and, when I have required

Some heavenly music, which even now I do,

To work mine end upon their senses that

This airy charin is for, I'll break my staff,

Bury it certain fathoms in the earth,

And deeper than did ever plummet sound

I'll drown my book. [*Solemn music.*]

*Re-enter ARIEL before; then ALONSO, with a  
frantic gesture, attended by GONZALO; SE-  
BASTIAN and ANTONIO in like manner, at-  
tended by ADRIAN and FRANCISCO: they all  
enter the circle which PROSPERO had made,  
and there stand charmed; which PROSPERO  
observing, speaks:*

A solemn air and the best comforter  
To an unsettled fancy cure thy brains,  
Now useless, bold'd within thy skull! There  
stand, 60

For you are spell-stopp'd.

Holy Gonzalo, honourable man,

Mine eyes, even sociable to the show of thine,

Fall fellowly drops. The charin dissolves apace,

And as the morning steals upon the night,

Melting the darkness, so their rising senses

Begin to chase the ignorant fumes that mantle

Their clearer reason. O good Gonzalo,

My true preserver, and a loyal sir

To him thou follow'st! I will pay thy graces 70

Home both in word and deed. Most cruelly

Didst thou, Alonso, use me and my daughter:

Thy brother was a furtherer in the act.

Thou art pinch'd for 't now, Sebastian. Fleash

and blood,

You, brother mine, that entertain'd ambition,

Expell'd remorse and nature; who, with Se-  
bastian,

Whose inward pinches therefore are most strong,

Would here have kill'd your king; I do forgive

thee,

Unnatural though thou art. Their understand-  
ing

Begins to swell, and the approaching tide 80

Will shortly fill the reasonable shore

That now lies foul and muddy. Not one of them

That yet looks on me, or would know me: Ariel,

Fetch me the hat and rapier in my cell:

I will discase me, and myself present

As I was sometime Milan: quickly, spirit;

Thou shalt ere long be free.

*ARIEL sings and helps to attire him.*

Where the bee sucks, there suck I:

In a cowslip's bell I lie;

There I couch when owls do cry. 90

On the bat's back I do fly

After summer merrily.

Merrily, merrily shall I live now

Under the blossom that hangs on the bough.

*Pros.* Why, that's my dainty Ariel! I shall

miss thee;

But yet thou shalt have freedom: so, so, so.

To the king's ship, invisible as thou art:

There shalt thou find the mariners asleep

Under the hatches; the master and the boat-  
swain

Being awake, enforce them to this place, 100

And presently, I prithee.

*Ari.* I drink the air before me, and return

Or ere your pulse twice beat. [*Exit.*]

*Gon.* All torment, trouble, wonder and  
amazement

Inhabits here: some heavenly power guide us

Out of this fearful country!

*Pros.* Behold, sir king,  
The wronged Duke of Milan, Prospero:  
For more assurance that a living prince  
Does now speak to thee, I embrace thy body;  
And to thee and thy company I bid  
A hearty welcome.

*Alon.* Whether thou be'st he or no,  
Or some enchanted trifle to abuse me,  
As late I have been, I not know: thy pulse  
Beats as of flesh and blood; and, since I saw  
thee,  
The affliction of my mind amends, with which,  
I fear, a madness held me: this must crave,  
An if this be at all, a most strange story.  
Thy dukedom I resign and do entreat  
Thou pardon me my wrongs. But how should  
Prospero  
Be living and be here?

*Pros.* First, noble friend,  
Let me embrace thine age, whose honour cannot  
Be measured or confined.

*Gon.* Whether this be  
Or be not, I'll not swear.

*Pros.* You do yet taste  
Some subtilties o' the isle, that will not let you  
Believe things certain. Welcome, my friends  
all!

[*Aside to Seb. and Ant.*] But you, my brace of  
lords, were I so minded,  
I here could pluck his highness' frown upon  
you

And justify you traitors: at this time  
I will tell no tales.

*Seb.* [*Aside*] The devil speaks in him.  
*Pros.* No.  
For you, most wicked sir, whom to call brother  
Would even infect my mouth, I do forgive  
Thy rankest fault; all of them; and require  
My dukedom of thee, which perforce, I know,  
Thou must restore.

*Alon.* If thou be'st Prospero,  
Give us particulars of thy preservation;  
How thou hast met us here, who three hours  
since

Were wreck'd upon this shore; where I have  
lost—  
How sharp the point of this remembrance is!—  
My dear son Ferdinand.

*Pros.* I am woe for't, sir.  
*Alon.* Irreparable is the loss, and patience  
Says it is past her cure.

*Pros.* I rather think  
You have not sought her help, of whose soft  
grace

For the like loss I have her sovereign aid  
And rest myself content.

*Alon.* You the like loss!  
*Pros.* As great to me as late; and, supportable  
To make the dear loss, have I means much  
weaker

Than you may call to comfort you, for I  
Have lost my daughter.

*Alon.* A daughter?  
O heavens, that they were living both in Naples,  
The king and queen there! that they were, I  
wish  
Myself were mudded in that oozy bed

Where my son lies. When did you lose your  
daughter?

*Pros.* In this last tempest. I perceive, these  
lords

At this encounter do so much admire  
That they devour their reason and scarce think  
Their eyes do offices of truth, their words  
Are natural breath: but, howsoever you have  
Been justified from your senses, know for certain  
That I am Prospero and that very duke  
Which was thrust forth of Milan, who most  
strangely

Upon this shore, where you were wreck'd, was  
landed,

To be the lord on't. No more yet of this;  
For 'tis a chronicle of day by day,  
Not a relation for a breakfast nor  
Befitting this first meeting. Welcome, sir;  
This cell's my court: here have I few at  
tendants

And subjects none abroad: pray you, look in.  
My dukedom since you have given me again,  
I will requite you with as good a thing;  
At least bring forth a wonder, to content ye  
As much as me my dukedom.

*Here Prospero discovers FERDINAND and  
MIRANDA playing at chess.*

*Mir.* Sweet lord, you play me false.

*Fer.* No, my dear'st love  
I would not for the world.

*Mir.* Yes, for a score of kingdoms you  
should wrangle,  
And I would call it fair play.

*Alon.* If this prove  
A vision of the Island, one dear son  
Shall I twice lose.

*Seb.* A most high miracle!  
*Fer.* Though the seas threaten, they are  
merciful;

I have cursed them without cause. [*Kneels.*]  
*Alon.* Now all the blessings

Of a glad father compass thee about!  
Arise, and say how thou camest here.

*Mir.* O, wonder.  
How many goodly creatures there are here!  
How beauteous mankind is! O brave new  
world,

That has such people in't!

*Pros.* 'Tis new to thee.  
*Alon.* What is this maid with whom thou  
wast at play?

Your old acquaintance cannot be three hours  
Is she the goddess that hath served us,  
And brought us thus together?

*Fer.* Sir, she is mortal;  
But by immortal Providence she's mine:  
I chose her when I could not ask my father  
For his advice, nor thought I had one. She  
Is daughter to this famous Duke of Milan,  
Of whom so often I have heard renown,  
But never saw before; of whom I have  
Received a second life; and second father  
This lady makes him to me.

*Alon.* I am here:  
But, O, how oddly will it sound that I  
Must ask my child forgiveness!

*Pros.* There, sir, stop :  
Let us not burthen our remembrance with  
A heaviness that's gone.

*Gon.* I have inly wept 200  
Or should have spoke ere this. Look down,  
you gods,

And on this couple drop a blessed crown !  
For it is you that have chalk'd forth the way  
Which brought us hither.

*Alon.* I say, Amen, Gonzalo !

*Gon.* Was Milan thrust from Milan, that  
his issue

Should become kings of Naples ? O, rejoice  
Beyond a common joy, and set it down

With gold on lasting pillars : In one voyage

Did Claribel her husband find at Tunis

And Ferdinand, her brother, found a wife 210

Where he himself was lost, Prospero his  
dukedom

In a poor isle and all of us ourselves

When no man was his own.

*Alon.* [To *Fer.* and *Mir.*] Give me your  
hands :

Let grief and sorrow still embrace his heart

That doth not wish you joy !

*Gon.*

Be it so ! Amen !

*Re-enter ARIEL, with the Master and Boat-  
swain amazedly following.*

O, look, sir, look, sir ! here is more of us :

I prophesied, if a galleys were on land,  
This fellow could not drown. Now, blasphemy,  
That swear'd grace o'erboard, not an oath on  
shore !

Hast thou no mouth by land ? What is the  
news ? 220

*Boats.* The best news is, that we have safely  
found

Our king and company ; the next, our ship—  
Which, but three glasses since, we gave out  
split—

As tight and yare and bravely rigg'd as when  
We first put out to sea.

*Ari.* [Aside to *Pros.*] Sir, all this service

I have done since I went.

*Pros.* [Aside to *Ari.*] My tricky spirit !

*Alon.* These are not natural events ; they

strengthen  
From strange to stranger. Say, how came you  
hither ?

*Boats.* If I did think, sir, I were well awake,  
I'd strive to tell you. We were dead of sleep,  
And—how we know not—all clapp'd under  
hatches ; 231

Where but even now with strange and several  
noises

Of roaring, shrieking, howling, jingling chains,  
And most diversity of sounds, all horrible,  
We were awak'd ; straightway, at liberty ;

Where we, all her trim, freshly beheld  
Our royal, good and gallant ship, our master

Aspiring to eye her : on a trice, so please you,  
Even in a dream, were we divided from them  
and were brought moping hither.

*Ari.* [Aside to *Pros.*] Was't well done ? 240

*Pros.* [Aside to *Ari.*] Bravely, my diligence.  
Thou shalt be free.

*Alon.* This is as strange a maze as e'er men  
trod ;

And there is in this business more than nature  
Was ever conduct of : some oracle

Must rectify our knowledge.

*Pros.* Sir, my liege,  
Do not infect your mind with beating on  
The strangeness of this business ; at pick'd  
leisure

Which shall be shortly, single I'll resolve you,  
Which to you shall seem probable, of every

These happen'd accidents ; till when, be cheerful  
And think of each thing well. [Aside to *Ari.*]

Come hither, spirit : 251

Set Caliban and his companions free ;  
Untie the spell. [Exit *Ariel.*] How fares my

gracious sir !

There are yet missing of your company  
Some few odd lads that you remember not.

*Re-enter ARIEL, driving in CALIBAN,  
STEPHANO and TRINCULO, in their stolen  
apparel.*

*Ste.* Every man shift for all the rest, and let  
no man take care for himself ; for all is but  
fortune. Coragio, bully-monster, coragio !

*Trin.* If these be true spies which I wear in  
my head, here's a goodly sight. 260

*Cal.* O Setebos, these be brave spirits in-  
deed !

How fine my master is ! I am afraid  
He will chastise me.

*Seb.* Ha, ha !

What things are these, my lord Antonio ?  
Will money buy 'em ?

*Ant.* Very like ; one of them  
Is a plain fish, and, no doubt, marketable.

*Pros.* Mark but the badges of these men,  
my lords,

Then say if they be true. This mis-shapen  
knave,

His mother was a witch, and one so strong  
That could control the moon, make flows and  
ebb, 270

And deal in her command without her power.  
These three have robb'd me ; and this demi-  
devil—

For he's a bastard one—had plotted with them  
To take my life. Two of these fellows you  
Must know and own ; this thing of darkness I  
Acknowledge mine.

*Cal.* I shall be pinch'd to death.

*Alon.* Is not this Stephano, my drunken  
butler ?

*Seb.* He is drunk now ; where had he wine ?

*Alon.* And Trinculo is reeling ripe ; where  
should they

Find this grand liquor that hath gild'd 'em ?  
How camest thou in this pickle ? 281

*Trin.* I have been in such a pickle since I  
saw you last that, I fear me, will never out of  
my bones ; I shall not fear fly-blowing.

*Seb.* Why, how now, Stephano !

*Ste.* O, touch me not ; I am not Stephano,  
but a cramp.

*Pros.* You'd be king o' the isle, sirrah ?

*Ste.* I should have been a sore one then.

*Alon.* This is a strange thing as e'er I look'd on.

*Pros.* He is as disproportion'd in his manners as in his shape. Go, sirrah, to my cell; 201  
Take with you your companions; as you look To have my pardon, trim it handsomely.

*Cal.* Ay, that I will; and I'll be wise hereafter

And seek for grace. What a thrice-double ass Was I, to take this drunkard for a god And worship this dull fool!

*Pros.* Go to; away!

*Alon.* Hence, and bestow your luggage where you found it.

*Seb.* Or stole it, rather.

[*Exit Cal., Ste., and Trin.*]

*Pros.* Sir, I invite your highness and your train 300

To my poor cell, where you shall take your rest For this one night; which, part of it, I'll waste With such discourse as, I not doubt, shall make it

Go quick away; the story of my life And the particular accidents gone by Since I came to this isle; and in the morn I'll bring you to your ship and so to Naples, Where I have hope to see the nuptial Of these our dear-beloved solemnized; And thence retire me to my Milan, where 310 Every third thought shall be my grave.

*Alon.* I long

To hear the story of your life, which must Take the ear strangely.

*Pros.* I'll deliver all, And promise you calm seas, auspicious gales And sail so expeditious that shall catch Your royal fleet far off. [*Aside to Ari.*] My

*Ariel*, chick, That is thy charge: then to the elements Be free, and fare thou well! Please you, draw near. [*Exit.*]

### EPILOGUE.

SPOKEN BY PROSPEPO.

Now my charms are all o'erthrown,  
And what strength I have's mine own,  
Which is most faint: now, 'tis true,  
I must be here confined by you,  
Or sent to Naples. Let me not,  
Since I have my dukedom got  
And pardon'd the deceiver, dwell  
In this bare island by your spell;  
But release me from my bands  
With the help of your good hands:  
Gentle breath of yours my sails  
Must fill, or else my project fails,  
Which was to please. Now I want  
Spirits to enforce, art to enchant,  
And my ending is despair,  
Unless I be relieved by prayer,  
Which pierces so that it assaults  
Mercy itself and frees all faults.  
As you from crimes would pardon'd be,  
Let your indulgence set me free.

# THE TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

DUKE OF MILAN, Father to Silvia.  
 VALENTINE, } the two Gentlemen.  
 PROTEUS, }  
 ANTONIO, Father to Proteus.  
 THURIO, a foolish rival to Valentine.  
 EGLAMOUR, Agent for Silvia in her escape.  
 HOST, where Julia lodges.  
 OUTLAWS, with Valentine.  
 SPEED, a clownish servant to Valentine.

LAUNCE, the like to Proteus.  
 PANTHINO, Servant to Antonio.  
 JULIA, beloved of Proteus.  
 SILVIA, beloved of Valentine.  
 LUCETTA, waiting-woman to Julia.  
 Servants, Musicians.  
 SCENE, *Verona; Milan; the frontiers of Mantua.*

### ACT I.

#### SCENE I. *Verona. An open place.*

*Enter VALENTINE and PROTEUS.*

*Val.* Cease to persuade, my loving Proteus:  
 Home-keeping youth have ever homely wits.  
 Were't not affection chains thy tender days  
 To the sweet glances of thy honour'd love,  
 I rather would entreat thy company  
 To see the wonders of the world abroad  
 Than, living dully sluggardized at home,  
 Wear out thy youth with shapeless idleness.  
 But since thou lovest, love still and thrive  
 therein.

Even as I would when I to love begin. 10

*Pro.* Wilt thou be gone? Sweet Valentine,  
 adieu!

Think on thy Proteus, when thou haply seest  
 Some rare note-worthy object in thy travel:

Wish me partaker in thy happiness  
 When thou dost meet good hap; and in thy  
 danger,

If ever danger do environ thee,  
 Commend thy grievance to my holy prayers,  
 For I will be thy headman, Valentine.

*Val.* And on a love-book pray for my suc-  
 cess!

*Pro.* Upon some book I love I'll pray for  
 thee. 20

*Val.* That's on some shallow story of deep  
 love:

How young Læander cross'd the Hellespont.

*Pro.* That's a deep story of a deeper love;  
 For he was more than over shoes in love.

*Val.* 'Tis true; for you are over boots in love,  
 And yet you never swim the Hellespont.

*Pro.* Over the boots? nay, give me not the  
 boots.

*Val.* No, I will not, for it boots thee not.  
*Pro.* What?

*Val.* To be in love, where scorn is bought  
 with groans;

Coy looks with heart-sore sighs; one fading  
 moment's mirth 30

With twenty watchful, weary, tedious nights:  
 If haply won, perhaps a hapless gain;

If lost, why then a grievous labour won;  
 However, but a folly bought with wit,

Or else a wit by folly vanquished.  
*Pro.* So, by your circumstance, you call me  
 fool.

*Val.* So, by your circumstance, I fear you'll  
 prove.

*Pro.* 'Tis love you cavil at: I am not Love.  
*Val.* Love is your master, for he masters  
 you:

And he that is so yoked by a fool, 40  
 Methinks, should not be chronicled for wise.

*Pro.* Yet writers say, as in the sweetest bud  
 The eating canker dwells, so eating love  
 Inhabits in the finest wits of all.

*Val.* And writers say, as the most forward  
 bud

Is eaten by the canker ere it blow,  
 Even so by love the young and tender wit  
 Is turn'd to folly, blasting in the bud,  
 Losing his verdure even in the prime

And all the fair effects of future hopes. 50  
 But wherefore waste I time to counsel thee  
 That art a votary to fond desire?

Once more adieu! my father at the road  
 Expects my coming, there to see me shipp'd.

*Pro.* And thither will I bring thee, Valen-  
 tine.

*Val.* Sweet Proteus, no; now let us take our  
 leave.

To Milan let me hear from thee by letters  
 Of thy success in love and what news else

Betideth here in absence of thy friend;  
 And I likewise will visit thee with mine. 60

*Pro.* All happiness bechance to thee in  
 Milan!

*Val.* As much to you at home! and so, farewell. *[Exit.]*

*Pro.* He after honour hunts, I after love; He leaves his friends to dignify them more; I leave myself, my friends and all, for love. Thou, Julia, thou hast metamorphosed me, Made me neglect my studies, lose my time, War with good counsel, set the world at nought; Made wit with musing weak, heart sick with thought.

*Enter SPEED.*

*Speed.* Sir Proteus, save you! Saw you my master?

*Pro.* But now he parted hence, to embark for Milan.

*Speed.* Twenty to one then he is shipp'd already, And I have play'd the sheep in losing him.

*Pro.* Indeed, a sheep cloth very often stray, As if the shepherd be a while away.

*Speed.* You conclude that my master is a shepherd then and I a sheep?

*Pro.* I do.

*Speed.* Why then, my horns are his horns, whether I wake or sleep.

*Pro.* A silly answer and fitting well a sheep.

*Speed.* This proves me still a sheep.

*Pro.* True; and thy master a shepherd.

*Speed.* Nay, that I can deny by a circumstance.

*Pro.* It shall go hard but I'll prove it by another.

*Speed.* The shepherd seeks the sheep, and not the sheep the shepherd; but I seek my master, and my master seeks not me: therefore I am no sheep.

*Pro.* The sheep for fodder follow the shepherd; the shepherd for food follows not the sheep; thou for wages followest thy master; thy master for wages follows not thee: therefore thou art a sheep.

*Speed.* Such another proof will make me cry 'baa.'

*Pro.* But, dost thou hear? gavest thou my letter to Julia?

*Speed.* Ay, sir: I, a lost mutton, gave your letter to her, a laced mutton, and she, a laced mutton, gave me, a lost mutton, nothing for my labour.

*Pro.* Here's too small a pasture for such store of muttons.

*Speed.* If the ground be overcharged, you were best stick her.

*Pro.* Nay: in that you are astray, 'twere best pound you.

*Speed.* Nay, sir, less than a pound shall serve me for carrying your letter.

*Pro.* You mistake; I mean the pound, — a pinfold.

*Speed.* From a pound to a pin? fold it over and over.

*Pro.* 'Tis threefold too little for carrying a letter to your lover.

*Pro.* But what said she?

*Speed.* *[First nodding.]* Ay.

*Pro.* Not — Ay — why, that's noddly.

*Speed.* You mistook, sir; I say, she did nod:

and you ask me if she did nod; and I say, 'Ay.'

*Pro.* And that set together is noddly.

*Speed.* Now you have taken the pains to set it together, take it for your pains.

*Pro.* No, no; you shall have it for bearing the letter.

*Speed.* Well, I perceive I must be fain to bear with you.

*Pro.* Why, sir, how do you bear with me?

*Speed.* Marry, sir, the letter, very orderly: having nothing but the word 'noddly' for my pains.

*Pro.* Beshrew me, but you have a quick wit.

*Speed.* And yet it cannot overtake your slow purse.

*Pro.* Come, come, open the matter in brief what said she?

*Speed.* Open your purse, that the money and the matter may be both at once delivered.

*Pro.* Well, sir, here is for your pains. What said she?

*Speed.* Truly, sir, I think you'll hardly win her.

*Pro.* Why, couldst thou perceive so much from her?

*Speed.* Sir, I could perceive nothing at all from her; no, not so much as a ducat for delivering your letter: and being so hard to me that brought your mind, I fear she'll prove as hard to you in telling your mind. Give her no token but stones; for she's as hard as steel.

*Pro.* What said she? nothing?

*Speed.* No, not so much as 'Take this for thy pains.' To testify your bounty, I thank you, you have testereed me; in requital whereof, henceforth carry your letters yourself: and so, sir, I'll commend you to my master.

*Pro.* Go, go, be gone, to save your ship from wreck,

Which cannot perish having thee aboard, Being destined to a drier death on shore.

*[Exit Speed.]*

I must go send some better messenger: I fear my Julia would not deign my lines, Receiving them from such a worthless post.

*[Exit Pro.]*

SCENE II. *The same. Garden of JULIA'S house.*

*Enter JULIA and LUCETTA.*

*Jul.* But say, Lucetta, now we are alone, Wouldst thou then counsel me to fall in love?

*Luc.* Ay, madam, so you stumble not unheedfully.

*Jul.* Of all the fair resort of gentlemen That every day with parle encounter me,

In thy opinion which is worthiest love?

*Luc.* Please you repeat their names, I'll show my mind.

According to my shallow simple skill.

*Jul.* What think'st thou of the fair Eglamour?

*Luc.* As of a knight well-spoken, neat and fine;

But, were I you, he never should be mine.

*Jul.* What think'st thou of the rich Mervatio?

*Luc.* Well of his wealth ; but of himself, so so.  
What think'st thou of the gentle Proteus ?

*Luc.* Lord, Lord ! to see what folly reigns in us !

*Jul.* How now ! what means this passion at his name !

*Luc.* Pardon, dear madam : 'tis a passing shame

That I, unworthy body as I am, Should censure thus on lovely gentlemen.

*Jul.* Whiv not on Proteus, as of all the rest ?

*Luc.* Then thus : of many good I think him best.

*Jul.* Your reason ?

*Luc.* I have no other but a woman's reason ; I think him so because I think him so.

*Jul.* And wouldst thou have me cast my love on him ?

*Luc.* Ay, if you thought your love not cast away.

*Jul.* Why he, of all the rest, hath never moved me.

*Luc.* Yet he, of all the rest, I think, best loves ye.

*Jul.* His little speaking shows his love but small.

*Luc.* Fire that's closest kept burns most of all.

*Jul.* They do not love that do not show their love.

*Luc.* O, they love least that let men know their love.

*Jul.* I would I knew his mind.

*Luc.* Peruse this paper, madam.

*Jul.* 'To Julia.' Say, from whom ?

*Luc.* That the contents will show.

*Jul.* Say, say, who gave it thee ?

*Luc.* Sir Valentine's page ; and sent, I think, from Proteus.

He would have given it you ; but I, being in the way,

Did in your name receive it : pardon the fault, I pray.

*Jul.* Now, by my modesty, a goodly broker !

Dare you presume to harbour wanton lines ? To whisper and conspire against my youth ?

Now, trust me, 'tis an office of great worth And you an officer fit for the place.

There, take the paper : see it be return'd ; Or else return no more into my sight.

*Luc.* To plead for love deserves more fee than hate.

*Jul.* Will ye be gone ?

*Luc.* That you may ruminate.

[*Exit.*]  
*Jul.* And yet I would I had o'erlooked the letter :

It were a shame to call her back again And pray her to a fault for which I chid her.

What a fool is she, that knows I am a maid, And would not force the letter to my view !

Since maids, in modesty, say 'no' to that Which they would have the profferer construe 'ay.'

Fie, fie, how wayward is this foolish love That, like a teatv babe, will scratch the nurse

And presently all humbled kiss the rod !

How churlishly I chid Lucetta hence, 60  
When willingly I would have had her here !  
How angrily I taught my brow to frown,  
When inward joy enforced my heart to smile !  
My penance is to call Lucetta back  
And ask remission for my folly past.  
What ho ! Lucetta !

*Re-enter LUCETTA.*

*Luc.* What would your ladyship ?

*Jul.* Is 't near dinner-time ?

*Luc.* I would it were,  
That you might kill your stomach on your meat  
And not upon your maid.

*Jul.* What is 't that you took up so gingerly ?

*Luc.* Nothing.

*Jul.* Why didst thou stoop, then ?

*Luc.* To take a paper up that I let fall.

*Jul.* And is that paper nothing ?

*Luc.* Nothing concerning me.

*Jul.* Then let it lie for those that it concerns.

*Luc.* Madam, it will not lie where it concerns,  
Unless it have a false interpreter.

*Jul.* Some love of yours hath writ to you in rhyme.

*Luc.* That I might sing it, madam, to a tune.  
Give me a note : your ladyship can set.

*Jul.* As little by such toys as may be possible.  
Best sing it to the tune of 'Light o' love.'

*Luc.* It is too heavy for so light a tune.

*Jul.* Heavy ! belike it hath some burden then ?

*Luc.* Ay, and melodious were it, would you sing it.

*Jul.* And why not you ?

*Luc.* I cannot reach so high.

*Jul.* Let's see your song. How now, minion !

*Luc.* Keep tune there still, so you will sing it out :

And yet methinks I do not like this tune. 90

*Jul.* You do not ?

*Luc.* No, madam ; it is too sharp.

*Jul.* You, minion, are too saucy.

*Luc.* Nay, now you are too flat

And mar the concord with too harsh a descant :

There wanteth but a mean to fill your song.

*Jul.* The mean is drown'd with your unruly bass.

*Luc.* Indeed, I bid the base for Proteus.

*Jul.* This babble shall not henceforth trouble me.

Here is a coil with protestation !

[*Tears the letter.*]

Go get you gone, and let the papers lie : 100

You would be fingering them, to anger me.

*Luc.* She makes it strange ; but she would be best pleas'd

To be so anger'd with another letter. [*Exit.*]

*Jul.* Nay, would I were so anger'd with the same !

O hateful hands, to tear such loving words !

Injurious wasps, to feed on such sweet honey

And kill the bees that yield it with your stings !

I'll kiss each several paper for amends.

Look, here is writ 'kind Julia.' Unkind Julia !

As in revenge of thy ingratitude, 110

I throw thy name against the bruising stones,

Trampling contemptuously on thy disdain.  
And here is writ 'love-wounded Proteus.'  
Poor wounded name! my bosom as a bed  
Shall lodge thee till thy wound be thoroughly  
heal'd;

And thus I search it with a sovereign kiss.  
But twice or thrice was 'Proteus' written down.  
Be calm, good wind, blow not a word away  
Till I have found each letter in the letter,  
Except mine own name: that some whirlwind  
bear 120

Unto a ragged fearful hanging rock  
And throw it thence into the raging sea!  
Lo, here in one line is his name twice writ,  
'Poor forlorn Proteus, passionate Proteus,  
To the sweet Julia:' that I'll tear away.  
And yet I will not, with so prettily  
He couples it to his complaining names.  
Thus will I fold them one upon another:  
Now kiss, embrace, contend, do what you will.

*Re-enter LUCETTA.*

*Luc.* Madam, 130  
Dinner is ready, and your father stays.

*Jul.* Well, let us go.  
*Luc.* What, shall these papers lie like tell-  
tales here?

*Jul.* If you respect them, best to take them  
up.

*Luc.* Nay, I was taken up for laying them  
down;

Yet here they shall not lie, for catching cold.

*Jul.* I see you have a month's mind to them.

*Luc.* Ay, madam, you may say what sights  
you see;

I see things too, although you judge I wink.

*Jul.* Come, come; will't please you go? 140  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *The same.* ANTONIO'S house.

*Enter ANTONIO and PANTHINO.*

*Ant.* Tell me, Panthino, what sad talk was  
that

Wherewith my brother held you in the cloister?

*Pan.* 'Twas of his nephew Proteus, your son.

*Ant.* Why, what of him?

*Pan.* He wonder'd that your lordship

Would suffer him to spend his youth at home,

While other men, of slender reputation,

Put forth their sons to seek preferment out;

Some to the wars, to try their fortune there;

Some to discover islands far away;

Some to the studious universities. 150

For any or for all these exercises

He said that Proteus your son was meet,

And did request me to importune you

To let him spend his time no more at home,

Which would be great impeachment to his age,

In having known no travel in his youth.

*Ant.* Nor needst thou much importune me  
to that

Whereon this month I have been hammering.

I have consider'd well his loss of time

And how he cannot be a perfect man,

Not being tri'd and tutor'd in the world:

Experience is by industry achieved

And perfected by the swift course of time. 20

Then tell me, whither were I best to send him?

*Pan.* I think your lordship is not ignorant

How his companion, youthful Valentine,

Attends the emperor in his royal court.

*Ant.* I know it well.

*Pan.* 'Twere good, I think, your lordship

sent him thither:

There shall he practise tilts and tournaments, 30

Hear sweet discourse, converse with noblemen,

And be in eye of every exercise

Worthy his youth and nobleness of birth.

*Ant.* I like thy counsel; well hast thou ad-  
vised:

And that thou mayst perceive how well I like it

The execution of it shall make known.

Even with the speediest expedition

I will dispatch him to the emperor's court.

*Pan.* To-morrow, may it please you, Don

Alphonso

With other gentlemen of good esteem

Are journeying to salute the emperor

And to commend their service to his grace

*Ant.* Good company; with them shall Pro-  
teus go;

And, in good time! now will we break with him

*Enter PROTEUS.*

*Pro.* Sweet love! sweet lines! sweet life!

Here is her hand, the agent of her heart;

Here is her oath for love, her honour's pawn.

O, that our fathers would applaud our loves,

To seal our happiness with their consents!

O heavenly Julia!

*Ant.* How now! what letter are you reading?

*Pro.* May't please your lordship, 'tis a wor-  
or two

Of commendations sent from Valentine,

Deliver'd by a friend that came from him.

*Ant.* Lend me the letter; let me see what  
news.

*Pro.* There is no news, my lord, but that I

writes

How happily he lives, how well beloved

And daily grace'd by the emperor;

Wishing me with him, partner of his fortune.

*Ant.* And how stand you affected to his  
wish?

*Pro.* As one relying on your lordship's will

And not depending on his friendly wish.

*Ant.* My will is something sorted with his  
wish.

Muse not that I thus suddenly proceed;

For what I will, I will, and there an end.

I am resolv'd that thou shalt spend some time

With Valentinus in the emperor's court:

What maintenance he from his friends receives,

Like exhibition thou shalt have from me.

To-morrow be in readiness to go: 7

Excuse it not, for I am peremptory.

*Pro.* My lord, I cannot be so soon provided:

Please you, deliberate a day or two.

*Ant.* Look, what thou want'st shall be sent  
after thee:

No more of stay! to-morrow thou must go.

Come on, Panthino: you shall be employ'd

To hasten on his expedition.

[*Exeunt Ant. and Pan.*]



*Pro.* Thus have I shunn'd the fire for fear of burning,  
And drench'd me in the sea, where I am drown'd.

I fear'd to show my father Julia's letter, 80  
Lest he should take exceptions to my love;  
And with the vantage of mine own excuse  
Hath he excepted most against my love.  
O, how this spring of love resembleth  
The uncertain glory of an April day,  
Which now shows all the beauty of the sun,  
And by and by a cloud takes all away!

*Re-enter PANTHINO.*

*Pan.* Sir Proteus, your father calls for you:  
He is in haste; therefore, I pray you, go. 89  
*Pro.* Why, this it is: my heart accords thereto,  
And yet a thousand times it answers 'no.'  
[*Exeunt.*]

### ACT II.

SCENE I. *Milan. The Duke's palace.*

*Enter VALENTINE and SPEED.*

*Speed.* Sir, your glove.

*Val.* Not mine; my gloves are on.

*Speed.* Why, then, this may be yours, for  
this is but one.

*Val.* Ha! let me see: ay, give it me, it's  
mine:

Sweet ornament that decks a thing divine!

Ah, Silvia, Silvia!

*Speed.* Madam Silvia! Madam Silvia!

*Val.* How now, sirrah?

*Speed.* She is not within hearing, sir.

*Val.* Why, sir, who bade you call her?

*Speed.* Your worship, sir; or else I mis-  
took. 10

*Val.* Well, you'll still be too forward.

*Speed.* And yet I was last chidden for being  
too slow.

*Val.* Go to, sir: tell me, do you know Madam  
Silvia?

*Speed.* She that your worship loves?

*Val.* Why, how know you that I am in love?

*Speed.* Marry, by these special marks: first,  
you have learned, like Sir Proteus, to wreath  
your arms, like a malecontent; to relish a love-  
song like a robin-redbreast; to walk alone like  
one that had the pestilence; to sigh like a  
schoolboy that had lost his A B C; to weep like  
a young wench that had buried her grandam;  
to fast like one that takes diet; to watch like  
one that fears robbing; to speak pining like a  
lagger at Hallowmas. You were wont, when  
you laughed, to crow like a cock; when you  
walked, to walk like one of the dions; when you  
fasted, it was presently after dinner; when you  
looked sadly, it was for want of money; and  
now you are metamorphos'd with a mistress,  
that, when I look on you, I can hardly think  
you my master.

*Val.* Are all these things perceived in me?

*Speed.* They are all perceived without ye.

*Val.* Without me? they cannot.

*Speed.* Without you? nay, that's certain, for,  
without you were so simple, none else would:

but you are so without these follies, that these  
follies are within you and shine through you like  
the water in an urnal, that not an eye that sees  
you but is a physician to comment on your  
malady.

*Val.* But tell me, dost thou know my lady  
Silvia?

*Speed.* She that you gaze on so as she sits at  
supper?

*Val.* Hast thou observed that? even she I  
mean.

*Speed.* Why, sir, I know her not. 50

*Val.* Dost thou know her by my gazing on  
her, and yet knowest her not?

*Speed.* Is she not hard-favoured, sir?

*Val.* Not so fair, boy, as well-favoured.

*Speed.* Sir, I know that well enough.

*Val.* What dost thou know?

*Speed.* That she is not so fair as, of you, well  
favoured.

*Val.* I mean that her beauty is exquisite,  
but her favour infinite. 60

*Speed.* That's because the one is painted and  
the other out of all count.

*Val.* How painted? and how out of count?

*Speed.* Marry, sir, so painted, to make her  
fair, that no man counts of her beauty.

*Val.* How esteemest thou me? I account of  
her beauty.

*Speed.* You never saw her since she was de-  
formed. 70

*Val.* How long hath she been deformed?

*Speed.* Ever since you loved her.

*Val.* I have loved her ever since I saw her;  
and still I see her beautiful.

*Speed.* If you love her, you cannot see her.

*Val.* Why?

*Speed.* Because Love is blind. O, that you  
had mine eyes; or your own eyes had the lights  
they were wont to have when you chid at Sir  
Proteus for going ungartered!

*Val.* What should I see then? 80

*Speed.* Your own present folly and her  
passing deformity: for he, being in love, could  
not see to garter his hose, and you, being in  
love, cannot see to put on your hose.

*Val.* Belike, boy, then, you are in love; for  
last morning you could not see to wipe my shoes.

*Speed.* True, sir; I was in love with my bed:  
I thank you, you swung me for my love, which  
makes me the bolder to chide you for yours.

*Val.* In conclusion, I stand affected to her.

*Speed.* I would you were set, so your affection  
would cease.

*Val.* Last night she enjoined me to write  
some lines to one she loves.

*Speed.* And have you?

*Val.* I have.

*Speed.* Are they not lamely writ?

*Val.* No, boy, but as well as I can do them.  
Peace! here she comes. 99

*Speed.* [*Aside*] O excellent motion! O ex-  
ceeding puppet! Now will he interpret to her.

*Enter SILVIA.*

*Val.* Madam and mistress, a thousand good-  
morrrows.

*Speed.* [*Aside*] O, give ye good even! here's a million of manners.

*Sil.* Sir Valentine and servant, to you two thousand.

*Speed.* [*Aside*] He should give her interest, and she gives it him.

*Val.* As you enjoin'd me, I have writ your letter 110

Unto the secret nameless friend of yours;  
Which I was much unwilling to proceed in  
But for my duty to your ladyship.

*Sil.* I thank you, gentle servant: 'tis very clerkly done.

*Val.* Now trust me, madam, it came hardly off;

For being ignorant to whom it goes  
I writ at random, very doubtfully.

*Sil.* Perchance you think too much of so much pains?

*Val.* No, madam; so it stead you, I will write,

Please you command, a thousand times as much;  
And yet— 121

*Sil.* A pretty period! Well, I guess the sequel;

And yet I will not name it; and yet I care not;  
And yet take this again; and yet I thank you,  
Meaning henceforth to trouble you no more.

*Speed.* [*Aside*] And yet you will; and yet another 'yet.'

*Val.* What means your ladyship? do you not like it?

*Sil.* Yes, yes: the lines are very quaintly writ;

But since unwillingly, take them again.  
Nay, take them. 122

*Val.* Madam, they are for you.

*Sil.* Ay, ay: you writ them, sir, at my request;

But I will none of them; they are for you;  
I would have had them writ more movingly.

*Val.* Please you, I'll write your ladyship another.

*Sil.* And when it's writ, for my sake read it over,

And if it please you, so; if not, why, so.

*Val.* If it please me, madam, what then?

*Sil.* Why, if it please you, take it for your labour: 129

And so, good morrow, servant. [*Erit.*]

*Speed.* O jest unseen, inscrutable, invisible,  
As a nose on a man's face, or a weathercock on a steeple!

My master sues to her, and she hath taught her suitor,

He being her pupil, to become her tutor.  
O excellent device! was there ever heard a better,

That my master, being scribe, to himself should write the letter?

*Val.* How now, sir? what are you reasoning with yourself?

*Speed.* Nay, I was rhyming: 'tis you that have the reason.

*Val.* To do what?

*Speed.* To be a spokesman from Madam Silvia.

*Val.* To whom?

*Speed.* To yourself: why, she wooes you by a figure.

*Val.* What figure?

*Speed.* By a letter, I should say.

*Val.* Why, she hath not writ to me?

*Speed.* What need she, when she hath made you write to yourself? Why, do you not perceive the jest? 160

*Val.* No, believe me.

*Speed.* No believing you; indeed, sir. But did you perceive her earnest?

*Val.* She gave me none, except an angry word.

*Speed.* Why, she hath given you a letter.

*Val.* That's the letter I writ to her friend.

*Speed.* And that letter hath she delivered, and there an end.

*Val.* I would it were no worse.

*Speed.* I'll warrant you, 'tis as well: 170  
For often have you writ to her, and she, in modesty,

Or else for want of idle time, could not again reply;

Or fearing else some messenger that might her mind discover,

Herself hath taught her love himself to write unto her lover.

All this I speak in print, for in print I found it.

Why muse you, sir? 'tis dinner-time.

*Val.* I have dined.

*Speed.* Ay, but hearken, sir: though the chameleon Love can feed on the air, I am one that am nourished by my victuals and would fain have meat. O, be not like your mistress, be moved, be moved. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. Verona. JULIA's house.

*Enter PROTEUS and JULIA.*

*Pro.* Have patience, gentle Julia.

*Jul.* I must, where is no remedy.

*Pro.* When possibly I can, I will return.

*Jul.* If you turn not, you will return the sooner.

Keep this remembrance for thy Julia's sake. [*Giving a ring.*]

*Pro.* Why, then, we'll make exchange; her take you this.

*Jul.* And seal the bargain with a holy kiss.

*Pro.* Here is my hand for my true constancy

And when that hour overslips me in the day

Wherein I sigh not, Julia, for thy sake, 181

The next ensuing hour some foul mischance

Torment me for my love's forgetfulness!

My father stays my coming; answer not;

The tide is now; nay, not thy tide of tears;

That tide will stay me longer than I should.

Julia, farewell! [*Erit Julia.*]

What, gone without a word?

Ay, so true love should do: it cannot speak:  
For truth hath better deeds than words to grace it.

## *Enter PANTHINO.*

*Pan.* Sir Proteus, you are stay'd for.

*Pro.* Go; I come, I come.

Alas! this parting strikes poor lovers dumb. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *The same. A street.**Enter LAUNCE, leading a dog.*

*Launce.* Nay, 'twill be this hour ere I have done weeping; all the kind of the Launces have this very fault. I have received my proportion, like the prodigious son, and am going with Sir Proteus to the Imperial's court. I think Crab my dog be the sourest-natured dog that lives: my mother weeping, my father wailing, my sister crying, our maid howling, our cat wringing her hands, and all our house in a great perplexity; it did not this cruel-hearted cur shed one tear: 'tis a stone, a very pebblestone, and has no more pity in him than a dog: a Jew would have wept to have seen our parting; why, my grandam, having no eyes, look you, wept herself blind at my parting. Nay, I'll show you the manner of it. 'This shoe is my father: no, this left shoe is my father: no, no, this left shoe is my mother: nay, that cannot be so neither: yes, it is so, it is so, it hath the worse sole. This shoe, with the hole in it, is my mother, and this my father; a vengeance on't! there 'tis: now, sir, this staff is my sister, for, look you, she is as white as a lily and as small as a wand: this hat is Nan, our maid: I am the dog; no, the dog is himself, and I am the dog—Oh! the dog is me, and I am myself: ay, so, so. Now come I to my father; Father, your blessing: now should not the shoe speak a word for weeping: now should I kiss my father; well, he weeps on. Now come I to my mother: O, that she could speak now like a wool woman! Well, I kiss her: why, there 'tis; here's my mother's breath up and down. Now come I to my sister; mark the mean she makes. Now the dog all this while sheds not a tear nor speaks a word; but see how I lay the dust with my tears.

*Enter PANTHINO.*

*Pan.* Launce, away, away, aboard! thy master is shipped and thou art to post after with oars. What's the matter? why weepst thou, man? Away, ass! you'll lose the tide, if you tarry any longer.

*Launce.* It is no matter if the tied were lost; for it is the unkindest tied that ever any man had.

*Pan.* What's the unkindest tide?

*Launce.* Why, he that's tied here, Crab, my dog.

*Pan.* Tut, man, I mean thou'lt lose the flood, and, in losing the flood, lose thy voyage, and, in losing thy voyage, lose thy master, and, in losing thy master, lose thy service, and, in losing thy service,—Why dost thou stop my mouth!

*Launce.* For fear thou shouldst lose thy tongue.

*Pan.* Where should I lose my tongue?

*Launce.* In thy tale.

*Pan.* In thy tail!

*Launce.* Lose the tide, and the voyage, and the master, and the service, and the tied! Why, man, if the river were dry, I am able to fill it with my tears; if the wind were down, I could drive the boat with my sighs.

*Pan.* Come, come away, man; I was sent to call thee.

*Launce.* Sir, call me what thou darest.

*Pan.* Wilt thou go?

*Launce.* Well, I will go. *[Exit.]*

SCENE IV. *Milan. The DUKE's palace.**Enter SILVIA, VALENTINE, THURIO, and SPEED.*

*Sil.* Servant!

*Val.* Mistress?

*Speed.* Master, Sir Thurio frowns on you.

*Val.* Ay, boy, it's for love.

*Speed.* Not of you.

*Val.* Of my mistress, then.

*Speed.* 'Twere good you knocked him. *[Exit.]*

*Sil.* Servant, you are sad.

*Val.* Indeed, madam, I seem so.

*Thur.* Seem you that you are not?

*Val.* Happily I do.

*Thur.* So do counterfeiters.

*Val.* So do you.

*Thur.* What seem I that I am not?

*Val.* Wise.

*Thur.* What instance of the contrary?

*Val.* Your folly.

*Thur.* And how quote you my folly?

*Val.* I quote it in your jerkin.

*Thur.* My jerkin is a doublet.

*Val.* Well, then, I'll double your folly.

*Thur.* How?

*Sil.* What, angry, Sir Thurio! do you change colour?

*Val.* Give him leave, madam; he is a kind of chameleon.

*Thur.* That hath more mind to feed on your blood than live in your air.

*Val.* You have said, sir.

*Thur.* Ay, sir, and done too, for this time.

*Val.* I know it well, sir; you always end ere you begin.

*Sil.* A fine volley of words, gentlemen, and quickly shot off.

*Val.* 'Tis indeed, madam; we thank the giver.

*Sil.* Who is that, servant?

*Val.* Yourself, sweet lady; for you gave the fire. Sir Thurio borrows his wit from your ladyship's looks, and spends what he borrows kindly in your company.

*Thur.* Sir, if you spend word for word with me, I shall make your wit bankrupt.

*Val.* I know it well, sir; you have an exchequer of words, and, I think, no other treasure to give your followers, for it appears, by their bare liveries, that they live by your bare words.

*Sil.* No more, gentlemen, no more: here comes my father.

*Enter DUKE.*

*Duke.* Now, daughter Silvia, you are hard beset.

Sir Valentine, your father's in good health: so What say you to a letter from your friends Of much good news?

*Val.* My lord, I will be thankful To any happy messenger from thence.

*Duke.* Know ye Don Antonio, your country-man?

*Val.* Ay, my good lord, I know the gentleman

To be of worth and worthy estimation  
And not without desert so well reputed.

*Duke.* Hath he not a son?

*Val.* Ay, my good lord; a son that well deserves

The honour and regard of such a father. 60

*Duke.* You know him well?

*Val.* I know him as my self; for from our infancy

We have conversed and spent our hours together;

And though myself have been an idle truant,  
Omitting the sweet benefit of time

To clothe mine age with angel-like perfection,  
Yet hath Sir Proteus, for that's his name,

Made use and fair advantage of his days;

His years but young, but his experience old;

His head unmellow'd, but his judgement ripe;

And, in a word, for far behind his worth 71

Comes all the praises that I now bestow,

He is complete in feature and in mind

With all good grace to grace a gentleman.

*Duke.* Beshrew me, sir, but if he make this good,

He is as worthy for an empress' love

As meet to be an emperor's counsellor.

Well, sir, this gentleman is come to me,

With commendation from ere it potentates;

And here he means to spend his time awhile:

I think 'tis no unwelcome news to you. 81

*Val.* Should I have wish'd a thing, it had been he.

*Duke.* Welcome him then according to his worth.

Silvia, I speak to you, and you, Sir Thurio;

For Valentine, I need not cite him to it:

I will send him hither to you presently. [Exit.

*Val.* This is the gentleman I told your ladyship

Had come along with me, but that his mistress

Did hold his eyes lock'd in her crystal looks. 91

*Sil.* Belike that now she hath enfranchis'd them

Upon some other pawn for fealty.

*Val.* Nay, sure, I think she holds them prisoners still.

*Sil.* Nay, then he should be blind; and, being blind,

How could he see his way to seek out you?

*Val.* Why, lady, Love hath twenty pair of eyes.

*Th.* They say that Love hath not an eye at all.

*Val.* To see such lovers, Thurio, as yourself:

Upon a homely object Love can wink.

*Sil.* Have done, have done; here comes the gentleman.

*Enter PROTEUS. [Exit THURIO.*

*Val.* Welcome, dear Proteus! Mistress, I beseech you,

Confirm his welcome with some special favour.

*Sil.* His worth is warrant for his welcome hither,

If this be he you oft have wish'd to hear from.

*Val.* Mistress, it is: sweet lady, entertain him

To be my fellow-servant to your ladyship.

*Sil.* Too low a mistress for so high a servant.

*Pro.* Not so, sweet lady: but too mean a servant

To have a look of such a worthy mistress.

*Val.* Leave off discourse of disability:

Sweet lady, entertain him for your servant. 120

*Pro.* My duty will I boast of; nothing else.

*Sil.* And duty never yet did want his need:

Servant, you are welcome to a worthless mistress.

*Pro.* I'll die on him that says so but yourself.

*Sil.* That you are welcome?

*Pro.* That you are worthless.

*Re-enter THURIO.*

*Thu.* Madam, my lord your father would speak with you.

*Sil.* I wait upon his pleasure. Come, Sir Thurio,

Go with me. Once more, new servant, welcome.

I'll leave you to confer of home affairs; 135

When you have done, we look to hear from you.

*Pro.* We'll both attend upon your ladyship.

*[Exeunt Silvia and Thurio.]*

*Val.* Now, tell me, how do all from whence you came?

*Pro.* Your friends are well and have them much commended.

*Val.* And how do yours?

*Pro.* I left them all in health.

*Val.* How does your lady? and how thrives your love?

*Pro.* My tales of love were wont to weary you;

I know you joy not in a love-discourse.

*Val.* Ay, Proteus, but that life is altered now:

I have done penance for contemning Love,

Whose high imperious thoughts have punish'd me

With bitter fasts, with penitential groans,

With nightly tears and daily heart-sore sighs:

For in revenge of my contempt of love,

Love hath chased sleep from my enthralled eyes

And made them watchers of mine own heart-sorrow.

O gentle Proteus, Love's a mighty lord

And hath so humbled me as I confess

There is no woe to his correction

Nor to his service no such joy on earth.

Now no discourse, except it be of love;

Now can I break my fast, dine, sup and sleep,

Upon the very naked name of love.

*Pro.* Enough; I read your fortune in your eye.

Was this the idol that you worship so?

*Val.* Even she; and is she not a heavenly saint?

*Pro.* No; but she is an earthly paragon.

*Val.* Call her divine.

*Pro.* I will not flatter her.

*Val.* O, flatter me; for love delights in praises.

*Pro.* When I was sick, you gave me bitter pills,

And I must minister the like to you. 170

*Val.* Then speak the truth by her; if not divine,

Yet let her be a principality,  
Sovereign to all the creatures on the earth.

*Pro.* Except my mistress.

*Val.* Sweet, except not any;  
Except thou wilt except against my love.

*Pro.* Have I not reason to prefer mine own?

*Val.* And I will help thee to prefer her too:  
She shall be dignified with this high honour—

To bear my lady's train, lest the base earth  
Should from her vesture chance to steal a kiss

And, of so great a favour growing proud, 161

Disdain to root the summer-swelling flower  
And make rough winter everlastingly.

*Pro.* Why, Valentine, what braggardism is this?

*Val.* Pardon me, Proteus: all I can is

nothing  
To her whose worth makes other worthies

nothing;  
She is alone.

*Pro.* Then let her alone.

*Val.* Not for the world: why, man, she is

mine own,  
And I as rich in having such a jewel

As twenty seas, if all their sand were pearl, 170

The water nectar and the rocks pure gold.  
Forgive me that I do not dream on thee,

Because thou see'st me dote upon my love.  
My foolish rival, that her father likes

Only for his possessions are so huge,  
I gone with her alone, and I must after,

For love, thou know'st, is full of jealousy.

*Pro.* But she loves you!

*Val.* Ay, and we are betroth'd: nay, more,  
Our marriage-hour,

With all the cunning manner of our flight, 180

Is ruined of; how I must climb her window,  
The ladder made of cords, and all the means

otted and 'greed on for my happiness,  
And Proteus, go with me to my chamber,

In these affairs to aid me with thy counsel.

*Pro.* Go on before; I shall inquire you

forth:  
I went unto the road, to disembark

the necessities that I needs must use,  
And then I'll presently attend you.

*Val.* Will you make haste? 190

*Pro.* I will. [*Exit Valentine.*]

Even as one heat another heat expels,  
Or as one nail by strength drives out another,

So the remembrance of my former love  
Is by a newer object quite forgotten.

'Tis it mine, or Valentine's praise,  
Her true perfection, or my false transgression,

That makes me reasonless to reason thus:  
She is fair; and so is Julia that I love—

That I did love, for now my love is thaw'd; 200

Which, like a waxen image 'gainst a fire,  
Leaves no impression of the thing it was.

Methinks my zeal to Valentine is cold,  
And that I love him not as I was wont.

O, but I love his lady too too much,  
And that's the reason I love him so little.

How shall I dote on her with more advice,  
That thus without advice begin to love her!

'Tis but her picture I have yet beheld,  
And that hath dazzled my reason's light; 210

But when I look on her perfections,  
There is no reason but I shall be blind.

If I can check my erring love, I will;  
If not, to compass her I'll use my skill. [*Exit.*]

# SCENE V. The same. A street.

*Enter SPEED and LAUNCE severally.*

*Speed.* Launce! by mine honesty, welcome  
to Milan!

*Launce.* Forswear not thyself, sweet youth,  
for I am not welcome. I reckon this always,

that a man is never undone till he be hanged,  
nor never welcome to a place till some certain

shot be paid and the hostess say 'Welcome!'

*Speed.* Come on, you madcap, I'll to the  
alehouse with you presently; where, for one

shot of five pence, thou shalt have five thousand  
welcomes. But, sirrah, how did thy master part

with Madam Julia?

*Launce.* Marry, after they closed in earnest,  
they parted very fairly in jest.

*Speed.* But shall he marry him?

*Launce.* No.

*Speed.* How then? shall he marry her?

*Launce.* No, neither. 19

*Speed.* What are they broken?

*Launce.* No, they are both as whole as a fish.

*Speed.* Why, then, how stands the matter  
with them?

*Launce.* Marry, thus: when it stands well  
with him, it stands well with her.

*Speed.* What an ass art thou! I understand  
thee not.

*Launce.* What a block art thou, that thou  
canst not! My staff understands me.

*Speed.* What thou sayest?

*Launce.* Ay, and what I do too: look thee,  
I'll but lean, and my staff understands me. 21

*Speed.* It stands under thee, indeed.

*Launce.* Why, stand-under and under-stand  
is all one.

*Speed.* But tell me true, will't be a match?

*Launce.* Ask my dog: if he say ay, it will;  
if he say no, it will; if he shake his tail and say

nothing, it will.

*Speed.* The conclusion is then that it will.

*Launce.* Thou shalt never get such a secret  
from me but by a parable. 41

*Speed.* 'Tis well that I get it so. But,  
Launce, how sayest thou, that my master is

become a notable lover?

*Launce.* I never knew him otherwise.

*Speed.* Than how?

*Launce.* A notable lubber, as thou reportest  
him to be.

*Speed.* Why, thou whoreson ass, thou mis-  
takest me. 43

*Launce.* Whv, fool, I meant not thee; I  
meant thy master.

*Speed.* I tell thee, my master is become a  
hot lover.

*Launce.* Why, I tell thee, I care not though  
he burn himself in love. If thou wilt, go with

me to the alehouse; if not, thou art an Hebrew, a Jew, and not worth the name of a Christian.

*Speed.* Why? 59

*Launce.* Because thou hast not so much charity in thee as to go to the ale with a Christian. Wilt thou go?

*Speed.* At thy service. [Exit.]

SCENE VI. *The same.* *The Duke's palace.*

*Enter PROTEUS.*

*Pro.* To leave my Julia, shall I be forsworn; To love fair Silvia, shall I be forsworn; To wrong my friend, I shall be much forsworn; And even that power which gave me first my oath

Provokes me to this threefold perjury; Love bids me swear and Love bids me forswear.

O sweet-suggesting Love, if thou hast sinn'd, Teach me, thy tempted subject, to excuse it! At first I did adore a twinkling star, But now I worship a celestial sun. 10 Unheeded vows may heedfully be broken, And he wants wit that wants resolved will To learn his wit to exchange the bad for better. Fie, fie, unreverend tongue! to call her bad, Whose sovereignty so oft thou hast prefer'd With twenty thousand soul-confirming oaths. I cannot leave to love, and yet I do; But there I leave to love where I should love. Julia I lose and Valentine I lose: If I keep them, I needs must lose myself; 20 If I lose them, thus find I by their loss For Valentine myself, for Julia Silvia. I to myself am dearer than a friend, For love is still most precious in itself; And Silvia—witness Heaven, that made her fair!—

Shows Julia but a swarthy Ethiop. I will forget that Julia is alive, Remembering that my love to her is dead; And Valentine I'll hold an enemy, Aiming at Silvia as a sweeter friend. 30 I cannot now prove constant to myself, Without some treachery used to Valentine. This night he meaneth with a corded ladder To climb celestial Silvia's chamber-window, Myself in counsel, his competitor. Now presently I'll give her father notice Of their disguising and pretended flight; Who, all enraged, will banish Valentine; For Thurio, he intends, shall wed his daughter; But, Valentine being gone, I'll quickly cross 40 By some sly trick blunt Thurio's dull proceeding. Love, lend me wings to make my purpose swift, As thou hast lent me wit to plot this drift!

[Exit.]

SCENE VII. *Verona.* *JULIA'S house.*

*Enter JULIA and LUCETTA.*

*Jul.* Counsel, Lucetta; gentle girl, assist me; And even in kind love I do conjure thee, Who art the table wherein all my thoughts Are visibly character'd and engrav'd, To lesson me and tell me some good mean How, with my honour, I may undertake

A journey to my loving Proteus.

*Luc.* Alas, the way is wearisome and long!

*Jul.* A true-devoted pilgrim is not weary To measure kingdoms with his feeble steps; 10 Much less shall she that hath Love's wings to fly.

And when the flight is made to one so dear, Of such divine perfection, as Sir Proteus.

*Luc.* Better forbear till Proteus make return.

*Jul.* O, know'st thou not his looks are my soul's food?

Pity the dearth that I have pined in, By longing for that food so long a time.

Didst thou but know the only touch of love, Thou wouldst as soon go kindle fire with snow As seek to quench the fire of love with words. 20

*Luc.* I do not seek to quench your love's hot fire,

But qualify the fire's extreme rage, Lest it should burn above the bounds of reason.

*Jul.* The more thou damnest it up, the more it burns.

The current that with gentle murmur glides, Thou know'st, being stopp'd, impatiently doth rage;

But when his fair course is not hindered, He makes sweet music with the enamell'd stones.

Giving a gentle kiss to every sedge He overtaketh in his pilgrimage, 30

And so by many winding nooks he strays With willing sport to the wild ocean.

Then let me go and hinder not my course: I'll be as patient as a gentle stream

And make a pastime of each weary step, Till the last step have brought me to my love;

And there I'll rest, as after much turmoil A blessed soul doth in Elysium.

*Luc.* But in what habit will you go along?

*Jul.* Not like a woman; for I would prevent The loose encounters of lascivious men 40

And Lucetta, fit me with such weeds As may besem some well-reputed page.

*Luc.* Why, then, your ladyship must cut your hair.

*Jul.* No, girl; I'll knit it up in silken strings

With twenty odd-conceited true-love knots. To be fantastic may become a youth

Of greater time than I shall show to be.

*Luc.* What fashion, madam, shall I make your breeches?

*Jul.* That fits as well as 'Tell me, good my lord,

What compass will you wear your farthingale? Why even what fashion thou best likes,

Lucetta.

*Luc.* You must needs have them with a codpiece, madam.

*Jul.* Out, out, Lucetta! that will be ill-favour'd.

*Luc.* A round hose, madam, now's not worth a pin,

Unless you have a codpiece to stick pins on.

*Jul.* Lucetta, as thou lovest me, let me have What thou thinkest meet and is most mannerly.

But tell me, wench, how will the world repute me

For undertaking so unstaid a journey ? 60  
I fear me, it will make me scandalized.

*Luc.* If you think so, then stay at home and go not.

*Jul.* Nay, that I will not.

*Luc.* Then never dream on infamy, but go.  
If Proteus like your journey when you come,  
No matter who's displeased when you are gone:  
I fear me, he will scarce be pleased withal.

*Jul.* That is the least, Lucetta, of my fear:  
A thousand oaths, an ocean of his tears  
And instances of infinite of love 70  
Warrant me welcome to my Proteus.

*Luc.* All these are servants to deceitful men.

*Jul.* Base men, that use them to so base effect!

But truer stars did govern Proteus' birth;  
His words are bonds, his oaths are oracles,  
His love sincere, his thoughts inmaculate,  
His tears pure messengers sent from his heart,  
His heart as far from fraud as heaven from earth.

*Luc.* Pray heaven he prove so, when you come to him!

*Jul.* Now, as thou lovest me, do him not that wrong 80

To bear a hard opinion of his truth:  
Only deserve my love by loving him;  
And presently go with me to my chamber,  
To take a note of what I stand in need of,  
To furnish me upon my longing journey.  
All that is mine I leave at thy dispose,  
My goods, my lands, my reputation;  
Only, in lieu thereof, dispatch me hence.  
'Come, answer not, but to it presently!  
I am impatient of my tarriance. [Exeunt. 90

## ACT III.

SCENE I. Milan. The Duke's palace.

Enter DUKE, THURIO, and PROTEUS.

*Duke.* Sir Thurio, give us leave, I pray, awhile;  
We have some secrets to confer about.

[Exit *Thur.*  
Now, tell me, Proteus, what's your will with me?

*Pro.* My gracious lord, that which I would discover  
The law of friendship bids me to conceal;  
But when I call to mind your gracious favours  
Done to me, undeserving as I am,  
My duty pricks me on to utter that  
Which else no worldly good should draw from me. 5

Know, worthy prince, Sir Valentine, my friend.  
This night intends to steal away your daughter  
Myself am one made privy to the plot.  
I know you have determined to bestow her  
On Thurio, whom your gentle daughter hates;  
And should she thus be stol'n away from you,  
It would be much vexation to your age.  
Thus, for my duty's sake, I rather chose  
To cross my friend in his intended drift  
Than, by concealing it, heap on your head  
A pack of sorrows which would press you down,  
Being unprevailed, to your timeless grave.

*Duke.* Proteus, I thank thee for thine honest care;

Which to requite, command me while I live.  
His love of theirs myself have often seen,  
Haply when they have judged me fast asleep.  
And oftentimes have purposed to forbid  
Sir Valentine her company and my court;  
But fearing lest my jealous aim might err  
And so unworthily disgrace the man,  
A rashness that I ever yet have shunn'd, 20  
I gave him gentle looks, thereby to find  
That which thyself hast now disclosed to me.  
And, that thou mayst perceive my fear of this,  
Knowing that tender youth is soon suggested,  
I nightly lodge her in an upper tower,  
The key whereof myself have ever kept;  
And thence she cannot be convey'd away.

*Pro.* Know, noble lord, they have devised a mean

Iow he her chamber-window will ascend  
And with a corded ladder fetch her down; 40  
For which this youthful lover now is gone  
And this way comes he with it presently;  
Where, if it please you, you may intercept him.  
But, good my lord, do it so cunningly  
That my discovery be not aimed at;  
For love of you, not hate unto my friend,  
Hath made me publisher of this pretence.

*Duke.* Upon mine honour, he shall never know

That I had any light from thee of this.

*Pro.* Adieu, my lord; Sir Valentine is coming. [Exit. 50

## Enter VALENTINE.

*Duke.* Sir Valentine, whither away so fast?  
*Val.* Please it your grace, there is a messenger  
That stays to bear my letters to my friends,  
And I am going to deliver them.

*Duke.* Be they of much import?  
*Val.* The tenour of them doth but signify  
My health and happy being at your court.

*Duke.* Nay then, no matter; stay with me awhile;

I am to break with thee of some affairs  
That touch me near, wherein thou must be secret. 60

'Tis not unknown to thee that I have sought  
To match my friend Sir Thurio to thy daughter.

*Val.* I know it well, my lord; and, sure, the match

Were rich and honourable; besides, the gentleman

Is full of virtue, bounty, worth and qualities  
Beseeming such a wife as your fair daughter:

Cannot your grace win her to fancy him?

*Duke.* No, trust me; she is peevish, sullen, forward,

Proud, disobedient, stubborn, lacking duty,  
Neither regarding that she is my child 70

Nor fearing me as if I were her father;  
And, may I say to thee, this pride of hers,

Upon advice, hath drawn my love from her;  
And, where I thought the remnant of mine age

Should have been cherish'd by her child-like duty,

I now am full resolved to take a wife

And turn her out to who will take her in :  
Then let her beauty be her wedding-dower ;  
For me and my possessions she esteems not.

*Val.* What would your grace have me to do  
in this? 80

*Duke.* † There is a lady in Verona here  
Whom I affect ; but she is nice and coy  
And nought esteems my aged eloquence :  
Now therefore would I have thee to my tutor—  
For long ago I have forgot to court ;  
Besides, the fashion of the time is changed—  
How and which way I may bestow myself  
To be regarded in her sun-bright eye.

*Val.* Win her with gifts, if she respect not  
words :

Dumb jewels often in their silent kind 90  
More than quick words do move a woman's  
mind.

*Duke.* But she did scorn a present that I sent  
her.

*Val.* A woman sometimes scorns what best  
contents her.

Send her another ; never give her o'er ;  
For scorn at first makes after-love the more.  
If she do frown, 'tis not in hate of you,  
But rather to begot more love in you :  
If she do chide, 'tis not to have you gone ;  
For why, the fools are mad, if left alone.  
Take no repulse, whatever she doth say ; 100  
For 'net you gone,' she doth not mean 'away !'  
Flatter and praise, commend, extol their graces ;  
Though ne'er so black, say they have angels  
faces.

That man that hath a tongue, I say, is no man,  
If with his tongue he cannot win a woman.

*Duke.* But she I mean is promised by her  
friends

Unto a youthful gentleman of worth,  
And kept severely from resort of men,  
That no man hath access by day to her.

*Val.* Why, then, I would resort to her by  
night.

*Duke.* Ay, but the doors be lock'd and keys  
kept safe,

That no man hath recourse to her by night.

*Val.* What lets but one may enter at her  
window ?

*Duke.* Her chamber is aloft, far from the  
ground,  
And built so shelving that one cannot climb it  
Without apparent hazard of his life.

*Val.* Why then, a ladder quaintly made of  
cords,

To cast up, with a pair of anchoring hooks,  
Would serve to scale another Hero's tower,  
So bold Leander would adventure it. 120

*Duke.* Now, as thou art a gentleman of  
blood,

Advise me where I may have such a ladder.

*Val.* When would you use it ? pray, sir, tell  
me that.

*Duke.* This very night ; for Love is like a  
child,

That longs for everything that he can come by.

*Val.* By seven o'clock I'll get you such a  
ladder.

*Duke.* But, hark thee ; I will go to her alone ;  
How shall I best convey the ladder thither ?

*Val.* It will be light, my lord, that you may  
bear it

Under a cloak that is of any length. 130

*Duke.* A cloak as long as thine will serve  
the turn ?

*Val.* Ay, my good lord.

*Duke.* Then let me see thy cloak :  
I'll get me one of such another length.

*Val.* Why, any cloak will serve the turn, my  
lord.

*Duke.* How shall I fashion me to wear a  
cloak ?

I pray thee, let me feel thy cloak upon me.  
What letter is this same ? What's here ? 'To  
Silvia' !

And here an engine fit for my proceeding.  
I'll be so bold to break the seal for once. [*Reads.*

'My thoughts do harbour with my Silvia nightly,  
And slaves they are to me that send them  
flying :'

O, could their master come and go as lightly,  
Himself would lodge where senseless they are  
lying !

My herald thoughts in thy pure bosom rest  
them ;

While I, their king, that hither them impor-  
tune,

Do curse the grace that with such grace hath  
blest'd them,

Because myself do want my servants' fortune  
I curse myself, for they are sent by me,

That they should harbour where their lord  
would be.'

What's here ? 150

'Silvia, this night I will enfranchise thee.'  
'Tis so ; and here's the ladder for the purpose.

Why, Phaethon,—for thou art Merops' son,—  
Wilt thou aspire to guide the heavenly car

And with thy daring folly burn the world ?  
Wilt thou reach stars, because they shine on  
thee ?

Go, base intruder ! overweening slave !  
Bestow thy fawning smiles on equal mates,

And think my patience, more than thy desert,  
Is privilege for thy departure hence : 160

Thank me for this more than for all the favours  
Which all too much I have bestow'd on thee.

But if thou linger in my territories  
Longer than swiftest expedition

Will give thee time to leave our royal court,  
By heaven ! my wrath shall far exceed the love

I ever bore my daughter or thyself.

Be gone ! I will not hear thy vain excuse ;  
But, as thou lovest thy life, make speed from  
hence. [*Exit.* 170

*Val.* And why not death rather than living  
torment ?

To die is to be banish'd from myself ;  
And Silvia is myself : banish'd from her

Is self from self : a deadly banishment !  
What light is light, if Silvia be not seen ?

What joy is joy, if Silvia be not by ?  
Unless it be to think that she is by

And feed upon the shadow of perfection.  
Except I be by Silvia in the night,

There is no music in the nightingale ;  
Unless I look on Silvia in the day,

There is no day for me to look upon ; 180



She is my essence, and I leave to be,  
If I be not by her fair influence  
Foster'd, illumined, cherish'd, kept alive.  
I fly not death, to fly his deadly doom:  
Tarry I here, I but attend on death:  
But, fly I hence, I fly away from life.

*Enter PROTEUS and LAUNCE.*

*Pro.* Run, boy, run, run, and seek him out.

*Launce.* Soho, soho!

*Pro.* What seest thou?

*Launce.* Him we go to find: there's not a hair on's head but 'tis a Valentine.

*Pro.* Valentine?

*Val.* No.

*Pro.* Who then? his spirit?

*Val.* Neither.

*Pro.* What then?

*Val.* Nothing.

*Launce.* Can nothing speak? Master, shall I strike?

*Pro.* Who wouldst thou strike?

*Launce.* Nothing.

*Pro.* Villain, forbear.

*Launce.* Why, sir, I'll strike nothing: I pray you,—

*Pro.* Sirrah, I say, forbear. Friend Valentine, a word.

*Val.* My ears are stopt and cannot hear good news.

So much of bad already hath possess'd them.

*Pro.* Then in dumb silence will I bury mine, For they are harsh, untuneable and bad.

*Val.* Is Silvia dead?

*Pro.* No, Valentine.

*Val.* No Valentine, indeed, for sacred Silvia

hath she forsworn me?

*Pro.* No, Valentine.

*Val.* No Valentine, if Silvia have forsworn me.

What is your news?

*Launce.* Sir, there is a proclamation that you are vanished.

*Pro.* That thou art banished—O, that's the news!

From hence, from Silvia and from me thy friend.

*Val.* O, I have fed upon this woe already,

And now excess of it will make me surfeit.

*Pro.* Both Silvia know that I am banished?

*Pro.* Ay, ay; and she hath offer'd to the doom—

Which, unreversed, stands in effectual force—

A sea of melting pearl, which some call tears:

Those at her father's churlish feet she tender'd;

With them, upon her knees, her humble self;

Wringing her hands, whose whiteness so became them.

As if but now they waxed pale for woe:

But neither bended knees, pure hands held up,

Sad sighs, deep groans, nor silver-shedding tears,

Could penetrate her uncompassionate sire;

But Valentine, if he be ta'en, must die.

Besides, her intercession chafed him so,

When she for thy repeal was suppliant,

That to close prison he commanded her,

With many bitter threats of biding there.

*Val.* No more; unless the next word that

thou speak'st

Have some malignant power upon my life:

If so, I pray thee, breathe it in mine ear,

As ending anthem of my endless dolour.

*Pro.* Cease to lament for that thou canst

not help.

And study help for that which thou lament'st.

Time is the nurse and breeder of all good.

Here if thou stay, thou canst not see thy love;

Besides, thy staying will abridge thy life.

Hope is a lover's staff; walk hence with that

And manage it against despairing thoughts.

Thy letters may be here, though thou art hence;

Which, being writ to me, shall be deliver'd

Even in the milk-white bosom of thy love.

The time now serves not to expostulate:

Come, I'll convey thee through the city-gate;

And, ere I part with thee, confer at large

(Of all that may concern thy love-affairs.

As thou lovest Silvia, though not for thyself,

Regard thy danger, and along with me!

*Val.* I pray thee, Launce, an if thou seest

my boy,

Bid him make haste and meet me at the North-

gate.

*Pro.* Go, sirrah, find him out. Come,

Valentine.

*Val.* O my dear Silvia! Hapless Valentine!

*[Exeunt Val. and Pro.]*

*Launce.* I am but a fool, look you; and yet

I have the wit to think my master is a kind of a

knave: but that's all one, if he be but one

knave. He lives not now that knows me to be

in love; yet I am in love; but a team of horse

shall not pluck that from me; nor who 'tis I

love; and yet 'tis a woman; but what woman,

I will not tell myself; and yet 'tis a milkmaid;

yet 'tis not a maid, for she hath had gossip;

yet 'tis a maid, for she is her master's maid, and

serves for wages. She hath more qualities than

a water-spaniel; which is much in a bare Chris-

tian. *[Pulling out a paper.]* Here is the cate-

log of her condition. Imprimis: She can fetch

and carry. Why, a horse can do no more: nay,

a horse cannot fetch, but only carry; therefore

is she better than a jade. Item: She can milk;

look you, a sweet virtue in a maid with clean

hands.

*Enter SPEED.*

*Speed.* How now, Signior Launce! what

news with your mastership?

*Launce.* With my master's ship? why, it is

at sea.

*Speed.* Well, your old vice still; mistake

the word. What news, then, in your paper?

*Launce.* The blackest news that ever thou

heard'st.

*Speed.* Why, man, how black?

*Launce.* Why, as black as ink.

*Speed.* Let me read them.

*Launce.* Fie on thee, jolt-head! thou canst

not read.

*Speed.* Thou liest; I can.

*Launce.* I will try thee. Tell me this: who

begot thee?

*Speed.* Marry, the son of my grandfather.

*Launce.* O illiterate loiterer! it was the son

of thy grandmother: this proves that thou canst not read.

*Speed.* Come, fool, come; try me in thy paper.

*Launce.* There; and Saint Nicholas be thy speed!

*Speed.* [*Reads*] 'Imprimis: She can milk.'

*Launce.* Ay, that she can.

*Speed.* 'Item: She brews good ale.'

*Launce.* And thereof comes the proverb: 'Blessing of your heart, you brew good ale.'

*Speed.* 'Item: She can sew.'

*Launce.* That's as much as to say, Can she so?

*Speed.* 'Item: She can knit.'

*Launce.* What need a man care for a stock with a wench, when she can knit him a stock?

*Speed.* 'Item: She can wash and scour.'

*Launce.* A special virtue; for then she need not be washed and scoured.

*Speed.* 'Item: She can spin.'

*Launce.* Then may I set the world on wheels, when she can spin for her living.

*Speed.* 'Item: She hath many nameless virtues.'

*Launce.* That's as much as to say, bastard virtues; that, indeed, know not their fathers and therefore have no names.

*Speed.* 'Here follow her vices.'

*Launce.* Close at the heels of her virtues.

*Speed.* 'Item: She is not to be kissed fasting, in respect of her breath.'

*Launce.* Well, that fault may be mended with a breakfast. Read on.

*Speed.* 'Item: She hath a sweet mouth.'

*Launce.* That makes amends for her sour breath.

*Speed.* 'Item: She doth talk in her sleep.'

*Launce.* It's no matter for that, so she sleep not in her talk.

*Speed.* 'Item: She is slow in words.'

*Launce.* O villain, that set this down among her vices! To be slow in words is a woman's only virtue: I pray thee, out with't, and place it for her chief virtue.

*Speed.* 'Item: She is proud.'

*Launce.* Out with that too; it was Eve's legacy, and cannot be taken from her.

*Speed.* 'Item: She hath no teeth.'

*Launce.* I care not for that neither, because I love crusts.

*Speed.* 'Item: She is curst.'

*Launce.* Well, the best is, she hath no teeth to bite.

*Speed.* 'Item: She will often praise her liquor.'

*Launce.* If her liquor be good, she shall: if she will not, I will; for good things should be praised.

*Speed.* 'Item: She is too liberal.'

*Launce.* Of her tongue she cannot, for that's writ down she is slow of; of her purse she shall not, for that I'll keep shut; now, of another thing she may, and that cannot I help. Well, proceed.

*Speed.* 'Item: She hath more hair than wit, and more faults than hairs, and more wealth than faults.'

*Launce.* Stop there; I'll have her: she was mine, and not mine, twice or thrice in that last article. Rehearse that once more.

*Speed.* 'Item: She hath more hair than wit.'

*Launce.* More hair than wit? It may be: I'll prove it. The cover of the salt hides the salt, and therefore it is more than the salt; the hair that covers the wit is more than the wit, for the greater hides the less. What's next?

*Speed.* 'And more faults than hairs.'

*Launce.* That's monstrous: O, that that were out!

*Speed.* 'And more wealth than faults.'

*Launce.* Why, that word makes the faults gracious. Well, I'll have her: and if it be a match, as nothing is impossible,—

*Speed.* What then?

*Launce.* Why, then will I tell thee—that thy master stays for thee at the North-gate.

*Speed.* For me?

*Launce.* For thee! ay, who art thou? he hath stayed for a better man than thee.

*Speed.* And must I go to him?

*Launce.* Thou must run to him, for thou hast stayed so long that going will scarce serve the turn.

*Speed.* Why didst not tell me sooner? pox of your love-letters!

*Launce.* Now will he be swinged for reading my letter; an unmannerly slave, that will thrust himself into secrets! I'll after, to rejoice in the boy's correction.

## SCENE II. *The same. The Duke's palace.*

*Enter DUKE and THURIO.*

*Duke.* Sir Thurio, fear not but that she will love you.

Now Valentine is banish'd from her sight.

*Thu.* Since his exile she hath despised me most,

Forsworn my company and rail'd at me,

That I am desperate of obtaining her.

*Duke.* This weak impress of love is as a figure

Trenched in ice, which with an hour's heat

Dissolves to water and doth lose his form.

A little time will melt her frozen thoughts

And worthless Valentine shall be forgot.

*Enter PROTEUS.*

How now, Sir Proteus! Is your countryman According to our proclamation gone?

*Pro.* Gone, my good lord.

*Duke.* My daughter takes his going grievously.

*Pro.* A little time, my lord, will kill that grief.

*Duke.* So I believe; but Thurio thinks not so.

Proteus, the good conceit I hold of thee—

For thou hast shown some sign of good desert—

Makes me the better to confer with thee.

*Pro.* Longer than I prove loyal to your grace

Let me not live to look upon your grace.

*Duke.* Thou know'st how willingly I would effect

The match between Sir Thurio and my daughter.

*Pro.* I do, my lord.

*Duke.* And also, I think, thou art not ignorant

How she opposes her against my will.

*Pro.* She did, my lord, when Valentine was here.

*Duke.* Ay, and perversely she perseveres so. What might we do to make the girl forget The love of Valentine and love Sir Thurio? 30

*Pro.* The best way is to slander Valentine With falsehood, cowardice and poor descent, Three things that women highly hold in hate.

*Duke.* Ay, but she'll think that it is spoke in hate.

*Pro.* Ay, if his enemy deliver it: Therefore it must with circumstance be spoken By one whom she esteemeth as his friend.

*Duke.* Then you must undertake to slander him.

*Pro.* And that, my lord, I shall be loath to do:

'Tis an ill office for a gentleman, 40 Especially against his very friend.

*Duke.* Where your good word cannot advantage him,

Your slander never can endamage him;

Therefore the office is indifferent,

Being entreated to it by your friend.

*Pro.* You have prevail'd, my lord: if I can do it

By aught that I can speak in his dispraise, She shall not long continue love to him.

But say this weed her love from Valentine, It follows not that she will love Sir Thurio. 50

*Thu.* Therefore, as you unwind her love from him,

Least it should ravel and be good to none,

You must provide to bottom it on me;

Which must be done by praising me as much

As you in worth dispraise Sir Valentine.

*Duke.* And, Proteus, we dare trust you in this kind,

Because we know, on Valentine's report,

You are already Love's firm votary

And cannot soon revolt and change your mind.

Upon this warrant shall you have access 60

Where you with Silvia may confer at large;

For she is lumpish, heavy, melancholy

And, for your friend's sake, will be glad of you;

Where you may temper her by your persuasion

To hate young Valentine and love my friend.

*Pro.* As much as I can do, I will effect:

But you, Sir Thurio, are not sharp enough;

You must lay lime to tangle her desires

By wailful sonnets, whose composed rhymes

Should be full-fraught with serviceable vows.

*Duke.* Ay, 71

Much is the force of heaven-bred poetry.

*Pro.* Say that upon the altar of her beauty

You sacrifice your tears, your sighs, your heart:

Write till your ink be dry, and with your tears

Moist it again, and frame some feeling line

That may discover such integrity:

For Orpheus' lute was strung with poets' sinews

Whose golden touch could soften steel and

stones, 80

Make tigers tame and huge leviathans

Forsake unsounded deeps to dance on sands.

After your dire-lamenting elegies,  
Visit by night your lady's chamber-window  
With some sweet concert; to their instruments  
Tune a deploring dump: the night's dead silence  
Will well become such sweet-complaining grievance.

This, or else nothing, will inherit her.

*Duke.* This discipline shows thou hast been in love.

*Thu.* And thy advice this night I'll put in practice.

Therefore, sweet Proteus, my direction-giver, Let us into the city presently 91

To sort some gentlemen well skill'd in music.

I have a sonnet that will serve the turn

To give the onset to thy good advice.

*Duke.* About it, gentlemen!

*Pro.* We'll wait upon your grace till after supper,

And afterward determine our proceedings.

*Duke.* Even now about it! I will pardon you. [Exeunt.]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. *The frontiers of Mantua. A forest.*

*Enter certain Outlaws.*

*First Out.* Fellows, stand fast; I see a passenger.

*Sec. Out.* If there be ten, shrink not, but down with 'em.

*Enter VALENTINE and SPEED.*

*Third Out.* Stand, sir, and throw us that you have about ye:

If not, we'll make you sit and rifle you.

*Speed.* Sir, we are undone; these are the villains

That all the travellers do fear so much.

*Val.* My friends,—

*First Out.* That's not so, sir: we are your enemies.

*Sec. Out.* Peace! we'll hear him.

*Third Out.* Ay, by my beard, will we, for he's a proper man. 10

*Val.* Then know that I have little wealth to lose:

A man I am cross'd with adversity;

My riches are these poor habiliments,

Of which if you should here disfigure me,

You take the sum and substance that I have.

*Sec. Out.* Whither travel you?

*Val.* To Verona.

*First Out.* Whence came you?

*Val.* From Milan.

*Third Out.* Have you long sojourned there?

*Val.* Some sixteen months, and longer might have stay'd, 21

If crooked fortune had not thwarted me.

*First Out.* What, were you banish'd thence?

*Val.* I was.

*Sec. Out.* For what offence?

*Val.* For that which now torments me to rehearse:

I kill'd a man, whose death I much repent;

But yet I slew him manfully in fight,

Without false vantage or base treachery.

*First Out.* Why, ne'er repent it, if it were done so.

But were you banish'd for so small a fault? 30

*Val.* I was, and held me glad of such a doom.

*Sec. Out.* Have you the tongues?

*Val.* My youthful travel therein made me happy,

Or else I often had been miserable.

*Third Out.* By the bare scalp of Robin Hood's fat friar,

This fellow were a king for our wild faction!

*First Out.* We'll have him. Sirs, a word.

*Speed.* Master, be one of them; it's an honourable kind of thievery. 40

*Val.* Peace, villain!

*Sec. Out.* Tell us this: have you any thing to take to?

*Val.* Nothing but my fortune.

*Third Out.* Know, then, that some of us are gentlemen,

Such as the fury of ungovern'd youth

Thrust from the company of awful men:

Myself was from Verona banish'd

For practising to steal away a lady.

An heir, and near allied unto the duke.

*Sec. Out.* And I from Mantua, for a gentleman, 50

Who, in my mood, I stabb'd unto the heart.

*First Out.* And I for such like petty crimes as these.

But to the purpose—for we cite our faults,

That they may hold excused our lawless lives;

And partly, seeing you are beautified

With goodly shape and by your own report

A linguist and a man of such perfection

As we do in our quality much want—

*Sec. Out.* Indeed, because you are a banish'd man,

Therefore, above the rest, we parley to you: 60

Are you content to be our general?

To make a virtue of necessity

And live, as we do, in this wilderness?

*Third Out.* What say'st thou? wilt thou be of our consort?

Say ay, and be the captain of us all:

We'll do thee homage and be ruled by thee,

Love thee as our commander and our king.

*First Out.* But if thou scorn our courtesy, thou diest.

*Sec. Out.* Thou shalt not live to brag what we have offer'd.

*Val.* I take your offer and will live with you,

Provided that you do no outrages 71

On silly women or poor passengers.

*Third Out.* No, we detest such vile base practices.

Come, go with us, we'll bring thee to our crews,

And show thee all the treasure we have got;

Which, with ourselves, all rest at thy dispose. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE II. Milan. Outside the DUKE'S palace, under SILVIA'S chamber.

*Enter PROTEUS.*

*Pro.* Already have I been false to Valentine  
And now I must be as unjust to Thurio.

Under the colour of commending him,  
I have access my own love to prefer:  
But Silvia is too fair, too true, too holy,  
To be corrupted with my worthless gifts.  
When I protest true loyalty to her,  
She twits me with my falsehood to my friend;  
When to her beauty I commend my vows,  
She bids me think how I have been forsworn 20  
In breaking faith with Julia whom I loved:  
And notwithstanding all her sudden quips,  
The least whereof would quell a lover's hope,  
Yet, spaniel-like, the more she upturns my love,  
The more it grows and fawneth on her still.  
But here comes Thurio: now must we to her window,  
And give some evening music to her ear.

*Enter THURIO and Musicians.*

*Thur.* How now, Sir Proteus, are you crept before us?

*Pro.* Ay, gentle Thurio: for you know that love

Will creep in service where it cannot go. 30

*Thur.* Ay, but I hope, sir, that you love not here.

*Pro.* Sir, but I do; or else I would be hence.

*Thur.* Who? Silvia?

*Pro.* Ay, Silvia: for your sake.

*Thur.* I thank you for your own. Now, gentlemen,

Let's tune, and to it lustily awhile.

*Enter, at a distance, Host, and JULIA in boy's clothes.*

*Host.* Now, my young guest, methinks you're aillycholly: I pray you, why is it?

*Jul.* Marry, mine host, because I cannot be merry. 40

*Host.* Come, we'll have you merry: I'll bring you where you shall hear music and see the gentleman that you asked for.

*Jul.* But shall I hear him speak?

*Host.* Ay, that you shall.

*Jul.* That will be music. *[Music plays:]*

*Host.* Hark, hark!

*Jul.* Is he among these?

*Host.* Ay; but, peace! let's hear 'em.

SONG.

Who is Silvia? what is she,  
That all our swains commend her? 40

Holy, fair, and wise is she;

The heaven such grace did lend her,

That she might admired be.

Is she kind as she is fair?

For beauty lives with kindness.

Love doth to her eyes repair,

To help him of his blindness,

And, being help'd, inhabits there.

Then to Silvia let us sing,

That Silvia is excelling;

She excels each mortal thing

Upon the dull earth dwelling:

To her let us garlands bring.

*Host.* How now! are you sadder than you were before? How do you, man! the music likes you not.

*Jul.* You mistake; the musician likes me not.

*Host.* Why, my pretty youth?

*Jul.* He plays false, father.

*Host.* How! out of tune on the strings? 60

*Jul.* Not so; but yet so false that he grieves my very heart-strings.

*Host.* You have a quick ear.

*Jul.* Ay, I would I were deaf; it makes me have a slow heart.

*Host.* I perceive you delight not in music.

*Jul.* Not a whit, when it jars so.

*Host.* Hark, what fine change is in the music!

*Jul.* Ay, that change is the spite.

*Host.* You would have them always play but one thing?

*Jul.* I would always have one play but one thing.

But, host, doth this Sir Proteus that we talk on often resort unto this gentlewoman?

*Host.* I tell you what Launce, his man, told me: he loved her out of all nick.

*Jul.* Where is Launce?

*Host.* Gone to seek his dog; which to-morrow, by his master's command, he must carry for a present to his lady.

*Jul.* Peace! stand aside: the company parts.

*Pro.* Sir Thurio, fear not you: I will so plead

That you shall say my cunning drift excels.

*Thu.* Where meet we?

*Pro.* At Saint Gregory's well.

*Thu.* Farewell.

[*Exeunt Thu. and Musicians.*]

*Enter SILVIA above.*

*Pro.* Madam, good even to your ladyship.

*Sil.* I thank you for your music, gentlemen. Who is that that spake?

*Pro.* One, lady, if you knew his pure heart's truth, You would quickly learn to know him by his voice.

*Sil.* Sir Proteus, as I take it.

*Pro.* Sir Proteus, gentle lady, and your servant.

*Sil.* What's your will?

*Pro.* That I may commend yours.

*Sil.* You have your wish; my will is even this:

That presently you hie you home to bed. Thou subtle, perjured, false, disloyal man!

Think'st thou I am so shallow, so conceited, To be seduced by thy flattery,

That hast deceived so many with thy vows? Return, return, and make thy love amends.

For me, by this pale queen of night I swear, I am so far from granting thy request

That I despise thee for thy wrongful suit, And by and by intend to chide myself

Even for this time I spend in talking to thee.

*Pro.* I grant, sweet love, that I did love a lady;

But she is dead.

*Jul.* [*Aside.*] 'Twere false, if I should speak it;

For I am sure she is not buried.

*Sil.* Say that she be; yet Valentine thy friend

Survives; to whom, thyself art witness, I am betroth'd: and art thou not ashamed

To wrong him with thy importunity?

*Pro.* I likewise hear that Valentine is dead.

*Sil.* And so suppose am I; for in his grave Assure thyself my love is buried.

*Pro.* Sweet lady, let me make it from the earth.

*Sil.* Go to thy lady's grave and call hers thence.

Or, at the least, in hers sepulchre thine.

*Jul.* [*Aside.*] He heard not that.

*Pro.* Madam, if your heart be so obdurate, Vouchsafe me yet your picture for my love,

The picture that is hanging in your chamber; To that I'll speak, to that I'll sigh and weep:

For since the substance of your perfect self is else devoted, I am but a shadow;

And to your shadow will I make true love.

*Jul.* [*Aside.*] If 'twere a substance, you would, sure, deceive it,

And make it but a shadow, as I am.

*Sil.* I am very loath to be your idol, sir; But since your falsehood shall become you well

To worship shadows and adore false shapes, I send to me in the morning and I'll send it;

And so, good rest.

*Pro.* As wretches have o'ernight That wait for execution in the morn.

[*Exeunt Pro. and Sil. severally.*]

*Jul.* Host, will you go?

*Host.* By my halidom, I was fast asleep.

*Jul.* Pray you, where lies Sir Proteus?

*Host.* Marry, at my house. Trust me, I think 'tis almost day.

*Jul.* Not so; but it hath been the longest night

That e'er I watch'd and the moost heaviest.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III. The same.

#### *Enter EGLAMOUR.*

*Egl.* This is the hour that Madam Silvia Entreated me to call and know her mind:

There's some great matter she'll employ me in. Madam, madam!

#### *Enter SILVIA above.*

*Sil.* Who calls?

*Egl.* Your servant and your friend; One that attends your ladyship's command.

*Sil.* Sir Eglamour, a thousand times good morrow.

*Egl.* As many, worthy lady, to yourself: According to your ladyship's impose,

I am thus early come to know what service It is your pleasure to command me in.

*Sil.* O Eglamour, thou art a gentleman— Think not I flatter, for I swear I do not—

Valiant, wise, remorseful, well accomplish'd: Thou art not ignorant what dear good will I bear unto the banish'd Valentine,

Nor how my father would enforce me marry Vain Thurio, whom my very soul abhors.

Thyself hast loved; and I have heard thee say  
 No grief did ever come so near thy heart  
 As when thy lady and thy true love died, 20  
 Upon whose grave thou vow'st pure chastity.  
 Sir Eglamour, I would to Valentine,  
 To Mantua, where I hear he makes abode;  
 And, for the ways are dangerous to pass,  
 I do desire thy worthy company,  
 Upon whose faith and honour I repose.  
 Urge not my father's anger, Eglamour,  
 But think upon my grief, a lady's grief,  
 And on the justice of my flying hence,  
 To keep me from a most unholy match, 30  
 Which heaven and fortune still rewards with  
 plagues.

I do desire thee, even from a heart  
 As full of sorrows as the sea of sands,  
 To bear me company and go with me:  
 If not, to hide what I have said to thee,  
 That I may venture to depart alone.

*Egl.* Madam, I pity much your grievances;  
 Which since I know thy virtuously are placed,  
 I give consent to go along with you,  
 Reckless as little what betideth me 40  
 As much I will all good befurniture you.  
 When will you go?

*Sil.* This evening coming.

*Egl.* Where shall I meet you?

*Sil.* At Friar Patrick's cell,  
 Where I intend holy confession.

*Egl.* I will not fail your ladyship. Good  
 morrow, gentle lady.

*Sil.* Good morrow, kind Sir Eglamour.

[*Exeunt severally.*]

#### SCENE IV. The same.

*Enter LAUNCE, with his Dog.*

*Launce.* When a man's servant shall play  
 the cur with him, look you, it goes haril: one  
 that I brought up of a puppy; one that I saved  
 from drowning, when three or four of his blind  
 brothers and sisters went to it. I have taught  
 him, even as one would say precisely, 'thus I  
 would teach a dog.' I was sent to deliver him  
 as a present to Mistress Silvia from my master;  
 and I came no sooner into the dining-chamber  
 but he steps me to her trencher and steals her  
 spon's leg: O, 'tis a foul thing when a cur  
 cannot keep himself in all companies! I would  
 have, as one should say, one that takes upon  
 him to be a dog indeed, to be, as it were, a dog  
 at all things. If I had not had more wit than  
 he, to take a fault upon me that he did, I think  
 verily he had been hanged for't: sure as I live,  
 he had suffered for't: you shall judge. He  
 thrusts me himself into the company of three  
 or four gentlemanlike dogs, under the duke's  
 table: he had not been there—bless the mark!—  
 a pissing while, but all the chamber smelt him.  
 'Out with the dog!' says one: 'What cur is  
 that?' says another: 'Whip him out!' says the  
 third: 'Hang him up!' says the duke. I,  
 having been acquainted with the smell before,  
 knew it was Crab, and goes me to the fellow  
 that whips the dogs: 'Friend,' quoth I, 'you  
 mean to whip the dog?' 'Ay, marry, do I,'  
 quoth he. 'You do him the more wrong,'

quoth I; 'twas I did the thing you wot of.'  
 He makes me no more ado, but whips me out  
 of the chamber. How many masters would do  
 this for his servant? Nay, I'll be sworn, I  
 have sat in the stocks for puddings he hath  
 stolen, otherwise he had been executed; I have  
 stood on the pillory for goose he hath killed,  
 otherwise he had suffered for't. Thou thinkest  
 not of this now. Nay, I remember the trick  
 you served me when I took my leave of Madam  
 Silvia: did not I bid thee still mark me and do  
 as I do? when didst thou see me heave up my  
 'cg and make water against a gentlewoman's  
 farthingale? didst thou ever see me do such a  
 trick?

*Enter PROTEUS and JULIA.*

*Pro.* Sebastian is thy name? I like thee  
 well.

And will employ thee in some service presently.

*Jul.* In what you please: I'll do what I can.

*Pro.* I hope thou wilt. [*To Launce*] How  
 now, you whoreson peasant!

Where have you been these two days loitering?

*Launce.* Marry, sir, I carried Mistress Silvia  
 the dog you bade me.

*Pro.* And what says she to my little jewel?  
*Launce.* Marry, she says your dog was a  
 cur, and tells you currish thanks is good enough  
 for such a present.

*Pro.* But she received my dog?

*Launce.* No, indeed, did she not: here have  
 I brought him back again.

*Pro.* What, didst thou offer her this from  
 me?

*Launce.* Ay, sir; the other squirrel was  
 stolen from me by the hangman boys in the  
 market-place: and then I offered her mine own,  
 who is a dog as big as ten of yours, and there-  
 fore the gift the greater.

*Pro.* Go get thee hence, and find my dog  
 again,

Or ne'er return again into my sight.

Away, I say! stay'st thou to vex me here?

[*Exit Launce.*]

A slave, that still an end turns me to shame!

Sebastian, I have entertained thee,

Partly that I have need of such a youth

That can with some discretion do my business.

For 'tis no trusting to yond foolish lout, 71

But chiefly for thy face and thy behaviour,

Which, if my augury deceive me not,

Witness good bringing up, fortune and truth:

Therefore know thou, for this I entertain thee.

Go presently and take this ring with thee,

Deliver it to Madam Silvia:

She loved me well deliver'd it to me.

*Jul.* It seems you loved not her, to leave  
 her token.

She is dead, belike?

*Pro.* Not so; I think she lives.

*Jul.* Alas!

*Pro.* Why dost thou cry 'alas'?

*Jul.* I cannot choose

But pity her.

*Pro.* Wherefore shouldst thou pity her?

*Jul.* Because methinks that she loved you  
 as well

As you do love your lady Silvia :  
 She dreams on him that has forgot her love ;  
 You dote on her that cares not for your love .  
 'Tis pity love should be so contrary ;  
 And thinking on it makes me cry ' alas ! '

*Pro.* Well, give her that ring and there-  
 withal 90  
 This letter. That's her chamber. Tell my  
 lady  
 I claim the promise for her heavenly picture.  
 Your message done, hie home unto my  
 chamber,  
 Where thou shalt find me, sad and solitary.

[*Exit.*  
*Jul.* How many women would do such a  
 message ?

Alas, poor Proteus ! thou hast entertain'd  
 A fox to be the shepherd of thy lambs.  
 Alas, poor fool ! why do I pity him  
 That with his very heart despiseth me ?  
 Because he loves her, he despiseth me ; 100  
 Because I love him, I must pity him.  
 'This ring I gave him when he parted from me,  
 To bind him to remember my good will ;  
 And now am I, unhappy messenger,  
 To plead for that which I would not obtain,  
 To carry that which I would have refused,  
 To praise his faith which I would have dis-  
 praised.

I am my master's true-confirmed love ;  
 But cannot be true servant to my master,  
 Unless I prove false traitor to myself. 110  
 Yet will I woo for him, but yet so coldly  
 As, heaven it knows, I would not have him  
 speed.

*Enter SILVIA, attended.*

Gentlewoman, good day ! I pray you, be my  
 mean

To bring me where to speak with Madam Silvia.

*Sil.* What would you with her, if that I be  
 she ?

*Jul.* If you be she, I do entreat your  
 patience

To hear me speak the message I am sent on.

*Sil.* From whom ?

*Jul.* From my master, Sir Proteus, madam.

*Sil.* O, he sends you for a picture. 120

*Jul.* Ay, madam.

*Sil.* Ursula, bring my picture there.

To give your master this : tell him from me,  
 the Julia, that his changing thoughts forget,  
 Would better fit his chamber than this shadow.

*Jul.* Madam, please you peruse this letter.—  
 Pardon me, madam ; I have unadvisedly  
 deliver'd you a paper that I should not ;  
 This is the letter to your ladyship.

*Sil.* I pray thee, let me look on that again.

*Jul.* It may not be ; good madam, pardon  
 me. 131

*Sil.* There, hold !

I will not look upon your master's lines :  
 I know they are stuff'd with protestations  
 And full of new-found oaths ; which he will  
 break

As easily as I do tear his paper.

*Jul.* Madam, he sends your ladyship this  
 ring.

*Sil.* The more shame for him that he sends  
 it me ;

For I have heard him say a thousand times  
 'tis Julia gave it him at his departure. 140  
 'Tough his false finger have profaned the ring,  
 Mine shall not do his Julia so much wrong.

*Jul.* She thanks you.

*Sil.* What say'st thou ?

*Jul.* I thank you, madam, that you tender  
 her.

Poor gentlewoman ! my master wrongs her  
 much.

*Sil.* Dost thou know her ?

*Jul.* Almost as well as I do know myself :  
 To think upon her woes I do protest

That I have wept a hundred several times. 150  
*Sil.* Belike she thinks that Proteus hath  
 forsook her.

*Jul.* I think she doth ; and that's her cause  
 of sorrow.

*Sil.* Is she not passing fair ?

*Jul.* She hath been fairer, madam, than  
 she is :

When she did think my master loved her well,  
 She, in my judgement, was as fair as you ;  
 But since she did neglect her looking-glass  
 And threw her sun-expiring mask away,  
 The air hath starv'd the roses in her cheeks  
 And pinch'd the lily-tincture of her face, 160  
 That now she is become as black as I.

*Sil.* How tall was she ?

*Jul.* About my stature ; for at Pentecost,  
 When all our pageants of delight were play'd,  
 Our youth got me to play the woman's part,  
 And I was trimm'd in Madam Julia's gown,  
 Which served me as fit, by all men's judge-  
 ments,

As if the garment had been made for me :  
 Therefore I know she is about my height.  
 And at that time I made her weep agood, 170

For I did play a lamentable part :  
 Madam, 'twas Ariadne passioning

For Theseus' perjury and unjust flight ;  
 Which I so lively acted with my tears

That my poor mistress, moved therewithal,  
 Wept bitterly ; and would I might be dead

If I in thought felt not her very sorrow !

*Sil.* She is beholding to thee, gentle youth.

Alas, poor lady, desolate and left !  
 I weep myself to think upon thy words. 180  
 Here, youth, there is my purse ; I give thee this  
 For thy sweet mistress' sake, because thou  
 lovest her.

Farewell. [*Erit Silvia, with attendants.*]

*Jul.* And she shall thank you for't, if e'er  
 you know her.

A virtuous gentlewoman, mild and beautiful !

I hope my master's suit will be but cold,

Since she respects my mistress' love so much.

Alas, how love can trifle with itself !

Here is her picture : let me see ; I think,

If I had such a tire, this face of mine 190

Were full as lovely as is this of hers :

And yet the painter flatter'd her a little,

Unless I flatter with myself too much.

Her hair is auburn, mine is perfect yellow :

If that be all the difference in his love,

I'll get me such a colour'd periwig.

Her eyes are grey as glass, and so are mine:  
 Ay, but her forehead's low, and mine's as high.  
 What should it be that he respects in her  
 But I can make respect in myself, 200  
 If this fond Love were not a blinded god?  
 'Come, shadow, come, and take this shadow up,  
 For 'tis thy rival. O thou senseless form,  
 Thou shalt be worshipp'd, kiss'd, loved and  
 adored!  
 And, were there sense in his idolatry,  
 My substance should be statue in thy stead.  
 I'll use thee kindly for thy mistress' sake,  
 That used me so; or else, by Jove I vow,  
 I should have scratch'd out your unseeing eyes,  
 To make my master out of love with thee!

[Exit.]

## ACT V.

## SCENE I. Milan. An abbey.

Enter EGLAMOUR.

Egl. The sun begins to gild the western sky;  
 And now it is about the very hour  
 That Silvia, at Friar Patrick's cell, should  
 meet me.  
 She will not fail, for lovers break not hours,  
 Unless it be to come before their time;  
 So much they spur their expedition.  
 See where she comes.

Enter SILVIA.

Lady, a happy evening!  
 Sil. Amen, amen! Go on, good Eglamour,  
 Out at the postern by the abbey-wall:  
 I fear I am attended by some spies.  
 Egl. Fear not: the forest is not three  
 leagues off;  
 If we recover that, we are sure enough.

[Exeunt.]

## SCENE II. The same. The DUKE's palace.

Enter THURIO, PROTEUS, and JULIA.

Thu. Sir Proteus, what says Silvia to my  
 suit?  
 Pro. O, sir, I find her milder than she was;  
 And yet she takes exceptions at your person.  
 Thu. What, that my leg is too long?  
 Pro. No; that it is too little.  
 Thu. I'll wear a boot, to make it somewhat  
 rounder.  
 Jul. [Aside] But love will not be spurr'd to  
 what it loathes.  
 Thu. What says she to my face?  
 Pro. She says it is a fair one.  
 Thu. Nay then, the wanton lies; my face is  
 black.  
 Pro. But pearls are fair; and the old saying  
 is,  
 Black men are pearls in beautiful ladies' eyes.  
 Jul. [Aside] 'Tis true; such pearls as put  
 out ladies' eyes;  
 For I had rather wink than look on them.  
 Thu. How likes she my discourse?  
 Pro. Ill, when you talk of war

Thu. But well, when I discourse of love and  
 peace!

Jul. [Aside] But better, indeed, when you  
 hold your peace.

Thu. What says she to my valour?

Pro. O, sir, she makes no doubt of that. 20  
 Jul. [Aside] She needs not, when she knows  
 it cowardice.

Thu. What says she to my birth?

Pro. That you are well derived.

Jul. [Aside] True; from a gentleman to a  
 fool.

Thu. Considers she my possessions?

Pro. O, ay; and pities them.

Thu. Wherefore?

Jul. [Aside] That such an ass should owe  
 them.

Pro. That they are out by lease.

Jul. Here comes the duke. 30

Enter DUKE.

Duke. How now, Sir Proteus! how now,  
 Thurio!

Which of you saw Sir Eglamour of late?

Thu. Not I.

Pro. Nor I.

Duke. Saw you my daughter?  
 Pro. Neither.

Duke. Why then,  
 She's fled unto that peasant Valentine;  
 And Eglamour is in her company.  
 'Tis true; for Friar Laurence met them both,  
 As he in penance wander'd through the forest:  
 Him he knew well, and guess'd that it was she,  
 But, being mask'd, he was not sure of it;  
 Besides, she did intend confession  
 At Patrick's cell this even; and there she was  
 not;  
 These likelihoods confirm her flight from hence.  
 Therefore, I pray you, stand not to discourse,  
 But mount you presently and meet with me  
 Upon the rising of the mountain-foot  
 That leads toward Mantua, whither they are  
 fled:  
 Dispatch, sweet gentlemen, and follow me.

[Exit.]

Thu. Why, this it is to be a peevish girl,  
 That flies her fortune when it follows her.  
 I'll after, more to be revenged on Eglamour  
 for the love of reckless Silvia.

[Exit.]

Pro. And I will follow, more for Silvia's sake  
 Than hate of Eglamour that goes with her.

[Exit.]

Jul. And I will follow, more to cross th.  
 love  
 Than hate for Silvia that is gone for love.

[Exit.]

## SCENE III. The frontiers of Mantua.

The forest.

Enter Outlaws with SILVIA.

First Out. Come, come,  
 Be patient; we must bring you to our captain.  
 Sil. A thousand more mischances than this  
 one  
 Have learn'd me how to brook this patiently.  
 Sec. Out. Come, bring her away.



*First Out.* Where is the gentleman that was with her?

*Third Out.* Being nimble-footed, he hath outrun us.

But Moyses and Valerius follow him.  
(to thou with her to the west end of the wood;  
There is our captain: we'll follow him that's fled;

The thickest is best; he cannot scape.

*First Out.* Come, I must bring you to our captain's cave:

Fear not; he bears an honourable mind,  
And will not use a woman lawlessly.

*Sil.* O Valentine, this I endure for thee!

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *Another part of the forest.*

*Enter VALENTINE.*

*Val.* How use doth breed a habit in a man!  
This shadowy desert, unfrequented woods,  
I better brook than flourishing peopled towns:  
Here can I sit alone, unseen of any,  
And to the nightingale's complaining notes  
Tune my distresses and record my woes.  
O thou that dost inhabit in my breast,  
Leave not the mansion so long tenantless,  
Lest, growing ruinous, the building fall  
And leave no memory of what it was!  
Repair me with thy presence, Silvia;  
Thou gentle nymph, cherish thy forlorn swain!  
What hallooing and what stir is this to-day?  
These are my mates, that make their wills their law,  
Have some unhappy passenger in chase.  
They love me well; yet I have much to do  
To keep them from uncivil outrages.  
Withdraw thee, Valentine: who's this comes here?

*Enter PROTEUS, SILVIA, and JULIA.*

*Pro.* Madam, this service I have done for you,  
Though you respect not aught your servant doth,  
To hazard life and rescue you from him  
That would have forced your honour and your love;  
Vouchsafe me, for my need, but one fair look;  
A smaller boon than this I cannot beg  
And less than this, I am sure, you cannot give.

*Val.* [Aside] How like a dream is this I see and hear!

Love, lend me patience to forbear awhile.

*Sil.* O miserable, unhappy that I am!

*Pro.* Unhappy were you, madam, ere I came;

but by my coming I have made you happy.

*Sil.* By thy approach thou makest me most unhappy.

*Jul.* [Aside] And me, when he approacheth to your presence.

*Sil.* Had I been seized by a hungry lion,  
I would have been a breakfast to the beast,

Rather than have false Proteus rescue me.

O, Heaven be judge how I love Valentine,

Whose life's as tender to me as my soul!  
And full as much, for more there cannot be,

I do detest false perjured Proteus.

Therefore be gone; solicit me no more.

*Pro.* What dangerous action, stood it next to death,

Would I not undergo for one calm look!

O, 'tis the curse in love, and still approved,

When women cannot love where they're beloved!

*Sil.* When Proteus cannot love where he's beloved.

Read over Julia's heart, thy first best love,  
For whose dear sake thou didst then rend thy faith

Into a thousand oaths; and all those oaths  
Descended into perjury, to love me.

Thou hast no faith left now, unless thou'dst two;

And that's far worse than none; better have none

Than plural faith which is too much by one:  
Thou counterfeit to thy true friend!

*Pro.* In love  
Who respects friend?

*Sil.* All men but Proteus.

*Pro.* Nay, if the gentle spirit of moving words

Can no way change you to a milder form,  
I'll woo you like a soldier, at arms' end,

And love you 'gainst the nature of love,—force ye.

*Sil.* O heaven!

*Pro.* I'll force thee yield to my desire.

*Val.* Ruffian, let go that rude uncivil touch,  
Thou friend of an ill fashion!

*Pro.* Valentine!

*Val.* Thou common friend, that's without faith or love,

For such is a friend now; treacherous man!  
Thou hast beguiled my hopes; nought but mine eye

Could have persuaded me; now I dare not say  
I have one friend alive; thou wouldst disprove me.

Who should be trusted, when one's own right hand

Is perjured to the bosom? Proteus,  
I am sorry I must never trust thee more,

But count the world a stranger for thy sake. 70  
The private wound is deepest: O time most accurst,

'Mongst all foes that a friend should be the worst!

*Pro.* My shame and guilt confounds me.  
Forgive me, Valentine: if hearty sorrow

Be a sufficient ransom for offence,  
I tender't here; I do as truly suffer

As e'er I did commit.

*Val.* Then I am paid;  
And once again I do receive thee honest.

Who by repentance is not satisfied  
Is nor of heaven nor earth, for these are pleased.

By penitence the Eternal's wrath's appeased: 81  
And, that my love may appear plain and free,  
All that was mine in Silvia I give thee.

*Jul.* O me unhappy!

*Pro.* Look to the boy.

*Val.* Why, boy! why, wag! how now! what's the matter? Look up; speak.

[*Swoons.*]

*Jul.* O good sir, my master charged me to deliver a ring to Madam Silvia, which, out of my neglect, was never done. 90

*Pro.* Where is that ring, boy?  
*Jul.* Here 'tis; this is it.

*Pro.* How! let me see:  
Why, this is the ring I gave to Julia.

*Jul.* O, cry you mercy, sir, I have mistook:  
This is the ring you sent to Silvia.

*Pro.* But how camest thou by this ring? At my depart  
I gave this unto Julia.

*Jul.* And Julia herself did give it me;  
And Julia herself hath brought it hither.

*Pro.* How! Julia!  
*Jul.* Behold her that gave aim to all thy oaths. 100

And entertain'd 'em deeply in her heart.  
How oft hast thou with perjury cleft the root!  
O Proteus, let this habit make thee blush!  
Be thou ashamed that I have took upon me  
Such an immodest raiment, if shame live  
In a disguise of love:  
It is the lesser blot, modesty finds,  
Women to change their shapes than men their minds.

*Pro.* Than men their minds! 'tis true. O heaven! were man 110  
But constant, he were perfect. That one error  
Fills him with faults; makes him run through  
all the sins:

Inconstancy falls off ere it begins.  
What is in Silvia's face, but I may spy  
More fresh in Julia's with a constant eye?

*Val.* Come, come, a hand from either:  
Let me be blest to make this happy close;  
'Twere pity two such friends should be long foes.

*Pro.* Bear witness, Heaven, I have my wish  
for ever.

*Jul.* And I mine. 120

*Enter Outlaws, with DUKE and THURIO.*

*Outlaws.* A prize, a prize, a prize!

*Val.* Forbear, forbear, I say! it is my lord  
the duke.

Your grace is welcome to a man disgraced,  
Banished Valentine.

*Duke.* Sir Valentine!

*Thu.* Yonder is Silvia; and Silvia's mine.

*Val.* Thurio, give back, or else embrace thy death;

Come not within the measure of my wrath;  
Do not name Silvia thine; if once again,

† Verona shall not hold thee. Here she stands:  
Take but possession of her with a touch: 130  
I dare thee but to breathe upon my love.

*Thu.* Sir Valentine, I care not for her, I:  
I hold him but a fool that will endanger  
His body for a girl that loves him not;  
I claim her not, and therefore she is thine.

*Duke.* The more degenerate and base art  
thou,

To make such means for her as thou hast done  
And leave her on such slight conditions.

Now, by the honour of my ancestry,  
I do applaud thy spirit, Valentine, 140

And think thee worthy of an empress' love:  
Know then, I here forget all former griefs,  
'Cancel all grudge, repeal thee home again,  
Plead a new state in thy unrival'd merit,

To which I thus subscribe: Sir Valentine,  
Thou art a gentleman and well derived;  
Take thou thy Silvia, for thou hast deserved her.

*Val.* I thank your grace; the gift hath made  
me happy.

I now beseech you, for your daughter's sake,  
To grant me boon that I shall ask of you. 15

*Duke.* I grant it, for thine own, whatever  
it be.

*Val.* These banish'd men that I have kept  
withal

Are men endued with worthy qualities:  
Forgive them what they have committed here

And let them be recall'd from their exile:  
They are reformed, civil, full of good

And fit for great employment, worthy lord.

*Duke.* Thou hast prevail'd; I pardon them  
and thee:

Dispose of them as thou know'st their deserts.  
Come, let us go: we will include all jars

With triumphs, mirth and rare solemnity.

*Val.* And, as we walk along, I dare be bold  
With our discourse to make your grace to smile.

What think you of this page, my lord?

*Duke.* I think the boy hath grace in him; he  
blushes.

*Val.* I warrant you, my lord, more grace  
than boy.

*Duke.* What mean you by that saying?

*Val.* Please you, I'll tell you as we pass  
along,

That you will wonder what hath fortun'd.  
Come, Proteus; 'tis your penance but to hear 170

The story of your loves discovered:  
That done, our day of marriage shall be yours;

One feast, one house, one mutual happiness.  
[Exeunt.]

# THE MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

SIR JOHN FALSTAFF.  
FENTON, a gentleman.  
SHALLOW, a country justice.  
SLENDER, cousin to Shallow.  
FORD, } two gentlemen dwelling at Windsor.  
PAGE, }  
WILLIAM PAGE, a boy, son to Page.  
SIR HUGH EVANS, a Welsh parson.  
DOCTOR CAIUS, a French physician.  
Host of the Garter Inn.  
BARDOLPH, }  
PISTOL, } sharpers attending on Falstaff.  
NYM, }

ROBIN, page to Falstaff.  
SIMPLE, servant to Slender.  
RUGBY, servant to Doctor Caius.

MISTRESS FORD.  
MISTRESS PAGE.  
ANNE PAGE, her daughter.  
MISTRESS QUICKLY, servant to Doctor Caius.

Servants to Page, Ford, &c.

SCENE: *Windsor, and the neighbourhood.*

### ACT I.

SCENE I. *Windsor. Before PAGE's house.*

*Enter JUSTICE SHALLOW, SLENDER, and SIR HUGH EVANS.*

*Shal.* Sir Hugh, persuade me not; I will make a Star-chamber matter of it: if he were twenty Sir John Falstuffs, he shall not abuse Robert Shallow, esquire.

*Slen.* In the county of Gloucester, justice of peace and 'Corum.'

*Shal.* Ay, cousin Slender, and 'Custalorum.'

*Slen.* Ay, and 'Rato-lorum' too; and a gentleman born, master parson; who writes himself 'Armigero,' in any bill, warrant, quittance, or obligation, 'Armigero.'

*Shal.* Ay, that I do; and have done any time these three hundred years.

*Slen.* All his successors gone before him hath done't; and all his ancestors that come after him may: they may give the dozen white lues in their coat.

*Shal.* It is an old coat.

*Evans.* The dozen white louses do become an old coat well; it agrees well, passant; it is a familiar beast to man, and signifies love.

*Shal.* The lue is the fresh fish; the salt fish is an old coat.

*Slen.* I may quarter, coz.

*Shal.* You may, by marrying.

*Evans.* It is marrying indeed, if he quarter it.

*Shal.* Not a whit.

*Evans.* Yes, py'r lady; if he has a quarter of your coat, there is but three skirts for yourself, in my simple conjectures: but that is all one. If Sir John Falstaff have committed disparagements unto you, I am of the church,

and will be glad to do my benevolence to make atonements and compromises between you.

*Shal.* The council shall hear it; it is a riot.

*Evans.* It is not meet the council hear a riot; there is no fear of Got in a riot: the council, look you, shall desire to hear the fear of Got, and not to hear a riot; take your vizaments in that.

*Shal.* Ha! o' my life, if I were young again, the sword should end it.

*Evans.* It is petter that friends is the sword, and end it: and there is also another device in my prain, which peradventure prings goot discretions with it: there is Anne Page, which is daughter to Master Thomas Page, which is pretty virginity.

*Slen.* Mistress Anne Page? She has brown hair, and speaks small like a woman.

*Evans.* It is that fery person for all the orld, as just as you will desire; and seven hundred pounds of moneys, and gold and silver, is her grandsire upon his death's-bed—Got deliver to a joyful resurrections!—give, when she is able to overtake seventeen years old: it were a goot motion if we leave our pribbles and prables, and desire a marriage between Master Abraham and Mistress Anne Page.

*Slen.* Did her grandsire leave her seven hundred pound?

*Evans.* Ay, and her father is make her a petter penny.

*Slen.* I know the young gentlewoman; she has good gifts.

*Evans.* Seven hundred pounds and possibilities is goot gifts.

*Shal.* Well, let us see honest Master Page. Is Falstaff there?

*Evans.* Shall I tell you a lie? I do despise a

liar as I do despise one that is false, or as I despise one that is not true. The knight, Sir John, is there; and, I beseech you, be ruled by your well-willers. I will peat the door for Master Page. [Knocks] What, ho! Got pless your house here!

Page. [Within] Who's there?

Enter PAGE.

Evans. Here is Got's plessing, and your friend, and Justice Shallow; and here young Master Slender, that peradventures shall tell you another tale, if matters grow to your likings.

Page. I am glad to see your worships well. I thank you for my venison, Master Shallow.

Shal. Master Page, I am glad to see you: much good do it your good heart! I wished your venison better; it was ill killed. How doth good Mistress Page?—and I thank you always with my heart, la! with my heart.

Page. Sir, I thank you.

Shal. Sir, I thank you; by yea and no. I do.

Page. I am glad to see you, good Master Slender.

Sten. How does your fallow greyhound, sir? I heard say he was outrun on Cotsall.

Page. It could not be judged, sir.

Sten. You'll not confess, you'll not confess.

Shal. That he will not. 'Tis your fault, 'tis your fault; 'tis a good dog.

Page. A cur, sir.

Shal. Sir, he's a good dog, and a fair dog: can there be more said? he is good and fair. Is Sir John Falstaff here?

Page. Sir, he is within; and I would I could do a good office between you.

Evans. It is spoke as a Christians ought to speak.

Shal. He hath wronged me, Master Page.

Page. Sir, he doth in some sort confess it.

Shal. If it he confessed, it is not redressed: is not that so, Master Page? He hath wronged me; indeed he hath; at a word, he hath, believe me: Robert Shallow, esquire, saith, he is wronged.

Page. Here comes Sir John.

Enter SIR JOHN FALSTAFF, BARDOLPH, NYN, and PISTOL.

Fal. Now, Master Shallow, you'll complain of me to the king!

Shal. Knight, you have beaten my men, killed my deer, and broke open my lodge.

Fal. But not kissed your keeper's daughter?

Shal. Tut, answ'! this shall be answered.

Fal. I will answer it straight; I have done all this.

That is now answered.

Shal. The council shall know this.

Fal. 'Twere better for you if it were known in counsel: you'll be laughed at.

Evans. Pauca verba, Sir John; goot worts. Fal. (Good worts!) good calbage. Slender, I broke your head: what matter have you against me?

Sten. Marry, sir, I have matter in my head against you; and against your cony-catching rascals, Bardolph, Nyn, and Pistol.

Bard. You Banbury cheese!

Sten. Ay, it is no matter.

Pist. How now, Mephostophilus!

Sten. Ay, it is no matter.

Nym. Slice, I say! pauca, pauca: slice! that's my humour.

Sten. Where's Simple, my man? Can you tell, cousin?

Evans. Peace, I pray you. Now let us understand. There is three unpires in this matter, as I understand; that is, Master Page, fidelicet Master Page; and there is myself, fidelicet myself; and the three party is, lastly and finally, mine host of the Garter.

Page. We three, to hear it and end it between them.

Evans. Fery goot: I will make a prief of it in my note-book; and we will afterwards ork upon the cause with as great discreetly as we can.

Fal. Pistol!

Pist. He hears with ears.

Evans. The teyl and his tam! what phrase is this, 'He hears with ear'? why, it is affectations.

Fal. Pistol, did you pick Master Slender's purse?

Sten. Ay, by these gloves, did he, or I would I might never come in mine own great chamber again else, of seven groats in mill-sixpences, and two Edward shovel boards, that cost me two shilling and two pence a-piece of Yead Miller, by these gloves.

Fal. Is this true, Pistol?

Evans. No; it is false, if it is a pick-purse.

Pist. Ha, thou mountain-foreigner! Sir

John and master mine,

I combat challenge of this latten bilbo.

Word of denial in thy labras here!

Word of denial: froth and scum, thou liest!

Sten. By these gloves, then, 'twas he.

Nym. Be advised, sir, and pass good humours: I will say 'merry trap' with you, if you run the nuthook's humour on me; that is the very note of it.

Sten. By this hat, then, he in the red fax had it; for though I cannot remember what 'id when you made me drunk, yet I am in altogether an ass.

Fal. What say you, Scarlet and John?

Bard. Why, sir, for my part, I say the gentleman had drunk himself out of his five senses.

Evans. It is his five senses: fie, what th ignorance is!

Bard. And being fap, sir, was, as the say, cashiered; and so conclusions passed the carvins.

Sten. Ay, you spake in Latin then too; but 'tis no matter: I'll ne'er be drunk whilst I live again, but in honest, civil, godly company, for this trick: if I be drunk, I'll be drunk with those that have the fear of God, and not with drunken knaves.

Evans. So Got udge me, that is a virtuous mind.

Fal. You hear all these matters denied, gentlemen; you hear it.

*Enter ANNE PAGE, with wine; MISTRESS FORD and MISTRESS PAGE, following.*

*Page.* Nay, daughter, carry the wine in; we'll drink within. [*Exit Anne Page.*]

*Slon.* O heaven! this is Mistress Anne Page.

*Page.* How now, Mistress Ford!

*Ful.* Mistress Ford, by my troth, you are very well met: by your leave, good mistress.

[*Kisses her.*]

*Page.* Wife, bid these gentlemen welcome. Come, we have a hot venison pasty to dinner: come, gentlemen, I hope we shall drink down all unkindness.

[*Exeunt all except Shal., Slon., and Evans.*]

*Slon.* I had rather than forty shillings I had my Book of Songs and Sonnets here.

*Enter SIMPLE.*

How now, Simple! where have you been? I must wait on myself, must I? You have not the Book of Riddles about you, have you?

*Sim.* Book of Riddles! why, did you not lend it to Alice Shortenake upon All-hallowmas last, a fortnight afore Michaelmas?

*Shal.* Come, coz, come, coz; we stay for you.

A word with you, coz; marry, this, coz: there is, as twere, a tender, a kind of tender, made afar off by Sir Hugh here. Do you understand me?

*Slon.* Ay, sir, you shall find me reasonable; if it be so, I shall do that that is reason.

*Shal.* Nay, but understand me.

*Slon.* So I do, sir.

*Evans.* Give ear to his motions, Master Slender: I will description the matter to you, if you be capacity of it.

*Slon.* Nay, I will do as my cousin Shallow says: I pray you, parlon me; he's a justice of peace in his country, simple though I stand here.

*Evans.* But that is not the question: the question is concerning your marriage.

*Shal.* Ay, there's the point, sir.

*Evans.* Marry, is it; the very point of it; to Mistress Anne Page.

*Slon.* Why, if it be so, I will marry her upon reasonable demands.

*Evans.* But can you affection the woman? at us command to know that of your mouth or of your lips; for divers philosophers hold that the lips is parcel of the mouth. Therefore, wisely, can you carry your good will to the maid?

*Shal.* Cousin Abraham Slender, can you love her?

*Slon.* I hope, sir, I will do as it shall become me that would do reason.

*Evans.* Nay, God's lords and his ladies! you must speak possible, if you can carry her your wits towards her.

*Shal.* That you must. Will you, upon good dowry, marry her?

*Slon.* I will do a greater thing than that, upon your request, cousin, in any reason.

*Shal.* Nay, conceive me, conceive me, sweet

coz: what I do is to pleasure you, coz. Can you love the maid?

*Slon.* I will marry her, sir, at your request: but if there be no great love in the beginning, yet heaven may decrease it upon better acquaintance, when we are married and have more occasion to know one another; I hope, upon familiarity will grow more contempt: but if you say, 'Marry her,' I will marry her; that I am freely dissolved, and dissolutely.

*Evans.* It is a fery discretion answer; save the fall is in the ort 'dissolutely': the ort is, according to our meaning, 'resolutely': his meaning is good.

*Shal.* Ay, I think my cousin meant well.

*Slon.* Ay, or else I would I might be hanged, la!

*Shal.* Here comes fair Mistress Anne.

*Re-enter ANNE PAGE.*

Would I were young for your sake, Mistress Anne!

*Anne.* The dinner is on the table; my father desires your worships' company.

*Shal.* I will wait on him, fair Mistress Anne.

*Evans.* Od's plessed will I will not be absence at the grace.

[*Exeunt Shallow and Evans.*]

*Anne.* Will't please your worship to come n, sir!

*Slon.* No, I thank you, forsooth, heartily; I am very well.

*Anne.* The dinner attends you, sir.

*Slon.* I am not a-hungry, I thank you, forsooth. Go, sirrah, for all you are my man, go wait upon my cousin Shallow. [*Exit Simple.*] A justice of peace sometime may be beholding to his friend for a man. I keep but three men and a boy yet, till my mother be dead: but what thought? yet I live like a poor gentleman born.

*Anne.* I may not go in without your worship: they will not sit till you come.

*Slon.* I' faith, I'll eat nothing; I thank you as much as though I did.

*Anne.* I pray you, sir, walk in.

*Slon.* I had rather walk here, I thank you. I bruised my shin th' other day with playing at sword and dagger with a master of fence; three veneys for a dish of stewed prunes; and, by my troth, I cannot abide the smell of hot meat since. Why do your dogs bark so? be there bears i' the town?

*Anne.* I think there are, sir; I heard them talked of.

*Slon.* I love the sport well; but I shall as soon quarrel at it as any man in England. You are afraid, if you see the bear loose, are you not?

*Anne.* Ay, indeed, sir.

*Slon.* That's meat and drink to me, now. I have seen Sackerson loose twenty times, and have taken him by the chain; but, I warrant you, the women have so cried and shrieked at it, that it passed: but women, indeed, cannot abide 'em; they are very ill-favoured rough things.

## Re-enter PAGE.

*Page.* Come, gentle Master Slender, come; we stay for you.

*Slender.* I'll eat nothing, I thank you, sir.

*Page.* By cock and pie, you shall not choose, sir! come, come.

*Slender.* Nay, pray you, lead the way.

*Page.* Come on, sir.

*Slender.* Mistress Anne, yourself shall go first.

*Anne.* Not I, sir; pray you, keep on.

*Slender.* Truly, I will not go first; truly, la! I will not do you that wrong.

*Anne.* I pray you, sir.

*Slender.* I'll rather be unmannerly than troublesome. You do yourself wrong, indeed, la!  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *The same.*

*Enter SIR HUGH EVANS and SIMPLE.*

*Evans.* Go your ways, and ask of Doctor Caius house which is the way; and there dwells one Mistress Quickly, which is in the manner of his nurse, or his dry nurse, or his cook, or his laundry, his washer, and his wringer.

*Simple.* Well, sir.

*Evans.* Nay, it is petter yet. Give her this letter; for it is a man that altogether's acquaintance with Mistress Anne Page; and the letter is, to desire and require her to solicit your master's desires to Mistress Anne Page. I pray you, be gone: I will make an end of my dinner; there's pippins and cheese to come.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *A room in the Garter Inn.*

*Enter FALSTAFF, HOST, BARDOLPH, Nym, PISTOL, and ROBIN.*

*Fal.* Mine host of the Garter!

*Host.* What says my bully-rook? speak scholarly and wisely.

*Fal.* Truly, mine host, I must turn away some of my followers.

*Host.* Discard, bully Hercules; cashier: let them wag; trot, tro.

*Fal.* I sit at ten pounds a week.

*Host.* Thou'rt an emperor, Caesar, Keisar, and Pheazar. I will entertain Bardolph; he shall draw, he shall tap: said I well, bully Hector!

*Fal.* Do so, good mine host.

*Host.* I have spoke; let him follow. [To Bard.] Let me see thee froth and lime: I am at a word; follow.  
[*Exit.*]

*Fal.* Bardolph, follow him. A tapster is a good trade: an old cloak makes a new jerkin; a withered serving-man a fresh tapster. Go; wou.

*Bard.* It is a life that I have desired: I will thrive.

*Pistol.* O base Hungarian wight! wilt thou the spigot wield?  
[*Exit Bardolph.*]

*Nym.* He was gotten in drink: is not the humour conceded?

*Fal.* I am glad I am so acquit of this tinder-

box: his thefts were too open; his fitching was like an unskilful singer; he kept not time.

*Nym.* The good humour is to steal at a minute's rest.

*Pistol.* 'Convey,' the wise it call. 'Steal!' foh! a fico for the phrase!

*Fal.* Well, sirs, I am almost out at heels.

*Pistol.* Why, then, let kilies ensue.

*Fal.* There is no remedy; I must cony-catch; I must shift.

*Pistol.* Young ravens must have food.

*Fal.* Which of you know Ford of this town?

*Pistol.* I ken the wight: he is of substance good.

*Fal.* My honest lads, I will tell you what I am about.

*Pistol.* Two yards, and more.

*Fal.* No quips now, Pistol! Indeed, I am in the waist two yards about; but I am now about no waste; I am about thrift. Briefly, I do mean to make love to Ford's wife: I spy entertainment in her; she discourses, she carves, she gives the leer of invitation: I can construe the action of her familiar style; and the hardest voice of her behaviour, to be Englished rightly, is, 'I am Sir John Falstaff's.'

*Pistol.* He hath studied her will, and translated her will, out of honesty into English.

*Nym.* The anchor is deep: will that humour pass?

*Fal.* Now, the report goes she has all the rule of her husband's purse: he hath a legion of angels.

*Pistol.* As many devils entertain; and 'To her, boy,' say I.

*Nym.* The humour rises; it is good: humour me the angels.

*Fal.* I have writ me here a letter to her: and here another to Page's wife, who even now gave me good eyes too, examined my parts with most judicious quillades; sometimes the beam of her view gilded my foot, sometimes my portly belly.

*Pistol.* Then did the sun on dunghill shine.

*Nym.* I thank thee for that humour.

*Fal.* O, she did so course o'er my exteriors with such a greedy intention, that the appetite of her eye did seem to scorch me up like a burning-glass! Here's another letter to her: she bears the purse too; she is a region in Guiana, all gold and bounty. I will be cheater to them both, and they shall be exchequers to me; they shall be my East and West Indies, and I will trade to them both. Go bear thou this letter to Mistress Page; and thou this to Mistress Ford: we will thrive, lads, we will thrive.

*Pistol.* Shall I Sir Pandarus of Troy become, And by my side wear steel? then, Lucifer take all!

*Nym.* I will run no base humour: here, take the humour-letter: I will keep the haviour of reputation.

*Fal.* [To Robin] Hold, sirrah, bear you these letters tightly;

Sail like my pinnace to these golden shores. Rogues, hence, avaunt! vanish like hailstones.

go

Trudge, plod away o' the hoof; seek shelter,  
pack!

Falstaff will learn the humour of the age,  
French thrift, you rogues; myself and skirted  
page.

[*Exeunt Falstaff and Robin.*]  
*Pist.* Let vultures gripe thy guts! for gourd  
and fullam holds,

And high and low beguiles the rich and poor:  
Tester I'll have in pouch when thou shalt lack,  
lase Phrygian Turk!

*Nym.* I have operations which be humours  
of revenge.

*Pist.* Will thou revenge? 100

*Nym.* By welkin and her star!

*Pist.* With wit or steel?

*Nym.* With both the humours, I:  
I will discuss the humour of this love to Page.

*Pist.* And I to Ford shall eke unfold

How Falstaff, varlet vile,

His dove will prove, his gold will hold,

And his soft couch deile.

*Nym.* My humour shall not cool: I will in-  
cense Page to deal with poison; I will possess  
him with yellowness, for the trevot of mine is  
dangerous: that is my true humour.

*Pist.* Thou art the Mars of malecontents: I  
second thee; troop on. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. A room in DOCTOR CAIUS'S house.

*Enter MISTRESS QUICKLY, SIMPLE, and  
RUGBY.*

*Quick.* What, John Rugby! I pray thee, go  
to the casement, and see if you can see my  
master, Master Doctor Caius, coming. If he  
do, I faith, and find any body in the house,  
here will be an old abusing of God's patience  
and the king's English.

*Rug.* I'll go watch.

*Quick.* Go; and we'll have a posset for't  
soon at night, in faith, at the latter end of a sea-  
coal fire. [*Exit Rugby.*] An honest, willing,  
kind fellow, as ever servant shall come in house  
withal, and, I warrant you, no tell-tale nor no  
breed-bate: his worst fault is, that he is given  
to prayer; he is something peevish that way;  
but nobody but has his fault; but let that pass.  
Peter Simple, you say your name is?

*Sim.* Ay, for fault of a better.

*Quick.* And Master Slender's your master?

*Sim.* Ay, forsooth.

*Quick.* Does he not wear a great round  
beard, like a Glover's paring-knife? 21

*Sim.* No, forsooth: he hath but a little wee  
face, with a little yellow beard, a Cain-coloured  
beard.

*Quick.* A softly-sprighted man, is he not?

*Sim.* Ay, forsooth; but he is as tall a man of  
his hands as any is between this and his head;  
he hath fought with a warrener.

*Quick.* How say you? O, I should remem-  
ber him: does he not hold up his head, as it  
were, and strut in his gait? 31

*Sim.* Yes, indeed, does he.

*Quick.* Well, heaven send Anne Page no  
worse fortune! Tell Master Parson Evans I  
will do what I can for your master: Anne is a  
good girl, and I wish—

*Re-enter RUGBY.*

*Rug.* Out, alas! here comes my master.

*Quick.* We shall all be shent. Run in here,  
good young man; go into this closet: he will  
not stay long. [*Shuts Simple in the closet.*]  
What, John Rugby! John! what, John, I say!  
Go, John, go inquire for my master; I doubt  
he be not well, that he comes not home. 43  
[*Singing*] And down, down, adown-a, &c.

*Enter DOCTOR CAIUS.*

*Caius.* Vat is you sing? I do not like des  
toys. Pray you, go and vetch me in my closet  
un boitier vert, a box, a green-a box: do intend  
vat I speak? a green-a box.

*Quick.* Ay, forsooth; I'll fetch it you.  
[*Aside*] I am glad he went not in himself: if  
he had found the young man, he would have  
been horn-mad. 52

*Caius.* Fe, fe, fe, fe! ma foi, il fait fort  
chaud. J'en vais a la cour—la grande affaire.

*Quick.* Is it this, sir?

*Caius.* Oui; mettez le au mon pocket: de-  
peche, quickly. Vere is dat knave Rugby?

*Quick.* What, John Rugby! John!

*Rug.* Here, sir!

*Caius.* You are John Rugby, and you are  
Jack Rugby. Come, take-a your rapier, and  
come after my heel to the court. 62

*Rug.* 'Tis ready, sir, here in the porch.

*Caius.* By my trot, I tarry too long. Od's  
me! Qu'ai-joublié! dere is some simples in my  
closet, dat I vill not for the vaild I shall leave  
behind.

*Quick.* Ay me, he'll find the young man  
there, and be mad!

*Caius.* O diable, diable! vat is in my closet?  
Villain! larron! [*Pulling Simple out.*] Rugby,  
my rapier! 72

*Quick.* Good master, be content.

*Caius.* Wherefore shall I be content-a?

*Quick.* The young man is an honest man.

*Caius.* What shall de honest man do in my  
closet? dere is no honest man dat shall come in  
my closet.

*Quick.* I beseech you, be not so phlegmatic.  
Hear the truth of it: he came of an errand to  
me from Parson Hugh. 81

*Caius.* Vell.

*Sim.* Ay, forsooth; to desire her to—

*Quick.* Peace, I pray you.

*Caius.* Peace-a your tongue. Speak-a your  
tale.

*Sim.* To desire this honest gentlewoman,  
your maid, to speak a good word to Mistress  
Anne Page for my master in the way of  
marriage.

*Quick.* This is all, indeed, la! but I'll ne'er  
put my finger in the fire, and need not. 91

*Caius.* Sir Hugh send-a you! Rugby, baille  
me some paper. Tarry you a little-a while.

[*Writes.*]

*Quick.* [*Aside to Simple*] I am glad he is  
so quiet; if he had been thoroughly moved, you  
should have heard him so loud and so melan-  
choly. But notwithstanding, man, I'll do you  
your master what good I can: and the very you

and the no is, the French doctor, my master,—I may call him my master, look you, for I keep his house; and I wash, wring, brew, lake, scour, dress meat and drink, make the beds, and do all myself,—

*Sim.* [*Aside to Quickly*] 'Tis a great charge to come under one body's hand.

*Quick.* [*Aside to Simple*] Are you advised o' that? you shall find it a great charge; and to be up early and down late; but notwithstanding,—to tell you in your ear; I would have no words of it,—my master himself is in love with Mistress Anne Page; but notwithstanding that, I know Anne's mind,—that's neither here nor there.

*Caius.* You jack-nape, give-a this letter to Sir Hugh; by gar, it is a shallenge: I will cut his throat in de park; and I will teach a scurvy jack-a-nape priest to meddle or make. You may be gone; it is not good you tarry here. By gar, I will cut all his two stoncs; by gar, he shall not have a stone to throw at his dog. 119

[*Exit Simple.*]

*Quick.* Alas, he speaks but for his friend.

*Caius.* It is no matter-a ven dat: do not you tell-a me dat I shall have Anne Page for myself? By gar, I will kill de Jack priest; and I have appointed mine host of de Jartecr to measure our weapon. By gar, I will myself have Anne Page.

*Quick.* Sir, the maid loves you, and all shall be well. We must give folks leave to prate: what, the good-jer! 129

*Caius.* Rugby, come to the court with me. By gar, if I have not Anne Page, I shall turn your head out of my door. Follow my heels, Rugby. [*Exeunt Caius and Rugby.*]

*Quick.* You shall have An fool's-head of your own. No, I know Anne's mind for that: never a woman in Windsor knows more of Anne's mind than I do; nor can do more than I do with her, I thank heaven.

*Fent.* [*Within*] Who's within there? ho!

*Quick.* Who's there, I trow! Come near the house, I pray you. 131

*Enter FENTON.*

*Fent.* How now, good woman! how dost thou?

*Quick.* The better that it pleases your good worship to ask.

*Fent.* What news? how does pretty Mistress Anne?

*Quick.* In truth, sir, and she is pretty, and honest, and gentle; and one that is your friend, I can tell you that by the way; I praise heaven for it. 151

*Fent.* Shall I do any good, thinkest thou? shall I not lose my suit?

*Quick.* Troth, sir, all is in his hands above: but notwithstanding, Master Fenton, I'll be sworn on a book, she loves you. Have not your worship a wart above your eye?

*Fent.* Yes, marry, have I; what of that?

*Quick.* Well, thereby hangs a tale: good faith, it is such another Nan; but, I detest, an honest maid as ever broke bread: we had an hour's talk of that wart. I shall never laugh but in that maid's company! But indeed she is

given too much to allicholy and musing: but for you—well, go to.

*Fent.* Well, I shall see her to-day. Hold, there's a money for thee; let me have thy voice in my behalf: if thou seest her before me, commend me. 160

*Quick.* Will I? i' faith, that we will; and I will tell your worship more of the wart the next time we have confidence; and of other wocers.

*Fent.* Well, farewell; I am in great haste now.

*Quick.* Farewell to your worship. [*Exit Fenton.*] Truly, an honest gentleman: but Anne loves him not; for I know Anne's mind as well as another does. Out upon't! what have I forgot! [*Exit.*] 160

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. Before PAGE's house.

*Enter MISTRESS PAGE, with a letter.*

*Mrs Page.* What have I scaped love-letters in the holi-day-time of my beauty, and am I now a subject for them? Let me see. [*Reads.*]

'Ask me no reason why I love you; for though Love use Reason for his physician, he admits him not for his counsellor. You are not young, no more am I; go to then, there's sympathy: you are merry, so am I; ha, ha! then there's more sympathy: you love sack, and so do I; would you desire better sympathy? Let it suffice thee, Mistress Page,—at the least, if the love of soldier can suffice,—that I love thee. I will not say, pity me; 'tis not a soldier-like phrase: but I say, love me. By me,

Thine own true knight,

By day or night,

Or any kind of light,

With all his might

For thee to fight, JOHN FALSTAFF.'

What a Herod of Jewry is this! O wicked, wicked world! One that is well-nigh wroth to pieces with age to show himself a young gallant! What an unweighed behaviour hath this Flemish drunkard picked—with the devil's name!—out of my conversation, that he dares in this manner assay me? Why, he hath not been thrice in my company! What should I say to him? I was then frugal of my mirth: Heaven forgive me! Why, I'll exhibit a bill in the parliament for the putting down of men. How shall I be revenged on him? for revenged I will be, as sure as his guts are made of puddings.

*Enter MISTRESS FORD.*

*Mrs Ford.* Mistress Page! trust me, I was going to your house.

*Mrs Page.* And, trust me, I was coming to you. You look very ill.

*Mrs Ford.* Nay, I'll ne'er believe that; I have to show to the contrary.

*Mrs Page.* Faith, but you do, in my mind.

*Mrs Ford.* Well, I do then; yet I say I could show you to the contrary. O Mistress Page, give me some counsel!

*Mrs Page.* What's the matter, woman?



*Mrs Ford.* O woman, if it were not for one trifling respect, I could come to such honour!

*Mrs Page.* Hang the trifle, woman! take the honour. What is it? dispense with trifles; what is it?

*Mrs Ford.* If I would but go to hell for an eternal-moment or so, I could be knighted. 50

*Mrs Page.* What? thou liest! Sir Alice Ford! These knights will hack; and so thou shouldst not alter the article of thy gentry.

*Mrs Ford.* We burn daylight: here, read, read; perceive how I might be knighted. I shall think the worse of fat men, as long as I have an eye to make difference of men's liking; and yet he would not swear; praised women's modesty; and gave such orderly and well-behaved reproof to all uncomeliness, that I would have sworn his disposition would have gone to the truth of his words; but they do no more adhere and keep place together than the Hundredth Psalm to the tune of 'Green Sleeves.' What tempest, I trow, threw this whale, with so many tunns of oil in his belly, ashore at Windsor? How shall I be revenged on him? I think the best way were to entertain him with hope, till the wicked fire of lust have melted him in his own grease. Did you ever hear the like? 70

*Mrs Page.* Letter for letter, but that the name of Page and Ford differs! To thy great comfort in this mystery of ill opinions, here's the twin-brother of thy letter: but let thine inherit first; for, I protest, mine never shall. I warrant he hath a thousand of these letters, writ with blank space for different names,—sure, more,—and these are of the second edition: he will print them, out of doubt; for he cares not what he puts into the press, when he would put us two. I had rather be a giantess, and lie under Mount Pelion. Well, I will find you twenty lascivious turtles ere one chaste man.

*Mrs Ford.* Why, this is the very same; the very hand, the very words. What doth he think of us?

*Mrs Page.* Nay, I know not: it makes me almost ready to wrangle with mine own honesty. I'll entertain myself like one that I am not acquainted withal; for, sure, unless he know some strain in me, that I know not myself, he would never have boarded me in this fury.

*Mrs Ford.* 'Boarding,' call you it? I'll be sure to keep him above deck.

*Mrs Page.* No will I: if he come under my hatches, I'll never to sea again. Let's be revenged on him: let's appoint him a meeting; give him a show of comfort in his suit and lead him on with a fine-baited delay, till he hath pawned his horses to mine host of the Garter. 100

*Mrs Ford.* Nay, I will consent to act any villany against him, that may not sully the chariness of our honesty. O, that my husband saw this letter! it would give eternal food to his jealousy.

*Mrs Page.* Why, look where he comes; and my good man too: he's as far from jealousy as I am from giving him cause; and that I hope is an unmeasurable distance.

*Mrs Ford.* You are the happier woman. 110  
*Mrs Page.* Let's consult together against this greasy knight. Come hither. [They retire.]

*Enter FORD with PISTOL, and PAGE with NYM.*

*Ford.* Well, I hope it be not so.  
*Pist.* Hope is a curtal dog in some affairs: Sir John affects thy wife.

*Ford.* Why, sir, my wife is not young.

*Pist.* He woos both high and low, both rich and poor,

Both young and old, one with another, Ford; he loves the gallimaufry: Ford, perpend.

*Ford.* Love my wife! 120  
*Pist.* With liver burning hot. Prevent, or go thou,

Like Sir Actæon he, with Ringwood at thy heels: O, odious is the name!

*Ford.* What name, sir?

*Pist.* The horn, I say. Farewell.

Take heed, have open eye, for thieves do foot by night:

Take heed, ere summer comes or cuckoo-birds do sing.

Away, Sir Corporal Nym!

Believe it, Page; he speaks sense. [Exit.

*Ford.* [Aside] I will be patient; I will find out this. 131

*Nym.* [To Page] And this is true; I like not the humour of lying. He hath wronged me in some humours: I should have borne the humoured letter to her; but I have a sword and it shall bite upon my necessity. He loves your wife; there's the short and the long. My name is Corporal Nym; I speak and I avouch: 'tis true: my name is Nym and Falstaff loves your wife. Adieu. I love not the humour of bread and cheese, and there's the humour of it. Adieu. [Exit.]

*Page.* 'The humour of it,' quoth a'! here's a fellow frights English out of his wits.

*Ford.* I will seek out Falstaff.

*Page.* I never heard such a drawling, affecting rogue.

*Ford.* If I do find it: well.

*Page.* I will not believe such a Catalian, though the priest o' the town commended him for a true man. 150

*Ford.* 'Twas a good sensible fellow: well.

*Page.* How now, Meg!

[Mrs Page and Mrs Ford come forward.]

*Mrs Page.* Whither go you, George? Hark you.

*Mrs Ford.* How now, sweet Frank! why art thou melancholy?

*Ford.* I melancholy! I am not melancholy. Get you home, go.

*Mrs Ford.* Faith, thou hast some crotchets in thy head. Now, will you go, Mistress Page?

*Mrs Page.* Have with you. You'll come to dinner, George. [Aside to Mrs Ford] Look who comes yonder: she shall be our messenger to this paltry knight.

*Mrs Ford.* [Aside to Mrs Page] Trust me, I thought on her: she'll fit it.

*Enter MISTRESS QUICKLY.*

*Mrs Page.* You are come to see my daughter Anne?

*Quick.* Ay, forsooth; and, I pray, how does good Mistress Anne?

*Mrs Page.* Go in with us and see: we have an hour's talk with you.

[*Exeunt Mrs Page, Mrs Ford, and Mrs Quickly.*]

*Page.* How now, Master For!

*Ford.* You heard what this knave told me, did you not?

*Page.* Yes: and you heard what the other told me?

*Ford.* Do you think there is truth in them?

*Page.* Hang 'em, slaves! I do not think the knight would offer it; but these that accuse him in his intent towards our wives are a yoke of his discarded men; very rogues, now they be out of service.

*Ford.* Were they his men?

*Page.* Marry, were they.

*Ford.* I like it never the better for that. Does he lie at the Garter?

*Page.* Ay, marry, does he. If he should intend this voyage towards my wife, I would turn her loose to him; and what he gets more of her than sharp words, let it lie on my head.

*Ford.* I do not misdoubt my wife; but I would be loath to turn them together. A man may be too confident: I would have nothing lie on my head: I cannot be thus satisfied.

*Page.* Look where my ranting host of the Garter comes: there is either liquor in his pate or money in his purse when he looks so merrily.

*Enter Host.*

How now, mine host!

*Host.* How now, bully-rook! thou'rt a gentleman. Cavaleiro-justice, I say!

*Enter SHALLOW.*

*Shal.* I follow, mine host, I follow. Good even and twenty, good Master Page! Master Page, will you go with us? we have sport in hand.

*Host.* Tell him, cavaleiro-justice; tell him, bully-rook.

*Shal.* Sir, there is a fray to be fought between Sir Hugh the Welsh priest and Caius the French doctor.

*Ford.* Good mine host o' the Garter, a word with you.

[*Drawing him aside.*]

*Host.* What sayest thou, my bully-rook?

*Shal.* [To *Page*] Will you go with us to behold it? My merry host hath had the measuring of their weapons; and, I think, hath appointed them contrary places; for, believe me, I hear the parson is no jester. Hark, I will tell you what our sport shall be.

[*They converse apart.*]

*Host.* Hast thou no suit against my knight, my guest-cavaleiro?

*Ford.* None, I protest; but I'll give you a pot of burnt sack to give me recourse to him and tell him my name is Brook; only for a jest.

*Host.* My hand, bully; thou shalt have egress and regress;—said I well?—and thy

name shall be Brook. It is a merry knight Will you go, t'An-heires?

*Shal.* Have with you, mine host.

*Page.* I have heard the Frenchman had good skill in his rapier.

*Shal.* Tut, sir, I could have told you more. In these times you stand on distance, your passes, stoccadoes, and I know not what: 'tis the heart, Master Page; 'tis here, 'tis here. I have seen the time, with my long sword I would have made you four tall fellows skip like rats.

*Host.* Here, boys, here, here! shall we wag? *Page.* Have with you. I had rather hear them scold than fight.

[*Exeunt Host, Shal., and Page.*]

*Ford.* Though Page be a secure fool, and stands so firmly on his wife's frailty, yet I cannot put off my opinion so easily: she was in his company at Page's house; and what they made there, I know not. Well, I will look further into it; and I have a disguise to sound Falstaff. If I find her honest, I lose not my labour; if she be otherwise, 'tis labour well bestowed.

[*Exit.*]

## SCENE II. A room in the Garter Inn.

*Enter FALSTAFF and PISTOL.*

*Fal.* I will not lend thee a penny.

*Pist.* Why, then the world's mine oyster, Which I with sword will open.

*Fal.* Not a penny. I have been content, sir, you should lay my countenance to pawn: I have grated upon my good friends for three reprieves for you and your coach-fellow Nym; or else you had looked through the grate, like a gemmy of baloons. I am damned in hell for swearing to gentlemen my friends, you were good soldiers and tall fellows; and when Mistress Bridget lost the handle of her fan, I took't upon mine honour thou hadst it not.

*Pist.* Didst not thou share? hadst thou not fifteen pence?

*Fal.* Reason, you rogue, reason: thinkest thou I'll endanger my soul gratis? At a word, hang no more about me, I am no gibbet for you. Go. A short knife and a throng! To your manor of Pickt-hatch! Go. You'll not bear a letter for me, you rogue! you stand upon your honour! Why, thou uncontinuable baseness, it is as much as I can do to keep the terms of my honour precise: I, I, myself sometimes, leaving the fear of God on the left hand and hiding mine honour in my necessity, am fain to shuffle, to hedge and to lurch; and yet you, rogue, will ensconce your rags, your catamountain looks, your red-lattice phrases, and your bold-beating oaths, under the shelter of your honour! You will not do it, you!

*Pist.* I do relent: what would thou more of man?

*Enter ROBIN.*

*Rob.* Sir, here's a woman would speak with you.

*Fal.* Let her approach.

*Enter MISTRESS QUICKLY.*

*Quick.* Give your worship good morrow.

*Fal.* Good morrow, good wife.

*Quick.* Not so, an't please your worship.

*Fal.* Good maid, then.

*Quick.* I'll be sworn,

As my mother was, the first hour I was born.

*Fal.* I do believe the sweeter. What with me? 40

*Quick.* Shall I vouchsafe your worship a word or two?

*Fal.* Two thousand, fair woman: and I'll vouchsafe thee the hearing.

*Quick.* There is one Mistress Ford, sir:—I pray, come a little nearer this ways:—I myself dwell with Master Doctor Caius,—

*Fal.* Well, on: Mistress Ford, you say,—

*Quick.* Your worship says very true: I pray your worship, come a little nearer this ways. 50

*Fal.* I warrant thee, nobody hears; mine own people, mine own people.

*Quick.* Are they so? God bless them and make them his servants!

*Fal.* Well, Mistress Ford; what of her?

*Quick.* Why, sir, she's a good creature. Lord, Lord! your worship's a wanton! Well, heaven forgive you and all of us, I pray!

*Fal.* Mistress Ford; come, Mistress Ford,

*Quick.* Marry, this is the short and the long of it; you have brought her into such a canaries as 'tis wonderful. The best courtier of them all, when the court lay at Windsor, could never have brought her to such a canary. Yet there has been knights, and lords, and gentlemen, with their coaches, I warrant you, coach after coach, letter after letter, gift after gift; smelling so sweetly, all musk, and so rushing, I warrant you, in silk and gold; and in such alligant terms; and in such wine and sugar of the best and the fairest, that would have won any woman's heart; and, I warrant you, they could never get an eye-wink of her: I had myself twenty angels given me this morning; but I defy all angels, in any such sort, as they say, but in the way of honesty: and, I warrant you, they could never get her so much as sip on a cup with the proudest of them all: and yet there has been curls, nay, which is more, pensioners; but, I warrant you, all is one with her.

*Fal.* But what says she to me? be brief, my good she-Mercury.

*Quick.* Marry, she hath received your letter, for the which she thanks you a thousand times; and she gives you to notify that her husband will be absence from his house between ten and eleven.

*Fal.* Ten and eleven?

*Quick.* Ay, forsooth; and then you may come and see the picture, she says, that you wot of: Master Ford, her husband, will be from home. Alas! the sweet woman leads an ill life with him; he's a very jealousy man: she leads a very frampold life with him, good heart.

*Fal.* Ten and eleven. Woman, commend me to her; I will not fail her.

*Quick.* Why, you say well. But I have an-

other messenger to your worship. Mistress Page hath her hearty commendations to you too: and let me tell you in your ear, she's as fartuous a civil modest wife, and one, I tell you, that will not miss you morning nor evening prayer, as any is in Windsor, who'er be the other: and she bade me tell your worship that her husband is seldom from home; but she hopes there will come a time. I never knew a woman so dote upon a man: surely I think you have charms, la; yes, in truth.

*Fal.* Not I, I assure thee: setting the attraction of my good parts aside I have no other charms. 121

*Quick.* Blessing on your heart for't!

*Fal.* But, I pray thee, tell me this: has Ford's wife and Page's wife acquainted each other how they love me?

*Quick.* That were a jest indeed! they have not so little grace, I hope: that were a trick indeed! But Mistress Page would desire you to send her your little page, of all loves: her husband has a marvellous infection to the little page; and truly Master Page is an honest man. Never a wife in Windsor leads a better life than she does: do what she will, say what she will, take all, pay all, go to bed when she list, rise when she list, all as she will; and truly she deserves it; for if there be a kind woman in Windsor, she is one. You must send her your page; no remedy.

*Fal.* Why, I will.

*Quick.* Nay, but do so, then: and, look you, he may come and go between you both; and in any case have a nay-word, that you may know one another's mind, and the boy never need to understand any thing; for 'tis not good that children should know any wickedness: old folks, you know, have discretion, as they say, and know the world.

*Fal.* Fare thee well: commend me to them both: there's my purse; I am yet thy debtor. Boy, go along with this woman. [*Exeunt Mistress Quickly and Robin.*] This news distracts me! 140

*Pist.* This punk is one of Cupid's carriers: Clap on more sails; pursue; up with your fights: Give fire! she is my prize, or ocean whelm them all!

*Fal.* Sayest thou so, old Jack? go thy ways; I'll make more of thy old body than I have done. Will they yet look after thee? Wilt thou, after the expense of so much money, be now a gainer? Good body, I thank thee. Let them say 'tis grossly done; so it be fairly done, no matter.

*Enter BARDOLPH.*

*Bard.* Sir John, there's one Master Brook below would fain speak with you, and be acquainted with you; and hath sent your worship a morning's draught of sack.

*Fal.* Brook is his name?

*Bard.* Ay, sir.

*Fal.* Call him in. [*Exit Bardolph.*] Such Brooks are welcome to me, that o'erflow such liquor. Ah, ha! Mistress Ford and Mistress Page, have I encompassed you? go to; via!

*Re-enter BARDOLPH, with FORD disguised.*

*Ford.* Bless you, sir! 160

*Fal.* And you, sir! Would you speak with me?

*Ford.* I make bold to press with so little preparation upon you.

*Fal.* You're welcome. What's your will? Give us leave, drawer. [*Exit Bardolph.*]

*Ford.* Sir, I am a gentleman that have spent much; my name is Brook.

*Fal.* Good Master Brook, I desire more acquaintance of you. 169

*Ford.* Good Sir John, I sue for yours: not to charge you; for I must let you understand I think myself in better plight for a lender than you are: the which hath something emboldened me to this unseasoned intrusion: for they say, if money go before, all ways do lie open.

*Fal.* Money is a good soldier, sir, and will on.

*Ford.* Troth, and I have a bag of money here troubles me: if you will help to bear it, Sir John, take all, or half, for easing me of the carriage.

*Fal.* Sir, I know not how I may deserve to be your porter. 181

*Ford.* I will tell you, sir, if you will give me the hearing.

*Fal.* Speak, good Master Brook: I shall be glad to be your servant.

*Ford.* Sir, I hear you are a scholar,—I will be brief with you,—and you have been a man long known to me, though I had never so good means, as desire, to make myself acquainted with you. I shall discover a thing to you, wherein I must very much lay open mine own imperfection: but, good Sir John, as you have one eye upon my follies, as you hear them unfolded, turn another into the register of your own; that I may pass with a reproof the easier, sith you yourself know how easy it is to be such an offender.

*Fal.* Very well, sir; proceed.

*Ford.* There is a gentlewoman in this town; her husband's name is Ford.

*Fal.* Well, sir. 200

*Ford.* I have long loved her, and, I protest to you, bestowed much on her; followed her with a dotting observance; engrossed opportunities to meet her; fed every slight occasion that could but niggardly give me sight of her; not only bought many presents to give her, but have given largely to many to know what she would have given; briefly, I have pursued her as love hath pursued me; which hath been on the wing of all occasions. But whatsoever I have merited, either in my mind or in my means, need, I am sure, I have received none: unless experience be a jewel that I have purchased at an infinite rate, and that hath taught me to say this:

'Love like a shadow flies when substance love pursues;

Pursuing that that flies, and flying what pursues.'

*Fal.* Have you received no promise of satisfaction at her hands?

*Ford.* Never.

*Fal.* Have you importuned her to such purpose? 21

*Ford.* Never.

*Fal.* Of what quality was your love, then?

*Ford.* Like a fair house built on another man's ground; so that I have lost my edifice by mistaking the place where I erected it.

*Fal.* To what purpose have you unfolded this to me?

*Ford.* When I have told you that, I have told you all. Some say, that though she appear honest to me, yet in other places she enlargeth her mirth so far that there is shrewd construction made of her. Now, Sir John, here is the heart of my purpose: you are a gentleman of excellent breeding, admirable discourse, of great admittance, authentic in your place and person, generally allowed for your many war-like, court-like and learned preparations.

*Fal.* O, sir! 23

*Ford.* Believe it, for you know it. There I money; spend it, spend it; spend more; spend all I have; only give me so much of your time in exchange of it, as to lay an amiable siege to the honesty of this Ford's wife: use your art of wooing; win her to consent to you: if any man may, you may as soon as any.

*Fal.* Would it apply well to the vehemence of your affection, that I should win what you would enjoy? Methinks you prescribe to your self very preposterously. 25

*Ford.* O, understand my drift. She dwells so securely on the excellency of her honour that the folly of my soul dares not present itself she is too bright to be looked against. Now could I come to her with any detection in my hand, my desires had instance and argument to commend themselves: I could drive her thence from the ward of her purity, her reputation, her marriage-vow, and a thousand other her defences, which now are too too strongly embattled against me. What say you to't, Sir John? 261

*Fal.* Master Brook, I will first make bold with your money; next, give me your hand; and last, as I am a gentleman, you shall, if you will, enjoy Ford's wife.

*Ford.* O good sir!

*Fal.* I say you shall.

*Ford.* Want no money, Sir John; you shall want none. 269

*Fal.* Want no Mistress Ford, Master Brook; you shall want none. I shall be with her, I may tell you, by her own appointment: even as you came in to me, her assistant or go-between parted from me: I say I shall be with her between ten and eleven; for at that time the jealous rascally knave her husband will be forth. Come you to me at night; you shall know how I speed.

*Ford.* I am blest in your acquaintance. Do you know Ford, sir? 280

*Fal.* Hang him, poor cuckoldly knave! I know him not: yet I wrong him to call him poor; they say the jealous wittily knave hath masses of money; for the which his wife seems to me well-favoured. I will use her as the key of the cuckoldly rogue's coffer; and there's my harvest home.

*Ford.* I would you knew Ford, sir, that you might avoid him if you saw him. 289

*Fal.* Hang him, mechanical salt-butter-rogue! I will stare him out of his wits; I will awe him with my cudgel; it shall hang like a met' ... o'er the cuckold's horns. Master Brook, thou shalt know I will predominate over the peasant, and thou shalt lie with his wife. Come to me soon at night. Ford's a knave, and I will aggravate his style; thou, Master Brook, shalt know him for knave and cuckold. Come to me soon at night. [Exit. 299]

*Ford.* What a damned Epicurean rascal is this! My heart is ready to crack with impatience. Who says this is provident jealousy? my wife hath sent to him; the hour is fixed; the match is made. Would any man have thought this? See the hell of having a false woman! My bed shall be abused, my coffers ransacked, my reputation gnawed at; and I shall not only receive this villainous wrong, but stand under the adoption of abominable terms, and by him that does me this wrong. Terms! names! Amalmon sounds well; Lucifer, well; Barbason, well; yet they are devils' additions, the names of fiends: but Cuckold! Wilt!—Cuckold! the devil himself hath not such a name. Page is an ass, a secure ass: he will trust his wife; he will not be jealous. I will rather trust a Fleming with my butter, Parson Hugh the Welshman with my cheese, an Irishman with my aqua-vite bottle, or a thief to walk my ambling gelding, than my wife with herself: then she plots, then she ruminates, then she devises; and what they think in their hearts they may effect, they will break their hearts but they will effect. God be praised for my jealousy! Eleven o'clock the hour. I will prevent this, detect my wife, be revenged on Falstaff, and laugh at Page. I will about it; better three hours too soon than a minute too late. Fie, fie, fie! cuckold! cuckold! cuckold! [Exit. 329]

### SCENE III. A field near Windsor.

*Enter CAIUS and RUGBY.*

*Caius.* Jack Rugby!

*Rug.* Sir!

*Caius.* Vat is do clock, Jack?

*Rug.* 'Tis past the hour, sir, that Sir Hugh promised to meet.

*Caius.* By gar, he has save his soul, dat he is no come; he has pray his Pible well, dat he is no come: by gar, Jack Rugby, he is dead already, if he be come.

*Rug.* He is wise, sir; he knew your worship would kill him, if he came. 11

*Caius.* By gar, de herring is no dead so as I did kill him. Take your rapier, Jack; I will tell you how I will kill him.

*Rug.* Alas, sir, I cannot fence.

*Caius.* Villany, take your rapier.

*Rug.* Forbear; here's company.

*[Enter HOST, SHALLOW, SLENDER, and PAGE.]*

*Host.* Bless thee, bully doctor!

*Shal.* Save you, Master Doctor Caius!

*Page.* Now, good master doctor! 20

*Slen.* Give you good morrow, sir.

*Caius.* Vat be all you, one, two, tree, four, come for?

*Host.* To see thee fight, to see thee foine, to see thee traverse; to see thee here, to see thee there; to see thee pass thy punto, thy stock, thy reverse, thy distance, thy montant. Is he dead, my Ethiopian? is he dead, my Francisco? ha, bully! What says my Æsculapius! my Galen! my heart of elder? ha! I he dead, bully stale! is he dead?

*Caius.* By gar, he is de coward Jack priest of de world; he is not show his face. 31

*Host.* Thou art a Castalion-King-Urinal. Hector of Greece, my boy!

*Caius.* I pray you, bear witness that me have stay six or seven, two, tree hours for him, and he is no come.

*Shal.* He is the wiser man, master doctor: he is a curer of souls, and you a curer of bodies; if you should fight, you go against the hair of your professions. Is it not true, Master Page?

*Page.* Master Shallow, you have yourself been a great fighter, though now a man of peace.

*Shal.* Bodykins, Master Page, though I now be old and of the peace, if I see a sword out, my finger itches to make one. Though we are justices and doctors and churchmen, Master Page, we have some salt of our youth in us; we are the sons of women, Master Page. 51

*Page.* 'Tis true, Master Shallow.

*Shal.* It will be found so, Master Page. Master Doctor Caius, I am come to fetch you home. I am sworn of the peace: you have showed yourself a wise physician, and Sir Hugh hath shown himself a wise and patient churchman. You must go with me, master doctor.

*Host.* Pardon, guest-justice. A word, Mounseur Mockwater. 60

*Caius.* Mock-vater! vat is dat?

*Host.* Mock-water, in our English tongue, is valour, bully.

*Caius.* By gar, den, I have as mush mock-vater as de Englishman. Scurry jack-dog priest! by gar, me vill cut his ears.

*Host.* He will clapper-claw thee tightly, bully.

*Caius.* Clapper-de-claw! vat is dat?

*Host.* That is, he will make thee amends. 70

*Caius.* By gar, me do look he shall clapper-de-claw me; for, by gar, me vill have it.

*Host.* And I will provoke him to't, or let him wag.

*Caius.* Me tank you for dat.

*Host.* And, moreover, bully,—but first, master guest, and Master Page, and eke Cavaleiro Slender, go you through the town to Frogmore. [Aside to them.]

*Page.* Sir Hugh is there, is he? 70

*Host.* He is there: see what humour he is in; and I will bring the doctor about by the fields. Will it do well?

*Shal.* We will do it.

*Page, Shal., and Slen.* Adieu, good master doctor. [Exeunt Page, Shal., and Slen.]

*Caius.* By gar, me vill kill de priest; for he speak for a juck-an-ape to Anne Page.

*Host.* Let him die : sheathe thy impatience, throw cold water on thy choler : go about the fields with me through Frogmore : I will bring thee where Mistress Anne Page is, at a farmhouse—a feasting ; and thou shalt woo her. Cried I aim ! said I well ?

*Caius.* By gar, me dank you vor dat : by gar, I love you ; and I shall procure—a you de good guest, de earl, de knight, de lords, de gentlemen, my patients.

*Host.* For the which I will be thy adversary toward Anne Page. Said I well ?

*Caius.* By gar, 'tis good ; vell said : 100

*Host.* Let us wag, then.

*Caius.* Come at my heels, Jack Rugby. [Exeunt.]

## ACT III.

## SCENE I. A field near Frogmore.

*Enter* SIR HUGH EVANS and SIMPLE.

*Evans.* I pray you now, good Master Slen-der's serving-man, and friend Simple by your name, which way have you looked for Master Caius, that calls himself doctor of physic ?

*Sim.* Marry, sir, the pittle-wail, the park-ward, every way ; old Windsor way, and every way but the town way.

*Evans.* I most fechemently desire you you will also look that way.

*Sim.* I will, sir. [Exit. 10

*Evans.* 'Pless my soul, how full of chollors I am, and trempling of mind ! I shall be glad if he have deceived me. How melancholies I am ! I will knog his urinals about his knave's costard when I have good opportunities for the ork. 'Pless my soul ! [Sings.]

To shallow rivers, to whose falls  
Melodious birds sings madrigals ;  
There will we make our peds of roses,  
And a thousand fragrant posies. 20  
To shallow—

Mercy on me ! I have a great dispositions to cry. [Sings.]

Melodious birds sing madrigals—  
When as I sat in Pabylon—  
And a thousand vagram posies.  
To shallow &c.

*Re-enter* SIMPLE.

*Sim.* Yonder he is coming, this way, Sir Hugh.

*Evans.* He's welcome. [Sings.]

To shallow rivers, to whose falls— 29  
Heaven prosper the right ! What weapons is he ?

*Sim.* No weapons, sir. There comes my master, Master Shallow, and another gentleman, from Frogmore, over the stile, this way.

*Evans.* Pray you, give me my gown ; or else keep it in your arms.

*Enter* PAGE, SHALLOW, and SLENDER.

*Shal.* How now, master Parson ! Good morrow, good Sir Hugh. Keep a gamester from the dice, and a good student from his book, and it is wonderful.

*Slcn.* [Aside] Ah, sweet Anne Page ! 40

*Page.* Save you, good Sir Hugh !

*Evans.* 'Pless you from his mercy sake, a of you !

*Shal.* What, the sword and the word ! d you study them both, master parson ?

*Page.* And youthful still ! in your double and hose this raw rheumatic day !

*Evans.* There is reasons and causes for it.

*Page.* We are come to you to do a goo office, master parson. 5

*Evans.* Fery well : what is it ?

*Page.* Yonder is a most reverend gentleman who, belike having received wrong by some per-son, is at most odds with his own gravity and patience that ever you saw.

*Shal.* I have lived fourscore years and up ward ; I never heard a man of his place, gravit, and learning, so wide of his own respect.

*Evans.* What is he ?

*Page.* I think you know him ; Master Docto Caius, the renowned French physician. 61

*Evans.* Got's will, and his passion of my heart ! I had as lief you would tell me of a mess of porridge.

*Page.* Why ?

*Evans.* He has no more knowledge in Hilbo crates and Galen,—and he is a knave besides ; a cowardly knave as you would desires to be acquainted withal.

*Page.* I warrant you, he's the man should fight with him. 71

*Slcn.* [Aside] O sweet Anne Page !

*Shal.* It appears so by his weapons. Keep them asunder ; here comes Doctor Caius.

*Enter* HOST, CAIUS, and RUGBY.

*Page.* Nay, good master parson, keep in your weapon.

*Shal.* So do you, good master doctor.

*Host.* Disarm them, and let them question : let them keep their limbs whole and lack our English. 80

*Caius.* I pray you, let-a me speak a word with your ear. Therefore vill you not meet-a me ?

*Evans.* [Aside to Caius] Pray you, use your patience : in good time.

*Caius.* By gar, you are de coward, de Jack dog, John ape.

*Evans.* [Aside to Caius] Pray you, let us not be laughing stocks to other men's humours. I desire you in friendship, and I will one way or other make you amends. [Aloud] I will knog your urinals about your knave's cogscorb for missing your meetings and appointments.

*Caius.* Diable ! Jack Rugby,—mine host de Jarteer,—have I not stay for him to kill him. have I not, at de place I did appoint ?

*Evans.* As I am a Christians soul now look you, this is the place appointed : I'll be judge-ment by mine host of the Garter.

*Host.* Peace, I say, Gallia and Gaul, French, and Welsh, soul-curer and body-curer !

*Caius.* Ay, dat is very good : excellent.

*Host.* Peace, I say ! hear mine host of the Garter. Am I politic ? am I subtle ? am I a Machiavel ? Shall I lose my doctor ! no ; he gives me the potions and the motions. Shall I lose my parson, my priest, my Sir Hugh ! no ;

he gives me the proverbs and the no-verbs. Give me thy hand, terrestrial! so. Give me thy hand, celestial! so. Boys of art, I have deceived you both; I have directed you to wrong places: your hearts are mighty, your skins are whole, and let burnt sack be the issue. Come, lay their swords to pawn. Follow me, lads of peace; follow, follow, follow.

*Shal.* Trust me, a mad host. Follow, gentlemen, follow.

*Slender.* [Aside] O sweet Anne Page!

[*Exeunt Shal., Slender, Page, and Host.*]

*Caius.* Ha, do I perceive dat? have you make-a de sot of us, ha, ha!

*Evans.* This is well; he has made us his vouting-stog. I desire you that we may be friends; and let us knog our prains together to be revenge on this same scall, scurvy, cogging companion, the host of the Garter.

*Caius.* By gar, with all my heart. He promise to bring me where is Anne Page; by gar, he deceive me too.

*Evans.* Well, I will smite his noddles. Pray you, follow. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. A street.

*Enter MISTRESS PAGE and ROBIN.*

*Mrs. Page.* Nay, keep your way, little gal-lant; you were wont to be a follower, but now you are a leader. Whether had you rather lead mine eyes, or eye your master's heels?

*Robin.* I had rather, forsooth, go before you like a man than follow him like a dwarf.

*Mrs. Page.* O, you are a flattering boy: now I see you'll be a courtier.

*Enter FORD.*

*Ford.* Well met, Mistress Page. Whither go you?

*Mrs. Page.* Truly, sir, to see your wife. Is she at home?

*Ford.* Ay; and as idle as she may hang together, for want of company. I think, if your husbands were dead, you two would marry.

*Mrs. Page.* Be sure of that,—two other husbands.

*Ford.* Where had you this pretty weather-cock?

*Mrs. Page.* I cannot tell what the dickens his name is my husband had him of. What do you call your knight's name, sirrah?

*Robin.* Sir John Falstaff.

*Ford.* Sir John Falstaff!

*Mrs. Page.* He, he; I can never hit on's name. There is such a league between my good man and he! Is your wife at home indeed?

*Ford.* Indeed she is.

*Mrs. Page.* By your leave, sir: I am sick till I see her. [*Exeunt Mrs. Page and Robin.*]

*Ford.* Has Page any brains? hath he any eyes? hath he any thinking? Sure, they sleep; he hath no use of them. Why, this boy will carry a letter twenty mile, as easy as a cannon will shoot point-blank twelve score. He pieces out his wife's inclination; he gives her folly

motion and advantage: and now she's going to my wife, and Falstaff's boy with her. A man may hear this shower sing in the wind. And Falstaff's boy with her! Good plots, they are laid; and our revolted wives share damnation together. Well; I will take him, then torture my wife, pluck the borrowed veil of modesty from the so seeming Mistress Page, divulge Page himself for a secure and wilful Acton; and to these violent proceedings all my neighbours shall cry aim. [*Clock heard.*] The clock gives me my cue, and my assurance bids me search: there I shall find Falstaff: I shall be rather praised for this than mocked; for it is as positive as the earth is firm that Falstaff is there: I will go.

*Enter PAGE, SHALLOW, SLENDER, HOST, SIR HUGH EVANS, CAIUS, and RUGBY.*

*Shal., Page, &c.* Well met, Master Ford.

*Ford.* Trust me, a good knot: I have good cheer at home; and I pray you all go with me.

*Shal.* I must excuse myself, Master Ford.

*Slender.* And so must I, sir: we have appointed to dine with Mistress Anne, and I would not break with her for more money than I'll speak of.

*Shal.* We have lingered about a match between Anne Page and my cousin Slender, and this day we shall have our answer.

*Slender.* I hope I have your good will, father Page.

*Page.* You have, Master Slender; I stand wholly for you: but my wife, master doctor, is for you altogether.

*Caius.* Ay, be-gar; and de maid is love-a me: my nursh-a Quickly tell me so much.

*Host.* What say you to young Master Tenton? he capers, he dances, he has eyes of youth, he writes verses, he speaks holiday, he smells April and May: he will carry 't, he will carry 't; 'tis in his buttons; he will carry 't.

*Page.* Not by my consent, I promise you. The gentleman is of no having: he kept company with the wild prince and Poins; he is of too high a region; he knows too much. No, he shall not knit a knot in his fortunes with the finger of my substance: if he take her, let him take her simply; the wealth I have waits on my consent, and my consent goes not that way.

*Ford.* I beseech you heartily, some of you go home with me to dinner: besides your cheer, you shall have sport; I will show you a monster. Master doctor, you shall go; so shall you, Master Page; and you, Sir Hugh.

*Shal.* Well, fare you well: we shall have the freer wooing at Master Page's.

[*Exeunt Shal. and Slender.*]

*Caius.* Go home, John Rugby: I come anon.

[*Exit Rugby.*]

*Host.* Farewell, my hearts: I will to my honest knight Falstaff, and drink canary with him.

[*Exit.*]

*Ford.* [Aside] I think I shall drink in pipe-wine first with him; I'll make him dance. Will you go, gentles?

*All.* Have with you to see this monster.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE III. A room in FORD's house.

*Enter MISTRESS FORD and MISTRESS PAGE.**Mrs Ford.* What, John! What, Robert!*Mrs Page.* Quickly, quickly! Is the buck-basket—*Mrs Ford.* I warrant. What, Robin, I say!*Enter Servants with a basket.**Mrs Page.* Come, come, come.*Mrs Ford.* Here, set it down.*Mrs Page.* Give your men the charge; we must be brief.*Mrs Ford.* Marry, as I told you before, John and Robert, be ready here hard by in the brew-house; and when I suddenly call you, come forth, and without any pause or staggering take this basket on your shoulders: that done, trudge with it in all haste, and carry it among the whistlers in Dutch-mead, and there empty it in the muddy ditch close by the Thames side.*Mrs Page.* You will do it?*Mrs Ford.* I ha' told them over and over; they lack no direction. Be gone, and come when you are called. [*Exeunt Servants.* 20]*Mrs Page.* Here comes little Robin.*Enter ROBIN.**Mrs Ford.* How now, my cyas-musket! what news with you?*Rob.* My master, Sir John, is come in at your back-door, Mistress Ford, and requests your company.*Mrs Page.* You little Jack-a-Lent, have you been true to us?*Rob.* Ay, I'll be sworn. My master knows not of your being here and hath threatened to put me into everlasting liberty if I tell you of it; for he swears he'll turn me away.*Mrs Page.* Thou'rt a good boy: this secrecy of thine shall be a tailor to thee and shall make thee a new doublet and hose. I'll go hide me.*Mrs Ford.* Do so. Go tell thy master I am alone. [*Exit Robin.*] Mistress Page, remember your cue.*Mrs Page.* I warrant thee; if I do not act it, hiss me. [*Exit.* 41]*Mrs Ford.* Go to, then: we'll use this unwholesome humidity, this gross watery pumpon; we'll teach him to know turtles from jays.*Enter FALSTAFF.**Fal.* Have I caught thee, my heavenly jewel? Why, now let me die, for I have lived long enough: this is the period of my ambition: O this blessed hour!*Mrs Ford.* O sweet Sir John!*Fal.* Mistress Ford, I cannot cog, I cannot prate, Mistress Ford. Now shall I sin in my wish: I would thy husband were dead: I'll speak it before the best lord; I would make thee my lady.*Mrs Ford.* I your lady, Sir John! alas, I should be a pitiful lady!*Fal.* Let the court of France show me such another. I see how thine eye would emulate

the diamond: thou hast the right arched beauty of the brow that becomes the ship-tire, the tire-valiant, or any tire of Venetian admittance. 61

*Mrs Ford.* A plain kerchief, Sir John: my brows become nothing else; nor that well neither.*Fal.* By the Lord, thou art a traitor to say so: thou wouldst make an absolute courtier; and the firm fixture of thy foot would give an excellent motion to thy gait in a semi-circled farthingale. I see what thou wert, if Fortune thy foe were not, Nature thy friend. Come, thou canst not hide it. 71*Mrs Ford.* Believe me, there's no such thing in me.*Fal.* What made me love thee? let that persuade thee there's something extraordinary in thee. Come, I cannot cog and say thou art this and that, like a many of these lipping hawthorn-buds, that come like women in men's apparel, and smell like Bucklesbury in simple time; I cannot; but I love thee; none but thee; and thou deservest it. 81*Mrs Ford.* Do not betray me, sir. I fear you love Mistress Page.*Fal.* Thou mightst as well say I love to walk by the Counter-gate, which is as hateful to me as the reek of a lime-kiln.*Mrs Ford.* Well, heaven knows how I love you; and you shall one day find it.*Fal.* Keep in that mind; I'll deserve it.*Mrs Ford.* Nay, I must tell you, so you do; or else I could not be in that mind. 91*Rob.* [*Within*] Mistress Ford, Mistress Ford! here's Mistress Page at the door, sweating; and blowing and looking wildly, and would needs speak with you presently.*Fal.* She shall not see me: I will ensconce me behind the arras.*Mrs Ford.* Pray you, do so: she's a very tattling woman. [*Falstaff hides himself.*]*Re-enter MISTRESS PAGE and ROBIN.*

What's the matter? how now! 101

*Mrs Page.* O Mistress Ford, what have you done? You're shamed, you're overthrown, you're undone for ever!*Mrs Ford.* What's the matter, good Mistress Page?*Mrs Page.* O well-a-day, Mistress Ford! having an honest man to your husband, to give him such cause of suspicion!*Mrs Ford.* What cause of suspicion?*Mrs Page.* What cause of suspicion! Out upon you! how am I mistook in you! 111*Mrs Ford.* Why, alas, what's the matter?*Mrs Page.* Your husband's coming hither, woman, with all the officers in Windsor, to search for a gentleman that he says is here now in the house by your consent, to take an ill advantage of his absence: you are undone.*Mrs Ford.* 'Tis not so, I hope.*Mrs Page.* Pray heaven it be not so, that you have such a man here! but 'tis most certain your husband's coming, with half Windsor at his heels, to search for such a one. I come before to tell you. If you know yourself clear, why, I am glad of it; but if you have a friend



here, convey, convey him out. Be not amazed; call all your senses to you; defend your reputation, or bid farewell to your good life for ever.

*Mrs Ford.* What shall I do? There is a gentleman my dear friend; and I fear not mine own shame so much as his peril: I had rather than a thousand pound he were out of the house.

*Mrs Page.* For shame! never stand 'you had rather' and 'you had rather': your husband's here at hand; bethink you of some conveyance: in the house you cannot hide him. O, how have you deceived me! Look, here is a basket: if he be of any reasonable stature, he may creep in here; and throw foul linen upon him, as if they were going to bucking: or—it is whiting-time—send him by your two men to Datchet-mead.

*Mrs Ford.* He's too big to go in there. What shall I do?

*Fal.* [Coming forward] Let me see't, let me see't, O, let me see't! I'll in, I'll in. Follow your friend's counsel. I'll in.

*Mrs Page.* What, Sir John Falstaff! Are these your letters, knight?

*Fal.* I love thee. Help me away. Let me creep in here. I'll never—

[Gets into the basket; they cover him with foul linen.]

*Mrs Page.* Help to cover your master, boy. Call your men, Mistress Ford. You dissembling knight!

*Mrs Ford.* What, John! Robert! John! [Exit Robin.]

Re-enter Servants.

Go take up these clothes here quickly. Where's the cowl-staff? look, how you drumble! Carry them to the laundress in Datchet-mead; quickly, come.

Enter FORD, PAGE, CAIUS, and SIR HUGH EVANS.

*Ford.* Pray you, come near: if I suspect without cause, why then make sport at me; then let me be your jest; I deserve it. How now! whither bear you this?

*Serv.* To the laundress, forsooth.

*Mrs Ford.* Why, what have you to do whither they bear it? You were best meddle with buck-washing.

*Ford.* Buck! I would I could wash myself of the buck! Buck, buck, buck! Ay, buck; I warrant you, buck; and of the season too, it shall appear. [Excunt Servants with the basket.] Gentlemen, I have dreamed to-night: I'll tell you my dream. Here, here, here be my keys: ascend my chambers; search, seek, find out: I'll warrant we'll unkenne! the fox. Let me stop this way first. [Locking the door.] So, now uncape.

*Page.* Good Master Ford, be contented: you wrong yourself too much.

*Ford.* True, Master Page. Up, gentlemen; you shall see sport anon: follow me, gentlemen. [Exit.]

*Evans.* This is very fantastical humours and jealousies.

*Caius.* By gar, 'tis no the fashion of France; it is not jealous in France.

*Page.* Nay, follow him, gentlemen; see the issue of his search.

[Excunt Page, Caius, and Evans.]

*Mrs Page.* Is there not a double excellency in this?

*Mrs Ford.* I know not which pleases me better, that my husband is deceived, or Sir John.

*Mrs Page.* What a taking was he in when your husband asked who was in the basket!

*Mrs Ford.* I am half afraid he will have need of washing; so throwing him into the water will do him a benefit.

*Mrs Page.* Hang him, dishonest rascal! I would all of the same strain were in the same distress.

*Mrs Ford.* I think my husband hath some special suspicion of Falstaff's being here; for I never saw him so gross in his jealousy till now.

*Mrs Page.* I will lay a plot to try that; and we will yet have more tricks with Falstaff: his dissolute disease will scarce obey this medicine.

*Mrs Ford.* Shall we send that foolish carrion, Mistress Quickly, to him, and excuse his throwing into the water; and give him another hope, to betray him to another punishment?

*Mrs Page.* We will do it: let him be sent for to-morrow, eight o'clock, to have amends.

Re-enter FORD, PAGE, CAIUS, and SIR HUGH EVANS.

*Ford.* I cannot find him: may be the knave bragged of that he could not compass.

*Mrs Page.* [Aside to Mrs Ford] Heard you that?

*Mrs Ford.* You use me well, Master Ford, do you?

*Ford.* Ay, I do so.

*Mrs Ford.* Heaven make you better than your thoughts!

*Ford.* Amen!

*Mrs Page.* You do yourself mighty wrong, Master Ford.

*Ford.* Ay, ay; I must bear it.

*Evans.* If there be any pody in the house, and in the chambers, and in the coffers, and in the presses, heaven forgive my sins at the day of judgment!

*Caius.* By gar, nor I too: there is no bodies.

*Page.* Pie, fie, Master Ford! are you not ashamed? What spirit, what devil suggests this imagination? I would not ha' your distemper in this kind for the wealth of Windsor Castle.

*Ford.* 'Tis my fault, Master Page: I suffer for it.

*Evans.* You suffer for a pad conscience: your wife is as honest a 'omans as I will desires among five thousand, and five hundred too.

*Caius.* By gar, I see 'tis an honest woman.

*Ford.* Well, I promised you a dinner. Come, come, walk in the Park; I pray you, pardon me; I will hereafter make known to you why I have done this. Come, wife; come, Mistress Page. I pray you, pardon me; pray heartily, pardon me.

*Page.* Let's go in, gentlemen; but, trust me, we'll mock him. I do invite you to-morrow morning to my house to breakfast: after, we'll

a-birding together; I have a fine hawk for the bush. Shall it be so?

*Ford.* Any thing.

*Evans.* If there is one, I shall make two in the company. <sup>251</sup>

*Caius.* If dere be one or two, I shall make-a the turd.

*Ford.* Pray you, go, Master Page.

*Evans.* I pray you now, remembrance to-morrow on the lousy knave, mine host.

*Caius.* Dat is good; by gar, with all my heart!

*Evans.* A lousy knave, to have his gibes and his mockeries! [Exeunt.]

#### SCENE IV. A room in PAGE's house.

*Enter FENTON and ANNE PAGE.*

*Fent.* I see I cannot get thy father's love; Therefore no more turn me to him, sweet Nan.

*Anne.* Alas, how then?

*Fent.* Why, thou must be thyself. He doth object I am too great of birth; And that, my state being gall'd with my expense, I seek to heal it only by his wealth; Besides these, other bars he lays before me, My riots past, my wild societies; And tells me 'tis a thing impossible I should love thee but as a property. 10

*Anne.* May be he tells you true.

*Fent.* No, heaven so speed me in my time to come!

Albeit I will confess thy father's wealth Was the first motive that I woo'd thee, Anne: Yet, wooing thee, I found thee of more value Than stamps in gold or sums in sealed bags; And 'tis the very riches of thyself That now I aim at.

*Anne.* Gentle Master Fenton, Yet seek my father's love; still seek it, sir: If opportunity and humblest suit Cannot attain it, why, then,—hark you hither! 20

[They converse apart.]

*Enter SHALLOW, SLENDER, and MISTRESS QUICKLY.*

*Shal.* Break their talk, Mistress Quickly: my kinsman shall speak for himself.

*Slen.* I'll make a shaft or a bolt on 't: 'slid, 'tis but venturing.

*Shal.* Be not dismayed.

*Slen.* No, she shall not dismay me: I care not for that, but that I am afraid.

*Quick.* Hark ye; Master Slender would speak a word with you. 30

*Anne.* I come to him. [Aside] This is my father's choice.

O, what a world of vile ill-favour'd faults Looks handsome in three hundred pounds a-year!

*Quick.* And how does good Master Fenton? Pray you, a word with you.

*Shal.* She's coming; to her, coz. O boy, thou hadst a father!

*Slen.* I had a father, Mistress Anne; my uncle can tell you good jests of him. Pray you, uncle, tell Mistress Anne the jest, how my father stole two geese out of a pen, good uncle. 41

*Shal.* Mistress Anne, my cousin loves you.

*Slen.* Ay, that I do; as well as I love any woman in Gloucestershire.

*Shal.* He will maintain you like a gentlewoman.

*Slen.* Ay, that I will, come cut and long-tail, under the degree of a squire.

*Shal.* He will make you a hundred and fifty pounds jointure. 50

*Anne.* Good Master Shallow, let him woo for himself.

*Shal.* Marry, I thank you for it; I thank you for that good comfort. She calls you, coz: I'll leave you.

*Anne.* Now, Master Slender.—

*Slen.* Now, good Mistress Anne,—

*Anne.* What is your will?

*Slen.* My will! 'od's hearties, that's a pretty jest indeed! I ne'er made my will yet, I thank heaven; I am not such a sickly creature, I give heaven praise. 62

*Anne.* I mean, Master Slender, what would you with me?

*Slen.* Truly, for mine own part, I would little or nothing with you. Your father and my uncle hath made motions: if it be my luck, so; if not, happy man be his dole! They can tell you how things go better than I can: you may ask your father; here he comes. 70

*Enter PAGE and MISTRESS PAGE.*

*Page.* Now, Master Slender: love him, daughter Anne.

Why, how now! what does Master Fenton here? You wrong me, sir, thus still to haunt my house: I told you, sir, my daughter is disposed of.

*Fent.* Nay, Master Page, be not impatient.

*Mrs Page.* Good Master Fenton, come not to my child.

*Page.* She is no match for you.

*Fent.* Sir, will you hear me?

*Page.* No, good Master Fenton.

Come, Master Shallow; come, son Slender, in. Knowing my mind, you wrong me, Master Fenton. [Exeunt Page, Shal., and Slen.]

*Quick.* Speak to Mistress Page. 81

*Fent.* Good Mistress Page, for that I love your daughter

In such a righteous fashion as I do, Perforce, against all checks, rebukes and manners,

I must advance the colours of my love

And not retire: let me have your good will.

*Anne.* Good mother, do not marry me to yond fool.

*Mrs Page.* I mean it not; I seek you a better husband.

*Quick.* That's my master, master doctor.

*Anne.* Alas, I had rather be set quick i' the earth 90

And bow'd to death with turnips!

*Mrs Page.* Come, trouble not yourself. Good Master Fenton,

I will not be your friend nor enemy:

My daughter will I question how she loves you, And as I find her, so am I affected.

Till then farewell, sir: she must needs go in; Her father will be angry.

*Fent.* Farewell, gentle mistress: farewell,  
Nan. [*Exeunt Mrs Page and Anne.*]

*Quick.* This is my doing, now: 'Nay,' said I, 'will you cast away your child on a fool, and a physician? Look on Master Fenton: ' this is my doing.

*Fent.* I thank thee; and I pray thee, once to-night

Give my sweet Nan this ring: there's for thy pains.

*Quick.* Now heaven send thee good fortune! [*Exit Fenton.*] A kind heart he hath: a woman would run through fire and water for such a kind heart. But yet I would my master had Mistress Anne; or I would Master Slender had her; or, in sooth, I would Master Fenton had her: I will do what I can for them all three; for so I have promised, and I'll be as good as my word; but specially for Master Fenton. Well, I must of another errand to Sir John Falstaff from my two mistresses: what a beast am I to slack it! [*Exit.*]

SCENE V. A room in the Garter Inn.

*Enter FALSTAFF and BARDOLPH.*

*Fal.* Bardolph, I say,—

*Bard.* Here, sir.

*Fal.* Go fetch me a quart of sack; put a toast in 't. [*Exit Bard.*] Have I lived to be carried in a basket, like a barrow of butcher's offal, and to be thrown in the Thames? Well, if I be served such another trick, I'll have my brains ta'en out and buttered, and give them to a dog for a new-year's gift. The rogues slighted me into the river with as little remorse as they would have drowned a blind bitch's puppies, fifteen 't the litter: and you may know by my size that I have a kind of alacrity in sinking; if the bottom were as deep as hell, I should down. I had been drowned, but that the shore was shelvy and shallow,—a death that I abhor; for the water swells a man; and what a thing should I have been when I had been swelled! I should have been a mountain of mummy.

*Re-enter BARDOLPH with sack.*

*Bard.* Here's Mistress Quickly, sir, to speak with you.

*Fal.* Come, let me pour in some sack to the Thames water; for my belly's as cold as if I had swallowed snowballs for pills to cool the reins. Call her in.

*Bard.* Come in, woman!

*Enter MISTRESS QUICKLY.*

*Quick.* By your leave; I cry you mercy: give your worship good morrow.

*Fal.* Take away these chulices. Go brew me a pottle of sack finely.

*Bard.* With eggs, sir?

*Fal.* Simple of itself; I'll no pullet-sperm in my brewage. [*Exit Bardolph.*] How now!

*Quick.* Marry, sir, I come to your worship from Mistress Ford.

*Fal.* Mistress Ford! I have had ford enough, I was thrown into the ford; I have my belly full of ford.

*Quick.* Alas the day! good heart, that was not her fault: she does so take on with her men; they mistook their erection.

*Fal.* So did I mine, to build upon a foolish woman's promise.

*Quick.* Well, she laments, sir, for it, that it would yearn your heart to see it. Her husband goes this morning a-birding; she desires you once more to come to her between eight and nine: I must carry her word quickly: she'll make you amends, I warrant you.

*Fal.* Well, I will visit her: tell her so; and bid her think what a man is: let her consider his frailty, and then judge of my merit.

*Quick.* I will tell her.

*Fal.* Do so. Between nine and ten, sayest thou?

*Quick.* Eight and nine, sir.

*Fal.* Well, be gone: I will not miss her.

*Quick.* Peace be with you, sir. [*Exit.*]

*Fal.* I marvel I hear not of Master Brook; he sent me word to stay within: I like his money well. O, here he comes.

*Enter FORD.*

*Ford.* Bless you, sir!

*Fal.* Now, Master Brook, you come to know what hath passed between me and Ford's wife?

*Ford.* That, indeed, Sir John, is my business.

*Fal.* Master Brook, I will not lie to you: I was at her house the hour she appointed me.

*Ford.* And sped you, sir?

*Fal.* Very ill-favourably, Master Brook.

*Ford.* How so, sir? Did she change her determination?

*Fal.* No, Master Brook; but the peaking Cornuto her husband, Master Brook, dwelling in a continual larum of jealousy, comes me in the instant of our encounter, after we had embraced, kissed, protested, and, as it were, spoke the prologue of our comedy; and at his heels a rabble of his companions, thither provoked and instigated by his distemper, and, forsooth, to search his house for his wife's love.

*Ford.* What, while you were there?

*Fal.* While I was there.

*Ford.* And did he search for you, and could not find you?

*Fal.* You shall hear. As good luck would have it, comes in one Mistress Page; gives intelligence of Ford's approach; and, in her invention and Ford's wife's distraction, they conveyed me into a buck-basket.

*Ford.* A buck-basket!

*Fal.* By the Lord, a buck-basket! rammed me in with foul shirts and smocks, socks, foul stockings, greasy napkins; that, Master Brook, there was the rankest compound of villanous smell that ever offended nostril.

*Ford.* And how long lay you there?

*Fal.* Nay, you shall hear, Master Brook, what I have suffered to bring this woman to evil for your good. Being thus crammed in the basket, a couple of Ford's knaves, his hinds, were called forth by their mistress to carry me in the name of foul clothes to Datchet-lane: they took me on their shoulders; met the jealous knave their master in the door, who asked them

a-birding together; I have a fine hawk for the bush. Shall it be so?

*Ford.* Any thing.

*Evans.* If there is one, I shall make two in the company. <sup>251</sup>

*Cuius.* If dere be one or two, I shall make-a the turd.

*Ford.* Pray you, go, Master Page.

*Evans.* I pray you now, remembrance to-morrow on the lousy knave, mine host.

*Cuius.* Dat is good; by gar, with all my heart!

*Evans.* A lousy knave, to have his gibes and his mockeries! *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE IV. *A room in PAGE's house.*

*Enter FENTON and ANNE PAGE.*

*Fent.* I see I cannot get thy father's love; Therefore no more turn me to him, sweet Nan.

*Anne.* Alas, how then?

*Fent.* Why, thou must be thyself. He doth object I am too great of birth; And that, my state being gall'd with my expense, I seek to heal it only by his wealth; Besides these, other bars he lays before me, My riots past, my wild societies; And tells me 'tis a thing impossible I should love thee but as a property. <sup>10</sup>

*Anne.* May be he tells you that.

*Fent.* No, heaven so speed me in my time to come!

Albeit I will confess thy father's wealth Was the first motive that I woo'd thee, Anne: Yet, wooing thee, I found thee of more value Than stamps in gold or sums in sealed bags; And 'tis the very riches of thyself That now I aim at.

*Anne.* Gentle Master Fenton, Yet seek my father's love; still seek it, sir: If opportunity and humblest suit <sup>20</sup> Cannot attain it, why, then,—hark you hither!

*[They converse apart.]*

*Enter SHALLOW, SLENDER, and MISTRESS QUICKLY.*

*Shal.* Break their talk, Mistress Quickly: my kinsman shall speak for himself.

*Slen.* I'll make a shaft or a bolt on 't: 'slid, 'tis but venturing.

*Shal.* Be not dismayed.

*Slen.* No, she shall not dismay me: I care not for that, but that I am afraid.

*Quick.* Hark ye; Master Slender would speak a word with you. <sup>30</sup>

*Anne.* I come to him. *[Aside]* This is my father's choice.

O, what a world of vile ill-favour'd faults Looks handsome in three hundred pounds a-year!

*Quick.* And how does good Master Fenton? Pray you, a word with you.

*Shal.* She's coming; to her, coz. O boy, thou hadst a father!

*Slen.* I had a father, Mistress Anne; my uncle can tell you good jests of him. Pray you, uncle, tell Mistress Anne the jest, how my father stole two geese out of a pen, good uncle. <sup>41</sup>

*Shal.* Mistress Anne, my cousin loves you.

*Slen.* Ay, that I do; as well as I love any woman in Gloucestershire.

*Shal.* He will maintain you like a gentlewoman.

*Slen.* Ay, that I will, come cut and long-tail, under the degree of a squire.

*Shal.* He will make you a hundred and fifty pounds jointure. <sup>50</sup>

*Anne.* Good Master Shallow, let him woo for himself.

*Shal.* Marry, I thank you for it; I thank you for that good comfort. She calls you, coz: I'll leave you.

*Anne.* Now, Master Slender,—

*Slen.* Now, good Mistress Anne,—

*Anne.* What is your will?

*Slen.* My will! 'od's heartlings, that's a pretty jest indeed! I ne'er made my will yet, I thank heaven; I am not such a sickly creature, I give heaven praise. <sup>62</sup>

*Anne.* I mean, Master Slender, what would you wish me?

*Slen.* Truly, for mine own part, I would little or nothing with you. Your father and my uncle hath made motions: if it be my luck, so; if not, happy man be his dole! They can tell you how things go better than I can: you may ask your father; here he comes. <sup>70</sup>

*Enter PAGE and MISTRESS PAGE.*

*Page.* Now, Master Slender: love him, daughter Anne.

Why, how now! what does Master Fenton here? You wrong me, sir, thus still to haunt my house: I told you, sir, my daughter is disposed of.

*Fent.* Nay, Master Page, be not impatient.

*Mrs Page.* Good Master Fenton, come not to my child.

*Page.* She is no match for you.

*Fent.* Sir, will you hear me?

*Page.* No, good Master Fenton.

Come, Master Shallow; come, son Slender, in. Knowing my mind, you wrong me, Master Fenton. *[Exeunt Page, Shal., and Slen.]*

*Quick.* Speak to Mistress Page. <sup>81</sup>

*Fent.* Good Mistress Page, for that I love your daughter

In such a righteous fashion as I do, Perforce, against all checks, rebukes and manners,

I must advance the colours of my love And not retire: let me have your good will.

*Anne.* Good mother, do not marry me to yond fool.

*Mrs Page.* I mean it not; I seek you a better husband.

*Quick.* That's my master, master doctor.

*Anne.* Alas, I had rather be set quick i' the earth <sup>90</sup>

And bow'd to death with turnips!

*Mrs Page.* Come, trouble not yourself. Good Master Fenton,

I will not be your friend nor enemy: My daughter will I question how she loves you,

And as I find her, so am I affected.

Till then farewell, sir: she must needs go in; Her father will be angry.

*Fent.* Farewell, gentle mistress: farewell,

as if you were away from him on a fool's errand, and a physician! Look on Master Fenton: 'tis this I'm doing.

*Fent.* I thank thee; and I pray thee, once to-night

Give my sweet Nan this ring: there's for thy pains.

*Quick.* Now heaven send thee good fortune! [*Exit Fenton.*] A kind heart he hath: a woman would run through fire and water for such a kind heart. But yet I would my master had Mistress Anne; or I would Master Slender had her; or, in sooth, I would Master Fenton had her: I will do what I can for them all three; for so I have promised, and I'll be as good as my word; but specially for Master Fenton. Well, I must of another errand to Sir John Falstaff from my two mistresses: what a beast am I to slack it! [*Exit.*]

SCENE V. A room in the Garter Inn.

*Enter FALSTAFF and BARDOLPH.*

*Fal.* Bardolph, I say,—

*Bard.* Here, sir.

*Fal.* Go fetch me a quart of sack; put a toast in't. [*Exit Bard.*] Have I lived to be carried in a basket, like a barrow of butcher's offal, and to be thrown in the Thames? Well, if I be served such another trick, I'll have my brains t'ken out and buttered, and give them to a dog for a new-year's gift. The rogues slighted me into the river with as little remorse as they would have drowned a blind bitch's puppies, fifteen i' the litter: and you may know by my size that I have a kind of alacrity in sinking; if the bottom were as deep as hell, I should down. I had been drowned, but that the shore was shelvy and shallow,—a death that I abhor; for the water swells a man; and what a thing should I have been when I had been swelled! I should have been a mountain of mummy.

*Re-enter BARDOLPH with sack.*

*Bard.* Here's Mistress Quickly, sir, to speak with you.

*Fal.* Come, let me pour in some sack to the Thames water; for my belly's as cold as if I had swallowed snowballs for pills to cool the reins. Call her in.

*Bard.* Come in, woman!

*Enter MISTRESS QUICKLY.*

*Quick.* By your leave; I cry you mercy: give your worship good morrow.

*Fal.* Take away these chalices. Go brew me a pottle of sack finely.

*Bard.* With eggs, sir?

*Fal.* Simple of itself; I'll no pullet-sperm in my brewage. [*Exit Bardolph.*] How now!

*Quick.* Marry, sir, I come to your worship from Mistress Ford.

*Fal.* Mistress Ford! I have had ford enough; I was thrown into the ford; I have my belly full of ford.

*Quick.* Alas the day! good heart, that was not her fault: she does so take on with her men; they mistook their erection.

*Fal.* So did I mine, to build upon a foolish woman's promise.

*Quick.* Well, she laments, sir, for it, that it would yearn your heart to see it. Her husband goes this morning a-birding; she desires you once more to come to her between eight and nine: I must carry her word quickly: she'll make you amends, I warrant you.

*Fal.* Well, I will visit her: tell her so; and bid her think what a man is: let her consider his frailty, and then judge of my merit.

*Quick.* I will tell her.

*Fal.* Do so. Between nine and ten, sayest thou?

*Quick.* Eight and nine, sir.

*Fal.* Well, be gone: I will not miss her.

*Quick.* Peace be with you, sir.

*Fal.* I marvel I hear not of Master Brook; he sent me word to stay within: I like his money well. O, here he comes.

*Enter FORD.*

*Ford.* Bless you, sir!

*Fal.* Now, Master Brook, you come to know what hath passed between me and Ford's wife?

*Ford.* That, indeed, Sir John, is my business.

*Fal.* Master Brook, I will not lie to you: I was at her house the hour she appointed me.

*Ford.* And sped you, sir?

*Fal.* Very ill-favourably, Master Brook.

*Ford.* How so, sir? Did she change her determination?

*Fal.* No, Master Brook; but the peaking Cornuto her husband, Master Brook, dwelling in a continual larum of jealousy, comes me in the instant of our encounter, after we had embraced, kissed, protested, and, as it were, spoke the prologue of our comedy; and at his heels a rabble of his companions, thither provoked and instigated by his distemper, and, forsooth, to search his house for his wife's love.

*Ford.* What, while you were there?

*Fal.* While I was there.

*Ford.* And did he search for you, and could not find you?

*Fal.* You shall hear. As good luck would have it, comes in one Mistress Page; gives intelligence of Ford's approach; and, in her invention and Ford's wife's distraction, they conveyed me into a buck-basket.

*Ford.* A buck-basket!

*Fal.* By the Lord, a buck-basket! rammed me in with foul shirts and smocks, socks, foul stockings, greasy napkins; that, Master Brook, there was the rankest compound of villanous smell that ever offended nostril.

*Ford.* And how long lay you there?

*Fal.* Nay, you shall hear, Master Brook, what I have suffered to bring this woman to evil for your good. Being thus crammed in the basket, a couple of Ford's knaves, his hinds, were called forth by their mistress to carry me in the name of foul clothes to Datchet-lane: they took me on their shoulders; met the jealous knave their master in the door, who asked them

once or twice what they had in their basket: I quaked for fear, lest the lunatic knave would have searched it; but fate, ordaining he should be a cuckold, held his hand. Well: on went he for a search, and away went I for foul clothes. But mark the sequel, Master Brook: I suffered the pangs of three several deaths; first, an intolerable fright, to be detected with a jealous rotten bell-wether; next, to be compassed, like a good bilbo, in the circumference of a peck, hilt to point, heel to head; and then, to be stopped in, like a strong distillation, with stinking clothes that fretted in their own grease: think of that, —a man of my kidney,—think of that,—that am as subject to heat as butter; a man of continual dissolution and thaw: it was a miracle to 'scape suffocation. And in the height of this bath, when I was more than half stewed in grease, like a Dutch dish, to be thrown into the Thames, and cooled, glowing hot, in that surge, like a horse-shoe; think of that,—hissing hot,—think of that, Master Brook.

*Ford.* In good sadness, sir, I am sorry that for my sake you have suffered all this. My suit then is desperate; you'll undertake her no more?

*Fal.* Master Brook, I will be thrown into Etna, as I have been into Thames, ere I will leave her thus. Her husband is this morning gone a-birding; I have received from her another embassy of meeting; 'twixt eight and nine is the hour, Master Brook.

*Ford.* 'Tis past eight already, sir.

*Fal.* Is it? I will then address me to my appointment. Come to me at your convenient leisure, and you shall know how I speed; and the conclusion shall be crowned with your enjoying her. Adieu. You shall have her, Master Brook; Master Brook, you shall cuckold Ford.

[*Exit.*]

*Ford.* Hum! ha! is this a vision? is this a dream? do I sleep? Master Ford, awake! awake, Master Ford! there's a hole made in your best coat, Master Ford. This 'tis to be married! this 'tis to have linen and buck-baskets! Well, I will proclaim myself what I am: I will now take the lecher; he is at my house; he cannot 'scape me; 'tis impossible he should; he cannot creep into a halfpenny purse, nor into a pepper-box; but, lest the devil that guides him should aid him, I will search impossible places. Though what I am I cannot avoid, yet to be what I would not shall not make me tame: if I have horns to make one mad, let the proverb go with me: I'll be horn-mad.

[*Exit.*]

#### ACT IV.

##### SCENE I. A street.

*Enter MISTRESS PAGE, MISTRESS QUICKLY, and WILLIAM.*

*Mrs Page.* Is he at Master Ford's already, think'st thou?

*Quick.* Sure he is by this, or would be presently; but, truly, he is very courageous mad about his throwing into the water. Mistress Ford desires you to come suddenly.

*Mrs Page.* I'll be with her by and by; I'll

but bring my young man here to school. Look, where his master comes; 'tis a playing-day, I see.

*Enter SIR HUGH EVANS.*

How now, Sir Hugh! no school to-day! 10

*Evans.* No; Master Slender is let the boys leave to play.

*Quick.* Blessing of his heart!

*Mrs Page.* Sir Hugh, my husband says my son profits nothing in the world at his book. I pray you, ask him some questions in his accidence.

*Evans.* Come hither, William; hold up your head; come.

*Mrs Page.* Come on, sirrah; hold up your head; answer your master, be not afraid. 20

*Evans.* William, how many numbers is in nouns?

*Will.* Two.

*Quick.* Truly, I thought there had been one number more, because they say, 'Od's nouns.'

*Evans.* Peace your tattlings! What is 'fair,' William?

*Will.* Pulcher.

*Quick.* Polecat! there are fairer things than polecats, sure. 30

*Evans.* You are a very simplicity 'oman: I pray you, peace. What is 'lapis,' William?

*Will.* A stone.

*Evans.* And what is 'a stone,' William?

*Will.* A pebble.

*Evans.* No, it is 'lapis.' I pray you, remember in your brain.

*Will.* Lapis.

*Evans.* That is a good William. What is he, William, that does lend articles? 40

*Will.* Articles are borrowed of the pronoun, and be thus declined, Singulariter, nominativo, hic, ille, hoc.

*Evans.* Nominativo, hic, hac, hog; pray you, mark: genitivo, hujus. Well, what is your accusative case?

*Will.* Accusativo, hinc.

*Evans.* I pray you, have your remembrance, child; accusativo, hung, hang, hog.

*Quick.* 'Hang-hog' is Latin for bacon, I warrant you. 51

*Evans.* Leave your prabbles, 'oman. What is the focative case, William?

*Will.* O,—vocativo, O.

*Evans.* Remember, William; focative is caret. *Quick.* And that's a good root.

*Evans.* 'Oman, forbear.

*Mrs Page.* Peace!

*Evans.* What is your genitive case plural, William? 60

*Will.* Genitive case!

*Evans.* Ay.

*Will.* Genitive,—horum, harum, horum.

*Quick.* Vengeance of Jenny's case! fie on her! never name her, child, if she be a whore.

*Evans.* For shame, 'oman.

*Quick.* You do ill to teach the child such words: he teaches him to lick and to hack, which they'll do fast enough of themselves, and to call 'horum.' fie upon you! 70

*Evans.* 'Oman, art thou lunatic? hast thou no understandings for thy cases and the numbers

of the genders? Thou art as foolish Christian |  
creatures as I would desire.

*Mrs Page.* Prithee, hold thy peace.

*Evans.* Show me now, William, some declensions of your pronouns.

*Will.* Forsooth, I have forgot.

*Evans.* It is qui, quæ, quod: if you forget your 'quies,' your 'quæ,' and your 'quods,' you must be preaches. Go your ways, and play; go.

*Mrs Page.* He is a better scholar than I thought he was.

*Evans.* He is a good sprag memory. Farewell, Mistress Page.

*Mrs Page.* Adieu, good Sir Hugh.

[*Exit Sir Hugh.*]

Get you home, boy. Come, we stay too long.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. A room in FORD'S house.

*Enter FALSTAFF and MISTRESS FORD.*

*Fal.* Mistress Ford, your sorrow hath eaten up my suifance. I see you are obsequious in your love, and I profess requital to a hair's breadth; not only, Mistress Ford, in the simple office of love, but in all the accoutrement, complement and ceremony of it. But are you sure of your husband now?

*Mrs Ford.* He's a-birding, sweet Sir John.

*Mrs Page.* [Within] What, ho, gossip Ford! what, ho!

*Mrs Ford.* Step into the chamber, Sir John.

[*Exit Falstaff.*]

*Enter MISTRESS PAGE.*

*Mrs Page.* How now, sweetheart! who's at home besides yourself?

*Mrs Ford.* Why, none but mine own people.

*Mrs Page.* Indeed!

*Mrs Ford.* No, certainly. [*Aside to her*]

Speak louder.

*Mrs Page.* Truly, I am so glad you have nobody here.

*Mrs Ford.* Why?

*Mrs Page.* Why, woman, your husband is in his old luns again: he so takes on yonder with my husband; so rails against all married mankind; so curses all Eve's daughters, of what complexion soever; and so buffets himself on the forehead, crying, 'Peer out, peer out!' that any madness I ever yet beheld seemed but tameness, civility and patience, to this his distemper he is in now: I am glad the fat knight is not here.

*Mrs Ford.* Why, does he talk of him?

*Mrs Page.* Of none but him; and swears he was carried out, the last time he searched for him, in a basket; protests to my husband he is now here, and hath drawn him and the rest of their company from their sport, to make another experiment of his suspicion: but I am glad the knight is not here; now he shall see his own foulery.

*Mrs Ford.* How near is he, Mistress Page.

*Mrs Page.* Hard by; at street end; he will be here anon.

*Mrs Ford.* I am undone! The knight is here.

*Mrs Page.* Why then you are utterly shamed, and he's but a dead man. What a woman are you!—Away with him, away with him! better shame than murder.

*Mrs Ford.* Which way should he go? how should I bestow him? Shall I put him into the basket again?

*Re-enter FALSTAFF.*

*Fal.* No, I'll come no more i' the basket. May I not go out ere he come?

*Mrs Page.* Alas, three of Master Ford's brothers watch the door with pistols, that none shall issue out; otherwise you might slip away ere he came. But what make you here?

*Fal.* What shall I do? I'll creep up into the chimney.

*Mrs Ford.* There they always use to discharge their birding-pieces. Creep into the kiln-hole.

*Fal.* Where is it?

*Mrs Ford.* He will seek there, on my word. Neither press, coffer, chest, trunk, well, vault, but he hath an abstract for the remembrance of such places, and goes to them by his note: there is no hiding you in the house.

*Fal.* I'll go out then.

*Mrs Page.* If you go out in your own semblance, you die, Sir John. Unless you go out disguised—

*Mrs Ford.* How might we disguise him?

*Mrs Page.* Alas the day, I know not! There is no woman's gown big enough for him; otherwise he might put on a hat, a muffler and a kerchief, and so escape.

*Fal.* Good hearts, devise something; any extremity rather than a mischief.

*Mrs Ford.* My maid's aunt, the fat woman of Brentford, has a gown above.

*Mrs Page.* On my word, it will serve him; she's as big as he is; and there's her thrummed hat and her muffler too. Run up, Sir John.

*Mrs Ford.* Go, go, sweet Sir John: Mistress Page and I will look some linen for your head.

*Mrs Page.* Quick, quick! we'll come dress you straight: put on the gown the while.

[*Exit Falstaff.*]

*Mrs Ford.* I would my husband would meet him in this shape: he cannot abide the old woman of Brentford; he swears she's a witch; forbade her my house and hath threatened to beat her.

*Mrs Page.* Heaven guide him to thy husband's cudgel, and the devil guide his cudgel afterwards!

*Mrs Ford.* But is my husband coming?

*Mrs Page.* Ay, in good sadness, is he; and talks of the basket too, howsoever he hath had intelligence.

*Mrs Ford.* We'll try that; for I'll appoint my men to carry the basket again, to meet him at the door with it, as they did last time.

*Mrs Page.* Nay, but he'll be here presently: let's go dress him like the witch of Brentford.

*Mrs Ford.* I'll first direct my men what

they shall do with the basket. Go up; I'll bring linen for him straight. *[Exit.]*

*Mrs Page.* Hang him, dishonest varlet! we cannot misuse him enough.

We'll leave a proof, by that which we will do,  
Wives may be merry, and yet honest too:  
We do not act that often jest and laugh;  
'Tis old, but true, Still swine eats all the daff.

*[Exit.]*

*Re-enter MISTRESS FORD with two Servants.*

*Mrs Ford.* Go, sir, take the basket again on your shoulders: your master is hard at door; if he bid you set it down, obey him: quickly, dispatch. *[Exit.]*

*First Serv.* Come, come, take it up.

*Sec. Serv.* Pray heaven it be not full of knight again.

*First Serv.* I hope not; I had as lief bear so much lead.

*Enter FORD, PAGE, SHALLOW, CAIUS, and SIR HUGH EVANS.*

*Ford.* Ay, but if it prove true, Master Page, have you any way then to unfool me again? Set down the basket, villain! Somebody call my wife. Youth in a basket! O you pandarous rascals! there's a knot, a ging, a pack, a conspiracy against me: now shall the devil be shamed. What, wife, I say! Come, come forth! Behold what honest clothes you send forth to bleaching!

*Page.* Why, this passes, Master Ford; you are not to go loose any longer; you must be pinioned.

*Evans.* Why, this is lunatics! this is mad as a mad dog! 131

*Shal.* Indeed, Master Ford, this is not well, indeed.

*Ford.* So say I too, sir.

*Re-enter MISTRESS FORD.*

Come hither, Mistress Ford; Mistress Ford, the honest woman, the modest wife, the virtuous creature, that hath the jealous fool to her husband! I suspect without cause, mistress, do I? *Mrs Ford.* Heaven be my witness you do, if you suspect me in any dishonesty. 140

*Ford.* Well said, brazen-face! hold it out. Come forth, sirrah!

*[Pulling clothes out of the basket.]*

*Page.* This passes!

*Mrs Ford.* Are you not ashamed? let the clothes alone.

*Ford.* I shall find you anon.

*Evans.* 'Tis unreasonable! Will you take up your wife's clothes? Come away.

*Ford.* Empty the basket, I say!

*Mrs Ford.* Why, man, why? 150

*Ford.* Master Page, as I am a man, there was one conveyed out of my house yesterday in this basket: why may not he be there again? In my house I am sure he is: my intelligence is true; my jealousy is reasonable. Pluck me out all the linen.

*Mrs Ford.* If you find a man there, he shall die a flea's death.

*Page.* Here's no man.

*Shal.* By my fidelity, this is not well, Master Ford; this wrongs you. 161

*Evans.* Master Ford, you must pray, and not follow the imaginations of your own heart: this is jealousies.

*Ford.* Well, he's not here I seek for.

*Page.* No, nor nowhere else but in your brain.

*Ford.* Help to search my house this one time. If I find not what I seek, show no colour for my extremity; let me for ever be your table-sport; let them say of me, 'As jealous as Ford, that searched a hollow walnut for his wife's leman.' Satisfy me once more; once more search with me.

*Mrs Ford.* What, ho, Mistress Page! come you and the old woman down; my husband will come into the chamber.

*Ford.* Old woman! what old woman's that?

*Mrs Ford.* Why, it is my maid's aunt of Brentford. 179

*Ford.* A witch, a quean, an old cozening quean! Have I not forbid her my house? She comes of errands, does she? We are simple men; we do not know what's brought to pass under the profession of fortune-telling. She works by charms, by spells, by the figure, and such daulbery as this is, beyond our element: we know nothing. Come down, you witch, you hag, you; come down, I say!

*Mrs Ford.* Nay, good, sweet husband! Good gentlemen, let him not strike the old woman.

*Re-enter FALSTAFF in woman's clothes, and MISTRESS PAGE.*

*Mrs Page.* Come, Mother Prat; come, give me your hand.

*Ford.* I'll prat her. *[Beating him.]* Out of my door, you witch, you hag, you baggage, you polecat, you ronyon! out, out! I'll conjure you, I'll fortune-tell you. *[Exit Falstaff.]*

*Mrs Page.* Are you not ashamed? I think you have killed the poor woman.

*Mrs Ford.* Nay, he will do it. 'Tis a goodly credit for you. 200

*Ford.* Hang her, witch!

*Evans.* By yea and no, I think the woman is a witch indeed: I like not when a woman has a great peard; I spy a great peard under his muffler.

*Ford.* Will you follow, gentlemen? I beseech you, follow; see but the issue of my jealousy: if I cry out thus upon no trail, never trust me when I open again.

*Page.* Let's obey his humour a little further: come, gentlemen. 211

*[Exit Ford, Page, Shal., Caius, and Evans.]* *Mrs Page.* Trust me, he beat him most pitifully.

*Mrs Ford.* Nay, by the mass, that he did not; he beat him most unpitifully, methought.

*Mrs Page.* I'll have the cudgel hallowed and hung o'er the altar; it hath done meritorious service.

*Mrs Ford.* What think you? may we, with the warrant of womanhood and the witness of a good conscience, pursue him with any further revenge?



*Mrs Page.* The spirit of wantonness is, sure, scared out of him : if the devil have him not in fee-simple, with fine and recovery, he will never, I think, in the way of waste, attempt us again.

*Mrs Ford.* Shall we tell our husbands how we have served him ?

*Mrs Page.* Yes, by all means ; if it be but to scrape the figures out of your husband's brains. If they can find in their hearts the poor unvirtuous fat knight shall be any further afflicted, we two will still be the ministers.

*Mrs Ford.* I'll warrant they'll have him publicly shamed : and methinks there would be no period to the jest, should he not be publicly shamed.

*Mrs Page.* Come, to the forge with it then ; shape it : I would not have things cool.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III. A room in the Garter Inn.

*Enter Host and BARDOLPH.*

*Host.* Sir, the Germans desire to have three of your horses : the duke himself will be to-morrow at court, and they are going to meet him.

*Host.* What duke should that be comes so secretly ? I hear not of him in the court. Let me speak with the gentlemen : they speak English !

*Bard.* Ay, sir ; I'll call them to you.

*Host.* They shall have my horses ; but I'll make them pay ; I'll sauce them : they have had my house a week at command ; I have turned away my other guests : they must come off ; I'll sauce them. Come.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE IV. A room in Ford's house.

*Enter PAGE, FORD, MISTRESS PAGE, MISTRESS FORD, and SIR HUGH EVANS.*

*Evans.* 'Tis one of the best discretions of a woman as ever I did look upon.

*Page.* And did he send you both these letters at an instant !

*Mrs Page.* Within a quarter of an hour.

*Ford.* Pardon me, wife. Henceforth do what thou wilt ;

I rather will suspect the sun with cold Than thee with wantonness : now doth thy honour stand,

In him that was of late an heretic, As firm as faith.

*Page.* 'Tis well, 'tis well ; no more : Be not as extreme in submission As in offence.

But let our plot go forward : let our wives

Yet once again, to make us public sport,

Appoint a meeting with this old fat fellow,

Where we may take him and disgrace him for it.

*Ford.* There is no better way than that they spoke of.

*Page.* How ! to send him word they'll meet him in the park at midnight ? Fie, fie ! he'll never come.

*Evans.* You say he has been thrown in the rivers and has been grievously peaten as an old

oman : methinks there should be terrors in him that he should not come ; methinks his flesh is punished, he shall have no desires.

*Page.* So think I too.

*Mrs Ford.* Devise but how you'll use him when he comes, And let us two devise to bring him thither.

*Mrs Page.* There is an old tale goes that Herne the hunter,

Sometime a keeper here in Windsor forest, Doth all the winter-time, at still midnight,

Walk round about an oak, with great ragged horns ;

And there he blasts the tree and takes the cattle And makes milch-kine yield blood and shakes

a chain.

In a most hideous and dreadful manner :

You have heard of such a spirit, and well you know

The superstitious idle-headed old Received and did deliver to our age

This tale of Herne the hunter for a truth.

*Page.* Why, yet there want not many that do fear

In deep of night to walk by this Herne's oak : 40 But what of this ?

*Mrs Ford.* Marry, this is our device : That Falstaff at that oak shall meet with us.

*Page.* Well, let it not be doubted but he'll come :

And in this shape when you have brought him thither,

What shall be done with him ? what is your plot ?

*Mrs Page.* That likewise have we thought upon, and thus :

Nan Page my daughter and my little son And three or four more of their growth we'll

dress Like urchins, ouphes and fairies, green and white,

With rounds of waxen tapers on their heads, 50 And rattles in their hands : upon a sudden,

As Falstaff, she and I, are newly met, Let them from forth a sawpit rush at once

With some diffused song : upon their sight, We two in great amazement will fly :

Then let them all encircle him about And, fairy-like, to pinch the unclean knight,

And ask him why, that hour of fairy revel, In their so sacred paths he dares to tread

In shape profane.

*Mrs Ford.* And till he tell the truth, 60 Let the supposed fairies pinch him sound

And burn him with their tapers.

*Mrs Page.* The truth being known, We'll all present ourselves, dis-horn the spirit,

And mock him home to Windsor.

*Ford.* The children must Be practised well to this, or they'll ne'er do't.

*Evans.* I will teach the children their behaviours ; and I will be like a jack-an-apes also, to burn the knight with my taper.

*Ford.* That will be excellent. I'll go buy them vizards.

*Mrs Page.* My Nan shall be the queen of all the fairies, 70

Finely attired in a robe of white.

*Page.* That silk will I go buy. [*Aside*] And in that time

Shall Master Slender steal my Nan away  
And marry her at Eton. Go send to Falstaff  
straight.

*Ford.* Nay, I'll to him again in name of  
Brook:

He'll tell me all his purpose: sure, he'll come.

*Mrs Page.* Fear not you that. Go get us  
properties

And tricking for our fairies.

*Evans.* Let us about it: it is admirable pleasures  
and very honest knaveries. 81

[*Exeunt Page, Ford, and Evans.*]

*Mrs Page.* Go, Mistress Ford,  
Send quickly to Sir John, to know his mind.

[*Exit Mrs Ford.*]

I'll to the doctor: he hath my good will,

And none but he, to marry with Nan Page.

That Slender, though well landed, is an idiot;

And he my husband best of all affects.

The doctor is well money'd, and his friends

Potent at court: he, none but he, shall have her,

Though twenty thousand worthier come to  
crave her. [*Exit.* 90

#### SCENE V. A room in the Garter Inn.

*Enter Host and SIMPLE.*

*Host.* What wouldst thou have, boor? what,  
thick-skin? speak, breathe, discuss; brief, short,  
quick, snap.

*Sim.* Marry, sir, I come to speak with Sir  
John Falstaff from Master Slender.

*Host.* There's his chamber, his house, his  
castle, his standing-bed and truckle-bed; 'tis  
painted about with the story of the Prodigal,  
fresh and new. Go knock and call; he'll speak  
like an Anthropophaginian unto thee: knock,  
I say. 11

*Sim.* There's an old woman, a fat woman,  
gone up into his chamber: I'll be so bold as  
stay, sir, till she come down; I come to speak  
with her, indeed.

*Host.* Hal! a fat woman! the knight may be  
robbed: I'll call. Bully knight! bully Sir John!  
speak from thy lungs military: art thou there?  
it is thine host, thine Eplesian, calls.

*Fal.* [*Above*] How now, mine host! 20

*Host.* Here's a Bohemian-Tartar carries the  
coming down of thy fat woman. Let her descend,  
bully, let her descend; my chambers are  
honourable: fie! privacy? fie!

*Enter FALSTAFF.*

*Fal.* There was, mine host, an old fat woman  
even now with me; but she's gone.

*Sim.* Pray you, sir, was't not the wise woman  
of Brentford?

*Fal.* Ay, marry, was it, mussel-shell: what  
would you with her? 30

*Sim.* My master, sir, Master Slender, sent to  
her, seeing her go thorough the streets, to know,  
sir, whether one Nym, sir, that beguiled him of  
a chain, had the chain or no.

*Fal.* I spoke with the old woman about it.

*Sim.* And what says she, I pray, sir?

*Fal.* Marry, she says that the very same man

that beguiled Master Slender of his chain  
cozened him of it.

*Sim.* I would I could have spoken with the  
woman herself; I had other things to have  
spoken with her too from him. 42

*Fal.* What are they? let us know.

*Host.* Ay, come; quick.

*Sim.* I may not conceal them, sir.

*Host.* Conceal them, or thou didst.

*Sim.* Why, sir, they were nothing but about  
Mistress Anne Page; to know if it were my  
master's fortune to have her or no.

*Fal.* 'Tis 'tis his fortune. 50

*Sim.* What, sir?

*Fal.* To have her, or no. Go; say the woman  
told me so.

*Sim.* May I be bold to say so, sir?

*Fal.* Ay, sir; like who more bold.

*Sim.* I thank your worship: I shall make my  
master glad with these tidings. [*Exit.*]

*Host.* Thou art clerly, thou art clerly, Sir  
John. Was there a wise woman with thee?

*Fal.* Ay, that there was, mine host; one that  
hath taught me more wit than ever I learned  
before in my life; and I paid nothing for it  
neither, but was paid for my learning.

*Enter BARDOLPH.*

*Bard.* Ont, alas, sir! cozenage, mere cozenage!  
*Host.* Where be my horses? speak well of  
them, varletto.

*Bard.* Run away with the cozeners; for so  
soon as I came beyond Eton, they threw me off  
from behind one of them, in a slough of mire;  
and set spurs and away, like three German  
devils, three Doctor Faustuses. 71

*Host.* They are gone but to meet the duke,  
villain: do not say they be fled; Germans are  
honest men.

*Enter SIR HUGH EVANS.*

*Evans.* Where is mine host?

*Host.* What is the matter, sir?

*Evans.* Have a care of your entertainments:  
there is a friend of mine come to town, tells me  
there is three cozen-germans that has cozened  
all the hosts of Readings, of Maidenhead, of  
Colebrook, of horses and money. I tell you for  
good will, look you: you are wise and full of  
gibes and plouting-stocks, and 'tis not convenient  
you should be cozened. Fare you well. [*Exit.*]

*Enter DOCTOR CAIUS.*

*Caius.* Vere is mine host de Jartee?

*Host.* Here, master doctor, in perplexity and  
doubtful dilemma.

*Caius.* I cannot tell vat is dat: but it is tell-a  
me dat you make grand preparation for a duke  
de Jamany: by my trot, dere is no duke dat the  
court is know to come. I tell you for good  
will: adieu. [*Exit.* 91

*Host.* Hue and cry, villain, go! Assist me,  
knight. I am undone! Fly, run, hue and cry,  
villain! I am undone! [*Exeunt Host and Bard.*]

*Fal.* I would all the world might be cozened;  
for I have been cozened and beaten too. If it  
should come to the ear of the court, how I have  
been transformed and how my transformation

hath been washed and cudgelled, they would melt me out of my fat drop by drop and liquor fishermen's boots with me: I warrant they would whip me with their fine wits till I were as crest-fallen as a dried pear. I never prospered since I forswore myself at primero. Well, if my wind were but long enough to say my prayers, I would repent.

*Enter MISTRESS QUICKLY.*

Now, whence come you?

*Quick.* From the two parties, forsooth.

*Fal.* The devil take one party and his dam the other! and so they shall be both bestow'd. I have suffered more for their sakes, more than the villainous inconstancy of man's disposition is able to bear.

*Quick.* And have not they suffered! Yes, I warrant; speciously one of them; Mistress Ford, good heart, is beaten black and blue, that you cannot see a white spot about her.

*Fal.* What tell'st thou me of black and blue? I was beaten myself into all the colours of the rainbow; and I was like to be apprehended for the witch of Brentford: but that my admirable dexterity of wit, my counterfeiting the action of an old woman, delivered me, the knave constable had set me i' the stocks, i' the common stocks, for a witch.

*Quick.* Sir, let me speak with you in your chamber: you shall hear how things go; and, I warrant, to your content. Here is a letter will say somewhat. Good hearts, what ado here is to bring you together! Sure, one of you does not serve heaven well, that you are so crossed. 130

*Fal.* Come up into my chamber. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI. *Another room in the Garter Inn.*

*Enter FENTON and HOST.*

*Host.* Master Fenton, talk not to me; my mind is heavy: I will give over all.

*Fent.* Yet hear me speak. Assist me in my purpose.

And, as I am a gentleman, I'll give thee A hundred pound in gold more than your loss.

*Host.* I will hear you, Master Fenton; and I will at the least keep your counsel.

*Fent.* From time to time I have acquainted you

With the dear love I bear to fair Anne Page; Who mutually hath answer'd my affection, So far forth as herself might be her chooser, Even to my wish: I have a letter from her Of such contents as you will wonder at; The mirth whereof so larded with my matter, That neither singly can be manifested, Without the show of both; fat Falstaff Hath a great scene: the image of the jest I'll show you here at large. Hark, good mine host.

To-night at Herne's oak, just 'twixt twelve and one,

Must my sweet Nan present the Fairy Queen; & The purpose why, is here: in which disguise, While other jests are something rank on foot, Her father hath commanded her to slip

Away with Slender and with him at Eton Immediately to marry: she hath consented: Now, sir,

Her mother, ever strong against that match And firm for Doctor Caius, hath appointed That he shall likewise shuffle her away, While other sports are tasking of their minds, 30 And at the deanery, where a priest attends, Straight marry her: to this her mother's plot She seemingly obedient likewise hath Made promise to the doctor. Now, thus it rests: Her father means she shall be all in white, And in that habit, when Slender sees his time To take her by the hand and bid her go, She shall go with him: her mother hath intended,

The better to denote her to the doctor, For they must all be mask'd and vizarded, 40 That quaint in green she shall be loose enrobed, With ribands pendent, flaring 'bout her head: And when the doctor spies his vantage ripe, To pinch her by the hand, and, on that token, The maid hath given consent to go with him.

*Host.* Which means she to deceive, father or mother?

*Fent.* Both, my good host, to go along with me:

And here it rests, that you'll procure the vicar To stay for me at church 'twixt twelve and one, And, in the lawful name of marrying, 50 To give our hearts united ceremony.

*Host.* Well, husband your device; I'll to the vicar:

Bring you the maid, you shall not lack a priest.

*Fent.* So shall I evermore be bound to thee; Besides, I'll make a present recompense.

[*Exeunt.*]

ACT V.

SCENE I. *A room in the Garter Inn.*

*Enter FALSTAFF and MISTRESS QUICKLY.*

*Fal.* Prithce, no more prattling; go. I'll hold. This is the third time; I hope good luck lies in odd numbers. Away! go. They say there is divinity in odd numbers, either in nativity, chance, or death. Away!

*Quick.* I'll provide you a chain; and I'll do what I can to get you a pair of horns.

*Fal.* Away, I say; time wears: hold up your head, and mince. [*Exit Mrs Quickly.*]

*Enter FORD.*

How now, Master Brook! Master Brook, the matter will be known to-night, or never. Be you in the Park about midnight, at Herne's oak, and you shall see wonders.

*Ford.* Went you not to her yesterday, sir, as you told me you had appointed?

*Fal.* I went to her, Master Brook, as you see, like a poor old man: but I came from her, Master Brook, like a poor old woman. That same knave Ford, her husband, hath the finest mad devil of jealousy in him, Master Brook, that ever governed frenzy. I will tell you: he beat me grievously, in the shape of a woman; for in the shape of man, Master Brook, I fear not

*Mrs Page.* Why, Sir John, do you think, though we would have thrust virtue out of our hearts by the head and shoulders and have given ourselves without scruple to hell, that ever the devil could have made you our delight?

*Ford.* What, a hodge-pudding? a bag of flax?

*Mrs Page.* A puffed man! 160

*Page.* Old, cold, withered and of intolerable entrails!

*Ford.* And one that is as slanderous as Satan?

*Page.* And as poor as Job?

*Ford.* And as wicked as his wife!

*Evans.* And given to fornications, and to taverns and sack and wine and metheglins, and to drinkings and swearings and starings, prabbles and prabbles!

*Fal.* Well, I am your theme: you have the start of me; I am dejected; I am not able to answer the Welsh flannel; ignorance itself is a plummet o'er me; use me as you will.

*Ford.* Marry, sir, we'll bring you to Windsor, to one Master Brook, that you have cozened of money, to whom you should have been a pander: over and above that you have suffered, I think to repay that money will be a biting affliction.

*Page.* Yet be cheerful, knight: thou shalt eat a posset to-night at my house; where I will desire thee to laugh at my wife, that now laughs at thee: tell her Master Slender hath married her daughter.

*Mrs Page.* [Aside] Doctors doubt that: if Anne Page be my daughter, she is, by this, Doctor Caius' wife.

*Enter SLENDER.*

*Slcn.* Whoa, ho! ho, father Page!

*Page.* Son, how now! how now, son! have you dispatched? 190

*Slcn.* Dispatched! I'll make the best in Gloucestershire know n't; would I were hanged, la, else!

*Page.* Of what, son?

*Slcn.* I came yonder at Eton to marry Mistress Anne Page, and she's a great lubberly boy. If it had not been i' the church, I would have swung him, or he should have swung me. If I did not think it had been Anne Page, would I might never stir!—and 'tis a post-master's boy.

*Page.* Upon my life, then, you took the wrong. 200

*Slcn.* What need you tell me that? I think so, when I took a boy for a girl. If I had been married to him, for all he was in woman's apparel, I would not have had him.

*Page.* Why, this is your own folly. Did not I tell you how you should know my daughter by her garments?

*Slcn.* I went to her in white, and cried 'mum,' and she cried 'budget,' as Anne and I

had appointed; and yet it was not Anne, but a postmaster's boy.

*Mrs Page.* Good George, be not angry: I knew of your purpose; turned my daughter into green; and, indeed, she is now with the doctor at the deanery, and there married.

*Enter CAIUS.*

*Caius.* Vero is Mistress Page! By gar, I am cozened: I ha' married un garçon, a boy; un paysan, by gar, a boy; it is not Anne Page: by gar, I am cozened. 220

*Mrs Page.* Why, did you take her in green?

*Caius.* Ay, by gar, and 'tis a boy: by gar, I'll raise all Windsor. [Exit.]

*Ford.* This is strange. Who hath got the right Anne?

*Page.* My heart misgives me: here comes Master Fenton.

*Enter FENTON and ANNE PAGE.*

How now, Master Fenton!

*Anne.* Pardon, good father! good my mother, pardon!

*Page.* Now, mistress, how chance you went not with Master Slender? 230

*Mrs Page.* Why went you not with master doctor, maid?

*Fent.* You do amaze her: hear the truth of it. You would have married her most shamefully, Where there was no proportion held in love, The truth is, she and I, long since contracted, Are now so sure that nothing can dissolve us. The offence is holy that she hath committed; And this deceit loses the name of craft, 240

(Of disobedience, or undutious title, Since therein she doth evitate and shun A thousand irreligious cursed hours, Which forced marriage would have brought upon her.

*Ford.* Stand not amazed; here is no remedy: In love the heavens themselves do guide the state;

Money buys lands, and wives are sold by fate.

*Fal.* I am glad, though you have taken a special stand to strike at me, that your arrow hath glanced.

*Page.* Well, what remedy? Fenton, heaven give thee joy! 250

What cannot he eschew'd must he embrace!

*Fal.* When night-dogs run, all sorts of deer are chased.

*Mrs Page.* Well, I will muse no further. Master Fenton,

Heaven give you many, many merry days! Good husband, let us every one go home,

And laugh this sport o'er by a country fire; Sir John and all.

*Ford.* Let it be so. Sir John, To Master Brook you yet shall hold your word; For he to-night shall lie with Mistress Ford.

[Exeunt.]

# MEASURE FOR MEASURE

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

VINCENTIO, the Duke.  
ANGELO, Deputy.  
ESCALUS, an ancient Lord.  
CLAUDIO, a young gentleman.  
LUCIO, a fantastic.  
Two other gentlemen.  
PROVOST.  
THOMAS, } two friars.  
PETER, }  
A Justice.  
VARRIUS.  
ELBOW, a simple constable.  
FROTH, a foolish gentleman.

POMPRIY, servant to Mistress Overdone.  
ABHORSON, an executioner.  
BARNARDINE, a dissolute prisoner.

ISABELLA, sister to Claudio.  
MARIANA, betrothed to Angelo.  
JULIET, beloved of Claudio.  
FRANCISCA, a nun.  
MISTRESS OVERDONE, a bawd.

Lords, Officers, Citizens, Boy, and Attendants.

SCENE: Vienna.

### ACT I.

SCENE I. *An apartment in the DUKE's palace.*

*Enter DUKE, ESCALUS, Lords and Attendants.*

*Duke.* Escalus.

*Escal.* My lord.

*Duke.* Of government the properties to unfold,  
Would seem in me to affect speech and discourse;

Since I am put to know that your own science  
Exceeds, in that, the lists of all advice  
My strength can give you: then no more remains,  
But that to your sufficiency . . . . .

. . . . . as your worth is able,  
And let them work. The nature of our people,  
Our city's institutions, and the terms 11  
For common justice, you're as pregnant in  
As art and practice hath enriched any  
That we remember. There is our commission,  
From which we would not have you warp. Call  
hither.

I say, bid come before us Angelo.

[*Enter an Attendant.*]

What figure of us think you he will bear?  
For you must know, we have with special soul  
Elected him our absence to supply,  
Lent him our terror, dress'd him with our love,  
And given his deputation all the organs 21  
Of our own power: what think you of it?

*Escal.* If any in Vienna be of worth  
To undergo such ample grace and honour,  
It is Lord Angelo.

*Duke.* Look where he comes.

*Enter ANGELO.*

*Ang.* Always obedient to your grace's will,  
I come to know your pleasure.

*Duke.* Angelo,  
There is a kind of character in thy life,  
That to the observer doth thy history  
Fully unfold. Thyself and thy belongings 30  
Are not thine own so proper as to waste  
Thyself upon thy virtues, they on thee.  
Heaven doth with us as we with torches do,  
Not light them for themselves; for if our virtues  
Did not go forth of us, 'twere all alike  
As if we had them not. Spirits are not finely  
touch'd

But to fine issues, nor Nature never lends  
The smallest scruple of her excellence  
But, like a thrifty goddess, she determines  
Herself the glory of a creditor, 40  
Both thanks and use. But I do bend my speech  
To one that can my part in him advertise;  
Hold therefore, Angelo:—  
In our remove be thou at full yourself;  
Mortality and mercy in Vienna  
Live in thy tongue and heart: old Escalus,  
Though first in question, is thy secondary.  
Take thy commission.

*Ang.* Now, good my lord,  
Let there be some more test made of my metal,  
Before so noble and so great a figure 50  
Be stamp'd upon it.

*Duke.* No more evasion:  
We have with a heaven's aid and prepared choice  
Proceeded to you; therefore take your honours.  
Our haste from hence is of so quick condition  
That it prefers itself and leaves unquestion'd  
Matters of needful value. We shall write to you,  
As time and our concerns shall importune,  
How it goes with us, and do look to know  
What doth befall you here. So, fare you well:  
To the hopeful execution do I leave you 60  
Of your commissions.

*Ang.* Yet give leave, my lord,

That we may bring you something on the way.

*Duke.* My haste may not admit it;  
Nor need you, on mine honour, have to do  
With any scruple; your scope is as mine own,  
So to enforce or qualify the laws  
As to your soul seems good. Give me your  
hand:

I'll privily away. I love the people,  
But do not like to stage me to their eyes:  
Though it do well, I do not relish well 70  
Their loud applause and Aves vehement;  
Nor do I think the man of safe discretion  
That does affect it. Once more, fare you well.

*Ang.* The heavens give safety to your purposes!

*Escal.* Lead forth and bring you back in happiness!

*Duke.* I thank you. Fare you well. [*Exit.*]

*Escal.* I shall desire you, sir, to give me leave  
To have free speech with you; and it concerns  
me

To look into the bottom of my place:  
A power I have, but of what strength and nature  
I am not yet instructed. 81

*Ang.* 'Tis so with me. Let us withdraw together.

And we may soon our satisfaction have

Touching that point.

*Escal.* I'll wait upon your honour. [*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE II. A street.

*Enter LUCIO and two Gentlemen.*

*Lucio.* If the duke with the other dukes come  
net to composition with the King of Hungary,  
why then all the dukes fall upon the king.

*First Gent.* Heaven grant us its peace, but  
not the King of Hungary's!

*Sec. Gent.* Amen.

*Lucio.* Thou couldst like the sanctimonious  
pirate, that went to sea with the Ten  
Commandments, but scraped one out of the  
table.

*Sec. Gent.* 'Thou shalt not steal'! 10

*Lucio.* Ay, that he razed.

*First Gent.* Why, 'twas a commandment to  
command the captain and all the rest from their  
functions: they put forth to steal. There's not  
a soldier of us all, that, in the thanksgiving  
before meat, do relish the petition well that  
prays for peace.

*Sec. Gent.* I never heard any soldier dislike it.

*Lucio.* I believe thee; for I think thou never  
wast where grace was said. 20

*Sec. Gent.* No? a dozen times at least.

*First Gent.* What, in metre?

*Lucio.* In any proportion or in any language.

*First Gent.* I think, or in any religion.

*Lucio.* Ay, why not? Grace is grace, despite  
of all controversy; as, for example, thou thyself  
art a wicked villain, despite of all grace.

*First Gent.* Well, there went but a pair of  
shears between us.

*Lucio.* I grant; as there may between the  
lists and the velvet. Thou art the list. 31

*First Gent.* And thou the velvet: thou art  
good velvet; thou'rt a three-piled piece. I war-  
rant thee: I had as lief be a list of an English

kersey as be piled, as thou art piled, for a French  
velvet. Do I speak feelingly now?

*Lucio.* I think thou dost; and, indeed, with  
most painful feeling of thy speech: I will, out of  
thine own confession, learn to begin thy health;  
but, whilst I live, forget to drink after thee. 40

*First Gent.* I think I have done myself  
wrong, have I not?

*Sec. Gent.* Yes, that thou hast, whether thou  
art tainted or free.

*Lucio.* Behold, behold, where Madam Miti-  
gation comes! I have purchased as many  
diseases under her roof as come to—

*Sec. Gent.* To what, I pray?

*Lucio.* Judge.

*Sec. Gent.* To three thousand dolours a year.

*First Gent.* Ay, and more. 51

*Lucio.* A French crown more.

*First Gent.* Thou art always figuring dis-  
eases in me; but thou art full of error; I am  
sound.

*Lucio.* Nay, not as one would say, healthy;  
but so sound as things that are hollow: thy  
bones are hollow; impiety has made a feast of  
thee.

#### Enter MISTRESS OVERDONE.

*First Gent.* How now! which of your hips  
has the most profound sciatica?

*Mrs Ov.* Well, well; there's one yonder  
arrested and carried to prison was worth five  
thousand of you all.

*Sec. Gent.* Who's that, I pray thee?

*Mrs Ov.* Marry, sir, that's Claudio, Signior  
Claudio.

*First Gent.* Claudio to prison? 'tis not so.

*Mrs Ov.* Nay, but I know 'tis so: I saw him  
arrested, saw him carried away; and, which is  
more, within these three days his head to be  
chopped off. 70

*Lucio.* But, after all this fooling, I would  
not have it so. Art thou sure of this?

*Mrs Ov.* I am too sure of it; and it is for  
getting Madam Julietta with child.

*Lucio.* Believe me, this may be: he promised  
to meet me two hours since, and he was ever  
precise in promise-keeping.

*Sec. Gent.* Besides, you know, it draws some-  
thing near to the speech we had to such a  
purpose.

*First Gent.* But, most of all, agreeing with  
the proclamation. 81

*Lucio.* Away! let's go learn the truth of it.

[*Exeunt Lucio and Gentlemen.*]  
*Mrs Ov.* Thus, what with the war, what  
with the sweat, what with the gallows and what  
with poverty, I am custom-shrunk.

#### Enter POMPEY.

How now! what's the news with you?

*Pom.* Yonder man is carried to prison.

*Mrs Ov.* Well; what has he done?

*Pom.* A woman.

*Mrs Ov.* But what's his offence? 90

*Pom.* Groping for trouts in a peculiar river.

*Mrs Ov.* What, is there a maid with child  
by him?

*Pom.* No, but there's a woman with maid by

him. You have not heard of the proclamation, have you?

*Mrs Ov.* What proclamation, man?

*Pom.* All houses in the suburbs of Vienna must be plucked down.

*Mrs Ov.* And what shall become of those in the city?

*Pom.* They shall stand for seed: they had gone down too, but that a wise burgher put in for them.

*Mrs Ov.* But shall all our houses of resort in the suburbs be pulled down?

*Pom.* To the ground, mistress.

*Mrs Ov.* Why, here's a change indeed in the commonwealth! What shall become of me?

*Pom.* Come; fear not you: good counsellors lack no clients: though you change your place, you need not change your trade; I'll be your tapster still. Courage! there will be pity taken in you: you that have worn your eyes almost out in the service, you will be considered.

*Mrs Ov.* What's to do here, Thomas tapster? let's withdraw.

*Pom.* Here comes Signior Claudio, led by the provost to prison; and there's Madam Juliet.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter PROVOST, CLAUDIO, JULIET, and Officers.*

*Claud.* Fellow, why dost thou show me thus to the world?

Bear me to prison, where I am committed.

*Prov.* I do it not in evil disposition, but from Lord Angelo by special charge.

*Claud.* Thus can the demigod Authority make us pay down for our offence by weight. The words of heaven; on whom it will, it will; on whom it will not, so; yet still 'tis just.

*Re-enter LUCIO and two Gentlemen.*

*Lucio.* Why, how now, Claudio! whence comes this restraint?

*Claud.* From too much liberty, my Lucio, liberty:

surfeit is the father of much fast; every scope by the immoderate use turns to restraint. Our natures do pursue, like rats that ravin down their proper bane, a thirsty evil; and when we drink we die.

*Lucio.* If I could speak so wisely under arrest, I would send for certain of my creditors: and yet, to say the truth, I had as lief have the piquery of freedom as the morality of imprisonment. What's thy offence, Claudio?

*Claud.* What but to speak of would offend again.

*Lucio.* What, is't murder?

*Claud.* No.

*Lucio.* Lechery?

*Claud.* Call it so.

*Prov.* Away, sir! you must go.

*Claud.* One word, good friend. Lucio, a word with you.

*Lucio.* A hundred, if they'll do you any good.

lechery so look'd after!

*Claud.* Thus stands it with me: upon a true contract

I got possession of Julietta's bed:

You know the lady; she is fast my wife,

Save that we do the denunciation lack

Of outward order: this we came not to,

Only for propagation of a dower

Remaining in the coffer of her friends,

From whom we thought it meet to hide our love

Till time had made them for us. But it chances

The stealth of our most mutual entertainment

With character too gross is writ on Juliet.

*Lucio.* With child, perhaps!

*Claud.*

Unhappily, even so.

And the new deputy now for the duke—

Whether it be the fault and glimpse of newness,

Or whether that the body public be

A horse whereon the governor doth ride,

Who, newly in the seat, that it may know

He can command, lets it straight feel the spur;

Whether the tyranny be in his place,

Or in his eminence that fills it up,

I stagger in:—but this new governor

Awakes me all the enrolled penalties

Which have like unscour'd armour, hung by

the wall

So long that nineteen zodiacs have gone round

And none of them been worn; and, for a name,

Now puts the drowsy and neglected act

Freshly on me: 'tis surely for a name.

*Lucio.* I warrant it is: and thy head stands

so tickle on thy shoulders that a milkmaid, if

she be in love, may sigh it off. Send after the

duke and appeal to him.

*Claud.* I have done so, but he's not to be

found.

I prithee, Lucio, do me this kind service:

This day my sister should the cloister enter

And there receive her approbation:

Acquaint her with the danger of my state;

Implore her, in my voice, that she make friends

To the strict deputy; bid herself assay him:

I have great hope in that; for in her youth

There is a prone and speechless dialect,

Such as move men; beside, she hath prosperous

art

When she will play with reason and discourse.

And well she can persuade.

*Lucio.* I pray she may; as well for the en-

couragement of the like, which else would stand

under grievous imposition, as for the enjoying

of thy life, who I would be sorry should be thus

foolishly lost at a game of tick-tack. I'll to her.

*Claud.* I thank you, good friend Lucio.

*Lucio.* Within two hours.

*Claud.* Come, officer, away!

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III. A monastery.

*Enter DUKE and FRIAR THOMAS.*

*Duke.* No, holy father; throw away that thought;

Believe not that the dribbling dart of love

Can pierce a complete bosom. Why I desire

thee

To give me secret harbour, hath a purpose

More grave and wrinkled than the aims and ends

Of burning youth.

*Fri. T.* May your grace speak of it!

*Duke.* My holy sir, none better knows than you

How I have ever loved the life removed  
And held in idle price to haunt assemblies  
Where youth, and cost, and witless bravery  
keeps. 10

I have deliver'd to Lord Angelo,  
A man of stricture and firm abstinence,  
My absolute power and place here in Vienna,  
And he supposes me travell'd to Poland;  
For so I have strew'd it in the common ear,  
And so it is received. Now, pious sir,  
You will demand of me why I do this?

*Fri. T.* Gladly, my lord.

*Duke.* We have strict statutes and most  
biting laws, 19

The needful bits and curbs to headstrong weeds,  
Which for this nineteen years we have let slip;  
Even like an o'ergrown lion in a cave,  
That goes not out to prey. Now, as fond fathers,  
Having bound up the threatening twigs of birch,  
Only to stick it in their children's sight  
For terror, not to use, in time the rod  
Becomes more mock'd than fear'd; so our  
decrees,

Dead to infliction, to themselves are dead;  
And liberty plucks justice by the nose;  
The baby beats the nurse, and quite athwart 30  
Goes all decorum.

*Fri. T.* It rested in your grace  
To unloose this tied-up justice when you pleased;  
And it in you more dreadful would have seem'd  
Than in Lord Angelo.

*Duke.* I do fear, too dreadful:  
Sith 'twas my fault to give the people scope,  
'Twould be my tyranny to strike and gall them  
For what I bid them do: for we bid this be done,  
When evil deeds have their permissive pass,  
And not the punishment. Therefore indeed,  
my father,

I have on Angelo imposed the office; 40  
Who may, in the ambush of my name, strike  
home,

\*And yet my nature never in the fight  
To do in slander. And to behold his sway,  
I will, as 'twere a brother of your order,  
Visit both prince and people: therefore, I prithee,  
Supply me with the habit and instruct me  
How I may formally in person bear me  
Like a true friar. More reasons for this action  
At our more leisure shall I render you;  
Only, this one: Lord Angelo is precise: 50  
Stands at a guard with envy; scarce confesses  
That his blood flows, or that his appetite  
Is more to bread than stone: hence shall we see,  
If power change purpose, what our seemers be.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. A nunnery.

*Enter ISABELLA and FRANCISCA.*

*Isab.* And have you nuns no farther privileges?

*Fran.* Are not these large enough?

*Isab.* Yes, truly: I speak not as desiring  
more;

But rather wishing a more strict restraint

Upon the sisterhood, the votaries of Saint Clare.

*Lucio.* [Within] Ho! Peace be in this place!

*Isab.*

Who's that which calls?  
*Fran.* It is a man's voice. Gentle Isabella:  
Turn you the key, and know his business of him  
You may, I may not; you are yet unworn.  
When you have vow'd, you must not speak wit  
men 1

But in the presence of the prioress:  
Then, if you speak, you must not show you  
face,

Or, if you show your face, you must not speak.  
He calls again; I pray you, answer him. [*Exit*]

*Isab.* Peace and prosperity! Who is't that  
calls?

*Enter LUCIO.*

*Lucio.* Hail, virgin, if you be, as those cheek  
roses

Proclaim you are no less! Can you so stand in  
As bring me to the sight of Isabella,  
A novice of this place and the fair sister  
To her unhappy brother Claudio? 2

*Isab.* Why 'her unhappy brother'? let me  
ask

The rather for I now must make you know  
I am that Isabella and his sister.

*Lucio.* Gentle and fair your brother kindly  
greet you;

Not to be weary with you, he's in prison.

*Isab.* Woe me! for what?

*Lucio.* For that which, if myself might be  
his judge,

He should receive his punishment in thanks:  
He hath got his friend with child.

*Isab.* Sir, make me not your story.

*Lucio.* It is true. 3

I would not—though 'tis my familiar sin  
With maids to seem the lapwing and to jest,  
Tongue far from heart—play with all virgins so

I hold you as a thing enskied and sainted,  
By your renouncement an immortal spirit,  
And to be talk'd with in sincerity,

As with a saint.

*Isab.* You do blaspheme the good in mocking  
me.

*Lucio.* Do not believe it. Fewness and  
truth, 'tis thus:

Your brother and his lover have embraced: 40

As those that feed grow full, as blossoming time  
That from the seedness the bare fallow brings,  
To teeming foison, even so her plenteous womb

Expresseth his full tilth and husbandry.

*Isab.* Some one with child by him? My  
cousin Juliet?

*Lucio.* Is she your cousin?

*Isab.* Adoptedly; as school-maids change  
their names

By vain though apt affection.

*Lucio.* She it is.

*Isab.* O, let him marry her.

*Lucio.* This is the point!

The duke is very strangely gone from hence;  
Bore many gentlemen, myself being one,  
In hand and hope of action: but we do learn

By those that know the very nervous of state,  
His givings-out were of an infinite distance  
From his true-meant design. Upon his place,

And with full line of his authority,  
Governs Lord Angelo; a man whose blood



Is very snow-broth; one who never feels  
The wanton stings and motions of the sense,  
But doth rebate and blunt his natural edge 60  
With profits of the mind, study and fast.  
He—to give fear to use and liberty,  
Which have for long run by the hideous law,  
As mice by lions—bath pick'd out an act,  
Under whose heavy sense your brother's life  
Falls into forfeit: he arrests him on it;  
And follows close the rigour of the statute,  
To make him an example. All hope is gone,  
Unless you have the grace by your fair prayer  
To soften Angelo: and that's my pith of busi-  
ness 70

Twixt you and your poor brother.

*Isab.* Doth he so seek his life?

*Lucio.* Has censured him  
Already; and, as I hear, the provost hath  
A warrant for his execution.

*Isab.* Alas! what poor ability's in me  
To do him good?

*Lucio.* Assay the power you have.

*Isab.* My power? Alas, I doubt—

*Lucio.* Our doubts are traitors  
And make us lose the good we oft might win  
By fearing to attempt. (Go to Lord Angelo,  
And let him learn to know, when maidens sue,  
Men give like gods; but when they weep and  
kneel, 81

All their petitions are as freely theirs  
As they themselves would owe them.

*Isab.* I'll see what I can do.

*Lucio.* But speedily.

*Isab.* I will about it straight;  
No longer staying but to give the mother  
Notice of my affair. I humbly thank you:  
I'll commend me to my brother: soon at night  
I'll send him certain word of my success.

*Lucio.* I take my leave of you.

*Isab.* Good sir, adieu. 60  
[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. A hall in ANGELO'S house.

*Enter ANGELO, ESCALUS, and a Justice, Provost, Officers, and other Attendants, behind.*

*Ang.* We must not make a scarecrow of the  
law,

Setting it up to fear the birds of prey,  
And let it keep one shape, till custom make it  
Their perch and not their terror.

*Escal.* Ay, but yet  
Let us be keen, and rather cut a little,  
Than fall, and bruise to death. Alas, this  
gentleman,

Whom I would save, had a most noble father  
Let but your honour know,  
Whom I believe to be most strait in virtue,  
That, in the working of your own affections, 60  
Had time cohered with place or place with  
wishing,

Or that the resolute acting of your blood  
Could have attain'd the effect of your own pur-  
pose,

Whether you had not sometime in your life  
Err'd in this point which now you censure him,

And pull'd the law upon you.

*Ang.* 'Tis one thing to be tempted, Escalus,  
Another thing to fall. I not deny,  
The jury, passing on the prisoner's life,  
May in the sworn twelve have a thief or two 20  
'twitler than him they try. What's open made  
to justice,

That justice seizes: what know the laws  
That thieves do pass on thieves? 'Tis very preg-  
nant,

The jewel that we find, we stoop and take't  
Because we see it; but what we do not see  
We tread upon, and never think of it.

You may not so extenuate his offence  
For I have had such faults; but rather tell me,  
When I, that censure him, do so offend, 20  
Let mine own judgement pattern out my death,  
And nothing come in partial. Sir, he must die.

*Escal.* Be it as your wisdom will.

*Ang.* Where is the provost?

*Prov.* Here, if it like your honour.

*Ang.* See that Claudio  
Be executed by nine to-morrow morning:  
Bring him his confessor, let him be prepared;  
For that's the utmost of his pilgrimage.

[*Exit Provost.*]  
*Escal.* [Aside] Well, heaven forgive him!  
and forgive us all!

Some rise by sin, and some by virtue fall:  
Some run from brakes of ice, and answer  
none:

And some condemned for a fault alone. 40

*Enter ELBOW, and Officers with FROTH and  
POMPEY.*

*Elb.* Come, bring them away: if these be  
good people in a commonweal that do nothing  
but use their abuses in common houses, I know  
no law: bring them away.

*Ang.* How now, sir! What's your name?  
and what's the matter?

*Elb.* If it please your honour, I am the poor  
duke's constable, and my name is Elbow: I do  
lean upon justice, sir, and do bring in here  
before your good honour two notorious bene-  
factors. 50

*Ang.* Benefactors! Well; what benefactors  
are they? are they not malefactors?

*Elb.* If it please your honour, I know not  
well what they are: but precise villains they are,  
that I am sure of; and void of all profanation  
in the world that good Christians ought to have.

*Escal.* This comes off well; here's a wise  
officer.

*Ang.* Go to: what quality are they of?  
Elbow is your name? why dost thou not speak,  
Elbow? 60

*Pom.* He cannot, sir; he's out at elbow.

*Ang.* What are you, sir?

*Elb.* He, sir! a tapster, sir; parcel-bawd; one  
that serves a bad woman; whose house, sir, was  
as they say, plucked down in the suburbs; and  
now she professes a hot-house, which, I think,  
is a very ill house too.

*Escal.* How know you that?

*Elb.* My wife, sir, whom I detest before hea-  
ven and your honour,— 70

*Escal.* How? thy wife?

*Elb.* Ay, sir; whom, I thank heaven, is an honest woman,—

*Escal.* Dost thou detest her therefore?

*Elb.* I say, sir, I will detest myself also, as well as she, that this house, if it be not a bawd's house, it is pity of her life, for it is a naughty house.

*Escal.* How dost thou know that, constable?

*Elb.* Marry, sir, by my wife; who, if she had been a woman cardinally given, might have been accused in fornication, adultery, and all uncleanness there.

*Escal.* By the woman's means?

*Elb.* Ay, sir, by Mistress Overdone's means: but as she spit in his face, so she defied him.

*Pom.* Sir, if it please your honour, this is not so.

*Elb.* Prove it before these varlets here, thou honourable man; prove it.

*Escal.* Do you hear how he misplaces? 90

*Pom.* Sir, she came in great with child; and longing, saving your honour's reverence, for stewed prunes; sir, we had but two in the house, which at that very distant time stood, as it were, in a fruit-dish, a dish of some three-pence; your honours have seen such dishes; they are not China dishes, but very good dishes,—

*Escal.* Go to, go to: no matter for the dish, sir.

*Pom.* No, indeed, sir, not of a pin; you are therein in the right: but to the point. As I say, this Mistress Elbow, being, as I say, with child, and being great-bellied, and longing, as I said, for prunes; and having but two in the dish, as I said, Master Froth here, this very man, having eaten the rest, as I said, and, as I say, paying for them very honestly; for, as you know, Master Froth, I could not give you three-pence again.

*Froth.* No, indeed.

*Pom.* Very well; you being then, if you be remembered, cracking the stones of the foresaid prunes,— 111

*Froth.* Ay, so I did indeed.

*Pom.* Why, very well; I telling you then, if you be remembered, that such a one and such a one were past cure of the thing you wot of, unless they kept very good diet, as I told you,—

*Froth.* All this is true.

*Pom.* Why, very well, then,—

*Escal.* Come, you are a tedious fool: to the purpose. What was done to Elbow's wife, that he hath cause to complain of? Come me to what was done to her.

*Pom.* Sir, your honour cannot come to that yet.

*Escal.* No, sir, nor I mean it not.

*Pom.* Sir, but you shall come to it, by your honour's leave. And, I beseech you, look into Master Froth here, sir; a man of fourscore pound a year; whose father died at Hallowmas: was't not at Hallowmas, Master Froth?

*Froth.* All-hallowd eve. 130

*Pom.* Why, very well; I hope here be truths. He, sir, sitting, as I say, in a lower chair, sir; 'twas in the Bunch of Grapes, where indeed you have a delight to sit, have you not?

*Froth.* I have so; because it is an open room and good for winter.

*Pom.* Why, very well, then; I hope here be truths.

*Ang.* This will last out a night in Russia, When nights are longest there: I'll take my leave, 140

And leave you to the hearing of the cause; Hoping you'll find good cause to whip them all.

*Escal.* I think no less. Good morrow to your lordship. *[Exit Angelo.]*

Now, sir, come on: what was done to Elbow's wife, once more?

*Pom.* Once, sir; there was nothing done to her once.

*Elb.* I beseech you, sir, ask him what this man did to my wife.

*Pom.* I beseech your honour, ask me. 150

*Escal.* Well, sir; what did this gentleman do to her?

*Pom.* I beseech you, sir, look in this gentleman's face. Good Master Froth, look upon his honour; 'tis for a good purpose. Doth your honour mark his face?

*Escal.* Ay, sir, very well.

*Pom.* Nay, I beseech you, mark it well.

*Escal.* Well, I do so.

*Pom.* Doth your honour see any harm in his face? 161

*Escal.* Why, no.

*Pom.* I'll be supposed upon a book, his face is the worst thing about him. Good, then; if his face be the worst thing about him, how could Master Froth do the constable's wife any harm? I would know that of your honour.

*Escal.* He's in the right. Constable, what say you to it?

*Elb.* First, an it like you, the house is a respected house; next, this is a respected fellow; and his mistress is a respected woman.

*Pom.* By this hand, sir, his wife is a more respected person than any of us all.

*Elb.* Varlet, thou liest; thou liest, wicked varlet! the time is yet to come that she was ever respected with man, woman, or child.

*Pom.* Sir, she was respected with him before he married with her.

*Escal.* Which is the wiser here? Justice or Iniquity? Is this true? 181

*Elb.* O thou catiff! O thou varlet! O thou wicked Hannibal! I respected with her before I was married to her! If ever I was respected with her, or she with me, let not your worship think me the poor duke's officer. Prove this, thou wicked Hannibal, or I'll have mine action of battery on thee.

*Escal.* If he took you a box o' the ear, you might have your action of slander too. 190

*Elb.* Marry, I thank your good worship for it. What is't your worship's pleasure I shall do with this wicked catiff?

*Escal.* Truly, officer, because he hath some offences in him that thou wouldst discover if thou couldst, let him continue in his courses till thou knowest what they are.

*Elb.* Marry, I thank your worship for it. Thou seest, thou wicked varlet, now, what's come upon thee: thou art to continue now, thou varlet; thou art to continue.

*Escal.* Where were you born, friend?  
*Proth.* Here in Vienna, sir.  
*Escal.* Are you of fourscore pounds a year?  
*Proth.* Yes, an't please you, sir.  
*Escal.* So. What trade are you of, sir?  
*Pom.* A tapster; a poor widow's tapster.  
*Escal.* Your mistress' name?  
*Pom.* Mistress Overdone.  
*Escal.* Hath she had any more than one husband?

*Pom.* Nine, sir: Overdone by the last.  
*Escal.* Nine! Come hither to me, Master Froth. Master Froth, I would not have you acquainted with tapsters: they will draw you, Master Froth, and you will hang them. Get you gone, and let me hear no more of you.

*Froth.* I thank your worship. For mine own part, I never come into any room in a tap-house, but I am drawn in.

*Escal.* Well, no more of it, Master Froth: farewell. [*Exit Froth.*] Come you hither to me, Master tapster. What's your name, Master tapster?

*Pom.* Pompey.

*Escal.* What else?

*Pom.* Bum, sir.

*Escal.* Troth, and your bum is the greatest thing about you; so that in the beastliest sense you are Pompey the Great. Pompey, you are partly a bawd, Pompey, howsoever you colour it in being a tapster, are you not? come, tell me true: it shall be the better for you.

*Pom.* Truly, sir, I am a poor fellow that could live.

*Escal.* How would you live, Pompey? by being a bawd? What do you think of the trade, Pompey? is it a lawful trade?

*Pom.* If the law would allow it, sir.

*Escal.* But the law will not allow it, Pompey; nor it shall not be allowed in Vienna.

*Pom.* Does your worship mean to geld and spay all the youth of the city?

*Escal.* No, Pompey.

*Pom.* Truly, sir, in my poor opinion, they will to'then. If your worship will take order for the drabs and the knaves, you need not to fear the bawds.

*Escal.* There are pretty orders beginning, I can tell you: it is but heading and hanging.

*Pom.* If you head and hang all that offend that way but for ten year together, you'll be glad to give out a commission for more heads: if this law hold in Vienna ten year, I'll rent the fairest house in it after three-pence a bay: if you live to see this come to pass, say Pompey told you so.

*Escal.* Thank you, good Pompey; and, in requital of your prophecy, hark you, I advise you, let me not find you before me again upon any complaint whatsoever; no, not for dwelling where you do: if I do, Pompey, I shall beat you to your tent, and prove a shrewd Caesar to you; in plain dealing, Pompey, I shall have you whipt: so, for this time, Pompey, fare you well.

*Pom.* I thank your worship for your good counsel: [*Aside*] but I shall follow it as the flesh and fortune shall better determine. Whip me! No, no; let carman whip his jade

The valiant heart's not whipt out of his trade.

*Escal.* Come hither to me, Master Elbow; come hither, Master constable. How long have you been in this place of constable?

*Elb.* Seven year and a half, sir.

*Escal.* I thought, by your readiness in the office, you had continued in it some time. You say, seven years together?

*Elb.* And a half, sir.

*Escal.* Alas, it hath been great pains to you. They do you wrong to put you so oft upon't: are there not men in your ward sufficient to serve it?

*Elb.* Faith, sir, few of any wit in such matters: as they are chosen, they are glad to choose me for them: I do it for some piece of money, and go through with all.

*Escal.* Look you bring me in the names of some six or seven, the most sufficient of your parish.

*Elb.* To your worship's house, sir?

*Escal.* To my house. Fare you well.

What's o'clock, think you? [*Exit Elbow.*]

*Just.* Eleven, sir.

*Escal.* I pray you home to dinner with me.

*Just.* I humbly thank you.

*Escal.* It grieves me for the death of Claudio; But there's no remedy.

*Just.* Lord Angelo is severe.

*Escal.* It is but needful:

Mercy is not itself, that oft looks so;

Pardon is still the nurse of second woe:

But yet,—poor Claudio! There is no remedy. Come, sir. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. Another room in the same.

*Enter PROVOST and a Servant.*

*Serv.* He's hearing of a cause; he will come straight:  
 I'll tell him of you.

*Prov.* Pray you, do. [*Exit Servant.*]

I'll know  
 His pleasure; may be he will relent. Alas,  
 He hath but as offended in a dream!  
 All sects, all ages smack of this vice; and he  
 To die for't!

*Enter ANGELO.*

*Ang.* Now, what's the matter, provost?

*Prov.* Is it your will Claudio shall die to-morrow?

*Ang.* Did not I tell thee yea? hadst thou not order?

Why dost thou ask again?

*Prov.* Lest I might be too rash:  
 Under your good correction, I have seen,  
 When, after execution, judgement hath  
 Repented o'er his doom.

*Ang.* Go to; let that be mine:  
 Do you your office, or give up your place,  
 And you shall well be spared.

*Prov.* I crave your honour's pardon.  
 What shall be done, sir, with the groaning  
 Juliet?

She's very near her hour.

*Ang.* Dispose of her  
To some more fitter place, and that with speed.

*Re-enter Servant.*

*Serv.* Here is the sister of the man condemn'd  
Desires access to you.

*Ang.* Hath he a sister?

*Prov.* Ay, my good lord; a very virtuous maid,  
And to be shortly of a sisterhood,  
If not already.

*Ang.* Well, let her be admitted.

[*Erit Servant.*]

See you the fornicatress be removed:  
Let her have needful, but not lavish, means;  
There shall be order for't.

*Enter ISABELLA and LUCIO.*

*Prov.* God save your honour!

*Ang.* Stay a little while. [*To Isab.*] You're welcome: what's your will?

*Isab.* I am a woeful suitor to your honour,  
Please but your honour hear me.

*Ang.* Well; what's your suit?

*Isab.* There is a vice that most I do abhor,  
And most desire should meet the blow of justice:

For which I would not plead, but that I must;  
For which I must not plead, but that I am  
At war 'twixt will and will not.

*Ang.* Well; the matter?

*Isab.* I have a brother is condemn'd to die:  
I do beseech you, let it be his fault,  
And not my brother.

*Prov.* [*Aside*] Heaven give thee moving  
graces!

*Ang.* Condemn the fault, and not the actor  
of it?

Why, every fault's condemn'd ere it be done:  
Mine were the very cipher of a function,  
To fine the faults whose fine stands in record,  
And let go by the actor.

*Isab.* O just but severe law!  
I had a brother, then. Heaven keep your  
honour!

*Lucio.* [*Aside to Isab.*] Give't not o'er so:  
to him again, entreat him;

Kneel down before him, hang upon his gown:  
You are too cold; if you should need a pin,  
You could not with more tame a tongue de-  
sire it:

To him, I say!

*Isab.* Must he needs die?

*Ang.* Maiden, no remedy.

*Isab.* Yes; I do think that you might pardon  
him,

And neither heaven nor man grieve at the  
mercy.

*Ang.* I will not do't.

*Isab.* But can you, if you would?

*Ang.* Look, what I will not, that I can-  
not do.

*Isab.* But might you do't, and do the world  
no wrong,

If so your heart were touch'd with that remorse  
As mine is to him?

*Ang.* He's sentenced; 'tis too late.

*Lucio.* [*Aside to Isab.*] You are too cold.

*Isab.* Too late! why, no; I, that do speak a  
word,

May call it back again. Well, believe this,  
No ceremony that to great ones 'longs,  
Not the king's crown, nor the deputed sword,  
The marshal's truncheon, nor the judge's robe,  
Become them with one half so good a grace  
As mercy does.

If he had been as you and you as he,  
You would have slept like him; but he, like you,  
Would not have been so stern.

*Ang.* Pray you, be gone.

*Isab.* I would to heaven I had your potency,  
And you were Isabel! should it then be thus?  
No; I would tell what 'twere to be a judge,  
And what a prisoner.

*Lucio.* [*Aside to Isab.*] Ay, touch him;  
there's the vein.

*Ang.* Your brother is a forfeit of the law,  
And you but waste your words.

*Isab.* Alas, alas!

Why, all the souls that were were forfeit once;  
And He that might the vantage best have took  
Found out the remedy. How would you be,  
If He, which is the top of judgement, should  
But judge you as you are? O, think on that;  
And mercy then will breathe within your lips,  
Like man new made.

*Ang.* Be you content, fair maid:  
It is the law, not I condemn your brother:  
Were he my kinsman, brother, or my son,  
It should be thus with him: he must die to-  
morrow.

*Isab.* To-morrow! O, that's sudden! Spare  
him, spare him!

He's not prepared for death. Even for our  
kitchens

We kill the fowl of season: shall we serve heaven  
With less respect than we do minister  
To our gross selves? Good, good my lord, be-  
think you;

Who is it that hath died for this offence?  
There's many have committed it.

*Lucio.* [*Aside to Isab.*] Ay, well said.

*Ang.* The law hath not been dead, though  
it hath slept:

Those many had not dared to do that evil,  
If the first that did the edict infringe  
Had answer'd for his deed: now 'tis awake,  
Takes note of what is done; and, like a prophet,  
Looks in a glass, that shows what future evils,  
Either new, or by remission new-conceived,  
And so in progress to be hatch'd and born,  
Are now to have no successive degrees,  
But, ere they live, to end.

*Isab.* Yet show some pity.

*Ang.* I show it most of all when I show  
justice;

For then I pity those I do not know,  
Which a dismiss'd offence would after call:  
And do him right that, answering one foul  
wrong,

Lives not to act another. Be satisfied;  
Your brother dies to-morrow; be content.

*Isab.* So you must be the first that gives this  
sentence,

And he, that suffers. O, it is excellent

To have a giant's strength; but it is tyrannous  
To use it like a giant.

*Lucio.* [*Aside to Isab.*] That's well said.  
*Isab.* Could great men thunder  
As Jove himself does, Jove would ne'er be  
quiet;

For every pelting, petty officer  
Would use his heaven for thunder;  
Nothing but thunder! Merciful Heaven,  
Thou rather with thy sharp and sulphurous  
bolt

Spl'it'st the unwedgeable and gnarled oak  
Than the soft myrtle: but man, proud man,  
Drest in a little brief authority,  
Most ignorant of what he's most assured,  
His glassy essence, like an angry ape,  
Plays such fantastic tricks before high heaven  
As make the angels weep; who, with our  
spleens,  
Would all themselves laugh mortal.

*Lucio.* [*Aside to Isab.*] O, to him, to him,  
wench! he will relent;  
He's coming; I perceive't.

*Prot.* [*Aside.*] Pray heaven she win him!  
*Isab.* We cannot weigh our brother with  
ourselves:

Great men may jest with saints; 'tis wit in  
them,  
But in the less foul profanation.

*Lucio.* Thou'rt i' the right, girl; more o' that.  
*Isab.* That in the captain's but a choleric  
word,

Which in the soldier is flat blasphemy.  
*Lucio.* [*Aside to Isab.*] Art advis'd o' that?  
more o' t.

*Ang.* Why do you put these sayings upon  
me?  
*Isab.* Because authority, though it err like  
others,

Hath yet a kind of medicine in itself,  
That skins the vice o' the top. Go to your  
bosom;

Knock there, and ask your heart what it doth  
know  
That's like my brother's fault: if it confess  
A natural guiltiness such as is his,

Let it not sound a thought upon your tongue  
Against my brother's life.

*Ang.* [*Aside.*] She speaks, and 'tis  
Such sense, that my sense breeds with it. Fare  
you well.

*Isab.* Gentle my lord, turn back.  
*Ang.* I will bethink me: come again to-  
morrow.

*Isab.* Hark how I'll bribe you: good my  
lord, turn back.  
*Ang.* How! bribe me?

*Isab.* Ay, with such gifts that heaven shall  
share with you.

*Lucio.* [*Aside to Isab.*] You had marr'd all  
else.

*Isab.* Not with fond shekels of the tested  
gold,  
Or stones whose rates are either rich or poor 150  
As fancy values them; but with true prayers  
That shall be up at heaven and enter there  
Ere sun-rise, prayers from preserved souls,  
From fasting maids whose minds are dedicate

To nothing temporal.

*Ang.* Well; come to me to-morrow.  
*Lucio.* [*Aside to Isab.*] Go to; 'tis well;  
away!

*Isab.* Heaven keep your honour safe!  
*Ang.* [*Aside.*] Amen:  
For I am that way going to temptation,  
Where prayers cross.

*Isab.* At what hour to-morrow  
Shall I attend your lordship?

*Ang.* At any time 'fore noon. 160  
*Isab.* 'Save your honour!  
[*Exeunt Isabella, Lucio, and Provost.*]

*Ang.* From thee, even from thy virtue!  
What's this, what's this? Is this her fault or  
mine?

The tempter or the tempted, who sins most?  
Ha!

Not she; nor doth she tempt: but it is I  
That, lying by the violet in the sun,  
Do as the carrion does, not as the flower,  
Corrupt with virtuous season. Can it be  
That modesty may more betray our sense  
Than woman's lightness? Having waste ground  
enough,

Shall we desire to raze the sanctuary  
And pitch our evils there? O, fie, fie, fie!  
What dost thou, or what art thou, Angelo?

Dost thou desire her foully for those things  
That make her good? O, let her brother live:  
Thieves for their robbery have authority  
When judges steal themselves. What, do I  
love her,

That I desire to hear her speak again,  
And feast upon her eyes? What is't I dream  
on?

O cunning enemy, that, to catch a saint, 170  
With saints dost bait thy hook! Most dangerous  
Is that temptation that doth good us on  
To sin in loving virtue: never could the  
strumpet,

With all her double vigour, art and nature,  
Once stir my temper; but this virtuous maid  
Subdues me quite. Ever till now,  
When men were fond, I smiled and wonder'd  
how

[*Exit.*]

### SCENE III. A room in a prison.

*Enter, severally, DUKE disguised as a friar,  
and PROVOST.*

*Duke.* Hail to you, provost! so I think you  
are.

*Prov.* I am the provost. What's your will,  
good friar?

*Duke.* Bound by my charity and my blest  
order,  
I come to visit the afflicted spirits  
Here in the prison. Do me the common right  
To let me see them and to make me know  
The nature of their crimes, that I may minister  
To them accordingly.

*Prov.* I would do more than that, if more  
were needful.

### Enter JULIET.

Look, here comes one: a gentlewoman of  
mine, 180

Who, falling in the flaws of her own youth,  
Hath blister'd her report: she is with child;  
And he that got it, sentenced; a young man  
More fit to do another such offence  
Than die for this.

*Duke.* When must he die?

*Prov.* As I do think, to-morrow.  
I have provided for you: stay awhile, [To Juliet.  
And you shall be conducted.]

*Duke.* Repent you, fair one, of the sin you  
carry!

*Jul.* I do; and bear the shame most pa-  
tiently.

*Duke.* I'll teach you how you shall arraign  
your conscience,  
And try your penitence, if it be sound,  
Or hollowly put on.

*Jul.* I'll gladly learn.

*Duke.* Love you the man that wrong'd you?

*Jul.* Yes, as I love the woman that wrong'd  
him.

*Duke.* So then it seems your most offenceful  
act

Was mutually committed?

*Jul.* Mutually.

*Duke.* Then was your sin of heavier kind  
than his.

*Jul.* I do confess it, and repent it, father.

*Duke.* 'Tis meet so, daughter: but lest you  
do repent,  
As that the sin hath brought you to this shame,  
Which sorrow is always toward ourselves, not  
heaven,

Showing we would not spare heaven as we  
love it,

But as we stand in fear,—

*Jul.* I do repent me, as it is an evil,  
And take the shame with joy.

*Duke.* There rest.

Your partner, as I hear, must die to-morrow,  
And I am going with instruction to him.

Grace go with you, Benedicite! [Exit.  
*Jul.* Must die to-morrow! O injurious  
love,

That respite me a life, whose very comfort  
Is still a dying horror!

*Prov.* 'Tis pity of him. [Recount.

#### SCENE IV. A room in ANGELO'S house.

*Enter ISABEL.*

*Ang.* When I would pray and think, I think  
and pray  
To several subjects. Heaven hath my empty  
words;

Whilst my invention, hearing not my tongue,  
Anchors on Isabel: Heaven in my mouth,  
As if I did but only chew his name;  
And in my heart the strong and swelling evil  
Of my conception. The state, wherein I studied,  
To like and think, being absent

wherein—let no man near me—I take pride,  
Could I with boot change for an idle plume,  
Which the air beats for vain. O place, O form,  
How often dost thou with thy case, thy habit,  
Wrench awe from fools and tie the wiser souls  
To thy false seeming! Blood, thou art blood:

Let's write good angel on the devil's horn;  
'Tis not the devil's crest.

*Enter a Servant.*

How now! who's there?

*Serv.* One Isabel, a sister, desires access to  
you.

*Ang.* Teach her the way. [Exit Serv.] O  
heavens!

Why does my blood thus muster to my heart, as  
Making both it unable for itself,  
And dispossessing all my other parts  
(Of necessary fitness?)

So play the foolish throngs with one that  
swoons;

Come all to help him, and so stop the air  
By which he should revive: and even so

The general, subject to a well-wish'd king,  
Quit their own part, and in obsequious fondness

Crowd to his presence, where their untaught  
love

Must needs appear offence.

*Enter ISABELLA.*

How now, fair maid?

*Isab.* I am come to know your pleasure.

*Ang.* That you might know it, would much  
better please me

Than to demand what 'tis. Your brother can-  
not live.

*Isab.* Even so. Heaven keep your honour!

*Ang.* Yet may he live awhile; and, it may be,  
As long as you or I: yet he must die.

*Isab.* Under your sentence?

*Ang.* Yea.

*Isab.* When, I beseech you? that in his re-  
priev,

Longer or shorter, he may be so fitted  
That his soul sicken not.

*Ang.* Ha! fie, these filthy vices! It were  
as good

To pardon him that hath from nature stolen  
A man already made, as to remit

Their saucy sweetness that do coin heaven's  
image

In stamps that are forbid: 'tis all as easy  
Falsely to take away a life true made

As to put metal in restrained means  
To make a false one.

*Isab.* 'Tis set down so in heaven, but not in  
earth.

*Ang.* Say you so? then I shall pose you  
quickly.

Which had you rather, that the most just law  
Now took your brother's life; or, to redeem

him,  
(Give up your body to such sweet uncleanness  
As she that he hath stain'd?)

*Isab.* Sir, believe this,  
I had rather give my body than my soul.

*Ang.* I talk not of your soul: our compell'd  
sins

Stand more for number than for account.

*Isab.* How say you?

*Ang.* Nay, I'll not warrant that; for I can  
speak  
Against the thing I say. Answer to this: 60  
I, now the voice of the recorded law,

Pronounce a sentence on your brother's life:  
Might there not be a charity in sin  
To save this brother's life?

*Isab.* Please you to do't,  
I'll take it as a peril to my soul,  
It is no kin at all, but charity.

*Ang.* Pleased you to do't at peril of your  
soul.

Were equal poise of sin and charity.

*Isab.* That I do beg his life, if it be sin,  
Heaven let me bear it! you granting of my  
suit,

If that be sin, I'll make it my more prayer  
To have it added to the faults of mine,  
And nothing of your answer.

*Ang.* Nay, but hear me.  
Your sense pursues not mine: either you are  
ignorant,  
Or seem so craftily; and that's not good.

*Isab.* Let me be ignorant, and in nothing  
good,

But graciously to know I am no better.

*Ang.* Thus wisdom wishes to appear most  
bright

When it doth tax itself; as these black masks  
Proclaim an enshield beauty ten times louder  
Than beauty could, display'd. But mark me;  
To be received plain, I'll speak more gross:  
Your brother is to die.

*Isab.* No.

*Ang.* And his offence is so, as it appears,  
Accountant to the law upon that pain.

*Isab.* True.

*Ang.* Admit no other way to save his life,—  
As I subscribe not that, nor any other,  
But in the loss of question,—that you, his sister,  
Finding yourself desired of such a person, or  
Whose credit with the judge, or own great  
place,

Could fetch your brother from the manacles  
Of the all-building law; and that there were  
No earthly mean to save him, but that either  
You must lay down the treasures of your body  
To this supposed, or else to let him suffer;  
What would you do?

*Isab.* As much for my poor brother as my-  
self:

That is, were I under the terms of death, 100  
The impression of keen whips I'd wear as  
rubrics,

And strip myself to death, as to a bed  
That longing have been sick for, ere I'd yield  
My body up to shame.

*Ang.* Then must your brother die.

*Isab.* And 'twere the cheaper way:  
Better it were a brother died at once,  
Than that a sister, by redeeming him,  
Should die for ever.

*Ang.* Were not you then as cruel as the  
sentence

That you have slander'd so?

*Isab.* Ignomy in ransom and free pardon  
Are of two houses: lawful mercy  
Is nothing kin to foul redemption.

*Ang.* You seem'd of late to make the law a  
tyrant;

And rather proved the sliding of your brother  
A merriment than a vice.

*Isab.* O, pardon me, my lord; it oft falls  
out,

To have what we would have, we speak not  
what we mean:

I something do excuse the thing I hate,  
For his advantage that I dearly love. 120

*Ang.* We are all frail.

*Isab.* Else let my brother die,  
If not a feodary, but only he  
Owe and succeed thy weakness.

*Ang.* Nay, women are frail too.

*Isab.* Ay, as the glasses where they view  
themselves;

Which are as easy broke as they make forms.  
Women! Help Heaven! men their creation  
mar

In profiting by them. Nay, call us ten times  
frail:

For we are soft as our complexions are, 129  
And credulous to false prints.

*Ang.* I think it well:  
And from this testimony of your own sex,—  
Since I suppose we are made to be no stronger  
Than faults may shake our frames,—let me be  
bold:

I do arrest your words. Be that you are,  
That is, a woman; if you be more, you're none;  
If you be one, as you are well express'd  
By all external warrants, show it now,  
By putting on the destined livery.

*Isab.* I have no tongue but one: gentle my  
lord,

Let me entreat you speak the former lan-  
guage. 140

*Ang.* Plainly conceive, I love you.

*Isab.* My brother did love Juliet,

And you tell me that he shall die for it.

*Ang.* He shall not, Isabel, if you give me  
love.

*Isab.* I know your virtue hath a license in't,  
Which seems a little fouler than it is,  
To pluck on others.

*Ang.* Believe me, on mine honour,  
My words express my purpose.

*Isab.* Ha! little honour to be much believed,  
And most pernicious purpose! Seeming, seem-  
ing! 150

I will proclaim thee, Angelo; look for't:  
Sign me a present pardon for my brother,  
Or with an outstretch'd throat I'll tell the world  
aloud

What man thou art.

*Ang.* Who will believe thee, Isabel?  
My unsold name, the austereness of my life,  
My vouch against you, and my place in the  
state,

Will so your accusation overweigh,  
That you shall stifle in your own report  
And smell of calumny. I have begun,  
And now I give my sensual race the rein: 160  
Fit thy consent to my sharp appetite;  
Lay by all nicety and prolixious blushes,  
That banish what they sue for; redeem thy  
brother

By yielding up thy body to my will;  
Or else he must not only die the death,  
But thy unkindness shall his death draw out  
To lingering sufferance. Answer me to-morrow

Or, by the affection that now guides me most,  
I'll prove a tyrant to him. As for you,  
Say what you can, my false o'erweighs your true.

*Isab.* To whom should I complain? Did I tell this,

Who would believe me? O perilous mouths,  
That bear in them one and the self-same tongue,  
Either of condemnation or approval;  
Bidding the law make court'sy to their will;  
Hooking both right and wrong to the appetite,  
To follow as it draws! I'll to my brother:  
Though he hath fall'n by prompture of the blood,

Yet hath he in him such a mind of honour,  
That, had he twenty heads to tender down, 180  
On twenty bloody blocks, he'd yield them up,  
Before his sister should her body stoop  
To such abhor'd pollution.

Then, Isabel, live chaste, and, brother, die:  
More than our brother is our chastity.  
I'll tell him yet of Angelo's request,  
And fit his mind to death, for his soul's rest.

[*Exit.*]

### ACT III.

#### SCENE I. A room in the prison.

*Enter DUKE disguised as before, CLAUDIO, and PROVOST.*

*Duke.* So then you hope of pardon from Lord Angelo?

*Claudio.* The miserable have no other medicine

But only hope:

I've hope to live, and am prepared to die.

*Duke.* Be absolute for death; either death or life

Shall thereby be the sweeter. Reason thus with life:

If I do lose thee, I do lose a thing

That none but fools would keep: a breath thou art,

Servile to all the skyey influences,

That dost this habitation, where thou keep'st, 190  
Hourly afflict: merely, thou art death's fool;

For him thou labour'st by thy slight to shun  
And yet run'st toward him still. Thou art

not noble;

For all the accommodations that thou bear'st  
Are nursed by baseness. Thou art by no means

valiant;

For thou dost fear the soft and tender fork  
Of a poor worm. Thy best of rest is sleep,

And that thou oft provok'st; yet grossly fear'st  
Thy death, which is no more. Thou art not

thyself;

For thou exist'st on many a thousand grains 20  
That issue out of dust. Happy thou art not;

For what thou hast not, still thou strivest to get.

And what thou hast, forget'st. Thou art not certain;

For thy complexion shifts to strange effects,  
After the moon. If thou art rich, thou art poor;

For, like an ass whose back with ingots bows,  
Thou bear'st thy heavy riches but a journey,

And death unloads thee. Friend hast thou none;

For thine own bowels, which do call thee sire,  
The mere effusion of thy proper loins, 30

Do curse the rout, serpio, and the rheum,  
For ending thee no sooner. Thou hast not

youth nor age,  
But, as it were, an after-dinner's sleep,

Dreaming on both; for all thy blessed youth  
Becomes as aged, and doth beg the alms

Of palsied old; and when thou art old and rich,  
Thou hast neither heat, affection, limb, nor

beauty,  
To make thy riches pleasant. What's yet in

this  
That bears the name of life? Yet in this life

Lie hid more thousand deaths: yet death we fear,  
That makes these odds all even.

*Claudio.* I humbly thank you. 41  
To sue to live, I find I seek to die;

And, seeking death, find life: let it come on.

*Isab.* [Within] What, ho! Peace here; grace  
and good company!

*Prov.* Who's there? come in: the wish deserves a welcome.

*Duke.* Dear sir, ere long I'll visit you again.

*Claudio.* Most holy sir, I thank you.

*Enter ISABELLA.*

*Isab.* My business is a word or two with Claudio.

*Prov.* And very welcome. Look, signior, here's your sister.

*Duke.* Provost, a word with you. 51

*Prov.* As many as you please.

*Duke.* Bring me to hear them speak, where I may be concealed.

[*Re-enter Duke and Provost.*]

*Claudio.* Now, sister, what's the comfort?

*Isab.* Why As all comforts are; most good, most good indeed.

Lord Angelo, having affairs to heaven,  
Intends you for his swift ambassador.

Where you shall be an everlasting leiger:  
Therefore your best appointment make with

speed; 60  
To-morrow you set on.

*Claudio.* Is there no remedy?

*Isab.* None, but such remedy as, to save a head,

To cleave a heart in twain.

*Claudio.* But is there any?

*Isab.* Yes, brother, you may live:  
There is a devilish mercy in the judge,

If you'll implore it, that will free your life,  
But fetter you till death.

*Claudio.* Perpetual durance?

*Isab.* Ay, just; perpetual durance, a restraint,

Though all the world's vastidity you had,  
To a determined scope.

*Claudio.* But in what nature? 70

*Isab.* In such a one as, you consenting to't,  
Would bark your honour from that trunk you

bear,  
And leave you naked.

*Claudio.* Let me know the point.



*Isab.* O, I do fear thee, Claudio; and I quake,  
 Least thou a feverous life shouldst entertain,  
 And six or seven winters more respect  
 Than a perpetual honour. Darest thou die?  
 [The sense of death is most in apprehension;  
 And the poor beetle, that we tread upon,  
 In corporal sufferance finds a pang as great  
 As when a giant dies.]

*Claud.* Why give you me this shame?  
 Think you I can a resolution fetch  
 From flowery tenderness? If I must die,  
 I will encounter darkness as a bride,  
 And hug it in mine arms.

*Isab.* There spake my brother; there my  
 father's grave  
 Did utter forth a voice. Yes, thou must die:  
 Thou art too noble to conserve a life  
 In base appliances. This outward-sainted deputy,  
 Whose settled visage and deliberate word  
 Nips youth in the head and follicles doth cumber  
 As falcon doth the fowl, is yet a devil;  
 His filth within being cast, he would appear  
 A pond as deep as hell.

*Claud.* The prenzio Angelo!  
*Isab.* O, 'tis the cunning livery of hell,  
 The damned'st body to invest and cover  
 In prenzio guards! Dost thou think, Claudio?  
 If I would yield him my virginity,  
 Thou mightst be freed.

*Claud.* O heavens! it cannot be.  
*Isab.* Yes, he would give it thee, from this  
 rank offence,  
 So to offend him still. This night 's the time  
 That I should do what I abhor to name,  
 Or else thou diest to-morrow.

*Claud.* Thou shalt not do't.  
*Isab.* O, were it but my life,  
 I'd throw it down for your deliverance  
 As frankly as a pin.

*Claud.* Thanks, dear Isabel.  
*Isab.* Be ready, Claudio, for your death to-morrow.

*Claud.* Yes. Has he affections in him,  
 That thus can make him bite the law by the  
 nose,  
 When he would force it? Sure, it is no sin;  
 Or of the deadly seven it is the least.

*Isab.* Which is the least?  
*Claud.* If it were damnable, he being so  
 wise,

Why would he for the momentary trick  
 Be perjuriously fenc'd? O Isabel!

*Isab.* What says my brother?

*Claud.* Death is a fearful thing.

*Isab.* And shamed life a hateful.  
*Claud.* Ay, but to die, and go we know not  
 where;

To lie in cold obstruction and to rot;  
 This sensible warm motion to become  
 A kneaded clod; and the delighted spirit  
 To bathe in fiery floods, or to reside  
 In thrilling region of thick-ribbed ice;  
 To be imprison'd in the viewless winds,  
 And blown with restless violence round about  
 The pendent world; or to be worse than worst  
 Of those that lawless and incertain thought  
 Imagine howling: 'tis too horrible!

The weariest and most loathed worldly life  
 That age, ache, penury and imprisonment  
 Can lay on nature is a paradise  
 To what we fear of death.

*Isab.* Alas, alas!

*Claud.* Sweet sister, let me live:  
 What sin you do to save a brother's life,  
 Nature dispenses with the deed so far  
 That it becomes a virtue.

*Isab.* O you beast!  
 O faithless coward! O dishonest wretch!  
 Wilt thou be made a man out of my vice?  
 Is't not a kind of incest, to take life  
 From thine own sister's shame? What should  
 I think?

Heaven shield my mother play'd my father fair!  
 For such a warped slip of wilderness  
 Ne'er issued from his blood. Take my defiance!  
 Die, perish! Might but my bending down  
 Reprieve thee from thy fate, it should proceed:  
 I'll pray a thousand prayers for thy death,  
 No word to save thee.

*Claud.* Nay, hear me, Isabel.

*Isab.* O, fie, fie, fie!  
 Thy sin's not accidental, but a trade.  
 Mercy to thee would prove itself a bawd:  
 'Tis best that thou diest quickly.

*Claud.* O hear me, Isabella!

*Re-enter DUKE.*

*Duke.* Vouchsafe a word, young sister, but  
 one word.

*Isab.* What is your will?

*Duke.* Might you dispense with your leisure,  
 I would by and by have some speech with you:  
 the satisfaction I would require is likewise your  
 own benefit.

*Isab.* I have no superfluous leisure; my stay  
 must be stolen out of other affairs; but I will  
 attend you awhile. [*Walks apart.*]

*Duke.* Son, I have overheard what hath passed  
 between you and your sister. Angelo had never  
 the purpose to corrupt her; only he hath made  
 an assay of her virtue to practise his judgement  
 with the disposition of nature: she, having the  
 truth of honour in her, hath made him that gra-  
 cious denial which he is most glad to receive.  
 I am confessor to Angelo, and I know this to be  
 true; therefore prepare yourself to death: do  
 not satisfy your resolution with hopes that are  
 fallible: to-morrow you must die; go to your  
 knees and make ready.

*Claud.* Let me ask my sister pardon. I am  
 so out of love with life that I will sue to be rid  
 of it.

*Duke.* Hold you there: farewell. [*Exit*  
*Claudio.*] Provost, a word with you!

*Re-enter PROVOST.*

*Prov.* What's your will, father?

*Duke.* That's now you are come, you will be  
 gone. Leave me awhile with the maid: my  
 mind promises with my habit no loss shall touch  
 her by my company.

*Prov.* In good time.

[*Exit Provost. Isabella comes forward.*]

*Duke.* The hand that hath made you fair  
 hath made you good: the goodness that is cheap

in beauty makes beauty brief in goodness; but grace, being the soul of your complexion, shall keep the body of it ever fair. The assault that Angelo hath made to you, fortune hath conveyed to my understanding; and, but that frailty hath examples for his falling, I should wonder at Angelo. How will you do to content this substitute, and to save your brother?

*Isab.* I am now going to resolve him: I had rather my brother die by the law than my son should be unlawfully born. But, O, how much is the good duke deceived in Angelo! If ever he return and I can speak to him, I will open my lips in vain, or discover his government.

*Duke.* That shall not be much amiss: yet, as the matter now stands, he will avoid your accusation; he made trial of you only. Therefore fasten your ear on my advisings: to the love I have in doing good a remedy presents itself. I do make myself believe that you may most uprightly do a poor wronged lady a merited benefit; redeem your brother from the angry law; do no stain to your own gracious person; and much please the absent duke, if peradventure he shall ever return to have hearing of this business. 211

*Isab.* Let me hear you speak farther. I have spirit to do any thing that appears not foul in the truth of my spirit.

*Duke.* Virtue is bold, and goodness never fearful. Have you not heard speak of Mariana, the sister of Frederick the great soldier who miscarried at sea?

*Isab.* I have heard of the lady, and good words went with her name. 220

*Duke.* She should this Angelo have married; was affianced to her by oath, and the nuptial appointed: between which time of the contract and limit of the solemnity, her brother Frederick was wrecked at sea, having in that perished vessel the dowry of his sister. But mark how heavily this befell to the poor gentlewoman: there she lost a noble and renowned brother, in his love toward her ever most kind and natural; with him, the portion and sinew of her fortune, her marriage-dowry; with both, her combinate husband, this well-seeming Angelo.

*Isab.* Can this be so? did Angelo so leave her?

*Duke.* Left her in her tears, and dried not one of them with his comfort; swallowed his vows whole, pretending in her discoveries of dishonour: in few, bestowed her on her own lamentation, which she yet wears for his sake; and he, a marble to her tears, is washed with them, but relents not.

*Isab.* What a merit were it in death to take this poor maid from the world! What corruption in this life, that it will let this man live! But how out of this can she avail?

*Duke.* It is a rupture that you may easily heal: and the cure of it not only saves your brother, but keeps you from dishonour in doing it.

*Isab.* Show me how, good father.

*Duke.* This forenamed maid hath yet in her the continuance of her first affection: his unjust unkindness, that in all reason should have

quenched her love, hath, like an impediment in the current, made it more violent and unruly. Go you to Angelo; answer his requiring with a plausible obedience; agree with his demands to the point; only refer yourself to this advantage, first, that your stay with him may not be long; that the time may have all shadow and silence in it; and the place answer to convenience. This being granted in course,—and now follows all,—we shall advise this wronged maid to stand up your appointment, go in your place; if the encounter acknowledge itself here after, it may compel him to her recompense and here, by this, is your brother saved, you honour untainted, the poor Mariana advantaged and the corrupt deputy scaled. The maid will I frame and make fit for his attempt. If you think well to carry this as you may, the doubleness of the benefit defends the deceit from reproof. What think you of it? 27

*Isab.* The image of it gives me content already; and I trust it will grow to a most prosperous perfection.

*Duke.* It lies much in your holding up. Haste you speedily to Angelo: if for this night he entreat you to his bed, give him promise of satisfaction. I will presently to Saint Luke's there, at the moated grange, resides this dejected Mariana. At that place call upon me; and dispatch with Angelo, that it may be quickly. 29

*Isab.* I thank you for this comfort. Fare you well, good father. [Exeunt severally]

#### SCENE II. *The street before the prison.*

*Enter, on one side, DUKE disguised as before; on the other, ELBOW, and Officers with POMPEY.*

*Elb.* Nay, if there be no remedy for it, but that you will needs buy and sell men and women like beasts, we shall have all the world drink brown and white bastard.

*Duke.* (O heavens! what stuff is here?)

*Pom.* 'Twas never merry world since, of two usuries, the merriest was put down, and the worse allowed by order of law a furred gown to keep him warm; and furred with fox and lamb-skins too, to signify, that craft, being richer than innocence, stands for the facing. 31

*Elb.* Come your way, sir. Bless you, good father friar.

*Duke.* And you, good brother father. What offence hath this man made you, sir?

*Elb.* Marry, sir, he hath offended the law: and, sir, we take him to be a thief too, sir; for we have found upon him, sir, a strange picklock, which we have sent to the deputy.

*Duke.* Fie, sirrah! a bawd, a wicked bawd! The evil that thou causest to be done, That is thy means to live. Do thou but think

What 'tis to cram a maw or clothe a back From such a filthy vice: say to thyself, From their abominable and beastly touches I drink, I eat, array myself, and live. Canst thou believe thy living is a life, So stinkingly depending? (Go mend, go mend.)

*Pom.* Indeed, it does stink in some sort, sir; but yet, sir, I would prove— 32

*Duke.* Nay, if the devil have given thee proofs for sin,  
Thou wilt prove him. Take him to prison,  
officer:

Correction and instruction must both work  
Ere this rude beast will profit.

*Elb.* He must before the deputy, sir; he has given him warning: the deputy cannot abide a whoremaster: if he be a whoremonger, and comes before him, he were as good go a mile on his errand.

*Duke.* That we were all, as some would seem to be,

†From our faults, as faults from seeming, free!

*Elb.* His neck will come to your waist,—a cord, sir.

*Pom.* I spy comfort; I cry hail. Here's a gentleman and a friend of mine.

*Enter LUCIO.*

*Lucio.* How now, noble Pompey! What, at the wheels of Caesar? art thou led in triumph? What, is there none of Pygmalion's images, newly made woman, to be had now, for putting the hand in the pocket and extracting it clutched? What reply, ha? What sayest thou to this tune, matter and method? Is't not drowned i' the last rain, ha? What sayest thou, Trot? Is the world as it was, man? Which is the way? Is it sad, and few words? or how? The trick of it?

*Duke.* Still thus, and thus; still worse!  
*Lucio.* How doth my dear morsel, thy mistress? Procures she still, ha?

*Pom.* Troth, sir, she hath eaten up all her beef, and she is herself in the tub.

*Lucio.* Why, 'tis good; it is the right of it; it must be so: ever your fresh whore and your powdered bawd: an unshunned consequence; it must be so. Art going to prison, Pompey?

*Pom.* Yes, faith, sir.  
*Lucio.* Why, 'tis not amiss, Pompey. Farewell: go say I sent thee thither. For debt, Pompey? or how?

*Elb.* For being a bawd, for being a bawd.  
*Lucio.* Well, then, imprison him: if imprisonment be the due of a bawd, why, 'tis his right: bawd is he doubtless, and of antiquity too; bawd-born. Farewell, good Pompey. Commend me to the prison, Pompey: you will turn good husband now, Pompey; you will keep the house.

*Pom.* I hope, sir, your good worship will be my bail.

*Lucio.* No, indeed, will I not, Pompey; it is not the wear. I will pray, Pompey, to increase your bondage: if you take it not patiently, why, your mettle is the more. Adieu, trusty Pompey. Bless you, friar.

*Duke.* And you.  
*Lucio.* Does Bridget paint still, Pompey, ha?

*Elb.* Come your ways, sir; come.

*Pom.* You will not bail me, then, sir?

*Lucio.* Then, Pompey, nor now. What news abroad, friar? what news?

*Elb.* Come your ways, sir; come.  
*Lucio.* Go to kennel, Pompey; go. [Exit

*Elbow, Pompey and Officers.] What news, friar, of the duke?*

*Duke.* I know none. Can you tell me of any?

*Lucio.* Some say he is with the Emperor of Russia; other some, he is in Rome: but where is he, think you?

*Duke.* I know not where; but wheresoever, I wish him well.

*Lucio.* It was a mad fantastical trick of him to steal from the state, and usurp the beggary he was never born to. Lord Angelo dukes it well in his absence; he puts transgression to 't.

*Duke.* He does well in 't.

*Lucio.* A little more lenity to lechery would do no harm in him: something too crabbed that way, friar.

*Duke.* It is too general a vice, and severity must cure it.

*Lucio.* Yes, in good sooth, the vice is of a great kindred; it is well allied: but it is impossible to extirp it quite, friar, till eating and drinking be put down. They say this Angelo was not made by man and woman after this downright way of creation: is it true, think you?

*Duke.* How should he be made, then?

*Lucio.* Some report a sea-maid spawned him; some, that he was begot between two stock-fishes. But it is certain that when he makes water his urine is congealed ice; that I know to be true: †and he is a motion generative; that's infallible.

*Duke.* You are pleasant, sir, and speak apace.

*Lucio.* Why, what a ruthless thing is this in him, for the rebellion of a codpiece to take away the life of a man! Would the duke that is absent have done this? Ere he would have hang'd a man for the getting a hundred bastards, he would have paid for the nursing a thousand: he had some feeling of the sport; he knew the service, and that instructed him to mercy.

*Duke.* I never heard the absent duke much detected for women; he was not inclined that way.

*Lucio.* O, sir, you are deceived.

*Duke.* 'Tis not possible.

*Lucio.* Who, not the duke? yes, your beggar of fifty; and his use was to put a ducat in her clack-dish: the duke had crotchets in him. He would be drunk too; that let me inform you.

*Duke.* You do him wrong, surely.

*Lucio.* Sir, I was an inward of his. A shy fellow was the duke: and I believe I know the cause of his withdrawing.

*Duke.* What, I prithee, might be the cause?

*Lucio.* No, pardon: 'tis a secret must be locked within the teeth and the lips: but this I can let you understand, the greater file of the subject held the duke to be wise.

*Duke.* Wise! why, no question but he was.

*Lucio.* A very superficial, ignorant, unweighing fellow.

*Duke.* Either this is envy in you, folly, or mistaking: the very stream of his life and the business he hath helmed must upon a warranted need give him a better proclamation. Let him be but testimonied in his own bringings-forth, and he shall appear to the envious a scholar, a

statesman and a soldier. Therefore you speak unskilfully; or if your knowledge be more it is much darkened in your malice.

*Lucio.* Sir, I know him, and I love him.

*Duke.* Love talks with better knowledge, and knowledge with dearer love. 160

*Lucio.* Come, sir, I know what I know.

*Duke.* I can hardly believe that, since you know not what you speak. But, if ever the duke return, as our prayers are he may, let me desire you to make your answer before him. If it be honest you have spoke, you have courage to maintain it: I am bound to call upon you; and, I pray you, your name?

*Lucio.* Sir, my name is Lucio; well known to the duke. 170

*Duke.* He shall know you better, sir, if I may live to report you.

*Lucio.* I fear you not.

*Duke.* O, you hope the duke will return no more; or you imagine me too unburthful an opposite. But indeed I can do you little harm; you'll forswear this again.

*Lucio.* I'll be hanged first: thou art deceived in me, friar. But no more of this. Canst thou tell if Claudio die to-morrow or no? 180

*Duke.* Why should he die, sir?

*Lucio.* Why? For filling a bottle with a tun-dish. I would the duke we talk of were returned again: this ungenitured agent will unpeople the province with continency; sparrows must not build in his house-eaves, because they are lecherous. The duke yet would have dark deeds darkly answered; he would never bring them to light: would he were returned!

on Fridays. He's not past it yet, and I say to thee, he would mouth with a beggar, though she smelt brown bread and garlic: say that I said so. Farewell. [Exit.]

*Duke.* No might nor greatness in mortality can censure 'scape; back-wounding calumny The whitest virtue strikes. What king so strong Can tie the gall up in the slanderous tongue? But who comes here? 200

*Enter ESCALUS, PROVOST, and Officers with MISTRESS OVERDONE.*

*Escal.* Go; away with her to prison!

*Mrs Ov.* Good my lord, be good to me; your honour is accounted a merciful man; good my lord.

*Escal.* Double and treble admonition, and still forfeit in the same kind! This would make mercy swear and play the tyrant.

*Prov.* A bawd of eleven years' continuance, may it please your honour. 209

*Mrs Ov.* My lord, this is one Lucio's information against me. Mistress Kate Keepdown was with child by him in the duke's time; he promised her marriage: his child is a year and a quarter old, come Philip and Jacob: I have kept it myself; and see how he goes about to abuse me!

*Escal.* That fellow is a fellow of much license: let him be called before us. Away with her to prison! Go to; no more words.

[*Exeunt Officers with Mistress Ov.*] Provost, my brother Angelo will not be altered; Claudio must die to-morrow: let him be furnished with divines, and have all charitable preparation. I my brother wrought by my pity, it should not be so with him.

*Prov.* So please you, this friar hath been with him, and advised him for the entertainment of death.

*Escal.* Good even, good father.

*Duke.* Bliss and goodness on you!

*Escal.* Of whence are you?

*Duke.* Not of this country, though my chance is now 215

To use it for my time: I am a brother of gracious order, late come from the See in special business from his holiness.

*Escal.* What news abroad in the world?

*Duke.* None, but that there is so great fever on goodness, that the dissolution of it must cure it: novelty is only in request; and it is as dangerous to be aged in any kind of course as it is virtuous to be constant in any undetaking. There is scarce truth enough alive to make societies secure; but security enough to make fellowships accurst: much upon this riddle runs the wisdom of the world. The news is old enough, yet it is every day's news: I pray you, sir, of what disposition was the duke?

*Escal.* One that, above all other strifes, contented especially to know himself.

*Duke.* What pleasure was he given to?

*Escal.* Rather rejoicing to see another merry than merry at any thing which professed to make him rejoice: a gentleman of all temperance. But leave we him to his events, with prayer they may prove prosperous; and let us desire to know how you find Claudio prepared: I am made to understand that you have less him visitation.

*Duke.* He professes to have received no sinister measure from his judge, but most willingly humbles himself to the determination of justice: yet had he framed to himself, by the instruction of his frailty, many deceiving promises of life which I by my good leisure have discredited to him, and now is he resolved to die.

*Escal.* You have paid the heavens your function, and the prisoner the very debt of you calling. I have laboured for the poor gentleman to the extremest shore of my modesty; but my brother justice have I found so severe, that he hath forced me to tell him he is indeed Justice.

*Duke.* If his own life answer the straits of his proceeding, it shall become him well wherein if he chance to fail, he hath sentenced himself.

*Escal.* I am going to visit the prisoner. Fare you well.

*Duke.* Peace be with you!

[*Exeunt Escalus and Provost.*]  
He who the sword of heaven will bear  
Should be as holy as severe;  
Pattern in himself to know,  
Grace to stand, and virtue go;  
More nor less to others paying  
Than by self-offences weighing.

Shame to him whose cruel striking  
Kills for faults of his own liking!  
Twice treble shame on Angelo,  
To weed my vice and let his grow!  
O, what may man within him hide,  
Though angel on the outward side!  
How may likeness made in crimes,  
Making practice on the times,  
To draw with idle spiders' strings  
Most ponderous and substantial things!  
T'raff against vice I must apply:  
With Angelo to-night shall lie  
His old betrothed but despised;  
So disguise shall, by the disguised,  
Play with falsehood false exacting,  
And perform an old contracting.

[Exit.

ACT IV.

SCENE I. *The moated grange at St LUKE'S.*

*Enter MARIANA and a BOY.*

*Boy sings.*

Take, O, take those lips away,  
That so sweetly were forsworn;  
And those eyes, the break of day,  
Lights that do mislead the morn:  
But my kisses bring again, bring again;  
Seals of love, but seal'd in vain, seal'd in vain.

*Mari.* Break off thy song, and haste thee  
quick away:  
Here comes a man of comfort, whose advice  
hath often still'd my brawling discontent.

[Exit Boy.

*Enter DUKE disguised as before.*

Cry you mercy, sir; and well could wish  
you had not found me here so musical:  
Let me excuse me, and believe me so,  
My mirth it much displeased, but pleased my  
woo.

*Duke.* 'Tis good; though music oft hath  
such a charm  
To make bad good, and good provoke to harm.  
I pray you, tell me, hath any body inquired for  
me here to-day? much upon this time have I  
promised here to meet.

*Mari.* You have not been inquired after: I  
have sat here all day.

*Enter ISABELLA.*

*Duke.* I do constantly believe you. The  
time is come even now. I shall crave your for-  
bearance a little, may be I will call upon you  
mon, for some advantage to yourself.

*Mari.* I am always bound to you. [Exit.

*Duke.* Very well met, and well come.  
What is the news from this good deputy?

*Isab.* He hath a garden circummured with  
brick,  
Whose western side is with a vineyard back'd;  
And to that vineyard is a planced gate,  
That makes his opening with this bigger key:  
This other doth command a little door  
Which from the vineyard to the garden leads  
There have I made my promise  
Upon the heavy middle of the night

To call upon him.

*Duke.* But shall you on your knowledge find  
this way?

*Isab.* I have ta'en a due and wary note  
upon't:

With whispering and most guilty diligence,  
In action all of precept, he did show me  
The way twice o'er.

*Duke.* Are there no other tokens  
Between you 'greed concerning her observance?

*Isab.* No, none, but only a repair i' the dark;  
And that I have possess'd him my most stay  
(Can be but brief; for I have made him know  
I have a servant comes with me along,  
That stays upon me, whose persuasion is  
I come about my brother.

*Duke.* 'Tis well borne up.  
I have not yet made known to Mariana  
A word of this. What, ho! within! come forth!

*Re-enter MARIANA.*

I pray you, be acquainted with this maid;  
She comes to do you good.

*Isab.* I do desire the like.  
*Duke.* Do you persuade yourself that I re-  
spect you?

*Mari.* Good friar, I know you do, and have  
found it.

*Duke.* Take, then, this your companion by  
the hand,  
Who hath a story ready for your ear.  
I shall attend your leisure: but make haste;  
The vaporous night approaches.

*Mari.* Will't please you walk aside?  
[Exit Mariana and Isabella.

*Duke.* O place and greatness! millions of  
false eyes

Are stuck upon thee: volumes of report  
Run with these false and most contrarious  
quests

Upon thy doings: thousand escapes of wit  
Make thee the father of their idle dreams  
And rack thee in their fancies.

*Re-enter MARIANA and ISABELLA.*

Welcome, how agreed?  
*Isab.* She'll take the enterprise upon her,  
father,

If you advise it.  
*Duke.* It is not my consent,  
But my entreaty too.

*Isab.* Little have you to say  
When you depart from him, but, soft and low,  
'Remember now my brother.

*Mari.* Fear me not.  
*Duke.* Nor, gentle daughter, fear you not at  
all.

He is your husband on a pre-contract:  
To bring you thus together, 'tis no sin,  
Sith that the justice of your title to him  
Doth flourish the deceit. Come, let us go:  
Our corn's to reap, for yet our tithe's to sow.  
[Exit.

SCENE II. *A room in the prison.*

*Enter PROVOST and POMPEY.*

*Prov.* Come hither, sirrah. Can you cut off  
a man's head?

*Pom.* If the man be a bachelor, sir, I can; but if he be a married man, he's his wife's head, and I can never cut off a woman's head.

*Prov.* Come, sir, leave me your snatches, and yield me a direct answer. To-morrow morning are to die Claudio and Barnardine. Here is in our prison a common executioner, who in his office lacks a helper: if you will take it on you to assist him, it shall redeem you from your gyves; if not, you shall have your full time of imprisonment and your deliverance with an unpitied whipping, for you have been a notorious bawd.

*Pom.* Sir, I have been an unlawful bawd time out of mind; but yet I will be content to be a lawful hangman. I would be glad to receive some instruction from my fellow partner.

*Prov.* What, ho! Abhorson! Where's Abhorson, there? 21

*Enter ABHORSON.*

*Abhor.* Do you call, sir?

*Prov.* Sirrah, here's a fellow who will help you to-morrow in your execution. If you think it meet, compound with him by the year, and let him abide here with you; if not, use him for the present and dismiss him. He cannot plead his estimation with you; he hath been a bawd.

*Abhor.* A bawd, sir? lie upon him! he will discredit our mystery. 30

*Prov.* Go to, sir; you weigh equally; a feather will turn the scale. [*Exit.*]

*Pom.* Pray, sir, by your good favour,—for surely, sir, a good favour you have, but that you have a hanging look,—do you call, sir, your occupation a mystery?

*Abhor.* Ay, sir; a mystery.

*Pom.* Painting, sir, I have heard say, is a mystery; and your whores, sir, being members of my occupation, using painting, do prove my occupation a mystery: but what mystery there should be in hanging, if I should be hanged, I cannot imagine.

*Abhor.* Sir, it is a mystery.

*Pom.* Proof?

*Abhor.* Every true man's apparel fits your thief: if it be too little for your thief, your true man thinks it big enough; if it be too big for your thief, your thief thinks it little enough: so every true man's apparel fits your thief. 50

*Re-enter PROVOST.*

*Prov.* Are you agreed?

*Pom.* Sir, I will serve him; for I do find your hangman is a more penitent trade than your bawd; he doth oftener ask forgiveness.

*Prov.* You, sirrah, provide your block and your axe to-morrow four o'clock.

*Abhor.* Come on, bawd; I will instruct thee in my trade; follow.

*Pom.* I do desire to learn, sir; and I hope, if you have occasion to use me for your own turn, you shall find me yare; for truly, sir, for your kindness I owe you a good turn.

*Prov.* Call hither Barnardine and Claudio:

[*Exeunt Pompey and Abhorson.*]

The one has my pity; not a jot the other, Being a murderer, though he were my brother.

*Enter CLAUDIO.*

Look, here's the warrant, Claudio, for thy death:

'Tis now dead midnight, and by eight to-morrow Thou must be made immortal. Where's Barnardine?

*Claud.* As fast lock'd up in sleep as guiltless labour

When it lies starkly in the traveller's bones: 70 He will not wake.

*Prov.* Who can do good on him? Well, go, prepare yourself. [*Knocking within.*]

But, hark, what noise?

Heaven give your spirits comfort! [*Exit Claudio.*]

By and by.

I hope it is some pardon or reprieve For the most gentle Claudio.

*Enter DUKE disguised as before.*

Welcome, father.

*Duke.* The best and wholesomest spirits of the night

Envelop you, good Provost! Who call'd here of late?

*Prov.* None, since the curfew rung.

*Duke.* Not Isabel?

*Prov.* No.

*Duke.* They will, then, ere't be long.

*Prov.* What comfort is for Claudio? 80

*Duke.* There's some in hope.

*Prov.* It is a bitter deputy.

*Duke.* Not so, not so; his life is parallel'd Even with the stroke and line of his great justice.

He doth with holy abstinence subdue That in himself which he spurs on his power

To qualify in others: were he meal'd with that Which he corrects, then were he tyrannous;

But this being so, he's just. [*Knocking within.*]

Now are they come.

[*Exit Provost.*]

This is a gentle provost: seldom when The steel'd gaoler is the friend of men.

[*Knocking within.* 90]

How now! what noise? That spirit's possess'd with haste

That wounds the unsisting postern with these strokes.

*Re-enter PROVOST.*

*Prov.* There he must stay until the officer Arise to let him in: he is call'd up.

*Duke.* Have you no countermand for Claudio yet,

But he must die to-morrow?

*Prov.* None, sir, none.

*Duke.* As near the dawning, provost, as it is,

You shall hear more ere morning.

*Prov.* Happily

You something know; yet I believe there comes No countermand; no such example have we: 100

Besides, upon the very siege of justice Lord Angelo hath to the public ear

Profess'd the contrary.

*Enter A MESSENGER.*

This is his lordship's man.

*Duke.* And here comes Claudio's pardon.

*Mes.* [*Giving a paper.*] My lord hath sent you this note; and by me this further charge, that you swerve not from the smallest article of it, neither in time, matter, or other circumstance. Good morrow; for, as I take it, it is almost day.

*Prov.* I shall obey him. [*Exit Messenger.*]

*Duke.* [*Aside*] This is his pardon, purchased by such sin.

For which the pardoners himself is in. Hence hath offence his quick celerity, When it is borne in high authority: When vice makes mercy, mercy's so extended, That for the fault's love is the offender friended. Now, sir, what news?

*Prov.* I told you. Lord Angelo, belike thinking me remiss in mine office, awakens me with this unwonted putting-on; methinks largely, for he hath not used it before.

*Duke.* Pray you, let's hear.

*Prov.* [*Reads*]

'Whosoever you may hear to the contrary, let Claudio be executed by four of the clock; and in the afternoon Barnardine: for my better satisfaction, let me have Claudio's head sent me by five. Let this be duly performed; with a thought that more depends on it than we must yet deliver. Thus fail not to do your office, as you will answer it at your peril.'

*Duke.* What is that Barnardine who is to be executed in the afternoon?

*Prov.* A Bohemian born, but here nursed up and bred; one that is a prisoner nine years old.

*Duke.* How came it that the absent duke had not either delivered him to his liberty or cutted him? I have heard it was ever his manner to do so.

*Prov.* His friends still wrought reprieves for him: and, indeed, his fact, till now in the government of Lord Angelo, came not to an undoubtful proof.

*Duke.* It is now apparent?

*Prov.* Most manifest, and not denied by himself.

*Duke.* Hath he borne himself penitently in prison? how seems he to be touch'd?

*Prov.* A man that apprehends death no more dreadfully but as a drunken sleep; careless, reckless, and fearless of what's past, present, or to come: insensible of mortality, and desperately mortal.

*Duke.* He wants advice.

*Prov.* He will hear none: he hath evermore had the liberty of the prison; give him leave to escape hence, he would not: drunk many times a day, if not many days entirely drunk. We have very oft awaked him, as if to carry him to execution, and showed him a seeming warrant for it; it hath not moved him at all.

*Duke.* More of him anon. There is written in your brow, provost, honesty and constancy: if I read it not truly, my ancient skill beguiles me; but, in the boldness of my cunning, I will lay my self in hazard. Claudio, whom here you have warrant to execute, is no greater forfeit to

the law than Angelo who hath sentenced him. To make you understand this in a manifested effect, I crave but four days' respite; for the which you are to do me both a present and a dangerous courtesy.

*Prov.* Pray, sir, in what?

*Duke.* In the delaying death.

*Prov.* Alack, how may I do it, having the hour limited, and an express command, under penalty, to deliver his head in the view of Angelo? I may make my case as Claudio's, to cross this in the smallest.

*Duke.* By the vow of mine order I warrant you, if my instructions may be your guide. Let this Barnardine be this morning executed, and his head borne to Angelo.

*Prov.* Angelo hath seen them both, and will discover the favour.

*Duke.* O, death's a great disguiser; and you may add to it. Shave the head, and tie the beard; and say it was the desire of the penitent to be so bared before his death: you know the course is common. If any thing fall to you upon this, more than thanks and good fortune, by the saint whom I profess, I will plead against it with my life.

*Prov.* Pardon me, good father; it is against my oath.

*Duke.* Were you sworn to the duke, or to the deputy?

*Prov.* To him, and to his substitutes.

*Duke.* You will think you have made no offence, if the duke avouch the justice of your dealing?

*Prov.* But what likelihood is in that?

*Duke.* Not a resemblance, but a certainty. Yet since I see you fearful, that neither my coat, integrity, nor persuasion can with ease attempt you, I will go further than I meant, to pluck all fears out of you. Look you, sir, here is the hand and seal of the duke: you know the character, I doubt not; and the signet is not strange to you.

*Prov.* I know them both.

*Duke.* The contents of this is the return of the duke: you shall anon over-read it at your pleasure; where you shall find, within these two days he will be here. This is a thing that Angelo knows not; for he this very day receives letters of strange tenour; perchance of the duke's death; perchance entering into some monastery; but, by chance, nothing of what is writ. Look, the unfolding star calls up the shepherd. Put not yourself into amazement how these things should be: all difficulties are but easy when they are known. Call your executioner, and off with Barnardine's head: I will give him a present shirt and advise him for a better place. Yet you are amazed; but this shall absolutely resolve you. Come away; it is almost clear dawn.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. Another room in the same.

Enter POMPEY.

*Pom.* I am as well acquainted here as I was in our house of profession: one would think it were Mistress Overdone's own house, for here be

many of her old customers. First, here's young Master Rash; he's in for a commodity of brown paper and old ginger, nine-score and seventeen pounds; of which he made five marks, ready money; marry, then ginger was not much in request, for the old women were all dead. Then is there here one Master Caper, at the suit of Master Three-pile the mercer, for some four suits of peach-coloured satin, which now peaches him a beggar. Then have we here young Dizy, and young Master Deep-vow, and Master Copper-spur, and Master Starve-lackey the rapier and dagger man, and young Drop-heir that killed lusty Pudding, and Master Forthlight the tilter, and brave Master Shooty the great traveller, and wild Half-can that stabbed Pois, and, I think, forty more; all great doers in our trade, and are now 'for the Lord's sake.'

*Enter ABHORSON.*

*Abhor.* Sirrah, bring Barnardine hither.

*Pom.* Master Barnardine! you must rise and be hanged, Master Barnardine!

*Abhor.* What, ho, Barnardine!

*Bar.* [Within] A pox o' your throats! Who makes that noise there? What are you?

*Pom.* Your friends, sir; the hangman. You must be so good, sir, to rise and be put to death.

*Bar.* [Within] Away, you rogue, away! I am sleepy.

*Abhor.* Tell him he must awake, and that quickly too.

*Pom.* Pray, Master Barnardine, awake till you are executed, and sleep afterwards.

*Abhor.* Go in to him, and fetch him out.

*Pom.* He is coming, sir, he is coming; I hear his straw rustle.

*Abhor.* Is the axe upon the block, sirrah?

*Pom.* Very ready, sir.

*Enter BARNARDINE.*

*Bar.* How now, Abhorson? what's the news with you?

*Abhor.* Truly, sir, I would desire you to clap into your prayers; for, look you, the warrant's come.

*Bar.* You rogue, I have been drinking all night; I am not fitted for't.

*Pom.* O, the better, sir; for he that drinks all night, and is hanged betimes in the morning, may sleep the sounder all the next day.

*Abhor.* Look you, sir; here comes your ghostly father: do we jest now, think you?

*Enter DUKE disguised as before.*

*Duke.* Sir, induced by my charity, and hearing how hastily you are to depart, I am come to advise you, comfort you and pray with you.

*Bar.* Friar, not I: I have been drinking hard all night, and I will have more time to prepare me, or they shall beat out my brains with billets: I will not consent to die this day, that's certain.

*Duke.* O, sir, you must: and therefore I beseech you  
Look forward on the journey you shall go.

*Bar.* I swear I will not die to-day for any man's persuasion.

*Duke.* But hear you.

*Bar.* Not a word: if you have any thing to say to me, come to my ward; for thence will not I to-day.

*Duke.* Unfit to live or die: O gravel heart! After him, fellows; bring him to the block.

[*Exeunt Abhorson and Pompey.*]

*Enter PROVOST.*

*Prov.* Now, sir, how do you find the prisoner?

*Duke.* A creature unprepared, unmeet for death;

And to transport him in the mind he is  
Were damnable.

*Prov.* Here in the prison, father, There died this morning of a cruel fever One Ragozine, a most notorious pirate, A man of Claudio's years; his beard and head

Just of his colour. What if we do omit This reprobate till he were well inclined; And satisfy the deputy with the visage Of Ragozine, more like to Claudio?

*Duke.* O, 'tis an accident that heaven provides!

Dispatch it presently: the hour draws on Prefix'd by Angelo: see this be done, And sent according to command; whiles I Persuade this rude wretch willingly to die.

*Prov.* This shall be done, good father, presently.

But Barnardine must die this afternoon: And how shall we continue Claudio, To save me from the danger that might come

If he were known alive?

*Duke.* Let this be done. Put them in secret holds, both Barnardine and Claudio:

Ere twice the sun hath made his journal greeting

To the under generation, you shall find Your safety manifested.

*Prov.* I am your free dependant.

*Duke.* Quick, dispatch, and send the hear to Angelo.

[*Exit Provost.*]  
Now will I write letters to Angelo,—  
The provost, he shall bear them,—whose contents

Shall witness to him I am near at home, And that, by great injunctions, I am bound to To enter publicly: him I'll desire To meet me at the consecrated fount A league below the city; and from thence, By cold gradation and well-balanced form, We shall proceed with Angelo.

*Re-enter PROVOST.*

*Prov.* Here is the head; I'll carry it myself  
*Duke.* Convenient is it. Make a swift return;

For I would commune with you of such thing That want no ear but yours.

*Prov.* I'll make all speed. [*Exit.*]

*Isab.* [Within] Peace, ho, be here!



*Duke.* The tongue of Isabel. She's come to know  
If yet her brother's pardon be come hither :  
But I will keep her ignorant of her good,  
To make her heavenly comforts of despair,  
When it is least expected.

*Enter ISABELLA.*

*Isab.* Ho, by your leave!

*Duke.* Good morning to you, fair and gracious daughter.

*Isab.* The better, given me by so holy a man.

Hath yet the deputy sent my brother's pardon?

*Duke.* He hath released him, Isabel, from the world :

His head is off and sent to Angelo. 120

*Isab.* Nay, but it is not so.

*Duke.* It is no other : show your wisdom, daughter,

In your close patience.

*Isab.* O, I will to him and pluck out his eyes!

*Duke.* You shall not be admitted to his sight.

*Isab.* Unhappy Claudio! wretched Isabel!  
Injurious world! most damned Angelo!

*Duke.* This nor hurts him nor profits you a jot :

Forbear it therefore; give your cause to heaven.  
Mark what I say, which you shall find 130

By every syllable a faithful verity :  
The duke comes home to-morrow; nay, dry

your eyes;

One of our convent, and his confessor,  
Gives me this instance: already he hath carried

Notice to Escalus and Angelo,  
Who do prepare to meet him at the gates,

There to give up their power. If you can, pace  
your wisdom

In that good path that I would wish it go,  
And you shall have your bosom on this wretch,

Grace of the duke, revenges to your heart, 140  
And general honour.

*Isab.* I am directed by you.

*Duke.* This letter, then, to Friar Peter give;  
Tis that he sent me of the duke's return :

Say, by this token, I desire his company  
At Mariana's house to-night. Her cause and

yours

I'll perfect him withal, and he shall bring you  
Before the duke, and to the head of Angelo

Accuse him home and home. For my poor self,  
I am combined by a sacred vow

And shall be absent. Wend you with this  
letter: 150

Command these fretting waters from your eyes  
With a light heart; trust not my holy order,

If I pervert your course. Who's here?

*Enter LUCIO.*

*Lucio.* Good even. Friar, where's the priest?

*Duke.* Not within, sir.

*Lucio.* O pretty Isabella, I am pale at mine  
heart to see thine eyes so red: thou must be

patient. I am fain to dine and sup with water  
and bran; I dare not for my head fill my belly;

one fruitful meal would set me to 't. But they

say the duke will be here to-morrow. By my  
troth, Isabel, I loved thy brother: if the old  
fantastical duke of dark corners had been at  
home, he had lived. [*Exit Isabella.*]

*Duke.* Sir, the duke is marvellous little  
beholding to your reports; but the best is, he lives  
not in them.

*Lucio.* Friar, thou knowest not the duke so  
well as I do: he's a better woodman than thou  
takest him for. 171

*Duke.* Well, you'll answer this one day.  
Fare ye well.

*Lucio.* Nay, tarry; I'll go along with thee:  
I can tell thee pretty tales of the duke.

*Duke.* You have told me too many of him  
already, sir, if they be true; if not true, none  
were enough.

*Lucio.* I was once before him for getting a  
wench with child. 180

*Duke.* Did you such a thing?

*Lucio.* Yes, marry, did I: but I was fain to  
forswear it; they would else have married me  
to the rotten medlar.

*Duke.* Sir, your company is fairer than  
honest. Rest you well.

*Lucio.* By my troth, I'll go with thee to the  
lane's end: if bawdy talk offend you, we'll have  
very little of it. Nay, friar, I am a kind of  
burr; I shall stick. [*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE IV. A room in ANGELO'S house.

*Enter ANGELO and ESCALUS.*

*Escal.* Every letter he hath writ hath dis-  
vouched other.

*Ang.* In most uneven and distracted man-  
ner. His actions show much like to madness:  
pray heaven his wisdom be not tainted! And  
why meet him at the gates, and redeliver our  
authorities there?

*Escal.* I guess not.

*Ang.* And why should we proclaim it in an  
hour before his entering, that if any crave  
redress of injustice, they should exhibit their  
petitions in the street?

*Escal.* He shows his reason for that: to have  
a dispatch of complaints, and to deliver us from  
devices hereafter, which shall then have no  
power to stand against us.

*Ang.* Well, I beseech you, let it be pro-  
claimed betimes i' the morn; I'll call you at  
your house: give notice to such men of sort and  
suit as are to meet him. 20

*Escal.* I shall, sir. Fare you well.

*Ang.* Good night. [*Exit Escalus.*]

This deed unshapes me quite, makes me un-  
pregnant

And dull to all proceedings. A deflower'd  
maid!

And by an eminent body that enforced  
The law against it! But that her tender

shame

Will not proclaim against her maiden loss,  
How might she tongue me! Yet reason dares

her no;

For my authority bears of a credent bulk.  
That no particular scandal once can touch 30

But it confounds the breather. He should have lived,  
 Save that his riotous youth, with dangerous sense,  
 Might in the times to come have ta'en revenge,  
 By so receiving a dishonour'd life  
 With ransom of such shame. Would yet he had lived!  
 Alack, when once our grace we have forgot,  
 Nothing goes right: we would, and we would not. *[Exit.]*

SCENE V. *Fields without the town.*

*Enter DUKE in his own habit, and FRIAR PETER.*

*Duke.* These letters at fit time deliver me :  
*[Giving letters.]*  
 The provost knows our purpose and our plot.  
 The matter being afoot, keep your instruction,  
 And hold you ever to our special drift;  
 Though sometimes you do blench from this to that,  
 As cause doth minister. Go call at Flavius' house.  
 And tell him where I stay : give the like notice  
 To Valentinus, Rowland, and to Crassus,  
 And bid them bring the trumpets to the gate;  
 But send me Flavius first.

*Fri. P.* It shall be speeded well. *[Exit.]* 10

*Enter VARRIUS.*

*Duke.* I thank thee, Varrius; thou hast made good haste:  
 Come, we will walk. There's other of our friends  
 Will greet us here anon, my gentle Varrius. *[Exit.]*

SCENE VI. *Street near the city gate.*

*Enter ISABELLA and MARIANA.*

*Isab.* To speak so indirectly I am loath :  
 I would say the truth; but to accuse him so,  
 That is your part : yet I am advised to do it;  
 He says, to veil full purpose.

*Mari.* Be ruled by him.

*Isab.* Besides, he tells me that, if peradventure  
 He speak against me on the adverse side,  
 I should not think it strange; for 'tis a physic  
 That's bitter to sweet end.

*Mari.* I would Friar Peter—

*Isab.* O, peace! the friar is come.

*Enter FRIAR PETER.*

*Fri. P.* Come, I have found you out a stand  
 most fit, 10  
 Where you may have such vantage on the duke,  
 He shall not pass you. Twice have the trumpets  
 sounded;  
 The generous and gravest citizens  
 Have hent the gates, and very near upon  
 The duke is entering : therefore, hence, away!  
*[Exit.]*

## ACT V.

SCENE I. *The city gate.*

*MARIANA veiled, ISABELLA, and FRIAR PETER, at their stand. Enter DUKE, VARRIUS, LORDS, ANGELO, ESCALUS, LUCIO, PROVOST, OFFICERS, and CITIZENS, at several doors.*

*Duke.* My very worthy cousin, fairly met!  
 Our old and faithful friend, we are glad to see you.

*Ang.* } Happy return be to your royal grace!  
*Escal.* }

*Duke.* Many and hearty thankings to you both.

We have made inquiry of you; and we hear  
 Such goodness of your justice, that our soul  
 Cannot but yield you forth to public thanks,  
 Forerunning more requital.

*Ang.* You make my bonds still greater.

*Duke.* O, your desert speaks loud; and I should wrong it,  
 To lock it in the wards of covert bosom, 10  
 When it deserves, with characters of brass,  
 A fortified residence 'gainst the tooth of time  
 And rature of oblivion. Give me your hand,  
 And let the subject see, to make them know  
 That outward courtesies would fain proclaim  
 Favours that keep within. Come, Escalus,  
 You must walk by us on our other hand;  
 And good supporters are you.

*FRIAR PETER and ISABELLA come forward.*

*Fri. P.* Now is your time : speak loud and kneel before him.

*Isab.* Justice, O royal duke! Vail your regard.

Upon a wrong'd, I would fain have said, a maid!  
 O worthy prince, dishonour not your eye  
 By throwing it on any other object.

Till you have heard me in my true complaint  
 And given me justice, justice, justice, justice!

*Duke.* Relate your wrongs; in what? by whom? be brief.

Here is Lord Angelo shall give you justice:  
 Reveal yourself to him.

*Isab.* O worthy duke,  
 You bid me seek redemption of the devil:  
 Hear me yourself: for that which I must speak  
 Must either punish me, not being believed, 30  
 Or wring redress from you. Hear me, O hear me, here!

*Ang.* My lord, her wits, I fear me, are not firm:

She hath been a suitor to me for her brother  
 Cut off by course of justice.—

*Isab.* By course of justice!

*Ang.* And she will speak most bitterly and strange.

*Isab.* Most strange, but yet most truly, will I speak:

That Angelo's forsworn; is it not strange?

That Angelo's a murderer; is it not strange? 40

That Angelo is an adulterous thief,

An hypocrite, a virgin-violator;

Is it not strange and strange?

*Duke.* Nay, it is ten times strange.

*Isab.* It is not truer he is Angelo  
Than this is all as true as it is strange :  
Nay, it is ten times true ; for truth is truth  
To the end of reckoning.

*Duke.* Away with her ! Poor soul,  
she speaks this in the infirmity of sense.

*Isab.* O prince, I conjure thee, as thou believest

There is another comfort than this world,  
That thou neglect me not, with that opinion  
That I am touch'd with madness ! Make not impossible

That which but seems unlike : 'tis not impossible  
But one, the wicked'st caltiff on the ground,  
May seem as shy, as grave, as just, as absolute  
As Angelo ; even so may Angelo,  
In all his dressings, characters, titles, forms.  
Be an arch-villain ; believe it, royal prince :  
If he be less, he's nothing ; but he's more,  
Had I more name for badness.

*Duke.* By mine honesty,  
If she be mad,—as I believe no other,—  
Her madness hath the oddest frame of sense,  
Such a dependency of thing on thing,  
As e'er I heard in madness.

*Isab.* O gracious duke,  
Harp not on that, nor do not banish reason  
For inequality ; but let your reason serve  
To make the truth appear where it seems hid,  
And hide the false seems true.

*Duke.* Many that are not mad  
Have, sure, more lack of reason. What would you say ?

*Isab.* I am the sister of one Claudio,  
Condemn'd upon the act of fornication  
To lose his head ; condemn'd by Angelo :  
I, in probation of a sisterhood,  
Was sent to by my brother ; one Lucio  
As then the messenger,—

*Lucio.* That's I, an't like your grace :  
I came to her from Claudio, and desired her  
To try her gracious fortune with Lord Angelo  
For her poor brother's pardon.

*Isab.* That's he indeed.

*Duke.* You were not bid to speak.

*Lucio.* No, my good lord ;  
Nor wish'd to hold my peace.

*Duke.* I wish you now, then ;  
Pray you, take note of it : and when you have so  
A business for yourself, pray heaven you then  
Be perfect.

*Lucio.* I warrant your honour.

*Duke.* The warrant's for yourself ; take heed  
to't.

*Isab.* This gentleman told somewhat of my tale,—

*Lucio.* Right.

*Duke.* It may be right ; but you are i' the wrong

To speak before your time. Proceed.

*Isab.* I went

To this pernicious caltiff deputy,—

*Duke.* That's somewhat madly spoken.

*Isab.* Pardon it ;  
The phrase is to the matter.

*Duke.* Mended again. The matter ; proceed.

*Isab.* In brief, to set the needless process by,  
How I persuaded, how I pray'd, and kneel'd,

How he refell'd me, and how I replied,—  
For this was of much length,—the vile conclusion

I now begin with grief and shame to utter ;  
He would not, but by gift of my chaste body  
To his concupiscible intemperate lust,  
Release my brother ; and, after much debate-  
ment,

My sisterly remorse confutes mine honour,  
And I did yield to him : but the next morn be-  
times,

His purpose surfeiting, he sends a warrant  
For my poor brother's head.

*Duke.* This is most likely !

*Isab.* O, that it were as like as it is true !

*Duke.* By heaven, fond wretch, thou know'st  
not what thou speak'st,  
Or else thou art suborn'd against his honour  
In hateful practice. First, his integrity  
Stands without blemish. Next, it imports no  
reason

That with such vehemency he should pursue  
Faults proper to himself : if he had so offended,  
He would have weigh'd thy brother by himself  
And not have cut him off. Some one hath set  
you on :

Confess the truth, and say by whose advice  
Thou camest here to complain.

*Isab.* And is this all !  
Then, O you blessed ministers above,  
Keep me in patience, and with ripen'd time  
Unfold the evil which is here wrapt up  
In countenance ! Heaven shield your grace  
from woe,

As I, thus wrong'd, hence unbelieved go !

*Duke.* I know you'd fain be gone. An  
officer !

To prison with her ! Shall we thus permit  
A blasting and a scandalous breath to fall  
On him so near us ? This needs must be a  
practice.

Who knew of your intent and coming hither ?

*Isab.* (One that I would were here, Friar  
Lodowick.

*Duke.* A ghostly father, belike. Who knows  
that Lodowick ?

*Lucio.* My lord, I know him ; 'tis a meddling  
friar ;

I do not like the man : had he been lay, my lord,  
For certain words he spake against your grace  
In your retirement, I had swing'd him soundly.

*Duke.* Words against me ! this is a good  
friar, belike !

And to set on this wretched woman here  
Against our substitute ! Let this friar be found.

*Lucio.* But yesternight, my lord, she and  
that friar,

I saw them at the prison : a saucy friar,  
A very scurvy fellow.

*Fri. P.* Blessed be your royal grace !  
I have stood by, my lord, and I have heard  
Your royal ear abused. First, hath this woman  
Most wrongfully accused your substitute,  
Who is as free from touch or soil with her  
As she from one ungot.

*Duke.* We did believe no less.  
Know you that Friar Lodowick that she speaks  
of ?

*Fri. P.* I know him for a man divine and holy;

Not scurvy, nor a temporary meddler,  
As he's reported by this gentleman;  
And, on my trust, a man that never yet  
Did, as he vouches, misreport your grace.

*Lucio.* My lord, most villainously; believe it.

*Fri. P.* Well, he in time may come to clear himself; 150

But at this instant he is sick, my lord,  
Of a strange fever. Upon his mere request,  
Being come to knowledge that there was complaint

Intended 'gainst Lord Angelo, came I hither,  
To speak, as from his mouth, what he doth know  
Is true and false; and what he with his oath  
And all probation will make up full clear,  
Whosoever he's convented. First, for this woman,

To justify this worthy nobleman,  
So vulgarly and personally accused, 160  
Her shall you hear disproved to her eyes,  
Till she herself confess it.

*Duke.* Good friar, let's hear it.

*[Isabella is carried off guarded; and Mariana comes forward.]*

Do you not smile at this, Lord Angelo?  
O heaven, the vanity of wretched fools!  
Give us some seats. Come, cousin Angelo;  
In this I'll be impartial; be you judge  
Of your own cause. Is this the witness, friar?  
First, let her show her face, and after speak.

*Mari.* Pardon, my lord; I will not show my face  
Until my husband bid me. 170

*Duke.* What, are you married?

*Mari.* No, my lord.

*Duke.* Are you a maid?

*Mari.* No, my lord.

*Duke.* A widow, then?

*Mari.* Neither, my lord.

*Duke.* Why, you are nothing then: neither  
maid, widow, nor wife?

*Lucio.* My lord, she may be a punk; for  
many of them are neither maid, widow, nor  
wife. 180

*Duke.* Silence that fellow: I would he had  
some cause

To prattle for himself.

*Lucio.* Well, my lord.

*Mari.* My lord, I do confess I ne'er was  
married;

And I confess besides I am no maid;  
I have known my husband; yet my husband  
Knew not that ever he knew me.

*Lucio.* He was drunk then, my lord: it can  
be no better.

*Duke.* For the benefit of silence, would thou  
wert so too! 191

*Lucio.* Well, my lord.

*Duke.* This is no witness for Lord Angelo.

*Mari.* Now I come to't, my lord:

She that accuses him of fornication,  
In self-same manner doth accuse my husband,  
And charges him, my lord, with such a time  
When I'll depose I had him in mine arms  
With all the effect of love.

*Ang.* Charges she more than me?

*Mari.* Not that I know

*Duke.* No! you say your husband. 201

*Mari.* Why, just, my lord, and that is  
Angelo,

Who thinks he knows that he ne'er knew my  
body,

But knows he thinks that he knows Isabel's.

*Ang.* This is a strange abuse. Let's see thy  
face.

*Mari.* My husband bids me; now I will  
unmask.

This is that face, thou cruel Angelo,  
Which once thou sworest was worth the look-  
ing on;

This is the hand which, with a vow'd contract,  
Was fast belock'd in thine; this is the body 210  
That took away the match from Isabel,  
And did supply thee at thy garden-house  
In her imagined person.

*Duke.* Know you this woman?

*Lucio.* Carnally, she says.

*Duke.* Sirrah, no more!

*Lucio.* Enough, my lord.

*Ang.* My lord, I must confess I know this  
woman:

And five years since there was some speech of  
marriage

Betwixt myself and her; which was broke off,  
Partly for that her promised proportions

Came short of composition, but in chief 220  
For that her reputation was disvalued  
In levity: since which time of five years

I never spake with her, saw her, nor heard from  
her,

Upon my faith and honour.

*Mari.* Noble prince,

As there comes light from heaven and words  
from breath,

As there is sense in truth and truth in virtue,  
I am affianced this man's wife as strongly

As words could make up vows: and, my good  
lord,

But Tuesday night last gone in's garden-house  
He knew me as a wife. As this is true, 230

Let me in safety raise me from my knees;  
Or else for ever be confined here,  
A marble monument!

*Ang.* I did but smile till now:

Now, good my lord, give me the scope of justice;  
My patience here is touch'd. I do perceive

These poor informal women are no more  
But instruments of some more mightier member

That sets them on: let me have way, my lord,  
To find this practice out.

*Duke.* Ay, with my heart.

And punish them to your height of pleasure. 24  
Thou foolish friar, and thou pernicious woman,  
Compact with her that's gone, think'st thou thy

oaths,

Though they would swear down each particular  
saint,

Were testimonies against his worth and credit  
That's seal'd in approbation! You, Lord

Escalus,

Sit with my cousin; lend him your kind pains  
To find out this abuse, whence 'tis derived.

There is another friar that set them on;  
Let him be sent for.

*Fri. P.* Would he were here, my lord! for he indeed  
Hath set the women on to this complaint:  
Your provost knows the place where he abides  
And he may fetch him.

*Duke.* Go do it instantly. [*Exit Provost.*  
And you, my noble and well-warranted cousin,  
Whom it concerns to hear this matter forth,  
Do with your injuries as seems you best,  
In any chastisement: I for a while will leave  
you;  
But stir not you till you have well determined  
Upon these slanders.

*Escal.* My lord, we'll do it thoroughly. 260  
[*Exit Duke.*  
Signior Lucio, did not you say you knew that  
Friar Lodowick to be a dishonest person?

*Lucio.* 'Circulus non facit monachum:'  
honest in nothing but in his clothes; and one  
that hath spoke most villanous speeches of the  
duke.

*Escal.* We shall entreat you to abide here  
till he come and enforce them against him: we  
shall find this friar a notable fellow.

*Lucio.* As any in Vienna, on my word. 269

*Escal.* Call that same Isabel here once again:  
I would speak with her. [*Exit an Attendant.*  
Pray you, my lord, give me leave to question;  
you shall see how I'll handle her.

*Lucio.* Not better than he, by her own  
report.

*Escal.* Say you?

*Lucio.* Marry, sir, I think, if you handled  
her privately, she would sooner confess: per-  
chance, publicly, she'll be ashamed.

*Escal.* I will go darkly to work with her.

*Lucio.* That's the way; for women are light  
at midnight. 281

*Re-ent' OFFICERS with ISABELLA; and PRO-  
VOST with the DUKE in his friar's habit.*

*Escal.* Come on, mistress: here's a gentle-  
woman denies all that you have said.

*Lucio.* My lord, here comes the rascal I  
spoke of; here with the provost.

*Escal.* In very good time: speak not you to  
him till we call upon you.

*Lucio.* Mum.

*Escal.* Come, sir: did you set these women  
on to slander Lord Angelo? they have confessed  
you did. 291

*Duke.* 'Tis false.

*Escal.* How! know you where you are?

*Duke.* Respect to your great place! and let  
the devil

be sometime honour'd for his burning throne!  
Where is the duke? 'tis he should hear me  
speak.

*Escal.* The duke's in us; and we will hear  
you speak:

Look you speak justly.

*Duke.* Boldly, at least. But, O, poor souls,  
Come you to seek the lamb here of the fox?  
Good night to your redress! Is the duke gone?  
Then is your cause gone too. The duke's un-  
just,

Thus to retort your manifest appeal,

And put your trial in the villain's mouth  
Which here you come to accuse.

*Lucio.* This is the rascal; this is he I spoke of.  
*Escal.* Why, thou unreverend and unhallow'd  
friar,

Is't not enough thou hast suborn'd these wo-  
men

To accuse this worthy man, but, in foul mouth  
And in the witness of his proper car,

To call him villain! and then to glance from  
him

To the duke himself, to tax him with injustice?  
Take him hence; to the rack with him! We'll  
touse you

Joint by joint, but we will know his purpose.  
What's unjust!

*Duke.* Be not so hot; the duke  
Dare no more stretch this finger of mine than he  
Dare rack his own: his subject am I not,  
Nor here provincial. My business in this state  
Made me a looker on here in Vienna,  
Where I have seen corruption boil and bubble  
Till it o'er-run the stew; laws for all faults,  
But faults so countenanced, that the strong  
statutes

Stand like the forfeits in a barber's shop,  
As much in mock as mark.

*Escal.* Slander to the state! Away with  
him to prison!

*Ang.* What can you vouch against him,  
Signior Lucio?

Is this the man that you did tell us of?

*Lucio.* 'Tis he, my lord. Come hither, good-  
man baldpate: do you know me? 329

*Duke.* I remember you, sir, by the sound of  
your voice: I met you at the prison, in the  
absence of the duke.

*Lucio.* O, did you so? And do you remem-  
ber what you said of the duke?

*Duke.* Most notably, sir.

*Lucio.* Do you so, sir? And was the duke  
a fleshmonger, a fool, and a coward, as you  
then reported him to be?

*Duke.* You must, sir, change persons with  
me, ere you make that my report: you, indeed,  
spoke so of him; and much more, much worse.

*Lucio.* O thou damnable fellow! Did not I  
pluck thee by the nose for thy speeches?

*Duke.* I protest I love the duke as I love  
myself.

*Ang.* Hark, how the villain would close  
now, after his treasonable abuses!

*Escal.* Such a fellow is not to be talked  
withal. Away with him to prison! Where is  
the provost? Away with him to prison! lay  
bolts enough upon him: let him speak no more.  
Away with those giglots too, and with the other  
confederate companion!

*Duke.* [*To Provost.*] Stay, sir; stay awhile.  
*Ang.* What, resists he? Help him, Lucio.

*Lucio.* Come, sir; come, sir; come, sir;  
foh, sir! Why, you bald-pated, lying rascal,  
you must be hooded, must you? Show your  
knave's visage, with a pox to you! show your  
sheep-biting face, and be hanged an hour!  
Will't not off? 350

[*Pulls off the friar's hood, and discovers  
the Duke.*

*Duke.* Thou art the first knave that e'er  
maiest a duke.

*First provost,* let me bail these gentle three.  
[*To Lucio*] Sneak not away, sir; for the friar  
and you

Must have a word anon. Lay hold on him.

*Lucio.* This may prove worse than hanging.

*Duke.* [*To Escalus*] What you have spoke  
I pardon: sit you down.

We'll borrow place of him. [*To Angelo*] Sir,  
by your leave.

*Hast* thou or word, or wit, or impudence,

That yet can do thee office? If thou hast,

Rely upon it till my tale be heard,

And hold no longer out.

*Ang.* O my dread lord,

I should be guiltier than my guiltiness,

To think I can be undiscernible,

When I perceive your grace, like power divine,

Hath look'd upon my passes. Then, good prince,

No longer session hold upon my shame,

But let my trial be mine own confession:

Immediate sentence then and sequent death

Is all the grace I beg.

*Duke.* Come hither, Mariana.

Say, wast thou e'er contracted to this woman?

*Ang.* I was, my lord.

*Duke.* Go take her hence, and marry her

instantly.

Do you the office, friar; which consummate,

Return him here again. Go with him, provost.

[*Exeunt Angelo, Mariana, Friar Peter*

*and Provost.*

*Escal.* My lord, I am more amazed at his

dishonour

Than at the strangeness of it.

*Duke.* Come hither, Isabel.

Your friar is now your prince: as I was then

Advertising and holy to your business,

Not changing heart with habit, I am still

Attorney'd at your service.

*Isab.* O, give me pardon,

That I, your vassal, have employ'd and pain'd

Your unknown sovereignty!

*Duke.* You are pardon'd, Isabel:

And now, dear maid, be you as free to us.

Your brother's death, I know, sits at your heart;

And you may marvel why I obscured myself,

Labouring to save his life, and would not rather

Make rash remonstrance of my hidden power

Than let him go be lost. O most kind maid,

It was the swift celerity of his death,

Which I did think with slower foot came on,

That brain'd my purpose. But, peace be with

him!

That life is better life, past fearing death,

Than that which lives to fear: make it your

comfort,

So happy is your brother.

*Isab.* I do, my lord.

*Re-enter ANGELO, MARIANA, FRIAR PETER,*

*and PROVOST.*

*Duke.* For this new-married man approach-

ing here,

Ang. Charges his imagination yet hath wrong'd

honour, you must pardon

For Mariana's sake: but as he adjudged:  
brother,—

Being criminal, in double violation

Of sacred chastity and of promise-breach

Thereon dependent, for your brother's life,—

The very mercy of the law cries out

Most audible, even from his proper tongue,

'An Angelo for Claudio, death for death!'

Haste still pays haste, and leisure answer

leisure;

Like doth quit like, and MEASURE still to

MEASURE.

Then, Angelo, thy fault's thus manifested;

Which, though thou wouldst deny, denies thy

vantage.

We do condemn thee to the very block

Where Claudio stoop'd to death, and with like

haste.

Away with him!

*Mari.* O my most gracious lord,

I hope you will not mock me with a husband.

*Duke.* It is your husband mock'd you with

a husband.

Consenting to the safeguard of your honour,

I thought your marriage fit; else imputation,

For that he knew you, might reproach your life

And choke your good to come: for his pos

sessions,

Although by confiscation they are ours,

We do instate and widow you withal,

To buy you a better husband.

*Mari.* O my dear lord,

I crave no other, nor no better man.

*Duke.* Never crave him; we are definitive.

*Mari.* Gentle my liege,— [*Kneeling*]

*Duke.* You do but lose your labour

Away with him to death! [*To Lucio*] Now

sir, to you.

*Mari.* O my good lord! Sweet Isabel, tak-

my part:

Lend me your knees, and all my life to com-

plend you all my life to do your service.

*Duke.* Against all sense you do importun-

her:

Should she kneel down in mercy of this fact,

Her brother's ghost his pained bed would brea-

And take her hence in horror.

*Mari.* Isabel,

Sweet Isabel, do yet but kneel by me:

I hold up your hands, say nothing; I'll speak:

They say, best men are moulded out of faults;

And, for the most, become much more than

better

For being a little bad: so may my husband.

O Isabel, will you not lend a knee?

*Duke.* He dies for Claudio's death.

*Isab.* Most bounteous sir, [*Kneeling*]

Look, if it please you, on this man condemn'd:

As if my brother lived; I partly think

A due sincerity govern'd his deeds,

Till he did look on me: since it is so,

Let him not die. My brother had but justice

In that he did the thing for which he died:

For Angelo,

His act did not o'ertake his bad intent,

And must be buried but as an intent

That perish'd by the way: thoughts are no

subjects;

Intents but merely thoughts.

*Mar.*

Merely, my lord.

*Duke.* Your suit's unprofitable; stand up,  
I say. 460

I have belought me of another fault.

*Provost,* how came it Claudio was belcaded  
At an unusual hour?

*Prov.*

It was commanded so.

*Duke.* Had you a special warrant for the  
deed?

*Prov.*

No, my good lord; it was by private  
message.

*Duke.* For which I do discharge you of your  
office:

Give up your keys.

*Prov.*

Parlon me, noble lord:

I thought it was a fault, but knew it not;

Yet did repent me, after more advice:

For testimony whereof, one in the prison, 470

That should by private order else have died,

I have reserved alive.

*Duke.*

What's he?

*Prov.*

His name is Barnardine.

*Duke.* I would thou hadst done so by Claudio.  
(To fetch him hither; let me look upon him.

[*Exit Provost.*]

*Escal.*

I am sorry, one so learned and so  
wise

As you, Lord Angelo, have still appear'd,

Should slip so grossly, both in the heat of  
blood,

And lack of temper'd judgement afterward.

*Ang.* I am sorry that such sorrow I pro-  
cure:

And so deep sticks it in my penitent heart 480

That I crave death more willingly than mercy;

'Tis my deserving, and I do entreat it.

*Re-enter PROVOST, with BARNARDINE,  
CLAUDIO muffled, and JULIET.*

*Duke.*

Which is that Barnardine?

*Prov.*

This, my lord.

*Duke.* There was a friar told me of this  
man.

Sirrah, thou art said to have a stubborn soul,

That apprehends no further than this world,

And squarst thy life according. Thou'rt con-  
demn'd:

But, for those earthly faults, I quit them all;

And pray thee take this mercy to provide

For better times to come. Friar, advise him;

I leave him to your hand. What muffled fellow's  
that? 491

*Prov.*

This is another prisoner that I saved,

Who should have died when Claudio lost his  
head;

As like almost to Claudio as himself.

[*Unmuffles Claudio.*]

*Duke.* [To *Isabella*] If he be like your  
brother, for his sake

Is he pardon'd; and, for your lovely sake,  
Give me your hand and say you will be mine,  
He is my brother too; but fitter time for  
that.

By this Lord Angelo perceives he's safe;

Methinks I see a quickening in his eye. 500

Well, Angelo, your evil quits you well:

Look that you love your wife; her worth worth  
yours.

I find an apt remission in myself;

And yet here's one in place I cannot pardon.

[To *Lucio*] You, sirrah, that knew me for a

fool, a coward,

One all of luxury, an ass, a madman;

Wherein have I so deserved of you,

That you extol me thus?

*Lucio.* Faith, my lord, I spoke it but ac-  
cording to the trick. If you will hang me for it,

you may; but I had rather it would please you  
I might be whipt.

*Duke.* Whipt first, sir, and hanged after.

Proclaim it, provost, round about the city,

Is any woman wrong'd by this lewd fellow,

As I have heard him swear himself there's  
one

Whom he begot with child, let her appear,

And he shall marry her: the nuptial finish'd,

Let him be whipt and hang'd.

*Lucio.* I beseech your highness, do not marry

me to a whore. Your highness said even now,

I made you a duke; good my lord, do not

recompense me in making me a cuckold.

*Duke.* Upon mine honour, thou shalt marry  
her.

Thy slanders I forgive; and therewithal

Remit thy other forfeits. Take him to prison;

And see our pleasure herein executed.

*Lucio.* Marrying a punk, my lord, is pressing

to death, whipping, and hanging.

*Duke.* Slandering a prince deserves it. 530

[*Exeunt Officers with Lucio.*]

She, Claudio, that you wrong'd, look you  
restore.

Joy to you, Mariana! Love her, Angelo:

I have confess'd her and I know her virtue.

Thanks, good friend Escalus, for thy much  
goodness:

There's more behind that is more grateful.

Thanks, provost, for thy care and secrecy:

We shall employ thee in a worthier place.

Forgive him, Angelo, that brought you home

The head of Ragozine for Claudio's:

The offence pardons itself. Dear Isabel, 540

I have a motion much imports your good;

Whereto if you'll a willing ear incline,

What's mine is yours and what is yours is  
mine.

So, bring us to our palace; where we'll show

What's yet behind, that's meet you all should  
know. [*Exeunt.*]

# THE COMEDY OF ERRORS

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

**SOLINUS**, duke of Ephesus.

**ÆGEON**, a merchant of Syracuse.

**ANTIPHOLUS** of Ephesus,  
**ANTIPHOLUS** of Syracuse,

{ twin brothers, and  
sons to Aegeon and  
Emilia.

**DROMIO of Ephesus,** {twin brothers, and at-  
**DROMIO of Syracuse,** {tendants on the two  
Antipholuses.

**BALTHAZAR, a merchant.**

**ANGELO**, a goldsmith.

**First Merchant**, friend to Antipholus of Syracuse.

Second Merchant, to whom Angelo is a debtor.  
PINCH, a schoolmaster.

ÆMILIA, wife to Ægeon, an abbess at Ephesus.  
ADRIANA, wife to Antipholus of Ephesus.  
LUCIANA, her sister.

LUCE, servant to Adriana.

A Courtezan.

**Gaoler, Officers, and other Attendants.**

SCENE: *Ephesus.*

## ACT I.

SCENE I. *A hall in the Duke's palace.*

*Enter DUKE, ÆGEON, Gaoler, Officers, and  
other Attendants.*

*Æge.* Proceed, Solinus, to procure my fall  
And by the doom of death end woes and all.

**Duke.** Merchant of Syracuse, plead no more;  
I am not partial to infringe our laws:  
The enmity and discord which of late  
Sprung from the rancorous outrage of your  
duke

To merchants, our well-dealing countrymen,  
Who wanting guilders to redeem their lives  
Have seal'd his rigorous statutes with their  
bloods.

Excludes all pity from our threatening looks. 10  
For, since the mortal and intestine jars  
Twixt thy seditious countrymen and us,  
It hath in solemn synods been decreed,  
Both by the Syracusians and ourselves,  
To admit no traffic to our adverse towns:  
Nav. more.

If any born at Ephesus he seen  
At any Syracusan marts and fairs;  
Again : if any Syracusan born  
Come to the bay of Ephesus, he dies,  
His goods confisicate to the duke's dispose,  
Unless a thousand marks be levied,  
To quit the penalty and to ransom him.  
Thy substance, valued at the highest rate,  
' Cannot amount unto a hundred marks ;  
Therefore by law thou art condemn'd to die.

Yet this my comfort: when your  
done,

**Duke.** For likewise with the evening sun.  
ing here, Syracusan, say in brief the

Ang. Charged'st from thy native home 30

**And for what cause thou camest to Ephesus.**

*Age.* A heavier task could not have been imposed.

Than I to speak my griefs unspeakable :  
Yet, that the world may witness that my end  
Was wrought by nature, not by vile offence,  
I'll utter what my sorrow gives me leave.

I Syracuse was I born, and wed  
Unto a woman, happy but for me,  
And by me, had not our hap been bad.  
With her I lived in joy; our wealth increased  
By prosperous voyages I often made  
To Epidamnnum; till my factor's death  
And the great care of goods at random left  
Drew me from kind embracements of my  
    spouse:

From whom my absence was not six months old  
Before herself, almost at fainting under  
The pleasing punishment that women bear,  
Had made provision for her following me  
And soon and safe arrived where I was.  
There had she not been long but she became so  
A joyful mother of two goodly sons ;  
And, which was strange, the one so like the  
other.

As could not be distinguish'd but by names.  
That very hour and in the self-same inn  
A meaner woman was delivered  
Of such a burden, male twins, both alike :  
Those, for their parents were exceeding poor,  
I bought and brought up to attend my sons.  
My wife, not meanly proud of two such boys,  
Made daily motions for our home return : 60  
Unwilling I agreed ; alas ! too soon  
We came aboard.

A league from Epidaurum had we sail'd,  
Before the always wind-obeying deep  
Gave any tragic instance of our harm :  
But longer did we not retain much hope ;  
For what obscured light the heavens did grant



Did but convey unto our fearful minds  
A doubtful warrant of immediate death;  
Which though myself would gladly have embraced,  
Yet the incessant weepings of my wife,  
Weeping before for what she saw must come,  
And piteous plainings of the pretty babes,  
That mourn'd for fashion, ignorant what to fear,  
Forced me to seek delays for them and me.  
And this it was, for other means was none:  
The sailors sought for safety by our boat,  
And left the ship, then sinking-ripe, to us:  
My wife, more careful for the latter-born,  
Had fasten'd him unto a small spare mast;  
Such as seafaring men provide for storms;  
To him one of the other twins was bound,  
Whilst I had been like heedful of the other:  
The children thus disposed, my wife and I,  
Fixing our eyes on whom our care was fix'd,  
Fasten'd ourselves at either end the mast;  
And floating straight, obedient to the stream,  
Was carried towards Corinth, as we thought.  
At length the sun, gazing upon the earth,  
Dispersed those vapours that offended us;  
And, by the benefit of his wished light,  
The seas wax'd calm, and we discovered  
Two ships from far making amain to us,  
Of Corinth that, of Epidaureus this:  
But ere they came,—O, let me say no more!  
Gather the sequel by that went before.

*Duke.* Nay, forward, old man; do not break off so;

For we may pity, though not pardon thee.

*Ege.* O, had the gods done so, I had not now

Worthily term'd them merciless to us!  
For, ere the ships could meet by twice five leagues,

We were encounter'd by a mighty rock;  
Which being violently borne upon,  
Our helpful ship was splitted in the midst;  
So that, in this unjust divorce of us,  
Fortune had left to both of us alike  
What to delight in, what to sorrow for.  
Her part, poor soul! seeming as burdened  
With lesser weight but not with lesser woe,  
Was carried with more speed before the wind;  
And in our sight they three were taken up  
By fishermen of Corinth, as we thought.  
At length, another ship had seized on us;  
And, knowing whom it was their hap to save,  
Gave heedful welcome to their shipwreck'd  
guests:

And would have reft the fishers of their prey,  
Had not their bark been very slow of sail;  
And therefore homeward did they bend their course.

Thus have you heard me sever'd from my bliss,  
That by misfortunes was my life prolong'd,  
To tell sad stories of my own mishaps.

*Duke.* And, for the sake of them thou sorrowest for,

Do me the favour to dilate at full  
What hath befall'n of them and thee till now.

*Ege.* My youngest boy, and yet my eldest care,

At eighteen years became inquisitive

After his brother: and importuned me  
That his attendant—so his case was like,  
Reft of his brother, but retain'd his name—  
Might bear him company in the quest of him:  
Whom whilst I labour'd of a love to see,  
I hazarded the loss of whom I loved.  
Five summers have I spent in furthest Greece,  
Roaming clean through the bounds of Asia,  
And, coasting homeward, came to Ephesus;  
Hopeless to find, yet loath to leave unsought  
Or that or any place that harbours men.  
But here must end the story of my life;  
And happy were I in my timely death.

'ould all my travels warrant me they live.  
*Duke.* Hapless Ægeon, whom the fates have mark'd

To bear the extremity of dire mishap!  
Now, trust me, were it not against our laws,  
Against my crown, my oath, my dignity,  
Which princes, would they, may not disannul,  
My soul should sue as advocate for thee.  
But, though thou art adjudged to the death  
And passed sentence may not be recall'd  
But to our honour's great disparagement,  
Yet I will favour thee in what I can.  
Therefore, merchant, I'll limit thee this day  
To seek thy life by beneficial help;  
Try all the friends thou hast in Ephesus;  
Beg thou, or borrow, to make up the sum,  
And live: if no, then thou art doom'd to die  
Gaoler, take him to thy custody.

*Gaol.* I will, my lord.

*Ege.* Hopeless and helpless doth Ægeon wend,

But to procrastinate his lifeless end. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. *The Mart.*

*Enter* ANTIPHOLUS of Syracuse, DROMIO of Syracuse, and First Merchant.

*First Mer.* Therefore give out you are of Epidamnium,

Lest that your goods too soon be confiscate.  
This very day a Syracusan merchant  
Is apprehended for arrival here;  
And not being able to buy out his life  
According to the statute of the town  
Dies ere the weary sun set in the west.  
There is your money that I had to keep.

*Ant. S.* Go bear it to the Centaur, where we host,  
And stay there, Dromio, till I come to thee. 10  
Within this hour it will be dinner-time:  
Till that, I'll view the manners of the town,  
Peruse the traders, gaze upon the buildings,  
And then return and sleep within mine inn,  
For with long travel I am stiff and weary.  
Get thee away.

*Dro. S.* Many a man would take you at your word,

And go indeed, having so good a mean. [*Exit.*]

*Ant. S.* A trusty villain, sir, that very oft,  
When I am dull with care and melancholy, 20  
Lightens my humour with his merry jests.  
What, will you walk with me about the town,  
And then go to my inn and dine with me?

*First Mer.* I am invited, sir, to certain merchants,

Of whom I hope to make much benefit ;  
I crave your pardon. Soon at five o'clock,  
Please you, I'll meet with you upon the mart  
And afterward consort you till bed-time :  
My present business calls me from you now.

*Ant. S.* Farewell till then : I will go lose  
myself 30

And wander up and down to view the city.

*First Mer.* Sir, I commend you to your own  
content. [Exit.]

*Ant. S.* He that commends me to mine own  
content

Commends me to the thing I cannot get.  
I to the world am like a drop of water  
That in the ocean seeks another drop,  
Who, falling there to find his fellow forth,  
Unseen, inquisitive, confounds himself :  
So I, to find a mother and a brother,  
In quest of them, unhappy, lose myself. 40

*Enter DROMIO of Ephesus.*

Here comes the almanac of my true date.  
What now ! how chance thou art return'd so  
soon ?

*Dro. E.* Return'd so soon ! rather approach'd  
too late :

The capon burns, the pig falls from the spit,  
The clock hath stricken twelve upon the bell ;  
My mistress made it one upon my cheek :  
She is so hot because the meat is cold ;  
The meat is cold because you come not home ;  
You come not home because you have no  
stomach ;

You have no stomach having broke your fast ;  
But we that know what 'tis to fast and pray 51  
Are penitent for your default to-day.

*Ant. S.* Stop in your wind, sir : tell me this,  
I pray :

Where have you left the money that I gave you ?

*Dro. E.* O,—sixpence, that I had o' Wednes-  
day last

To pay the saddler for my mistress' crupper ?  
The saddler had it, sir ; I kept it not.

*Ant. S.* I am not in a sportive humour now :  
Tell me, and dally not, where is the money ?  
We being strangers here, how darest thou trust  
So great a charge from thine own custody ? 61

*Dro. E.* I pray you, jest, sir, as you sit at  
dinner :

I from my mistress come to you in post ;  
If I return, I shall be post indeed,  
For she will score your fault upon my pate.  
Methinks your maw, like mine, should be your  
clock

And strike you home without a messenger.

*Ant. S.* Come, Dromio, come, these jests  
are out of season ;

Reserve them till a merrier hour than this,  
Where the gold I gave in charge to thee ? 70

*Dro. E.* To me, sir ? why, you gave no gold  
to me.

*Ant. S.* Come on, sir knave, have done your  
foolishness

And tell me how thou hast disposed thy charge.

*Dro. E.* My charge was but to fetch you  
from the mart

Home to your house, the Phoenix, sir, to dinner :  
My mistress and her sister stays for you.

*Ant. S.* Now, as I am a Christian, answer me  
In what safe place you have bestow'd my  
money,

Or I shall break that merry scone of yours  
That stands on tricks when I am undisposed : so  
Where is the thousand marks thou hadst of me ?

*Dro. E.* I have some marks of yours upon  
my pate,

Some of my mistress' marks upon my shoulders,  
But not a thousand marks between you both.

If I should pay your worship those again,  
Perchance you will not bear them patiently.

*Ant. S.* Thy mistress' marks ? what mistress,  
slave, hast thou ?

*Dro. E.* Your worship's wife, my mistress  
at the Phoenix ;

She that doth fast till you come home to dinner  
And prays that you will hie you home to dinner.

*Ant. S.* What, wilt thou flout me thus unto  
my face, 91

Being forbid ? There, take you that, sir knave.

*Dro. E.* What mean you, sir ! for God's  
sake, hold your hands !

Nay, an you will not, sir, I'll take my heels. [Exit.]

*Ant. S.* Upon my life, by some device or  
other

The villain is o'er-raught of all my money.  
They say this town is full of cozenage,

As, nimble jugglers that deceive the eye,  
Dark-working sorcerers that change the mind,

Soul-killing witches that deform the body, 100  
Disguised cheaters, prating mountebanks,

And many such-like liberties of sin :  
If it prove so, I will be gone the sooner.

I'll to the Centaur, to seek this slave :  
I greatly fear my money is not safe. [Exit.]

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *The house of ANTIPHOLUS of Ephesus.*

*Enter ADRIANA and LUCIANA.*

*Adri.* Neither my husband nor the slave re-  
turn'd,

That in such haste I sent to seek his master !  
Sure, Luciana, it is two o'clock.

*Luc.* Perhaps some merchant hath invited  
him

And from the mart he's somewhere gone to  
dinner.

Good sister, let us dine and never fret :

A man is master of his liberty :  
Time is their master, and when they see time

They'll go or come : if so, be patient, sister.

*Adri.* Why should their liberty than ours be  
more ? 110

*Luc.* Because their business still lies out o'  
door.

*Adri.* Look, when I serve him so, he takes it  
ill.

*Luc.* O, know he is the bride of your will.

*Adri.* There's none but asses will be bridled  
so.

*Luc.* Why, headstrong liberty is lash'd with  
woe.

There's nothing situate under heaven's eye  
But hath his bound, in earth, in sea, in sky :

The beasts, the fishes and the winged fowls  
Are their males' subjects and at their controls:  
Men, more divine, the masters of all these, 20  
Lords of the wide world and wild watery seas,  
Indued with intellectual sense and souls,  
Of more pre-eminence than fish and fowls,  
Are masters to their females, and their lords:  
Then let your will attend on their accords.

*Adr.* This servitude makes you to keep unwed.

*Luc.* Not this, but troubles of the marriage-bed.

*Adr.* But, were you wedded, you would bear some sway.

*Luc.* Ere I learn love, I'll practise to obey.

*Adr.* How if your husband start some other where?

*Luc.* Till he come home again, I would forbear. 30

*Adr.* Patience unmoved! no marvel though she pause;

They can be meek that have no other cause.

A wretched soul, bruised with adversity,  
We bid be quiet when we hear it cry;  
But were we burden'd with like weight of pain,  
As much or more we should ourselves complain:  
So thou, that hast no unkind mate to grieve thee,

With urging helpless patience wouldst relieve me;

But, if thou live to see like right bereft, 40  
This fool-hagg'd patience in thee will be left.

*Luc.* Well, I will marry one day, but to try.  
Here comes your man; now is your husband nigh.

*Enter DROMIO of Ephesus.*

*Adr.* Say, is your tarry master now at hand?

*Dro. E.* Nay, he's at two hands with me, and that my two ears can witness.

*Adr.* Say, didst thou speak with him? know'st thou his mind?

*Dro. E.* Ay, ay, he told his mind upon mine ear:

Beshrew his hand, I scarce could understand it.  
*Luc.* Spake he so doubtfully, thou couldst not feel his meaning? 51

*Dro. E.* Nay, he struck so plainly, I could so well feel his blows; and withal so doubtfully that I could scarce understand them.

*Adr.* But say, I prithee, is he coming home?  
It seems he hath great care to please his wife.

*Dro. E.* Why, mistress, sure my master is horn-mad.

*Adr.* Horn-mad, thou villain!

*Dro. E.* I mean not cuckold-mad;  
But, sure, he is stark mad.

When I desired him to come home to dinner, 60  
He ask'd me for a thousand marks in gold:

'Tis dinner-time,' quoth I; 'My gold!' quoth he:

'Your meat doth burn,' quoth I; 'My gold!' quoth he:

'Will you come home?' quoth I; 'My gold!' quoth he,

'Where is the thousand marks I gave thee, villain?'

'The pig,' quoth I, 'is burn'd'; 'My gold!' quoth he:

'My mistress, sir,' quoth I; 'Hang up thy mistress!'

I know not thy mistress; out on thy mistress!'  
*Luc.* Quoth who?

*Dro. E.* Quoth my master:

'I know,' quoth he, 'no house, no wife, no mistress.' 70

So that my errand, due unto my tongue,  
I thank him, I bare home upon my shoulders;

For, in conclusion, he did beat me there.

*Adr.* Go back again, thou slave, and fetch him home.

*Dro. E.* Go back again, and be new beaten home!

For God's sake, send some other messenger.

*Adr.* Back, slave, or I will break thy pate across.

*Dro. E.* And he will bless that cross with other beating:

Between you I shall have a holy head. 80

*Adr.* Hence, prating peasant! fetch thy master home.

*Dro. E.* Am I so round with you as you with me,

That like a football you do spurn me thus?  
You spurn me hence, and he will spurn me hither:

If I last in this service, you must case me in leather. *[Exit.]*

*Luc.* Fie, how impatience loureth in your face!

*Adr.* His company must do his minions grace,

Whilst I at home starve for a merry look.  
Hath homely age the alluring beauty took

From my poor cheek? then he hath wasted it: 90

Are my discourses dull? barren my wit?  
If voluble and sharp discourse be marred,

Unkindness blunts it more than marble hard:  
Do their gay vestments his affections bait?

That's not my fault; he's master of my state.  
What ruins are in me that can be found,

By him not ruin'd? then is he the ground  
Of my defeatures. My decayed fair

A sunny look of his would soon repair:  
But, too unruly deer, he breaks the pale 100

And feeds from home; poor I am but his stale.

*Luc.* Self-harming jealousy! fie, beat it hence!

*Adr.* Unfeeling fools can with such wrongs dispense.

I know his eye doth homage elsewhere;  
Or else what lets it but he would be here?

Sister, you know he promised me a chain;  
Would that alone, alone he would detain!

So he would keep fair quarter with his bed!  
I see the jewel best enamell'd

Will lose his beauty; yet the gold bides still,  
That others touch, and often touching will 111

Wear gold; and no man that hath a name,  
By falsehood and corruption doth it shame.

Since that my beauty cannot please his eye,  
I'll weep what's left away, and weeping die.

*Luc.* How many foud fools serve mad jealousy! *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE II. *A public place.**Enter ANTIPHOLUS of Syracuse.*

*Ant. S.* The gold I gave to Dromio is laid up  
Safe at the Centaur; and the heedful slave  
Is wander'd forth, in care to seek me out  
By computation and mine host's report.  
I could not speak with Dromio since at first  
I sent him from the mart. See, here he comes.

*Enter DROMIO of Syracuse.*

How now, sir! is your merry humour alter'd?  
As you love strokes, so jest with me again.  
You know no Centaur? you received no gold?  
Your mistress sent to have me home to dinner?  
My house was at the Phoenix? Wast thou mad,  
That thus so madly thou didst answer me?

*Dro. S.* What answer, sir? when spake I  
such a word?

*Ant. S.* Even now, even here, not half an  
hour since.

*Dro. S.* I did not see you since you sent me  
hence,  
Home to the Centaur, with the gold you gave  
me.

*Ant. S.* Villain, thou didst deny the gold's  
receipt  
And told'st me of a mistress and a dinner;  
For which, I hope, thou felt'st I was displeas'd.

*Dro. S.* I am glad to see you in this merry  
vein:

What means this jest? I pray you, master, tell  
me.

*Ant. S.* Yea, dost thou jeer and flout me in  
the teeth?

Think'st thou I jest? Hold, take thou that,  
and that. *[Beating him.]*

*Dro. S.* Hold, sir, for God's sake! now your  
jest is earnest:

Upon what bargain do you give it me?

*Ant. S.* Because that I familiarly sometimes  
Do use you for my fool and chat with you,  
Your sauciness will jest upon my love  
And make a common of my serious hours.

When the sun shines let foolish gnats make  
sport,

But creep in crannies when he hides his beams.  
If you will jest with me, know my aspect

And fashion your demeanour to my looks,  
Or I will beat this method in your scone.

*Dro. S.* Sconce call you it? so you would  
leave battering, I had rather have it a head: an  
you use these blows long, I must get a sconce  
for my head and insconce it too; or else I shall  
seek my wit in my shoulders. But, I pray, sir,  
why am I beaten?

*Ant. S.* Dost thou not know?

*Dro. S.* Nothing, sir, but that I am beaten.

*Ant. S.* Shall I tell you why?

And tell me, Ay, sir, and wherefore; for they say  
*Dro. S.* With a wherefore.

from the man, first,—for flouting me; and  
Home to your house,—

My mistress and I second time to me.

*Dro. S.* Was there ever any man thus beaten  
out of season,  
When in the why and the wherefore is neither  
rhyme nor reason?

Well, sir, I thank you.

*Ant. S.* Thank me, sir! for what?

*Dro. S.* Marry, sir, for this something that  
you gave me for nothing.

*Ant. S.* I'll make you amends next, to give  
you nothing for something. But say, sir, is it  
dinner-time?

*Dro. S.* No, sir: I think the meat wants that  
I have.

*Ant. S.* In good time, sir; what's that?

*Dro. S.* Basting.

*Ant. S.* Well, sir, then 'twill be dry.

*Dro. S.* If it be, sir, I pray you, eat none of it.

*Ant. S.* Your reason?

*Dro. S.* Lest it make you choleric and pur-  
chase me another dry basting.

*Ant. S.* Well, sir, learn to jest in good time:  
there's a time for all things.

*Dro. S.* I durst have denied that, before you  
were so choleric.

*Ant. S.* By what rule, sir?

*Dro. S.* Marry, sir, by a rule as plain as the  
plain bald pate of father Time himself.

*Ant. S.* Let's hear it.

*Dro. S.* There's no time for a man to re-  
cover his hair that grows bald by nature.

*Ant. S.* May he not do it by fine and re-  
covery?

*Dro. S.* Yes, to pay a fine for a periwig and  
recover the lost hair of another man.

*Ant. S.* Why is Time such a niggard of hair  
being, as it is, so plentiful an excrement?

*Dro. S.* Because it is a blessing that he be-  
stows on beasts; and what he hath scantied men  
in hair he hath given them in wit.

*Ant. S.* Why, but there's many a man hath  
more hair than wit.

*Dro. S.* Not a man of those but he hath the  
wit to lose his hair.

*Ant. S.* Why, thou didst conclude hairy men  
plain dealers without wit.

*Dro. S.* The plainer dealer, the sooner lost  
yet he loseth it in a kind of jollity.

*Ant. S.* For what reason?

*Dro. S.* For two; and sound ones too.

*Ant. S.* Nay, not sound, I pray you.

*Dro. S.* Sure ones then.

*Ant. S.* Nay, not sure, in a thing falsing.

*Dro. S.* Certain ones then.

*Ant. S.* Name them.

*Dro. S.* The one, to save the money that he  
spends in tiring; the other that at dinner they  
should not drop in his porridge.

*Ant. S.* You would all this time have proved  
there is no time for all things.

*Dro. S.* Marry, and did, sir; namely, no  
time to recover hair lost by nature.

*Ant. S.* But your reason was not substantial  
why there is no time to recover.

*Dro. S.* Thus I mend it: Time himself is  
bald and therefore to the world's end will have  
bald followers.

*Ant. S.* I knew 'twould be a bald conclusion!  
But, soft! who wafts us yonder?

*Enter ADRIANA and LUCIANA.*

*Adr.* Ay, ay, Antipholus, look strange and frown:

Some other mistress hath thy sweet aspects;  
I am not Adriana nor thy wife.

The time was once when thou unurged wouldst  
vow

That never words were music to thine ear,  
That never object pleasing in thine eye,  
That never touch well welcome to thy hand,  
That never meat sweet-savour'd in thy taste,  
Unless I spake, or look'd, or touch'd, or carved  
to thee. 120

How comes it now, my husband, O, how comes it,  
That thou art thus estranged from thyself?  
Thyself I call it, being strange to me,  
That, undividable, incorporate,

Am better than thy dear self's better part.  
Ah, do not tear away thyself from me!

For know, my love, as easy mayst thou fall  
A drop of water in the breaking gulf  
And take unmingled thence that drop again,  
Without addition or diminishing. 130

As take from me thyself and not me too.  
How dearly would it touch thee to the quick,  
Shouldst thou but hear I were licentious  
And that this body, consecrate to thee,  
By ruffian lust should be contaminate!  
Wouldst thou not spit at me and spurn at me  
And hurl the name of husband in my face  
And tear the stain'd skin off my harlot-brow  
And from my false hand cut the wedding-ring  
And break it with a deep-divorcing vow? 140  
I know thou canst; and therefore see thou do it.  
I am possess'd with an adulterate blot;  
My blood is mingled with the crime of lust:  
For if we two be one and thou play false,  
I do digest the poison of thy flesh,  
Being strumpeted by thy contagion.  
Keep then fair league and truce with thy true  
bed;

I live unstain'd, thou undishonoured.

*Ant. S.* Plead you to me, fair dame? I know  
you not:

In Ephesus I am but two hours old, 150  
As strange unto your town as to your talk;  
Who, every word by all my wit being scan'd,  
Want wit in all one word to understand.

*Luc.* Fie, brother! how the world is chang'd  
with you!

When were you wont to use my sister thus?  
He sent for you by Dromio home to dinner.

*Ant. S.* By Dromio?

*Dro. S.* By me?

*Adr.* By thee; and this thou didst return  
from him,

That he did buffet thee and in his blows 160  
Denied my house for his, me for his wife.

*Ant. S.* Did you converse, sir, with this gen-  
tlewoman?

What is the course and drift of your compact?

*Dro. S.* I, sir? I never saw her till this time.

*Ant. S.* Villain, thou liest; for even her very  
words

Didst thou deliver to me on the mart.

*Dro. S.* I never spake with her in all my  
life.

*Ant. S.* How can she thus then call us by  
our names?

Unless it be by inspiration. 169

*Adr.* How ill agrees it with your gravity  
to counterfeit thus grossly with your slave,  
Abetting him to thwart me in my mood!  
Be it my wrong you are from me exempt,  
But wrong not that wrong with a more con-  
tempt.

Yome, I will fasten on this sleeve of thine:  
Thou art an elm, my husband, I a vine,  
Whose weakness married to thy stronger state  
Makes me with thy strength to communicate:  
I ought possess thee from me, it is dross,  
Jurspring ivy, brier, or idle moss; 180

Who, all for want of pruning, with intrusion  
Infect thy sap and live on thy confusion.

*Ant. S.* To me she speaks; she moves me for  
her theme:

What, was I married to her in my dream?  
Or sleep I now and think I hear all this?

What error drives our eyes and ears amiss?  
Until I know this sure uncertainty,

I'll entertain the offer'd fallacy.

*Luc.* Dromio, go bid the servants spread for  
dinner.

*Dro. S.* O, for my beads! I cross me for a  
sinner. 190

This is the fairy land: O spite of spites!

We talk with goblins, owls and sprites:

If we obey them not, this will ensue,  
They'll suck our breath or pinch us black and  
blue.

*Luc.* Why pratest thou to thyself and an-  
swer'st not?

Dromio, thou drone, thou snail, thou slug, thou  
sot!

*Dro. S.* I am transformed, master, am I not?

*Ant. S.* I think thou art in mind, and so am I.

*Dro. S.* Nay, master, both in mind and in  
my shape.

*Ant. S.* Thou hast thine own form.

*Dro. S.* No, I am an ass.

*Luc.* If thou art changed to aught, 'tis to an  
ass. 200

*Dro. S.* 'Tis true; she rides me and I long  
for grass.

'Tis so, I am an ass; else it could never be  
But I should know her as well as she knows me.

*Adr.* Come, come, no longer will I be a fool,  
To put the finger in the eye and weep,

Whilst man and master laugh my woes to scorn.

Come, sir, to dinner. Dromio, keep the gate.

Husband, I'll dine above with you to-day

And shrive you of a thousand idle pranks. 210

Sirrah, if any ask you for your master,

Say he dines forth and let no creature enter.

Come, sister. Dromio, play the porter well.

*Ant. S.* Am I in earth, in heaven, or in hell?

Sleeping or waking? mad or well-advised?

Known unto these, and to myself disguised!

I'll say as they say and persevere so

And in this mist at all adventures go.

*Dro. S.* Master, shall I be porter at the gate?

*Adr.* Ay; and let none enter, lest I break  
your pate. 220

*Luc.* Come, come, Antipholus, we dine too  
late. [Exeunt.]

## ACT III.

SCENE I. *Before the house of ANTIPHOLUS of Ephesus.*

*Enter ANTIPHOLUS of Ephesus, DROMIO of Ephesus, ANGELO, and BALTHAZAR.*

*Ant. E.* Good Signior Angelo, you must excuse us all;

My wife is shrewish when I keep not hours:  
Say that I linger'd with you at your shop  
To see the making of her carcanet  
And that to-morrow you will bring it home.  
But here's a villain that would face me down  
He met me on the mart and that I beat him  
And charged him with a thousand marks in gold

And that I did deny my wife and house.  
Thou drunkard, thou, what didst thou mean by this?

*Dro. E.* Say what you will, sir, but I know what I know;

That you beat me at the mart, I have your hand to show:

If the skin were parchment and the blows you gave were ink,  
Your own handwriting would tell you what I think.

*Ant. E.* I think thou art an ass.

*Dro. E.* Marry, so it doth appear  
By the wrongs I suffer and the blows I bear.  
I should kick, being kick'd; and, being at that pass,

You would keep from my heels and beware of an ass.

*Ant. E.* You're sad, Signior Balthazar: pray God our cheer  
May answer my good will and your good welcome here.

*Bal.* I hold your dainties cheap, sir, and your welcome dear.

*Ant. E.* O, Signior Balthazar, either at flesh or fish,

A table full of welcome makes scarce one dainty dish.

*Bal.* Good meat, sir, is common; that every churl affords.

*Ant. E.* And welcome more common; for that's nothing but words.

*Bal.* Small cheer and great welcome makes a merry feast.

*Ant. E.* Ay to a niggardly host and more sparing guest:

But though my cats be mean, take them in good part;

Better cheer may you have, but not with better heart.

But, soft! my door is lock'd. Go bid them let us in.

*Dro. E.* Maud, Bridget, Marian, Cicely, (Lillian, Ginn)

*Dro. S.* [Within] Mome, malt-horse, capon, coxcomb, idiot, patch!

Either get thee from the door or sit down at the hatch.

Dost thou conjure for wenches, that thou call'st for such store,

When one is one too many? Go get thee from the door.

*Dro. E.* What patch is made our porter? My master stays in the street.

*Dro. S.* [Within] Let him walk from whence he came, lest he catch cold on 's feet.

*Ant. E.* Who talks within there? ho, open the door!

*Dro. S.* [Within] Right, sir; I'll tell you when, an you'll tell me wherefore.

*Ant. E.* Wherefore? for my dinner: I have not dined to-day.

*Dro. S.* [Within] Nor to-day here you must not; come again when you may.

*Ant. E.* What art thou that keep'st me out from the house I owe?

*Dro. S.* [Within] The porter for this time, sir, and my name is Dromio.

*Dro. E.* O villain! thou hast stolen both mine office and my name.

The one ne'er got me credit, the other mickle blame.

If thou hadst been Dromio to day in my place,

Thou wouldst have changed thy face for a name or thy name for an ass.

*Luce.* [Within] What a coil is there, Dromio? who are those at the gate?

*Dro. E.* Let my master in, Luce.

*Luce.* [Within] Faith, no; he comes too late; and so tell your master.

*Dro. E.* O Lord, I must laugh! I have at you with a proverb—Shall I set in my staff?

*Luce.* [Within] Have at you with another; that's—When? can you tell?

*Dro. S.* [Within] If thy name be call'd Luce,—Luce, thou hast answer'd him well.

*Ant. E.* Do you hear, you minion? you'll let us in, I hope?

*Luce.* [Within] I thought to have ask'd you.

*Dro. S.* [Within] And you said no.

*Dro. E.* So, come, help: well struck! there was blow for blow.

*Ant. E.* Thou baggage, let me in.

*Luce.* [Within] Can you tell for whose sake?

*Dro. E.* Master, knock the door hard.

*Luce.* [Within] Let him knock till it aches.

*Ant. E.* You'll cry for this, minion, if I beat the door down.

*Luce.* [Within] What needs all that, and a pair of stocks in the town?

*Adr.* [Within] Who is that at the door that keeps all this noise?

*Dro. S.* [Within] By my troth, your town is troubled with unruly boys.

*Ant. E.* Are you there, wife? you might have come before.

*Adr.* [Within] Your wife, sir knave! go get you from the door.

*Dro. E.* If you went in pain, master, this 'knave' would go sore.

*Ang.* Here is neither cheer, sir, nor welcome: we would fain have either.

*Bal.* In debating which was best, we shall part with neither.

*Dro. E.* They stand at the door, master; bid them welcome hither.

*Ant. E.* There is something in the wind,  
that we cannot get in.

*Dro. E.* You would say so, master, if your  
garments were thin.  
our cake there is warm within; you stand  
here in the cold:

It would make a man mad as a buck, to be so  
bought and sold.

*Ant. E.* Go fetch me something: I'll break  
open the gate.

*Dro. S.* [Within] Break any breaking here,  
and I'll break your knave's pate.

*Dro. E.* A man may break a word with you,  
sir, and words are but wind,  
and break it in your face, so he break it not  
behind.

*Dro. S.* [Within] It seems thou want'st  
breaking: out upon thee, hind!

*Dro. E.* Here's too much 'out upon thee!'  
I pray thee, let me in.

*Dro. S.* [Within] Ay, when fowls have no  
feathers and fish have no fin.

*Ant. E.* Well, I'll break in: go borrow me  
a crow.

*Dro. E.* A crow without feather? Master,  
mean you so?

For a fish without a fin, there's a fowl without  
a feather:

If a crow help us in, sirrah, we'll pluck a crow  
together.

*Ant. E.* Go get thee gone; fetch me an iron  
crow.

*Bal.* Have patience, sir; O, let it not be so!

Herein you war against your reputation  
And draw within the compass of suspect  
The unviolated honour of your wife.

Hence this,—your long experience of her wisdom,  
Her sober virtue, years and modesty,

Lead on her part some cause to you unknown;  
And doubt not, sir, but she will well excuse

Why at this time the doors are made against  
you.

Be ruled by me: depart in patience,  
And let us to the Tiger all to dinner,

And about evening come yourself alone  
To know the reason of this strange restraint.

If by strong hand you offer to break in  
Now in the stirring passage of the day,

A vulgar comment will be made of it,  
And that supposed by the common rout

Against your yet ungalleged estimation  
That may with foul intrusion enter in

And dwell upon your grave when you are dead;  
For slander lives upon succession,

For ever housed where it gets possession.

*Ant. E.* You have prevail'd: I will depart  
in quiet,

And, in despite of mirth, mean to be merry.  
I know a wench of excellent discourse,

Pretty and witty, wild and yet, too, gentle: 110  
There will we dine. This woman that I mean,  
My wife—but, I protest, without desert—

Hath oftentimes upbraided me withal:  
To her will we to dinner. [To *Ang.*] Get you  
home

And fetch the chain; by this I know 'tis made:  
Bring it, I pray you, to the Porcupine;

For there's the house: that chain will I bestow—

Be it for nothing but to spite my wife—  
Upon mine own hostess there: good sir, make haste.

Since mine own doors refuse to entertain  
me,

I'll knock elsewhere, to see if they'll disdain  
me.

*Ang.* I'll meet you at that place some hour  
hence.

*Ant. E.* Do so. This jest shall cost me some  
expense. [Exeunt.]

## SCENE II. The same.

Enter LUCIANA and ANTIPHOLUS of Syracuse.

*Luc.* And may it be that you have quite  
forgot

A husband's office? shall, Antipholus,  
Even in the spring of love, thy love-springs rot?

Shall love, in building, grow so ruinous?  
If you did wed my sister for her wealth,

Then for her wealth's sake use her with more  
kindness:

Or if you like elsewhere, do it by stealth;  
Muffle your false love with some show of  
blindness:

Let not my sister read it in your eye;  
Be not thy tongue thy own shame's orator; 10

Look sweet, speak fair, become disloyalty;  
Apparel vice like virtue's harbinger;

Bear a fair presence, though your heart be  
tainted;

Teach sin the carriage of a holy saint;  
Be secret-false: what need she be acquainted?

What simple thief brags of his own attainment?  
'Tis double wrong, to truant with your bed

And let her read it in thy looks at board:  
Shame hath a bastard fame, well managed;

Ill deeds are doubled with an evil word. 20  
Alas, poor women! make us but believe,  
Being compact of credit, that you love us;

Though others have the arm, show us the  
sleeve;

We in your motion turn and you may  
move us.

Then, gentle brother, get you in again;  
Comfort my sister, cheer her, call her wife:

'Tis holy sport to be a little vain,  
When the sweet breath of flattery conquers  
strife.

*Ant. S.* Sweet mistress,—what your name  
is else, I know not,

Nor by what wonder you do lit of mine,— 30  
Less in your knowledge and your grace you  
show not

Than our earth's wonder, more than earth  
divine.

Teach me, dear creature, how to think and  
speak;

Lay open to my earthy-gross conceit,  
Smother'd in errors, feeble, shallow, weak,

The folded meaning of your words' deceit.  
Against my soul's pure truth why labour you

To make it wander in an unknown field?  
Are you a god? would you create me new?

Transform me then, and to your power I'll  
yield. 40

But if that I am I, then well I know  
Your weeping sister is no wife of mine,

Nor to her bed no homage do I owe :

Far more, far more to you do I decline.

O, train me not, sweet mermaid, with thy note,

To drown me in thy sister's flood of tears :

Sing, siren, for thyself and I will dote :

Spread o'er the silver waves thy golden hairs,

And as a bed I'll take them and there lie,

And in that glorious supposition think

He gains by death that hath such means to die :

Let Love, being light, be drowned if she sink !

*Luc.* What, are you mad, that you do reason so ?

*Ant. S.* Not mad, but mated ; how, I do not know.

*Luc.* It is a fault that springeth from your eye.

*Ant. S.* For gazing on your beams, fair sun, being by.

*Luc.* Gaze where you should, and that will clear your sight.

*Ant. S.* As good to wink, sweet love, as look on night.

*Luc.* Why call you me love ? call my sister so.

*Ant. S.* Thy sister's sister.

*Luc.* That's my sister.

*Ant. S.* No ; 60

It is thyself, mine own self's better part,

Mine eye's clear eye, my dear heart's dearer heart,

My food, my fortune and my sweet hope's aim,  
My sole earth's heaven and my heaven's claim.

*Luc.* All this my sister is, or else should be.

*Ant. S.* Call thyself sister, sweet, for I am thee.

These will I love and with thee lead my life :

Thou hast no husband yet nor I no wife.

Give me thy hand.

*Luc.* O, soft, sir ! hold you still :  
I'll fetch my sister, to get her good will. [*Exit.* 70

*Enter DROMIO of Syracuse.*

*Ant. S.* Why, how now, Dromio ! where runn'st thou so fast ?

*Dro. S.* Do you know me, sir ? am I Dromio ? am I your man ? am I myself ?

*Ant. S.* Thou art Dromio, thou art my man, thou art thyself.

*Dro. S.* I am an ass, I am a woman's man and besides myself.

*Ant. S.* What woman's man ? and how besides thyself ? 80

*Dro. S.* Marry, sir, besides myself, I am due to a woman ; one that claims me, one that haunts me, one that will have me.

*Ant. S.* What claim lays she to thee ?

*Dro. S.* Marry, sir, such claim as you would lay to your horse ; and she would have me as a beast : not that, I being a beast, she would have me ; but that she, being a very beastly creature, lays claim to me.

*Ant. S.* What is she ? 90

*Dro. S.* A very reverend body ; ay, such a one as a man may not speak of without he say " Sir-reverence." I have but lean luck in the match, and yet is she a wondrous fat marriage.

*Ant. S.* How dost thou mean a fat marriage ?

*Dro. S.* Marry, sir, she's the kitchen wench and all grease ; and I know not what use to put her to but to make a lamp of her and run from her by her own light. I warrant, her rags and the tallow in them will burn a Poland winter ; if she lives till doomsday, she'll burn a week longer than the whole world.

*Ant. S.* What complexion is she of ?

*Dro. S.* Swart, like my shoe, but her face nothing like so clean kept ; for why, she sweats ; a man may go over shoes in the grime of it.

*Ant. S.* That's a fault that water will mend.

*Dro. S.* No, sir, 'tis in grain ; Noah's flood could not do it.

*Ant. S.* What's her name ? 110

*Dro. S.* Nell, sir ; but her name and three

quarters, that's an ell and three quarters, will not measure her from hip to hip.

*Ant. S.* Then, she bears some breadth ?

*Dro. S.* No longer from head to foot than from hip to hip : she is spherical, like a globe ; I could find out countries in her.

*Ant. S.* In what part of her body stand Ireland ?

*Dro. S.* Marry, sir, in her buttocks : I found it out by the bogs. 12

*Ant. S.* Where Scotland ?

*Dro. S.* I found it by the barrenness ; hand in the palm of the hand.

*Ant. S.* Where France ?

*Dro. S.* In her forehead ; armed and reverted making war against her hair.

*Ant. S.* Where England ?

*Dro. S.* I looked for the chalky cliffs, but I could find no whiteness in them ; and I guess : stood in her chin, by the salt rheum that ran between France and it.

*Ant. S.* Where Spain ?

*Dro. S.* Faith, I saw it not ; but I felt it hot in her breath.

*Ant. S.* Where America, the Indies ?

*Dro. S.* Oh, sir, upon her nose, all o'er embellished with rubies, carbuncles, sapphires, declining their rich aspect to the hot breath of Spain ; who sent whole armadas of caracks to be ballast at her nose. 111

*Ant. S.* Where stood Belgia, the Netherlands ?

*Dro. S.* Oh, sir, I did not look so low. To conclude, this drudge, or diviner, laid claim to me ; called me Dromio ; swore I was assured to her ; told me what privy marks I had about me, as, the mark of my shoulder, the mole in my neck, the great wart on my left arm, that I amazed ran from her as a witch :

And, I think, if my breast had not been made of faith and my heart of steel, 120  
She had transform'd me to a curtal dog and made me turn i' the wheel.

*Ant. S.* Go hide thee presently, post to the road :

As if the wind blow any way from shore,  
I will not harbour in this town to-night :  
If any bark put forth, come to the mart,  
Where I will walk till thou return to me.  
If every one knows us and we know none,  
'Tis time, I think, to trudge, pack and be gone.



*Dro. S.* As from a bear a man would run  
for life,  
So fly I from her that would be my wife. [*Exit.*]  
*Ant. S.* There's none but witches do inhabit  
here; 161  
And therefore 'tis high time that I were hence.  
She that doth call me husband, even my soul  
Doth for a wife abhor. But her fair sister,  
Possess'd with such a gentle sovereign grace,  
Of such enchanting presence and discourse,  
Hath almost made me traitor to myself:  
But, lest myself be guilty to self-wrong,  
I'll stop mine ears against the mermaid's song.

*Enter ANGELO with the chain.*

*Ang.* Master Antipholus,—  
*Ant. S.* Ay, that's my name. 170  
*Ang.* I know it well, sir: lo, here is the  
chain.  
I thought to have ta'en you at the Porpentine:  
The chain unfinished made me stay thus long.  
*Ant. S.* What is your will that I shall do  
with this?  
*Ang.* What please yourself, sir: I have made  
it for you.  
*Ant. S.* Made it for me, sir! I bespoke it not.  
*Ang.* Not once, nor twice, but twenty times  
you have.  
Go home with it and please your wife withal;  
And soon at supper-time I'll visit you  
And then receive my money for the chain. 180  
*Ant. S.* I pray you, sir, receive the money  
now,  
For fear you ne'er see chain nor money more.  
*Ang.* You are a merry man, sir: fare you  
well. [*Exit.*]  
*Ant. S.* What I should think of this, I  
cannot tell:  
But this I think, there's no man is so vain  
That would refuse so fair an offer'd chain.  
I see a man here needs not live by shifts,  
When in the streets he meets such golden gifts.  
I'll to the mart and there for Dromio stay: 190  
If any slip put out, then straight away. [*Exit.*]

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I. A public place.

*Enter Second Merchant, ANGELO, and an Officer.*

*Sec. Mer.* You know since Pentecost the  
sum is due,  
And since I have not much importuned you;  
Nor now I had not, but that I am bound  
To Persia and want guilders for my voyage:  
Therefore make present satisfaction,  
Or I'll attach you by this officer.  
*Ang.* Even just the sum that I do owe  
to you  
Is growing to me by Antipholus,  
And in the instant that I met with you  
He had of me a chain: at five o'clock  
I shall receive the money for the same.  
Pleaseth you walk with me down to his house,  
I will discharge my bond and thank you too.

*Enter ANTIPHOLUS of Ephesus and DROMIO of Ephesus from the courtesan's.*

*Off.* That labour may you save: see where  
he comes.

*Ant. E.* While I go to the goldsmith's house,  
go thou

And buy a rope's end: that will I bestow

Among my wife and her confederates,

For locking me out of my doors by day.

But, soft! I see the goldsmith. Get thee gone;

Buy thou a rope and bring it home to me. 20

*Dro. E.* I buy a thousand pound a year: I

buy a rope. [*Exit.*]

*Ant. E.* A man is well help up that trusts

to you:

I promised your presence and the chain;

But neither chain nor goldsmith came to me.

Belike you thought our love would last too long,  
If it were chain'd together, and therefore came

not.  
*Ang.* Saving your merry humour, here's  
the note

How much your chain weighs to the utmost

carat,

The fineness of the gold and chargeful fashion,

Which doth amount to three odd ducats more 30

Than I stand debted to this gentleman:

I pray you, see him presently discharged,

For he is bound to sea and stays but for it.

*Ant. E.* I am not furnish'd with the present

money;

Besides, I have some business in the town.

Good signior, take the stranger to my house

And with you take the chain and bid my wife

Disburse the sum on the receipt thereof:

Perchance I will be there as soon as you.

*Ang.* Then you will bring the chain to her

yourself? 40

*Ant. E.* No; bear it with you, lest I come

not time enough.

*Ang.* Well, sir, I will. Have you the chain

about you?

*Ant. E.* An if I have not, sir, I hope you

have;

Or else you may return without your money.

*Ang.* Nay, come, I pray you, sir, give me

the chain:

Both wind and tide stays for this gentleman,

And I, to blame, have held him here too long.

*Ant. E.* Good Lord! you use this dalliance

to excuse

Your breach of promise to the Porpentine.

I should have chid you for not bringing it, 50

But, like a shrew, you first begin to brawl.

*Sec. Mer.* The hour steals on; I pray you,

sir, dispatch.

*Ang.* You hear how he importunes me;—

the chain!

*Ant. E.* Why, give it to my wife and fetch

your money.

*Ang.* Come, come, you know I gave it you

even now.

Either send the chain or send me by some token.

*Ant. E.* Fie, now you run this humour out

of breath,

Come, where's the chain? I pray you, let me

see it.

*Sec. Mer.* My business cannot brook this dalliance.

Good sir, say whether you'll answer me or no: 60  
If not, I'll leave him to the officer.

*Ant. E.* I answer you! what should I answer you?

*Ang.* The money that you owe me for the chain.

*Ant. E.* I owe you none till I receive the chain.

*Ang.* You know I gave it you half an hour since.

*Ant. E.* You gave me none: you wrong me much to say so.

*Ang.* You wrong me more, sir, in denying it: Consider how it stands upon my credit.

*Sec. Mer.* Well, officer, arrest him at my suit.

*Off.* I do; and charge you in the duke's name to obey me. 70

*Ang.* This touches me in reputation. Either consent to pay this sum for me Or I attach you by this officer.

*Ant. E.* Consent to pay thee that I never had!

Arrest me, foolish fellow, if thou darest.

*Ang.* Here is thy fee; arrest him, officer. I would not spare my brother in this case, If he should scorn me so apparently.

*Off.* I do arrest you, sir: you hear the suit.

*Ant. E.* I do obey thee till I give thee bail. But, sirrah, you shall buy this sport as dear 80

As all the metal in your shop will answer.

*Ang.* Sir, sir, I shall have law in Ephesus, To your notorious shame; I doubt it not.

*Enter DROMIO of Syracuse, from the bay.*

*Dro. S.* Master, there is a bark of Epitamnium That stays but till her owner comes aboard.

And then, sir, she bears away. Our fraughtage, sir,

I have convey'd aboard and I have bought The oil, the balsamum and aqua-vite.

The ship is in her trim: the merry wind 65  
Blows fair from land: they stay for nought at all But for their owner, master, and yourself.

*Ant. E.* How now! a madman! Why, thou peevish sheep.

What ship of Epitamnium stays for me?

*Dro. S.* A ship you sent me to, to hire waftage.

*Ant. E.* Thou drunken slave, I sent thee for a rope

And told thee to what purpose and what end.

*Dro. S.* You sent me for a rope's end as soon:

You sent me to the bay, sir, for a bark.

*Ant. E.* I will debate this matter at more leisure 100

And teach your ears to list me with more heed. To Adriana, villain, hie thee straight:

Give her this key, and tell her, in the desk That's cover'd o'er with Turkish tapestry

There is a purse of ducats; let her send it: Tell her I am arrested in the street

And that shall bail me: hie thee, slave, be gone! On, officer, to prison till it come.

[*Exeunt Sec. Merchant, Angelo, Officer, and Ant. E.*]

*Dro. S.* To Adriana! that is where we dined, Where Dowsabel did claim me for her husband: She is too big, I hope, for me to compass. 111  
Thither I must, although against my will, For servants must their masters' minds fulfil. [*Exit.*]

## SCENE II. The house of ANTIPHOLUS of Ephesus.

*Enter ADRIANA and LUCIANA.*

*Adr.* Ah, Luciana, did he tempt thee so? Mightst thou perceive austerely in his eye

That he did plead in earnest? yea or no? Look'd he or red or pale, or sad or merrily?

What observation madest thou in this case Of his heart's meteors tilting in his face?

*Luc.* First he denied you had in him no right.

*Adr.* He meant he did me none; the more my spite.

*Luc.* Then swore he that he was a stranger here.

*Adr.* And true he swore, though yet forsworn he were. 20

*Luc.* Then pleaded I for you.

*Adr.* And what said he?

*Luc.* That love I begg'd for you he begg'd of me.

*Adr.* With what persuasion did he tempt thy love?

*Luc.* With words that in an honest suit might move.

First he did praise my beauty, then my speech.

*Adr.* Didst speak him fair?

*Luc.* Have patience, I beseech.

*Adr.* I cannot, nor I will not, hold me still: My tongue, though not my heart, shall have his will.

He is deformed, crooked, old and sere, Ill-faced, worse bodied, shapeless everywhere; 30  
Vicious, ungentle, foolish, blunt, unkind, Stigmatical in making, worse in mind.

*Luc.* Who would be jealous then of such a one?

No evil lost is wait'd when it is gone.

*Adr.* Ah, but I think him better than I say. And yet would herein others' eyes were worse.

Far from her nest the lapwing cries away: My heart prays for him, though my tongue do curse.

*Enter DROMIO of Syracuse.*

*Dro. S.* Here! go; the desk, the purse! sweet, now, make haste.

*Luc.* How hast thou lost thy breath?

*Dro. S.* By running fast. 35

*Adr.* Where is thy master, Dromio? is he well?

*Dro. S.* No, he's in Tartar limbo, worse than hell.

† A devil in an everlasting garment hath him: One whose hard heart is button'd up with steel;

A fiend, a fury, pitiless and rough; A wolf, nay, worse, a fellow all in buff;

A back-friend, a shoulder-clapper, one that countermands

The passages of alleys, creeks and narrow lands:

A hound that runs counter and yet draws dry-foot well;

One that before the judgement carries poor souls to hell. 40

*Adr.* Why, man, what is the matter?

*Dro. S.* I do not know the matter: he is rested on the case.

*Adr.* What, is he arrested? Tell me at whose suit.

*Dro. S.* I know not at whose suit he is arrested well;

But he's in a suit of buff which 'rested him, that can I tell.

Will you send him, mistress, redemption, the money in his desk?

*Adr.* Go fetch it, sister. [*Exit Luciana.*]

This I wonder at,

That he, unknown to me, should be in debt.

Tell me, was he arrested on a band?

*Dro. S.* Not on a band, but on a stronger thing; 50

A chain, a chain! Do you not hear it ring?

*Adr.* What, the chain?

*Dro. S.* No, no, the bell: 'tis time that I were gone:

It was two ere I left him, and now the clock strikes one.

*Adr.* The hours come back! that did I never hear.

*Dro. S.* O, yes; if any hour meet a sergeant, a 'turns back for very fear.

*Adr.* As if Time were in debt! how fondly dost thou reason!

*Dro. S.* Time is a very bankrupt and owes more than he's worth to season.

Nay, he's a thief too: have you not heard men say,

That Time comes stealing on by night and day? If Time be in debt and theft, and a sergeant in the way, 60

Hath he not reason to turn back an hour in a day?

*Re-enter LUCIANA with a purse.*

*Adr.* Go, Dromio; there's the money, bear it straight.

And bring thy master home immediately.

Come, sister: I am press'd down with conceit—Conceit, my comfort and my injury. [*Eceunt.*]

### SCENE III. A public place.

*Enter ANTIPHOLUS of Syracuse.*

*Ant. S.* There's not a man I meet but doth salute me

As if I were their well-acquainted friend; And every one doth call me by my name.

Some tender money to me; some invite me;

Some other give me thanks for kindnesses;

Some offer me commodities to buy;

Even now a tailor call'd me in his shop

And show'd me silks that he had bought for me

And therewithal took measure of my body. 10

Nure, these are but imaginary wiles

And Lapland sorcerers inhabit here.

*Enter DROMIO of Syracuse.*

*Dro. S.* Master, here's the gold you sent me

for. What, have you got the picture of old Adam new-appareled?

*Ant. S.* What gold is this? what Adam dost thou mean?

*Dro. S.* Not that Adam that kept the Paradise, but that Adam that keeps the prison: he that goes in the calf's skin that was killed for the

Prodigal; he that came behind you, sir, like an evil angel, and bid you forsake your liberty. 20

*Ant. S.* I understand thee not.

*Dro. S.* No? why, 'tis a plain case: he that went, like a bass-viol, in a case of leather; the man, sir, that, when gentlemen are tired, gives them a sob and 'rosts them; he, sir, that takes pity on decayed men and gives them suits of

durance; he that sets up his rest to do more exploits with his mace than a morris-pike.

*Ant. S.* What, thou meanest an officer?

*Dro. S.* Ay, sir, the sergeant of the band; he that brings any man to answer it that breaks his band; one that thinks a man always going to bed and says 'God give you good rest!'

*Ant. S.* Well, sir, there rest in your foolery. Is there any ship puts forth to-night? may we be gone?

*Dro. S.* Why, sir, I brought you word an hour since that the bark Expedition put forth to-night; and then were you hindered by the

sergeant, to tarry for the hoy Delay. Here are the angels that you sent for to deliver you.

*Ant. S.* The fellow is distract, and so am I; And here we wander in illusions: Some blessed power deliver us from hence!

*Enter a Courtizan.*

*Cour.* Well met, well met, Master Antipholus.

I see, sir, you have found the goldsmith now: Is that the chain you promised me to-day?

*Ant. S.* Satan, avoid! I charge thee, tempt me not.

*Dro. S.* Master, is this Mistress Satan?

*Ant. S.* It is the devil. 30

*Dro. S.* Nay, she is worse, she is the devil's dam; and here she comes in the habit of a light wench; and thereof comes that the wenches say 'God damn me: that's as much to say 'God make me a light wench.' It is written, they appear to men like angels of light: light is an effect of fire, and fire will burn; ergo, light wenches will burn. Come not near her.

*Cour.* Your man and you are marvellous merry, sir.

Will you go with me? We'll mend our dinner here! 60

*Dro. S.* Master, if you do, expect spoon-meat; or bespeak a long spoon.

*Ant. S.* Why, Dromio?

*Dro. S.* Marry, he must have a long spoon that must eat with the devil.

*Ant. S.* Avoid then, fiend! what tell'st thou me of supping?

Thou art, as you are all, a sorceress: I conjure thee to leave me and be gone.

*Cour.* Give me the ring of mine you had at dinner,

Or, for my diamond, the chain you promised, 70 And I'll be gone, sir, and not trouble you.

*Dro. S.* Some devils ask but the parings of one's nail,

A rush, a hair, a drop of blood, a pin,

A nut, a cherry-stone;

But she, more covetous, would have a chain.

Master, be wise: an if you give it her,

The devil will shake her chain and fright us with it.

*Cour.* I pray you, sir, my ring, or else the chain:

I hope you do not mean to cheat me so.

*Ant. S.* Avaunt, thou witch! Come, Dromio, let us go.

*Dro. S.* 'Fly pride,' says the peacock: mistress, that you know.

[*Exeunt Ant. S. and Dro. S.*]

*Cour.* Now, out of doubt Antipholus is mad, Else would he never so demean himself.

A ring he hath of mine worth forty ducats,

And for the same he promised me a chain:

Both one and other he denies me now.

The reason that I gather he is mad,

Besides this present instance of his rage,

Is a mad tale he told to-day at dinner,

Of his own doors being shut against his entrance.

Belike his wife, acquainted with his fits,

On purpose shut the doors against his way.

My way is now to hie home to his house,

And tell his wife that, being lunatic,

He rush'd into my house and took perforce

My ring away. This course I fittest choose;

For forty ducats is too much to lose. [*Exit.*]

#### SCENE IV. A street.

*Enter ANTIPHOLUS of Ephesus and the Officer.*

*Ant. E.* Fear me not, man; I will not break away:

I'll give thee, ere I leave thee, so much money,

To warrant thee, as I am 'rested for.

My wife is in a wayward mood to-day,

And will not lightly trust the messenger.

That I should be attach'd in Ephesus,

I tell you, 'twill sound harshly in her ears.

*Enter DROMIO of Ephesus with a rope's-end.*

Here comes my man; I think he brings the money.

How now, sir! have you that I sent you for?

*Dro. E.* Here's that, I warrant you, will pay them all.

*Ant. E.* But where's the money?

*Dro. E.* Why, sir, I gave the money for the rope.

*Ant. E.* Five hundred ducats, villain, for a rope?

*Dro. E.* I'll serve you, sir, five hundred at the rate.

*Ant. E.* To what end did I bid thee hie thee home?

*Dro. E.* To a rope's-end, sir; and to that end am I returned.

*Ant. E.* And to that end, sir, I will welcome you.

*Off.* Good sir, be patient.

*Dro. E.* Nay, 'tis for me to be patient; I am in adversity.

*Off.* Good now, hold thy tongue.

*Dro. E.* Nay, rather persuade him to hold his hands.

*Ant. E.* Thou whorson, senseless villain!

*Dro. E.* I would I were senseless, sir, that I might not feel your blows.

*Ant. E.* Thou art sensible in nothing but blows, and so is an ass.

*Dro. E.* I am an ass, indeed; you may prove it by my long ears. I have served him from the hour of my nativity to this instant, and have nothing at his hands for my service but blows; When I am cold, he heats me with beating; when I am warm, he cools me with beating; I am waked with it when I sleep; raised with it when I sit; driven out of doors with it when I go from home; welcomed home with it when I return: nay, I bear it on my shoulders, as a beggar wont her brat; and, I think, when he hath lamed me, I shall beg with it from door to door.

*Ant. E.* Come, go along; my wife is coming yonder.

*Enter ADRIANA, LUCIANA, the Courtesan, and PINCH.*

*Dro. E.* Mistress, 'respice finem,' respect your end; or rather, †the prophecy like the parrot, 'beware the rope's end!'

*Ant. E.* Wilt thou still talk? [*Beating him.*]

*Cour.* How say you now I is not your husband mad?

*Adr.* His incivility confirms no less.

[*Good Doctor Pinch, you are a conjurer;*]

Establish him in his true sense again,

And I will please you what you will demand.

*Luc.* Alas, how fiery and how sharp he looks!

*Cour.* Mark how he trembles in his ecstasy!

*Pinch.* Give me your hand and let me feel your pulse.

*Ant. E.* There is my hand, and let it feel your car.

*Pinch.* I charge thee, Satan, housed within this man,

To yield possession to my holy prayers

And to thy state of darkness hie thee straight:

I conjure thee by all the saints in heaven!

*Ant. E.* Peace, dotting wizard, peace! I am not mad.

*Adr.* O, that thou wert not, poor distressed soul!

*Ant. E.* You minion, you, are these your customers?

Did this companion with the saffron face

Revel and feast it at my house to-day,

Whilst upon me the guilty doors were shut

And I denied to enter in my house?

*Adr.* O husband, God doth know you dined at home;

Where would you had remain'd until this time.

Free from these slanders and this open shame

*Ant. E.* Dined at home! Thou villain, what sayest thou?

*Dro. E.* Sir, sooth to say, you did not dine at home.

*Ant. E.* Were not my doors lock'd up and I shut out?

*Dro. E.* Perdie, your doors were lock'd and you shut out

*Ant. E.* And did not she herself revile me there?

*Dro. E.* Sans fable, she herself reviled you there.

*Ant. E.* Did not her kitchen-maid rail, taunt and scorn me?

*Dro. E.* Certes, she did; the kitchen-vestal scorn'd you.

*Ant. E.* And did not I in rage depart from thence?

*Dro. E.* In verity you did; my bones bear witness, 80

[That since have felt the vigour of his rage.

*Adr.* Is't good to soothe him in these contraries?

*Pinch.* It is no shame: the fellow finds his vein

And yielding to him humours well his frenzy.

*Ant. E.* Thou hast suborn'd the goldsmith to arrest me.

*Adr.* Alas, I sent you money to redeem you, y Dromio here, who came in haste for it.

*Dro. E.* Money by me! heart and good-will you might;

at surely, master, not a rag of money.

*Ant. E.* Went'st not thou to her for a purse of ducats? 90

*Adr.* He came to me and I deliver'd it.

*Luc.* And I am witness with her that she did.

*Dro. E.* God and the rope-maker bear me witness

that I was sent for nothing but a rope!

*Pinch.* Mistress, both man and master is possess'd;

know it by their pale and deadly looks: They must be bound and laid in some dark room.

*Ant. E.* Say, wherefore didst thou lock me forth to-day?

nd why dost thou deny the bag of gold?

*Adr.* I did not, gentle husband, lock thee forth. 100

*Dro. E.* And, gentle master, I received no gold;

But I confess, sir, that we were lock'd out.

*Adr.* Dissembling villain, thou speak'st false in both.

*Ant. E.* Dissembling harlot, thou art false in all

nd art confederate with a damned pack to make a loathsome object scorn of me:

but with these nails I'll pluck out these false eyes

That would behold in me this shameful sport.

*Enter three or four, and offer to bind him. He strives.*

*Adr.* O, bind him, bind him! let him not come near me.

*Pinch.* More company! The fiend is strong within him. 110

*Luc.* Ay me, poor man, how pale and wan he looks!

*Ant. E.* What, will you murder me? Thou gaoler, thou,

and thy prisoner: wilt thou suffer them to make a rescue?

*Off.* Masters, let him go: He is my prisoner, and you shall not have him.

*Pinch.* Go bind this man, for he is frantic too. [They offer to bind Dro. E.]

*Adr.* What wilt thou do, thou peevish officer?

Hast thou delight to see a wretched man Do outrage and displeasure to himself?

*Off.* He is my prisoner: if I let him go, 120 The debt he owes will be required of me.

*Adr.* I will discharge thee ere I go from thee: Bear me forthwith unto his creditor

And, knowing how the debt grows, I will pay it. Good master doctor, see him safe convey'd

Home to my house. O most unhappy day!

*Ant. E.* O most unhappy strumpet!

*Dro. E.* Master, I am here enter'd in bond for you.

*Ant. E.* Out on thee, villain! wherefore dost thou mad me?

*Dro. E.* Will you be bound for nothing? he mad, good master: cry 'The devil!' 130

*Luc.* God help, poor souls, how idly do they talk!

*Adr.* Go bear him hence. Sister, go you with me. [Exit all but Adriana, Luciana, Officer and Courtizan.]

Say now, whose suit is he arrested at?

*Off.* One Angelo, a goldsmith: do you know him?

*Adr.* I know the man. What is the sum he owes?

*Off.* Two hundred ducats.

*Adr.* Say, how grows it due?

*Off.* Due for a chain your husband had of him.

*Adr.* He did bespeak a chain for me, but had it not.

*Cour.* When as your husband all in rage to-day 140

Came to my house and took away my ring— The ring I saw upon his finger now—

Straight after did I meet him with a chain.

*Adr.* It may be so, but I did never see it.

Come, gaoler, bring me where the goldsmith is: I long to know the truth hereof at large.

*Enter ANTIPHOLUS of Syracuse with his rapier drawn, and DROMIO of Syracuse.*

*Luc.* God, for thy mercy! they are loose again.

*Adr.* And come with naked swords. Let's call more help to have them bound again.

*Off.* Away! they'll kill us. 150

[Exit all but Ant. S. and Dro. S.]

*Ant. S.* I see these witches are afraid of swords.

*Dro. S.* She that would be your wife now ran from you.

*Ant. S.* Come to the Centaur; fetch our stuff from thence:

I long that we were safe and sound aboard.

*Dro. S.* Faith, stay here this night; they will surely do us no harm: you saw they speak us fair, give us gold: methinks they are such a gentle nation that, but for the mountain of mad flesh that claims marriage of me, I could find in my heart to stay here still and turn witch. 160

*Ant. S.* I will not stay to-night for all the town;  
Therefore away, to get our stuff aboard.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

SCENE I. *A street before a Priory.*

*Enter Second Merchant and ANGELO.*

*Ang.* I am sorry, sir, that I have hinder'd you;  
But, I protest, he had the chain of me,  
Though most dishonestly he doth deny it.  
*Sec. Mer.* How is the man esteem'd here in the city?  
*Ang.* Of very reverend reputation, sir,  
Of credit infinite, highly beloved,  
Second to none that lives here in the city:  
His word might bear my wealth at any time.  
*Sec. Mer.* Speak softly: yonder, as I think, he walks.

*Enter ANTIPHOLUS of Syracuse and DROMIO of Syracuse.*

*Ang.* 'Tis so; and that self chain about his neck  
Which he forswore most monstrously to have.  
Good sir, draw near to me, I'll speak to him.  
*Signior Antipholus*, I wonder much  
That you would put me to this shame and trouble;  
And, not without some scandal to yourself,  
With circumstance and oaths so to deny  
This chain which now you wear so openly:  
Beside the charge, the shame, imprisonment,  
You have done wrong to this my honest friend,  
Who, but for staying on our controversy, 20  
Had hoisted sail and put to sea to-day:  
This chain you had of me; can you deny it?  
*Ant. S.* I think I had; I never did deny it.  
*Sec. Mer.* Yes, that you did, sir; and forswore it too.  
*Ant. S.* Who heard me to deny it or forswear it?  
*Sec. Mer.* These ears of mine, thou know'st, did hear thee.  
Fie on thee, wretch! 'tis pity that thou livest  
To walk where any honest men resort.  
*Ant. S.* Thou art a villain to impeach me thus:  
I'll prove mine honour and mine honesty 30  
Against thee presently, if thou dar'st stand.  
*Sec. Mer.* I dare, and do defy thee for a villain.  
[*They draw.*]

*Enter ADRIANA, LUCIANA, the Courtezan, and others.*

*Adr.* Hold, hurt him not, for God's sake! he is mad.  
Some get within him, take his sword away:  
Bind Dromio too, and bear them to my house.  
*Dro. S.* Run, master, run; for God's sake, take a house!  
This is some priory. In, or we are spoil'd!  
[*Exeunt Ant. S. and Dro. S. to the Priory.*]

*Enter the Lady Abbess.*

*Abb.* Be quiet, people. Wherefore throng you hither?  
*Adr.* To fetch my poor distracted husband hence.  
Let us come in, that we may bind him fast  
And bear him home for his recovery.  
*Ang.* I knew he was not in his perfect wit.  
*Sec. Mer.* I am sorry now that I did draw him.  
*Abb.* How long hath this possession held the man?  
*Adr.* This week he hath been heavy, sorrowful,  
And much different from the man he was;  
But till this afternoon his passion  
Ne'er brake into extremity of rage.  
*Abb.* Hath he not lost much wealth by wreck of sea?  
Buried some dear friend? Hath not else his eyes  
Stray'd his affection in unlawful love?  
A sin prevailing much in youthful men,  
Who give their eyes the liberty of gazing.  
Which of these sorrows is he subject to?  
*Adr.* To none of these, except it be the last  
Namely, some love that drew him off from home.  
*Abb.* You should for that have reprehended him.  
*Adr.* Why, so I did.  
*Abb.* Ay, but not rough enough.  
*Adr.* As roughly as my modesty would let me.  
*Abb.* Haply, in private.  
*Adr.* And in assemblies too.  
*Abb.* Ay, but not enough.  
*Adr.* It was the copy of our conference:  
In bed he slept not for my urging it;  
At board he fed not for my urging it;  
Alone, it was the subject of my theme;  
In company I often glanced it;  
Still did I tell him it was vile and bad.  
*Abb.* And thereof came it that the man was mad:  
The venom clamours of a jealous woman  
Poisons more deadly than a mad dog's tooth:  
It seems his sleeps were hinder'd by thy railing.  
And thereof comes it that his head is light.  
Thou say'st his meat was sauced with thy upbraidings:  
Unquiet meals make ill digestions;  
Thereof the raging fire of fever bred;  
And what's a fever but a fit of madness?  
Thou say'st his sports were hinder'd by thy brawls:  
Sweet recreation barr'd, what doth ensue  
But moody and dull melancholy,  
Kinsman to grim and comfortless despair,  
And at her heels a huge infectious troop  
Of pale distemperatures and foes to life?  
In food, in sport and life preserving rest  
To be disturb'd, would mad or man or beast:  
The consequence is then thy jealous fits  
Have scared thy husband from the use of wits.  
*Luc.* She never reprehended him but mildly  
When he demean'd himself rough, rude and wildly.

Why bear you these rebukes and answer not?

*Adr.* She did betray me to my own reproof.  
Good people, enter and lay hold on him. 97

*Abb.* No, not a creature enters in my house.

*Adr.* Then let your servants bring my husband forth.

*Abb.* Neither: he took this place for sanctuary.

And it shall privilege him from your hands

Fill I have brought him to his wits again,

Or lose my labour in assaying it.

*Adr.* I will attend my husband, be his nurse,  
Diet his sickness, for it is my office,

And will have no attorney but myself; 100

And therefore let me have him home with me.

*Abb.* Be patient; for I will not let him stir  
Till I have used the approved means I have,

With wholesome syrups, drugs and holy prayers,  
To make of him a formal man again:

It is a branch and parcel of mine oath,

A charitable duty of my order.

Therefore depart and leave him here with me.

*Adr.* I will not hence and leave my husband  
here;

And all it doth besem your holiness 110

To separate the husband and the wife.

*Abb.* Be quiet and depart: thou shalt not  
have him. [*Erit.*]

*Luc.* Complain unto the duke of this indignity.

*Adr.* Come, go: I will fall prostrate at his  
feet

And never rise until my tears and prayers  
Have won his grace to come in person hither

And take perforce my husband from the abbess.

*Sec. Mer.* By this, I think, the dial points at  
five:

Anon, I'm sure, the duke himself in person  
Comes this way to the melancholy vale, 120

The place of death and sorry execution,

Behind the ditches of the abbey here.

*Ang.* Upon what cause?

*Sec. Mer.* To see a reverend Syracusian  
merchant,

Who put unluckily into this bay  
Against the laws and statutes of this town,

Behindred publicly for his offence.

*Ang.* See where they come: we will behold  
his death.

*Luc.* Kneel to the duke before he pass the  
abbey.

*Enter DUKE, attended; AEGEON burheaded;  
with the Headsmen and other Officers.*

*Duke.* Yet once again proclaim it publicly,  
If any friend will pay the sum for him, 131

He shall not die; so much we tender him.

*Adr.* Justice, most sacred duke, against the  
abbess!

*Duke.* She is a virtuous and a reverend lady:  
It cannot be that she hath done thee wrong.

*Adr.* May it please your grace, Antipholus  
my husband,

Whom I made lord of me and all I had,  
At your important letters,—this ill day

A most outrageous fit of madness took him;

That desperately he hurried through the street,—

With him his bondman, all as mad as he,— 141

Doing displeasure to the citizens

By rushing in their houses, bearing thence

Rings, jewels, any thing his rage did like.

Once did I get him bound and sent him home,

Whilst to take order for the wrongs I went.

That here and there his fury had committed.

Anon, I wot not by what strong escape,

He broke from those that had the guard of  
him;

And with his mad attendant and himself, 150

Each one with ireful passion, with drawn  
swords,

Met us again and madly bent on us

Chased us away, till raising of more aid

We came again to bind them. Then they fled

Into this abbey, whither we pursued them:

And here the abbess shuts the gates on us

And will not suffer us to fetch him out,

Nor send him forth that we may bear him  
hence.

Therefore, most gracious duke, with thy com-  
mand

Let him be brought forth and borne hence  
for help. 160

*Duke.* Long since thy husband served me

in my wars,

And I to thee engaged a prince's word,

When thou didst make him master of thy bed,

To do him all the grace and good I could.

Go, some of you, knock at the abbey-gate

And bid the lady abbess come to me.

I will determine this before I stir.

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* O mistress, mistress, shift and save  
yourself!

My master and his man are both broke loose,  
Beaten the maids a-row and bound the doctor,

Whose beard they have singed off with brands  
of fire; 171

And ever, as it blazed, they threw on him

(Great pails of puddled mire to quench the hair:

My master preaches patience to him and the  
while

His man with scissors nicks him like a fool,

And sure, unless you send some present help,

Between them they will kill the conjurer.

*Adr.* Peace, fool! thy master and his man  
are here,

And that is false thou dost report to us. 170

*Serv.* Mistress, upon my life, I tell you true:

I have not breathed almost since I did see it.

He cries for you and vows, if he can take you,

To scorch your face and to disfigure you.

[*Cry within.*]

Hark, hark! I hear him, mistress: fly, be gone!

*Duke.* Come, stand by me; fear nothing.

Guard with halberds!

*Adr.* Ayme, it is my husband! Witness you,

That he is borne about invisible:

Even now we housed him in the abbey here;

And now he's there, past thought of human  
reason.

*Enter ANTIPHOLUS of Ephesus and DROMIO  
of Ephesus.*

*Ant. E.* Justice, most gracious duke, O,

grant me justice! 190

Even for the service that long since I did thee,  
When I bestrid thee in the wars and took  
Deep scars to save thy life; even for the blood  
That then I lost for thee, now grant me justice.

*Ege.* Unless the fear of death doth make  
me dote,

I see my son Antipholus and Dromio.

*Ant. E.* Justice, sweet prince, against that  
woman there!

She whom thou gavest to me to be my wife,  
That hath abused and dishonour'd me  
Even in the strength and height of injury! 200  
Beyond imagination is the wrong

That she this day hath shameless thrown on me.  
*Duke.* Discover how, and thou shalt find me  
just.

*Ant. E.* This day, great duke, she shut the  
doors upon me,

While she with harlots feasted in my house.

*Duke.* A grievous fault! Say, woman, didst  
thou so?

*Adr.* No, my good lord: myself, he and my  
sister

To-day did dine together. So befall my soul  
As this is false he burdens me withal!

*Luc.* Ne'er may I look on day, nor sleep on  
night, 210

But she tells to your highness simple truth!

*Ang.* O perjured woman! They are both  
forsworn:

In this the madman justly chargeth them.

*Ant. E.* My liege, I am advised what I say,  
Neither disturbed with the effect of wine,  
Nor heady-rash, provoked with raging ire,  
Albeit my wrongs might make one wiser mad.  
This woman lock'd me out this day from  
dinner:

That goldsmith there, were he not pack'd  
with her,

Could witness it, for he was with me then; 220  
Who parted with me to go fetch a chain,

Promising to bring it to the Porpentine,  
Where Balthazar and I did dine together.

Our dinner done, and he not coming thither,  
I went to seek him: in the street I met him

And in his company that gentleman.  
There did this perjured goldsmith swear me  
down

That I this day of him received the chain,  
Which, God he knows, I saw not: for the  
which

He did arrest me with an officer. 230

I did obey, and sent my peasant home  
For certain ducats: he with none return'd.

Then fairly I bespoke the officer  
To go in person with me to my house.

By the way we met  
My wife, her sister, and a rabble more  
Of vile confederates. Along with them

They brought one Pinch, a hungry lean-faced  
villain,

A mere anatomy, a mountebank,  
A threadbare juggler and a fortune-teller,

A needy, hollow-eyed, sharp-looking wretch,  
A living-dead man: this pernicious slave, :

Forsooth, took on him as a conjurer,  
And, gazing in mine eyes, feeling my pulse,

And with no face, as 'twere, outfacing me,

Cries out, I was possess'd. Then all together  
They fell upon me, bound me, bore me thence  
And in a dark and dankish vault at home  
There left me and my man, both bound to-  
gether;

Till, gnawing with my teeth my bonds in  
sunder,

I gain'd my freedom and immediately 250  
Ran hither to your grace; whom I beseech

To give me ample satisfaction  
For these deep shames and great indignities.

*Ang.* My lord, in truth, thus far I witness  
with him,

That he dined not at home, but was lock'd out.

*Duke.* But had he such a chain of the  
or no?

*Ang.* He had, my lord: and when he ran in  
here,

These people saw the chain about his neck.

*Ser. Mer.* Besides, I will be sworn these ears  
of mine

Heard you confess you had the chain of him  
After you first forswore it on the mart: 260

And thereupon I drew my sword on you;  
And then you fled into this abbey here,

From whence, I think, you are come by miracle.

*Ant. E.* I never came within these abbey-  
walls,

Nor ever didst thou draw thy sword on me:  
I never saw the chain, so help me Heaven!

And this is false you burden me withal.

*Duke.* Why, what an intricate impeach is  
this!

I think you all have drunk of Ciceo's cup. 270  
If here you housed him, here he would have  
been;

If he were mad, he would not plead so coldly:  
You say he dined at home; the goldsmith here

Denies that saying. Sirrah, what say you?

*Dro. E.* Sir, he dined with her there, at the  
Porpentine.

*Cour.* He did, and from my finger snatch'd  
that ring.

*Ant. E.* 'Tis true, my liege; this ring I had  
of her.

*Duke.* Saw'st thou him enter at the abbey  
here?

*Cour.* As sure, my liege, as I do see your  
grace.

*Duke.* Why, this is strange. Go call the  
abbess hither. 280

I think you are all mated or stark mad.  
[*Exit out to the Abbess.*]

*Ege.* Most mighty duke, vouchsafe me  
speak a word:

Haply I see a friend will save my life  
And pay the sum that may deliver me.

*Duke.* Speak freely, Syracusian, what thou  
wilt.

*Ege.* Is not your name, sir, call'd Ant  
ipholus?

And is not that your handman, Dromio?

*Dro. E.* Within this hour I was his bond-  
man, sir,

But he, I thank him, gnaw'd in two my cords:  
Now am I Dromio and his man unbound. 290

*Ege.* I am sure you both of you remember  
me.



*Dro. E.* Ourselves we do remember, sir, by you;  
or lately we were bound, as you are now.  
ou are not Pinch's patient, are you, sir?

*Ege.* Why look you strange on me? you know me well.

*Ant. E.* I never saw you in my life till now.

*Ege.* O, grief hath changed me since you saw me last,

nd careful hours with time's deformed hand  
ave written strange defeatures in my face:  
ut tell me yet, dost thou not know my voice?

*Ant. E.* Neither. 301

*Ege.* Dromio, nor thou?

*Dro. E.* No, trust me, sir, nor I.

*Ege.* I am sure thou dost.

*Dro. E.* Ay, sir, but I am sure I do not; and  
hatssoever a man denies, you are now bound to  
elieve him.

*Ege.* Not know my voice! O time's extre-  
mity,  
ast thou so crack'd and splitted my poor  
tongue

n seven short years, that here my only son  
nows not my feeble key of untuned cares?  
hough now this grained face of mine be hid  
n sap-consuming winter's drizzled snow  
nd all the conduits of my blood froze up,  
et hath my night of life some memory,  
y wasting lamps some fading glimmer left,  
y dull deaf ears a little use to hear:  
ll these old witnesses—I cannot err—  
'll me thou art my son Antipholus.

*Ant. E.* I never saw my father in my life.

*Ege.* But seven years since, in Syracuse,  
boy, 320

thou know'st we parted: but perhaps, my son,  
thou shamest to acknowledge me in misery.

*Ant. E.* The duke and all that know me in  
the city

an witness with me that it is not so:  
ne'er saw Syracuse in my life.

*Duke.* I tell thee, Syracusan, twenty years  
lave I been patron to Antipholus,  
uring which time he ne'er saw Syracuse:  
see thy age and dangers make thee dote.

*Re-enter* Abbess, with ANTIPHOLUS of Syracuse  
and DROMIO of Syracuse.

*Abb.* Most mighty duke, behold a man much  
wrong'd. [*All gather to see them.*]

*Adr.* I see two husbands, or mine eyes de-  
ceive me. 331

*Duke.* One of these men is Genius to the  
other;

nd so of these. Which is the natural man,  
And which the spirit? who deciphers them?

*Dro. S.* I, sir, am Dromio: command him  
away.

*Dro. E.* I, sir, am Dromio: pray, let me  
stay.

*Ant. S.* Egeon art thou not? or else his  
ghost?

*Dro. S.* O, my old master! who hath bound  
him here?

*Abb.* Whoever bound him, I will loose his  
bonds

And gain a husband by his liberty. 340

Speak, old Egeon, if thou be'st the man  
That hadst a wife once call'd Emilia  
That bore thee at a burden two fair sons:  
O, if thou be'st the same Egeon, speak,  
And speak unto the same Emilia!

*Ege.* If I dream not, thou art Emilia:

If thou art she, tell me where is that son  
That floated with thee on the fatal raft?

*Abb.* By men of Epidamnus he and I

And the twin Dromio all were taken up; 350

But by and by rude fishermen of Corinth

By force took Dromio and my son from them

And me they left with those of Epidamnus.

What then became of them I cannot tell;

I to this fortune that you see me in.

*Duke.* Why, here begins his morning story  
right:

These two Antipholuses, these two so like,  
And these two Dromios, one in semblance,—

Besides her urging of her wreck at sea,—

These are the parents to these children, 360

Which accidentally are met together.

Antipholus, thou camest from Corinth first?

*Ant. S.* No, sir, not I; I came from Syracuse.

*Duke.* Stay, stand apart; I know not which  
is which.

*Ant. E.* I came from Corinth, my most  
gracious lord,—

*Dro. E.* And I with him.

*Ant. E.* Brought to this town by that most  
famous warrior,

Duke Menaphon, your most renowned uncle.

*Adr.* Which of you two did dine with me  
to-day?

*Ant. S.* I, gentle mistress.

*Adr.* And are not you my husband?

*Ant. E.* No; I say nay to that. 371

*Ant. S.* And so do I; yet did she call me so:

And this fair gentlewoman, her sister here,

Did call me brother. [*To Luc.*] What I told  
you then,

I hope I shall have leisure to make good;  
If this be not a dream I see and hear.

*Ang.* That is the chain, sir, which you had  
of me.

*Ant. S.* I think it be, sir; I deny it not.

*Ant. E.* And you, sir, for this chain arrest-  
ed me.

*Ang.* I think I did, sir; I deny it not. 380

*Adr.* I sent you money, sir, to be your bail,

By Dromio; but I think he brought it not.

*Dro. E.* No, none by me.

*Ant. S.* This purse of ducats I received from  
you

And Dromio my man did bring them me.

I see we still did meet each other's man,

And I was ta'en for him, and he for me,

And thereupon these ERRORS are arose.

*Ant. E.* These ducats pawn I for my father  
here.

*Duke.* It shall not need; thy father hath his  
life. 390

*Cour.* Sir, I must have that diamond from  
you.

*Ant. E.* There, take it; and much thanks  
for my good cheer.

*Abb.* Renowned duke, vouchsafe to take the  
pains

To go with us into the abbey here  
 And hear at large discoursed all our fortunes :  
 And all that are assembled in this place,  
 That by this sympathized one day's error  
 Have suffer'd wrong, go keep us company,  
 And we shall make full satisfaction. 399  
 Thirty-three years have I but gone in travail  
 Of you, my sons; and till this present hour  
 My heavy burthen ne'er deliver'd.  
 The duke, my husband and my children both,  
 And you the calendars of their nativity,  
 Go to a gossips' feast, and go with me;  
 After so long grief, such festivity!

*Duke.* With all my heart, I'll gossip at this  
 feast. [*Exeunt all but Ant. S., Ant. E.,*

*Dro. S., and Dro. E.*

*Dro. S.* Master, shall I fetch your stuff from  
 shipboard?

*Ant. E.* Dromio, what stuff of mine hast  
 thou embark'd?

*Dro. S.* Your goods that lay at host, sir, in  
 the Centaur. 410

*Ant. S.* He speaks to me. I am your master,  
 Dromio:

Come, go with us; we'll look to that anon:  
 Embrace thy brother there; rejoice with him.

[*Exeunt Ant. S. and Ant. E.*

*Dro. S.* There is a fat friend at your master's  
 house,

That kitchen'd me for you to-day at dinner:

She now shall be my sister, not my wife.

*Dro. E.* Methinks you are my glass, and not  
 my brother:

I see by you I am a sweet-faced youth.

Will you walk in to see their gossiping?

*Dro. S.* Not I, sir; you are my elder. 421

*Dro. E.* That's a question: how shall we  
 try it?

*Dro. S.* We'll draw cuts for the senior: till  
 then lead thou first.

*Dro. E.* Nay, then, thus:

We came into the world like brother and brother:

And now let's go hand in hand, not one before  
 another. [*Exeunt.*

# MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

DON PEDRO, prince of Arragon.  
 DON JOHN, his bastard brother.  
 CLAUDIO, a young lord of Florence.  
 BENEDICK, a young lord of Padua.  
 LEONATO, governor of Messina.  
 ANTONIO, his brother.  
 BALTHASAR, attendant on Don Pedro.  
 CONRADE, } followers of Don John.  
 BORACHIO, }  
 FRIAR FRANCIS.  
 DOGBERRY, a constable.

VERGES, a headborough.  
 A Sexton.  
 A Boy.

HERO, daughter to Leonato.  
 BEATRICE, niece to Leonato.  
 MARGARET, } gentlewomen attending on  
 URSULA, } Hero.

Messengers, Watch, Attendants, &c.

SCENE: Messina.

## ACT I.

SCENE I. Before LEONATO'S house.

Enter LEONATO, HERO, and BEATRICE, with a Messenger.

Leon. I learn in this letter that Don Peter of Arragon comes this night to Messina.

Mess. He is very near by this: he was not three leagues off when I left him.

Leon. How many gentlemen have you lost in this action?

Mess. But few of any sort, and none of name.

Leon. A victory is twice itself when the achiever brings home full numbers. I find here that Don Peter hath bestowed much honour on young Florentine called Claudio.

Mess. Much deserved on his part and equally remembered by Don Pedro: he hath borne himself beyond the promise of his age, doing, in the figure of a lamb, the feats of a lion: he hath indeed bettered expectation than you must expect of me to tell you how.

Leon. He hath an uncle here in Messina who will be very much glad of it.

Mess. I have already delivered him letters, and there appears much joy in him; even so much that joy could not show itself modest enough without a badge of bitterness.

Leon. Did he break out into tears?

Mess. In great measure.

Leon. A kind overflow of kindness: there are no faces truer than those that are so washed. How much better is it to weep at joy than to laugh at weeping!

Beat. I pray you, is Signior Mountanto returned from the wars or no?

Mess. I know none of that name, lady: there was none such in the army of any sort.

Leon. What is he that you ask for, niece?

Hero. My cousin means Signior Benedick of Padua.

Mess. O, he's returned; and as pleasant as ever he was.

Beat. He set up his bills here in Messina and challenged Cupid at the flight; and my uncle's fool, reading the challenge, subscribed for Cupid, and challenged him at the bird-bolt. I pray you, how many hath he killed and eaten in these wars? But how many hath he killed? for indeed I promised to eat all of his killing.

Leon. Faith, niece, you tax Signior Benedick too much; but he'll be meet with you, I doubt it not.

Mess. He hath done good service, lady, in these wars.

Beat. You had musty victual, and he hath help to eat it: he is a very valiant trencherman; he hath an excellent stomach.

Mess. And a good soldier too, lady.

Beat. And a good soldier to a lady: but what is he to a lord?

Mess. A lord to a lord, a man to a man; stuffed with all honourable virtues.

Beat. It is so, indeed; he is no less than a stuffed man: but for the stuffing,—well, we are all mortal.

Leon. You must not, sir, mistake my niece. There is a kind of merry war betwixt Signior Benedick and her: they never meet but there's a skirmish of wit between them.

Beat. Alas! he gets nothing by that. In our last conflict four of his five wits went halting off, and now is the whole man governed with one: so that if he have wit enough to keep himself warm, let him bear it for a difference between himself and his horse; for it is all the wealth that he hath left, to be known a reasonable creature. Who is his companion now? He hath every month a new sworn brother.

Mess. Is't possible?

*Beat.* Very easily possible: he wears his faith but as the fashion of his hat; it ever changes with the next block.

*Mess.* I see, lady, the gentleman is not in your books.

*Beat.* No; an he were, I would burn my study. But, I pray you, who is his companion? Is there no young squarer now that will make a voyage with him to the devil?

*Mess.* He is most in the company of the right noble Claudio.

*Beat.* O Lord, he will hang upon him like a disease: he is sooner caught than the pestilence, and the taker runs presently mad. God help the noble Claudio! if he have caught the Benedick, it will cost him a thousand pound ere a' be cured.

*Mess.* I will hold friends with you, lady.

*Beat.* Do, good friend.

*Leon.* You will never run mad, niece.

*Beat.* No, not till a hot January.

*Mess.* Don Pedro is approached.

*Enter DON PEDRO, DON JOHN, CLAUDIO, BENEDICK, and BALTHASAR.*

*D. Pedro.* Good Signior Leonato, you are come to meet your trouble: the fashion of the world is to avoid cost, and you encounter it.

*Leon.* Never came trouble to my house in the likeness of your grace: for trouble being gone, comfort should remain; but when you depart from me, sorrow abides and happiness takes his leave.

*D. Pedro.* You embrace your charge too willingly. I think this is your daughter.

*Leon.* Her mother hath many times told me so.

*Bene.* Were you in doubt, sir, that you asked her?

*Leon.* Signior Benedick, no; for then were you a child.

*D. Pedro.* You have it full, Benedick: we may guess by this what you are, being a man. Truly, the lady fathers herself. Be happy, lady; for you are like an honourable father.

*Bene.* If Signior Leonato be her father, she would not have his head on her shoulders for all Messina, as like him as she is.

*Beat.* I wonder that you will still be talking, Signior Benedick: nobody marks you.

*Bene.* What, my dear Lady Disdain! are you yet living?

*Beat.* Is it possible disdain should die while she hath such meet food to feed it as Signior Benedick? Courtesy itself must convert to disdain, if you come in her presence.

*Bene.* Then is courtesy a turncoat. But it is certain I am loved of all ladies, only you excepted; and I would I could find in my heart that I had not a hard heart; for, truly, I love none.

*Beat.* A dear happiness to women: they would else have been troubled with a pernicious suitor. I thank God and my cold blood, I am of your humour for that: I had rather hear my dog bark at a crow than a man swear he loves me.

*Bene.* God keep your ladyship still in that

mind! so some gentleman or other shall 'scap a predestinate scratched face.

*Beat.* Scratching could not make it worse, an 'twere such a face as yours were.

*Bene.* Well, you are a rare parrot-teacher.

*Beat.* A bird of my tongue is better than a beast of yours.

*Bene.* I would my horse had the speed of your tongue, and so good a continuer. But keep your way, I God's name; I have done.

*Beat.* You always end with a jude's trick: I know you of old.

*D. Pedro.* That is the sum of all, Leonato, Signior Claudio and Signior Benedick, my dear friend Leonato hath invited you all. I tell him we shall stay here at the least a month; and he heartily prays some occasion may detain us longer. I dare swear he is no hypocrite, but prays from his heart.

*Leon.* If you swear, my lord, you shall not be forsworn. [*To Don John*] Let me bid ye welcome, my lord: being reconciled to the prince your brother, I owe you all duty.

*D. John.* I thank you: I am not of many words, but I thank you.

*Leon.* Please it your grace lead on!

*D. Pedro.* Your hand, Leonato; we will go together.

*[Exit all except Benedick and Claudio.]*  
*Claud.* Benedick, didst thou note thy daughter of Signior Leonato?

*Bene.* I noted her not; but I looked on her.

*Claud.* Is she not a modest young lady?

*Bene.* Do you question me, as an honest man should do, for my simple true judgement or would you have me speak after my custom, as being a professed tyrant to their sex?

*Claud.* No; I pray thee speak in sober judgement.

*Bene.* Why, if faith, methinks she's too low for a high praise, too brown for a fair praise and too little for a great praise: only this commendation I can afford her, that were she other than she is, she were unhandsome; and being no other but as she is, I do not like her.

*Claud.* Thou thinkest I am in sport: I pray thee tell me truly how thou likest her.

*Bene.* Would you buy her, that you inquire after her?

*Claud.* Can the world buy such a jewel?

*Bene.* Yea, and a case to put it into. But speak you this with a sad brow? or do you play the flouting Jack, to tell us Cupid is a good hare-finder and Vulcan a rare carpenter? Come, in what key shall a man take you, to go in the song?

*Claud.* In mine eye she is the sweetest lady that ever I looked on.

*Bene.* I can see yet without spectacles and I see no such matter: there's her cousin, an she were not possessed with a fury, exceeds her as much in beauty as the first of May doth the last of December. But I hope you have no intent to turn husband, have you?

*Claud.* I would scarce trust myself, though I had sworn the contrary, if Hero would be my wife.

*Bene.* Is't come to this? In faith, hath not

the world one man but he will wear his cap with suspicion? Shall I never see a bachelor of threescore again? Go to, I' faith; an thou wilt needs thrust thy neck into a yoke, wear the print of it and sigh away Sundays. Look; Don Pedro is returned to seek you.

*Re-enter DON PEDRO.*

*D. Pedro.* What secret hath held you here, that you followed not to Leonato's?

*Bene.* I would your grace would constrain me to tell.

*D. Pedro.* I charge thee on thy allegiance.

*Bene.* You hear, Count Claudio: I can be secret as a dumb man; I would have you think so; but, on my allegiance, mark you this, on my allegiance. He is in love. With who? now that is your grace's part. Mark how short his answer is:—With Hero, Leonato's short daughter.

*Claud.* If this were so, so were it uttered.

*Bene.* Like the old tale, my lord: 'it is not so, nor 'twas not so, but, indeed, God forbid it should be so.'

*Claud.* If my passion change not shortly, God forbid it should be otherwise.

*D. Pedro.* Amen, if you love her; for the lady is very well worthy.

*Claud.* You speak this to fetch me in, my lord.

*D. Pedro.* By my troth, I speak my thought.

*Claud.* And, in faith, my lord, I spoke mine.

*Bene.* And, by my two faiths and troths, my lord, I spoke mine.

*Claud.* That I love her, I feel.

*D. Pedro.* That she is worthy, I know.

*Bene.* That I neither feel how she should be loved nor know how she should be worthy, is the opinion that fire cannot melt out of me: I will die in it at the stake.

*D. Pedro.* Thou wast ever an obstinate heretic in the despite of beauty.

*Claud.* And never could maintain his part but in the force of his will.

*Bene.* That a woman conceived me, I thank her; that she brought me up, I likewise give her most humble thanks; but that I will have a recheat windel in my forehead, or hang my bugle in an invisible baldrick, all women shall pardon me. Because I will not do them the wrong to mistrust any, I will do myself the right to trust none; and the fine is, for the which I may go the finer, I will live a bachelor.

*D. Pedro.* I shall see thee, ere I die, look pale with love.

*Bene.* With anger, with sickness, or with hunger, my lord, not with love: prove that ever I lose more blood with love than I will get again with drinking, pick out mine eyes with a ballad-maker's pen and hang me up at the door of a brothel-house for the sign of blind Cupid.

*D. Pedro.* Well, if ever thou dost fall from this faith, thou wilt prove a notable argument.

*Bene.* If I do, hang me in a bottle like a cat and shoot at me; and he that hits me, let him be clapped on the shoulder, and called Adam.

*D. Pedro.* Well, as time shall try:

In time the savage bull doth bear the yoke.

*Bene.* The savage bull may; but if ever the

sensible Benedick bear it, pluck off the bull's horns and set them in my forehead: and let me be vilely painted, and in such great letters as they write 'Here is good horse to hire,' let them signify under my sign 'Here you may see Benedick the married man.'

*Claud.* If this should ever happen, thou wouldst be horn-meat.

*D. Pedro.* Nay, if Cupid have not spent all his quiver in Venice, thou wilt quake for this shortly.

*Bene.* I look for an earthquake too, then.

*D. Pedro.* Well, you will temporize with the hours. In the meantime, good Signior Benedick, repair to Leonato's: commend me to him and tell him I will not fail him at supper; for indeed he hath made great preparation.

*Bene.* I have almost matter enough in me for such an embassy; and so I commit you—

*Claud.* To the tuition of God: From my house, if I had it,—

*D. Pedro.* The sixth of July: Your loving friend, Benedick.

*Bene.* Nay, mock not, mock not. The body of your discourse is sometime guarded with fragments, and the guards are but slightly basted on neither: ere you flout old ends any further, examine your conscience: and so I leave you.

*Claud.* My liege, your highness now may do me good.

*D. Pedro.* My love is thine to teach: teach it but how,

And thou shalt see how apt it is to learn Any hard lesson that may do thee good.

*Claud.* Hath Leonato any son, my lord?

*D. Pedro.* No child but Hero; she's his only heir.

Dost thou affect her, Claudio?

*Claud.* O, my lord, When you went onward on this ended action, I look'd upon her with a soldier's eye, That liked, but had a rougher task in hand Than to drive liking to the name of love: But now I am return'd and that war-thoughts Have left their places vacant, in their rooms Come thronging soft and delicate desires, All prompting me how fair young Hero is, Saying, I liked her ere I went to wars.

*D. Pedro.* Thou wilt be like a lover presently

And tire the hearer with a book of words. If thou dost love fair Hero, cherish it, And I will break with her and with her father And thou shalt have her. Was't not to this end That thou began'st to twist so fine a story?

*Claud.* How sweetly you do minister to love, That know love's grief by his complexion! But lest my liking might too sudden seem, I would have saved it with a longer treatise.

*D. Pedro.* What need the bridge much broader than the flood?

The fairest grant is the necessity. Look, what will serve is fit: 'tis once, thou lovest.

And I will fit thee with the remedy. I know we shall have revelling to-night: I will assume thy part in some disguise

And tell fair Hero I am Claudio,  
And in her bosom I'll unclasp my heart  
And take her hearing prisoner with the force  
And strong encounter of my amorous tale;  
Then after to her father will I break;  
And the conclusion is, she shall be thine. 329  
In practice let us put it presently. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II. A room in LEONATO'S house.

Enter LEONATO and ANTONIO, meeting.

Leon. How now, brother! Where is my cousin, your son? hath he provided this music?

Ant. He is very busy about it. But, brother, I can tell you strange news that you yet dreamt not of.

Leon. Are they good?

Ant. As the event stamps them: but they have a good cover; they show well outward. The prince and Count Claudio, walking in a thick-placed alley in mine orchard, were thus much overheard by a man of mine: the prince discovered to Claudio that he loved my niece your daughter and meant to acknowledge it this night in a dance; and if he found her accoutred, he meant to take the present time by the top and instantly break with you of it.

Leon. Hath the fellow any wit that told you this?

Ant. A good sharp fellow; I will send for him; and question him yourself. 20

Leon. No, no; we will hold it as a dream till it appear itself: but I will acquaint my daughter withal, that she may be the better prepared for an answer, if peradventure this be true. Go you and tell her of it. [Enter attendants.] Cousins, you know what you have to do. O, I cry you mercy, friend; go you with me, and I will use your skill. Good cousin, have a care this busy time. [Exeunt.]

SCENE III. The same.

Enter DON JOHN and CONRADE.

Con. What the good-year, my lord! why are you thus out of measure sad?

D. John. There is no measure in the occasion that breeds; therefore the sadness is without limit.

Con. You should hear reason.

D. John. And when I have heard it, what blessing brings it?

Con. If not a present remedy, at least a patient sufferance. 10

D. John. I wonder that thou, being, as thou sayest thou art, born under Saturn, goest about to apply a moral medicine to a mortifying mischief. I cannot hide what I am: I must be sad when I have cause and smile at no man's jests, eat when I have stomach and wait for no man's leisure, sleep when I am drowsy and tend on no man's business, laugh when I am merry and clasp no man in his humour. 19

Con. Yea, but you must not make the full show of this till you may do it without controulment. You have of late stood out against your brother, and he hath taken you newly into his grace; where it is impossible you should

take true root but by the fair weather that you make yourself: it is needful that you frame the season for your own harvest.

D. John. I had rather be a canker in a hedge than a rose in his grace, and it better fits my blood to be disdained of all than to fashion a carriage to rob love from any: in this, though I cannot be said to be a flattering honest man, it must not be denied but I am a plain-dealing villain. I am trusted with a muzzle and enfranchised with a clog; therefore I have decreed not to sing in my cage. If I had my mouth, I would bite; if I had my liberty, I would do my liking: in the meantime let me be that I am and seek not to alter me.

Con. Can you make no use of your discontent? 40

D. John. I make all use of it, for I use it only.

Who comes here?

Enter BORACHIO.

What news, Borachio?

Bora. I came yonder from a great supper: the prince your brother is royally entertained by Leonato; and I can give you intelligence of an intended marriage.

D. John. Will it serve for any model to build mischief on? What is he for a fool that betroths himself to unquietness? 50

Bora. Marry, it is your brother's right hand.

D. John. Who? the most exquisite Claudio?

Bora. Even he.

D. John. A proper squire! And who, and who? which way looks he?

Bora. Marry, on Hero, the daughter and heir of Leonato.

D. John. A very forward March-chick! How came you to this?

Bora. Being entertained for a perfumer, as I was smoking a musty room, comes me the prince and Claudio, hand in hand, in sad conference: I whipt me behind the arras; and there heard it agreed upon that the prince should woo Hero for himself, and having obtained her, give her to Count Claudio.

D. John. Come, come, let us thither: this may prove food to my displeasure. That young start-up hath all the glory of my overthrow: if I can cross him any way, I bless myself every way. You are both sure, and will assist me?

Con. To the death, my lord.

D. John. Let us to the great supper: their cheer is the greater that I am subdued. Would the cook were of my mind! Shall we go prove what's to be done?

Bora. We'll wait upon your lordship. [Exeunt.]

ACT II.

SCENE I. A hall in LEONATO'S house.

Enter LEONATO, ANTONIO, HERO, BRATRICK, and others.

Leon. Was not Count John here at supper?

Ant. I saw him not.

Bora. How tartly that gentleman looks! I

never can see him but I am heart-burned an hour after.

*Hero.* He is of a very melancholy disposition.

*Beat.* He were an excellent man that were made just in the midway between him and Benedick: the one is too like an image and says nothing, and the other too like my lady's eldest son, evermore tattling.

*Leon.* Then half Signior Benedick's tongue in Count John's mouth, and half Count John's melancholy in Signior Benedick's face,—

*Beat.* With a good leg and a good foot, uncle, and money enough in his purse, such a man would win any woman in the world, if a' could get her good-will.

*Leon.* By my troth, niece, thou wilt never get thee a husband, if thou be so shrewd of thy tongue.

*Ant.* In faith, she's too curst.

*Beat.* Two curst is more than curst: I shall lessen God's sending that way; for it is said, 'God sends a curst cow short horns;' but to a cow too curst he sends none.

*Leon.* So, by being too curst, God will send you no horns.

*Beat.* Just, if he send me no husband; for the which blessing I am at him upon my knees every morning and evening. Lord, I could not endure a husband with a beard on his face: I had rather lie in the woollen.

*Leon.* You may light on a husband that hath no beard.

*Beat.* What should I do with him? dress him in my apparel and make him my waiting-gentlewoman? He that hath a beard is more than a youth, and he that hath no beard is less than a man: and he that is more than a youth is not for me, and he that is less than a man, I am not for him: therefore I will even take sixpence in earnest of the bear-ward, and lead his apes into hell.

*Leon.* Well, then, go you into hell?

*Beat.* No, but to the gate; and there will the devil meet me, like an old cuckold, with horns on his head, and say 'Get you to heaven, Beatrice, get you to heaven; here's no place for you maids;' so deliver I up my apes, and away to Saint Peter for the heavens; he shows me where the backsliders sit, and there live we as merry as the day is long.

*Ant.* [To *Hero*] Well, niece, I trust you will be ruled by your father.

*Beat.* Yes, faith; it is my cousin's duty to make curtsy and say 'Father, as it please you.' But yet for all that, cousin, let him be a handsome fellow, or else make another curtsy and say 'Father, as it please me.'

*Leon.* Well, niece, I hope to see you one day fitted with a husband.

*Beat.* Not till God make men of some other metal than earth. Would it not grieve a woman to be overmastered with a piece of valiant dust? to make an account of her life to a clod of wayward marl? No, uncle, I'll none: Adam's sons are my brethren; and, truly, I hold it a sin to match in my kindred.

*Leon.* Daughter, remember what I told

you: if the prince do solicit you in that kind, you know your answer.

*Beat.* The fault will be in the music, cousin, if you be not wooed in good time: if the prince be too important, tell him there is measure in every thing and so dance out the answer. For, hear me, *Hero*: wooing, wedding, and repenting, is as a Scotch jig, a measure, and a cinque pace: the first suit is hot and hasty, like a Scotch jig, and full as fantastical; the wedding, mannerly-modest, as a measure, full of state and antictery; and then comes repentance and, with his bad legs, falls into the cinque pace faster and faster, till he sink into his grave.

*Leon.* Cousin, you apprehend passing shrewdly.

*Beat.* I have a good eye, uncle; I can see a church by daylight.

*Leon.* The revellers are entering, brother: make good room. [All put on their masks.]

*Enter DON PEDRO, CLAUDIO, BENEDICK, BALTHASAR, DON JOHN, BORACHIO, MARGARET, URSULA, and others, masked.*

*D. Pedro.* Lady, will you walk about with your friend?

*Hero.* So you walk softly and look sweetly and say nothing, I am yours for the walk; and especially when I walk away.

*D. Pedro.* With me in your company?

*Hero.* I may say so, when I please.

*D. Pedro.* And when please you to say so?

*Hero.* When I like your favour; for God defend the lute should be like the case!

*D. Pedro.* My visor is Philemon's roof; within the house is Jove.

*Hero.* Why, then, your visor should be thatched.

*D. Pedro.* Speak low, if you speak love.

[Drawing her aside.]

*Balth.* Well, I would you did like me.

*Marg.* So would not I, for your own sake; for I have many ill qualities.

*Balth.* Which is one?

*Marg.* I say my prayers aloud.

*Balth.* I love you the better: the hearers may cry, Amen.

*Marg.* God match me with a good dancer!

*Balth.* Amen.

*Marg.* And God keep him out of my sight when the dance is done! Answer, clerk.

*Balth.* No more words: the clerks answered.

*Urs.* I know you well enough; you are Signior Antonio.

*Ant.* At a word, I am not.

*Urs.* I know you by the wagging of your head.

*Ant.* To tell you true, I counterfeit him.

*Urs.* You could never do him so ill-well, unless you were the very man. Here's his dry hand up and down: you are he, you are he.

*Ant.* At a word, I am not.

*Urs.* Come, come, do you think I do not know you by your excellent wit? can virtue hide itself? Go to, mum, you are he: graces will appear, and there's an end.

*Beat.* Will you not tell me who told you so?

*Bene.* No, you shall pardon me.

*Beat.* Nor will you not tell me who you are!

*Bene.* Not now.

*Beat.* That I was disdainful, and that I had my good wit out of the 'Hundred Merry Tales':—well, this was Signior Benedick that said so.

*Bene.* What's he?

*Beat.* I am sure you know him well enough.

*Bene.* Not I, believe me.

*Beat.* Did he never make you laugh? 140

*Bene.* I pray you, what is he?

*Beat.* Why, he is the prince's jester: a very dull fool; only his gift is in devising impossible slanders: none but libertines delight in him; and the commendation is not in his wit, but in his villany; for he both pleases men and angers them, and then they laugh at him and beat him. I am sure he is in the fleet: I would he had boarded me.

*Bene.* When I know the gentleman, I'll tell him what you say. 151

*Beat.* Do, do; he'll but break a comparison or two on me; which, peradventure not marked or not laughed at, strikes him into melancholy; and then there's a partridge wing saved, for the fool will eat no supper that night. [Music.] We must follow the leaders.

*Bene.* In every good thing.

*Beat.* Nay, if they lead to any ill, I will leave them at the next turning. 160

[Dance. Then exeunt all except Don

John, Borachio, and Claudio.]

*D. John.* Sure my brother is amorous on Hero and hath withdrawn her father to break with him about it. The ladies follow her and but one visor remains.

*Bora.* And that is Claudio: I know him by his bearing.

*D. John.* Are not you Signior Benedick?

*Claud.* You know me well; I am he.

*D. John.* Signior, you are very near my brother in his love: he is enamoured on Hero; I pray you, dissuade him from her: she is no equal for his birth: you may do the part of an honest man in it.

*Claud.* How know you he loves her?

*D. John.* I heard him swear his affection.

*Bora.* So did I too; and he swore he would marry her to-night.

*D. John.* Come, let us to the banquet.

[Exeunt Don John and Borachio.]

*Claud.* Thus answer I in name of Benedick. But hear these ill news with the ears of Claudio. This certain so; the prince wooes for himself.

Friendship is constant in all other things  
Save in the office and affairs of love:

Therefore all hearts in love use their own  
tongues;

Let every eye negotiate for itself

And trust no agent; for beauty is a witch

Against whose charms faith melteth into blood.

This is an accident of hourly proof,

Which I mistrusted not. Farewell, therefore,  
Hero!

*Re-enter BENEDICK.*

*Bene.* Count Claudio?

*Claud.* Yea, the same.

190

*Bene.* Come, will you go with me?

*Claud.* Whither?

*Bene.* Even to the next willow, about your own business, county. What fashion will you wear the garland of? about your neck, like an usurer's chain? or under your arm, like a lieutenant's scarf? You must wear it one way, for the prince hath got your Hero.

*Claud.* I wish him joy of her. 200

*Bene.* Why, that's spoken like an honest drovier: so they sell bullocks. But did you think the prince would have served you thus?

*Claud.* I pray you, leave me.

*Bene.* Ho! now you strike like the blind man: 'twas the boy that stole your meat, and you'll beat the post.

*Claud.* If it will not be, I'll leave you. [Exit.]

*Bene.* Alas, poor hurt fowl! now will he creep into sedges. But that my Lady Beatrice should know me, and not know me! The prince's fool! Ha? It may be I go under that title because I am merry. Yea, but so I am apt to do myself wrong; I am not so reputed: it is the base, though bitter, disposition of Beatrice that puts the world into her person, and so gives me out. Well, I'll be revenged as I may.

*Re-enter DON PEDRO.*

*D. Pedro.* Now, signior, where's the count: did you see him? 210

*Bene.* Troth, my lord, I have played the part of Lady Fame. I found him here as melancholy as a lodge in a warren: I told him and I think I told him true, that your grace had got the good will of this young lady; and I offered him my company to a willow-tree, either to make him a garland, as being forsaken, or to bind him up a rod, as being worthy to be whipped.

*D. Pedro.* To be whipped! What's his fault?

*Bene.* The flat transgression of a school-boy, who, being overjoyed with finding a birds' nest, shows it his companion, and he steals it. 220

*D. Pedro.* Wilt thou make a trust a transgression? The transgression is in the stealer.

*Bene.* Yet it had not been amiss the rod had been made, and the garland too; for the garland he might have worn himself, and the rod he might have bestowed on you, who, as I take it, have stolen his birds' nest.

*D. Pedro.* I will but teach them to sing, and restore them to the owner. 240

*Bene.* If their singing answer your saying, by my faith, you say honestly.

*D. Pedro.* The Lady Beatrice hath a quarrel to you: the gentleman that danced with her told her she is much wronged by you.

*Bene.* O, she misused me past the endurance of a block! an oak but with one green leaf on it would have answered her; my very visor began to assume life and scold with her. She told me, not thinking I had been myself, that I was the prince's jester, that I was duller than a great thaw; huddling jest upon jest with such impossible conveyance upon me that I stood like a man at a mark, with a whole army shooting at



me. She speaks poniards, and every word stabs: if her breath were as terrible as her terminations, there were no living near her; she would infect to the north star. I would not marry her, though she were endowed with all that Adam had left him before he transgressed: she would have made Hercules have turned spit, yea, and have cleft his club to make the fire too. Come, talk not of her: you shall find her the infernal Ate in good apparel. I would to God some scholar would conjure her; for certainly, while she is here, a man may live as quiet in hell as in a sanctuary; and people sin upon purpose, because they would go thither; so, indeed, all disquiet, horror and perturbation follows her.

*D. Pedro.* Look, here she comes. 270

*Re-enter CLAUDIO, BEATRICE, HERO, and LEONATO.*

*Bene.* Will your grace command me any service to the world's end? I will go on the highest errand now to the Antipodes that you can devise to send me on; I will fetch you a outpicker now from the furthest inch of Asia, bring you the length of Prester John's foot, fetch you a hair off the great Cham's beard, do on any embassage to the Pygmies, rather than hold three world's conference with this harpy. You have no employment for me? 280

*D. Pedro.* None, but to desire your good company.

*Bene.* O God, sir, here's a dish I love not: I cannot endure my lady's Tongue. [*Exit.*]

*D. Pedro.* Come, lady, come; you have lost the heart of Signior Benedick.

*Beat.* Indeed, my lord, he lent it me awhile; and I gave him use for it, a double heart for his single one: marry, once before he won it of me with false dice, therefore your grace may well say I have lost it. 291

*D. Pedro.* You have put him down, lady, you have put him down.

*Beat.* So I would not he should do me, my lord, lest I should prove the mother of fools. I have brought Count Claudio, whom you sent me to seek.

*D. Pedro.* Why, how now, count! wherefore are you sad?

*Claud.* Not sad, my lord. 300

*D. Pedro.* How then? sick?

*Claud.* Neither, my lord.

*Beat.* The count is neither sad, nor sick, nor merry, nor well; but civil count, civil as an orange, and something of that jealous complexion.

*D. Pedro.* I faith, lady, I think your blazon to be true; though, I'll be sworn, if he be so, his conceit is false. Here, Claudio, I have wooed in thy name, and fair Hero is won: I have broke with her father, and his good will obtained: name the day of marriage, and God give thee joy!

*Leon.* Count, take of me my daughter, and with her my fortunes: his grace hath made the match, and all grace say Amen to it.

*Beat.* Speak, count, 'tis your cue.

*Claud.* Silence is the perfectest herald of

joy: I were but little happy, if I could say how much. Lady, as you are mine, I am yours: I give away myself for you and dote upon the exchange. 320

*Beat.* Speak, cousin; or, if you cannot, stop his mouth with a kiss, and let not him speak neither.

*D. Pedro.* In faith, lady, you have a merry heart

*Beat.* Yea, my lord; I thank it, poor fool, it keeps on the windy side of care. My cousin tells him in his ear that he is in her heart.

*Claud.* And so she doth, cousin.

*Beat.* Good Lord, for alliance! Thus goes every one to the world but I, and I am sun-burnt; I may sit in a corner and cry heigh-ho for a husband!

*D. Pedro.* Lady Beatrice, I will get you one.

*Beat.* I would rather have one of your father's getting. Hath your grace ne'er a brother like you? Your father got excellent husbands, if a maid could come by them.

*D. Pedro.* Will you have me, lady? 339

*Beat.* No, my lord, unless I might have another for working-days: your grace is too costly to wear every day. But, I beseech your grace, pardon me: I was born to speak all mirth and no matter.

*D. Pedro.* Your silence most offends me, and to be merry best becomes you; for, out of question, you were born in a merry hour.

*Beat.* No, sure, my lord, my mother cried; but then there was a star danced, and under that was I born. 'Cousins, God give you joy!

*Leon.* Niece, will you look to those things I told you of?

*Beat.* I cry you mercy, uncle. By your grace's parlon. [*Exit.*]

*D. Pedro.* By my troth, a pleasant-spirited lady.

*Leon.* There's little of the melancholy element in her, my lord: she is never sad but when she sleeps, and not ever sad then; for I have heard my daughter say, she hath often dreamed of unhappiness and waked herself with laughing.

*D. Pedro.* She cannot endure to hear tell of a husband.

*Leon.* O, by no means: she mocks all her wooers out of suit.

*D. Pedro.* She were an excellent wife for Benedick.

*Leon.* O Lord, my lord, if they were but a week married, they would talk themselves mad.

*D. Pedro.* County Claudio, when mean you to go to church? 372

*Claud.* To-morrow, my lord: time goes on crutches till love have all his rites.

*Leon.* Not till Monday, my dear son, which is hence a just seven-night; and a time too brief, too, to have all things answer my mind.

*D. Pedro.* Come, you shake the head at so long a breathing: but, I warrant thee, Claudio, the time shall not go dully by us. I will in the interim undertake one of Hercules' labours; which is, to bring Signior Benedick and the Lady Beatrice into a mountain of affection the one with the other. I would fain have it a match, and I doubt not but to fashion it, if you

three will but minister such assistance as I shall give you direction.

*Leon.* My lord, I am for you, though it cost me ten nights' watchings.

*Claudio.* And I, my lord.

*D. Pedro.* And you too, gentle Hero?

*Hero.* I will do any modest office, my lord, to help my cousin to a good husband.

*D. Pedro.* And Benedick is not the unhopfullest husband that I know. Thus far can I praise him; he is of a noble strain, of approved valour and confirmed honesty. I will teach you how to humour your cousin, that she shall fall in love with Benedick; and I, with your two helps, will so practise on Benedick that, in despite of his quick wit and his queasy stomach, he shall fall in love with Beatrice. If we can do this, Cupid is no longer an archer: his glory shall be ours, for we are the only love-gods. Go in with me, and I will tell you my drift. *[Exeunt.]*

### SCENE II. *The same.*

*Enter DON JOHN and BORACHIO.*

*D. John.* It is so; the Count Claudio shall marry the daughter of Leonato.

*Bora.* Yea, my lord; but I can cross it.

*D. John.* Any bar, any cross, any impediment will be medicinal to me: I am sick in displeasure to him, and whatsoever comes athwart his affection ranges evenly with mine. How canst thou cross this marriage?

*Bora.* Not honestly, my lord; but so covertly that no dishonesty shall appear in me.

*D. John.* Show me briefly how.

*Bora.* I think I told your lordship a year since, how much I am in the favour of Margaret, the waiting gentlewoman to Hero.

*D. John.* I remember.

*Bora.* I can, at any unseasonable instant of the night, appoint her to look out at her lady's chamber-window.

*D. John.* What life is in that, to be the death of this marriage?

*Bora.* The poison of that lies in you to temper. Go you to the prince your brother; spare not to tell him that he hath wronged his honour in marrying the renowned Claudio—a whose estimation do you mightily hold up—to a contaminated stale, such a one as Hero.

*D. John.* What proof shall I make of that?

*Bora.* Proof enough to misuse the prince, to vex Claudio, to undo Hero and kill Leonato. Look you for any other issue?

*D. John.* Only to despite them, I will endeavour any thing.

*Bora.* Go, then; find me a meet hour to draw Don Pedro and the Count Claudio alone; tell them that you know that Hero loves me; intend a kind of zeal both to the prince and Claudio, as—in love of your brother's honour, who hath made this match, and his friend's reputation, who is thus like to be cozened with the semblance of a maid,—that you have discovered thus. They will scarcely believe this without trial: offer them instances; which shall bear no less likelihood than to see me at her chamber-window, hear me tell Margaret Hero,

hear Margaret term me Claudio; and bring them to see this the very night before the intended wedding,—for in the meantime I will so fashion the matter that Hero shall be absent,—and there shall appear such seeming truth of Hero's disloyalty that jealousy shall be called assurance and all the preparation overthrown.

*D. John.* Grow this to what adverse issue it can, I will put it in practice. He cunning in the working this, and thy fee is a thousand ducats.

*Bora.* Be you constant in the accusation and my cunning shall not shame me.

*D. John.* I will presently go learn their day of marriage. *[Exeunt.]*

### SCENE III. LEONATO'S orchard.

*Enter BENEDICK.*

*Bene.* Boy!

*Enter Boy.*

*Boy.* Signior?

*Bene.* In my chamber-window lies a book: bring it hither to me in the orchard.

*Boy.* I am here already, sir.

*Bene.* I know that; but I would have thee hence, and here again. *[Exit Boy.]* I do much wonder that one man, seeing how much another man is a fool when he dedicates his behaviours to love, will, after he hath laughed at such shallow follies in others, become the argument of his own scorn by falling in love; and such a man is Claudio. I have known when there was no music with him but the drum and the fife; and now had he rather hear the tabor and the pipe: I have known when he would have walked ten mile a-foot to see a good armour; and now will he lie ten nights awake, carving the fashion of a new doublet. He was wont to speak plain and to the purpose, like an honest man and a soldier; and now is he turned orthography; his words are a very fantastical banquet, just so many strange dishes. May I be so converted and see with these eyes? I cannot tell; I think not: I will not be sworn but love may transform me to an oyster; but I'll take my oath on it, till he have made an oyster of me, he shall never make me such a fool. One woman is fair, yet I am well; another is wise, yet I am well; another virtuous, yet I am well; but till all graces be in one woman, one woman shall not come in my grace. Rich she shall be, that's certain; wise, or I'll none; virtuous, or I'll never cheapen her; fair, or I'll never look on her; mild, or come not near me; noble, or not I for an angel; of good discourse, an excellent musician, and her hair shall be of what colour it please God. Ha! the prince and Monsieur Love! I will hide me in the arbour.

*[Withdraws.]*

*Enter DON PEDRO, CLAUDIO, and LEONATO.*

*D. Pedro.* Come, shall we hear this music?

*Claudio.* Yea, my good lord. How still the evening is,

As hush'd on purpose to grace harmony!

*D. Pedro.* See you where Benedick hath hid himself?

*Claud.* O, very well, my lord: the music ended,  
We'll fit the kid-fox with a pennyworth.

*Enter BALTHASAR with Music.*

*D. Pedro.* Come, Balthasar, we'll hear that song again.

*Balth.* O, good my lord, 'tis not so bad a voice  
slander music any more than once.

*D. Pedro.* It is the witness still of excellency  
; put a strange face on his own perfection.  
pray thee, sing, and let me woo no more.

*Balth.* Because you talk of wooing, I will sing;

since many a wooer doth commence his suit  
to her he thinks not worthy, yet he woos,  
and will he swear he loves.

*D. Pedro.* Now, pray thee, come;  
or, if thou wilt hold longer argument,  
do it in notes.

*Balth.* Note this before my notes;  
there's not a note of mine that's worth the  
nothing.

*D. Pedro.* Why, these are very crotchets  
that he speaks;

note, notes, forsooth, and nothing. [*Air.* 59

*Bene.* Now, divine air! now is his soul  
rashed! Is it not strange that sleepers' guts  
should hale souls out of men's bodies? Well, a  
word for my money, when all's done.

The Song.

*Alth.* Sigh no more, ladies, sigh no more,  
Men were deceivers ever,  
One foot in sea and one on shore,  
To one thing constant never:  
Then sigh not so, but let them go,  
And be you blithe and bonny,  
Converting all your sounds of woe  
Into Hey nonny, nonny. 70  
Sing no more ditties, sing no moe,  
Of dumps so dull and heavy;  
The fraud of men was ever so,  
Since summer first was leavy:  
Then sigh not so, &c.

*D. Pedro.* By my troth, a good song.

*Balth.* And an ill singer, my lord.

*D. Pedro.* Ha, no, no, faith; thou singest  
ell enough for a shift. 80

*Bene.* An he had been a dog that should have  
owled thus, they would have hanged him; and  
pray God his bad voice bode no mischief. I  
as lie have heard the night-raven, come  
that plague could have come after it.

*D. Pedro.* Yea, marry, dost thou hear, Bal-  
sasar! I pray thee, get us some excellent  
music; for to-morrow night we would have it  
the Lady Hero's chamber-window.

*Balth.* The best I can, my lord.

*D. Pedro.* Do so: farewell. [*Exit Balthasar.*]  
once hither, Leonato. What was it you told  
me of to-day, that your niece Beatrice was in  
love with Signior Benedick?

*Claud.* O, ay: stalk on, stalk on; the fowl  
its. I did never think that lady would have  
loved any man.

*Leon.* No, nor I neither; but most wonderful  
that she should so dote on Signior Benedick,  
whom she hath in all outward behaviours  
seemed ever to abhor. 100

*Bene.* Is't possible? Sits the wind in that  
corner?

*Leon.* By my troth, my lord, I cannot tell  
what to think of it but that she loves him with  
an enraged affection; it is past the infinite of  
thought.

*D. Pedro.* May be she doth but counterfeit.  
*Claud.* Faith, like enough.

*Leon.* O God, counterfeit! There was never  
counterfeit of passion came so near the life of  
passion as she discovers it. 110

*D. Pedro.* Why, what effects of passion shows  
she?

*Claud.* Bait the hook well; this fish will bite.  
*Leon.* What effects, my lord? She will sit  
you, you heard my daughter tell you how.

*Claud.* She did, indeed.

*D. Pedro.* How, how, I pray you? You a-  
mazo me: I would have thought her spirit had  
been invincible against all assaults of affection.

*Leon.* I would have sworn it had, my lord;  
especially against Benedick.

*Bene.* I should think this a gull, but that the  
white-bearded fellow speaks it: knavery cannot,  
sure, hide himself in such reverence.

*Claud.* He hath taken the infection: hold  
it up.

*D. Pedro.* Hath she made her affection known  
to Benedick?

*Leon.* No; and swears she never will: that's  
her torment. 120

*Claud.* 'Tis true, indeed; so your daughter  
says: 'Shall I,' says she, 'that have so oft en-  
countered him with scorn, write to him that I  
love him?'

*Leon.* This says she now when she is begin-  
ning to write to him; for she'll be up twenty  
times a night, and there will she sit in her  
smock till she have writ a sheet of paper: my  
daughter tells us all.

*Claud.* Now you talk of a sheet of paper, I  
remember a pretty jest your daughter told us of.

*Leon.* O, when she had writ it and was  
reading it over, she found Benedick and Beatrice  
between the sheet!

*Claud.* That.

*Leon.* O, she tore the letter into a thousand  
halfpence; railed at herself, that she should be  
so immodest to write to one that she knew  
would flout her: 'I measure him,' says she, 'by  
my own spirit; for I should flout him, if he writ  
to me; yea, though I love him, I should.' 130

*Claud.* Then down upon her knees she falls,  
weeps, sobs, beats her heart, tears her hair,  
prays, curses; 'O sweet Benedick! God give  
me patience!'

*Leon.* She doth indeed; my daughter says  
so: and the ecstasy hath so much overcome her  
that my daughter is sometime afraid she will do  
a desperate outrage to herself: it is very true.

*D. Pedro.* It were good that Benedick knew  
of it by some other, if she will not discover it.

*Claud.* To what end? He would make but  
a sport of it and torment the poor lady worse.

*D. Pedro.* An he should, it were an alms to hang him. She's an excellent sweet lady; and, out of all suspicion, she is virtuous.

*Claud.* And she is exceeding wise.

*D. Pedro.* In every thing but in loving Benedick. 169

*Leon.* O, my lord, wisdom and blood combating in so tender a body, we have ten proofs to one that blood hath the victory. I am sorry for her, as I have just cause, being her uncle and her guardian.

*D. Pedro.* I would she had bestowed this dotage on me: I would have daffed all other respects and made her half myself. I pray you, tell Benedick of it, and hear what a' will say.

*Leon.* Were it good, think you? 179

*Claud.* Hero thinks surely she will die; for she says she will die, if he love her not, and she will die, ere she make her love known, and she will die, if he woo her, rather than she will bate one breath of her accustomed crossness.

*D. Pedro.* She doth well: if she should make tender of her love, 'tis very possible he'll scorn it; for the man, as you know all, hath a contemptible spirit.

*Claud.* He is a very proper man.

*D. Pedro.* He hath indeed a good outward happiness. 191

*Claud.* Before God! and, in my mind, very wise.

*D. Pedro.* He doth indeed show some sparks that are like wit.

*Claud.* And I take him to be valiant.

*D. Pedro.* As Hector, I assure you: and in the managing of quarrels you may say he is wise; for either he avoids them with great discretion, or undertakes them with a most Christian-like fear. 200

*Leon.* If he do fear God, a' must necessarily keep peace: if he break the peace, he ought to enter into a quarrel with fear and trembling.

*D. Pedro.* And so will he do; for the man doth fear God, howsoever it seems not in him by some large jests he will make. Well, I am sorry for your niece. Shall we go seek Benedick, and tell him of her love?

*Claud.* Never tell him, my lord: let her wear it out with good counsel.

*Leon.* Nay, that's impossible: she may wear her heart out first. 210

*D. Pedro.* Well, we will hear further of it by your daughter: let it cool the while. I love Benedick well; and I could wish he would modestly examine himself, to see how much he is unworthy so good a lady.

*Leon.* My lord, will you walk? dinner is ready.

*Claud.* If he do not dote on her upon this, I will never trust his expectation. 220

*D. Pedro.* Let there be the same net spread for her; and that must your daughter and her gentlewomen carry. The sport will be, when they hold one an opinion of another's dotage, and no such matter: that's the scene that I would see, which will be merely a dumb-show. Let us send her to call him in to dinner.

[*Exeunt Don Pedro, Claudio, and Leonato.*]

*Bene.* [*Coming forward*] This can be no

trick: the conference was sadly borne.

have the truth of this from Hero. They seem pity the lady: it seems her affections have the full bent. Love me! why, it must be requited. I hear how I am censured; they say I will be myself proudly, if I perceive the love come from her; they say too that she will rather die than give any sign of affection. I did never think to marry: I must not seem proud: happy are they that hear their detractions and can put them to mending. They say the lady is fair; 'tis a truth I can bear them witness; and virtuous; 'tis so I cannot reprove it; and wise, but for loving me by my troth, it is no addition to her wit, nor a great argument of her folly, for I will be horrible in love with her. I may chance have some odd quirks and remnants of wit broken on me, because I have rail'd so long against marriage, but doth not his appetite alter? a man loves the meat in his youth that he cannot endure in his age. Shall quips and sentences and these paper bullets of the brain awe a man from the care of his humour? No, the world must be people. When I said I would die a bachelor, I did not think I should live till I were married. He comes Beatrice. By this day! she's a fair lady! I do spy some marks of love in her.

*Enter BEATRICE.*

*Beat.* Against my will I am sent to bid you come in to dinner.

*Bene.* Fair Beatrice, I thank you for your pains.

*Beat.* I took no more pains for those thanks than you take pains to thank me: if it had been painful, I would not have come. 231

*Bene.* You take pleasure then in the message?

*Beat.* Yea, just so much as you may take upon a knife's point and choke a daw without. You have no stomach, signior: fare you well. [Exit.]

*Bene.* Ha! 'Against my will I am sent to bid you come in to dinner; there's a double meaning in that. 'I took no more pains for those thanks than you took pains to thank me; that's as much as to say, Any pains that I take for you is as easy as thanks. If I do not take pity of her, I am a villain; if I do not love her, I am a Jew. I will go get her picture. [Exit.]

## ACT III.

### SCENE I. LEONATO'S garden.

*Enter HERO, MARGARET, and URSULA.*

*Hero.* Good Margaret, run thee to the parlour. There shalt thou find my cousin Beatrice. Proposing with the prince and Claudio: Whisper her ear and tell her, I and Ursula Walk in the orchard and our whole discourse Is all of her; say that thou overheard'st us; And bid her steal into the pleached bower, Where honeysuckles, ripen'd by the sun, Forbid the sun to enter, like favourites, Made proud by princes, that advance their pride Against that power that bred it: there will she hide her, 1

To listen our purpose. This is thy office;  
 Bear thee well in it and leave us alone.

*Marg.* I'll make her come, I warrant you,  
 presently. *[Exit.]*

*Hero.* Now, Ursula, when Beatrice doth  
 come,

As we do trace this alley up and down,  
 her talk must only be of Benedick.  
 When I do name him, let it be thy part  
 To praise him more than ever man did merit:  
 My talk to thee must be how Benedick  
 is sick in love with Beatrice. Of this matter <sup>20</sup>  
 is little Cupid's crafty arrow made,  
 That only wounds by hearsay.

*Enter BEATRICE, behind.*

Now begin;

For look where Beatrice, like a lapwing, runs  
 Close by the ground, to hear our conference.

*Urs.* The pleasantst angling is to see the fish  
 Cut with her golden oars the silver stream,  
 And greedily devour the treacherous bait:

angle we for Beatrice; who even now  
 is couched in the woodbine coverture. <sup>30</sup>  
 Fear you not my part of the dialogue.

*Hero.* Then go we near her, that her ear lose  
 nothing

Of the false sweet bait that we lay for it.  
*[Approaching the tower.]*

No, truly, Ursula, she is too disdainful;  
 I know her spirits are as coy and wild  
 As haggards of the rock.

*Urs.* But are you sure  
 That Benedick loves Beatrice so entirely?

*Hero.* So says the prince and my new-trothed  
 lord.

*Urs.* And did they bid you tell her of it,  
 madam?

*Hero.* They did entreat me to acquaint her  
 of it; <sup>40</sup>

But I persuaded them, if they loved Benedick,  
 To wish him wrestle with affection,  
 And never to let Beatrice know of it.

*Urs.* Why did you so? Doth not the gentle-  
 man

Deserve as full as fortunate a bed  
 As ever Beatrice shall couch upon?

*Hero.* O god of love! I know he doth deserve  
 As much as may be yielded to a man:

But Nature never framed a woman's heart  
 Of prouder stuff than that of Beatrice; <sup>50</sup>

to sustain and scorn ride sparkling in her eyes,  
 Misprising what they look on, and her wit

Values itself so highly that to her  
 All matter else seems weak: she cannot love,

Nor take no shape nor project of affection,  
 She is so self-endear'd.

*Urs.* Sure, I think so;  
 And therefore certainly it were not good

She knew his love, lest she make sport at it.

*Hero.* Why, you speak truth. I never yet  
 saw man,

How wise, how noble, young, how rarely fea-  
 tured, <sup>60</sup>

But she would spell him backward: if fair-faced,  
 She would swear the gentleman should be her  
 sister;

If black, why, Nature, drawing of an antique,  
 Made a foul blot; if tall, a lance ill-headed;

If low, an agate very vilely cut;  
 If speaking, why, a vane blown with all winds;

If silent, why, a block moved with none.  
 So turns she every man the wrong side out

And never gives to truth and virtue that  
 Which simpleness and merit purchaseth. <sup>70</sup>

*Urs.* Sure, sure, such carping is not com-  
 mendable.

*Hero.* No, not to be so odd and from all  
 fashions

As Beatrice is, cannot be commendable:  
 But who dare tell her so? If I should speak,

She would mock me into air; O, she would  
 laugh me.

It were a better death than die with mocks,  
 Which is as bad as die with tickling. <sup>80</sup>

*Urs.* Yet tell her of it: hear what she will  
 say.

*Hero.* No; rather I will go to Benedick  
 And counsel him to fight against his passion.

And, truly, I'll devise some honest slanders  
 To stain my cousin with: one doth not know

How much an ill word may enpoison liking.  
*Urs.* O, do not do your cousin such a wrong.

She cannot be so much without true judge-  
 ment—

Having so swift and excellent a wit  
 As she is prized to have—as to refuse <sup>90</sup>

So rare a gentleman as Signior Benedick.  
*Hero.* He is the only man of Italy,

Always excepted my dear Claudio.  
*Urs.* I pray you, be not angry with me,

madam,  
 Speaking my fancy: Signior Benedick,

For shape, for bearing, argument and valour,  
 Goes foremost in report through Italy.

*Hero.* Indeed, he hath an excellent good  
 name.

*Urs.* His excellence did earn it, ere he had it.  
 When are you married, madam? <sup>100</sup>

*Hero.* Why, every day, to-morrow. Come,  
 go in:

I'll show thee some attires, and have thy counsel  
 Which is the best to furnish me to-morrow.

*Urs.* She's lime! I warrant you: we have  
 caught her, madam.

*Hero.* If it proves so, then loving goes by  
 haps:

Some Cupid kills with arrows, some with traps.  
*[Exit Hero and Ursula.]*

*Beat.* *[Coming forward.]* What fire is in  
 mine ears? Can this be true?

Stand I condemn'd for pride and scorn so  
 much?

Contempt, farewell! and maiden pride, adieu!  
 No glory lives behind the back of such. <sup>110</sup>

And, Benedick, love on; I will requite thee,  
 Taming my wild heart to thy loving hand:

If thou dost love, my kindness shall incite  
 thee

To bind our loves up in a holy band;  
 For others say thou dost deserve, and I

Believe it better than reportingly. *[Exit.]*

## SCENE II. A room in LEONATO'S house.

Enter DON PEDRO, CLAUDIO, BENEDICK, and LEONATO.

*D. Pedro.* I do but stay till your marriage be consummate, and then go I toward Arragon.

*Claud.* I'll bring you thither, my lord, if you'll vouchsafe me.

*D. Pedro.* Nay, that would be as great a soil in the new gloss of your marriage as to show a child his new coat and forbid him to wear it. I will only be bold with Benedick for his company; for, from the crown of his head to the sole of his foot, he is all mirth: he hath twice or thrice cut Cupid's bow-string and the little hangman dare not shoot at him; he hath a heart as sound as a bell and his tongue is the clapper, for what his heart thinks his tongue speaks.

*Bene.* Gallants, I am not as I have been.

*Leon.* So say I: methinks you are sadder.

*Claud.* I hope he be in love.

*D. Pedro.* Hang him, truant! there's no true drop of blood in him, to be truly touch'd with love; if he be sad, he wants money. 20

*Bene.* I have the toothache.

*D. Pedro.* Draw it.

*Bene.* Hang it!

*Claud.* You must hang it first, and draw it afterwards.

*D. Pedro.* What! sigh for the toothache?

*Leon.* Where is but a humour or a worm.

*Bene.* Well, every one can master a grief but he that has it.

*Claud.* Yet say I, he is in love. 30

*D. Pedro.* There is no appearance of fancy in him, unless it be a fancy that he hath to strange disguises; as, to be a Dutchman to-day, a Frenchman to-morrow, or in the shape of two countries at once, as, a German from the waist downward, all slops, and a Spaniard from the hip upward, no doubt. Unless he have a fancy to this foolery, as it appears he hath, he is no fool for fancy, as you would have it appear he is.

*Claud.* If he be not in love with some woman, there is no believing old signs; a brushes his hat o' mornings; what should that bode?

*D. Pedro.* Hath any man seen him at the barber's?

*Claud.* No, but the barber's man hath been seen with him, and the old ornament of his cheek hath already stufled tennis-balls.

*Leon.* Indeed, he looks younger than he did, by the loss of a beard.

*D. Pedro.* Nay, a' rubs himself with civet: can you smell him out by that? 51

*Claud.* That's as much as to say, the sweet youth's in love.

*D. Pedro.* The greatest note of it is his melancholy.

*Claud.* And when was he wont to wash his face?

*D. Pedro.* Yea, or to paint himself? for the which, I hear what they say of him.

*Claud.* Nay, but his jesting spirit; which is now crept into a lute-string and now governed by stops.

*D. Pedro.* Indeed, that tells a heavy tale for him: conclude, conclude he is in love.

*Claud.* Nay, but I know who loves him.

*D. Pedro.* That would I know too: I warrant, one that knows him not.

*Claud.* Yes, and his ill conditions; and, in despite of all, dies for him.

*D. Pedro.* She shall be buried with her face upwards. 71

*Bene.* Yet is this no charm for the toothache. Old signior, walk aside with me: I have studied eight or nine wise words to speak to you, which these hobby-horses must not hear.

[*Exeunt Benedick and Leonat.*]

*D. Pedro.* For my life, to break with him about Beatrice.

*Claud.* 'Tis even so. Hero and Margaret have by this played their parts with Beatrice: and then the two bears will not bite one another when they meet. 81

Enter DON JOHN.

*D. John.* My lord and brother, God save you!

*D. Pedro.* Good den, brother.

*D. John.* If your leisure served, I would speak with you.

*D. Pedro.* In private?

*D. John.* If it please you: yet Count Claudio may hear; for what I would speak of concerns him.

*D. Pedro.* What's the matter? 90

*D. John.* [To Claudio] Means your lordship to be married to-morrow?

*D. Pedro.* You know he does.

*D. John.* I know not that, when he knows what I know.

*Claud.* If there be any impediment, I pray you discover it.

*D. John.* You may think I love you not: let that appear hereafter, and aim better at me by that I now will manifest. For my brother, I think he holds you well, and in dearth of heart hath help to effect your ensuing marriage—surely suit ill spent and labour ill bestowed.

*D. Pedro.* Why, what's the matter?

*D. John.* I came hither to tell you; and, circumstances shortened, for she has been too long a talking of, the lady is disloyal.

*Claud.* Who, Hero?

*D. John.* Even she; Leonato's Hero, your Hero, every man's Hero.

*Claud.* Disloyal?

*D. John.* The word is too good to paint her wickedness; I could say she were worse: think you of a worse title, and I will fit her to it. Wonder not till further warrant: go but with me to-night, you shall see her chamber-window entered, even the night before her wedding-day: if you love her then, to-morrow wed her; but it would better fit your honour to change your mind.

*Claud.* May this be so?

*D. Pedro.* I will not think it.

*D. John.* If you dare not trust that you see, confess not that you know: if you will follow me, I will show you enough; and when you have seen more and heard more, proceed accordingly.

*Clau.* If I see any thing to-night why I should not marry her to-morrow, in the congregation, where I should wed, there will I shame her.

*D. Pedro.* And, as I wooed for thee to obtain her, I will join with thee to disgrace her.

*D. John.* I will disparage her no farther till you are my witnesses: bear it coldly but till midnight, and let the issue show itself.

*D. Pedro.* O day untowardly turned!

*Clau.* O mischief strangely thwarting!

*D. John.* O plague right well prevented! so will you say when you have seen the sequel.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III. A street.

*Enter DOGBERRY and VERGES with the Watch.*

*Dog.* Are you good men and true?

*Verg.* Yea, or else it were pity but they should suffer salvation, body and soul.

*Dog.* Nay, that were a punishment too good for them, if they should have any allegiance in them, being chosen for the prince's watch.

*Verg.* Well, give them their charge, neighbour Dogberry.

*Dog.* First, who think you the most desartless man to be constable?

*First Watch.* Hugh Otecake, sir, or George Seacole; for they can write and read.

*Dog.* Come hither, neighbour Seacole. God hath blessed you with a good name: to be a well-favoured man is the gift of fortune; but to write and read comes by nature.

*Sec. Watch.* Both which, master constable,—

*Dog.* You have: I knew it would be your answer. Well, for your favour, sir, why, give God thanks, and make us boast of it; and for your writing and reading, let that appear when there is no need of such vanity. You are thought here to be the most senseless and fit man for the constable of the watch; therefore bear you the lantern. This is your charge: you shall comprehend all vagrom men; you are to bid any man stand, in the prince's name.

*Sec. Watch.* How if a' will not stand?

*Dog.* Why, then, take no note of him, but let him go; and presently call the rest of the watch together and thank God you are rid of knave.

*Verg.* If he will not stand when he is bidder he is none of the prince's subjects.

*Dog.* True, and they are to meddle with none but the prince's subjects. You shall also make no noise in the streets; for for the watch to babble and to talk is most tolerable and not to be endured.

*Watch.* We will rather sleep than talk: we know what belongs to a watch.

*Dog.* Why, you speak like an ancient and most quiet watchman; for I cannot see how sleeping should offend: only, have a care that your bills be not stolen. Well, you are to call at all the ale-houses, and bid those that are drunk get them to bed.

*Watch.* How if they will not?

*Dog.* Why, then, let them alone till they are better: if they make you not then the better

answer, you may say they are not the men you took them for.

*Watch.* Well, sir.

*Dog.* If you meet a thief, you may suspect him, by virtue of your office, to be no true nan; and, for such kind of men, the less you meddle or make with them, why, the more is for your honesty.

*Watch.* If we know him to be a thief, shall we not lay hands on him?

*Dog.* Truly, by your office, you may; but I think they that touch pitch will be defiled: the most peaceable way for you, if you do take a thief, is to let him show himself what he is and teal out of your company.

*Verg.* You have been always called a merciful nan, partner.

*Dog.* Truly, I would not hang a dog by my will, much more a man who hath any honesty in him.

*Verg.* If you hear a child cry in the night, you must call to the nurse and bid her still it.

*Watch.* How if the nurse be asleep and will not hear us?

*Dog.* Why, then, depart in peace, and let the child wake her with crying; for the ewe that will not hear her lamb when it baes will never answer a calf when he bleats.

*Verg.* 'Tis very true.

*Dog.* This is the end of the charge:—you, constable, are to present the prince's own person: if you meet the prince in the night, you may stay him.

*Verg.* Nay, by'r lady, that I think a' cannot.

*Dog.* Five shillings to one on't, say any man that knows the statutes, he may stay him; marry, not without the prince's own person: for, indeed, the watch ought to offend no man; and it is an offence to stay a man against his will.

*Verg.* By'r lady, I think it be so.

*Dog.* Ha, ah, ha! Well, masters, good night: an there be any matter of weight chances, call up me: keep your fellows' counsels and your own; and good night. Come, neighbour.

*Watch.* Well, masters, we hear our charge: let us go sit here upon the church-bench till two, and then all to bed.

*Dog.* One word more, honest neighbours. I pray you, watch about Signior Leonato's door; for the wedding being there to-morrow, there is a great coil to-night. Adieu: be vigilant, I beseech you. [*Exeunt Dogberry and Verges.*]

### *Enter BORACHIO and CONRADE.*

*Bora.* What, Conrade!

*Watch.* [*Aside.*] Peace: stir not.

*Bora.* Conrade, I say!

*Con.* Here, man; I am at thy elbow.

*Bora.* Mass, and my elbow itched; I thought there would a scab follow.

*Con.* I will owe thee an answer for that: and now forward with thy tale.

*Bora.* Stand thee close, then, under this pent-house, for it drizzles rain; and I will, like a true drunkard, utter all to thee.

*Watch.* [Aside] Some treason, masters: yet stand close.

*Bora.* Therefore know I have earned of Don John a thousand ducats.

*Con.* Is it possible that any villany should be so dear?

*Bora.* Thou shouldst rather ask if it were possible any villany should be so rich; for when rich villains have need of poor ones, poor ones may make up what price they will.

*Con.* I wonder at it.

*Bora.* That shows thou art unconfirmed. Thou knowest that the fashion of a doublet, or a hat, or a cloak, is nothing to a man.

*Con.* Ycs, it is apparel.

*Bora.* I mean, the fashion.

*Con.* Yes, the fashion is the fashion. 129

*Bora.* Tush! I may as well say the fool's the fool. But seest thou not what a deformed thief this fashion is?

*Watch.* [Aside] I know that Deformed: a' has been a vile thief this seven year; a' goes up and down like a gentleman: I remember his name.

*Bora.* Didst thou not hear somebody?

*Con.* No; 'twas the vane on the house.

*Bora.* Seest thou not, I say, what a deformed thief this fashion is? how giddily a' turns about all the hot bloods between fourteen and five-and-thirty? sometimes fashioning them like Pharaoh's soldiers in the reechy painting, sometime like god Bel's priests in the old church-window, sometime like the shaven Hercules in the smirched worm-eaten tapestry, where his codpiece seems as massy as his club?

*Con.* All this I see; and I see that the fashion wears out more apparel than the man. But art not thou thyself giddy with the fashion too, that thou hast shifted out of thy tale into telling me of the fashion?

*Bora.* Not so, neither; but know that I have to-night wooed Margaret, the Lady Hero's gentlewoman, by the name of Hero: she leans me out at her mistress' chamber-window, bids me a thousand times good night,—I tell this tale vilely:—I should first tell thee how the prince, Claudio and my master, planted and placed and possessed by my master Don John, saw afar off in the orchard this amiable encounter. 161

*Con.* And thought they Margaret was Hero?

*Bora.* Two of them did, the prince and Claudio; but the devil my master knew she was Margaret; and partly by his oaths, which first possessed them, partly by the dark night, which did deceive them, but chiefly by my villany, which did confirm any slander that Don John had made, away went Claudio enraged; swore he would meet her, as he was appointed, next morning at the temple, and there, before the whole congregation, shame her with what he saw o'er night and send her home again without a husband.

*First Watch.* We charge you, in the prince's name, stand!

*Sec. Watch.* Call up the right master constable. We have here recovered the most dangerous piece of lechery that ever was known in the commonwealth. 191

*First Watch.* And one Deformed is one of them: I know him; a' wears a lock.

*Con.* Masters, masters,—

*Sec. Watch.* You'll be made bring Deformed forth, I warrant you.

*Con.* Masters,—

*First Watch.* Never speak: we charge you let us obey you to go with us. 189

*Bora.* We are like to prove a goodly commodity, being taken up of these men's bills.

*Con.* A commodity in question, I warrant you. Come, we'll obey you. [Exeunt.]

#### SCENE IV. HERO'S apartment.

*Enter HERO, MARGARET, and URSULA.*

*Hero.* Good Ursula, wake my cousin Beatrice and desire her to rise.

*Urs.* I will, lady.

*Hero.* And bid her come hither.

*Urs.* Well. [Exit.]

*Marg.* Troth, I think your other rabato were better.

*Hero.* No, pray thee, good Meg, I'll wear this.

*Marg.* By my troth, 's not so good; and I warrant your cousin will say so.

*Hero.* My cousin's a fool, and thou art another: I'll wear none but this.

*Marg.* I like the new tire within excellently, if the hair were a thought browner; and your gown's a most rare fashion, i' faith. I saw the Duchess of Milan's gown that they praise so.

*Hero.* O, that exceeds, they say.

*Marg.* By my troth, 's but a night-gown in respect of yours: cloth o' gold, and cuts, and laced with silver, set with pearls, down sleeves, side sleeves, and skirts, round underborne with a bluish tinsel: but for a fine, quaint, graceful and excellent fashion, yours is worth ten on't.

*Hero.* God give me joy to wear it! for my heart is exceeding heavy.

*Marg.* 'Twill be heavier soon by the weight of a man.

*Hero.* Fie upon thee! art not ashamed?

*Marg.* Of what, lady? of speaking honourably? Is not marriage honourable in a beggar? Is not your lord honourable without marriage? I think you would have me say, 'saving your reverence, a husband'; an bad thinking do not wrest true speaking, I'll offend nobody: is there any harm in 'the heavier for a husband'? None. I think, an it be the right husband and the right wife; otherwise 'tis light, and not heavy: ask my Lady Beatrice else; here she comes.

*Enter BEATRICE.*

*Hero.* Good morrow, coz.

*Beat.* Good morrow, sweet Hero. 20

*Hero.* Why, how now? do you speak in the sick tune?

*Beat.* I am out of all other tune, methinks.

*Marg.* Clap's into 'Light o' love'; that goes without a burden: do you sing it, and I'll dance it.

*Beat.* Ye light o' love, with your heels! then, if your husband have stables enough, you'll see he shall lack no horns.



*Marg.* O illegitimate construction! I scorn that with my heels.

*Beat.* 'Tis almost five o'clock, cousin; 'tis time you were ready. By my troth, I am exceeding ill: heigh-ho!

*Marg.* For a hawk, a horse, or a husband?

*Beat.* For the letter that begins them all, H.

*Marg.* Well, an you be not turned Turk, there's no more sailing by the star.

*Beat.* What means the fool, throw!

*Marg.* Nothing I; but God send every one their heart's desire!

*Herv.* These gloves the count sent me; they are an excellent perfume.

*Beat.* I am stuffed, cousin; I cannot smell.

*Marg.* A maid, and stuffed! there's goodly catching of cold.

*Beat.* O, God help me! God help me! how long have you professed apprehension?

*Marg.* Ever since you left it. Doth not my wit become me rarely?

*Beat.* It is not seen enough, you should wear it in your cap. By my troth, I am sick.

*Marg.* Get you some of this distilled Cardus Benedictus, and lay it to your heart: it is the only thing for a qualm.

*Herv.* There thou prickest her with a thistle.

*Beat.* Benedictus! why Benedictus? you have some moral in this Benedictus.

*Marg.* Moral! no, by my troth, I have no moral meaning; I meant, plain holy-thistle. You may think perchance that I think you are in love: nay, by'r lady, I am not such a fool to think what I list, nor I list not to think what I can, nor indeed I cannot think, if I would think my heart out of thinking, that you are in love or that you will be in love or that you can be in love. Yet Benedick was such another, and now is he become a man: he swore he would never marry, and yet now, in despite of his heart, he eats his meat without grudging: and how you may be converted I know not, but methinks you look with your eyes as other women do.

*Beat.* What pace is this that thy tongue keeps!

*Marg.* Not a false gallop.

*Re-enter URSULA.*

*Ura.* Madam, withdraw: the prince, the count, Signior Benedick, Don John, and all the gallants of the town, are come to fetch you to church.

*Herv.* Help to dress me, good coz, good Meg, good Ursula.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. Another room in LEONATO'S house.

*Enter LEONATO, with DOGBERRY and VERGES.*

*Leon.* What would you with me, honest neighbour?

*Dog.* Marry, sir, I would have some confidence with you that concerns you nearly.

*Leon.* Brief, I pray you; for you see it is a busy time with me.

*Dog.* Marry, this it is, sir.

*Verg.* Yes, in truth it is, sir.

*Leon.* What is it, my good friends?

*Dog.* Goodman Verges, sir, speaks a little off the matter: an old man, sir, and his wits are not so blunt as, God help, I would desire they were; but, in faith, honest as the skin between his brows.

*Verg.* Yes, I thank God I am as honest as any man living that is an old man and no honestest than I.

*Dog.* Comparisons are odorous: palabras, neighbour Verges.

*Leon.* Neighbours, you are tedious.

*Dog.* It pleases your worship to say so, but we are the poor duke's officers; but truly, for mine own part, if I were as tedious as a king, I could find it in my heart to bestow it all of your worship.

*Leon.* All thy tediousness on me, ah!

*Dog.* Yea, an 'twere a thousand pound more than tis; for I hear as good exclamation on your worship as of any man in the city; and though I be but a poor man, I am glad to hear it.

*Verg.* And so am I.

*Leon.* I would fain know what you have to say.

*Verg.* Marry, sir, our watch to-night, excepting your worship's presence, ha' ta'en a couple of as arrant knaves as any in Messina.

*Dog.* A good old man, sir; he will be talking: as they say, When the age is in, the wit is out: God help us! it is a world to see. Well said, I faith, neighbour Verges: well, God's a good man; an two men ride of a horse, one must ride behind. An honest soul, I faith, sir; by my troth he is, as ever broke bread; but God is to be worshipp'd; all men are not alike; alas, good neighbour!

*Leon.* Indeed, neighbour, he comes too short of you.

*Dog.* Gifts that God gives.

*Leon.* I must leave you.

*Dog.* One word, sir: our watch, sir, have indeed comprehended two aspicious persons, and we would have them this morning examined before your worship.

*Leon.* Take their examination yourself and bring it me: I am now in great haste, as it may appear unto you.

*Dog.* It shall be suffigance.

*Leon.* Drink some wine ere you go: fare you well.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My lord, they stay for you to give your daughter to her husband.

*Leon.* I'll wait upon them: I am ready.

[*Exeunt Leonato and Messenger.*]

*Dog.* Go, good partner, go, get you to Francis Seacole; bid him bring his pen and inkhorn to the gaol: we are now to examination these men.

*Verg.* And we must do it wisely.

*Dog.* We will spare for no wit, I warrant you; here's that shall drive some of them to a noncome: only get the learned writer to set down our excommunication and meet me at the gaol.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I. A church.

*Enter DON PEDRO, DON JOHN, LEONATO, FRIAR FRANCIS, CLAUDIO, BENEDECK, HERO, BEATRICE, and attendants.*

*Leon.* Come, Friar Francis, be brief; only to the plain form of marriage, and you shall recount their particular duties afterwards.

*Friar.* You come hither, my lord, to marry this lady.

*Claud.* No.

*Leon.* To be married to her: friar, you come to marry her.

*Friar.* Lady, you come hither to be married to this count. 10

*Hero.* I do.

*Friar.* If either of you know any inward impediment why you should not be conjoined, I charge you, on your souls, to utter it.

*Claud.* Know you any, Hero?

*Hero.* None, my lord.

*Friar.* Know you any, count?

*Leon.* I dare make his answer, none.

*Claud.* O, what men dare do! what men may do! what men daily do, not knowing what they do! 21

*Benc.* How now! interjections? Why, then, some be of laughing, as, ah, ha, he!

*Claud.* Stand thee by, friar. Father, by your leave:

Will you with free and unconstrained soul

Give me this maid, your daughter?

*Leon.* As freely, son, as God did give her me.

*Claud.* And what have I to give you back, whose worth

May counterpoise this rich and precious gift?

*D. Pedro.* Nothing, unless you render her again. 30

*Claud.* Sweet prince, you learn me noble thankfulness.

There, Leonato, take her back again:

Give not this rotten orange to your friend:

She's but the sign and semblance of her honour.

Behold how like a maid she blushes here!

O, what authority and show of truth

Can cunning sin cover itself withal!

Comes not that blood as modest evidence

To witness simple virtue? Would you not swear,

All you that see her, that she were a maid, 40

By these exterior shows? But she is none:

She knows the heat of a luxurious bed;

Her blush is guiltiness, not modesty.

*Leon.* What do you mean, my lord?

*Claud.*

Not to be married,

Not to knit my soul to an approved wanton.

*Leon.* Dear my lord, if you, in your own

proof,

Have vanquish'd the resistance of her youth,

And made defeat of her virginity,—

*Claud.* I know what you would say: if I have known her,

You will say she did embrace me as a husband, And so extenuate the forehead sin: 51

No, Leonato,

I never tempted her with word too large;

But, as a brother to his sister, show'd

Bashful sincerity and comely love.

*Hero.* And seem'd I ever otherwise to you?

*Claud.* Out on thee! Seeming! I will write against it:

You seem to me, as Dian in her orb,  
As chaste as is the bud ere it be blown;

But you are more interperate in your blood  
Than Venus, or those pamper'd animals

That rage in savage sensuality.

*Hero.* Is my lord well, that he doth speak so wide?

*Leon.* Sweet prince, why speak not you?

*D. Pedro.* What should I speak?

I stand dishonour'd, that have gone about

To link my dear friend to a common stale.

*Leon.* Are these things spoken, or do I but dream?

*D. John.* Sir, they are spoken, and these things are true.

*Benc.* This looks not like a nuptial.

*Hero.* True! O God!

*Claud.* Leonato, stand I here?

Is this the prince? is this the prince's brother? 70

Is this face Hero's? are our eyes our own?

*Leon.* All this is so: but what of this, my lord?

*Claud.* Let me but move one question to your daughter:

And, by that fatherly and kindly power

That you have in her, bid her answer truly.

*Leon.* I charge thee do so, as thou art my child.

*Hero.* O, God defend me! how am I beset! What kind of catechising call you this?

*Claud.* To make you answer truly to your name. 80

*Hero.* Is it not Hero? Who can blot that name

With any just reproach?

*Claud.* Marry, that can Hero;

Hero itself can blot out Hero's virtue.

What man was he talk'd with you yesternight

(Out at your window betwixt twelve and one?)

Now, if you are a maid, answer to this.

*Hero.* I talk'd with no man at that hour, my lord.

*D. Pedro.* Why, then are you no maiden. Leonato,

I am sorry you must hear: upon mine honour, Myself, my brother and this griev'd count, 90

Did see her, hear her, at that hour last night

Talk with a ruffian at her chamber-window;

Who hath indeed, most like a liberal villain,

Confess'd the vile encounters they have had

A thousand times in secret.

*D. John.* Fie, fie! they are not to be named, my lord,

Not to be spoke of;

There is not chastity enough in language

Without offence to utter them. Thus, pretty lady,

I am sorry for thy much misgovernment. 100

*Claud.* O Hero, what a Hero hadst thou been,

If half thy outward graces had been placed About thy thoughts and counsels of thy heart!

But fare thee well, most foul, most fair! farewell,

Thou pure impiety and impious purity!  
For thee I'll lock up all the gates of love,  
And on my eyelids shall conjecture hang,  
To turn all beauty into thoughts of harm,  
And never shall it more be gracious.

*Leon.* Hath no man's dagger here a point  
for me? [*Hero swears.* 110

*Beat.* Why, how now, cousin! wherefore  
sink you down?

*D. John.* Come, let us go. These things,  
come thus to light,  
Smother her spirits up.

[*Exeunt Don Pedro, Don John, and Claudio.*

*Bene.* How doth the lady?

*Beat.* Dead, I think. Help, uncle!  
Hero! why, Hero! Uncle! Signior Benedick!

*Friar.* O Fate! take not away thy heavy  
hand.

Death is the fairest cover for her shame  
That may be wish'd for.

*Beat.* How now, cousin Hero!

*Friar.* Have comfort, lady.

*Leon.* Dost thou look up? 120

*Friar.* Yea, wherefore should she not?

*Leon.* Wherefore! Why, doth not every  
earthly thing

Cry shame upon her? Could she here deny  
The story that is printed in her blood?  
Do not live, Hero; do not open thine eyes:  
For, did I think thou wouldst not quickly die,  
Thought I thy spirits were stronger than thy  
shames.

Myself would, on the rearward of reproaches,  
Strike at thy life. Grieved I, I had but one!  
Clid I for that at frugal nature's frame? 130

O, one too much by thee! Why had I one?

Why ever wast thou lovely in my eyes?

Why had I not with charitable hand

Took up a beggar's issue at my gates,

Who smirched thus and mired with infamy,

I might have said 'No part of it is mine';

This shame derives itself from unknown loins?

But mine and mine I loved and mine I praised

And mine that I was proud on, mine so much

That I myself was to myself not mine. 140

Valuing of her,—why, she, O, she is fallen

Into a pit of ink, that the wide sea

Hath drops too few to wash her clean again

And salt too little which may season give

To her foul-tainted flesh!

*Bene.* Sir, sir, be patient.

For my part, I am so attired in wonder,

I know not what to say.

*Beat.* O, on my soul, my cousin is belied!

*Bene.* Lady, were you her bedfellow last

night?

*Beat.* No, truly not; although, until last

night, 150

I have this twelvemonth been her bedfellow.

*Leon.* Confirm'd, confirm'd! O, that is

stronger made

Which was before barr'd up with rails of iron!

Would the two princes lie, and Claudio lie,

Who loved her so, that, speaking of her foulness,

Wash'd it with tears? Hence from her! let

her die.

*Friar.* Hear me a little; for I have only been

Silent so long and given way unto

† This course of fortune . . .

By noting of the lady I have mark'd 160

A thousand blushing apparitions

To start into her face, a thousand innocent

shames

In angel whiteness beat away those blushes;

And in her eye these hath appear'd a fire,

To burn the errors that these princes hold

Against her maiden truth. Call me a fool;

Trust not my reading nor my observations,

Which with experimental seal doth warrant

The tenour of my book; trust not my age,

My reverence, calling, nor divinity, 170

If this sweet lady lie not guiltless here

Under some biting error.

*Leon.* Friar, it cannot be.

Thou seest that all the grace that she hath left

Is that she will not add to her damnation

A sin of perjury; she not denies it:

Why seek'st at thou then to cover with excuse

That which appears in proper nakedness?

*Friar.* Lady, what man is he you are

accused of?

*Hero.* They know that do accuse me; I know

none:

If I know more of any man alive 180

Than that which maiden modesty doth warrant,

I let all my sins lack mercy! O my father,

Prove you that any man with me conversed

At hours unmeet, or that I yesternight

Maintain'd the change of words with any

creature,

Refuse me, hate me, torture me to death!

*Friar.* There is some strange misprision in

the princes.

*Bene.* Two of them have the very bent of

honour;

And if their wisdoms be misled in this,

The practice of it lives in John the bastard, 190

Whose spirits toil in frame of villanies.

*Leon.* I know not. If they speak but truth

of her,

These hands shall tear her; if they wrong her

honour,

The proudest of them shall well hear of it.

Time hath not yet so dried this blood of mine,

Nor age so eat up my invention,

Nor fortune made such havoc of my means,

Nor my bad life left me so much of friends,

But they shall find, awaked in such a kind, 200

Both strength of limb and policy of mind,

Ability in means and choice of friends,

To quit me of them thoroughly.

*Friar.*

Pause awhile,

And let my counsel sway you in this case.

Your daughter here the princes left for dead:

Let her awhile be secretly kept in,

And publish it that she is dead indeed;

Maintain a mourning ostentation

And on your family's old monument

Hang mournful epitaphs and do all rites

That appertain unto a burial. 210

*Leon.* What shall become of this? what will

this do?

*Friar.* Marry, this well carried shall on her

behalf

Change slander to remorse; that is some good:

But not for that dream I on this strange course,  
 But on this travail look for greater birth.  
 She dying, as it must be so maintain'd,  
 Upon the instant that she was accused,  
 Shall be lamented, pitied and excused  
 Of every hearer : for it so falls out  
 That what we have we prize not to the worth <sup>230</sup>  
 Whiles we enjoy it, but being lack'd and lost,  
 Why, then we rack the value, then we find  
 The virtue that possession would not show us  
 Whiles it was ours. So will it fare with Claudio :  
 When he shall hear she died upon his words,  
 The idea of her life shall sweetly creep  
 Into his study of imagination,  
 And every lovely organ of her life  
 Shall come apparell'd in more precious habit,  
 More moving-delicate and full of life, <sup>230</sup>  
 Into the eye and prospect of his soul,  
 Than when she lived indeed ; then shall he  
 mourn,

If ever love had interest in his liver,  
 And wish he had not so accused her,  
 No, though he thought his accusation true.  
 Let this be so, and doubt not but success  
 Will fashion the event in better shape  
 Than I can lay it down in likelihood.  
 But if all aim but this be levell'd false,  
 The supposition of the lady's death <sup>240</sup>  
 Will quench the wonder of her infamy :  
 And if it sort not well, you may conceal her,  
 As best befits her wounded reputation,  
 In some reclusive and religious life.  
 Out of all eyes, tongues, minds and injuries.

*Bene.* Signior Leonato, let the friar advise  
 you :  
 And though you know my inwardness and love  
 Is very much unto the prince and Claudio,  
 Yet, by mine honour, I will deal in this  
 As secretly and justly as your soul <sup>250</sup>  
 Should with your body.

*Leon.* Being that I flow in grief,  
 The smallest twine may lead me.  
*Friar.* 'Tis well consented : presently away ;  
 For to strange sores strangely they strain the  
 cure.

Come, lady, die to live : this wedding-day  
 Perhaps is but prolong'd : have patience and  
 endure.

[*Exeunt all but Benedick and Beatrice.*  
*Bene.* Lady Beatrice, have you wept all this  
 while?

*Beat.* Yea, and I will weep a while longer.  
*Bene.* I will not desire that.  
*Beat.* You have no reason ; I do it freely. <sup>260</sup>  
*Bene.* Surely I do believe your fair cousin is  
 wronged.

*Beat.* Ah, how much might the man deserve  
 of me that would right her!

*Bene.* Is there any way to show such friend-  
 ship?

*Beat.* A very even way, but no such friend.  
*Bene.* May a man do it?

*Beat.* It is a man's office, but not yours.

*Bene.* I do love nothing in the world so well  
 as you : is not that strange? <sup>270</sup>

*Beat.* As strange as the thing I know not.  
 It were as possible for me to say I loved nothing  
 so well as you : but believe me not ; and yet I

lie not ; I confess nothing, nor I deny nothing.  
 I am sorry for my cousin.

*Bene.* By my sword, Beatrice, thou lovest me.  
*Beat.* Do not swear, and eat it.

*Bene.* I will swear by it that you love me ; and  
 I will make him eat it that says I love not you.

*Beat.* Will you not eat your word? <sup>280</sup>

*Bene.* With no sauce that can be devised to  
 it. I protest I love thee.

*Beat.* Why, then, God forgive me!

*Bene.* What offence, sweet Beatrice?

*Beat.* You have stay'd me in a happy hour :  
 I was about to protest I loved you.

*Bene.* And do it with all thy heart.

*Beat.* I love you with so much of my heart  
 that none is left to protest.

*Bene.* Come, bid me do any thing for thee. <sup>290</sup>

*Beat.* Kill Claudio.

*Bene.* Ha ! not for the wide world.

*Beat.* You kill me to deny it. Farewell.

*Bene.* Tarry, sweet Beatrice.

*Beat.* I am gone, though I am here : there  
 is no love in you : nay, I pray you, let me go.

*Bene.* Beatrice,—

*Beat.* In faith, I will go.

*Bene.* We'll be friends first.

*Beat.* You dare easier be friends with me  
 than fight with mine enemy. <sup>300</sup>

*Bene.* Is Claudio thine enemy?

*Beat.* Is he not approved in the height  
 a villain, that hath slandered, scorned,  
 dishonoured my kinswoman? O that I were a  
 man ! What, bear her in hand until they come  
 to take hands ; and then, with public accusation,  
 uncovered slander, unmitigated rancour,—  
 O God, that I were a man ! I would eat his heart  
 in the market-place.

*Bene.* Hear me, Beatrice,— <sup>310</sup>

*Beat.* Talk with a man out at a window ! A  
 proper saying !

*Bene.* Nay, but, Beatrice,—

*Beat.* Sweet Hero ! She is wronged, she is  
 slandered, she is undone.

*Bene.* Beat—

*Beat.* Princes and counties ! Surely, a princely  
 testimony, a goodly count, Count Comfekt ; a  
 sweet gallant, surely ! O that I were a man for  
 his sake ! or that I had any friend would be a  
 man for my sake ! But manhood is melted into  
 courtesies, valour into compliment, and men  
 are only turned into tongue, and trim ones too :  
 he is now as valiant as Hercules that only tells  
 a lie and swears it. I cannot be a man with  
 wishing, therefore I will die a woman with  
 grieving.

*Bene.* Tarry, good Beatrice. By this hand,  
 I love thee.

*Beat.* Use it for my love some other way  
 than swearing by it. <sup>320</sup>

*Bene.* Think you in your soul the Count  
 Claudio hath wronged Hero?

*Beat.* Yea, as sure as I have a thought or a soul.

*Bene.* Enough, I am engag'd ; I will challenge  
 him. I will kiss your hand, and so I leave you.  
 By this hand, Claudio shall render me a dear  
 account. As you hear of me, so think of me.  
 Go, comfort your cousin : I must say she is  
 dead : and so, farewell. *[Exit Bene.]*

## SCENE II. A prison.

*Enter DOGBERRY, VERGES, and Sexton, in gowns; and the Watch, with CONRADE and BORACHIO.*

*Dog.* Is our whole dissembly appeared?

*Verg.* O, a stool and a cushion for the sexton.

*Sex.* Which be the malefactors?

*Dog.* Marry, that am I and my partner.

*Verg.* Nay, that's certain; we have the exhibition to examine.

*Sex.* But which are the offenders that are to be examined? let them come before master constable.

*Dog.* Yea, marry, let them come before me. What is your name, friend?

*Bora.* Borachio.

*Dog.* Pray, write down, Borachio. Yours, truly?

*Con.* I am a gentleman, sir, and my name is onrade.

*Dog.* Write down, master gentleman Conle. Masters, do you serve God?

*Con.* } Yea, sir, we hope.

*Bora.* }

*Dog.* Write down, that they hope they serve out: and write God first; for God defend but od should go before such villains! Masters, it proved already that you are little better than these knaves; and it will go near to be thought shortly. How answer you for yourselves?

*Con.* Marry, sir, we say we are none.

*Dog.* A marvellous witty fellow, I assure you; but I will go about with him. Come you other, sirrah; a word in your ear: sir, I say to you, it is thought you are false knaves.

*Bora.* Sir, I say to you we are none.

*Dog.* Well, stand aside. 'Fore God, they are both in a tale. Have you writ down, that they be none?

*Sex.* Master constable, you go not the way to examine: you must call forth the watch that be their accusers.

*Dog.* Yea, marry, that's the effest way. Let the watch come forth. Masters, I charge you, the prince's name, accuse these men.

*First Watch.* This man said, sir, that Don John, the prince's brother, was a villain.

*Dog.* Write down Prince John a villain. Why, this is flat perjury, to call a prince's brother villain.

*Bora.* Master constable,—

*Dog.* Pray thee, fellow, peace: I do not like thy look. I promise thee.

*Sex.* What heard you him say else?

*Sec. Watch.* Marry, that he had received a thousand ducats of Don John for accusing the wily Hero wrongfully.

*Dog.* Flat burglary as ever was committed.

*Verg.* Yea, by mass, that it is.

*Sex.* What else, fellow?

*First Watch.* And that Count Claudio did mean, upon his words, to disgrace Hero before the whole assembly, and not marry her.

*Dog.* O villain! thou wilt be condemned into everlasting redemption for this.

*Sex.* What else?

*Watch.* This is all.

*Sex.* And this is more, masters, than you can deny. Prince John in this morning secretly stolen away; Hero was in this manner accused, in this very manner refused, and upon the grief of this suddenly died. Master constable, let these men be bound, and brought to Leonato's: I will go before and show him their examination. *[Exit.]*

*Dog.* Come, let them be opinioned.

*Verg.* Let them be in the hands—

*Con.* Off, coxcomb!

*Dog.* God's my life, where's the sexton? let him write down the prince's officer coxcomb. Come, bind them. Thou naughty varlet!

*Con.* Away! you are an ass, you are an ass.

*Dog.* Dost thou not suspect my place? dost thou not suspect my years? O that he were here to write me down an ass! But, masters, remember that I am an ass; though it be not written down, yet forget not that I am an ass. No, thou villain, thou art full of piety, as shall be proved upon thee by good witness. I am a wise fellow, and, which is more, an officer, and, which is more, a householder, and, which is more, as pretty a piece of flesh as any is in Messina, and one that knows the law, go to; and a rich fellow enough, go to; and a fellow that hath had losses, and one that hath two gowns and every thing handsome about him. Bring him away. O that I had been writ down an ass! *[Exeunt.]*

## ACT V.

## SCENE I. BEFORE LEONATO'S house.

*Enter LEONATO and ANTONIO.*

*Ant.* If you go on thus, you will kill yourself; And 'tis not wisdom thus to second grief Against yourself.

*Leon.* I pray thee, cease thy counsel, Which falls into mine ears as profitless As water in a sieve: give not me counsel; Nor let no comforter delight mine ear. But such a one whose wrongs do suit with mine. Bring me a father that so loved his child, Whose joy of her is overwhelm'd like mine, And bid him speak of patience; Measure his woe the length and breadth of mine And let it answer every strain for strain, As thus for thus and such a grief for such, In every lineament, branch, shape, and form: If such a one will smile and stroke his beard, Bid sorrow wag, cry 'hem!' when he should groan,

Patch grief with proverbs, make misfortune drunk

With candle-wasters; bring him yet to me, And I of him will gather patience. But there is no such man: for, brother, men as Can counsel and speak comfort to that grief Which they themselves not feel; but, tasting it, Their counsel turns to passion, which before Would give preceptual medicine to rage, Fetter strong madness in a silken thread, Charm ache with air and agony with words: No, no; 'tis all men's office to speak patience To those that wallow under the load of sorrow. But no man's virtue nor sufficiency

To be so moral when he shall endure  
The like himself. Therefore give me no counsel: 30

My griefs cry louder than advertisement.

*Ant.* Therein do men from children nothing differ.

*Leon.* I pray thee, peace. I will be flesh and blood;

For there was never yet philosopher  
That could endure the toothache patiently,  
However they have writ the style of gods  
And made a push at chance and sufferance.

*Ant.* Yet bend not all the harm upon yourself;

Make those that do offend you suffer too. 40

*Leon.* There thou speak'st reason: nay, I will do so.

My soul doth tell me Hero is belied;  
And that shall Claudio know; so shall the prince  
And all of them that thus dishonour her.

*Ant.* Here comes the prince and Claudio hastily.

*Enter DON PEDRO and CLAUDIO.*

*D. Pedro.* Good den, good den.

*Claud.* Good day to both of you.

*Leon.* Hear you, my lords,—

*D. Pedro.* We have some haste, Leonato.

*Leon.* Some haste, my lord! well, fare you well, my lord:

Are you so hasty now? well, all is one.

*D. Pedro.* Nay, do not quarrel with us, good old man. 50

*Ant.* If he could right himself with quarrelling,

Some of us would lie low.

*Claud.* Who wrongs him?

*Leon.* Marry, thou dost wrong me; thou dissembler, thou:—

Nay, never lay thy hand upon thy sword;  
I fear thee not.

*Claud.* Marry, besrew my hand,  
If it should give your age such cause of fear:

In faith, my hand meant nothing to my sword.

*Leon.* Tush, tush, man; never floor and jest at me:

I speak not like a dotard nor a fool,

As under privilege of age to brag 60

What I have done being young, or what would do

Were I not old. Know, Claudio, to thy head,

Thou hast so wrong'd mine innocent child and me

That I am forced to lay my reverence by

And, with grey hairs and bruise of many days,  
Do challenge thee to trial of a man.

I say thou hast belied mine innocent child;

Thy slander hath gone through and through her heart.

And she lies buried with her ancestors;

O, in a tomb where never scandal slept, 70

Save this of hers, framed by thy villany!

*Claud.* My villany?

*Leon.* Thine, Claudio; thine, I say.

*D. Pedro.* You say not right, old man.

*Leon.* My lord, my lord,

I'll prove it on his body, if he dare,

Despite his nice fence and his active practice,

His May of youth and bloom of lusthood.

*Claud.* Away! I will not have to do with you.

*Leon.* Canst thou so daff me? Thou hast kill'd my child:

If thou kill'st me, boy, thou shalt kill a man.

*Ant.* He shall kill two of us, and men indeed!

But that's no matter; let him kill one first; &

Win me and wear me; let him answer me.

Come, follow me, boy; come, sir boy, come follow me:

Sir boy, I'll whip you from your joining fence

Nay, as I am a gentleman, I will.

*Leon.* Brother,—

*Ant.* Content yourself. God knows I loved my niece;

And she is dead, slander'd to death by villain

That dare as well answer a man indeed

As I dare take a serpent by the tongue:

Boys, apes, braggarts, Jacks, milksons!

*Leon.* Brother Antony,—

*Ant.* Hold you content. What, man! I kill them, yea,

And what they weigh, even to the utmost scruple,—

Scambling, out-facing, fashion-monging boys,

That lie and cog and flout, deprave and slander:

Go anticly, show outward hideousness,

And speak off half a dozen dangerous words,

How they might hurt their enemies, if they durst;

And this is all.

*Leon.* But, brother Antony,—

*Ant.* Come, 'tis no matter: 10  
Do not you meddle; let me deal in this.

*D. Pedro.* Gentlemen both, we will not wake your patience.

My heart is sorry for your daughter's death:

But, on my honour, she was charged with no thing

But what was true and very full of proof.

*Leon.* My lord, my lord,—

*D. Pedro.* I will not hear you.

*Leon.* No? Come, brother; away! I will be heard.

*Ant.* And shall, or some of us will smart for it. *[Exit Leonato and Antonio.]*

*D. Pedro.* See, see; here comes the man 15  
went to seek.

*Enter BENEDICK.*

*Claud.* Now, signior, what news?

*Bene.* Good day, my lord.

*D. Pedro.* Welcome, signior: you are almost come to part almost a fray.

*Claud.* We had like to have had our noses snapped off with two old men without teeth.

*D. Pedro.* Leonato and his brother. What thinkest thou? Had we fought, I doubt we should have been too young for them.

*Bene.* In a false quarrel there is no true valour. I came to seek you both. 121

*Claud.* We have been up and down to seek thee; for we are high-proof melancholy and would fain have it beaten away. Wilt thou us thy wit?

*Bene.* It is in my scabbard: shall I draw it?

*D. Pedro.* Dost thou wear thy wit by thy side?

*Claud.* Never any did so, though very many have been beside their wit. I will bid thee draw, as we do the minstrels; draw, to pleasure us.

*D. Pedro.* As I am an honest man, he looks pale. Art thou sick, or angry?

*Claud.* What, courage, man! What though care killed a cat, thou hast mettle enough in thee to kill care.

*Bene.* Sir, I shall meet your wit in the career, an you charge it against me. I pray you choose another subject.

*Claud.* Nay, then, give him another staff: this last was broke cross.

*D. Pedro.* By this light, he changes more and more: I think he be angry indeed.

*Claud.* If he be, he knows how to turn his girdle.

*Bene.* Shall I speak a word in your ear?

*Claud.* God bless me from a challenge!

*Bene.* [Aside to Claudio] You are a villain; I jest not: I will make it good how you dare, with what you dare, and when you dare. Do me right, or I will protest your cowardice. You have killed a sweet lady, and her death shall fall heavy on you. Let me hear from you.

*Claud.* Well, I will meet you, so I may have good cheer.

*D. Pedro.* What, a feast, a feast?

*Claud.* I faith, I thank him; he hath bid me to a calf's head and a capon; the which if I do not carve most curiously, say my knife's naught. Shall I not find a woodcock too?

*Bene.* Sir, your wit ambles well; it goes easily.

*D. Pedro.* I'll tell thee how Beatrice praised thy wit the other day. I said, thou hadst a fine wit: 'True,' said she, 'a fine little one.' 'No,' said I, 'a great wit:' 'Right,' says she, 'a great gross one.' 'Nay,' said I, 'a good wit:' 'Just,' said she, 'it hurts nobody.' 'Nay,' said I, 'the gentleman is wise:' 'Certain,' said she, 'a wise gentleman.' 'Nay,' said I, 'he hath the tongues:' 'That I believe,' said she, 'for he swore a thing to me on Monday night, which he forswore on Tuesday morning; there's a double tongue; there's two tongues.' Thus did she, an hour together, trans-shape thy particular virtues: yet at last she concluded with a sigh, thou wast the properest man in Italy.

*Claud.* For the which she wept heartily and said she cared not.

*D. Pedro.* Yea, that she did; but yet, for all that, an if she did not hate him deadly, she would love him dearly: the old man's daughter told us all.

*Claud.* All, all; and, moreover, God saw him when he was hid in the garden.

*D. Pedro.* But when shall we set the savage bull's horns on the sensible Benedick's head?

*Claud.* Yea, and text underneath, 'Here dwells Benedick the married man'!

*Bene.* Fare you well, boy: you know my mind. I will leave you now to your gossip-like humour; you break jests as braggarts do their blades, which, God be thanked, hurt not. My lord, for your many courtesies I thank you: I

must discontinue your company: your brother the bastard is fled from Messina: you have among you killed a sweet and innocent lady. For my Lord Lackbeard there, he and I shall meet: and, till then, peace be with him. [Exit.]

*D. Pedro.* He is in earnest.

*Claud.* In most profound earnest; and, I'll warrant you, for the love of Beatrice.

*D. Pedro.* And hath challenged thee.

*Claud.* Most sincerely.

*D. Pedro.* What a pretty thing man is when he goes in his doublet and hose and leaves off his wit!

*Claud.* He is then a giant to an ape; but then is an ape a doctor to such a man.

*D. Pedro.* But, soft you, let me be: pluck up, my heart, and be sad. Did he not say, my brother was fled?

*Enter DOGBERRY, VERGES, and the Watch, with CONRADE and BORACHIO.*

*Dog.* Come you, sir; if justice cannot tame you, she shall ne'er weigh more reasons in her balance: nay, an you be a cursing hypocrite once, you must be looked to.

*D. Pedro.* How now? two of my brother's men bound! Borachio one!

*Claud.* Hearken after their offence, my lord.

*D. Pedro.* Officers, what offence have these men done?

*Dog.* Marry, sir, they have committed false report; moreover, they have spoken untruths; secondarily, they are slanders; sixth and lastly, they have belied a lady; thirdly, they have verified unjust things; and, to conclude, they are lying knaves.

*D. Pedro.* First, I ask thee what they have done; thirdly, I ask thee what's their offence; sixth and lastly, why they are committed; and, to conclude, what you lay to their charge.

*Claud.* Rightly reasoned, and in his own division; and, by my troth, there's one meaning well suited.

*D. Pedro.* Who have you offended, masters, that you are thus bound to your answer? this learned constable is too cunning to be understood: what's your offence?

*Bora.* Sweet prince, let me go no farther to mine answer: do you hear me, and let this count kill me. I have deceived even your very eyes: what your wisdoms could not discover, these shallow fools have brought to light; who in the night overheard me confessing to this man how Don John your brother incensed me to slander the Lady Hero, how you were brought into the orchard and saw me court Margaret in Hero's garments, how you disgraced her, when you should marry her: my villany they have upon record; which I had rather seal with my death than repeat over to my shame. The lady is dead upon mine and my master's false accusation; and, briefly, I desire nothing but the reward of a villain.

*D. Pedro.* Runs not this speech like iron through your blood?

*Claud.* I have drunk poison whiles he uttered it.

*D. Pedro.* But did my brother set thee on to this?

*Bora.* Yea, and paid me richly for the practice of it.

*D. Pedro.* He is composed and framed of treachery:

And fled he is upon this villany.

*Claud.* Sweet Hero! now thy image doth appear

In the rare semblance that I loved it first. 260

*Dog.* Come, bring away the plaintiffs: by this time our sexton hath reformed Signior Leonato of the matter: and, masters, do not forget to specify, when time and place shall serve, that I am an ass.

*I cry.* Here, here comes master Signior Leonato, and the sexton too.

*Re-enter LEONATO and ANTONIO, with the Sexton.*

*Leon.* Which is the villain? let me see his eyes,

That, when I note another man like him, 270 I may avoid him: which of these is he?

*Bora.* If you would know your wronger, look on me.

*Leon.* Art thou the slave that with thy breath hast kill'd

Mine innocent child?

*Bora.* Yea, even I alone.

*Leon.* No, not so, villain; thou beliest thyself:

Here stand a pair of honourable men;

A third is fled, that had a hand in it.

I thank you, princes, for my daughter's death: I thank it with your high and worthy deeds:

'Twas bravely done, if you bethink you of it.

*Claud.* I know not how to pray your patience; Yet I must speak. Choose your revenge your-

self;

Impose me to what penance your invention

Can lay upon my sin: yet sinn'd I not

But in mistaking.

*D. Pedro.* By my soul, nor I:

And yet, to satisfy this good old man,

I would bend under any heavy weight

That he'll enjoin me to.

*Leon.* I cannot bid you bid my daughter live;

That were impossible: but, I pray you both, Possess the people in Messina here 291

How innocent she died; and if your love

Can labour aught in sad invention,

Hang her an epitaph upon her tomb

And sing it to her bones, sing it to-night:

To-morrow morning come you to my house,

And since you could not be my son-in-law,

Be yet my nephew: my brother hath a daughter,

Almost the copy of my child that's dead,

And she alone is heir to both of us: 300

Give her the right you should have given her

cousin,

And so dies my revenge.

*Claud.* O noble sir,

Your over-kindness doth wring tears from me!

I do embrace your offer: and dispose

For henceforth of poor Claudio.

*Leon.* To-morrow then I will expect your coming;

To-night I take my leave. This naughty man Shall face to face be brought to Margaret,

Who I believe was pack'd in all this wrong,

Hired to it by your brother.

*Bora.* No, by my soul, she was not, Nor knew not what she did when she spoke 311

to me,

But always hath been just and virtuous

In any thing that I do know by her.

*Dog.* Moreover, sir, which indeed is not under white and black, this plaintiff here, the offender, did call me ass: I beseech you, let it be remembered in his punishment. And also,

the watch heard them talk of one Deformed: they say he wears a key in his ear and a lock hanging by it, and borrows money in God's

name, the which he hath used so long and never paid that now men grow hard-hearted and will lend nothing for God's sake: pray you,

examine him upon that point.

*Leon.* I thank thee for thy care and honest pains.

*Dog.* Your worship speaks like a most thankful and reverend youth; and I praise God for you.

*Leon.* There's for thy pains.

*Dog.* God save the foundation!

*Leon.* Go, I discharge thee of thy prisoner, and I thank thee. 320

*Dog.* I leave an arrant knave with your worship; which I beseech your worship to correct yourself, for the example of others. God keep your worship! I wish your worship well; God

restore you to health! I humbly give you leave to depart: and if a merry meeting may be wished, God prohibit it! Come, neighbour.

[*Exeunt Dogberry and Verger.*]

*Leon.* Until to-morrow morning, lords, farewell.

*Ant.* Farewell, my lords: we look for you to-morrow.

*D. Pedro.* We will not fail.

*Claud.* To-night I'll mourn with Hero.

*Leon.* [*To the Watch*] Bring you these fellows on. We'll talk with Margaret, 341

How her acquaintance grew with this lewd fellow.

[*Exeunt, severally.*]

## SCENE II. LEONATO'S garden.

*Enter BENEDICK and MARGARET, meeting.*

*Benc.* Pray thee, sweet Mistress Margaret, deserve well at my hands by helping me to the speech of Beatrice.

*Marg.* Will you then write me a sonnet in praise of my beauty?

*Benc.* In so high a style, Margaret, that no man living shall come over it; for, in most comely truth, thou deservest it.

*Marg.* To have no man come over me! why, shall I always keep below stairs? 10

*Benc.* Thy wit is as quick as the greyhound's mouth; it catches.

*Marg.* And yours as blunt as the fencer's foils, which hit, but hurt not.

*Benc.* A most manly wit, Margaret; it will



not hurt a woman: and so, I pray thee, call Beatrice: I give thee the bucklers.

*Marg.* Give us the swords; we have bucklers of our own.

*Bene.* If you use them, Margaret, you must put in the pikes with a vice; and they are dangerous weapons for maids.

*Marg.* Well, I will call Beatrice to you, who think hath lega.

*Bene.* And therefore will come.

[*Exit Margaret.*]

[*Sings*] The god of love,  
That sits above,  
And knows me, and knows me,  
How pitiful I deserve,— 29

I mean in singing; but in loving, Leander the good swimmer, Troilus the first employer of jandars, and a whole bookful of these quondam arpet-mongers, whose names yet run smoothly in the even road of a blank verse, why, they were never so truly turned over and over as my poor self in love. Marry, I cannot show it in rhyme; I have tried; I can find out no rhyme to 'lady' but 'baby,' an innocent rhyme; for scorn, 'horn,' a hard rhyme; for 'school,' 'fool,' a babbling rhyme; very ominous endings: no, I was not born under a rhyming planet, nor I cannot woo in festival terms. 42

*Enter BEATRICE.*

Sweet Beatrice, wouldst thou come when I called thee?

*Beat.* Yea, signior, and depart when you bid me.

*Bene.* O, stay but till then!

*Beat.* 'Then' is spoken; fare you well now; and yet, ere I go, let me go with that I came; which is, with knowing what hath passed between you and Claudio.

*Bene.* Only four words; and thereupon I will kiss thee. 52

*Beat.* Foul words is but foul wind, and foul wind is but foul breath, and foul breath is noisome; therefore I will depart unknissed.

*Bene.* Thou hast frightened the word out of his right sense, so forcible is thy wit. But I must tell thee plainly; Claudio undergoes my challenge; and either I must shortly hear from him, or I will subscribe him a coward. And, I pray thee now, tell me for which of my bad parts didst thou first fall in love with me? 62

*Beat.* For them all together; which maintained so politic a state of evil that they will not admit any good part to intermingle with them. But for which of my good parts did you first suffer love for me?

*Bene.* Suffer love! a good epithet! I do suffer love indeed, for I love thee against my will.

*Beat.* In spite of your heart, I think; alas, poor heart! If you spite it for my sake, I will spite it for yours; for I will never love that which my friend hates.

*Bene.* Thou and I are too wise to woo peaceably.

*Beat.* It appears not in this confession: there's not one wise man among twenty that will praise himself.

*Bene.* An old, an old instance, Beatrice, that lived in the time of good neighbours. If a man do not erect in this age his own tomb ere he dies, he shall live no longer in monument than the bell rings and the widow weeps.

*Beat.* And how long is that, think you?

*Bene.* Question; why, an hour in clamour and a quarter in rheum; therefore is it most expedient for the wise, if Don Worm, his conscience, find no impediment to the contrary, to be the trumpet of his own virtues, as I am to myself. So much for praising myself, who, I myself will bear witness, is praiseworthy; and now tell me, how doth your cousin? 92

*Beat.* Very ill.

*Bene.* And how do you?

*Beat.* Very ill too.

*Bene.* Serve God, love me and mend. There will I leave you too, for here comes one in haste.

*Enter URSULA.*

*Urs.* Madam, you must come to your uncle. Yonder's old coil at home: it is proved my Lady Hero hath been falsely accused, the prince and Claudio mightily abused; and Don John is the author of all, who is fled and gone. Will you come presently?

*Beat.* Will you go hear this news, signior?

*Bene.* I will live in thy heart, die in thy lap and be buried in thy eyes; and moreover I will go with thee to thy uncle's. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. A church.

*Enter DON PEDRO, CLAUDIO, and three or four with tapers.*

*Claud.* Is this the monument of Leonato?

*A Lord.* It is, my lord.

*Claud.* [*Reading out of a scroll*]

Done to death by slanderous tongues

Was the Hero that here lies:

Death, in guerdon of her wrongs,

Gives her fame which never dies.

So the life that died with shame

Lives in death with glorious fame.

Hang thou there upon the tomb,

Praising her when I am dumb. 10

Now, music, sound, and sing your solemn hymn.

SONG.

Pardon, goddess of the night,

Those that slew thy virgin knight;

For the which, with songs of woe,

Sound about her tomb they go.

Midnight, assist our moan;

Help us to sigh and groan,

Heavily, heavily:

Graves, yawn and yield your dead, 20

Till death be utteral,

Heavily, heavily.

*Claud.* Now, unto thy bones good night!

Yearly will I do this rite.

*D. Pedro.* Good morrow, masters; put your torches out:

The wolves have prey'd; and look, the gentle day

Before the wheels of Phœbus, round about

Dapples the drowsy east with spots of grey.  
Thanks to you all, and leave us: fare you well.

*Claud.* Good morrow, masters: each his several way.

*D. Pedro.* Come, let us hence, and put on other weeds; 30

And then to Leonato's we will go.

*Claud.* And Hymen now with luckier issue speed's

Than this for whom we render'd up this woe.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. A room in LEONATO'S house.

*Enter* LEONATO, ANTONIO, BENEDICK, BEATRICE, MARGARET, URSULA, FRIAR FRANCIS, and HERO.

*Friar.* Did I not tell you she was innocent?

*Leon.* So are the prince and Claudio, who accused her

Upon the error that you heard debated:

But Margaret was in some fault for this,

Although against her will, as it appears

In the true course of all the question.

*Ant.* Well, I am glad that all things sort so well.

*Bene.* And so am I, being else by faith enforced

To call young Claudio to a reckoning for it.

*Leon.* Well, daughter, and you gentlewomen all, 30

Withdraw into a chamber by yourselves,

And when I send for you, come hither mask'd.  
[*Exeunt Ladies.*]

The prince and Claudio promised by this hour To visit me. You know your office, brother:

You must be father to your brother's daughter, And give her to young Claudio.

*Ant.* Which I will do with confirm'd countenance.

*Bene.* Friar, I must entreat your pains, I think.

*Friar.* To do what, signior?

*Bene.* To bind me, or undo me; one of them. 20

Signior Leonato, truth it is, good signior,

Your niece regards me with an eye of favour.

*Leon.* That eye my daughter lent her: 'tis most true.

*Bene.* And I do with an eye of love requite her.

*Leon.* The sight whereof I think you had from me,

From Claudio and the prince: but what's your will?

*Bene.* Your answer, sir, is enigmatical:

But, for my will, my will is your good will

May stand with ours, this day to be conjoin'd

In the state of honourable marriage: 30

In which, good friar, I shall desire your help.

*Leon.* My heart is with your liking.

*Friar.* And my help. Here comes the prince and Claudio.

*Enter* DON PEDRO and CLAUDIO, and two or three others.

*D. Pedro.* Good morrow to this fair assembly.

*Leon.* Good morrow, prince; good morrow,

*Claudio:*

We here attend you. Are you yet determin'd To-day to marry with my brother's daughter?

*Claud.* I'll hold my mind, were she an Ethiopian.

*Leon.* Call her forth, brother; here's the friar ready. [*Exit Antonio.*]

*D. Pedro.* Good morrow, Benedick. Why, what's the matter, 40

That you have such a February face, So full of frost, of storm and cloudiness?

*Claud.* I think he thinks upon the savage bull.

Tush, fear not, man; we'll tip thy horns with gold And all Europa shall rejoice at thee,

As once Europa did at lusty Jove,

When he would play the noble beast in love.

*Bene.* Bull Jove, sir, had an amiable bow; And some such strange bull leap'd your father's

cow, And got a calf in that same noble feat 50

Much like to you, for you have just his bleat.

*Claud.* For this I owe you: here comes other reckonings.

*Re-enter* ANTONIO, with the Ladies masked.

Which is the lady I must seize upon?

*Ant.* This same is she, and I do give you her

*Claud.* Why, then she's mine. Sweet, let me see your face.

*Leon.* No, that you shall not, till you take her hand.

Before this friar and swear to marry her.

*Claud.* Give me your hand: before this holy friar,

I am your husband, if you like of me.

*Hero.* And when I lived, I was your other wife: 60

And when you loved, you were my other husband.

*Claud.* Another Hero!

*Hero.* Nothing certainer: One Hero died defiled, but I do live,

And surely as I live, I am a maid.

*D. Pedro.* The former Hero! Hero that is dead!

*Leon.* She died, my lord, but whiles her slander lived.

*Friar.* All this amazement can I qualify; When after that the holy rites are ended,

I'll tell you largely of fair Hero's death: Meantime let wonder seem familiar, 70

And to the chapel let us presently.

*Bene.* Soft and fair, friar. Which is Benvolio?

*Bent.* [Unmasking] I answer to that name.

What is your will?

*Bene.* Do not you love me?

*Beat.* Why, no; no more than reason.

*Bene.* Why, then, your uncle and the prince and Claudio

Have been deceived; they swore you did.

*Beat.* Do not you love me?

*Bene.* Truth, no; no more than reason.

*Beat.* Why, then my cousin Margaret and Ursula

are much deceived; for they did swear you did.

*Bene.* They swore that you were almost sick for me.

*Beat.* They swore that you were well-nigh dead for me.

*Bene.* 'Tis no such matter. Then you do not love me?

*Beat.* No, truly, but in friendly recompense.

*Leon.* Come, cousin, I am sure you love the gentleman.

*Claud.* And I'll be sworn upon't that he loves her;

for here's a paper written in his hand, halting sonnet of his own pure brain,

'ashion'd to Beatrice.

*Hera.* And here's another

Writ in my cousin's hand, stolen from her pocket,

containing her affection unto Benedick.

*Bene.* A miracle! here's our own hands against our hearts. Come, I will have thee; it, by this light, I take thee for pity.

*Beat.* I would not deny you; but, by this odd day, I yield upon great persuasion; and artly to save your life, for I was told you were in a consumption.

*Bene.* Peace! I will stop your mouth.

*D. Pedro.* How dost thou, Benedick, the married man?

*Bene.* I'll tell thee what, prince; a college of wit-crackers cannot flout me out of my humour. Dost thou think I care for a satire

or an epigram? No: if a man will be benteen with brains, a' shall wear nothing handsome about him. In brief, since I do purpose to marry, I will think nothing to any purpose that the world can say against it; and therefore never flout at me for what I have said against it; for man is a giddy thing, and this is my conclusion. For thy part, Claudio, I did think to have beaten thee; but in that thou art like to be my kinsman, live unbruised and love my cousin.

*Claud.* I had well hoped thou wouldst have denied Beatrice, that I might have cudgelled thee out of thy single life, to make thee a double-dealer; which, out of question, thou wilt be, if my cousin do not look exceeding narrowly to thee.

*Bene.* Come, come, we are friends: let's have a dance ere we are married, that we may lighten our own hearts and our wives' heels.

*Leon.* We'll have dancing afterward.

*Bene.* First, of my word; therefore play, music. Prince, thou art sad; get thee a wife, get thee a wife: there is no staff more reverend than one tipped with horn.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My lord, your brother John is ta'en in flight,

And brought with armed men back to Messina.

*Bene.* Think not on him till to-morrow: I'll devise thee brave punishments for him. Strike up, pipers.

[*Dance.*  
*Exeunt.*]

# LOVE'S LABOUR'S LOST

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

FERDINAND, king of Navarre.  
 BIRON, } lords attending on the King.  
 LONGAVILLE, }  
 DUMAIN, }  
 BOYET, } lords attending on the Princess  
 MERCADE, } of France.  
 DON ADRIANO DE ARMADO, a fantastical  
 Spaniard.  
 SIR NATHANIEL, a curate.  
 HOLOFERNES, a schoolmaster.  
 DULL, a constable.

CONSTARD, a clown.  
 MOTH, page to Armado.  
 A Forester.  
 The PRINCESS of France  
 ROSALINE, } ladies attending on the  
 MARIA, } Princess.  
 KATHARINE, }  
 JAQUENETTA, a country wench.  
 Lords, Attendants, &c.  
 SCENE: Navarre.

## ACT I

### SCENE I. *The king of Navarre's park.*

*Enter FERDINAND, king of NAVARRE, BIRON, LONGAVILLE, and DUMAIN.*

*King.* Let fame, that all hunt after in their lives,  
 Live register'd upon our brazen tombs  
 And then grace us in the disgrace of death;  
 When, spite of cormorant devouring Time,  
 The endeavour of this present breath may buy  
 That honour which shall bate his scythe's keen  
 edge

And make us heirs of all eternity.  
 Therefore, brave conquerors,—for so you are,  
 That war against your own affections  
 And the huge army of the world's desires.— 10  
 Our late edict shall strongly stand in force:  
 Navarre shall be the wonder of the world;  
 Our court shall be a little Academe,  
 Still and contemplative in living art.  
 You three, Biron, Dumain, and Longaville,  
 Have sworn for three years' term to live with me  
 My fellow-scholars and to keep those statutes  
 That are recorded in this schedule here:  
 Your oaths are pass'd; and now subscribe your  
 names.

That his own hand may strike his honour down  
 That violates the smallest branch herein: 21  
 If you are arm'd to do as sworn to do,  
 Subscribe to your deep oaths, and keep it too.

*Long.* I am resolved; 'tis but a three years' fast:

The mind shall banquet, though the body pine:  
 Fat paunches have lean pates, and dainty bits  
 Make rich the ribs, but bankrupt quite the wits.

*Dum.* My loving lord, Dumain is mortified:  
 The grosser manner of these world's delights  
 He throws upon the gross world's baser slaves:  
 To love, to wealth, to pomp, I pine and die; 31

With all these living in philosophy.

*Biron.* I can but say their protestation over  
 So much, dear liege, I have already sworn,  
 That is, to live and study here three years.  
 But there are other strict observances;  
 As, not to see a woman in that term,  
 Which I hope well is not enrolled there;  
 And one day in a week to touch no food  
 And but one meal on every day beside,  
 The which I hope is not enrolled there;  
 And then, to sleep but three hours in the night  
 And not be seen to wink of all the day—  
 When I was wont to think no harm all night  
 And make a dark night too of half the day—  
 Which I hope well is not enrolled there:  
 O, these are barren tasks, too hard to keep,  
 Not to see ladies, study, fast, not sleep!

*King.* Your oath is pass'd to pass away from these.

*Biron.* Let me say no, my liege, an if you please:

I only swore to study with your grace  
 And stay here in your court for three years' space.

*Long.* You swore to that, Biron, and to the rest.

*Biron.* By yea and nay, sir, then I swore in jest.

What is the end of study? let me know.

*King.* Why, that to know, which else we should not know.

*Biron.* Things hid and barr'd, you mean from common sense?

*King.* Ay, that is study's god-like recompense.

*Biron.* Come on, then; I will swear to study so,

To know the thing I am forbid to know:

As thus,—to study where I well may dine,

When I to feast expressly am forbid;

Or study where to meet some mistress fine,

When mistresses from common sense are hid;  
Or, having sworn too hard a keeping oath,  
Study to break it and not break my troth.  
If study's gain be thus and this be so,  
Study knows that which yet it doth not know:  
Swear me to this, and I will ne'er say no.

*King.* These be the stops that hinder study quite 70

And train our intellects to vain delight.

*Biron.* Why, all delights are vain; but that most vain,

Which with pain purchased doth inherit pain:

As, painfully to pore upon a book

To seek the light of truth; while truth the while

Doth falsely blind the eyesight of his look:

Light seeking light doth light of light beguile:

So, ere you find where light in darkness lies,  
Your light grows dark by losing of your eyes.

Study me how to please the eye indeed 80

By fixing it upon a fairer eye,

Who dazzling so, that eye shall be his heed

And give him light that it was blinded by.

Study is like the heaven's glorious sun

That will not be deep-search'd with saucy looks;

Small have continual plodders ever won

Save base authority from others' books.

These earthly godfathers of heaven's lights

That give a name to every fixed star

Have no more profit of their shining nights 90

Than those that walk and wot not what they are.

Too much to know is to know nought but fame;

And every godfather can give a name.

*King.* How well he's read, to reason against reading!

*Dum.* Proceeded well, to stop all good proceeding!

*Long.* He weeds the corn and still lets grow the weeding.

*Biron.* The spring is near when green geese are a-breeding.

*Dum.* How follows that?

*Biron.* Fit in his place and time.

*Dum.* In reason nothing.

*Biron.* Something then in rhyme.

*King.* Biron is like an envious sniping frost

That bites the first-born infants of the spring. 101

*Biron.* Well, say I am; why should proud summer boast

Before the birds have any cause to sing?

Why should I joy in any abortive birth?

At Christmas I no more desire a rose

Than wish a snow in May's new-fangled mirth;

But like of each thing that in season grows.

So you, to study now it is too late,

Climb o'er the house to unlock the little gate.

*King.* Well, sit you out: go home, Biron adieu. 110

*Biron.* No, my good lord; I have sworn to stay with you:

And though I have for barbarism spoke more

Than for that angel knowledge you can say,

Yet confident I'll keep what I have sworn

And bide the penance of each three years' day.  
Give me the paper; let me read the same;

And to the strictest decrees I'll write my name.

*King.* How well this yielding rescues thee from shame!

*Biron* [reads]. 'Item, That no woman shall come within a mile of my court:' Hath this been proclaimed? 121

*Long.* Four days ago.

*Biron.* Let's see the penalty. [Reads] 'On pain of losing her tongue.' Who devised this penalty?

*Long.* Marry, that did I.

*Biron.* Sweet lord, and why?

*Long.* To fright them hence with that dread penalty.

*Biron.* A dangerous law against gentility!

[Reads] 'Item, If any man be seen to talk with a woman within the term of three years,

he shall endure such public shame as the rest of the court can possibly devise.'

This article, my liege, yourself must break;

For well you know here comes in embassy

The French king's daughter with yourself to speak—

A maid of grace and complete majesty—

About surrender up of Aquitaine

To her decrepit, sick and bedrid father:

Therefore this article is made in vain, 140

Or vainly comes the admired princess hither.

*King.* What say you, lords? why, thus was quite forgot.

*Biron.* So study evermore is overshot:

While it doth study to have what it would

It doth forget to do the thing it should,

And when it hath the thing it hunteth most,

'Tis won as towns with fire, so won, so lost.

*King.* We must of force dispense with this decree;

She must lie here on mere necessity.

*Biron.* Necessity will make us all forsworn

Three thousand times within this three years' space; 151

For every man with his affects is born,

Not by might master'd but by special grace:

If I break faith, this word shall speak for me;

I am forsworn on 'mere necessity.'

So to the laws at large I write my name:

[Subscribes.]

And he that breaks them in the least degree

Stands in attainder of eternal shame:

Suggestions are to other as to me;

But I believe, although I seem so loath, 160

I am the last that will last keep his oath.

But is there no quick recreation granted?

*King.* Ay, that there is. Our court, you know, is haunted

With a refined traveller of Spain;

A man in all the world's new fashion planted,

That hath a mint of phrases in his brain;

One whom the music of his own vain tongue

Doth ravish like enchanting harmony;

A man of complements, whom right and wrong

Have chose as umpire of their mutiny: 170

This child of fancy that Armado hight

For interim to our studies shall relate

In high-born words the worth of many a knight

From tawny Spain lost in the world's debate.

How you delight, my lords, I know not, I;  
But, I protest, I love to hear him lie  
And I will use him for my minstrelsy.

*Biron.* Arnado is a most illustrious wight,  
A man of fire-new words, fashion's own knight.

*Long.* Costard the swain and he shall be our  
sport;

And so to study, three years is but short.

*Enter DULL with a letter, and COSTARD.*

*Dull.* Which is the duke's own person?

*Biron.* This, fellow: what wouldst?

*Dull.* I myself reprehend his own person, for  
I am his grace's thorough: but I would see  
his own person in flesh and blood.

*Biron.* This is he.

*Dull.* Signior Arne—Arne—commends you.  
There's villany abroad: this letter will tell you  
more.

*Cost.* Sir, the contempts thereof are as touch-  
ing me.

*King.* A letter from the magnificent Arnado.

*Biron.* How low soever the matter, I hope  
in God for high words.

*Long.* A high hope for a low heaven: God  
grant us patience!

*Biron.* To hear? or forbear laughing?

*Long.* To hear meekly, sir, and to laugh  
moderately: or to forbear both.

*Biron.* Well, sir, be it as the style shall give  
us cause to climb in the meanness.

*Cost.* The matter is to me, sir, as concerning  
Jaquenetta. The manner of it is, I was taken  
with the manner.

*Biron.* In what manner?

*Cost.* In manner and form following, sir: all  
those three: I was seen with her in the manor-  
house, sitting with her upon the form, and taken  
following her into the park; which, put together,  
is in manner and form following. Now, sir, for  
the manner,—it is the manner of a man to  
speak to a woman: for the form,—in some  
form.

*Biron.* For the following, sir?

*Cost.* As it shall follow in my correction  
and God defend the right!

*King.* Will you hear this letter with attention?

*Biron.* As we would hear an oracle.

*Cost.* Such is the simplicity of man to  
hearken after the flesh.

*King [reads].* 'Great deputy, the welkin's  
vicegerent and sole dominator of Navarre, my  
soul's earth's god, and body's fostering patron.'

*Cost.* Not a word of Costard yet.

*King [reads].* 'So it is,—'

*Cost.* It may be so: but if he say it is so, he  
is, in telling true, but so.

*King.* Peace!

*Cost.* Be to me and every man that dares  
not fight!

*King.* No words!

*Cost.* Of other men's secrets, I heezech you.  
*King [reads].* 'So it is, besieged with sable-  
coloured melancholy, I did commend the black-  
oppressing humour to the most wholesome  
physic of thy health-giving sir; and, as I am a  
gentleman, betook myself to walk. The time  
when. About the sixth hour; when beasts most

graze, birds best peck, and men sit down to that  
nourishment which is called supper: so much  
for the time when. Now for the ground which;  
which, I mean, I walked upon: it is ycleped  
thy park. Then for the place where; where, I  
mean, I did encounter that obscene and most  
preposterous event, that draweth from my snow-  
white pen the ebon-coloured ink, [which here  
thou viewest, beholdest, surveyest, or seest: but  
to the place where; it standeth north-north-  
east and by east from the west corner of thy  
curious-knotted garden: there did I see that  
low-spirited swain, that base minnow of thy  
mirth,']—

*Cost.* Met

*King [reads].* 'that unlettered small-know-  
ing soul,'—

*Cost.* Met

*King [reads].* 'that shallow vassal,'—

*Cost.* Still me?

*King [reads].* 'which, as I remember, high  
Costard,'—

*Cost.* O, me!

*King [reads].* 'sorted and consorted, contrary  
to thy established proclaimed etic and con-  
tinent canon, which with,—O, with—but with  
this I passion to say wherewith,—'

*Cost.* With a wench.

*King [reads].* 'with a child of our grand-  
mother Eve, a female; or, for thy more sweet  
understanding, a woman. Him I, as my ever-  
esteemed duty pricks me on, have sent to thee,  
to receive the meed of punishment, by thy sweet  
grace's officer, Anthony Dull; a man of good  
repute, carriage, bearing, and estimation.'

*Dull.* Me, an't shall please you; I am  
Anthony Dull.

*King [reads].* 'For Jaquenetta,—so is the  
weaker vessel called which I apprehended with  
the aforesaid swain,—I keep her as a vessel of  
thy law's fury; and shall, at the least of thy  
sweet notice, bring her to trial. Thine, in all  
compliments of devoted and heart-burning heat  
of duty. DON ADRIANO DE ARNADO.'

*Biron.* This is not so well as I looked for,  
but the best that ever I heard.

*King.* Ay, the best for the worst. But,  
sirrah, what say you to this?

*Cost.* Sir, I confess the wench.

*King.* Did you hear the proclamation?

*Cost.* I do confess much of the hearing it,  
but little of the marking of it.

*King.* It was proclaimed a year's imprison-  
ment, to be taken with a wench.

*Cost.* I was taken with none, sir: I was taken  
with a damsel.

*King.* Well, it was proclaimed 'damsel.'

*Cost.* This was no damsel neither, sir; she  
was a virgin.

*King.* It is so varied too; for it was pro-  
claimed 'virgin.'

*Cost.* If it were, I deny her virginity: I was  
taken with a maid.

*King.* This maid will not serve your turn,  
sir.

*Cost.* This maid will serve my turn, sir.

*King.* Sir, I will pronounce your sentence:  
you shall fast a week with bran and water.

*Cost.* I had rather pray a month with mutton and porridge.

*King.* And Don Armado shall be your <sup>deeper.</sup>

My Lord Biron, see him deliver'd o'er :

And go we, lords, to put in practice that

Which each to other hath so strongly sworn.

[*Exeunt King, Longueville, and Dumain.*]

*Biron.* I'll lay my head to any good man's

huk, <sup>310</sup>  
These oaths and laws will prove an idle scorn.

*Sirrah,* come on.

*Cost.* I suffer for the truth, sir : for true it is,

I was taken with Jaquenetta, and Jaquenetta

is a true girl ; and therefore welcome the sour

up of prosperity ! Affliction may one day smile

again ; and till then, sit thee down, sorrow !

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *The same.*

*Enter ARMADO and MOTH.*

*Arm.* Boy, what sign is it when a man of

great spirit grows melancholy ?

*Moth.* A great sign, sir, that he will look sad.

*Arm.* Why, sadness is one and the self-same

thing, dear imp.

*Moth.* No, no ; O Lord, sir, no.

*Arm.* How canst thou part sadness and

melancholy, my tender juvenal !

*Moth.* By a familiar demonstration of the

working, my tough senior. <sup>10</sup>

*Arm.* Why tough senior ? why tough senior ?

*Moth.* Why tender juvenal ? why tender juvenal ?

*Arm.* I spoke it, tender juvenal, as a con-

current epitheton appertaining to thy young

days, which we may nominate tender.

*Moth.* And I, tough senior, as an appertinent

title to your old time, which we may name

tough. <sup>10</sup>

*Arm.* Pretty and apt.

*Moth.* How mean you, sir ? I pretty, and

my saying apt ? or I apt, and my saying pretty ?

*Arm.* Thou pretty, because little.

*Moth.* Little pretty, because little. Where-

fore apt ?

*Arm.* And therefore apt, because quick.

*Moth.* Speak you this in my praise, master ?

*Arm.* In thy condign praise.

*Moth.* I will praise an eel with the same

praise.

*Arm.* What, that an eel is ingenious ?

*Moth.* That an eel is quick. <sup>30</sup>

*Arm.* I do say thou art quick in answers :

thou heatest my blood.

*Moth.* I am answered, sir.

*Arm.* I love not to be crossed.

*Moth.* [*Aside*] He speaks the mere contrary ;

crosses love not him.

*Arm.* I have promised to study three years

with the duke.

*Moth.* You may do it in an hour, sir.

*Arm.* Impossible.

*Moth.* How many is one thrice told ?

*Arm.* I am ill at reckoning ; it fitteth the

spirit of a tapster.

*Moth.* You are a gentleman and a gamester,

sir.

*Arm.* I confess both : they are both the var-

nish of a complete man.

*Moth.* Then, I am sure, you know how much

he gross sum of deuce-ace amounts to. <sup>40</sup>

*Arm.* It doth amount to one more than two.

*Moth.* Which the base vulgar do call three.

*Arm.* True.

*Moth.* Why, sir, is this such a piece of

study ? Now here is three studied, ere ye'll

thrice wink ; and how easy it is to put 'years'

to the word 'three,' and study three years in

two words, the dancing horse will tell you.

*Arm.* A most fine figure !

*Moth.* To prove you a cipher. <sup>50</sup>

*Arm.* I will hereupon confess I am in love :

and as it is base for a soldier to love, so am I in

love with a base wench. If drawing my sword

against the humour of affection would deliver

me from the reprobate thought of it, I would

take Desire prisoner, and ransom him to any

French courtier for a new-devised courtesy. I

think scorn to sigh : methinks I should out-

swear Cupid. Comfort me, boy : what great

men have been in love !

*Moth.* Hercules, master. <sup>60</sup>

*Arm.* Most sweet Hercules ! More authority,

dear boy, name more ; and, sweet my child, let

them be men of good repute and carriage.

*Moth.* Samson, master : he was a man of

good carriage, great carriage, for he carried the

town-gates on his back like a porter : and he

was in love.

*Arm.* O well-knit Samson ! strong-jointed

Samson ! I do excel thee in my rapier as much

as thou didst me in carrying gates. I am in

love too. Who was Samson's love, my dear

Moth ? <sup>80</sup>

*Moth.* A woman, master.

*Arm.* Of what complexion ?

*Moth.* Of all the four, or the three, or the

two, or one of the four.

*Arm.* Tell me precisely of what complexion.

*Moth.* Of the sea-water green, sir.

*Arm.* Is that one of the four complexions ?

*Moth.* As I have read, sir ; and the best of

them too. <sup>80</sup>

*Arm.* Green indeed is the colour of lovers ;

but to have a love of that colour, methinks

Samson had small reason for it. He surely

affected her for her wit.

*Moth.* It was so, sir ; for she had a green wit.

*Arm.* My love is most immaculate white

and red.

*Moth.* Most maculate thoughts, master, are

masked under such colours.

*Arm.* Define, define, well-educated infant.

*Moth.* My father's wit and my mother's

tongue, assist me ! <sup>101</sup>

*Arm.* Sweet invocation of a child ; most

pretty and pathetic !

*Moth.* If she be made of white and red,

Her faults will ne'er be known,

For blushing cheeks by faults are bred

And fears by pale white shown :

Then if she fear, or be to blame,

By this you shall not know,

For still her cheeks possess the same

Which native she doth owe. <sup>111</sup>

A dangerous rhyme, master, against the reason of white and red.

*Arm.* Is there not a ballad, boy, of the King and the Beggar?

*Moth.* The world was very guilty of such a ballad some three ages since: but I think now 'tis not to be found; or, if it were, it would neither serve for the writing nor the tune. 110

*Arm.* I will have that subject newly writ o'er, that I may example my digression by some mighty precedent. Boy, I do love that country girl that I took in the park with the rational hind Costard: she deserves well.

*Moth.* [Aside] To be whipped; and yet a better love than my master.

*Arm.* Sing, boy; my spirit grows heavy in love.

*Moth.* And that's great marvel, loving a light wench.

*Arm.* I say, sing. 130

*Moth.* Forbear till this company be past.

*Enter DULL, COSTARD, and JAQUENETTA.*

*Dull.* Sir, the duke's pleasure is, that you keep Costard safe: and you must suffer him to take no delight nor no penance; but a' must fast three days a week. For this damsel, I must keep her at the park: she is allowed for the day-woman. Fare you well.

*Arm.* I do betray myself with blushing. Maid!

*Jaq.* Man?

*Arm.* I will visit thee at the lodge. 140

*Jaq.* That's herely.

*Arm.* I know where it is situate.

*Jaq.* Lord, how wise you are.

*Arm.* I will tell thee wonders.

*Jaq.* With that face?

*Arm.* I love thee.

*Jaq.* So I heard you say.

*Arm.* And so, farewell.

*Jaq.* Fair weather after you!

*Dull.* Come, Jaquenetta, away! 150

[*Exeunt Dull and Jaquenetta.*]

*Arm.* Villain, thou shalt fast for thy offences ere thou be pardoned.

*Cost.* Well, sir, I hope, when I do it, I shall do it on a full stomach.

*Arm.* Thou shalt be heavily punished.

*Cost.* I am more bound to you than your fellows, for they are but lightly rewarded.

*Arm.* Take away this villain; shut him up.

*Moth.* Come, you transgressing slave; away!

*Cost.* Let me not be pent up, sir: I will fast, being loose. 161

*Moth.* No, sir; that were fast and loose: thou shalt to prison.

*Cost.* Well, if ever I do see the merry days of desolation that I have seen, some shall see.

*Moth.* What shall some see?

*Cost.* Nay, nothing, Master Moth, but what they look upon. It is not for prisoners to be too silent in their words; and therefore I will say nothing: I thank God I have as little patience as another man; and therefore I can be quiet. [*Exeunt Moth and Costard.*]

*Arm.* I do affect the very ground, which is base, where her shoe, which is baser, guided by

her foot, which is basest, doth tread. I shall be forsworn, which is a great argument of falshood, if I love. And how can that be true love which is falsely attempted? Love is a familiar: Love is a devil: there is no evil angel but Love. Yet was Samson so tempted, and he had an excellent strength; yet was Solomon so seduced, and he had a very good wit. Cupid's butt-shaft is too hard for Hercules' club; and therefore too much odds for a Spaniard's rapier. The first and second cause will not serve my turn; the passado he respects not, the duello he regards not: his disgrace is to be called boy; but his glory is to subdue men. Adieu, valour! rust, rapier! be still, drum! for your manager is in love; yea, he loveth. Assist me, some extemporai god of rhyme, for I am sure I shall turn sonnet. Devise, wit; write, pen; for I am for whole volumes in folio. [*Exit.*]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. *The same.*

*Enter the Princess of France, ROSALINE, MARIA, KATHARINE, BOYET, Lords, and other Attendants.*

*Boyet.* Now, madam, summon up your dearest spirits:

Consider who the king your father sends, To whom he sends, and what's his embassy: Yourself, held precious in the world's esteem, To parley with the sole inheritor Of all perfections that a man may owe, Matchless Navarre; the plea of no less weight Than Aquitaine, a dowry for a queen. Be now as prodigal of all dear grace As Nature was in making graces dear: When she did starve the general world beside And prodigally gave them all to you.

*Prin.* Good Lord Boyet, my beauty, though but mean,

Needs not the painted flourish of your praise: Beauty is bought by judgement of the eye, Not utter'd by base sale of chapmen's tongues. I am less proud to hear you tell my worth Than you much willing to be counted wise In spending your wit in the praise of mine. But now to task the tasker: good Boyet, You are not ignorant, all-telling fame Doth noise abroad, Navarre hath made a vow, Till painful study shall outwear three years, No woman may approach his silent court: Therefore to 's seemeth it a needful course, Before we enter his forbidden gates, To know his pleasure; and in that behalf, Bold of your worthiness, we single you As our best-moving fair solicitor.

Tell him, the daughter of the King of France, On serious business, craving quick dispatch, Importunes personal conference with his grace: Haste, signify so much; while we attend, Like humble-visaged suitors, his high will.

*Boyet.* Proud of employment, willingly I go.  
*Prin.* All pride is willing pride, and yours is so. [*Exit Boyet.*]

Who are the votaries, my loving lords, That are vow-fellows with this virtuous duke?



*First Lord.* Lord Longaville is one.

*Prin.* Know you the man?

*Mar.* I know him, madam : at a marriage-  
feast.

Between Lord Perigort and the beauteous heir  
(Of Jaques Falconbridge, solemnized  
In Normandy, saw I this Longaville :  
A man of sovereign parts he is esteem'd ;  
Well fitted in arts, glorious in arms :  
Nothing becomes him ill that he would well.  
The only soil of his fair virtue's gloss,  
If virtue's gloss will stain with any soil,  
Is a sharp wit match'd with too blunt a will ;  
Whose edge hath power to cut, whose will still  
wills

It should none spare that come within his  
power.

*Prin.* Some merry mocking lord, belike ;  
is't so?

*Mar.* They say so most that most his hum-  
ours know.

*Prin.* Such short-lived wits do wither as  
they grow.

Who are the rest?

*Kath.* The young Dumain ; a well-accom-  
plished youth,

Of all that virtue love for virtue loved :  
Most power to do most harm, least knowing ill  
For he hath wit to make an ill shape good,  
And shape to win grace though he had no wit.  
I saw him at the Duke Alençon's once ;      6  
And much too little of that good I saw  
Is my report to his great worthiness.

*Ros.* Another of these students at that time  
Was there with him, if I have heard a truth.  
Biron they call him ; but a merrier man,  
Within the limit of becoming mirth,  
I never spent an hour's talk withal :  
His eye begets occasion for his wit ;  
For every object that the one doth catch  
The other turns to a mirth-moving jest,  
Which his fair tongue, conceit's expositor,  
Delivers in such apt and gracious words  
That aged ears play truant at his tales  
And younger hearings are quite ravished ;  
So sweet and voluble is his discourse.

*Prin.* God bless my ladies ! are they all in love.  
That every one her own hath garnished  
With such be decking ornaments of praise?

*First Lord.* Here comes Boyet.

*Re-enter BOYET.*

*Prin.* Now, what admittance, lord? 8

*Boyet.* Navarre had notice of your fair ap-  
proach ;

And he and his competitors in oath  
Were all address'd to meet you, gentle lady,  
Before I came. Marry, thus much I have learnt  
He rather means to lodge you in the field,  
Like one that comes here to besiege his court,  
Than seek a dispensation for his oath,  
To let you enter his unpeopled house.  
Here comes Navarre.

*Enter KING, LONGAVILLE, DUMAIN, BIRON  
and Attendants.*

*King.* Fair princess, welcome to the court  
of Navarre.

*Prin.* 'Fair' I give you back again ; and  
welcome ! I have not yet : the roof of this court  
is too high to be yours ; and welcome to the wide  
fields too base to be mine.

*King.* You shall be welcome, madam, to my  
court.

*Prin.* I will be welcome, then : conduct me  
thither.

*King.* Hear me, dear lady ; I have sworn an  
oath.

*Prin.* Our Lady help my lord ! he'll be for-  
sworn.

*King.* Not for the world, fair madam, by my  
will.

*Prin.* Why, will shall break it ; will and no-  
thing else.

*King.* Your ladyship is ignorant what it is.

*Prin.* Were my lord so, his ignorance were  
wise,

Where now his knowledge must prove ignorance.  
Hear your grace hath sworn out house-keeping :  
Tis deadly sin to keep that oath, my lord,  
And sin to break it.

But pardon me, I am too sudden-bold :

To teach a teacher ill besemeth me.  
Touchsafe to read the purpose of my coming,

And suddenly resolve me in my suit.      100

*King.* Madam, I will, if suddenly I may.

*Prin.* You will the summer, that I were away ;  
For you'll prove perjured if you make me stay.

*Biron.* Did not I dance with you in Brabant  
once?

*Ros.* Did not I dance with you in Brabant  
once?

*Biron.* I know you did.

*Ros.* How needless was it then to ask the  
question!

*Biron.* You must not be so quick.

*Ros.* 'Tis long of you that spur me with such  
questions.

*Biron.* Your wit's too hot, it speeds too fast,  
'twill tire.      120

*Ros.* Not till it leave the rider in the mire.

*Biron.* What time o' day?

*Ros.* The hour that fools should ask.

*Biron.* Now fair befall your mask!

*Ros.* Fair fall the face it covers!

*Biron.* And send you many lovers!

*Ros.* Amen, so you be none.

*Biron.* Nay, then will I be gone.

*King.* Madam, your father here doth in-  
timate

The payment of a hundred thousand crowns ;  
Being but the one half of an entire sum      131

Disbursed by my father in his wars.  
But say that he or we, as neither have,

Received that sum, yet there remains unpaid  
A hundred thousand more ; in surety of the  
which,

One part of Aquitaine is bound to us,  
Although not valued to the money's worth.

If then the king your father will restore  
But that one half which is unsatisfied,

We will give up our right in Aquitaine,      140  
And hold fair friendship with his majesty.

But that, it seems, he little purposeth,  
For here he doth demand to have repaid  
A hundred thousand crowns ; and not demands,

On payment of a hundred thousand crowns,  
To have his title live in Aquitaine;  
Which we much rather had depart withal  
And have the money by our father lent  
Than Aquitaine so gelded as it is.  
Dear princess, were not his requests so far 150  
From reason's yielding, your fair self should

make  
A yielding 'gainst some reason in my breast  
And go well satisfied to France again.

*Prin.* You do the king my father too much  
wrong

And wrong the reputation of your name,  
In so unseemly to confess receipt  
Of that which hath so faithfully been paid.

*King.* I do protest I never heard of it;  
And if you prove it, I'll repay it back  
Or yield up Aquitaine.

*Prin.* We arrest your word. 160  
*Boyet*, you can produce acquaintances  
For such a sum from special officers  
Of Charles his father.

*King.* Satisfy me so.

*Boyet.* So please your grace, the packet is  
not come

Where that and other specialties are bound:  
To-morrow you shall have a sight of them.

*King.* It shall suffice me: at which interview  
All liberal reason I will yield unto.

Meantime receive such welcome at my hand  
As honour without breach of honour may 170  
Make tender of to thy true worthiness:

You may not come, fair princess, in my gates;  
But here without you shall be so received

As you shall deem yourself lodged in my heart,  
Though so denied fair harbour in my house.

Your own good thoughts excuse me, and fare-  
well:

To-morrow shall we visit you again.

*Prin.* Sweet health and fair desires consort  
your grace!

*King.* Thy own wish wish I thee in every  
place! [Exit.]

*Biron.* Lady, I will commend you to mine  
own heart. 180

*Ros.* Pray you, do my commendations; I  
would be glad to see it.

*Biron.* I would you heard it groan.

*Ros.* Is the fool sick?

*Biron.* Sick at the heart.

*Ros.* Alack, let it bleed.

*Biron.* Would that do it good?

*Ros.* My physic says 'ay.'

*Biron.* Will you prick 't with your eye?

*Ros.* No point, with my knife. 190

*Biron.* Now, God save thy life!

*Ros.* And yours from long living!

*Biron.* I cannot stay thanksgiving. [Retiring.]

*Dum.* Sir, I pray you, a word: what lady is  
that same?

*Boyet.* The heir of Alençon, Katharine her  
name.

*Dum.* A gallant lady. Monsieur, fare you  
well. [Exit.]

*Long.* I beseech you a word: what is she in  
the white?

*Boyet.* A woman sometimes, an you saw her  
in the light.

*Long.* Perchance light in the light. I desire  
her name.

*Boyet.* She hath but one for herself; to desire  
that were a shame.

*Long.* Pray you, sir, whose daughter?

*Boyet.* Her mother's, I have heard.

*Long.* God's blessing on your beard!

*Boyet.* Good sir, be not offended.

She is an heir of Falconbridge.

*Long.* Nay, my choler is ended.

She is a most sweet lady.

*Boyet.* Not unlike, sir, that may be.

[Exit Long.]

*Biron.* What's her name in the cap?

*Boyet.* Rosaline, by good hap. 210

*Biron.* Is she wedded or no?

*Boyet.* To her will, sir, or so.

*Biron.* You are welcome, sir: adieu.

*Boyet.* Farewell to me, sir, and welcome to  
you. [Exit Biron.]

*Mar.* That last is Biron, the merry mad-cap  
lord:

Not a word with him but a jest.

*Boyet.* And every jest but a word.

*Prin.* It was well done of you to take him  
at his word.

*Boyet.* I was as willing to grapple as he was  
to board.

*Mar.* Two hot sheeps, marry.

*Boyet.* And wherefore not sheeps?  
No sheep, sweet lamb, unless we feed on your  
lips. 220

*Mar.* You sheep, and I pasture: shall that  
finish the jest?

*Boyet.* So you grant pasture for me.

[Offering to kiss her.]  
*Mar.* Not so, gentle beast:

My lips are no common, though several they be.

*Boyet.* Belonging to whom?

*Mar.* To my fortunes and me.

*Prin.* Good wits will be jangling; but, gen-  
tles, agree:

This civil war of wits were much better used  
In Navarre and his book-men; for here 'tis  
abused.

*Boyet.* If my observation, which very seldom  
lies,

By the heart's still rhetoric disclosed with eyes,  
Deceive me not now, Navarre is infected. 230

*Prin.* With what?

*Boyet.* With that which we lovers entitle  
affected.

*Prin.* Your reason?

*Boyet.* Why, all his behaviours did make  
their retire

To the court of his eye, peeping thorough desire:  
His heart, like an agate, with your print im-  
press'd,

Proud with his form, in his eye pride express'd:  
His tongue, all impatient to speak and not see,  
Did stumble with haste in his eyesight to be;

All senses to that sense did make their repair,  
To feel only looking on fairest of fair: 240

Methought all his senses were lock'd in his eye,  
As jewels in crystal for some prince to buy;

Who, tendering their own worth from where  
they were glass'd,

Did point you to buy them, along as you pass'd:

His face's own margent did quote such amazes  
That all eyes saw his eyes enchanted with gazes.  
I'll give you Aquitaine and all that is his,  
An you give him for my sake but one loving  
kiss.

*Prin.* Come to our pavilion: Boyet is dis-  
posed.

*Boyet.* But to speak that in words which  
his eye hath disclosed.

I only have made a mouth of his eye,  
By adding a tongue which I know will not lie.

*Ros.* Thou art an old love-monger and speak-  
est skilfully.

*Mar.* He is Cupid's grandfather and learns  
news of him.

*Ros.* Then was Venus like her mother, for  
her father is but grim.

*Boyet.* Do you hear, my mad wenches?

*Mar.* No.

*Boyet.* What then, do you see?

*Ros.* Ay, our way to be gone.

*Boyet.* You are too hard for me.  
[*Exeunt.*]

# ACT III.

## SCENE I. *The same.*

*Enter ARMAINDO and MOTH.*

*Arm.* Warble, child; make passionate my  
sense of hearing.

*Moth.* Concolinel. [*Singing.*]

*Arm.* Sweet air! Go, tenderness of years;  
ake this key, give enlargement to the swain,  
ring him festinately hither: I must employ  
him in a letter to my love.

*Moth.* Master, will you win your love with a  
French brawl?

*Arm.* How meanest thou? brawling in  
French?

*Moth.* No, my complete master: but to jig  
off a tune at the tongue's end, canary to it with  
our feet, humour it with turning up your eye-  
bals, sigh a note and sing a note, sometime  
through the throat, as if you swallowed love  
with singing love, sometime through the nose,  
as if you snuffed up love by smelling love; with  
your hat penthouse-like o'er the shop of your  
eyes; with your arms crossed on your thin-belly  
doubtless like a rabbit on a spit; or your hands in  
your pocket like a man after the old painting;  
and keep not too long in one tune, but a snip  
and away. These are complements, these are  
humours; these betray nice wenches, that would  
be betrayed without these; and make them men  
of note—do you note me?—that most are affected  
to these.

*Arm.* How hast thou purchased this ex-  
perience?

*Moth.* By my penny of observation.

*Arm.* But O,—but O;—

*Moth.* 'The hobby-horse is forgot.' 30

*Arm.* Callst thou my love 'hobby-horse'?

*Moth.* No, master; the hobby-horse is but a  
colt, and your love perhaps a lackney. But  
have you forgot your love?

*Arm.* Almost I had.

*Moth.* Negligent student! learn her by heart.

*Arm.* By heart and in heart, boy.

*Moth.* And out of heart, master: all those  
three I will prove.

*Arm.* What wilt thou prove?

*Moth.* A man, if I live; and this, by, in, and  
without, upon the instant: by heart you love  
her, because your heart cannot come by her;  
in heart you love her, because your heart is in  
love with her; and out of heart you love her,  
being out of heart that you cannot enjoy her.

*Arm.* I am all these three.

*Moth.* And three times as much more, and  
yet nothing at all.

*Arm.* Fetch hither the swain: he must carry  
me a letter.

*Moth.* A message well sympathized; a horse  
to be ambassador for an ass.

*Arm.* Ha, ha! what sayest thou?

*Moth.* Marry, sir, you must send the ass upon  
the horse, for he is very slow-gaited. But I go.

*Arm.* The way is but short: away!

*Moth.* As swift as lead, sir.

*Arm.* The meaning, pretty ingenious!

Is not lead a metal heavy, dull, and slow? 60

*Moth.* Minimè, honest master; or rather,  
master, no.

*Arm.* I say lead is slow.

*Moth.* You are too swift, sir, to say so:  
Is that lead slow which is fired from a gun?

*Arm.* Sweet smoke of rhetoric!

He reputes me a cannon; and the bullet,  
that's he:

I shoot thee at the swain.

*Moth.* Thump then and I flee. [*Exit.*]

*Arm.* A most acute juvenal; volable and free  
of grace!

By thy favour, sweet welkin, I must sigh in thy  
face;

Most rue melancholy, valour gives thee place.  
My herald is return'd. 70

*Re-enter MOTH with COSTARD.*

*Moth.* A wonder, master! here's a costard  
broken in a shin.

*Arm.* Some enigma, some riddle: come, thy  
l'envoy: begia.

*Cost.* No enigma, no riddle, no l'envoy; no  
salve 'in the mail, sir: O, sir, plantain, a plain  
plantain! no l'envoy, no l'envoy; no salve, sir,  
but a plantain!

*Arm.* By virtue, thou enforcest laughter;  
thy silly thought my spleen: the heaving of  
my lungs provokes me to ridiculous swelling.  
O, pardon me, my stars! Doth the inco-  
siderate take salve for l'envoy, and the word  
l'envoy for a salve? 80

*Moth.* Do the wise think there either? is not  
l'envoy a salve?

*Arm.* No, page: it is an epilogue or discourse,  
to make plain

Some obscure precedence that hath before been  
said.

I will example it:

The fox, the ape and the humble-bee,  
Were still at odds, being but three.  
There's the moral. Now that away.

*Moth.* I will add the l'envoy. Say the moral | again.

*Arm.* The fox, the ape, the humble-bee, 90  
Were still at odds, being but three.

*Moth.* Until the goose came out of door,  
And stay'd the odds by adding four.  
Now will I begin your moral, and do you follow  
with my l'envoy.

The fox, the ape, and the humble-bee,  
Were still at odds, being but three.  
*Arm.* Until the goose came out of door,  
Staying the odds by adding four.

*Moth.* A good l'envoy, ending in the goose :  
would you desire more? 101

*Cost.* The boy hath sold him a bargain, a  
goose, that's flat.  
Sir, your pennyworth is good, an your goose  
be fat.

To sell a bargain well is as cunning as fast and  
loose :

Let me see; a fat l'envoy; ay, that's a fat  
goose.

*Arm.* Come hither, come hither. How did  
this argument begin?

*Moth.* By saying that a costard was broken  
in a shin.

Then call'd you for the l'envoy.

*Cost.* True, and I for a plantain : thus came  
your argument in ;

Then the boy's fat l'envoy, the goose that you  
bought; 110

And he ended the market.  
*Arm.* But tell me; how was there a costard  
broken in a shin?

*Moth.* I will tell you sensibly.

*Cost.* Thou hast no feeling of it, *Moth.* : I  
will speak that l'envoy :

I Costard, running out, that was safely within,  
Fell over the threshold, and broke my shin.

*Arm.* We will talk no more of this matter.

*Cost.* Till there be more matter in the shin.

*Arm.* Sirrah Costard, I will enfranchise thee.

*Cost.* O, marry me to one Frances : I smell  
some l'envoy, some goose, in this.

*Arm.* By my sweet soul, I mean setting thee  
at liberty, enfranchising thy person : thou wert  
immured, restrained, captivated, bound.

*Cost.* True, true; and now you will be my  
purgation and let me loose.

*Arm.* I give thee thy liberty, set thee from  
durance; and, in lieu thereof, impose on thee  
nothing but this : bear this significant [*giving a  
letter*] to the country maid Jaquenetta : there  
is remuneration ; for the best ward of mine  
honour is rewarding my dependents. *Moth.*  
follow. [*Exit.*]

*Moth.* Like the sequel, I. Signior Costard,  
adieu.

*Cost.* My sweet ounce of man's flesh ! my  
inequy Jew ! [*Exit Moth.*]

Now will I look to his remuneration. Re-  
muneration ! O, that's the Latin word for  
three farthings : three farthings—remuneration.  
—'What's the price of this inkle?'—'One  
penny.'—'No, I'll give you a remuneration :'  
why, it carries it. Remuneration ! why, it is a  
fairer name than French crown. I will never  
buy and sell out of this word.

*Enter BIRON.*

*Biron.* O, my good knave Costard ! exceed-  
ingly well met.

*Cost.* Pray you, sir, how much carnation  
ribbon may a man buy for a remuneration ?

*Biron.* What is a remuneration ?

*Cost.* Marry, sir, halfpenny farthing.

*Biron.* Why, then, three-farthing worth  
silk.

*Cost.* I thank your worship : God be wi' you !

*Biron.* Stay, slave ; I must employ thee :

As thou wilt win my favour, good my knave,  
Do one thing for me that I shall entreat.

*Cost.* When would you have it done, sir ?

*Biron.* This afternoon.

*Cost.* Well, I will do it, sir : fare you well.

*Biron.* Thou knowest not what it is.

*Cost.* I shall know, sir, when I have done it.

*Biron.* Why, villain, thou must know first.

*Cost.* I will come to your worship to-morrow  
morning.

*Biron.* It must be done this afternoon.

Hark, slave, it is but this :

The princess comes to hunt here in the park,

And in her train there is a gentle lady ;

When tongues speak sweetly, then they name  
her name.

And Rosaline they call her : ask for her ;

And to her white hand see thou do commend

This scald-up counsel. There's thy guerdon ;

go. [*Giving him a shilling.*]

*Cost.* Gardon, O sweet gardon ! better than  
remuneration, a 'leven-pence furthering better  
most sweet gardon ! I will do it, sir, in print.

Gardon ! Remuneration ! [*Exit.*]

*Biron.* And I, forsooth, in love ! I, that

have been love's whip ;

A very beadle to a humorous sigh ;

A critic, nay, a night-watch constable ;

A domineering pedant o'er the boy ;

Thru whom no mortal so magnificent ! 120

This wimpled, whining, purblind, wayward boy ;

This senior-junior, giant-dwarf, Dan Cupid ;

Regent of love-rhymes, lord of folded arms,

The anointed sovereign of sighs and groans,

Liege of all loiterers and malcontents,

Dread prince of plackets, king of codpieces,

Sole imperator and great general

Of trotting paritors :—O my little heart !—

And I to be a corporal of his field,

And wear his colours like a tumbler's hoop ! 125

What, I ! I love ! I sue ! I seek a wife !

A woman, that is like a German clock,

Still a-repairing, ever out of frame,

And never going aright, being a watch,

But being watch'd that it may still go right !

Nay, to be perjured, which is worst of all ;

And, among three, to love the worst of all ;

A wighty wanton with a velvet brow,

With two pitch-balls stuck in her face for eyes

Ay, and, by heaven, one that will do the deed

Though Argus were her eunuch and her guard

And I to sigh for her ! to watch for her !

To pray for her ! Go to ; it is a plague

That Cupid will impose for my neglect

Of his almighty dreadful little might.

all, I will love, write, sigh, pray, sue and groan :  
me men must love my lady and some Joan.  
[Exit.

ACT IV.

SCENE I. *The same.*

*Enter the Princess, and her train, a Forester, YET, ROSALINE, MARIA, and KATHARINE.*

*Prin.* Was that the king, that spurr'd his horse so hard  
tinst the steep uprising of the hill ?

*Boyet.* I know not ; but I think it was not he.

*Prin.* Whoe'er a' was, a' show'd a mounting mind.

all, lords, to-day we shall have our dispatch :  
Saturday we will return to France.

n, forester, my friend, where is the bush  
t we must stand and play the murderer in ?

*For.* Hereby, upon the edge of yonder cop-  
pice ;

and where you may make the fairest shoot.

*Prin.* I thank my beauty, I am fair that  
shoot.

I thereupon thou speak'st the fairest shoot.

*For.* Parlon me, madam, for I meant not so.

*Prin.* What, what ? first praise me and again  
say no ?

ort-lived pride ! Not fair ? alack for woe !

*For.* Yes, madam, fair.

*Prin.* Nay, never paint me now :  
here fair is not, praise cannot mend the brow.

re, good my glass, take this for telling true :  
payment for foul words is more than due.

*For.* Nothing but fair is that which you in-  
herit.

*Prin.* Sec, sec, my beauty will be saved by  
merit !

heresy in fair, fit for these days !  
giving hand, though foul, shall have fair  
praise.

ut come, the bow : now mercy goes to kill,  
nd shooting well is then account'd ill.

us will I save my credit in the shoot :  
t wounding, pity would not let me do't ;

wounding, then it was to show my skill,  
nd more for praise than purpose meant to kill.

nd out of question so it is sometimes,  
ory grows guilty of detested crimes,

hen, for fame's sake, for praise ; an outward  
part.

e bend to that the working of the heart ;  
s I for praise alone now seek to spill

he poor deer's blood, that my heart means  
no ill.

*Boyet.* Do not curst wives hold that self-  
sovereignty

nly for praise sake, when they strive to be  
ons o'er their lords ?

*Prin.* Only for praise : and praise we may  
afford

any lady that subdues a lord.

Here comes a member of  
wealth.

*Enter COSTARD.*

*Cost.* God dig-you-den all ! Pray you, which  
is the head lady ?

*Prin.* Thou shalt know her, fellow, by the  
rest that have no heads.

*Cost.* Which is the greatest lady, the highest ?

*Prin.* The thickest and the tallest.

*Cost.* The thickest and the tallest ! it is so ;  
truth is truth.

All your waist, mistress, were as slender as my  
wit.

One o' these maids' girdles for your waist should  
be fit.

Are not you the chief woman ? you are the  
thickest here.

*Prin.* What's your will, sir ? what's your  
will ?

*Cost.* I have a letter from Monsieur Biron to  
one Lady Rosaline.

*Prin.* O, thy letter, thy letter ! he's a good  
friend of mine :

stand aside, good bearer. Boyet, you can carve ;  
Break up this caxon.

*Boyet.* I am bound to serve.

This letter is mistook, it importeth none here ;  
It is writ to Jaquenetta.

*Prin.* We will read it, I swear.

Break the neck of the wax, and every one give  
ear.

*Boyet* [reads]. 'By heaven, that thou art fair,  
is most infallible ; true, that thou art beauteous ;

truth itself, that thou art lovely. More fairer  
than fair, beautiful than beauteous, truer than

truth itself, have commiseration on thy heretical  
vassal ! The magnanimous and most illustrate  
king Cophetua set eye upon the pernicious and

indubitate beggar Zenelophon ; and he it was  
that might rightly say, Veni, vidi, vici ; which to

annothianize in the vulgar, — O base and obscure  
vulgar ! — videlicet, He came, saw, and overcame :

he came, one ; saw, two ; overcame, three. Who  
came ? the king : why did he come ? to see : why

did he see ? to overcome : to whom came he ? to  
the beggar : what saw he ? the beggar : who over-

came he ? the beggar. The conclusion is victory :  
on whose side ? the king's. The captive is en-

riched : on whose side ? the beggar's. The cata-  
strophe is a nuptial : on whose side ? the king's :

no, on both in one, or one in both. I am the  
king ; for so stands the comparison : thou the

beggar ; for so witnesseth thy lowliness. Shall  
I command thy love ? I may : shall I enforce thy

love ? I could : shall I entreat thy love ? I will.  
What shalt thou exchange for rags ? robes ; for

titles ? titles ; for thyself ? me. Thus, expecting  
thy reply, I profane my lips on thy foot, my

eyes on thy picture, and my heart on thy every  
part. Thine, in the dearest design of industry,

DON ADRIANO DE ARMADO.

Thus dost thou hear the Nemean lion roar  
'Gainst thee, thou lamb, that standest as his

prey.

Submissive fall his princely feet before,  
And he from forage will incline to play :

But if thou strive, poor soul, what art thou  
then ?

Food for his rage, repasture for his den.

*Prin.* What plume of feathers is he that indited this letter?  
What vane? what weathercock? did you ever hear better?

*Boyet.* I am much deceived but I remember the style.

*Prin.* Else your memory is bad, going o'er it erewhile.

*Boyet.* This Armado is a Spaniard, that keeps here in court;

A phantasime, a Monarcho, and one that makes sport

To the prince and his bookmates.

*Prin.* Thou fellow, a word: Who gave thee this letter?

*Cost.* I told you; my lord.

*Prin.* To whom shouldst thou give it?

*Cost.* From my lord to my lady.

*Prin.* From which lord to which lady?

*Cost.* From my lord Biron, a good master of mine,

To a lady of France that he call'd Rosaline.

*Prin.* Thou hast mistaken his letter. Come, lords, away.

[*To Ros.*] Here, sweet, put up this: 'twill be thine another day.

[*Exeunt Princess and train.*]

*Boyet.* Who is the suitor? who is the suitor?

*Ros.* Shall I teach you to know?

*Boyet.* Ay, my continent of beauty.

*Ros.* Why, she that bears the bow.

Finely put off!

*Boyet.* My lady goes to kill horns; but, if thou marry,

Hang me by the neck, if horns that year miscarry.

Finely put on!

*Ros.* Well, then, I am the shooter.

*Boyet.* And who is your deer?

*Ros.* If we choose by the horns, yourself come not near.

Finely put on, indeed!

*Mar.* You still wrangle with her, Boyet, and she strikes at the brow.

*Boyet.* But she herself is hit lower: have I hit her now?

*Ros.* Shall I come upon thee with an old saying, that was a man when King Pepin of France was a little boy, as touching the hit it?

*Boyet.* So I may answer thee with one as old, that was a woman when Queen Guinever of Britain was a little wench, as touching the hit it.

*Ros.* Thou canst not hit it, hit it, hit it, Thou canst not hit it, my good man.

*Boyet.* An I cannot, cannot, cannot, An I cannot, another can.

*Cost.* By my troth, most pleasant: how both did fit it!

*Mar.* A mark marvellous well shot, for they both did hit it.

*Boyet.* A mark! O, mark but that mark!

A mark, says my lady!

Let the mark have a prick in 't, to mete at, if it may be.

*Mar.* Wide o' the bow hand! I' faith, your hand is out.

*Cost.* Indeed, a' must shoot nearer, or he ne'er hit the clout.

*Boyet.* An if my hand be out, then belch your hand is in.

*Cost.* Then will she get the upshoot by cleaving the pin.

*Mar.* Come, come, you talk greasily; your lips grow foul.

*Cost.* She's too hard for you at pricks, so challenge her to bowl.

*Boyet.* I fear too much rubbing. Good night my good owl. [*Exeunt Boyet and Mar.*]

*Cost.* By my soul, a swain! a most simple clown!

Lord, Lord, how the ladies and I have put him down!

O' my troth, most sweet jests! most incony gar wit!

When it comes so smoothly off, so obscene, as it were, so fit.

Armado o' th' one side,—O, a most dainty need To see him walk before a lady and to hear him

To see him kiss his hand! and how most sweet a will swear!

And his page o' t' other side, that handful wit!

Ah, heavens, it is a most patheticall nit!

Sola, sola! [*Shout with*]

[*Exit Costard, running*]

## SCENE II. The same.

*Enter HOLOFERNES, SIR NATHANIEL, and DULL.*

*Nath.* Very reverend sport, truly; and do in the testimony of a good conscience.

*Hol.* The deer was, as you know, sanguis blood; ripe as the pomewater, who now hanged like a jewel in the ear of caelo, the sky, the wakin, the heaven; and anon falleth like a crab on the face of terra, the soil, the land, the ear.

*Nath.* Truly, Master Holofernes, the epithets are sweetly varied, like a scholar at the less; but, sir, I assure ye, it was a buck of the first head.

*Hol.* Sir Nathaniel, haud credo.

*Dull.* 'Twas not a haud credo; 'twas a prick!

*Hol.* Most barbarous intimation! yet a kind of insinuation, as it were, in via, in way, of application; facere, as it were, replication, or rather ostentare, to show, as it were, his inclination after his undressed, unpolished, uneducated, unpruned, untrained, or rather, unlettered, ratherest, unconfirmed fashion, to insert again my haud credo for a deer.

*Dull.* I said the deer was not a haud credo; 'twas a prick.

*Hol.* Twice-so-d simplicity, his coctus!

O thou monster Ignorance, how deformed dost thou look!

*Nath.* Sir, he hath never fed of the dainties that are bred in a book;

he hath not eat paper, as it were; he hath not drunk ink; his intellect is not replenished; he is only an animal, only sensible in the dullest parts;

and such barren plants are set before us, that we thankful should be,

Which we of taste and feeling are, for those parts that do fructify in us more than he, or as it would ill become me to be vain, indiscreet, or a fool,

So were there a patch set on learning, to see him in a school:

at omne bene, say I; being of an old father's mind,

I can brook the weather that love not the wind.

*Dull.* You two are book-men: can you tell me by your wit that was a month old at Cain's birth, that's not five weeks old as yet?

*Hol.* Dictynna, Goodman Dull; Dictynna, Goodman Dull.

*Dull.* What is Dictynna?

*Nath.* A title to Phœbe, to Luna, to the moon.

*Hol.* The moon was a month old when Adam was no more, and taught not to five weeks when he came to five-score.

'He allusion holds in the exchange.

*Dull.* 'Tis true indeed; the collusion holds in the exchange.

*Hol.* God comfort thy capacity! I say, the illusion holds in the exchange.

*Dull.* And I say, the collusion holds in the exchange; for the moon is never but a month old: and I say beside that, 'twas a pricklet that he princess killed.

*Hol.* Sir Nathaniel, will you hear an external epitaph on the death of the deer? And, to honour the ignorant, call I the deer the princess illed a pricklet.

*Nath.* Perge, good Master Holofernes, perge; or it shall please you to abrogate scurrility.

*Hol.* I will something affect the letter, for it seeks facility.

The preyful princess pierced and prick'd a pretty pleasing pricklet;

Some say a sore; but not a sore, till now made sore with shooting.

The dogs did yell; put L to sore, then sorel jumps from thicket;

Or pricklet sore, or else sorel; the people fall a-hooting.

If sore be sore, then L to sore makes fifty sores one sorel.

If one sore I ar hundred make by adding but one more L.

*Nath.* A rare talent!

*Dull.* [Aside] If a talent be a claw, look how he claws him with a talent.

*Hol.* This is a gift that I have, simple, imple; a foolish extravagant spirit, full of forms, figures, shapes, objects, ideas, apprehensions, motions, revolutions: these are begot in the ventricle of memory, nourished in the womb of pia mater, and delivered upon the mellowing of occasion. But the gift is good in those in whom it is acute, and I am thankful it.

*Nath.* Sir, I praise the Lord for you: and so my parishioners; for their sons are well

tutored by you, and their daughters profit very greatly under you: you are a good member of the commonwealth.

*Hol.* Mehercle, if their sons be ingenious, they shall want no instruction; if their daughters be capable, I will put it to them: but vir sapit qui pauca loquitur; a soul feminine saluteth us.

*Enter JAQUENETTA and COSTARD.*

*Jaq.* God give you good morrow, master Parson.

*Hol.* Master Parson, quasi pers-on. An if one should be pierced, which is the one?

*Cost.* Marry, master schoolmaster, he that is likeliest to a hogshead.

*Hol.* Piercing a hogshead! a good lustre of conceit in a turf of earth; fire enough for a flint, pearl enough for a swine: 'tis pretty; it is well.

*Jaq.* Good master Parson, be so good as read me this letter: it was given me by Costard, and sent me from Don Armado: I beseech you, read it.

*Hol.* Fauste, precor gelida quando pecus omne sub umbra Ruminat,—and so forth. Ah, good old Mantuan! I may speak of thee as the traveller doth of Venice;

Venetia, Venetia,

Chi non ti vede non ti pretia.

Old Mantuan, old Mantuan! who understandeth thee not, loves thee not. Ut, re, sol, la, mi, fa. Under parlon, sir, what are the contents? or rather, as Horace says in his—What, my soul, verses?

*Nath.* Ay, sir, and very learned.

*Hol.* Let me hear a staff, a stanza, a verse; lege, domine.

*Nath.* [reads]

If love make me forsworn, how shall I swear to love?

Ah, never faith could hold, if not to beauty vow'd!

Though to myself forsworn, to thee I'll faithful prove;

Those thoughts to me were oaks, to thee like osiers bow'd.

Study his bias leaves and makes his book thine eyes,

Where all those pleasures live that art would comprehend:

If knowledge be the mark, to know thee shall suffice;

Well learned is that tongue that well can thee commend,

All ignorant that soul that sees thee without wonder;

Which is to me some praise that I thy parts admire:

Thy eye Jove's lightning bears, thy voice his dreadful thunder.

Which, not to anger bent, is music and sweet fire.

Celestial as thou art, O, pardon love this wrong, That sings heaven's praise with such an earthly tongue.

*Hol.* You find not the apostrophas, and so miss the accent: let me supervise the canonet. Here are only numbers ratified; but, for the elegance, facility, and golden cadence of poesy,

caret. Ovidius Naso was the man: and why, indeed, Naso, but for smelling out the odoriferous flowers of fancy, the jerks of invention? Imitari is nothing: so doth the hound his master, the ape his keeper, the tired horse his rider. But, damosella virgin, was this directed to you?

*Jaq.* Ay, sir, from one Monsieur Biron, one of the strange queen's lords.

*Hol.* I will overglance the superscript: 'To the snow-white hand of the most beauteous Lady Rosaline.' I will look again on the intellect of the letter, for the nomination of the party writing to the person written unto: 'Your ladyship's in all desired employment, BIRON.' Sir Nathaniel, this Biron is one of the votaries with the king; and here he hath framed a letter to a sequent of the stranger queen's, which accidentally, or by the way of progression, hath miscarried. Trip and go, my sweet; deliver this paper into the royal hand of the king: it may concern much. Stay not thy compliment; I forgive thy duty: adieu.

*Jaq.* Good Costard, go with me. Sir, God save your life! 150

*Cost.* Have with thee, my girl.

[*Exeunt Cost. and Jaq.*]

*Nath.* Sir, you have done this in the fear of God, very religiously; and, as a certain father saith,—

*Hol.* Sir, tell not me of the father; I do fear colourable colours. But to return to the verses: did they please you, Sir Nathaniel?

*Nath.* Marvellous well for the pen.

*Hol.* I do dine to-day at the father's of a certain pupil of mine; where, if, before repast, it shall please you to gratify the table with a grace, I will, on my privilege I have with the parents of the foresaid child or pupil, undertake your ben venuto; where I will prove those verses to be very unlearned, neither savouring of poetry, wit, nor invention: I beseech your society.

*Nath.* And thank you too: for society, saith the text, is the happiness of life.

*Hol.* And, certes, the text most infallibly concludes it. [*To Dull*] Sir, I do invite you too; you shall not say me nay: pauca verba. Away! the gentles are at their game, and we will to our recreation. [*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III. *The same.*

*Enter BIRON, with a paper.*

*Biron.* The king he is hunting the deer; I am coursing myself: they have pitched a toil; I am toiling in a pitch,—pitch that defiles: defile! a foul word. Well, set thee down, sorrow! for so they say the fool said, and so say I, and I the fool: well proved, wit! By the Lord, this love is as mad as Ajax: it kills sheep; it kills me, I a sheep: well proved again o' my side! I will not love; if I do, hang me; i' faith, I will not. O, but her eye,—by this light, but for her eye, I would not love her; yes, for her two eyes. Well, I do nothing in the world but lie, and lie in my throat. By heaven, I do love; and it hath taught me to rhyme and to be melancholy;

and here is part of my rhyme, and here my melancholy. Well, she hath one o' my sonnets already: the clown bore it, the fool sent it, and the lady hath it: sweet clown, sweeter fool, sweetest lady! By the world, I would not care a pin, if the other three were in. Here come one with a paper: God give him grace to groan

[*Stands aside.*]

*Enter the King, with a paper.*

*King.* Ay me!

*Biron.* [*Aside*] Shot, by heaven! Proceed sweet Cupid: thou hast thumped him with the bird-bolt under the left pap. In faith, secrets!

*King* [*reads*].

So sweet a kiss the golden sun gives not  
To those fresh morning drops upon the rose,  
As thy eye-beams, when their fresh rays have smote

The night of dew that on my cheeks down flows:

Nor shines the silver moon one half so bright:  
Through the transparent bosom of the deep,

As doth thy face through tears of mine give light;

Thou shinest in every tear that I do weep:

No drop but as a coach doth carry thee;

So ridest thou triumphing in my woe.

Do but behold the tears that swell in me,

And they thy glory through my grief will show:

But do not love thyself; then thou wilt keep  
My tears for glasses, and still make me weep.

O queen of queens! how far dost thou excel,  
No thought can think, nor tongue of mortal tell

How shall she know my griefs? I'll drop the paper:

Sweet leaves, shade folly. Who is he comes here? [*Scripts aside.*]

What, Longaville! and reading! listen, ear.

*Biron.* Now, in thy likeness, one more fool appear!

*Enter LONGAVILLE, with a paper.*

*Long.* Ay me, I am forsworn!

*Biron.* Why, he comes in like a perjured wearing papers.

*King.* In love, I hope: sweet fellowship in shame!

*Biron.* One drunkard loves another of the name.

*Long.* Am I the first that have been perjured so?

*Biron.* I could put thee in comfort. Not but two that I know:

Thou makest the triumvir, the corner-cap of society,

The shape of Love's Tyburn that hangs up simplicity.

*Long.* I fear these stubborn lines lack power to move.

O sweet Maria, empress of my love!

These numbers will I tear, and write in prose.

*Biron.* O, rhymes are guards on wanton Cupid's hose:

Disfigure not his slop.

*Long.* This same shall go. [*Reads.*]  
Did not the heavenly rhetoric of thine eye,



'Gainst whom the world cannot hold argument,

Persuade my heart to this false perjury?  
Vows for thee broke deserve not punishment.

A woman I forswore; but I will prove,  
Thou being a goddess, I forswore not thee:

My vow was earthly, thou a heavenly love;  
Thy grace being gain'd curses all disgrace

in me.  
Vows are but breath, and breath a vapour is:

Then thou, fair sun, which on my earth dost shine,

Exhaustest this vapour-vow; in thee it is: 70

If broken then, it is no fault of mine:  
If by me broke, what fool is not so wise

To lose an oath to win a paradise?  
*Biron.* This is the liver-vein, which makes

flesh a deity,  
A green goose a goddess: pure, pure idolatry.

God amend us, God amend! we are much out  
of the way.

*Long.* By whom shall I send this?—Com-  
pany! stay. [*Steps aside.*]

*Biron.* All hid, all hid; an old infant play.  
Like a demigod here sit I in the sky,

And wretched fools' secrets heedfully o'er-eye.  
More saks to the mill! O heavens, I have my

wish! 81

*Enter DUMAIN, with a paper.*

Dumain transform'd! four woodcocks in a dish!  
*Dum.* O most divine Kate!

*Biron.* O most profane coxcomb!  
*Dum.* By heaven, the wonder in a mortal eye!

*Biron.* By earth, she is not, corporal, there  
you lie.

*Dum.* Her amber hair for foul hath amber  
quoted.

*Biron.* An amber-colour'd raven was well  
noted.

*Dum.* As upright as the cedar.  
*Biron.* Stoop, I say;

Her shoulder is with child.  
*Dum.* As fair as day.

*Biron.* Ay, as some days; but then no sun  
must shine.

*Dum.* O that I had my wish!  
*Long.* And I had mine!

*King.* And I mine too, good Lord!  
*Biron.* Amen, so I had mine: is not that a

good world?  
*Dum.* I would forget her; but a fever she

Reigns in my blood and will remember'd be.  
*Biron.* A fever in your blood! why, then

incision  
Would let her out in saucers: sweet misprision!

*Dum.* Once more I'll read the ode that I  
have writ.

*Biron.* Once more I'll mark how love can  
vary wit.

*Dum.* [*recalls*]  
On a day—alack the day!—

Love, whose month is ever May,  
Spied a blossom passing fair

Playing in the wanton air:  
Through the velvet leaves the wind,

All unseen, can passage find;  
That the lover, sick to death,

Wish himself the heaven's breath.  
Air, quoth he, thy cheeks may blow;

Air, would I might triumph so! 110  
But, alack, my hand is sworn

Ne'er to pluck thee from thy thorn;  
Vow, alack, for youth unmeet;

Youth so apt to pluck a sweet!  
Do not call it sin in me,

That I am forsworn for thee;  
Thou for whom Jove would swear

Juno but an Ethiopie were;  
And deny himself for Jove,

Turning mortal for thy love. 120

This will I send and something else more plain,  
That shall express my true love's fasting pain.

O, would the king, Biron, and Longaville,  
Were lovers too! Ill, to example ill,

Would from my forehead wipe a perjured note;  
For none offend where all alike do dote.

*Long.* [*advancing*]. Dumain, thy love is far  
from charity,

That in love's grief desirest society:  
You may look pale, but I should blush, I know,

To be overheard and taken napping so. 130  
*King* [*advancing*]. Come, sir, you blush; as

his your case is such;  
You chide at him, offending twice as much;

You do not love Maria; Longaville  
Did never sonnet for her sake compile,

Nor never lay his wreathed arms athwart  
His loving bosom to keep down his heart.

I have been closely shrouded in this bush  
And mark'd you both and for you both did

blush:  
I heard your guilty rhymes, observed your

fashion,  
Saw sighs reek from you, noted well your

passion: 140  
Ay me! says one; O Jove! the other cries;

One, her hairs were gold, crystal the other's  
eyes:

[*To Long.*] You would for paradise break faith  
and troth;

[*To Dum.*] And Jove, for your love, would  
infringe an oath.

What will Biron say when that he shall hear  
Faith so infringed, which such zeal did swear?

How will he scorn! how will he spend his wit!  
How will he triumph, leap and laugh at it!

For all the wealth that ever I did see, 149  
I would not have him know so much by me.

*Biron.* Now step I forth to whip hypocrisy.  
[*Advancing.*]

Ah, good my liege, I pray thee, pardon me!  
Good heart, what grace hast thou, thus to

reprove  
These worms for loving, that art most in love?

Your eyes do make no coaches; in your tears  
There is no certain princess that appears;

You'll not be perjured, 'tis a hateful thing;  
Tush, none but minstrels like of sonnetting!

But are you not ashamed? nay, are you not,  
All three of you, to be thus much o'ershot? 160

You found his mote; the king your mote did  
see;

But I a beam do find in each of three.  
(1) what a scene of foolery have I seen,  
Of sighs, of groans, of sorrow and of teen!

O me, with what strict patience have I sat,  
To see a king transformed to a gnat!  
To see great Hercules whipping a gig,  
And profound Solomon to tune a jig,  
And Nestor play at push-pin with the boys,  
And critic Timon laugh at idle toys! 170  
Where lies thy grief, O, tell me, good Dumain?  
And, gentle Longaville, where lies thy pain?  
And where my liege's? all about the breast:  
A caudle, ho!

*King.* Too bitter is thy jest.  
Are we betray'd thus to thy over-view?  
*Biron.* Not you to me, but I betray'd by you:  
I, that am honest; I, that hold it sin  
To break the vow I am engag'd in;  
I am betray'd, by keeping company  
† With men like men of inconstancy. 180  
When shall you see me write a thing in rhyme?  
Or groan for love? or spend a minute's time  
In pruning me? When shall you hear that I  
Will praise a hand, a foot, a face, an eye,  
A gait, a state, a brow, a breast, a waist,  
A leg, a limb!

*King.* Soft! whither away so fast!  
A true man or a thief that gallops so?  
*Biron.* I post from love: good lover, let  
me go.

*Enter JAQUENETTA and COSTARD.*

*Jaq.* God bless the king!

*King.* What present hast thou there?

*Cost.* Some certain treason.

*King.* What makes treason here? 190

*Cost.* Nay, it makes nothing, sir.

*King.* If it mar nothing neither,  
The treason and you go in peace away together.

*Jaq.* I beseech your grace, let this letter  
be read:

(Our parson misdoubts it; 'twas treason, he said.)

*King.* Biron, read it over.

*[Giving him the paper.]*

Where hadst thou it?

*Jaq.* Of Costard.

*King.* Where hadst thou it?

*Cost.* Of Dun Adramaglio, Dun Adramadio.

*[Biron tears the letter.]*

*King.* How now! what is in you? why dost  
thou tear it? 200

*Biron.* A toy, my liege, a toy: your grace  
needs not fear it.

*Long.* It did move him to passion, and there-  
fore let's hear it.

*Dum.* It is Biron's writing, and here is his  
name. *[Gathering up the pieces.]*

*Biron.* *[To Costard.]* Ah, you whoreson  
loggerhead! you were born to do me shame.  
Guilty, my lord, guilty! I confess, I confess.

*King.* What?

*Biron.* That you three fools lack'd me fool  
to make up the mess:

He, he, and you, and you, my liege, and I,  
Are pick-purses in love, and we deserve to die.  
O, dismiss this audience, and I shall tell you  
more. 210

*Dum.* Now the number is even.

*Biron.* True, true; we are four.

Will these turtles be gone?  
*King.* Hence, sirs; away!

*Cost.* Walk aside the true folk, and let the  
traitors stay.

*[Exeunt Costard and Jaquenetta.]*  
*Biron.* Sweet lords, sweet lovers, O, let us  
embrace!

As true we are as flesh and blood can be;  
The sea will ebb and flow, heaven show his face;  
Young blood doth not obey an old decree;  
We cannot cross the cause why we were born;  
Therefore of all hands must we be forsworn.

*King.* What, did these rent lines show some  
love of thine? 220

*Biron.* Did they, quoth you? Who sees the  
heavenly Rosaline,

That, like a rude and savage man of Ind,  
At the first opening of the gorgeous east,

Bows not his vassal head and stricken blind

Kisses the base ground with obedient breast?

What peremptory eagle-sighted eye

Dares look upon the heaven of her brow,

That is not blinded by her majesty?

*King.* What zeal, what fury hath inspired  
thee now?

My love, her mistress, is a gracious moon; 230  
She an attending star, scarce seen a light.

*Biron.* My eyes are then no eyes, nor I Biron:  
O, but for my love, day would turn to night!

Of all complexions the cull'd sovereignty  
Do meet, as at a fair, in her fair cheek,

Where several worthies make one dignity,  
Where nothing wants that want itself doth

seek.

Lend me the flourish of all gentle tongues,—  
Fie, painted rhetoric! O, she needs it not:

To things of sale a seller's praise belongs, 240  
She passes praise; then praise too short doth

blot.

A wither'd hermit, five-score winters worn,  
Might shake off fifty, looking in her eye:

Beauty doth varnish age, as if new-born,

And gives the crutch the cradle's infancy:

O, 'tis the sun that maketh all things shine.

*King.* By heaven, thy love is black as ebony.

*Biron.* Is ebony like her? O wood divine!

A wife of such wood were felicity.

O, who can give an oath? where is a book? 250

That I may swear beauty doth beauty lack,

If that she learn not of her eye to look:

No face is fair that is not full so black.

*King.* O paradox! Black is the badge of hell,

The hue of dungeons and the suit of night;

And beauty's crest becomes the heavens well.

*Biron.* Devils soonest tempt, resembling  
spirits of light.

O, if in black my lady's brows be deck'd,  
It mourns that painting and usurping hair

Should ravish doters with a false aspect; 260  
And therefore is she born to make black fair.

Her favour turns the fashion of the days,

For native blood is counted painting now;

And therefore red, that would avoid dispraise,

Paints itself black, to imitate her brow.

*Dum.* To look like her are chimney-sweepers  
black.

*Long.* And since her time are colliers counted  
bright.

*King.* And Ethiopes of their sweet complexion  
crack.

*Dum.* Dark needs no candles now, for dark is light.  
*Biron.* Your mistresses dare never come in rain, 270  
 For fear their colours should be wash'd away.  
*King.* 'Twere good, yours did; for, sir, to tell you plain,  
 I'll find a fairer face not wash'd to-day.  
*Biron.* I'll prove her fair, or talk till doomsday here.  
*King.* No devil will fright thee then so much as she.  
*Dum.* I never knew man hold vile stuff so dear.  
*Long.* Look, here's thy love: my foot and her face see.  
*Biron.* O, if the streets were paved with thine eyes,  
 Her feet were much too dainty for such tread!  
*Dum.* O vile! then, as she goes, what upward lies 280  
 The street should see as she walk'd overhead.  
*King.* But what of this? are we not all in love?  
*Biron.* Nothing so sure; and thereby all forsworn.  
*King.* Then leave this chat; and, good Biron, now prove  
 Our loving lawful, and our faith not torn.  
*Dum.* Ay, marry, there; some flattery for this evil.  
*Long.* O, some authority how to proceed;  
 Some tricks, some quillots, how to cheat the devil.  
*Dum.* Some salve for perjury.  
*Biron.* 'Tis more than need.  
 Have at you, then, affection's men at arms. 290  
 Consider what you first did swear unto,  
 To fast, to study, and to see no woman;  
 Flat treason 'gainst the kingly state of youth.  
 Say, can you fast? your stomachs are too young;  
 And abstinence engenders maladies.  
 And where that you have vow'd to study, lords,  
 In that each of you have forsworn his book,  
 Can you still dream and pore and thereon look?  
 For when would you, my lord, or you, or you,  
 Have found the ground of study's excellence  
 Without the beauty of a woman's face? 300  
 [From women's eyes this doctrine I derive;  
 They are the ground, the books, the academes  
 From whence doth spring the true Promethean fire.]  
 Why, universal plodding poisons up  
 The nimble spirits in the arteries,  
 As motion and long-during action tires  
 The sinewy vigour of the traveller.  
 Now, for not looking on a woman's face,  
 You have in that forsworn the use of eyes 310  
 And study too, the causer of your vow;  
 For where is any author in the world  
 Teaches such beauty as a woman's eye?  
 Learning is but an adjunct to ourself.  
 And where we are our learning likewise is:  
 Then when ourselves we see in ladies' eyes,  
 Do we not likewise see our learning there?  
 O, we have made a vow to study, lords,  
 And in that vow we have forsworn our books.  
 For when would you, my liege, or you, or you,  
 In leaen contemplation have found out 320  
 Such fiery numbers as the prompting eyes

Of beauty's tutors have enrich'd you with?  
 Other slow arts entirely keep the brain;  
 And therefore, finding barren practisers,  
 Scarce show a harvest of their heavy toil:  
 But love, first learned in a lady's eyes,  
 Lives not alone immured in the brain;  
 But, with the motion of all elements,  
 Courses as swift as thought in every power, 330  
 And gives to every power a double power,  
 Above their functions and their offices.  
 It adds a precious seeing to the eye;  
 A lover's eyes will gaze an eagle blind;  
 A lover's ear will hear the lowest sound,  
 When the suspicious head of theft is stopp'd:  
 Love's feeling is more soft and sensible  
 Than are the tender horns of cockled snails;  
 Love's tongue proves dainty Bacchus gross in  
 taste:  
 For valour, is not Love a Hercules, 340  
 Still climbing trees in the Hesperides?  
 Subtle as Sphinx; as sweet and musical  
 As bright Apollo's lute, strung with his hair;  
 And when Love speaks, the voice of all the  
 gods  
 Make heaven drowsy with the harmony.  
 Never durst poet touch a pen to write  
 Until his ink were temper'd with Love's sighs;  
 O, then his lines would ravish savage ears  
 And plant in tyrants mild humility.  
 From women's eyes this doctrine I derive: 350  
 They sparkle still the right Promethean fire;  
 They are the books, the arts, the academes,  
 That show, contain and nourish all the world:  
 Else none at all in aught proves excellent.  
 Then fools you were these women to forswear,  
 Or keeping what is sworn, you will prove fools.  
 For wisdom's sake, a word that all men love,  
 Or for love's sake, a word that loves all men,  
 Or for men's sake, the authors of these women,  
 Or women's sake, by whom we men are men,  
 Let us once lose our oaths to find ourselves,  
 Or else we lose ourselves to keep our oaths.  
 It is religion to be thus forsworn,  
 For charity itself fulfils the law,  
 And who can sever love from charity?  
*King.* Saint Cupid, then! and, soldiers, to  
 the field!  
*Biron.* Advance your standards, and upon  
 them, lords;  
 Pell-mell, down with them! but be first advised,  
 In conflict that you get the sun of them.  
*Long.* Now to plain-dealing; lay these  
 glozes by: 370  
 Shall we resolve to woo these girls of France?  
*King.* And win them too: therefore let us  
 devise  
 Some entertainment for them in their tents.  
*Biron.* First, from the park let us conduct  
 them thither;  
 Then homeward every man attach the hand  
 Of his fair mistress: in the afternoon  
 We will with some strange pastime solace them,  
 Such as the shortness of the time can shape;  
 For revels, dances, masks and merry hours  
 Forerun fair Love, strewing her way with  
 flowers. 380  
*King.* Away, away! no time shall be omitted  
 That will betime, and may by us be fitted.

*Biron.* Allons! allons! Sow'd cockle reap'd no corn;

And justice always whirls in equal measure:  
Light wenches may prove plagues to men forsworn;

If so, our copper buys no better treasure.

[*Exit.*]

### ACT V.

#### SCENE I. *The same.*

*Enter HOLOFERNES, SIR NATHANIEL, and DULL.*

*Hol.* Satis quod sufficit.

*Nath.* I praise God for you, sir: your reasons at dinner have been sharp and sententious: pleasant without scurrility, witty without affection, audacious without impudency, learned without opinion, and strange without heresy. I did converse this quondam day with a companion of the king's, who is intituled, nominated, or called, Don Adriano de Armado.

*Hol.* Novi hominem tanquam te: his humour is lofty, his discourse peremptory, his tongue filed, his eye ambitious, his gait majestical, and his general behaviour vain, ridiculous, and thraconical. He is too picked, too spruce, too affected, too odd, as it were, too peregrinate, as I may call it.

*Nath.* A most singular and choice epithet.

[*Draws out his table-book.*]

*Hol.* He draweth out the thread of his verbosity finer than the staple of his argument. I abhor such fantastical phantasies, such insociable and point-devise companions; such rackers of orthography, as to speak doubt, fine, when he should say doubt; det, when he should pronounce debt,—d, e, b, t, not d, e, t: he clepeth a calf, cauf; half, hauf; neighbour vocatur nebour; neigh abbreviated ne. This is abominable,—which he would call abominable: it insinuateth time of insanie: anne intelligis, domine? to make frantic, lunatic.

*Nath.* Laus Deo, bene intelligo.

*Hol.* Bon, bon, fort bon! Priscian a little scratched, 'will serve.

*Nath.* Videmus quis venit?

*Hol.* Video, et gaudeo.

*Enter ARMADO, MOTHE, and COSTARD.*

*Arm.* Chirrah!

[*To Moth.*]

*Arm.* Quare chirrah, not sirrah?

*Arm.* Men of peace, well encountered.

*Hol.* Most military sir, salutation.

*Moth.* [*Aside to Costard*] They have been at a great feast of languages, and stolen the scraps.

*Cost.* O, they have lived long on the almbasket of words. I marvel thy master hath not eaten thee for a word; for thou art not so long by the head as honorificabilitudinitatibus: thou art easier swallowed than a flap-dragon.

*Arm.* Peace! the peal begins.

*Dum.* Now he.

*Biron.* Will these turtles be he teaches boys the horn-spelt backward, with the

*Hol.* Ba, pueritia, with a horn added.

*Moth.* Ba, most silly sheep with a horn. You hear his learning.

*Hol.* Quis, quis, thou consonant?

*Moth.* The third of the five vowels, if you repeat them; or the fifth, if I.

*Hol.* I will repeat them,—a, c, i, t,

*Moth.* The sheep: the other two concludes it,—o, u.

*Arm.* Now, by the salt wave of the Mediterranean, a sweet touch, a quick venue of wit! snip, snap, quick and home! it rejoiceth my intellect: true wit!

*Moth.* Offered by a child to an old man; which is wit-old.

*Hol.* What is the figure? what is the figure?

*Moth.* Horns.

*Hol.* Thou disputest like an infant: go, whip thy gig.

*Moth.* Lend me your horn to make one, and I will whip about your infancy circum circa,—a gig of a cuckold's horn.

*Cost.* An I had but one penny in the world, thou shouldst have it to buy gingerbread: hold, there is the very remuneration I had of thy master, thou halfpenny purse of wit, thou pigeon-egg of discretion. O, an the heavens were so pleased that thou wert but my bastard, what a joyful father wouldst thou make me! Go to; thou hast it ad dunghill, at the fingers' ends, as they say.

*Hol.* O, I smell false Latin; dunghill for unguem.

*Arm.* Arts-man, preambulate, we will be singled from the barbarous. Do you not educate youth at the charge-house on the top of the mountain?

*Hol.* Or mons, the hill.

*Arm.* At your sweet pleasure, for the mountain.

*Hol.* I do, sans question.

*Arm.* Sir, it is the king's most sweet pleasure and affection to congratulate the princess at her pavilion in the posteriors of this day, which the rude multitude call the afternoon.

*Hol.* The posterior of the day, most generous sir, is liable, congruent and measurable for the afternoon: the word is well culled, chose, sweet and apt, I do assure you, sir, I do assure.

*Arm.* Sir, the king is a noble gentleman, and my familiar, I do assure ye, very good friend: for what is inward between us, let it pass. I do beseech thee, remember thy courtesy; I beseech thee, apparel thy head: and among other important and most serious designs, and of great import indeed, too, but let that pass: for I must tell thee, it will please his grace, by the world, sometime to lean upon my poor shoulder, and with his royal finger, thus, dully with my experiment, with my mustachio; but, sweet heart, let that pass. By the world, I recount no fable: some certain special honours it pleaseth his greatness to impart to Armado, a soldier, a man of travel, that hath seen the world; but let that pass. The very all of all is,—but, sweet heart, I do implore secrecy,—that the king would have me present the princess, sweet chuck, with some delightful ostentation, or show, or pageant, or

antique, or firework. Now, understanding that the curate and your sweet self are good at such eruptions and sudden breaking out of mirth, as it were, I have acquainted you withal, to the end to crave your assistance.

*Hol.* Sir, you shall present before her the Nine Worthies. Sir, as concerning some entertainment of time, some show in the posterior of this day, to be rendered by our assistants, at the king's command, and this most gallant, illustrate, and learned gentleman, before the princess; I say none so fit as to present the Nine Worthies. 130

*Nath.* Where will you find men worthy enough to present them?

*Hol.* Joshua, yourself; myself and this gallant gentleman, Judas Maccabeus; this swain, because of his great limb or joint, shall pass Pompey the Great; the page, Hercules,—

*Arm.* Pardon, sir; error: he is not quantity enough for that Worth's thumb: he is not so big as the end of his club. 139

*Hol.* Shall I have audience? he shall present Hercules in minority: his enter and exit shall be strangling a snake; and I will have an apology for that purpose.

*Moth.* An excellent device! so, if any of the audience hiss, you may cry 'Well done, Hercules! now thou crushest the snake!' that is the way to make an offence gracious, though few have the grace to do it.

*Arm.* For the rest of the Worthies?—

*Hol.* I will play three myself. 150

*Moth.* Thrice-worthy gentleman!

*Arm.* Shall I tell you a thing?

*Hol.* We attend.

*Arm.* We will have, if this fadge not, an antique. I beseech you, follow.

*Hol.* Via, Goodman Dull! thou hast spoken in word all this while.

*Dull.* Nor understood none neither, sir.

*Hol.* Allons! we will employ thee.

*Dull.* I'll make one in a dance, or so; or I will play 160

in the tabor to the Worthies, and let them dance the hay.

*Hol.* Most dull, honest Dull! To our sport, away! [Exeunt.]

# SCENE II. The same.

Enter the PRINCESS, KATHARINE, ROSALINE, and MARIA.

*Prin.* Sweet hearts, we shall be rich ere we depart.

If fairings come thus plentifully in:

A lady wall'd about with diamonds!

Look you what I have from the loving king.

*Ros.* Madame, came nothing else along with that?

*Prin.* Nothing but this! yes, as much love in rhyme

*Ros.* That was the way to make his godhead

Wax, For he hath been five thousand years a boy.

*Ka'h.* Ay, and a shrewd unhappy gallows too.

*Ros.* You'll ne'er be friends with him; a' kill'd your sister.

*Kath.* He made her melancholy, sad, and heavy;

And so she died: had she been light, like you, (Of such a merry, nimble, stirring spirit, She might ha' been a grandam ere she died: And so may you; for a light heart lives long.

*Ros.* What's your dark meaning, mouse, of this light word?

*Kath.* A light condition in a beauty dark. 20

*Ros.* We need more light to find your meaning out.

*Kath.* You'll mar the light by taking it in snuff:

Therefore I'll darkly end the argument.

*Ros.* Look, what you do, you do it still! the dark.

*Kath.* So do not you, for you are a light wench.

*Ros.* Indeed I weigh not you, and therefore light.

*Kath.* You weigh me not! O, that's you care not for me.

*Ros.* Great reason; for 'past cure is still past care.'

*Prin.* Well bandied both; a set of wit well play'd.

But, Rosaline, you have a favour too: 30 Who sent it? and what is it?

*Ros.* I would you knew:

An if my face were but as fair as yours, My favour were as great; be witness this.

Nay, I have verses too, I thank Biron: The numbers true; and, were the numbering too,

I were the fairest goddess on the ground: I am compared to twenty thousand fairs.

O, he hath drawn my picture in his letter!

*Prin.* Any thing like?

*Ros.* Much in the letters; nothing in the praise. 40

*Prin.* Beauteous as ink; a good conclusion.

*Kath.* Fair as a text B in a copy-book.

*Ros.* 'Ware pencils, ho! let me not die your debtor,

My red dominical, my golden letter: O that your face were not so full of O's!

*Ka'h.* A pox of that jest! and I beshrew all shrews.

*Prin.* But, Katharine, what was sent to you from fair Dumain?

*Kath.* Madam, this glove.

*Prin.* Did he not send you twain?

*Kath.* Yes, madam, and moreover Some thousand verses of a faithful lover, 50

A huge translation of hypocrisy, Vilely compiled, profound simplicity.

*Mar.* This and these pearls to me sent Longaville:

The letter is too long by half a mile.

*Prin.* I think no less. Dost thou not wish in heart

The chain were longer and the letter short?

*Mar.* Ay, or I would these hands might never part.

*Prin.* We are wise girls to mock our lovers so.

*Ros.* They are worse fools to purchase mocking so.

That same Biron I'll torture ere I go: 60

O that I knew he were but in by the week!

How I would make him fawn and beg and seek

And wait the season and observe the times

And spend his prodigal wits in bootless rhymes

And shape his service wholly to my heats

And make him proud to make me proud that

jests!

†So pertaunt-like would I o'ersway his state

That he should be my fool and I his fate.

*Prin.* None are so surely caught, when they

are catch'd.

As wit turn'd fool: folly, in wisdom hatch'd, 70

Hath wisdom's warrant and the help of school

And wit's own grace to grace a learned fool.

*Ros.* The blood of youth burns not with

such excess

As gravity's revolt to wantonness.

*Mar.* Folly in fools bears not so strong a

note

As foolery in the wise, when wit doth do; 80

Since all the power thereof it doth apply

To prove, by wit, worth in simplicity.

*Prin.* Here comes Boyet, and mirth is in his

face.

*Enter BOYET.*

*Boyet.* O, I am stabb'd with laughter

Where's her grace? 80

*Prin.* Thy news, Boyet?

*Boyet.* Prepare, madam, prepare!

Arm, wenches, arm! encounters mount'd are

Against your peace: Love doth approach dis-

guised,

Armed in arguments; you'll be surprised:

Muster your wits; stand in your own defence;

Or hide your hearts like cowards, and fly hence.

*Prin.* Saint Denis to Saint Cupid! What

are they

That charge their breath against us? say, scout,

say.

*Boyet.* Under the cool shade of a sycamore

I thought to close mine eyes some half an hour;

When, lo! to interrupt my purposed rest, 90

Toward that shade I might behold address

The king and his companions: warily

I stole into a neighbour thicket by,

And overheard what you shall overhear;

That, by and by, disguised they will be here.

Their herald is a pretty knavish page,

That well by heart hath conn'd his embassy

Action and accent did they teach him there:

'Thus must thou speak,' and 'thus thy body

bear.' 100

And ever and anon they made a doubt

Presence majestical would put him out;

'For,' quoth the king, 'an angel shalt thou see

Yet fear not thou, but speak audaciously.'

The boy replied, 'An angel is not evil;

I should have fear'd her had she been a devil.'

With that, all laugh'd and clapp'd him on the

shoulder,

Making the bold wag by their praises bolder:

One rubb'd his elbow thus, and fier'd an

swore

A better speech was never spoke before; 110

Another, with his finger and his thumb,

Cried, 'Vial we will do't, come what will

come!'

The third he caper'd, and cried, 'All goes well;

The fourth turn'd on the toe, and down he fell

With that, they all did tumble on the ground,

With such a zealous laughter, so profound,

That in this spleen ridiculous appears,

To check their folly, passion's solemn tears.

*Prin.* But what, but what, come they to

visit us?

*Boyet.* They do, they do; and are apparell'd

thus, 12

Like Muscovites or Russians, as I guess.

Their purpose is to parle, to court and dance;

And every one his love-feat will advance

Unto his several mistress, which they'll know

By favours several which they did bestow.

*Prin.* And will they so? the gallants shall

task'd;

For, ladies, we will every one be mask'd;

And not a man of them shall have the grace,

Despite of suit, to see a lady's face.

Hold, Rosaline, this favour thou shalt wear, 13

And then the king will court thee for his dear

Hold, take thou this, my sweet, and give me

thine,

So shall Biron take me for Rosaline.

And change you favours too; so shall your love

Woo contrary, deceived by these removes.

*Ros.* Come on, then; wear the favours me

in sight.

*Kath.* But in this changing what is your

intent? 14

*Prin.* The effect of my intent is to cro-

theirs;

They do it but in mocking merriment;

And mock for mock is only my intent. 15

Their several counsels they unbosom shall

To loves mistook, and so be mock'd withal

Upon the next occasion that we meet,

With visages display'd, to talk and greet.

*Ros.* But shall we dance, if they desire

to't?

*Prin.* No, to the death, we will not move

foot;

Nor to their penn'd speech render we no grace

But while 'tis spoke each turn away her face.

*Boyet.* Why, that contempt will kill the

speaker's heart,

And quite divorce his memory from his part. 16

*Prin.* Therefore I do it; and I make no doubt

The rest will ne'er come in, if he be out.

There's no such sport as sport by sport o'er

thrown,

To make theirs ours and ours none but our own

So shall we stay, mocking intended game,

And they, well mock'd, depart away with shame

[Trumpets sound within]

*Boyet.* The trumpet sounds: be mask'd; the

maskers come. [The Ladies move]

*Enter Blackmoors with music; MOTH; 17*

King, BIRON, LONGAVILLE, and DUMAI;

in Russian habits, and masked.

*Moth.* All hail, the richest beauties on the

earth!—

*Boyet.* Beauties no richer than rich taffeta.

*Moth.* A holy parcel of the fairest dames 160

[*The Ladies turn their backs to him.*]

That ever turn'd their—backs—to mortal views!

*Biron.* [*Aside to Moth*] Their eyes, villain, their eyes.

*Moth.* That ever turn'd their eyes to mortal views!—

Out—

*Boyet.* True; out indeed.

*Moth.* Out of your favours, heavenly spirits, vouchsafe

Not to behold—

*Biron.* [*Aside to Moth*] Once to behold, rogue.

*Moth.* Once to behold with your sun-beamed eyes,

—with your sun-beamed eyes— 169

*Boyet.* They will not answer to that epithet; You were best call it 'daughter-beamed eyes.'

*Moth.* They do not mark me, and that brings me out.

*Biron.* Is this your perfectness? be gone, you rogue! [*Exit Moth.*]

*Ros.* What would these strangers? know their ninds, Boyet:

If they do speak our language, 'tis our will That some plain man recount their purposes:

Know what they would.

*Boyet.* What would you with the princess?

*Biron.* Nothing but peace and gentle visitation.

*Ros.* What would they, say they? 170

*Boyet.* Nothing but peace and gentle visitation.

*Ros.* Why, that they have; and bid them so be gone.

*Boyet.* She says, you have it, and you may be gone.

*King.* Say to her, we have measured many miles

To tread a measure with her on this grass.

*Boyet.* They say, that they have measured many a mile

To tread a measure with you on this grass.

*Ros.* It is not so. Ask them how many inches

Is in one mile: if they have measured many, The measure then of one is easily told. 175

*Boyet.* If to come hither you have measured miles,

And many miles, the princess bids you tell How many inches doth fill up one mile.

*Biron.* Tell her, we measure them by weary steps.

*Boyet.* She hears herself.

*Ros.* How many weary steps

Of many weary miles you have o'rgone, Are number'd in the travel of one mile?

*Biron.* We number nothing that we spend for you:

Our duty is so rich, so infinite, That we may do it still without accompt. 200

Vouchsafe to show the sunshine of your face, That we, like savages, may worship it.

*Ros.* My face is but a moon, and clouded too

*King.* Blessed are clouds, to do as such clouds do!

vouchsafe, bright moon, and these thy stars, to shine,

Those clouds removed, upon our watery eyne.

*Ros.* O vain petitioner! beg a greater matter; 'thou now request'st but moonshine in the water.

*King.* Then, in our measure do but vouchsafe one change.

'thou bid'st me beg: this begging is not strange.

*Ros.* Play, music, then! Nay, you must do it soon. [*Music plays.* 211

Not yet! no dance! Thus change I like the moon.

*King.* Will you not dance? How come you thus estranged?

*Ros.* You took the moon at full, but now she's changed.

*King.* Yet still she is the moon, and I the man.

The music plays; vouchsafe some motion to it.

*Ros.* Our ears vouchsafe it.

*King.* But your legs should do it.

*Ros.* Since you are strangers and come here by chance,

We'll not be nice: take hands. We will not dance.

*King.* Why take we hands, then?

*Ros.* Only to part friends: 220

Jurisy, sweet hearts; and so the measure ends.

*King.* More measure of this measure; be not nice.

*Ros.* We can afford no more at such a price.

*King.* Prize you yourselves: what buys your company?

*Ros.* Your absence only.

*King.* That can never be.

*Ros.* Then cannot we be bought: and so, adieu;

Twice to your visor, and half once to you.

*King.* If you deny to dance, let's hold more chat.

*Ros.* In private, then.

*King.* I am best pleased with that.

[*They converse apart.*]

*Biron.* White-handed mistress, one sweet word with thee. 230

*Prin.* Honey, and milk, and sugar; there is three.

*Biron.* Nay then, two treys, and if you grow so nice,

Metheglin, wort, and malmsey: well run, dice! There's half-a-dozen sweets.

*Prin.* Seventh sweet, adieu:

Since you can cog, I'll play no more with you.

*Biron.* One word in secret.

*Prin.* Let it not be sweet.

*Biron.* Thou grievest my gall.

*Prin.* Gall! bitter.

*Biron.* Therefore meet.

[*They converse apart.*]

*Dum.* Will you vouchsafe with me to change a word?

*Mar.* Name it.

*Dum.* Fair lady,—

*Mar.* Say you so! Fair lord,—

Take that for your fair lady.

*Dum.* Please it you, 240

As much in private, and I'll bid adieu.

[*They converse apart.*]

*Kath.* What, was your vizard made without a tongue!

*Long.* I know the reason, lady, why you ask.

*Kath.* O for your reason! quickly, sir; I long.

*Long.* You have a double tongue within your mask, And would afford my speechless vizard half.

*Kath.* Veal, quoth the Dutchman. Is not 'veal' a calf?

*Long.* A calf, fair lady!

*Kath.* No, a fair lord calf.

*Long.* Let's part the word.

*Kath.* No, I'll not be your half: Take all, and wean it; it may prove an ox. <sup>250</sup>

*Long.* Look, how you butt yourself in these sharp mocks!

Will you give horns, chaste lady? do not so.

*Kath.* Then die a calf, before your horns do grow.

*Long.* One word in private with you, ere I die.

*Kath.* Bleat softly then; the butcher hears you cry. <sup>[They converse apart.]</sup>

*Boyet.* The tongues of mocking wenches are as keen

As is the razor's edge invisible, Cutting a smaller hair than may be seen,

Above the sense of sense; so sensible Seemeth their conference; their conceits have wings <sup>255</sup>

Fleeter than arrows, bullets, wind, thought, swifter things.

*Ros.* Not one word more, my maids; break off, break off.

*Biron.* By heaven, all dry-beaten with pure scoff!

*King.* Farewell, mad wenches; you have simple wits.

*Prin.* Twenty adieus, my frozen Muscovits. <sup>[Exeunt King, Lords, and Blackmoors.]</sup>

Are these the breed of wits so wonder'd at?

*Boyet.* Tapers they are, with your sweet breaths puff'd out.

*Ros.* Well-liking wits they have; gross, gross: fat, fat.

*Prin.* O poverty in wit, kingly-poor flout! Will they not, think you, hang themselves to-night? <sup>270</sup>

Or ever, but in vizards, show their faces! This pert Biron was out of countenance quite.

*Ros.* O, they were all in lamentable cases! The king was weeping-ripe for a good word.

*Prin.* Biron did swear himself out of all suit.

*Mar.* Dumain was at my service, and his sword:

No point, quoth I; my servant straight was mute.

*Kath.* Lord Longaville said, I came o'er his heart;

And trow you what he call'd me?

*Prin.* Qualin, perhaps.

*Kath.* Yes, in good faith.

*Prin.* Go, sickness as thou art! <sup>285</sup>

*Ros.* Well, better wits have worn plain statute-caps.

But will you hear? the king is my love sworn.

*Prin.* And quick Biron hath plighted faith to me.

*Kath.* And Longaville was for my service born.

*Mar.* Dumain is mine, as sure as bark on tree.

*Boyet.* Madam, and pretty mistresses, give ear:

Immediately they will again be here; In their own shapes; for it can never be

They will digest this harsh indignity.

*Prin.* Will they return?

*Boyet.* They will, they will, God knows, And leap for joy, though they are lame with blows: <sup>291</sup>

Therefore change favours; and, when they repair,

Blow like sweet roses in this summer air.

*Prin.* How blow? how blow? speak to be understood.

*Boyet.* Fair ladies mask'd are roses in their bud;

Dismask'd, their damask sweet commixture shown,

Are angels vailing clouds, or roses blown.

*Prin.* Avaunt, perplexity! What shall we do,

If they return in their own shapes to woo?

*Ros.* Good madam, if by me you'll be advised, Let's mock them still, as well known as disguised: <sup>301</sup>

Let us complain to them what fools were here, Disguised like Muscovites, in shapeless gear;

And wonder what they were and to what end Their shallow shows and prologue vilely penn'd

And their rough carriage so ridiculous, Should be presented at our tent to us.

*Boyet.* Ladies, withdraw: the gallants are at hand.

*Prin.* Whip to our tents, as roes run o'er land. <sup>[Exeunt Princess, Rosaline, Katharine, and Maria.]</sup>

*Re-enter the King, BIRON, LONGAVILLE, and DUMAIN, in their proper habits.*

*King.* Fair sir, God save you! Where's the princess? <sup>310</sup>

*Boyet.* Gone to her tent. Please it your majesty

Command me any service to her thither?

*King.* That she vouchsafe me audience for one word.

*Boyet.* I will; and so will she, I know, my lord. <sup>[Exit.]</sup>

*Biron.* This fellow pecks up wit as pigeons pease,

And utters it again when God doth please: He is wit's pedlar, and retails his wares

At wakes and wassails, meetings, markets, fairs; And we that sell by gross, the Lord doth know,

I have not the grace to grace it with such show. This gallant pins the wenches on his sleeve; <sup>321</sup>

Had he been Adam, he had tempted Eve; A' can carve too, and lisp: why, this is he

That kiss'd his hand away in courtesy; This is the ape of form, monsieur the nice,

That, when he plays at tables, chides the dice In honourable terms: nay, he can sing

A mean most meanly; and in ushering Meed him who can: the ladies call him sweet;



The stairs, as he treads on them, kiss his feet :  
This is the flower that smiles on every one, 331  
To show his teeth as white as whale's bone;  
And consciences, that will not die in debt,  
Pay him the due of honey-tongued Boyet.

*King.* A blister on his sweet tongue, with  
my heart,

That put Armado's page out of his part!

*Biron.* See where it comes! Behaviour, what  
wert thou  
Till this madman show'd thee? and what art  
thou now?

*Re-enter the Princess, ushered by BOYET;  
ROSALINE, MARIA, and KATHARINE.*

*King.* All hail, sweet madam, and fair time of  
day!

*Prin.* 'Fair' in 'all hail' is foul, as I conceive. 339

*King.* Construe my speeches better, if you may.

*Prin.* Then wish me better; I will give you  
leave.

*King.* We came to visit you, and purpose now  
To lead you to our court; vouchsafe it then.

*Prin.* This field shall hold me; and so hold  
your vow:

Nor God, nor I, delights in perjured men.

*King.* Rebuke me not for that which you pro-  
voke:

The virtue of your eye must break my oath.  
*Prin.* You nickname virtue: vice you should  
have spoke;

For virtue's office never breaks men's troth.  
Now by my maiden honour, yet as pure 351

As the unsullied lily, I protest,  
A world of torments though I should endure,

I would not yield to be your house's guest;  
So much I hate a breaking cause to be

Of heavenly oaths, vow'd with integrity.

*King.* O, you have lived in desolation here,  
Unseen, unvisited, much to our shame.

*Prin.* Not so, my lord; it is not so, I swear;  
We have had pastimes here and pleasant

game: 360

A mess of Russians left us but of late.

*King.* How, madam! Russians!

*Prin.* Ay, in truth, my lord;

Trim gallants, full of courtship and of state.

*Ros.* Madam, speak true. It is not so, my  
lord:

My lady, to the manner of the days,  
In courtesy gives undescorving praise.

We four indeed confronted were with four  
In Russian habit: here they stay'd an hour,

And talk'd apace; and in that hour, my lord,  
They did not bless us with one happy word. 370

I dare not call them fools; but this I think,  
When they are thirsty, fools would fain have

drink.

*Biron.* This jest is dry to me. Fair gentle  
sweet,

Our wit makes wise things foolish: when we  
greet,

With eyes best seeing, heaven's fiery eye,  
By light we lose light: your capacity

Is of that nature that to your huge store  
Wise things seem foolish and rich things but

poor.

*Ros.* This proves you wise and rich, for in  
my eye,—

*Biron.* I am a fool, and full of poverty. 380

*Ros.* But that you take what doth to you  
belong,

It were a fault to snatch words from my tongue.

*Biron.* O, I am yours, and all that I possess!

*Ros.* All the fool mine!

*Biron.* I cannot give you less.

*Ros.* Which of the vizards was it that you  
wore?

*Biron.* Where? when? what vizard? why  
demand you this?

*Ros.* There, then, that vizard; that super-  
fluous case

That hid the worse and show'd the better face.

*King.* We are descried; they'll mock us  
now downright.

*Dum.* Let us confess and turn it to a jest.

*Prin.* Amazed, my lord! why looks your  
highness sad? 391

*Ros.* Help, hold his brows! he'll swoon!  
Why look you pale?

*Ros.* I think, coming from Muscovy.

*Biron.* Thus pour the stars down plagues for  
perjury.

Can any face of brass hold longer out?  
Here stand I: lady, dart thy skill at me;

Bruise me with scorn, confound me with a  
flout;

Thrust thy sharp wit quite through my igno-  
rance;

Cut me to pieces with thy keen conceit;  
And I will wish thee never more to dance, 400

Nor never more in Russian habit wait.

O, never will I trust to speeches penn'd,  
Nor to the motion of a schoolboy's tongue,

Nor never come in vizard to my friend,  
Nor woo in rhyme, like a blind harper's song!

Taffeta phrases, silken terms precise,  
Three-piled hyperboles, spruce affectation,

Figures pedantical; these summer-flies  
Have blown me full of maggot ostentation:

I do forswear them; and I here protest, 410  
By this white glove,—how white the hand,  
God knows!—

Henceforth my wooing mind shall be express'd  
In russet yeas and honest kersey noes:

And, to begin, wench,—so God help me, la!—  
My love to thee is sound, sans crack or flaw.

*Ros.* Sans sans, I pray you.

*Biron.* Yet I have a trick  
Of the old rage: bear with me, I am sick;

I'll leave it by degrees. Soft, let us see:  
Write, 'Lord have mercy on us' on those three;

They are infected; in their hearts it lics: 420  
They have the plague, and caught it of your  
eyes;

These lords are visited; you are not free,  
For the Lord's tokens on you do I see.

*Prin.* No, they are free that gave these  
tokens to us.

*Biron.* Our states are forfeit: seek not to  
undo us.

*Ros.* It is not so; for how can this be true,  
That you stand forfeit, being those that sue!

*Biron.* Peace! for I will not have to do with  
you.

*Ros.* Nor shall not, if I do as I intend.  
*Biron.* Speak for yourself; my wit is at an end.  
*King.* Teach us, sweet madam, for our rude transgression  
 Some fair excuse.  
*Prin.* The fairest is confession.  
 Were not you here but even now disguised?  
*King.* Madam, I was.  
*Prin.* And were you well advised?  
*King.* I was, fair madam.  
*Prin.* When you then were here,  
 What did you whisper in your lady's ear?  
*King.* That more than all the world I did respect her.  
*Prin.* When she shall challenge this, you will reject her.  
*King.* Upon mine honour, no.  
*Prin.* Peace, peace! forbear:  
 Your oath once broke, you force not to forswear.  
*King.* Despise me, when I break this oath of mine.  
*Prin.* I will: and therefore keep it. Rosaline,  
 What did the Russian whisper in your ear?  
*Ros.* Madam, he swore that he did hold me dear  
 As precious eyesight, and did value me  
 Above this world; adding thereto moreover  
 That he would wed me, or else die my lover.  
*Prin.* God give thee joy of him! the noble lord  
 Most honourably doth uphold his word.  
*King.* What mean you, madam? by my life, my truth,  
 I never swore this lady such an oath.  
*Ros.* By heaven, you did; and to confirm it plain,  
 You gave me this: but take it, sir, again.  
*King.* My faith and this the princess I did give:  
 I knew her by this jewel on her sleeve.  
*Prin.* Pardon me, sir, this jewel did she wear;  
 And Lord Biron, I thank him, is my dear.  
 What, will you have me, or your pearl again?  
*Biron.* Neither of either; I remit both twain.  
 I see the trick on't: here was a consent,  
 Knowing aforehand of our merriment,  
 To dash it like a Christmas comely:  
 Some carry-tale, some please-man, some slight zany,  
 Some mumble-news, some trencher-knight,  
 some Dick,  
 That smiles his cheek in years and knows the trick  
 To make my lady laugh when she's disposed,  
 Told our intents before; which once disclosed,  
 The ladies did change favours: and then we,  
 Following the signs, woo'd but the sign of she.  
 Now, to our perjury to add more terror,  
 We are again forsworn, in will and error.  
 Much upon this it is: and might not you  
 [To Boyet.]  
 Forestall our sport, to make us thus untrue?  
 Do not you know my lady's foot by the squier,  
 And laugh upon the apple of her eye?  
 And stand between her back, sir, and the fire,  
 Holding a trencher, jesting merrily?

You put our page out: go, you are allow'd;  
 Die when you will, a smock shall be your shroud.  
 You leer upon me, do you? there's an eye  
 Wounds like a leaden sword.  
*Boyet.* Full merrily  
 Hath this brave manage, this career, been run.  
*Biron.* Lo, he is tilting straight! Peace! I have done.

*Enter COSTARD.*

Welcome, pure wit! thou partest a fair fray.  
*Cost.* O Lord, sir, they would know  
 Whether the three Worthies shall come in or no.  
*Biron.* What, are there but three?  
*Cost.* No, sir; but it is a rare fine,  
 For every one pursueth three.  
*Biron.* And three times thrice is nine.  
*Cost.* Not so, sir; under correction, sir; I hope it is not so.  
 You cannot beg us, sir, I can assure you, sir;  
 we know what we know:  
*Biron.* Is not nine.  
*Cost.* Under correction, sir, we know where  
 until it doth amount.  
*Biron.* By Jove, I always took three threes  
 for nine.  
*Cost.* O Lord, sir, it were pity you should  
 get your living by reckoning, sir.  
*Biron.* How much is it?  
*Cost.* O Lord, sir, the parties themselves, the  
 actors, sir, will show whereuntil it doth amount  
 for mine own part, I am, as they say, but  
 perfect one man in one poor man, Pompion the  
 Great, sir.  
*Biron.* Art thou one of the Worthies?  
*Cost.* It pleased them to think me worthy of  
 Pompion the Great: for mine own part, I know  
 not the degree of the Worthly, but I am to stand  
 for him.  
*Biron.* Go, bid them prepare.  
*Cost.* We will turn it finely off, sir; we will  
 take some care.  
*King.* Biron, they will shame us: let them  
 not approach.  
*Biron.* We are shame-proof, my lord: and  
 'tis some policy  
 To have one show worse than the king's and his  
 company.  
*King.* I say they shall not come.  
*Prin.* Nay, my good lord, let me o'errule  
 you now:  
 That sport best pleases that doth least know  
 how:  
 + Where zeal strives to content, and the contents  
 Dies in the zeal of that which it presents:  
 Their form confounded makes most form in  
 mirth,  
 When great things labouring perish in their  
 birth.  
*Biron.* A right description of our sport, my  
 lord.  
*Enter ARMADO.*  
*Arm.* Anointed, I implore so much expense

if thy royal sweet breath as will utter a brace  
of words.

[*Converses apart with the King, and delivers him a paper.*]

*Prin.* Doth this man serve God?

*Biron.* Why ask you?

*Prin.* He speaks not like a man of God's making.

*Arm.* That is all one, my fair, sweet, honey nonarch; for, I protest, the schoolmaster is exceeding fantastical; too too vain, too too 'ain: but we will put it, as they say, to fortuna le la guerra. I wish you the peace of mind, most royal complement!

[*Exit.*]  
*King.* Here is like to be a good presence of Worthies. He presents Hector of Troy; the swain, Pompey the Great; the parish curate, Alexander; Armado's page, Hercules; the pedant, Judas Maccabeus:

And if these four Worthies in their first show thrive,

These four will change habits, and present the other five.

*Biron.* There is five in the first show.

*King.* You are deceived; 'tis not so.

*Biron.* The pedant, the braggart, the hedge-riest, the fool and the boy:—

Alas! throw at novum, and the whole world again

Cannot pick out five such, take each one in his vein.

*King.* The ship is under sail, and here she comes again.

*Enter COSTARD, for Pompey.*

*Cost.* I Pompey am,—

*Boyet.* You lie, you are not he. 550

*Cost.* I Pompey am,—

*Boyet.* With libbard's head on knee.

*Biron.* Well said, old mocker: I must needs be friends with thee.

*Cost.* I Pompey am, Pompey surnamed the Big,—

*Dum.* The Great.

*Cost.* It is, 'Great,' sir:—

Pompey surnamed the Great;

That oft in field, with targe and shield, did make my foe to sweat:

And travelling along this coast, I here am come by chance,

And lay my arms before the legs of this sweet lass of France.

If your ladyship would say, 'Thanks, Pompey,' I had done.

*Prin.* Great thanks, great Pompey. 560

*Cost.* 'Tis not so much worth; but I hope I was perfect: I made a little fault in 'Great.'

*Biron.* My hat to a halfpenny, Pompey proves the best Worthy.

*Enter SIR NATHANIEL, for Alexander.*

*Nath.* When in the world I lived, I was the world's commander;

By east, west, north, and south, I spread my conquering might;

My scutcheon plain declares that I am Alisander,—

*Boyet.* Your nose says, no, you are not; for it stands too right.

*Biron.* Your nose smells 'no' in this, most tender-smelling knight.

*Prin.* The conqueror is dismay'd. Proceed, good Alexander. 570

*Nath.* When in the world I lived, I was the world's commander,—

*Boyet.* Most true, 'tis right; you were so, Alisander.

*Biron.* Pompey the Great,—

*Cost.* Your servant, and Costard.

*Biron.* Take away the conqueror, take away Alisander.

*Cost.* [To Sir Nath.] O, sir, you have overthrown Alisander the conqueror! You will be scraped out of the painted cloth for this: your lion, that holds his poll-axe sitting on a close-stool, will be given to Ajax: he will be the ninth Worthy. A conqueror, and afraid to speak! run away for shame, Alisander. [Nath. retires.] There, an 't shall please you; a foolish mild man; an honest man, look you, and soon dashed. He is a marvellous good neighbour, faith, and a very good bowler: but, for Alisander,—alas, you see how 'tis,—a little o'parted. But there are Worthies a-coming will speak their mind in some other sort. 590

*Prin.* Stand aside, good Pompey.

*Enter HOLOFERNES, for Judas; and MOTH, for Hercules.*

*Hol.* Great Hercules is presented by this imp, Whose club kill'd Cerberus, that three-headed canis;

And when he was a babe, a child, a shrimp,

Thus did he strangle serpents in his manus.

Quoniam he seemeth in minority,

Ergo I come with this apology.

Keep some state in thy exit, and vanish. [Moth retires.

Judas I am,—

*Dum.* A Judas! 600

*Hol.* Not Iscariot, sir.

Judas I am, yclipped Maccabeus.

*Dum.* Judas Maccabeus clipt is plain Judas.

*Biron.* A kissing traitor. How art thou proved Judas?

*Hol.* Judas I am,—

*Dum.* The more shame for you, Judas.

*Hol.* What mean you, sir?

*Boyet.* To make Judas hang himself.

*Hol.* Begin, sir; you are my elder.

*Biron.* Well followed: Judas was hanged on an elder. 610

*Hol.* I will not be put out of countenance.

*Biron.* Because thou hast no face.

*Hol.* What is this?

*Boyet.* A cittern-head.

*Dum.* The head of a bodkin.

*Biron.* A Death's face in a ring.

*Long.* The face of an old Roman coin, scarce seen.

*Boyet.* The pommel of Caesar's falchion.

*Dum.* The carved-bone face on a flask.

*Biron.* Saint George's half-cheek in a brooch.

*Dum.* Ay, and in a brooch of lead. 621

*Biron.* Ay, and worn in the cap of a tooth-drawer.  
And now forward; for we have put thee in countenance.

*Hol.* You have put me out of countenance.

*Biron.* False; we have given thee faces.

*Hol.* But you have out-faced them all.

*Biron.* An thou wert a lion, we would do so.

*Boyet.* Therefore, as he is an ass, let him go.  
And so adieu, sweet Jude! nay, why dost thou stay?

*Dum.* For the latter end of his name. 630

*Biron.* For the ass to the Jude; give it him:—Jud-as, away!

*Hol.* This is not generous, not gentle, not humble.

*Boyet.* A light for Monsieur Judas! it grows dark, he may stumble. [*Hol. retires.*]

*Prin.* Alas, poor Maccabæus, how hath he been baited!

*Enter ARMADO, for Hector.*

*Biron.* Hide thy head, Achilles: here comes Hector in arms.

*Dum.* Though my mocks come home by me, I will now be merry.

*King.* Hector was but a Trojan in respect of this. 640

*Boyet.* But is this Hector?

*King.* I think Hector was not so clean-timbered.

*Long.* His leg is too big for Hector's.

*Dum.* More calf, certain.

*Boyet.* No; he is best indued in the small.

*Biron.* This cannot be Hector.

*Dum.* He's a god or a painter; for he makes faces.

*Arm.* The armipotent Mars, of lances the almighty, 650

Gave Hector a gift,—

*Dum.* A gilt nutmeg.

*Biron.* A lemon.

*Long.* Stuck with cloves.

*Dum.* No, cloven.

*Arm.* Peace!—

The armipotent Mars, of lances the almighty,

Gave Hector a gift, the heir of Ilion;

A man so breathed, that certain he would fight; yea 659

From morn till night, out of his pavilion.

I am that flower,—

*Dum.* That mint.

*Long.* That columbine.

*Arm.* Sweet Lord Longaville, rein thy tongue.

*Long.* I must rather give it the rein, for it runs against Hector.

*Dum.* Ay, and Hector's a greyhound.

*Arm.* The sweet war-man is dead and rotten; sweet chucks, beat not the bones of the buried when he breathed, he was a man. But I will forward with my device. [*To the Princess*] Sweet royalty, bestow on me the sense of hearing. 670

*Prin.* Speak, brave Hector: we are much delighted.

*Arm.* I do adore thy sweet grace's slipper.

*Boyet.* [*Aside to Dum.*] Loves her by the foot.

*Dum.* [*Aside to Boyet*] He may not by the yard.

*Arm.* This Hector far surmounted Hannibal.—

*Cost.* The party is gone, fellow Hector, she is gone; she is two months on her way.

*Arm.* What meanest thou? 61

*Cost.* Faith, unless you play the honest Trojan, the poor wench is cast away: she's quick; the child brags in her belly already 'tis yours.

*Arm.* Dost thou infamozize me among potentates? thou shalt die.

*Cost.* Then shall Hector be whipped for Jaquenetta that is quick by him and hanged for Pompey that is dead by him.

*Dum.* Most rare Pompey! 690

*Biron.* Renowned Pompey!

*Biron.* Greater than great, great, great, great Pompey! Pompey the Huge!

*Dum.* Hector trembles.

*Biron.* Pompey is moved. More Ates, more Ates! stir them on! stir them on!

*Dum.* Hector will challenge him.

*Biron.* Ay, if a' have no more man's blood in 's belly than will sup a flea.

*Arm.* By the north pole, I do challenge thee.

*Cost.* I will not fight with a pole, like a northern man: I'll slash; I'll do it by the sword. I bepray you, let me borrow my arms again.

*Dum.* Room for the incensed Worthies!

*Cost.* I'll do it in my shirt.

*Dum.* Most resolute Pompey!

*Moth.* Master, let me take you a button-hole lower. Do you not see Pompey is uncasing for the combat? What mean you? You will lose your reputation.

*Arm.* Gentlemen and soldiers, pardon me: I will not combat in my shirt. 711

*Dum.* You may not deny it: Pompey hath made the challenge.

*Arm.* Sweet bloods, I both may and will.

*Biron.* What reason have you for't?

*Arm.* The naked truth of it is, I have no shirt; I go woodward for penance.

*Boyet.* True, and it was enjoined him in Rome for want of linen: since when, I'll be sworn, he wore none but a dishclout of Jaquenetta's, and that a wears next his heart for a favour.

*Enter MERCADÉ.*

*Mer.* God save you, madam!

*Prin.* Welcome, Mercadé;

But that thou interrupt'st our merriment.

*Mer.* I am sorry, madam; for the news I bring

Is heavy in my tongue. The king your father—

*Prin.* Dead, for my life!

*Mer.* Even so; my tale is told.

*Biron.* Worthies, away! the scene begins to cloud. 711

*Arm.* For mine own part, I breathe free breath. I have seen the day of wrong through

the little hole of discretion, and I will right myself like a soldier. *[Exeunt Worthies.]*

*King.* How fares your majesty?

*Prin.* Boyet, prepare; I will away to-night.

*King.* Madam, not so; I do beseech you, stay.

*Prin.* Prepare, I say. I thank you, gracious lords,

For all your fair endeavours; and entreat, 740  
Out of a new-sad soul, that you vouchsafe  
In your rich wisdom to excuse or hide  
The liberal opposition of our spirits,  
If over-boldly we have borne ourselves  
In the converse of breath: your gentleness  
Was guilty of it. Farewell, worthy lord!  
A heavy heart bears not a nimble tongue:  
Excuse me so, coming too short of thanks  
For my great suit so easily obtain'd.

*King.* The extreme parts of time extremely  
forms 750

All causes to the purpose of his speed,  
And often at his very loose decides  
That which long process could not arbitrate:  
And though the mourning brow of progeny  
Forbid the smiling courtesy of love  
The holy suit which fain it would convince,  
Yet, since love's argument was first on foot,  
Let not the cloud of sorrow juggle it  
From what it purposed; since, to wail friends lost  
Is not by much so wholesome-profitable 760  
As to rejoice at friends but newly found.

*Prin.* I understand you not: my griefs are  
double.

*Biron.* Honest plain words best pierce the  
ear of grief;

And by these badges understand the king.  
For your fair sakes have we neglected time,  
Play'd foul play with our oaths: your beauty,  
ladies,

Hath much deform'd us, fashioning our  
humours

Even to the opposed end of our intents:  
And what in us hath seem'd ridiculous,—

As love is full of unbefitting strains, 770

All wanton as a child, skipping and vain,

Form'd by the eye and therefore, like the eye,

Full of strange shapes, of habits and of foms,

Varying in subjects as the eye doth roll

To every varied object in his glance:

Which parti-colour'd presence of loose love

Put on by us, if, in your heavenly eyes,

Have misbecom'd our oaths and gravities,

Those heavenly eyes, that look into these faults,

Suggested us to make. Therefore, ladies, 780

Our love being yours, the error that love makes

Is likewise yours: we to ourselves prove false,

By being once false for ever to be true

To those that make us both,—fair ladies, you:

And even that falsehood, in itself a sin,

Thus purifies itself and turns to grace.

*Prin.* We have received your letters full of  
love;

Your favours, the ambassadors of love;

And, in our maiden council, rated them

At courtship, pleasant jest and courtesy, 790

As bombast and as larding to the time;

But more devout than this in our respects

Have we not been; and therefore met your loves

In their own fashion, like a merriment.

*Dum.* Our letters, madam, show'd much  
more than jest.

*Long.* So did our looks.

*Ros.* We did not quote them so.

*King.* Now, at the latest minute of the hour,  
Grant us your loves.

*Prin.* A time, methinks, too short  
To make a world-without-end bargain in.

No, no, my lord, your grace is perjured much.

Full of dear guiltiness; and therefore this: 800

If for my love, as there is no such cause,

You will do aught, this shall you do for me:

Your oath I will not trust; but go with speed

To some forlorn and naked hermitage,

Remote from all the pleasures of the world;

There stay until the twelve celestial signs

Have brought about the annual reckoning.

If this austere insociable life 805

Change not your offer made in heat of blood;

If frosts and fasts, hard lodging and thin weeds

Nip not the gaudy blossoms of your love,

But that it bear this trial and last love;

Then, at the expiration of the year,

Come challenge me, challenge me by these  
deserts,

And, by this virgin palm now kissing thine,

I will be thine; and till that instant thut

My woeful self up in a mourning house,

Raining the tears of lamentation

For the remembrance of my father's death. 810

If this thou do deny, let our hands part,

Neither intitled in the other's heart.

*King.* If this, or more than this, I would deny,

To flatter up these powers of mine with rest,

The sudden hand of death close up mine eye!

Hence ever then my heart is in thy breast.

*[Biron.]* And what to me, my love! and  
what to me!

*Ros.* You must be purged too, your sins are  
rack'd,

You are attain'd with faults and perjury:

Therefore if you my favour mean to get, 820

A twelvemonth shall you spend, and never rest,

But seek the weary beds of people sick.]

*Dum.* But what to me, my love! but what  
to me!

A wife!

*Kath.* A beard, fair health, and honesty;

With three-fold love I wish you all these three.

*Dum.* O, shall I say, I thank you, gentle  
wife!

*Kath.* Not so, my lord; a twelvemonth and  
a day

I'll mark no words that smooth-faced wooers  
say:

Come when the king doth to my lady come;

Then, if I have much love, I'll give you some.

*Dum.* I'll serve thee true and faithfully till  
then. 825

*Kath.* Yet swear not, lest ye be forsworn  
again.

*Long.* What says Maria?

*Mar.* At the twelvemonth's end

I'll change my black gown for a faithful friend.

*Long.* I'll stay with patience; but the time  
is long.

*Mar.* The liker you; few taller are so young.

*Biron.* Studies my lady! mistress, look on me!

Behold the window of my heart, mine eye,  
What humble suit attends thy answer there :  
Impose some service on me for thy love. 850

*Ros.* Oft have I heard of you, my Lord Biron,  
Before I saw you ; and the world's large tongue  
Proclaims you for a man replete with mocks,  
Full of comparisons and wounding flouts,  
Which you on all estates will execute  
That lie within the mercy of your wit.  
To weed this wornwood from your fruitful  
brain,

And therewithal to win me, if you please,  
Without the which I am not to be won,  
You shall this twelvemonth term from day to  
day 860

Visit the speechless sick and still converse  
With groaning wretches ; and your task shall be,  
With all the fierce endeavour of your wit  
To enforce the pained impotent to smile.

*Biron.* To move wild laughter in the throat  
of death ?

It cannot be ; it is impossible :  
Mirth cannot move a soul in agony.

*Ros.* Why, that's the way to choke a gibing  
spirit,

Whose influence is begot of that loose grace  
Which shallow laughing hearers give to fools :  
A jest's prosperity lies in the ear 871  
Of him that hears it, never in the tongue  
Of him that makes it : then, if sickly cars,  
Deaf'd with the clamours of their own dear  
groans,

Will hear your idle scorns, continue then,  
And I will have you and that fault withal ;  
But if they will not, throw away that spirit,  
And I shall find you empty of that fault,  
Right joyful of your reformation.

*Biron.* A twelvemonth ! well ; befall what  
will befall, 880

I'll just a twelvemonth in an hospital.

*Prin.* [To the King] Ay, sweet my lord ;  
and so I take my leave.

*King.* No, madam ; we will bring you on  
your way.

*Biron.* Our wooing doth not end like an old  
play ;

Jack hath not Jill : these ladies' courtesy  
Might well have made our sport a comedy.

*King.* Come, sir, it wants a twelvemonth and  
a day,

And then 'twill end.

*Biron.* That's too long for a play.

*Re-enter ARMADO.*

*Arm.* Sweet majesty, vouchsafe me, -

*Prin.* Was not that Hector ?

*Dum.* The worthy knight of Troy. 890

*Arm.* I will kiss thy royal finger, and take

leave. I am a votary ; I have vowed to Jaque-  
netta to hold the plough for her sweet love three  
years. But, most esteemed greatness, will you  
hear the dialogue that the two learned men have  
compiled in praise of the owl and the cuckoo ?  
it should have followed in the end of our show.

*King.* Call them forth quickly ; we will do so.  
*Arm.* Holla ! approach. 900

*Re-enter HOLOFERNES, NATHANIEL, MOTH,  
COSTARD, and others.*

This side is Hiems, Winter, this Ver, the Spring ;  
the one maintained by the owl, the other by the  
cuckoo. Ver, begin.

THE SONG.

SPRING.

When daisies pied and violets blue  
And lady-smocks all silver-white

And cuckoo-buds of yellow hue  
Do paint the meadows with delight,

The cuckoo then, on every tree,  
Mocks married men ; for thus sings he,

Cuckoo ;  
Cuckoo, cuckoo : O word of fear,  
Unpleasing to a married ear ! 910

When shepherds pipe on oaten straws

And merry larks are ploughmen's clocks,  
When turtles tread, and rooks, and daws,

And maidens bleach their summer smocks,  
The cuckoo then, on every tree,

Mocks married men ; for thus sings he,  
Cuckoo ;

Cuckoo, cuckoo : O word of fear,  
Unpleasing to a married ear ! 920

WINTER.

When icicles hang by the wall

And Dick the shepherd blows his nail  
And Tom bears logs into the hall

And milk comes frozen home in pail,  
When blood is nipp'd and ways be foul,

Then nightly sings the staring owl,  
Tu-whit ;

Tu-who, a merry note,  
While greasy Joan doth keel the pot. 930

When all aloud the wind doth blow

And coughing drowns the parson's saw  
And birds sit brooding in the snow

And Marian's nose looks red and raw,  
When roasted crabs hiss in the bowl,

Then nightly sings the staring owl,  
Tu-whit ;

Tu-who, a merry note,  
While greasy Joan doth keel the pot. 940

*Arm.* The words of Mercury are harsh after  
the songs of Apollo. You that way ; we this  
way. [Exeunt.]

# MIDSUMMER-NIGHT'S DREAM

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

THESEUS, Duke of Athens.  
 EGÆUS, father to Hermia.  
 LYSANDER, } in love with Hermia.  
 DEMETRIUS, }  
 PHILOSTRATE, master of the revels to Theseus.  
 QUINCE, a carpenter.  
 SNUG, a joiner.  
 BOTTOM, a weaver.  
 FLUTE, a bellows-mender.  
 SNOUT, a tinker.  
 STARVELING, a tailor.  
 HIPPOLYTA, queen of the Amazons, betrothed to Theseus.

HERMIA, daughter to Egæus, in love with Lysander.  
 HELENA, in love with Demetrius.

OBERON, king of the fairies.  
 TITANIA, queen of the fairies.  
 PUCK, or Robin Goodfellow.  
 PEASEBLOSSOM, }  
 CORWEB, } fairies.  
 MOTH, }  
 MUSTARDSEED, }

Other fairies attending their King and Queen.  
 Attendants on Theseus and Hippolyta.

SCENE: *Athens, and a wood near it.*

## ACT I.

ENE I. *Athens. The palace of THESEUS.*

THESEUS, HIPPOLYTA, PHILOSTRATE, and Attendants.

*The.* Now, fair Hippolyta, our nuptial hour  
 lies on apace; four happy days bring in  
 another moon: but, O, methinks, how slow  
 is old moon wanes! she lingers my desires,  
 like to a step-dame or a dowager  
 withering out a young man's revenue.

*Tip.* Four days will quickly steep them-  
 selves in night;  
 our nights will quickly dream away the time;  
 and then the moon, like to a silver bow  
 new-bent in heaven, shall behold the night  
 of our solemnities.

*The.* Go, Philostrate,  
 and bid the Athenian youth to merriments;  
 make the pert and nimble spirit of mirth  
 turn melancholy forth to funerals;  
 the pale companion is not for our pomp.

[*Exit Philostrate.*]

Hippolyta, I woo'd thee with my sword,  
 and won thy love, doing thee injuries;  
 and I will wed thee in another key,  
 with pomp, with triumph and with revelling.

*Enter EGÆUS, HERMIA, LYSANDER, and DEMETRIUS.*

*Egæ.* Happy be Theseus, our renowned duke!  
*The.* Thanks, good Egæus: what's the news  
 with thee?

*Egæ.* Full of vexation come I, with complaint  
 against my child, my daughter Hermia.  
 Stand forth, Demetrius. My noble lord,

This man hath my consent to marry her.  
 Stand forth, Lysander: and, my gracious duke,  
 This man hath bewitch'd the bosom of my  
 child:

Thou, thou, Lysander, thou hast given her  
 rhymes

And interchanged love-tokens with my child:  
 Thou hast by moonlight at her window sung  
 With feigning voice verses of feigning love,  
 And stolen the impression of her fantasy  
 With bracelets of thy hair, rings, gawds, con-  
 ceits,

Knacks, trifles, nosegays, sweetmeats, messen-  
 gers

Of strong prevailment in unhardened youth:  
 With cunning hast thou filch'd my daughter's  
 heart,

Turn'd her obedience, which is due to me,  
 To stubborn harshness: and, my gracious duke,  
 Be it so she will not here before your grace

Consent to marry with Demetrius, 40  
 I beg the ancient privilege of Athens,  
 As she is mine, I may dispose of her:  
 Which shall be either to this gentleman  
 Or to her death, according to our law  
 Immediately provided in that case.

*The.* What say you, Hermia? be advised,  
 fair maid:

To you your father should be as a god;  
 One that composed your beauties, yea, and one  
 To whom you are but as a form in wax  
 By him imprinted and within his power 50  
 To leave the figure or disfigure it.  
 Demetrius is a worthy gentleman.

*Her.* So is Lysander.  
*The.* In himself he is;  
 But in this kind, wanting your father's voice,

The other must be held the worthier.

*Her.* I would my father look'd but with my eyes.

*The.* Rather your eyes must with his judgment look.

*Her.* I do entreat your grace to pardon me. I know not by what power I am made bold, Nor how it may concern my modesty, 60 In such a presence here to plead my thoughts; But I beseech your grace that I may know The worst that may befall me in this case, If I refuse to wed Demetrius.

*The.* Either to die the death or to abjure For ever the society of men. Therefore, fair Hermia, question your desires; Know of your youth, examine well your blood, Whether, if you yield not to your father's choice, You can endure the livery of a nun, 70 For aye to be in shady cloister mew'd, To live a barren sister all your life, Chanting faint hymns to the cold fruitless moon. Thrice-blessed they that master so their blood, To undergo such maiden pilgrimage; But earthlier happy is the rose distill'd, Than that which withering on the virgin thorn Grows, lives and dies in single blessedness.

*Her.* So will I grow, so live, so die, my lord, Ere I will yield my virgin patent up 80 Unto his lordship, whose unwish'd yoke My soul consents not to give sovereignty.

*The.* Take time to pause; and, by the next new moon—

The sealing-day betwixt my love and me, For everlasting bond of fellowship— Upon that day either prepare to die For disobedience to your father's will, Or else to wed Demetrius, as he would; Or on Diana's altar to protest For aye austerity and single life. 90

*Dem.* Relent, sweet Hermia: and, Lysander, yield

Thy crazed title to my certain right.

*Lys.* You have her father's love, Demetrius; Let me have Hermia's: do you marry him.

*Ege.* Scornful Lysander! true, he hath my love,

And what is mine my love shall render him. And she is mine, and all my right of her I do estate unto Demetrius.

*Lys.* I am, my lord, as well derived as he, As well possess'd; my love is more than his; My fortunes every way as fairly rank'd, 100 If not with vantage, as Demetrius'; And, which is more than all these boasts can be, I am beloved of beauteous Hermia: Why should not I then prosecute my right? Demetrius, I'll avouch it to his head, Made love to Nedar's daughter, Helena, And won her soul; and she, sweet lady, dotes, Devoutly dotes, dotes in idolatry, Upon this spotted and inconstant man. 110

*The.* I must confess that I have heard so much,

And with Demetrius thought to have spoke thereof;

But, being over-full of self-affairs, My mind did lose it. But, Demetrius, come; And come, Egeus; you shall go with me,

I have some private schooling for you both. For you, fair Hermia, look you arm yourself To fit your fancies to your father's will; Or else the law of Athens yields you up— Which by no means we may extenuate— 1 To death, or to a vow of single life.

Come, my Hippolyta: what cheer, my love? Demetrius and Egeus, go along; I must employ you in some business Against our nuptial and confer with you Of something nearly that concerns yourselves.

*Ege.* With duty and desire we follow you. [Exeunt all but Lysander and Hermia]

*Lys.* How now, my love! why is your cheek so pale?

How chance the roses there do fade so fast?

*Her.* Belike for want of rain, which I could well

Beteem them from the tempest of my eyes.

*Lys.* Ay me! for aught that I could ever read,

Could ever hear by tale or history,

The course of true love never did run smooth.

But, either it was different in blood,—

*Her.* O cross! too high to be enthralld low.

*Lys.* Or else misgraffed in respect of years.

*Her.* O spite! too old to be engaged to youth.

*Lys.* Or else it stood upon the choice of friends,—

*Her.* O hell! to choose love by another's eyes.

*Lys.* Or, if there were a sympathy in choice War, death, or sickness did lay siege to it,

Making it momentary as a sound,

Swift as a shadow, short as any dream;

Brief as the lightning in the collied night, That, in a spleen, unfolds both heaven and earth,

And ere a man hath power to say 'Behold!' The jaws of darkness do devour it up:

So quick bright things come to confusion.

*Her.* If then true lovers have been ere cross'd,

It stands as an edict in destiny: Then let us teach our trial patience,

Because it is a customary cross, As due to love as thoughts and dreams and sighs

Wishes and tears, poor fancy's followers.

*Lys.* A good persuasion: therefore, hear me, Hermia.

I have a widow aunt, a dowager Of great revenue, and she hath no child:

From Athens is her house remote seven leagues; And she respects me as her only son.

There, gentle Hermia, may I marry thee; And to that place the sharp Athenian law Cannot pursue us. If thou lovest me then,

Steal forth thy father's house to-morrow night; And in the wood, a league without the town,

Where I did meet thee once with Helena, To do observance to a morn of May,

There will I stay for thee.

*Her.* My good Lysander! I swear to thee, by Cupid's strongest bow,

By his best arrow with the golden head, By the simplicity of Venus' doves,

By that which knitteth souls and prospers loves



And by that fire which burn'd the Carthage queen,  
When the false Trojan under sail was seen,  
By all the vows that ever men have broke,  
In number more than ever women spoke,  
In that same place thou hast appointed me,  
To-morrow truly will I meet with thee.

*Lys.* Keep promise, love. Look, here comes  
Helena. 179

*Enter HELENA.*

*Her.* God speed fair Helena! whither away  
*Hel.* Call you me fair? that fair again unsay.  
Demetrius loves your fair: O happy fair!  
Your eyes are lode-stars; and your tongue's  
sweet air  
More tuneable than lark to shepherd's ear,  
When wheat is green, when hawthorn buds  
appear.  
Sickness is catching: O, were favour so,  
Your would I catch, fair Hermia, ere I go;  
My ear should catch your voice, my eye your eye,  
My tongue should catch your tongue's sweet  
melody.

Were the world mine, Demetrius being bated,  
The rest I'd give to be to you translated. 191  
I teach me how you look, and with what art  
You sway the motion of Demetrius' heart.

*Her.* I frown upon him, yet he loves me still.

*Hel.* O that your frowns would teach my  
smiles such skill!

*Her.* I give him curses, yet he gives me love.

*Hel.* O that my prayers could such affection  
move!

*Her.* The more I hate, the more he follows me.

*Hel.* The more I love, the more he hateth me.

*Her.* His folly, Helena, is no fault of mine.

*Hel.* None, but your beauty: would that  
fault were mine! 201

*Her.* Take comfort: he no more shall see  
my face;

Lysander and myself will fly this place.  
Before the time I did Lysander see,  
Seem'd Athens as a paradise to me:  
O, then, what graces in my love do dwell,  
That he hath turn'd a heaven unto a hell!

*Lys.* Helen, to you our minds we will unfold  
To-morrow night, when Phoebe doth behold  
Her silver visage in the watery glass, 210  
Decking with liquid pearl the bladed grass,  
A time that lovers' flights doth still conceal,  
Through Athens' gates have we devised to steal.

*Her.* And in the wood, where often you and I  
Upon faint primrose-beds were wont to lie,  
Emptying our bosoms of their counsel sweet,  
There my Lysander and myself shall meet;  
And thence from Athens turn away our eyes,  
To seek new friends and stranger companies.  
Farewell, sweet playfellow: pray thou for us;  
And good luck grant thee thy Demetrius! 221  
Keep word, Lysander: we must starve our sight  
From lovers' food till morrow deep midnight.

*Lys.* I will, my Hermia. [*Exit Hermia.*

Helena, alone:

As you on him, Demetrius dote on you! [*Exit.*

*Hel.* How happy some o'er other some can be!  
Through Athens I am thought as fair as she,  
But what of that? Demetrius thinks not so;  
He will not know what all he do know:

And as he errs, doting on Hermia's eyes, 230  
So I, admiring of his qualities:  
Things base and vile, holding no quantity,  
Love can transpoise to form and dignity:  
Love looks not with the eyes, but with the mind;  
And therefore is wing'd Cupid painted blind:  
Nor hath Love's mind of any judgement taste;  
Wings and no eyes figure unheedy haste:  
And therefore is Love said to be a child,  
Because in choice he is so oft beguiled.  
As waggish boys in game themselves forswear,  
So the boy Love is perjured every where: 241  
For ere Demetrius look'd on Hermia's eyne,  
He hail'd down oaths that he was only mine;  
And when this hail some heat from Hermia felt,  
So he dissolved, and showers of oaths did melt.  
I will go tell him of fair Hermia's flight:  
Then to the wood will he to-morrow night  
Pursue her; and for this intelligence  
If I have thanks, it is a dear expense:  
But herein mean I to enrich my pain, 250  
To have his sight thither and back again. [*Exit.*

SCENE II. Athens. QUINCE'S house.

*Enter QUINCE, SNUG, BOTTOM, FLUTE, SNOUT,  
and STARVELING.*

*Quin.* Is all our company here?

*Bot.* You were best to call them generally,  
man by man, according to the scrip.

*Quin.* Here is the scroll of every man's name,  
which is thought fit, through all Athens, to play  
in our interlude before the duke and the duchess,  
on his wedding-day at night.

*Bot.* First, good Peter Quince, say what the  
play treats on, then read the names of the actors,  
and so grow to a point. 10

*Quin.* Marry, our play is, The most lamentable  
comedy, and most cruel death of Pyramus  
and Thisby.

*Bot.* A very good piece of work, I assure you,  
and a merry. Now, good Peter Quince, call  
forth your actors by the scroll. Masters, spread  
yourselves.

*Quin.* Answer as I call you. Nick Bottom,  
the weaver.

*Bot.* Ready. Name what part I am for, and  
proceed. 21

*Quin.* You, Nick Bottom, are set down for  
Pyramus.

*Bot.* What is Pyramus? a lover, or a tyrant?  
*Quin.* A lover, that kills himself most gallant  
for love.

*Bot.* That will ask some tears in the true  
performing of it: if I do it, let the audience  
look to their eyes; I will move storms, I will  
condole in some measure. To the rest: yet my  
chief humour is for a tyrant: I could play  
Ercles rarely, or a part to tear a cat in, to make  
all split.

The raging rocks

And shivering shocks

Shall break the locks

Of prison gates;

And Phibbus' car

Shall shine from far

And make and mar

The foolish Fates.

This was lofty! Now name the rest of the players. This is Hercules' vein, a tyrant's vein; a lover is more condoling.

*Quin.* Francis Flute, the bellows-mender.

*Flu.* Here, Peter Quince.

*Quin.* Flute, you must take Thisby on you.

*Flu.* What is Thisby? a wandering knight?

*Quin.* It is the lady that Pyramus must love.

*Flu.* Nay, faith, let not me play a woman; I have a beard coming.

*Quin.* That's all one: you shall play it in a mask, and you may speak as small as you will.

*Bot.* An I may hide my face, let me play Thisby too, I'll speak in a monstrous little voice, 'Thisne, Thisne;' 'Ah Pyramus, my lover dear! thy Thisby dear, and lady dear!'

*Quin.* No, no; you must play Pyramus: and, Flute, you Thisby.

*Bot.* Well, proceed.

*Quin.* Robin Starveling, the tailor.

*Star.* Here, Peter Quince.

*Quin.* 'Robin Starveling, you must play Thisby's mother. Tom Snout, the tinker.

*Snout.* Here, Peter Quince.

*Quin.* You, Pyramus' father: myself, Thisby's father. Snug, the joiner; you, the lion's part; and, I hope, here is a play fitted.

*Snug.* Have you the lion's part written? pray you, if it be, give it me, for I am slow of study.

*Quin.* You may do it extempore, for it is nothing but roaring.

*Bot.* Let me play the lion too: I will roar, that I will do any man's heart good to hear me; I will roar, that I will make the duke say 'Let him roar again, let him roar again.'

*Quin.* An you should do it too terribly, you would fright the duchess and the ladies, that they would shriek; and that were enough to hang us all.

*All.* That would hang us, every mother's son.

*Bot.* I grant you, friends, if that you should fright the ladies out of their wits, they would have no more discretion but to hang us: but I will aggravate my voice so that I will roar you as gently as any sucking dove; I will roar you as 'twere any nightingale.

*Quin.* You can play no part but Pyramus; for Pyramus is a sweet-faced man; a proper man, as one shall see in a summer's day; a most lovely gentleman-like man: therefore you must needs play Pyramus.

*Bot.* Well, I will undertake it. What beard were I best to play it in?

*Quin.* Why, what you will.

*Bot.* I will discharge it in either your straw-colour beard, your orange-tawny beard, your purple-in-grain beard, or your French-crown-colour beard, your perfect yellow.

*Quin.* Some of your French crowns have no hair at all, and then you will play barefaced. But, masters, here are your parts; and I am to entreat you, request you and desire you, to con them by to-morrow night; and meet me in the palace wood, a mile without the town, by moonlight; there will we rehearse, for if we meet in the city, we shall be dogged with company, and our devices known. In the meantime I will

draw a bill of properties, such as our play wants. I pray you, fail me not.

*Bot.* We will meet; and there we may rehearse most obscenely and courageously. Take pains; be perfect: adieu.

*Quin.* At the duke's oak we meet.

*Bot.* Enough; hold or cut bow-strings.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. A wood near Athens.

*Enter, from opposite sides, a Fairy, and Puck.*

*Puck.* How now, spirit! whither wander you?

*Fai.* Over hill, over dale,

Thorough bush, thorough brier,

Over park, over pale,

Thorough flood, thorough fire,

I do wander every where,

Swifter than the moon's sphere;

And I serve the fairy queen,

To dew her orbs upon the green.

The cowslips tall her pensioners be:

In their gold coats spots you see;

Those be rubies, fairy favours,

In those freckles live their savours:

I must go seek some dewdrops here

And hang a pearl in every cowslip's ear.

Farewell, thou lovest of spirits; I'll be gone:

Our queen and all her elves come here anon.

*Puck.* The king doth keep his revels here to-night:

Take heed the queen come not within his sight:

For Oberon is passing fell and wrath,

Because that she as her attendant hath

A lovely boy, stolen from an Indian king;

She never had so sweet a changeling;

And jealous Oberon would have the child

Knight of his train, to trace the forests wild;

But she perforce withholds the loved boy,

Crowns him with flowers and makes him all

her joy:

And now they never meet in grove or green,

By fountain clear, or spangled starlight sheen,

But they do square, that all their elves for fear

Creeep into acorn-cups and hide them there.

*Fai.* Either I mistake your shape and making

quite,

Or else you are that shrewd and knavish spirit

Call'd Robin Goodfellow: are not you he

That frights the maidens of the villagery;

Skim milk, and sometimes labour in the quern

And bootless make the breathless housewife

churn;

And sometime make the drink to bear no

barm;

Mislead night-wanderers, laughing at their

harm?

Those that Hobgoblin call you and sweet Puck,

You do their work, and they shall have good

luck:

Are not you he?

*Puck.* Thou speak'st aright;

I am that merry wanderer of the night.

I jest to Oberon and make him smile

When I a fat and bean-fed horse beguile,

weighing in likenesses of a filly foal:  
 And sometime lurk I in a gossip's bowl,  
 In very likeness of a roasted crab,  
 And when she drinks, against her lips I bob  
 And on her wither'd dewlap pour the ale. 50  
 He wisest aunt, telling the saddest tale,  
 Sometime for three-foot stool mistaketh me;  
 Then slip I from her bum, down topples she,  
 And 'tailor' cries, and falls into a cough;  
 And then the whole quire hold their hips and  
 laugh,  
 And waxen in their mirth and neeze and swear  
 A merrier hour was never wasted there.  
 But, room, fairy! here comes Oberon.  
*Fei.* And here my mistress. Would that  
 he were gone!

*Inter. from one side, OBERON, with his train;  
 from the other, TITANIA, with hers.*

*Obe.* Ill met by moonlight, proud Titania.  
*Tita.* What, jealous Oberon! Fairies, skip  
 hence: 61

have forsworn his bed and company.

*Obe.* Tarry, rash wanton: am not I thy lord?

*Tita.* Then I must be thy lady: but I know  
 When thou hast stolen away from fairy land,  
 And in the shape of Corin sat all day,  
 Playing on pipes of corn and versing love  
 To amorous Phillida. Why art thou here,  
 Come from the farthest steppe of India?  
 But that, forsooth, the bouncing Amazon, 70  
 Your buskin'd mistress and your warrior love,  
 To Theseus must be wedded, and you come  
 To give their bed joy and prosperity.

*Obe.* How canst thou thus for shame, Titania,  
 Blame at my credit with Hippolyta,  
 Knowing I know thy love to Theseus?  
 Didst thou not lead him through the glimmering  
 night

From Perigenia, whom he ravished?  
 And make him with fair Aëgle break his faith,  
 With Ariadne and Antiopa? 80

*Tita.* These are the forgeries of jealousy:  
 And never, since the middle summer's spring,  
 Met we on hill, in dale, forest or mead,  
 By paved fountain or by rushy brook,  
 Or in the beached margin of the sea,  
 To dance our ringlets to the whistling wind,  
 But with thy brawls thou hast disturb'd our  
 sport.

Therefore the winds, piping to us in vain,  
 As in revenge, have suck'd up from the sea  
 Contagious fogs; which falling in the land  
 Have every pelting river made so proud  
 That they have overborne their continents:  
 The ox hath therefore stretch'd his yoke in  
 vain,

The ploughman lost his sweat, and the greer  
 corn

Hath rotted ere his youth attain'd a beard;  
 The fold stands empty in the drowned field,  
 And crows are fatted with the murrion flock;  
 The nine men's morris is fill'd up with mud,  
 And the quaint mazes in the wanton green  
 For lack of tread are undistinguishable: 100

The human mortals want their winter here;  
 No night is now with hymn or carol blest:  
 Therefore the moon, the governess of floods,

Pale in her anger, washes all the air,  
 That rheumatic diseases do abound:  
 And thorough this distemperature we see  
 The seasons alter: hoary-headed frosts  
 Fall in the fresh lap of the crimson rose,  
 And on old Hæma's thin and icy crown  
 An odorous chaplet of sweet summer buds 110  
 Is, as in mockery, set: the spring, the summer,  
 The childing autumn, angry winter, change  
 Their wonted liveries, and the mazed world,  
 By their increase, now knows not which is  
 which:

And this same progeny of evils comes  
 From our debate, from our dissension;  
 We are their parents and original.

*Obe.* Do you amend it then; it lies in you:  
 Why should Titania cross her Oberon?  
 I do but beg a little changeling boy,  
 To be my henchman. 120

*Tita.* Set your heart at rest:  
 The fairy land buys not the child of me.  
 His mother was a votaress of my order:  
 And, in the spiced Indian air, by night,  
 Full often hath she gossip'd by my side,  
 And sat with me on Neptune's yellow sands,  
 Marking the embarked traders on the flood,  
 When we have laugh'd to see the sails conceive  
 And grow big-bellied with the wanton wind;  
 Which she, with pretty and with swimming  
 gait 130

Following,—her womb then rich with my young  
 squire,—

Would imitate, and sail upon the land,  
 To fetch me trifles, and return again,  
 As from a voyage, rich with merchandise.  
 But she, being mortal, of that boy did die;  
 And for her sake do I rear up her boy,  
 And for her sake I will not part with him.

*Obe.* How long within this wood intend you  
 stay?

*Tita.* Perchance till after Theseus' wedding-  
 day.

If you will patiently dance in our round 140  
 And see our moonlight revels, go with us;  
 If not, shun me, and I will spare your haunts.

*Obe.* Give me that boy, and I will go with  
 thee.

*Tita.* Not for thy fairy kingdom. Fairies,  
 away!

We shall chide downright, if I longer stay.

[*Exit Titania with her train.*]

*Obe.* Well, go thy way: thou shalt not from  
 this grove

Till I torment thee for this injury.

My gentle Puck, come hither. Thou remem-  
 berest

Since once I sat upon a promontory,  
 And heard a mermaid on a dolphin's back 150  
 Uttering such dulcet and harmonious breath  
 That the rude sea grew civil at her song  
 And certain stars shot madly from their spheres,  
 To hear the sea-maid's music.

*Puck.* I remember.

*Obe.* That very time I saw, but thou couldst  
 not,

Flying between the cold moon and the earth,  
 Cupid all arm'd: a certain aim he took  
 At a fair vestal throned by the west,

And loosed his love-shaft smartly from his bow,  
As it should pierce a hundred thousand hearts;  
But I might see young Cupid's fiery shaft  
Quench'd in the chaste beams of the watery  
moon,

And the imperial votaress passed on,  
In maiden meditation, fancy-free.  
Yet mark'd I where the bolt of Cupid fell:  
It fell upon a little western flower,  
Before milk-white, now purple with love's  
wound,  
And maidens call it love-in-idleness.  
Fetch me that flower; the herb I shew'd thee  
once:

The juice of it on sleeping eye-lids laid 170  
Will make or man or woman madly dote  
Upon the next live creature that it sees.  
Fetch me this herb; and be thou here again  
Ere the leviathan can swim a league.  
*Puck.* I'll put a girdle round about the earth  
In forty minutes. *[Exit.]*

*Obc.* Having once this juice,  
I'll watch Titania when she is asleep,  
And drop the liquor of it in her eyes.  
The next thing then she waking looks upon,  
Be it on lion, bear, or wolf, or bull, 180  
On meddling monkey, or on busy ape,  
She shall pursue it with the soul of love:  
And ere I take this charm from off her sight,  
As I can take it with another herb,  
I'll make her render up her page to me.  
But who comes here? I am invisible;  
And I will overhear their conference.

*Enter DEMETRIUS, HELENA following him.*

*Dem.* I love thee not, therefore pursue me  
not.  
Where is Lysander and fair Hermia?  
The one I'll slay, the other slayeth me. 190  
Thou told'st me they were stolen unto this  
wood;

And here am I, and wode within this wood,  
Because I cannot meet my Hermia.  
Hence, get thee gone, and follow me no more.

*Hel.* You draw me, you hard-hearted ad-  
amant;

But yet you draw not iron, for my heart  
Is true as steel: leave you your power: to draw,  
And I shall have no power to follow you.

*Dem.* Do I entice you? do I speak you fair?  
Or, rather, do I not in plainest truth 200  
Tell you, I do not, nor I cannot love you?

*Hel.* And even for that do I love you the  
more.

I am your spaniel; and, Demetrius,  
The more you beat me, I will fawn on you:  
Use me but as your spaniel, spurn me, strike me,  
Neglect me, lose me; only give me leave,  
Unworthy as I am, to follow you.

What worse place can I beg in your love,—  
entreat you to place of high respect with me,—  
them by to-morrow as you use your dog? 210  
palace wood, and not too much the hatred of my  
light; there will I  
the city, we shall be when I do look on thee.  
our devices know I am sick when I look not on

*Dem.* You do impeach your modesty  
much,

To leave the city and commit yourself  
Into the hands of one that loves you not;  
To trust the opportunity of night  
And the ill counsel of a desert place  
With the rich worth of your virginity.

*Hel.* Your virtue is my privilege: for that  
It is not night when I do see your face, 2  
Therefore I think I am not in the night;  
Nor doth this wood lack worlds of company,  
For you in my respect are all the world:  
Then how can it be said I am alone,  
When all the world is here to look on me?

*Dem.* I'll run from thee and hide me in the  
brakes,

And leave thee to the mercy of wild beasts.  
*Hel.* The wildest hath not such a heart as  
you.

Run when you will, the story shall be changed;  
Apollo flies, and Daphne holds the chase;  
The dove pursues the griffin; the mild hind  
Makes speed to catch the tiger; bootless sp  
When cowardice pursues and valour flies.

*Dem.* I will not stay thy questions; let m  
go;

Or, if thou follow me, do not believe  
But I shall do thee mischief in the wood.

*Hel.* Ay, in the temple, in the town, th  
field,

You do me mischief. Fie, Demetrius!  
Your wrongs do set a scandal on my sex:  
We cannot fight for love, as men may do;  
We should be woo'd and were not made to w

*[Exit He]*  
I'll follow thee and make a heaven of hell,  
To die upon the hand I love so well. *[Exi*

*Obc.* Fare thee well, nymph: ere he do  
this grove,  
Thou shalt fly him and he shall seek thy love

*Re-enter PUCK.*

Hast thou the flower there? Welcome, warden  
*Puck.* Ay, there it is.

*Obc.* I pray thee, give it m  
I know a bank where the wild thyme blows,  
Where oxlips and the nodding violet grows,  
† Quite over-canopied with luscious woodbine,  
With sweet musk-roses and with eglantine:  
There sleeps Titania sometime of the night,  
Lull'd in these flowers with dances and delight  
And there the snake throws her enamell'd skin  
Weed wide enough to wrap a fairy in:  
And with the juice of this I'll streak her eyes  
And make her full of hateful fantasies.  
Take thou some of it, and seek through th  
grove:

A sweet Athenian lady is in love  
With a disdainful youth: anoint his eyes;  
But do it when the next thing he espies  
May be the lady: thou shalt know the man  
By the Athenian garments he hath on.  
Effect it with some care that he may prove  
More fond on her than she upon her love:  
And look thou meet me ere the first cock

*Puck.* Fear not, my lord, your servant sh  
do so. *[Re-ent*

SCENE II. *Another part of the wood.*

*Enter TITANIA, with her train.*

*Tita.* Come, now a roundel and a fairy song;  
 for the third part of a minute, hence;  
 to kill cankers in the musk-rose buds,  
 to war with ere-mice for their leathern  
 wings,  
 make my small elves coats, and some keep  
 back  
 the clamorous owl that nightly hoots and  
 wonders  
 our quaint spirits. Sing me now asleep;  
 to your offices and let me rest.

*The Fairies sing.*

You spotted snakes with double tongue,  
 Thorny hedgehogs, be not seen;  
 Newts and blind-worms, do no wrong,  
 Come not near our fairy queen.  
 Philomel, with melody  
 Sing in our sweet lullaby;  
 Lulla, lulla, lullaby, lulla, lulla, lullaby:  
 Never harm,  
 Nor spell nor charm,  
 Come our lovely lady nigh;  
 So, good night, with lullaby.  
 Weaving spiders, come not here;  
 Hence, you long-legg'd spinners, hence!  
 Beetles black, approach not near;  
 Worm nor snail, do no offence.  
 Philomel, with melody, &c.

*Fairy.* Hence, away! now all is well:  
 One aloof stand sentinel.

*[Exit Fairies. Titania sleeps.]*

*Enter OBERON, and squeezes the flower on  
 Titania's eyelids.*

What thou seest when thou dost wake,  
 Do it for thy true-love take,  
 Love and languish for his sake:  
 Be it ounce, or cat, or bear,  
 Pard, or boar with bristled hair,  
 In thy eye that shall appear  
 When thou wakest, it is thy dear:  
 Wake when some vile thing is near.

*Enter LYSANDER and HERMIA.*

Fair love, you faint with wandering in  
 the wood;  
 to speak troth, I have forgot our way:  
 I'll rest us, Hermia, if you think it good,  
 and tarry for the comfort of the day.  
*Her.* Be it so, Lysander: find you out a bed;  
 I upon this bank will rest my head.  
*Lys.* One turf shall serve as pillow for us  
 both;  
 heart, one bed, two bosoms and one troth.  
*Her.* Nay, good Lysander; for my sake, my  
 dear,  
 rather off yet, do not lie so near.  
 O, take the sense, sweet, of my inno-  
 cence!  
 I take the meaning in love's conference.  
 that my heart unto yours is knit

So that but one heart we can make of it;  
 Two bosoms interchain'd with an oath;  
 So then two bosoms and a single troth.  
 Then by your side no bed-room me deny;  
 For lying so, Hermia, I do not lie.

*Her.* Lysander riddles very prettily:  
 Now much beshrew my manners and my pride,  
 If Hermia meant to say Lysander lied.  
 But, gentle friend, for love and courtesy  
 Lie further off; in human modesty,  
 Such separation as may well be said  
 Becomes a virtuous bachelor and a maid,  
 So far be distant; and, good night, sweet friend:  
 Thy love ne'er alter till thy sweet life end!

*Lys.* Amen, amen, to that fair prayer, say I;  
 And then end life when I end loyalty!  
 Here is my bed: sleep give thee all his rest!  
*Her.* With half that wish the wisher's eyes  
 be press'd!

*Enter PUCK.*

*Puck.* Through the forest have I gone,  
 But Athenian found I none,  
 On whose eyes I might approve  
 This flower's force in stirring love.  
 Night and silence.—Who is here! 70  
 Weeds of Athens he doth wear:  
 This is he, my master said,  
 Despised the Athenian maid;  
 And here the maiden, sleeping sound,  
 On the dank and dirty ground.  
 Pretty soul! she durst not lie  
 Near this lack-love, this kill-courtesy.  
 Churl, upon thy eyes I throw  
 All the power this charm doth owe.  
 When thou wakest, let love forbid 80  
 Sleep his seat on thy eyelid:  
 So awake when I am gone;  
 For I must now to Oberon. *[Exit.]*

*Enter DEMETRIUS and HELENA, running.*

*Hel.* Stay, though thou kill me, sweet Deme-  
 trius.  
*Dem.* I charge thee, hence, and do not haunt  
 me thus.  
*Hel.* O, wilt thou darkling leave me? do  
 not so.  
*Dem.* Stay, on thy peril: I alone will go.

*Hel.* O, I am out of breath in this fond chase!  
 The more my prayer, the lesser is my grace.  
 Happy is Hermia, whoso'er she lies;  
 For she hath blessed and attractive eyes.  
 How came her eyes so bright? Not with salt  
 tears:

If so, my eyes are oftener wash'd than hers.  
 No, no, I am as ugly as a bear;  
 For beasts that meet me run away for fear:  
 Therefore no marvel though Demetrius  
 Do, as a monster, fly my presence thus.  
 What wicked and dissembling glass of mine 98  
 Made me compare with Hermia's sphery eye?  
 But who is here? Lysander! on the ground!  
 Dead? or asleep? I see no blood, no wound.  
 Lysander, if you live, good sir, awake.  
*Lys.* *[Awaking]* And run through fire I will  
 for thy sweet sake.

Transparent Helena! Nature shows art,  
That through thy bosom makes me see thy heart.  
Where is Demetrius? O, how fit a word  
Is that vile name to perish on my sword!

*Hel.* Do not say so, Lysander; say not so.  
What though he love your Hermia? Lord,  
what though?

Yet Hermia still loves you: then be content.

*Lys.* Content with Hermia! No; I do repent  
The tedious minutes I with her have spent.

Not Hermia but Helena I love:

Who will not change a raven for a dove?

The will of man is by his reason sway'd;

And reason says you are the worthier maid.

Things growing are not ripe until their season:

So I, being young, till now ripe not to reason;

And touching now the point of human skill,

Reason becomes the marshal to my will

And leads me to your eyes, where I o'erlook

Love's stories written in love's richest book.

*Hel.* Wherefore was I to this keen mockery

born?

When at your hands did I deserve this scorn?

Is't not enough, is't not enough, young man,

That I did never, no, nor never can,

Deserve a sweet look from Demetrius' eye,

But you must flout my insufficiency?

Good troth, you do me wrong, good sooth, you

do,

In such disdainful manner me to woo.

But fare you well: perforce I must confess

I thought you lord of more true gentleness.

O, that a lady, of one man refused,

Should of another therefore be abused! [*Exit.*]

*Lys.* She sees not Hermia. Hermia, sleep

thou there:

And never mayst thou come Lysander near!

For as a surfeit of the sweetest things

The deepest loathing to the stomach brings,

Or as the heresies that men do leave

Are hated most of those they did deceive,

So thou, my surfeit and my heresy,

Of all be hated, but the most of me!

And, all my powers, address your love and might

To honour Helen and to be her knight! [*Exit.*]

*Her.* [*Awaking*] Help me, Lysander, help

me! do thy best

To pluck this crawling serpent from my breast!

Ay me, for pity! what a dream was here!

Lysander, look how I do quake with fear:

Methought a serpent eat my heart away,

And you sat smiling at his cruel prey.

Lysander! what, removed? Lysander! lord!

What, out of hearing? gone! no sound, no

word!

Alack, where are you? speak, an if you hear;

Speak, of all loves! I swoon almost with fear.

No! then I will perceive you are not high:

Either death or you I'll find immediately. [*Exit.*]

### ACT III.

SCENE I. *The wood. Titania lying asleep.*

*Enter QUINCE, SNUG, BOTTOM, FLUTE, SNOUT,*

*and STARVELING.*

*Bot.* Are we all met?

*Quin.* Pat, pat; and here's a marvellous

convenient place for our rehearsal. This green

plot shall be our stage, this hawthorn brake our  
tiring-house; and we will do it in action as  
will do it before the duke.

*Bot.* Peter Quince,—

*Quin.* What sayest thou, bully Bottom?

*Bot.* There are things in this comedy,

Pyramus and Thisby that will never please

first, Pyramus must draw a sword to kill his

self; which the ladies cannot abide. How

answer you that?

*Snout.* By'r lakin, a parlous fear.

*Star.* I believe we must leave the killing off

when all is done.

*Bot.* Not a whit: I have a device to make it

well. Write me a prologue; and let the prologue

seem to say, we will do no harm with our sword

and that Pyramus is not killed indeed; and

for the more better assurance, tell them that

Pyramus am not Pyramus, but Bottom the

weaver: this will put them out of fear.

*Quin.* Well, we will have such a prologue

and it shall be written in eight and six.

*Bot.* No, make it two more; let it be written

in eight and eight.

*Snout.* Will not the ladies be afeard of it

lion?

*Star.* I fear it, I promise you.

*Bot.* Masters, you ought to consider we

ourselves: to bring in—God shield us!—a lion

among ladies, is a most dreadful thing; for there

is not a more fearful wild-fowl than your lion

living; and we ought to look to't.

*Snout.* Therefore another prologue must be

he is not a lion.

*Bot.* Nay, you must name his name, a

half his face must be seen through the lion's

neck; and he himself must speak through

saying thus, or to the same defect,—'Ladies,

or 'Fair ladies,—I would wish you,—or 'I would

request you,—or 'I would entreat you,—not

fear, not to tremble: my life for yours. If we

think I come hither as a lion, it were pity of

life: no, I am no such thing; I am a man;

other men are; and there indeed let him name

his name, and tell them plainly he is Snug the

joiner.

*Quin.* Well, it shall be so. But there is ten

hard things; that is, to bring the moonlight in

a chamber; for, you know, Pyramus and Thisby

meet by moonlight.

*Snout.* Doth the moon shine that night?

*Bot.* A calendar, a calendar! look in the

manac; find out moonshine, find out moon

shine.

*Quin.* Yes, it doth shine that night.

*Bot.* Why, then may you leave a casement,

the great chamber window, where we play, open

and the moon may shine in at the casement.

*Quin.* Ay; or else one must come in with

bush of thorns and a lanthorn, and say he came

to disfigure, or to present, the person of Moon

shine. Then, there is another thing: we must

have a wall in the great chamber; for Pyramus

and Thisby, says the story, did talk through the

chink of a wall.

*Snout.* You can never bring in a wall. Wh

say you, Bottom?

*Bot.* Some man or other must present Wall: and let him have some plaster, or some loam, or some rough-cast about him, to signify wall; and let him hold his fingers thus, and through thatanny shall Pyramus and Thisby whisper.

*Quin.* If that may be, then all is well. Come, t down, every mother's son, and rehearse your parts. Pyramus, you begin: when you have spoken your speech, enter into that brake: and every one according to his cue.

*Enter PUCK behind.*

*Puck.* What hempen home-spuns have we swagging here,

so near the cradle of the fairy queen? 80  
What, a play toward! I'll be an auditor;  
an actor too perhaps, if I see cause.

*Quin.* Speak, Pyramus. Thisby, stand forth.  
*Bot.* Thisby, the flowers of odious savours sweet,—

*Quin.* Odours, odours.

*Bot.* — odours savours sweet:

so hath thy breath, my dearest Thisby dear.

But hark, a voice! stay thou but here awhile,  
And by and by I will to thee appear. [*Exit.*]

*Puck.* A stranger Pyramus than e'er played here. [*Exit.*]

*Flu.* Must I speak now? 91

*Quin.* Ay, marry, must you; for you must understand he goes but to see a noise that he earl, and is to come again.

*Flu.* Most radiant Pyramus, most lily-white of hue,

Of colour like the red rose on triumphant brier,

lost brisky juvenal and eke most lovely Jew,  
As true as truest horse that yet would never tire,

I'll meet thee, Pyramus, at Ninny's tomb. 99

*Quin.* 'Ninus' tomb, man: why, you must not speak that yet; that you answer to Pyramus: you speak all your part at once, cues and all. Pyramus enter: your cue is past; it is, never tire.

*Flu.* O,—As true as truest horse, that yet would never tire.

*Re-enter PUCK, and BOTTOM with an ass's head.*

*Bot.* If I were fair, Thisby, I were only thine.

*Quin.* O monstrous! O strange! we are haunted. Pray, masters! fly, masters! Help! [*Exeunt Quince, Snug, Flute, Snout, and Starveling.*]

*Puck.* I'll follow you, I'll lead you about a round,

Through bog, through bush, through brake,  
through brier: 1

sometime a horse I'll be, sometime a hound,

A hog, a headless bear, sometime a fire;  
and neigh, and bark, and grunt, and roar, and burn,

like horse, hound, hog, bear, fire, at every turn. [*Exit.*]

*Bot.* Why do they run away? this is a knavery of them to make me afraid.

*Re-enter SNOOT.*

*Snout.* O Bottom, thou art changed! what do I see on thee?

*Bot.* What do you see? you see an ass-head of your own, do you? [*Exit Snout.*]

*Re-enter QUINCE.*

*Quin.* Bless thee, Bottom! bless thee! thou art translated. [*Exit.*]

*Bot.* I see their knavery: this is to make an ass of me; to fright me, if they could. But I will not stir from this place, do what they can: I will walk up and down here, and I will sing, that they shall hear I am not afraid. [*Sings.*]

The ouzel cock so black of hue,

With orange-tawny bill,

The throats with his note so true, 130

The wren with little quill,—

*Tita.* [*A waking*] What angel wakes me from my flowery bed?

*Bot.* [*Sings*]

The finch, the sparrow and the lark,

The plain-song cuckoo gray,

Whose note full many a man doth mark,  
And dares not answer nay;—  
for, indeed, who would set his wit to so foolish a bird? who would give a bird the lie, though he cry 'cuckoo' never so?

*Tita.* I pray thee, gentle mortal, sing again: Mine ear is much enamour'd of thy note; 141

So is mine eye enthralled to thy shape;  
And thy fair virtue's force perforce doth move me

On the first view to say, to swear, I love thee.

*Bot.* Methinks, mistress, you should have little reason for that: and yet, to say the truth, reason and love keep little company together now-a-days; the more the pity that some honest neighbours will not make them friends. Nay, I can glean upon occasion. 150

*Tita.* Thou art as wise as thou art beautiful.

*Bot.* Not so, neither: but if I had wit enough to get out of this wood, I have enough to serve mine own turn.

*Tita.* Out of this wood do not desire to go: Thou shalt remain here, whether thou wilt or no.

I am a spirit of no common rate:

The summer still doth tend upon my state;

And I do love thee: therefore, go with me;

I'll give thee faeries to attend on thee, 160

And they shall fetch thee jewels from the deep,  
And sing while thou on pressed flowers dost sleep:

And I will purge thy mortal grossness so  
That thou shalt like an airy spirit go.

Peaseblossom! Cobweb! Moth! and Mustardseed!

*Enter PEASEBLOSSOM, COBWEB, MOTH, and MUSTARDEED.*

*Peas.* Ready.

*Cob.* And I.

*Moth.* And I.

*Mus.* And I.

*All.* Where shall we go?

*Tita.* Be kind and courteous to this gentleman

Hop in his walks and gambol in his eyes;  
Feed him with apricocks and dewberries, 169  
With purple grapes, green figs, and mulberries;  
The honey-bags steal from the humble-bees,  
And for night-tapers crop their waxen thighs  
And light them at the fiery glow-worm's eyes,  
To have my love to bed and to arise;  
And pluck the wings from painted butterflies  
To fan the moonbeams from his sleeping eyes:  
Nod to him, elves, and do him courtesies.

*Peas.* Hail, mortal!

*Cob.* Hail!

*Moth.* Hail!

*Mus.* Hail! 180

*Bot.* I cry you worships mercy, heartily: I beseech your worship's name.

*Cob.* Cobweb.

*Bot.* I shall desire you of more acquaintance, good Master Cobweb: if I cut my finger, I shall make bold with you. Your name, honest gentleman?

*Peas.* Peaseblossom. 189

*Bot.* I pray you, commend me to Mistress Squash, your mother, and to Master Peascod, your father. Good Master Peaseblossom, I shall desire you of more acquaintance too. Your name, I beseech you, sir?

*Mus.* Mustardseed.

*Bot.* Good Master Mustardseed, I know your patience well: that same cowardly, giant-like ox-beef hath devoured many a gentleman of your house: I promise you your kindred hath made my eyes water ere now. I desire your more acquaintance, good Master Mustardseed. 201

*Tit.* Come, wait upon him; lead him to my bower.  
The moon methinks looks with a watery eye;  
And when she weeps, weeps every little flower,  
Lamenting some enforced chastity.

Tie up my love's tongue, bring him silently.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. Another part of the wood.

*Enter OBERON.*

*Obe.* I wonder if Titania be awaked;  
Then, what it was that next came in her eye,  
Which she must dote on in extremity.

*Enter PUCK.*

Here comes my messenger.

How now, mad spirit!  
What night-rule now about this haunted grove?

*Puck.* My mistress with a monster is in love.  
Near to her close and consecrated bower,  
While she was in her dull and sleeping hour,  
A crew of patches, rude mechanicals,  
That work for bread upon Athenian stalls, 10  
Were met together to rehearse a play  
Intended for great Theseus' nuptial-day.  
The shallowest thick-skin of that barren sort,  
Who Pyramus presented, in their sport  
Forsook his scene and enter'd in a brake:  
When I did him at this advantage take,  
An ass's nose I fixed on his head:  
Anon his Thisbe must be answered,  
And forth my mimic comes. When they him  
spy,

As wild geese that the creeping fowler eye, 20  
Or russet-pated choughs, many in sort,  
Rising and cawing at the gun's report,  
Sever themselves and madly sweep the sky,  
So, at his sight, away his fellows fly;  
And, at our stamp, here o'er and o'er one falls;  
He murder cries and help from Athens calls.  
Their sense thus weak, lost with their fears thus  
strong,

Made senseless things begin to do them wrong;  
For briars and thorns at their apparel snatch;  
Some sleeves, some hats, from yielders all things  
catch. 30

I led them on in this distracted fear,

And left sweet Pyramus translated there:

When in that moment, so it came to pass,  
Titania waked and straightaway loved an ass.

*Obe.* This falls out better than I could devise.

But hast thou yet latch'd the Athenian's eyes

With the love-juice, as I did bid thee do?

*Puck.* I took him sleeping,—that is finish'd  
too,—

And the Athenian woman by his side;

That, when he waked, of force she must be  
eyed. 40

*Enter HERMIA and DEMETRIUS.*

*Obe.* Stand close: this is the same Athenian

*Puck.* This is the woman, but not this th-  
man.

*Dem.* O, why rebuke you him that love  
you so?

Lay breath so bitter on your bitter foe.

*Her.* Now I but chide; but I should use thee  
worse,

For thou, I fear, hast given me cause to curse.

If thou hast slain Lysander in his sleep,

Being o'er shoes in blood, plunge in the deep,

And kill me too.

The sun was not so true unto the day

As he to me: would he have stolen away

From sleeping Hermia? I'll believe as soon

This whole earth may be bored and that th-  
moon

May through the centre creep and so displease

Her brother's noontide with the Antipodes.

It cannot be but thou hast murder'd him;

So should a murderer look, so dead, so grim.

*Dem.* So should the murder'd look, and s-  
should I,

Pierced through the heart with your sten-  
cruelty:

Yet you, the murderer, look as bright, as clear,  
As yonder Venus in her glimmering sphere.

*Her.* What's this to my Lysander? where's  
he?

Ah, good Demetrius, wilt thou give him me?

*Dem.* I had rather give his carcass to my  
hounds.

*Her.* Out, dog! out, cur! thou drivest me  
past the bounds

Of maiden's patience. Hast thou slain him,  
then?

Henceforth be never number'd among men!

O, once tell true, tell true, even for my sake!

Durst thou have look'd upon him being awake,

And hast thou kill'd him sleeping? O brave  
touch! 70



ould not a worm, an adder, do so much?  
an adder did it; for with doubler tongue  
an thing, thou serpent, never adder stung.  
*Dem.* You spend your passion on a misprised  
mood:

am not guilty of Lysander's blood;  
or is he dead, for aught that I can tell.  
*Her.* I pray thee, tell me then that he is well.  
*Dem.* An if I could, what should I get there-  
fore?

*Her.* A privilege never to see me more.  
nd from thy hated presence part I so: 80  
e me no more, whether he be dead or no.

[*Exit.*

*Dem.* There is no following her in this fierce  
vein:  
ere therefore for a while I will remain.  
sorrow's heaviness doth heavier grow  
r debt that bankrupt sleep doth sorrow owe;  
hich now in some slight measure it will pay,  
for his tender here I make some stay.

[*Lies down and sleeps.*

*Obc.* What hast thou done? I thou hast mis-  
taken quite  
nd laid the love-juice on some true-love's sight:  
f thy misprision must perforce ensue 90  
me true love turn'd and not a false turn'd true.

*Puck.* Then fate o'er-rules, that, one man  
holding troth,  
million fail, confounding oath on oath.

*Obc.* About the wood go swifter than the  
wind,  
I Helena of Athens look thou find:  
ll fancy-sick she is and pale of cheer,  
ith sighs of love, that costs the fresh blood  
dear:

some illusion see thou bring her here:  
ll charm his eyes against she do appear.

*Puck.* I go, I go; look how I go, 100  
wifer than arrow from the Tartar's bow. [*Exit.*

*Obc.* Flower of this purple dye,  
Hit with Cupid's archery,  
Sink in apple of his eye.  
When his love he doth espie,  
Let her shine as gloriously  
As the Venus of the sky.  
When thou wakest, if she be by,  
Beg of her for remedy.

*Re-enter PUCK.*

*Puck.* Captain of our fairy band, 11  
Helena is here at hand;  
And the youth, mistook by me,  
Pleading for a lover's fee,  
Shall we their fond pageant see?  
Lord, what fools these mortals be!  
*Obc.* Stand aside: the noise they make  
Will cause Demetrius to awake.  
*Puck.* Then will two at once woo one;  
That must needs be sport alone;  
And those things do best please me  
That befall preposterously. 12

*Enter LYSANDER and HELENA.*

*ts.* Why should you think that I should woo  
in scorn?  
n and derision never come in tears:

Look, when I vow, I weep: and vows so born,  
In their nativity all truth appears.

How can these things in me seem scorn to you,  
Bearing the badge of faith, to prove them true?  
*Hel.* You do advance your cunning more and  
more.

When truth kills truth, O devilish-holy fray!  
These vows are Hermia's: will you give her o'er?  
Weigh oath with oath, and you will nothing  
weigh: 131

Your vows to her and me, put in two scales,  
Will even weigh, and both as light as tales.

*Lys.* I had no judgement when to her I  
swore.

*Hel.* Nor none, in my mind, now you give  
her o'er.

*Lys.* Demetrius loves her, and he loves not  
you.

*Dem.* [*Awaking*] O Helen, goddess, nymph,  
perfect, divine!

To what, my love, shall I compare thine eyne?  
Crystal is muddy. O, how ripe in show 139  
Thy lips, those kissing cherries, tempting grow!  
That pure congealed white, high Taurus snow,  
Fann'd with the eastern wind, turns to a crow  
When thou hold'st up thy hand: O, let me kiss  
This princess of pure white, this seal of bliss!

*Hel.* O spite! O hell! I see you all are bent  
To set against me for your meriment:

If you were civil and knew courtesy,  
You would not do me thus much injury.

Can you not hate me, as I know you do,  
But you must join in souls to mock me too? 150

If you were men, as men you are in show,  
You would not use a gentle lady so:

To vow, and swear, and superpraise my parts,  
When I am sure you hate me with your hearts.

You both are rivals, and love Hermia;  
And now both rivals, to mock Helena:

A trim exploit, a manly enterprise,  
To conjure tears up in a poor maid's eyes

With your derision! none of noble sort  
Would so offend a virgin and extort 160

A poor soul's patience, all to make you sport.

*Lys.* You are unkind, Demetrius; be not so;  
For you love Hermia; this you know I know:

And here, with all good will, with all my heart,  
In Hermia's love I yield you up my part;

And yours of Helena to me bequeath,  
Whom I do love and will do till my death.

*Hel.* Never did mockers waste more idle  
breath.

*Dem.* Lysander, keep thy Hermia; I will  
none:

If e'er I loved her, all that love is gone. 170  
My heart to her but as guest-wise sojourn'd,  
And now to Helen is it home return'd,

There to remain.

*Lys.* Helen, it is not so.  
*Dem.* Disparage not the faith thou dost not  
know,

Least, to thy peril, thou aby it dear.  
Look, where thy love comes; in shadow is thy  
dear.

*Re-enter HERMIA.*

*Her.* Dark night, that from the eye his  
function takes,

The ear more quick of apprehension makes;  
Wherein it doth impair the seeing sense,  
It pays the hearing double recompense. 180  
Thou art not by mine eye, Lysander, found;  
Mine ear, I thank it, brought me to thy sound.  
But why unkindly didst thou leave me so?

*Lys.* Why should he stay, whom love doth  
press to go?

*Her.* What love could press Lysander from  
my side?

*Lys.* Lysander's love, that would not let  
him bide,

Fair Helena, who more engilds the night  
Than all yon fiery oes and eyes of light.  
Why seek'st thou me? could not this make  
thee know,

The hate I bear thee made me leave thee so? 190

*Her.* You speak not as you think: it can-  
not be.

*Hel.* Lo, she is one of this confederacy!

Now I perceive they have conjoin'd all three  
To fashion this false sport, in spite of me.  
Injurious Hermia! most ungrateful maid!  
Have you conspired, have you with these con-  
trived

To bait me with this foul derision?

Is all the counsel that we two have shared,  
The sisters' vows, the hours that we have spent,  
When we have chid the hasty-footed time 200  
For parting us,—O, is it all forgot?  
All school-days' friendship, childhood inno-  
cence?

We, Hermia, like two artificial gods,  
Have with our needles created both one flower,  
Both on one sampler, sitting on one cushion,  
Both warbling of one song, both in one key,  
As if our hands, our sides, voices and minds,  
Had been incorporate. So we grew together,  
Like to a double cherry, seeming parted,  
But yet an union in partition; 210

Two lovely berries moulded on one stem;  
So, with two seeming bodies, but one heart;  
Two of the first, like coats in heraldry,  
Due but to one and crowned with one crest.  
And will you rent our ancient love asunder,  
To join with men in scorning your poor friend?  
It is not friendly, 'tis not maidenly:  
Our sex, as well as I, may chide you for it,  
Though I alone do feel the injury. 219

*Her.* I am amazed at your passionate words.  
I scorn you not: it seems that you scorn me.

*Hel.* Have you not set Lysander, as in scorn,  
To follow me and praise my eyes and face?  
And made your other love, Demetrius,  
Who even but now did spurn me with his foot,  
To call me goddess, nymph, divine and rare,  
Precious, celestial? Wherefore speaks he this  
To her he hates? and wherefore doth Lysander  
Deny your love, so rich within his soul,  
And tender me, forsooth, affection, 230  
But by your setting on, by your consent?  
What though I be not so in grace as you,  
So hung upon with love, so fortunate,  
But miserable most, to love unloved?  
This you should pity rather than despise.

*Her.* I understand not what you mean by  
this.

*Hel.* Ay, do, persevere, counterfeit sad looks,

Make mouths upon me when I turn my back;  
Wink each at other; hold the sweet jest up:  
This sport, well carried, shall be chronicled;  
If you have any pity, grace, or manners,  
You would not make me such an argument.  
But fare ye well: 'tis partly my own fault;  
Which death or absence soon shall remedy.

*Lys.* Stay, gentle Helena; hear my excuse  
My love, my life, my soul, fair Helena!

*Hel.* O excellent!

*Her.* Sweet, do not scorn him.

*Dem.* If she cannot entreat, I can compel.

*Lys.* Thou canst compel no more than I  
entreat:

Thy threats have no more strength than I  
weak prayers.

Helena, I love thee; by my life, I do:

I swear by that which I will lose for thee,  
To prove him false that says I love thee not.

*Dem.* I say I love thee more than he can do.

*Lys.* If thou say so, withdraw, and pro-  
ceed it too.

*Dem.* Quick, come!

*Her.* Lysander, whereto tends all this?

*Lys.* Away, you Ethiop!

*Dem.* No, no; he'll...

Seem to break loose; take on as you would  
follow,

But yet come not: you are a tame man, go!

*Lys.* Hang off, thou cat, thou burr! v-  
thing, let loose,

Or I will shake thee from me like a serpent!

*Her.* Why are you grown so rude? what  
change is this?

Sweet love,—

*Lys.* Thy love! out, tawny Tartar, out,  
loathed medicine! hated potion, hence!

*Her.* Do you not jest?

*Hel.* Yes, sooth; and so do you.

*Lys.* Demetrius, I will keep my word with  
thee.

*Dem.* I would I had your bond, for I perceive  
A weak bond holds you: I'll not trust your  
word.

*Lys.* What, should I hurt her, strike her,  
kill her dead?

Although I hate her, I'll not harm her so.

*Her.* What, can you do me greater harm  
than hate?

Hate me? wherefore? O me! what news, my  
love!

Am not I Hermia? are not you Lysander?

I am as fair now as I was erewhile.

Since night you loved me; yet since night you  
left me:

Why, then you left me—O, the gods forbid!—  
In earnest, shall I say?

*Lys.* Ay, by my life;

And never did desire to see thee more.

Therefore be out of hope, of question, of doubt;  
Be certain, nothing truer; 'tis no jest

That I do hate thee and love Helena.

*Her.* O me! you juggler! you canker-  
blossom!

You thief of love! what, have you come by  
night

And stolen my love's heart from him?

*Hel.* Fine, I faith!

ve you no modesty, no maiden shame,  
touch of bashfulness? What, will you tear  
patient answers from my gentle tongue?  
fie! you counterfeit, you puppet, you!  
*Her.* Puppet? why so? ay, that way goes  
the game.

*w* I perceive that she hath made compare  
between our statures; she hath urged her  
height;  
*d* with her personage, her tall personage,  
*r* height, forsooth, she hath prevail'd with  
him.

*d* are you grown so high in his esteem,  
because I am so dwarfish and so low?  
*w* low am I, thou painted maypole? speak;  
*w* low am I? I am not yet so low  
that my nails can reach unto thine eyes.

*Hel.* I pray you, though you mock me,  
gentlemen,

*t* her not hurt me: I was never curst; 300  
*ave* no gift at all in shrewishness;  
*m* a right maid for my cowardice:

*t* her not strike me. You perhaps may think,  
cause she is something lower than myself,  
at I can match her.

*Her.* Lower! hark, again.  
*Hel.* Good Hermia, do not be so bitter with  
me.

*vermore* did love you, Hermia,  
*d* ever keep your counsels, never wrong'd  
you;

*ve* that, in love unto Demetrius,  
*old* him of your stealth unto this wood. 310  
*follow'd* you; for love I follow'd him;

*it* he hath chid me hence and threaten'd me  
*strike* me, spurn me, nay, to kill me too:  
*d* now, so you will let me quiet go,

*Athens* will I bear my folly back  
*d* follow you no further: let me go:  
*u* see how simple and how fond I am.

*Her.* Why, get you gone: who is't that  
hinders you?

*Hel.* A foolish heart, that I leave here behind.

*Her.* What, with Lysander?

*Hel.* With Demetrius. 320

*Lys.* Be not afraid; she shall not harm thee,  
Helena.

*Dem.* No, sir, she shall not, though you take  
her part.

*Hel.* O, when she's angry, she is keen and  
shrewd!

*e* was a vixen when she went to school;  
*d* though she be but little, she is fierce.

*Her.* 'Little' again! nothing but 'low' and  
'little'!

*hy* will you suffer her to flout me thus?  
*t* me come to her.

*Lys.* Get you gone, you dwarf;  
*u* minims, of hindering knot-grass made;

*u* bead, you acorn.  
*Dem.* You are too officious 330

*her* behalf that scorns your services.  
*t* her alone; speak not of Helena;

*ike* not her part; for, if thou dost intend  
*ver* so little show of love to her,  
*ou* shalt aby it.

*Lys.* Now she holds me not;  
*ow* follow, if thou dar'st, to try whose right,

Of thine or mine, is most in Helena.

*Dem.* Follow! nay, I'll go with thee, cheek  
by jole. [*Exeunt Lysander and Demetrius.*]

*Her.* You, mistress, all this coil is 'long of  
you:

*Nay*, go not back.

*Hel.* I will not trust you, I, 340  
Nor longer stay in your curst company.

*Your* hands than mine are quicker for a fray,  
*My* legs are longer thought, to run away. [*Exit.*]

*Her.* I am amazed, and know not what to  
say. [*Exit.*]

*Obe.* This is thy negligence: still thou mis-  
takest,

Or else committ'st thy knaveries wilfully.  
*Puck.* Believe me, king of shadows, I mis-  
took.

*Did* not you tell me I should know the man  
*By* the Athenian garments he had on?

*And* so far blameless proves my enterprise, 350  
*That* I have 'nointed an Athenian's eyes;

*And* so far am I glad it so did sort  
*As* this their jangling I esteem a sport.

*Obe.* Thou se'st these lovers seek a place to  
fight:

*Hie* therefore, Robin, overcast the night:  
*The* starry welkin cover thou anon

*With* drooping fog as black as Acheron,  
*And* lead these testy rivals so astray

*As* one come not within another's way.  
*Like* to Lysander sometime frame thy tongue,

*Then* stir Demetrius up with bitter wrong; 361  
*And* sometime rail thou like Demetrius;

*And* from each other look thou lead them thus,  
*Till* o'er their brows death-counterfeiting sleep

*With* leaden legs and batty wings doth creep  
*Then* crush this herb into Lysander's eye;

*Whose* liquor hath this virtuous property,  
*To* take from thence all error with his might,

*And* make his eyeballs roll with wonted sight.  
*When* they next wake, all this decision 370

*Shall* seem a dream and fruitless vision,  
*And* back to Athens shall the lovers wend,

*With* league whose date till death shall never  
end.

*Whiles* I in this affair do thee employ,  
*I*'ll to my queen and beg her Indian boy;

*And* then I will her charmed eye release  
*From* monster's view, and all things shall be  
peace.

*Puck.* My fairy lord, this must be done with  
haste,

*For* night's swift dragons cut the clouds full fast,  
*And* yonder shines Aurora's harbinger; 380

*At* whose approach, ghosts, wandering here and  
there,

*Troop* home to churchyards: damned spirits all,  
*That* in crossways and floods have burial,

*Already* to their wormy beds are gone;  
*For* fear lest day should look their shames upon,

*They* wilfully themselves exile from light  
*And* must for aye consort with black-brow'd  
night.

*Obe.* But we are spirits of another sort:  
*I* with the morning's love have oft made sport,

*And*, like a forester, the groves may tread, 390  
*Even* till the eastern gate, all fiery-red,  
*Opening* on Neptune with fair blessed beams,

Turns into yellow gold his salt green streams.  
But, notwithstanding, haste; make no delay;  
We may effect this business yet ere day. *[Exit.]*

*Puck.* Up and down, up and down,  
I will lead them up and down:  
I am fear'd in field and town:  
Goblin, lead them up and down.  
Here comes one. 400

*Re-enter LYSANDER.*

*Lys.* Where art thou, proud Demetrius?  
speak thou now.

*Puck.* Here, villain; drawn and ready.  
Where art thou?

*Lys.* I will be with thee straight.

*Puck.* Follow me, then,  
To plainer ground.

*[Exit Lysander, as following the voice.]*

*Re-enter DEMETRIUS.*

*Dem.* Lysander! speak again:  
Thou runaway, thou coward, art thou fled?  
Speak! In some bush? Where dost thou hide  
thy head?

*Puck.* Thou coward, art thou bragging to  
the stars,  
Telling the bushes that thou look'st for wars,  
And wilt not come? Come, recreant; come,  
thou child.

I'll whip thee with a rod: he is defiled 410  
That draws a sword on thee.

*Dem.* Yea, art thou there?

*Puck.* Follow my voice: we'll try no man-  
hood here. *[Exit.]*

*Re-enter LYSANDER.*

*Lys.* He goes before me and still dares me on:  
When I come where he calls, then he is gone.  
The villain is much lighter-heel'd than I:  
I follow'd fast, but faster he did fly;  
That fallen am I in dark uneven way,  
And here will rest me. *[Lies down.]* Come,  
thou gentle day!

For if but once thou show me thy grey light,  
I'll find Demetrius and revenge this spite. 420  
*[Sleeps.]*

*Re-enter PUCK and DEMETRIUS.*

*Puck.* Ho, ho, ho! Coward, why comest  
thou not?

*Dem.* Abide me, if thou darest; for well  
I wot

Thou runn'st before me, shifting every place,  
And darest not stand, nor look me in the face.  
Where art thou now?

*Puck.* Come hither: I am here.

*Dem.* Nay, then, thou mock'st me. Thou  
shalt buy this dear,

If ever I thy face by daylight see:  
Now, go thy way. Faintness constraineth me  
To measure out my length on this cold bed.  
By day's approach look to be visited. 430

*[Lies down and sleeps.]*

*Re-enter HELENA.*

*Hel.* O weary night, O long and tedious night!  
Abate thy hours! Shine comforts from  
east,

That I may back to Athens by daylight,  
From these that my poor company detest;  
And sleep, that sometimes shuts up sorrow's eye,  
Steal me awhile from mine own company. *[Lies down and sleeps.]*

*Puck.* Yet but three? Come one more;  
Two of both kinds makes up four.  
Here she comes, curst and sad:  
Cupid is a knavish lad,  
Thus to make poor females mad.

*Re-enter HERNIA.*

*Hern.* Never so weary, never so in woe,  
Bedabbled with the dew and torn with briar  
I can no further crawl, no further go;  
My legs can keep no pace with my desires.  
Here will I rest me till the break of day.  
Heavens shield Lysander, if they mean a fray.

*[Lies down and sleeps.]*

*Puck.* On the ground  
Sleep sound:  
I'll apply  
To your eye,  
Gentle lover, remedy.

*[Squeezing the juice on Lysander's eye.]*  
When thou wakest,  
Thou takest  
True delight  
In the sight

Of thy former lady's eye:  
And the country proverb known,  
That every man should take his own  
In your waking shall be shown:

Jack shall have Jill;  
Nought shall go ill;  
The man shall have his mare again, and I  
shall be well. *[Exit.]*

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. *The same.* LYSANDER, DEMETRIUS,  
HELENA, and HERNIA lying asleep.

*Enter TITANIA and BOTTOM; PEASEBLOSSOM,  
COWWEB, MOTH, MUSTARDSEED, and other  
Fairies attending; OBERON behind unseen.*

*Tita.* Come, sit thee down upon this flow-  
er bed,

While I thy amiable cheeks do coy,  
And stick musk-roses in thy sleek smooth hair,  
And kiss thy fair large ears, my gentle jar.  
*Hot.* Where's Peaseblossom?

*Peas.* Ready.  
*Bot.* Scratch my head, Peaseblossom. When?

*Mounsaieur Cobweb!*

*Cob.* Ready.

*Bot.* Mounsaieur Cobweb, good mounsaieur  
get you your weapons in your hand, and bid  
me a red-hipped humble-bee on the top of  
thatistle; and, good mounsaieur, bring me the  
honey-bag. Do not fret yourself too much to  
the action, mounsaieur; and, good mounsaieur

ave a care the honey-bag break not; I would  
so loath to have you overflow with a honey-  
bag, signior. Where's Mounseieur Mustardseed?

*Mus.* Ready. 29

*Bot.* Give me your neaf, Mounseieur Mustard-  
seed. Pray you, leave your courtesy, good moun-  
seieur.

*Mus.* What's your will?

*Bot.* Nothing, good mounseieur, but to help  
avalley Cobweb to scratch. I must to the bar-  
ers, mounseieur; for methinks I am marvellous  
awry about the face; and I am such a tender  
as, if my hair do but tickle me, I must scratch.

*Tita.* What, wilt thou hear some music, my  
sweet love?

*Bot.* I have a reasonable good ear in music.  
Let's have the tongs and the bones. 31

*Tita.* Or say, sweet love, what thou desirest  
to eat.

*Bot.* Truly, a peck of provender: I could  
munch your good dry oats. Methinks I have a  
reat desire to a lottle of hay: good hay, sweet  
ay, hath no fellow.

*Tita.* I have a venturous fairy that shall seek  
he squirrel's hoarl, and fetch thee new nuts.

*Bot.* I had rather have a handful or two of  
ried peas. But, I pray you, let none of your  
ple stir me: I have an exposition of sleep  
ome upon me. 42

*Tita.* Sleep thou, and I will wind thee in my  
arms.

Fairies, be gone, and be all ways away.

[*Exeunt fairies.*]

to doth the woodbine the sweet honeysuckle  
ntle entwist; the female ivy so  
arings the barmy fingers of the elm.  
), how I love thee! how I dote on thee!

[*They sleep.*]

*Enter Puck.*

*Ob.* [*Advancing*] Welcome, good Robin.  
See'st thou this sweet sight?

ler dotage now I do begin to pity: 50

r, meeting her of late behind the wood,

seeking sweet favours for this hateful fool,

did upbraid her and fall out with her;

or she his hairy temples then had rounded

With coronet of fresh and fragrant flowers;

nd that same dew, which sometime on the

buds

Was wont to swell like round and orient pearls,

ood now within the pretty flowerets' eyes

ike tears that did their own disgrace bewail.

When I had at my pleasure taunted her 60

And she in mild terms begg'd my patience,

then did ask of her her changeling child;

hich straight she gave me, and her fairy sent

o bear him to my bower in fairy land.

And now I have the boy, I will undo

This hateful imperfection of her eyes:

And, gentle Puck, take this transformed scalp

From off the head of this Athenian swain;

But, he awaking from the other do,

lay all to Athens back again repair 70

And think no more of this night's accidents

But as the fierce vexation of a dream.

But first I will release the fairy queen.

Be as thou wast wont to be;  
See as thou wast wont to see:  
Dian's bud o'er Cupid's flower  
Hath such force and blessed power.

Now, my Titania; wake you, my sweet queen.

*Tita.* My Oberon! what visions have I seen!

Methought I was enamour'd of an ass. 80

*Ob.* There lies your love.

*Tita.* How came these things to pass?

O, how mine eyes do loathe his visage now!

*Ob.* Silence awhile. Robin, take off this  
head.

Titania, music call; and strike more dead

Than common sleep of all these five the sense.

*Tita.* Music, ho! music, such as charmeth  
sleep! [*Music, still.*]

*Puck.* Now, when thou wakest, with thine  
own fool's eyes peep.

*Ob.* Sound, music! Come, my queen, take  
hands with me;

And rock the ground whereon these sleepers be.

Now thou and I are new in amity 92

And will to-morrow midnight solemnly

Dance in Duke Theseus' house triumphantly

And bless it to all fair prosperity:

There shall the pairs of faithful lovers be

Wedded, with Theseus, all in jollity.

*Puck.* Fairy king, attend, and mark:

I do hear the morning lark.

*Ob.* Then, my queen, in silence sad,

Trip we after night's shade: 100

We the globe can compass soon,

Swifter than the wandering moon.

*Tita.* Come, my lord, and in our light

Tell me how it came this night

That I sleeping here was found

With these mortals on the ground.

[*Exeunt.*]

[*Horns winded within.*]

*Enter THESEUS, HIPPOLYTA, EGEUS, and  
train.*

*The.* Go, one of you, find out the forester;

For now our observation is perform'd;

And since we have the vaward of the day,

My love shall hear the music of my hounds. 110

Uncouple in the western valley; let them go:

Dispatch, I say, and find the forester.

[*Exit an Attendant.*]

We will, fair queen, up to the mountain's top

And mark the musical confusion

Of hounds and echo in conjunction.

*Hip.* I was with Hercules and Cadmus once,

When in a wood of Crete they bay'd the bear

With hounds of Sparta: never did I hear

Such gallant chiding; for, besides the groves,

The skies, the fountains, every region near 120

Seem'd all one mutual cry: I never heard

So musical a discord, such sweet thunder.

*The.* My hounds are bred out of the Spartan

kind,

So flew'd, so sanded, and their heads are hung

With ears that sweep away the morning dew;

Crook-knee'd, and dew-lapp'd like Thessalian

bulls;

Slow in pursuit, but match'd in mouth like bells,

Each under each. A cry more tuneable

Was never holla'd to, nor cheer'd with horn,  
In Crete, in Sparta, nor in Thessaly :  
Judge when you hear. But, soft ! what nymphs  
are these ?

*Ege.* My lord, this is my daughter here  
asleep ;

And this, Lysander ; this Demetrius is ;  
This Helena, old Nedar's Helena :  
I wonder of their being here together.

*The.* No doubt they rose up early to observe  
The rite of May, and, hearing our intent,  
Came here in grace of our solemnity.  
But speak, Egeus ; is not this the day  
That Hermia should give answer of her choice ?

*Ege.* It is, my lord.

*The.* Go, bid the huntsmen wake them with  
their horns. [*Horns and shout within.* *Lys.*

*Dem., Hel., and Her., wake and start up.*  
Good morrow, friends. Saint Valentine is past :  
Begin these wood-birds but to couple now !

*Lys.* Pardon, my lord.

*The.* I pray you all, stand up.  
I know you two are rival enemies :

How comes this gentle concord in the world,  
That hatred is so far from jealousy,  
To sleep by hate, and fear no enmity ?

*Lys.* My lord, I shall reply amazedly,  
Half sleep, half waking ; but as yet, I swear,  
I cannot truly say how I came here :

But, as I think,—for truly would I speak,  
And now I do bethink me, so it is,—  
I came with Hermia hither : our intent  
Was to be gone from Athens, where we might,  
Without the peril of the Athenian law.

*Ege.* Enough, enough, my lord ; you have  
enough :

I beg the law, the law, upon his head.  
They would have stolen away ; they would,  
Demetrius, 160

Thereby to have defeated you and me,  
You of your wife and me of my consent,  
Of my consent that she should be your wife.

*Dem.* My lord, fair Helen told me of their  
stealth,

Of this their purpose hither to this wood ;  
And in fury hither follow'd them,  
Fair Helena in fancy following me.

But, my good lord, I wot not by what power,—  
But by some power it is,—my love to Hermia,  
Melted as the snow, seems to me now 17

As the remembrance of an idle gawd  
Which in my childhood I did dote upon ;  
And all the faith, the virtue of my heart,  
The object and the pleasure of mine eye,  
Is only Helena. To her, my lord,  
Was I betroth'd ere I saw Hermia :

But, like in sickness, did I loathe this food ;  
But, as in health, come to my natural taste,  
Now I do wish it, love it, long for it,  
And will for evermore be true to it. 180

*The.* Fair lovers, you are fortunately met :  
Of this discourse we more will hear anon.  
Egeus, I will overbear your will ;  
For in the temple, by and by, with us  
These couples shall eternally be knit ;  
And, for the morning now is something worn,  
Our purposed hunting shall be set aside.  
Away with us to Athens ; three and three,

We'll hold a feast in great solemnity.

Come, Hippolyta. 18

[*Exeunt The., Hip., Ege., and train.*  
*Dem.* These things seem small and un-  
tinguishable,

Like far-off mountains turned into clouds.

*Her.* Methinks I see these things with parted  
eye,

When every thing seems double.

*Hel.* So methinks 19  
And I have found Demetrius like a jewel,  
Mine own, and not mine own.

*Dem.* Are you sure  
That we are awake ? It seems to me  
That yet we sleep, we dream. Do not you think  
The duke was here, and bid us follow him ?

*Her.* Yea ; and my father.

*Hel.* And Hippolyta

*Lys.* And he did bid us follow to the temple.

*Dem.* Why, then, we are awake : let's follow  
him ;

And by the way let us recount our dreams. 20

[*Exeunt.*  
*Bot.* [*A waking*] When my cue comes, call  
me, and I will answer : my next is, 'Most fair  
Pyramus.' Heigh-ho ! Peter Quince ! Flute  
the bellows-mender ! Snout, the tinker ! Star-  
veling ! God's my life, stolen hence, and left to  
asleep ! I have had a most rare vision.

I have had a dream, past the wit of man to say  
what dream it was : man is but an ass, if he  
gabout to expound this dream. Methought  
I was,—and methought I had,—but man is but  
a patch'd fool, if he will offer to say what  
methought I had. The eye of man hath not heard,  
the ear of man hath not seen, man's hand  
is not able to taste, his tongue to conceive, nor  
his heart to report, what my dream was. I will  
get Peter Quince to write a ballad of this dream  
it shall be called Bottom's Dream, because  
hath no bottom ; and I will sing it in the latter  
end of a play, before the duke ; peradventure,  
I make it the more gracious, I shall sing it  
her death. [Exit]

## SCENE II. Athens. QUINCE'S house.

Enter QUINCE, FLUTE, SNOOT, and  
STARVELING.

*Quin.* Have you sent to Bottom's house ?  
he come home yet ?

*Star.* He cannot be heard of. Out of doubt  
he is transported.

*Flu.* If he come not, then the play is marred ;  
it goes not forward, doth it ?

*Quin.* It is not possible : you have not a  
man in all Athens able to discharge Pyramus  
but he.

*Flu.* No, he hath simply the best wit of any  
handicraft man in Athens.

*Quin.* Yea, and the best person too ; and he  
is a very paramour for a sweet voice.

*Flu.* You must say 'paragon' : a paramour  
is, God bless us, a thing of naught.

Enter SNUG.

*Snug.* Masters, the duke is coming from the nple, and there is two or three lords and lies more married: if our sport had gone forward, we had all been made men.

*Flu.* O sweet bully Bottom! Thus hath he stixpence a day during his life; he could not ve scaped sixpence a day: an the duke had t given him sixpence a day for playing Pyramus, I'll be hanged; he would have deserved : sixpence a day in Pyramus, or nothing.

Enter BOTTOM.

*Bot.* Where are these lads! where are these arts?

*Quin.* Bottom! O most courageous day! O ost happy hour!

*Bot.* Masters, I am to discourse wonders: it ask me not what; for if I tell you, I am no ue Athenian. I will tell you every thing, right it fell out.

*Quin.* Let us hear, sweet Bottom.

*Bot.* Not a word of me. All that I will tell u is, that the duke hath dined. Get your sparel together, good strings to your beards, w ribbons to your pumps; meet presently at e palace; every man look o'er his part; for e short and the long is, our play is preferred. i any case, let Thisby have clean linen; and let t him that plays the lion pare his nails, for ey shall hang out for the lion's claws. And, oost dear actors, eat no onions nor garlic, for e are to utter sweet breath; and I do not doubt t to hear them say, it is a sweet comely. No ore words: away! go, away! *[Exeunt.]*

# ACT V.

SCENE I. *Athens. The palace of THESEUS.*

Enter THESEUS, HIPPOLYTA, PHILOSTRATE, Lords, and Attendants.

*Hip.* 'Tis strange, my Theseus, that these lovers speak of.

*The.* More strange than true: I never may believe

these antique fables, nor these fairy toys. overs and madmen have such seething brains, uch shaping fantasies, that apprehend ore than cool reason ever comprehends.

he lunatic, the lover and the poet re of imagination all compact:

ne sees more devils than vast hell can hold, hat is, the madman: the lover, all as frantic, es Helen's beauty in a brow of Egypt:

he poet's eye, in a fine frenzy rolling, ob glance from heaven to earth, from earth to heaven;

nd as imagination bodies forth he forms of things unknown, the poet's pen urns them to shapes and gives to airy nothing

uch local habitation and a name. uch tricks hath strong imagination,

hat, if it would but apprehend some joy, t comprehends some bringer of that joy;

r in the night, imagining some fear, ow easy is a bush supposed a bear!

*Hip.* But all the story of the night told over, And all their minds transfigured so together, More witnesseth than fancy's images And grows to something of great constancy; But, howsoever, strange and admirable.

*The.* Here come the lovers, full of joy and mirth.

Enter LYSANDER, DEMETRIUS, HERMIA, and HELENA.

Joy, gentle friends! joy and fresh days of love Accompany your hearts!

*Lys.* More than to us 30 Wait in your royal walks, your board, your bed!

*The.* Come now; what masques, what dances shall we have,

To wear away this long age of three hours Between our after-supper and bed-time?

Where is our usual manager of mirth? What revels are in hand? Is there no play,

To ease the anguish of a torturing hour? Call Philostrate.

*Phil.* Here, mighty Theseus.

*The.* Say, what abridgement have you for this evening?

What masque? what music? How shall we beguile 40

The lazy time, if not with some delight?

*Phil.* There is a brief how many sports are ripe:

Make choice of which your highness will see first. *[Giving a paper.]*

*The.* *[Reads.]* 'The battle with the Centaurs, to be sung

By an Athenian eunuch to the harp.' We'll none of that: that have I told my love,

In glory of my kinsman Hercules. *[Reads.]* 'The riot of the tipsy Bacchanals,

Tearing the Thracian singer in their rage' That is an old device; and it was play'd 50

When I from Thebes came last a conqueror. *[Reads.]* 'The thrice three Muses mourning for

the death Of Learning, late decessed in beggary.'

That is some satire, keen and critical, Not sorting with a nuptial ceremony.

*[Reads.]* 'A tedious brief scene of young Pyramus

And his love Thisbe; very tragical mirth.' Merry and tragical! tedious and brief!

That is, not ice and wondrous strange snow. How shall we find the concord of this discord?

*Phil.* A play there is, my lord, some ten words long, 61

Which is as brief as I have known a play; But by ten words, my lord, it is too long.

Which makes it tedious; for in all the play There is not one word apt, one player fitted:

And tragical, my noble lord, it is; For Pyramus therein doth kill himself.

Which, when I saw rehearsed, I must confess. Made mine eyes water; but more merry tears

The passion of loud laughter never shed. 70

*The.* What are they that do play it?

*Phil.* Hard-handed men that work in Athens here, Which never labour'd in their minds till now

And now have toil'd their unbreathed memories  
With this same play, against your nuptial.

*The.* And we will hear it.

*Phil.* No, my noble lord;  
It is not for you: I have heard it over,  
And it is nothing, nothing in the world;  
Unless you can find sport in their intents,  
Extremely stretch'd and conn'd with cruel pain,  
To do you service.

*The.* I will hear that play; 81  
For never anything can be amiss,  
When simpleness and duty tender it.  
Go, bring them in: and take your places, ladies.

[*Exit Philostrate.*]

*Hip.* I love not to see wretchedness o'er-  
charged  
And duty in his service perishing.

*The.* Why, gentle sweet, you shall see no  
such thing.

*Hip.* He says they can do nothing in this  
kind.

*The.* The kinder we, to give them thanks for  
nothing. 89

Our sport shall be to take what they mistake:  
And what poor duty cannot do, noble respect  
Takes it in might, not merit.  
Where I have come, great clerks have purposed  
To greet me with premeditated welcomes;  
Where I have seen them shiver and look pale,  
Make periods in the midst of sentences,  
Throttle their practised accent in their fears  
And in conclusion dumbly have broke off,  
Not paying me a welcome. Trust me, sweet,  
Out of this silence yet I pick'd a welcome; 100  
And in the modesty of fearful duty  
I read as much as from the rattling tongue  
Of saucy and audacious eloquence.  
Love, therefore, and tongue-tied simplicity  
In least speak most, to my capacity.

*Re-enter PHILOSTRATE.*

*Phil.* So please your grace, the Prologue is  
address'd.

*The.* Let him approach.

[*Flourish of trumpets.*]

*Enter QUINCE for the Prologue.*

*Pro.* If we offend, it is with our good will.  
That you should think, we come not to offend,  
But with good will. To show our simple skill,  
That is the true beginning of our end. 111  
Consider then we come but in despite.

We do not come as minding to content you,  
Our true intent is. All for your delight.

We are not here. That you should here re-  
pent you,

The actors are at hand and by their show  
You shall know all that you are like to know.

*The.* This fellow doth not stand upon points.

*Lys.* He hath rid his prologue like a rough  
colt; he knows not the stop. A good moral,  
my lord: it is not enough to speak, but to speak  
true.

*Hip.* Indeed he hath played on his prologue  
like a child on a recorder; a sound, but not in  
government.

*The.* His speech was like a tangled chain,  
nothing impaired, but all disordered. Who  
next?

*Enter PYRAMUS and THISBE, WALL,  
MOONSHINE, and LION.*

*Pro.* Gentles, perchance you wonder at it  
show;  
But wonder on, till truth make all thin  
plain.

This man is Pyramus, if you would know; 1  
This beauteous lady Thisby is certain.

This man, with lime and rough-cast, do  
present

Wall, that vile Wall which did these love  
sunder;

And through Wall's chink, poor souls, they  
content

To whisper. At the which let no man wone  
This man, with lanthorn, dog, and bush  
thorn,

Presenteth Moonshine; for, if you will know  
By moonshine did these lovers think no scorn

To meet at Ninus tomb, there, there to wone  
This grisly beast, which Lion hight by name,

The trusty Thisby, coming first by night,  
Did scare away, or rather did affright;

And, as she fled, her mantle she did fall,  
Which Lion vile with bloody mouth did stain

Anon comes Pyramus, sweet youth and tall,  
And finds his trusty Thisby's mantle slain

Whereat, with blade, with bloody blaimed  
blade,

He bravely broach'd his boiling bloody bras  
And Thisby, tarrying in mulberry shade, 1

His dagger drew, and died. For all the ne  
Let Lion, Moonshine, Wall, and lovers twain  
At large discourse, while here they do remain

[*Exeunt Prologue, Pyramus, Thisbe, Lion,  
and Moonshine.*]

*The.* I wonder if the lion be to speak.

*Dem.* No wonder, my lord: one lion must  
when many asses do.

*Wall.* In this same interlude it doth befall  
That I, one Shout by name, present a wall:

And such a wall, as I would have you think,  
That had in it a crannied hole or chink,

Through which the lovers, Pyramus and Thisbe,  
Did whisper often very secretly. 1

This loan, this rough-cast and this stone doth  
show

That I am that same wall; the truth is so:  
And this the cranny is, right and sinister,

Through which the fearful lovers are to whisper.  
*The.* Would you desire lime and hair to  
speak better?

*Dem.* It is the wittiest partition that ever  
heard discourse, my lord.

*Re-enter PYRAMUS.*

*The.* Pyramus draws near the wall: silence!  
*Pyrr.* O grim-look'd night! O night with hue  
so black!

O night, which ever art when day is not!  
O night, O night! alack, alack, alack,

I fear my Thisby's promise is forgot!  
And thou, O wall, O sweet, O lovely wall,



That stand'st between her father's ground and mine!

Thou wall, O wall, O sweet and lovely wall,  
Show mo thy chink, to blink through with  
mine cyne! [*Wall holds up his fingers.*]  
Thanks, courteous wall: Jove shield thee well  
for this!

But what see I? No Thisby do I see. 180  
O cursed wall, through whom I see no bliss!  
(Cursed be thy stones for thus deceiving me!  
*The.* The wall, methinks, being sensible,  
should curse again.

*Pyr.* No, in truth, sir, he should not. 'De-  
ceiving me' is Thisby's cue: she is to enter now,  
and I am to spy her through the wall. You  
shall see, it will fall pat as I told you. Yonder  
she comes.

*Re-enter THISBE.*

*This.* O wall, full often hast thou heard my  
moans, 190

For parting my fair Pyramus and me!  
(Thy cherry lips have often kiss'd thy stones,  
Thy stones with lime and hair knit up in thee.

*Pyr.* I see a voice: now will I to the chink,  
To spy an I can hear my Thisby's face.  
hush!

*This.* My love thou art, my love I think.

*Pyr.* Think what thou wilt, I am thy lover's  
grace;

and, like Limander, am I trusty still.

*This.* And I like Helen, till the Fates me  
kill. 199

*Pyr.* Not Shafalus to Procrus was so true.

*This.* As Shafalus to Procrus, I to you.

*Pyr.* O, kiss me through the hole of this vile  
wall!

*This.* I kiss the wall's hole, not your lips at  
all.

*Pyr.* Wilt thou at Ninny's tomb meet me  
straightway?

*This.* 'Tide life, 'tide death, I come without  
delay. [*Exeunt Pyramus and Thisbe.*]

*Wall.* Thus have I, Wall, my part discharged  
so;

and, being done, thus Wall away doth go. [*Exit.*]

*The.* Now is the mural down between the  
wo neighbours.

*Dem.* No remedy, my lord, when walls are  
o'wful to hear without warning. 221

*Hip.* This is the silliest stuff that ever I  
heard.

*The.* The best in this kind are but shadows;  
and the worst are no worse, if imagination  
amend them.

*Hip.* It must be your imagination then, and  
not theirs.

*The.* If we imagine no worse of them than  
they of themselves, they may pass for excellent  
men. Here come two noble beasts in, a man  
and a lion. 222

*Re-enter LION and MOONSHINE.*

*Lion.* You, ladies, you, whose gentle hearts do  
fear

The smallest monstrous mouse that creeps on  
floor,

May now perchance both quake and tremble  
here,

When lion rough in wildest rage doth roar.  
Then know that I, one Snug the joiner, am  
A lion-fell, nor else no lion's dam;  
For, if I should as lion come in strife  
Into this place, 'twere pity on my life.

*The.* A very gentle beast, and of a good con-  
science. 231

*Dem.* The very best at a beast, my lord, that  
e'er I saw.

*Lys.* This lion is a very fox for his valour.

*The.* True; and a goose for his discretion.

*Dem.* Not so, my lord; for his valour cannot  
carry his discretion; and the fox carries the  
goose.

*The.* His discretion, I am sure, cannot carry  
his valour; for the goose carries not the fox. It  
is well: leave it to his discretion, and let us  
listen to the moon.

*Moon.* This lanthorn doth the horned moon  
present;—

*Dem.* He should have worn the horns on his  
head.

*The.* He is no crescent, and his horns are in-  
visible within the circumference.

*Moon.* This lanthorn doth the horned moon  
present;

Myself the man i' the moon do seem to be.

*The.* This is the greatest error of all the rest:  
the man should be put into the lanthorn. How  
is it else the man i' the moon?

*Dem.* He dares not come there for the  
candle; for, you see, it is already in snuff.

*Hip.* I am awery of this moon: would he  
would change!

*The.* It appears, by his small light of discre-  
tion, that he is in the wane; but yet, in courtesy,  
in all reason, we must stay the time.

*Lys.* Proceed, Moon. 260

*Moon.* All that I have to say, is, to tell you  
that the lanthorn is the moon; I, the man in the  
moon; this thorn-bush, my thorn-bush; and  
this dog, my dog.

*Dem.* Why, all these should be in the lan-  
thorn; for all these are in the moon. But,  
silence! here comes Thisbe.

*Re-enter THISBE.*

*This.* This is old Ninny's tomb. Where is  
my love!

*Lion.* [*Roaring*] Oh— [*Thisbe runs off.*]

*Dem.* Well roared, Lion. 270

*The.* Well run, Thisbe.

*Hip.* Well shone, Moon. Truly, the moon  
shines with a good grace.

[*The Lion shakes Thisbe's mantle, and exit.*]

*The.* Well moused, Lion.

*Lys.* And so the lion vanished.

*Dem.* And then came Pyramus.

*Re-enter PYRAMUS.*

*Pyr.* Sweet Moon, I thank thee for thy sunny  
beams;

I thank thee, Moon, for shining now so bright;  
For, by thy gracious, golden, glittering gleams,

I trust to take of truest Thisby sight. 280

But stay, O spite!  
But mark, poor knight,  
What dreadful dole is here!  
Eyes, do you see?

How can it be?  
O dainty duck! O dear!  
Thy mantle good,  
What, stain'd with blood!

Approach, ye Furies fell!  
O Fates, come, come, 290  
Cut thread and thrum;  
Quail, crush, conclude, and quell!

*The.* This passion, and the death of a dear friend, would go near to make a man look sad.

*Hip.* Beshrew my heart, but I pity the man.  
*Pyr.* O wherefore, Nature, didst thou lions frame?

Since lion vile hath here deflower'd my dear:  
Which is—no, no—which was the fairest dame  
That liv'd, that lov'd, that lik'd, that look'd  
with cheer.

Come, tears, confound; 300

Out, sword, and wound

The tap of Pyramus;

Ay, that left tap,

Where heart doth hop: [*Stabs himself.*]

Thus die I, thus, thus, thus.

Now am I dead,

Now am I fled;

My soul is in the sky:

Tongue, lose thy light; 309

Moon, take thy flight: [*Exit Moonshine.*]

Now die, die, die, die, die. [*Dies.*]

*Dem.* No die, but an ace, for him; for he is but one.

*Lys.* Less than an ace, man; for he is dead; he is nothing.

*The.* With the help of a surgeon he might yet recover, and prove an ass.

*Hip.* How chance Moonshine is gone before Thisbe comes back and finds her lover?

*The.* She will find him by starlight. Here she comes; and her passion ends the play. 321

#### Re-enter THISBE.

*Hip.* Methinks she should not use a long one for such a Pyramus: I hope she will be brief.

*Dem.* A mote will turn the balance, which Pyramus, which Thisbe, is the better; he for a man, God warrant us; she for a woman, God bless us.

*Lys.* She hath spied him already with those sweet eyes.

*Dem.* And thus she means, videlicet:—

*This.* Asleep, my love? 331

What, dead, my dove?

O Pyramus, arise!

Speak, speak. Quite dumb?

Dead, dead? A tomb!

Must cover thy sweet eyes.

These lily lips,

This cherry nose,

These yellow cowslip cheeks,

Are gone, are gone: 340

Lovers, make moan:

His eyes were green as looks.

O Sisters Three,  
Come, come to me,  
With hands as pale as milk;

Lay them in gore,  
Since you have shore

With shears his thread of silk.

Tongue, not a word!

Come, trusty sword;

Come, blade, my breast imbrue: 350

And, farewell, friends;

Thus Thisbe ends: [*Stabs herself.*]

Adieu, adieu, adieu. [*Dies.*]

*The.* Moonshine and Lion are left to bury the dead.

*Dem.* Ay, and Wall too.

*Bot.* [*Starting up*] No, I assure you: the wall is down that parted their fathers. Will it please you to see the epilogue, or to hear a Bergomask dance between two of our company?

*The.* No epilogue, I pray you; for your play needs no excuse. Never excuse; for when the players are all dead, there need none to be blamed. Marry, if he that writ it had played Pyramus and hanged himself in Thisbe's garter, it would have been a fine tragedy: and so it is, truly; and very notably discharged. But, come, your Bergomask: let your epilogue alone.

[*A dance.*]  
The iron tongue of midnight hath told twelve  
Lovers, to bed; 'tis almost fairy time. 37

I fear we shall out-sleep the coming morn  
As much as we this night have overwatch'd.

This palpable-gross play hath well beguiled  
The heavy gait of night. Sweet friends, to bed.

A fortnight hold we this solemnity,  
In nightly revels and new jollity. [*Exeunt.*]

#### Enter PUCK.

*Puck.* Now the hungry lion roars,

And the wolf howls the moon;

Whilst the heavy ploughman snores, 38

All with weary task fordone.

Now the wasted brands do glow,

Whilst the screech-owl, screeching loud,

Puts the wretch that lies in woe

In remembrance of a shroud.

Now it is the time of night

That the graves all gaping wide,

Every one lets forth his sprite,

In the church-way paths to glide: 39

And we fairies, that do run

By the triple Hecate's team,

From the presence of the sun,

Following darkness like a dream,

Now are frolic: not a mouse

Shall disturb this hallow'd house:

I am sent with broom before,

To sweep the dust behind the door.

*Enter OBERON and TITANIA with their train.*

*Obe.* Through the house give glimmering  
light,

By the dead and drowsy fire:

Every elf and fairy sprite 40

Hop as light as bird from brier;

And this ditty, after me,  
Sing, and dance it trippingly.  
*Tita.* First, rehearse your song by rote,  
To each word a warbling note :  
Hand in hand, with fairy grace,  
Will we sing, and bless this place.

[*Song and dance.*]

*Ob.* Now, until the break of day,  
Through this house each fairy stray. 410  
To the best bride-bed will we,  
Which by us shall blessed be ;  
And the issue there create  
Ever shall be fortunate.  
So shall all the couples three  
Ever true in loving be ;  
And the blots of Nature's hand  
Shall not in their issue stand ;  
Never mole, hare lip, nor scar,  
Nor mark prodigious, such as are 420  
Despised in nativity,  
Shall upon their children be.  
With this field-dew consecrate,  
Every fairy take his gait ;

And each several chamber bless,  
Through this palace, with sweet peace ;  
And the owner of it blest  
Ever shall in safety rest.  
Trip away ; make no stay ;  
Meet me all by break of day.

[*Exeunt Oberon, Titania, and train.*]

*Puck.* If we shadows have offended, 430  
Think but this, and all is mended,  
That you have but slumber'd here  
While these visions did appear.  
And this weak and idle theme,  
No more yielding but a dream,  
Gentles, do not reprehend :  
If you pardon, we will mend :  
And, as I am an honest Puck,  
If we have unearned luck  
Now to 'scape the serpent's tongue, 440  
We will make amends ere long ;  
Else the Puck a liar call :  
So, good night unto you all.  
Give me your hands, if we be friends,  
And Robin shall restore amends. [*Exit.*]

# THE MERCHANT OF VENICE

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

**THE DUKE OF VENICE.**  
**THE PRINCE OF MOROCCO,** } suitors to Portia.  
**THE PRINCE OF ARRAGON,** }  
**ANTONIO,** a merchant of Venice.  
**BASSANIO,** his friend, suitor likewise to Portia.  
**SALANIO,** }  
**SALARINO,** } friends to Antonio and Bassanio.  
**GRATIANO,** }  
**SALERIO,** }  
**LORENZO,** in love with Jessica.  
**SHYLOCK,** a rich Jew.  
**TUBAL,** a Jew, his friend.  
**LAUNCELOT GOBBO,** the clown, servant to Shylock.

**OLD GOBBO,** father to Launcelot.  
**LEONARDO,** servant to Bassanio.  
**BALTHASAR,** } servants to Portia.  
**STEPHANO,** }

**PORTIA,** a rich heiress.  
**NERISSA,** her waiting-maid.  
**JESSICA,** daughter to Shylock.  
 Magnificoes of Venice, Officers of the Court  
 Justice, Gaoler, Servants to Portia, and  
 other Attendants.

**SCENE:** *Partly at Venice, and partly at Belmont, the seat of Portia, on the Continent.*

## ACT I.

### SCENE I. *Venice. A street.*

*Enter* ANTONIO, SALARINO, and SALANIO.

*Ant.* In sooth, I know not why I am so sad :  
 It wearies me ; you say it wearies you ;  
 But how I caught it, found it, or came by it,  
 What stuff 'tis made of, whereof it is born,  
 I am to learn ;

And such a want-wit sadness makes of me,  
 That I have much ado to know myself.

*Salar.* Your mind is tossing on the ocean ;  
 There, where your argosies with portly sail,  
 Like signiors and rich burghers on the flood, <sup>10</sup>  
 Or, as it were, the pageants of the sea,  
 Do overpeer the petty traffickers,  
 That curtsy to them, do them reverence,  
 As they fly by them with their woven wings.

*Salan.* Believe me, sir, had I such venture  
 forth,

The better part of my affections would  
 Be with my hopes abroad. I should be still  
 Plucking the grass, to know where sits the wind,  
 Peering in maps for ports and piers and roads ;  
 And every object that might make me fear <sup>20</sup>  
 Misfortune to my ventures, out of doubt  
 Would make me sad.

*Salar.* My wind cooling my broth  
 Would blow me to an ague, when I thought  
 What harm a wind too great at sea might do.  
 I should not see the sandy hour-glass run,  
 But I should think of shallows and of flats,  
 And see my wealthy Andrew dock'd in sand,  
 Vailing her high-top lower than her ribs  
 To kiss her burial. Should I go to church  
 And see the holy edifice of stone, <sup>30</sup>  
 And not bethink me straight of dangerous rocks,

Which touching but my gentle vessel's side,  
 Would scatter all her spices on the stream,  
 Enrobe the roaring waters with my silks,  
 And, in a word, but even now worth this,  
 And now worth nothing? Shall I have it  
 thought

To think on this, and shall I lack the thought  
 That such a thing beclanced would make m  
 sad ?

But tell not me ; I know, Antonio  
 Is sad to think upon his merchandise.

*Ant.* Believe me, no : I thank my fortune  
 for it,

My ventures are not in one bottom trusted,  
 Nor to one place ; nor is my whole estate  
 Upon the fortune of this present year :  
 Therefore my merchandise makes me not sad.

*Salar.* Why, then you are in love.

*Ant.* Fie, fie !  
*Salar.* Not in love neither ? Then let us sa  
 you are sad,

Because you are not merry : and 'twere as eas  
 For you to laugh and leap and say you an  
 merry,

Because you are not sad. Now, by two-headed  
 Janus,

Nature hath framed strange fellows in her time  
 Some that will evermore peep through their eye  
 And laugh like parrots at a bag-piper,  
 And other of such vinegar aspect  
 That they'll not show their teeth in way of  
 smile,  
 Though Nestor swear the jest be laughable.

*Enter* BASSANIO, LORENZO, and GRATIANO.

*Salan.* Here comes Bassanio, your most  
 noble kinsman,

(Gratiano and Lorenzo. Fare ye well:

We leave you now with better company.

*Salar.* I would have stay'd till I had made you merry. 60

If worthier friends had not prevented me.

*Ant.* Your worth is very dear in my regard.

I take it, your own business calls on you

And you embrace the occasion to depart.

*Salar.* Good morrow, my good lords.

*Bass.* Good signiors both, when shall we laugh? say, when?

You grow exceeding strange: must it be so?

*Salar.* We'll make our leisures to attend on yours. [*Exeunt Salarino and Salanio.*]

*Lor.* My Lord Bassanio, since you have found Antonio,

We two will leave you: but at dinner-time, 70

I pray you, have in mind where we must meet.

*Bass.* I will not fail you.

*Gra.* You look not well, Signior Antonio;

You have too much respect upon the world:

They lose it that do buy it with much care:

Believe me, you are marvellously changed.

*Ant.* I hold the world but as the world,

Gratiano;

A stage where every man must play a part,

And mine a sad one.

*Gra.* Let me play the fool:

With mirth and laughter let old wrinkles come,

And let my liver rather heat with wine 81

Than my heart cool with mortifying groans.

Why should a man, whose blood is warm

within,

Sit like his grandsire cut in alabaster?

Sleep when he wakes and creep into the jaundice

By being peevish? I tell thee what, Antonio—

I love thee, and it is my love that speaks—

There are a sort of men whose visages

Do cream and mantle like a standing pond,

And do a wilful stillness entertain, 90

With purpose to be dress'd in an opinion

Of wisdom, gravity, profound conceit,

As who should say, 'I am Sir Oracle,

And when I open my lips let no dog bark!'

O my Antonio, I do know of these

That therefore only are reputed wise

For saying nothing, when, I am very sure,

If they should speak, would almost damn those

ears

Which, hearing them, would call their brothers

fools. 100

I'll tell thee more of this another time:

But fish not, with this melancholy bait,

For this fool gudgeon, this opinion.

Come, good Lorenzo. Fare ye well awhile:

I'll end my exhortation after dinner.

*Lor.* Well, we will leave you then till dinner-

time:

I must be one of these same dumb wise men,

For Gratiano never lets me speak.

*Gra.* Well, keep me company but two years

more,

Thou shalt not know the sound of thine own

tongue.

*Ant.* Farewell: I'll grow a talker for this

year. 110

*Gra.* Thanks, I faith, for silence is only

commendable

In a neat's tongue dried and a mald not vendible.

[*Exeunt Gratiano and Lorenzo.*]

*Ant.* Is that any thing now?

*Bass.* Gratiano speaks an infinite deal of nothing, more than any man in all Venice. His reasons are as two grains of wheat hid in two bushels of chaff: you shall seek all day ere you find them, and when you have them, they are not worth the search.

*Ant.* Well, tell me now what lady is the same

To whom you swore a secret pilgrimage, 120

That you to-day promised to tell me of?

*Bass.* 'Tis not unknown to you, Antonio,

How much I have disabled mine estate,

By something showing a more swelling port

Than my faint means would grant continuance:

Nor do I now make moan to be abridged

From such a noble rate; but my chief care

Is to come fairly off from the great debts

Wherein my time something too prodigal

Hath left me gaged. To you, Antonio, 130

I owe the most, in money and in love,

And from your love I have a warranty

To unburden all my plots and purposes

How to get clear of all the debts I owe.

*Ant.* I pray you, good Bassanio, let me

know it;

And if it stand, as you yourself still do,

Within the eye of honour, be assured,

My purse, my person, my extremest means,

Lie all unlock'd to your occasions.

*Bass.* In my school-days, when I had lost

one shaft, 140

I shot his fellow of the self-same flight

The self-same way with more advised watch,

To find the other forth, and by adventuring both

I oft found both: I urge this childhood proof,

Because what follows is pure innocence.

I owe you much, and, like a wilful youth,

That which I owe is lost; but if you please

To shoot another arrow that self way

Which you did shoot the first, I do not doubt,

As I will watch the aim, or to find both, 150

Or bring your latter hazard back again

And thankfully rest debtor for the first.

*Ant.* You know me well, and herein spend

but time

To wind about my love with circumstance;

And out of doubt you do me now more wrong

In making question of my uttermost

Than if you had made waste of all I have:

Then do but say to me what I should do

That in your knowledge may by me be done,

And I am prest unto it: therefore, speak. 160

*Bass.* In Belmont is a lady richly left;

And she is fair and, fairer than that word,

Of wondrous virtues: sometimes from her eyes

I did receive fair speechless messages:

Her name is Portia, nothing undervalued

To Cato's daughter, Brutus' Portia;

Nor is the wide world ignorant of her worth,

For the four winds blow in from every coast

Renowned suitors, and her sunny locks

Hang on her temples like a golden fleece; 170

Which makes her seat of Belmont Colchus'

strand,

And many Jasons come in quest of her.

O my Antonio, had I but the means

To hold a rival place with one of them,  
I have a mind presages me such thrift,  
That I should questionless be fortunate!

*Ant.* Thou know'st that all my fortunes are  
at sea;

Neither have I money nor commodity  
To raise a present sum: therefore go forth;  
Try what my credit can in Venice do: 180  
That shall be rack'd, even to the uttermost,  
To furnish thee to Belmont, to fair Portia.  
Go, presently inquire, and so will I,  
Where money is, and I no question make  
To have it of my trust or for my sake. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. Belmont. A room in PORTIA'S  
house.

*Enter PORTIA and NERISSA.*

*Por.* By my troth, Nerissa, my little body is  
awearry of this great world.

*Ner.* You would be, sweet madam, if your  
miseries were in the same abundance as your  
good fortunes are: and yet, for aught I see,  
they are as sick that surfeit with too much as  
they that starve with nothing. It is no mean  
happiness therefore, to be seated in the mean:  
superfluity comes sooner by white hairs, but  
competency lives longer. 10

*Por.* Good sentences and well pronounced.

*Ner.* They would be better, if well followed.

*Por.* If I do were as easy as to know what  
were good to do, chapels had been churches and  
poor men's cottages princes' palaces. It is a good  
divine that follows his own instructions: I can  
easier teach twenty what were good to be done,  
than be one of the twenty to follow mine own  
teaching. The brain may devise laws for the  
blood, but a hot temper leaps o'er a cold decree:  
such a hare is madness the youth, to skip o'er  
the meshes of good counsel the cripple. But  
this reasoning is not in the fashion to choose  
me a husband. O me, the word 'choose!' I  
may neither choose whom I would nor refuse  
whom I dislike; so is the will of a living  
daughter curbed by the will of a dead father. Is  
it not hard, Nerissa, that I cannot choose one  
nor refuse none? 20

*Ner.* Your father was ever virtuous; and  
holy men at their death have good inspirations:  
therefore the lottery, that he hath devised in  
these three chests of gold, silver and lead,  
whereof who chooses his meaning chooses you,  
will, no doubt, never be chosen by any rightly  
but one who shall rightly love. But what  
warmth is there in your affection towards any  
of these princely suitors that are already come?

*Por.* I pray thee, over-name them; and as  
thou namest them, I will describe them; and,  
according to my description, level at my affec-  
tion.

*Ner.* First, there is the Neapolitan prince.

*Por.* Ay, that's a colt indeed, for he doth  
nothing but talk of his horse; and he makes it a  
great appropriation to his own good parts, that  
he can shoe him himself. I am much afraid  
my lady his mother played false with a smith.

*Ner.* Then there is the County Palatine. 40

*Por.* He doth nothing but frown, as who  
should say 'If you will not have me, choose';  
he hears merry tales and smiles not: I fear he  
will prove the weeping philosopher when he  
grows old, being so full of unmannerly sadness  
in his youth. I had rather be married to  
death's-head with a bone in his mouth than to  
either of these. God defend me from these two!

*Ner.* How say you by the French lord, Mon  
sieur Le Bon?

*Por.* God made him, and therefore let him  
pass for a man. In truth, I know it is a sin to  
be a mocker: but, he! why, he hath a horse  
better than the Neapolitan's, a better bad habit  
of frowning than the Count Palatine; he is ever  
man in no man; if a throstle sing, he fall  
straight as a capering; he will fence with his own  
shadow; if I should marry him, I should marry  
twenty husbands. If he would despise me, I  
would forgive him, for if he love me to madness  
I shall never requite him.

*Ner.* What say you, then, to Falconbridge  
the young baron of England?

*Por.* You know I say nothing to him, for he  
understands not me, nor I him: he hath neither  
Latin, French, nor Italian, and you will come  
into the court and swear that I have a poor  
pennyworth in the English. He is a proper  
man's picture, but, alas, who can converse  
with a dumb-show? How oddly he is suited!  
I think he bought his doublet in Italy, he  
round hose in France, his bonnet in Germany,  
and his behaviour every where.

*Ner.* What think you of the Scottish lord,  
his neighbour?

*Por.* That he hath a neighbourly charity in  
him, for he borrowed a box of the ear of the  
Englishman and swore he would pay him again  
when he was able: I think the Frenchman be-  
came his surety and sealed under for another.

*Ner.* How like you the young German, the  
Duke of Saxony's nephew?

*Por.* Very vilely in the morning, when he is  
sober, and most vilely in the afternoon, when he  
is drunk: when he is best, he is a little worse  
than a man, and when he is worst, he is little  
better than a beast: an the worst full that ever  
fell, I hope I shall make shift to go without  
him.

*Ner.* If he should offer to choose, and choose  
the right casket, you should refuse to perform  
your father's will, if you should refuse to accept  
him.

*Por.* Therefore, for fear of the worst, I pray  
thee, set a deep glass of renish wine on the  
contrary casket, for if the devil be within and  
that temptation without, I know he will choose  
it. I will do any thing, Nerissa, ere I'll be  
married to a sponge.

*Ner.* You need not fear, lady, the having any  
of these lords: they have acquainted me with  
their determinations; which is, indeed, to return  
to their home and to trouble you with no more  
suit, unless you may be won by some other sort  
than your father's imposition depending on the  
caskets.

*Por.* If I live to be as old as Sibylla, I will  
die as chaste as Diana, unless I be obtained by

e manner of my father's will. I am glad this  
reel of woovers are so reasonable, for there is  
it one among them but I dote on his very  
sence, and I pray God grant them a fair de-  
ature.

Ner. Do you not remember, lady, in your  
ther's time, a Venetian, a scholar and a soldier,  
at came hither in company of the Marquis of  
ontferrat?

Por. Yes, yes, it was Bassanio; as I think,  
was so called.

Ner. True, madam: he, of all the men that  
er my foolish eyes looked upon, was the best  
serving a fair lady.

Por. I remember him well, and I remember  
in worthy of his praise.

*Enter a Serving-man.*

ow now! what news?

Serv. The four strangers seek for you,  
adam, to take their leave: and there is a  
erunner come from a fifth, the Prince of  
orocco, who brings word the prince his master  
ill be here to-night.

Por. If I could bid the fifth welcome with so  
od a heart as I can bid the other four farewell,  
should be glad of his approach: if he have the  
ndition of a saint and the complexion of a  
evil, I had rather he should shrive me than  
ive me.

ome, Nerissa. Sirrah, go before.

While we shut the gates upon one wooer, an-  
other knocks at the door.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. Venice. A public place.

*Enter BASSANIO and SHYLOCK.*

Shy. Three thousand ducats; well.

Bass. Ay, sir, for three months.

Shy. For three months; well.

Bass. For the which, as I told you, Antonio  
will be bound.

Shy. Antonio shall become bound; well.

Bass. May you stead me? will you pleasure  
me? shall I know your answer?

Shy. Three thousand ducats for three months  
of Antonio bound.

Bass. Your answer to that.

Shy. Antonio is a good man.

Bass. Have you heard any imputation to the  
contrary?

Shy. (Oh, no, no, no, no: my meaning in  
saying he is a good man is to have you under-  
stand me that he is sufficient. Yet his means  
are in supposition: he hath an argosy bound to  
Cyprus, another to the Indies; I understand,  
besides, upon the Rialto, he hath a third at  
Mexico, a fourth for England, and other ven-  
tures he hath squandered abroad. But ships are  
not boards, sailors nor men: there be land-rats  
and water-rats, water-thieves and land-thieves,  
mean pirates, and then there is the peril of  
storms, winds and rocks. The man is, notwith-  
standing, sufficient. Three thousand ducats; I  
think I may take his bond.

Bass. Be assured you may.

Shy. I will be assured I may; and, that I

may be assured, I will bethink me. May I speak  
with Antonio?

Bass. If it please you to dine with us.

Shy. Yes, to smell pork; to eat of the habi-  
tation which your prophet the Nazarite conjured  
the devil into. I will buy with you, sell with  
you, talk with you, walk with you, and so follow-  
ing, but I will not eat with you, drink with you,  
nor pray with you. What news on the Rialto?  
Who is he comes here?

*Enter ANTONIO.*

Bass. This is Signior Antonio.

Shy. [*Aside*] How like a fawning publican  
he looks!

I hate him for he is a Christian,  
But more for that in low simplicity  
He lends out money gratis and brings down  
The rate of usance here with us in Venice.  
If I can catch him once upon the hip,  
I will feed fat the ancient grudge I bear him.  
He hates our sacred nation, and he rails,  
Even there where merchants most do congre-  
gate,

On me, my bargains and my well-won thrift,  
Which he calls interest. Cursed be my tribe,  
If I forgive him!

Bass. Shylock, do you hear?

Shy. I am debating of my present store,  
And, by the near guess of my memory,  
I cannot instantly raise up the gross  
Of full three thousand ducats. What of that?  
Tubal, a wealthy Hebrew of my tribe,  
Will furnish me. But soft! how many months  
Do you desire? [*To Ant.*] Best you fair, good  
signior;

Your worship was the last man in our mouths.

Ant. Shylock, although I neither lend nor  
borrow

By taking nor by giving of excess,  
Yet, to supply the ripe wants of my friend,  
I'll break a custom. Is he yet possess'd  
How much ye would?

Shy. Ay, ay, three thousand ducats.

Ant. And for three months.

Shy. I had forgot; three months; you told  
me so.

Well then, your bond; and let me see; but  
hear you;

Methought you said you neither lend nor borrow  
Upon advantage.

Ant. I do never use it.

Shy. When Jacob grazed his uncle Laban's  
sheep—

This Jacob from our holy Abram was,  
As his wise mother wrought in his behalf,  
The third possessor; ay, he was the third—

Ant. And what of him? did he take interest?

Shy. No, not take interest, not, as you would  
say,

Directly interest: mark what Jacob did.  
When Laban and himself were compromised

That all the earlings which were streak'd and  
pied

Should fall as Jacob's hire, the ewes, being rank,  
In the end of autumn turned to the rams,

And, when the work of generation was  
Between these woolly breeders in the act,

The skilful shepherd peel'd me certain wands  
And, in the doing of the deed of kind,  
He stuck them up before the fulsome ewes,  
Who then conceiving did in eaning time  
Fall parti-colour'd lambs, and those were Jacob's.  
This was a way to thrive, and he was blest : 90  
And thrift is blessing, if men steal it not.

*Ant.* This was a venture, sir, that Jacob served for ;

A thing not in his power to bring to pass,  
But away'd and fashion'd by the hand of heaven.  
Was this inserted to make interest good ?  
Or is your gold and silver ewes and rams ?

*Shy.* I cannot tell ; I make it breed as fast :  
But note me, signior.

*Ant.* Mark you this, Bassanio,  
The devil can cite Scripture for his purpose.

An evil soul producing holy witness 100  
Is like a villain with a smiling cheek,  
A goodly apple rotten at the heart :

O, what a goodly outside falsehood hath !  
*Shy.* Three thousand ducats ; 'tis a good round sum.

Three months from twelve ; then, let me see ;  
the rate—

*Ant.* Well, Shylock, shall we be beholding to you ?

*Shy.* Signior Antonio, many a time and oft  
In the Rialto you have rated me

About my moneys and my usances ;  
Still have I borne it with a patient shrug, 110

For sufferance is the badge of all our tribe.  
You call me misbeliever, cut-throat dog,

And spit upon my Jewish gaberdine,  
And all for use of that which is mine own.

Well then, it now appears you need my help :  
Go to, then ; you come to me, and you say

'Shylock, we would have moneys ;' you say so ;  
You, that did void your rheum upon my beard

And foot me as you spurn a stranger cur  
Over your threshold : moneys is your suit. 120

What should I say to you ? Should I not say  
'Hath a dog money ? is it possible

A cur can lend three thousand ducats ?' Or  
Shall I bend low and in a bondman's key,

With bated breath and whispering humbleness,  
Say this :

'Fair sir, you spit on me on Wednesday last ;  
You spurn'd me such a day ; another time

You call'd me dog ; and for these courtesies  
I'll lend you thus much moneys' ? 130

*Ant.* I am as like to call thee so again,  
To spit on thee again, to spurn thee too.

If thou wilt lend this money, lend it not  
As to thy friends ; for when did friendship take

A breed for barren metal of his friend ?  
But lend it rather to thine enemy,

Who, if he break, thou mayst with better face  
Exact the penalty.

*Shy.* Why, look you, how you storm !  
I would be friends with you and have your love,

Forget the shames that you have stain'd me  
with, 140

Supply your present wants and take no dole  
Of usance for my moneys, and you'll not hear

me ;  
This is kind I offer.

*Bass.* This were kindness.

*Shy.* This kindness will I show  
Go with me to a notary, seal me there

Your single bond ; and, in a merry sport,  
If you repay me not on such a day,

In such a place, such sum or sums as are  
Express'd in the condition, let the forfeit

Be nominated for an equal pound  
Of your fair flesh, to be cut off and taken

In what part of your body pleaseth me.  
*Ant.* Content, I faith : I'll seal to such a bond

And say there is much kindness in the Jew.  
*Bass.* You shall not seal to such a bond

for me :  
I'll rather dwell in my necessity.

*Ant.* Why, fear not, man ; I will not let  
it : 150

Within these two months, that's a month before  
This bond expires, I do expect return

Of thrice three times the value of this bond.  
*Shy.* O father Abram, what these Chris-

tians are,  
Whose own hard dealings teaches them sus-

The thoughts of others ! Pray you, tell me this  
If he should break his day, what should I gain

By the exaction of the forfeiture ?  
A pound of man's flesh taken from a man

Is not so estimable, profitable neither,  
As flesh of muttons, beefs, or goats. I say,

To buy his favour, I extend this friendship :  
If he will take it, so ; if not, adieu ;

And, for my love, I pray you wrong me not.  
*Ant.* Yes, Shylock, I will seal unto this bond.

*Shy.* Then meet me forthwith at the notary  
Give him direction for this merry bond,

And I will go and purse the ducats straight,  
See to my house, left in the fearful guard

(Of an unthrifty knave, and presently  
I will be with you.

*Ant.* Hie thee, gentle Jew. [*Exit Shylock*]  
The Hebrew will turn Christian : he grows kind.

*Bass.* I like not fair terms and a villain's  
mind. 15

*Ant.* Come on : in this there can be no danger ;  
may ;

My ships come home a month before the day. [*Exeunt*]

## ACT II.

SCENE I. Belmont. A room in PORTIA'S house.  
*Flourish of cornets. Enter the PRINCE OF*

*MOROCCO and his train ; PORTIA, NERISSA*

*and others attending.*

*Mor.* Misdike me not for my complexion,  
The shadow'd livery of the burnish'd sun,

To whom I am a neighbour and near bred,  
Bring me the fairest creature northward born,

Where Phœbus' fire scarce thaws the icicles,  
And let us make incision for your love,

To prove whose blood is reddest, his or mine.  
I tell thee, lady, this aspect of mine

Hath fear'd the valiant : by my love, I swear  
The best-regarded virgins of our clime

Have loved it too : I would not change this hue  
Except to steal your thoughts, my gentle queen.

*Por.* In terms of choice I am not solely led  
By nice direction of a maiden's eyes ;  
Besides, the lottery of my destiny



are me the right of voluntary choosing:  
 ut if my father had not scanted me  
 nd hedged me by his wit, to yield myself  
 is wife who wins me by that means I told you,  
 ourself, renowned prince, then stood as fair so  
 s any comer I have look'd on yet  
 or my affection.

*Mor.* Even for that I thank you:  
 herefore, I pray you, lead me to the caskets  
 y try my fortune. By this scimitar  
 hat slew the Sophy and a Persian prince  
 hat won three fields of Sultan Solymán,  
 would outstare the sternest eyes that look,  
 ut brave the heart most daring on the earth,  
 luck the young sucking cubs from the she-bear,  
 ca, mock the lion when he roars for prey, 30  
 o win thee, lady. But, alas the while!  
 Hercules and Lichas play at dice  
 hich is the better man, the greater throw  
 ay turn by fortune from the weaker hand:  
 o is Alcides beaten by his page;  
 nd so may I, blind fortune leading me,  
 liss that which one unworthier may attain,  
 nd die with grieving.

*Por.* You must take your chance,  
 nd either not attempt to choose at all  
 r swear before you choose, if you choose wrong  
 ever to speak to lady afterward 41  
 a way of marriage: therefore be advised.

*Mor.* Nor will not. Come, bring me unto  
 my chance.

*Por.* First, forward to the temple: after  
 dinner  
 our hazard shall be made.

*Mor.* Good fortune then!  
 o make me blest or curs'd! at among men.

[*Cornets, and cecunt.*]

SCENE II. Venice. A street.

*Enter LAUNCELOT.*

*Laun.* Certainly my conscience will serve  
 e to run from this Jew my master. The fiend  
 at mine elbow and tempts me saying to me  
 Gobbo, Launcelot Gobbo, good Launcelot, or  
 good Gobbo, or 'good Launcelot Gobbo, use  
 our legs, take the start, run away.' My con-  
 science says 'No: take heed, honest Launcelot;  
 ake heed, honest Gobbo,' or, as aforesaid,  
 honest Launcelot Gobbo: do not run; scorn  
 unning with thy heels.' Well, the most cour-  
 geous fiend bids me pack: 'Via!' says the  
 and; 'away!' says the fiend; 'for the heavens,  
 use up a brave mind,' says the fiend, 'and run.'  
 Vell, my conscience, hanging about the neck of  
 ny heart, says very wisely to me 'My honest  
 friend Launcelot, being an honest man's son,  
 rather an honest woman's son; for, indeed,  
 y father did something smack, something  
 row to, he had a kind of taste; well, my con-  
 science says 'Launcelot, budge not.' 'Budge,'  
 says the fiend. 'Budge not,' says my conscience.  
 [Conscience, say I, 'you counsel well; 'Fiend,  
 ay I, 'you counsel well: to be ruled by my  
 conscience, I should stay with the Jew my  
 master, who, God bless the mark, is a kind of  
 devil; and, to run away from the Jew, I should  
 be ruled by the fiend, who, saving your reverence,

is the devil himself. Certainly the Jew is the  
 very devil incarnate; and, in my conscience, my  
 conscience is but a kind of hard conscience, to  
 offer to counsel me to stay with the Jew. The  
 fiend gives the more friendly counsel: I will run,  
 fiend; my heels are at your command; I will  
 run.

*Enter Old GOBBO, with a basket.*

*Gob.* Master young man, you, I pray you,  
 which is the way to master Jew's?

*Laun.* [*Aside*] O heavens, this is my true-  
 begotten father! who, being more than sand-  
 blind, high-gravel blind, knows me not: I will  
 try confusions with him.

*Gob.* Master young gentleman, I pray you,  
 hich is the way to master Jew's? 41

*Laun.* Turn up on your right hand at the  
 next turning, but, at the next turning of all, on  
 your left; marry, at the very next turning, turn  
 of no hand, but turn down indirectly to the  
 Jew's house.

*Gob.* By God's sonities, 'twill be a hard way  
 to hit. Can you tell me whether one Launcelot,  
 that dwells with him, dwell with him or no? 49

*Laun.* Talk you of young Master Launcelot?  
 [*Aside*] Mark me now; now will I raise the  
 waters. Talk you of young Master Launcelot?  
*Gob.* No master, sir, but a poor man's son:  
 his father, though I say it, is an honest exceeding  
 poor man and, God be thanked, well to live.

*Laun.* Well, let his father be what a' will,  
 we talk of young Master Launcelot.

*Gob.* Your worship's friend and Launcelot,  
 sir.

*Laun.* But I pray you, ergo, old man, ergo,  
 I beseech you, talk you of young Master  
 Launcelot? 60

*Gob.* Of Launcelot, an't please your master-  
 ship.

*Laun.* Ergo, Master Launcelot. Talk not of  
 Master Launcelot, father; for the young gentle-  
 man, according to Fates and Destinies and such  
 odd sayings, the Sisters Three and such branches  
 of learning, is indeed deceased, or, as you would  
 say in plain terms, gone to heaven.

*Gob.* Marry, God forbid! the boy was the  
 very staff of my age, my very prop. 70

*Laun.* Do I look like a cudgel or a hovel-  
 post, a staff or a prop? Do you know me, father?

*Gob.* Alack the day, I know you not, young  
 gentleman: but, I pray you, tell me, is my boy,  
 God rest his soul, alive or dead?

*Laun.* Do you not know me, father?

*Gob.* Alack, sir, I am sand-blind; I know  
 you not.

*Laun.* Nay, indeed, if you had your eyes,  
 you might fail of the knowing me: it is a wise  
 father that knows his own child. Well, old  
 man, I will tell you news of your son: give me  
 your blessing: truth will come to light; murder  
 cannot be hid long: a man's son may, but at  
 the length truth will out.

*Gob.* Pray you, sir, stand up: I am sure you  
 are not Launcelot, my boy.

*Laun.* Pray you, let's have no more fooling  
 about it, but give me your blessing: I am

Launcelot, your boy that was, your son that is, your child that shall be. 91

God. I cannot think you are my son.

Laun. I know not what I shall think of that: but I am Launcelot, the Jew's man, and I am sure Margery your wife is my mother.

God. Her name is Margery, indeed: I'll be sworn, if thou be Launcelot, thou art mine own flesh and blood. Lord worshipp'd might he be! what a beard hast thou got! thou hast got more hair on thy chin than Dobbin my fill-horse has on his tail. 101

Laun. It should seem, then, that Dobbin's tail grows backward: I am sure he had more hair of his tail than I have of my face when I last saw him.

God. Lord, how art thou changed! How dost thou and thy master agree? I have brought him a present. How grace you now?

Laun. Well, well: but, for mine own part, as I have set up my rest to run away, so I will not rest till I have run some ground. My master's a very Jew: give him a present! give him a halter: I am famished in his service; you may tell every finger I have with my ribs. Father, I am glad you are come: give me your present to one Master Bassanio, who, indeed, gives rare new liveries: if I serve not him, I will run as far as God has any ground. O rare fortune! here comes the man: to him, father; for I am a Jew, if I serve the Jew any longer.

*Enter BASSANIO, with LEONARDO and other followers.*

Bass. You may do so; but let it be so hasted that supper be ready at the farthest by five of the clock. See these letters delivered; put the liveries to making, and desire Gratiano to come anon to my lodging. [Exit a Servant.]

Laun. To him, father.

God. God bless your worship!

Bass. Gramercy! wouldst thou aught with me?

God. Here's my son, sir, a poor boy,— 129

Laun. Not a poor boy, sir, but the rich Jew's man; that would, sir, as my father shall specify—

God. He hath a great infection, sir, as one would say, to serve.—

Laun. Indeed, the short and the long is, I serve the Jew, and have a desire, as my father shall specify—

God. His master and he, saving your worship's reverence, are scarce cater-cousins.— 139

Laun. To be brief, the very truth is that the Jew, having done me wrong, doth cause me, as my father, being, I hope, an old man, shall testify unto you—

God. I have here a dish of doves that I would bestow upon your worship, and my suit is—

Laun. In very brief, the suit is impertinent to myself, as your worship shall know by this honest old man; and, though I say it, though old man, yet poor man, my father.

Bass. One speak for both. What would you?

Laun. Serve you, sir. 151

God. That is the very defect of the matter, sir.

Bass. I know thee well; thou hast obtain'd thy suit:

Shylock thy master spoke with me this day, And hath prefer'd thee, if it be preconcerted To leave a rich Jew's service, to become The follower of so poor a gentleman.

Laun. The old proverb is very well part between my master Shylock and you, sir: you have the grace of God, sir, and he hath enough.

Bass. Thou speakest it well. Go, father with thy son.

Take leave of thy old master and inquire My lodging out. Give him a livery More guarded than his fellows': see it done.

Laun. Father, in. I cannot get a service no; I have ne'er a tongue in my head. Well if any man in Italy have a fairer table which doth offer to swear upon a book, I shall have good fortune. Go to, here's a simple line of life: here's a small trifle of wives: alas, fifteen wives is nothing! eleven widows and nine maids is a simple coming-in for one man: and then I escape drowning thrice, and to be in peril of my life with the edge of a feather-bed; here are simple scapes. Well, if Fortune be a woman, she's a good wench for this gear. Father, come I'll take my leave of the Jew in the twinkling of an eye. [Exeunt Launcelot and Old God.]

Bass. I pray thee, good Leonardo, think of this:

These things being bought and orderly bestow'd Return in haste, for I do feast to-night.

My best-esteem'd acquaintance: hie thee, good Leon. My best endeavours shall be directed herein.

*Enter GRATIANO.*

Gra. Where is your master?

Leon. Yonder, sir, he walks. [Exit.]

Gra. Signior Bassanio!

Bass. Gratiano!

Gra. I have a suit to you.

Bass. You have obtain'd it

Gra. You must not deny me: I must go with you to Belmont.

Bass. Why, then you must. But hear the Gratiano:

Thou art too wild, too rude and bold of voice: Parts that become thee happily enough, and in such eyes as ours appear not faults: But where thou art not known, why, there they show

Something too liberal. Pray thee, take pain To allay with some cold drops of modesty Thy skipping spirit, lest through thy wild behaviour

I be misconstrued in the place I go to And lose my hopes.

Gra. Signior Bassanio, hear me

If I do not put on a sober habit, Talk with respect and swear but now and then

Wear prayer-books in my pocket, look demurely, Nay more, while grace is saying, hood mine eyes

Thus with my hat, and sigh and say 'amen,' Use all the observance of civility,

Like one well studied in a sad ostent To please his grandam, never trust me more.

Bass. Well, we shall see your bearing.

*Gra.* Nay, but I bar to-night: you shall not gauge me what we do to-night.

*Bass.* No, that were pity: would entreat you rather to put on our boldest suit of mirth, for we have friends at purpose merriment. But fare you well: have some business.

*Gra.* And I must to Lorenzo and the rest: at we will visit you at supper-time. *[Exeunt.]*

JANE III. *The same. A room in SHYLOCK'S house.*

*Enter JESSICA and LAUNCELOT.*

*Jes.* I am sorry thou wilt leave my father so: ur house is hell, and thou, a merry devil, idst rob it of some taste of tediousness. ut fare thee well, there is a ducat for thee: nd, Launcelot, soon at supper shalt thou see orenzo, who is thy new master's guest: ive him this letter; do it secretly; nd so farewell: I would not have my father e me in talk with thee.

*Laun.* Adieu! tears exhibit my tongue. ost beautiful pagan, most sweet Jew! if a hristian did not play the knave and get thee, am much deceived. But, adieu: these foolish ups do something drown my manly spirit: ieu.

*Jes.* Farewell, good Launcelot. *[Exit Launcelot.]* lack, what heinous sin is it in me o be ashamed to be my father's child! ut though I am a daughter to his blood, am not to his manners. O Lorenzo, thou keep promise, I shall end this strife, o come a Christian and thy loving wife. *[Exit.]*

SCENE IV. *The same. A street.*

*Enter GRATIANO, LORENZO, SALARINO, and SALANIO.*

*Lor.* Nay, we will slink away in supper-time, disguise us at my lodging and return, ll in an hour.

*Gra.* We have not made good preparation.

*Salar.* We have not spoke us yet of torch-bearers.

*Salan.* 'Tis vile, unless it may be quaintly order'd.

nd better in my mind not undertook.

*Lor.* 'Tis now but four o'clock: we have two hours o furnish us.

*Enter LAUNCELOT, with a letter.*

Friend Launcelot, what's the news? *Laun.* An it shall please you to break up lis, it shall seem to signify.

*Lor.* I know the hand: in faith, 'tis a fair hand;

And whiter than the paper it writ on as the fair hand that writ.

*Gra.* Love-news, in faith.

*Laun.* By your leave, sir.

*Lor.* Whither goest thou?

*Laun.* Marry, sir, to bid my old master the

Jew to sup to-night with my new master the 'hristian.

*Lor.* Hold here, take this: tell gentle Jessica. I will not fail her; speak it privately.

*Go, gentlemen, [Exit Launcelot.]*

Will you prepare you for this masque to-night? I am provided of a torch-bearer.

*Salar.* Ay, marry, I'll be gone about it straight.

*Salan.* And so will I.

*Lor.* Meet me and Gratiano

At Gratiano's lodging some hour hence.

*Salar.* 'Tis good we do so.

*[Exeunt Salar, and Salan.]*

*Gra.* Was not that letter from fair Jessica? *Lor.* I must needs tell thee all. She hath directed

How I shall take her from her father's house,

What gold and jewels she is furnish'd with,

What page's suit she hath in readiness,

If e'er the Jew her father come to heaven,

It will be for his gentle daughter's sake:

And never dare misfortune cross her foot,

Unless she do it under this excuse,

That she is issue to a faithless Jew.

Come, go with me; peruse this as thou goest:

Fair Jessica shall be my torch-bearer. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE V. *The same. Before SHYLOCK'S house.*

*Enter SHYLOCK and LAUNCELOT.*

*Shy.* Well, thou shalt see, thy eyes shall be thy judge,

The difference of old Shylock and Bassanio:—

What, Jessica!—thou shalt not gormandise,

As thou hast done with me:—What, Jessica!—

And sleep and snore, and rend apparel out;—

Why, Jessica, I say!

*Laun.* Why, Jessica!

*Shy.* Who bids thee call? I do not bid thee call.

*Laun.* Your worship was wont to tell me that I could do nothing without bidding.

*Enter JESSICA.*

*Jes.* Call you? what is your will?

*Shy.* I am bid forth to supper, Jessica:

There are my keys. But wherefore should I go?

I am not bid for love; they flatter me:

But yet I'll go in hate, to feed upon

The prodigal Christian. Jessica, my girl,

Look to my house. I am right loath to go:

There is some ill a-brewing towards my rest,

For I did dream of money-bags to-night.

*Laun.* I beseech you, sir, go: my young

master doth expect your reproach.

*Shy.* So do I his.

*Laun.* And they have conspired together, I

will not say you shall see a masque; but if you

do, then it was not for nothing that my nose fell

a-bleeding on Black-Monday last at six o'clock?

The morning, falling out that year on Ash-Wed-

nesday was four year, in the afternoon.

*Shy.* What are there masques? Hear you

me, Jessica:

Look up my doors; and when you hear the drums

And the vile squealing of the wry-neck'd fife,

Clamber not you up to the casements then,

Nor thrust your head into the public street  
To gaze on Christian fools with varnish'd faces;  
But stop my house's ears, I mean my casements:  
Let not the sound of shallow foppery enter  
My sober house. By Jacob's staff, I swear,  
I have no mind of feasting forth to-night:  
But I will go. Go you before me, sirrah;  
Say I will come.

*Laun.* I will go before, sir. Mistress, look  
out at window, for all this;

There will come a Christian by,  
Will be worth a Jewess' eye. *[Exit.]*

*Shy.* What says that fool of Hagar's offspring,  
ha!

*Jes.* His words were 'Farewell, mistress';  
nothing else.

*Shy.* The patch is kind enough, but a huge  
feeder;

Snail-slow in profit, and he sleeps by day  
More than the wild-cat: drones hive not with  
me;

Therefore I part with him, and part with him  
To one that I would have him help to waste

His borrow'd purse. Well, Jessica, go in:  
Perhaps I will return immediately:

Do as I bid you: shut doors after you:  
Fast bind, fast find;

A proverb never stale in thrifty mind. *[Exit.]*

*Jes.* Farewell; and if my fortune be not  
cross'd,

I have a father, you a daughter, lost. *[Exit.]*

SCENE VI. *The same.*

*Enter GRATIANO and SALARINO, masqued.*

*Gra.* This is the pent-house under which  
Lorenzo

Desired us to make stand.  
*Salar.* His hour is almost past.

*Gra.* And it is marvel he out-dwells his  
hour,

For lovers ever run before the clock.

*Salar.* O, ten times faster Venus' pigeons fly  
To seal love's bonds new-made, than they are  
wont

To keep obliged faith unforfeited!

*Gra.* That ever holds: who riseth from a  
feast

With that keen appetite that he sits down?  
Where is the horse that doth untried again?

His tedious measures with the unlaid fire  
That he did pace them first? All things that are,

Are with more spirit chased than enjoy'd.  
How like a younger or a prodigal

The scarfed bark puts from her native bay,  
Hugg'd and embraced by the strumpet wind!

How like the prodigal doth she return,  
With over-weather'd ribs and ragged sails,

Lean, rent and beggar'd by the strumpet wind!

*Salar.* Here comes Lorenzo: more of this  
hereafter.

*Enter LORENZO.*

*Lor.* Sweet friends, your patience for my  
long abode;

Not I, but my affairs, have made you wait:  
When you shall please to play the thieves for  
wives,

I'll watch as long for you then. Approach:  
Here dwells my father Jew. Ho! who's within?

*Enter JESSICA, above, in boy's clothes.*

*Jes.* Who are you? Tell me, for more a  
tainy,

Albeit I'll swear that I do know your tongue.  
*Lor.* Lorenzo, and thy love.

*Jes.* Lorenzo, certain, and my love indeed  
For who love I so much? And now who know

But you, Lorenzo, whether I am yours?  
*Lor.* Heaven and thy thoughts are witness

that thou art.  
*Jes.* Here, catch this casket; it is won

the pains.  
I am glad 'tis night, you do not look on me,

For I am much ashamed of my exchange:  
But love is blind and lovers cannot see

The pretty follies that themselves commit;  
For if they could, Cupid himself would blush

To see me thus transformed to a boy.  
*Lor.* Descend, for you must be my tor

bearer.  
*Jes.* What, must I hold a candle to a  
shames?

They in themselves, good sooth, are too  
light.

Why, 'tis an office of discovery, love;  
And I should be obscured.

*Lor.* So are you, sweet,  
Even in the lovely garnish of a boy.

But come at once;  
For the close night doth play the runaway,

And we are stay'd for at Bassanio's feast.  
*Jes.* I will make fast the doors, and gi

myself  
With some more ducats, and be with y

straight. *[Exit above.]*

*Gra.* Now, by my hood, a Gentile and a  
Jew.

*Lor.* Beshrew me but I love her heartily:  
For she is wise, if I can judge of her,

And fair she is, if that mine eyes be true,  
And true she is, as she hath proved herself,

And therefore, like herself, wise, fair and true,  
Shall she be placed in my constant soul.

*Enter JESSICA, below.*

What, art thou come? On, gentlemen; away  
Our masquing mates by this time for us stay.

*[Exit with Jessica and Salarino.]*

*Enter ANTONIO.*

*Ant.* Who's there?

*Gra.* Signior Antonio!

*Ant.* Fie, fie, Gratiano! where are all the  
rest?

'Tis nine o'clock: our friends all stay for you.  
No masque to-night: the wind is come about;

Bassanio presently will go aboard:  
I have sent twenty out to seek for you.

*Gra.* I am glad on't: I desire no more  
delight

Than to be under sail and gone to-night. *[Exit.]*

SCENE VII. Belmont. A room in PORTIA'S house.

*Flourish of cornets. Enter PORTIA, with the PRINCE of MOROCCO, and their trains.*

*Por.* Go draw aside the curtains and discover the several caskets to this noble prince. Now make your choice.

*Mor.* The first, of gold, who this inscription bears, Who chooseth me shall gain what many men desire ;

The second, silver, which this promise carries, Who chooseth me shall get as much as he deserves ;

The third, dull lead, with warning all as blunt, Who chooseth me must give and hazard all he hath.

How shall I know if I do choose the right ? 20

*Por.* The one of them contains my picture, prince :

If you choose that, then I am yours withal.

*Mor.* Some god direct my judgement ! Let me see ;

Will survey the inscriptions back again.

What says this leaden casket ?

Who chooseth me must give and hazard all he hath.

Must give : for what ? for lead ? hazard for lead ?

This casket threatens. Men that hazard all do it in hope of fair advantages :

A golden mind stoops not to shows of dross ; 20

It then nor give nor hazard ought for lead.

What says the silver with her virgin hue ?

Who chooseth me shall get as much as he deserves.

As much as he deserves ! Pause there, Morocco,

And weigh thy value with an even hand :

If thou be'st rated by thy estimation,

Thou dost deserve enough ; and yet enough

May not extend so far as to the lady :

And yet to be afraid of my deserving

Were but a weak disabling of myself. 30

As much as I deserve ! Why, that's the lady :

I do in birth deserve her, and in fortunes,

In graces and in qualities of breeding ;

But more than these, in love I do deserve.

What if I stray'd no further, but chose here ?

Let's see once more this saying graved in gold ;

Who chooseth me shall gain what many men desire.

Why, that's the lady ; all the world desires her ;

From the four corners of the earth they come,

To kiss this shrine, this mortal-breathing saint :

The Hyrcanian deserts and the vasty wilds 40

Of wide Arabia are as thoroughfares now

For princes to come view fair Portia :

The watery kingdom, whose ambitious head

Reeps in the face of heaven, is no bar

To stop the foreign spirits, but they come,

As o'er a brook, to see fair Portia.

One of these three contains her heavenly picture.

Is't like that lead contains her ? 'Twere dam-  
nation

To think so base a thought : it were too gross

To rib her cerecloth in the obscure grave. 5

O shall I think in silver she's immured,

Being ten times undervalued to tried gold ?

O sinful thought ! Never so rich a gem  
Was set in worse than gold. They have in  
England

A coin that bears the figure of an angel  
Stamped in gold, but that's insculp'd upon ;  
But here an angel in a golden bed

Lies all within. Deliver me the key :

Here do I choose, and thrive I as I may ! 60

*Por.* There, take it, prince ; and if my form  
lie there,

Then I am yours. [*He unlocks the golden casket.*

*Mor.* O hell ! what have we here ?  
A carrion Death, within whose empty eye

There is a written scroll ! I'll read the writing.  
[*Reads.*] All that glisters is not gold ;

Often have you heard that told :  
Many a man his life hath sold

But my outside to behold :  
Gilded tombs do worms infold.

Had you been as wise as bold,  
Young in limbs, in judgement old,

Your answer had not been inscroll'd :  
Fare you well ; your suit is cold.

Cold, indeed : and labour lost :  
Then, farewell, heat, and welcome, frost !

Portia, adieu. I have too griev'd a heart  
To take a tedious leave : thus losers part.

[*Exit with his train. Flourish of cornets.*

*Por.* A gentle riddance. Draw the curtains, go.

Let all of his complexion choose me so. 70

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VIII. Venice. A street.

*Enter SALARINO and SALANIO.*

*Salar.* Why, man, I saw Bassanio under  
sail :

With him is Gratiano gone along ;  
And in their ship I am sure Lorenzo is not.

*Salan.* The villain Jew with outcries raised  
the duke,

Who went with him to search Bassanio's ship.

*Salar.* He came too late, the ship was under  
sail :

But there the duke was given to understand  
That in a gondola were seen together

Lorenzo and his amorous Jessica :

Besides, Antonio certified the duke 20

They were not with Bassanio in his ship.

*Salan.* I never heard a passion so confused,  
So strange, outrageous, and so variable,

As the dog Jew did utter in the streets :

'My daughter ! O my ducats ! O my daughter !  
Fled with a Christian ! O my Christian ducats !

Justice ! the law ! my ducats, and my daughter !  
A sealed bag, two sealed bags of ducats,

Of double ducats, stolen from me by my  
daughter !

And jewels, two stones, two rich and precious  
stones, 30

Stolen by my daughter ! Justice ! find the girl ;  
She hath the stones upon her, and the ducats.'

*Salar.* Why, all the boys in Venice follow  
him,

Crying, his stones, his daughter, and his ducats.

*Salan.* Let good Antonio look he keep his  
day,

Or he shall pay for this.

*Salar.* Marry, well remember'd.  
I reason'd with a Frenchman yesterday,  
Who told me, in the narrow seas that part  
The French and English, there miscarried  
A vessel of our country richly fraught: 30  
I thought upon Antonio when he told me;  
And wish'd in silence that it were not his.

*Salar.* You were best to tell Antonio what  
you hear;

Yet do not suddenly, for it may grieve him.

*Salar.* A kinder gentleman treads not the  
earth.

I saw Bassanio and Antonio part:  
Bassanio told him he would make some speed  
Of his return: he answer'd, 'Do not so;  
Slubber not business for my sake, Bassanio,  
But stay the very riping of the time; 40  
And for the Jew's bond which he hath of me,  
Let it not enter in your mind of love:  
Be merry, and employ your chiefest thoughts  
To courtship and such fair ostents of love  
As shall conveniently become you there: '  
And even there, his eye being big with tears,  
Turning his face, he put his hand behind him,  
And with affection wondrous sensible  
He wrung Bassanio's hand; and so they parted.

*Salar.* I think he only loves the world for  
him.

I pray thee, let us go and find him out  
And quicken his embrac'd heaviness  
With some delight or other.

*Salar.* Do we so. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IX. *Belmont. A room in PORTIA'S  
house.*

*Enter NERISSA with a Servitor.*

*Ner.* Quick, quick, I pray thee; draw the  
curtain straight:

The Prince of Arragon hath ta'en his oath,  
And comes to his election presently.

*Flourish of cornets. Enter the PRINCE OF  
ARRAGON, PORTIA, and their trains.*

*Por.* Behold, there stand the caskets, noble  
prince:

If you choose that wherein I am contain'd,  
Straight shall our nuptial rites be solemnized:  
But if you fail, without more speech, my lord,  
You must be gone from hence immediately.

*Ar.* I am enjoin'd by oath to observe three  
things:

First, never to unfold to any one  
Which casket 'twas I chose; next, if I fail  
Of the right casket, never in my life  
To woo a maid in way of marriage:  
Lastly,

If I do fail in fortune of my choice,  
Immediately to leave you and be gone.

*Por.* To these injunctions every one doth  
swear

That comes to hazard for my worthless self.

*Ar.* And so have I address'd me. Fortune  
now

To my heart's hope! Gold; silver; and base  
lead. 20

'Who chooseth me must give and hazard all he  
hath.'

You shall look fairer, ere I give or hazard.

What says the golden chest? ha! let me see:

'Who chooseth me shall gain what many men  
desire.'

What many men desire! that 'many' may be  
meant

By the fool multitude, that choose by show,  
Not learning more than the fond eye doth teach;

Which prizes not the interior, but, like the  
martlet,

Builds in the weather on the outward wall,  
Even in the force and road of casualty. 30

I will not choose what many men desire,  
Because I will not jump with common spirits

And rank me with the barbarous multitudes.  
Why, then to thee, thou silver treasure-house;

Tell me once more what title thou dost bear:  
'Who chooseth me shall get as much as he de-

serves.'

And well said too; for who shall go about  
To cozen fortune and be honourable

Without the stamp of merit? Let none presume  
To wear an undeserved dignity. 40

O, that estates, degrees and offices  
Were not derived corruptly, and that clear

honour  
Were purchased by the merit of the wearer!

How many then should cover that stand bare!  
How many be commanded that command!

How much low peasantry would then be glean'd  
From the true seed of honour! and how much

honour  
Pick'd from the chaff and ill ruin of the times

To be new-variish'd! Well, but to my choice:  
'Who chooseth me shall get as much as he de-

serves.' 50  
I will assume desert. Give me a key for this,  
And instantly unlock my fortunes here.

[*He opens the silver casket.*]

*Por.* Too long a pause for that which you  
find there.

*Ar.* What's here? the portrait of a blinking  
idiot,

Presenting me a schedule! I will read it.  
How much unlike art thou to Portia!

How much unlike my hopes and my deservings!  
'Who chooseth me shall have as much as he de-

serves.'

Did I deserve no more than a fool's head?  
Is that my prize? are my deserts no better? 60

*Por.* To offend, and judge, are distinct offices  
And of opposed natures.

*Ar.* What is here?  
[*Reads*] The fire seven times tried this:

Seven times tried that judgement is,  
That did never choose amiss.

Some there be that shadows kiss;  
Such have but a shadow's bliss:

There be fools alive, I wia,  
Silver'd o'er; and so was this.

Take what wife you will to bed, 70  
I will ever be your head;

So be gone: you are sped.  
Still more fool I shall appear

By the time I linger here:

With one fool's head I came to woo,  
But I go away with two.  
Sweet, adieu. I'll keep my oath,  
Patiently to bear my wroth.

[*Exeunt Arragon and train.*]

*Por.* Thus hath the candle singed the moth.  
(1) these deliberate fools! when they do choose,  
They have the wisdom by their wit to lose. 8:

*Ner.* The ancient saying is no heresy,  
Hanging and wiving goes by destiny.

*Por.* Come, draw the curtain, Nerissa.

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* Where is my lady?

*Por.* Here: what would my lord?

*Serv.* Madam, there is alighted at your gate  
A young Venetian, one that comes before  
To signify the approaching of his lord;  
From whom he bringeth sensible regrets,  
To wit, besides commendments and courteous breath,  
(Gifts of rich value. Yet I have not seen 91  
So likely an ambassador of love:

A day in April never came so sweet,  
To show how costly summer was at hand,  
As this fore-spurrer comes before his lord.

*Por.* No more, I pray thee: I am half afraid  
Thou wilt say anon he is some kin to thee,  
Thou spend'st such high-day wit in praising him.  
(Come, come, Nerissa; for I long to see  
Quick Cupid's post that comes so mannerly. 100

*Ner.* Bassanio, lord Love, if thy will it be!

[*Exeunt.*]

### ACT III.

SCENE I. Venice. A street.

*Enter SALANIO and SALARINO.*

*Salan.* Now, what news on the Rialto?

*Salar.* Why, yet it lives there unchecked  
that Antonio hath a ship of rich lading wrecked  
on the narrow seas; the Goodwins, I think they  
call the place; a very dangerous flat and fatal,  
where the carcasses of many a tall ship lie buried,  
as they say, if my gossip Report be an honest  
woman of her word.

*Salan.* I would she were as lying a gossip in  
that as ever knapped ginger or made her neigh-  
bours believe she wept for the death of a third  
husband. But it is true, without any slips  
of prolixity or crossing the plain highway of talk,  
that the good Antonio, the honest Antonio,—  
(O that I had a little good enough to keep his  
name company!—

*Salar.* Come, the full stop.

*Salan.* Ha! what sayest thou? Why, the  
end is, he hath lost a ship.

*Salar.* I would it might prove the end of his  
USUR.

*Salan.* Let me say 'amen' betimes, lest the  
devil cross my prayer, for here he comes in the  
likeness of a Jew.

*Enter SHYLOCK.*

[How now, Shylock! what news among the  
merchants?]

*Shy.* You knew, none so well, none so well  
as you, of my daughter's flight.

*Salar.* That's certain: I, for my part, knew  
the tailor that made the wings she flew withal.

*Salan.* And Shylock, for his own part, knew  
the bird was fledged; and then it is the com-  
plexion of them all to leave the dam.

*Shy.* She is damned for it.

*Salar.* That's certain, if the devil may be her  
judge.

*Shy.* My own flesh and blood to rebel!

*Salan.* Out upon it, old carrion! rebels it at  
these years?

*Shy.* I say, my daughter is my flesh and  
blood.

*Salar.* There is more difference between thy  
flesh and hers than between jet and ivory; more  
between your bloods than there is between red  
wine and rhenish. But tell us, do you hear  
whether Antonio have had any loss at sea or no?

*Shy.* There I have another bad match: a  
bankrupt, a prodigal, who dare scarce show his  
head on the Rialto; a beggar, that was used to  
come so smug upon the mart; let him look to  
his bond: he was wont to call me usurer; let  
him look to his bond: he was wont to lend  
money for a Christian courtesy; let him look to  
his bond.

*Salar.* Why, I am sure, if he forfeit, thou  
wilt not take his flesh: what's that good for?

*Shy.* To bait fish withal: if it will feed no-  
thing else, it will feed my revenge. He hath  
disgraced me, and hindered me half a million;  
laughed at my losses, mocked at my gains,  
scorned my nation, thwarted my bargains,  
cooled my friends, heated mine enemies; and  
what's his reason? I am a Jew. Hath not a  
Jew eyes? hath not a Jew hands, organs, dimen-  
sions, senses, affections, passions? fed with the  
same food, hurt with the same weapons, subject  
to the same diseases, healed by the same means,  
warmed and cooled by the same winter and  
summer, as a Christian is? If you prick us, do  
we not bleed? if you tickle us, do we not laugh?  
if you poison us, do we not die? and if you  
wrong us, shall we not revenge? If we are like  
you in the rest, we will resemble you in that.  
If a Jew wrong a Christian, what is his humility?  
Revenge. If a Christian wrong a Jew, what  
should his sufferance be by Christian example?  
Why, revenge. The villany you teach me, I  
will execute, and it shall go hard but I will  
better the instruction.

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* Gentlemen, my master Antonio is at  
his house and desires to speak with you both.

*Salar.* We have been up and down to seek  
him. 79

*Enter TUBAL.*

*Salan.* Here comes another of the tribe: a  
third cannot be matched, unless the devil him-  
self turn Jew.

[*Exeunt Salan., Salar., and Servant.*  
*Shy.* How now, Tubal! what news from  
Genoa? hast thou found my daughter?

*Tub.* I often came where I did hear of her,  
but cannot find her.

*Sky.* Why, there, there, there, there! a diamond gone, cost me two thousand ducats in Frankfort! The curse never fell upon our nation till now; I never felt it till now: two thousand ducats in that; and other precious, precious jewels. I would my daughter were dead at my foot, and the jewels in her ear! would she were hearsed at my foot, and the ducats in her coffin! No news of them? Why, so: and I know not what's spent in the search: why, thou loss upon loss! the thief gone with so much, and so much to find the thief; and no satisfaction, no revenge: nor no ill luck stirring but what lights on my shoulders; no sighs but of my breathing; no tears but of my shedding.

*Tub.* Yes, other men have ill luck too: Antonio, as I heard in Genoa.—

*Sky.* What, what, what? ill luck, ill luck?

*Tub.* Hath an argosy cast away, coming from Tripolis.

*Sky.* I thank God, I thank God. Is't true, is't true?

*Tub.* I spoke with some of the sailors that escaped the wreck.

*Sky.* I thank thee, good Tubal: good news, good news! ha, ha! where? in Genoa?

*Tub.* Your daughter spent in Genoa, as I heard, in one night fourscore ducats.

*Sky.* Thou stickest a dagger in me: I shall never see my gold again: fourscore ducats at a sitting! fourscore ducats!

*Tub.* There came divers of Antonio's creditors in my company to Venice, that swear he cannot choose but break.

*Sky.* I am very glad of it: I'll plague him; I'll torture him: I am glad of it.

*Tub.* One of them showed me a ring that he had of your daughter for a monkey.

*Sky.* Out upon her! Thou torturest me, Tubal: it was my turquoise; I had it of Leah when I was a bachelor: I would not have given it for a wilderness of monkeys.

*Tub.* But Antonio is certainly undone.

*Sky.* Nay, that's true, that's very true. Go, Tubal, fee me an officer; bespeak him a fortnight before. I will have the heart of him, if he forfeit: for, were he out of Venice, I can make what merchandise I will. Go, go, Tubal, and meet me at our synagogue; go, good Tubal: at our synagogue, Tubal.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. Belmont. A house. in PORTIA'S house.

*Enter BASSANTO, PORTIA, GRATIANO, NERISSA, and Attendants.*

*Por.* I pray you, tarry: pause a day or two before you hazard; for, in choosing wrong, I lose your company: therefore forbear awhile. There's something tells me, but it is not love, I would not lose you; and you know yourself, Hate counsels not in such a quality. But lest you should not understand me well,—And yet a maiden hath no tongue but thought,—I would detain you here some month or two before you venture for me. I could teach you how to choose right, but I am then forsworn; So will I never be: so may you miss me;

But if you do, you'll make me wish a sin, That I had been forsworn. Beshrew your eyes, They have o'erlook'd me and divided me; One half of me is yours, the other half yours, Mine own, I would say; but if mine, then yours, And so all yours. O, these naughty times! Put bars between the owners and their rights! And so, though yours, not yours. Prove it so, Let fortune go to hell for it, not I. I speak too long; but 'tis to prize the time, To eke it and to draw it out in length, To stay you from election.

*Bass.* Let me choose; For as I am, I live upon the rack.

*Por.* Upon the rack, Bassanio! then confess What treason there is mingled with your love.

*Bass.* None but that ugly treason of mistrust, Which makes me fear the enjoying of my love: There may as well be amity and life 'Tween snow and fire, as treason and my love.

*Por.* Ay, but I fear you speak upon the rack, Where men enforced do speak anything.

*Bass.* Promise me life, and I'll confess the truth.

*Por.* Well then, confess and live.

*Bass.* 'Confess' and 'love' Had been the very sum of my confession: O happy torment, when my torturer Doth teach me answers for deliverance! But let me to my fortune and the caskets.

*Por.* Away, then! I am lock'd in one of them:

If you do love me, you will find me out.

Nerissa and the rest, stand all aloof.

Let music sound while he doth make his choice: Then, if he lose, he makes a swan-like end,

Fading in music: that the comparison May stand more proper, my eye shall be the stream

And watery death-bed for him. He may win; And what is music then? Then music is

Even as the flourish when true subjects bow To a new-crowned monarch: such it is

As are those dulcet sounds in break of day That creep into the dreaming bridegroom's ear

And summon him to marriage. Now he goes With no less presence, but with much more love,

Than young Alcides, when he did redeem The virgin tribute paid by howling Troy

To the sea-monster: I stand for sacrifice; The rest aloof are the Darianian wives,

With bleared visages, come forth to view The issue of the exploit. Go, Hercules!

Live thou, I live: with much much more dismay I view the fight than thou that makest the fray.

*Music, whilst BASSANTO comments on the caskets to himself.*

SONG.

Tell me where is fancy bred,  
Or in the heart or in the head?  
How begot, how nourished?

Reply, reply.

It is engender'd in the eyes,  
With gazing fed; and fancy dies  
In the cradle where it lies.

Let us all ring fancy's knell:  
I'll begin it,—Ding, dong, bell.



All. Ding, dong, bell.

Bass. So may the outward shows be least themselves:

The world is still deceived with ornament.  
In law, what plea so tainted and corrupt  
But, being season'd with a gracious voice,  
Obscures the show of evil? In religion,  
What damned error, but some sober brow  
Will bless it and approve it with a text,  
Hiding the grossness with fair ornament? 80  
There is no vice so simple but assumes  
Some mark of virtue on his outward parts:  
How many cowards, whose hearts are all as false  
As stairs of sand, wear yet upon their chins  
The beards of Hercules and frowning Mars;  
Who, inward search'd, have livers white as milk;  
And these assume but valour's excrement  
To render them redoubt'd! Look on beauty,  
And you shall see 'tis purchased by the weight;  
Which therein works a miracle in nature, 90  
Making them lightest that wear most of it:  
So are those crisped snaky golden locks  
Which make such wanton gambols with the  
wind,

Upon supposed fairness, often known  
To be the dowry of a second head,  
The skull that bred them in the sepulchre.  
Thus ornament is but the guiled shore  
To a most dangerous sea; the beauteous scarf  
Veiling an Indian beauty; in a world,  
The seeming truth which cunning times put on  
To entrap the wisest. Therefore, thou gaudy  
gold, 101

Hard food for Midas, I will none of thee;  
Nor none of thee, thou pale and common drudge  
Tween man and man: but thou, thou meagre  
lead,

Which rather threatnest than dost promise  
aught,  
Thy paleness moves me more than eloquence;  
And here choose I: joy be the consequence!

Por. [Aside] How all the other passions fleet  
to air,  
As doubtful thoughts, and rash-embraced de-  
spair,

And shuddering fear, and green-eyed jealousy!  
O love, 111

Be moderate; allay thy ecstasy;  
In measure rein thy joy; scant this excess.  
I feel too much thy blessing: make it less,  
For fear I surfeit.

Bass. What find I here?

[Opening the leaden casket.]  
Fair Portia's counterfeit! What demi-god  
Hath come so near creation? Move these eyes!  
Or whether, riding on the balls of mine,  
Seem they in motion? Here are sever'd lips,  
Parted with sugar breath: so sweet a bar 120  
Should sunder such sweet friends. Here in her  
hairs

The painter plays the spider and hath woven  
A golden mesh to entrap the hearts of men  
Faster than gnats in colicwebs: but her eyes,—  
How could he see to do them? having made one,  
Methinks it should have power to steal both his  
And leave itself unfurnish'd. Yet look, how far  
The substance of my praise doth wrong this  
shadow

in underprizing it, so far this shadow  
Doth limp behind the substance. Here's the  
scroll, 130

The continent and summary of my fortune.

[Reads] You that choose not by the view,  
Chance as fair and choose as true!  
Since this fortune falls to you,  
Be content and seek no new.  
If you be well pleased with this  
And hold your fortune for your bliss,  
Turn you where your lady is  
And claim her with a loving kiss.

A gentle scroll. Fair lady, by your leave; 140  
I come by note, to give and to receive.  
Like one of two contending in a prize,  
That thinks he hath done well in people's eyes,  
Hearing applause and universal shout,  
Giddy in spirit, still gazing in a doubt  
Whether those peals of praise be his or no;  
So, thrice-fair lady, stand I, even so;  
As doubtful whether what I see be true,  
Until confirm'd, sign'd, ratified by you.

Por. You see me, Lord Bassanio, where I  
stand, 150

Such as I am: though for myself alone  
I would not be ambitious in my wish,  
To wish myself much better; yet, for you  
I would be trebled twenty times myself;  
A thousand times more fair, ten thousand times  
More rich;

That only to stand high in your account,  
I might in virtues, beauties, livings, friends,  
Exceed account; but the full sum of me 159

'Tis sum of something, which, to term in gross,  
Is an unlesson'd girl, unschoold, unpractis'd;  
Happy in this, she is not yet so old

'But she may learn; happier than this,  
She is not bred so dull but she can learn;  
Happiest of all is that her gentle spirit  
Commits itself to yours to be directed,  
As from her lord, her governor, her king.

Myself and what is mine to you and yours  
Is now converted; but now I was the lord  
Of this fair mansion, master of my servants, 170  
Queen o'er myself; and even now, but now,

This house, these servants and this same myself  
Are yours, my lord: I give them with this ring;  
Which when you part from, lose, or give away,  
Let it bespeak the ruin of your love

And be my vantage to exclaim on you.

Bass. Madam, you have bereft me of all  
words,

Only my blood speaks to you in my veins;  
And there is such confusion in my powers,  
As, after some oration fairly spoke 180

By a beloved prince, there doth appear  
Among the buzzing pleased multitude;  
Where every something, being blent together,  
Turns to a wild of nothing, save of joy,  
Express'd and not express'd. But when this ring  
Parts from this finger, then parts life from  
hence:

O, then be bold to say Bassanio's dead!

Ner. My lord and lady, it is now our time,  
That have stood by and seen our wishes prosper,  
To cry, good joy: good joy, my lord and lady!

Gra. My lord Bassanio and my gentle lady,  
I wish you all the joy that you can wish;

For I am sure you can wish none from me:  
And when your honours mean to solemnize  
The bargain of your faith, I do beseech you,  
Even at that time I may be married too.

*Bass.* With all my heart, so thou canst get a wife.

*Gra.* I thank your lordship, you have got me one.

My eyes, my lord, can look as swift as yours:  
You saw the mistress, I beheld the maid; 200  
You loved, I loved for intermission.

No more pertains to me, my lord, than you.

Your fortune stood upon the casket there,  
And so did mine too, as the matter falls;

For wooing here until I sweat again,  
And swearing till my very roof was dry

With oaths of love, at last, if promise last,  
I got a promise of this fair one here

To have her love, provided that your fortune

Achieved her mistress.

*Por.* Is this true, Nerissa? 210

*Ner.* Madam, it is, so you stand pleased withal.

*Bass.* And do you, Gratiano, mean good faith?

*Gra.* Yes, faith, my lord.

*Bass.* Our feast shall be much honour'd in your marriage.

*Gra.* We'll play with them the first boy for a thousand ducats.

*Ner.* What, and stake down?

*Gra.* No; we shall ne'er win at that sport, and stake down. 220

But who comes here? Lorenzo and his infidel?

What, and my old Venetian friend Salerio?

*Enter LORENZO, JESSICA, and SALERIO, a Messenger from Venice.*

*Bass.* Lorenzo and Salerio, welcome hither;

If that the youth of my new interest here

Have power to bid you welcome. By your leave,

I bid my very friends and countrymen,

Sweet Portia, welcome.

*Por.* So do I, my lord:

They are entirely welcome.

*Lor.* I thank your honour. For my part,

my lord,

My purpose was not to have seen you here; 230

But meeting with Salerio by the way,

He did intreat me, past all saying nay,

To come with him along.

*Saler.* I did, my lord;

And I have reason for it. Signor Antonio

Commends him to you.

[*Gives Bassanio a letter.*]

*Bass.* Ere I ope his letter,

I pray you, tell me how my good friend doth.

*Saler.* Not sick, my lord, unless it be in mind;

Nor well, unless in mind: his letter there

Will show you his estate.

*Gra.* Nerissa, cheer your stranger; bid her welcome. 240

Your hand, Salerio: what's the news from Venice?

How doth that royal merchant, good Antonio?

I know he will be glad of our success;

We are the Jasons, we have won the fleece.

*Saler.* I would you had won the fleece that he hath lost.

*Por.* There are some shrewd contents in your same paper,

That steals the colour from Bassanio's cheek:

Some dear friend dead; else nothing in the world

Could turn so much the constitution

Of any constant man. What, worse and worse!

With leave, Bassanio; I am half yourself, 250

And I must freely have the half of anything

That this same paper brings you.

*Bass.* O sweet Portia,

Here are a few of the unpleasant'st words

That ever blotted paper! Gentle lady,

When I did first impart my love to you,

I freely told you, all the wealth I had

Ran in my veins, I was a gentleman;

And then I told you true: and yet, dear lady,

Rating myself at nothing, you shall see 260

How much I was a bragart. When I told you

My state was nothing, I should then have told you

That I was worse than nothing; for, indeed,

I have engaged myself to a dear friend,

Engaged my friend to his mere enemy,

To feed my means. Here is a letter, lady;

The paper as the body of my friend,

And every word in it a gaping wound,

Issuing life-blood. But is it true, Salerio?

Have all his ventures fail'd? What, not one hit? 270

From Tripolis, from Mexico and England,

From Lisbon, Barbary and India?

And not one vessel 'scape the dreadful touch

Of merchant-marring rocks?

*Saler.* Not one, my lord.

Besides, it should appear, that if he had

The present money to discharge the Jew,

He would not take it. Never did I know

A creature, that did bear the shape of man,

So keen and greedy to confound a man:

He plies the duke at morning and at night, 280

And doth impeach the freedom of the state,

If they deny him justice: twenty merchants,

The duke himself, and the magnificoes

Of greatest port, have all persuaded with him;

But none can drive him from the envious plea

Of forfeiture, of justice and his bond.

*Jes.* When I was with him I have heard him swear

To Tubal and to Chus, his countrymen,

That he would rather have Antonio's flesh

Than twenty times the value of the sum 290

That he did owe him: and I know, my lord,

If law, authority and power deny not,

It will go hard with poor Antonio.

*Por.* Is it your dear friend that is thus in trouble?

*Bass.* The dearest friend to me, the kindest man,

The best-condition'd and unwearied spirit

In doing courtesies, and one in whom

The ancient Roman honour more appears

Than any that draws breath in Italy.

*Por.* What sum owes he the Jew? 300

*Bass.* For me three thousand ducats.

*Por.* What, no more!  
 'ay him six thousand, and deface the bond;  
 Double six thousand, and then treble that,  
 before a friend of this description  
 shall lose a hair through Bassanio's fault.  
 First go with me to church and call me wife,  
 and then away to Venice to your friend;  
 or never shall you lie by Portia's side  
 With an unquiet soul. You shall have gold  
 To pay the petty debt twenty times over: 310  
 When it is paid, bring your true friend along.  
 My maid Nerissa and myself meantime  
 Will live as maids and widows. Come, away!  
 For you shall hence upon your wedding-day:  
 Bid your friends welcome, show a merry cheer:  
 since you are dear bought, I will love you dear.  
 But let me hear the letter of your friend.

*Bass.* [Reads] Sweet Bassanio, my ships have  
 all miscarried, my creditors grow cruel, my estate  
 is very low, my bond to the Jew is forfeit;  
 and since in paying it, it is impossible I should  
 live, all debts are cleared between you and I, if  
 I might but see you at my death. Notwith-  
 standing, use your pleasure: if your love do not  
 persuade you to come, let not my letter.

*Por.* O love, dispatch all business, and be  
 gone!

*Bass.* Since I have your good leave to go  
 away,

I will make haste: but, till I come again,  
 No bed shall e'er be guilty of my stay,  
 No rest be interposer 'twixt us twain. 330

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III. Venice. A street.

Enter SHYLOCK, SALARINO, ANTONIO, and  
 GAOLER.

*Shy.* Gaoler, look to him: tell not me of  
 mercy;

This is the fool that lent out money gratis:

Gaoler, look to him.

*Ant.* Hear me yet, good Shylock.  
*Shy.* I'll have my bond; speak not against  
 my bond:

I have sworn an oath that I will have my bond.  
 Thou call'st me dog before thou haist a cause;  
 But, since I am a dog, beware my fangs:  
 The duke shall grant me justice. I do wonder,  
 Thou naughty gaoler, that thou art so fond  
 To come abroad with him at his request. 10

*Ant.* I pray thee, hear me speak.

*Shy.* I'll have my bond; I will not hear thee  
 speak:

I'll have my bond; and therefore speak no  
 more.

I'll not be made a soft and dull-eyed fool,  
 To shake the head, relent, and sigh, and yield  
 To Christian intercessors. Follow not;

I'll have no speaking: I will have my bond.  
 [*Exit.*]

*Salar.* It is the most impenetrable cur  
 That ever kept with men.

*Ant.* Let him alone:  
 'll follow him no more with bootless prayers.

'e seeks my life; his reason well I know: 21  
 oft deliver'd from his forfeitures  
 any that have at times made moan to me;

Therefore he hates me.

*Salar.* I am sure the duke  
 Will never grant this forfeiture to hold.

*Ant.* The duke cannot deny the course of  
 law:

For the commodity that strangers have  
 With us in Venice, if it be denied,  
 Will much impeach the justice of his state;  
 Since that the trade and profit of the city 30  
 Consisteth of all nations. Therefore, go:  
 These griefs and losses have so bated me,  
 That I shall hardly spare a pound of flesh  
 To-morrow to my bloody creditor.

Well, gaoler, on. Pray God, Bassanio come  
 To see me pay his debt, and then I care not!

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE IV. Belmont. A room in PORTIA'S house.

Enter PORTIA, NERISSA, LORENZO, JESSICA,  
 and BALTHASAR.

*Lor.* Madam, although I speak it in your  
 presence,

You have a noble and a true conceit  
 Of god-like anity: which appears most strongly  
 In bearing thus the absence of your lord.

But if you knew to whom you show this honour,  
 How true a gentleman you send relief,

How dear a lover of my lord your husband,  
 I know you would be prouder of the work  
 Than customary bounty can enforce you.

*Por.* I never did repent for doing good, 10  
 Nor shall not now: for in companions  
 That do converse and waste the time together,  
 Whose souls do bear an equal yoke of love,

There must be needs a like proportion  
 Of lineaments, of manners and of spirit;

Which makes me think that this Antonio,  
 Being the bosom lover of my lord,

Must needs be like my lord. If it be so,  
 How little is the cost I have bestow'd

In purchasing the semblance of my soul 20  
 From out the state of hellish misery!

This comes too near the praising of myself;  
 Therefore no more of it: hear other things.

Lorenzo, I commit into your hands  
 The husbandry and manage of my house

Until my lord's return: for mine own part,  
 I have toward heaven breathed a secret vow

To live in prayer and contemplation,  
 Only attended by Nerissa here,

Until her husband and my lord's return: 30  
 There is a monastery two miles off;

And there will we abide. I do desire you  
 Not to deny this imposition;

The which my love and some necessity  
 Now lays upon you.

*Lor.* Madam, with all my heart;  
 I shall obey you in all fair commands.

*Por.* My people do already know my mind,  
 And will acknowledge you and Jessica

In place of Lord Bassanio and myself.  
 And so farewell, till we shall meet again. 40

*Lor.* Fair thoughts and happy hours attend  
 on you!

*Jes.* I wish your ladyship all heart's content.

*Por.* I thank you for your wish, and am well pleased  
To wish it back on you : fare you well, Jessica.  
[*Exeunt Jessica and Lorenzo.*]

Now, Balthazar,  
As I have ever found thee honest-true,  
So let me find thee still. Take this same letter,  
And use thou all the endeavour of a man  
In speed to Padua : see thou render this  
Into my cousin's hand, Doctor Bellario :  
And, look, what notes and garments he doth  
give thee.

Bring them, I pray thee, with imagined speed  
Unto the tranect, to the common ferry  
Which trades to Venice. Waste no time in  
words,

But get thee gone : I shall be there before thee.  
*Balth.* Madam, I go with all convenient  
speed. [*Exit.*]

*Por.* Come on, Nerissa ; I have work in  
hand  
That you yet know not of : we'll see our hus-  
bands

Before they think of us.

*Ner.* Shall they see us ?  
*Por.* They shall, Nerissa ; but in such a  
habit,

That they shall think we are accomplished  
With that we lack. I'll hold thee any wager,  
When we are both accounted like young men,  
I'll prove the prettier fellow of the two,  
And wear my dagger with the braver grace,  
And speak between the change of man and boy  
With a reed voice, and turn two mincing steps  
Into a manly stride, and speak of frays  
Like a fine bragging youth, and tell quaint lies,  
How honourable ladies sought my love,  
Which I denying, they fell sick and died ;  
I could not do withal ; then I'll repent,  
And wish, for all that, that I had not kill'd  
them ;

And twenty of these puny lies I'll tell,  
That men shall swear I have discontinued school  
Above a twelvemonth. I have within my mind  
A thousand raw tricks of these bragging Jacks,  
Which I will practise.

*Ner.* Why, shall we turn to men ?  
*Por.* Fie, what a question's that.  
If thou wert near a lewd interpreter !  
But come, I'll tell thee all my whole device  
When I am in my coach, which stays for us  
At the park gate ; and therefore haste away,  
For we must measure twenty miles to-day.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. *The same. A garden.*

*Enter LAUNCELOT and JESSICA.*

*Laun.* Yes, truly ; for, look you, the sins of  
the father are to be laid upon the children :  
therefore, I promise ye, I fear you. I was  
always plain with you, and so now I speak my  
agitation of the matter : therefore be of good  
cheer, for truly I think you are damned.  
There is but one hope in it that can do you  
any good ; and that is but a kind of bastard  
hope neither.

*Jes.* And what hope is that, I pray thee ?

*Laun.* Marry, you may partly hope that  
your father got you not, that you are not the  
Jew's daughter.

*Jes.* That were a kind of bastard hope,  
indeed : so the sins of my mother should be  
visited upon me.

*Laun.* Truly then I fear you are damned  
both by father and mother : thus (when I shun  
Scylla, your father, I fall into Charybdis, your  
mother : well, you are gone both ways.)

*Jes.* I shall be saved by my husband ; he  
hath made me a Christian.

*Laun.* Truly, the more to blame he : we were  
Christians enow before ; e'en as many as could  
well live, one by another. This making of Chris-  
tians will raise the price of hogs : if we grow all  
to be pork-eaters, we shall not shortly have a  
rashier on the coals for money.

*Enter LORENZO.*

*Jes.* I'll tell my husband, Launcelot, what  
you say : here he comes.

*Lor.* I shall grow jealous of you shortly,  
Launcelot, if you thus get my wife into corners.

*Jes.* Nay, you need not fear us, Lorenzo :  
Launcelot and I are out. He tells me flatly,  
there is no mercy for me in heaven, because I  
am a Jew's daughter : and he says, you are a  
good member of the commonwealth, for in  
converting Jews to Christians, you raise the price  
of pork.

*Lor.* I shall answer that better to the com-  
monwealth than you can the getting up of the  
negro's belly : the Moor is with child by you,  
Launcelot.

*Laun.* It is much that the Moor should be  
more than reason : but if she be less than an  
honest woman, she is indeed more than I took  
her for.

*Lor.* How every fool can play upon the word !  
I think the best grace of wit will shortly turn  
into silence, and discourse grow commendable  
in none only but parrots. Go in, sirrah ; bid  
them prepare for dinner.

*Laun.* That is done, sir ; they have all  
stomachs.

*Lor.* Goodly Lord, what a wit-snapper art  
you ! then bid them prepare dinner.

*Laun.* That is done too, sir ; only 'cover' is  
the word.

*Lor.* Will you cover then, sir ?

*Laun.* Not so, sir, neither ; I know my  
duty.

*Lor.* Yet more quarrelling with occasion !  
Wilt thou show the whole wealth of thy wit in  
an instant ? I pray thee, understand a plain  
man in his plain meaning : go to thy fellows ;  
bid them cover the table, serve in the meat, and  
we will come in to dinner.

*Laun.* For the table, sir, it shall be served  
in ; for the meat, sir, it shall be covered ; for  
your coming in to dinner, sir, why, let it be as  
humorous and conceits shall govern.

*Lor.* O dear discretion, how his words are  
suited !

The fool hath planted in his memory  
An army of good words ; and I do know  
A many fools, that stand in better place,

Garnish'd like him, that for a tricky word  
Dify the matter. How cheer'st thou, Jessica?  
And now, good sweet, say thy opinion,  
How dost thou like the Lord Bassanio's wife?

*Jes.* Past all expressing. It is very meet  
The Lord Bassanio live an upright life;  
For, having such a blessing in his lady, 80  
He finds the joys of heaven here on earth;  
† And if on earth he do not mean it, then  
In reason he should never come to heaven.  
Why, if two gods should play some heavenly  
match

And on the wager lay two earthly women,  
And Portia one, there must be something else  
Pawn'd with the other, for the poor rude world  
Hath not her fellow.

*Lor.* Even such a husband  
Hast thou of me as she is for a wife.

*Jes.* Nay, but ask my opinion too of that. 90

*Lor.* I will anon: first, let us go to dinner.

*Jes.* Nay, let me praise you while I have a  
stomach.

*Lor.* No, pray thee, let it serve for table-  
talk;

Then, howsoe'er thou speak'st, 'mong other  
things  
I shall digest it.

*Jes.* Well, I'll set you forth. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I. Venice. A court of justice.

*Enter the DUKE, the Magnificos, ANTONIO,  
BASSANIO, GRATIANO, SALERIO, and others.*

*Duke.* What is Antonio here?

*Ant.* Ready, so please your grace.

*Duke.* I am sorry for thee: thou art come  
to answer

A stony adversary, an inhuman wretch  
Un capable of pity, void and empty  
From any dram of mercy.

*Ant.* I have heard  
Your grace hath ta'en great pains to qualify  
His rigorous course; but since he stands ob-  
durate

And that no lawful means can carry me  
Out of his envy's reach, I do oppose 10  
My patience to his fury, and am arm'd  
To suffer, with a quietness of spirit,  
The very tyranny and rage of his.

*Duke.* Go one, and call the Jew into the  
court.

*Saler.* He is ready at the door: he comes,  
my lord.

*Enter SHYLOCK.*

*Duke.* Make room, and let him stand before  
our face.

Shylock, the world thinks, and I think so too,  
That thou but lead'st this fashion of thy malice  
To the last hour of act; and then 'tis thought  
Thou'lt show thy mercy and remorse more  
strange 20

Than is thy strange apparent cruelty;  
And where thou now exact'st the penalty,  
Which is a pound of this poor merchant's flesh,

Thou wilt not only loose the forfeiture,  
But, touch'd with human gentleness and love,  
Forgive a moiety of the principal;  
Glancing an eye of pity on his losses,  
That have of late so huddled on his back,  
Enow to press a royal merchant down  
And pluck commiseration of his state 30  
From brassy bosoms and rough hearts of flint,  
From stubborn Turks and Tartars, never train'd  
To offices of tender courtesy.

We all expect a gentle answer, Jew.

*Shy.* I have possess'd your grace of what I  
purpose;

And by our holy Sabbath have I sworn  
To have the due and forfeit of my bond:  
If you deny it, let the danger light  
Upon your charter and your city's freedom.  
You'll ask me, why I rather choose to have 40  
A weight of carrion flesh than to receive  
Three thousand ducats: I'll not answer that:  
But, say, it is my humour: is it answer'd?  
What if my house be troubled with a rat  
And I be pleas'd to give ten thousand ducats  
To have it baned? What, are you answer'd yet?  
Some men there are love not a gaping pig;  
Some, that are mad if they behold a cat;  
And others, when the bagpipe sings i' the nose,  
Cannot contain their urine: for affection, 50  
Mistress of passion, sways it to the mood  
Of what it likes or loathes. Now, for your  
answer:

As there is no firm reason to be render'd,  
Why he cannot abide a gaping pig;  
Why he, a harmless necessary cat;  
† Why he, a woollen bag-pipe; but of force  
Must yield to such inevitable shame  
As to offend, himself being offended;  
So can I give no reason, nor I will not,  
More than a lodged hate and a certain loathing  
I bear Antonio, that I follow thus 60  
A losing suit against him. Are you answer'd?

*Bass.* This is no answer, thou unfeeling man,  
To excuse the current of thy cruelty.

*Shy.* I am not bound to please thee with my  
answers.

*Bass.* Do all men kill the things they do not  
love?

*Shy.* Hates any man the thing he would not  
kill?

*Bass.* Every offence is not a hate at first.

*Shy.* What, wouldst thou have a serpent  
sting thee twice?

*Ant.* I pray you, think you question with  
the Jew: 70

You may as well go stand upon the beach  
And bid the main flood bate his usual height;  
You may as well use question with the wolf  
Why he hath made the ewe bleat for the lamb;  
You may as well forbid the mountain pines  
To wag their high tops and to make no noise,  
When they are fretten with the gusts of heaven;  
You may as well do any thing most hard,  
As seek to soften that—than which what's  
harder!—

His Jewish heart: therefore, I do beseech you,  
Make no more offers, use no farther means, 80  
But with all brief and plain conveniency  
Let me have judgement and the Jew his will.

*Bass.* For thy three thousand ducats here is six.

*Sky.* If every ducat in six thousand ducats Were in six parts and every part a ducat, I would not draw them; I would have my bond.

*Duke.* How shalt thou hope for mercy, rendering none?

*Sky.* What judgement shall I dread, doing no wrong?

You have among you many a purchased slave, Which, like your asses and your dogs and mules,

You use in abject and in slavish parts, Because you bought them: shall I say to you, Let them be free, marry them to your heirs? Why sweat they under burthens? let their beds Be made as soft as yours and let their palates Be season'd with such viands? You will answer 'The slaves are ours:' so do I answer you: The pound of flesh, which I demand of him, Is dearly bought; 'tis mine and I will have it. If you deny me, lie upon your law!

There is no force in the decrees of Venice. I stand for judgement: answer; shall I have it?

*Duke.* Upon my power I may dismiss this court,

Unless Bellario, a learned doctor, Whom I have sent for to determine this, Come here to-day.

*Saler.* My lord, here stays without A messenger with letters from the doctor, New come from Padua.

*Duke.* Bring us the letters; call the messenger.

*Bass.* Good cheer, Antonio! What, man, courage yet!

The Jew shall have my flesh, blood, bones and all,

Ere thou shalt loose for me one drop of blood.

*Ant.* I am a tainted wether of the flock, Meetest for death: the weakest kind of fruit Drops earliest to the ground; and so let me: You cannot better be employ'd, Bassanio, Than to live still and write mine epitaph.

*Enter NERISSA, dressed like a lawyer's clerk.*

*Duke.* Came you from Padua, from Bellario?

*Ner.* From both, my lord. Bellario greets your grace. *[Presenting a letter.]*

*Bass.* Why dost thou whet thy knife so earnestly?

*Sky.* To cut the forfeiture from that bankrupt there.

*Gra.* Not on thy sole, but on thy soul, harsh Jew,

Thou makest thy knife keen; but no metal can, No, not the hangman's axe, bear half the keenness

Of thy sharp envy. Can no prayers pierce thee?

*Sky.* No, none that thou hast wit enough to make.

*Gra.* O, be thou damn'd, inexorable dog!

And for thy life let justice be accus'd. Thou almost makest me waver in my faith To hold opinion with Pythagoras, That souls of animals infuse themselves Into the trunk of men: thy curish spirit

Govern'd a wolf, who, hang'd for human slaughter,

Even from the gallows did his fell soul fleet, And, whilst thou lay'st in thy unhallow'd dam, Infused itself in thee; for thy desires

Are wolfish, bloody, starved and ravenous.

*Sky.* Till thou canst rail the seal from off my bond,

Thou but offend'st thy lungs to speak so loud: Repair thy wit, good youth, or it will fall To cureless ruin. I stand here for law.

*Duke.* This letter from Bellario doth commend

A young and learned doctor to our court. Where is he?

*Ner.* He attendeth here hard by, To know your answer, whether you'll admit him.

*Duke.* With all my heart. Some three or four of you

Go give him courteous conduct to this place. Meantime the court shall hear Bellario's letter.

*Clerk.* *[Reads.]* Your grace shall understand that at the receipt of your letter I am very sick; but in the instant that your messenger came, in loving visitation was with me a young doctor of Rome; his name is Balthasar. I acquainted him with the cause in controversy between the Jew and Antonio the merchant: we turned o'er many books together: he is furnished with my opinion; which, bettered with his own learning, the greatness whereof I cannot enough commend, comes with him, at my importunity, to fill up your grace's request in my stead. I beseech you, let his lack of years be no impediment to let him lack a reverend estimation; for I never knew so young a body with so old a head. I leave him to your gracious acceptance, whose trial shall better publish his commendation.

*Duke.* You hear the learn'd Bellario, what he writes:

And here, I take it, is the doctor come.

*Enter PORTIA, dressed like a doctor of laws.*

Give me your hand. Come you from old Bellario?

*Por.* I did, my lord.

*Duke.* You are welcome: take your place. Are you acquainted with the difference

That holds this present question in the court?

*Por.* I am inform'd thoroughly of the cause. Which is the merchant here, and which the Jew?

*Duke.* Antonio and old Shylock, both stand forth.

*Por.* Is your name Shylock?

*Sky.* Shylock is my name.

*Por.* Of a strange nature is the suit you follow;

Yet in such rule that the Venetian law Cannot impugn you as you do proceed.

*Ant.* Ay, so he says.

*Por.* Do you confess the bond?

*Ant.* I do.

*Por.* Then must the Jew be merciful.

*Sky.* On what compulsion must I tell me that?

*Por.* The quality of mercy is not strain'd,

It droppeth as the gentle rain from heaven  
 Upon the place beneath : it is twice blest ;  
 'Tis blessed him that gives and him that takes :  
 'Tis mightiest in the mightiest : it becomes  
 The throned monarch better than his crown ;  
 His sceptre shows the force of temporal power,  
 The attribute to awe and majesty,  
 Wherein doth sit the dread and fear of kings ;  
 But mercy is above this sceptred sway ;  
 It is enthroned in the hearts of kings,  
 It is an attribute to God himself ;  
 And earthly power doth then show likest God's  
 When mercy seasons justice. Therefore, Jew,  
 Though justice be thy plea, consider this,  
 That in the course of justice, none of us  
 Should see salvation : we do pray for mercy ;  
 And that same prayer doth teach us all to render  
 The deeds of mercy. I have spoke thus much  
 To mitigate the justice of thy plea ;  
 Which if thou follow, this strict court of Venice  
 Must needs give sentence 'gainst the merchant  
 there.

*Shy.* My deeds upon my head ! I crave the  
 law,

the penalty and forfeit of my bond.

*Por.* Is he not able to discharge the money ?  
*Bass.* Yes, here I tender it for him in the  
 court ;

'Tis twice the sum : if that will not suffice, 'twill  
 be bound to pay it ten times o'er,  
 In forfeit of my hands, my head, my heart :  
 If this will not suffice, it must appear  
 That malice bears down truth. And I beseech  
 you,

Vest once the law to your authority :

Or do a great right, do a little wrong,  
 And curb this cruel devil of his will.

*Por.* It must not be ; there is no power in  
 Venice

to alter a decree established :

'Twill be recorded for a precedent, and many  
 an error by the same example  
 Will rush into the state : it cannot be.

*Shy.* A Daniel come to judgement ! yea, a  
 Daniel !

Wise young judge, how I do honour thee !

*Por.* I pray you, let me look upon the bond.

*Shy.* Here 'tis, most reverend doctor, here  
 it is.

*Por.* Shylock, there's thrice thy money  
 offer'd thee.

*Shy.* An oath, an oath, I have an oath in  
 heaven :

I'll call I lay perjury upon my soul !

But not for Venice.

*Por.* Why, this bond is forfeit ;  
 And lawfully by this the Jew may claim  
 A pound of flesh, to be by him cut off  
 In earnest of the merchant's heart. Be merciful :

Take thrice thy money ; bid me tear the bond.

*Shy.* When it is paid according to the tenour,  
 It doth appear you are a worthy judge ;

You know the law, your exposition  
 Hath been most sound : I charge you by the law,

Which hereof you are a well-deserving pillar,  
 Proceed to judgement : by my soul I swear  
 There is no power in the tongue of man  
 To alter me : I stay here on my bond.

*Ant.* Most heartily I do beseech the court  
 To give the judgement.

*Por.* Why then, thus it is :  
 You must prepare your bosom for his knife.

*Shy.* O noble judge ! O excellent young  
 man !

*Por.* For the intent and purpose of the law  
 Hath full relation to the penalty,

Which here appeareth due upon the bond.

*Shy.* 'Tis very true : O wise and upright  
 judge !

How much more elder art thou than thy looks !

*Por.* Therefore lay bare your bosom.

*Shy.* Ay, his breast :

So says the bond : doth it not, noble judge ?

'Nearest his heart : ' those are the very words.

*Por.* It is so. Are there balance here to  
 weigh

The flesh ?

*Shy.* I have them ready.

*Por.* Have by some surgeon, Shylock, on  
 your charge,

To stop his wounds, lest he do bleed to death.

*Shy.* Is it so nominated in the bond ?

*Por.* It is not so express'd : but what of that ?

'Twere good you do so much for charity.

*Shy.* I cannot find it ; 'tis not in the bond.

*Por.* You, merchant, have you any thing to  
 say ?

*Ant.* But little : I am arm'd and well pre-  
 pared.

Give me your hand, Bassanio : fare you well !

Grieve not that I am fallen to this for you ;

For herein Fortune shows herself more kind

Than is her custom : it is still her use

To let the wretched man outlive his wealth,

To view with hollow eye and wrinkled brow  
 An age of poverty ; from which lingering pen-  
 ance

Of such misery doth she cut me off.

Commend me to your honourable wife :

Tell her the process of Antonio's end ;

Say how I loved you, speak me fair in death ;

And, when the tale is told, bid her be judge

Whether Bassanio had not once a love.

Repent but you that you shall lose your friend,

And he repents not that he pays your debt ;

For if the Jew do cut but deep enough,

I'll pay it presently with all my heart.

*Bass.* Antonio, I am married to a wife

Which is as dear to me as life itself ;

But life itself, my wife, and all the world,

Are not with me esteem'd above thy life :

I would lose all, ay, sacrifice them all

Here to this devil, to deliver you.

*Por.* Your wife would give you little thanks  
 for that.

If she were by, to hear you make the offer.

*Gra.* I have a wife, whom, I protest, I love :

I would she were in heaven, so she could

Entreat some power to change this curriish Jew.

*Ner.* 'Tis well you offer it behind her back ;

The wish would make else an unquiet house.

*Shy.* These be the Christian husbands. I

have a daughter :

Would any of the stock of Barrabas

Had been her husband rather than a Christian !

[Aside.]

We trifle time : I pray thee, pursue sentence.

*Por.* A pound of that same merchant's flesh is thine :

The court awards it, and the law doth give it.

*Shy.* Most rightful judge! 301

*Por.* And you must cut this flesh from off his breast :

The law allows it, and the court awards it.

*Shy.* Most learned judge! A sentence! Come, prepare!

*Por.* Tarry a little; there is something else.

This bond doth give thee here no jot of blood;

The words expressly are 'a pound of flesh:'

Take then thy bond, take thou thy pound of flesh;

But, in the cutting it, if thou dost shed

One drop of Christian blood, thy lands and goods 310

Are, by the laws of Venice, confiscate

Unto the state of Venice.

*Gra.* O upright judge! Mark, Jew : O learned judge!

*Shy.* Is that the law?

*Por.* Thyself shalt see the act :

For, as thou urgest justice, be assured

Thou shalt have justice, more than thou desirest.

*Gra.* O learned judge! Mark, Jew : a learned judge!

*Shy.* I take this offer, then; pay the bond thrice

And let the Christian go.

*Bass.* Here is the money.

*Por.* Soft!

The Jew shall have all justice; soft! no haste : 320

He shall have nothing but the penalty.

*Gra.* O Jew! an upright judge, a learned judge!

*Por.* Therefore prepare thee to cut off the flesh.

Shed thou no blood, nor cut thou less nor more

But just a pound of flesh : if thou cut'st more

Or less than a just pound, be it but so much

As makes it light or heavy in the substance,

Or the division of the twentieth part

Of one poor scruple, nay, if the scale do turn

But in the estimation of a hair, 331

Thou diest and all thy goods are confiscate.

*Gra.* A second Daniel, a Daniel, Jew!

Now, infidel, I have you on the hip.

*Por.* Why doth the Jew pause? take thy forfeiture.

*Shy.* Give me my principal, and let me go.

*Bass.* I have it ready for thee; here it is.

*Por.* He hath refused it in the open court :

He shall have merely justice and his bond. 330

*Gra.* A Daniel, still say I, a second Daniel!

I thank thee, Jew, for teaching me that word.

*Shy.* Shall I not have barely my principal?

*Por.* Thou shalt have nothing but the forfeiture,

To be so taken at thy peril, Jew.

*Shy.* Why, then the devil give him good of it!

I'll stay no longer question.

*Por.* Tarry, Jew :

The law hath yet another hold on you.

It is enacted in the laws of Venice,

If it be proved against an alien

That by direct or indirect attempts

He seek the life of any citizen,

The party 'gainst the which he doth contrive

Shall seize one half his goods ; the other half

Comes to the privy coffer of the state ;

And the offender's life lies in the mercy

Of the duke only, 'gainst all other voice.

In which predicament, I say, thou stand'st ;

For it appears, by manifest proceeding,

That indirectly and directly too

Thou hast contrived against the very life 36

Of the defendant; and thou hast incur'd

The danger formerly by me rehearsed.

Down therefore and beg mercy of the duke.

*Gra.* Beg that thou mayst have leave to hang thyself :

And yet, thy wealth being forfeit to the state,

Thou hast not left the value of a cord ;

Therefore thou must be hang'd at the state's charge.

*Duke.* That thou shalt see the difference of our spirits,

I pardon thee thy life before thou ask it :

For half thy wealth, it is Antonio's ;

The other half comes to the general state,

Which humbleness may drive unto a fine.

*Por.* Ay, for the state, not for Antonio.

*Shy.* Nay, take my life and all : pardon me that :

You take my house when you do take the prop

That doth sustain my house ; you take my life

When you do take the means whereby I live

*Por.* What mercy can you render him, Antonio?

*Gra.* A halter gratis ; nothing else, for God's sake.

*Ant.* So please my lord the duke and all the court

To quit the fine for one half of his goods,

I am content ; so he will let me have

The other half in use, to render it,

Upon his death, unto the gentleman

That lately stole his daughter :

Two things provided more, that, for this favour,

He presently become a Christian ;

The other, that he do record a gift,

Here in the court, of all he dies possess'd,

Unto his son Lorenzo and his daughter.

*Duke.* He shall do this, or else I do recant

The pardon that I late pronounced here.

*Por.* Art thou contented, Jew? what dost thou say?

*Shy.* I am content.

*Por.* Clerk, draw a deed of gift!

*Shy.* I pray you, give me leave to go from hence :

I am not well : send the deed after me,

And I will sign it.

*Duke.* Get thee gone, but do it.

*Gra.* In chrestening shalt thou have two godfathers :

Had I been judge, thou shouldst have had two more,

To bring thee to the gallows, not the font. 40

*Duke.* Sir, I entreat you home with me to dinner.

*Por.* I humbly do desire your grace do pardon :



must away this night toward Padua,  
and it is meet I presently set forth.  
*Duke.* I am sorry that your leisure serves  
you not.

*Antonio, gratify this gentleman,  
or, in my mind, you are much bound to him.*

*[Exeunt Duke and his train.]*

*Bass.* Most worthy gentleman, I and my  
friend

have by your wisdom been this day acquitted  
of grievous penalties; in lieu whereof, 410  
three thousand ducats, due unto the Jew,  
we freely cope your courteous pains withal.

*Ant.* And stand indebted, over and above,  
to love and service to you evermore.

*Por.* He is well paid that is well satisfied;  
and I, delivering you, am satisfied  
and therein do account myself well paid:  
my mind was never yet more mercenary.  
I pray you, know me when we meet again:  
wish you well, and so I take my leave. 420

*Bass.* Dear sir, of force I must attempt you  
further:

I take some remembrance of us, as a tribute,  
not as a fee: grant me two things, I pray you,  
not to deny me, and to pardon me.

*Por.* You press me far, and therefore I will  
yield.

*To Ant.* Give me your gloves, I'll wear them  
for your sake;

*To Bass.* And, for your love, I'll take this  
ring from you:

do not draw back your hand; I'll take no more;  
and you in love shall not deny me this.

*Bass.* This ring, good sir, alas, it is a trifle!  
I will not shame myself to give you this. 431

*Por.* I will have nothing else but only this;  
and now methinks I have a mind to it.

*Bass.* There's more depends on this than on  
the value.

the dearest ring in Venice will I give you,  
and find it out by proclamation:

only for this, I pray you, pardon me.

*Por.* I see, sir, you are liberal in offers:  
you taught me first to beg; and now methinks  
you teach me how a beggar should be answer'd.

*Bass.* Good sir, this ring was given me by  
my wife; 441

and when she put it on, she made me vow  
that I should neither sell nor give nor lose it.

*Por.* That excuse serves many men to save  
their gifts.

and if your wife be not a mad-woman,  
and know how well I have deserved the ring,  
she would not hold out enemy for ever,

or giving it to me. Well, peace be with you!  
*[Exeunt Portia and Nerissa.]*

*Ant.* My Lord Bassanio, let him have the  
ring:

set his deservings and my love withal 450  
be valued 'gainst your wife's commandment.

*Bass.* Go, Gratiano, run and overtake him;  
give him the ring, and bring him, if thou canst,  
unto Antonio's house: away! make haste.

*[Exit Gratiano.]*

Come, you and I will thither presently;  
and in the morning early will we both

fly toward Belmont: come, Antonio. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE II. *The same. A street.*

*Enter PORTIA and NERISSA.*

*Por.* Inquire the Jew's house out, give him  
this deed

And let him sign it: we'll away to-night

And be a day before our husbands home:

This deed will be well welcome to Lorenzo.

*Enter GRATIANO.*

*Gra.* Fair sir, you are well o'er'ta'en:  
My Lord Bassanio upon more advice  
Hath sent you here this ring, and doth entreat  
Your company at dinner.

*Por.* That cannot be:  
His ring I do accept most thankfully:

And so, I pray you, tell him: furthermore, 40  
I pray you, show my youth old Shylock's house.

*Gra.* That will I do.

*Ner.* Sir, I would speak with you.  
*[Aside to Por.]* I'll see if I can get my hus-

band's ring.

Which I did make him swear to keep for ever.  
*Por.* *[Aside to Ner.]* Thou mayst, I warrant.

We shall have old swearing  
That they did give the rings away to men;

But we'll outface them, and outwear them too.  
*[Aloud.]* Away! make haste: thou know'st  
where I will tarry.

*Ner.* Come, good sir, will you show me to  
this house? *[Exeunt.]*

## ACT V.

SCENE I. *Belmont. Avenue to PORTIA'S  
house.*

*Enter LORENZO and JESSICA.*

*Lor.* The moon shines bright: in such a  
night as this,

When the sweet wind did gently kiss the trees  
And they did make no noise, in such a night

Troilus methinks mounted the Trojan walls  
And sigh'd his soul toward the Grecian tents,

Where Cressid lay that night.

*Jes.* In such a night  
Did Thisbe fearfully o'ertrip the dew

And saw the lion's shadow ere himself  
And ran dismay'd away.

*Lor.* In such a night  
Stood Dido with a willow in her hand 40  
Upon the wild sea banks and wail'd her love

To come again to Carthage.

*Jes.* In such a night  
Medea gather'd the enchanted herbs  
That did renew old Æson.

*Lor.* In such a night  
Did Jessica steal from the wealthy Jew

And with an unthrift love did run from Venice  
As far as Belmont.

*Jes.* In such a night  
Did young Lorenzo swear he loved her well,  
Stealing her soul with many vows of faith

And ne'er a true one.

*Lor.* In such a night  
Did pretty Jessica, like a little shrew,  
Slander her love, and he forgave it her

*Jes.* I would out-night you, did no body come;  
But, hark, I hear the footing of a man.

*Enter STEPHANO.*

*Lor.* Who comes so fast in silence of the night?

*Steph.* A friend.

*Lor.* A friend! what friend! your name, I pray you, friend?

*Steph.* Stephano is my name; and I bring word  
My mistress will before the break of day  
Be here at Belmont: she doth stray about 30  
By holy crosses, where she kneels and prays  
For happy wedlock hours.

*Lor.* Who comes with her?

*Steph.* None but a holy hermit and her maid.  
I pray you, is my master yet return'd?

*Lor.* He is not, nor we have not heard from him.

But go we in, I pray thee, Jessica,  
And ceremoniously let us prepare  
Some welcome for the mistress of the house.

*Enter LAUNCELOT.*

*Laun.* Sola, sola! wo ha, ho! sola, sola!

*Lor.* Who calls?

*Laun.* Sola! did you see Master Lorenzo?  
Master Lorenzo, sola, sola! 40

*Lor.* Leave hollaing, man: here.

*Laun.* Sola! where? where?

*Lor.* Here.

*Laun.* Tell him there's a post come from my master, with his horn full of good news: my master will be here ere morning. [*Exit.*]

*Lor.* Sweet soul, let's in, and there expect their coming.

And yet no matter: why should we go in? 50  
My friend Stephano, signify, I pray you,  
Within the house, your mistress is at hand;  
And bring your music forth into the air.

[*Exit Stephano.*]  
How sweet the moonlight sleeps upon this bank!  
Here will we sit and let the sounds of music  
Creep in our ears: soft stillness and the night  
Become the touches of sweet harmony.

Sit, Jessica. Look how the floor of heaven  
Is thick inlaid with patines of bright gold:  
There's not the smallest orb which thou 60  
hold'st

But in his motion like an angel sings,  
Still quiring to the young-eyed cherubins;  
Such harmony is in immortal souls;  
But whilst this muddy vesture of decay  
Doth grossly close it in, we cannot hear it.

*Enter Musicians.*

Come, ho, and wake Diana with a hymn:  
With sweetest touches pierce your mistress' ear  
And draw her home with music. [*Music.*]

*Jes.* I am never merry when I hear sweet music.

*Lor.* The reason is, your spirits are attentive:

For do but note a wild and wanton herd, 70  
Or race of youthful and unhandled colts,

Fetching mad bounds, bellowing and neighing loud,

Which is the hot condition of their blood;  
If they but hear perchance a trumpet sound,  
Or any air of music touch their ears,

You shall perceive them make a mutual gaze,  
Their savage eyes turn'd to a modest gaze  
By the sweet power of music: therefore the

poet  
Did feign that Orpheus drew trees, stones, and

floods;  
Since nought so stockish, hard and full of rage

But music for the time doth change his nature  
The man that hath no music in himself,

Nor is not moved with concord of sweet sounds,  
Is fit for treasons, stratagems and spoils;

The motions of his spirit are dull as night  
And his affections dark as Erebus:

Let no such man be trusted. Mark the music.

*Enter PORTIA and NERISSA.*

*Por.* That light we see is burning in my hall.  
How far that little candle throws his beams! so  
So shines a good deed in a naughty world.

*Ner.* When the moon shone, we did not see the candle.

*Por.* So doth the greater glory dim the less:  
A substitute shines brightly as a king:

Until a king be by, and then his state  
Empties itself, as doth an inland brook

Into the main of waters. Music! hark!

*Ner.* It is your music, madam, of the house.

*Por.* Nothing is good, I see, without respect:  
Methinks it sounds much sweeter than by day.

*Ner.* Silence bestows that virtue on it, madam.

*Por.* The crow doth sing as sweetly as the lark

When neither is attended, and I think  
The nightingale, if she should sing by day,

When every goose is cackling, would be thought  
No better a musician than the wren.

How many things by season season'd are  
To their right praise and true perfection!

Peace, ho! the moon sleeps with Endymion  
And would not be awak'd. [*Music ceases.*]

*Lor.* That is the voice, 10  
Or I am much deceived, of Portia.

*Por.* He knows me as the blind man knows the cuckoo,

By the bad voice.

*Lor.* Dear lady, welcome home.

*Por.* We have been praying for our husbands' healths,

Which speed, we hope, the better for our work  
Are they return'd?

*Lor.* Madam, they are not yet;  
But there is come a messenger before,

To signify their coming.

*Por.* Go in, Nerissa;  
Give order to my servants that they take

No note at all of our being absent hence; 120  
Nor you, Lorenzo; Jessica, nor you.

[*A trumpet sounds.*]  
*Lor.* Your husband is at hand; I hear his trumpet:

We are no tell-tales, madam; fear you not.

*Por.* This night methinks is but the daylight  
sick;  
It looks a little paler: 'tis a day,  
Such as the day is when the sun is hid.

*Enter BASSANIO, ANTONIO, GRATIANO, and  
their followers.*

*Bass.* We should hold day with the Anti-  
podces,  
If you would walk in absence of the sun.

*Por.* Let me give light, but let me not  
be light;

For a light wife doth make a heavy husband, 130  
And never be Bassanio so for me:  
But God sort all! You are welcome home, my  
lord.

*Bass.* I thank you, madam. Give welcome  
to my friend.

This is the man, this is Antonio,  
Whom I am so infinitely bound.

*Por.* You should in all sense be much bound  
to him,

For, as I hear, he was much bound for you.  
*Ant.* No more than I am well acquitted of.

*Por.* Sir, you are very welcome to our house:  
It must appear in other ways than words, 140  
Therefore I scant this breathing courtesy.

*Gra.* [To *Ner.*] By yonder moon I swear  
you do me wrong;

In faith, I gave it to the judge's clerk:  
Would he were gelt that had it, for my part,  
Since you do take it, love, so much at heart.

*Por.* A quarrel, ho, already! what's the  
matter?

*Gra.* About a hoop of gold, a paltry ring  
That she did give me, whose poy was

For all the world like cutler's poetry  
Upon a knife, 'Love me, and leave me not.' 150

*Ner.* What talk you of the poy or the value?  
You swore to me, when I did give it you.

That you would wear it till your hour of death  
And that it should lie with you in your grave:

Though not for me, yet for your vehement  
oaths,

You should have been respective and have  
kept it.

Give it a judge's clerk! no, God's my judge,  
The clerk will ne'er wear hair on's face that  
had it.

*Gra.* He will, an if he live to be a man.

*Ner.* Ay, if a woman live to be a man. 160

*Gra.* Now, by this hand, I gave it to a youth,  
A kind of boy, a little scrubbed boy,

No higher than thyself, the judge's clerk,  
A prating boy, that begg'd it as a fee:

Could not for my heart deny it him.  
*Por.* You were to blame, I must be plain  
with you,

To part so slightly with your wife's first gift;  
A thing stuck on with oaths upon your finger  
And so riveted with faith unto your flesh.

I gave my love a ring and made him swear 170  
Never to part with it; and here he stands;

I dare be sworn for him he would not leave it  
For pluck it from his finger, for the wealth

That the world masters. Now, in faith, Gratiano,  
You give your wife too unkind a cause of grief

"Twere to me, I should be mad at it.

*Bass.* [Aside] Why, I were best to cut my  
left hand off

And swear I lost the ring defending it.

*Gra.* My Lord Bassanio gave his ring away  
Unto the judge that begg'd it and indeed 180

Deserved it too; and then the boy, his clerk,  
That took some pains in writing, he begg'd

mine;  
And neither man nor master would take aught  
But the two rings.

*Por.* What ring gave you, my lord?  
Not that, I hope, which you received of me.

*Bass.* If I could add a lie unto a fault,  
I would deny it; but you see my finger

Hath not the ring upon it; it is gone.  
*Por.* Even so void is your false heart of  
truth.

By heaven, I will ne'er come in your bed 190  
Until I see the ring.

*Ner.* Nor I in yours  
Till I again see mine.

*Bass.* Sweet Portia,  
If you did know to whom I gave the ring,

If you did know for whom I gave the ring  
And would conceive for what I gave the ring

And how unwillingly I left the ring,  
When nought would be accepted but the ring,

You would abate the strength of your dis-  
pleasure.

*Por.* If you had known the virtue of the  
ring,

Or half her worthiness that gave the ring, 200  
Or your own honour to contain the ring,

You would not then have parted with the ring.  
What man is there so much unreasonable,

If you had pleased to have defended it  
With any terms of zeal, wanted the modesty

To urge the thing held as a ceremony?  
Nerissa teaches me what to believe:

I'll die for't but some woman had the ring.  
*Bass.* No, by my honour, madam, by my  
soul,

No woman had it, but a civil doctor, 210  
Which did refuse three thousand ducats of me

And begg'd the ring; the which I did deny him  
And suffer'd him to go displeased away;

Even he that did uphold the very life  
Of my dear friend. What should I say, sweet  
lady?

I was enforced to send it after him;  
I was beset with shame and courtesy;

My honour would not let ingratitude  
So much besmear it. Pardon me, good lady;

For, by these blessed candles of the night, 220  
Had you been there, I think you would have  
begg'd

The ring of me to give the worthy doctor.  
*Por.* Let not that doctor e'er come near my  
house:

Since he hath got the jewel that I loved,  
And that which you did swear to keep for me,

I will become as liberal as you;  
I'll not deny him any thing I have,

No, not my body nor my husband's bed:  
Know him I shall, I am well sure of it:

Lie not a night from home; watch me like  
Argus:

If you do not, if I be left alone, 230

Now, by mine honour, which is yet mine own,  
I'll have that doctor for my bedfellow.

*Ner.* And I his clerk; therefore be well advised

How you do leave me to mine own protection.  
*Gra.* Well, do you so: let not me take him, then;

For if I do, I'll mar the young clerk's pen.

*Ant.* I am the unhappy subject of these quarrels.

*Por.* Sir, grieve not you; you are welcome notwithstanding.

*Bass.* Portia, forgive me this enforced wrong; 240

And, in the hearing of these many friends,  
I swear to thee, even by thine own fair eyes,  
Wherein I see myself—

*Por.* Mark you but that!  
In both my eyes he doubly sees himself;  
In each eye, one: swear by your double self,  
And there's an oath of credit.

*Bass.* Nay, but hear me:  
Pardon this fault, and by my soul I swear  
I never more will break an oath with thee.

*Ant.* I once did lend my lady for his wealth;  
Which, but for him that had your husband's ring, 250

Had quite miscarried: I dare be bound again,  
My soul upon the forfeit, that your lord  
Will never more break faith advisedly.

*Por.* Then you shall be his surety. Give him this

And bid him keep it better than the other.

*Ant.* Here, Lord Bassanio; swear to keep this ring.

*Bass.* By heaven, it is the same I gave the doctor!

*Por.* I had it of him: pardon me, Bassanio;  
For, by this ring, the doctor lay with me. 250

*Ner.* And pardon me, my gentle Gratiano;  
For that same scrubbed boy, the doctor's clerk,  
In lieu of this last night did lie with me.

*Gra.* Why, this is like the mending of highways

In summer, where the ways are fair enough:  
What, are we cuckolds ere we have deserved it?

*Por.* Speak not so grossly. You are all amazed:

Here is a letter; read it at your leisure;

It comes from Padua, from Bellario;  
There you shall find that Portia was the doctor,  
Nerissa there her clerk; Lorenzo here 270  
Shall witness I set forth as soon as you  
And even but now return'd; I have not yet  
Enter'd my house. Antonio, you are welcome  
And I have better news in store for you  
Than you expect: unseal this letter soon;  
There you shall find three of your purposes  
Are richly come to harbour suddenly:  
You shall not know by what strange accident  
I chanced on this letter.

*Ant.* I am dumb.  
*Bass.* Were you the doctor and I knew you not?

*Gra.* Were you the clerk that is to make a cuckold?

*Ner.* Ay, but the clerk that never means do it.

Unless he live until he be a man.

*Bass.* Sweet doctor, you shall be my best fellow:

When I am absent, then lie with my wife.

*Ant.* Sweet lady, you have given me life and living;

For here I read for certain that my ships  
Are safely come to road.

*Por.* How now, Lorenzo!  
My clerk hath some good comforts too for you.

*Ner.* Ay, and I'll give them him without fee. 29

There do I give to you and Jessica,  
From the rich Jew, a special deed of gift,  
After his death, of all he dies possess'd of.

*Lor.* Fair ladies, you drop manna in the way  
Of starved people.

*Por.* It is almost morning,  
And yet I am sure you are not satisfied  
Of these events at full. Let us go in;

And charge us there upon interrogatories,  
And we will answer all things faithfully.

*Gra.* Let it be so: the first interrogatory is  
That my Nerissa shall be sworn on it,

Whether till the next night she had rather stay  
Or go to bed now, being two hours to day;

But were the day come, I should wish it dark  
That I were couching with the doctor's clerk.

Well, while I live I'll fear no other thing  
So sore as keeping safe Nerissa's ring. [*Exeunt*]

# AS YOU LIKE IT

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

DUKE, living in banishment.  
 FREDERICK, his brother, and usurper of his dominions.  
 AMIENS, } lords attending on the banished  
 JAMES, } duke.  
 LE BEAU, a courtier attending upon Frederick.  
 CHARLES, wrestler to Frederick.  
 OLIVER, } sons of Sir Rowland de Boys.  
 JAMES, }  
 ORLANDO, }  
 ADAM, } servants to Oliver.  
 JENNIS, }  
 TOUCHSTONE, a clown.

SIR OLIVER MARTEXT, a vicar.  
 CORIN, } shepherds.  
 SILVIUS, }  
 WILLIAM, a country fellow, in love with Audrey.  
 A person representing Hymen.  
 ROSALIND, daughter to the banished duke.  
 CELIA, daughter to Frederick.  
 PHERR, a shepherdess.  
 AUDREY, a country wench.  
 Lords, pages, and attendants, &c.  
 SCENE: *Oliver's house; Duke Frederick's court; and the Forest of Arden.*

## ACT I.

### SCENE I. *Orchard of OLIVER's house.*

*Enter ORLANDO and ADAM.*

Orl. As I remember, Adam, it was upon is fashion; bequeathed me by will but poor a ousand crowns, and, as thou sayest, charged y brother, on his blessing, to breed me well: id there begins my sadness. My brother uques he keeps at school, and report speaks idently of his profit: for my part, he keeps me stically at home, or, to speak more properly, ys me here at home unkept; for call you at keeping for a gentleman of my birth, that fiers not from the stalling of an ox? His rses are bred better; for, besides that they e fair with their feeding, they are taught their anage, and to that end riders dearly hired: t I, his brother, gain nothing under him but owth; for the which his animals on his dungs are as much bound to him as I. Besides is nothing that he so plentifully gives me, the mething that nature gave me his countenance ems to take from me: he lets me feed with s hinds, bars me the place of a brother, and, : much as in him lies, mines my gentility with y education. This is it, Adam, that grieves e; and the spirit of my father, which I think within me, begins to mutiny against this vritude: I will no longer endure it, though yet know no wise remedy how to avoid it.

Adam. Yourer comes my master, your rother.

Orl. Go apart, Adam, and thou shalt hear ow he will shake me up.

*Enter OLIVER.*

Oli. Now, sir! what make you here?

Orl. Nothing: I am not taught to make any thing.

Oli. What mar you then, sir?

Orl. Marry, sir, I am helping you to mar that which God made, a poor unworthy brother of yours, with idleness.

Oli. Marry, sir, be better employed, and be naught awhile.

Orl. Shall I keep your hogs and eat husks with them? What prodigal portion have I spent, that I should come to such penury?

Oli. Know you where you are, sir?

Orl. O, sir, very well: here in your orchard.

Oli. Know you before whom, sir?

Orl. Ay, better than him I am before knows me. I know you are my eldest brother; and, in the gentle condition of blood, you should so know me. The courtesy of nations allows you my better, in that you are the first-born; but the same tradition takes not away my blood, were there twenty brothers betwixt us: I have as much of my father in me as you; albeit, I confess, your coming before me is nearer to his reverence.

Oli. What, boy!

Orl. Come, come, elder brother, you are too young in this.

Oli. Wilt thou lay hands on me, villain?

Orl. I am no villain; I am the youngest son of Sir Rowland de Boys; he was my father, and he is thrice a villain that says such a father begot villains. Wert thou not my brother, I would not take this hand from thy throat till this other had

pulled out thy tongue for saying so: thou hast railed on myself.

*Adam.* Sweet masters, be patient: for your father's remembrance, be at accord.

*Oli.* Let me go, I say.

*Oli.* I will not, till I please: you shall hear me. My father charged you in his will to give me good education: you have trained me like a peasant, obscuring and hiding from me all gentleman-like qualities. The spirit of my father grows strong in me, and I will no longer endure it: therefore allow me such exercises as may become a gentleman, or give me the poor allottery my father left me by testament; with that I will go buy my fortunes.

*Oli.* And what wilt thou do? beg, when that is spent? Well, sir, get you in: I will not long be troubled with you; you shall have some part of your will: I pray you, leave me.

*Oli.* I will no further offend you than becomes me for my good.

*Oli.* Get you with him, you old dog.

*Adam.* Is 'old dog' my reward? Most true, I have lost my teeth in your service. God be with my old master! he would not have spoke such a word. [*Exeunt Orlando and Adam.*]

*Oli.* Is it even so? I begin you to grow upon me! I will physic your rankness, and yet give no thousand crowns neither. Holla, Dennis!

*Enter DENNIS.*

*Den.* Calls your worship?

*Oli.* Was not Charles, the duke's wrestler, here to speak with me?

*Den.* So please you, he is here at the door and importunes access to you.

*Oli.* Call him in. [*Exit Dennis.*] 'Twill be a good way; and to-morrow the wrestling is.

*Enter CHARLES.*

*Cha.* Good morrow to your worship. 100

*Oli.* Good Monsieur Charles, what's the new news at the new court?

*Cha.* There's no news at the court, sir, but the old news: that is, the old duke is banished by his younger brother the new duke; and three or four loving lords have put themselves into voluntary exile with him, whose lands and revenues enrich the new duke; therefore he gives them good leave to wander.

*Oli.* Can you tell if Rosalind, the duke's daughter, be banished with her father? 111

*Cha.* O, no; for the duke's daughter, her cousin, so loves her, being ever from their cradles bred together, that she would have followed her exile, or have died to stay behind her. She is at the court, and no less beloved of her uncle than his own daughter; and never two ladies loved as they do.

*Oli.* Where will the old duke live? 119

*Cha.* They say he is already in the forest of Arden, and a many merry men with him; and there they live like the old Robin Hood of England: they say many young gentlemen flock to him every day, and fleet the time carelessly, as they did in the golden world.

*Oli.* What, you wrestle to-morrow before the new duke?

*Cha.* Marry, do I, sir; and I came to acquaint you with a matter. I am given sir, secretly to understand that your younger brother Orlando hath a disposition to come in disguised against me to try a fall. To-morrow sir, I wrestle for my credit; and he that escapes me without some broken limb shall acquit him well. Your brother is but young and tender, and, for your love, I would be loath to foil him as I must, for my own honour, if he come in: therefore, out of my love to you, I came hither to acquaint you withal, that either you might stay him from his intendment or brook such disgrace well as he shall run into, in that it is; thing of his own search and altogether against my will.

*Oli.* Charles, I thank thee for thy love to me, which thou shalt find I will most kindly requite. I had myself notice of my brother's purpose herein and have by underhand means laboured to dissuade him from it, but he is resolute. I'll tell thee, Charles: it is the stubbornest young fellow of France, full of ambition, an envious emulator of every man's good parts, a secret and villanous contriver against me his natural brother: therefore use thy discretion; I had as lief thou didst break his neck as his finger. And thou wert best look to't; for if thou dost him any slight—grace or if he do not mightily grace himself on thee, he will practise against thee by poison, entrap thee by some treacherous device and never leave thee till he hath taken thy life by some indirect means or other; for, I assure thee, and almost with tears I speak it, there's not one so young and so villanous this day living. I speak but brotherly of him; let should I anatomize him to thee as he is, I must blush and weep and thou must look pale and wonder.

*Cha.* I am heartily glad I came hither to you. If he come to-morrow, I'll give him his payment: if ever he go alone again, I'll new wrestle for prize more: and so God keep your worship!

*Oli.* Farewell, good Charles. [*Exit Charles.*] Now will I stir this gamester: I hope I shall see an end of him; for my soul, yet I know not why, hates nothing more than he. Yet he's gentle, never schooled and yet learned, full of noble device, of all sorts enchantingly beloved, and indeed so much in the heart of the world, and especially of my own people, who best know him, that I am altogether misprised: but it shall not be so long; this wrestler shall clear all: nothing remains but that I kindle the boy thither; which now I'll go about. [*Exit.*]

SCENE II. *Lawn before the DUKE'S palace.*

*Enter CELIA and ROSALIND.*

*Cel.* I pray thee, Rosalind, sweet my cousin, merry.

*Ros.* Dear Celia, I show more mirth than I am mistress of; and would you yet I were merrier! Unless you could teach me to forget

banished father, you must not learn me how to remember any extraordinary pleasure.

*Cel.* Herein I see thou lovest me not with full weight that I love thee. If my uncle, my banished father, had banished thy uncle, my duke my father, so thou hadst been still with me, I could have taught my love to take my father for mine: so wouldst thou, if the truth of thy love to me were so righteously imprinted as mine is to thee.

*Ros.* Well, I will forget the condition of my fate, to rejoice in yours.

*Cel.* You know my father hath no child but nor none is like to have: and, truly, when dies, thou shalt be his heir, for what he hath ken away from thy father perforce, I will render thee again in affection; by mine honour, 'Tis; and when I break that oath, let me turn monster: therefore, my sweet Rose, my dear one, be merry.

*Ros.* From henceforth I will, coz, and devise orders. Let me see; what think you of falling love?

*Cel.* Marry, I prithee, do, to make sport withal: but love no man in good earnest; nor further in sport neither than with safety of pure blush thou mayst in honour come off again.

*Ros.* What shall be our sport, then?

*Cel.* Let us sit and mock the good housewife Fortune from her wheel, that her gifts may in us be bestowed equally.

*Ros.* I would we could do so, for her benefits are mightily misplaced, and the bountiful blind man doth most mistake in her gifts to women.

*Cel.* 'Tis true; for those that she makes fair she scarce makes honest, and those that she makes honest she makes very ill-favour'dly.

*Ros.* Nay, now thou goest from Fortune's grace to Nature's: Fortune reigns in gifts of the world, not in the lineaments of Nature.

*Enter TOUCHSTONE.*

*Cel.* No! when Nature hath made a fair creature, may she not by Fortune fall into the net? Though Nature hath given us wit to flout Fortune, hath not Fortune sent in this fool to cut off the argument?

*Ros.* Indeed, there is Fortune too hard for Nature, when Fortune makes Nature's natural cutter-off of Nature's wit.

*Cel.* Peradventure this is not Fortune's work either, but Nature's; who perceiveth our natural wits too dull to reason of such goddesses and hath sent this natural for our whetstone; for always the dulness of the fool is the whetstone of the wits. How now, wit! whither under you?

*Touch.* Mistress, you must come away to my father.

*Cel.* Were you made the messenger?

*Touch.* No, by mine honour, but I was bid come for you.

*Ros.* Where learned you that oath, fool?

*Touch.* Of a certain knight that swore by his honour they were good pancakes and swore 'till he stood to it, the pancakes were naught and

the mustard was good, and yet was not the knight forsworn.

*Cel.* How prove you that, in the great heap of your knowledge?

*Ros.* Ay, marry, now unmuzzle your wisdom.

*Touch.* Stand you both forth now: stroke your chins, and swear by your beards that I am a knave.

*Cel.* By our beards, if we had them, thou art.

*Touch.* By my knavery, if I had it, then I were; but if you swear by that that is not, you are not forsworn: no more was this knight, swearing by his honour, for he never had any; or if he had, he had sworn it away before ever he saw those pancakes or that mustard.

*Cel.* Prithee, who is't that thou meanest?

*Touch.* One that old Frederick, your father, loves.

*Cel.* My father's love is enough to honour him: enough! speak no more of him; you'll be whipped for taxation one of these days.

*Touch.* The more pity, that fools may not speak wisely what wise men do foolishly.

*Cel.* By my troth, thou sayest true; for since the little wit that fools have was silenced, the little foolery that wise men have makes a great show. Here comes Monsieur Le Beau.

*Ros.* With his month full of news.

*Cel.* Which he will put on us, as pigeons feed their young.

*Ros.* Then shall we be news-crammed.

*Cel.* All the better; we shall be the more marketable.

*Enter LE BEAU.*

Bon jour, Monsieur Le Beau: what's the news?

*Le Beau.* Fair princess, you have lost much good sport.

*Cel.* Sport! of what colour?

*Le Beau.* What colour, madam! how shall I answer you?

*Ros.* As wit and fortune will.

*Touch.* Or as the Destinies decree.

*Cel.* Well said: that was laid on with a trowel.

*Touch.* Nay, if I keep not my rank,—

*Ros.* Thou lovest thy old smell.

*Le Beau.* You amaze me, ladies: I would have told you of good wrestling, which you have lost the sight of.

*Ros.* Yet tell us the manner of the wrestling.

*Le Beau.* I will tell you the beginning; and, if it please your ladyships, you may see the end; for the best is yet to do; and here, where you are, they are coming to perform it.

*Cel.* Well, the beginning, that is dead and buried.

*Le Beau.* There comes an old man and his three sons,—

*Cel.* I could match this beginning with an old tale.

*Le Beau.* Three proper young men, of excellent growth and presence.

*Ros.* With bills on their necks, 'Be it known unto all men by these presents.'

*Le Beau.* The eldest of the three wrestled with Charles, the duke's wrestler; which Charles

in a moment threw him and broke three of his ribs, that there is little hope of life in him: so he served the second, and so the third. Yonder they lie; the poor old man, their father, making such pitiful dole over them that all the beholders take his part with weeping. 140

*Ros.* Alas!

*Touch.* But what is the sport, monsieur, that the ladies have lost?

*Le Beau.* Why, this that I speak of.

*Touch.* Thus men may grow wiser every day: it is the first time that ever I heard breaking of ribs was sport for ladies.

*Cel.* Or I, I promise thee.

*Ros.* But is there any else longs to see this broken music in his sides? is there yet another dotes upon rib-breaking? Shall we see this wrestling, cousin?

*Le Beau.* You must, if you stay here; for here is the place appointed for the wrestling, and they are ready to perform it.

*Cel.* Yonder, sure, they are coming: let us now stay and see it.

*Flourish.* Enter DUKE FREDERICK, Lords, ORLANDO, CHARLES, and Attendants.

*Duke F.* Come on: since the youth will not be entreated, his own peril on his forwardness.

*Ros.* Is yonder the man? 160

*Le Beau.* Even he, madam.

*Cel.* Alas, he is too young! yet he looks successfully.

*Duke F.* How now, daughter and cousin! are you crept hither to see the wrestling?

*Ros.* Ay, my liege, so please you give us leave.

*Duke F.* You will take little delight in it, I can tell you: there is such odds in the man. In pity of the challenger's youth I would fain dissuade him, but he will not be entreated. Speak to him, ladies; see if you can move him.

*Cel.* Call him hither, good Monsieur Le Beau.

*Duke F.* Do so: I'll not be by.

*Le Beau.* Monsieur the challenger, the princesses call for you.

*Orl.* I attend them with all respect and duty.

*Ros.* Young man, have you challenged Charles the wrestler? 170

*Orl.* No, fair princess; he is the general challenger: I come but in, as others do, to try with him the strength of my youth.

*Cel.* Young gentleman, your spirits are too bold for your years. You have seen cruel proof of this man's strength: if you saw yourself with your eyes or knew yourself with your judgement, the fear of your adventure would counsel you to a more equal enterprise. We pray you, for your own sake, to embrace your own safety and give over this attempt. 190

*Ros.* Do, young sir; your reputation shall not therefore be misprised: we will make it our suit to the duke that the wrestling might not go forward.

*Orl.* I beseech you, punish me not with your hard thoughts; wherein I confess me much guilty, to deny so fair and excellent ladies any thing. But let your fair eyes and gentle wishes go with me to my trial: wherein if I be foiled,

there is but one shamed that was never gracious if killed, but one dead that is willing to be so: shall do my friends no wrong, for I have now to lament me, the world no injury, for in it have nothing; only in the world I fill up place, which may be better supplied when have made it empty.

*Ros.* The little strength that I have, I would it were with you.

*Cel.* And mine, to eke out hers.

*Ros.* Fare you well: pray heaven I be deceived in you!

*Cel.* Your heart's desires be with you!

*Cha.* Come, where is this young gallant that is so desirous to lie with his mother earth?

*Orl.* Ready, sir; but his will hath in it; more modest working.

*Duke F.* You shall try but one fall.

*Cha.* No, I warrant your grace, you shall entreat him to a second, that have so might persuaded him from a first.

*Orl.* An you mean to mock me after, y should not have mocked me before: but thus your ways.

*Ros.* Now Hercules be thy speed, young man!

*Cel.* I would I were invisible, to catch this strong fellow by the leg. [They wrestle.

*Ros.* O excellent young man!

*Cel.* If I had a thunderbolt in mine eye, can tell who should down.

[Shout. Charles is thrown.

*Duke F.* No more, no more.

*Orl.* Yes, I beseech your grace: I am yet well breathed.

*Duke F.* How dost thou, Charles?

*Le Beau.* He cannot speak, my lord.

*Duke F.* Bear him away. What is thy name, young man?

*Orl.* Orlando, my liege; the youngest son of Sir Rowland de Boys.

*Duke F.* I would thou hadst been son to some man else:

The world esteem'd thy father honourable, But I did find him still mine enemy: Thou shouldst have better pleased me with this deed,

Hadst thou descended from another house, But fare thee well; thou art a gallant youth: I would thou hadst told me of another father.

[Exeunt Duke Fred., train, and Le Beau.

*Cel.* Were I my father, coz, would I do this.

*Orl.* I am more proud to be Sir Rowland's son,

His youngest son; and would not change that calling,

To be adopted heir to Frederick.

*Ros.* My father loved Sir Rowland as soul,

And all the world was of my father's mind: Had I before known this young man his son,

I should have given him tears unto entreaties Ere he should thus have ventured.

*Cel.* Gentle cousin

Let us go thank him and encourage him: My father's rough and envious disposition

Sticks me at heart. Sir, you have well deserved: If you do keep your promises in love



not justly, as you have exceeded all promise,  
our mistress shall be happy.

*Ros.* Gentleman,  
[*Giving him a chain from her neck.*  
Fear this for me, one out of suits with fortune,  
that could give more, but that her hand lacks  
means.

shall we go, coz?

*Cel.* Ay. Fare you well, fair gentleman.  
*Orl.* Can I not say, I thank you? My better  
parts  
are all thrown down, and that which here  
stands up

is but a quintain, a mere lifeless block.

*Ros.* He calls us back: my pride fell with  
my fortunes:

'I'll ask him what he would. Did you call, sir?  
ir, you have wrestled well and overthrown  
lore than your enemies.

*Cel.* Will you go, coz?

*Ros.* Have with you. Fare you well.

[*Exeunt Rosalind and Celia.*  
*Orl.* What passion hangs these weights upon  
my tongue?

cannot speak to her, yet she urged conference.  
poor Orlando, thou art overthrown! 271  
or Charles or something weaker masters thee.

*Re-enter LE BEAU.*

*Le Beau.* Good sir, I do in friendship counsel  
you

to leave this place. Albeit you have deserved  
high commendation, true applause and love,  
yet such is now the duke's condition

that he misconstrues all that you have done.  
no duke is humorous: what he is indeed,  
fore suits you to conceive than I to speak of.

*Orl.* I thank you, sir: and, pray you, tell  
me this; 280

Which of the two was daughter of the duke  
that here was at the wrestling?

*Le Beau.* Neither his daughter, if we judge  
by manners;

but yet indeed the lesser is his daughter:  
the other is daughter to the banish'd duke,  
and here detain'd by her usurping uncle,  
to keep his daughter company; whose loves  
are dearer than the natural bond of sisters.

But I can tell you that of late this duke  
hath taken displeasure 'gainst his gentle niece,  
grounded upon no other argument 291

but that the people praise her for her virtues  
and pity her for her good father's sake;  
and, on my life, his malice 'gainst the lady  
will suddenly break forth. Sir, fare you well:  
hereafter, in a better world than this,

shall desire more love and knowledge of you.  
*Orl.* I rest much bounden to you: fare you  
well. [*Exit Le Beau.*

Thus must I from the smoke into the smother;  
from tyrant duke unto a tyrant brother: 300  
but heavenly Rosalind!

[*Exit.*

SCENE III. A room in the palace.

*Enter CELIA and ROSALIND.*

*Cel.* Why, cousin! why, Rosalind! Cupid  
have mercy! not a word!

*Ros.* Not one to throw at a dog.

*Cel.* No, thy words are too precious to be  
cast away upon curs; throw some of them at  
me; come, lame me with reasons.

*Ros.* Then there were two cousins laid up;  
when the one should be lamed with reasons and  
the other mad without any.

*Cel.* But is all this for your father? 30

*Ros.* No, some of it is for my child's father.  
O, how full of bribes is this working-day world!

*Cel.* They are but burs, cousin, thrown upon  
thee in holiday foolery: if we walk not in the  
trodden paths, our very petticoats will catch  
them.

*Ros.* I could shake them off my coat: these  
burs are in my heart.

*Cel.* Hem them away.

*Ros.* I would try, if I could cry 'hem' and  
have him. 30

*Cel.* Come, come, wrestle with thy affections.

*Ros.* O, they take the part of a better wrestler  
than myself!

*Cel.* O, a good wish upon you! you will try  
in time, in despite of a fall. But, turning these  
jests out of service, let us talk in good earnest:  
is it possible, on such a sudden, you should fall  
into so strong a liking with old Sir Rowland's  
youngest son?

*Ros.* The duke my father loved his father  
dearly. 31

*Cel.* Doth it therefore ensue that you should  
love his son dearly? By this kind of chase, I  
should hate him, for my father hated his father  
dearly; yet I hate not Orlando.

*Ros.* No, faith, hate him not, for my sake.

*Cel.* Why should I not? doth he not deserve  
well?

*Ros.* Let me love him for that, and do you  
love him because I do. Look, here comes the  
duke. 41

*Cel.* With his eyes full of anger.

*Enter DUKE FREDERICK, with Lords.*

*Duke F.* Mistress, dispatch you with your  
safest haste

And get you from our court.

*Ros.* Me, uncle?

*Duke F.* You, cousin:  
Within these ten days if that thou be'st found  
So near our public court as twenty miles,  
Thou diest for it.

*Ros.* I do beseech your grace,  
Let me the knowledge of my fault bear with me:  
If with myself I hold intelligence

Or have acquaintance with mine own desires, 50  
If that I do not dream or be not frantic,—

As I do trust I am not—then, dear uncle,  
Never so much as in a thought unborn  
Did I offend your highness.

*Duke F.* Thus do all traitors:  
If their purgation did consist in words,

They are as innocent as grace itself:  
Let it suffice thee that I trust thee not.

*Ros.* Yet your mistrust cannot make me a  
traitor:

Tell me whereon the likelihood depends.

*Duke F.* Thou art thy father's daughter;  
there's enough. 60

*Ros.* So was I when your highness took his dukedom;  
So was I when your highness banish'd him:  
Treason is not inherited, my lord;  
Or, if we did derive it from our friends,  
What's that to me? my father was no traitor;  
Then, good my liege, mistake me not so much  
To think my poverty is treacherous.

*Cel.* Dear sovereign, hear me speak.

*Duke F.* Ay, Celia; we stay'd her for your sake,  
Else had she with her father ranged along.

*Cel.* I did not then entreat to have her stay;  
It was your pleasure and your own remorse:  
I was too young that time to value her;  
But now I know her: if she be a traitor,  
Why so am I; we still have slept together,  
Rose at an instant, learn'd, play'd, eat together,  
And wheresoe'er we went, like Juno's swans,  
Still we went coupled and inseparable.

*Duke F.* She is too subtle for thee; and her smoothness,

Her very silence and her patience  
Speak to the people, and they pity her.  
Thou art a fool: she robs thee of thy name;  
And thou wilt show more bright and seem more virtuous

When she is gone. Then open not thy lips:  
Firm and irrevocable is my doom  
Which I have pass'd upon her; she is banish'd.

*Cel.* Pronounce that sentence then on me,  
my liege:

I cannot live out of her company.

*Duke F.* You are a fool. You, niece, provide yourself:

If you outstay the time, upon mine honour,  
And in the greatness of my word, you die.

[*Exeunt Duke Frederick and Lords.*  
*Cel.* O my poor Rosalind, whither wilt thou go?

Wilt thou change fathers? I will give thee mine.

I charge thee, be not thou more griev'd than I am.

*Ros.* I have more cause.

*Cel.* Thou hast not, cousin;  
Prithee, be cheerful: know'st thou not, the duke  
Hath banish'd me, his daughter?

*Ros.* That he hath not.  
*Cel.* No, hath not? Rosalind lacks then the love

Which teacheth thee that thou and I am one:  
Shall we be sunder'd? shall we part, sweet girl?  
No: let my father seek another heir.

Therefore devise with me how we may fly,  
Whither to go and what to bear with us;  
And do not seek to take your change upon you,  
To bear your griefs yourself and leave me out;  
For, by this heaven, now at our sorrows pale,  
Say what thou canst, I'll go along with thee.

*Ros.* Why, whither shall we go?

*Cel.* To seek my uncle in the forest of Arden.

*Ros.* Alas, what danger will it be to us,  
Maids as we are, to travel forth so far!

Beauty provoketh thieves sooner than gold.  
*Cel.* I'll put myself in poor and mean attire  
And with a kind of umber smirch my face;

The like do you: so shall we pass along

And never stir assailants.

*Ros.* Were it not better,  
Because that I am more than common tall,  
That I did suit me all points like a man?  
A gallant curtle-axe upon my thigh,  
A boar-spear in my hand; and—in my heart  
Lie there what hidden woman's fear there will.  
We'll have a swashing and a martial outside,  
As many other innish cowards have  
That do outface it with their semblances.

*Cel.* What shall I call thee when thou  
a man?

*Ros.* I'll have no worse a name than Jove  
own page;

And therefore look you call me Ganymede.  
But what wilt thou be call'd?

*Cel.* Something that hath a reference to my  
state;

No longer Celia, but Aliena.

*Ros.* But, cousin, what if we assay'd to sta  
The clownish fool out of your father's court?  
Would he not be a comfort to our travel?

*Cel.* He'll go along o'er the wide world  
with me;

Leave me alone to woo him. Let's away,  
And get our jewels and our wealth together,  
Devise the fittest time and safest way  
To hide us from pursuit that will be made  
After my flight. Now go we in content  
To liberty and not to banishment.

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. The Forest of Arden.

*Enter DUKE senior, AMIENS, and two or  
three Lords, like foresters.*

*Duke S.* Now, my co-mates and brothers:  
exile,

Hath not old custom made this life more sweet  
Than that of painted pomp? Are not these  
woods

More free from peril than the envious court?  
Here feel we but the penalty of Adam,  
The seasons' difference, as the icy fang  
And churlish chiding of the winter's wind.

Which, when it bites and blows upon my body,  
Even till I shrink with cold, I smile and say  
'This is no flattery: these are counsellors'

'That feelingly persuade me what I am.  
Sweet are the uses of adversity,  
Which, like the toad, ugly and venomous,  
Wears yet a precious jewel in his head;

And this our life exempt from public haunt  
Finds tongues in trees, books in the running  
brooks,

Sermons in stones and good in every thing.  
I would not change it.

*Ami.* Happy is your grace,  
That can translate the stubbornness of fortune  
Into so quiet and so sweet a style.

*Duke S.* Come, shall we go and kill us  
venison?

And yet it irks me the poor dappled fools,  
Being native burghers of this desert city,  
Should in their own confines with forked heads  
Have their round haunches gored.

*First Lord.* Indeed, my lord,

The melancholy Jaques grieves at that,  
and, in that kind, swears you do more usurp  
than doth your brother that hath banish'd you.  
To-day my Lord of Amiens and myself  
did steal behind him as he lay along 30  
Under an oak whose antique root peeps out  
Upon the brook that brawls along this wood :  
On the which place a poor sequester'd stag,  
That from the hunter's aim had ta'en a hurt,  
Did come to languish, and indeed, my lord,  
The wretched animal heaved forth such groans  
That their discharge did stretch his leathern  
coat

Almost to bursting, and the big round tears  
Coursed one another down his innocent nose  
In piteous chase; and thus the hairy fool,  
Much marked of the melancholy Jaques,  
Cood on the extremest verge of the swift brook,  
Augmenting it with tears.

Duke S. But what said Jaques?  
Did he not moralize this spectacle?

First Lord. O, yes, into a thousand similes.  
First, for his weeping into the needless stream;  
'Poor deer,' quoth he, 'thou makest a testament  
To worldlings do, giving thy sum of more  
Than that which had too much : ' then, being there  
alone,

Left and abandon'd of his velvet friends, 50  
'Tis right,' quoth he; 'thus misery doth part  
The flux of company;' anon a careless herd,  
Full of the pasture, jumps along by him  
And never stays to greet him; 'Ay,' quoth  
Jaques,

Sweep on, you fat and greasy citizens;  
'Tis just the fashion : wherefore do you look  
Upon that poor and broken bankrupt there?  
Thus most invectively he pierceth through  
The body of the country, city, court,  
Ea, and of this our life, swearing that we 60  
Are mere usurpers, tyrants and what's worse,  
To fright the animals and to kill them up  
In their assign'd and native dwelling-place.

Duke S. And did you leave him in this con-  
templation?

Sec. Lord. We did, my lord, weeping and  
commenting  
Upon the sobbing deer.

Duke S. Show me the place :  
I love to cope him in these sullen fits,  
For then he's full of matter.

First Lord. I'll bring you to him straight.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. A room in the palace.

*Enter DUKE FREDERICK, with Lords.*

Duke F. Can it be possible that no man saw  
them?

It cannot be : some villains of my court  
Are of consent and surfeance in this.

First Lord. I cannot hear of any that did  
see her.

The ladies, her attendants of her chamber,  
Saw her a-bed, and in the morning early  
They found the bed untresured of their mis-  
treas.

Sec. Lord. My lord, the roynish clown, at  
whom so oft

Your grace was wont to laugh, is also missing.  
Hisperia, the princess' gentlewoman, 20  
Confesses that she secretly o'erheard  
Your daughter and her cousin whom commend  
The parts and graces of the wrestler  
That did but lately foil the sinewy Charles;  
And she believes, wherever they are gone,  
That youth is surely in their company.

Duke F. Send to his brother; fetch that  
gallant hither;  
If he be absent, bring his brother to me;  
I'll make him find him : do this suddenly,  
And let not search and inquisition quail 30  
To bring again these foolish runaways. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE III. Before OLIVER'S house.

*Enter ORLANDO and ADAM, meeting.*

Orl. Who's there?

Adam. What, my young master? O my  
gentle master!

O my sweet master! O you memory  
(Of old Sir Rowland! why, what make you here?  
Why are you virtuous? why do people love you?  
And wherefore are you gentle, strong and valiant?  
Why would you be so fond to overcome  
The bonny praiser of the humorous duke?  
Your praise is come too swiftly home before you.  
Know you not, master, to some kind of men 30  
Their graces serve them but as enemies?  
No more do yours : your virtues, gentle master,  
Are sanctified and holy traitors to you.  
(, what a world is this, when what is comely  
Envenoms him that bears it!

Orl. Why, what's the matter?

Adam. (O unhappy youth!  
Come not within these doors; within this roof  
The enemy of all your graces lives :  
Your brother—no, no brother; yet the son—  
Yet not the son, I will not call him son 30  
Of him I was about to call his father—  
Hath heard your praises, and this night he  
means

To burn the lodging where you use to lie  
And you within it : if he fail of that,  
He will have other means to cut you off.  
I overheard him and his practices.  
This is no place; this house is but a butchery :  
Abhor it, fear it, do not enter it.

Orl. Why, whither, Adam, wouldst thou  
have me go?

Adam. No matter whither, so you come not  
here.

Orl. What, wouldst thou have me go and  
beg my food? 30

Or with a base and boisterous sword enforce  
A thievish living on the common road?  
This I must do, or know not what to do :  
Yet this I will not do, do how I can;  
I rather will subject me to the malice  
(Of a diverted blood and bloody brother.

Adam. But do not so. I have five hundred  
crowns,  
The thrifty hire I saved under your father,  
Which I did store to be my foster-nurse 40  
When service should in my old limbs lie lame  
And unregarded age in corners thrown :  
Take that, and He that doth the ravens feed,

*Enter JAQUES.*

*First Lord.* He saves my labour by his own approach.

*Duke S.* Why, how now, monsieur! what a life is this,  
That your poor friends must woo your company?  
What, you look merrily!

*Jaq.* A fool, a fool! I met a fool i' the forest,  
A motley fool; a miserable world!  
As I do live by food, I met a fool;  
Who laid him down and bask'd him in the sun,  
And rail'd on Lady Fortune in good terms,  
In good set terms and yet a motley fool.

'Good morrow, fool,' quoth I. 'No, sir,' quoth he,  
'Call me not fool till heaven hath sent me fortune.'

And then he drew a dial from his poke,  
And, looking on it with lack-lustre eye,  
Says very wisely, 'It is ten o'clock:  
Thus we may see,' quoth he, 'how the world wags:

'Tis but an hour ago since it was nine,  
And after one hour more 'twill be eleven;  
And so, from hour to hour, we ripe and ripe,  
And then, from hour to hour, we rot and rot;  
And thereby hangs a tale.' When I did hear  
The motley fool thus moral on the time,  
My lungs began to crow like chanticleer,  
That fools should be so deep-contemplative,  
And I did laugh sans intermission  
An hour by his dial. O noble fool!  
A worthy fool! Motley's the only wear.

*Duke S.* What fool is this?

*Jaq.* O worthy fool! One that hath been a courtier,

And says, if ladies be but young and fair,  
They have the gift to know it: and in his brain,  
Which is as dry as the remainder biscuit  
After a voyage, he hath strange places cramm'd  
With observation, the which he vents  
In mangled forms. O that I were a fool!  
I am ambitious for a motley coat.

*Duke S.* Thou shalt have one.

*Jaq.* It is my only suit;  
Provided that you weed your better judgements  
Of all opinion that grows rank in them  
That I am wise. I must have liberty  
Withal, as large a charter as the wind,  
To blow on whom I please; for so fools have;  
And they that are most galled with my folly,  
They must must laugh. And why, sir, must they so?

The 'why' is plain as way to parish church:  
He that a fool doth very wisely hit  
Doth very foolishly, although he smart,  
Not to seem senseless of the bob: if not,  
The wise man's folly is anatomiz'd  
Even by the squandering glances of the fool.  
Invest me in my motley; give me leave  
To speak my mind, and I will through and through

Cleanse the foul body of the infected world,  
If they will patiently receive my medicine.

*Duke S.* Fie on thee! I can tell what thou wouldst do.

*Jaq.* What, for a counter, would I do but good?

*Duke S.* Most mischievous foul sin, in chiding sin:

For thou thyself hast been a libertine,  
As sensual as the brutish sting itself;  
And all the embossed sores and headed evils,  
That thou with license of free foot hast caught,  
Wouldst thou disgorge into the general world.

*Jaq.* Why, who cries out on pride,  
That can therein tax any private party?  
Doth it not flow as hugely as the sea,  
† Till that the weary very means do cbb?

What woman in the city do I name,  
When that I say the city-woman bears  
The cost of princes on unworthy shoulders?  
Who can come in and say that I mean her,  
When such a one as she such is her neighbour?  
Or what is he of basest function

That says his bravery is not on my cost,  
Thinking that I mean him, but therein suits  
His folly to the mettle of my speech?  
There then; how then? what then? Let me see wherein

My tongue hath wrong'd him: if it do him right,

Then he hath wrong'd himself: if he be free,  
Why then my taxing like a wild-goose flies,  
Unclaim'd of any man. But who comes here!

*Enter ORLANDO, with his sword drawn.*

*Orl.* Forbear, and eat no more.

*Jaq.* Why, I have eat none yet.

*Orl.* Nor shalt not, till necessity be served.

*Jaq.* Of what kind should this cock come of?

*Duke S.* Art thou thus bolden'd, man, by thy distress,

Or else a rude despiser of good manners,  
That in civility thou seem'st so empty?

*Orl.* You touch'd my vein at first: the thorny point

Of bare distress hath ta'en from me the show  
Of smooth civility: yet am I inland bred  
And know some nurture. But forbear, I say:  
He dies that touches any of this fruit  
Till I and my affairs are answered.

*Jaq.* An you will not be answered with reason, I must die.

*Duke S.* What would you have? Your gentleness shall force

More than your force move us to gentleness.

*Orl.* I almost die for food; and let me have it.

*Duke S.* Sit down and feed, and welcome to our table.

*Orl.* Speak you so gently? Pardon me, I pray you:

I thought that all things had been savage here;  
And therefore put I on the countenance  
Of stern commandment. But whate'er you are

That in this desert inaccessible,  
Under the shade of melancholy boughs,  
Loose and neglect the creeping hours of time;

If ever you have look'd on better days,  
If ever been where bells have knoll'd to church;

If ever sat at any good man's feast,  
If ever from your eyelids wiped a tear

And know what 'tis to pity and be pitied,  
Let gentleness my strong enforcement be:

In the which hope I blush, and hide my sword.

*Duke S.* True is it that we have seen better days,

And have with holy bell been knoll'd to church  
And sat at good men's feasts and wiped our eyes  
(Of drops that sacred pity hath engender'd):

And therefore sit you down in gentleness  
And take upon command what help we have  
That to your wanting may be minister'd.

*Orl.* Then but forbear your food a little while,

Whiles, like a doe, I go to find my fawn  
And give it food. There is an old poor man,  
Who after me hath many a weary step,<sup>130</sup>  
Limp'd in pure love: till he be first sufficed,  
Oppress'd with two weak evils, age and hunger,  
I will not touch a bit.

*Duke S.* Go find him out,  
And we will nothing waste till you return.

*Orl.* I thank ye; and be blest for your good comfort!

*Duke S.* Thou seest we are not all alone unhappy:

This wild and universal theatre  
Presents more woeful pageants than the scene  
Wherein we play in.

*Jag.* All the world's a stage,  
And all the men and women merely players:  
They have their exits and their entrances;<sup>141</sup>  
And one man in his time plays many parts,  
His acts being seven ages. At first the infant,  
Mewling and puking in the nurse's arms.

And then the whining school-boy, with his satchel

And shining morning face, creeping like snail  
Unwillingly to school. And then the lover,  
Sighing like furnace, with a woeful ballad  
Made to his mistress' eyebrow. Then a soldier,  
Full of strange oaths and bearded like the pard,  
Jealous in honour, sudden and quick in quarrel,  
Seeking the bubble reputation,  
Even in the cannon's mouth. And then the

justice,  
In fair round belly with good capon lined,  
With eyes severe and beard of formal cut,  
Full of wise saws and modern instances;  
And so he plays his part. The sixth age shifts  
Into the lean and slipper'd pantaloon,  
With spectacles on nose and pouch on side,<sup>150</sup>  
His youthful hose, well saved, a world too wide  
For his shrunk shank; and his big manly voice,  
Turning again toward childish treble, pipes  
And whistles in his sound. Last scene of all,  
That ends this strange eventful history,  
Is second childishness and mere oblivion,  
Sans teeth, sans eyes, sans taste, sans every  
thing.

*Re-enter ORLANDO, with ADAM.*

*Duke S.* Welcome. Set down your venerable burden  
And let him feed.

*Orl.* I thank you most for him.

*Adam.* So had you need  
I scarce can speak to thank you for myself.<sup>170</sup>

*Duke S.* Welcome; fall to: I will not trouble you

As yet, to question you about your fortunes.  
'Tive us some music; and, good cousin, sing.

*Song.*

*Ant.* Blow, blow, thou winter wind,  
Thou art not so unkind

As man's ingratitude;

Thy tooth is not so keen,

Because thou art not seen,

Although thy breath be rude.<sup>179</sup>

Heigh-ho! sing, heigh-ho! unto the green holly:  
Most friendship is feigning, most loving mere  
folly:

Then, heigh-ho, the holly!

This life is most jolly.

Freeze, freeze, thou bitter sky,

That dost not bite so nigh

As benefits forgot:

Though thou the waters warp,

Thy sting is not so sharp

As friend remember'd not.

Heigh-ho! sing, &c.

<sup>190</sup>

*Duke S.* If that you were the good Sir Row-  
land's son,

As you have whisper'd faithfully you were,

And as mine eye doth his effigies witness

Most truly limn'd and living in your face,

Be truly welcome hither: I am the duke

That loved your father: the residue of your  
fortune,

Go to my cave and tell me. Good old man,

Thou art right welcome as thy master is.

Support him by the arm. Give me your hand,  
And let me all your fortunes understand.<sup>200</sup>

*[Exeunt.]*

## ACT III.

### SCENE I. A room in the palace.

*Enter DUKE FREDERICK, Lords, and OLIVER.*

*Duke F.* Not see him since! Sir, sir, that  
cannot be:

But were I not the better part made mercy,

I should not seek an absent argument

(Of my revenge, thou present. But look to it:

Find out thy brother, wheresoe'er he is;

Seek him with candle; bring him dead or  
living

Within this twelvemonth, or turn thou no  
more

To seek a living in our territory.

Thy lands and all things that thou dost call  
thine

Worth seizure do we seize into our hands,<sup>10</sup>

Till thou canst quit thee by thy brother's mouth  
Of what we think against thee.

*Ol.* O that your highness knew my heart  
in this!

I never loved my brother in my life.

*Duke F.* More villain thou. Well, push him  
out of doors;

And let my officers of such a nature

Make an extent upon his house and lands:

Do this expediently and turn him going.

*[Exeunt.]*

SCENE II. *The forest.**Enter ORLANDO, with a paper.*

Orl. Hang there, my verse, in witness of my love:

And thou, thrice-crowned queen of night,  
survey  
With thy chaste eye, from thy pale sphere  
above,

Thy huntress' name that my full life doth  
sway.

O Rosalind! these trees shall be my books  
And in their barks my thoughts I'll character;  
That every eye which in this forest looks  
Shall see thy virtue witness'd every where.

Run, run, Orlando; carve on every tree  
The fair, the chaste and unexpressive she. [*Exit.*]

*Enter CORIN and TOUCHSTONE.*

Cor. And how like you this shepherd's life,  
Master Touchstone?

Touch. Truly, shepherd, in respect of itself,  
it is a good life; but in respect that it is a shepherd's life, it is naught. In respect that it is solitary, I like it very well; but in respect that it is private, it is a very vile life. Now, in respect it is in the fields, it pleaseth me well; but in respect it is not in the court, it is tedious. As it is a spare life, look you, it fits my humour well; but as there is no more plenty in it, it goes much against my stomach. Hast any philosophy in thee, shepherd?

Cor. No more but that I know the more one sickens the worse at ease he is; and that he that wants money, means and content is without three good friends; that the property of rain is to wet and fire to burn; that good pasture makes fat sheep, and that a great cause of the night is lack of the sun; that he that hath learned no wit by nature nor art may complain of good breeding or comes of a very dull kindred.

Touch. Such a one is a natural philosopher.  
Wast ever in court, shepherd?

Cor. No, truly.

Touch. Then thou art damned.

Cor. Nay, I hope.

Touch. Truly, thou art damned, like an ill-roasted egg all on one side.

Cor. For not being at court? Your reason.

Touch. Why, if thou never wast at court, thou never sawest good manners; if thou never sawest good manners, then thy manners must be wicked; and wickedness is sin, and sin is damnation. Thou art in a parlous state, shepherd.

Cor. Not a whit, Touchstone: those that are good manners at the court are as ridiculous in the country as the behaviour of the country is most mockable at the court. You told me you salute not at the court, but you kiss your hands: that courtesy would be uncleanly, if courtiers were shepherds.

Touch. Instance, briefly; come, instance.

Cor. Why, we are still handling our ewes, and their fells, you know, are greasy.

Touch. Why, do not your courtiers' hands sweat! and is not the grease of a mutton as

wholesome as the sweat of a man? Shallow, shallow. A better instance, I say; come.

Cor. Besides, our hands are hard.

Touch. Your lips will feel them the sooner.  
Shallow again. A more sounder instance, come.

Cor. And they are often tarred over with the surgery of our sheep; and would you have us kiss tar? The courtier's hands are perfumed with civet.

Touch. Most shallow man! thou worms' meat, in respect of a good piece of flesh indeed! I earn of the wise, and perpend: civet is of a baser birth than tar, the very uncleanly flux of a cat. Mend the instance, shepherd.

Cor. You have too courtly a wit for me: I'll rest.

Touch. Wilt thou rest damned? God help thee, shallow man! God make incision in thee! thou art raw.

Cor. Sir, I am a true labourer: I earn that I eat, get that I wear, owe no man hate, envy no man's happiness, glad of other men's good, content with my harm, and the greatest of my pride is to see my ewes graze and my lambs suck.

Touch. That is another simple sin in you, to bring the ewes and the rams together and to offer to get your living by the copulation of cattle; to be bawd to a bell-wether, and to betray a she-lamb of a twelvemonth to a crooked-pated, old, cuckolded ram, out of all reasonable match. If thou beest not damned for this, the devil himself will have no shepherds; I cannot see else how thou shouldst scape.

Cor. Here comes young Master Ganymede, my new mistress's brother.

*Enter ROSALIND, with a paper, reading.*

Ros. From the east to western Ind,

No jewel is like Rosalind.

Her worth, being mounted on the wind,

Through all the world bears Rosalind.

All the pictures fairest lined

Are but black to Rosalind.

Let no fair be kept in mind

But the fair of Rosalind.

Touch. I'll rhyme you so eight years together, dinners and suppers and sleeping-hours excepted: it is the right butter-women's rank to market.

Ros. Out, fool!

Touch. For a taste:

If a hart do lack a hind,

Let him seek out Rosalind.

If the cat will after kind,

So be sure will Rosalind.

Winter garments must be lined,

So must slender Rosalind.

They that reap must sheaf and bind;

Then to cart with Rosalind.

Sweetest nut hath sourest rind,

Such a nut is Rosalind.

He that sweetest rose will find

Must find love's prick and Rosalind.

This is the very false gallop of verses: why do you infect yourself with them?

Ros. Peace, you dull fool! I found them on a tree.

*Touch.* Truly, the tree yields bad fruit.

*Ros.* I'll graft it with you, and then I shall graft it with a medlar: then it will be the earliest fruit i' the country; for you'll be rotten ere you be half ripe, and that's the right virtue of the medlar.

*Touch.* You have said; but whether wisely or no, let the forest judge. 130

*Enter CELIA, with a writing.*

*Ros.* Peace!

Here comes my sister, reading: stand aside.

*Cel.* [*Reads*]

Why should this a desert be?

For it is unpeopled? No;

Tongues I'll hang on every tree,

That shall civil sayings show:

Some, how brief the life of man

Runs his erring pilgrimage,

That the stretching of a span

Buckles in his sum of age; 140

Some, of violated vows

'Twixt the souls of friend and friend:

But upon the fairest boughs,

(Or at every sentence end,

Will I Rosalinda write,

Teaching all that read to know

The quintessence of every sprite

Heaven would in little show.

Therefore Heaven Nature charged

That one body should be fill'd 150

With all graces wide-enlarg'd:

Nature presently distill'd

Helen's cheek, but not her heart,

Cleopatra's majesty,

Atalanta's better part,

Sad Lucretia's modesty.

Thus Rosalind of many parts

By heavenly synod was devised,

Of many faces, eyes and hearts,

To have the touches dearest priz'd. 160

Heaven would that she these gifts should have,

And I to live and die her slave.

*Ros.* O most gentle pulpit! what tedious homily of love have you wearied your parishioners withal, and never cried 'Have patience, good people!'

*Cel.* How now! back, friends! Shepherd, go off a little. Go with him, sirrah.

*Touch.* Come, shepherd, let us make an honourable retreat; though not with bag and baggage, yet with scrip and scrippage. 171

[*Eccent Corin and Touchstone.*]

*Cel.* Didst thou hear these verses?

*Ros.* O, yes, I heard them all, and more too; for some of them had in them more feet than the verses would bear.

*Cel.* That's no matter: the feet might bear the verses.

*Ros.* Ay, but the feet were lame and could not bear themselves without the verse and therefore stood lamely in the verse. 180

*Cel.* But didst thou hear without wondering how thy name should be hang'd and carved upon these trees?

*Ros.* I was seven of the nine days out of the wonder before you came; for look here

what I found on a palm-tree. I was never so berhym'd since Pythagoras' time, that I was an Irish rat, which I can hardly remember.

*Cel.* Trow you who hath done this?

*Ros.* Is it a man? 190

*Cel.* And a chain, that you once wore, about his neck. Change you colour?

*Ros.* I prithee, who?

*Cel.* O Lord, Lord! it is a hard matter for friends to meet; but mountains may be removed with earthquakes and so encounter.

*Ros.* Nay, but who is it?

*Cel.* Is it possible?

*Ros.* Nay, I prithee now with most petitionary vehemence, tell me who it is. 200

*Cel.* O wonderful, wonderful, and most wonderful wonderful! and yet again wonderful, and after that, out of all hooping!

*Ros.* Good my complexion! dost thou think, though I am caparisoned like a man, I have a doublet and hose in my disposition? One inch of delay more is a South-sea of discovery; I

prithee, tell me who is it quickly, and speak npace. I would thou couldst stammer, that

thou mightst pour this concealed man out of thy mouth, as wine comes out of a narrow-

mouthed bottle, either too much at once, or none at all. I prithee, take the cork out of thy

mouth that I may drink thy tidings.

*Cel.* So you may put a man in your belly.

*Ros.* Is he of God's making? What manner of man? Is his head worth a hat, or his chin

worth a beard?

*Cel.* Nay, he hath but a little beard. 210

*Ros.* Why, God will send more, if the man will be thankful: let me stay the growth of his beard, if thou delay me not the knowledge of his chin.

*Cel.* It is young Orlando, that tripped up the wrestler's heels and your heart both in an instant.

*Ros.* Nay, but the devil take mocking: speak, sad brow and true maid.

*Cel.* I' faith, coz, 'tis he.

*Ros.* Orlando?

*Cel.* Orlando. 220

*Ros.* Alas the day! what shall I do with my doublet and hose? What did he when thou sawest him? What said he? How looked he?

Wherein went he? What makes he here? Did he ask for me? Where remains he? How parted he with thee? and when shalt thou see him again? Answer me in one word.

*Cel.* You must borrow me Gargantua's mouth first: 'tis a word too great for any

mouth of this age's size. To say ay and no to these particulars is more than to answer in a catechism. 241

*Ros.* But doth he know that I am in this forest and in man's apparel? Looks he as freshly as he did the day he wrestled?

*Cel.* It is as easy to count atoms as to resolve the propositions of a lover; but take a taste of my finding him, and relish it with good observance. I found him under a tree, like a

dropped acorn.

*Ros.* It may well be called Jove's tree, when it drops forth such fruit. 250

*Cel.* Give me audience, good madam.

*Ros.* Proceed.

*Cel.* There lay he, stretched along, like a wounded knight.

*Ros.* Though it be pity to see such a sight, it well becomes the ground.

*Cel.* Cry 'holla' to thy tongue, I prithee; it curvets unseasonably. He was furnished like a hunter.

*Ros.* O, ominous! he comes to kill my heart.

*Cel.* I would sing my song without a burden: thou bringest me out of tune.

*Ros.* Do you not know I am a woman? when I think, I must speak. Sweet, say on.

*Cel.* You bring me out. Soft! comes he not here?

*Enter ORLANDO and JAQUES.*

*Ros.* 'Tis he; slink by, and note him.

*Jaq.* I thank you for your company; but, good faith, I had as lief have been myself alone.

*Orl.* And so had I; but yet, for fashion sake, I thank you too for your society.

*Jaq.* God be wi' you: let's meet as little as we can.

*Orl.* I do desire we may be better strangers.

*Jaq.* I pray you, mar no more trees with writing love-songs in their barks.

*Orl.* I pray you, mar no moe of my verses with reading them ill-favourably.

*Jaq.* Rosalind is your love's name? 280

*Orl.* Yes, just.

*Jaq.* I do not like her name.

*Orl.* There was no thought of pleasing you when she was christened.

*Jaq.* What stature is she of?

*Orl.* Just as high as my heart.

*Jaq.* You are full of pretty answers. Have you not been acquainted with goldsmiths' wives, and conned them out of rings? 289

*Orl.* Not so; but I answer you right painted cloth, from whence you have studied your questions.

*Jaq.* You have a nimble wit: I think 'twas made of Atalanta's heels. Will you sit down with me? and we two will rail against our mistress the world and all our misery.

*Orl.* I will chide no breather in the world but myself, against whom I know most faults.

*Jaq.* The worst fault you have is to be in love. 300

*Orl.* 'Tis a fault I will not change for your best virtue. I am weary of you.

*Jaq.* By my troth, I was seeking for a fool when I found you.

*Orl.* He is drowned in the brook: look but in, and you shall see him.

*Jaq.* There I shall see mine own figure.

*Orl.* Which I take to be either a fool or a cipher.

*Jaq.* I'll tarry no longer with you: farewell, good Signior Love. 310

*Orl.* I am glad of your departure: adieu, good Monsieur Melancholy. [*Exit Jaques.*]

*Ros.* [*Aside to Celia*] I will speak to him like a saucy lackey and under that habit play the knave with him. Do you hear, forester?

*Orl.* Very well: what would you?

*Ros.* I pray you, what is 't o'clock?

*Orl.* You should ask me what time o' day: there's no clock in the forest. 319

*Ros.* Then there is no true lover in the forest; else sighing every minute and groaning every hour would detect the lazy foot of Time as well as a clock.

*Orl.* And why not the swift foot of Time? had not that been as proper?

*Ros.* By no means, sir: Time travels in divers paces with divers persons. I'll tell you who Time ambles withal, who Time trots withal, who Time gallops withal and who he stands still withal.

*Orl.* I prithee, who doth he trot withal? 320

*Ros.* Marry, he trots hard with a young maid between the contract of her marriage and the day it is solemnized: if the interim be but a se'nnight, Time's pace is so hard that it seems the length of seven year.

*Orl.* Who ambles Time withal?

*Ros.* With a priest that lacks Latin and a rich man that hath not the gout, for the one sleeps easily because he cannot study and the other lives merrily because he feels no pain, the one lacking the burden of lean and wasteful learning, the other knowing no burden of heavy tedious penury; these Time ambles withal.

*Orl.* Who doth he gallop withal?

*Ros.* With a thief to the gallows, for though he go as softly as foot can fall, he thinks himself too soon there.

*Orl.* Who stays it still withal?

*Ros.* With lawyers in the vacation; for they sleep between term and term and then they perceive not how Time moves. 331

*Orl.* Where dwell you, pretty youth?

*Ros.* With this shepherdess, my sister; here in the skirts of the forest, like fringe upon a petticoat.

*Orl.* Are you native of this place?

*Ros.* As the cony that you see dwell where she is kindled.

*Orl.* Your accent is something finer than you could purchase in so removed a dwelling.

*Ros.* I have been told so of many: but indeed an old religious uncle of mine taught me to speak, who was in his youth an inland man: one that knew courtship too well, for there he fell in love. I have heard him read many lectures against it, and I thank God I am not a woman, to be touched with so many giddy offences as he hath generally taxed their whole sex withal.

*Orl.* Can you remember any of the principal evils that he laid to the charge of women? 340

*Ros.* There were none principal; they were all like one another as half-pence are, every one fault seeming monstrous till his fellow-fault came to match it.

*Orl.* I prithee, recount some of them.

*Ros.* No, I will not cast away my physic but on those that are sick. There is a man haunts the forest, that abuses our young plants with carving 'Rosalind' on their barks; hangs odors upon hawthorns and elgies on brambles, all forsooth, deifying the name of Rosalind: if I



could meet that fancy-monger, I would give him some good counsel, for he seems to have the quotidian of love upon him.

*Orl.* I am he that is so love-shaked: I pray you, tell me your remedy.

*Ros.* There is none of my uncle's marks upon you: he taught me how to know a man in love; in which cage of rushes I am sure you are not prisoner.

*Orl.* What were his marks?

*Ros.* A lean cheek, which you have not, a blue eye and sunken, which you have not, an unquestionable spirit, which you have not, a beard neglected, which you have not; but I pardon you for that, for simply your having in beard is a younger brother's revenue: then your hose should be ungartered, your bonnet unlanded, your sleeve unbutooned, your shoe untied and every thing about you demonstrating a careless desolation; but you are no such man; you are rather point-device in your accoutrements as loving yourself than seeming the lover of any other.

*Orl.* Fair youth, I would I could make thee believe I love.

*Ros.* Me believe it! you may as soon make her that you love believe it; which, I warrant, she is apter to do than to confess she does: that is one of the points in the which women still give the lie to their consciences. But, in good sooth, are you he that hangs the verses on the trees, wherein Rosalind is so admired?

*Orl.* I swear to thee, youth, by the white hand of Rosalind, I am that he, that unfortunate he.

*Ros.* But are you so much in love as your rhymes speak?

*Orl.* Neither rhyme nor reason can express how much.

*Ros.* Love is merely a madness, and, I tell you, deserves as well a dark house and a whip as madmen do: and the reason why they are not so punished and cured is, that the lunacy is so ordinary that the whippers are in love too. Yet I profess curing it by counsel.

*Orl.* Did you ever cure any so?

*Ros.* Yes, one, and in this manner. He was to imagine me his love, his mistress; and I set him every day to woo me: at which time would I, being but a moonish youth, grieve, be effeminate, changeable, longing and liking, proud, fantastical, apish, shallow, inconstant, full of tears, full of smiles, for every passion something and for no passion truly any thing, as boys and women are for the most part cattle of this colour; would now like him, now loathe him; would entertain him, then forswear him; now weep for him, then spit at him; that I drave my suitor from his mad humour of love to a living humour of madness; which was, to forswear the full stream of the world and to live in a nook merely monastic. And thus I cured him; and this way will I take upon me to wash your liver as clean as a sound sheep's heart, that there shall not be one spot of love in 't.

*Orl.* I would not be cured, youth.

*Ros.* I would cure you, if you would but call me Rosalind and come every day to my cote and woo me.

*Orl.* Now, by the faith of my love, I will: tell me where it is.

*Ros.* Go with me to it and I'll show it you: and by the way you shall tell me where in the forest you live. Will you go?

*Orl.* With all my heart, good youth.

*Ros.* Nay, you must call me Rosalind. Come, sister, will you go?

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III. The forest.

*Enter TOUCHSTONE and AUDREY; JACQUES behind.*

*Touch.* Come apace, good Audrey: I will fetch up your goats, Audrey. And how, Audrey? am I the man yet? doth my simple feature content you?

*Aud.* Your features! Lord warrant us! what features?

*Touch.* I am here with thee and thy goats, as the most capricious poet, honest Ovid, was among the Goths.

*Jag.* [*Aside*] O knowledge ill-inhabited, worse than Jove in a thatched house!

*Touch.* When a man's verses cannot be understood, nor a man's good wit seconded with the forward child Understanding, it strikes a man more dead than a great reckoning in a little room. Truly, I would the gods had made thee poetical.

*Aud.* I do not know what 'poetical' is: is it honest in deed and word? is it a true thing?

*Touch.* No, truly; for the truest poetry is the most feigning; and lovers are given to poetry, and what they swear in poetry may be said as lovers they do feign.

*Aud.* Do you wish then that the gods had made me poetical?

*Touch.* I do, truly; for thou swearest to me thou art honest: now, if thou wert a poet, I might have some hope thou didst feign.

*Aud.* Would you not have me honest?

*Touch.* No, truly, unless thou wert hard-favoured; for honesty coupled to beauty is to have honey a sauce to sugar.

*Jag.* [*Aside*] A material fool!

*Aud.* Well, I am not fair; and therefore I pray the gods make me honest.

*Touch.* Truly, and to cast away honesty upon a foul slut were to put good meat into an unclean dish.

*Aud.* I am not a slut, though I thank the gods I am foul.

*Touch.* Well, praised be the gods for thy foulness! sluttishness may come hereafter. But be it as it may be, I will marry thee, and to that end I have been with Sir Oliver Martext, the vicar of the next village, who hath promised to meet me in this place of the forest and to couple us.

*Jag.* [*Aside*] I would fain see this meeting.

*Aud.* Well, the gods give us joy!

*Touch.* Amen. A man may, if he were of a fearful heart, stagger in this attempt; for here we have no temple but the wood, no assembly but horn-beasts. But what though? Courage! As horns are odious, they are necessary. It is said, 'many a man knows no end of his goods.'

right; many a man has good horns, and knows no end of them. Well, that is the dowry of his wife; 'tis none of his own getting. Horns? Even so. Poor men alone? No, no; the noblest deer hath them as huge as the rascal. Is the single man therefore blessed? No: as a walled town is more worthy than a village, so is the forehead of a married man more honourable than the bare brow of a bachelor; and by how much defence is better than no skill, by so much is a horn more precious than to want. Here comes Sir Oliver.

*Enter SIR OLIVER MARTEXT.*

Sir Oliver Martext, you are well met: will you dispatch us here under this tree, or shall we go with you to your chapel?

*Sir Oli.* Is there none here to give the woman?

*Touch.* I will not take her on gift of any man.

*Sir Oli.* Truly, she must be given, or the marriage is not lawful.

*Jaq.* [*Advancing*] Proceed, proceed: I'll give her.

*Touch.* Good even, good Master What-you-call't: how do you, sir? You are very well met: God 'ld you for your last company: I am very glad to see you: even a toy in hand here, sir: nay, pray be covered.

*Jaq.* Will you be married, motley?

*Touch.* As the ox hath his bow, sir, the horse his curb and the falcon her bells, so man hath his desires; and as pigeons bill, so wedlock would be nibbling.

*Jaq.* And will you, being a man of your breeding, be married under a bush like a beggar? Get you to church, and have a good priest that can tell you what marriage is: this fellow will but join you together as they join wainscot; then one of you will prove a shrunk panel and, like green timber, warp, warp.

*Touch.* [*Aside*] I am not in the mind but I were better to be married of him than of another: for he is not like to marry me well; and not being well married, it will be a good excuse for me hereafter to leave my wife.

*Jaq.* Go thou with me, and let me counsel thee.

*Touch.* Come, sweet Audrey: We must be married, or we must live in bawdry. Farewell, good Master Oliver: not,—

O sweet Oliver,

O brave Oliver,

Leave me not behind thee:

out,—

Wind away,

Begone, I say,

I will not to wedding with thee.

[*Exeunt Jaques, Touchstone and Audrey.*]

*Sir Oli.* 'Tis no matter: ne'er a fantastical knave of them all shall flout me out of my calling. [*Exit.*]

SCENE IV. *The forest.*

*Enter ROSALIND and CELIA.*

Never talk to me; I will weep.

*Cel.* Do, I prithee; but yet have the grace to consider that tears do not become a man.

*Ros.* But have I not cause to weep?

*Cel.* As good cause as one would desire; therefore weep.

*Ros.* His very hair is of the dissembling colour.

*Cel.* Something browner than Judas's; marry, his kisses are Judas's own children.

*Ros.* 'Tis faith, his hair is of a good colour.

*Cel.* An excellent colour: your chestnut was ever the only colour.

*Ros.* And his kissing is as full of sanctity as the touch of holy bread.

*Cel.* He hath bought a pair of cast lips of Diana: a nun of winter's sisterhood kisses no more religiously; the very ice of chastity is in them.

*Ros.* But why did he swear he would come this morning, and comes not?

*Cel.* Nay, certainly, there is no truth in him.

*Ros.* Do you think so?

*Cel.* Yes; I think he is not a 'pick-purse nor a horse-stealer, but for his verity in love, I do think him as concave as a covered goblet or a worm-eaten nut.

*Ros.* Not true in love?

*Cel.* Yes, when he is in; but I think he is not in.

*Ros.* You have heard him swear downright he was.

*Cel.* 'Was' is not 'is': besides, the oath of a lover is no stronger than the word of a tapster; they are both the confirmers of false reckonings. He attends here in the forest on the duke your father.

*Ros.* I met the duke yesterday and had much question with him: he asked me of what parentage I was; I told him, of as good as he; so he laughed and let me go. But what talk we of fathers, when there is such a man as Orlando?

*Cel.* O, that's a brave man! he writes brave verses, speaks brave words, swears brave oaths and breaks them bravely, quite traverse, athwart the heart of his lover; as a puiſny tilter, that spurs his horse but on one side, breaks his staff like a noble goose: but all's brave that youth mounts and folly guides. Who comes here?

*Enter CORIN.*

*Cor.* Mistress and master, you have oft inquired—

After the shepherd that complain'd of love,  
Who you saw sitting by me on the turf,  
Praising the proud disdainful shepherdess  
That was his mistress.

*Cel.* Well, and what of him?

*Cor.* If you will see a pageant truly play'd,  
Between the pale complexion of true love  
And the red glow of scorn and proud disdain,  
(So hence a little and I shall conduct you,  
If you will mark it).

*Ros.* O, come, let us remove:  
The sight of lovers feedeth those in love.  
Bring us to this sight, and you shall say  
I'll prove a busy actor in their play. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. *Another part of the forest.**Enter SILVIUS and PHEBE.*

*Sil.* Sweet Phebe, do not scorn me; do not, Phebe;

Say that you love me not, but say not so in bitterness. The common executioner, whose heart the accustom'd sight of death makes hard, Falls not the axe upon the humbled neck But first begs pardon: will you sterner be Than he that dies and lives by bloody drops?

*Enter ROSALIND, CELIA, and CORIN, behind.*

*Phe.* I would not be thy executioner: I fly thee, for I would not injure thee. Thou tell'st me there is murder in mine eye: 'Tis pretty, sure, and very probable, That eyes, that are the frailst and softest things, Who shut their coward gates on atomies, Should be call'd tyrants, butchers, murderers! Now I do frown on thee with all my heart; And if mine eyes can wound, now let them kill thee:

Now counterfeit to swoon; why now fall down; Or if thou couldst not, O, for shame, for shame, Lie not, to say mine eyes are murderers! Now show the wound mine eye hath made in thee:

Scratch thee but with a pin, and there remains Some scar of it; lean but upon a rush, The cicatrice and capable impressure Thy palm some moment keeps; but now mine eyes,

Which I have darted at thee, hurt thee not, Nor, I am sure, there is no force in eyes That can do hurt.

*Sil.* O dear Phebe, If ever,—as that ever may be near,— You meet in some fresh cheek the power of fancy,

Then shall you know the wounds invisible That love's keen arrows make.

*Phe.* But till that time Come not thou near me: and when that time comes,

Afflict me with thy mocks, pity me not; As till that time I shall not pity thee.

*Ros.* And why, I pray you? Who might be your mother,

That you insult, exult, and all at once, Over the wretched? What though you have no beauty,—

As, by my faith, I see no more in you Than without candle may go dark to bed— Must you be therefore proud and pitiless? Why, what means this? Why do you look on me?

I see no more in you than in the ordinary Of nature's sale-work. 'Tis my little life, I think she means to tangle my eyes too! No, faith, proud mistress, hope not after it:

'Tis not your ink'y brows, your black silk hair, Your bugle eyeballs, nor your cheek of cream, That can entame my spirits to your worship. You foolish shepherd, wherefore do you follow her,

Like foggy south puffing with wind and rain? You are a thousand times a properer man Than she a woman: 'tis such fools as you That makes the world full of ill-favour'd children:

'Tis not her glass, but you, that flatters her; And out of you she sees herself more proper Than any of her lineaments can show her. But, mistress, know yourself: down on your knees, And thank heaven, fasting, for a good man's love:

For I must tell you friendly in your ear, Sell when you can: you are not for all markets: Cry the man mercy: love him; take his offer: Foul is most foul, being foul to be a scoffer. So take her to thee, shepherd: fare you well.

*Phe.* Sweet youth, I pray you, chide a year together:

I had rather hear you chide than this man woo. *Ros.* He's fallen in love with your foulness and she'll fall in love with my anger. If it be so, as fast as she answers thee with frowning looks, I'll sauce her with bitter words. Why look you so upon me?

*Phe.* For no ill will I bear you.

*Ros.* I pray you, do not fall in love with me, For I am falsest than vows made in wine: Besides, I like you not. If you will know my house,

'Tis at the tuft of olives here hard by.

Will you go, sister? Shepherd, ply her hard. Come, sister. Shepherdless, look on him better. And be not proud: though all the world could see,

None could be so abused in sight as he. Come, to our flock.

[*Exeunt Rosalind, Celia and Corin.*]  
*Phe.* Dead shepherd, now I find thy saw of might,

'Who ever loved that loved not at first sight?'

*Sil.* Sweet Phebe,—

*Phe.* Ha, what say'st thou, Silvius?

*Sil.* Sweet Phebe, pity me.

*Phe.* Why, I am sorry for thee, gentle Silvius.

*Sil.* Wherever sorrow is, relief would be:

If you do sorrow at my grief in love, By giving love your sorrow and my grief Were both extermind.

*Phe.* Thou hast my love: is not that neighbourly?

*Sil.* I would have you.

*Phe.* Why, that were covetousness.

Silvius, the time was that I hated thee, And yet it is not that I bear thee love; But since that thou canst talk of love so well, Thy company, which erst was irksome to me, I will endure, and I'll employ thee too: But do not look for further recompense Than thine own gladness that thou art employ'd.

*Sil.* So holy and so perfect is my love, And I in such a poverty of grace,

That I shall think it a most piteous crop To glean the broken ears after the man That the main harvest reaps: loose now and then

A scatter'd smile, and that I'll live upon.

*Ph.* Know'st thou the youth that spoke to me erewhile?

*Sil.* Not very well, but I have met him oft; And he hath bought the cottage and the bounds That the old carlot once was master of.

*Ph.* Think not I love him, though I ask for him;

'Tis but a peevish boy; yet he talks well; 110  
But what care I for words? yet words do well  
When he that speaks them pleases those that hear.

It is a pretty youth: not very pretty;  
But, sure, he's proud, and yet his pride becomes him:

He'll make a proper man: the best thing in him

Is his complexion; and faster than his tongue Did make offence his eye did heal it up.  
He is not very tall; yet for his years he's tall:  
His leg is but so so; and yet 'tis well:

There was a pretty redness in his lip, 120  
A little ripier and more lusty red  
Than that mix'd in his cheek; 'twas just the difference

Between the constant red and mingled damask.  
There be some women, Silvius, had they mark'd him

In parcels as I did, would have gone near To fall in love with him; but, for my part, I love him not nor hate him not; and yet I have more cause to hate him than to love him:

For what had he to do to chide at me? He said mine eyes were black and my hair black; 130

And, now I am remember'd, scorn'd at me: I marvel why I answer'd not again: But that's all one; omittance is no quittance. I'll write to him a very taunting letter, And thou shalt bear it: wilt thou, Silvius?

*Sil.* Phebe, with all my heart.

*Ph.* I'll write it straight;  
The matter's in my head and in my heart:  
I will be bitter with him and passing short.  
Go with me, Silvius. [Exeunt.

#### ACT IV.

##### SCENE I. The forest.

*Enter ROSALIND, CELIA, AND JACQUES.*

*Jaq.* I prithee, pretty youth, let me be better acquainted with thee.

*Ros.* They say you are a melancholy fellow.  
*Jaq.* I am so; I do love it better than laughing.

*Ros.* Those that are in extremity of either are abominable fellows and betray themselves to every modern censure worse than drunkards.

*Jaq.* Why, 'tis good to be sad and say nothing.

*Ros.* Why then, 'tis good to be a post. 9

*Jaq.* I have neither the scholar's melancholy, which is emulation, nor the musician's, which is fantastical, nor the courtier's, which is proud, nor the soldier's, which is ambitious, nor the lawyer's, which is politic, nor the lady's, which is nice, nor the lover's, which is all these:

but it is a melancholy of mine own, compounded of many simples, extracted from many objects, and indeed the sundry contemplation of my travels, in which my often rumination wraps me in a most humorous sadness. 20

*Ros.* A traveller! By my faith, you have great reason to be sad: I fear you have sold your own lands to see other men's; then, to have seen much and to have nothing, is to have rich eyes and poor hands.

*Jaq.* Yes, I have gained my experience.  
*Ros.* And your experience makes you sad: I had rather have a fool to make me merry than experience to make me sad; and to travel for it too!

*Enter ORLANDO.*

*Orl.* Good day and happiness, dear Rosalind!  
*Jaq.* Nay, then, God be wi' you, an you talk in blank verse. [Exit.

*Ros.* Farewell, Monsieur Traveller: look you lip and wear strange suits, disable all the benefits of your own country, be out of love with your nativity and almost chide God for making you that countenance you are, or I will scarce think you have swain in a gondola. Why, how now, Orlando! where have you been all this while? You a lover! An you serve me such another trick, never come in my sight more. 41

*Orl.* My fair Rosalind, I come within an hour of my promise.

*Ros.* Break an hour's promise in love! He that will divide a minute into a thousand parts and break but a part of the thousandth part of a minute in the affairs of love, it may be said of him that Cupid hath clapp'd him 'of the shoulder, but I'll warrant him heart-whole.

*Orl.* Pardon me, dear Rosalind. 50

*Ros.* Nay, an you be so tardy, come no more in my sight: I had as lief be woo'd of a snail.

*Orl.* Of a snail?  
*Ros.* Ay, of a snail; for though he comes slowly, he carries his house on his head; a better jointure, I think, than you make a woman: besides, he brings his destiny with him.

*Orl.* What's that?  
*Ros.* Why, horns, which such as you are fain to be beholding to your wives for: but he comes armed in his fortune and prevents the slander of his wife.

*Orl.* Virtue is no horn-maker; and my Rosalind is virtuous—

*Ros.* And I am your Rosalind.  
*Cel.* It places him to call you so; but he hath a Rosalind of a better leer than you.

*Ros.* Come, woo me, woo me, for now I am in a holiday humour and like enough to consent. What would you say to me now, an I were your very very Rosalind? 71

*Orl.* I would kiss before I spoke.

*Ros.* Nay, you were better speak first, and when you were gravell'd for lack of matter, you might take occasion to kiss. Very good orators, when they are out, they will spit; and for lovers lacking—(God warn us!—matter, the cleanliest shift is to kiss.

*Orl.* How if the kiss be denied?

*Ros.* Then she puts you to entreaty, and there begins new matter. 87

*Orl.* Who could be out, being before his beloved mistress?

*Ros.* Marry, that should you, if I were your mistress, or I should think my honesty ranker than my wit.

*Orl.* What, of my suit?

*Ros.* Not out of your apparel, and yet out of your suit. Am not I your Rosalind?

*Orl.* I take some joy to say you are, because I would be talking of her. 91

*Ros.* Well, in her person I say I will not have you.

*Orl.* Then in mine own person I die.

*Ros.* No, faith, die by attorney. The poor world is almost six thousand years old, and in all this time there was not any man died in his own person, videlicet, in a love-cause. Troilus shed his brains dashed out with a Grecian club; yet he did what he could to die before, and he is one of the patterns of love. Leander, he would have lived many a fair year, though Hero had turned nun, if it had not been for a hot midsummer night; for, good youth, he went but forth to wash him in the Hellespont and being taken with the cramp was drowned: and the foolish chroniclers of that age found it was 'Hero of Sestos.' But these are all lies: men have died from time to time and worms have eaten them, but not for love.

*Orl.* I would not have my right Rosalind of this mind, for, I protest, her frown might kill me. 110

*Ros.* By this hand, it will not kill a fly. But now, now I will be your Rosalind in a more loving disposition, and ask me what you will, I will grant it.

*Orl.* Then love me, Rosalind.

*Ros.* Yes, faith, will I, Fridays and Saturdays and all.

*Orl.* And wilt thou have me?

*Ros.* Ay, and twenty such.

*Orl.* What sayest thou?

*Ros.* Are you not good?

*Orl.* I hope so.

*Ros.* Why then, can one desire too much of thing? Come, sister, you shall be the priest and marry us. Give me your hand, Orlando. What do you say, sister?

*Orl.* Pray thee, marry us.

*Cel.* I cannot say the words.

*Ros.* You must begin, 'Will you, Orlando—'

*Cel.* Go to. Will you, Orlando, have to wife this Rosalind? 131

*Orl.* I will.

*Ros.* Ay, but when?

*Orl.* Why now; as fast as she can marry us.

*Ros.* Then you must say 'I take thee, Rosalind, for wife.'

*Orl.* I take thee, Rosalind, for wife.

*Ros.* I might ask you for your commission but I do take thee, Orlando, for my husband: here's a girl goes before the priest; and certainly a woman's thought runs before her actions. 141

*Orl.* So do all thoughts; they are winged.

*Ros.* Now tell me how long you would have her after you have possessed her.

*Orl.* For ever and a day.

*Ros.* Say 'a day,' without the 'ever.' No, no, Orlando; men are April when they woo, December when they wed: maids are May when they are maids, but the sky changes when they are wives. I will be more jealous of thee than a Barbary cock-pigeon over his hen, more clamorous than a parrot against rain, more new-fangled than an ape, more giddy in my desires than a monkey: I will weep for nothing, like Diana in the fountain, and I will do that when you are disposed to be merry; I will laugh like a hyen, and that when thou art inclined to sleep.

*Orl.* But will my Rosalind do so?

*Ros.* By my life, she will do as I do.

*Orl.* O, but she is wise. 160

*Ros.* Or else she could not have the wit to do this: the wiser, the waywarder: make the doors open a woman's wit and it will out at the casement; shut that and 'twill out at the key-hole; stop that, 'twill fly with the smoke out at the chimney.

*Orl.* A man that had a wife with such a wit, he might say 'Wit, whither wilt?'

*Ros.* Nay, you might keep that check for it till you met your wife's wit going to your neighbour's bed. 171

*Orl.* And what wit could wit have to excuse that?

*Ros.* Marry, to say she came to seek you there. You shall never take her without her answer, unless you take her without her tongue. O, that woman that cannot make her fault her husband's occasion, let her never nurse her child herself, for she will breed it like a fool!

*Orl.* For these two hours, Rosalind, I will leave thee. 181

*Ros.* Alas! dear love, I cannot lack thee two hours.

*Orl.* I must attend the duke at dinner: by two o'clock I will be with thee again.

*Ros.* Ay, go your ways, go your ways; I knew what you would prove: my friends told me as much, and I thought no less: that flattering tongue of yours won me: 'tis but one cast away, and so, come, death! Two o'clock is your hour!

*Orl.* Ay, sweet Rosalind! 191

*Ros.* By my troth, and in good earnest, and so God mend me, and by all pretty oaths that are not dangerous, if you break one jot of your promise or come one minute behind your hour, I will think you the most pathological break-promise and the most hollow lover and the most unworthy of her you call Rosalind that may be chosen out of the gross band of the unfaithful: therefore beware my censure and keep your promise. 200

*Orl.* With no less religion than if thou wert indeed my Rosalind: so adieu.

*Ros.* Well, Time is the old justice that examines all such offenders, and let Time try: adieu. [Exit Orlando.]

*Cel.* You have simply misused our sex in your love-prate: we must have your doublet

and hose plucked over your head, and show the world what the bird hath done to her own nest.

*Ros.* O coz, coz, coz, my pretty little coz, that thou dost know how many fathom deep I am in love! But it cannot be sounded: my affection hath an unknown bottom, like the bay of Portugal.

*Cel.* Or rather, bottomless, that as fast as you pour affection in, it runs out.

*Ros.* No, that same wicked bastard of Venus that was begot of thought, conceived of spleen and born of madness, that blind rascally boy that abuses every one's eyes because his own are out, let him be judge how deep I am in love. I'll tell thee, Aliena, I cannot be out of the sight of Orlando: I'll go find a shadow and sigh till he come.

*Cel.* And I'll sleep. [Exeunt.]

### SCENE II. The forest.

*Enter JAQUES, Lords, and Foresters.*

*Jaq.* Which is he that killed the deer?

*A Lord.* Sir, it was I.

*Jaq.* Let's present him to the duke, like a Roman conqueror; and it would do well to set the deer's horns upon his head, for a branch of victory. Have you no song, forester, for this purpose?

*For.* Yes, sir.

*Jaq.* Sing it: 'tis no matter how it be in tune, so it make noise enough. 10

#### SONG.

*For.* What shall he have that kill'd the deer?  
His leather skin and horns to wear.

Then sing him home;

[The rest shall bear this burden.

Take thou no scorn to wear the horn;

It was a crest ere thou wast born:

Thy father's father wore it,

And thy father bore it:

The horn, the horn, the lusty horn

Is not a thing to laugh to scorn.

[Exeunt.]

### SCENE III. The forest.

*Enter ROSALIND and CELIA.*

*Ros.* How say you now? I: it not past two o'clock? and here much Orlando!

*Cel.* I warrant you, with pure love and troubled brain, he hath ta'en his bow and arrows and is gone forth to sleep. Look, who comes here.

*Enter SILVIUS.*

*Sil.* My errand is to you, fair youth; My gentle Phebe bid me give you this: I know not the contents; but, as I guess By the stern brow and waspish action Which she did use as she was writing of it, 10 It bears an angry tenour: pardon me; I am but as a guiltless messenger.

*Ros.* Patience herself would startle at this letter

and play the swaggerer; bear this, bear all: She says I am not fair, that I lack manners;

She calls me proud, and that she could not love me,

Were man as rare as phoenix. 'Od's my will! Her love is not the hare that I do hunt:

Why writes she so to me? Well, shepherd, well,

This is a letter of your own device. 20

*Sil.* No, I protest, I know not the contents: Phebe did write it.

*Ros.* Come, come, you are a fool And turn'd into the extremity of love.

I saw her hand: she has a leathern hand, A freestone-colour'd hand; I verily did think That her old gloves were on, but 'twas her hands:

She has a huswife's hand; but that's no matter: I say she never did invent this letter; This is a man's invention and his hand.

*Sil.* Sure, it is hers.

*Ros.* Why, 'tis a boisterous and a cruel style, A style for challengers; why, she defies me, Like Turk to Christian: women's gentle brain Could not drop forth such giant-rude invention, Such Ethiopie words, blacker in their effect Than in their countenance. Will you hear the letter?

*Sil.* So please you, for I never heard it yet; Yet heard too much of Phebe's cruelty.

*Ros.* She Phebes me: mark how the tyrant writes. [Reads]

Art thou god to shepherd turn'd,  
That a maiden's heart hath burn'd?

Can a woman rail thus?

*Sil.* Call you this railing?

*Ros.* [Reads]

Why, thy godhead laid apart,  
Warr'st thou with a woman's heart?

Did you ever hear such railing?

Whiles the eye of man did woo me,

That could do no vengeance to me.

Meaning me a beast.

If the scorn of your bright eyne

Have power to raise such love in mine, 5

Alack, in me what strange effect

Would they work in mild aspect!

Whiles you chid me, I did love;

How then might your prayers move!

He that brings this love to thee

Little knows this love in me:

And by him seal up thy mind;

Whether that thy youth and kind

Will the faithful offer take 6

Of me and all that I can make;

Or else by him my love deny,

And then I'll study how to die.

*Sil.* Call you this chiding?

*Cel.* Alas, poor shepherd!

*Ros.* Do you pity him? no, he deserves no pity. Wilt thou love such a woman? What, to make thee an instrument and play false, strains upon thee! not to be endured! Well, go your way to her, for I see love hath made thee a tame snake, and say this to her: that if she love me, I charge her to love thee; if she will not, I will never have her unless thou entreat for her. If you be a true lover, hence, and not a word; for here comes more company. [Exit Silvius]

*Enter OLIVER.*

*Oli.* Good morrow, fair ones: pray you, if you know,  
Where in the purlieus of this forest stands  
A sheep-cote fenced about with olive trees?

*Cel.* West of this place, down in the neighbour bottom:

The rank of osiers by the murmuring stream so left on your right hand brings you to the place. But at this hour the house doth keep itself; There's none within.

*Oli.* If that an eye may profit by a tongue, Then should I know you by description; Such garments and such years: 'The boy is fair,

Of female favour, and bestows himself

Like a ripe sister: the woman low And browner than her brother. Are not you The owner of the house I did enquire for?

*Cel.* It is no boast, being ask'd, to say we are.

*Oli.* Orlando doth commend him to you both.

And to that youth he calls his Rosalind.

He sends this bloody napkin. Are you he?

*Ros.* I am: what must we understand by this?

*Oli.* Some of my shame; if you will know of me

What man I am, and how, and why, and where

This handkercher was stain'd.

*Cel.* I pray you, tell it.

*Oli.* When last the young Orlando parted from you

He left a promise to return again

Within an hour, and pacing through the forest,

Chewing the food of sweet and bitter fancy,

Lo, what befel! he threw his eye aside,

And mark what object did present itself:

Under an oak, whose boughs were moss'd with age

And high top bald with dry antiquity,

A wretched ragged man, o'ergrown with hair,

Lay sleeping on his back: about his neck

A green and gilded snake had wreath'd itself,

Who with her head nimble in threats approach'd

The opening of his mouth; but suddenly,

Seeing Orlando, it unlink'd itself,

And with indentèd glides did slip away

Into a bush: under which bush's shade

A lioness, with udders all drawn dry,

Lay couching, head on ground, with catlike watch.

When that the sleeping man should stir; for 'tis

The royal disposition of that beast

To prey on nothing that doth seem as dead:

This seen, Orlando did approach the man

And found it was his brother, his elder brother.

*Cel.* O, I have heard him speak of that same brother;

And he did render him the most unnatural

That lived amongst men.

*Oli.* And well he might so do,

For well I know he was unnatural.

*Ros.* But, to Orlando: did he leave him there,

Food to the suck'd and hungry lioness?

*Oli.* Twice did he turn his back and pur-

pose so,

But kindness, nobler ever than revenge,

And nature, stronger than his just occasion,

Made him give battle to the lioness,

Who quickly fell before him: in which hurtling

From miserable slumber I awaked.

*Cel.* Are you his brother?

*Ros.* Was't you he rescued?

*Cel.* Was't you that did so oft contrive to kill him?

*Oli.* 'Twas I; but 'tis not I: I do not shame

To tell you what I was, since my conversion

So sweetly tastes, being the thing I am.

*Ros.* But, for the bloody napkin?

*Oli.* By and by.

When from the first to last betwixt us two

Tears our recountments had most kindly bathed,

As how I came into that desert place:—

In brief, he led me to the gentle duke,

Who gave me fresh array and entertainment,

Committing me unto my brother's love;

Who led me instantly unto his cave,

There stripp'd himself, and here upon his arm

The lioness had torn some flesh away,

Which all this while had bled; and now he

fainted

And cried, in fainting, upon Rosalind.

Brief, I recover'd him, bound up his wound;

And, after some small space, being strong at heart,

He sent me hither, stranger as I am,

To tell this story, that you might excuse

His broken promise, and to give this napkin

Dye'd in his blood unto the shepherd youth

That he in sport doth call his Rosalind.

[*Rosalind swoons.*]

*Cel.* Why, how now, Ganymede! sweet

Ganymede!

*Oli.* Many will swoon when they do look on blood.

*Cel.* There is more in it. Cousin Ganymede!

*Oli.* Look, he recovers.

*Ros.* I would I were at home.

*Cel.* We'll lead you thither.

I pray you, will you take him by the arm?

*Oli.* Be of good cheer, youth: you a man!

you lack a man's heart.

*Ros.* I do so, I confess it. Ah, sirrah, a

body would think this was well counterfeit!

I pray you, tell your brother how well I counter-

feited. Heigh-ho!

*Oli.* This was not counterfeit: there is too

great testimony in your complexion that it was

a passion of earnest.

*Ros.* Counterfeit, I assure you.

*Oli.* Well then, take a good heart and counter-

feit to be a man.

*Ros.* So I do: but, I faith, I should have

been a woman by right.

*Cel.* Come, you look paler and paler: pray

you, draw homewards. Good sir, go with us.

*Oli.* That will I, for I must bear answer

back

How you excuse my brother, Rosalind.

*Ros.* I shall devise something: but, I pray

you, commend my counterfeiting to him. Will

you go? [*Exeunt*]

## ACT V.

SCENE I. *The forest.**Enter TOUCHSTONE and AUDREY.**Touch.* We shall find a time, Audrey; patience, gentle Audrey.*Aud.* Faith, the priest was good enough, for all the old gentleman's saying.*Touch.* A most wicked Sir Oliver, Audrey, a most vile Martext. But, Audrey, there is a youth here in the forest lays claim to you.*Aud.* Ay, I know who 'tis; he hath no interest in me in the world: here comes the man you mean.*Touch.* It is meat and drink to me to see a clown: by my troth, we that have good wits have much to answer for; we shall be flouting; we cannot hold.*Enter WILLIAM.**Will.* Good even, Audrey.*Aud.* God ye good even, William.*Will.* And good even to you, sir.*Touch.* Good even, gentle friend. Cover thy head, cover thy head; nay, prithee, be covered. How old are you, friend?*Will.* Five and twenty, sir.*Touch.* A ripe age. Is thy name William?*Will.* William, sir.*Touch.* A fair name. Wast born i' the forest here?*Will.* Ay, sir, I thank God.*Touch.* 'Thank God;' a good answer. Art rich?*Will.* Faith, sir, so so.*Touch.* 'So so' is good, very good, very excellent good; and yet it is not; it is but so so. Art thou wise?*Will.* Ay, sir, I have a pretty wit.*Touch.* Why, thou sayest well. I do now remember a saying, 'The fool doth think he is wise, but the wise man knows himself to be a fool.' The heathen philosopher, when he had a desire to eat a grape, would open his lips when he put it into his mouth; meaning thereby that grapes were made to eat and lips to open. You do love this man?*Will.* I do, sir.*Touch.* Give me your hand. Art thou learned?*Will.* No, sir.*Touch.* Then learn this of me: to have, is to have; for it is a figure in rhetoric that drink, being poured out of a cup into a glass, by filling the one doth empty the other; for all your writers do consent that ipse is he: now, you are not ipse, for I am he.*Will.* Which he, sir?*Touch.* He, sir, that must marry this woman. Therefore, you clown, abandon,—which is in the vulgar leave,—the society,—which in the boorish is company,—of this female,—which in the common is woman; which together is, abandon the society of this female, or, clown, thou perishest; or, to thy better understanding, die; or, to wit, I kill thee, make thee away, translate thy life into death, thy liberty into bondage: I will

deal in poison with thee, or in bastinado, or in steel; I will bandy with thee in faction; I will o'er-run thee with policy; I will kill thee a hundred and fifty ways: therefore tremble, and depart.

*Aud.* Do, good William.*Will.* God rest you merry, sir.*[Exit.]**Enter CORIN.**Cor.* Our master and mistress seeks you; come, away, away!*Touch.* Trip, Audrey! trip, Audrey! I attend, I attend. *[Exeunt.]*SCENE II. *The forest.**Enter ORLANDO and OLIVER.**Orl.* Is't possible that on so little acquaintance you should love her? that but seeing you should love her? and loving woo? and, wooing, she should grant? and will you persevere to enjoy her?*Oli.* Neither call the giddiness of it in question, the poverty of her, the small acquaintance, my sudden wooing, nor her sudden consenting; but say with me, I love Aliena; say with her that she loves me; consent with both that we may enjoy each other: it shall be to your good; for my father's house and all the revenue that was old Sir Rowland's will I estate upon you, and here live and die a shepherd.*Orl.* You have my consent. Let your wedding be to-morrow: thither will I invite the duke and all's contented followers. Go you and prepare Aliena; for look you, here comes my Rosalind.*Enter ROSALIND.**Ros.* God save you, brother.*Oli.* And you, fair sister.*[Exit.]**Ros.* O, my dear Orlando, how it grieves me to see thee wear thy heart in a scarf!*Orl.* It is my arm.*Ros.* I thought thy heart had been wounded with the claws of a lion.*Orl.* Wounded it is, but with the eyes of a lady.*Ros.* Did your brother tell you how I counterfeited to swoon when he showed me your handkercher?*Orl.* Ay, and greater wonders than that.*Ros.* O, I know where you are: nay, 'tis true: there was never any thing so sudden but the sight of two rams and Caesar's thrasonical brag of 'I came, saw, and overcame:' for your brother and my sister no sooner met but they looked; no sooner looked but they loved, no sooner loved but they sighed, no sooner sighed but they asked one another the reason, no sooner knew the reason but they sought the remedy; and in these degrees have they made a pair of stairs to marriage which they will climb incontinent, or else be incontinent before marriage: they are in the very wrath of love and they will together; clubs cannot part them.*Orl.* They shall be married to-morrow, and I will bid the duke to the nuptial. But, O, how bitter a thing it is to look into happiness through another man's eyes! By so much the more shall



[to-morrow be at the height of heart-heaviness,] how much I shall think my brother happy in having what he wishes for.

*Ros.* Why then, to-morrow I cannot serve your turn for Rosalind?

*Orl.* I can live no longer by thinking.

*Ros.* I will weary you then no longer with idle talking. Know of me then, for now I speak to some purpose, that I know you are a gentleman of good conceit: I speak not this that you should bear a good opinion of my knowledge, inasmuch I say I know you are; neither do I labour for a greater esteem than may in some little measure draw a belief from you, to do yourself good and not to grace me. Believe then, if you please, that I can do strange things: I have, since I was three year old, conversed with a magician, most profound in his art and yet not damnable. If you do love Rosalind so near the heart as your gesture cries it out, when your brother marries Aliens, shall you marry her: I know into what straits of fortune she is driven; and it is not impossible to me, if it appear not inconvenient to you, to set her before your eyes to-morrow human as she is and without any danger.

*Orl.* Speakest thou in sober meanings?

*Ros.* By my life, I do; which I tender dearly, though I say I am a magician. Therefore, put you in your best array; bid your friends; for if you will be married to-morrow, you shall, and to Rosalind, if you will. 87

*Enter SILVIUS and PHEBE.*

Look, here comes a lover of mine and a lover of hers.

*Phe.* Youth, you have done me much ungentleness,

To show the letter that I write to you.

*Ros.* I care not if I have: it is my study

To seem despightful and ungentle to you:

You are there followed by a faithful shepherd; look upon him, love him; he worships you.

*Phe.* Good shepherd, tell this youth what 'tis to love.

*Sil.* It is to be all made of sighs and tears; and so am I for Phebe. 91

*Phe.* And I for Ganymede.

*Orl.* And I for Rosalind.

*Ros.* And I for no woman.

*Sil.* It is to be all made of faith and service; and so am I for Phebe.

*Phe.* And I for Ganymede.

*Orl.* And I for Rosalind.

*Ros.* And I for no woman.

*Sil.* It is to be all made of fantasy, 100  
All made of passion and all made of wishes,  
All adoration, duty, and observance,  
All humbleness, all patience and impatience,  
All purity, all trial, all observance;  
And so am I for Phebe.

*Phe.* And so am I for Ganymede.

*Orl.* And so am I for Rosalind.

*Ros.* And so am I for no woman.

*Phe.* If this be so, why blame you me to love you? ...

*Sil.* If this be so, why blame you me to love you? ...

*Orl.* If this be so, why blame you me to love you?

*Ros.* Who do you speak to, 'Why blame you me to love you?'

*Orl.* To her that is not here, nor doth not hear.

*Ros.* Pray you, no more of this; 'tis like the howling of Irish wolves against the moon. [*To Sil.*] I will help you, if I can: [*To Phe.*] I would love you, if I could. To-morrow meet me all together. [*To Phe.*] I will marry you, if ever I marry woman, and I'll be married to-morrow: [*To Orl.*] I will satisfy you, if ever I satisfied man, and you shall be married to-morrow: [*To Sil.*] I will content you, if what pleases you contents you, and you shall be married to-morrow. [*To Orl.*] As you love Rosalind, meet: [*To Sil.*] as you love Phebe, meet: and as I love no woman, I'll meet. So 'are you well: I have left you commands. 131

*Sil.* I'll not fail, if I live.

*Phe.* Nor I.

*Orl.* Nor I

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *The forest.*

*Enter TOUCHSTONE and AUDREY.*

*Touch.* To-morrow is the joyful day, Audrey; to-morrow will we be married.

*Aud.* I do desire it with all my heart; and I hope it is no dishonest desire to desire to be a woman of the world. Here come two of the banished duke's pages.

*Enter two Pages.*

*First Page.* Well met, honest gentleman.

*Touch.* By my troth, well met. Come, sit, sit, and a song. 9

*Sec. Page.* We are for you: sit i' the middle.

*First Page.* Shall we clap into't roundly, without hawking or spitting or saying we are hoarse, which are the only prologues to a bad voice?

*Sec. Page.* I' faith, i' faith; and both in a tune, like two gipsies on a horse.

SONG.

It was a lover and his lass,  
With a hey, and a ho, and a hey nonino,  
That o'er the green corn-field did pass  
In the spring time, the only pretty ring time,  
When birds do sing, hey ding a ding, ding: 21  
Sweet lovers love the spring.

Between the acres of the rye,  
With a hey, and a ho, and a hey nonino,  
These pretty country folks would lie,  
In spring time, &c.

This carol they began that hour,  
With a hey, and a ho, and a hey nonino,  
How that a life was but a flower  
In spring time, &c. 30

And therefore take the present time,  
With a hey, and a ho, and a hey nonino;  
For love is crowned with the prime  
In spring time, &c.

*Touch.* Truly, young gentlemen, though there was no great matter in the ditty, yet the note was very untuneable.

*First Page.* You are deceived, sir: we kept time, we lost not our time.

*Touch.* By my troth, yes; I count it but time lost to hear such a foolish song. God be wi' you; and God mend your voices! Come, Audrey. *[Exeunt.]*

#### SCENE IV. *The forest.*

*Enter DUKE SENIOR, AMIENS, JAQUES, ORLANDO, OLIVER, and CELIA.*

*Duke S.* Dost thou believe, Orlando, that the boy can do all this that he hath promised?

*Orl.* I sometimes do believe, and sometimes do not;  
†As those that fear they hope, and know they fear.

*Enter ROSALIND, SILVIUS, and PHEBE.*

*Ros.* Patience once more, whiles our compact is urged:  
*You say, if I bring in your Rosalind,  
You will bestow her on Orlando here?*

*Duke S.* That would I, had I kingdoms to give with her.

*Ros.* And you say, you will have her, when I bring her?

*Orl.* That would I, were I of all kingdoms king.

*Ros.* You say, you'll marry me, if I be willing?  
*Phe.* That will I, should I die the hour after.

*Ros.* But if you do refuse to marry me,  
You'll give yourself to this most faithful shepherd?

*Phe.* So is the bargain.  
*Ros.* You say, that you'll have Phebe, if she will?

*Sil.* Though to have her and death were both one thing.

*Ros.* I have promised to make all this matter even.

Keep you your word, O duke, to give your daughter;

You yours, Orlando, to receive his daughter: so  
Keep your word, Phebe, that you'll marry me,

Or else refusing me, to wed this shepherd:  
Keep your word, Silvius, that you'll marry her,

If she refuse me: and from hence I go,  
To make these doubts all even.

*[Exeunt Rosalind and Celia.]*  
*Duke S.* I do remember in this shepherd boy some lively touches of my daughter's favour.

*Orl.* My lord, the first time that I ever saw him

Methought he was a brother to your daughter:  
But, my good lord, this boy is forest-born, 30  
And hath been tutor'd in the rudiments  
Of many desperate studies by his uncle, 40  
Whom he reports to be a great magician,  
Obscured in the circle of this forest.

*Enter TOUCHSTONE and AUDREY.*

*Jaq.* There is, sure, another flood toward, and these couples are coming to the ark! Here comes a pair of very strange beasts, which in all tongues are called fools.

*Touch.* Salutation and greeting to you all!  
*Jaq.* Good my lord, bid him welcome: this is the merry-minded gentleman that I have so often met in the forest: he hath been a courtier, he swears.

*Touch.* If any man doubt that, let him put me to my purgation. I have trod a measure: I have flattered a lady; I have been politic with my friend, smooth with mine enemy; I have undone three tailors; I have had four quarrels, and like to have fought one.

*Jaq.* And how was that ta'en up?  
*Touch.* Faith, we met, and found the cause was upon the seventh cause.

*Jaq.* How seventh cause? Good my lord, like this fellow.

*Duke S.* I like him very well.  
*Touch.* God 'ild you, sir; I desire you of the like. I press in here, sir, amongst the rest of the country copulatives, to swear and to forswear; according as marriage binds and blood breaks: a poor virgin, sir, an ill-favoured thing, sir, but mine own; a poor humour of mine, sir, to take that that no man else will: rich honesty dwells like a miser, sir, in a poor house; as your pearl in your foul oyster.

*Duke S.* By my faith, he is very swift and sententious.

*Touch.* According to the fool's bolt, sir, and such dulcet discourses.

*Jaq.* But, for the seventh cause; how did you find the quarrel on the seventh cause?

*Touch.* Upon a lie seven times removed:—hear your body more seeming, Audrey:—as thus, sir. I did dislike the cut of a certain courtier's beard: he sent me word, if I said his beard was not cut well, he was in the mind it was: this is called the Retort Courteous. If I sent him word again 'it was not well cut,' he would send me word, he cut it to please himself: this is called the Quip Modest. If again 'it was not well cut,' he disabled my judgement: this is called the Reply Churlish. If again 'it was not well cut,' he would answer, I spake not true: this is called the Reproof Valiant. If again 'it was not well cut,' he would say, I lied: this is called the Countercheck Quarrelsome: and so to the Lie Circumstantial and the Lie Direct.

*Jaq.* And how oft did you say his beard was not well cut?

*Touch.* I durst go no further than the Lie Circumstantial, nor he durst not give me the Lie Direct; and so we measured swords and parted.

*Jaq.* Can you nominate in order now the degrees of the lie?

*Touch.* O sir, we quarrel in print, by the book; as you have books for good manners: I will name you the degrees. The first, the Retort Courteous; the second, the Quip Modest; the third, the Reply Churlish; the fourth, the Re-

proof Valiant; the fifth, the Counterscheck Counterselous; the sixth, the Lie with Circumstances; the seventh, the Lie Direct. All these you may avoid but the Lie Direct; and you may avoid that too, with an If. I knew when seven brothers could not take up a quarrel, but when the sisters were met themselves, one of them took up an If, as, 'If you said so, then I said so'; and they shook hands and swore brothers. Now If is the only peace-maker; much virtue in it.

*Jaq.* Is not this a rare fellow? he's as good at any thing and yet a fool. 170

*Duke S.* He uses his folly in a walking-horse and under the presence of that he gets his wit.

*Enter HYMEN, ROSALIND, and CELIA.*

*Still Music.*

*Hym.* Then is there mirth in heaven,  
When earthly things made even  
Atone together.  
Good duke, receive thy daughter:  
Hymen from heaven brought her,  
Yea, brought her hither,  
That thou mightst join her hand with his  
Whose heart within his bosom is. 121

*Ros.* [To duke] To you I give myself, for I am yours.

*To Or.* To you I give myself, for I am yours.

*Duke S.* If there be truth in sight, you are my daughter.

*Or.* If there be truth in sight, you are my Rosalind.

*Phe.* If sight and shape be true,  
Why then, my love adieu!

*Ros.* I'll have no father, if you be not he:  
I'll have no husband, if you be not he:  
Nor ne'er wed woman, if you be not she. 130

*Hym.* Peace, ho! I bar confusion:  
'Tis I must make conclusion  
Of these most strange events:  
Here's eight that must take hands  
To join in Hymen's bands,  
If truth holds true contents.  
You and you no cross shall part:  
You and you are heart in heart:  
You to his love must accord,  
Or have a woman to your lord: 140  
You and you are sure together,  
As the winter to foul weather.  
Whiles a wedlock-hymn we sing,  
Feed yourselves with questioning;  
That reason wonder may diminish,  
How thus we met, and these things finish.

SONG.

Wedding is great Juno's crown:  
(O) blessed bond of board and bed!  
'Tis Hymen peoples every town;  
High wedlock then be honoured: 150  
Honour, high honour and renown,  
To Hymen, god of every town!

*Duke S.* O my dear niece, welcome thou art to me!  
Even daughter, welcome, in no less degree.

*Phe.* I will not eat my word, now thou art mine;  
Thy faith my fancy to thee doth combine.

*Enter JACQUES DE BOYS.*

*Jaq. de B.* Let me have audience for a word or two:

I am the second son of old Sir Rowland,  
That bring these tidings to this fair assembly.  
Duke Frederick, hearing how that every day  
Men of great worth resorted to this forest, 161  
Address'd a mighty power; which were on foot,  
In his own conduct, purposely to take  
His brother here and put him to the sword;  
And to the skirts of this wild wood he came;  
Where meeting with an old religious man,  
After some question with him, was converted  
Both from his enterprise and from the world,  
His crown bequeathing to his banish'd brother,  
And all their lands restored to them again. 170  
That were with him exiled. This to be true,  
I do engage my life.

*Duke S.* Welcome, young man;  
Thou offer'st fairly to thy brothers' wedding:  
To one his lands withheld, and to the other  
A land itself at large, a potent dukedom.  
First, in this forest let us do those ends  
That here were well begun and well begot:  
And after, every of this happy number  
That have endured shrewd days and nights  
with us  
Shall share the good of our returned fortune,  
According to the measure of their states. 182  
Meantime, forget this new-fall'n dignity  
And fall into our rustic revelry.  
Play, music! And you, brides and bridegrooms  
all,

With measure heap'd in joy, to the measures  
fall.

*Jaq.* Sir, by your patience. If I heard you  
rightly,

The duke hath put on a religious life  
And thrown into neglect the pompous court?

*Jaq. de B.* He hath. 189

*Jaq.* To him will I: out of these convertiticks  
There is much matter to be heard and learn'd.  
[To duke] You to your former honour I be-  
queath;

Your patience and your virtue well deserves it:  
[To Or.] You to a love that your true faith doth  
merit:

[To Or.] You to your land and love and great  
allies:

[To Sir.] You to a long and well-deserved bed:  
[To Touch.] And you to wrangling; for thy  
loving voyage

Is but for two months victuall'd. So, to your  
pleasures:

I am for other than for dancing measures.

*Duke S.* Stay, Jaques, stay. 200

*Jaq.* To see no pastime I: what you would  
have

I'll stay to know at your abandon'd cave. [Exit.

*Duke S.* Proceed, proceed: we will begin  
these rites.

As we do trust they'll end, in true delights.  
[A dance.]

## EPILOGUE.

*Boa.* It is not the fashion to see the lady the epilogue; but it is no more unhandsome than to see the lord the prologue. If it be true that good wine needs no bush, 'tis true that a good play needs no epilogue; yet to good wine they do use good bushes, and good plays prove the better by the help of good epilogues. What a case am I in then, that am neither a good epilogue nor cannot insinuate with you in the behalf of a good play! I am not furnished like a beggar, therefore to beg will not become me:

my way is to conjure you; and I'll begin with the women. I charge you, O women, for the love you bear to men, to like as much of this play as please you: and I charge you, O men, for the love you bear to women—as I perceive by your simpering, none of you hates them—that between you and the women the play may please. If I were a woman I would kiss as many of you as had beards that pleased me, complexions that liked me and breaths that I defied not: and, I am sure, as many as have good beards or good faces or sweet breaths will, for my kind offer, when I make curtsy, bid me farewell.

[*Exeunt.*]

# THE TAMING OF THE SHREW

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

A Lord.  
 CHRISTOPHER SLY, a tinker. } Persons in the  
 Hostess, Page, Players, Hunts- } Induction.  
 men, and Servants.

GRUMIO, } servants to Petruchio.  
 CURTIS, }  
 A Pedant.

BAPTISTA, a rich gentleman of Padua.  
 VINCENTIO, an old gentleman of Pisa.  
 LUCENTIO, son to Vincentio, in love with Bianca.  
 PETRUCHIO, a gentleman of Verona, a suitor  
 to Katharina.  
 GREMIO, } suitors to Bianca.  
 HORTENSIO, }  
 TRANIO, } servants to Lucentio.  
 BIONDELLO, }

KATHARINA, the shrew, } daughters to Baptista.  
 BIANCA, }  
 Widow.

Tailor, Haberdasher, and Servants attending on  
 Baptista and Petruchio.

SCENE: Padua, and Petruchio's country  
 house.

## INDUCTION.

SCENE I. Before an alehouse on a heath.

*Enter HOSTESS and SLY.*

*Sly.* I'll pheeze you, in faith.

*Host.* A pair of stocks, you rogue!

*Sly.* Ye are a baggage; the Slys are no  
 rogues; look in the chronicles; we came in  
 with Richard Conqueror. Therefore paucas  
 pallabris; let the world slide: sessa!

*Host.* You will not pay for the glasses you  
 have burst?

*Sly.* No, not a denier. Go by, Jeronimy: go  
 to thy cold bed, and warm thee.

*Host.* I know my remedy; I must go fetch  
 the third-borough. *[Exit.*

*Sly.* Third, or fourth, or fifth borough, I'll  
 answer him by law: I'll not bud, an inch,  
 boy: let him come, and kindly. *[Falls asleep.*

*Horns winded.* Enter a Lord from hunting,  
 with his train.

*Lord.* Huntsman, I charge thee, tender well  
 my hounds:

Brach Merriman, the poor cur is emboss'd;  
 And couple Clowder with the deep-mouth'd  
 brach.

Sawst thou not, boy, how Silver made it good  
 At the hedge-corner, in the coldest fault?

I would not lose the dog for twenty pound.

*First Hun.* Why, Belman is as good as he,  
 my lord;

He cried upon it at the merest loss  
 And twice to-day pick'd out the dullest scent:

Trust me, I take him for the better dog.

*Lord.* Thou art a fool: if Echo were as fleet,  
 I would esteem him worth a dozen such.

But sup them well and look unto them all:  
 To-morrow I intend to hunt again.

*First Hun.* I will, my lord. 30  
*Lord.* What's here? one dead, or drunk?

See, doth he breathe?

*Sec. Hun.* He breathes, my lord. Were he  
 not warm'd with ale,  
 This were a bed but cold to sleep so soundly.

*Lord.* O monstrous beast! how like a swine  
 he lies!

Grim death, how foul and loathsome is thine  
 image!

Sirs, I will practise on this drunken man.  
 What think you, if he were convey'd to bed,

Wrapp'd in sweet clothes, rings put upon his  
 fingers,

A most delicious banquet by his bed,  
 And brave attendants near him when he wakes,

Would not the beggar then forget himself? 40  
*First Hun.* Believe me, lord, I think he can-

not choose.

*Sec. Hun.* It would seem strange unto him  
 when he waked.

*Lord.* Even as a flattering dream or worth-  
 less fancy.

Then take him up and manage well the jest:  
 Carry him gently to my fairest chamber

And hang it round with all my wanton pic-  
 tures:

Balm his foul head in warm distilled waters  
 And burn sweet wood to make the lodging  
 sweet:

Procure mo music ready when he wakes, 50  
 To make a dulcet and a heavenly sound;

And if he chance to speak, be ready straight  
 And with a low submissive reverence

Say 'What is it your honour will command?'  
 Let one attend him with a silver basin

Full of rose-water and bestrew'd with flowers;  
 Another bear the ewer, the third a diaper,

And say 'Will't please your lordship cool your  
 hands?'

Some one be ready with a costly suit  
And ask him what apparel he will wear;  
Another tell him of his hounds and horse,  
And that his lady mourns at his disease:  
Persuade him that he hath been lunatic;  
And when he says he is, say that he dreams,  
For he is nothing but a mighty lord.  
This do and do it kindly, gentle sirs:  
It will be pastime passing excellent,  
If it be husbanded with modesty.

*First Hun.* My lord, I warrant you we will play our part.

As he shall think by our true diligence  
He is no less than what we say he is.

*Lord.* Take him up gently and to bed with him;

And each one to his office when he wakes.

[*Some bear out Sly. A trumpet sounds.*  
*Sirrah,* go see what trumpet 'tis that sounds:

[*Exit Servingman.*  
Belike, some noble gentleman that means,  
Travelling some journey, to repose him here.

*Re-enter Servingman.*

How now! who is it?

*Serv.* An't please your honour, players  
That offer service to your lordship.

*Lord.* Bid them come near.

*Enter Players.*

Now, fellows, you are welcome.

*Players.* We thank your honour.

*Lord.* Do you intend to stay with me to-night?

*A Player.* So please your lordship to accept our duty.

*Lord.* With all my heart. This fellow I remember,

Since once he play'd a farmer's eldest son:  
'Twas where you woo'd the gentlewoman so well:

I have forgot your name; but, sure, that part  
Was aptly fitted and naturally perform'd.

*A Player.* I think 'twas Soto that your honour means.

*Lord.* 'Tis very true: thou didst it excellent.  
Well, you are come to me in happy time;

The rather for I have some sport in hand  
Wherein your cunning can assist me much.

There is a lord will hear you play to-night:  
But I am doubtful of your modesties;

Lest over-eying of his odd behaviour,—  
For yet his honour never heard a play—

You break into some merry passion  
And so offend him; for I tell you, sirs,

If you should smile he grows impatient.

*A Player.* Fear not, my lord: we can contain ourselves,

Were he the veriest antic in the world.

*Lord.* Go, sirrah, take them to the buttery,  
And give them friendly welcome every one:

Let them want nothing that my house affords.

[*Exit one with the Players.*  
*Sirrah,* go you to Barthol'mew my page,  
And see him dress'd in all suits like a lady:

That done, conduct him to the drunkard's chamber;  
And call him 'madam,' do him obeisance.

Tell him from me, as he will win my love,  
He bear himself with honourable action,

Such as he hath observed in noble ladies  
Unto their lords, by them accomplished:

Such duty to the drunkard let him do  
With soft low tongue and lowly courtesy,

And say 'What is't your honour will command,

Wherein your lady and your humble wife  
May show her duty and make known her love:'

And then with kind embracements, tempting kisses,

And with declining head into his bosom,  
Bid him shed tears, as being overjoy'd

To see her noble lord restored to health,  
Who for this seven years hath esteemed him

No better than a poor and loathsome beggar:  
And if the boy have not a woman's gift

To rain a shower of commanded tears,  
An onion will do well for such a shift,

Which in a napkin being close convey'd  
Shall in despite enforce a watery eye.

See this dispatch'd with all the haste thou canst:  
Anon I'll give thee more instructions.

[*Exit a Servingman.*  
I know the boy will well usurp the grace,  
Voice, gait and action of a gentlewoman:

I long to hear him call the drunkard husband,  
And how my men will stay themselves from

laughter  
When they do homage to this simple peasant.

I'll in to counsel them; haply my presence  
May well abate the over-merry spleen

Which otherwise would grow into extremes.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. A bedchamber in the Lord's house.

*Enter aloft SLX, with Attendants; some with apparel, others with basin and ewer and other appurtenances; and Lord.*

*Sly.* For God's sake, a pot of small ale.

*First Serv.* Will't please your lordship drink a cup of sack?

*Sec. Serv.* Will't please your honour taste of these conserves?

*Third Serv.* What raiment will your honour wear to-day?

*Sly.* I am Christophero Sly; call not me 'honour' nor 'lordship': I ne'er drank sack in my life;

and if you give me any conserves, give me conserves of beef: ne'er ask me what raiment I'll wear;

for I have no more doublets than backs, no more stockings than legs, nor no more shoes than feet;

nay, sometime more feet than shoes, or such shoes as my toes look through the over-leather.

*Lord.* Heaven cease this idle humour in your honour!

O, that a mighty man of such descent,  
Of such possessions and so high esteem,

Should be infus'd with so foul a spirit!

*Sly.* What, would you make me mad? Am not I Christopher Sly, old Sly's son of Burton-heath, by birth a pedlar, by education a card-maker, by transmutation a bear-herd, and now by present profession a tinker? Ask Marian Hacket, the fat ale-wife of Winoot, if she know

me not: if she say I am not fourteen pence on the score for sheer ale, score me up for the lyingest knave in Christendom. What! I am not bestraught: here 's—

*Third Serv.* O, this it is that makes your lady mourn!

*Sec. Serv.* O, this is it that makes your servants droop!

*Lord.* Hence comes it that your kindred shuns your house,

As beaten hence by your strange lunacy.

O noble lord, bethink thee of thy birth, Call home thy ancient thoughts from banishment

And banish hence these abject lowly dreams.

Look how thy servants do attend on thee,

Each in his office ready at thy beck.

Wilt thou have music? hark! Apollo plays

*[Music.]*

And twenty caged nightingales do sing:

Or wilt thou sleep? we'll have thee to a couch

Softer and sweeter than the lustful bed

(On purpose trimm'd up for Semiramis.

Say thou wilt walk; we will bestrew the ground:

Or wilt thou ride? thy horses shall be trapp'd,

Their harness studded all with gold and pearl.

Dost thou love hawking? thou hast hawks will

soar

Above the morning lark: or wilt thou hunt?

Thy hounds shall make the welkin answer them

And fetch shrill echoes from the hollow earth.

*First Serv.* Say thou wilt course; thy grey-

hounds are as swift

As breathed stags, ay, fleetest than the roe.

*Sec. Serv.* Dost thou love pictures? we will

fetch thee straight

Adonis painted by a running brook,

And Cytherea all in sedges hid,

Which seem to move and wanton with her

breath,

Even as the waving sedges play with wind.

*Lord.* We'll show thee Io as she was a maid,

And how she was beguiled and surprised,

As lively painted as the deed was done.

*Third Serv.* Or Daphne roaming through a

thorny wood,

Scratching her legs that one shall swear she

bleeds,

And at that sight shall sad Apollo weep,

So workmanly the blood and tears are drawn.

*Lord.* Thou art a lord and nothing but a lord:

Thou hast a lady far more beautiful

Than any woman in this waning age.

*First Serv.* And till the tears that she hath

shed for thee

Like envious floods o'er-run her lovely face,

She was the fairest creature in the world;

And yet she is inferior to none.

*Sly.* Am I a lord? and have I such a lady?

Or do I dream? or have I dream'd till now?

I do not sleep: I see, I hear, I speak;

I smell sweet savours and I feel soft things:

Upon my life, I am a lord indeed

And not a tinker nor Christophero Sly.

Well, bring our lady hither to our sight;

And once again, a pot o' the smallest ale.

*Sec. Serv.* Will't please your mightiness to

wash your hands!

O, how we joy to see your wit restored!

O, that once more you knew but what you are!

These fifteen years you have been in a dream;

Or when you waked, so waked as if you slept.

*Sly.* These fifteen years! by my fay, a goodly

nap.

But did I never speak of all that time?

*First Serv.* O, yes, my lord, but very idle

words:

For though you lay here in this goodly chamber,

Yet would you say ye were beaten out of door;

And rail upon the hostess of the house;

And say you would present her at the leet,

Because she brought stone jugs and no seal'd

quarts:

Sometimes you would call out for Cicely Hacket.

*Sly.* Ay, the woman's maid of the house.

*Third Serv.* Why, sir, you know no house

nor no such maid,

Nor no such men as you have reckon'd up,

As Stephen Sly and old John Naps of Greece

And Peter Turph and Henry Pimpernell

And twenty more such names and men as these

Which never were nor no man ever saw.

*Sly.* Now Lord be thanked for my good

anends!

*All.* Amen.

*Sly.* I thank thee: thou shalt not lose by it.

*Enter the Page as a lady, with attendants.*

*Page.* How fares my noble lord?

*Sly.* Marry, I fare well; for here is cheer

enough.

Where is my wife?

*Page.* Here, noble lord: what is thy will

with her?

*Sly.* Are you my wife and will not call me

husband?

My men should call me 'lord': I am your good-

man.

*Page.* My husband and my lord, my lord

and husband;

I am your wife in all obedience.

*Sly.* I know it well. What must I call her?

*Lord.* Madam.

*Sly.* Alce madam, or Joan madam?

*Lord.* 'Madam,' and nothing else: so lords

call ladies.

*Sly.* Madam wife, they say that I have

dream'd

And slept above some fifteen year or more.

*Page.* Ay, and the time seems thirty unto me,

Being all this time abandon'd from your bed.

*Sly.* 'Tis much. Servants, leave me and her

alone.

Madam, undress you and come now to bed.

*Page.* Thrice-noble lord, let me entreat of

you

To pardon me yet for a night or two,

Or, if not so, until the sun be set:

For your physicians have expressly charged,

In peril to incur your former malady,

That I should yet absent me from your bed:

I hope this reason stands for my excuse.

*Sly.* Ay, it stands so that I may hardly tarry

so long. But I would be loath to fall into my

dreams again: I will therefore tarry in despite

of the flesh and the blood.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Your honour's players, hearing your amendment,  
Are come to play a pleasant comedy;  
For so your doctors hold it very meet,  
Seeing too much sadness hath congeal'd your blood,  
And melancholy is the nurse of frenzy:  
Therefore they thought it good you hear a play  
And frame your mind to mirth and merriment,  
Which bars a thousand harms and lengthens life.

*Sly.* Marry, I will, let them play it. Is not a comonty a Christmas gambold or a tumbling-trick?

*Page.* No, my good lord; it is more pleasing stuff.

*Sly.* What, household stuff?

*Page.* It is a kind of history.

*Sly.* Well, we'll see't. Come, madam wife, sit by my side and let the world slip; we shall ne'er be younger.

*Flourish.*

## ACT I.

### SCENE I. Padua. A public place.

*Enter LUCENTIO and his man TRANIO.*

*Luc.* Tranio, since for the great desire I had  
To see fair Padua, nursery of arts,  
I am arriv'd for fruitful Lombardy,  
The pleasant garden of great Italy;  
And by my father's love and leave am arm'd  
With his good will and thy good company,  
My trusty servant, well approv'd in all,  
Here let us breathe and haply institute  
A course of learning and ingenious studies.  
Pisa renown'd for grave citizens  
Gave me my being and my father first,  
A merchant of great traffic through the world,  
Vincenzio, come of the Bentivolii.  
Vincenzio's son brought up in Florence  
It shall become to serve all hopes conceived,  
To deck his fortune with his virtuous deeds:  
And therefore, Tranio, for the time I study,  
Virtue and that part of philosophy  
Will I apply that treats of happiness  
By virtue specially to be achieved.  
Tell me thy mind; for I have Pisa left  
And am to Padua come, as he that leaves  
A shallow plash to plunge him in the deep  
And with satiety seeks to quench his thirst.

*Tra.* Mi perdonato, gentle master mine,  
I am in all affected as yourself;  
Glad that you thus continue your resolve  
To suck the sweets of sweet philosophy.  
Only, good master, while we do admire  
This virtue and this moral discipline,  
Let's be no stoics nor no stocks, I pray;  
Or so devote to Aristotle's checks  
As Ovid be an outcast quite abjured:  
Balk logic with acquaintance that you have  
And practise rhetoric in your common talk;  
Music and poesy use to quicken you;  
The mathematics and the metaphysics,

Fall to them as you find your stomach serves you;

No profit grows where is no pleasure ta'en:  
In brief, sir, study what you most affect.

*Luc.* Gramercies, Tranio, well dost thou advise.

If Biondello, thou wert come ashore,  
We could at once put us in readiness,  
And take a lodging fit to entertain  
Such friends as time in Padua shall bestow.  
But stay a while: what company is this?

*Tra.* Master, some show to welcome us to town.

*Enter BAPTISTA, KATHARINA, BIANCA, GREMIO, and HORTENSIO. LUCENTIO and TRANIO stand by.*

*Bap.* Gentlemen, importune me no farther,  
For how I firmly am resolved you know;  
That is, not to bestow my youngest daughter  
Before I have a husband for the elder:  
If either of you both love Katharina,  
Because I know you well and love you well,  
Leave shall you have to court her at your pleasure.

*Gre.* [Aside] To cart her rather: she's too rough for me.

There, there, Hortensio, will you any wife?

*Kath.* I pray you, sir, is it your will  
To make a stale of me amongst these mates?

*Hor.* Mates, maid! how mean you that! no mates for you,

Unless you were of gentler, milder mould.

*Kath.* I' faith, sir, you shall never need to fear:

I wis it is not half way to her heart;  
But if it were, doubt not her care should be  
To comb your noddle with a three-legg'd stool  
And paint your face and use you like a fool.

*Hor.* From all such devils, good Lord deliver us!

*Gre.* And me too, good Lord!

*Tra.* Hush, master! here's some good pastime toward:

That wench is stark mad or wonderful froward.

*Luc.* But in the other's silence do I see  
Maid's mild behaviour and sobriety.

Peace, Tranio!

*Tra.* Well said, master; mum! and gaze your fill.

*Bap.* Gentlemen, that I may soon make good  
What I have said, Bianca, get you in:

And let it not displease thee, good Bianca,  
For I will love thee ne'er the less, my girl.

*Kath.* A pretty peat! it is best  
Put finger in the eye, an she knew why.

*Bian.* Sister, content you in my discontent.  
Sir, to your pleasure humbly I subscribe:  
My books and instruments shall be my company,  
On them to look and practise by myself.

*Luc.* Hark, Tranio! thou may'st hear Minerva speak.

*Hor.* Signior Baptista, will you be so strange?  
Sorry am I that our good will effects  
Bianca's grief.

*Gre.* Why will you mew her up,  
Signior Baptista, for this fiend of hell,  
And make her bear the penance of her tongue!



*Bap.* Gentlemen, content ye : I am resolved :  
Go in, Bianca : *[Exit Bianca. 91]*

And for I know she taketh most delight  
In music, instruments and poetry,  
Schoolmasters will I keep within my house,  
Fit to instruct her youth. If you, Hortensio,  
Or Signior Gremio, you, know any such,  
Prefer them hither; for to cunning men  
I will be very kind, and liberal  
To mine own children in good bringing up :  
And so farewell. Katharina, you may stay : 100  
For I have more to commune with Bianca.

*[Exit.]*  
*Kath.* Why, and I trust I may go too, may  
I no. What, shall I be appointed hours; as  
though, belike, I knew not what to take, and  
what to leave, ha? *[Exit.]*

*[Gre.]* You may go to the devil's dam; your  
gifts are so good, here's none will hold you.  
Their love is not so great, Hortensio, but we  
may blow our nails together, and fast it fairly  
out : our cake's dough on both sides. Farewell :  
yet, for the love I bear my sweet Bianca, if I  
can by any means light on a fit man to teach  
her that wherein she delights, I will wish him to  
her father.

*Hor.* So will I, Signior Gremio : but a word,  
I pray. Though the nature of our quarrel yet  
never brook'd parle, know now, upon advice, it  
toucheth us both, that we may yet again have  
access to our fair mistress and be happy rivals  
in Bianca's love, to labour and effect one thing  
specially.

*G.* What's that, I pray?

*Hor.* Marry, sir, to get a husband for her  
sister.

*Gre.* A husband! a devil.

*Hor.* I say, a husband.

*G.* I say, a devil. Thinkest thou, Hor-  
tensio, though her father be very rich, any man  
so very a fool to be married to hell? 129

*Hor.* Tush, Gremio, though it pass your  
attence and mine to endure her loud alarms,  
why, man, there be good fellows in the world,  
as a man could light on them, would take her  
with all faults, and money enough.

*Gre.* I cannot tell; but I had as lief take her  
lowry with this condition, to be whipped at the  
high cross every morning.

*Hor.* Faith, as you say, there's small choice  
in written apples. But come : since this bar in  
law makes us friends, it shall be so far forth  
friendly maintained till by helping Baptista's  
eldest daughter to a husband we set his youngest  
free for a husband, and then have to't afresh.  
Sweet Bianca! Happy man be his dote! He  
that runs fastest gets the ring. How say you,  
Signior Gremio?

*Gre.* I am agreed; and would I had given  
him the best horse in Padua to begin his wooing  
that would thoroughly woo her, wed her and bed  
her and rid the house of her! Come on. 130

*[Exeunt Gremio and Hortensio.]*  
*Tra.* I pray, sir, tell me, is it possible  
but love should of a sudden take such hold?

*Luc.* O Tranio, till I found it to be true,  
I never thought it possible or likely :  
But see, while idly I stood looking on,

I found the effect of love in idleness :  
And now in plainness do confess to thee,  
That art to me as secret and as dear  
As Anna to the queen of Carthage was, 160  
Tranio, I burn, I pine, I perish, Tranio,  
If I achieve not this young modest girl.  
Counsel me, Tranio, for I know thou canst;  
Assist me, Tranio, for I know thou wilt.  
*Tra.* Master, it is no time to chide you now;  
Affection is not rated from the heart :  
If love have touch'd you, nought remains but so,  
'Redime te captum quam queis minimo.'

*Luc.* Gramercies, lad, go forward : this con-  
tents :

The rest will comfort, for thy counsel's sound.

*Tra.* Master, you look'd so longly on the  
maid, 170

Perhaps you mark'd not what's the pith of all.

*Luc.* O yes, I saw sweet beauty in her face,  
Such as the daughter of Agenor had,

That male great Jove to humble him to her  
hand,

When with his knees he kiss'd the Cretan  
strand.

*Tra.* Saw you no more? mark'd you not  
how her sister

Began to scold and raise up such a storm  
That mortal ears might hardly endure the din?

*Luc.* Tranio, I saw her coral lips to move  
And with her breath she did perfume the air : 180  
Sacred and sweet was all I saw in her.

*Tra.* Nay, then, 'tis time to stir him from  
his trance.

I pray, awake, sir : if you love the maid,  
Bend thoughts and wits to achieve her. Thus

it stands :

Her elder sister is so curst and shrewd  
That till the father rid his hands of her,

Master, your love must live a maid at home ;  
And therefore has he closely mew'd her up,  
Because she will not be annoy'd with suitors.

*Luc.* Ah, Tranio, what a cruel father's he!  
But art thou not advis'd, he took some care 191

To get her cunning schoolmasters to instruct  
her?

*Tra.* Ay, marry, am I, sir; and now 'tis  
plotted.

*Luc.* I have it, Tranio.

*Tra.* Master, for my hand,  
Both our inventions meet and join in one.

*Luc.* Tell me thine first.

*Tra.* You will be schoolmaster  
And undertake the teaching of the maid :

That's your device.

*Luc.* It is : may it be done?

*Tra.* Not possible; for who shall bear your  
part,

And be in Padua here Vincentio's son, 200  
Keep house and ply his book, welcome his  
friends,

Visit his countrymen and banquet them?

*Luc.* Basta; content thee, for I have it full.  
We have not yet been seen in any house,

Nor can we be distinguish'd by our faces  
For man or master; then it follows thus;

Thou shalt be master, Tranio, in my stead,  
Keep house and port and servants, as I should :

I will some other be, some Florentine,

Some Neapolitan, or meaner man of Pisa. 210  
 'Tis hatch'd and shall be so: Tranio, at once  
 Uncase thee; take my colour'd hat and cloak:  
 When Biondello comes, he waits on thee;  
 But I will charm him first to keep his tongue.

*Tru.* So had you need.  
 In brief, sir, aith it your pleasure is,  
 And I am tied to be obedient;  
 For so your father charged me at our parting,  
 'Be servicable to my son,' quoth he,  
 Although I think 'twas in another sense; 220  
 I am content to be Lucentio,  
 Because so well I love Lucentio.

*Luc.* Tranio, be so, because Lucentio loves.  
 And let me be a slave, to achieve that maid  
 Whose sudden sight hath thrall'd my wounded  
 eye.

Here comes the rogue.

*Enter BIONDELLO.*

Sirrah, where have you been?  
*Bion.* Where have I been! Nay, how now!  
 where are you? Master, has my fellow Tranio  
 stolen your clothes? Or you stolen his? or both?  
 pray, what's the news? 230

*Luc.* Sirrah, come hither: 'tis no time to  
 jest,

And therefore frame your manners to the time.  
 Your fellow Tranio here, to save my life,  
 Puts my apparel and my countenance on,  
 And I for my escape have put on his;  
 For in a quarrel since I came ashore  
 I kill'd a man and fear I was descried:  
 Wait you on him, I charge you, as becomes,  
 While I make way from hence to save my  
 life;

You understand me?

*Bion.* I, sir! ne'er a whit. 240

*Luc.* And not a jot of Tranio in your mouth:  
 Tranio is changed into Lucentio.

*Bion.* The better for him: would I were  
 so too!

*Tru.* So could I, faith, boy, to have the  
 next wish after,

That Lucentio indeed had Baptista's youngest  
 daughter.

But, sirrah, not for my sake, but your master's,  
 I advise

You use your manners discreetly in all kind of  
 companies:

When I am alone, why, then I am Tranio;  
 But in all places else your master Lucentio. 249

*Luc.* Tranio, let's go: one thing more rests,  
 that thyself execute, to make one among these  
 wooers: if thou ask me why, sufficient, my reasons  
 are both good and weighty. *[Exeunt.]*

*The presenters above speak.*

*First Serv.* My lord, you nod; you do not  
 mind the play.

*Sty.* Yes, by Saint Anne, do I. A good  
 matter, surely: comes there any more of it?

*Page.* My lord, 'tis but begun.

*Sty.* 'Tis a very excellent piece of work,  
 madam lady: would 'twere done! 250

*[They sit and mark.]*

SCENE II. *Padua. Before HORTENSIO'S house.*

*Enter PETRUCHIO and his man GRUMIO.*

*Pet.* Verona, for a while I take my leave,  
 To see my friends in Padua, but of all  
 My best beloved and approved friend,  
 Hortensio; and I trow this is his house.

Here, sirrah Grumio; knock, I say.

*Grum.* Knock, sir! whom should I knock? is  
 there any man has rebused your worship?

*Pet.* Villain, I say, knock me here soundly.

*Grum.* Knock you here, sir! why, sir, what  
 am I, sir, that I should knock you here, sir? 10

*Pet.* Villain, I say, knock me at this gate

And rap me well, or I'll knock your knave's

pate.

*Grum.* My master is grown quarrelsome. I

should knock you first.

And then I know after who comes by the worst.

*Pet.* Will it not be?

Faith, sirrah, an you'll not knock, I'll ring it;

I'll try how you can sol, fa, and sing it.

*[He wrings him by the ear.]*

*Grum.* Help, masters, help! my master is

mad.

*Pet.* Now, knock when I bid you, sirrah

villain! 19

*Enter HORTENSIO.*

*Hort.* How now! what's the matter? My old  
 friend Grumio! and my good friend Petruchio!  
 How do you all at Verona?

*Pet.* Signior Hortensio, come you to part  
 the fray?

'Con tutto il cuore, ben trovato,' may I say.

*Hort.* 'Alla nostra casa ben venuto, molto  
 honorato signor mio Petruchio.'

Rise, Grumio, rise: we will compound this  
 quarrel.

*Grum.* Nay, 'tis no matter, sir, what he 'leges  
 in Latin. If this be not a lawful cause for me

to leave his service, look you, sir, he bid me  
 knock him and rap him soundly, sir: well,

was it fit for a servant to use his master so,  
 being perhaps, for aught I see, two and thirty,

a pip out?

Whom would to God I had well knock'd at

first,

Then had not Grumio come by the worst.

*Pet.* A senseless villain! Good Hortensio,

I bade the rascal knock upon your gate

And could not get him for my heart to do it.

*Grum.* Knock at the gate! O heavens! Spake

you not these words plain, 'Sirrah, knock me

here, rap me here, knock me well, and knock me

soundly'? And come you now with, 'knocking

at the gate'?

*Pet.* Sirrah, be gone, or talk not, I advise

you.

*Hort.* Petruchio, patience; I am Grumio's

pledge:

Why, this's a heavy chance 'twixt him and

you,

Your ancient, trusty, pleasant servant Grumio.

And tell me now, sweet friend, what happy

gale

Blows you to Padua here from old Verona?

*Pet.* Such wind as scatters young men  
through the world 50

To seek their fortunes farther than at home  
Where small experience grows. But in a few,  
Signior Hortensio, thus it stands with me:  
Antonio, my father, is deceased;  
And I have thrust myself into this maze,  
Haply to wive and thrive as best I may;  
'Tis now in my purse I have and goods at home,  
And so am come abroad to see the world.

*Hor.* Petruccio, shall I then come roundly  
to thee

And wish thee to a shrewd ill-favour'd wife? 60  
Thou 'dst thank me but a little for my counsel:  
And yet I'll promise thee she shall be rich  
And very rich; but thou 'rt too much my friend,  
And I'll not wish thee to her.

*Pet.* Signior Hortensio, 'twixt such friends  
as we

Few words suffice; and therefore, if thou know  
One rich enough to be Petruccio's wife,  
As wealth is burden of my wooing dance,  
Be she as foul as was Florentius' love,  
As old as Sibyl and as curst and shrewd 70  
As Socrates' Xanthippe, or a worse,  
She moves me not, or not removes, at least,  
Affection's edge in me, were she as rough  
As are the swelling Adriatic seas;  
I come to wive it wealthily in Padua;  
If wealthily, then happily in Padua.

*Grm.* Nay, look you, sir, he tells you flatly  
what his mind is: why, give him gold enough  
and marry him to a puppet or an aglet-baby;  
or an old trot with ne'er a tooth in her head,  
though she have as many diseases as two and  
fifty horses: why, nothing comes amiss, so  
money comes withal.

*Hor.* Petruccio, since we are stepp'd thus  
far in,

I will continue that I broach'd in jest.  
I can, Petruccio, help thee to a wife  
With wealth enough and young and beautiful,  
Brought up as best becomes a gentlewoman:  
Her only fault, and that is faults enough,  
Is that she is intolerable curst  
And shrewd and forward, so beyond all measure  
That, were my state far worse than it is, 91  
I would not wed her for a mine of gold.

*Pet.* Hortensio, peace! thou know'st not  
gold's effect:

Tell me her father's name and 'tis enough;  
For I will board her, though she chide as loud  
As thunder when the clouds in autumn crack.

*Hor.* Her father is Baptista Minola,  
An affable and courteous gentleman:  
Her name is Katharina Minola,  
Renown'd in Padua for her scolding tongue.

*Pet.* I know her father, though I know not  
her 101

And he knew my deceased father well.  
I will not sleep, Hortensio, till I see her;  
And therefore let me be thus bold with you  
To give you over at this first encounter,  
Unless you will accompany me thither.

*Grm.* I pray you, sir, let him go while the  
humour lasts. O my word, an she knew him  
as well as I do, she would think scolding would

do little good upon him: she may perhaps call  
him half a score knaves or so: why, that's  
nothing; an he begin once, he'll rail in his  
rope-tricks. I'll tell you what, sir, an she stand  
him but a little, he will throw a figure in her  
face and so disfigure her with it that she shall  
have no more eyes to see withal than a cat.  
You know him not, sir.

*Hor.* Tarry, Petruccio, I must go with thee,  
For in Baptista's keep my treasure is:  
He hath the jewel of my life in hold,  
His youngest daughter, beautiful Bianca, 120  
And her withholds from me and other more,  
Suitors to her and rivals in my love,  
Supposing it a thing impossible,  
For those defects I have before rehearsed,  
That ever Katharina will be woo'd;  
Therefore this order hath Baptista ta'en,  
That none shall have access unto Bianca  
Till Katharine the curst have got a husband.

*Grm.* Katharine the curst!  
A title for a maid of all titles the worst. 130

*Hor.* Now shall my friend Petruccio do me  
grace,

And offer me disguised in sober robes  
To old Baptista as a schoolmaster  
Well seen in music, to instruct Bianca;  
That so I may, by this device, at least  
Have leave and leisure to make love to her  
And unsuspected court her by herself.

*Grm.* Here's no knavery! See, to beguile  
the old folks, how the young folks lay their  
heads together! 140

*Enter Gremio, and Lucentio disguised.*

Master, master, look about you: who goes  
there, ha?

*Hor.* Peace, Gremio! it is the rival of my  
love.

Petruccio, stand by a while.

*Grm.* A proper stripling and an amorous!  
*Gre.* O, very well; I have perused the note.  
Hark you, sir; I'll have them very fairly  
bound:

All books of love, see that at any hand;  
And see you read no other lectures to her:  
You understand me: over and beside  
Signior Baptista's liberality, 150  
I'll mend it with a largess. Take your paper  
too,

And let me have them very well perfumed:  
For she is sweeter than perfume itself  
To whom they go to. What will you read  
to her?

*Luc.* Whate'er I read to her, I'll plead for  
you

As for my patron, stand you so assured,  
As firmly as yourself were still in place:

Yea, and perhaps with more successful words  
Than you, unless you were a scholar, sir.

*Gre.* O this learning, what a thing it is! 160  
*Grm.* O this woodcock, what an ass it is!

*Pet.* Peace, sirrah!

*Hor.* Gremio, mum! God save you, Signior  
Gremio.

*Gre.* And you are well met, Signior Hor-  
tensio.

Trow you whither I am going! To Baptista Minola.

I promised to inquire carefully  
About a schoolmaster for the fair Bianca:  
And by good fortune I have lighted well  
On this young man, for learning and behaviour  
Fit for her turn, well read in poetry 170  
And other books, good ones, I warrant ye.

*Hor.* 'Tis well; and I have met a gentleman

Hath promised me to help me to another,  
A fine musician to instruct our mistress;  
So shall I no whit be behind in duty  
To fair Bianca, so beloved of me.

*Gre.* Beloved of me; and that my deeds shall prove.

*Gru.* And that his bags shall prove.

*Hor.* Gremio, 'tis now no time to vent our love:

Listen to me, and if you speak me fair, 180  
I'll tell you news indifferent good for either.

Here is a gentleman whom by chance I met,  
Upon agreement from us to his liking,  
Will undertake to woo curst Katharine,  
Yea, and to marry her, if her dowry please.

*Gre.* So said, so done, is well.

Hortensio, have you told him all her faults?

*Pet.* I know she is an irksome brawling scold:

If that be all, masters, I hear no harm.

*Gre.* No, sayst me so, friend! What countryman? 190

*Pet.* Born in Verona, old Antonio's son:

My father dead, my fortune lives for me;

And I do hope good days and long to see.

*Gre.* O sir, such a life, with such a wife, were strange!

But if you have a stomach, to 't i' God's name:

You shall have me assisting you in all.

But will you woo this wild-cat?

*Pet.* Will I live? Will I live?

*Gru.* Will he woo her? ay, or I'll hang her.

*Pet.* Why came I hither but to that intent?

Think you a little din can daunt mine ears?

Have I not in my time heard lions roar? 201

Have I not heard the sea puff'd up with winds

Rage like an angry boar chafed with sweat?

Have I not heard great ordnance in the field,

And heaven's artillery thunder in the skies?

Have I not in a pitched battle heard

Loud 'larums, neighing steeds, and trumpets' 210

clang?

And do you tell me of a woman's tongue,

That gives not half so great a blow to hear

As will a chestnut in a farmer's fire?

Tush, tush! fear boys with bugs.

*Gru.* For he fears none.

*Gre.* Hortensio, hark:

This gentleman is happily arrived,

My mind presumes, for his own good and

ours.

*Hor.* I promised we would be contributors

And bear his charge of wooing, whatsoever.

*Gre.* And so we will, provided that he win

her.

*Gru.* I would I were as sure of a good

dinner.

*Enter TRANIO brave, and BIONDELLO.*

*Tra.* Gentlemen, God save you. If I may be bold,

Tell me, I beseech you, which is the readiest way

To the house of Signior Baptista Minola? 221

*Bion.* He that has the two fair daughters: is't he you mean?

*Tra.* Even he, Biondello.

*Gre.* Hark you, sir; you mean not her to—

*Tra.* Perhaps, him and her, sir: what have you to do?

*Pet.* Not her that chides, sir, at any hand, I pray.

*Tra.* I love no chiders, sir. Biondello, let's away.

*Luc.* Well begun, Tranio.

*Hor.* Sir, a word ere you go; Are you a suitor to the maid you talk of, yea or no?

*Tra.* And if I be, sir, is it any offence?

*Gre.* No; if without more words you will get you hence.

*Tra.* Why, sir, I pray, are not the streets as free

For me as for you?

*Gre.* But so is not she.

*Tra.* For what reason, I beseech you?

*Gre.* For this reason, if you'll know,

That she's the choice love of Signior Gremio.

*Hor.* That she's the chosen of Signior Hortensio.

*Tra.* Softly, my masters! if you be gentlemen,

Do me this right; hear me with patience.

Baptista is a noble gentleman, 240

To whom my father is not all unknown;

And were his daughter fairer than she is,

She may more suitors have and me for one.

Fair Leda's daughter had a thousand wooers;

Then well one more may fair Bianca have:

And so she shall; Lucentio shall make one,

Though Paris came in hope to speed alone.

*Gre.* What! this gentleman will out-talk

us all.

*Luc.* Sir, give him head: I know he'll prove

a jade.

*Pet.* Hortensio, to what end are all these

words? 250

*Hor.* Sir, let me be so bold as ask you,

Did you yet ever see Baptista's daughter?

*Tra.* No, sir; but hear I do that he hath

two,

The one as famous for a scolding tongue

As is the other for beautiful modesty.

*Pet.* Sir, sir, the first's for me; let her

go by.

*Gre.* Yea, leave that labour to great Hercules;

And let it be more than Alcides' twelve.

*Pet.* Sir, understand you this of me in

sooth:

The youngest daughter whom you hearken for

Her father keeps from all access of suitors, 261

And will not promise her to any man

Until the elder sister first be wed:

The younger then is free and not before.

*Tra.* If it be so, sir, that you are the man  
Must stead us all and me amongst the rest,  
And if you break the ice and do this feat,  
Achieve the elder, set the younger free  
For our access, whose hap shall be to have her  
Will not so graceless be to be ingrate. 270

*Hor.* Sir, you say well and well you do  
conceive;

And since you do profess to be a suitor,  
You must, as we do, gratify this gentleman,  
To whom we all rest generally beholding.

*Tra.* Sir, I shall not be slack: in sign whereof,  
Please ye we may contrive this afternoon,  
And quaff carouses to our mistress' health,  
And do as adversaries do in law,  
Strive mightily, but eat and drink as friends.

*Grem.* *Bion.* O excellent motion! Fellows,  
let's be gone. 280

*Hor.* The motion's good indeed and he it so,  
Petruchio, I shall be your ben venuto. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

SCENE I. Padua. A room in BAPTISTA'S  
house.

*Enter KATHARINA and BIANCA.*

*Bian.* Good sister, wrong me not, nor wrong  
yourself,

To make a bondmaid and a slave of me;  
That I disdain: but for these other gawds,  
Unbind my hands, I'll pull them off myself,  
Yea, all my raiment, to my petticoat;  
Or what you will command me will I do,  
So well I know my duty to my elders.

*Kath.* Of all thy suitors, here I charge thee,  
tell

Whom thou lovest best: see thou dissemble  
not.

*Bian.* Believe me, sister, of all the men  
alive

I never yet beheld that special face  
Which I could fancy more than any other.

*Kath.* Minion, thou liest. Is't not Horten-  
sio?

*Bian.* If you affect him, sister, here I swear  
I'll plead for you myself, but you shall have  
him.

*Kath.* O then, belike, you fancy riches more:  
You will have Gremio to keep you fair.

*Bian.* Is it for him you do envy me so?

Say then you jest, and now I well perceive  
You have but jested with me all this while:

I prithee, sister Kate, unfrie my hands.  
*Kath.* If that be jest, then all the rest was so.  
[*Strikes her.*]

*Enter BAPTISTA.*

*Bap.* Why, how now, dame! whence grows  
this insolence?

*Bianca,* stand aside. Poor girl! she weeps.  
Go ply thy needle; meddle not with her.

For shame, thou hiding of a devilish spirit,  
Why dost thou wrong her that did ne'er wrong  
thee?

When did she cross thee with a bitter word?

*Kath.* Her silence flouts me, and I'll be  
revenged. [*Flies after Bianca.*]

*Bap.* What, in my sight! Bianca, get thee in.  
[*Exit Bianca.* 30]

*Kath.* What, will you not suffer me? Nay,  
now I see

She is your treasure, she must have a husband;  
I must dance bare-foot on her wedding day  
And for your love to her lead apes in hell.

Talk not to me: I will go sit and weep  
Till I can find occasion of revenge. [*Exit.*]

*Bap.* Was ever gentleman thus grieved as I?  
But who comes here?

*Enter GREMIO, LUCENTIO in the habit of a  
mean man; PETRUCHIO, with HORTENSIO  
as a musician; and TRANIO, with BION-  
DELLO bearing a lute and books.*

*Grem.* Good morning, neighbour Baptista.

*Bap.* Good morning, neighbour Gremio. God  
save you, gentlemen! 41

*Pet.* And you, good sir! Pray, have you not  
a daughter

Call'd Katharina, fair and virtuous?

*Bap.* I have a daughter, sir, called Katharina.

*Grem.* You are too blunt: go to it orderly.

*Pet.* You wrong me, Signior Gremio: give  
me leave.

I am a gentleman of Verona, sir,  
That, hearing of her beauty and her wit,  
Her affability and bashful modesty,  
Her wondrous qualities and mild behaviour, 50  
Am bold to show myself a forward guest  
Within your house, to make mine eye the wit-  
ness

Of that report which I so oft have heard.

And, for an entrance to my entertainment,

I do present you with a man of mine.

[*Presenting Hortensio.*]  
Cunning in music and the mathematics,

To instruct her fully in those sciences,

Whereof I know she is not ignorant:

Accept of him, or else you do me wrong:

His name is Licio, born in Mantua. 60

*Bap.* You're welcome, sir; and he, for your  
good sake.

But for my daughter Katharine, this I know,

She is not for your turn, the more my grief.

*Pet.* I see you do not mean to part with her,  
Or else you like not of my company.

*Bap.* Mistake me not; I speak but as I find.  
Whence are you, sir? what may I call your  
name?

*Pet.* Petruchio is my name; Antonio's son,  
A man well known throughout all Italy.

*Bap.* I know him well: you are welcome for  
his sake. 70

*Grem.* Saving your tale, Petruchio, I pray,

Let us that are poor petitioners, speak too:

Baccare! you are marvellous forward.

*Pet.* O, pardon me, Signior Gremio; I would  
fain be doing.

*Grem.* I doubt it not, sir; but you will curse  
your wooing.

Neighbour, this is a gift very grateful, I am sure  
of it. To express the like kindness, myself, that  
have been more kindly beholding to you than  
any, freely give unto you this young scholar  
[*presenting Lucentio*], that hath been long  
studying at Rheims; as cunning in Greek,

Latin, and other languages, as the other in music and mathematics: his name is Cambio; pray, accept his service.

*Bap.* A thousand thanks, Signior Gremio. Welcome, good Cambio. [*To Tranio*] But, gentle sir, methinks you walk like a stranger: may I be so bold to know the cause of your coming?

*Tra.* Pardon me, sir, the boldness is mine own.

That, being a stranger in this city here, 90  
Do make myself a suitor to your daughter,  
Unto Bianca, fair and virtuous.

Nor is your firm resolve unknown to me,  
In the preferment of the eldest sister.

This liberty is all that I request,  
That, upon knowledge of my parentage,  
I may have welcome amongst the rest that woo  
And free access and favour as the rest:

And, toward the education of your daughters,  
I here bestow a simple instrument, 100  
And this small packet of Greek and Latin  
books:

If you accept them, then their worth is great.

*Bap.* Lucentio is your name; of whence, I pray?

*Tra.* Of Pisa, sir; son to Vincentio.

*Bap.* A mighty man of Pisa; by report  
I know him well: you are very welcome, sir.  
Take you the lute, and you the set of books;  
You shall go see your pupils presently.  
Holla, within!

#### Enter a Servant.

Sirrah, lead these gentlemen  
To my daughters; and tell them both, 110  
These are their tutors: bid them use them well.

[*Exit Servant, with Lucentio and Hortensio, Biondello following.*]

We will go walk a little in the orchard,  
And then to dinner. You are passing welcome,  
And so I pray you all to think yourselves.

*Pet.* Signior Baptista, my business asketh haste,

And every day I cannot come to woo.  
You knew my father well, and in him me,  
Left solely heir to all his lands and goods,  
Which I have better'd rather than decreased:  
Then tell me, if I get your daughter's love, 120  
What dowry shall I have with her to wife?

*Bap.* After my death the one half of my lands,

And in possession twenty thousand crowns.

*Pet.* And, for that dowry, I'll assure her of  
Her widowhood, be it that she survive me,  
In all my lands and leases whatsoever:  
Let specialties be therefore drawn between us,  
That covenants may be kept on either hand.

*Bap.* Ay, when the special thing is well obtained,

That is, her love; for that is all in all. 130

*Pet.* Why, that is nothing; for I tell you, father,

I am as peremptory as she proud-minded;  
And where two raging fires meet together  
They do consume the thing that feeds their  
fury:

Though little fire grows great with little wind,  
Yet extreme gusts will blow out fire and all:

So I to her and so she yields to me;  
For I am rough and woo not like a babe.

*Bap.* Well mayst thou woo, and happy be thy speed!

But be thou arm'd for some unhappy words. 140

*Pet.* Ay, to the proof; as mountains are for winds,

That shake not, though they blow perpetually.

*Re-enter HORTENSIO, with his head broke.*

*Bap.* How now, my friend! why dost thou look so pale?

*Hor.* For fear, I promise you, if I look pale.

*Bap.* What, will my daughter prove a good musician?

*Hor.* I think she'll sooner prove a soldier:  
Iron may hold with her, but never lutes.

*Bap.* Why, then thou canst not break her to the lute?

*Hor.* Why, no; for she hath broke the lute to me.

I did but tell her she mistook her frets, 150  
And bow'd her hand to teach her fingering;

When, with a most impatient devilish spirit,  
'Frets, call you these?' quoth she; 'I'll fume  
with them!'

And, with that word, she struck me on the head,  
And through the instrument my pate made way;

And there I stood amazed for a while,  
As on a pillory, looking through the lute;

While she did call me rascal fiddler  
And twangling Jack; with twenty such vile  
terms,

As had she studied to misuse me so. 160

*Pet.* Now, by the world, it is a lusty wench;  
I love her ten times more than e'er I did:

O, how I long to have some chat with her!

*Bap.* Well, go with me and be not so discomfited:

Proceed in practice with my younger daughter:  
She's apt to learn and thankful for good turns.

Signior Petruccio, will you go with us,  
Or shall I send my daughter Kate to you?

*Pet.* I pray you do. [*Exeunt all but Petruccio.*]

I will attend her here, 165

And woo her with some spirit when she comes.  
Say that she rail; why then I'll tell her plain

She sings as sweetly as a nightingale:  
Say that she frown; I'll say she looks as clear

As morning roses newly wash'd with dew:  
Say she be mute and will not speak a word;

Then I'll commend her volubility,  
And say she uttereth piercing eloquence:

If she do bid me pack, I'll give her thanks,  
As though she bid me stay by her a week:

If she deny to wed, I'll crave the day 170  
When I shall ask the bauns and when be  
married.

But here she comes; and now, Petruccio, speak.

#### Enter KATHARINA.

Good morrow, Kate; for that's your name,  
hear.

*Kath.* Well have you heard, but something  
hard of hearing:

They call me Katharine that do talk of me.

*Pet.* You lie, in faith; for you are  
plain Kate,

And bonny Kate and sometimes Kate the curst;  
But Kate, the prettiest Kate in Christendom,  
Kate of Kate Hall, my super-dainty Kate,  
For dainties are all Kates, and therefore, Kate,  
Take this of me, Kate of my consolation: 191  
Hearing thy mildness praised in every town,  
Thy virtues spoke of, and thy beauty sounded,  
Yet not so deeply as to thee belongs,  
Myself am moved to woo thee for my wife.

*Kath.* Moved! in good time: let him that  
moved you hither  
Remove you hence: I knew you at the first  
You were a moveable.

*Pet.* Why, what's a moveable?  
*Kath.* A join'd-stool.

*Pet.* Thou hast hit it: come, sit on me.

*Kath.* Asses are made to bear, and so are  
you.

*Pet.* Women are made to bear, and so are  
you.

*Kath.* No such jade as you, if me you mean.

*Pet.* Alas! good Kate, I will not burden  
thee;

[For, knowing thee to be but young and light—

*Kath.* Too light for such a swain as you to  
catch;

[And yet as heavy as my weight should be.

*Pet.* Should be! should—buzz!

*Kath.* Well ta'en, and like a buzzard.

*Pet.* O slow-wing'd turtle! shall a buzzard  
take thee?

*Kath.* Ay, for a turtle, as he takes a buzzard.

*Pet.* Come, come, you wasp; I' faith, you  
are too angry. 210

*Kath.* If I be waspish, best beware my sting.

*Pet.* My remedy is then, to pluck it out.

*Kath.* Ay, if the fool could find it where it  
lies.

*Pet.* Who knows not where a wasp does wear  
his sting? In his tail.

*Kath.* In his tongue.

*Pet.* Whose tongue?

*Kath.* Yours, if you talk of tails: and so  
farewell.

*Pet.* What, with my tongue in your tail?  
nay, come again,

Good Kate; I am a gentleman.

*Kath.* That I'll try. [*She strikes him.* 220

*Pet.* I swear I'll cuff you, if you strike again.

*Kath.* So may you lose your arms;

[If you strike me, you are no gentleman;  
And if no gentleman, why then no arms.

*Pet.* A herald, Kate! O, put me in thy  
books!

*Kath.* What is your crest? a coxcomb?

*Pet.* A comble cock, so Kate will be my  
hen.

*Kath.* No cock of mine; you crow too like a  
craven.

*Pet.* Nay, come, Kate, come; you must not  
look so sour.

*Kath.* It is my fashion, when I see a crab.

*Pet.* Why, here's no crab; and therefore  
look not sour. 231

*Kath.* There is, there is.

*Pet.* Then show it me.

*Kath.* Had I a glass, I would.

*Pet.* What, you mean my face?

*Kath.* Well aim'd of such a young one.

*Pet.* Now, by Saint George, I am too young  
for you.

*Kath.* Yet you are wither'd.

*Pet.* 'Tis with carea. 240

*Kath.* I care not.

*Pet.* Nay, hear you, Kate: in sooth you  
scape not so.

*Kath.* I chafe you, if I tarry: let me go.

*Pet.* No, not a whit: I find you passing  
gentle.

'Twas told me you were rough and coy and  
sullen.

And now I find report a very liar;

For thou art pleasant, gamesome, passing cour-  
teous,

But slow in speech, yet sweet as spring-time  
flowers:

Thou canst not frown, thou canst not look  
askance,

Nor bite the lip, as angry wenches will, 250

Nor hast thou pleasure to be cross in talk,

But thou with mildness entertain'st thy wooers,

With gentle conference, soft and affable.

Why does the world report that Kate doth limp?

O slanderous world! Kate like the hazel-twig

Is straight and slender and as brown in hue

As hazel nuts and sweeter than the kernels.

O, let me see thee walk: thou dost not halt.

*Kath.* Go, fool, and whom thou keep'st  
command.

*Pet.* Did ever Dian so become a grove 260

As Kate this chamber with her princely gait?

O, be thou Dian, and let her be Kate;

And then let Kate be chaste and Dian sportful!

*Kath.* Where did you study all this goodly  
speech?

*Pet.* It is extempore, from my mother-wit.

*Kath.* A witty mother! witless else her son.

*Pet.* Am I not wise?

*Kath.* Yes; keep you warm.

*Pet.* Marry, so I mean, sweet Katharine, in  
thy bed:

And therefore, setting all this chat aside, 270

Thus in plain terms: your father hath consented  
That you shall be my wife; your dowry greed

on;

And, will you, nill you, I will marry you.

Now, Kate, I am a husband for your turn;

For, by this light, whereby I see thy beauty,

Thy beauty, that doth make me like thee well,

Thou must be married to no man but me;

For I am he am born to tame you, Kate,

And bring you from a wild Kate to a Kate

(Conformable as other household Kates. 280

Here comes your father: never make denial;

I must and will have Katharine to my wife.

*Re-enter BAPTISTA, GREMIO, and TRANIO.*

*Bap.* Now, Signior Petruchio, how speed  
you with my daughter?

*Pet.* How but well, sir? how but well?

It were impossible I should speed amiss.

*Bap.* Why, how now, daughter Katharine?

in your dumps?

*Kath.* Call you me daughter? now, I promise  
you,

You have show'd a tender fatherly regard,  
To wish me wed to one half lunatic;

A mad-cap ruffian and a swearing Jack, 290  
That thinks with oaths to face the matter out.

*Pet.* Father, 'tis thus: yourself and all the world.

That talk'd of her, have talk'd amiss of her:

If she be curst, it is for policy,

For she's not froward, but modest as the dove;

She is not hot, but temperate as the morn;

For patience she will prove a second Grissel,

And Roman Lucrece for her chastity:

And to conclude, we have 'greed so well together,  
That upon Sunday is the wedding-day. 300

*Kath.* I'll see thee hang'd on Sunday first.

*Gre.* Hark, Petruchio; she says she'll see thee hang'd first.

*Tra.* Is this your speeding? nay, then, good night our part!

*Pet.* Be patient, gentlemen; I choose her for myself:

If she and I be pleased, what's that to you?

'Tis bargain'd 'twixt us twain, being alone,

That she shall still be curst in company.

I tell you, 'tis incredible to believe

How much she loves me: O, the kindest Kate!

She hung about my neck; and kiss on kiss 310

She vied so fast, protesting oath on oath,

That in a twink she won me to her love.

O, you are novices! 'tis a world to see,

How tame, when men and women are alone,

A meacock wretch can make the curstest shrew.

Give me thy hand, Kate: I will unto Venice,

To buy apparel 'gainst the wedding-day.

Provide the feast, father, and bid the guests;

I will be sure my Katharine shall be fine.

*Bap.* I know not what to say: but give me your hands; 320

God send you joy, Petruchio! 'tis a match.

*Gre.* *Tra.* Amen, say we: we will be witnesses.

*Pet.* Father, and wife, and gentlemen, adieu;

I will to Venice; Sunday comes apace:

We will have rings and things and fine array;

And kiss me, Kate, we will be married o' Sunday.

[*Exeunt Petruchio and Katharine severally.*]

*Gre.* Was ever match clapp'd up so suddenly?

*Bap.* Faith, gentlemen, now I play a merchant's part,

And venture madly on a desperate mart.

*Tra.* 'Twas a commodity lay fretting by you:  
'Twill bring you gain, or perish on the seas. 331

*Bap.* The gain I seek is, quiet in the match.

*Gre.* No doubt but he hath got a quiet catch.

But now, Baptista, to your younger daughter:

Now is the day we long have looked for:

I am your neighbour, and was suitor first.

*Tra.* And I am one that love Bianca more  
Than words can witness, or your thoughts can

guess. 339

*Gre.* Youngling, thou canst not love so dear as I.

*Tra.* Graybeard, thy love doth freeze.

*Gre.* But thine doth fry.

Skipper, stand back: 'tis age that nourisheth.

*Tra.* But youth in ladies' eyes that flourisheth.

*Bap.* Content you, gentlemen: I will compound this strife:

'Tis deeds must win the prize; and he of both  
That can assure my daughter greatest dower

Shall have my Bianca's love.

Say, Signior Gremio, what can you assure her?

*Gre.* First, as you know, my house within the city

Is richly furnished with plate and gold;

Basins and ewers to lave her dainty hands; 350

My hangings all of Tyrian tapestry;

In ivory coffers I have stuff'd my crowns;

In cypress chests my arras counterpoints,

Costly apparel, tents, and canopies,

Fine linen, Turkey cushions boss'd with pearl,

Valance of Venice gold in needlework,

Pewter and brass and all things that belong

To house or housekeeping; then, at my farm

I have a hundred milch-kine to the pail,

Sixscore fat oxen standing in my stalls, 360

And all things answerable to this portion.

Myself am struck in years, I must confess;

And if I die to-morrow, this is hers,

If whilst I live she will be only mine.

*Tra.* That 'only' came well in. Sir, list to me:

I am my father's heir and only son:

If I may have your daughter to my wife,

I'll leave her houses three or four as good.

Within rich Pisa walls, as any one

Old Signior Gremio has in Padua; 370

Besides two thousand ducats by the year

Of fruitful land, all which shall be her jointure.

What, have I pinch'd you, Signior Gremio?

*Gre.* Two thousand ducats by the year of land!

My land amounts not to so much in all:

That she shall have; besides an argosy

That now is lying in Marseilles' road.

What, have I choked you with an argosy?

*Tra.* Gremio, 'tis known my father hath no less

Than three great argosies; besides two galliases.

And twelve tight galleys: these I will assure

her,

And twice as much, what'er thou offer'st next.

*Gre.* Nay, I have offer'd all, I have no more;

And she can have no more than all I have:

If you like me, she shall have me and mine.

*Tra.* Why, then the maid is mine from all the world,

By your firm promise: Gremio is out-vied.

*Bap.* I must confess your offer is the best;

And, let your father make her the assurance,

She is your own; else, you must pardon me,

If you should die before him, where's her dower?

*Tra.* That's but a cavil: he is old, I young.

*Gre.* And may not young men die, as well as old?

*Bap.* Well, gentlemen,

I am thus resolved: on Sunday next you know

My daughter Katharine is to be married:

Now, on the Sunday following, shall Bianca

Be bride to you, if you make this assurance;

If not, to Signior Gremio:

And so, I take my leave, and thank you both.

*Gre.* Adieu, good neighbour. [*Exit Baptista.*]

Now I fear thee not: 401



Sirrah young gamester, your father were a fool |  
To give thee all, and in his waning age  
Set foot under thy table: tut, a toy!  
An old Italian fox is not so kind, my boy.

[Exit.

*Tra.* A vengeance on your crafty wither'd  
hido!

Yet I have faced it with a card of ten.  
'Tis in my head to do my master good:  
I see no reason but supposed Lucentio  
Must get a father, call'd 'supposed Vincentio';  
And that's a wonder: fathers commonly 411  
Do get their children; but in this case of  
wooing,  
[A child shall get a sire, if I fail not of my cunning.]

[Exit.

## ACT III.

SCENE I. *Padua.* BAPTISTA'S house.

[Enter LUCENTIO, HORTENSIO, and BIANCA.

*Luc.* Fiddler, forbear; you grow too forward, sir:

Have you so soon forgot the entertainment  
Her sister Katharine welcomed you withal?

*Hor.* But, wrangling pedant, this is  
The patroness of heavenly harmony:  
Then give me leave to have prerogative;  
And when in music we have spent an hour,  
Your lecture shall have leisure for as much.

*Luc.* Preposterous ass, that never read so far  
To know the cause why music was ordain'd!  
Was it not to refresh the mind of man  
After his studies or his usual pain?  
Then give me leave to read philosophy,  
And while I pause, serve in your harmony.

*Hor.* Sirrah, I will not bear these braves of  
thine.

*Bian.* Why, gentlemen, you do me double  
wrong,

To strive for that which resteth in my choice:  
I am no breeching scholar in the schools;  
I'll not be tied to hours nor 'pointed times,  
But learn my lessons as I please myself.

And to cut off all strife, here sit we down:  
Take you your instrument, play you the whiles  
His lecture will be done ere you have tuned.

*Hor.* You'll leave his lecture when I am in  
tune?

*Luc.* That will be never: tune your instru-  
ment.

*Bian.* Where left we last?

*Luc.* Here, madam:  
'Hic ibat Simois; hic est Sigeia tellus;  
'Hic steterat Priami regia celsa senia.

*Bian.* Construe them.  
*Luc.* 'Hic ibat,' as I told you before, 'Simois,'  
am Lucentio, 'hic est,' son unto Vincentio of  
Pisa, 'Sigeia tellus,' disguised thus to get your  
love; 'Hic steterat,' and that Lucentio that  
comes a-wooing, 'Priami' is my man Tranio,  
regia,' bearing my port, 'celsa senia,' that we  
might beguile the old pantaloon.

*Hor.* Madam, my instrument's in tune.

*Bian.* Let's hear. O fie! the treble jars.

*Luc.* Spit in the hole, man, and tune again.

*Bian.* Now let me see if I can construe it:  
'Hic ibat Simois,' I know you not, 'hic est  
Sigeia tellus,' I trust you not; 'Hic steterat  
Priami,' take heed he hear us not, 'regia,' pre-  
sume not, 'celsa senia,' despair not.

*Hor.* Madam, 'tis now in tune.

*Luc.* All but the base.

*Hor.* The base is right; 'tis the base knave  
that jars.

[*Aside*] How fiery and forward our pedant is!  
Now, for my life, the knave doth court my love:  
Pedasculc, I'll watch you better yet.

*Bian.* In time I may believe, yet I mistrust.

*Luc.* Mistrust it not; for, sure, *Æcides*

Was Ajax, call'd so from his grandfather.

*Bian.* I must believe my master; else, I  
promise you,

I should be arguing still upon that doubt:

But let it rest. Now, Licio, to you:

Good masters, take it not unkindly, pray,  
That I have been thus pleasant with you both.

*Hor.* You may go walk, and give me leave  
a while:

My lessons make no music in three parts.

*Luc.* Are you so formal, sir? well, I must  
wait,

[*Aside*] And watch withal; for, but I be de-  
ceive,

Our fine musician groweth amorous.

*Hor.* Madam, before you touch the instru-  
ment,

To learn the order of my fingering,  
I must begin with rudiments of art;  
To teach you gamut in a briefer sort,  
More pleasant, pithy and effectual,  
Than hath been taught by any of my trade:  
And there it is in writing, fairly drawn.

*Bian.* Why, I am past my gamut long ago.

*Hor.* Yet read the gamut of Hortensio.

*Bian.* [Reads] "Gamut" I am, the ground  
of all accord,

'A re,' to plead Hortensio's passion;

'B mi,' Bianca, take him for thy lord;

'C fa ut,' that loves with all affection:

'D sol re,' one clef, two notes have I:

'E la mi,' show pity, or I die."

Call you this gamut? tut, I like it not:  
Old fashions please me best; I am not so nice,  
To change true rules for old inventions.

## Enter a Servant.

*Serv.* Mistress, your father prays you leave  
your books

And help to dress your sister's chamber up:

You know to-morrow is the wedding-day.

*Bian.* Farewell, sweet masters both: I must  
be gone. [Exit *Bianca* and *Servant*.]

*Luc.* Faith, mistress, then I have no cause  
to stay. [Exit.

*Hor.* But I have cause to pry into this  
pedant:

Methinks he looks as though he were in love:  
Yet if thy thoughts, Bianca, be so humble  
To cast thy wandering eyes on every stale,  
Seize thee that list: if once I find thee ranging,  
Hortensio will be quit with thee by changing.

[Exit.

SCENE II. *Padua. Before BAPTISTA's house.*

*Enter BAPTISTA, GREMIO, TRANIO, KATHARINA, BLANCA, LUCENTIO, and others, attendants.*

*Bap. [To Tranio]* Signior Lucentio, this is the pointed day  
That Katharine and Petruchio should be married.

And yet we hear not of our son-in-law.  
What will he say? what mockery will it be,  
To want the bridegroom when the priest attends  
To speak the ceremonial rites of marriage?  
What says Lucentio to this shame of ours?

*Kath.* No shame but mine: I must, forsooth, be forced

To give my hand opposed against my heart  
Unto a mad-brain rudesby full of spleen; 10  
Who woo'd in haste and means to wed at leisure.

I told you, I, he was a frantic fool,  
Hiding his bitter jests in blunt behaviour:  
And, to be noted for a merry man,  
He'll woo a thousand, point the day of marriage,  
Make feasts, invite friends, and proclaim the banns;

Yet never means to wed where he hath woo'd.  
Now must the world point at poor Katharine,  
And say, 'Lo, there is mad Petruchio's wife,  
If it would please him come and marry her!' 20

*Tra.* Patience, good Katharine, and Baptista too.

Upon my life, Petruchio means but well,  
Whatever fortune stays him from his word:  
Though he be blunt, I know him passing wise;  
Though he be merry, yet withal he's honest.

*Kath.* Heaven Katharine had never seen him though!

[*Exit weeping, followed by Bianca and others.*

*Bap.* Go, girl; I cannot blame thee now to weep;

For such an injury would vex a very saint,  
Much more a shrew of thy impatient humour.

*Enter BIONDELLO.*

*Bion.* Master, master! news, old news, and such news as you never heard of! 31

*Bap.* Is it new and old too? how may that be?

*Bion.* Why, is it not news, to hear of Petruchio's coming?

*Bap.* Is he come?

*Bion.* Why, no, sir.

*Bap.* What then?

*Bion.* He is coming.

*Bap.* When will he be here?

*Bion.* When he stands where I am and sees you there. 41

*Tra.* But say, what to thine old news?

*Bion.* Why, Petruchio is coming in a new hat and an old jerkin, a pair of old breeches thrice turned, a pair of boots that have been candle-cases, one buckled, another laced, an old rusty sword ta'en out of the town-armoury, with a broken hilt, and chapeless; with two broken points: his horse hipp'd with an old moth-eaten saddle and stirrups of no kindred; besides, possessed with the glanders and like to

mose in the chine; troubled with the lampas, infected with the fashions, full of windgalls, sped with spavins, rayed with the yellows, past cure of the fives, stark spoiled with the staggers, begnawn with the bots, sway'd in the back and shoulder-shotten; near-legged before and with a half-cheeked bit and a head-stall of sheep's leather which, being restrained to keep him from stumbling, hath been often burst and now repaired with knots; one girth six times pieced and a woman's crupper of velure, which hath two letters for her name fairly set down in studs, and here and there pieced with pack-thread.

*Bap.* Who comes with him?

*Bion.* O, sir, his lackey, for all the world caparisoned like the horse; with a linen stock on one leg and a kersey boot-hose on the other, gartered with a red and blue list; an old hat and 'the humcur of forty fancies' pricked in for a feather: a monster, a very monster in apparel, and not like a Christian footboy or a gentleman's lackey.

*Tra.* 'Tis some odd humour pricks him to this fashion;

Yet oftentimes he goes but mean-apparell'd.  
*Bap.* I am glad he's come, howsoever he comes.

*Bion.* Why, sir, he comes not.

*Bap.* Didst thou not say he comes?

*Bion.* Who? that Petruchio came?

*Bap.* Ay, that Petruchio came. 50

*Bion.* No, sir; I say his horse comes, with him on his back.

*Bap.* Why, that's all one.

*Bion.* Nay, by Saint Jany,

I hold you a penny,

A horse and a man

Is more than one,

And yet not many.

*Enter PETRUCHIO AND GRUMIO.*

*Pet.* Come, where be these gallants? who at home?

*Bap.* You are welcome, sir.

*Pet.* And yet I come not well.

*Bap.* And yet you halt not.

*Tra.* Not so well apparell'd!

As I wish you were.

*Pet.* Were it better, I should rust in this. But where is Kate? where is my lovely bride! How does my father? Gentles, methinks you frown:

And wherefore gaze this goodly company, As if they saw some wondrous monument, Some comet or unusual prodigy?

*Bap.* Why, sir, you know this is your wedding-day:

First were we sad, fearing you would not come. Now sadder, that you come so unprovided. 55 Fie, doff this habit, shame to your estate, An eye-sore to our solemn festival!

*Tra.* And tell us, what occasion of import Hath all so long detain'd you from your wife, And sent you hither so unlike yourself?

*Pet.* Tedious it were to tell, and hard to hear:

Sufficeth, I am come to keep my word,

Though in some part enforced to digress;  
Which, at more leisure, I will so excuse 110  
As you shall well be satisfied withal.

But where is Kate? I stay too long from her:  
The morning wears, 'tis time we were at church.

*Tra.* See not your bride in these unreverent robes:

(Go to my chamber; put on clothes of mine.

*Pet.* Not I, believe me: thus I'll visit her.

*Bap.* But thus, I trust, you will not marry her.

*Pet.* Good sooth, even thus; therefore ha' done with words:

To me she's married, not unto my clothes:  
Could I repair what she will wear in me, 120

As I can change these poor accoutrements,

'Twere well for Kate and better for myself.

But what a fool am I to chat with you,

When I should bid good morrow to my bride,

And seal the title with a lovely kiss!

[*Exeunt Petruchio and Grumio.*

*Tra.* He hath some meaning in his mad attire:

We will persuade him, be it possible,  
To put on better ere he go to church.

*Bap.* I'll after him, and see the event of this.

[*Exeunt Baptista, Gremio, and attendants.*

*Tra.* But to her love concerneth us to add  
Her father's liking: which to bring to pass, 130

As I before imparted to your worship,

I am to get a man,—what'er he be,

It skills not much, we'll fit him to our turn,—

And he shall be Vincentio of Pisa;

And make assurance here in Padua

Of greater sums than I have promised.

So shall you quietly enjoy your hope,

And marry sweet Bianca with consent.

*Luc.* Were it not that my fellow-school-  
master 140

Doth watch Bianca's steps so narrowly,

'Twere good, methinks, to steal our marriage;

Which once perform'd, let all the world say no,

I'll keep mine own, despite of all the world.

*Tra.* That by degrees we mean to look into,

And watch our vantage in this business:

We'll over-reach the greybeard, Gremio,

The narrow-prying father, Minola,

The quaint musician, amorous Licio;

All for my master's sake, Lucentio. 150

*Re-enter Gremio.*

Signior Gremio, came you from the church?

*Gre.* As willingly as e'er I came from school.

*Tra.* And is the bride and bridegroom

coming home?

*Gre.* A bridegroom say you? 'tis a groom

indeed,

A grumbling groom, and that the girl shall

find.

*Tra.* Curster than she? why, 'tis impossible.

*Gre.* Why, he's a devil, a devil, a very fiend!

*Tra.* Why, she's a devil, a devil, the devil's

dam.

*Tra.* Tut, she's a lamb, a dove, a fool to

him!

[I'll tell you, Sir Lucentio: when the priest 160

should ask, if Katharine should be his wife,

'Ay, by gogs-wouns,' quoth he; and swore so  
loud,

That, all-amazed, the priest let fall the book;

And, as he stoop'd again to take it up,

This mad-brain'd bridegroom took him such a

cuff

That down fell priest and book and book and

priest:

'Now take them up,' quoth he, 'if any list.'

*Tra.* What said the wench when he rose

again?

*Gre.* Trembled and shook; for why, he

stamp'd and swore,

As if the vicar meant to cozen him. 170

But after many ceremonies done,

He calls for wine: 'A health!' quoth he, as if

He had been aboard, carousing to his mates

After a storm; quaff'd off the muscadell

And threw the sops all in the sexton's face;

Having no other reason

But that his beard grew thin and hungerly

And seem'd to ask him sops as he was drinking.

This done, he took the bride about the neck

And kiss'd her lips with such a clamorous

smack 180

That at the parting all the church did echo:

And I seeing this came thence for very shame;

And after me, I know, the rout is coming.

Such a mad marriage never was before:

Hark, hark! I hear the minstrels play. [*Music.*

*Re-enter PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA, BIANCA,*

*BAPTISTA, HORTENSIO, GRUMIO, and Train.*

*Pet.* Gentlemen and friends, I thank you

for your pains:

I know you think to dine with me to-day,

And have prepared great store of wedding cheer;

But so it is, my haste doth call me hence, 189

And therefore here I mean to take my leave.

*Bap.* Is 't possible you will away to-night?

*Pet.* I must away to-day, before night come:

Make it no wonder; if you knew my business,

You would entreat me rather go than stay.

And, honest company, I thank you all,

That have beheld me give away myself

To this most patient, sweet and virtuous wife:

Dine with my father, drink a health to me;

For I must hence; and farewell to you all.

*Tra.* Let us entreat you stay till after dinner.

*Pet.* It may not be.

*Gre.* Let me entreat you. 200

*Pet.* It cannot be.

*Kath.* Let me entreat you

*Pet.* I am content.

*Kath.* Are you content to stay?

*Pet.* I am content you shall entreat me stay;

But yet not stay, entreat me how you can.

*Kath.* Now, if you love me, stay.

*Pet.* Grumio, my horse.

*Gru.* Ay, sir, they be ready: the oats have

eaten the horses.

*Kath.* Nay, then,

Do what thou canst, I will not go to-day: 210

No, nor to-morrow, not till I please myself.

The door is open, sir; there lies your way:

You may be jogging whiles your boots are

green;

For me, I'll not be gone till I please myself:

'Tis like you'll prove a jolly surly groom,  
That take it on you at the first so roundly.

*Pet.* O Kate, content thee; prithee, be not angry.

*Kath.* I will be angry; what hast thou to do? Father, be quiet; he shall stay my leisure. 219

*Gre.* Ay, marry, sir, now it begins to work.

*Kath.* Gentlemen, forward to the bridal dinner:

I see a woman may be made a fool,  
If she had not a spirit to resist.

*Pet.* They shall go forward, Kate, at thy command.

Obey the bride, you that attend on her;

Go to the feast, revel and domineer,

Carouse full measure to her maidenhead,

Be mad and merry, or go hang yourselves:

But for my bonny Kate, she must with me.

Nay, look not big, nor stamp, nor stare, nor fret; 230

I will be master of what is mine own:

She is my goods, my chattels; she is my house,

My household stuff, my field, my barn,

My horse, my ox, my ass, my any thing;

And here she stands, touch her whoever dare;

I'll bring mine action on the proudest he

That stops my way in Padua. Grumio,

Draw forth thy weapon, we are beset with thieves;

Rescue thy mistress, if thou be a man.

Fear not, sweet wench, they shall not touch thee, Kate: 240

I'll buckler thee against a million.

[*Exeunt Petruccio, Katharina, and Grumio.*]

*Bap.* Nay, let them go, a couple of quiet ones.

*Gre.* Went they not quickly, I should die with laughing.

*Tra.* Of all mad matches never was the like.

*Luc.* Mistress, what's your opinion of your sister?

*Bian.* That, being mad herself, she's madly mated.

*Gre.* I warrant him, Petruccio is Kated.

*Bap.* Neighbours and friends, though bride and bridegroom wants

For to supply the places at the table,

You know there wants no junkets at the feast.

Lucentio, you shall supply the bridegroom's place; 25

And let Bianca take her sister's room.

*Tra.* Shall sweet Bianca practise how to bride it?

*Bap.* She shall, Lucentio. Come, gentlemen, let's go. [*Exeunt.*]

### ACT IV.

#### SCENE I. PETRUCHIO'S country house.

*Enter GRUMIO.*

*Gr.* Fie, fie on all tired jades, on all mad masters, and all foul ways! Was ever man so beaten? Was ever man so rayed? Was ever man so weary? I am sent before to make a fire, and they are coming after to warm them. Now, were not I a little pot and soon hot, my very lips might freeze to my teeth, my tongue to the roof of my mouth, my heart in my belly, ere I

should come by a fire to thaw me; but I, with blowing the fire, shall warm myself; for, considering the weather, a taller man than I will take cold. Holla, ho! Curtis.

*Enter CURTIS.*

*Curt.* Who is that calls so coldly?

*Gr.* A piece of ice: if thou doubt it, thou mayst slide from my shoulder to my heel with no greater a run but my head and my neck. A fire, good Curtis.

*Curt.* Is my master and his wife coming, Grumio?

*Gr.* O, ay, Curtis, ay: and therefore fire, fire; cast on no water.

*Curt.* Is she so hot a shrew as she's reported?

*Gr.* She was, good Curtis, before this frost; but, thou knowest, winter tames man, woman and beast; for it hath tamed my old master and my new mistress and myself, fellow Curtis.

*Curt.* Away, you three-inch fool! I am no beast.

*Gr.* Am I but three inches? why, thy hom is a foot; and so long am I at the least. But wilt thou make a fire, or shall I complain on thee to our mistress, whose hand, she being now at hand, thou shalt soon feel, to thy cold comfort, for being slow in thy hot office?

*Curt.* I prithee, good Grumio, tell me, how goes the world?

*Gr.* A cold world, Curtis, in every office but thine; and therefore fire: do thy duty, and have thy duty; for my master and mistress are almost frozen to death.

*Curt.* There's a fire ready; and therefore, good Grumio, the news.

*Gr.* Why, 'Jack, boy! ho! boy!' and as much news as will thaw.

*Curt.* Come, you are so full of cony-catching!

*Gr.* Why, therefore fire; for I have caught extreme cold. Where's the cook? is supper ready, the house trimmed, rushes strewed, cobwebs swept; the serving-men in their new fustian, their white stockings, and every officer his wedding-garment on? Be the jacks fair without, the jills fair without, the carpets laid, and every thing in order?

*Curt.* All ready; and therefore, I pray thee, news.

*Gr.* First, know, my horse is tired; my master and mistress fallen out.

*Curt.* How?

*Gr.* Out of their saddles into the dirt; and thereby hangs a tale.

*Curt.* Let's ha't, good Grumio.

*Gr.* Lend thine ear.

*Curt.* Here.

*Gr.* There.

*Curt.* This is to feel a tale, not to hear a tale. [Strikes him.]

*Gr.* And therefore 'tis called a sensible tale; and this cuff was but to knock at your ear, and beseech listening. Now I begin: Imprimis, we came down a holl hill, my master riding behind my mistress,—

*Curt.* Both of one horse?

*Gr.* What's that to thee?

*Curt.* Why, a horse.

*Grm.* Tell thou the tale: but hadst thou not rossed me, thou shouldst have heard how her horse fell and she under her horse; thou shouldst have heard in how merry a place, how she was benoiled, how he left her with the horse upon her, how she beat me because her horse stumbled, how she waded through the dirt to pluck him off me, how he swore, how she prayed, that never prayed before, how I cried, how the horses ran away, how her bridle was burst, how I lost my crupper, with many things of worthy memory, which now shall die in oblivion and thou return unexperienced to thy grave.

*Curt.* By this reckoning he is more shrew than she.

*Grm.* Ay; and that thou and the proudest of you all shall find when he comes home. But what talk I of this? Call forth Nathaniel, Joseph, Nicholas, Philip, Walter, Sugarsope and the rest: let their heads be sleekly combed, their blue coats brushed and their garters of an indifferent knit: let them curtsy with their left legs and not presume to touch a hair of my master's horse-tail till they kiss their hands.

*re they all ready?*

*Curt.* They are.

*Grm.* Call them forth.

*Curt.* Do you hear, ho? you must meet my master to countenance my mistress. 101

*Grm.* Why, she hath a face of her own.

*Curt.* Who knows not that?

*Grm.* Thou, it seems, that calls for company to countenance her.

*Curt.* I call them forth to credit her.

*Grm.* Why, she comes to borrow nothing of them.

*Enter four or five Serving-men.*

*Nath.* Welcome home, Grumio!

*Phil.* How now, Grumio!

*Jos.* What, Grumio!

*Nich.* Fellow Grumio!

*Nath.* How now, old lad?

*Grm.* Welcome, you;—how now, you;—what, you;—fellow, you;—and thus much for greeting. Now, my spruce companions, is all ready, and all things neat?

*Nath.* All things is ready. How near is our master?

*Grm.* E'en at hand, alighted by this; and therefore be not—Cock's passion, silence! I hear my master. 119

*Enter PETRUCHIO and KATHARINA.*

*Pet.* Where be these knaves? What, no man at door?

To hold my stirrup nor to take my horse!

Where is Nathaniel, Gregory, Philip?

*All Serv.* Here, here, sir; here, sir.

*Pet.* Here, sir! here, sir! here, sir! here, sir!

You logger-headed and unpolish'd groom!

What, no attendance? no regard? no duty?

Where is the foolish knave I sent before? 130

*Grm.* Here, sir; as foolish as I was before.

*Pet.* You peasant swain! you whoreson malt-horse drudge!

Did I not bid thee meet me in the park, and bring along these rascal knaves with thee

*Grm.* Nathaniel's coat, sir, was not fully made, And Gabriel's pumps were all unpink'd i' the heel;

There was no link to colour Peter's hat, And Walter's dagger was not come from sheathing:

There were none fine but Adam, Ralph, and Gregory;

The rest were ragged, old, and beggarly; 140 Yet, as they are, here are they come to meet you.

*Pet.* Go, rascals, go, and fetch my supper in.

[*Exit my Servants.*]

[*Singing*] Where is the life that late I led— Where are those— Sit down, Kate, and welcome.—

Soud, soud, soud, soud!

*Re-enter Servants with supper.*

Why, when, I say? Nay, good sweet Kate, be merry.

Off with my boots, you rogues! you villains, when?

[*Sings*] It was the friar of orders grey,

As he forth walked on his way:—

But, you rogue! you pluck my foot awry: 150

Take that, and mend the plucking off the other.

[*Strikes him.*]

Be merry, Kate. Some water, here; what, ho! Where's my spaniel Troilus? Sirrah, get you hence,

And bid my cousin Ferdinand come hither:

One, Kate, that you must kiss, and be acquainted with.

Where are my slippers? Shall I have some water?

*Enter one with water.*

Come, Kate, and wash, and welcome heartily. You whoreson villain! will you let it fall?

[*Strikes him.*]

*Kath.* Patience, I pray you; 'twas a fault unwilling.

*Pet.* A whoreson beetle-headed, flap-ear'd knave! 160

Come, Kate, sit down; I know you have a stomach.

Will you give thanks, sweet Kate; or else shall I?

What's this? mutton?

*First Serv.*

Ay. Who brought it?

*Pet.*

*Peter.*

'Tis burnt; and so is all the meat.

What dogs are these! Where is the rascal cook?

How durst you, villains, bring it from the dresser,

And serve it thus to me that love it not?

There, take it to you, trenchers, cups, and all:

[*Throws the meat, &c. about the stage.*]

You heedless joltheads and unmanner'd slaves! What, do you grumble? I'll be with you straight. 170

*Kath.* I pray you, husband, be not so disquiet:

The meat was well, if you were so contented.

*Pet.* I tell thee, Kate, 'twas burnt and dried away;

And I expressly am forbid to touch it,  
For it engenders choler, planteth anger;  
And better 'twere that both of us did fast,  
Since, of ourselves, ourselves are choleric,  
Than feed it with such over-roasted flesh.  
Be patient; to-morrow 't shall be mended, 179  
And, for this night, we'll fast for company:  
Come, I will bring thee to thy bridal chamber.  
[*Exeunt.*]

*Re-enter Servants severally.*

*Nath.* Peter, didst ever see the like?

*Peter.* He kills her in her own humour.

*Re-enter CURTIS.*

*Gru.* Where is he?

*Curt.* In her chamber, making a sermon of continency to her;

And rails, and swears, and rates, that she, poor soul,  
Knows not which way to stand, to look, to speak,

And sits as one new-risen from a dream. 189  
Away, away! for he is coming hither. [*Exeunt.*]

*Re-enter PETRUCHIO.*

*Pet.* Thus have I politically begun my reign,  
And 'tis my hope to end successfully.  
My falcon now is sharp and passing empty;  
And till she stoop she must not be full-gorged,  
For then she never looks upon her lure.

Another way I have to man my haggard,  
To make her come and know her keeper's call,  
That is, to watch her, as we watch these kites  
That bate and beat and will not be obedient.  
She eat no meat to-day, nor none shall eat;  
Last night she slept not, nor to-night she shall not; 201

As with the meat, some undeserved fault  
I'll find about the making of the bed;

And here I'll fling the pillow, there the bolster,  
This way the coverlet, another way the sheets:  
Ay, and amid this hurly I intend

That all is done in reverend care of her;  
And in conclusion she shall watch all night:  
And if she chance to nod I'll rail and brawl  
And with the clamour keep her still awake. 210  
This is a way to kill a wife with kindness;  
And thus I'll curb her mad and headstrong humour.

He that knows better how to tame a shrew,  
Now let him speak: 'tis charity to show. [*Exit.*]

SCENE II. Padua. Before BAPTISTA'S house.

*Enter TRANIO and HORTENSIO.*

*Tra.* Is't possible, friend Licio, that Mistress Bianca

Doth fancy any other but Lucentio?

I tell you, sir, she bears me fair in hand.

*Hor.* Sir, to satisfy you in what I have said,  
Stand by and mark the manner of his teaching.

*Enter BIANCA and LUCENTIO.*

*Luc.* Now, mistress, profit you in what you read?

*Bian.* What, master, read you? first resolve me that.

*Luc.* I read that I profess, the Art to Love.

*Bian.* And may you prove, sir, master of your art?

*Luc.* While you, sweet dear, prove mistress of my heart!

*Hor.* Quick proceeders, marry! Now, tell me, I pray,

You that durst swear that your mistress Bianca  
Loved none in the world so well as Lucentio.

*Tra.* O spiteful love! unconstant woman-kind!

I tell thee, Licio, this is wonderful.

*Hor.* Mistake no more: I am not Licio,

Nor a musician, as I seem to be;

But one that scorn to live in this disguise,

For such a one as leaves a gentleman,

And makes a god of such a cullion:

Know, sir, that I am call'd Hortensio.

*Tra.* Signior Hortensio, I have often heard

Of your entire affection to Bianca;

And since mine eyes are witness of her lightness

I will with you, if you be so contented,

Forswear Bianca and her love for ever.

*Hor.* See, how they kiss and court! Signior

Lucentio,

Here is my hand, and here I firmly vow

Never to woo her more, but do forswear her,

As one unworthy all the former favours

That I have fondly flatter'd her withal.

*Tra.* And here I take the like unfeigned

oath,

Never to marry with her though she would entreat:

Fie on her! see, how beastly she doth court him!

*Hor.* Would all the world but he had quite

forsworn!

For me, that I may surely keep mine oath,

I will be married to a wealthy widow,

Ere three days pass, which hath as long loved me

As I have loved this proud disdainful haggard.

And so farewell, Signior Lucentio.

Kindness in women, not their beauteous looks,

Shall win my love: and so I take my leave.

In resolution as I swore before. [*Exit.*]

*Tra.* Mistress Bianca, bless you with such

grace —

As 'longeth to a lover's blessed case!

Nay, I have ta'en you napping, gentle love,

And have forsworn you with Hortensio.

*Bian.* Tranio, you jest: but have you both

forsworn me?

*Tra.* Mistress, we have.

*Luc.* Then we are rid of Licio.

*Tra.* I' faith, he'll have a lusty widow now,

That shall be woo'd and wedded in a day. 311

*Bian.* God give him joy!

*Tra.* Ay, and he'll tame her.

*Bian.* He says so, Tranio.

*Tra.* Faith, he is gone unto the taming

school.

*Bian.* The taming-school! what, is there such a place?

*Tra.* Ay, mistress, and Petruchio is the master;  
That teacheth tricks eleven and twenty long,  
To tame a shrew and charin her chattering tongue.

*Enter BIONDELLO.*

*Bion.* O master, master, I have watch'd so long  
That I am dog-weary: but at last I spied 60  
†An ancient angel coming down the hill,  
Will serve the turn.

*Tra.* What is he, Biondello?  
*Bion.* Master, a mercantile, or a pedant,  
I know not what; but formal in apparel,  
In gait and countenance surely like a father.

*Luc.* And what of him, Tranio?  
*Tra.* If he be credulous and trust my tale,  
I'll make him glad to seem Vincentio,  
And give assurance to Iaptista Minola,  
As if he were the right Vincentio. 70  
Take in your love, and then let me alone.

[*Exeunt Lucenio and Bianca.*]

*Enter a Pedant.*

*Ped.* God save you, sir!

*Tra.* And you, sir! you are welcome.  
Travel you far on, or are you at the farthest?

*Ped.* Sir, at the farthest for a week or two:  
But then up farther, and as far as Rome;  
And so to Tripoli, if God lend me life.

*Tra.* What countryman, I pray?

*Ped.* Of Mantua. Of Mantua.  
*Tra.* Of Mantua, sir! marry, God forbid!  
And come to Padua, careless of your life?

*Ped.* My life, sir! how, I pray! for that goes hard. 80

*Tra.* 'Tis death for any one in Mantua  
To come to Padua. Know you not the cause?  
Your ships are stay'd at Venice, and the duke,  
For private quarrel 'twixt your duke and him,  
Hath publish'd and proclaim'd it openly:  
'Tis marvel, but that you are but newly come,  
You might have heard it else proclaim'd about.

*Ped.* Alas! sir, it is worse for me than so;  
For I have bills for money by exchange  
From Florence and must here deliver them. 90

*Tra.* Well, sir, to do you courtesy,  
This will I do, and this I will advise you:  
First, tell me, have you ever been at Pisa?

*Ped.* Ay, sir, in Pisa have I often been,  
Pisa renowned for grave citizens.

*Tra.* Among them know you one Vincentio?  
*Ped.* I know him not, but I have heard of him;

A merchant of incomparable wealth.  
*Tra.* He is my father, sir; and, sooth to say,  
In countenance somewhat doth resemble you.

*Bion.* [*Aside*] As much as an apple doth an oyster, and all one. 101

*Tra.* To save your life in this extremity,  
This favour will I do you for his sake;

And think it not the worst of all your fortunes  
You are like to Sir Vincentio.

in name and credit shall you undertake,  
and in my house you shall be friendly lodged:

Look that you take upon you as you should;  
You understand me, sir: so shall you stay  
Till you have done your business in the city:  
If this be courtesy, sir, accept of it. 111

*Ped.* O sir, I do; and will repute you ever  
The patron of my life and liberty.

*Tra.* Then go with me to make the matter good.

This, by the way, I let you understand;  
My father is here look'd for every day,  
To pass assurance of a dower in marriage  
'Twixt me and one Baptista's daughter here:  
In all these circumstances I'll instruct you:  
Go with me to clothe you as becomes you. 120

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. A room in PETRUCHIO'S house.

*Enter KATHARINA and GRUMIO.*

*Gru.* No, no, forsooth; I dare not for my life.

*Kath.* The more my wrong, the more his spite appears:

What, did he marry me to famish me?  
Beggars, that come unto my father's door  
Upon entreaty have a present alms;  
If not, elsewhere they meet with charity:  
But I, who never knew how to entreat,  
Nor never needed that I should entreat,  
Am starved for meat, giddy for lack of sleep,  
With oaths kept waking and with brawling led:  
And that which spites me more than all these wants, 11

He does it under name of perfect love;  
As who should say, if I should sleep or eat,  
'Twere deadly sickness or else present death.  
I prithee go and get me some repast;  
I care not what, so it be wholesome food.

*Gru.* What say you to a neat's foot?

*Kath.* 'Tis passing good: I prithee let me have it.

*Gru.* I fear it is too choleric a meat.  
How say you to a fat tripe finely broil'd? 20

*Kath.* I like it well: good Grumio, fetch it me.

*Gru.* I cannot tell; I fear 'tis choleric.  
What say you to a piece of beef and mustard?

*Kath.* A dish that I do love to feed upon.

*Gru.* Ay, but the mustard is too hot a little.

*Kath.* Why then, the beef, and let the mustard rest.

*Gru.* Nay then, I will not: you shall have the mustard.

Or else you get no beef of Grumio.

*Kath.* Then both, or one, or any thing thou wilt.

*Gru.* Why then, the mustard without the beef. 30

*Kath.* Go, get thee gone, thou false deluding slave. [*Beats him.*]

That feedst me with the very name of meat:  
Sorrow on thee and all the pack of you,  
That triumph thus upon my misery!  
Go, get thee gone, I say.

*Enter PETRUCHIO and HORTENSIO with meat.*

*Pet.* How fares my Kate? What, sweeting, all amok?

*Hor.* Mistress, what cheer?

*Kath.* Faith, as cold as can be.

*Pet.* Pluck up thy spirits; look cheerfully upon me.

Here, love; thou see'st how diligent I am To dress thy meat myself and bring it thee: 40 I am sure, sweet Kate, this kindness merits thanks.

What, not a word? Nay, then thou lovest it not;

And all my pains is sorted to no proof.

Here, take away this dish.

*Kath.* I pray you, let it stand.

*Pet.* The poorest service is repaid with thanks; And so shall mine, before you touch the meat.

*Kath.* I thank you, sir.

*Hor.* Signior Petruccio, fie! you are to blame.

Come, Mistress Kate, I'll bear you company. 50  
— *Pet.* [Aside] Eat it up all, Hortensio, if thou lovest me.

Much good do it unto thy gentle heart!

*Kate*, eat apace: and now, my honey love,

Will we return unto thy father's house

And revel it as bravely as the best,

With silken coats and caps and golden rings,

With ruffs and cuffs and fardingales and things  
With scarfs and fans and double change of

bravery,  
With amber bracelets, beads and all this knavery.

What, hast thou dined? The tailor stays thy leisure,

To deck thy body with his ruffling treasure. 60

*Enter Tailor.*

Come, tailor, let us see these ornaments:

Lay forth the gown.

*Enter Haberdasher.*

What news with you, sir?

*Hab.* Here is the cap your worship did bespeak.

*Pet.* Why, this was moulded on a porringer  
A velvet dish: fie, fie! 'tis lewd and filthy:

Why, 'tis a cockle or a walnut-shell,

A knack, a toy, a trick, a baby's cap:

Away with it! come, let me have a bigger.

*Kath.* I'll have no bigger: this doth fit the time.

And gentlewomen wear such caps as these. 70

*Pet.* When you are gentle, you shall have one too,

And not till then.

*Hor.* [Aside] That will not be in haste.

*Kath.* Why, sir, I trust I may have leave to speak;

And speak I will; I am no child, no babe:

Your betters have endured me say my mind,

And if you cannot, best you stop your ears.

My tongue will tell the anger of my heart,

Or else my heart concealing it will break,

And rather than it shall, I will be free

Even to the uttermost, as I please, in words. 80

*Pet.* Why, thou say'st true; it is a paltry cap,

A custard-coffin, a bauble, a silken pie:

I love thee well, in that thou likest it not.

*Kath.* Love me or love me not, I like the cap;

And it I will have, or I will have none.

[Exit Haberdasher.]

*Pet.* Thy gown? why, ay: come, tailor, let us see 't.

O mercy, God! what masquing stuff is here?

What's this? a sleeve? 'tis like a demi-cannon:

What, up and down, carved like an apple-tart?

Here's snip and nip and cut and slash and elasel,

Like to a censer in a barber's shop:

Why, what, i' devil's name, tailor, call'st thou this?

*Hor.* [Aside] I see she's like to have neither cap nor gown.

*Tai.* You bid me make it orderly and well, According to the fashion and the time.

*Pet.* Marry, and did; but if you be rememb'rd,

I did not bid you mar it to the time.

(O, hop me over every kennel home,

For you shall hop without my custom, sir: 90

I'll none of it: hence! make your best of it.

*Kath.* I never saw a better-fashion'd gown,  
More quaint, more pleasing, nor more commendable:

Belike you mean to make a puppet of me.

*Pet.* Why, true; he means to make a puppet of thee.

*Tai.* She says your worship means to make a puppet of her.

*Pet.* O monstrous arrogance! Thou liest, thou thread, thou thimble,

Thou yard, three-quarters, half-yard, quarter, nail!

Thou flea, thou nit, thou winter-cricket thou!

Braved in mine own house with a skein of thread?

Away, thou rag, thou quantity, thou remnant; 100  
Or I shall so be-mete thee with thy yard

As thou shalt think on prating whilst thou livest!

I tell thee, I, that thou hast marr'd her gown.

*Tai.* Your worship is deceived; the gown is made

Just as my master had direction:

Grumio gave order how it should be done.

*Gru.* I gave him no order; I gave him the stuff.

*Tai.* But how did you desire it should be made?

*Gru.* Marry, sir, with needle and thread.

*Tai.* But did you not request to have it cut?

*Gru.* Thou hast faced many things.

*Tai.* I have.

*Gru.* Face not me; thou hast braved many men; brave not me; I will neither be faced nor braved.

I say unto thee, I bid thy master cut out the gown; but I did not bid him cut it

pieces: ergo, thou liest.

*Tai.* Why, here is the note of the fashion to testify. 110

*Pet.* Read it.

*Gru.* The note lies in 's throat, if he say said so.

*Tai.* [Reads] 'Imprimis, a loose-bodied gown:'

*Gru.* Master, if ever I said loose-bodied gown, sew me in the skirts of it, and beat me to death with a bottom of brown thread: I said a gown.



*Pet.* Proceed.

*Tai.* [Reads] 'With a small compassed cape :

*Gru.* I confess the cape. 14

*Tai.* [Reads] 'With a trunk sleeve :

*Gru.* I confess two sleeves.

*Tai.* [Reads] 'The sleeves curiously cut.'

*Pet.* Ay, there's the villany.

*Gru.* Error i' the bill, sir ; error i' the bill. commanded the sleeves should be cut out and sewed up again ; and that I'll prove upon thee though thy little finger be armed in a thinble.

*Tai.* This is true that I say : an I had th' in place where, thou shouldst know it.

*Gru.* I am for thee straight : take thou t' bill, give me thy mete-yard, and spare not me.

*Hor.* God-a-mercy, Grumio ! then he sh' have no odds.

*Pet.* Well, sir, in brief, the gown is not for n' *Gru.* You are i' the right, sir : 'tis for a mistress.

*Pet.* Go, take it up unto thy master's use.

*Gru.* Villain, not for thy life : take up n' mistress' gown for thy master's use ! 17

*Pet.* Why, sir, what's your conceit in that ?

*Gru.* O, sir, the conceit is deeper than I think for :

Take up my mistress' gown to his master's use ! O, fie, fie, fie !

*Pit.* [Aside] Hortensio, say thou wilt se : tailor paid.

Go take it hence ; be gone, and say no more.

*Hor.* Tailor, I'll pay thee for thy gown tomorrow :

Take no unkindness of his hasty words : Away ! I say ; commend me to thy master. 19

[Exit Tailor] *Pit.* Well, come, my Kate ; we will un-

your father's

Even in these honest mean habiliments :

but purses shall be proud, our garments poor :

For 'tis the mind that makes the body rich ;

and as the sun breaks through the dark clouds,

so honour peereth in the meanest habit.

What is the jay more precious than the lark,

because his feathers are more beautiful ?

Or is the adder better than the eel,

because his painted skin contents the eye ? 20

No, good Kate ; neither art thou the worse

for this poor furniture and mean array.

If thou account'st it shame, lay it on me ;

and therefore frolic : we will hence forthw-

to feast and sport us at thy father's house.

Go, call my men, and let us straight to him

and bring our horses unto Long-lane end

There will we mount, and thither walk on

Let's see ; I think 'tis now some seven o'clock

And well we may come there by dinner-time

*Kath.* I dare assure you, sir, 'tis almost

two ;

And 'twill be supper-time ere you come thence

*Pet.* It shall be seven ere I go to horse :

Look, what I speak, or do, or think to do,

You are still crossing it. Sirs, let's alone :

I will not go to-day ; and ere I do,

It shall be what o'clock I say it is.

*Hor.* [Aside] Why, so this gallant will command the sun. [Exit

nt.]

## SCENE IV. Padua. Before BAPTISTA's house.

Enter TRANIO, and the Pedant dressed like VINCENTIO.

*Tra.* Sir, this is the house : please it you that I call ?

*Ped.* Ay, what else ! and but I be deceived Signior Baptista may remember me, Near twenty years ago, in Genoa, Where we were lodgers at the Pegasus.

*Tra.* 'Tis well ; and hold your own, in any case,

With such austerity as 'longeth to a father.

*Ped.* I warrant you.

Enter BIONDELLO.

But, sir, here comes your boy ;

'Twere good he were school'd.

*Tra.* Fear you not him. Sirrah Biondello, Now do your duty thoroughly, I advise you : 11 Imagine 'twere the right Vincentio.

*Bion.* Tut, fear not me.

*Tra.* But hast thou done thy errand to Baptista ?

*Bion.* I told him that your father was at Venice,

And that you look'd for him this day in Padua.

*Tra.* Thou'rt a tall fellow : hold thee that to drink.

Here comes Baptista : set your countenance, sir.

Enter BAPTISTA and LUCENTIO.

Signior Baptista, you are happily met.

[To the Pedant] Sir, this is the gentleman I told you of : 20

I pray you, stand good father to me now,

Give me Bianca for my patrimony.

*Ped.* Soft, son !

Sir, by your leave : having come to Padua

To gather in some debts, my son Lucentio

Made me acquainted with a weighty cause

Of love between your daughter and himself :

And, for the good report I hear of you

And for the love he beareth to your daughter

And she to him, to stay him not too long, 30

I am content, in a good father's care,

To have him match'd ; and if you please to like

No worse than I, upon some agreement

Me shall you find ready and willing

With one consent to have her so bestow'd ;

For curious I cannot be with you,

Signior Baptista, of whom I hear so well.

*Bap.* Sir, pardon me in what I have to say

Your plainness and your shortness please me

well.

Right true it is, your son Lucentio here

Doth love my daughter and she loveth him, 4

Or both dissemble deeply their affections :

And therefore, if you say no more than this,

That like a father you will deal with him

And pass my daughter a sufficient dower,

The match is made, and all is done :

Your son shall have my daughter with consent

*Tra.* I thank you, sir. Where then do you

know best

We be affied and such assurance ta'en

As shall with either part's agreement stand !

*Bap.* Not in my house, Lucentio; for, you know,

Pitchers have ears, and I have many servants: Besides, old Gremio is hearkoning still; And happily we might be interrupted.

*Tra.* Then at my lodging, an it like you: There doth my father lie; and there, this night, We'll pass the business privately and well. Send for your daughter by your servant here; My boy shall fetch the scrivener presently. 59 The worst is this, that, at so slender warning, You are like to have a thin and slender pittance.

*Bap.* It likes me well. Biondello, hie you home.

And bid Bianca make her ready straight; And, if you will, tell what hath happened, Lucentio's father is arrived in Padua, And how she's like to be Lucentio's wife.

*Bion.* I pray the gods she may with all my heart!

*Tra.* Dally not with the gods, but get thee gone. *[Exit Bion.]*

Signior Baptista, shall I lead the way? Welcome! one mess is like to be your cheer: 70 Come, sir; we will better it in Pisa.

*Bap.* I follow you.  
*[Exeunt Tranio, Pedant, and Baptista.]*

*Re-enter BIONDELLO.*

*Bion.* Cambio!

*Luc.* What sayest thou, Biondello?

*Bion.* You saw my master wink and laugh upon you?

*Luc.* Biondello, what of that?

*Bion.* Faith, nothing; but has left me here behind, to expound the meaning or moral of his signs and tokens. 80

*Luc.* I pray thee, moralize them.

*Bion.* Then thus. Baptista is safe, talking with the deceiving father of a deceitful son.

*Luc.* And what of him?

*Bion.* His daughter is to be brought by you to the supper.

*Luc.* And then?

*Bion.* The old priest of Saint Luke's church is at your command at all hours.

*Luc.* And what of all this?

*Bion.* I cannot tell; expect they are busied about a counterfeit assurance: take you assurance of her, 'cum privilegio ad imprimendum solum:' to the church; take the priest, clerk, and some sufficient honest witnesses: If this be not that you look for, I have no more to say.

But bid Bianca farewell for ever and a day.

*Luc.* Hearst thou, Biondello?

*Bion.* I cannot tarry: I knew a wench married in an afternoon as she went to the garden for parsley to stuff a rabbit; and so may you, sir; and so, adieu, sir. My master hath appointed me to go to Saint Luke's, to bid the priest be ready to come against you come with your appendix. *[Exit.]*

*Luc.* I may, and will, if she be so contented: She will be pleased; then wherefore should I doubt?

*Hap* what hap may, I'll roundly go about her:

It shall go hard if Cambio go without her.

*[Exit.]*

SCENE V. *A public road.*

*Enter PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA, HORTENSIO, and Servants.*

*Pet.* Come on, i' God's name; once more to ward our father's.  
Good Lord, how bright and goodly shines the moon!

*Kath.* The moon! the sun: it is not moon-light now.

*Pet.* I say it is the moon that shines so bright.

*Kath.* I know it is the sun that shines so bright.

*Pet.* Now, by my mother's son, and that's myself,

It shall be moon, or star, or what I list, Or ere I journey to your father's house. Go on, and fetch our horses back again.

Evermore cross'd and cross'd; nothing but cross'd!

*Hor.* Say as he says, or we shall never go.

*Kath.* Forward, I pray, since we have come so far,

And be it moon, or sun, or what you please: An if you please to call it a rush-candle, Henceforth I vow it shall be so for me.

*Pet.* I say it is the moon.

*Kath.* I know it is the moon.

*Pet.* Nay, then you lie: it is the blessed sun.

*Kath.* Then, God be bless'd, it is the blessed sun:

But sun it is not, when you say it is not; And the moon changes even as your mind. 80 What you will have it named, even that it is; And so it shall be so for Katharine.

*Hor.* Petruchio, go thy ways; the field is won.

*Pet.* Well, forward, forward! thus the bowl should run,

And not unluckily against the bias.

But, soft! company is coming here.

*Enter VINCENTIO.*

*[To Vincentio]* Good morrow, gentle mistress: where away?

Tell me, sweet Kate, and tell me truly too, Hast thou beheld a fresher gentlewoman? 85

Such war of white and red within her cheeks! What stars do spangle heaven with such beauty,

As those two eyes become that heavenly face! Fair lovely maid, once more good day to thee.

Sweet Kate, embrace her for her beauty's sake.

*Hor.* A' will make the man mad, to make a woman of him.

*Kath.* Young budding virgin, fair and fresh and sweet,

Whither away, or where is thy abode? Happy the parents of so fair a child;

Happier the man, whom favourable stars 90 Allot thee for his lovely bed-fellow!

*Pet.* Why, how now, Kate! I hope thou art not mad:

This is a man, old, wrinkled, faded, wither'd, And not a maiden, as thou say'st he is.

*Kath.* Pardon, old father, my mistaking eyes,

That have been so bedazzled with the sun  
That everything I look on seemeth green :  
Now I perceive thou art a reverend father ;  
Pardon, I pray thee, for my mad mistaking.

*Pet.* Do, good old grandsire ; and withal  
make known

Which way thou travellest : if along with us,  
We shall be joyful of thy company.

*Vin.* Fair sir, and you my merry mistress,  
That with your strange encounter much amazed  
me,

My name is call'd Vincentio ; my dwelling Pisa :  
And bound I am to Padua ; there to visit  
son of mine, which long I have not seen.

*Pet.* What is his name ?

*Vin.* Lucentio, gentle sir.

*Pet.* Happily met ; the happier for thy son.  
And now by law, as well as reverend age,  
may entitle thee my loving father :

— sister to my wife, this gentlewoman,  
thy son by this hath married. Wonder not,  
Nor be not grieved : she is of good esteem,  
her dowry wealthy, and of worthy birth ;  
beside, so qualified as may beseeem

the spouse of any noble gentleman.  
Let me embrace with old Vincentio,  
and wander we to see thy honest son,  
Who will of thy arrival be full joyous.

*Vin.* But is this true ? or is it else your  
pleasure,

like pleasant travellers, to break a jest  
upon the company you overtake ?

*Hor.* I do assure thee, father, so it is.

*Pet.* Come, go along, and see the truth  
hereof ;

or our first merriment hath made thee jealous.  
[*Exeunt all but Hortensio.*]

*Hor.* Well, Petruchio, this has put me in  
heart.

Ave to my widow ! and if she be froward,  
when hast thou taught Hortensio to be un-  
toward. [*Exit.*]

## ACT V.

SCENE I. *Padua. Before LUCENTIO'S house.*

*Hermio discovered. Enter behind BIONDELLO,  
LUCENTIO, and BIANCA.*

*Bion.* Softly and swiftly, sir ; for the priest  
is ready.

*Luc.* I fly, Biondello : but they may chance  
need thee at home ; therefore leave us.

*Bion.* Nay, faith, I'll see the church o' your  
back ; and then come back to my master's as  
soon as I can.

[*Exeunt Lucentio, Bianca, and Biondello.*]  
*Gre.* I marvel Cambio comes not all this  
while.

*Enter PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA, VINCENTIO,  
GRUMIO, with Attendants.*

*Pet.* Sir, here's the door, this is Lucentio's  
house ;  
My father's bears more toward the market-  
place ;

Thither must I, and here I leave you, sir.

*Vin.* You shall not choose but drink before  
you go :

I think I shall command your welcome here,  
And, by all likelihood, some cheer is toward.

[*Knocks.*]  
*Gre.* They're busy within ; you were best  
knock louder.

*Pedant looks out of the window.*

*Ped.* What's he that knocks as he would  
beat down the gate ?

*Vin.* Is Signior Lucentio within, sir ?

*Ped.* He's within, sir, but not to be spoken  
withal.

*Vin.* What if a man bring him a hundred  
pound or two, to make merry withal ?

*Ped.* Keep your hundred pounds to yourself :  
he shall need none, so long as I live.

*Pet.* Nay, I told you your son was well be-  
loved in Padua. Do you hear, sir ? To leave  
frivolous circumstances, I pray you, tell Signior  
Lucentio that his father is come from Pisa and  
is here at the door to speak with him.

*Ped.* Thou liest : his father is come from  
Padua and here looking out at the window.

*Vin.* Art thou his father ?

*Ped.* Ay, sir ; so his mother says, if I may  
believe her.

*Pet.* [To Vincentio] Why, how now, gentle-  
man ! why, this is flat knavery, to take upon  
you another man's name.

*Ped.* Lay hands on the villain : I believe a'  
means to cozen somebody in this city under  
my countenance.

*Re-enter BIONDELLO.*

*Bion.* I have seen them in the church to-  
gether : God send 'em good shipping ! But who  
is here ? mine old master Vincentio ! now we  
are undone and brought to nothing.

*Vin.* [Seeing Biondello] Come hither, crack-  
hemp.

*Bion.* I hope I may choose, sir.

*Vin.* Come hither, you rogue. What, have  
you forgot me ?

*Bion.* Forgot you ! no, sir : I could not for-  
get you, for I never saw you before in all my  
life.

*Vin.* What, you notorious villain, didst thou  
never see thy master's father, Vincentio ?

*Bion.* What, my old worshipful old master ?  
yes, marry, sir : see where he looks out of the  
window.

*Vin.* Is't so, indeed ? [Beats Biondello.

*Bion.* Help, help, help ! here's a madman  
will murder me. [Exit.

*Ped.* Help, son ! help, Signior Baptista !

[Exit from above.]  
*Pet.* Prithee, Kate, let thy stand aside and see  
the end of this controversy. [They retire.

*Re-enter Pedant below ; TRANIO, BAPTISTA,  
and Servants.*

*Tru.* Sir, what are you that offer to beat my  
servant ?

*Vin.* What am I, sir ! nay, what are you,  
sir ! O immortal gods ! O fine villain ! A silken

doublet! a velvet hose! a scarlet cloak! and a copatain hat! O, I am undone! I am undone! while I play the good husband at home, my son and my servant spend all at the university.

*Tran.* How now! what's the matter?

*Bap.* What, is the man lunatic?

*Tran.* Sir, you seem a sober ancient gentleman by your habit, but your words show you a madman. Why, sir, what's the matter with you if I wear pearl and gold? I thank my good father, I am able to maintain it.

*Vin.* Thy father! O villain! he is a sail-maker in Bergamo.

*Bap.* You mistake, sir, you mistake, sir. Pray, what do you think is his name?

*Vin.* His name! as if I knew not his name: I have brought him up ever since he was three years old, and his name is Tranio.

*Ped.* Away, away, mad ass! his name is Lucentio; and he is mine only son, and heir to the lands of me, Signior Vincentio.

*Vin.* Lucentio! O, he hath murdered his master! Lay hold on him, I charge you, in the duke's name. O, my son, my son! Tell me, thou villain, where is my son Lucentio?

*Tran.* Call forth an officer.

*Enter one with an Officer.*

Carry this mad knave to the gaol. Father Baptista, I charge you see that he be forthcoming.

*Vin.* Carry me to the gaol!

*Gre.* Stay, officer: he shall not go to prison.

*Bap.* Talk not, Signior Gremio: I say he shall go to prison.

*Gre.* Take heed, Signior Baptista, lest you be cony-catched in this business: I dare swear this is the right Vincentio.

*Ped.* Swear, if thou darest.

*Gre.* Nay, I dare not swear it.

*Tran.* Then thou wert best say that I am not Lucentio.

*Gre.* Yes, I know thee to be Signior Lucentio.

*Bap.* Away with the dotard! to the gaol with him!

*Vin.* Thus strangers may be haled and abused: O monstrous villain!

*Re-enter BIONDELLO, with LUCENTIO and BIANCA.*

*Bion.* O! we are spoiled and—yonder he is: deny him, forswear him, or else we are all undone.

*Luc.* [Kneeling] Pardon, sweet father.

*Vin.* Lives my sweet son?

[*Exeunt Biondello, Tranio, and Pedant, as fast as may be.*]

*Bian.* Pardon, dear father.

*Bap.* How hast thou offended? Where is Lucentio?

*Luc.* Here's Lucentio,

Right son to the right Vincentio; That have by marriage made thy daughter mine, While counterfeit supposes bleard thine cyne.

*Gre.* Here's packing, with a witness, to deceive us all!

*Vin.* Where is that damned villain Tranio, That faced and braved me in this matter so?

*Bap.* Why, tell me, is not this my Cambio?

*Bian.* Cambio is changed into Lucentio.

*Luc.* Love wrought these miracles. Bianca! love

Made me exchange my state with Tranio, While he did bear my countenance in the town. And happily I have arrived at the last

Unto the wished haven of my bliss.

What Tranio did, myself enforced him to;

Then pardon him, sweet father, for my sake

*Vin.* I'll slit the villain's nose, that would have sent me to the gaol.

*Bap.* But do you hear, sir? have you married my daughter without asking my good will?

*Vin.* Fear not, Baptista; we will content you, go to: but I will in, to be revenged for this villany.

*Bap.* And I, to sound the depth of this knavery.

*Luc.* Look not pale, Bianca; thy father will not frown.

*Gre.* My cake is dough; but I'll in among the rest,

Out of hope of all, but my sharp of the feast.

*Kath.* Husband, let's follow, to see the end of this ado.

*Pet.* First kiss me, Kate, and we will.

*Kath.* What, in the midst of the street?

*Pet.* What, art thou ashamed of me?

*Kath.* No, sir, God forbid; but ashamed to kiss.

*Pet.* Why, then let's home again. Come, sirrah, let's away.

*Kath.* Nay, I will give thee a kiss: now pray thee, love, stay.

*Pet.* Is not this well? Come, my sweet Kate: Better once than never, for never too late.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. Padua. LUCENTIO'S house.

*Enter BAPTISTA, VINCENTIO, GREMIO, the Pedant, LUCENTIO, BIANCA, PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA, HORTENSIO, and Widow, TRANIO, BIONDELLO, and GRUMIO: the Serving-men with Tranio bringing in a banquet.*

*Luc.* At last, though long, our jarring notes agree:

And time it is, when raging war is done, To smile at scapes and perils overblown.

My fair Bianca, bid my father welcome, While I with self-same kindness welcome thine.

Brother Petruchio, sister Katharina, And thou, Hortensio, with thy loving widow,

Feast with the best, and welcome to my house: My banquet is to close our stomachs up.

After our great good cheer. Pray you, sit down; For now we sit to chat as well as eat.

*Pet.* Nothing but sit and sit, and eat and eat!

*Bap.* Padua affords this kindness, son Petruchio.

*Pet.* Padua affords nothing but what is kind.

*Hor.* For both our sakes, I would that word were true.

*Pet.* Now, for my life, Hortensio fears his widow.

*Wid.* Then never trust me, if I be afraid.

*Pet.* You are very sensible, and yet you miss my sense:  
*I mean, Hortensio is afraid of you.*  
*Wid.* He that is giddy thinks the world turns round. 20  
*Pet.* Roundly replied.  
*Kath.* Mistress, how mean you that?  
*Wid.* Thus I conceive by him.  
*Pet.* Conceives by me! How likes Hortensio that?  
*Hor.* My widow says, thus she conceives her tale.  
*Pet.* Very well mended. Kiss him for that, good widow.  
*Kath.* 'He that is giddy thinks the world turns round.'  
*I pray you, tell me what you meant by that.*  
*Wid.* Your husband, being troubled with a shrew,  
 Measures my husband's sorrow by his woe:  
 And now you know my meaning. 30  
*Kath.* A very mean meaning.  
*Wid.* Right, I mean you.  
*Kath.* And I am mean indeed, respecting you.  
*Pet.* To her, Kate!  
*Hor.* To her, widow!  
*Pet.* A hundred marks, my Kate does put her down.  
*Hor.* That's my office.  
*Pet.* Spoke like an officer: ha' to thee, lad! [*Drinks to Hortensio.*]  
*Bap.* How likes Gremio these quick-witted folks?  
*Gre.* Believe me, sir, they butt together well.  
*Bian.* Head, and butt! an hasty-witted body  
 Would say your head and butt were head and horn. 41  
*Vin.* Ay, mistress bride, hath that awaken'd you?  
*Bian.* Ay, but not frightened me; therefore I'll sleep again.  
*Pet.* Nay, that you shall not: since you have begun,  
 Have at you for a litter jest or two!  
*Bian.* Am I your bird? I mean to shift my bush;  
 And then pursue me as you draw your bow.  
 You are welcome all.  
 [*Exeunt Bianca, Katharina, and Widow.*]  
*Pet.* She hath prevented me. Here, Signior Tranio, 49  
 This bird you aim'd at, though you hit her not  
 Therefore a health to all that shot and miss'd.  
*Tra.* O, sir, Lucentio slipp'd me like his greyhound,  
 Which runs himself and catches for his master.  
*Pet.* A good swift simile, but something currish.  
*Tra.* 'Tis well, sir, that you hunted for yourself:  
 'Tis thought your deer does hold you at a bay.  
*Bap.* O ho, Petruchio! Tranio hits you now.  
*Luc.* I thank thee for that girl, good Tranio.  
*Hor.* Confess, confess, hath he not hit you here?  
*Pet.* A' has a little gall'd me, I confess; 60

And, as the jest did glance away from me,  
 'Tis ten to one it main'd you two outright.  
*Bap.* Now, in good sadness, son Petruchio,  
 Think thou hast the veriest shrew of all.  
*Pet.* Well, I say no: and therefore for assurance  
 Let's each one send unto his wife;  
 And he whose wife is most obedient  
 To come at first when he doth send for her,  
 Shall win the wager which we will propose.  
*Hor.* Content. What is the wager?  
*Luc.* Twenty crowns. 70  
*Pet.* Twenty crowns!  
 I'll venture so much of my hawk or hound,  
 But twenty times so much upon my wife.  
*Luc.* A hundred lien.  
*Hor.* Content.  
*Pet.* A match! 'tis done.  
*Hor.* Who shall begin?  
*Luc.* That will I.  
 Go, Biondello, bid your mistress come to me.  
*Bion.* I go. [*Exit.*]  
*Bap.* Son, I'll be your half, Bianca comes.  
*Luc.* I'll have no halves; I'll bear it all myself.

## Re-enter BIONDELLO.

How now! what news?  
*Bion.* Sir, my mistress sends you word so  
 That she is busy and she cannot come.  
*Pet.* How! she is busy and she cannot come!  
 Is that an answer?  
*Gre.* Ay, and a kind one too:  
 Pray God, sir, your wife send you not a worse.  
*Pet.* I hope, better.  
*Hor.* Sirrah Biondello, go and entreat my wife  
 To come to me forthwith. [*Exit Bion.*]  
*Pet.* O, ho! entreat her!  
 Nay, then she must needs come.  
*Hor.* I am afraid, sir,  
 Do what you can, yours will not be entreated.

## Re-enter BIONDELLO.

Now, where's my wife? 90  
*Bion.* She says you have some goodly jest in hand:  
 She will not come; she bids you come to her.  
*Pet.* Worse and worse; she will not come!  
 (O vile,  
 Intolerable, not to be endured!)  
 Sirrah Grumio, go to your mistress;  
 Say, I command her come to me. [*Exit Grumio.*]

*Hor.* I know her answer.  
*Pet.* What?  
*Hor.* She will not.  
*Pet.* The fouler fortune mine, and there an end.  
*Bap.* Now, by my holidame, here comes Katharina!

## Re-enter KATHARINA.

*Kath.* What is your will, sir, that you send for me?  
*Pet.* Where is your sister, and Hortensio's wife? 100  
*Kath.* They sit conferring by the parlour fire

*Pet.* Go, fetch them hither: if they deny to come,  
Swinge me them soundly forth unto their husbands:

*Away, I say, and bring them hither straight.*  
[*Exit Katharina.*]

*Luc.* Here is a wonder, if you talk of a wonder.

*Hor.* And so it is: I wonder what it bodes.

*Pet.* Marry, peace it bodes, and love and quiet life,  
And awful rule and right supremacy;  
And, to be short, what not, that's sweet and happy? 110

*Bap.* Now, fair befall thee, good Petruchio!  
The wager thou hast won; and I will add  
Unto thy losses twenty thousand crowns;  
Another dowry to another daughter,  
For she is changed, as she had never been.

*Pet.* Nay, I will win my wager better yet  
And show more sign of her obedience,  
Her new-built virtue and obedience.  
See where she comes and brings your froward wives

As prisoners to her womanly persuasion. 120

*Re-enter KATHARINA, with BIANCA and Widow.*

Katharine, that cap of yours becomes you not:  
Off with that bauble, throw it under-foot.

*Wid.* Lord, let me never have a cause to sigh,  
Till I be brought to such a silly pass!

*Bian.* Fie! what a foolish duty call you this?

*Luc.* I would your duty were as foolish too:  
The wisdom of your duty, fair Bianca,  
Hath cost me an hundred crowns since supper-time.

*Bian.* The more fool you, for laying on my duty.

*Pet.* Katharine, I charge thee, tell these headstrong women 130  
What duty they do owe their lords and husbands.

*Wid.* Come, come, you're mocking: we will have no telling.

*Pet.* Come on, I say; and first begin with her.

*Wid.* She shall not.

*Pet.* I say she shall: and first begin with her.

*Kath.* Fie, fie! unknit that threatening unkind brow,

And dart not scornful glances from those eyes,  
To wound thy lord, thy king, thy governor:  
It blots thy beauty as frosts do bite the meads,  
Confounds thy fame as whirlwinds shake fair buds, 140

And in no sense is meet or amiable.  
A woman moved is like a fountain troubled,  
Muddy, ill-seeming, thick, bereft of beauty;

And while it is so, none so dry or thirsty  
Will deign to sip or touch one drop of it.  
Thy husband is thy lord, thy life, thy keeper,  
Thy head, thy sovereign; one that cares for thee,  
And for thy maintenance commits his body  
To painful labour both by sea and land,  
To watch the night in storms, the day in cold,  
Whilst thou liest warm at home, secure and safe; 151

And craves no other tribute at thy hands;  
But love, fair looks and true obedience;  
Too little payment for so great a debt.  
Such duty as the subject owes the prince  
Even such a woman oweth to her husband;  
And when she is froward, peevish, sullen, sour,  
And not obedient to his honest will,  
What is she but a foul contending rebel  
And graceless traitor to her loving lord? 160

I am ashamed that women are so simple  
To offer war where they should kneel for peace,  
Or seek for rule, supremacy and sway,  
When they are bound to serve, love and obey.  
Why are our bodies soft and weak and smooth,  
Unapt to toil and trouble in the world,  
But that our soft conditions and our hearts  
Should well agree with our external parts?  
Come, come, you froward and unable worms!  
My mind hath been as big as one of yours, 170  
My heart as great, my reason haply more,  
To bandy word for word and frown for frown;  
But now I see our lances are but straws,  
Our strength as weak, our weakness past compare,  
That seeming to be most which we indeed least are.

Then vail your stomachs, for it is no boot,  
And place your hands below your husband's foot:

In token of which duty, if he please,  
My hand is ready; may it do him ease.

*Pet.* Why, there's a wench! Come on, and kiss me, Kate. 180

*Luc.* Well, go thy ways, old lad; for thou shalt ha't.

*Vin.* 'Tis a good hearing when children are toward.

*Luc.* But a harsh hearing when women are froward.

*Pet.* Come, Kate, we'll to bed.  
We three are married, but you two are sped.

[*To Luc.*] 'Twas I won the wager, though you hit the white;

And, being a winner, God give you good night!  
[*Exeunt Petruchio and Katharina.*]

*Hor.* Now, go thy ways; thou hast tamed a curst shrew.

*Luc.* 'Tis a wonder, by your leave, she will be tamed so. [*Exeunt.*]

# ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

KING OF FRANCE.  
DUKE OF FLORENCE.  
BERTRAM, Count of Rousillon.  
LAFEU, an old lord.  
PAROLLES, a follower of Bertram.  
Steward, } servants to the Countess of  
Clown, } Rousillon.  
A Page.

COUNTRESS OF ROUSILLON, mother to Bertram.

HELENA, a gentlewoman protected by the Countess.  
An old Widow of Florence.  
DIANA, daughter to the Widow.  
VIOLENTA, } neighbours and friends to the  
MARIANA, } Widow.  
Lords, Officers, Soldiers, &c., French and Florentine.

SCENE: *Rousillon; Paris; Florence; Marseilles.*

## ACT I.

SCENE I. *Rousillon. The Count's palace.*

*Enter BERTRAM, the COUNTESS OF ROUSILLON, HELENA, and LAFEU, all in black.*

*Count.* In delivering my son from me, I bury a second husband.

*Ber.* And I in going, madam, weep o'er my father's death anew: but I must attend his majesty's command, to whom I am, now in ward, evermore in subjection.

*Laf.* You shall find of the king a husband, madam; you, sir, a father: he that so generally is at all times good must of necessity hold his virtue to you; whose worthiness would stir it up where it wanted rather than lack it where there is such abundance.

*Count.* What hope is there of his majesty's amendment?

*Laf.* He hath abandoned his physicians, madam; under whose practices he hath persecuted time with hope, and finds no other advantage in the

whose skill was almost as great as his honesty; had it stretched so far, would have made nature immortal, and death should have play for lack of work. Would, for the king's sake, he were living! I think it would be the death of the king's disease.

*Laf.* How called you the man you speak of, madam?

*Count.* He was famous, sir, in his profession, and it was his great right to be so: Gerard de Narbon.

*Laf.* He was excellent indeed, madam: the king very lately spoke of him admiringly and mourningly: he was skilful enough to have lived

still, if knowledge could be set up against mortality.

*Ber.* What is it, my good lord, the king languishes of?

*Laf.* A fistula, my lord.

*Ber.* I heard not of it before.

*Laf.* I would it were not notorious. Was this gentlewoman the daughter of Gerard de Narbon?

*Count.* His sole child, my lord, and bequeathed to my overlooking. I have those hopes of her good that her education promises; her dispositions she inherits, which makes fair gifts fairer; for where an unclean mind carries virtuous qualities, there commendations go with pity; they are virtues and traitors too: in her they are the better for their simpleness; she derives her honesty and achieves her goodness.

*Laf.* Your commendations, madam, get from her tears.

*Count.* 'Tis the best brine a maiden can season her praise in. The remembrance of her father never approaches her heart but the tyranny of her sorrows takes all livelihood from her cheek. No more of this, Helena; go to, no more; lest it be rather thought you affect a sorrow than have it.

*Hel.* I do affect a sorrow indeed, but I have it too.

*Laf.* Moderate lamentation is the right of the dead, excessive grief the enemy to the living.

*Count.* If the living be enemy to the grief, the excess makes it soon mortal.

*Ber.* Madam, I desire your holy wishes.

*Laf.* How understand we that?

*Count.* Be thou blest, Bertram, and succeed thy father

In manners, as in shape! thy blood and virtue Contend for empire in thee, and thy goodness Share with thy birthright! Love all, trust a few, Do wrong to none: be able for thine enemy Rather in power than use, and keep thy friend

Under thy own life's key : be check'd for silence,  
But never tax'd for speech. What heaven more  
will,

That these may furnish and my prayers pluck  
down,

Fall on thy head ! Farewell, my lord ;  
'Tis an unseason'd courtier ; good my lord, '80  
Advise him.

*Laf.* He cannot want the best  
That shall attend his love.

*Court.* Heaven bless him ! Farewell, Ber-  
tram.

*Ber.* [To *Helen*] The best wishes that can  
be forged in your thoughts be servants to you !  
Be comfortable to my mother, your mistress,  
and make much of her.

*Laf.* Farewell, pretty lady : you must hold  
the credit of your father.

[*Exeunt Bertram and Lafew.*]

*Hel.* O, were that all ! I think not on my  
father ;  
And these great tears grace his remembrance  
more

Than those I shed for him. What was he like ?  
I have forgot him : my imagination  
Carries no favour in 't but Bertram's.  
I am undone : there is no living, none,  
If Bertram be away. 'Twere all one  
That I should love a bright particular star  
And think to wed it, he is so above me :  
In his bright radiance and collateral light  
Must I be comforted, not in his sphere. 100  
The ambition in my love thus plagues itself :  
The hind that would be mated by the lion  
Must die for love. 'Twas pretty, though a  
plague,

To see him every hour ; to sit and draw  
His arched brows, his hawking eye, his curls,  
In our heart's table ; heart too capable  
Of every line and trick of his sweet favour :  
But now he's gone, and my idolatrous fancy  
Must sanctify his reliques. Who comes here ?

#### ENTER PAROLLES.

[*Aside*] One that goes with him : I love him for  
his sake ; 110

And yet I know him a notorious liar,  
Think him a great way foot, solely a coward ;  
Yet these fix'd evils sit so fit in him,  
That they take place, when virtue's steely bones  
†Look bleak i' the cold wind : withal, full oft  
we see

Cold wisdom waiting on superfluous folly.

*Par.* Save you, fair queen !

*Hel.* And you, monarch !

*Par.* No.

*Hel.* And no. 120

*Par.* Are you meditating on virginity ?

*Hel.* Ay. You have some stain of soldier in  
you : let me ask you a question. Man is enemy  
to virginity ; how may we barricado it against  
him ?

*Par.* Keep him out.

*Hel.* But he assails ; and our virginity, though  
valiant, in the defence yet is weak : unfold to us  
some warlike resistance.

*Par.* There is none : man, sitting down be-  
fore you, will undermine you and blow you up.

*Hel.* Bless our poor virginity from under-  
miners and blowers up ! Is there no military  
policy, how virgins might blow up men ?

*Par.* Virginity being blown down, man will  
quicker be blown up : marry, in blowing him  
down again, with the breach yourselves made,  
you lose your city. It is not politic in the com-  
monwealth of nature to preserve virginity. Loss  
of virginity is rational increase and there was  
never virgin got till virginity was first lost. That  
you were made of is metal to make virgins.  
Virginity by being once lost may be ten times  
found ; by being ever kept, it is ever lost : 'tis  
too cold a companion ; away with 't !

*Hel.* I will stand for 't a little, though there-  
fore I die a virgin.

*Par.* There's little can be said in 't ; 'tis  
against the rule of nature. To speak on the  
part of virginity, is to accuse your mothers ;  
which is most infallible disobedience. He that  
hangs himself is a virgin : virginity murders it-  
self ; and should be buried in highways out of  
all sanctified limit, as a desperate offendress  
against nature. Virginity breeds mites, much  
like a cheese ; consumes itself to the very paring,  
and so dies with feeding his own stomach. Be-  
sides, virginity is peevish, proud, idle, made of  
self-love, which is the most inhibited sin in the  
canon. Keep it not ; you cannot clothe but  
lose by 't : out with 't ! within ten year it will  
make itself ten, which is a goodly increase ; and  
the principal itself not much the worse : away  
with 't !

*Hel.* How might one do, sir, to lose it to her  
own liking ?

*Par.* Let me see : marry, ill, to like him that  
ne'er it likes. 'Tis a commodity will lose the  
gloss with lying ; the longer kept, the less worth :  
off with 't while 'tis vendible ; answer the time  
of request. Virginity, like an old courtier, wears  
her cap out of fashion ; richly suited, but un-  
suitable : just like the brooch and the tooth-pick,  
which wear not now. Your date is better in  
your pie and your porridge than in your cheek :  
and your virginity, your old virginity, is like  
one of our French withered pears, it looks ill, it  
eats drily ; marry, 'tis a withered pear ; it was  
formerly better ; marry, yet 'tis a withered pear.  
Will you any thing with it ?

*Hel.* †Not my virginity yet.....

There shall your master have a thousand loves.  
A mother and a mistress and a friend, 131

A phoenix, captain and an enemy,  
A guide, a goddess, and a sovereign,

A counsellor, a traitress, and a dear ;

His humble ambition, proud humility,

His jarring concord, and his discord dulcet,

His faith, his sweet disaster ; with a world

Of pretty, fond, adoptious christendoms,

That blinking Cupid gossips. Now shall he--

I know not what he shall. God send him  
well ! 139

The court's a learning place, and he is one--

*Par.* What one, i' faith ?

*Hel.* That I wish well. 'Tis pity--

*Par.* What's pity ?

*Hel.* That wishing well had not a body in't,  
Which might be felt ; that we, the poorer born,



Whose baser stars do shut us up in wishes,  
Might with effects of them follow our friends,  
And show what we alone must think, which  
never

Returns us thanks.

200

*Enter Page.*

*Page.* Monsieur Parolles, my lord calls for you.

*Par.* Little Helen, farewell : if I can remember thee, I will think of thee at court.

*Hcl.* Monsieur Parolles, you were born under a charitable star.

*Par.* Under Mars, I.

*Hcl.* I especially think, under Mars.

*Par.* Why under Mars?

*Hcl.* The wars have so kept you under that you must needs be born under Mars.

210

*Par.* When he was predominant.

*Hcl.* When he was retrograde, I think, rather.

*Par.* Why think you so?

*Hcl.* You go so much backward when you fight.

*Par.* That's for advantage.

*Hcl.* So is running away, when fear proposes the safety : but the composition that your valour and fear makes in you is a virtue of a good wing, and I like the wear well.

219

*Par.* I am so full of businesses, I cannot answer thee acutely. I will return perfect courtier ; in the which, my instruction shall serve to naturalize thee, so thou wilt be capable of a courtier's counsel and understand what advice shall thrust upon thee ; else thou diest in thine unthankfulness, and thine ignorance makes thee away : farewell. When thou hast leisure, say thy prayers ; when thou hast none, remember thy friends : get thee a good husband, and use him as he uses thee : so, farewell.

230

*[Exit.]*

*Hcl.* Our remedies oft in ourselves do lie,  
Which we ascribe to heaven : the fated sky  
Gives us free scope, only doth backward pull  
Our slow designs when we ourselves are dull.  
What power is it which mounts my love so high,  
That makes me see, and cannot feed mine eye?  
The mightiest space in fortune nature brings  
To join like likes and kiss like native things.  
Impossible be strange attempts to those  
That weigh their pains in sense and do suppose  
What hath been cannot be : who ever strove  
To show her merit, that did miss her love?  
The king's disease—my project may deceive me,  
But my intents are fix'd and will not leave me.

*[Exit.]*

SCENE II. *Paris. The KING's palace.*

*Flourish of cornets. Enter the KING OF FRANCE, with letters, and divers Attendants.*

*King.* The Florentines and Senoys are by the cars ;

Have fought with equal fortune and continue  
A braving war.

*First Lord.* So 'tis reported, sir.

*King.* Nay, 'tis most credible ; we here receive it  
A certainty, vouch'd from our cousin Austria,

With caution that the Florentine will move us  
For speedy aid ; wherein our dearest friend  
Prejudicates the business and would seem  
To have us make denial.

*First Lord.* His love and wisdom,  
Approved so to your majesty, may plead  
For amplest credence.

*King.* He hath arm'd our answer,  
And Florence is denied before he comes :  
Yet, for our gentlemen that mean to see  
The Tuscan service, freely have they leave  
To stand on either part.

*Sec. Lord.* It well may serve  
A nursery to our gentry, who are sick  
For breathing and exploit.

*King.* What's he comes here ?

*Enter BERTRAM, LAFEU, and PAROLLES.*

*First Lord.* It is the Count Roussillon, my  
good lord,  
Young Bertram.

*King.* Youth, thou bear'st thy father's face ;  
Frank nature, rather curious than in haste,  
Hath well composed thee. Thy father's moral  
parts

Mayst thou inherit too ! Welcome to Paris.

*Ber.* My thanks and duty are your majesty's.

*King.* I would I had that corporal sound-  
ness now,

As when thy father and myself in friendship  
First tried our soldiership ! He did look far  
Into the service of the time and was

Disciple of the bravest ; he lusted long ;  
But on us both did haggish age steal on

And wore us out of act. It much repairs me  
To talk of your good father. In his youth

He had the wit which I can well observe  
To-day in our young lords ; but they may jest

Till their own scorn return to them unnoted  
Ere they can hide their levity in honour :

So like a courtier, contempt nor bitterness  
Were in his pride or sharpness ; if they were,

His equal had awaked them, and his honour,  
Clock to itself, knew the true minute when

Exception bid him speak, and at this time  
His tongue obey'd his hand : who were below

him  
He used as creatures of another place  
And bow'd his eminent top to their low ranks,

Making them proud of his humility,  
In their poor praise he humbled. Such a man

Might be a copy to these younger times ;  
Which, follow'd well, would demonstrate them

now

But goes backward.

*Ber.* His good remembrance, sir,  
Lies richer in your thoughts than on his tomb ;

So in approof lives not his epitaph  
As in your royal speech.

*King.* Would I were with him ! He would  
always say—

Metinks I hear him now ; his plausible words  
He scatter'd not in ears, but grafted them,

To grow there and to bear.—'Let me not live,'—  
This his good melancholy oft began,

On the catastrophe and heel of pastime,  
When it was out,—'Let me not live,' quoth he,

'After my flame lacks oil, to be the snuff

Of younger spirits, whose apprehensive senses  
All but new things disdain; whose judgements  
are 61

More fathers of their garments; whose constancies

Expire before their fashions.' This he wish'd:  
I after him do after him wish too,  
Since I nor wax nor honey can bring home,  
I quickly were dissolved from my hive,  
To give some labourers room.

*Sec. Lord.* You are loved, sir;  
They that least lend it you shall lack you first.

*King.* I fill a place, I know 't. How long  
is 't, count,

Since the physician at your father's died? 70  
He was much famed.

*Ber.* Some six months since, my lord.

*King.* If he were living, I would try him yet.  
Lend me an arm; the rest have worn me out  
With several applications: nature and sickness  
Debate it at their leisure. Welcome, count;  
My son's no dearer.

*Ber.* Thank your majesty.

[*Exeunt. Flourish.*]

### SCENE III. *Rousillon. The COUNT's palace.*

*Enter COUNTESS, Steward, and Clown.*

*Count.* I will now hear; what say you of  
this gentlewoman?

*Stew.* Madam, the care I have had to even  
your content, I wish might be found in the  
calendar of my past endeavours; for then we  
wound our modesty and make foul the clearness  
of our deservings, when of ourselves we publish  
them.

*Count.* What does this knave here? Get you  
gone, sirrah: the complaints I have heard of  
you I do not all believe: 'tis my slowness that  
I do not; for I know you lack not folly to com-  
mit them, and have ability enough to make such  
knaveries yours.

*Clo.* 'Tis not unknown to you, madam, I  
am a poor fellow.

*Count.* Well, sir.

*Clo.* No, madam, 'tis not so well that I am  
poor, though many of the rich are damned: but,  
if I may have your ladyship's good will to go to  
the world, Isabel the woman and I will do as we  
may. 21

*Count.* Wilt thou needs be a beggar?

*Clo.* I do beg your good will in this case.

*Count.* In what case?

*Clo.* In Isabel's case and mine own. Service  
is no heritage: and I think I shall never have  
the blessing of God till I have issue o' my body;  
for they say barnes are blessings.

*Count.* Tell me thy reason why thou wilt  
marry. 29

*Clo.* My poor body, madam, requires it: I  
am driven on by the flesh; and he must needs  
go that the devil drives.

*Count.* Is this all your worship's reason?

*Clo.* Faith, madam, I have other holy reasons,  
such as they are.

*Count.* May the world know them?

*Clo.* I have been, madam, a wicked creature, |

as you and all flesh and blood are; and, indeed,  
I do marry that I may repent.

*Count.* Thy marriage, sooner than thy wickedness. 41

*Clo.* I am out o' friends, madam; and I hope  
to have friends for my wife's sake.

*Count.* Such friends are thine enemies, knave.

*Clo.* You're shallow, madam, in great friends;  
for the knaves come 'to do that for me which I  
am weary of. He that ears my land spares my  
team and gives me leave to in the crop; if I be  
his cuckold, he's my drudge: he that comforts  
my wife is the cherisher of my flesh and blood;  
he that cherishes my flesh and blood loves my  
flesh and blood; he that loves my flesh and  
blood is my friend: ergo, he that kisses my wife  
is my friend. If men could be contented to be  
what they are, there were no fear in marriage;  
for young Charbon the puritan and old Poyssam  
the papist, howsome'er their hearts are severed  
in religion, their heads are both one; they may  
joul horns together, like any deer i' the herd.

*Count.* Wilt thou ever be a foul-mouthed  
and calumnious knave? 61

*Clo.* A prophet I, madam; and I speak the  
truth the next way:

For I the ballad will repeat,

Which men full true shall find;

Your marriage comes by destiny,

Your cuckoo sings by kind.

*Count.* Get you gone, sir; I'll talk with you  
more anon.

*Stew.* May it please you, madam, that he bid  
Helen come to you: of her I am to speak. 71

*Count.* Sirrah, tell my gentlewoman I would  
speak with her; Helen, I mean.

*Clo.* Was this fair face the cause, guoth she,

Why the Grecians sacked Troy?

Fond done, done fond,

Was this King Priam's joy?

With that she sighed as she stood,

With that she sighed as she stood,

And gave this sentence then; 80

Among nine bad if one be good,

Among nine bad if one be good,

There's yet one good in ten.

*Count.* What, one good in ten? you corrupt  
the song, sirrah.

*Clo.* One good woman in ten, madam; which  
is a purifying o' the song: would God would  
serve the world so all the year! we'd find no  
fault with the tithe-woman, if I were the parson.  
One in ten, guoth a'! An we might have a good  
woman born but one every blazing star, or at an  
earthquake, 'twould mend the lottery well: a  
man may draw his heart out, ere a' pluck one.

*Count.* You'll be gone, sir knave, and do as  
I command you.

*Clo.* That man should be at woman's com-  
mand, and yet no hurt done! Though honesty  
be no puritan, yet it will do no hurt; it will  
wear the surplice of humility over the black  
gown of a big heart. I am going, forsooth: the  
business is for Helen to come hither. [Exit.]

*Count.* Well, now.

*Stew.* I know, madam, you love your gentle  
woman entirely.

*Count.* Faith, I do : her father bequeathed her to me ; and she herself, without other advantage, may lawfully make title to as much love as she finds : there is more owing her than is paid ; and more shall be paid her than she'll demand. 100

*New.* Madam, I was very late more near her than I think she wished me : alone she was, and did communicate to herself her own words to her own ears ; she thought, I dare vow for her, they touched not any stranger sense. Her matter was, she loved your son : Fortune, she said, was no goddess, that had put such difference betwixt their two estates : Love no god, that would not extend his might, only where qualities were level ; Dian no queen of virgins, that would suffer her poor knight surprised, without rescue in the first assault or ransom afterward. This she delivered in the most bitter touch of sorrow that e'er I heard virgin exclaim in : which I held my duty speedily to acquaint you withal ; since, in the loss that may happen, it concerns you something to know it.

*Count.* You have discharged this honestly ; keep it to yourself : many likelihoods informed me of this before, which hung so tottering in the balance that I could neither believe nor mis-doubt. Pray you, leave me : stall this in your bosom ; and I thank you for your honest care : I will speak with you further anon.

[*Exit Steward.*]

*Enter HELENA.*

Even so it was with me when I was young : If ever we are nature's, these are ours ; this thorn

Doth to our rose of youth rightly belong ; Our blood to us, this to our blood is born ; It is the show and seal of nature's truth, Where love's strong passion is impress'd in youth :

By our remembrances of days foregone, 140  
Such were our faults, or then we thought them none.

Her eye is sick on't : I observe her now.

*Hel.* What is your pleasure, madam ?

*Count.* You know, Helen, I am a mother to you.

*Hel.* Mine honourable mistress.

*Count.* Nay, a mother :

Why not a mother ? When I said 'a mother,' Methought you saw a serpent : what's it mother,

That you start at it ? I say, I am your mother ; And put you in the catalogue of those

That were enwombed mine : 'tis often seen 150  
Adoption strives with nature and choice breeds

A native slip to us from foreign seeds ; You ne'er oppress'd me with a mother's groan,

Yet I express to you a mother's care : God's mercy, maiden ! does it curd thy blood

To say I am thy mother ? What's the matter, That this distemper'd messenger of wet,

The many-colour'd Iris, rounds thine eye ? Why ? that you are my daughter ?

*Hel.* That I am not.

*Count.* I say, I am your mother.

*Hel.*

Pardon, madam ; 160  
The Count Rousillon cannot be my brother : I am from humble, he from honour'd name ; No note upon my parents, his all noble : My master, my dear lord he is ; and I His servant live, and will his vassal die : He must not be my brother.

*Count.*

Nor I your mother !  
*Hel.* You are my mother, madam ; would you were,—

So that my lord your son were not my brother,— Indeed my mother ! or were you both our mothers,

I care no more for than I do for heaven, 170  
So I were not his sister. Can't no other,

But, I your daughter, he must be my brother !

*Count.* Yes, Helen, you might be my daughter-in-law :

God shield you mean it not ! daughter and mother

So strive upon your pulse. What, pale again ? My fear hath catch'd your fondness : now I see

The mystery of your loneliness, and find Your salt tears' head : now to all sense 'tis gross

You love my son ; invention is ashamed, Against the proclamation of thy passion, 180

To say thou dost not : therefore tell me true ; But tell me then, 'tis so ; for, look, thy cheeks

Confess it, th' one to th' other ; and thine eyes See it so grossly shown in thy behaviours

That in their kind they speak it : only sin And hellish obstinacy tie thy tongue,

That truth should be suspected. Speak, is't so ? If it be so, you have wound a goodly clew ;

If it be not, forswear't : however, I charge thee, As heaven shall work in me for thine avail, 190

To tell me truly.

*Hel.* Good madam, pardon me !  
*Count.* Do you love my son ?

*Hel.* Your pardon, noble mistress !

*Count.* Love you my son ?

*Hel.* Do not you love him, madam ?

*Count.* Go not about ; my love hath in't a bond,

Whereof the world takes note : come, come, disclose

The state of your affection ; for your passions Have to the full appeach'd.

*Hel.* Then, I confess, Here on my knee, before high heaven and you,

That before you, and next unto high heaven, I love your son. 200

My friends were poor, but honest ; so's my love : He not offended ; for it hurts not him

That he is loved of me : I follow him not By any token of presumptuous suit ;

Nor would I have him till I do deserve him ; Yet never know how that desert should be.

I know I love in vain, strive against hope ; Yet in this captious and intenable sieve

I still pour in the waters of my love And lack not to lose still : thus, Indian-like,

Religious in mine error, I adore 210  
The sun, that looks upon his worshipper,

But knows of him no more. My dearest madam, Let not your hate encounter with my love

For loving where you do : but if yourself, Whose aged honour cites a virtuous youth, 220

Did ever in so true a flame of liking  
Wish chastely and love dearly, that your Dian  
Was both herself and love; O, then, give pity  
To her, whose state is such that cannot choose  
But lend and give where she is sure to lose; <sup>222</sup>  
That seeks not to find that her search implies,  
But riddle-like lives sweetly where she dies!

*Count.* Had you not lately an intent,—speak truly,—  
To go to Paris?

*Hel.* Madam, I had.

*Count.* Wherefore? tell true.

*Hel.* I will tell truth; by grace itself I swear.  
You know my father left me some prescriptions  
Of rare and proved effects, such as his reading  
And manifest experience had collected  
For general sovereignty; and that he will'd me  
In heedfullest reservation to bestow them, <sup>231</sup>  
As notes whose faculties inclusive were  
More than they were in note: amongst the rest  
There is a remedy, approved, set down,  
To cure the desperate languishings whereof  
The king is render'd lost.

*Count.* This was your motive  
For Paris, was it? speak.

*Hel.* My lord your son made me to think of  
this;

Ease Paris and the medicine and the king  
Had from the conversation of my thoughts <sup>240</sup>  
Haply been absent then.

*Count.* But think you, Helen,  
If you should tender your supposed aid,  
He would receive it? he and his physicians  
Are of a mind; he, that they cannot help him,  
They, that they cannot help: how shall they  
credit

A poor unlearned virgin, when the schools,  
Embowell'd of their doctrine, have left off  
The danger to itself?

*Hel.* There's something in't,  
More than my father's skill, which was the  
greatest

Of his profession, that his good receipt <sup>250</sup>  
Shall for my legacy be sanctified

By the luckiest stars in heaven: and, would  
your honour

But give me leave to try success, I'd venture  
The well-lost life of mine on his grace's cure  
By such a day and hour.

*Count.* Dost thou believe't?

*Hel.* Ay, madam, knowingly.

*Count.* Why, Helen, thou shalt have my  
leave and love,

Means and attendants and my loving greetings  
To those of mine in court: I'll stay at home  
And pray God's blessing into thy attempt: <sup>260</sup>  
Be gone to-morrow; and be sure of this,  
What I can help thee to thou shalt not miss.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *Paris. The KING's palace.*

*Flourish of cornets. Enter the KING, attended  
with divers young Lords taking leave for the  
Florentine war; BERTRAM, and PAROLLES.*

*King.* Farewell, young lords; these warlike  
principles

Do not throw from you: and you, my lords,  
farewell:

Share the advice betwixt you; if both gain, all  
The gift doth stretch itself as 'tis received,  
And is enough for both.

*First Lord.* 'Tis our hope, sir,  
After well enter'd soldiers, to return  
And find your grace in health.

*King.* No, no, it cannot be; and yet my  
heart

Will not confess he owes the malady  
That doth my life besiege. Farewell, young  
lords; <sup>10</sup>

Whether I live or die, be you the sons  
Of worthy Frenchmen: let higher Italy,—  
†Those bated that inherit but the fall  
Of the last monarchy,—see that you come  
Not to woo honour, but to wed it; when  
The bravest quastant shrinks, find what you seek,  
That fame may cry you loud: I say, farewell.

*Sec. Lord.* Health, at your bidding, serve  
your majesty!

*King.* Those girls of Italy, take heed of  
them:

They say, our French lack language to deny, <sup>20</sup>  
If they demand: beware of being captives,  
Before you serve.

*Both.* Our hearts receive your warnings.  
*King.* Farewell. Come hither to me.

[*Exit, attended.*]

*First Lord.* O my sweet lord, that you will  
stay behind us!

*Par.* 'Tis not his fault, the spark.

*Sec. Lord.* O, 'tis brave wars!

*Par.* Most admirable: I have seen those  
wars.

*Ber.* I am commanded here, and kept a coil  
with

'Too young' and 'the next year' and 'tis too  
early.'

*Par.* An thy mind stand to't boy, steal  
away bravely.

*Ber.* I shall stay here the forehorse to a  
smock, <sup>30</sup>

Creaking my shoes on the plain masonry,  
Till honour be bought up and no sword worn  
But one to dance with! By heaven, I'll steal  
away.

*First Lord.* There's honour in the theft.

*Par.* Commit it, count.

*Sec. Lord.* I am your accessory; and so,  
farewell.

*Ber.* I grow to you, and our parting is a tor-  
tured body.

*First Lord.* Farewell, captain.

*Sec. Lord.* Sweet Monsieur Parolles! <sup>30</sup>

*Par.* Noble heroes, my sword and yours are  
kin. Good sparks and lustrous, a word, good  
metals: you shall find in the regiment of the  
Spinil one Captain Spurio, with his cicatrice, an  
emblem of war, here on his sinister cheek; it  
was this very sword entrenched it: say to him, I  
live; and observe his reports for me.

*First Lord.* We shall, noble captain.

*Par.* Mars dote on you for his novices! what  
will ye do!

*Ber.* Stay: the king. <sup>30</sup>

Re-enter KING. BERTRAM and PAROLLES  
retire.

Par. [To Ber.] Use a more spacious ceremony to the noble lords; you have restrained yourself within the list of too cold an adieu: be more expressive to them: for they wear themselves in the cap of the time, there do muster eye, gait, eat, speak, and move under the influence of the most received star; and though the devil lead the measure, such are to be allowed: after them, and take a more dilated farewell.

Ber. And I will do so. 60

Par. Worthy fellows; and like to prove most new sword-men.

[Exeunt Bertram and Parolles.]

Enter LAFEU.

Laf. [Kneeling] Pardon, my lord, for me and for my tidings.

King. I'll fee thee to stand up.

Laf. Then here's a man stands, that has brought his pardon.

would you had kneel'd, my lord, to ask me mercy,

and that at my bidding you could so stand up.

King. I would I had; so I had broke thy pate,

and ask'd thee mercy for't.

Laf. Good faith, across: but, my good lord, 'tis thus; 70

Will you be cured of your infirmity?

King. No.

Laf. O, will you eat no grapes, my royal fox?

Yes, but you will my noble grapes, an if my royal fox could reach them: I have seen a medicine

That's able to breathe life into a stone,

quicken a rock, and make you dance canary

With spritely fire and motion; whose simple touch

Is powerful to araise King Pepin, nay,

To give great Charlemain a pen in's hand 80

And write to her a love-line.

King. What 'her' is this?

Laf. Why, Doctor She: my lord, there's one arrived,

If you will see her: now, by my faith and honour,

If seriously I may convey my thoughts

In this my light deliverance, I have spoke

With one that, in her sex, her years, profession,

Wisdom and constancy, hath amazed me more

Than I dare blame my weakness: will you see her,

For that is her demand, and know her business?

That done, laugh well at me.

King. Now, good Lafeu, 90

Bring in the admiration; that we with thee

May spend our wonder too, or take off thine

By wondering how thou took'st it.

Laf. Nay, I'll fit you,

and not be all day neither. [Exit.]

King. Thus he his special nothing ever pro-

logue.

Re-enter LAFEU, with HELENA.

Laf. Nay, come your ways.

King. This haste hath wings indeed.

Laf. Nay, come your ways:

This is his majesty; say your mind to him:

A traitor you do look like; but such traitors

His majesty seldom fears: I am Cressid's uncle,

That dare leave two together; fare you well. 101

[Exit.]

King. Now, fair one, does your business follow us?

Hel. Ay, my good lord.

Gerard de Narbon was my father;

In what he did profess, well found.

King. I knew him.

Hel. The rather will I spare my praises

towards him;

Knowing him is enough. On's bed of death

Many receipts he gave me; chiefly one,

Which, as the dearest issue of his practice,

And of his old experience the only darling, 110

He bade me store up, as a triple eye,

Safer than mine own two, more dear; I have so;

And, hearing your high majesty is touch'd

With that malignant cause wherein the honour

Of my dear father's gift stands chief in power,

I come to tender it and my appliance

With all bound humbleness.

King. We thank you, maiden;

But may not be so credulous of cure,

When our most learned doctors leave us and

The congregated college have concluded 120

That labouring art can never ransom nature

From her inaidible estate; I say we must not

So stain our judgement, or corrupt our hope,

To prostitute our past-cure malady

To empirics, or to disserve so

Our great self and our credit, to esteem

A senseless help when help past sense we deem.

Hel. My duty then shall pay me for my

pains:

I will no more enforce mine office on you;

Humbly entreating from your royal thoughts

A modest one, to bear me back again. 131

King. I cannot give thee less, to be call'd

grateful:

Thou thought'st to help me; and such thanks

I give

As one near death to those that wish him live:

But what at full I know, thou know'st no part,

I knowing all my peril, thou no art.

Hel. What I can do can do no hurt to try,

Since you set up your rest 'gainst remedy.

He that of greatest works is finisher

Oft does them by the weakest minister: 140

So holy writ in babes hath judgement shewn,

When judges have been babes; great floods

have flown

From simple sources, and great seas have dried

When miracles have by the greatest been denied.

Oft expectation fails and most oft there

Where most it promises, and oft it hits

Where hope is coldest and despair most fits.

King. I must not hear thee; fare thee well,

kind maid;

Thy pains not used must by thyself be paid:

Proffers not took reap thanks for their reward.

*Hel.* Inspired merit so by breath is barr'd :  
It is not so with Him that all things knows  
As 'tis with us that square our guess by shows ;  
But most it is presumption in us when  
The help of heaven we count the act of men.  
Dear sir, to my endeavours give consent ;  
Of heaven, not me, make an experiment.  
I am not an impostor that proclaim  
Myself against the level of mine aim ;  
But know I think and think I know most sure  
My art is not past power nor your past cure. 162  
*King.* Art thou so confident ! within what  
space

Hop'st thou my cure ?

*Hel.* The great'st grace lending grace,  
Ere twice the horses of the sun shall bring  
Their fiery torcher his diurnal ring,  
Ere twice in morn and occidental damp  
Moist Hesperus hath quench'd his sleepy lamp,  
Or four and twenty times the pilot's glass  
Hath told the thievish minutes how they pass,  
What is infirm from your sound parts shall  
fly. 170

Health shall live free and sickness freely die.

*King.* Upon thy certainty and confidence  
What dar'st thou venture ?

*Hel.* Tax of impudence,  
A strumpet's boldness, a divulged shame  
Traded by odious ballads : my maiden's name  
Sear'd otherwise ; nay, worse—if worse—ex-  
tended

With vilest torture let my life be ended.

*King.* Methinks in thee some blessed spirit  
doth speak

His powerful sound within an organ weak :  
And what impossibility would say 180  
In common sense, sense saves another way.  
Thy life is dear ; for all that life can rate  
Worth name of life in thee hath estimate,  
Youth, beauty, wisdom, courage, all  
That happiness and prime can happy call :  
Thou this to hazard needs must intimate  
Skill infinite or monstrous desperate.  
Sweet practiser, thy physic I will try,  
That ministers thine own death if I die.

*Hel.* If I break time, or flinch in property  
Of what I spoke, unpitied let me die, 190  
And well deserved : not helping, death's my fee ;  
But, if I help, what do you promise me ?

*King.* Make thy demand.

*Hel.* But will you make it even ?  
*King.* Ay, by my sceptre and my hopes of  
heaven.

*Hel.* Then shalt thou give me with thy  
kingly hand

What husband in thy power I will command :  
Exempted be from me the arrogance  
To choose from forth the royal blood of France,  
My low and humble name to propagate 200  
With any branch or image of thy state ;  
But such a one, thy vassal, whom I know  
Is free for me to ask, thee to bestow.

*King.* Here is my hand ; the premises ob-  
served,

Thy will by my performance shall be served :  
So make the choice of thy own time, for I,  
Thy resolved patient, on thee still rely.  
More should I question thee, and more I must,

Though more to know could not be more to  
trust,  
From whence thou camest, how tended on  
but rest 210  
Unquestion'd welcome and undoubted blest.  
Give me some help here, ho ! If thou proceed  
As high as word, my deed shall match thy need  
[Flourish. *Exeunt*]

SCENE II. *Rousillon. The COUNT's palace*  
*Enter COUNTESS and CLOWN.*

*Count.* Come on, sir ; I shall now put you to  
the height of your breeding.

*Clo.* I will show myself highly fed and lowly  
taught : I know my business is but to the court.

*Count.* To the court ! why, what place make  
you special, when you put off that with such  
contentment ? But to the court !

*Clo.* Truly, madam, if God have lent a man  
any manners, he may easily put it off at court ;  
he that cannot make a leg, put off 's cap, kiss  
his hand and say nothing, has neither leg,  
hands, lip, nor cap ; and indeed such a fellow,  
to say precisely, were not for the court ; but for  
me, I have an answer will serve all men.

*Count.* Marry, that's a bountiful answer  
that fits all questions.

*Clo.* It is like a barber's chair that fits all  
buttocks, the pin-buttock, the quatch-buttock,  
the brawn buttock, or any buttock.

*Count.* Will your answer serve fit to all  
questions ? 21

*Clo.* As fit as ten groats is for the hand of  
an attorney, as your French crown for your  
taffeta punk, as Tib's rush for Tom's forefinger,  
as a pancake for Shrove Tuesday, a morris for  
May-day, as the nail to his hole, the cuckold to  
his horn, as a scolding quean to a wrangling  
knave, as the nun's lip to the friar's mouth,  
nay, as the pudding to his skin.

*Count.* Have you, I say, an answer of such  
fitness for all questions ? 31

*Clo.* From below your duke to beneath your  
constable, it will fit any question.

*Count.* It must be an answer of most mon-  
strous size that must fit all demands.

*Clo.* But a trifle neither, in good faith, if the  
learned should speak truth of it : here it is, and  
all that belongs to 't. Ask me if I am a courtier :  
it shall do you no harm to learn. 32

*Count.* To be young again, if we could ; I  
will be a fool in question, hoping to be the  
wiser by your answer. I pray you, sir, are you  
a courtier ?

*Clo.* O Lord, sir ! There's a simple putting  
off. More, more, a hundred of them.

*Count.* Sir, I am a poor friend of yours, that  
loves you.

*Clo.* O Lord, sir ! Thick, thick, spare not me.  
*Count.* I think, sir, you can eat none of this  
homely meat.

*Clo.* O Lord, sir ! Nay, put me to 't, I war-  
rant you. 33

*Count.* You were lately whipped, sir, as  
think.

*Clo.* O Lord, sir ! spare not me.  
*Count.* Do you cry, 'O Lord, sir !' at your

whipping, and 'spare not me'? Indeed your 'O Lord, sir!' is very sequent to your whipping: you would answer very well to a whipping, if you were but bound to't.

*Clot.* I ne'er had worse luck in my life in my 'O Lord, sir!' I see things may serve long, but not serve ever.

*Count.* I play the noble housewife with the time,

To entertain't so merrily with a fool.

*Clot.* O Lord, sir! why, there't serves well again.

*Count.* An end, sir; to your business. Give Helen this,

And urge her to a present answer back:

Commend me to my kinsmen and my son:

This is not much.

*Clot.* Not much commendation to them.

*Count.* Not much employment for you: you understand me?

*Clot.* Most fruitfully: I am there before my legs.

*Count.* Haste you again. [Exeunt severally.]

### SCENE III. Paris. The KING's palace.

Enter BERTRAM, LAFEU, and PAROLLES.

*Laf.* They say miracles are past; and we have our philosophical persons, to make modern and familiar, things supernatural and causeless. Hence is it that we make trifles of terrors, ensconcing ourselves into seeming knowledge, when we should submit ourselves to an unknown fear.

*Par.* Why, 'tis the rarest argument of wonder that hath shot out in our later times.

*Ber.* And so 'tis.

*Laf.* To be relinquished of the artists,—

*Par.* So I say.

*Laf.* Both of Galen and Paracelsus.

*Par.* So I say.

*Laf.* Of all the learned and authentic fellows,—

*Par.* Right; so I say.

*Laf.* That gave him out incurable,—

*Par.* Why, there 'tis; so say I too.

*Laf.* Not to be helped,—

*Par.* Right: as 'twere, a man assured of a—

*Laf.* Uncertain life, and sure death.

*Par.* Just, you say well; so would I have said.

*Laf.* I may truly say, it is a novelty to the world.

*Par.* It is, indeed: if you will have it in showing, you shall read it in—what do ye call there?

*Laf.* A showing of a heavenly effect in an earthly actor.

*Par.* That's it; I would have said the very same.

*Laf.* Why, your dolphin is not lustier: 'fore me, I speak in respect—

*Par.* Nay, 'tis strange, 'tis very strange, that is the brief and the tedious of it; and he's of a most bawdier spirit that will not acknowledge it to be—

*Laf.* Very hard of heaven.

*Par.* Ay, so I say.

*Laf.* In a most weak—[pausing] and debile minister, great power, great transcendence: which should, indeed, give us a further use to be made than alone the recovery of the king, as to be—[pausing] generally thankful.

*Par.* I would have said it; you say well. Here comes the king.

Enter KING, HELENA, and Attendants.

LAFEU and PAROLLES retire.

*Laf.* Lustig, as the Dutchman says: I'll like a maid the better, whilst I have a tooth in my head: why, he's able to lead her a coranto.

*Par.* Mort du vinaigre! is not this Helen?

*Laf.* 'Fore God, I think so.

*King.* Go, call before me all the lords in court.

Sit, my preserver, by thy patient's side; And with this healthful hand, whose banish'd sense

Thou hast repeal'd, a second time receive

The confirmation of my promised gift,

Which but attends thy naming.

Enter three or four Lords.

Fair maid, send forth thine eye: this youthful parcel

Of noble bachelors stand at my bestowing.

O'er whom both sovereign power and father's voice

I have to use: thy frank election make;

Thou hast power to choose, and they none to forsake.

*Hel.* To each of you one fair and virtuous mistress

Fall, when Love please! marry, to each, but one!

*Laf.* I'd give bay Curtal and his furniture, My mouth no more were broken than these boys',

And writ as little beard.

*King.* Peruse them well:

Not one of those but had a noble father.

*Hel.* Gentlemen,

Heaven hath through me restored the king to health.

*All.* We understand it, and thank heaven for you.

*Hel.* I am a simple maid, and therein wealthiest,

That I protest I simply am a maid.

Please it your majesty, I have done already:

The blushes in my cheeks thus whisper me, 'We blush that thou shouldst choose; but, be refused,

Let the white death sit on thy cheek for ever; We'll ne'er come there again.

*King.* Make choice; and, see, Who shuns thy love shuns all his love in me.

*Hel.* Now, Dian, from thy altar do I fly, so And to imperial Love, that god most high,

Do my sighs stream. Sir, will you hear my suit?

*First Lord.* And grant it.

*Hel.* Thanks, sir; all the rest is mute.

*Laf.* I had rather be in this choice than throw amaze for my life.

*Hel.* The honour, sir, that flames in your fair eyes,  
Before I speak, too threateningly replies :  
Love make your fortunes twenty times above  
Her that so wishes and her humble love !

*Sec. Lord.* No better, if you please.

*Hel.* My wish receive,  
Which great Love grant ! and so, I take my leave.

*Laf.* Do all they deny her ! An they were sons of mine, I'd have them whipped ; or I would send them to the Turk, to make eunuchs of.

*Hel.* Be not afraid that I your hand should take ;

I'll never do you wrong for your own sake :

Blessing upon your vows ! and in your bed

Find fairer fortune, if you ever wed !

*Laf.* These boys are boys of ice, they'll none have her : sure, they are bastards to the English ; the French ne'er got 'em.

*Hel.* You are too young, too happy, and too good,

To make yourself a son out of my blood.

*Fourth Lord.* Fair one, I think not so.

*Laf.* There's one grape yet ; I am sure thy father drunk wine : but if thou be'st not an ass, I am a youth of fourteen ; I have known thee already.

*Hel.* [To *Bertram*] I dare not say I take you ; but I give

Me and my service, ever whilst I live, 120  
Into your guiding power. This is the man.

*King.* Why, then, young *Bertram*, take her ; she's thy wife.

*Ber.* My wife, my liege ! I shall beseech your highness,

In such a business give me leave to use

The help of mine own eyes.

*King.* Know'st thou not, *Bertram*,  
What she has done for me ?

*Ber.* Yes, my good lord ;  
But never hope to know why I should marry her.

*King.* Thou know'st she has raised me from my sickly bed.

*Ber.* But follows it, my lord, to bring me down 129

Must answer for your raising ? I know her well :  
She had her breeding at my father's charge.

A poor physician's daughter my wife ! Disdain  
Rather corrupt me ever !

*King.* 'Tis only title thou disdain'st in her,  
the which

I can build up. Strange is it that our bloods,  
Of colour, weight, and heat, pour'd all together,

Would quite confound distinction, yet stand off  
In differences so mighty. If she be

All that is virtuous, save what thou dislikest,  
A poor physician's daughter, thou dislikest 130

Of virtue for the name : but do not so :

From lowest place when virtuous things proceed,  
The place is dignified by the doer's deed :

Where great additions swell's, and virtue none,  
It is a dropsied honour. Good alone

Is good without a name. Villeness is so :  
The property by what it is should go,

Not by the title. She is young, wise, fair ;  
In these to nature she's immediate heir,

And these breed honour : that is honour's scorn  
Which challenges itself as honour's born 141

And is not like the sire : honours thrive,  
When rather from our acts we them derive

Than our foregoers : the mere word's a slave  
Debosh'd on every tomb, on every grave

A lying trophy, and as oft is dumb  
Where dust and damn'd oblivion is the tomb

Of honour'd bones indeed. What should he  
said ?

If thou canst like this creature as a maid,  
I can create the rest : virtue and she 150

Is her own dower ; honour and wealth from me  
*Ber.* I cannot love her, nor will strive to do't

*King.* Thou wrong'st thyself, if thou shouldst  
strive to choose.

*Hel.* That you are well restored, my lord,  
I'm glad :

Let the rest go.

*King.* My honour's at the stake ; which to  
defeat,

I must produce my power. Here, take her  
hand,

Proud scornful boy, unworthy this good gift ;  
That dost in vile misprision shackle up

My love and her desert ; that canst not dream,  
We, poisoning us in her defective scale, 161

Shall weigh thee to the beam ; that wilt not  
know,

It is in us to plant thine honour where  
We please to have it grow. Check thy con-  
tempt :

Obeys our will, which travails in thy good :  
Believe not thy disdain, but presently

Do thine own fortunes that obedient right  
Which both thy duty owes and our power

claims ;  
Or I will throw thee from my care for ever

Into the staggers and the careless lapse 170  
Of youth and ignorance ; both my revenge and  
hate

Loosing upon thee, in the name of justice,  
Without all terms of pity. Speak ; thine answer.

*Ber.* Pardon, my gracious lord ; for I submit  
My fancy to your eyes : when I consider

What great creation and what dole of honour  
Flies where you bid it, I find that she, which

late

Was in my nobler thoughts most base, is now  
The praised of the king ; who, so ennobled,

Is as 'twere born so.

*King.* Take her by the hand, 180  
And tell her she is thine : to whom I promise  
A counterpoise, if not to thy estate

A balance more replete.

*Ber.* I take her hand.

*King.* Good fortune and the favour of the  
king

Smile upon this contract ; whose ceremony  
Shall seem expedient on the now-born brief,

And be perform'd to-night : the solemn feast  
Shall more attend upon the coming space,

Expecting absent friends. As thou lovest her,  
Thy love's to me religious ; else, does err. 190

[*Exeunt all but Lafes and Parolles.*]  
*Laf.* [Advancing] Do you hear, monsieur !  
a word with you.

*Par.* Your pleasure, sir !



*Laf.* Your lord and master did well to make his recantation.

*Par.* Recantation! My lord! my master!

*Laf.* Ay; is it not a language I speak?

*Par.* A most harsh one, and not to be understood without bloody succeeding. My master!

*Laf.* Are you companion to the Count Roussillon?

*Par.* To any count, to all counts, to what is named.

*Laf.* To what is count's man: count's master of another style.

*Par.* You are too old, sir; let it satisfy you, you are too old.

*Laf.* I must tell thee, sirrah, I write man; to which title age cannot bring thee.

*Par.* What I dare too well do, I dare not do.

*Laf.* I did think thee, for two ordinaries, to be a pretty wise fellow; thou didst make tolerance vent of thy travel; it might pass: yet the arms and the banners about thee did manfully dissuade me from believing thee a vessel too great a burthen. I have now found thee; when I lose thee again, I care not; yet art thou sold for nothing but taking up; and that thou'rt are worth.

*Par.* Hadst thou not the privilege of anti-city upon thee,—

*Laf.* Do not plunge thyself too far in anger, as thou hasten thy trial; which if—Lord have mercy on thee for a hen! So, my good window lattice, fare thee well: thy casement I need not open, for I look through thee. Give me thy and.

*Par.* My lord, you give me most egregious dignity.

*Laf.* Ay, with all my heart; and thou art worthy of it.

*Par.* I have not, my lord, deserved it.

*Laf.* Yes, good faith, every dram of it; and will not hate thee a scruple.

*Par.* Well, I shall be wiser.

*Laf.* Even as soon as thou canst, for thou art to pull at a smack o' the contrary. If ever thou beest bound in thy scarf and beaten, thou shalt find what it is to be proud of thy bondage. Have a desire to hold my acquaintance with thee, or rather my knowledge, that I may say in the default, he is a man I know.

*Par.* My lord, you do me most insupportable nation.

*Laf.* I would it were hell-pains for thy sake, my poor doing eternal: for doing I am as; as I will by thee, in what motion age will give me leave. *[Exit.]*

*Par.* Well, thou hast a son shall take this disgrace off me; scurvy, old, filthy, scurvy lord! Well, I must be patient; there is no fettering of authority. I'll beat him, by my life, if I can meet him with any convenience, an he were double and double a lord. I'll have no more pity of his age than I would have of— I'll beat him, an if I could but meet him again.

*Re-enter LAFEU.*

*Laf.* Sirrah, your lord and master's married; there's news for you: you have a new mistress.

*Par.* I most unfeignedly beseech your lord-

ship to make some reservation of your wrongs: he is my good lord: whom I serve above is my master.

*Laf.* Who? God?

*Par.* Ay, sir.

*Laf.* The devil it is that's thy master. Why dost thou garter up thy arms o' this fashion? dost make hose of thy sleeves? do other servants so? Thou wert best set thy lower part where thy nose stands. By mine honour, if I were but two hours younger, I'd beat thee: methinks, thou art a general offence, and every man should beat thee: I think thou wast created for men to breathe themselves upon thee.

*Par.* This is hard and undeserved measure, my lord.

*Laf.* Go to, sir; you were beaten in Italy for picking a kernel out of a pomegranate; you are a vagabond and no true traveller: you are more saucy with lords and honourable personages than the commission of your birth and virtue gives you heraldry. You are not worth another word, else I'd call you knave. I leave you. *[Exit.]*

*Par.* Good, very good; it is so then: good, very good; let it be concealed awhile.

*Re-enter BERTRAM.*

*Ber.* Undone, and forfeited to cares for ever!

*Par.* What's the matter, sweet-heart?

*Ber.* Although before the solemn priest I have sworn, I will not bed her.

*Par.* What, what, sweet-heart?

*Ber.* O my Parolles, they have married me! I'll to the Tuscan wars, and never bed her.

*Par.* France is a dog-hole, and it no more merits

The tread of a man's foot: to the wars!

*Ber.* There's letters from my mother: what the import is, I know not yet.

*Par.* Ay, that would be known. To the wars, my boy, to the wars!

He wears his honour in a box unseen, That hugs his kicky-wicky here at home, Spending his manly marrow in her arms, Which should sustain the bound and high curvet

Of Mars's fiery steed. To other regions

France is a stable; we that dwell in 't jades;

Therefore, to the war!

*Ber.* It shall be so: I'll send her to my house,

Acquaint my mother with my hate to her, And wherefore I am fled; write to the king That which I durst not speak: his present gift Shall furnish me to those Italian fields,

Where noble fellows strike: war is no strife To the dark house and the detested wife.

*Par.* Will this capriccio hold in thee? art sure?

*Ber.* Go with me to my chamber, and advise me.

I'll send her straight away: to-morrow I'll to the wars, she to her single sorrow.

*Par.* Why, these balls bound; there's noise in it. 'Tis hard.

A young man married is a man that's marr'd:  
Therefore away, and leave her bravely; go:  
The king has done you wrong: but, hush, 'tis so.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *Paris. The KING's palace.*

Enter HELENA and CLOWN.

*Hel.* My mother greets me kindly: is she well?

*Clow.* She is not well; but yet she has her health: she's very merry; but yet she is not well: but thanks be given, she's very well and wants nothing i' the world; but yet she is not well.

*Hel.* If she be very well, what does she ail, that she's not very well?

*Clow.* Truly, she's very well indeed, but for two things.

*Hel.* What two things? 20

*Clow.* One, that she's not in heaven, whither God send her quickly! the other, that she's in earth, from whence God send her quickly!

Enter PAROLLES.

*Par.* Bless you, my fortunate lady!

*Hel.* I hope, sir, I have your good will to have mine own good fortunes.

*Par.* You had my prayers to lead them on; and to keep them on, have them still. O, my knave, how does my old lady?

*Clow.* So that you had her wrinkles and I her money, I would she did as you say. 21

*Par.* Why, I say nothing.

*Clow.* Marry, you are the wiser man; for many a man's tongue shakes out his master's undoing: to say nothing, to do nothing, to know nothing, and to have nothing, is to be a great part of your title; which is within a very little of nothing.

*Par.* Away! thou'rt a knave.

*Clow.* You should have said, sir, before a knave thou'rt a knave; that's, before me thou'rt a knave: this had been truth, sir. 22

*Par.* Go to, thou art a witty fool; I have found thee.

*Clow.* Did you find me in yourself, sir? or were you taught to find me? The search, sir, was profitable; and much fool may you find in you, even to the world's pleasure and the increase of laughter.

*Par.* A good knave, i' faith, and well fed. Madam, my lord will go away to-night; 23  
A very serious business calls on him.  
The great prerogative and rite of love,  
Which, as your due, time claims, he does acknowledge;

But puts it off to a compell'd restraint;  
Whose want, and whose delay, is strew'd with sweets,

Which they distil now in the curbed time,  
To make the coming hour o'erflow with joy  
And pleasure drown the brim.

*Hel.* What's his will else?

*Par.* That you will take your instant leave o' the king,  
And make this haste as your own good proceeding, 24

Strengthen'd with what apology you think  
May make it probable need.

*Hel.*

*Par.* That, having this obtain'd, you presently

Attend his further pleasure.

*Hel.*

In every thing I wait upon his will.

*Par.*

I shall report it so.

*Hel.*

Come, sirrah. I pray you. [*Exit PAROLLES.*]  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. *Paris. The KING's palace.*

Enter LAFEU and BERTRAM.

*Laf.* But I hope your lordship thinks not him a soldier.

*Ber.* Yes, my lord, and of very valiant appearance.

*Laf.*

You have it from his own deliverance. And by other warranted testimony.

*Laf.*

Then my dial goes not true: I took this lark for a bunting.

*Ber.*

I do assure you, my lord, he is very great in knowledge and accordingly valiant.

*Laf.*

I have then sinned against his experience and transgressed against his valour; and my state that way is dangerous, since I cannot yet find in my heart to repent. Here he comes: I pray you, make us friends; I will pursue the amity.

Enter PAROLLES.

*Par.* [*To Bertram*] These things shall be done, sir.

*Laf.*

Pray you, sir, who's his tailor?

*Par.*

Sir! O, I know him well, I, sir; he, sir, is a good workman, a very good tailor. 25

*Ber.*

[*Aside to Par.*] Is she gone to the king?

*Par.*

She is.

*Ber.*

Will she away to-night?

*Par.*

As you'll have her.

*Ber.*

I have writ my letters, casketed my treasure,

Given order for our horses; and to-night, When I should take possession of the bride, End ere I do begin.

*Laf.*

A good traveller is something at the latter end of a dinner; but one that lies three thirds and uses a known truth to pass a thousand nothings with, should be once heard and thrice beaten. God save you, captain.

*Ber.*

Is there any unkindness between my lord and you, monsieur?

*Par.*

I know not how I have deserved to run into my lord's displeasure.

*Laf.*

You have made shift to run into boots and spurs and all, like him that leaped into the custard; and out of it you'll run again, rather than suffer question for your residence.

*Ber.*

It may be you have mistaken him, my lord.

*Laf.*

And shall do so ever, though I took him at's prayers. Fare you well, my lord; and believe this of me, there can be no kernel in this light nut; the soul of this man is his clothes.

just him not in matter of heavy consequence; I  
ave kept of them tame, and know their natures.  
arewell, monsieur: I have spoken better of you  
han you have or will to deserve at my hand;  
ut we must do good against evil. [Exit.]

Par. An idle lord, I swear.

Ber. I think so.

Par. Why, do you not know him?

Ber. Yes, I do know him well, and common  
speech

gives him a worthy pass. Here comes my clog.

Enter HELENA.

Hel. I have, sir, as I was commanded from  
you,

ake with the king and have procured his leave  
: present parting; only he desires  
me private speech with you.

Ber. I shall obey his will.

ou must not marvel, Helen, at my course,  
hich holds not colour with the time, nor does  
e ministration and required office  
n my particular. Prepared I was not  
o such a business; therefore am I found  
o much unsettled: this drives me to entreat  
you

hat presently you take your way for home;  
nd rather muse than ask why I entreat you, 70  
or my respects are better than they seem  
and my appointments have in them a need  
reater than shows itself at the first view  
o you that know them not. This to my  
mother: [Giving a letter.]

I will be two days ere I shall see you, so  
leave you to your wisdom.

Hel. Sir, I can nothing say,  
but that I am your most obedient servant.

Ber. Come, come, no more of that.

Hel. And ever shall  
With true observance seek to eke out that

Wherein toward me my homely stars have fail'd  
o equal my great fortune.

Ber. Let that go: 81  
y haste is very great: farewell; hie home.

Hel. Pray, sir, your pardon.

Ber. Well, what would you say?

Hel. I am not worthy of the wealth I owe,  
or dare I say 'tis mine, and yet it is;

ut, like a timorous thief, most fain would steal  
't but law does vouch mine own.

Ber. What would you have?

Hel. Something; and scarce so much: no-  
thing, indeed.

would not tell you what I would, my lord:

uth, yes;

angers and foes do sunder, and not kiss.

Ber. I pray you, stay not, but in haste to  
horse.

Hel. I shall not break your bidding, good  
my lord.

Ber. Where are my other men, monsieur?

Farwell. [Exit Helena.]

o thou toward home; where I will never come  
hilst I can shake my sword or hear the drum.

way, and for our flight.

Bravely, coragio!  
[Exit.]

ACT III

SCENE I. Florence. The DUKE's palace.

Flourish. Enter the DUKE of Florence, at-  
tended; the two Frenchmen, with a troop of  
soldiers.

Duke. So that from point to point now have  
you heard

The fundamental reasons of this war,  
Whose great decision hath much blood let forth  
And more thirsts after.

First Lord. Holy seems the quarrel  
Upon your grace's part; black and fearful  
On the opposer.

Duke. Therefore we marvel much our cousin  
France

Would in so just a business shut his bosom  
Against our borrowing prayers.

Sec. Lord. Good my lord,

The reasons of our state I cannot yield, 10  
But like a common and an outward man,  
That the great figure of a council frames  
By self-unable motion: therefore dare not  
Say what I think of it, since I have found  
Myself in my uncertain grounds to fail  
As often as I guess'd.

Duke. Be it his pleasure.

First Lord. But I am sure the younger of  
our nature,

That surfeit on their ease, will day by day  
Come here for physic.

Duke. Welcome shall they be;  
And all the honours that can fly from us 20  
Shall on them settle. You know your places  
well;

When better fall, for your avails they fell:  
To-morrow to the field. [Flourish. Exit.]

SCENE II. Roussillon. The COUNT's palace.

Enter COUNTESS and CLOWN.

Count. It hath happened all as I would have  
had it, save that he comes not along with her.

Clo. By my troth, I take my young lord to  
be a very melancholy man.

Count. By what observance, I pray you?

Clo. Why, he will look upon his boot and  
sing; mend the ruff and sing; ask questions and  
sing; pick his teeth and sing. I know a man  
that had this trick of melancholy sold a goodly  
manor for a song. 10

Count. Let me see what he writes, and when  
he means to come. [Opening a letter.]

Clo. I have no mind to Isabel since I was at  
court: our old ling and our Labels o' the country  
are nothing like your old ling and your Labels o'  
the court: the brains of my Cupid's knocked  
out, and I begin to love, as an old man loves  
money, with no stomach.

Count. What have we here?

Clo. E'en that you have there. [Exit.] 20

Count. [Reads] I have sent you a daughter-  
in-law: she hath recovered the king, and undone  
me. I have wedded her, not bedded her; and  
sworn to make the 'not' eternal. You shall  
hear I am run away: know it before the report

come. If there be breadth enough in the world,  
I will hold a long distance. My duty to you.

Your unfortunate son,

BERTRAM.

This is not well, rash and unbridled boy, 30  
To fly the favours of so good a king;  
To pluck his indignation on thy head  
By the misprising of a maid too virtuous  
For the contempt of empire.

*Re-enter CLOWN.*

*Clo.* O madam, yonder is heavy news within  
between two soldiers and my young lady!

*Count.* What is the matter?

*Clo.* Nay, there is some comfort in the news,  
some comfort; your son will not be killed so  
soon as I thought he would. 40

*Count.* Why should he be killed?

*Clo.* So say I, madam, if he run away, as I  
hear he does: the danger is in standing to't;  
that's the loss of men, though it be the getting  
of children. Here they come will tell you more:  
for my part, I only hear your son was run away.  
[Exit.]

*Enter HELENA and two Gentlemen.*

*First Gent.* Save you, good madam.

*Hel.* Madam, my lord is gone, for ever gone.

*Sec. Gent.* Do not say so.

*Count.* Think upon patience. Pray you,  
gentlemen, 50

I have felt so many quirks of joy and grief,  
That the first face of neither, on the start,  
Can woman me unto't: where is my son, I  
pray you!

*Sec. Gent.* Madam, he's gone to serve the  
duke of Florence:

We met him thitherward; for thence we came,  
And, after some dispatch in hand at court,  
Thither we bend again.

*Hel.* Look on his letter, madam; here's my  
passport.

[Reads] When thou canst get the ring upon my  
finger which never shall come off, and show me  
a child begotten of thy body that I am father to,  
then call me husband: but in such a 'then' I  
write a 'never.'

This is a dreadful sentence.

*Count.* Brought you this letter, gentlemen?

*First Gent.* Ay, madam;  
And for the contents' sake are sorry for our  
pains.

*Count.* I prithee, lady, have a better cheer;  
If thou engrossed all the griefs are thine,  
Thou robbst me of a moiety: he was my son;  
But I do wash his name out of my blood. 70  
And thou art all my child. Towards Florence  
is he?

*Sec. Gent.* Ay, madam.

*Count.* And to be a soldier?

*Sec. Gent.* Such is his noble purpose; and,  
believe't,

The duke will lay upon him all the honour  
That good convenience claims.

*Count.* Return you thither?

*First Gent.* Ay, madam, with the swiftest  
wing of speed.

*Hel.* [Reads] Till I have no wife, I have  
nothing in France.

'Tis bitter.

*Count.* Find you that there?

*Hel.*

*First Gent.* 'Tis but the boldness of his hand  
happily, which his heart was not consenting to.

*Count.* Nothing in France, until he have  
wife!

There's nothing here that is too good for him  
But only she; and she deserves a lord  
That twenty such rude boys might tend upon  
And call her hourly mistress. Who was with  
him?

*First Gent.* A servant only, and a gentleman  
Which I have sometime known.

*Count.* Parolles, was it not?

*First Gent.* Ay, my good lady, he.

*Count.* A very tainted fellow, and full of  
wickedness.

My son corrupts a well-derived nature  
With his inducement.

*First Gent.* Indeed, good lady,

The fellow has a deal of that too much,  
Which holds him much to have.

*Count.* You're welcome, gentlemen.

I will entreat you, when you see my son,  
To tell him that his sword can never win  
The honour that he loses: more I'll entreat you  
Written to bear along.

*Sec. Gent.* We serve you, madam,

In that and all your worthiest affairs.

*Count.* Not so, but as we change our con-  
tastics.

Will you draw near?

[Exit Countess and Gentlemen.]

*Hel.* 'Till I have no wife, I have nothing in  
France.'

Nothing in France, until he has no wife!

Thou shalt have none, Rousillon, none in France!

Then hast thou all again. Poor lord! is't!

That chase thee from thy country and expose

Those tender limbs of thine to the event

Of the none-sparing war? and is it I

That drive thee from the sportive court, wh

thou

Wast shot at with fair eyes, to be the mark

Of smoky muskets? O you leaden messengers!

That ride upon the violent speed of fire,

†Fly with false aim; move the still-peering air,

That sings with piercing; do not touch my lord.

Whoever shoots at him, I set him there;

Whoever charges on his forward breast,

I am the catfish that do hold him to't;

And, though I kill him not, I am the cause

His death was so effected; better 'twere

I met the ravin lion when he roard

With sharp constraint of hunger; better 'twere

That all the miseries which nature owes

Were mine at once. No, come thou home

Rousillon,

Whence honour but of danger wins a scar,

As oft it loses all: I will be gone;

My being here it is that holds thee hence:

Shall I stay here to do't? no, no, although

The air of paradise did fan the house

And angels officed all: I will be gone,

That painful rumour may report my flight. 15

to console thine ear. Come, night; end, day!  
or with the dark, poor thief, I'll steal away.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE III. *Florence. Before the DUKE'S palace.*

*Tourish. Enter the DUKE of Florence, BERTRAM, PAROLLES, Soldiers, Drum, and Trumpets.*

*Duke.* The general of our horse thou art;  
and we,  
great in our hope, lay our best love and credence  
on thy promising fortune.

*Ber.* Sir, it is  
charge too heavy for my strength, but yet  
I'll strive to bear it for your worthy sake  
on the extreme edge of hazard.

*Duke.* Then go thou forth;  
and fortune play upon thy prosperous helm,  
as thy auspicious mistress!

*Ber.* This very day,  
great Mars, I put myself into thy file:  
I take me but like my thoughts, and I shall  
prove  
lover of thy drum, hater of love. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *Roussillon. The COUNT'S palace.*

*Enter COUNTESS and Steward.*

*Count.* Alas! and would you take the letter  
of her?  
Might you not know she would do as she has  
done,

by sending me a letter! Read it again.

*Stew. [Aside]*

I am Saint Jaques' pilgrim, thither gone;  
Ambitious love hath so in me offended,  
That barefoot plod I the cold ground upon,  
With sainted vow my faults to have amended.  
Write, write, that from the bloody course of war  
My dearest master, your dear son, may hie:  
less him at home in peace, whilst I from far  
His name with zealous fervour sanctify:  
is taken labours bid him me forgive;  
I, his despicable Juno, sent him forth  
on courtly friends, with camping foes to live,  
Where death and danger dogs the heels of  
worth:

He is too good and fair for death and me;  
Whom I myself embrace, to set him free.

*Count.* Ah, what sharp stings are in her  
mildest words!

Rinaldo, you did never lack advice so much,  
as letting her pass so: had I spoke with her, as  
could have well diverted her intents,  
Which thus she hath prevented.

*Stew.* Pardon me, madam  
I had given you this at over-night,  
he might have been certain; and yet she  
writes,  
pursuit would be but vain.

*Count.* What angel shall  
less this unworthy husband? he cannot thrive,  
unless her prayers, whom heaven delights to  
hear

And loves to grant, relieve him from the wrath  
greatest justice. Write, write, Rinaldo,

To this unworthy husband of his wife;  
Let every word weigh heavy of her worth  
That he does weigh too light: my greatest grief,  
Though little he do feel it, set down sharply.  
Dispatch the most convenient messenger:  
When haply he shall hear that she is gone,  
He will return; and hope I may that she,  
Hearing so much, will speed her foot again,  
Led hither by pure love: which of them both  
is dearest to me, I have no skill in sense  
To make distinction: provide this messenger:  
My heart is heavy and mine age is weak;  
Grief would have tears, and sorrow bids me  
speak. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. *Florence. Without the walls. A tucket afar off.*

*Enter an old Widow of Florence, DIANA, VIOLENTA, and MARIANA, with other Citizens.*

*Wid.* Nay, come; for if they do approach  
the city, we shall lose all the sight.

*Dia.* They say the French count has done  
most honourable service.

*Wid.* It is reported that he has taken their  
greatest commander; and that with his own hand  
he slew the duke's brother. [*Tucket.*] We have  
lost our labour; they are gone a contrary way:  
hark! you may know by their trumpets.

*Mari.* Come, let's return again, and suffice  
ourselves with the report of it. Well, Diana,  
take heed of this French earl: the honour of a  
maid is her name; and no legacy is so rich as  
honesty.

*Wid.* I have told my neighbour how you  
have been solicited by a gentleman his com-  
panion.

*Mari.* I know that knave; hang him! one  
Parolles: a filthy officer he is in those suggestions  
for the young earl. Beware of them, Diana;  
their promises, enticements, oaths, tokens, and  
all these engines of lust, are not the things they  
go under: many a maid hath been seduced by  
them; and the misery is, example, that so ter-  
rible shows in the wreck of maidenhood, cannot  
for all that dissuade succession, but that they are  
lured with the twigs that threaten them. I hope  
I need not to advise you further; but I hope  
your own grace will keep you where you are,  
though there were no further danger known but  
the modesty which is so lost.

*Dia.* You shall not need to fear me.

*Wid.* I hope so.

*Enter HELENA, disguised like a Pilgrim.*

Look, here comes a pilgrim: I know she will  
lie at my house; thither they send one another:  
I'll question her. God save you, pilgrim! whither  
are you bound?

*Hel.* To Saint Jaques le Grand.

Where do the pilgrims lodge, I do beseech you?

*Wid.* At the Saint Francis here beside the  
port.

*Hel.* Is this the way?

*Wid.* Ay, marry, is't. [*A march afar.*]  
Hark you! they come this way.

If you will tarry, holy pilgrim,  
But till the troops come by,

I will conduct you where you shall be lodged ;  
The rather, for I think I know your hostess  
As ample as myself.

*Hel.* Is it yourself ?

*Wid.* If you shall please so, pilgrim.

*Hel.* I thank you, and will stay upon your  
leisure.

*Wid.* You came, I think, from France ?

*Hel.* I did so.

*Wid.* Here you shall see a countryman of  
yours 50  
That has done worthy service.

*Hel.* His name, I pray you.

*Dia.* The Count Rousillon : know you such  
a one ?

*Hel.* But by the ear, that hears most nobly  
of him :

His face I know not.

*Dia.* Whatsome'er he is,  
He's bravely taken here. He stole from France,  
As 'tis reported, for the king had married him  
Against his liking : think you it is so ?

*Hel.* Ay, surely, mere the truth : I know his  
lady.

*Dia.* There is a gentleman that serves the  
count 59

Reports but coarsely of her.

*Hel.* What's his name ?

*Dia.* Monsieur Parolles.

*Hel.* O, I believe with him,  
In argument of praise, or to the worth  
(Of the great count himself, she is too mean  
To have her name repeated : all her deserving  
Is a reserved honesty, and that  
I have not heard examined.

*Dia.* Alas, poor lady !

'Tis a hard bondage to become the wife

Of a detesting lord.

*Wid.* I warrant, good creature, wheresoe'er  
she is,

Her heart weighs sadly : this young maid might  
do her 70

A shrewd turn, if she pleased.

*Hel.* How do you mean ?

May be the amorous count solicits her

In the unlawful purpose.

*Wid.* He does indeed ;

And brokes with all that can in such a suit

Corrupt the tender honour of a maid :

But she is arm'd for him and keeps her guard  
In honest defence.

*Mar.* The gods forbid else !

*Wid.* So, now they come :

*Drum and Colours.*

— Enter BERTRAM, PAROLLES, and the whole  
army.

*Sec.*

Count Is Antonio, the duke's eldest son ;

*Sec. Gent.* Calus.

believe, Which is the Frenchman ?

The duke will, He, ~  
That good conveyer plume : 'tis a most gallant fellow.

*Count.* And his wife : if he were honest

*First Gent.* Ay, goodlier : is't not a handsome  
wing of speed.

him well.

*Dia.* 'Tis pity he is not honest : yond 's the  
same knave

That leads him to these places : were I his  
I would poison that vile rascal.

*Hel.* Which is he ?

*Dia.* That jack-an-apes with scarfs : why  
he melancholy ?

*Hel.* Perchance he's hurt i' the battle.

*Par.* Lose our drum ! well.

*Mar.* He's shrewdly vexed at something  
look, he has spied us.

*Wid.* Marry, hang you !

*Mar.* And your courtesy, for a ring-car  
[*Exeunt Bertram, Parolles, and as.*]

*Wid.* The troop is past. Come, pilgrim  
will bring you

Where you shall host : of enjoin'd penitents  
There's four or five, to great Saint Jaq  
bound.

Already at my house.

*Hel.* I humbly thank you :

Please it this matron and this gentle maid

To eat with us to-night, the charge and thank

Shall be for me ; and, to requite you further,

I will bestow some precepts of this virgin

Worthy the note.

*Both.* We'll take your offer kindly  
[*Exe.*]

#### SCENE VI. Camp before Florence.

Enter BERTRAM and the two French Lords

*Sec. Lord.* Nay, good my lord, put him to  
let him have his way.

*First Lord.* If your lordship find him a  
hilding, hold me no more in your respect.

*Sec. Lord.* On my life, my lord, a bubble

*Ber.* Do you think I am so far deceived  
him ?

*Sec. Lord.* Believe it, my lord, in mine  
direct knowledge, without any malice, he

speak of him as my kinsman, he's a

notable coward, an infinite and endless

an hourly promise-breaker, the owner of no

good quality worthy your lordship's ente-  
ment.

*First Lord.* It were fit you knew him ;  
reposing too far in his virtue, which he

not, he might at some great and trusty but  
in a main danger fail you.

*Ber.* I would I knew in what part  
action to try him.

*First Lord.* None better than to let him  
off his drum, which you hear him so confidently  
undertake to do.

*Sec. Lord.* I, with a troop of Florentines,  
suddenly surprise him ; such I will have, as

I am sure he knows not from the enemy : we

blind and hoodwink him so, that he shall suppose

no other but that he is carried into the league

the adversaries, when we bring him to our  
tents. Be but your lordship present at his  
negotiation : if he do not, for the promise of his

and in the highest compulsion of base fear,  
to betray you and deliver all the intelligence

his power against you, and that with the  
forfeit of his soul upon oath, never trust  
judgement in any thing.

*First Lord.* O, for the love of laughter, let him fetch his drum; he says he has a stratagem for't: when your lordship sees the bottom of his success in't, and to what metal this counterfeit lump of ore will be melted, if you give him not John Drum's entertainment, your inclining must be removed. Here he comes.

## Enter PAROLLES.

*Sec. Lord.* [Aside to Ber.] O, for the love of laughter, hinder not the honour of his design: let him fetch off his drum in any hand.

*Ber.* How now, monsieur! this drum sticks merrily in your disposition.

*First Lord.* A pox on't, let it go; 'tis but a rum.

*Par.* 'But a drum!' is't 'but a drum'? A rum so lost! There was excellent command,—a change in with our horse upon our own wings, and to rend our own soldiers!

*First Lord.* That was not to be blamed in a command of the service: it was a disaster of what Caesar himself could not have prevented, he had been there to command.

*Ber.* Well, we cannot greatly condemn our success: some dishonour we had in the loss of that drum; but it is not to be recovered. 60

*Par.* It might have been recovered.

*Ber.* It might; but it is not now.

*Par.* It is to be recovered: but that the merit of service is seldom attributed to the true and exact performer, I would have that drum or nother, or 'his jacket.'

*Ber.* Why, if you have a stomach, to't, monsieur: if you think your mystery in stratagem can bring this instrument of honour again into a native quarter, be magnanimous in the enterprise and go on; I will grace the attempt for a prisky exploit: if you speed well in it, the duke shall both speak of it, and extend to you what other becomes his greatness, even to the utmost syllable of your worthiness.

*Par.* By the hand of a soldier, I will undertake it.

*Ber.* But you must not now slumber in it. *Par.* I'll about it this evening: and I will presently pen down my dilemmas, encourage myself in my certainty, put myself into my mental preparation; and by midnight look to be further from me.

*Ber.* May I be bold to acquaint his grace you are gone about it?

*Par.* I know not what the success will be, my lord; but the attempt I vow.

*Ber.* I know thou'rt valiant; and, to the possibility of thy soldiership, will subscribe for thee. Farewell. 90

*Par.* I love not many words. [Exit.]

*Sec. Lord.* No more than a fish loves water. Not this a strange fellow, my lord, that so confidently seems to undertake this business, which he knows is not to be done; damns himself to do and dares better be damned than to fail?

*First Lord.* You do not know him, my lord, he do: certain it is, that he will steal himself into a man's favour and for a week escape a

great deal of discoveries; but when you find him out, you have him ever after.

*Ber.* Why, do you think he will make no deed at all of this that so seriously he does address himself unto?

*Sec. Lord.* None in the world; but return with an invention and clap upon you two or three probable lies: but we have almost embossed him; you shall see his fall to-night; for indeed he is not for your lordship's respect. 100

*First Lord.* We'll make you some sport with the fox ere we case him. He was first smoked by the old lord Lafew: when his disguise and he is parted, tell me what a sprat you shall find him; which you shall see this very night.

*Sec. Lord.* I must go look my twigs: he shall be caught.

*Ber.* Your brother he shall go along with me.

*Sec. Lord.* As't please your lordship; I'll leave you. [Exit.]

*Ber.* Now will I lead you to the house, and show you

The lass I spoke of.

*First Lord.* But you say she's honest.

*Ber.* That's all the fault: I spoke with her but once 120

And found her wondrous cold; but I sent to her,

By this same coxcomb that we have in the wind, Tokens and letters which she did re-send;

And this is all I have done. She's a fair creature:

Will you go see her?

*First Lord.* With all my heart, my lord. [Exeunt.]

## SCENE VII. Florence. The Widow's house.

Enter HELENA and Widow.

*Hel.* If you misdoubt me that I am not she, I know not how I shall assure you further,

But I shall lose the grounds I work upon.

*Wid.* Though my estate be fallen, I was well born,

Nothing acquainted with these businesses;

And would not put my reputation now in any staining act.

*Hel.* Nor would I wish you. First, give me trust, the count he is my husband,

And what to your sworn counsel I have spoken is so from word to word; and then you cannot,

By the good aid that I of you shall borrow, 22 Err in bestowing it.

*Wid.* I should believe you;

For you have show'd me that which well approves

You're great in fortune.

*Hel.* Take this purse of gold, And let me buy your friendly help thus far,

Which I will over-pay and pay again

When I have found it. The count he wooes your daughter,

Lays down his wanton siege before her beauty, Resolved to carry her: let her in fine consent,

As we'll direct her how 'tis best to bear it. 20 Now his important blood will nought deny

That she'll demand: a ring the county wears,

That downward hath succeeded in his house  
From son to son, some four or five descents  
Since the first father wore it: this ring he holds  
In most rich choice; yet in his idle fire,  
To buy his will, it would not seem too dear,  
Howe'er repented after.

*Wid.* Now I see  
The bottom of your purpose. 29

*Hel.* You see it lawful, then: it is no more,  
But that your daughter, ere she seems as won,  
Desires this ring; appoints him an encounter;  
In fine, delivers me to fill the time,  
Herself most chastely absent: after this,  
To marry her, I'll add three thousand crowns  
To what is past already.

*Wid.* I have yielded:  
Instruct my daughter how she shall persevere,  
That time and place with this deceit so lawful  
May prove coherent. Every night he comes  
With musics of all sorts and songs composed 40  
To her unworthiness: it nothing steads us  
To chide him from our eaves; for he persists  
As if his life lay on't.

*Hel.* Why then to-night  
Let us assay our plot; which, if it speed,  
Is wicked meaning in a lawful deed  
And lawful meaning in a lawful act,  
Where both not sin, and yet a sinful fact:  
But let's about it. [Exeunt.]

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I. Without the Florentine camp.

*Enter Second French Lord, with five or six  
other Soldiers in ambush.*

*Sec. Lord.* He can come no other way but by  
this hedge-corner. When you sally upon him,  
speak what terrible language you will: though  
you understand it not yourselves, no matter; for  
we must not seem to understand him, unless  
some one among us whom we must produce for  
an interpreter.

*First Sold.* Good captain, let me be the in-  
terpreter.

*Sec. Lord.* Art not acquainted with him?  
knows he not thy voice? 11

*First Sold.* No, sir, I warrant you.

*Sec. Lord.* But what linsley-woolsey hast  
thou to speak to us again?

*First Sold.* Even such as you speak to me.

*Sec. Lord.* He must think us some band of  
strangers if the adversary's entertainment. Now  
he hath a smack of all neighbouring languages;  
therefore we must every one be a man of his own  
fancy, not to know what we speak one to another;  
so we seem to know, is to know straight our  
purpose: choughs' language, gabble enough,  
and good enough. As for you, interpreter, you  
must seem very politic. But cough, ho! here he  
comes, to beguile two hours in a sleep, and then  
to return and swear the lies he forges.

## ENTER PAROLLES.

*Par.* Ten o'clock: within these three hours  
'twill be time enough to go home. What shall  
I say I have done? It must be a very plausible  
invention that carries it: they begin to smoke

me; and disgraces have of late knocked too  
often at my door. I find my tongue is too fool-  
hardy; but my heart hath the fear of Mars be-  
fore it and of his creatures, not daring the  
reports of my tongue.

*Sec. Lord.* This is the first truth that e'er  
thine own tongue was guilty of.

*Par.* What the devil should move me to  
undertake the recovery of this drum, being not  
ignorant of the impossibility, and knowing I  
had no such purpose? I must give myself some  
hurts, and say I got them in exploit; yet slight  
ones will not carry it; they will say, 'Came you  
off with so little?' and great ones I dare not  
give. Wherefore, what's the instance? Tongue,  
I must put you into a butter-woman's mouth  
and buy myself another of Bajazet's mule, if  
you prattle me into these perils.

*Sec. Lord.* Is it possible he should know what  
he is, and be that he is? 49

*Par.* Is the cutting of my garments  
would serve the turn, or the breaking of my  
Spanish sword.

*Sec. Lord.* We cannot afford you so.

*Par.* Or the baring of my beard; and to say  
it was in stratagem.

*Sec. Lord.* 'Twould not do.

*Par.* Or to drown my clothes, and say I was  
stripped.

*Sec. Lord.* Hardly serve.

*Par.* Though I swore I leaped from the  
window of the citadel— 61

*Sec. Lord.* How deep?

*Par.* Thirty fathoms.

*Sec. Lord.* Three great oaths would scarce  
make that be believed.

*Par.* I would I had any drum of the enemy's:  
I would swear I recovered it.

*Sec. Lord.* You shall hear one anon.

*Par.* A drum now of the enemy's,—  
[Alarum within.]

*Sec. Lord.* Throca movousus, cargo, cargo,  
cargo. 71

*All.* Cargo, cargo, cargo, villianda par corbo,  
cargo.

*Par.* O, ransom, ransom! do not hide mine  
eyes. [They seize and blindfold him.]

*First Sold.* Boskos throumulo boskos.

*Par.* I know you are the Muskos' regiment  
And I shall lose my life for want of language:  
If there be here German, or Dane, low Dutch,  
Italian, or French, let him speak to me; I'll  
discover that which shall unto the Florentine.

*First Sold.* Boskos vauvado: I understand  
thee, and can speak thy tongue. Kerelybonte  
sir, betake thee to thy faith, for seventeen  
poniards are at thy bosom.

*Par.* O!  
*First Sold.* O, pray, pray, pray! Manka  
revania dulce.

*Sec. Lord.* Oscorbidulchos volivoreo.

*First Sold.* The general is content to spare  
thee yet; 80

And, hoodwink'd as thou art, will lead thee on  
To gather from thee: haply thou mayst inform  
Something to save thy life.

*Par.* O, let me live!  
And all the secrets of our camp I'll shew



Their force, their purposes; nay, I'll speak that Which you will wonder at.

*First Sold.* But wilt thou faithfully?

*Par.* If I do not, damn me.

*First Sold.* Acordo linta.

(Come on; thou art granted space.)

[*Exit, with Parolles guarded. A short*

*alarm within.*  
*Sec. Lord.* Go, tell the Count Rousillon, and my brother,

We have caught the woodcock, and will keep him muffled 100  
Till we do hear from them.

*Sec. Sold.* Captain, I will.

*Sec. Lord.* A' will betray us all unto ourselves:

Inform on that.

*Sec. Sold.* So I will, sir.

*Sec. Lord.* Till then I'll keep him dark and safely lock'd. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. Florence. The Widow's house.

*Enter BERTRAM and DIANA.*

*Ber.* They told me that your name was Fontibell.

*Dia.* No, my good lord, Diana.

*Ber.* Titled goddess;  
And worth it, with addition! But, fair soul,  
In your fine frame hath love no quality?  
If the quick fire of youth light not your mind,  
You are no maiden, but a monument:  
When you are dead, you should be such a one  
As you are now, for you are cold and stern;  
And now you should be as your mother was  
When your sweet self was got. 10

*Dia.* She then was honest.

*Ber.* So should you be.

*Dia.* No:  
My mother did but duty; such, my lord,  
As you owe to your wife.

*Ber.* No more o' that;  
I prithee, do not strive against my vows:  
I was compell'd to her; but I love thee  
By love's own sweet constraint, and will for ever  
Do thee all rights of service.

*Dia.* Ay, so you serve us  
Till we serve you; but when you have our roses,  
You barely leave our thorns to prick ourselves  
And mock us with our bareness.

*Ber.* How have I sworn! 20

*Dia.* 'Tis not the many oaths that makes the truth,

But the plain single vow that is vow'd true.

What is not holy, that we swear not by,

But take the Highest to witness: then, pray you,  
tell me,

If I should swear by God's great attributes,  
I loved you dearly, would you believe my oaths,

When I did love you ill? This has no holding,  
To swear by him whom I protest to love,

That I will work against him: therefore your  
oath

Are words and poor conditions, but unseal'd, 30  
At least in my opinion.

*Ber.* Change it, change it;

Be not so holy-cruel: love is holy;

And my integrity ne'er knew the crafts  
That you do charge men with. Stand no more  
off,

But give thyself unto my sick desires,  
Who then recover: say thou art mine, and ever  
My love as it begins shall so persevere.

*Dia.* I see that men make ropes in such a  
scarce  
That we'll forsake ourselves. Give me that  
ring.

*Ber.* I'll lend it thee, my dear; but have no  
power  
To give it from me. 40

*Dia.* Will you not, my lord?

*Ber.* It is an honour 'longing to our house,  
Bequeathed down from many ancestors;  
Which were the greatest obloquy if the world  
In me to lose.

*Dia.* Mine honour's such a ring:  
My chastity's the jewel of our house,  
Bequeathed down from many ancestors;  
Which were the greatest obloquy if the world  
In me to lose: thus your own proper wisdom  
Brings in the champion Honour on my part, 50  
Against your vain assault.

*Ber.* Here, take my ring:  
My house, mine honour, yea, my life, be thine,  
And I'll be bid by thee.

*Dia.* When midnight comes, knock at my  
chamber-window:

I'll order take my mother shall not hear.  
Now will I charge you in the band of truth,  
When you have conquer'd my yet maiden bed,  
Remain there but an hour, nor speak to me:  
My reasons are most strong; and you shall  
know them.

When back again this ring shall be deliver'd: 60  
And on your finger in the night I'll put  
Another ring, that what in time proceeds  
May token to the future our past deeds.

Adieu, till then; then, fail not. You have won  
A wife of me, though there my hope be done.

*Ber.* A heaven on earth I have won by wooing  
thee. [*Exit.*]

*Dia.* For which live long to thank both heaven  
and me!

You may so in the end.  
My mother told me just how he would woo,  
As if she sat in his heart; she says all men 70  
Have the like oaths: he had sworn to marry me  
When his wife's dead; therefore I'll lie with  
him

When I am buried. Since Frenchmen are so  
braid,

Marry that will, I live and die a maid:

(Only in this disguise I think 't no sin  
To cozen him that would unjustly win. [*Exit.*])

## SCENE III. The Florentine camp.

*Enter the two French Lords and some two or  
three Soldiers.*

*First Lord.* You have not given him his  
mother's letter!

*Sec. Lord.* I have delivered it an hour since:  
there is something in 't that stings his nature;

for on the reading it he changed almost into another man.

*First Lord.* He has much worthy blame laid upon him for shaking off so good a wife and so sweet a lady.

*Sec. Lord.* Especially he hath incurred the everlasting displeasure of the king, who had even tuned his bounty to sing happiness to him. I will tell you a thing, but you shall let it dwell darkly with you.

*First Lord.* When you have spoken it, 'tis dead, and I am the grave of it.

*Sec. Lord.* He hath perverted a young gentlewoman here in Florence, of a most chaste renown; and this night he fleshes his will in the spoil of her honour: he hath given her his monumental ring, and thinks himself made in the unchaste composition.

*First Lord.* Now, God delay our rebellion! as we are ourselves, what things are we!

*Sec. Lord.* Merely our own traitors. And as in the common course of all treasons, we still see them reveal themselves, till they attain to their abhorred ends, so he that in this action contrives against his own nobility, in his proper stream o'erflows himself.

*First Lord.* Is it not meant damnable in us, to be trumpeters of our unlawful intents? We shall not then have his company to-night?

*Sec. Lord.* Not till after midnight; for he is dicked to his hour.

*First Lord.* That approaches apace; I would gladly have him see his company anatomized, that he might take a measure of his own judgments, wherein so curiously he had set this counterfeit.

*Sec. Lord.* We will not meddle with him till he come; for his presence must be the whip of the other.

*First Lord.* In the mean time, what hear you of these wars?

*Sec. Lord.* I hear there is an overture of peace.

*First Lord.* Nay, I assure you, a peace concluded.

*Sec. Lord.* What will Count Rousillon do then? will he travel higher, or return again into France?

*First Lord.* I perceive, by this demand, you are not altogether of his council.

*Sec. Lord.* Let it be forbid, sir; so should I be a great deal of his act.

*First Lord.* Sir, his wife some two months since fled from his house: her pretence is a pilgrimage to Saint Jaques le Grand; which holy undertaking with most austere sanctimony she accomplished; and, there residing, the tenderness of her nature became as a prey to her grief; in fine, made a groan of her last breath, and now she sings in heaven.

*Sec. Lord.* How is this justified?

*First Lord.* The stronger part of it by her own letters, which makes her story true, even to the point of her death: her death itself, which could not be her office to say is come, was faithfully confirmed by the rector of the place.

*Sec. Lord.* Hath the count all this intelligence?

*First Lord.* Ay, and the particular confirmations, point from point, to the full arming of the verity.

*Sec. Lord.* I am heartily sorry that he'll be glad of this.

*First Lord.* How mightily sometimes we make us comforts of our losses!

*Sec. Lord.* And how mightily some other times we drown our gain in tears! The great dignity that his valour hath here acquired for him shall at home be encountered with a shame as ample.

*First Lord.* The web of our life is of a mingled yarn, good and ill together: our virtues would be proud, if our faults whipped them not; and our crimes would despair, if they were not cherished by our virtues.

*Enter a Messenger.*

How now! where's your master?

*Serv.* He met the duke in the street, sir, of whom he hath taken a solemn leave: his lordship will next morning for France. The duke hath offered him letters of commendations to the king.

*Sec. Lord.* They shall be no more than needful there, if they were more than they can commend.

*First Lord.* They cannot be too sweet for the king's tartness. Here's his lordship now.

*Enter BERTRAM.*

How now, my lord! is't not after midnight?

*Ber.* I have to-night dispatched sixteen businesses, a month's length a-piece, by an abstract of success: I have congied with the duke, done my adieu with his nearest; buried a wife, mourned for her; writ to my lady mother I am returning; entertained my convoy; and between these main parcels of dispatch effected many nicer needs: the last was the greatest, but that I have not ended yet.

*Sec. Lord.* If the business be of any difficulty, and this morning your departure hence, it requires haste of your lordship.

*Ber.* I mean, the business is not ended, as fearing to hear of it hereafter. But shall we have this dialogue between the fool and the soldier? Come, bring forth this counterfeit module, has deceived me, like a double-meaning prophesier.

*Sec. Lord.* Bring him forth: has sat I the stocks all night, poor gallant knave.

*Ber.* No matter; his heels have deserved it, in usurping his spurs so long. How does he carry himself?

*Sec. Lord.* I have told your lordship already, the stocks carry him. But to answer you as you would be understood; he weeps like a wench that had shed her milk: he hath confessed himself to Morgan, whom he supposes to be a friar, from the time of his remembrance to this very instant disaster of his setting I the stocks: and what think you he hath confessed?

*Ber.* Nothing of me, has a?

*Sec. Lord.* His confession is taken, and it shall be read to his face: if your lordship be in,

s I believe you are, you must have the patience  
to hear it.

Enter PAROLLES guarded, and First Soldier.

*Ber.* A plague upon him! muffled! he can  
say nothing of me: hush, hush!

*First Lord.* Hoodman comes! Portotara-  
rossa.

*First Sold.* He calls for the tortures: what  
will you say without 'em?

*Par.* I will confess what I know without  
constraint: if ye pinch me like a pasty, I can  
say no more. 142

*First Sold.* Bosko chimurcho.

*First Lord.* Bobblando chieurmo.

*First Sold.* You are a merciful general. Our  
general bids you answer to what I shall ask you  
out of a note.

*Par.* And truly, as I hope to live.

*First Sold.* [Reads] 'First demand of him  
how many horse the duke is strong.' What say  
you to that? 150

*Par.* Five or six thousand; but very weak  
I unservicable: the troops are all scattered,  
and the commanders very poor rogues, upon my  
reputation and credit and as I hope to live.

*First Sold.* Shall I set down your answer so?

*Par.* Do: I'll take the sacrament on't, how  
I which way you will.

*Ber.* All's one to him. What a past-saving  
slave is this! 159

*First Lord.* You're deceived, my lord: this  
Monsieur Parolles, the gallant militarist,—  
was his own phrase,—that had the whole  
theoric of war in the knot of his scarf, and the  
practice in the chape of his dagger.

*Sec. Lord.* I will never trust a man again for  
keeping his sword clean, nor believe he can have  
any thing in him by wearing his apparel neatly.

*First Sold.* Well, that's set down. 160

*Par.* Five or six thousand horse, I said,—I  
will say true,—or thereabouts, set down, for I'll  
speak truth.

*First Lord.* He's very near the truth in this.

*Ber.* But I can him no thanks for't, in the  
nature he delivers it.

*Par.* Poor rogues, I pray you, say.

*First Sold.* Well, that's set down.

*Par.* I humbly thank you, sir: a truth's a  
truth, the rogues are marvellous poor. 179

*First Sold.* [Reads] 'Demand of him, of what  
strength they are a-foot.' What say you to that?

*Par.* By my troth, sir, if I were to live this  
present hour, I will tell true. Let me see:  
Maurio, a hundred and fifty; Sebastian, so  
many; Corambus, so many; Jaques, so many;  
Bulian, Cosmo, Lodowick, and Gratil, two  
hundred and fifty each; mine own company,  
Christopher, Vauromond, Bentil, two hundred and  
fifty each: so that the muster-file, rotten and  
sound, upon my life, amounts not to fifteen  
housand poll; half of the which dare not shake  
the snow from off their cassocks, lest they shake  
themselves to pieces.

*Ber.* What shall be done to him?

*First Lord.* Nothing, but let him have  
thanks. Demand of him my condition, and  
I'll credit I have with the duke.

*First Sold.* Well, that's set down. [Reads]  
'You shall demand of him, whether one Captain  
Dumain be i' the camp, a Frenchman; what  
his reputation is with the duke; what his valour,  
honesty, and expertness in wars; or whether he  
thinks it were not possible, with well-weighing  
sums of gold, to corrupt him to a revolt.' What  
say you to this? what do you know of it?

*Par.* I beseech you, let me answer to the  
particular of the interrogatories: demand them  
singly.

*First Sold.* Do you know this Captain  
Dumain? 270

*Par.* I know him: a' was a butcher's 'pre-  
tence in Paris, from whence he was whipped for  
getting the shrieve's fool with child,—a dumb  
innocent, that could not say him nay.

*Ber.* Nay, by your leave, hold your hands;  
though I know his brains are forfeit to the next  
tile that falls.

*First Sold.* Well, is this captain in the duke  
of Florence's camp? 279

*Par.* Upon my knowledge, he is, and lousy.

*First Lord.* Nay, look not so upon me; we  
shall hear of your lordship anon.

*First Sold.* What is his reputation with the  
duke?

*Par.* The duke knows him for no other but  
a poor officer of mine; and writ to me this other  
day to turn him out o' the band: I think I have  
his letter in my pocket.

*First Sold.* Marry, we'll search. 229

*Par.* In good sadness, I do not know; either  
it is there, or it is upon a file with the duke's  
other letters in my tent.

*First Sold.* Here 'tis; here's a paper: shall  
I read it to you?

*Par.* I do not know if it be it or no.

*Ber.* Our interpreter does it well.

*First Lord.* Excellently.

*First Sold.* [Reads] 'Dian, the count's a fool,  
and full of gold;—'

*Par.* That is not the duke's letter, sir; that  
is an advertisement to a proper maid in Florence,  
one Diana, to take heed of the allurements of  
one Count Rousillon, a foolish idle boy, but for  
all that very ruttish: I pray you, sir, put it up  
again.

*First Sold.* Nay, I'll read it first, by your  
favour.

*Par.* My meaning in't, I protest, was very  
honest in the behalf of the maid; for I knew the  
young count to be a dangerous and lascivious  
boy, who is a whale to virginity and devours up  
all the fry it finds. 250

*Ber.* Damnable both-sides rogue!

*First Sold.* [Reads] 'When he swears oaths,  
bid him drop gold, and take it;—'

After he scores, he never pays the score:  
Half won is match well made; match, and  
well make it;—

He ne'er pays after-debts, take it before;  
And say a soldier, Dian, told thee this,  
Men are to mell with, boys are not to kiss:  
For count of this, the count's a fool, I know it,  
Who pays before, but not when he does owe it.  
Thine, as he vowed to thee in thine ear,

PAROLLES.

*Ber.* He shall be whipped through the army with this rhyme in 's forehead.

*Sec. Lord.* This is your devoted friend, sir, the manifold linguist and the armpotent soldier.

*Ber.* I could endure any thing before but a cat, and now he's a cat to me.

*First Sold.* I perceive, sir, by the general's looks, we shall be fain to hang you.

*Par.* My life, sir, in any case: not that I am afraid to die; but that, my offences being many, I would repent out the remainder of nature: let me live, sir, in a dungeon, I the stocks, or any where, so I may live.

*First Sold.* We'll see what may be done, so you confess freely; therefore, once more to this Captain Dumain: you have answered to his reputation with the duke and to his valour: what is his honesty?

*Par.* He will steal, sir, an egg out of a cloister: for rapes and ravishments he parallels Nessus: he professes not keeping of oaths; in breaking 'em he is stronger than Hercules: he will lie, sir, with such volubility, that you would think truth were a fool: drunkenness is his best virtue, for he will be swine-drunk; and in his sleep he does little harm, save to his bed-clothes about him; but they know his conditions and lay him in straw. I have but little more to say, sir, of his honesty: he has every thing that an honest man should not have; what an honest man should have, he has nothing.

*First Lord.* I begin to love him for this.

*Ber.* For this description of thine honesty? A pox upon him for me, he's more and more a cat.

*First Sold.* What say you to his expertness in war?

*Par.* Faith, sir, has led the drum before the English tragedians; to belie him, I will not, and more of his soldiership I know not; except, in that country he had the honour to be the officer at a place there called Mile-end, to instruct for the doubling of files: I would do the man what honour I can, but of this I am not certain.

*First Lord.* He hath out-villained villany so far, that the rarity redeems him.

*Ber.* A pox on him, he's a cat still.

*First Sold.* His qualities being at this poor price, I need not to ask you if gold will corrupt him to revolt.

*Par.* Sir, for a quart d'écu he will sell the fee-simple of his salvation, the inheritance of it; and cut the entail from all remainders, and a perpetual succession for it perpetually.

*First Sold.* What's his brother, the other Captain Dumain?

*Sec. Lord.* Why does he ask him of me?

*First Sold.* What's he?

*Par.* 'E'en a crow o' the same nest; not altogether so great as the first in goodness, but greater a great deal in evil: he excels his brother for a coward, yet his brother is reputed one of the best that is: in a retreat he outruns any lackey; marry, in coming on he has the cramp.

*First Sold.* If your life be saved, will you undertake to betray the Florentine?

*Par.* Ay, and the captain of his horse, Count Rousillon.

*First Sold.* I'll whisper with the general, and know his pleasure.

*Par.* [Aside] I'll no more drumming; a plague of all drums! (Only to seem to deserve well, and to beguile the supposition of that lascivious young boy the count, have I run into this danger. Yet who would have suspected an ambush where I was taken?)

*First Sold.* There is no remedy, sir, but you must die: the general says, you that have a traitorously discovered the secrets of your army and made such pestiferous reports of men very nobly held, can serve the world for no honest use; therefore you must die. Come, headsman, off with his head.

*Par.* O Lord, sir, let me live, or let me see my death!

*First Sold.* That shall you, and take your leave of all your friends.

[Unblinding him.] So, look about you: you know any here?

*Ber.* Good morrow, noble captain.

*Sec. Lord.* God bless you, Captain Parolles.

*First Lord.* God save you, noble captain.

*Sec. Lord.* Captain, what greeting will you to my Lord Lafew? I am for France.

*First Lord.* Good captain, will you give me a copy of the sonnet you writ to Diana in behalf of the Count Rousillon? of an I were not a very coward, I'd compel it of you: but fare you well.

[Exit Bertram and Lords.]

*First Sold.* You are unlonely, captain, all but your scarf; that has a knot on 't yet.

*Par.* Who cannot be crushed with a plot?

*First Sold.* If you could find out a country where but women were that had received so much shame, you might begin an impudent nation. Fare ye well, sir; I am for France too: we shall speak of your there.

[Exit, with Soldiers.]

*Par.* Yet am I thankful: if my heart were great,

'Twould burst at this. Captain I'll be no more; But I will eat and drink, and sleep as soft As captain shall: simply the thing I am Shall make me live. Who knows himself a braggart,

Let him fear this, for it will come to pass That every braggart shall be found an ass. Rust, sword! cool, blushes! and, Parolles, live Safest in shame! being fool'd, by foolery thrive! There's place and means for every man alive. I'll after them.

#### SCENE IV. Florence. The Widow's house.

Enter HELENA, Widow, and DIANA.

*Hel.* That you may well perceive I have not wrong'd you,

One of the greatest in the Christian world Shall be my surety; fore whose throne 'tis needful,

Ere I can perfect mine intents, to kneel: Time was, I did him a desired office, Dear almost as his life; which gratitude Through flinty Tartar's bosom would peep forth And answer, thanks: I duly am inform'd His grace is at Marseilles; to which place We have convenient convoy. You must know

I am supposed dead : the army breaking,  
My husband hies him home; where, heaven  
aiding,

And by the leave of my good lord the king,  
We'll be before our welcome.

*Wid.* Gentle madam,  
You never had a servant to whose trust  
Your business was more welcome.

*Hil.* Nor you, mistress,  
Ever a friend whose thoughts more truly labour  
To recompense your love : doubt not but heaven  
Hath brought me up to be your daughter's  
dower,

As it hath fated her to be my motive  
And helper to a husband. But, O strange men !  
That can such sweet use make of what they  
hate,

When saucy trusting of the cozen'd thoughts  
Defiles the pitchy night : so lust doth play  
With what it loathes for that which is away.  
But more of this hereafter. You, Diana,  
Under my poor instructions yet must suffer  
something in my behalf.

*Dia.* Let death and honesty  
Go with your impositions, I am yours  
Upon your will to suffer.

*Hil.* Yet, I pray you :  
But with the word the time will bring on sum-  
mer,

When briars shall have leaves as well as thorns,  
And be as sweet as sharp. We must away ;  
Our waggon is prepar'd, and time revives us :  
ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL : still the fine's  
the crown ;

Whate'er the course, the end is the renown.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. *Rousillon. The Count's palace.*

*Enter COUNTESS, LAFKU, and CLOWN.*

*Laf.* No, no, no, your son was misled with  
a snipt-taffeta fellow there, whose villainous  
affron would have made all the unbaked and  
loughy youth of a nation in his colour : your  
laughter-in-law had been alive at this hour,  
and your son here at home, more advanced by  
the king than by that red-tailed humble-bee I  
speak of.

*Count.* I would I had not known him ; it  
was the death of the most virtuous gentlewoman  
that ever nature had praise for creating. If she  
had partaken of my flesh, and cost me the  
dearest groans of a mother, I could not have  
owed her a more rooted love.

*Laf.* 'Twas a good lady, 'twas a good lady :  
we may pick a thousand salads ere we light on  
such another herb.

*Co.* Indeed, sir, she was the sweet-marjoram  
of the salad, or rather, the herb of grace.

*Laf.* They are not herbs, you knave ; they  
are nose-herbs.

*Co.* I am no great Nebuchadnezzar, sir ; I  
have not much skill in grass.

*Laf.* Whether dost thou profess thyself, a  
knave or a fool ?

*Co.* A fool, sir, at a woman's service, and a  
knave at a man's.

*Laf.* Your distinction ?

*Co.* I would cozen the man of his wife and  
do his service.

*Laf.* So you were a knave at his service,  
indeed.

*Co.* And I would give his wife my bauble,  
sir, to do her service.

*Laf.* I will subscribe for thee, thou art both  
knave and fool.

*Co.* At your service.

*Laf.* No, no, no.

*Co.* Why, sir, if I cannot serve you, I can  
serve as great a prince as you are.

*Laf.* Who's that ? a Frenchman ?

*Co.* Faith, sir, a' has an English name ; but  
his fisnomiy is more hotter in France than there.

*Laf.* What prince is that ?

*Co.* The black prince, sir ; alias, the prince  
of darkness ; alias, the devil.

*Laf.* Hold thee, there's my purse : I give  
thee not this to suggest thee from thy master  
thou talkest of ; serve him still.

*Co.* I am a woodland fellow, sir, that always  
loved a great fire ; and the master I speak of  
ever keeps a good fire. But, sure, he is the  
prince of the world ; let his nobility remain in a  
court. I am for the house with the narrow gate,  
which I take to be too little for pomp to enter :  
some that humble themselves may ; but the  
many will be too chill and tender, and they'll  
be for the flowery way that leads to the broad  
gate and the great fire.

*Laf.* Go thy ways, I begin to be awearry of  
thee ; and I tell thee so before, because I would  
not fall out with thee. Go thy ways : let my  
horses be well looked to, without any tricks.

*Co.* If I put any tricks upon 'em, sir, they  
shall be jades' tricks ; which are their own right  
by the law of nature.

*Laf.* A shrewd knave and an unhappy.

*Count.* So he is. My lord that's gone made  
himself much sport out of him : by his authority  
he remains here, which he thinks is a patent for  
his sauciness ; and, indeed, he has no pace, but  
runs where he will.

*Laf.* I like him well ; 'tis not amiss. And I  
was about to tell you, since I heard of the good  
lady's death and that my lord your son was upon  
his return home, I moved the king my master  
to speak in the behalf of my daughter ; which,  
in the minority of them both, his majesty, out  
of a self-gracious remembrance, did first pro-  
pose : his highness hath promised me to do it ;  
and, to stop up the displeasure he hath conceived  
against your son, there is no fitter matter. How  
does your ladyship like it ?

*Count.* With very much content, my lord ;  
and I wish it happily effected.

*Laf.* His highness comes post from Mar-  
seilles, of as able body as when he numbered  
thirty : he will be here to-morrow, or I am  
deceived by him that in such intelligence hath  
seldom failed.

*Count.* It rejoices me, that I hope I shall see  
him ere I die. I have letters that my son will  
be here to-night : I shall beseech your lordship  
to remain with me till they meet together.

*Laf.* Madam, I was thinking with what man-  
ners I might safely be admitted.

*Count.* You need but plead your honourable privilege.

*Laf.* Lady, of that I have made a bold charter; but I thank my God it holds yet.

*Re-enter CLOWN.*

*Clo.* O madam, yonder's my lord your son with a patch of velvet on's face: whether there be a scar under't or no, the velvet knows; but 'tis a goodly patch of velvet: his left cheek is a cheek of two pile and a half, but his right cheek is worn bare.

*Laf.* A scar nobly got, or a noble scar, is a good livery of honour; so belike is that.

*Clo.* But it is your carbonadoed face.

*Laf.* Let us go see your son, I pray you: I long to talk with the young noble soldier.

*Clo.* Faith, there's a dozen of 'em, with delicate fine hats and most courteous feathers, which bow the head and nod at every man. *[Exit.*

### ACT V.

*SCENE I. Marseilles. A street.*

*Enter HELENA, Widow, and DIANA, with two Attendants.*

*Hel.* But this exceeding posting day and night

Must wear your spirits low; we cannot help it: But since you have made the days and nights as one,

To wear your gentle limbs in my affairs, Be bold you do so grow in my requital As nothing can unroot you. In happy time;

*Enter a Gentleman.*

This man may help me to his majesty's ear, If he would spend his power. God save you, sir.

*Gent.* And you.

*Hel.* Sir, I have seen you in the court of France.

*Gent.* I have been sometimes there.

*Hel.* I do presume, sir, that you are not fallen

From the report that goes upon your goodness; And therefore, goaded with most sharp occasions,

Which lay nice manners by, I put you to The use of your own virtues, for the which I shall continue thankful.

*Gent.* What's your will?

*Hel.* That it will please you To give this poor petition to the king, And aid me with that store of power you have To come into his presence.

*Gent.* The king's not here.

*Hel.* Not here, sir!

*Gent.* Not, indeed: He hence removed last night and with more haste

Than is his use.

*Wid.* Lord, how we lose our pains!

*Hel.* ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL yet, Though time seem so adverse and means unfit. I do beseech you, whither is he gone?

*Gent.* Marry, as I take it, to Rousillon; Whither I am going.

*Hel.* I do beseech you, sir,

Since you are like to see the king before me, Commend the paper to his gracious hand, Which I presume shall render you no blame But rather make you thank your pains for it. I will come after you with what good speed Our means will make us means.

*Gent.*

*Hel.* And you shall find yourself to be well thank'd.

Whatever falls me We must to horse again. Go, go, provide. *[Exit.*

*SCENE II. Rousillon. Before the COUNT'S palace.*

*Enter CLOWN, and PAROLLES, following.*

*Par.* Good Monsieur Lavache, give my Lord Lafew this letter: I have ere now, sir, been better known to you, when I have held familiarity with fresher clothes; but I am now, sir, muddled in fortune's mood, and smell somewhat strong of her strong displeasure.

*Clo.* Truly, fortune's displeasure is but slut-tish, if it smell so strongly as thou speakest of: I will henceforth eat no fish of fortune's buttering. Prithee, allow the wind.

*Par.* Nay, you need not to stop your nose, sir; I spake but by a metaphor.

*Clo.* Indeed, sir, if your metaphor stink, I will stop my nose; or against any man's metaphor. Prithee, get thee further.

*Par.* Pray you, sir, deliver me this paper.

*Clo.* Foh! prithee, stand away: a paper from fortune's close-stool to give to a nobleman! Look, here he comes himself.

*Enter LAFEU.*

Here is a purr of fortune's, sir, or of fortune's cat,—but not a musk-cat,—that has fallen into the unclean fishpond of her displeasure, and he says, is muddled withal: pray you, sir, use the carp as you may; for he looks like a poor, decayed, ingenious, foolish, rascally knave. I do pity his distress in my similes of comfort and leave him to your lordship.

*Par.* My lord, I am a man whom fortune hath cruelly scratched.

*Laf.* And what would you have me to do? 'Tis too late to pare her nails now. Wherein have you played the knave with fortune, that she should scratch you, who of herself is a good lady and would not have knaves thrive long under her? There's a quart d'écu for you: let the justices make you and fortune friends: I am for other business.

*Par.* I beseech your honour to hear me out single word.

*Laf.* You beg a single penny more: come, you shall ha't; save your word.

*Par.* My name, my good lord, is Parolles.

*Laf.* You beg more than 'word,' then. My passion! give me your hand. How does your drum?

*Par.* O my good lord, you were the first that found me!

*Laf.* Was I, in south? and I was the first that lost thee.

*Par.* It lies in you, my lord, to bring me in  
*me grace*, for you did bring me out.  
*Laf.* Out upon thee, knave! dost thou put  
 pon me at once both the office of God and the  
 evil? One brings thee in grace and the other  
 rings thee out. [*Trumpets sound.*] The king's  
 coming; I know by his trumpet. Sirrah, in-  
 ure further after me; I had talk of you last  
 night: though you are a fool and a knave, you  
 hall cat; go to, follow.

*Par.* I praise God for you. [*Exeunt.* 59]

SCENE III. *Rousillon. The Count's palace.*

*French.* Enter KING, COUNTESS, LAFEU,  
 the two French Lords, with Attendants.

*King.* We lost a jewel of her; and our esteem  
 as made much poorer by it: but your son,  
 as mad in folly, lack'd the sense to know  
 her estimation home.

*Count.* 'Tis past, my liege;  
 And I beseech your majesty to make it  
 Natural rebellion, done i' the blaze of youth;  
 When oil and fire, too strong for reason's force,  
 erbers it and burns on.

*King.* My honour'd lady,  
 have forgiven and forgotten all;  
 ough my revenges were high bent upon him,  
 and watch'd the time to shoot.

*Laf.* This I must say, 11  
 at first I beg my pardon, the young lord  
 al to his majesty, his mother and his lady  
 fence of mighty note; but to himself  
 be greatest wrong of all. He lost a wife  
 hose beauty did astonish the survey  
 f richest eyes, whose words all ears took  
 captive,  
 ose dear perfection hearts that scorn'd to  
 serve  
 unfully call'd mistress.

*King.* Praising what is lost  
 takes the remembrance dear. Well, call him  
 hither; 20  
 e are reconciled, and the first view shall kill  
 ll repetition: let him not ask our pardon;  
 the nature of his great offence is dead,  
 nd deeper than oblivion we do bury  
 be incensing relics of it: let him approach,  
 stranger, no offender; and inform him  
 'tis our will he should.

*Count.* I shall, my liege. [*Exit.*]

*King.* What says he to your daughter? have  
 you spoke?

*Laf.* All that he is hath reference to your  
 highness.

*King.* Then shall we have a match. I have  
 letters sent me 30  
 that set him high in fame.

Enter BERTRAM.

*Laf.* He looks well on 't.  
*King.* I am not a day of season,  
 or thou mayst see a sunshine and a hail  
 in me at once: but to the brightest beams  
 distracted clouds give way; so stand thou forth;  
 the time is fair again.

My high-repent'd blames,

Deir sovereign, pardon to me.

*King.* All is whole;  
 Not one word more of the consumed time;  
 Let's take the instant by the forward top;  
 For we are old, and on our quick'st decrees 40  
 The inaudible and noiseless foot of Time  
 Stools ere we can effect them. You remember  
 The daughter of this lord?

*Ber.* Admiringly, my liege, at first  
 I stuck my choices upon her, ere my heart  
 Durst make too bold a herald of my tongue:  
 Where the impression of mine eye infixing,  
 Contempt his scornful perspective did lend me,  
 Which warp'd the line of every other favour;  
 Scorn'd a fair colour, or express'd it stolen; 50  
 Extended or contracted all proportions  
 To a most hideous object: thence it came  
 That she whom all men praised and whom my-  
 self,  
 Since I have lost, have loved, was in mine eye  
 The dust that did offend it.

*King.* Well excused:  
 That thou didst love her, strikes some scores  
 away  
 From the great compt: but love that comes too  
 late,

Like a remorseful pardon slowly carried,  
 To the great sender turns a sour offence.  
 Crying, 'That's good that's gone.' Our rash  
 faults 60

Make trivial price of serious things we have,  
 Not knowing them until we know their grave:  
 Oft our displeasures, to ourselves unjust,  
 Destroy our friends and after weep their dust:  
 † Our own love waking cries to see what's done,  
 While shame full late sleeps out the afternoon.  
 Be this sweet Helen's knell, and now forget her.  
 Send forth your amorous token for fair Maudlin:  
 The main consents are had; and here we'll stay  
 To see our widower's second marriage-day. 70  
*Count.* Which better than the first, O dear  
 heaven, bless!

Or, ere they meet, in me, O nature, cesse!

*Laf.* Come on, my son, in whom my house's  
 name

Must be digested, give a favour from you  
 To sparkle in the spirits of my daughter,  
 That she may quickly come. [*Bertram gives a*  
*ring.*] By my old beard,

And every hair that's on 't, Helen, that's dead,  
 Was a sweet creature: such a ring as this,  
 The last that e'er I took her leave at court,  
 I saw upon her finger.

*Ber.* Hers it was not. 80  
*King.* Now, pray you, let me see it; for  
 mine eye,

While I was speaking, oft was fasten'd to 't.  
 This ring was mine; and, when I gave it Helen,  
 I bade her, if her fortunes ever stood  
 Necessitated to help, that by this token  
 I would relieve her. Had you that craft, to  
 leave her

Of what should stead her most?

*Ber.* My gracious sovereign,  
 Howe'er it pleases you to take it so,  
 The ring was never hers.

*Count.* Son, on my life,  
 I have seen her wear it; and she reckon'd it 90

At her life's rate.

*Laf.* I am sure I saw her wear it.

*Ber.* You are deceived, my lord; she never saw it:

In Florence was it from a casement thrown me, Wrapp'd in a paper, which contain'd the name Of her that throw it: noble she was, and thought I stood engaged: but when I had subscribed To mine own fortune and inform'd her fully I could not answer in that course of honour As she had made the overture, she ceased In heavy satisfaction and would never Receive the ring again. 100

*King.* Plutus himself, That knows the tinct and multiplying medicine, Hath not in nature's mystery more science Than I have in this ring: 'twas mine, 'twas Helen's,

Whoever gave it you. Then, if you know That you are well acquainted with yourself, Confess 'twas hers, and by what rough enforcement

You got it from her: she call'd the saints to surety

That she would never put it from her finger, Unless she gave it to yourself in bed, Where you have never come, or sent it us Upon her great disaster. 110

*Ber.* She never saw it.

*King.* Thou speak'st it falsely; as I love mine honour;

And makest conjectural fears to come into me, Which I would fain shut out. If it should prove That thou art so inhuman,—'twill not prove so;—

And yet I know not: thou didst hate her deadly, And she is dead; which nothing, but to close Her eyes myself, could win me to believe, More than to see this ring. Take him away. 120

[*Guards seize Bertram.*]  
My fore-past proofs, howe'er the matter fall, Shall tax my fears of little vanity, Having vainly fear'd too little. Away with him! We'll sift this matter further.

*Ber.* If you shall prove This ring was ever hers, you shall as easy Prove that I husbanded her best in Florence, Where yet she never was. [*Exit, guarded.*]

*King.* I am wrapp'd in dismal thinkings.

*Enter a Gentleman.*

*Gent.* Gracious sovereign, Whether I have been to blame or no, I know not:

Here's a petition from a Florentine, Who hath for four or five removes come short To tender it herself. I undertook it, Vanquish'd thereto by the fair grace and speech Of the poor suppliant, who by this I know Is here attending: her business looks in her With an importing visage; and she told me, In a sweet verbal brief, it did concern Your highness with herself.

*King.* [*Reads.*] Upon his many protestations to marry me when his wife was dead, I blush to say it, he won me. Now is the Count Rousillon a widower: his vows are forfeited to me, and my honour's paid to him. He stole from Flor-

ence, taking no leave, and I follow him to his country for justice: grant it me, O king! in you it best lies; otherwise a seducer flourishes, and a poor maid is undone. DIANA (*Capilet*).

*Laf.* I will buy me a son-in-law in a fair, and toll for this: I'll none of him.

*King.* The heavens have thought well on thee, Lafeu, To bring forth this discovery. Seek! these suitors:

Go speedily and bring again the count.

I am afraid the life of Helen, lady, Was foully snatch'd.

*Count.* Now, justice on the doers!

*Re-enter BERTRAM, guarded.*

*King.* I wonder, sir, such wives are monstrous to you, And that you fly them as you swear them lordship, Yet you desire to marry.

*Enter Widow and DIANA.*

What woman's that: I am, my lord, a wretched Florentine, Derived from the ancient Capilet:

My suit, as I do understand, you know, And therefore know how far I may be pitied.

*Wid.* I am her mother, sir, whose age and honour

Both suffer under this complaint we bring, And both shall cease, without your remedy.

*King.* Come hither, count; do you know these women?

*Ber.* My lord, I neither can nor will deny But that I know them: do they charge me further?

*Dia.* Why do you look so strange upon your wife?

*Ber.* She's none of mine, my lord.

*Dia.* If you shall marry, You give away this hand, and that is mine; 15 You give away heaven's vows, and those are mine:

You gave away myself, which is known mine: For I by vow am so embodied yours, That she which marries you must marry me, Either both or none.

*Laf.* Your reputation comes too short for my daughter; you are no husband for her.

*Ber.* My lord, this is a fond and desperate creature, Whom sometime I have laugh'd with: let your highness

Lay a more noble thought upon mine honour Than for to think that I would sink it here.

*King.* Sir, for my thoughts, you have them ill to friend

Till your deeds gain them: fairer prove your honour

Than in my thought it lies.

*Dia.* Good my lord, Ask him upon his oath, if he does think He had not my virginity.

*King.* What say'st thou to her?

*Ber.* She's impudent, my lord, And was a common gambster to the camp.





He knows I am no maid, and he'll swear to't ;  
 I'll swear I am a maid, and he knows not.  
 Great king, I am no strumpet, by my life ;  
 I am either maid, or else this old man's wife.

*King.* She does abuse our ears : to prison  
 with her.

*Dia.* Good mother, fetch my bail. Stay,  
 royal sir : *[Exit Widow.]*

The jeweller that owes the ring is sent for,  
 And he shall surety me. But for this lord,  
 Who hath abused me, as he knows himself,  
 Though yet he never harm'd me, here I quit  
 him :

He knows himself my bed he hath defiled ;  
 And at that time he got his wife with child :  
 Dead though she be, she feels her young one  
 kick :

So there's my riddle : one that's dead is quick :  
 And now behold the meaning.

*Re-enter Widow, with HELENA.*

*King.* Is there no exorcist  
 Beguiles the truer office of mine eyes ?  
 Is't real that I see ?

*Hel.* No, my good lord ;  
 'Tis but the shadow of a wife you see,  
 The name and not the thing.

*Ber.* Both, both. O, pardon !

*Hel.* O my good lord, when I was like this  
 maid,

I found you wondrous kind. There is your ring ;  
 And, look you, here's your letter : this it says :  
 'When from my finger you can get this ring  
 And are by me with child,' &c. This is done :

Will you be mine, now you are doubly won ?  
*Ber.* If she, my liege, can make me know  
 this clearly,

I'll love her dearly, ever, ever dearly.

*Hel.* If it appear not plain and prove untrue,  
 Deadly divorce step between me and you !

O my dear mother, do I see you living !

*Laf.* Mine eyes smell onions ; I shall weep  
 anon :

*[To Parolles]* Good Tom Drum, lend me a  
 handkercher : so,

I thank thee : wait on me home, I'll make sport  
 with thee :

Let thy courtesies alone, they are scurvy ones.

*King.* Let us from point to point this story  
 know,

To make the even truth in pleasure flow.

*[To Diana]* If thou be'st yet a fresh uncropped  
 flower,

Choose thou thy husband, and I'll pay thy  
 dower :

For I can guess that by thy honest aid  
 Thou kept'st a wife herself, thyself a maid.

Of that and all the progress, more and less,  
 Reserve thy more leisure shall express :

All yet seems well ; and if it end so meet,  
 The bitter past, more welcome is the sweet.

*[Flourish.]*

## EPILOGUE.

*King.* The king's a beggar, now the pla  
 done :

All is well ended, if this suit be won,  
 That you express content ; which we will pay.

With strife to please you, day exceeding day  
 Ours be your patience then, and yours our pa

Your gentle hands lend us, and take our hea  
*[Exeunt.]*

# TWELFTH NIGHT;

## OR, WHAT YOU WILL

### DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

OBESINO, Duke of Illyria.  
 SEBASTIAN, brother to Viola.  
 ANTONIO, a sea captain, friend to Sebastian.  
 A Sea Captain, friend to Viola.  
 VALENTINE, } gentlemen attending on th  
 CURIO, } Duke.  
 SIR TOBY BLICH, uncle to Olivia.  
 SIR ANDREW AGUECHECK.  
 MALVOLIO, steward to Olivia.

FABIAN,  
 FESTE, a Clown, } servants to Olivia.  
 OLIVIA.  
 VIOLA.  
 MARIA, Olivia's woman.  
 Lords, Priests, Sailors, Officers, Musicians, and  
 other Attendants.  
 SCENE: *A city in Illyria, and the sea-coast  
 near it.*

### ACT I.

#### SCENE I. *The Duke's palace.*

*Enter DUKE, CURIO, and other Lords; Musicians attending.*

*Duke.* If music be the food of love, play on;  
 Give me excess of it, that, surfeiting,  
 The appetite may sicken, and so die.  
 That strain again! it had a dying fall:  
 O, it came o'er my ear like the sweet sound,  
 That breathes upon a bank of violets,  
 Stealing and giving odour! Enough; no more:  
 'Tis not so sweet now as it was before.  
 O spirit of love! how quick and fresh art thou,  
 That, notwithstanding thy capacity  
 Receiveth as the sea, nought enters there,  
 Of what validity and pitch so'er,  
 But falls into abatement and low price,  
 Even in a minute: so full of shapes is fancy  
 That it alone is high fantastical.

*Cur.* Will you go hunt, my lord?

*Duke.* What, Curio?

*Cur.* The hart.

*Duke.* Why, so I do, the noblest that I have:  
 O, when mine eyes did see Olivia first,  
 Methought she purged the air of pestilence! so  
 That instant was I turn'd into a hart;  
 And my desires, like fell and cruel hounds,  
 E'er since pursue me.

#### *Enter VALENTINE.*

How now! what news from her?

*Val.* So please my lord, I might not be  
 admitted;

But from her handmaid do return this answer:  
 "The element itself, till seven years' heat,  
 Shall not behold her face at ample view;  
 Like a cloistress, she will veiled walk  
 And water once a day her chamber round

With eye-offending brine: all this to season  
 A brother's dead love, which she would keep  
 fresh

And lasting in her sad remembrance.

*Duke.* O, she that hath a heart of that fine  
 frame

To pay this debt of love but to a brother,  
 How will she love, when the rich golden shaft  
 Hath kill'd the flock of all affections else  
 That live in her: when liver, brain and heart,  
 These sovereign thrones, are all supplied, and  
 fill'd

Her sweet perfections with one self king!  
 Away before me to sweet beds of flowers:  
 Love-thoughts lie rich when canopied with  
 lowers. *[Exeunt.]*

### SCENE II. *The sea-coast.*

*Enter VIOLA, a Captain, and Sailors.*

*Vio.* What country, friends, is this?

*Cap.* This is Illyria, lady.

*Vio.* And what should I do in Illyria?

My brother he is in Elysium.

Perchance he is not drown'd: what think you,  
 sailors?

*Cap.* It is perchance that you yourself were  
 saved.

*Vio.* O my poor brother! and so perchance  
 may he be.

*Cap.* True, madam: and, to comfort you  
 with chance,

Assure yourself, after our ship did split,  
 When you and those poor number saved with  
 you

Hung on our driving boat, I saw your brother,  
 Most provident in peril, bind himself,  
 Courage and hope both teaching him the  
 practice,

To a strong mast that lived upon the sea;

Where, like Arion on the dolphin's back,  
I saw him hold acquaintance with the waves  
So long as I could see.

*Vio.* For saying so, there's gold:  
Mine own escape unfoldeth to my hope,  
Whereto thy speech serves for authority,  
The like of him. Know'st thou this country?

*Cap.* Ay, madam, well; for I was bred and  
born  
Not three hours' travel from this very place.

*Vio.* Who governs here?

*Cap.* A noble duke, in nature as in name.

*Vio.* What is his name?

*Cap.* Orsino.

*Vio.* Orsino! I have heard my father name  
him:

He was a bachelor then.

*Cap.* And so is now, or was so very late; so  
For but a month ago I went from hence,  
And then 'twas fresh in murmur,—as, you  
know,

What great ones do the less will prattle of,—  
That he did seek the love of fair Olivia.

*Vio.* What's she?

*Cap.* A virtuous maid, the daughter of a  
count  
That died some twelvemonth since, then leaving  
her

In the protection of his son, her brother,  
Who shortly also died; for whose dear love,  
They say, she hath abjured the company  
And sight of men.

*Vio.* O that I served that lady  
And might not be delivered to the world,  
Till I had made mine own occasion mellow,  
What my estate is!

*Cap.* That were hard to compass:  
Because she will admit no kind of suit,  
No, not the duke's.

*Vio.* There is a fair behaviour in thee,  
captain;

And though that nature with a beauteous wall  
Doth oft close in pollution, yet of thee  
I will believe thou hast a mind that suits  
With this thy fair and outward character.  
I prithee, and I'll pay thee bounteously,  
Conceal me what I am, and be my aid  
For such disguise as haply shall become  
The form of my intent. I'll serve this duke:  
Thou shalt present me as an eunuch to him;  
It may be worth thy pains; for I can sing  
And speak to him in many sorts of music  
That will allow me very worth his service.  
What else may hap to time I will commit;  
Only shape thou thy silence to my wit.

*Cap.* Be you his eunuch, and your mate  
I'll be:  
When my tongue blabs, then let mine eyes  
not see.

*Vio.* I thank thee: lead me on. [Exit.

### SCENE III. OLIVIA'S house.

Enter SIR TOBY BELCH and MARIA.

*Toby.* What a plague means my niece, to  
death of her brother thus? I am sure  
enemy to life.

*Mar.* By my troth, Sir Toby, you must  
come in earlier o' nights; your cousin, my lady,  
takes great exceptions to your ill hours.

*Sir To.* Why, let her except, before excepted.  
*Mar.* Ay, but you must confine yourself  
within the modest limits of order.

*Sir To.* Confine! I'll confine myself no  
finer than I am; these clothes are good enough  
to drink in; and so be these boots too; an'they  
be not, let them hang themselves in their own  
straps.

*Mar.* That quaffing and drinking will undo  
you: I heard my lady talk of it yesterday; and  
of a foolish knight that you brought in one night  
here to be her wooer.

*Sir To.* Who, Sir Andrew Aguecheek?

*Mar.* Ay, he.

*Sir To.* He's as tall a man as any's in  
Illyria.

*Mar.* What's that to the purpose?

*Sir To.* Why, he has three thousand ducats  
a year.

*Mar.* Ay, but he'll have but a year in a  
these ducats; he's a very fool and a prodigal.

*Sir To.* Fie, that you'll say so! he plays  
the viol de gambols, and speaks three or four  
languages word for word without book, and  
hath all the good gifts of nature.

*Mar.* He hath indeed, almost natural; for  
besides that he's a fool, he's a great quarreller;  
and but that he hath the gift of a coward to  
lay the guilt he hath in quarrelling, 'tis thought  
among the prudent he would quickly have his  
gift of a grave.

*Sir To.* By this hand, they are scoundrels,  
and substractors that say so of him. Who's  
they?

*Mar.* They that add, moreover, he's drunk  
nighly in your company.

*Sir To.* With drinking healths to my niece  
I'll drink to her as long as there is a passage  
my throat and drink in Illyria: he's a coward;  
and a coystrill that will not drink to my niece  
till his brains turn of the toe like a parish.  
What, wench! Castiliano vulgo! for here comes  
Sir Andrew Agueface.

Enter SIR ANDREW AGUECHECK.

*Sir And.* Sir Toby Belch! how now, Sir  
Belch?

*Sir To.* Sweet Sir Andrew!

*Sir And.* Bless you, fair shrew.

*Mar.* And you too, sir.

*Sir To.* Accost, Sir Andrew, accost.

*Sir And.* What's that?

*Sir To.* My niece's chambermaid.

*Sir And.* Good Mistress Accost, I  
better acquaintance.

*Mar.* My name is Mary, sir.

*Sir And.* Good Mistress Mary Accost

*Sir To.* You mistake, knight; 'accost

front her, board her, woo her, assail her.

*Sir And.* By my troth, I would not under-  
take her in this company. Is that the meaning  
of 'accost'?

*Mar.* Fare you well, gentlemen.

*Sir To.* An thou let part so, Sir And,  
would thou mightst never draw sword again.

*Sir And.* An you part so, mistress, I would I might never draw sword again. Fair lady, do you think you have fools in hand?

*Mar.* Sir, I have not you by the hand.

*Sir And.* Marry, but you shall have; and here's my hand.

*Mar.* Now, sir, 'thought is free. I pray you, bring your hand to the buttery-bar and let it drink.

*Sir And.* Wherefore, sweet-heart? what's your metaphor?

*Mar.* It's dry, sir.

*Sir And.* Why, I think so: I am not such an ass but I can keep my hand dry. But what's your jest?

*Mar.* A dry jest, sir.

*Sir And.* Are you full of them?

*Mar.* Ay, sir, I have them at my fingers' ends: marry, now I let go your hand, I am barren.

*Sir To.* O knight, thou lackest a cup of canary: when did I see thee so put down?

*Sir And.* Never in your life, I think; unless you see canary put me down. Methinks sometimes I have no more wit than a Christian or an ordinary man has: but I am a great eater of beef and I believe that does harm to my wit.

*Sir To.* No question.

*Sir And.* An I thought that, I'd forswear it. I'll ride home to-morrow, Sir Toby.

*Sir To.* Pourquoi, my dear knight?

*Sir And.* What is 'pourquoi'? do or not do: I would I had bestowed that time in the tongue that I have in fencing, dancing and bear-baiting: I had I but followed the arts!

*Sir To.* Then hadst thou had an excellent head of hair.

*Sir And.* Why, would that have mended my hair?

*Sir To.* Past question; for thou seest it will not curl by nature.

*Sir And.* But it becomes me well enough, does it not?

*Sir To.* Excellent: it hangs like flax on a listaff; and I hope to see a housewife take thee between her legs and spin it off.

*Sir And.* Faith, I'll home to-morrow, Sir Toby: your niece will not be seen; or if she be, it's four to one she'll none of me: the count himself here: hard by woe's her.

*Sir To.* She'll none of the count: she'll not match above her degree, neither in estate, years, or wit; I have heard her swear't. Tut, there's life in't, man.

*Sir And.* I'll stay a month longer. I am a fellow o' the strangest mind i' the world; I light in masques and revels sometimes another.

*Sir To.* Art thou good at these kickshaws, knight?

*Sir And.* As any man in Illyria, whatsoever he be, under the degree of my betters; and yet I will not compare with an old man.

*Sir To.* What is thy excellence in a galliard, knight?

*Sir And.* Faith, I can cut a caper.

*Sir To.* And I can cut the mutton to't.

*Sir And.* And I think I have the back-trick simply as strong as any man in Illyria.

*Sir To.* Wherefore are these things hid? wherefore have these gifts a curtain before 'em? are they like to take dust, like Mistress Mall's picture? why dost thou not go to church in a galliard and come home in a coranto? My very walk should be a jig; I would not so much as make water but in a sink-a-pace. What dost thou mean? Is it a world to hide virtues in? I did think, by the excellent constitution of thy leg, it was formed under the star of a galliard.

*Sir And.* Ay, 'tis strong, and it does indifferent well in a flame-coloured stock. Shall we set about some revels?

*Sir To.* What shall we do else? were we not born under Taurus?

*Sir And.* Taurus! That's sides and heart.

*Sir To.* No, sir; it is legs and thighs. Let me see thee caper: ha! higher: ha, ha! excellent!

#### SCENE IV. The Duke's palace.

*Enter VALENTINE, and VIOLA in man's attire.*

*Val.* If the duke continue these favours towards you, Cesario, you are like to be much advanced; he hath known you but three days, and already you are no stranger.

*Val.* You either fear his humour or my negligence, that you call in question the continuance of his love: is he inconstant, sir, in his favours?

*Val.* No, believe me.

*Val.* I thank you. Here comes the count.

*Enter DUKE, CURIO, and Attendants.*

*Duke.* Who saw Cesario, ho?

*Val.* On your attendance, my lord; here.

*Duke.* Stand you a while aloof. Cesario, Thou know'st no less but all; I have unclasp'd To thee the book even of my secret soul: Therefore, good youth, address thy gait unto her;

Be not denied access, stand at her doors, And tell them, there thy fix'd foot shall grow Till thou have audience.

*Val.* Sure, my noble lord, If she be so abandon'd to her sorrow As it is spoke, she never will admit me.

*Duke.* Be clamorous and leap all civil bounds Rather than make unprofitful return.

*Val.* Say I do speak with her, my lord, what then?

*Duke.* O, then unfold the passion of my love, Surprise her with discourse of my dear faith: It shall become thee well to act my woes; she will attend it better in thy youth Than in a nuncio's of more grave aspect.

*Val.* I think not so, my lord.

*Duke.* Fear not, believe it: For they shall yet belie thy happy years, That say thou art a man: Diana's lip Is not more smooth and rubious; thy small pipe

Is as the maiden's organ, shrill and sound, And all is semblative a woman's part.

I know thy constellation is right apt

For this affair. Some four or five attend him;  
All, if you will; for I myself am best  
When least in company. Prosper well in this,  
And thou shalt live as freely as thy lord,  
To call his fortunes thine.

*Vio.* I'll do my best  
To woo your lady: [Aside] yet, a lawful strife!  
Whoe'er I woo, myself would be his wife.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. OLIVIA'S house.

*Enter MARIA and CLOWN.*

*Mar.* Nay, either tell me where thou hast been, or I will not open my lips so wide as a bridle may enter in way of thy excuse: my lady will hang thee for thy absence.

*Clo.* Let her hang me: he that is well hanged in this world needs to fear no colours.

*Mar.* Make that good.

*Clo.* He shall see none to fear.

*Mar.* A good lenten answer: I can tell thee where that saying was born, of 'I fear no colours.'

*Clo.* Where, good Mistress Mary?

*Mar.* In the wars; and that may you be bold to say in your foolery.

*Clo.* Well, God give them wisdom that have it; and those that are fools, let them use their talents.

*Mar.* Yet you will be hazarded for being so long absent; or to be turned away, is not that as good as a hanging to you?

*Clo.* Many a good hanging prevents a bad marriage; and, for turning away, let summer bear it out.

*Mar.* You are resolute, then?

*Clo.* Not so, neither; but I am resolved on two points.

*Mar.* That if one break, the other will hold; or, if both break, your gaskins fall.

*Clo.* Apt, in good faith; very apt. Well, go thy way; if Sir Toby would leave drinking, thou wert as witty a piece of Eve's flesh as any in Illyria.

*Mar.* Peace, you rogue, no more of that. Here comes my lady: make your excuse wisely, you were best.

*Clo.* Wit, an't be thy will, put me into good fooling! Those wits, that think they have thee, do very oft prove fools; and I, that am sure I lack thee, may pass for a wise man: for what says Quinapalus? 'Better a witty fool than a foolish wit.'

*Enter Lady OLIVIA with MALVOLIO.*

God bless thee, lady!

*Ol.* Take the fool away.

*Clo.* Do you not hear, fellows? Take away the lady.

*Ol.* Go to, you're a dry fool; I'll no more of you; besides, you grow dishonest.

*Clo.* Two faults, madonna, that drink and good counsel will amend: for give the dry fool drink, then is the fool not dry; bid the dishonest man mend himself; if he mend, he is no longer dishonest; if he cannot let the butcher mend him. Any thing that's mended is but patched:

virtue that transgresses is but patched with sin; and sin that amends is but patched with virtue. If that this simple syllogism will serve, so; if it will not, what remedy? As there is no true cuckold but calamity, so beauty's a flower. The lady bade take away the fool; therefore, I say again, take her away.

*Ol.* Sir, I bade them take away you.

*Clo.* Misprision in the highest degree! Lady, cucullus non facit monachum; that's as much to say as I wear not motley in my brain. Good madonna, give me leave to prove you a fool.

*Ol.* Can you do it?

*Clo.* Dexteriously, good madonna.

*Ol.* Make your proof.

*Clo.* I must catechize you for it, madonna: good my house of virtue, answer me.

*Ol.* Well, sir, for want of other illeness, I'll bibe your proof.

*Clo.* Good madonna, why mournest thou?

*Ol.* Good fool, for my brother's death.

*Clo.* I think his soul is in hell, madonna.

*Ol.* I know his soul is in heaven, fool.

*Clo.* The more fool, madonna, to mourn for your brother's soul being in heaven. Take away the fool, gentlemen.

*Ol.* What think you of this fool, Malvolio?

*Mal.* Yes, and shall do till the pangs of death shake him: intimate, that decays the wise, doth ever make the better fool.

*Clo.* God send you, sir, a speedy infirmity, for the better increasing your folly! Sir Toby will be sworn that I am no fool; but he will not pass his word for two pence that you are no fool.

*Ol.* How say you to that, Malvolio?

*Mal.* I marvel your ladyship takes delight in such a barren rascal: I saw him put down the other day with an ordinary fool that has no more brain than a stone. Look you now, he's out of his guard already; unless you laugh and minister occasion to him, he is a fool. I protest, I take these wise men, that crow so at these set kind of fools, no better than the fools' zany.

*Ol.* You are sick of self-love, Malvolio, and taste with a distempered appetite. To be generous, gentle, and of free disposition, is to take these things for bird-bolts that you do call common-bullets: there is no slander in an allowed fool, though he do nothing but rail; nor is railing in a known discreet man, though he do nothing but reprove.

Now Mercury endue thee with leasing, for thou speakest well of fools!

*Re-enter MARIA*

*Mar.* Madam, there is at the gate a young gentleman much desires to speak with you.

*Ol.* From the Count Orsino, is it?

*Mar.* I know not, madam: 'tis a fair young man, and well attended.

*Ol.* Who of my people hold him in delay?

*Mar.* Sir Toby, madam, your kinsman.

*Ol.* Fetch him off, I pray you; he speaks nothing but madman: tie on him! [*Exit Maria.*] Go you, Malvolio: if it be a suit

from the count, I am sick, or not at home; what you will, to dismiss it. [*Exit Malvolio.*]  
Now you see, sir, how your fooling grows old, and people dislike it.

*Cla.* Thou hast spoke for us, madonna, as if thy eldest son should be a fool; whose skull Jove cram with brains! for,—here he comes,—one of thy kin has a most weak pia mater.

*Enter SIR TOBY.*

*Oli.* By mine honour, half drunk. What is he at the gate, cousin?

*Sir To.* A gentleman.

*Oli.* A gentleman! what gentleman?

*Sir To.* 'Tis a gentleman here—a plague o' these pickle herring! How now, sot!

*Cla.* Good Sir Toby!

*Oli.* Cousin, cousin, how have you come so early by this lethargy?

*Sir To.* Lechery! I defy lechery. There's one at the gate.

*Oli.* Ay, marry, what is he?

*Sir To.* Let him be the devil, an he will. I care not; give me faith, say I. Well, it's all one. [*Exit.*]

*Oli.* What's a drunken man like, fool?

*Cla.* Like a drownded man, a fool and a mad man: one draught above heat makes him fool; the second mads him; and a third drowns him.

*Oli.* Go thou and seek the crowner, and let him rit o' my cor: for he's in the third degree o' drink, he's drownded; go, look after him.

*Cla.* He is but mad yet, madonna; and the fool shall look to the madman. [*Exit.*]

*Re-enter MALVOLIO.*

*Mal.* Madam, yond young fellow swears he will speak with you. I told him you were sick; he takes on him to understand so much, and therefore comes to speak with you. I told him you were asleep; he seems to have a foreknowledge of that too, and therefore comes to speak with you. Wh it is to be said to him, lady? he's fortified against any denial.

*Oli.* Tell him he shall not speak with me.

*Mal.* Has been told so; and he says, he'll stand at your door like a sheriff's post, and be the supporter to a bench, but he'll speak with you.

*Oli.* What kind o' man is he?

*Mal.* Why, of mankind.

*Oli.* What manner of man?

*Mal.* Of very ill manner; he'll speak with you, will you or no.

*Oli.* Of what personage and years is he?

*Mal.* Not yet old enough for a man, nor young enough for a boy; as a squash is before he's penced, or a coddling when 'tis almost an apple: 'tis with him in standing water, between boy and man. He is very well-favoured and he speaks very shrewishly; one would think his mother's milk were scarce out of him.

*Oli.* Let him approach: call in my gentlewoman.

*Mal.* Gentlewoman, my lady calls. [*Exit.*]

*Re-enter MARIA.*

*Oli.* Give me my veil: come, throw it o'er my face.  
We'll once more hear Orsino's embassy.

*Enter VIOLA, and Attendants.*

*Vio.* The honourable lady of the house, which is she?

*Oli.* Speak to me; I shall answer for her. Your will?

*Vio.* Most radiant, exquisite and unmatchable beauty,—I pray you, tell me if this be the lady of the house, for I never saw her: I would be loath to cast away any speech, for besides that it is excellently well penned, I have taken great pains to con it. Good beauties, let me sustain no scorn; I am very comptible, even to the least sinister usage.

*Oli.* Whence came you, sir?

*Vio.* I can say little more than I have studied, and that question's out of my part. Good gentle one, give me modest assurance if you be the lady of the house, that I may proceed in my speech.

*Oli.* Are you a comedian?

*Vio.* No, my profound heart; and yet, by the very fangs of malice I swear, I am not that I play. Are you the lady of the house?

*Oli.* If I do not usurp myself, I am.

*Vio.* Most certain, if you are she, you do usurp yourself; for what is yours to bestow is not yours to reserve. But this is from my commission: I will on with my speech in your praise, and then show you the heart of my message.

*Oli.* Come to what is important in't: I forgive you the praise.

*Vio.* Alas, I took great pains to study it, and 'tis poetical.

*Oli.* It is the more like to be feigned: I pray you, keep it in. I heard you were saucy at my gates, and allowed your approach rather to wonder at you than to hear you. If you be not mad, be gone; if you have reason, be brief: 'tis not that time of moon with me to make one in so skipping a dialogue.

*Mar.* Will you hoist sail, sir! here lies your way.

*Vio.* No, good swabber; I am to hull here a little longer. Some mollification for your giant, sweet lady. Tell me your mind: I am a messenger.

*Oli.* Sure, you have some hideous matter to deliver, when the courtesy of it is so fearful. Speak your office.

*Vio.* It alone concerns your ear. I bring no overture of war, no taxation of homage: I hold the olive in my hand; my words are as full of peace as matter.

*Oli.* Yet you began rudely. What are you? what would you?

*Vio.* The rudeness that hath appeared in me have I learned from my entertainment. What I am, and what I would, are as secret as maiden-head; to your ears, divinity, to any other, profanation.

*Ol.* Give us the place alone; we will hear this divinity. [*Exeunt Maria and Attendants.*]  
Now, sir, what is your text?

*Vio.* Most sweet lady,—

*Ol.* A comfortable doctrine, and much may be said of it. Where lies your text?

*Vio.* In Orsino's bosom.

*Ol.* In his bosom! In what chapter of his bosom?

*Vio.* To answer by the method, in the first of his heart.

*Ol.* O, I have read it: it is heresy. Have you no more to say?

*Vio.* Good madam, let me see your face.

*Ol.* Have you any commission from your lord to negotiate with my face? You are now out of your text: but we will draw the curtain and show you the picture. Look you, sir, such a one I was this present: is't not well done?

[*Uncovering.*]

*Vio.* Excellently done, if God did all.

*Ol.* 'Tis in grain, sir: 'twill endure wind and weather.

*Vio.* 'Tis beauty truly blent, whose red and white

Nature's own sweet and cunning hand laid on:  
Lady, you are the cruellest she alive,  
If you will lead these graces to the grave  
And leave the world no copy.

*Ol.* O, sir, I will not be so hard-hearted: I will give out divers schedules of my beauty: it shall be inventoried, and every particle and utensil labelled to my will: as, item, two lips, indifferent red; item, two gray eyes, with lids to them; item, one neck, one chin, and so forth. Were you sent hither to praise me?

*Vio.* I see you what you are, you are too proud;

But, if you were the devil, you are fair.

My lord and master loves you: O, such love Could be but recompensed, though you were crown'd

The nonpareil of beauty!

*Ol.* How does he love me?

*Vio.* With adorations, fertile tears,  
With groans that thunder love, with sighs of fire.

*Ol.* Your lord does know my mind; I cannot love him:

Yet I suppose him virtuous, know him noble,  
Of great estate, of fresh and stainless youth;  
In voices well divulged, free, learned and valiant;  
And in dimension and the shape of nature;  
A gracious person: but yet I cannot love him;  
He might have took his answer long ago.

*Vio.* If I did love you in my master's flame,  
With such a suffering, such a deadly life,  
In your denial I would find no sense;  
I would not understand it.

*Ol.* Why, what would you?

*Vio.* Make me a willow cabin at your gate,  
And call upon my soul within the house;

Write loyal cantons of contemned love  
And sing them loud even in the dead of night;

Hallow your name to the reverberate hills  
And make the babbling gossip of the air

Cry out 'Olivia!' O, you should not rest  
Between the elements of air and earth,

But you should pity me!

*Ol.* You might do much.

What is your parentage?

*Vio.* Above my fortunes, yet my state is well:

I am a gentleman.

*Ol.* Get you to your lord;

I cannot love him: let him send no more;

Unless, perchance, you come to me again,

To tell me how he takes it. Fare you well;

I thank you for your pains: spend this for me.

*Vio.* I am no feed post, lady; keep your pains.

My master, not myself, lacks recompense.  
Love make his heart of that that you shall love,

And let your fervour, like my master's, be  
Placed in contempt! Farewell, fair cruelty.

[*Exit.*]

*Ol.* 'What is your parentage?'

'Above my fortunes, yet my state is well:

I am a gentleman.' 'I'll be sworn thou art: 355

Thy tongue, thy face, thy limbs, actions and spirit,

Do give thee five-fold blazon: not too fast, soft, soft!

Unless the master were the man. How now!

Even so quickly may one catch the plague!

My thinks I feel this youth's perfections

With an invisible and subtle stealth

To creep in at mine eyes. Well, let it be.

What he, Malvolio?

### Re-enter MALVOLIO.

*Mal.* Here, madam, at your service.

*Ol.* Run after that same peevish messenger,  
The county's man: he left this ring behind him.

Would I were yet: tell him I'll none of it.

He shall not flatter with his lord,

Nor hold him up with hope: I am not for him;

If that the youth will come this way to-morrow,

I'll give him reasons for't. Hie thee, Malvolio.

*Mal.* Madam, I will. [*Exit.*]

*Ol.* I do I know not what, and fear to find

More evil too great a flattery for my mind

Fears now thy face: ourselves we do not owe;

What a decreed must be, and be thus so. [*Exit.*]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. The sea-coast.

*Enter ANTONIO and SEBASTIAN.*

*A.* Will you stay no longer? nor will you  
at I go with you?

*S.* By your patience, no. My stars shine

right perpendicularly on my face:  
I shall crave of you your leave that I may bear

my evils along: it were a bad recompense for  
our love, to lack any of them on you.

*A.* Let me yet know of you whether you  
are bound.

*S.* No, no, sir: my determinate voyage  
is mere extravagancy. But I perceive in you so

excellent a touch of modesty, that you will not  
extort from me what I am willing to keep in;

therefore it charges me in manners the rather to  
express myself. You must know of me then,



Antonio, my name is Sebastian, which I called Roderigo. My father was that Sebastian of Messina, whom I know you have heard of. He left behind him myself and a sister, both born in an hour: if the heavens had been pleased, would we had so ended! but you, sir, altered that; for some hour before you took me from the breach of the sea was my sister drowned.

*Ant.* Alas the day!

*Seb.* A lady, sir, though it was said she much resembled me, was yet of many accounted beautiful: but, though I could not with such estimable wonder overfar believe that, yet thus far I will boldly publish her; she bore a mind that any could not but call fair. She is drowned already, sir, with salt water, though I seem to drown her remembrance again with more.

*Ant.* Pardon me, sir, your bad entertainment.

*Seb.* O good Antonio, forgive me your trouble.

*Ant.* If you will not murder me for my love, let me be your servant.

*Seb.* If you will not undo what you have done, that is, kill him whom you have recovered, desire it not. Fare ye well at once: my bosom is full of kindness, and I am yet so near the manners of my mother, that upon the least occasion more mine eyes will tell tales of me. I am bound to the Count Orsino's court: farewell. *[Exit.]*

*Ant.* The gentleness of all the gods go with thee!

I have many enemies in Orsino's court, Else would I very shortly see thee there.

But, come what may, I do adore thee so, That danger shall seem sport, and I will go. *[Exit.]*

## SCENE II. A street.

*Enter Viola, MALVOLVO following.*

*Mal.* Were not you even now with the Countess Olivia?

*Viola.* Even now, sir; on a moderate pace I have since arrived but hither.

*Mal.* She returns this ring to you, sir; you might have saved me my pains, to have taken it away yourself. She adds, moreover, that you should put your lord into a desperate assumption she will none of him; and one thing more, that you be never so hardy to come again in his affairs, unless it be to report your lord's taking of his. Receive it so.

*Viola.* She took the ring of me: I'll none of it.

*Mal.* Come, sir, you previously threw it to her; and her will is, it should be so returned: if be worth stooping for, there it lies in your hand; if not, be it his that finds it. *[Exit.]*

I left no ring with her: what means this lady?

Fortune forbid my outside have not charmed her!

She made good view of me; indeed, so much, That sure methought her eyes had lost her tongue.

For she did speak in starts distractedly. she loves me, sure; the cunning of her passion

Invites me in this churlish messenger.

None of my lord's ring! why, he sent her none.

I am the man: if it be so, as 'tis,

Poor lady, she were better love a dream.

Disguise, I see, thou art a wickedness,

Wherein the pregnant enemy does much.

How easy is it for the proper-false

In women's waken hearts to set their forms!

Alas, our frailty is the cause, not we!

For such as we are made of, such we be.

How will this fadge! my master loves her

dearly;

And I, poor monster, fond as much on him;

And she, mistaken, seems to dote on me.

What will become of this? As I am man,

My state is desperate for my master's love;

As I am woman,—now alas the day!—

What thriftless sighs shall poor Olivia breathe!

O time! thou must untangle this, not I;

It is too hard a knot for me to untie! *[Exit.]*

## SCENE III. OLIVIA'S house.

*Enter SIR TOBY AND SIR ANDREW.*

*Sir To.* Approach, Sir Andrew: not to be a-bed after midnight is to be up betimes; and 'diluculo surgere,' thou know'st.—

*Sir And.* Nay, by my troth, I know not; but I know, to be up late is to be up late.

*Sir To.* A false conclusion: I hate it as an untitled can. To be up after midnight and to go to bed then, is early; so that to go to bed after midnight is to go to bed betimes. Does not our life consist of the four elements?

*Sir And.* Faith, so they say; but I think it rather consists of eating and drinking.

*Sir To.* Thou'rt a scholar; let us therefore eat and drink. Marian, I say: a stoop of wine!

*Enter Clown.*

*Sir And.* Here comes the fool, I faith.

*Clown.* How now, my hearts! did you never see the picture of 'we three'?

*Sir To.* Welcome, ass. Now let's have a catch.

*Sir And.* By my troth, the fool has an excellent breast. I had rather than forty shillings I had such a leg, and so sweet a breath to sing, as the fool has. In sooth, thou wast in very gracious fooling last night, when thou spokest of Picrogramitus, of the Vapians passing the equinoctial of Queulus: 'twas very good, I faith. I sent thee sixpence for thy leman: hadst it!

*Clown.* I did impetuous thy gratillity; for Malvolvo's nose is no whinstock; my lady has a white hand, and the Myrmidons are no bottle-ale houses.

*Sir And.* Excellent! why, this is the best fooling, when all is done. Now, a song.

*Sir To.* Come on; there is sixpence for you: let's have a song.

*Sir And.* There's a testril of me too; if one knight give a—

*Clown.* Would you have a love-song, or a song of good life!

*Sir To.* A love-song, a love-song.

*Sir And.* Ay, ay: I care not for good life.

*Clo.* [Sings]

O mistress mine, where are you roaming?  
O, stay and hear; your true love's coming,  
That can sing both high and low:

Trip no further, pretty sweetening;  
Journeys end in lovers meeting,  
Every wise man's son doth know.

*Sir And.* Excellent good, I faith.

*Sir To.* Good, good.

*Clo.* [Sings]

What is love? 'tis not hereafter;  
Present mirth hath present laughter;

What's to come is still unsure:

In delay there lies no plenty;

Then come kiss me, sweet and twenty,

Youth's a stuff will not endure.

*Sir And.* A mellifluous voice, as I am true knight.

*Sir To.* A contagious breath.

*Sir And.* Very sweet and contagious, I faith.

*Sir To.* To hear by the nose, it is dulcet in contagion. But shall we make the welkin dance indeed? shall we rouse the night owl in a catch that will draw three souls out of one weaver? shall we do that?

*Sir And.* An you love me, let's do't: I am dog at a catch.

*Clo.* By'r lady, sir, and some dogs will catch well.

*Sir And.* Most certain. Let our catch be, 'Thou knave.'

*Clo.* 'Hold thy peace, thou knave,' knight? I shall be constrained in't to call thee knave, knight.

*Sir And.* 'Tis not the first time I have constrained one to call me knave. Begin, fool: it begins 'Hold thy peace.'

*Clo.* I shall never begin if I hold my peace.

*Sir And.* Good, I faith. Come, begin.

[Catch sung.]

Enter MARIA.

*Mar.* What a caterwauling do you keep here! If my lady have not called up her steward Malvolio and bid him turn you out of doors, never trust me.

*Sir To.* My lady's a Cataian, we are politicians, Malvolio's a Pega-Rumsey, and 'Three merry men be we.' Am not I consanguine am I not of her blood? Tillyvally! 'Lady' [Sings] 'There dwelt a man in Babylon, Lady, lady!'

*Clo.* Beshrew me, the knight's in admirable fooling.

*Sir And.* Ay, he does well enough if he be disposed, and so do I too: he does it with a better grace, but I do it more natural.

*Sir To.* [Sings] 'O, the twelfth day of December,—'

*Mar.* For the love o' God, peace!

Enter MALVOLIO.

*Mal.* My masters, are you mad? or what are you? Have you no wit, manners, nor honesty, but to gabble like tinkers at this time of night? Do ye make an alehouse of my lady's house, that ye squeak out your coziers' catches without

any mitigation or remorse of voice? Is there no respect of place, persons, nor time in you?

*Sir To.* We did keep time, sir, in our catches. Sneek up!

*Mal.* Sir Toby, I must be round with you. My lady bade me tell you, that, though she harbours you as her kinsman, she's nothing allied to your disorders. If you can separate yourself and your misdeemeanours, you are welcome to the house; if not, an it would please you to take leave of her, she is very willing to bid you farewell.

*Sir To.* 'Farewell, dear heart, since I must needs be gone.'

*Mar.* Nay, good Sir Toby.

*Clo.* 'His eyes do show his days are almost done.'

*Mal.* Is't even so?

*Sir To.* 'But I will never die.'

*Clo.* Sir Toby, there you lie.

*Mal.* This is much credit to you.

*Sir To.* 'Shall I bid him go?'

*Clo.* 'What an if you do?'

*Sir To.* 'Shall I bid him go, and spare not?'

*Clo.* 'O no, no, no, no, you dare not.'

*Sir To.* Out o' tune, sir: ye lie. Art any more than a steward? Dost thou think, because thou art virtuous, there shall be no more cakes and ale?

*Clo.* Yes, by Saint Anne, and ginger shall be hot i' the mouth too.

*Sir To.* Thou'rt the right. Go, sir, rub your chain with rum.

*Mal.* Mistress Mary, if you prize my lady's favour at any thing more than contempt, you would not give means for this uncivil rule: she shall know of it, by this hand.

*Mar.* Go shake your ears.

*Sir And.* 'Twere as good a deed as to drink when a man's a-hungry, to challenge him the nobel, and then to break promise with him and make a fool of him.

*Sir To.* Do't, knight: I'll write thee a sonnet, I'll deliver thy indignation to him by word of mouth.

*Mar.* Sweet Sir Toby, be patient for night: since the youth of the count's was to wed with my lady, she is much out of quiet. For Monsieur Malvolio, let me alone with him: if I do not gull him into a nayword, and make him a common recreation, do not think I have wit enough to lie straight in my bed: I know I can do it.

*Sir To.* Possess us, possess us; tell us something of him.

*Mar.* Marry, sir, sometimes he is a kind of puritan.

*Sir And.* O, if I thought that, I'd beat him like a dog!

*Sir To.* What, for being a puritan? thy exquisite reason, dear knight?

*Sir And.* I have no exquisite reason for't, but I have reason good enough.

*Mar.* The devil a puritan that he is, or any thing constantly, but a time-pleaser; an affected ass, that cons state without book and utters it by great swarths: the best persuaded of himself, so crammed, as he thinks, with ex-

cellencies, that it is his grounds of faith that all that look on him love him; and on that vice in him will my revenge find notable cause to work.

*Sir To.* What wilt thou do?

*Mar.* I will drop in his way some obscure epistles of love; wherein, by the colour of his beard, the shape of his leg, the manner of his gait, the expreasure of his eye, forehead, and complexion, he shall find himself most feelingly personated. I can write very like my lady your niece: on a forgotten matter we can hardly make distinction of our hands.

*Sir To.* Excellent! I smell a device.

*Sir And.* I have 't in my nose too.

*Sir To.* He shall think, by the letters that thou wilt drop, that they come from my niece, and that she's in love with him.

*Mar.* My purpose is, indeed, a horse of that colour.

*Sir And.* And your horse now would make him an ass.

*Mar.* Ass, I doubt not.

*Sir And.* O, 'twill be admirable!

*Mar.* Sport royal, I warrant you: I know my physic will work with him. I will plant you two, and let the fool make a thirl, where he shall find the letter: observe his construction of it. For this night, to bed, and dream on the event. Farewell. [Exit.

*Sir To.* Good night, Penthiesilea.

*Sir And.* Before me, she's a good wench.

*Sir To.* She's a beagle, true-bred, and one that adores me: what o' that!

*Sir And.* I was adored once too.

*Sir To.* Let's to bed, knight. Thou halst send for more money.

*Sir And.* If I cannot recover your niece, I am a fool way out.

*Sir To.* Send for money, knight: if thou art her not 't the end, call me out.

*Sir And.* If I do not, never trust me, take it how you will.

*Sir To.* Come, come, I'll go burn some sack: 'tis too late to go to bed now: come, knight: me, knight. [Exit.

SCENE IV. *The DUKE's palace.*

*Enter DUKE, VIOLA, CURIQ, and others.*

*Duke.* Give me some music. Now, good-morrow, friend.

*Viola.* Now, good Cesario, but that piece of song, that old and antique song we heard last night: Methought it did relieve my passion much, More than light airs and recollected terms of these most brisk and giddy-paced times: come, but one verse.

*Curiq.* He is not here, so please your lordship, he should sing it.

*Duke.* Who was it?

*Curiq.* Feste, the jester, my lord: a fool that my lady Olivia's father took much delight in. He is about the house.

*Duke.* Seek him out, and play the tune the while. [Exit Curiq. Music plays.

*Viola.* Come hither, boy: if ever thou shalt love, In the sweet pains of it remember me;

For such as I am all true lovers are,

Unstaid and skittish in all motions else, Save in the constant image of the creature That is beloved. How dost thou like this tune!

*Viola.* It gives a very echo to the seat Where Love is throned.

*Duke.* Thou dost speak masterly: My life upon 't, young though thou art, thine eye

Hath stay'd upon some favour that it loves: Hath it not, boy?

*Viola.* A little, by your favour.

*Duke.* What kind of woman is 't?

*Viola.* Of your complexion.

*Duke.* She is not worth thee, then. What years, 't faith?

*Viola.* About your years, my lord.

*Duke.* Too old, by heaven: let still the woman take

An elder than herself: so wears she to him, So sways she level in her husband's heart:

For, boy, however we do praise ourselves, Our fancies are more giddy and unfirm, More longing, wavering, sooner lost and worn, Than women's are.

*Viola.* I think it well, my lord.

*Duke.* Then let thy love be younger than thyself,

Or thy affection cannot hold the bent; For women are as roses, whose fair flower

Being once display'd, doth fall that very hour. 40

*Viola.* And so they are: alas, that they are so; To die, even when they think to perfection grow!

*Re-enter CURIQ and CLOWN.*

*Duke.* O, fellow, come, the song we had last night.

*Curiq.* Mark it, Cesario, it is old and plain; The spinsters and the knitters in the sun And the free maids that weave their thread with bones

Do use to chant it: it is silly sooth, And dailies with the innocence of love, Like the old age.

*Curiq.* Are you ready, sir? 50

*Duke.* Ay; prithee, sing. [Music.

SONG.

*Curiq.* Come away, come away, death, And in sad cypress let me be laid;

Fly away, fly away, breath;

I am slain by a fair cruel maid.

My shroud of white, stuck all with yew,

O, prepare it!

My part of death, no one so true

Did share it.

Not a flower, not a flower sweet, 60

On my black coffin let there be strown;

Not a friend, not a friend greet

My poor corpse, where my bones shall

be thrown:

A thousand thousand sighs to save,

Lay me, O, where

Sad true lover never find my grave,

To weep there!

*Duke.* There's for thy pains.

*Curiq.* No pains, sir; I take pleasure in singing, sir.

*Duke.* I'll pay thy pleasure then.

*Clo.* Truly, sir, and pleasure will be paid, one time or another.

*Duke.* Give me now leave to leave thee.

*Clo.* Now, the melancholy god protect thee; and the tailor make thy doublet of changeable taffeta, for thy mind is a very opal. I would have men of such constancy put to sea, that their business might be every thing and their intent every where; for that's it that always makes a good voyage of nothing. Farewell. *[Exit.]*

*Duke.* Let all the rest give place.

*[Curio and Attendants retire.]*

Once more, Cesario,

Get thee to yond same sovereign cruelty:  
Tell her, my love, more noble than the world,  
Prizes not quantity of dirty lands;  
The parts that fortune hath bestow'd upon her,  
Tell her, I hold as giddily as fortune;  
But 'tis that miracle and queen of gems  
That nature pranks her in attracts my soul.

*Vio.* But if she cannot love you, sir? 90

*Duke.* I cannot be so answer'd.

*Vio.*

South, but you must.

Say that some lady, as perhaps there is,  
Hath for your love as great a pang of heart  
As you have for Olivia: you cannot love her;  
You tell her so; must she not then be answer'd?

*Duke.* There is no woman's sides  
Can bide the beating of so strong a passion  
As love doth give my heart: no woman's heart  
So big, to hold so much; they lack retention.  
Alas, their love may be call'd appetite,  
No motion of the liver, but the palate;  
That suffer surfeit, cloyment and revolt;  
But mine is all as hungry as the sea,  
And can digest as much: make no compare  
Between that love a woman can bear me  
And that I owe Olivia.

*Vio.* Ay, but I know—

*Duke.* What dost thou know?

*Vio.* Too well what love women to men may owe:

In faith, they are as true of heart as we.  
My father had a daughter loved a man, 110  
As it might be, perhaps, were I a woman,  
I should your lordship.

*Duke.* And what's her history?

*Vio.* A blank, my lord. She never told her love,

But let concealment, like a worm i' the bud,  
Feed on her damask cheek: she pined in thought,

And with a green and yellow melancholy  
She sat like patience on a monument,  
Smiling at grief. Was not this love indeed?  
We men may say more, swear more: but indeed

Our shows are more than will; for still we

Much in our vows, but little in our love.

*Duke.* But died thy sister of her love, my boy?

*Vio.* I am all the daughters of my father's house,

And all the brothers too: and yet I know not.  
Sir, shall I to this lady?

*Duke.*

Ay, that's the theme.

To her in haste; give her this jewel; say,  
My love can give no place, bide no deny.

*[Exeunt.]*

#### SCENE V. OLIVIA'S garden.

*Enter SIR TOBY, SIR ANDREW, and FABIAN.*

*Sir To.* Come thy ways, Signior Fabian.

*Fab.* Nay, I'll come: if I lose a scruple of this sport, let me be boiled to death with merriment.

*Sir To.* Wouldst thou not be glad to have the nigardly rascally sheep-biter come by some notable shame?

*Fab.* I would exult, man: you know, he brought me out o' favour with my lady about a bear-baiting here.

*Sir To.* To anger him we'll have the bear again; and we will fool him black and blue: shall we not, Sir Andrew?

*Sir And.* An we do not, it is pity of our lives.

*Sir To.* Here comes the little villain.

*Enter MARIA.*

How now, my metal of India!

*Mar.* Get ye all three into the box-tree Malvolio's coming down this walk: he has been yonder i' the sun practising behaviour to his own shadow this half hour: observe him, for the love of mockery: for I know this letter will make a contemplative idiot of him. Close, in the name of je tenez! Lie thou there *[throws down letter]*; for here comes the trout that must be caught with tickling. *[Exit.]*

*Enter MALVOLIO.*

*Mal.* 'Tis but fortune; all is fortune. Maria once told me she did affect me: and I have heard herself come thus near, that, should she fancy, it should be one of my complexion. Besides, she uses me with a more exalted respect than any one else that follows her. What should I think on't?

*Sir To.* Here's an overweening rogue!

*Fab.* O, peace! Contemplation makes a rare turkey-cock of him: how he jets under his advanced plumes!

*Sir And.* Slight, I could so beat the rogue!

*Sir To.* Peace, I say.

*Mal.* To be count Malvolio!

*Sir To.* Ah, rogue!

*Sir And.* Pistol him, pistol him.

*Sir To.* Peace, peace!

*Mal.* There is example for't: the lady of the Strachy married the yeoman of the wardrobe.

*Sir And.* Fie on him, Jezabel!

*Fab.* O, peace! now he's deeply in: look how imagination blows him.

*Mal.* Having been three months married to her, sitting in my state,—

*Sir To.* O, for a stone-bow, to hit him in the eye!

*Mal.* Calling my officers about me, in my branched velvet gown; having come from a day-bed, where I have left Olivia sleeping,—

*Sir To.* Fire and brimstone!

*Fab.* O, peace, peace!

*Mal.* And then to have the humour of state; and after a demure travel of regard, telling them I know my place as I would they should do theirs, to ask for my kinsman Toby,—

*Sir To.* Bolts and shackles!

*Fab.* O peace, peace, peace! now, now.

*Mal.* Seven of my people, with an obedient start, make out for him: I frown the while; and perchance wind up my watch, or play with my—some rich jewel. Toby approaches; court-tesies there to me,—

*Sir To.* Shall this fellow live?

*Fab.* Though our silence be drawn from us with ears, yet peace.

*Mal.* I extend my hand to him thus, quenching my familiar smile with an austere regard of control,—

*Sir To.* And does not Toby take you a blow on the lips then?

*Mal.* Saying, 'Cousin Toby, my fortunes having cast me on your niece give me this pre-  
[negative of speech,—

*Sir To.* What, what?

*Mal.* 'You must amend your drunkenness.'

*Sir To.* Out, scab!

*Fab.* Nay, patience, or we break the sinews of our plot.

*Mal.* 'Besides, you waste the treasure of your time with a foolish knight,—

*Sir And.* That's me, I warrant you.

*Mal.* 'One Sir Andrew,—

*Sir And.* I knew twas I; for many do call me fool.

*Mal.* What employment have we here?

*Fab.* Now is the woodcock near the gin  
[Taking up the letter.

*Sir To.* O, peace! and the spirit of humours intimate reading aloud to him!

*Mal.* By my life, this is my lady's hand; these be her very C's, her U's and her T's; and thus makes she her great P's. It is, in contempt of question, her hand.

*Sir And.* Her C's, her U's and her T's: why that?

*Mal.* [Reads] 'To the unknown beloved, this, and my good wishes:—her very phrases! By your leave, wax. Soft! and the impressure her Lucrece, with which she uses to seal: 'tis my lady. To whom should this be?

*Fab.* This wins him, liver and all.

*Mal.* [Reads]

Jove knows I love:

But who?

Lips, do not move;

No man must know.

'No man must know.' What follows? the numbers altered! 'No man must know:' if this should be thee, Malvolio!

*Sir To.* Marry, hang thee, brock!

*Mal.* [Reads]

I may command where I adore;

But silence, like a Lucrece knife,

With bloodless stroke my heart doth gore:

M, O, A, I, doth sway my life.

*Fab.* A fustian riddle!

*Sir To.* Excellent wench, say I.

*Mal.* 'M, O, A, I, doth sway my life.'

Nay, but first, let me see, let me see, let me see.

*Fab.* What dish o' poison has she dressed him!

*Sir To.* And with what wing the staniel checks at it!

*Mal.* 'I may command where I adore.' Why, she may command me: I serve her; she is my lady. Why, this is evident to any formal capacity; there is no obstruction in this: and the end,—what should that alphabetical position portend? If I could make that resemble something in me,—Softly! M, O, A, I,—

*Sir To.* O, ay, make up that: he is now at a cold scent.

*Fab.* Now he will cry upon't for all this, though it be as rank as a fox.

*Mal.* M,—Malvolio; M,—why, that begins my name.

*Fab.* Did not I say he would work it out? the cur is excellent at faults.

*Mal.* M,—but then there is no consonancy in the sequel; that suffers under probation: A should follow, but O does.

*Fab.* And O shall end, I hope.

*Sir To.* Ay, or I'll cudgel him, and make him cry O!

*Mal.* And then I comes behind.

*Fab.* Ay, an you had any eye behind you you might see more detraction at your heels than fortunes before you.

*Mal.* M, O, A, I; this simulation is not as the former: and yet, to crush this a little, it would bow to me, for every one of these letters are in my name. Soft! here follows prose.

[Reads] 'If this fall into thy hand, resolve. In my stars I am above thee; but be not afraid of greatness: some are born great, some achieve greatness and some have greatness thrust upon em. Thy Fates open their hands; let thy blood and spirit embrace them; and, to inure thyself to what thou art like to be, cast thy humble slough and appear fresh. Be opposite with a kinsman, surly with servants; let thy tongue tang arguments of state; put thyself into the trick of singularity: she thus advises thee that sighs for thee. Remember who commended thy yellow stockings, and wished to see thee ever cross-gartered: I say, remember. Go to, thou art made, if thou desirest to be so; if not, let me see thee a steward still, the fellow of servants, and not worthy to touch Fortune's fingers. Farewell. She that would alter services with thee,

THE FORTUNATE-UNHAPPY.'

Daylight and champagne discovers not more: this is open. I will be proud, I will read politic authors, I will baffle Sir Toby, I will wash off gross acquaintance, I will be point-devise the very man. I do not now fool myself, to let imagination jade me; for every reason excites to this, that my lady loves me. She did commend my yellow stockings of late, she did praise my leg being cross-gartered; and in this she manifests herself to my love, and with a kind of injunction drives me to these habits of her liking. I thank my stars I am happy. I will be strange, stout, in yellow stockings, and cross-gartered, even with the swiftness of putting on. Jove and

my eyes be gashed! Here is the postscript.  
[Reads.] I cannot not choose but know who I  
am. I am maintained my love, let it appear  
in the morning; thy smiles become thee well;  
thou art my presence still smile, dear my  
own.

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

How can I thank thee: I will smile; I will do  
what thou shalt bid me that will have me. [Exit.]

Ola. I would, therefore, my sister had her  
no name, sir.

Vio. Why, man?

Ola. Why, sir, her name's a yond; and a  
daily with that word might make my sister  
wanton. But indeed words are very mean  
since bonds disgrace them.

Vio. Thy reason, man?

Ola. Troth, sir, I can yield you none without  
words; and words are grown so false, I am loath  
to prove reason with them.

Vio. I warrant thou art a merry fellow and  
carest for nothing.

Ola. Not so, sir, I do care for something; but  
in my conscience, sir, I do not care for you: it  
that be to care for nothing, sir, I would it would  
make you invisible.

Vio. Art not thou the Lady Olivia's fool?

Ola. No, indeed, sir; the Lady Olivia has no  
fool: she will keep no fool, sir, till she be mar-  
ried; and fools are as like husbands as pickers  
are to herrings; the husband's the bigger: I am  
indeed not her fool, but her corrupter of work.

Vio. I saw thee late at the Count Orsino's.

Ola. Foolery, sir, does walk about the orb  
like the sun, it shines every where. I would be  
sorry, sir, but the fool should be as oft with your  
master as with my mistress: I think I saw your  
wisdom there.

Vio. Nay, an thou pass upon me, I'll be none  
with thee. Hold, there's expenses for thee.

Ola. Now Jove, in his next commodity of  
hair, send thee a beard!

Vio. By my troth, I'll tell thee, I am almost  
sick for one; [Aside] though I would not have  
it grow on my chin. Is thy lady within?

Ola. Would not a pair of these have bred,  
sir?

Vio. Yes, being kept together and put to  
use.

Ola. I would play Lord Pandarus of Phrygia,  
sir, to bring a Cressida to this Troilus.

Vio. I understand you, sir; 'tis well begged.

Ola. The matter, I hope, is not great, sir,  
begging but a beggar: Cressida was a beggar  
My lady is within, sir, I will contrive to turn  
whence you come; who you are and what you  
would are out of my walkin, I might say, 'de-  
ment,' but the word is over-worn. [Exit.]

Vio. This fellow is wise enough to play the  
fool.

And to do that well craves a kind of wit:  
He must observe their mood as whom he jests,  
The quality of persons, and the time.  
And, like the haggard, check at every feather  
That comes before his eye. This is a practice  
As full of labour as a wife's must be!  
For folly that he wisely shows is fit;  
But wise men, folly-hair'd, quite miss it.

Enter Sir Toby and Sir Andrew.

Sir To. Have you, gentlemen?

Vio. And you, sir.

Sir And. How you come, gentlemen.

Vio. In company, sir.

Sir And. I hope, sir, you are not a fool.

Sir To. Will you, gentlemen, be honest?

less is dangerous you should state, if your trade  
is to last.

Vio. I am bound to your niece, sir; I mean,  
he is the last of my voyage.

Sir To. These your legs, sir; put them to  
motion.

Vio. My legs do better understand me, sir,  
than I understand what you mean by bidding  
me tread my legs.

Sir To. I mean, to go, sir, to enter.

Vio. I will answer you with gait and entrance.  
But we are prevented.

Enter OLIVIA and MARIA.

Most excellent accomplished lady, the heavens  
are odours on you!

Sir And. That youth's a rare courtier: 'Rain  
odours'; well.

Vio. My matter hath no voice, lady, but to  
your own most pregnant and vouchsafed ear.

Sir And. 'Odours', 'pregnant' and 'vouch-  
safed': I'll get 'em all three all ready.

Ol. Let the garden door be shut, and leave me  
to my hearing. [Exit Sir Toby, Sir And.  
and Maria.] Give me your hand, sir.

Vio. My duty, madam, and most humble  
service.

Ol. What is your name?

Vio. Cesario is your servant's name, fair  
princess.

Ol. My servant, sir! 'Twas never merry  
world

Since lowly feigning was call'd compliment:

You're servant to the Count Orsino, youth.

Vio. And he is yours, and his must needs be  
yours:

Your servant's servant is your servant, madam.

Ol. For him, I think not on him: for his  
thoughts,

Would they were blanks, rather than fill'd with  
me!

Vio. Madam, I come to what your gentle  
thoughts

On his behalf.

Ol. O, by your leave, I pray you,  
ask you never speak again of him:

I would you undertake another suit,  
and make him your to solicit that  
an answer from the sphere.

Vio. Dear lady—

Ol. Give me leave, beseech you, I did send,  
for the last entertainment you did have,

ring in place of you; as did I abuse  
your name, my servant and, I fear me, you:

For your hand construction must I sit,  
for that on you, in a shameful cunning,  
which you know none of yours: what might  
you think?

For you did not make honour at the stake, nor  
did I believe it with all the unnumbered thoughts  
at my own heart and think? To one of your  
necessity

rough is chosen: a common, not a honour,  
which my heart, for, let me hear you speak.

Vio. I pray you.

Ol. I think it a shame to love.

Vio. I will not love you, madam, unless you  
have very good reason for it.

Ol. Why, then, shall I be true to make  
again.

O world, how art thou abused to be pitied!  
If one should be a year, how much the better  
To fall before the sun than the wolf!

[Clock strikes.]

The clock upbraid me with the waste of time.  
Be not afraid, good youth, I will not leave you:

And yet, when wit and youth is come to harvest,  
Your wife is like to reap a proper man:

There lies your way, due west.

Vio. Then westward ho! Grace and good  
disposition

Attend your ladyship!

You'll nothing, madam, to my loss by me?

Ol. Stay:

I wish to tell me what thou think'st of me, and  
Vio. That you do think you are not what  
you are.

Ol. If I think so, I think the same of you.

Vio. Then think you right: I am not what  
I am.

Ol. I would you were as I would hate  
you be!

Vio. Would it be better, madam, than I am?  
I wish it might, for now I am your fool.

Ol. O, what a deal of scorn looks beautiful  
In the contempt and anger of his lip!

A murderous guilt shows not itself more pure  
Than love that would not seem hid: love's night is  
noon.

Cesario, by the roses of the spring,  
By maidenhood, honour, truth and every thing,  
I love thee so, that, manage all thy powers,  
Nor wit nor reason can my passion hide.

Do not exert thy powers from this channel,  
For that I woo, thou therefore hast no power;  
But rather reason thus with reason's slave,  
Love's night is good, but given amongst is  
better.

Vio. By innocence I swear, and by my  
youth,

I have one heart, one bosom and one truth,  
And that no woman has; nor never shall  
Shall mistress be of it, save I alone.

And so adieu, good madam: never meet  
Will I my master's tears to you display.

Ol. I do come again; for thou shalt see me  
more.

That heart, which now abhors, to thee shall now  
be true.

SCENE II. ORSINO'S COURT.

Enter Sir Toby, Sir Andrew, and Maria.

Sir And. No, faith, I'll not leave the  
court.

Sir To. Why, come, dear brother, let's  
go.

Sir And. You must needs yield your  
service to the Countess.

Sir And. Many, I fear, your sister, for  
she is the Countess's.

Sir To. And she is the Countess's.

Sir And. And she is the Countess's.

Sir To. And she is the Countess's.

*Sir To.* Think, will you think on me o' me!

*Ant.* I will prove it legitimate, sir, upon the count of valour and reason.

*Sir To.* And they have been grand-jury-men should have Noah was a sailor.

*Ant.* She did show favour to the youth in your sight only to compensate you, to awake your dormant valour, to put fire in your heart, and crumstone in your liver. You should then have accepted her; and with some excellent jest, set her from the mint, you should have bawled the youth into dumbness. This was looked for at your hand, and this was balked: the double gift of this opportunity you let time wash off, and you are now sailed into the north of my lady's opinion; where you will hang like an icicle on a Dutchman's beard, unless you do redeem it by some laudable attempt either of valour or policy.

*Sir To.* An't be any way, it must be with valour; for policy I hate: I had as lief be a clown as a politician.

*Sir To.* Why, then, build me thy fortunes upon the basis of valour. Challenge me the count's youth to fight with him; hurt him in eleven places; my niece shall take note of it; and assure thyself, there is no love-broker in the world can more prevail in man's concupiscence with women than report of valour.

*Ant.* There is no way but this, Sir Andrew.

*Sir To.* Will either of you bear me a challenge to him?

*Sir To.* Go, write it in a martial hand; be guarded and brief: it is no matter how witty, so it be argument and full of invention: taunt him with the flowers of ink; if thou thou'st him much, he shall not be wiser; and as many lies will lie in thy sheet of paper, although the sheet were big enough for the bed of Ware in England, set 'em down: go, about it. Let there be gall enough in thy ink, though thou writest with a goose-pen, no matter: about it.

*Sir To.* Where shall I find you?

*Ant.* We'll call thee at the cubiculo: go.

[Exit Sir Andrew.]

*Ant.* This is a dear manakin to you, Sir To.

*Sir To.* I have been dear to him, lad, some ten thousand stangs, or so.

*Ant.* We shall have a rare letter from him: he will not deliver't!

*Sir To.* Never trust me, then; and by all means let the youth to an answer. I think the count's valour cannot hold them together. The count's liver was opened, and you find so much gall in his liver as will clog the foot of an anatomist. And he, opposite, the youth, bears in his liver no great promise of cruelty.

*Enter MARIA.*

*Sir To.* Look, where the youngest man of the house is.

*Ant.* You desire the vision, and will laugh at the count's valour. Follow me. Hand and foot, I have a great business to say to you.

saved by following rightly, can ever believe such impossible passages of goodness. He is in yellow stockings.

*Sir To.* And cross-gartered?

*Ant.* Most villainously; like a pedant that keeps a school for the church. I have dogged him, like his murderer. He does obey every point of the letter that I dropped to betray him: he does smile his face into more lines than in the new map with the augmentation of the Indies: you have not seen such a thing as this I can hardly forbear hurling things at him. I know my lady will strike him: if she do, he will smile and take't for a great favour.

*Sir To.* Come, bring us, bring us where he is. [Exeunt.]

### SCENE III. A street.

*Enter SEBASTIAN AND ANTONIO.*

*Seb.* I would not by my will have troubled you;

But since you make your pleasure of your pains,

I will no further chide you.

*Ant.* I could not stay behind you: my desire,

More sharp than filed steel, did spur me forth; And not all love to see you, though so much As might have drawn one to a longer voyage. But jealousy what might befall your travel, Being skilless in these parts; which to a stranger,

Unguided and unfriended, often prove Rough and unhospitable: my willing love, The rather by these arguments of fear, Set forth in your pursuit.

*Seb.* My kind Antonio, I can no other answer make but thanks, And thanks; and ever . . . . .oft good turns Are shuffled off with such uncurent pay: But, were my worth as is my conscience firm, You should find better dealing. What's to do Shall we go see the reliques of this town?

*Ant.* To-morrow, sir: best first go see your lodging.

*Seb.* I am not weary, and 'tis long to night: I pray you, let us satisfy our eyes With the memorials and the things of fame That do renown this city.

*Ant.* Would you 'd pardon us I do not without danger walk these streets: Once, in a sea-fight, against the count's flagship I did some service; of such note indeed, That were I 'twere here it would serve for answer.

*Seb.* Believe you slew great number of the people?

*Ant.* The offence is not of such a kind nature;

Abate the quality of the time and sword Might well have given us bloody argument. It might have since been answer'd in words: What we took from them; which, for their sake,

Most of our side did: only myself stood out for which, if I be blamed in this point, I shall own it.



*Seb.* Do not then walk too open.  
*Ant.* It doth not fit me. Hold, sir, here's my purse.  
 In the south suburbs, at the Elephant,  
 Is best to lodge: I will bespeak our diet,  
 Unless you beguile the time and feed your knowledge  
 With viewing of the town: there shall you have me.  
*Seb.* Why I your purse?  
*Ant.* Haply your eye shall light upon some toy  
 You have desire to purchase; and your store,  
 I think, is not for idle markets, sir.  
*Seb.* I'll be your purse-bearer and leave you  
 For an hour.  
*Ant.* To the Elephant.  
*Seb.* I do remember. [Exit.

## SCENE IV. OLIVIA'S garden.

*Enter OLIVIA and MARIA.*

*OL.* I have sent after him: he says he'll come;  
 How shall I feast him! what bestow of him!  
 For youth is bought more oft than begg'd or borrow'd.  
 I speak too loud.  
 Where is Malvolio? he is sad and civil,  
 And suits well for a servant with my fortunes:  
 Where is Malvolio?  
*Mar.* He's coming, madam; but in very strange manner. He is, sure, possessed, madam.  
*OL.* Why, what's the matter? does he rave?  
*Mar.* No, madam, he does nothing but smile: your ladyship were best to have some guard about you, if he come; for, sure, the man is tainted in 's wits.  
*OL.* Go call him hither. [Exit Maria.] I am as mad as he,  
 And merry madness equal be.

*Re-enter MARIA, with MALVOLIO.*

ow now, Malvolio!  
*Mal.* Sweet lady, ho, ho.  
*OL.* Smilest thou?  
 sent for thee upon a sad occasion.  
*Mal.* Sad, lady? I could be sad: this does  
 ake some obstruction in the blood, this cross-  
 uttering; but what of that? if it please the eye  
 one, it is with me as the very true sonnet is,  
 Please one, and please all.  
*OL.* Why, how dost thou, man? what is the  
 utter with thee?  
*Mal.* Not black in my mind, though yellow  
 in my legs. It did come to his hands, and com-  
 mands shall be executed: I think we do know  
 is sweet Roman hand.  
*OL.* With thou go to bed, Malvolio!  
*Mal.* To bed! ay, sweet-heart, and I'll come  
 to thee.  
*OL.* God comfort thee! Why dost thou  
 smile so and kiss thy hand so oft?  
*Mar.* How do you, Malvolio?  
*Mal.* As your request! yet; nightingales  
 never done.  
*Mar.* Why appear you with this ridiculous  
 behavior before my lady?

*Mal.* 'Be not afraid of greatness:' 'twas  
 well with  
*OL.* What manner then by that, Malvolio?  
*Mal.* 'Some are born great'—  
*OL.* Ha!  
*Mal.* 'Some achieve greatness'—  
*OL.* What sayest thou?  
*Mal.* 'And some have greatness thrust upon  
 them.'  
*OL.* Heaven restore thee!  
*Mal.* 'Remember who commanded thy yellow  
 stockings'—  
*OL.* Thy yellow stockings!  
*Mal.* 'And wished to see thee cross-gartered.'  
*OL.* Cross-gartered!  
*Mal.* 'Go to, thou art made, if thou dost  
 to be so'—  
*OL.* Am I made?  
*Mal.* 'If not, let me see thee a servant still.'  
*OL.* Why, this is very midsummer madness.

*Enter Servant.*

*Ser.* Madam, the young gentleman of the  
 Count Orsino's is returned: I could hardly en-  
 treat him back: he attends your ladyship's  
 pleasure.

*OL.* I'll come to him. [Exit Servant.]  
 Good Maria, let this fellow be looked to.  
 Where's my cousin Toby? Let some of my  
 people have a special care of him: I would not  
 have him miscarry for the half of my dowry.

*Mal.* O, ho! do you come near me now! no  
 worse man than Sir Toby to look to me! This  
 concurs directly with the letter: she sends him  
 on purpose, that I may appear stubborn to him;  
 for she incites me to that in the letter. 'O, let  
 thy humble alone,' says she; 'be opposite with  
 a kinaman, surly with servants; let thy tongue  
 tang with arguments of state; put thyself into  
 the trick of singularity;' and consequently sets  
 down the manner how; as, a sad face, a froward  
 carriage, a slow tongue, in the habit of some air  
 of note, and so forth. I have lined her; but it  
 is Jove's doing, and Jove make me thankful!  
 And when she went away now, 'Let this fellow  
 be looked to:' follow! not Malvolio, not after  
 my degree, but follow. Why, every thing  
 agrees together, that no dream of a success, no  
 scruple of a scruple, no obstacle, no impediment  
 or unsafe circumstance—What can be said?  
 Nothing that can be can come between me and  
 the full prospect of my hopes. Well, Jove, not  
 I, is the doer of this, and he is to be thanked.

*Re-enter MARIA, with SIR TOBY and FABIAN.*

*Sir To.* Which way is he, in the name of  
 sanctity? If all the devils of Hell be down in  
 little, and Legion himself possessed him, yet  
 I'll speak to him.

*Fab.* Here he is, here he is. How is't with  
 you, sir? how is't with you, man?

*Mal.* Go off; I discarded you: let me enjoy  
 my privacy: go off.

*Sir To.* I have better the head upon me  
 than thou! did not I tell you? Sir Toby, the  
 more you have a dose of him.

*Mal.* Ah, but does not he?

*Sir To.* Go to, go to; peace, peace; we must deal gently with him: let me alone. How do you, Malvolio? how is't with you? What, man! defy the devil: consider, he's an enemy to mankind.

*Mal.* Do you know what you say? 110  
*Devil.* Is you, an you speak ill of the devil, how he takes it at heart! Pray God, he be not bewitched!

*Fab.* Carry his water to the wise woman.  
*Mar.* Marry, and it shall be done to-morrow morning, if I live. My lady would not lose him for more than I'll say.

*Mal.* How now, mistress!  
*Mar.* O Lord! 119

*Sir To.* Prithee, hold thy peace; this is not the way: do you not see you move him! let me alone with him.

*Fab.* No way but gentleness; gently, gently: the fowl is rough, and will not be roughly used.

*Sir To.* Why, how now, my bawcock! how dost thou, chuck!

*Mal.* Sir!  
*Sir To.* Ay, Biddy, come with me. What, man! 'tis not for gravity to play at cherry-pit with Satan: hang him, foul collier! 120

*Mar.* Get him to say his prayers, good Sir Toby, get him to pray.

*Mal.* My prayers, minx!

*Mar.* No, I warrant you, he will not hear of godliness.

*Mal.* Go, hang yourselves all! you are idle shallow things: I am not of your element; you shall know more hereafter. [Exit.]

*Sir To.* Is't possible! 129

*Fab.* If this were played upon a stage now, I could condemn it as an improbable fiction.

*Sir To.* His very genius hath taken the infection of the device, man.

*Mar.* Nay, pursue him now, lest the device take air and taint.

*Fab.* Why, we shall make him mad indeed.  
*Mar.* The house will be the quieter.

*Sir To.* Come, we'll have him in a dark room and bound. My niece is already in the belief that he's mad: we may carry it thus, for our pleasure and his penance, till our very pastime, fired out of breath, prompt us to have mercy on him: at which time we will bring the device to the bar and crown thee for a finder of madmen. But see, but see.

*Enter SIR ANDREW.*

*Fab.* More matter for a May morning.  
*Sir And.* Here's the challenge, read it: I warrant there's vinegar and pepper in't.

*Fab.* Is't so saucy? 139

*Sir And.* Ay, is't; I warrant him: do but read.  
*Sir To.* Give me. [Reads] 'Youth, whatsoever thou art, thou art but a scurvy fellow.'

*Fab.* Good, and valiant.

*Sir To.* [Reads] 'Wonder not, nor admire not in thy mind, why I do call thee so, for I will show thee no reason for't.'

*Fab.* A good note; that keeps you from the blow of the law. 140

*Sir To.* [Reads] 'Thou comest to the lady Olivia, and in my sight she uses thee kindly:

but thou liest in thy throat; that is not the matter I challenge thee for.'

*Fab.* Very brief, and to exceeding good sense—less.

*Sir To.* [Reads] 'I will waylay thee going home; where if it be thy chance to kill me'—

*Fab.* Good.

*Sir To.* [Reads] 'Thou killest me like a rogue and a villain.'

*Fab.* Still you keep o' the windy side of the law; good.

*Sir To.* [Reads] 'Fare thee well; and God have mercy upon one of our souls! He may have mercy upon mine; but my hope is better, and so look to thyself. Thy friend, as thou usest him, and thy sworn enemy,'

ANDREW AGUECHEEK.  
If this letter move him not, his legs cannot: I'll give't him. 149

*Mar.* You may have very fit occasion for't: he is now in some commerce with my lady, and will by and by depart.

*Sir To.* Go, Sir Andrew; scout me for him at the corner of the orchard like a bum-bailly: so soon as ever thou seest him, draw; and, as thou drawest, swear horrible; for it comes to pass oft that a terrible oath, with a swaggering accent sharply twanged off, gives manhood more approbation than ever proof itself would have earned him. Away! 150

*Sir And.* Nay, let me alone for swearing.

[Exit]  
*Sir To.* Now will not I deliver his letter: for the behaviour of the young gentleman gives him out to be of good capacity and breeding; his employment between his lord and my niece confirms no less; therefore this letter, being so excellently ignorant, will breed no terror in the youth: he will find it comes from a chodpole. But, sir, I will deliver his challenge by word of mouth; set upon Aguecheek a notable report of valour; and drive the gentleman, as I know his youth will aptly receive it, into a most hideous opinion of his rage, skill, fury and impetuosity. This will so fright them both that they will kill one another by the look, like cockatrices.

*Re-enter OLIVIA, with VIOLA.*

*Fab.* Here he comes with your niece: give them way till he take leave, and presently after him.

*Sir To.* I will meditate the while upon some horrid message for a challenge. 159

[Exit Sir Toby, Fabian, and Maria.  
*Ol.* I have said too much unto a heart of stone

And laid mine honour too unchary out: There's something in me that reproves my fault; But such a headstrong potent fault it is, That it but mocks reproof.

*Viola.* With the same favour that your passion bears

Goes on my master's grief.

*Ol.* Here, wear this jewel for me, 'tis my picture;

Refuse it not; it hath no tongue to vex you; And I beseech you come again to-morrow. 169  
What shall you ask of me that I'll deny,

That honour saved may upon asking give!

*Vio.* Nothing but this; your true love for my master.

*Old.* How with mine honour may I give him that

Which I have given to you?

*Vio.* I will acquit you.

*Old.* Well, come again to-morrow: fare thee well;

fiend like thee might bear my soul to hell.

[*Exit.*]

*Re-enter SIR TOBY and FABIAN.*

*Sir To.* Gentleman, God save thee.

*Vio.* And you, sir.

*Sir To.* That defence thou hast, betake thee to't: of what nature the wrongs are thou hast done him, I know not; but thy interpreter, full of despite, bloody as the hunter, attends thee at the orchard-end: dismount thy tuck, be yare in thy preparation, for thy assailant is quick, skillful and deadly.

*Vio.* You mistake, sir; I am sure no man hath any quarrel to me: my remembrance is very free and clear from any image of offence long to any man.

*Sir To.* You'll find it otherwise, I assure you: therefore, if you hold your life at any price, betake you to your guard; for your opposite hath in him what youth, strength, skill and wrath can furnish man withal.

*Vio.* I pray you, sir, what is he?

*Sir To.* He is knight, dubbed with unhatched rapier and on carpet consideration; but he is a devil in private brawl: souls and bodies hath he divorced three; and his incensement at this moment is so implacable, that satisfaction can be none but by songs of death and sepulchre. Hoh, noh, is his word; give't or take't.

*Vio.* I will return again into the house and desire some conduct of the lady. I am no fighter. I have heard of some kind of men that put quarrels purposely on others, to taste their valour: belike this is a man of that quirk.

*Sir To.* Sir, no, his indignation derives itself out of a very competent injury: therefore, get you on and give him his desire. Back you shall not to the house, unless you undertake that with me which with as much safety you might answer him: therefore, on, or strip your sword stark naked; for meddle you must, that's certain, or forswear to wear iron about you.

*Vio.* This is as uncivil as strange. I beseech you, do me this courteous office, as to know of the knight what my offence to him is: it is something of my negligence, nothing of my purpose.

*Sir To.* I will do so. Signior Fabian, stay you by this gentleman till my return. [*Exit.*]

*Vio.* I pray you, sir, do you know of this matter?

*Fab.* I knew the knight is incensed against you, even to a mortal affrontment; but nothing of the circumstance more.

*Vio.* I beseech you, what manner of man is he?

*Fab.* Nothing of that wonderful promise, to

read him by his form, as you are like to find him in the proof of his valour. He is, indeed, sir, the most skilful, bloody and fatal opposite that you could possibly have found in any part of Illyria. Will you walk towards him? I will make your peace with him if I can.

*Vio.* I shall be much bound to you for't: I am one that had rather go with sir priest than sir knight: I care not who knows so much of my mettle. [*Exeunt.*]

*Re-enter SIR TOBY, with SIR ANDREW.*

*Sir To.* Why, man, he's a very devil; I have not seen such a tirago. I had a pass with him, rapier, scabbard and all, and he gives me the stuck in with such a mortal motion, that it is inevitable; and on the answer, he pays you as surely as your feet hit the ground they step on. They say he has been fencer to the Sophy.

*Sir And.* Fox on't, I'll not meddle with him.

*Sir To.* Ay, but he will not now be pacified: Fabian can scarce hold him yonder.

*Sir And.* Plague on't, an I thought he had been valiant and so cunning in fence, I'd have seen him damned ere I'd have challenged him. Let him let the matter slip, and I'll give him my horse, grey Capilet.

*Sir To.* I'll make the motion: stand here, make a good show on't: this shall end without the perdition of souls. [*Aside.*] Marry, I'll ride your horse as well as I ride you.

*Re-enter FABIAN and VIO.*

[*To Fab.*] I have his horse to take up the quarrel: I have persuaded him the youth's a devil.

*Fab.* He is as horribly conceited of him; and pants and looks pale, as if a bear were at his heels.

*Sir To.* [*To Vio.*] There's no remedy, sir; he will fight with you for's oath sake: marry, he hath better betought him of his quarrel, and he finds that now scarce to be worth talking of: therefore draw, for the supportance of his vow; he protests he will not hurt you.

*Vio.* [*Aside.*] Pray God defend me! A little thing would make me tell them how much I lack of a man.

*Fab.* Give ground, if you see him furious.

*Sir To.* Come, Sir Andrew, there's no remedy: the gentleman will, for his honour's sake, have one bout with you; he cannot by the duello avoid it: but he has promised me, as he is a gentleman and a soldier, he will not hurt you. Come on: to't.

*Sir And.* Pray God, he keep his oath!

*Vio.* I do assure you, 'tis against my will. [*They draw.*]

*Enter ANTONIO.*

*Ant.* Put up your sword. If this young gentleman

Have done offence, I take the fault on me: If you offend him, I for him defy you.

*Sir To.* You, sir! why, what are you?

*Ant.* One, sir, that for his love dares not do more

Than you have heard him beg to you he will.

*Sir To.* Nay, if you be an undertaker, I am for you. *(They draw.)*

*Enter Officers.*

*Fab.* O good Sir Toby, hold! here come the officers.

*Sir To.* I'll be with you anon.

*Vio.* Pray, sir, put your sword up, if you please.

*Sir And.* Marry, will I, sir; and, for that I promised you, I'll be as good as my word: he will bear you easily and reins well.

*First Off.* This is the man; do thy office.

*Sec. Off.* Antonio, I arrest thee at the suit of Count Orsino. 365

*Ant.* You do mistake me, sir.

*First Off.* No, sir, no jot; I know your favour well.

Though now you have no sea-cap on your head. Take him away: he knows I know him well.

*Ant.* I must obey. *[To Vio.]* This comes with seeking you:

But there's no remedy: I shall answer it.

What will you do, now my necessity Makes me to ask you for my purse? It grieves me

Much more for what I cannot do for you 370 Than what befalls myself. You stand amazed; But be of comfort.

*Sec. Off.* Come, sir, away.

*Ant.* I must entreat of you some of that money.

*Vio.* What money, sir?

For the fair kindness you have show'd me here, And, part, being prompted by your present trouble,

Out of my lean and low ability I'll lend you something: my having is not much;

I'll make division of my present with you: 380 Hold, there's half my coffe.

*Ant.* Will you deny me now?

Is't possible that my deserts to you Can lack persuasion? Do not tempt my misery, Lest that it make me so unsound a man As to upbraid you with those kindnesses That I have done for you.

*Vio.* I know of none;

Nor know I you by voice or any feature: I hate ingratitude more in a man Than lying, vainness, babbling, drunkenness, Or any taint of vice whose strong corruption Inhabits our frail blood.

*Ant.* O heavens themselves!

*Sec. Off.* Come, sir, I pray you, go.

*Ant.* Let me speak a little. This youth that you see here

I snatch'd one half out of the jaws of death, Believed him with such sanctity of love, And to his image, which methought did promise Most venerable worth, did I devotion.

*First Off.* What's that to us? The time goes by: away!

*Ant.* But O how vile an idol proves this god! This saint, Sebastian, done good feature shame. In nature there's no blemish but the mind: 401 Some can see spots and deform'd but the unkind;

Virtue is beauty, but the beauteous evil Are empty trunks o'erflourish'd by the devil.

*First Off.* The man grows mad: away with him! Come, come, sir.

*Ant.* Lead me on.

*Vio.* Methinks his words do from passion fly.

That he believes himself: so do not I. Prove true, imagination, O, prove true, That I, dear brother, be now taken for you! 410

*Sir To.* Come hither, knight; come hither, Fabian: we'll whisper o'er a couplet or two of most sage saws.

*Vio.* He named Sebastian: I my brother know

Yet living in my glass: even such and so In favour was my brother, and he went Still in this fashion, colour, ornament, For him I imitate: O, if it prove, Tempests are kind and salt waves fresh in love. *[Exit.]*

*Sir To.* A very dishonest paltry boy, and more a coward than a hare: his dishonesty appears in leaving his friend here in necessity and denying him; and for his cowardship, ask Fabian.

*Fab.* A coward, a most devout coward, religious in it.

*Sir And.* 'Slid, I'll after him again and beat him.

*Sir To.* Do; cuff him soundly, but never draw thy sword.

*Sir And.* An I do not, — *[Exit.]*

*Fab.* Come, let's see the event. 431

*Sir To.* I dare lay any money 'twill be nothing yet. *[Exeunt.]*

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I. Before OLIVIA's house.

*Enter SEBASTIAN and CLOWN.*

*Clo.* Will you make me believe that I am not sent for you?

*Seb.* Go to, go to, thou art a foolish fellow: Let me be clear of thee.

*Clo.* Well held out, I faith! No, I do not know you; nor I am not sent to you by my lady, to bid you come speak with her; nor your name is not Master Cascarino; nor this is not my nose neither. Nothing that is so is so.

*Seb.* I prithee, vent thy folly somewhere else: Thou know'st not me. 441

*Clo.* Vent my folly! he has heard that word of some great man and now applies it to a fool. Vent my folly! I am afraid this great lubber, the world, will prove a cockney. I prithee now, ungird thy strangeness and tell me what I shall vent to my lady: shall I vent to her that thou art coming?

*Seb.* I prithee, foolish Greek, depart from me: There's money for thee: if you tarry longer, so I shall give worse payment.

*Clo.* By my troth, thou hast an open hand. These wise men that give fools money get themselves a good report—after fourteen years' purchase.

Enter SIR ANDREW, SIR TOBY, and FABIAN.

Sir And. Now, sir, have I met you again? there's for you.

Seb. Why, there's for thee, and there, and there.

Are all the people mad?

Sir To. Hold, sir, or I'll throw your dagger over the house.

Clo. This will I tell my lady straight: I would not be in some of your coats for two pence. [Exit.

Sir To. Come on, sir; hold.

Sir And. Nay, let him alone: I'll go another way to work with him; I'll have an action of battery against him; if there be any law in Illyria: though I struck him first, yet it's no matter for that.

Seb. Let go thy hand.

Sir To. Come, sir, I will not let you go. Come, my young soldier, put up your iron: you are well fleshed; come on.

Seb. I will be free from thee. What wouldst thou now?

If thou dar'st tempt me further, draw thy sword.

Sir To. What, what? Nay, then I must have an ounce or two of this malapert blood on you.

Enter OLIVIA.

Ol. Hold, Toby; on thy life I charge thee, hold!

Sir To. Madam!

Ol. Will it be ever thus? Ungracious wretch, if for the mountains and the barbarous caves, where manners ne'er were preach'd! out of my sight!

I'm not offended, dear Cesario.

Malvolio, be gone!

Exit Sir Toby, Sir Andrew, and Fabian.

I prithee, gentle friend, at thy fair wisdom, not thy passion, away with this uncivil and unjust extent

Against thy peace. Go with me to my house, and hear thou there how many fruitless pranks this ruffian hath botch'd up, that thou thereby may'st smile at this: thou shalt not choose but

Go:

Do not deny. Beshrew his soul for me, He started! one poor heart of mine in thee.

Seb. What relish is in this? how runs the stream?

Or I am mad, or else this is a dream:

Let my sense in Lettice sleep;

It'll be thus to dream, still let me sleep!

Ol. Nay, come, I prithee; would thou'ldst be ruled by me!

Seb. Madam, I will.

Ol. O, say so, and so be! [Exit.

SCENE II. OLIVIA'S house.

Enter MARIA and CLOWN.

Mar. Nay, I prithee, put on this gown and this beard: make him believe thou art Sir Topas the curate: do it quickly; I'll call Sir Toby this while. [Exit.

Clo. Well, I'll put it on, and I will dissemble myself in't; and I would I were the first that ever dissembled in such a gown. I am not tall enough to become the function well, nor lean enough to be thought a good student; but to be said an honest man and a good housekeeper goes as fairly as to say a careful man and a great scholar. The competitors enter.

Enter SIR TOBY and MARIA.

Sir To. Jove bless thee, master Parson.

Clo. Bonos dies, Sir Toby: for, as the old hermit of Prague, that never saw pen and ink, very wittily said to a niece of King Gorboduc, 'That that is is': so I, being master Parson, am master Parson; for, what is 'that' but 'that,' and 'is' but 'is'?

Sir To. To him, Sir Topas.

Clo. What, ho, I say! peace in this prison!

Sir To. The knave counterfeit's well; a good knave.

Mal. [Within] Who calls there?

Clo. Sir Topas the curate, who comes to visit Malvolio the lunatic.

Mal. Sir Topas, Sir Topas, good Sir Topas, go to my lady.

Clo. Quit, hyperbolical fiend! how venust thou this man! talkest thou nothing but of ladies!

Sir To. Well said, master Parson.

Mal. Sir Topas, never was man thus wronged: good Sir Topas, do not think I am mad: they have laid me here in hideous darkness.

Clo. Fie, thou dishonest Satan! I call thee by the most modest terms; for I am one of those gentle ones that will use the devil himself with courtesy: sayest thou that house is dark?

Mal. As hell, Sir Topas.

Clo. Why, it hath bay windows transparent as barricadoes, and the clearstores toward the south north are as lustrous as ebony; and yet complainest thou of obstruction?

Mal. I am not mad, Sir Topas: I say to you, this house is dark.

Clo. Madman, thou errest: I say, there is no darkness but ignorance: in which thou art more puzzled than the Egyptians in their fog.

Mal. I say, this house is as dark as ignorance, though ignorance were as dark as hell; and I say, there was never man thus abused. I am no more mad than you are: make the trial of it in any constant question.

Clo. What is the opinion of Pythagoras concerning wild fowl?

Mal. That the soul of our grandam might happily inhabit a bird.

Clo. What thinkest thou of his opinion?

Mal. I think nobly of the soul, and no way approve his opinion.

Clo. Fare thee well. Remain thou still in darkness; thou shalt hold the opinion of Pythagoras ere I will allow of thy wits, and fear to kill a woodcock, lest thou discomest the soul of thy grandam. Fare thee well.

Mal. Sir Topas, Sir Topas!

Sir To. My most exquisite Sir Topas!

Clo. Nay, I am for all wits.

*Mar.* Then mightst have done this without thy beard and gown: he sees thee not.

*Sir To.* To him in thine own voice, and bring me word how thou findest him: I would we were well rid of this knavery. If he may be conveniently delivered, I would he were, for I am now so far in offence with my niece that I cannot pursue with any safety this sport to the upshot. Come by and by to my chamber.

[*Exeunt Sir Toby and Maria.*]

*Clo.* [*Singing*] 'Hey, Robin, jolly Robin,  
'Tell me how thy lady does.'

*Mal.* Fool!

*Clo.* 'My lady is unkind, perdy.'

*Mal.* Fool!

*Clo.* 'Alas, why is she so?'

*Mal.* Fool, I say!

*Clo.* 'She loves another'—Who calls, ha!

*Mal.* Good fool, as ever thou wilt deserve

well at my hand, help me to a candle, and pen,

ink and paper: as I am a gentleman, I will

live to be thankful to thee for't.

*Clo.* Master Malvolio!

*Mal.* Ay, good fool.

*Clo.* Alas, sir, how fall you besides your five

wits!

*Mal.* Fool, there was never man so notoriously

abused: I am as well in my wits, fool, as

thou art.

*Clo.* But as well? then you are mad indeed,

if you be no better in your wits than a fool.

*Mal.* They have here propertyed me; keep

me in darkness, send ministers to me, assess,

and do all they can to face me out of my wits.

*Clo.* Advise you what you say; the minister

is here. Malvolio, Malvolio, thy wits the hea-

vens restore! endeavour yourself to sleep, and

leave thy vain bibble babble.

*Mal.* Sir Topas!

*Clo.* Maintain no words with him, good

fellow. Who, I, sir? not I, sir. God be wi' you,

good Sir Topas. Marry, amen. I will, sir, I will.

*Mal.* Fool, fool, fool, I say!

*Clo.* Alas, sir, be patient. What say you, sir?

I am absent for speaking to you.

*Mal.* Good fool, help me to some light and

some paper: I tell thee, I am as well in my wits

as any man in Illyria.

*Clo.* Well-a-day that you were, sir!

*Mal.* By this hand, I am. Good fool, some

ink, paper and light; and convey what I will

set down to my lady: it shall advantage thee

more than ever the bearing of letter did.

*Clo.* I will help you to't. But tell me true,

are you not mad indeed? or do you but counter-

feit?

*Mal.* Believe me, I am not; I tell thee true.

*Clo.* Nay, I'll ne'er believe a madman till I

see his brains. I will fetch you light and paper

and ink.

*Mal.* Fool, I'll requite it in the highest

degree: I prithee, be gone.

*Clo.* [*Singing*] I am gone, sir,

and anon, sir,

I'll be with you again,

in a trice,

and to the old Vice,

and to restrain;

Who, with dagger of lath,  
In his rage and his wrath,  
Cries, ah, ha! to the devil;  
Like a mad lad,  
Purses thy wits, dad;  
'Adieu, good man devil.

### SCENE III. OLIVIA'S garden.

*Enter SEBASTIAN.*

*Seb.* This is the air; that is the glorious sun;  
This pearl she gave me, I do feel 't and see 't;  
And though 'tis wonder that enwraps me thus,  
Yet 'tis not madness. Where 's Antonio, then?  
I could not find him at the Elephant;  
Yet there he was; and there I found this credit,  
That he did range the town to seek me out.  
His counsel now might do me golden service;  
For though my soul disputes well with my sense,  
That this may be some error, but no madness,  
Yet doth this accident and flood of fortune  
So far exceed all instance, all discourse,  
That I am ready to distrust mine eyes  
And wrangle with my reason that persuades me  
To any other trust but that I am mad  
(Or else the lady's mad; yet, if 'twere so,  
She could not away her house, command her  
followers,

Take and give back affairs and their dispatch  
With such a smooth, discreet and stable bearing  
As I perceive she does: there 's something in 't  
That is deceivable. But here the lady comes.

*Enter OLIVIA and PRIOR.*

*Ol.* Blame not this haste of mine. If you  
mean well,

Now go with me and with this holy man  
Into the chantry by: there, before him,  
And underneath that consecrated roof,  
I'll light me the full assurance of your faith:  
That my most jealous and too doubtful soul  
May live at peace. He shall conceal it  
Whiles you are willing it shall come to note.  
What time we will our celebration keep  
According to my birth. What do you say?  
*Seb.* I'll follow this good man, and go with you;  
And, having sworn truth, ever will be true.

*Ol.* Then lead the way, good father; and  
heavens so shine,  
That they may fairly note this act of mine!  
[*Exeunt.*]

### ACT V.

#### SCENE I. Before OLIVIA'S house.

*Enter CLOWN and FABIAN.*

*Fab.* Now, as thou lovest me, let me see his  
letter.

*Clo.* Good Master Fabian, grant me another  
request.

*Fab.* Any thing.

*Clo.* Do not desire to see this letter.

*Fab.* This is, to give a dog, and in recom-  
pense desire my dog again.

*Enter DUKE, VIOLA, CURIUS, and LAMIA.*

*Duke.* Belong you to the Lady Olivia's  
friends!

*Clo.* Ay, sir; we are squire of her trappings.  
*Duke.* I know thee well: how dost thou, my good fellow?

*Clo.* Truly, sir, the better for my foes and the worse for my friends.

*Duke.* Just the contrary; the better for thy friends.

*Clo.* No, sir, the worse.

*Duke.* How can that be?

*Clo.* Marry, sir, they praise me and make an use of me; now my foes tell me plainly I am an ass; so that by my foes, sir, I profit in the knowledge of myself, and by my friends I am abused: so that, conclusions to be as kinsmen, if your four negatives make your two affirmatives, why then, the worse for my friends and the better for my foes.

*Duke.* Why, this is excellent.

*Clo.* By my troth, sir, no; though it please you to be one of my friends.

*Duke.* Thou shalt not be the worse for me: there's gold.

*Clo.* But that it would be double-dealing, sir, I would you could make it another.

*Duke.* O, you give me ill counsel.

*Clo.* Put your grace in your pocket, sir, for this once, and let your flesh and blood obey it.

*Duke.* Well, I will be so much a sinner, to be a double-dealer: there's another.

*Clo.* Primo, secundo, tertio, is a good play; and the old saying is, the third pays for all: the apex, sir, is a good tripping measure; or the axis of Saint Menet, sir, may put you in mind; as, two, three.

*Duke.* You can fool no more money out of me at this throw: if you will let your lady know I am here to speak with her, and bring her along with you, it may awake my bounty further.

*Clo.* Marry, sir, hush to your bounty till I see again. I go, sir; but I would not have you to think that my desire of having is the sin of covetousness: but, as you say, sir, let your bounty take a nap, I will awake it anon. [Exit.]

*Fio.* Here comes the man, sir, that did rescue me.

Enter ANTONIO and Officers.

*Duke.* That face of his I do remember well; for, when I saw in last, it was becomen'd as black as Vulcan in the smoke of war: A hawling vessel was he captain of, For shallow draught and bulk upprisable; With which such craftful grapple did he make With the most noble bottom of our fleet. So That very envy and the tongue of less Good fame and honour on him. What's the matter?

*First Off.* Orsino, this is that Antonio that took the Phoenix and her freight from Candy;

And this is he that did the Tiger board, When your young nephew, Sebastian, lost his leg: Here in the slowness, dangerous of shame and state.

*Fio.* He did me kindness, sir, days on my side: He did me kindness, sir, days on my side.

But in conclusion put strange speech up: as me: I know not what 'twas but distraction.

*Duke.* Notable pirate! thou salt-water thief! What foolish business brought thee to their mercies,

Whom thou, in terms so bloody and so dear, Hast made thine enemies?

*Ant.* Orsino, noble sir, Be pleased that I shake off these names you give me:

Antonio never yet was thief or pirate, Though I confess, on base and ground enough, Orsino's enemy. A witchcraft drew me hither: That most ingrateful boy there by your side, From the rude sea's enraged and foamy mouth Did I redeem; a wreck past hope he was: His life I gave him and did thereto add My love, without retention or restraint,

All his in dedication; for his sake Did I expose myself, pure for his love,

Into the danger of this adverse town;

Drew to defend him when he was beset:

Where being apprehended, his false cunning, Not meaning to partake with me in danger, so Taught him to face me out of his acquaintance,

And grew a twenty years removed thing While one would wink; denied me mine own name.

Which I had recommended to his use Not half an hour before.

*Fio.* How can this be?

*Duke.* When came he to this town?

*Ant.* To-day, my lord; and for three months before.

No interim, not a minute's vacancy, Both day and night did we keep company.

Enter OLIVIA and Attendants.

*Duke.* Here comes the countess: now heaven walks on earth.

But for thee, fellow; fellow, thy words are madness:

Three months this youth hath tended upon me; But more of that anon. Take him aside.

*Ol.* What would my lord, but that he may not have.

Wherein Olivia may seem unreasonable? Cesario, you do not lose promise with me.

*Fio.* Madam!

*Duke.* Gracious Olivia,—

*Ol.* What do you say, Cesario? Good my lord,—

*Fio.* My lord would speak; my duty binds me.

*Ol.* If it be ought to the old time, my lord, It is as fat and fulsome to mine ear As howling after music.

*Duke.* Still on crest!

*Ol.* Still so constant, lord.

*Duke.* What, as perambulate you and still lady?

To whose ingrate and unassuming ears My sweet this hidethisethings: both bewitch'd out

That our devotion standeth! What shall I do?

*Ol.* I have seen it please my lord, that shall become him.

*Duke.* Why should I not, had I the heart  
to do it.  
Like to the Egyptian thief at point of death,  
Kill what I love?—a savage jealousy  
That sometime savours nobly. But hear me  
this:

Since you to non-regardance cast my faith,  
And that I partly know the instrument  
That screws me from my true place in your  
favour,

Live you the marble-breasted tyrant still;  
But this your minion, whom I know you love,  
And whom, by heaven I swear, I tender dearly,  
Him will I tear out of that cruel eye,

Where he sits crowned in his master's spite.  
Come, boy, with me; my thoughts are ripe in  
mischief:

I'll sacrifice the lamb that I do love,  
To spite a raven's heart within a dove.

*Vio.* And I, most jocund, apt and willingly,  
To do you rest, a thousand deaths would die.

*Oliv.* Where goes Cesario?

*Vio.* After him I love  
More than I love these eyes, more than my life,  
More, by all mores, than e'er I shall love wife.  
If I do feign, you witness above  
Punish my life for tainting of my love!

*Oliv.* Ay me, detested! how am I beguiled!

*Vio.* Who does beguile you? who does do  
you wrong?

*Oliv.* Hast thou forgot thyself? is it so long?  
Call forth the holy father.

*Duke.* Come, away!

*Oliv.* Whither, my lord? Cesario, husband,  
stay.

*Duke.* Husband!

*Oliv.* Ay, husband: can he that deny?

*Duke.* Her husband, sirrah!

*Vio.* No, my lord, not I.

*Oliv.* Alas, it is the baseness of thy fear  
That makes thee strangle thy propriety:

Fear not, Cesario; take thy fortunes up;  
Be that thou know'st thou art, and then thou art  
As great as that thou fear'st.

*Enter Priest.*

O, welcome, father!

Father, I charge thee, by thy reverence,  
Here to unfold, though lately we intended  
To keep in darkness what occasion now  
Reveals before 'tis ripe, what thou dost know  
Hath newly pass'd between this youth and me.

*Priest.* A contract of eternal bond of love,  
Confirmed by mutual joinder of your hands,

Attested by the holy close of lips,  
Strengthen'd by interchangement of your rings;

And all the ceremony of this compact  
Seal'd in my function, by my testimony:  
Since when, my watch hath told me, toward  
my grave

I have travell'd but two hours.

*Duke.* O thou dissembling cub! what wilt  
thou do

When time hath sow'd a grizzle on thy case?  
Or wilt not else thy craft so quickly grow,  
That thine own trip shall be thine overthrow?

Farewell, and take her; but direct thy foot  
Where thou shalt find her, for she may never meet.

*Vio.* My lord, I do protest—  
*Oliv.* O, do not swear!  
Hold little faith, though thou hast too much  
fear.

*Enter SIR ANDREW.*

*Sir And.* For the love of God, a surgeon  
Send one presently to Sir Toby.

*Oliv.* What's the matter?

*Sir And.* He has broke my head across and  
has given Sir Toby a bloody coxcomb too; for  
the love of God, your help! I had rather than  
forty pound I were at home.

*Oliv.* Who has done this, Sir Andrew?

*Sir And.* The count's gentleman, one  
Cesario: we took him for a coward, but he's  
the very devil incarnate.

*Duke.* My gentleman, Cesario!

*Sir And.* 'Od his lifelings, here he is! You  
broke my head for nothing; and that that I did,  
I was set on to do't by Sir Toby.

*Vio.* Why do you speak to me? I never hurt  
you:

You drew your sword upon me without cause;  
But I bespake you fair, and hurt you not.

*Sir And.* If a bloody coxcomb be a hurt,  
you have hurt me: I think you set nothing by  
a bloody coxcomb.

*Enter SIR TOBY and CLOWN.*

Here comes Sir Toby halting: you shall hear  
more: but if he had not been in drink, he would  
have tickled you othergates than he did.

*Duke.* How now, gentleman! how is it with  
you?

*Sir To.* That's all one: has hurt me, and  
there's the cad on't. So, didst see Dick sur-  
geon, sot?

*Clow.* O, he's drunk, Sir Toby, an hour ago:  
his eyes were set at eight i'th morning.

*Sir To.* Then he's a rogue, and a pass  
measures panyon: I hate a drunken rogue.

*Oliv.* Away with him! Who hath made this  
havoc with them?

*Sir And.* I'll help you, Sir Toby, because  
we'll be dress'd together.

*Sir To.* Will you help! an ass-head and  
coxcomb and a knave, a thin-faced knave,  
gull!

*Oliv.* Get him to bed, and let his hurt  
look'd to. [*Exeunt Clown, Sebastian, Sir Toby,*  
*and Sir Andrew.*]

*Enter SEBASTIAN.*

Seb. I am sorry, madam, I have hurt you  
kinman;

But, had it been the brother of my blood,  
I must have done no less with wit and safety.

You throw a strange regard upon me, and I  
that

I do perceive it hath offended you:  
Pardon me, sweet one, even for the vows  
We made each other but so late ago.

*Duke.* One face, one voice, one habit, and  
two persons,

A natural perspective, that is and is not!

Seb. Antonio, O my dear Antonio!

How have the hours rack'd and tortured me,



me I have lost thee!

*Ans.* Sebastian are you?

*Seb.* Fear'st thou that, Antonio?

*Ans.* How have you made division of yourself?

In apple, cleft in two, is not more twin  
than these two creatures. Which is Sebastian?

*Ol.* Most wonderful!

*Seb.* Do I stand there? I never had a brother;

For can there be that deity in my nature,  
here and every where. I had a sister,  
from the blind waves and surges have de-  
voured.

Charity, what kin are you to me?

What countryman? what name? what paren-  
tage?

*Ol.* Of Messaline: Sebastian was my father;  
thou a Sebastian was my brother too;

went he suited to his watery tomb:  
spirits can assume both form and suit  
as come to fright us.

*Seb.* A spirit I am indeed;  
I am in that dimension grossly clad  
hich from the womb I did participate.

Are you a woman, as the rest goes even,  
should my tears let fall upon your cheek,

and say 'Thrice-welcome, drowned Viola'?

*Ol.* My father had a mole upon his brow.

*Seb.* And so had mine.

*Ol.* And died that day when Viola from her  
birth

of number'd thirteen years.

*Seb.* O, that record is lively in my soul!  
finished indeed his mortal act  
that day that made my sister thirteen years.

*Ol.* If nothing lets to make us happy both  
this my masculine usurp'd attire,

do not embrace me till each circumstance  
of time, fortune, do cohere and jump

that I am Viola: which to confirm,

bring you to a captain in this town,  
whose my maiden weeds; by whose gentle  
ship

I was preserved to serve this noble count.

the occurrence of my fortune since  
has been between this lady and this lord.

*Seb.* [To *Olivia*] So comes it, lady, you have  
been mistook;

it nature to her bias drew in that.

as would have been contracted to a maid;

as are you therein, by my life, deceived,  
as are betroth'd both to a maid and man.

*Duke.* Be not amazed; right noble is his  
word.

thus be so, as yet the glass seems true,  
shall have share in this most happy wreck.

*To Viola* Boy, thou hast said to me a thousand  
times

you never shouldst love woman like to me.

*Ol.* And all those sayings will I over-swear;  
I'll all those swearings keep as true in soul  
as doth that orb'd continent the fire  
at evers day from night.

*Duke.* Give me thy hand;  
and let me see thee in thy woman's weeds.

*Ol.* The captain that did bring me first on  
shore

Hath my maid's garments: he upon some  
action

Is now in durance, at Malvollo's suit.  
A gentleman, and follower of my lady's.

*Ol.* He shall enlarge him: fetch Malvollo  
hither;

And yet, alas, now I remember me,  
They say, poor gentleman, he's much distract.

*Re-enter CLOWN with a letter, and FABIAN.*

A most extracting frenzy of mine own  
From my remembrance clearly banish'd his.

How does he, sirrah?

*Cl.* Truly, madam, he holds Belzebub at the  
stave's end as well as a man in his case may do:

has here writ a letter to you; I should have  
given't you to-day morning, but as a madman's  
epistles are no gospels, so it skills not much  
when they are delivered.

*Ol.* Open't, and read it.

*Cl.* Look then to be well edified when the  
fool delivers the madman. [Reads] 'By the  
Lord, madam,'—

*Ol.* How now! art thou mad?

*Cl.* No, madam, I do but read madness: an  
your ladyship will have it as it ought to be, you  
must allow Vox.

*Ol.* Prithce, read I thy right wits.

*Cl.* So I do, malonna; but to read his right  
wits is to read this: therefore perpend, my  
princess, and give ear.

*Ol.* Read it you, sirrah.

[To *Fabian*.  
*Fab.* [Reads] 'By the Lord, madam, you  
wrong me, and the world shall know it: though  
you have put me into darkness and given your  
drunken cousin rule over me, yet have I the  
benefit of my senses as well as your ladyship.  
I have your own letter that induced me to the  
semblance I put on; with the which I doubt not  
but to do myself much right, or you much shame.  
Think of me as you please. I leave my duty a  
little unthought of and speak out of my injury,'

THE MADLY-USED MALVOLLO.

*Ol.* Did he write this?

*Cl.* Ay, madam.

*Duke.* This savours not much of distraction.

*Ol.* See him deliver'd, Fabian; bring him  
hither.

[*Exit Fabian*.  
My lord, so please you, these things further  
thought on.

To think me as well a sister as a wife,  
One day shall crown the alliance on't, so please  
you,

Here at my house and at my proper cost.

*Duke.* Madam, I am most apt to embrace  
your offer.

[To *Viola*] Your master quits you; and for  
your service done him,

So much against the mettle of your sex,

So far beneath your soft and tender breeding,  
And since you call'd me master for so long,  
Here is my hand: you shall from this time be  
your master's mistress.

*Ol.* A sister! you are she.

*Re-enter FABIAN, with MALVOLLO.*

*Duke.* Is this the madman?

*Ol.* Ay, my lord, this same.

How now, Malvolio!

*Mal.* Madam, you have done me wrong,  
Notorious wrong.

*Oli.* Have I, Malvolio! no.

*Mal.* Lady, you have. Pray you, peruse that letter.

You must not now deny it is your hand: 339  
Write from it, if you can, in hand or phrase;  
Or say 'tis not your seal, not your invention;  
You can say none of this: well, grant it then  
And tell me, in the modesty of honour,  
Why you have given me such clear lights of  
favour,

Bade me come smiling and cross-garter'd to you,  
To put on yellow stockings and to frown  
Upon Sir Toby and the lighter people;  
And, acting this in an obedient hope,  
Why have you suffer'd me to be imprison'd,  
Kept in a dark house, visited by the priest, 350  
And made the most notorious geck and gull  
That e'er invention play'd on! tell me why.

*Oli.* Alas, Malvolio, this is not my writing.  
Though, I confess, much like the character:

But out of question 'tis Maria's hand.  
And now I do betlink me, it was she  
First told me thou wast mad; then camest in  
smiling,

And in such forms which here were presup-  
posed

Upon thee in the letter. Prithee, be content:  
This practice hath most shrewdly pass'd upon  
me; 360

But when we know the grounds and authors  
of it,

Thou shalt be both the plaintiff and the judge  
Of thine own cause.

*Mal.* Good madam, hear me speak,  
And let no quarrel nor no brawl to come  
Taint the condition of this present hour,  
Which I have wonder'd at. In hope it shall not,  
Most freely I confess, myself and Toby  
Set this device against Malvolio here,  
Upon some stubborn and uncourteous part:  
We had conceived against him: Maria writ 370  
The letter at Sir Toby's great importune;  
In recompense whereof he hath married her.  
How with a sportful malice it was follow'd,  
May rather pluck on laughter than revenge;  
If that the injuries be justly weigh'd  
That have on both sides pass'd.

*Oli.* Alas, poor fool, how have they baffled  
thee!

*Cla.* Why, "some are born great, some achieve  
greatness, and some have greatness thrown upon  
them." I was one, sir, in this interlude: one Sir  
Toby, sir; but that's all one. "By the Lord  
fool, I am not mad." But do you remember  
"Madam, why laugh you at such a one?" in mescal  
as you smile not, he's gagged: thus the  
whirligig of time brings in his revenges.

*Mal.* I'll be revenged on the whole pack of  
you.

*Oli.* He hath been most notoriously abused  
*Duke.* Pursue him, and entreat him to  
peace:

He hath not told us of the captain yet: 38  
When that is known and golden time comes  
A solemn combination shall be made  
Of our dear souls. Meantime, sweet sister,  
We will not part from hence. Cesario, come:  
For so you shall be, while you are a man;  
But when in other habits you are seen,  
Orsino's mistress and his fancy's queen.

[Exeunt all, except *Cla.*]

*Cla.* [Sings]

When that I was and a little tiny boy,  
With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,  
A foolish thing was but a toy,  
For the rain it raineth every day. 40

But when I came to man's estate,  
With hey, ho, &c.  
'Gainst knaves and thieves men shut their  
gate,  
For the rain, &c.

But when I came alas! to wive,  
With hey, ho, &c.  
By swaggering could I never thrive,  
For the rain, &c.

But when I came unto my beds,  
With hey, ho, &c.  
With toss-pots still had drunken heads,  
For the rain, &c. 45

A great while ago the world begun,  
With hey, ho, &c.

But that's all one, our play is done,  
And we'll strive to please you every day.  
[Exit]

# THE WINTER'S TALE

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

LEONTES, king of Sicilia.  
 MAMILLIUS, young prince of Sicilia.  
 CAMILLO,  
 ANTIGONUS, } Four Lords of Sicilia.  
 CLEOMENES,  
 DION,  
 POLIXENES, king of Bohemia.  
 FLORIZEL, prince of Bohemia.  
 ARCHIDAMUS, a Lord of Bohemia.  
 Old Shepherd, reputed father of Perdita.  
 Clown, his son.  
 AUTOLYCUS, a rogue.  
 A Mariner.

A Gaoier.  
 HERMIONE, queen to Leontes.  
 PERDITA, daughter to Leontes and Hermione.  
 PAULINA, wife to Antigonus.  
 EMILIA, a lady attending on Hermione.  
 MOPSA,  
 DORCAS, } Shepherdesses.

Other Lords and Gentlemen, Ladies, Officers,  
 and Servants, Shepherds, and Shepherdesses.

Time, as Chorus.

SCENE: Sicilia, and Bohemia.

### ACT I.

SCENE I. *Antechamber in LEONTES' palace.*

*Enter CAMILLO and ARCHIDAMUS.*

*Arch.* If you shall chance, Camillo, to visit Bohemia, on the like occasion whereon my services are now on foot, you shall see, as I have said, great difference betwixt our Bohemia and your Sicilia.

*Cam.* I think, this coming summer, the King of Sicilia means to pay Bohemia the visitation which he justly owes him.

*Arch.* Wherein our entertainment shall shame us we will be justified in our loves; for indeed—

*Cam.* Beseech you,—

*Arch.* Verily, I speak it in the freedom of my knowledge: we cannot with such magnificence—in so rare—I know not what to say. We will give you sleepy drinks, that your senses, unintelligent of our insufficiency, may, though they cannot praise us, as little accuse us.

*Cam.* You pay a great deal too dear for what's given freely.

*Arch.* Believe me, I speak as my understanding instructs me and as mine honesty puts it to utterance.

*Cam.* Sicilia cannot show himself over-kind to Bohemia. They were trained together in their childhoods; and there rooted betwixt them then such an affection, which cannot choose but branch now. Since their more mature dignities and royal necessities made separation of their society, their encounters, though not personal, have been royally attended with interchange of gifts, letters, loving embassies; that they have seemed to be together, though absent, shook hands, as over a vast, and embraced, as it were,

from the ends of opposed winds. The heavens continue their loves!

*Arch.* I think there is not in the world either malice or matter to alter it. You have an unspeakable comfort of your young prince Mamillius: it is a gentleman of the greatest promise that ever came into my note.

*Cam.* I very well agree with you in the hopes of him: it is a gallant child; one that indeed physics the subject, makes old hearts fresh: they that went on crutches ere he was born desire yet their life to see him a man.

*Arch.* Would they else be content to die?

*Cam.* Yes; if there were no other excuse why they should desire to live.

*Arch.* If the king had no son, they would desire to live on crutches till he had one. *[Re-enter.]*

SCENE II. *A room of state in the same.*

*Enter LEONTES, HERMIONE, MAMILLIUS, POLIXENES, CAMILLO, and Attendants.*

*Pol.* Nine changes of the watery star hath been

The shepherd's note since we have left our throne

Without a burthen: time as long again Would be fill'd up, my brother, with our thanks; And yet we should, for perpetuity, Go hence in debt; and therefore, like a cipher, Yet standing in rich place, I multiply With one 'We thank you' many thousands more That go before it.

*Leon.* Stay your thanks a while; And pay them when you part.

*Pol.* Sir, that's to-morrow: as I am question'd by my heart, of what my chance

Or breed upon our absence; that may blow  
No meeping winds at home, to make us say  
'This is put forth too truly:' besides, I have  
stay'd

To tire your royalty.

*Leon.* We are tougher, brother,  
Than you can put us to't.

*Pol.* No longer stay.

*Leon.* One seven-night longer.

*Pol.* Very sooth, to-morrow.

*Leon.* We'll part the time between's then;  
and in that  
I'll no gainsaying.

*Pol.* Press me not, beseech you, so.  
There is no tongue that moves, none, none i'  
the world,

So soon as yours could win me: so it should  
now,

Were there necessity in your request, although  
'Twere needful I denied it. My affairs  
Do even drag me homeward: which to hinder  
Were in your love a whip to me; my stay  
To you a charge and trouble: to save both,  
Farewell, our brother.

*Leon.* Tongue-tied our queen? speak you.

*Her.* I had thought, sir, to have held my  
peace until

You had drawn oaths from him not to stay.

You, sir,

Charge him too coldly. Tell him, you are sure

All in Bohemia's well; this satisfaction

The by-gone day proclaim'd: say this to him,

He's best from his best ward.

*Leon.* Well said, Hermione.

*Her.* To tell, he longs to see his son, were  
strong:

But let him say so then, and let him go;

But let him swear so, and he shall not stay.

We'll thrack him hence with distaffs.

Yet of your royal presence I'll adventure

The borrow of a week. When at Bohemia

You take my lord, I'll give him my com-

mission

To let him there a month behind the guest

Prefix'd for's parting; yet, good deed, *Leontes*,

I love thee not a jar o' the clock behind

What lady she her lord. You'll stay!

*Pol.* No, madam.

*Her.* Nay, but you will!

*Pol.* I may not, verily.

*Her.* Verily!

You put me off with limber vows; but I,

Though you would seek to unsphere the stars

with oaths,

Should yet say 'Sir, no going.' Verily,

You shall not go: a lady's 'Verily's'

As potent as a lord's. Will you go yet?

Force me to keep you as a prisoner,

Not like a guest; so you shall pay your fees

When you depart, and save your thanks. How

say you!

My prisoner! or my guest! by your dread

Verily,

One of them you shall be.

*Pol.* Your guest, then, madam:

To be your prisoner should import offending;

Which is for me less easy to commit

Than you to punish.

*Her.* Not your gaoler, then,  
But your kind hostess. Come, I'll question you  
Of my lord's tricks and yours when you were  
boys: 61

You were pretty lordings then?

*Pol.* We were, fair queen,

Two lads that thought there was no more be-

hind

But such a day to-morrow as to-day,

And to be boy eternal.

*Her.* Was not my lord

The verier wag o' the two?

*Pol.* We were as twinn'd lambs that did

frisk i' the sun,

And bleat the one at the other: what we

changed

Was innocence for innocence; we knew not

The doctrine of ill-doing, nor dream'd

That any did. Had we pursued that life,

And our weak spirits ne'er been higher rear'd

With stronger blood, we should have answer'd

heaven

Boldly 'not guilty;' the imposition clear'd

Hereditary ours.

*Her.* By this we gather

You have tripp'd since.

*Pol.* O my most sacred lady!

Temptations have since then been born to us; for

In those unfiled days was my wife a girl;

Your precious self had then not cross'd the eyes

Of my young play-fellow.

*Her.* Grace to boot!

Of this make no conclusion, lest you say

Your queen and I are devils; yet go on:

The offences we have made you do we'll answer.

If you first sin'd with us and that with us

You did continue fault and that you slipp'd not

With any but with us.

*Leon.* Is he won yet?

*Her.* He'll stay, my lord.

*Leon.* At my request he would not.

Hermione, my dearest, thou never spok'st

To better purpose.

*Her.* Never!

*Leon.* Never, but once.

*Her.* What! have I twice said well? when

was't before?

I prithee tell me; cram's with praise, and

make's

As fat as tame things: one good deed dying

tongueless

Slaughters a thousand waiting upon that.

Our praises are our wages: you may ride's

With one soft kiss a thousand furlongs ere

With spur we heat an acre. But to the goal:

My last good deed was to entreat his stay:

What was my first? it has an elder sister,

Or I mistake you: O, would her name were

Grace!

But once before I spoke to the purpose: when!

Nay, let me have't; I long.

*Leon.* What, that was when

Three crabbed months had sour'd themselves to

death.

Ere I could make thee open thy white hand

And clasp thyself my love: then didst thou utter

'I am yours for ever.'

*Her.* 'Thy grace indeed.'

Why, lo you now, I have spoke to the purpose  
twice:

The one for ever earn'd a royal husband;  
The other for some while a friend.

*Leon.* [Aside] Too hot, too hot!  
To mingle friendship far is mingling bloods.

I have tremor cordis on me; my heart dances;  
But not for joy; not joy. This entertainment  
As now they are, and making practised snikes,  
From heartiness, from bounty, fertile bosom,  
And well become the agent; 't may, I grant;  
But to be paddling palms and pinching fingers,  
As now they are, and making practised snikes,  
As in a looking-glass, and then to sigh, as  
twere

The mort o' the deer; O, that is entertainment  
My bosom likes not, nor my brows! Mamillius,  
Art thou my boy?

*Mam.* Ay, my good lord.

*Leon.* I fecks! 120  
Why, that's my bawcock. What, hast smutch'd  
thy nose?

They say it is a copy out of mine. Come, cap-  
tain.

We must be neat; not neat, but cleanly, cap-  
tain:

And yet the steer, the heifer and the calf  
Are all call'd neat.—Still virginalling  
Upon his palm!—How now, you wanton calf!  
Art thou my calf?

*Mam.* Yes, if you will, my lord.

*Leon.* Thou want'st a rough peash and the  
shoots that I have,

To be full like me: yet they say we are  
Almost as like as eggs; women say so, 130  
That will say any thing: but were they false  
As o'er-dyed blacks, as wind, as waters, false  
As dice are to be wish'd by one that fixes  
No bourn 'twixt his and mine, yet were it true  
To say this boy were like me. Come, sir page,  
Look on me with your welkin eye: sweet  
villain!

Most dear'st! my collop! Can thy dam!—may't  
be!—

Affection! thy intention stabs the centre:  
Thou dost make possible things not so held,  
Communicatest with dreams!—how can this  
be!— 140

With what's unreal thou coactive art,  
And fellow'st nothing: then 'tis very credent  
Thou may'st co-join with something; and thou  
doest.

And that beyond commission, and I find it,  
And that to the infection of my brains  
And hardening of my brows.

*Pol.* What means Sicilia?

*Her.* He something seems unsettled.

*Pol.* How, my lord?

What cheer? how is't with you, best brother?

*Her.* You look

As if you held a brow of much distraction:

Are you moved, my lord?

*Leon.* No, in good earnest.

How sometimes nature will betray its folly,

Its tenderness, and make itself a pastime

To harder bosoms! Looking on the lines

Of my boy's face, methoughts I did recall

Twenty-three years, and saw myself unweath'rd.

in my green velvet coat, my dagger muzzled,  
lest it should bite its master, and so prove,  
as ornaments oft do, too dangerous:  
low like, methought, I then was to this kernel,  
his squash, this gentleman. Mine honest  
friend, 160

Will you take eggs for money?

*Mam.* No, my lord, I'll fight.

*Leon.* You will! why, happy man be'st dole!

My brother,

Are you so fond of your young prince as we  
do seem to be of ours?

*Pol.* If at home, sir,  
he's all my exercise, my mirth, my matter,  
Now my sworn friend and then mine enemy,  
My parasite, my soldier, statesman, all:  
He makes a July's day short as December,  
And with his varying chidness cures in me 170  
Thoughts that would thicken my blood.

*Leon.* So stands this squire  
Officed with me: we two will walk, my lord,  
And leave you to your graver steps. Hermione,  
How thou lovest us, show in our brother's wel-  
come;

Let what is dear in Sicily be cheap:  
Next to thyself and my young rover, he's  
Apparent to my heart.

*Her.* If you would seek us,  
We are yours if the garden: shall'st attend you  
there?

*Leon.* To your own bents dispose you: you'll  
be found,

Be you beneath the sky. [Aside] I am angling  
now, 180

Though you perceive me not how I give line.

[To Pol.] Go to!

How she holds up the neb, the bill to him!

And arms her with the boldness of a wife

To her allowing husband!

[Exeunt Polixenes, Hermione, and  
Attendants.]

Gone already!

Inch-thick, knee-deep, o'er head and ears a  
fork'd one!

Go, play, boy, play: thy mother plays, and I  
Play too, but so disgraced a part, whose issue

Will hiss me to my grave: contempt and  
clamour

Will be my knell. Go, play, boy, play. There  
have been, 190

Or I am much deceived, cuckolds ere now;

And many a man there is, even at this present,

Now while I speak this, holds his wife by the  
arm,

That little thinks she has been eluded in't  
absence

And his pond fish'd by his next neighbour; by

Sir Smile, his neighbour: nay, there's comfort  
in't

Whiles other men have gates and those gates  
open'd,

As mine, against their will. Should all deceits

That have revolv'd wives, the tenth of mankind

Would hang themselves. 'Physic for'st here is  
none;

It is a hardy planet, that will strike

Where 'tis predominant; and 'tis powerful

think it,

From east, west, north and south : be it con-

No barricado for a belly ; know 't ;  
It will let in and out the enemy  
With bag and baggage : many thousand on 's  
Have the disease, and feel 't not. How now,  
boy !

*Mam.* I am like you, they say.

*Leon.* Why, that 's some comfort.  
What, Camillo there !

*Cam.* Ay, my good lord.

*Leon.* Go play, Mamilius ; thou 'rt an honest  
man. *[Exit Mamilius.]*

*Camillo,* this great sir will yet stay longer.

*Cam.* You had much ado to make his anchor  
hold :

When you cast out, it still came home.

*Leon.* Didst note it !

*Cam.* He would not stay at your petitions ;  
made

His business more material.

*Leon.* Didst perceive it !

*[Aside.]* They 're here with me already, whisper-  
ing, rounding

' Sicilia is a so-forth : ' 'tis far gone.

When I shall gust is last. How came 't, Camillo,  
That he did stay !

*Cam.* At the good queen's entreaty. 250

*Leon.* At the queen's be 't : 'good' should  
be pertinent :

But, so it is, it is not. Was this taken  
By any understanding pate but thine !

For thy conceit is soaking, will draw in  
More than the common blocks : not noted, is 't,

But of the finer natures ! by some severals  
Of head-piece extraordinary ! lower measures

Perchance are to this business purblind ! say.

*Cam.* Business, my lord ! I think most un-  
derstand

Bohemia stays here longer.

*Leon.* Ha !

*Cam.* Stays here longer. 250

*Leon.* Ay, but why !

*Cam.* To satisfy your highness and the en-  
treaties

Of our most gracious mistress.

*Leon.* Satisfy !

The entreaties of your mistress ! satisfy !  
Let that suffice. I have trusted thee, Camillo

With all the nearest things to my heart, as well  
My chamber-councils, wherein, priest-like, thou

Hast cleansed my bosom, I from thee departed  
Thy penitent reform'd : but we have been

Deceived in thy integrity, deceived 260  
In that which seems so.

*Cam.* Be it forbid, my lord !

*Leon.* To hide upon 't, thou art not honest,  
on,

If thou inclinest that way, thou art a coward,  
Which bates honesty behind, restraining

From course required ; or else thou must be  
counted

A servant grafted in my serious trust  
And therein negligent ; or else a fool

That sees a game play'd home, the rich stake  
drawn,

And takes it all for just.

*Cam.* My gracious lord,

I may be negligent, foolish and fearful ; 250

In every one of these no man is free,  
But that his negligence, his folly, fear,

Among the infinite doings of the world,  
Sometime puts forth. In your affairs, my lord,

If ever I were wilful-negligent,  
It was my folly ; if industriously

I play'd the fool, it was my negligence  
Not weighing well the end ; if ever

To do a thing, where I the issue doubt  
Whereof the execution did cry out 260

Against the non-performance, 'twas a fear  
Which off infects the wisest ; these, my lord,

Are such allow'd infirmities that honesty  
Is never free of. But, beseech your grace,

Be plainer with me ; let me know my trespass  
By its own viage : if I then deny it,

'Tis none of mine.

*Leon.* Ha ! not you seen, Camillo,—  
But that 's past doubt, you have, or your eye-

glass  
Is thicker than a cuckold's horn,—or heard,—  
For to a vision so apparent rumour 270

' Cannot be mute,—or thought,—for cogitation  
Resides not in that man that does not think,—

My wife is slippery ! If thou wilt confess,  
Or else be impudently negative,

To have nor eyes nor ears nor thought, then say  
My wife 's a hobby-horse, deserves a name

As rank as any flax-wench that puts to  
Before her truth-plight : say 't and justify 't.

*Cam.* I would not be a stander-by to hear  
My sovereign mistress clouded so, without 280

My present vengeance taken : 'shrew my heart,  
You never spoke what did become you less

Than this : which to reiterate were sin  
As deep as that, though true.

*Leon.* Is whispering nothing !  
Is leaning cheek to cheek ! is meeting noses !

Kissing with inside lip ! stopping the career  
Of laughter with a sigh !—a note infallible

Of breaking honesty—horning foot on foot !  
Skulking in corners ? washing clocks more

swift !  
Hours, minutes ? noon, midnight ? and all eyes

Blind with the pin and web but theirs, theirs  
only, 290

That would unseen be wicked ! is this nothing !  
Why, then the world and all that 's in 't is

nothing :  
The covering sky is nothing ; Bohemia nothing ;

My wife is nothing ; nor nothing have these  
nothings.

If this be nothing.

*Cam.* Good my lord, be cured  
Of this diseased opinion, and belimes ;

For 'tis most dangerous.

*Leon.* Say it be, 'tis true.

*Cam.* No, no, my lord.

*Leon.* It is ; you lie, you lie :  
I say thou liest, Camillo, and I hate thee, 300

I pronounce thee a gross lout, a mindless slave,  
Or else a bawling temporizer, that

Canst with thine eyes at once see good and  
evil,

Inclining to them both : were my wife's liver  
Infected so far life, she would not live

The running of one !

*Cam.* Who does infect her!  
*Leon.* Why, he that wears her like her  
 medal, hanging

About his neck, Bohemia: who, if I  
 Had servants true about me, that bare eyes  
 To see alike mine honour as their profits, 310  
 Their own particular thrifts, they would do that  
 Which should undo more doing: ay, and thou,  
 His cupbearer,—whom I from meaner form  
 Have bench'd and rear'd to worship, who mayst

Plainly as heaven sees earth and earth sees  
 heaven,

How I am galled,—mightst bespice a cup.  
 To give mine enemy a lasting wink;  
 Which draught to me were cordial.

*Cam.* Sir, my lord,  
 I could do this, and that with no rash potion,  
 But with a lingering dram that should not work  
 Maliciously like poison: but I cannot 321  
 Believe this crack to be in my dread mistress,  
 So sovereignly being honourable.  
 I have loved thee,—

*Leon.* † Make that thy question, and go not!  
 Dost think I am so muddy, so unsettled,  
 To appoint myself in this vexation, sully  
 The purity and whiteness of my sheets,  
 Which to preserve is alceps, which being spotted  
 Is goods, thorns, nettles, tails of wasps,  
 Give scandal to the blood o' the prince my son.  
 Who I do think is mine and love as mine, 311  
 Without ripe moving to't? Would I do this!  
 Could man so blench?

*Cam.* I must believe you, sir:  
 I do; and will fetch off Bohemia for't:  
 Provided that, when he's removed, your highness  
 Will take again your queen as yours at first,  
 Even for your son's sake; and thereby for  
 sealing

The injury of tongues in courts and kingdoms  
 Known and allied to yours.

*Leon.* Thou dost advise me  
 Even so as I mine own course have set down:  
 I'll give no blemish to her honour, none. 341

*Cam.* My lord,  
 Go then; and with a countenance as clear  
 As friendship wears at feasts, keep with  
 Bohemia

And with your queen. I am his cupbearer:  
 If from me he have wholesome beverage,  
 Account me not your servant.

*Leon.* This is all:  
 Do't and thou hast the one half of my heart;  
 Do't not, thou split'tt thine own.

*Cam.* I'll do't, my lord.  
*Leon.* I will seem friendly, as thou hast  
 advised me. [Exit, 35

*Cam.* O miserable lady! But, for me,  
 What case stand I in? I must be the poisoner  
 Of good Polixenes; and my ground to do't  
 Is the obedience to a master, one  
 Who in rebellion with himself will have  
 All that are his so too. To do this deed,  
 Promotion follows. If I could find example  
 Of thousands that had struck anointed kings  
 And flourish'd afresh, I'd not do't; but since  
 Nor haste nor shame nor punishment bears me  
 one,

et villany itself forswear't. I must  
 'crack the court; to do't, or no, is certain  
 'ome a break-neck. Happy star reign now!  
 Here comes Bohemia.

Re-enter POLIXENES.

*Pol.* This is strange; methinks  
 My favour here begins to warp. Not speak!  
 Good day, Camillo.

*Cam.* Hail, most royal sir!

*Pol.* What is the news i' the court?

*Cam.* None rare, my lord.

*Pol.* The king hath on him such a counte-  
 nance

As he had lost some province and a region  
 Lived as he loves himself: even now I met him  
 With customary compliment; when he, 371  
 Waving his eyes to the contrary and frowning  
 A lip of much contempt, speeds from me and  
 So leaves me to consider what is breeding  
 That changeth thus his manners.

*Cam.* I dare not know, my lord.

*Pol.* How! dare not! I do not. Do you know,  
 and dare not?

Be intelligent to me: 'tis thereabouts;  
 For, to yourself, what you do know, you must,  
 And cannot say, you dare not. Good Camillo,  
 Your changed complexions are to me a mirror.  
 Which shows me mine changed too; for I  
 must be

A party in this alteration, finding  
 Myself thus alter'd with't.

*Cam.* There is a sickness  
 Which puts some of us in distemper, but  
 I cannot name the disease; and it is caught  
 Of you that yet are well.

*Pol.* How! caught of me?  
 Make me not sighted like the basilisk:

I have look'd on thousands, who have sped the  
 better

By my regard, but kill'd none so. Camillo,—  
 As you are certainly a gentleman, therefore 391  
 Clerk-like experienced, which no less adorns  
 Our gentry than our parents' noble names,  
 In whose success we are gentle,—I beseech you,  
 If you know aught which does behoove my know-  
 ledge

Thereof to be inform'd, imprison't not  
 In ignorant concealment.

*Cam.* I may not answer.

*Pol.* A sickness caught of me, and yet I  
 well!

I must be answer'd. Dost thou hear, Camillo?  
 I conjure thee, by all the parts of man 400  
 Which honour does acknowledge, whereof thou  
 least

Is not this suit of mine, that thou declare  
 What incidency thou dost guess of harm  
 Is creeping toward me; how far off, how!  
 Which way to be prevented, if to be;  
 If not, how best to bear it.

*Cam.* Sir, I will tell you;  
 Since I am charged in honour and by him  
 That I think honourable: therefore must I say  
 counsel.

Which must be even as swiftly follow'd as  
 I mean to utter it, or both yourself and me 410

Cry lost, and so good night!

*Pol.* On, good Camillo.

*Cass.* I am appointed him to murder you.

*Pol.* By whom, Camillo?

*Cass.* By the king.

*Pol.* For what?

*Cass.* He thinks, nay, with all confidence he swears,

As he had seen 't or been an instrument  
To vice you to 't, that you have touch'd his  
queen

Forbiddenly.

*Pol.* O, then my best blood turn

To an infected jelly and my name

Be yoked with his that did betray the Best!

Turn then my freshest reputation to

A savour that may strike the duldest nostril

Where I arrive, and my approach be shunn'd,

Nay, hated too, worse than the great'st infection

That e'er was heard or read!

*Cass.* Swear his thought over

By each particular star in heaven and

By all their influences, you may as well

Forbid the sea for to obey the moon

As or by oath remove or counsel shake

The fabric of his folly, whose foundation

Is piled upon his faith and will continue

The standing of his body.

*Pol.* How should this grow?

*Cass.* I know not: but I am sure 'tis

safer to

Avoid what's grown than question how 'tis

born.

If therefore you dare trust my honesty,

That lies enclosed in this trunk which you

Shall bear along unpawn'd, away to-night!

Your followers I will whisper to the business,

And will by twos and threes at several posterns

Clear them o' the city. For myself, I'll put

My fortunes to your service, which are here

By this discovery lost. Be not uncertain;

For, by the honour of my parents, I

Have utter'd truth: which if you seek to prove,

I dare not stand by; nor shall you be safer

Than one condemn'd by the king's own mouth,

thereon

His execution sworn.

*Pol.* I do believe thee:

I saw his heart in 's face. Give me thy hand:

Be pilot to me and thy places shall

Still neighbour mine. My ships are ready and

My people did expect my hence departure

Two days ago. This jealousy

Is for a precious creature: as she's rare,

Must it be great, and as his person's mighty,

Must it be violent, and as he does conceive

He is dishonour'd by a man which ever

Profess'd to him, why, his revenges must

In that be made more bitter. Fear o' embroils

me:

Good expedition be my friend, and comfort

! The gracious queen, part of his theme, but

nothing

Of his ill-taken suspicion! Come, Camillo;

I will suspect thee as a father if

Thou bear'st my life off hence: let us avoid.

*Cass.* I have mine authority to command

The keys of all the posterns: please your  
highness

To take the urgent hour. Come, sir, away.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II

### SCENE I. A room in LEONTES'.

*Enter HERMIONE, MAMILLIUS, and Ladies.*

*Her.* Take the boy to you: he so troubles me,  
'Tis past enduring.

*First Lady.* Come, my gracious lord,  
Shall I be your playfellow?

*Mam.* No, I'll none of you.

*First Lady.* Why, my sweet lord?

*Mam.* You'll kiss me hard and speak to  
me as if

I were a baby still. I love you better.

*Sec. Lady.* And why so, my lord?

*Mam.* Not for because

Your brows are blacker; yet black brows, they

say,

Become some women best, so that there be not

Too much hair there, but in a semicircle,

Or a half-moon made with a pen.

*Sec. Lady.* Who taught you this?

*Mam.* I learnt it out of women's faces.

Pray now

What colour are your eyebrows?

*First Lady.* Blue, my lord.

*Mam.* Nay, that's a mock: I have seen a

lady's nose

That has been blue, but not her eyebrows.

*First Lady.* Mark ye;

The queen your mother rounds apace: we shall

Present our services to a line new prince

One of these days; and then you'd wanton

with us.

If we would have you.

*Sec. Lady.* She is spread of late

Into a goodly bulk: good time encounter her!

*Her.* What wisdom stirs amongst you?

Come, sir, now

I am for you again: pray you, sit by us,

And tell 's a tale.

*Mam.* Merry or sad shall 't be?

*Her.* As merry as you will.

*Mam.* A sad tale's best for winter: I have

one

Of sprites and goblins.

*Her.* Let's have that, good sir.

Come on, sit down: come on, and do your best

To fright me with your sprites; you're power-

ful at it.

*Mam.* There was a man—

*Her.* Nay, come, sit down; then on.

*Mam.* Dwelt by a churchyard: I will tell 't

softly;

You'll crickets shall not hear it.

*Her.* Come on, then,

And give 't me in mine ear.

*Enter LEONTES, with ANTIQVUS, Lords,  
and others.*

*Leont.* Was he met there? his again? Camillo  
with him?



*First Lord.* Behind the tuft of pines I met them; never  
Saw I men scour so on their way: I eyed them  
Even to their ships.

*Leon.* How blest am I  
In my just censure, in my true opinion!  
Alack, for lesser knowledge! how accursed  
In being so blest! There may be in the cup  
A spider steep'd, and one may drink, depart,  
And yet partake no venom, for his knowledge  
Is not infected: but if one present  
The abhor'd ingredient to his eye, make known  
How he hath drunk, he cracks his gorge, his  
sides,

With violent hefts. I have drunk, and seen  
the spider.

Camillo was his help in this, his pandar:  
There is a plot against my life, my crown:  
All's true that is mistrusted: that false villain  
Whom I employ'd was pre-employ'd by him:  
He has discover'd my design, and I  
Remain a pinch'd thing; yea, a very trick  
For them to play at will. How came the  
posterns

So easily open?

*First Lord.* By his great authority;  
Which often hath no less prevail'd than so  
On your command.

*Leon.* I know't too well.  
Give me the boy: I am glad you did not nurse  
him;  
Though he does bear some signs of me, yet you  
Have too much blood in him.

*Her.* What is this? sport?

*Leon.* Bear the boy hence; he shall not  
come about her;

Away with him! and let her sport herself  
With that she's big with; for his Polixenes  
Has made thee swell thus.

*Her.* But I'd say he had not,  
And I'll be sworn you would believe my saying,  
How'er you lean to the wayward.

*Leon.* You, my lords,  
Look on her, mark her well; be but about  
To say 'she is a goodly lady,' and  
The justice of your hearts will thereto add  
'Tis pity she's not honest, honourable:  
Praise her but for this her without-door form,  
Which on my faith deserves high speech, and  
straight

The shrug, the hum or ha, these petty brands  
That calumny doth use—O, I am out—  
That mercy does, for calumny will scar  
Virtue itself: these shrugs, these hums and ha's,  
When you have said 'she's goodly,' come  
between

For you can say 'she's honest:' but be't known,  
From him that has most cause to grieve it  
should be,

She's an adulteress.

*Her.* Should a villain say so,  
The most replenish'd villain in the world,  
He were as much more villain: you, my lord, so  
do but mistake.

*Leon.* You have mistook, my lady,  
Polixenes for Leontes: O thou thing!  
Which I'll not call a creature of thy place,  
Lost barbarism, making me this precedent,

Should a like language use to all degrees  
And mannerly distinguishment leave out  
Betwixt the prince and beggar: I have said  
She's an adulteress; I have said with whom:  
More, she's a traitor and Camillo is  
A federy with her, and one that knows  
What she should shame to know herself  
But with her most vile principal, that she's  
A bod-swerer, even as bad as those  
That vulgars give bold titles, ay, and privy  
To this their late escape.

*Her.* No, by my life,  
Privy to none of this. How will this grieve you,  
When you shall come to clearer knowledge, that  
You thus have publish'd me! Gentle my lord,  
You scarce can right me thoroughly then to say  
You did mistake.

*Leon.* No; if I mistake  
In those foundations which I build upon,  
The centre is not big enough to bear  
A school-boy's top. Away with her! to prison!  
He who shall speak for her is afar off guilty  
But that he speaks.

*Her.* There's some ill planet reigns:  
I must be patient till the heavens look  
With an aspect more favourable. Good my  
lords,

I am not prone to weeping, as our sex  
Commonly are; the want of which vain dew  
Perchance shall dry your pities: but I have  
That honourable grief lodg'd here which burns  
Worse than tears down: beseech you all, my  
lords,

With thoughts so qualified as your charities  
Shall best instruct you, measure me; and so  
The king's will be perform'd!

*Leon.* Shall I be heard?  
*Her.* Who is't that goes with me! Beseech  
your highness,

My women may be with me; for you see  
My plight requires it. Do not weep, good fools;  
There is no cause: when you shall know your  
mistress

Has deserved prison, then abound in tears  
As I come out: this action I now go on  
Is for my better grace. Adieu, my lord:  
I never wish'd to see you sorry; now  
I trust I shall. My women, come; you have  
leave.

*Leon.* Go, do our bidding; hence!

[*Exit Queen, guarded; with Ladies.*  
*First Lord.* Beseech your highness, call the  
queen again.

*Ant.* Be certain what you do, sir, lest your  
justice

Prove violence; in the which three great ones  
suffer.

Yourself, your queen, your son.

*First Lord.* For her, my lord,  
I dare my life lay down and will do't, sir,  
Please you to accept it, that the queen is spotless  
In the eyes of heaven and to you; I mean,  
In this which you accuse her.

*Ant.* If it prove  
[*She's otherwise, I'll keep my station where  
I lodge my wife; I'll go in couples with her.  
Then when I feel and see her no further trust  
her;*

For every inch of woman in the world,  
Ay, every dram of woman's flesh is false,  
If she be.

*Leon.* Hold your peace.

*First Lord.* Good my lord,—

*Ant.* It is for you we speak, not for ourselves: 140

You are abused and by some putter-on  
That will be damn'd for't; would I knew the villain,

I would land-damn him. Be she honour-flaw'd,  
I have three daughters; the eldest is eleven;  
The second and the third, nine, and some five;  
If this prove true, they'll pay for't: by mine honour,

I'll geld 'em all; fourteen they shall not see,  
To bring false generations: they are c-hairs;  
And I had rather glib myself than they  
Should not produce fair issue.

*Leon.* Cease: no more.  
You smell this business with a sense as cold 151  
As is a dead man's nose: but I do see't and feel't.

As you feel doing thus; and see withal  
The instruments that feel.

*Ant.* If it be so,  
We need no grave to bury honesty:  
There's not a grain of it the face to sweeten  
Of the whole dungy earth.

*Leon.* What! lack I credit?  
*First Lord.* I had rather you did lack than I, my lord,

Upon this ground; and more it would content me 159  
To have her honour true than your suspicion,  
Be blamed for't how you might.

*Leon.* Why, what need we  
Commune with you of this, but rather follow  
Our forceful instigation? Our prerogative  
Calls not your counsels, but our natural good-

ness  
Imparts this; which if you, or stupidified  
Or seeming so in skill, cannot or will not  
Relish a truth like us, inform yourselves  
We need no more of your advice: the matter,  
The loss, the gain, the ordering on't, is all  
Properly ours.

*Ant.* And I wish, my liege, 170  
You had only in your silent judgment tried it,  
Without more overture.

*Leon.* How could that be?  
Either thou art most ignorant by age,  
Or thou wert born a fool. Camillo's flight,  
Added to their familiarity,  
Which was as gross as ever touch'd conjecture,  
That lack'd sight only, nought for apprehension  
But only seeing, all other circumstances  
Made up to the deed, doth push on this pre-

ceding: 180  
Yet, for a greater confirmation,  
For in an act of this importance 'twere  
Most ominous to be wild, I have dispatch'd in post  
To sacred Delphos, to Apollo's temple,  
Cressidus and Dion, whom you know  
Of our old enmity; now from the oracle  
Will bring all; whose spiritual counsel had,  
Stop or pursue. Have I done well?  
*First Lord.* Well done, my lord.

*Leon.* Though I am satisfied and need no more

Than what I know, yet shall the oracle 190  
Give rest to the minds of others, such as he  
Whose ignorant credulity will not  
Come up to the truth. So have we thought it good

From our free person she should be confin'd,  
Lest that the treachery of the two fled hence  
Be left her to perform. Come, follow us:  
We are to speak in public; for this business  
Will raise us all.

*Ant.* [Aside] To laughter, as I take it,  
If the good truth were known. [Exeunt.]

## SCENE II. A prison.

Enter PAULINA, a Gentleman, and Attendants.

*Paul.* The keeper of the prison, call to him;  
Let him have knowledge who I am.

[Enter Gent. Good lady,  
No court in Europe is too good for thee;  
What dost thou then in prison?]

Re-enter Gentleman, with the Gaoler.

Now, good sir,  
You know me, do you not? For a worthy lady  
*Gaol.* And one whom much I honour.

*Paul.* Pray you then,  
Conduct me to the queen.

*Gaol.* I may not, madam:  
To the contrary I have express commandment.  
*Paul.* Here's ado,  
To lock up honesty and honour from 19  
The access of gentle visitors! Is't lawful, pray you,

To see her women? any of them? Emilia?  
*Gaol.* So please you, madam,

To put apart these your attendants, I  
Shall bring Emilia forth.

*Paul.* I pray now, call her.  
Withdraw yourselves.

[Exeunt Gentlemen and Attendants]  
*Gaol.* And, madam,  
I must be present at your conference.

*Paul.* Well, be't so, prithee. [Exit Gaoler.  
Here's such ado to make no stain a stain  
As passes colouring.

Re-enter Gaoler, with EMILIA.

Dear gentlewoman, 20  
How fares our gracious lady?

*Emil.* As well as one so great and so forlorn  
May hold together: on her frights and griefs,  
Which never tender lady hath borne greater,  
She is something before her time deliver'd.

*Paul.* A boy!  
*Emil.* A daughter, and a goodly babe,  
Lusty and like to live: the queen receives  
Much comfort in't; says 'My poor prisoner,  
I am innocent as you.'

*Paul.* I dare be sworn  
These dangerous uncles [and] the king, be-  
shrew them!  
He must be told on't, and he shall: the office  
Becomes a woman best: I'll take my part in't.

If I prove honey-mouth'd, let my tongue blister  
And never to my red-look'd anger be  
The trumpet any more. Pray you, Emilia,  
Command my best obedience to the queen:  
If she dares trust me with her little babe,  
I'll show 't the king and undertake to be  
Her advocate to the loud'st. We do not know  
How he may soften at the sight o' the child: so  
The silence often of pure innocence  
Persuades when speaking fails.

*Emil.* Most worthy madam,  
Your honour and your goodness is so evident  
That your free undertaking cannot miss  
A thriving issue: there is no lady living  
So meet for this great errand. Please your lady-  
ship

To visit the next room, I'll presently  
Acquaint the queen of your most noble offer;  
Who but to-day hammer'd of this design,  
But durst not tempt a minister of honour, so  
Lest she should be denied.

*Paul.* Tell her, Emilia,  
I'll use that tongue I have: if wit flow from 't  
As boldness from my bosom, let's not be  
doubted

I shall do good.

*Emil.* Now be you blest for it!  
I'll to the queen: please you, come something  
nearer.

*Paul.* Madam, if't please the queen to send  
the babe,

I know not what I shall incur to pass it,  
Having no warrant.

*Paul.* You need not fear it, sir:  
This child was prisoner to the womb and is  
by law and process of great nature thence so  
Free and enfranchised, not a party to  
The anger of the king nor guilty of,  
If any be, the trespass of the queen.

*Paul.* I do believe it.

*Paul.* Do not you fear: upon mine honour, I  
Will stand betwixt you and danger. [Exit.]

### SCENE III. A room in LEONTES' palace.

*Enter LEONTES, ANTIGONUS, Lords, and  
Servants.*

*Leon.* Nor night nor day no rest: it is but  
weakness  
To bear the matter thus; mere weakness. If  
The cause were not in being,—part o' the cause,  
—be the adulteress; for the harlot king  
Is quite beyond mine arm, out of the blank  
And level of my brain, plot-proof; but she  
I can hook to me: say that she were gone,  
Given to the fire, a moiety of my rest  
Might come to me again. Who's there?

*My Serv.* My lord.

*Leon.* How does the boy?

*My Serv.* He took good rest to-night; so  
He hoped his sickness is discharged.

*Leon.* To see his nobleness!

Conceiving the dishonour of his mother,  
He straight declined, droop'd, took it deeply,  
Fasten'd and fix'd the shame on 't in himself,  
Threw off his spirit, his appetite, his sleep,  
And downright languish'd. Leave me solely

See how he fares. [Exit Serv.] Fie, fie! no  
thought of him!

The very thought of my revenges that way  
Recoil upon me: in himself too mighty, so  
And in his parties, his alliance; let him be  
Until a time may serve: for present vengeance,  
Take it on her. Camillo and Polixenes  
Laugh at me, make their pastimes at my sorrow:  
They should not laugh if I could reach them, nor  
Shall she within my power.

*Enter PAULINA, with a child.*

*First Lord.* You must not enter.  
*Paul.* Nay, rather, good my lords, besound  
me to:

Fear you his tyrannous passion more, alas,  
Than the queen's life? a gracious innocent soul,  
More free than he is in jealousy.

*Ant.* That's enough. so  
*Sec. Serv.* Madam, he hath not slept to-  
night; commanded  
None should come at him.

*Paul.* Not so hot, good sir:  
I come to bring him sleep. 'Tis such as you,  
That creep like shadows by him and do sigh  
At each his needless heaving, such as you  
Nourish the cause of his awaking: I  
Do come with words as medicinal as true,  
Honest as ether, to purge him of that humour  
That presses him from sleep.

*Leon.* What noise there, ho!

*Paul.* No noise, my lord; but needful con-  
ference so

About some gossip for your highness.

*Leon.* How!  
Away with that audacious lady! Antigonus,  
I charged thee that she should not come about me:  
I knew she would.

*Ant.* I told her so, my lord,  
On your displeasure's peril and on mine,  
She should not visit you.

*Leon.* What, canst not rule her?  
*Paul.* From all dishonesty he can: in this,  
Unless he take the course that you have done,  
Commit me for committing honour, trust it,  
He shall not rule me.

*Ant.* Is you now, you hear: so  
When she will take the rein I let her run;  
But she'll not stumble.

*Paul.* Good my king, I come;  
And, I beseech you, hear me, who profess  
Myself your loyal servant, your physician,  
Your most obedient counselor, yet that dare  
Less appear so in comforting your evils,  
Than such as most soon yours: I say, I come  
From your good queen.

*Leon.* Good queen!  
*Paul.* Good queen, my lord,  
Good queen; I say good queen;

And would by combat make her good, so were I  
A man, the worst about you.

*Leon.* Force her hence, so  
*Paul.* Let him that makes but trifles of his  
eyes

First hand me: on mine own accord I'll off;  
But first I'll do my errand. The good queen,  
For she is good, hath brought you such a  
daughter.

Here 'tis; commands it to your blessing.

*[Laying down the child.*

*Out!*

*Leon.* A mankint witch! Hence with her, out o' door:

A most intelligencing bawd!

*Paul.* Not so:

I am as ignorant in that as you

In so entitling me, and no less honest

Than you are mad; which is enough, I'll

warrant.

As this world goes, to pass for honest.

*Leon.* Traitors!

Will you not push her out? Give her the bastard!

Thou dotard! thou art woman-tired, unroosted!

By thy dame Partlet here. Take up the bastard;

Take 't up, I say; give 't to thy crone.

*Paul.* For ever

Unvenerable be thy hands, if thou

Takest up the princess by that forced baseness

Which he has put upon 't!

*Leon.* He dreads his wife.

*Paul.* So I would you did; then 'twere past

all doubt

You 'ld call your children yours.

*Leon.* A nest of traitors!

*Ant.* I am none, by this good light.

*Paul.* Nor I, nor any

But one that's here, and that's himself, for he

The sacred honour of himself, his queen's,

His hopeful son's, his babe's, betrays to slander,

Whose sting is sharper than the sword's; and

will not—

For, as the case now stands, it is a curse

He cannot be compell'd to—once remove

The root of his opinion, which is rotten

As ever oak or stone was sound.

*Leon.* A callet

Of boundless tongue, who late hath beat her

husband

And now baits me! This brat is none of mine;

It is the issue of Polixenes:

Hence with it, and together with the dam

Commit them to the fire!

*Paul.* It is yours:

And, might we lay the old proverb to your

charge,

So like you, 'tis the worse. Behold, my lords,

Although the print be little, the whole matter

And copy of the father, eye, nose, lip,

The trick of 's frown, his forehead, nay, the

valley,

The pretty dimples of his chin and cheek,

His smiles,

The very mould and frame of hand, nail, finger:

And thou, good goddess Nature, which hast

made it

So like to him that got it, if thou hast

The ordering of the mind too, 'mongst all

colours

No yellow in 't, lest she suspect, as he does,

Her children not her husband's!

*Leon.* A gross hag!

And, lo! thou art worthy to be hang'd,

That wilt not stay her tongue.

*Ant.* Hang all the husbands

That cannot do that feat, you 'll leave yourself

hardly one subject.

*Leon.* Once more, take her hence.

*Paul.* A most unworthy and unnatural lord

Can do no more.

*Leon.* I'll ha' thee burnt.

*Paul.* I care not:

It is an heretic that makes the fire,

Not she which burns in 't. I'll not call you

tyrant;

But this most cruel usage of your queen,

Not able to produce more accusation

Than your own weak-hinged fancy, something

savours

Of tyranny and will ignoble make you,

Yes, scandalous to the world.

*Leon.* On your allegiance,

Out of the chamber with her! Were I a tyrant,

Where were her life? she durst not call me so,

If she did know me one. Away with her!

*Paul.* I pray you, do not push me; I'll be

gone.

Look to your bale, my lord; 'tis yours: Jove

send her

A better guiding spirit! What needs these

hands?

You, that are thus so tender o'er his follies,

Will never do him good, not one of you.

So, so; farewell; we are gone. *[Exit.]*

*Leon.* Thou, traitor, hast set on thy wife to

this.

My child! away with 't! Even thou, that hast

A heart so tender o'er it, take it hence

And see it instantly consumed with fire;

Even thou, and none but thou. Take it up

straight:

Within this hour bring me word 'tis done.

And by good testimony, or I'll seize thy life.

With what thou else call'st thine. If thou refuse

And wilt encounter with my wrath, say so;

The bastard brains with these my proper hands

Shall I dash out. Go, take it to the fire; I'll

For thou set'st on thy wife.

*Ant.*

I did not, sir:

These lords, my noble fellows, if they please,

Can clear me in 't.

*Lords.*

We can: my royal liege,

He is not guilty of her coming hither.

*Leon.* You're liars all.

*First Lord.* Beseech your highness, give us

better credit:

We have always truly served you, and beseech you

So to esteem of us, and on our knees we beg,

As recompense of our dear services

Fast and to come, that you do change this pur-

pose.

Which being so horrible, so bloody, must

Lead on to some foul issue: we all kneel.

*Leon.* I am a feather for each wind that

blows:

Shall I live on to see this bastard kneel

And call me father? better burn it now

Than curse it then. But be it: let it live.

It shall not neither. You, sir, come you hither:

You that have been so tenderly officious

With Lady Margery, your midwife there.

To save this bastard's life,—for 'tis a bastard,

So sure as this board's grey,—what will you ad-

venture

To save this brat's life?

*Ant.*

Any thing, my lord,

That my ability may undergo  
And nobleness impose : at least thus much :  
I'll pawn the little blood which I have left  
To save the innocent : any thing possible.

*Leon.* It shall be possible. Swear by this sword

Thou wilt perform my bidding.

*Ant.* I will, my lord.

*Leon.* Mark and perform it, see'st thou! for the fall 170

(Of any point in't shall not only be death to thyself but to thy lewd-tongued wife, Whom for this time we pardon. We enjoin thee,

As thou art liege-man to us, that thou carry This female bastard hence and that thou bear it To some remote and desert place quite out (Of our dominions, and that there thou leave it, Without more mercy, to its own protection And favour of the climate. As by strange fortune

It came to us, I do in justice charge thee, 180 On thy soul's peril and thy body's torture, That thou commend it strangely to some place Where chance may nurse or end it. Take it up.

*Ant.* I swear to do this, though a present death

Had been more merciful. Come on, poor babe : Some powerful spirit instruct the kites and ravens

To be thy nurses! Wolves and bears, they say, Casting their savageness aside have done Like officers of pity. Sir, be prosperous In more than this deed does require! *Ant.* blessing 190

Against this cruelty fight on thy side, Poor thing, condemn'd to loss!

[*Exit with the child.*

No, I'll not rear

*Leon.* Another's issue.

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* Please your highness, posts From those you sent to the oracle are come An hour since : Cleomenes and Dion, Being well arrived from Delphos, are both landed,

Hasting to the court.

*First Lord.* No please you, sir, their speed Hath been beyond account.

*Leon.* Twenty three days They have been absent : 'tis good speed ; foretells

The great Apollo suddenly will have 200 The truth of this appear. Prepare you, lords ; Summon a session, that we may arraign Our most disloyal lady, for, as she hath been publicly accused, so shall she have A just and open trial. While she lives My heart will be a burthen to me. Leave me, And think upon my bidding. [*Exeunt.*

### ACT III.

SCENE I. A sea-port in Sicily.

*Enter CLEOMENES and DION.*

*Cleo.* The climate's delicate, the air sweet,

'ertile the soil, the temple much surpassing The common praise it bears.

*Dion.* I shall report, 'or most it caught me, the celestial habits, Methinks I so should term them, and the reverence

Of the grave wearers. O, the sacrifice ! low ceremonious, solemn and unearthly 'twas ! the offering!

*Cleo.* But of all, the burst And the ear-deafening voice of the oracle, 'sin to Jove's thunder, so surprised my sense, 'twas that I was nothing.

*Dion.* If the event of the journey Prove as successful to the queen,—O be't so!—As it hath been to us rare, pleasant, speedy, 'The time is worth the use on't.

*Cleo.* Great Apollo 'Turn all to the best ! These proclamations, So forcing faults upon Hermione, little like.

*Dion.* The violent carriage of it Will clear or end the business : when the oracle, Thus by Apollo's great divine seal'd up, Shall the contents discover, something rare : so Even then will rush to knowledge. Go : fresh horses !

And gracious be the issue !

[*Exeunt.*

### SCENE II. A court of Justice.

*Enter LEONTES, Lords, and Officers.*

*Leon.* This sessions, to our great grief we pronounce,

Even pushes 'gainst our heart : the party tried The daughter of a king, our wife, and one (Of us too much beloved. Let us be clear'd (Of being tyrannous, since we so openly Proceed in justice, which shall have due course, Even to the guilt or the purgation. Produce the prisoner.

*Off.* It is his highness' pleasure that the queen Appear in person here in court. Silence! 20

*Enter HERMIONE guarded ; PAULINA and Ladies attending.*

*Leon.* Read the indictment.

*Off.* [*Reads.*] Hermione, queen to the worthy countess, king of Sicily, thou art here accused and arraigned of high treason, in committing adultery with Polixenes, king of Bohemia, and conspiring with Camillo to take away the life of our sovereign lord the king, thy royal husband : the pretence whereof being by circumstances partly laid open, thou, Hermione, contrary to the faith and allegiance of a true subject, didst counsel and aid them, for their better safety, to fly away by night.

*Her.* Since what I am to say must be but that

Which contradicts my accusation and The testimony on my part no other But what comes from myself, it shall search heart me

To say 'not guilty : ' mine integrity Being counted falsehood, shall, as I express it, Be so received. But thus : if power divine Behold our human actions, as they do, 30

I doubt not them but innocence shall make  
False accusation blush and tyranny  
Promulge its sentence. You, my lord, best know,  
Who least will seem to do so, my past life  
Hath been as continent, as chaste, as true,  
As I am now unhappy; which is more  
Than history can pattern, though devised  
And play'd to take spectators. For behold me  
A fellow of the royal bed, which owe  
A moiety of the throne, a great king's daughter,  
The mother to a hopeful prince, here standing as  
To please and task for life and honour 'fore  
Who please to come and hear. For life, I prize it  
As I weigh grief, which I would spare: for  
honour;

'Tis a derivative from me to mine,  
And only that I stand for. I appeal  
To your own conscience, sir, before Polixenes  
Came to your court, how I was in your grace,  
How merited to be so; since he came,  
With what encounter so uncurent I  
Have strain'd to appear thus; if one jot beyond  
The bound of honour, or in act or will  
That way inclining, harden'd be the hearts  
Of all that hear me, and my nearst of kin  
Cry *ae* upon my grave!

*Leon.* I ne'er heard yet  
That any of these bolder vices wanted  
Less impudence to gainsay what they did  
Than to perform it first.

*Her.* That's true enough;  
Though 'tis a saying, sir, not due to me.

*Leon.* You will not own it.

*Her.* More than mistress of 60  
Which comes to me in name of fault, I must not  
At all acknowledge. For Polixenes,  
With whom I am accused, I do confess  
I loved him as in honour he required,  
With such a kind of love as might become  
A lady like me, with a love even such,  
So and no other, as yourself commanded;  
Which not to have done I think had been in me  
Both disobedience and ingratitude  
To you and toward your friend, whose love had  
spoke,  
Even since it could speak, from an infant, freely  
That it was yours. Now, for conspiracy,  
I knew not how it tasted; though it be dish'd  
For me to try how; all I know of it  
Is that Camillo was an honest man;  
And why he left your court, the gods them-  
selves,

Wotting no more than I, are ignorant.

*Leon.* You knew of his departure, as you  
knew

What you have underworn to do in his absence.

*Her.* Sir, 80  
You speak a language that I understand not:  
My life stands in the level of your dreams,  
Which I'll lay down.

*Leon.* Your actions are my dreams;  
You had a husband by Polixenes,  
And I but dream'd it. As you were past all  
shame,—

Those of your feet are so—so past all truth;  
Which to deny concerns more than walls; for as  
They have both been cast out, like to itself,  
No farther coming in, which is, indeed,

More criminal in thee than it,—so thou 90  
Shalt feel our justice, in who 90  
Look for no less than death.

*Her.* Sir, spare your threats:  
The bug which you would fright me with I seek.  
To me can life be no commodity:  
The crown and comfort of my life, your favour,  
I do give lost; for I do feel it gone,  
But know not how it went. My second joy  
And first-fruits of my body, from his presence  
I am barr'd, like one infectious. My third com-  
fort,

Stear'd most unluckily, is from my breast, 100  
The innocent milk in it most innocent month,  
Haled out to murder: myself on every post  
Proclaim'd a strumpet; with immediate hatred  
The child-bed privilege denied, which longs  
To women of all fashion; lustily, hurried  
Here to this place, if the open air, before  
I have got strength of limb. Now, my legs,  
Tell me what blessings I have here alive,  
That I should fear to die? There's none proceed.  
But yet hear this; mistake me not; no life, 110  
I prize it not a straw, but for mine honour,  
Which I would free, if I should be condemn'd  
Upon surmises, all proofs sleeping else  
But what your jealousies awake, I tell you  
Tis rigour and not law. Your honours all,  
I do refer me to the oracle:  
Apollo be my judge!

*First Lord.* This your request  
Is altogether just: therefore bring forth,  
And in Apollo's name, his oracle.

[*Enter certain Officers.*]

*Her.* The Emperor of Russia was my father:  
O that he were alive, and here beholding 121  
His daughter's trial! that he did but see  
The flatness of my misery, yet with eyes  
Of pity, not revenge!

*Re-enter Officers, with CLEOMENES and DION.*

*Off.* You here shall swear upon this sword  
of justice,

That you, Cleomenes and Dion, have  
Been both at Delphos, and from thence have  
brought

This seal'd-up oracle, by the hand deliver'd  
Of great Apollo's priest, and that since then  
You have not dared to break the holy seal 130  
Nor read the secrets in't.

*Cleo. Dion.* All this we swear.

*Leon.* Hark up the seals and read.  
*Off.* [*Reads*] Hermione is chaste; Polixenes  
blameless; Camillo a true subject; Leontes a  
jealous tyrant; his innocent babe truly begotten;  
and the king shall live without an heir, if that  
which is lost be not found.

*Lords.* Now blessed be the great Apollo!

*Her.* Praise'd!

*Leon.* Hast thou said truth?

*Off.* Ay, my lord; even as  
As it is here set down. 140

*Leon.* There is no truth at all! the oracle  
The senators shall proceed: this is mere false-  
hood.

*Enter Servant.*

*Serv.* My lord the king, the king!

*Leon.*

What is the business!

*Serv.* O sir, I shall be hated to report it!  
The prince your son, with more earnest and fear  
Of the queen's speed, is gone.

*Leon.*

How! gone!

*Serv.*

Is dead.

*Leon.* Apollo's angry; and the heavens  
themselves

Do strike at my injustice. [*Hermione swoons.*]  
How now there!

*Paul.* This news is mortal to the queen:  
look down

And see what death is doing.

*Leon.*

Take her hence: 150  
Her heart is but o'ercharged; she will recover:  
I have too much believed mine own suspicion:  
Beseech you, tenderly apply to her  
Some remedies for life.

[*Exeunt Paulina and Ladies, with Hermione.*

*Apollo, pardon*

My great profaneness 'gainst thine oracle!

I'll reconcile me to Polixenes,

New woo my queen, recall the good Camillo,

Whom I proclaim a man of truth, of mercy;

For, being transported by my jealousies

To bloody thoughts and to revenge, I chose 160

Camillo for the minister to poison

My friend Polixenes: which had been done,

But that the good mind of Camillo tarried

My swift command, though I with death and

with

Reward did threaten and encourage him,

Not doing't and being done: he, most humane

And fill'd with honour, to my kingly guest

Unclass'd my practice, quit his fortunes here,

Which you knew great, and to the hazard

Of all uncertainties himself commended, 170

No richer than his honour: how he glisters

Thorough my rust! and how his piety

Does my deeds make the blacker!

*Re-enter PAULINA.*

*Paul.*

Woe the while!

O, out my face, lest my heart, cracking it,  
Break too!

*First Lord.*

What fit is this, good lady!

*Paul.*

What studied tortments, tyrant, hast

for me!

What wheels! racks! fires! what flaying! boil-

ing!

In leads or oils? what old or newer torture

Must I receive, whose every word deserves

To taste of thy most worst? Thy tyranny 180

Together working with thy jealousies,

Fancies too weak for boys, too green and idle

For girls of nine, O, think what they have done

And then run mad indeed, stark mad! for all

Thy by-gone fooleries were but spices of it.

That thou betray'dst Polixenes, 'twas nothing;

That did but show thee, of a fool, inconstant

And damnable ingratul: nor was't much,

Thou wouldst have poison'd good Camillo's

honour,

To have him kill a king: poor trespasses, 190

More monstrous-unsaid-by: whereof I reckon

The casting forth to crows thy baby-daughter

To be or never-bred; though a devil

Would have shed water out of fire ere done't:  
Nor is't directly laid to thee, the death

Of the young prince, whose honourable  
thoughts,

Thoughts high for one so tender, cleft the  
heart

That could conceive a gross and foolish sire  
Blemish'd his gracious dam: this is not, no,

Laid to thy answer: but the last,—O lords, see  
When I have said, cry 'woe!'—the queen, the

queen,

The sweet'st, dearest creature's dead, and ven-

geance for't

Not dropp'd down yet.

*First Lord.* The higher powers forbid!

*Paul.* I say she's dead; I'll swear't. If

word nor oath

Prevail not, go and see: if you can bring

Tincture or lustre in her lip, her eye,

Heat outwardly or breath within, I'll serve you

As I would do the gods. But, O thou tyrant!

Do not repent these things, for they are heavier

Than all thy woes can stir: therefore breaks 200

thee

To nothing but despair. A thousand knees

Ten thousand years together, naked, fasting,

Upon a barren mountain, and still winter

In storm perpetual, could not move the gods

To look that way thou wert.

*Leon.* Go on, go on:

Thou canst not speak too much; I have de-

served

All tongues to talk their bitterest.

*First Lord.* Say no more:

How'er the business goes, you have made

fault

I' the boldness of your speech.

*Paul.* I am sorry for't:

All faults I make, when I shall come to know

them, 210

I do repent. Alas! I have show'd too much

The rashness of a woman: he is touch'd

To the noble heart. What's gone and what's

past help

Should be past grief: do not receive affliction

At my petition: I beseech you, rather

Let me be punish'd, that have misdeed you

Of what you should forget. Now, good my

liege,

Sir, royal sir, forgive a foolish woman:

The love I bore your queen—be, feel again!—

I'll speak of her no more, nor of your children;

I'll not remember you of my own head, 220

Who is lost too: take your patience to you,

And I'll say nothing.

*Leon.* Then didst speak but well

When met the truth; which I receive much

better

Than to be prided of thee. Princes, bring me

To the dead bodies of my queen and son:

The grave shall be for both: upon them shall

The causes of their death appear, 230

Our shame perpetual. Once a day I'll visit

The chapel where they lie, and learn what these

shall be my recreation; so long as nature 240

Will bear up with this exercise, so long

I daily vow to use it. Come and lead me

to these graves.

SCENE III. *Bohemia. A desert country near the sea.*

*Enter ANTIGONUS with a Child, and a Mariner.*

*Ant.* Thou art perfect then, our ship hath touch'd upon the deserts of Bohemia!

*Mar.* Ay, my lord; and fear we have landed in ill time: the skies look grimly and threaten present blusters. In my conscience, the heavens with that we have in hand are angry and frown upon 's.

*Ant.* Their sacred wills be done! Go, get aboard; look to thy bark: I'll not be long before I call upon thee.

*Mar.* Make your best haste, and go not too far! the land: 'tis like to be loud weather; besides, this place is famous for the creatures of prey that keep upon 't.

*Ant.* Go thou away: I'll follow instantly.

*Mar.* I am glad at heart to be so rid o' the business. *[Exit.]*

*Ant.* Come, poor babe: I have heard, but not believed, the spirits o' the dead.

May walk again: if such thing be, thy mother appear'd to me last night, for ne'er was dream so like a waking. To me comes a creature, sometimes her head on one side, some another: I never saw a vessel of like sorrow,

So fill'd and so becoming: in pure white robes, like very sanctity, she did approach my cabin where I lay: thrice bow'd before me,

And gasping to begin some speech, her eyes became two spouts: the fury spent, anon did this break from her: 'Good Antigonus, since fate, against thy better disposition, hath made thy person for the thrower-out

Of my poor babe, according to thine oath, places remote enough are in Bohemia,

There weep and leave it crying; and, for the babe is counted lost for ever. Perdita,

I prithee, call 't. For this ungentle business, put on thee by my lord, thou ne'er shalt see thy wife Paulina more.' And so, with shrieks, she melted into air. Affrighted much,

I did in time collect myself and thought this was so and no slumber. Dreams are toys: yet for this once, yea, superstitiously,

I will be squared by this. I do believe Hermione hath suffer'd death, and that Apollo would, this being indeed the issue of King Polixenes, it should here be laid,

Either for life or death, upon the earth of its right father. Blossom, speed thee well! There lie, and there thy character: there these;

Which may, if fortune please, both breed thee, pretty,

And still fast thine. The storm begins: poor wretch,

That for thy mother's fault art thus exposed to loss and what may follow! Weep I cannot,

But my heart bleeds; and most accused am I to be by oath enjoin'd to this. Farewell! The day frowns more and more: thou'rt like to have

A lullaby too rough: I never saw the heavens so dim by day. A savage clamour! Well may I get aboard! This is the phase: I am gone for ever. *[Exit, pursued by a bear.]*

*Enter a Shepherd.*

*Shep.* I would there were no age between sixteen and three-and-twenty, or that youth would sleep out the rest; for there is nothing in the between but getting wenches with child, wronging the ancientry, stealing, fighting—Hark you now! Would any but these bold brains of nineteen and two-and-twenty hunt this weather? They have scared away two of my best sheep, which I fear the wolf will sooner find than the master: if any where I have them, 'tis by the seaside, browsing of ivy. Good luck, an't be thy will! what have we here! Mercy on 's, a bairn; a very pretty bairn! A boy or a child, I wonder! A pretty one; a very pretty one: sure, some 'scape, though I am not bookish, yet I can read waiting-gentlewoman in the 'scape. This has been some stair-work, some trunk-work, some behind-door-work: they were warmer that got this than the poor thing is here. I'll take it up for pity: yet I'll tarry till my son come; he hallooed but even now. Whoa, ho, ho!

*Enter Clown.*

*Clow.* Hilloa, loa!

*Shep.* What, art so near? If thou'lt see a thing to talk on when thou art dead and rotten, come hither. What ailst thou, man?

*Clow.* I have seen two such sights, by sea and by land; but I am not to say it is a sea, for it is now the sky: betwixt the firmament and it you cannot thrust a bodkin's point.

*Shep.* Why, boy, how is it?

*Clow.* I would you did but see how it chafes, how it rages, how it takes up the shore! but that's not to the point. O, the most piteous cry of the poor souls! sometimes to see 'em, and not to see 'em; now the ship boring the moon with her main-mast, and anon swallowed with yest and froth, as you 'ld thrust a cork into a hog-head. And then for the land-service, to see how the bear tore out his shoulder-lune; how he cried to me for help and said his name was Antigonus a nobleman. But to make an end of the ship, to see how the sea flap-dragoned it: but, first, how the poor souls roared, and the sea mocked them; and how the poor gentleman marred and the bear mocked him, both roaring louder than the sea or weather.

*Shep.* Name of mercy, when was this, boy?

*Clow.* Now, now: I have not winked since I saw those sights: the men are not yet cold under water, nor the bear half dined on the gentleman: he's at it now.

*Shep.* Would I had been by, to have helped the old man!

*Clow.* I would you had been by the ship side,



to have helped her: there your charity would have lacked footing.

*Shep.* Heavy matters! heavy matters! but look thee here, boy. Now bless thyself: thou mettest with things dying, I with things new-born. Here's a sight for thee: look thee, a bearing-cloth for a squire's child! look thee here; take up, take up, boy; open't. So, let's see: it was told me I should be rich by the fairies. This is some changeling: open't. What's within, boy?

*Clo.* You're a made old man: if the sins of your youth are forgiven you, you're well to live. Gold! all gold!

*Shep.* This is fairy gold, boy, and 'twill prove so: up with't, keep it close: home, home, the next way. We are lucky, boy; and to be so still requires nothing but secrecy. Let my sheep go: come, good boy, the next way home.

*Clo.* Go you the next way with your findings. I'll go see if the bear be gone from the gentleman and how much he hath eaten: they are never curst but when they are hungry: if there be any of him left, I'll bury it.

*Shep.* That's a good deed. If thou mayest discern by that which is left of him what he is, fetch me to the sight of him.

*Clo.* Marry, will I; and you shall help to put him in the ground.

*Shep.* 'Tis a lucky day, boy, and we'll do good deeds on't. [*Exeunt.*

## ACT IV. SCENE I.

*Enter TIME, the Chorus.*

*Time.* I, that please some, try all, both joy and terror

Of good and bad, that makes and unfolds error,  
Now take upon me, in the name of Time,  
To use my wings. Impute it not a crime  
To me or my swift passage, that I slide  
O'er sixteen years and leave the growth untried  
Of that wide gap, since it is in my power  
To o'erthrow law and in one self-born hour  
To plant and o'erwhelm custom. Let me pass  
The same I am, ere ancient st order was  
Or what is now received: I witness to  
The times that brought them in; so shall I do  
To the freshest things now reigning and make  
state

The glistering of this present, as my tale  
Now seems to it. Your patience this allowing,  
I turn my glass and give my scene such growing  
As you had slept between: Leontes leaving  
The effects of his fond jealousies so grieving  
That he shuts up himself, imagine me,  
Gentle spectators, that I now may be  
In fair Bohemia; and remember well,  
I mentioned a son o' the king's, which Florizel  
I now name to you; and with speed so pace  
To speak of Perdita, now grown in grace  
Equal with wondering: what of her comes  
I list not prophesy; but let Time's waves  
Be known when she's brought forth. A shepherd's  
daughter,

And what to her adheres, which follows after,  
Is the argument of Time. Of this allow,  
If ever you have spent time worse ere now; 30

If never, yet that Time himself doth say  
He wishes earnestly you never may. [*Exit.*

SCENE II. *Bohemia. The palace of POLIXENES.**Enter POLIXENES and CAMILLO.*

*Pol.* I pray thee, good Camillo, be no more importunate: 'tis a sickness denying thee any thing; a death to grant this.

*Cam.* It is fifteen years since I saw my country: though I have for the most part been aired abroad, I desire to lay my bones there. Besides, the penitent king, my master, hath sent or me; to whose feeling sorrows I might be some allay, or I o'erween to think so, which is another spur to my departure.

*Pol.* As thou lovest me, Camillo, wipe not out the rest of thy services by leaving me now: he need I have of thee thine own goodness hath made; better not to have had thee than thus to want thee: thou, having made me businesses which none without thee can sufficiently manage, must either stay to execute them thyself or take away with thee the very services thou hast done; which if I have not enough considered, as too much I cannot, to be more thankful to thee shall be my study, and my profit therein the heaping friendships. Of that fatal country, Sicily, prithee speak no more; whose very naming punishes me with the remembrance of that penitent, as thou callest him, and reconciled king, my brother; whose loss of his most precious queen and children are even now to be afresh lamented. Say to me, when sawest thou the Prince Florizel, my son? Kings are no less unhappy, their issue not being gracious, than they are in losing them when they have approved their virtues.

*Cam.* Sir, it is three days since I saw the prince. What his happier affairs may be, are to me unknown: but I have missingly noted, he is of late much retired from court and is less frequent to his princely exercises than formerly he hath appeared.

*Pol.* I have considered so much, Camillo, and with some care; so far that I have eyes under my service which look upon his removedness; from whom I have this intelligence, that he is seldom from the house of a most homely shepherd; a man, they say, that from very nothing, and beyond the imagination of his neighbours, is grown into an unspeakable estate.

*Cam.* I have heard, sir, of such a man, who hath a daughter of most rare note: the report of her is extended more than can be thought to begin from such a cottage.

*Pol.* That's likewise part of my intelligence; but, I fear, the angle that plucks our son thither. Thou shalt accompany us to the place; where we will, not appearing what we are, have some question with the shepherd; from whose simplicity I think it not uneasy to get the cause of my son's resort thither. Prithee, be my present partner in this business, and lay aside the thoughts of Sicily.

*Cam.* I willingly obey your \_\_\_\_\_

*Pol.* My best Camillo! We must disguise ourselves. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III. *A road near the Shepherd's cottage.*

*Enter AUTOLYCUS, singing.*

When daffodils begin to peer,  
With heigh! the doxy ever the dale,  
Why, then comes in the sweet o' the year;  
For the red blood reigns in the winter's pale.  
The white sheet bleaching on the hedge,  
With heigh! the sweet birds, O, how they  
sing!

Doth set my pugging tooth on edge;  
For a quart of ale is a dish for a king.

The lark, that tirra-lyra chants,  
With heigh! with heigh! the thrush and the  
jay.

Are summer songs for me and my nuns,  
While we lie tumbling in the hay.

I have served Prince Florisel and in my time  
were three-pile; but now I am out of service:

But shall I go mourn for that, my dear?

The pale moon shines by night;  
And when I wander here and there,  
I then do most go right.

If tinkers may have leave to live,  
And bear the sow-skin budget, 20  
Then my account I well may give,  
And in the stocks avouch it.

My traffic is sheets; when the kite builds, look to  
lesser linen. My father named me Autolycus;  
who being, as I am, littered under Mercury, was  
likewise a snapper-up of unconscionable trifles.  
With die and drab I purchased this caparison,  
and my revenue is the silly cheat. Gallows and  
knock are too powerful on the highway; beating  
and hanging are terrors to me: for the life to  
come, I sleep out the thought of it. A prize!  
a prize!

*Enter Clown.*

Clow. Let me see: every seven wether tods;  
every tod yields pound and odd shilling; fifteen  
hundred shorn, what comes the wool to?

Aut. [*Aside*] If the springs hold, the cock's  
mine.

Clow. I cannot do't without counters. Let me  
see; what am I to buy for our sheep-shearing  
feast? Three pound of sugar, five pound of cur-  
rants, rice,—what will this sister of mine do with  
rice? But my father hath made her mistress of  
the feast, and she lays it on. She hath made  
me four and twenty newgays for the sheavers,  
three-man-song-men all, and very good ones; but  
they are most of them means and bases; but one  
puritan amongst them, and he sings psalms to  
housewives. I must have saffron to colour the  
wheat-pies; mace; dates!—none, that's out of  
my note; nutmegs, seven; a rose or two of  
ginger, but that I may beg; four pound of  
peas, and as many of raisins o' the sun.

Aut. O that ever I was born!

[*Gravelling on the ground.*]

Clow. 'Tis the name of me—

Aut. O, help me, help me! pluck but off  
it; and then, death, death!

Clow. Alack, poor soul! thou hast need of  
more rags to lay on thee, rather than have these  
off.

Aut. O sir, the loathsomeness of them offend  
me more than the stripes I have received, which  
are mighty ones and millions.

Clow. Alas, poor man! a million of beating  
may come to a great matter.

Aut. I am robbed, sir, and beaten; my  
money and apparel taken from me, and these  
detestable things put upon me.

Clow. What, by a horseman, or a footman?

Aut. A footman, sweet sir, a footman.

Clow. Indeed, he should be a footman by the  
garments he has left with thee: if this be a  
horseman's coat, it hath seen very hot service.  
Lend me thy hand, I'll help thee: come, lend  
me thy hand.

Aut. O, good sir, tenderly, O!

Clow. Alas, poor soul!

Aut. O, good sir, softly, good sir! I fear  
sir, my shoulder-blade is out.

Clow. How now! canst stand?

Aut. [*Picking his pocket*] Softly, dear sir:  
good sir, softly. You ha' done me a charitable  
office.

Clow. Dost lack any money? I have a little  
money for thee.

Aut. No, good sweet sir; no, I beseech you,  
sir: I have a kinsman not past three quarters of  
a mile hence, unto whom I was going; I shall  
there have money, or any thing I want: offer me  
no money, I pray you; that kills my heart.

Clow. What manner of fellow was he that  
robbed you?

Aut. A fellow, sir, that I have known to go  
about with troll-my-klames: I knew him once a  
servant of the prince: I cannot tell, good sir,  
for which of his virtues it was, but he was cer-  
tainly whipped out of the court.

Clow. His vices, you would say; there's no  
virtue whipped out of the court: they cherish it  
to make it stay there; and yet it will no more  
but abide.

Aut. Vices, I would say, sir. I know this  
man well: he hath been since an ape-bearer;  
then a process-server, a bailiff; then he com-  
passed a motion of the Prodigious Son, and  
married a tinker's wife within a mile where my  
land and living lies; and, having flown over  
many knavish professions, he settled only in  
rogue: some call him Autolycus.

Clow. Out-upon him! prig for my life, prig:  
he haunts wakes, fairs and bear-baitings.

Aut. Very true, sir; he, sir, he; that's the  
rogue that put me into this apparel.

Clow. Not a more cowardly rogue in all Bo-  
hemio: if you had but looked big and spit at  
him, he'd have run.

Aut. I must confute to you, sir, I am no  
fighter: I am false of heart that way; and that  
he knew, I warrant him.

Clow. How do you now?

Aut. Sweet sir, much better than I was; I  
can stand and walk: I will even take my leave  
of you, and pace softly towards my kinsman's.

Clow. Shall I bring thee on the way?

Aut. No, good-fellow sir; no, sweet sir.

Oto. Then fare thee well: I must go buy  
spices for our sheep-shearing.

Ant. Prosper you, sweet sir! [*Exit Clowns.*]  
Your pume is not hot enough to purchase your  
spice. I'll be with you at your sheep-shearing  
too: if I make not this chest bring out another  
and the sheavers prove sheep, let me be unrolled  
and my name put in the book of virtue! 131  
[*Sings*] Jog on, jog on, the foot-path way,  
And merrily hent the stile-a:  
A merry heart goes all the day,  
Your sad tires in a mile-a. [*Exit.*]

SCENE IV. *The Shepherd's cottage.*

Enter FLORIZEL and PERDITA.

Flo. These your unusual weeds to each part  
of you  
Do give a life: no shepherdess, but Flora  
Peering in April's front. This your sheep-  
shearing  
Is as a meeting of the petty gods,  
And you the queen on't.

Per. Sir, my gracious lord,  
To chide at your extremes it not becomes me:  
O, pardon, that I name them! Your high self,  
The gracious mark o' the land, you have ob-  
scured

With a swain's wearing, and me, poor lowly  
maid,  
Most goddess-like prank'd up: but that our  
fates 10

In every man have folly and the feeders  
Digest it with a custom, I should blush  
To see you so attired, sworn, I think,  
To show myself a glass.

Flo. I bless the time  
When my good falcon made her flight across  
Thy father's ground.

Per. Now Jove afford you cause!  
To me the difference forges dread; your great-  
ness  
Hath not been used to fear. Even now I tremble  
To think your father, by some accident,  
Should pass this way as you did: O, the Fates!  
How would he look, to see his work so noble 21  
Vilely bound up? What would he say? Or how  
should I, in these my horror'd flannels, behold  
The sternness of his presence!

Flo. Apprehend  
Nothing but folly. The gods themselves,  
Humbling their deities to love, have taken  
The shapes of beasts upon them: Jupiter  
Became a bull, and bellow'd; the green Neptune  
A ram, and bleated; and the fire-robed god,  
Golden Apollo, a poor humble swain, 30  
As I seem now. Their transformations  
Were never for a piece of beauty rare,  
Nor in a way so chaste, since my desires  
Run not before mine honour, nor my lusts  
Burn hotter than my faith.

Per. O, but, sir,  
Your resolution cannot hold, when 'tis  
Opposed, as it must be, by the power of the  
king:

[*One of these two must be necessities,  
Which then will speak, that you must change  
this purpose.*]

Or I my life.

Flo. Thou dearest Perdita,  
With these forced thoughts, I prithee, dashen  
not  
The mirth o' the feast. Or I'll be thine, my fair,  
Or not my father's. For I cannot be  
Mine own, nor any thing to any, if  
I be not thine. To this I am most constant,  
Though destiny say no. Be merry, gentle;  
Strangle such thoughts as these with any thing  
That you behold the while. Your guests are  
coming:  
Lift up your countenance, as it were the day  
[Of celebration of that nuptial which 30  
We two have sworn shall come.

Per. O lady Fortune,  
Stand you auspicious!

Flo. See, your guests approach:  
Address yourself to entertain them sprightly,  
And let's be red with mirth.

Enter Shepherd, Clown, MORSA, DORCAS, and  
others, with POLIXENES and CAMILLO dis-  
guised.

Shep. Fie, daughter! when my old wife  
lived, upon  
This day she was both pantler, butler, cook,  
Both dame and servant; welcomed all, served  
all;

Would sing her song and dance her tenn; now  
here,

At upper end o' the table, now i' the middle;  
On his shoulder, and his; her face o' fire 60  
With labour and the thing she took to quench it.  
She would to each one sip. You are retired,  
As if you were a feasted one and not  
The hostess of the meeting; pray you, bid  
These unknown friends to a welcome; for 'tis  
A way to make us better friends, more known,  
Come, quench your blushes and present yourself  
That which you are, mistress o' the feast:  
come on,

And bid us welcome to your sheep-shearing,  
As your good flock shall prosper.

Per. [*To Pol.*] Sir, welcome: 30  
It is my father's will I should take on me  
The hostess-ship o' the day. [*To Cam.*] You're  
welcome, sir.

Give me those flowers there, Dorcas. Bevaland  
sir,

For you there's the rosemary and rue; these keep  
Sooming and savour all the winter long:  
[Grace and remembrance be to you both,  
And welcome to our shearing!]

Pol. Shepherdess—  
A fair one are you—well you fit our ages  
With flowers of winter.

Per. Sir, the year growing ancient,  
Not yet on summer's death, nor on the birth, 40  
Of trembling winter, the fairest flowers o' the

Are our carnations and streak'd gillyflowers,  
Which some call nature's bastards; of that kind  
Our rustic garden's barren; and I can't see  
To get slips of them.

Pol. Wherefore, gentle mistress,  
Do you neglect them?  
Per. For I have heard them

There is an art which in their piousness shares  
With great creating nature.

*Pol.* Say there be;  
Yet nature is made better by no mean  
But nature makes that mean : so, over that art  
Which you say adds to nature, is an art 91  
That nature makes. You see, sweet maid, we  
marry

A gentler scion to the wildest stock,  
And make conceive a bark of baser kind  
By bud of nobler race : this is an art  
Which does mend nature, change it rather, but  
The art itself is nature.

*Per.* So it is.

*Pol.* Then make your garden rich in gilly-  
vors,  
And do not call them bastards.

*Per.* I'll not put  
The dibble in earth to set one slip of them ; 100  
No more than were I painted I would wish  
This youth should say 'twere well and only  
therefore

Desire to breed by me. Here's flowers for you ;  
Hot lavender, mints, savory, marjoram ;  
The marigold, that goes to bed with the sun  
And with him rises weeping : these are flowers  
Of middle summer, and I think they are given  
To men of middle age. You're very welcome.

*Cam.* I should leave grazing, were I of your  
flock,  
And only live by gazing.

*Per.* Out, alas ! 110  
You'd be so lean, that blasts of January  
Would blow you through and through. Now,  
my fair'st friend,  
I would I had some flowers o' the spring that  
might

Become your time of day ; and yours, and yours,  
That wear upon your virgin branches yet  
Your maidenheads growing : O Proserpina,  
For the flowers now, that frightened thou let'st fall  
From Dis's waggon ! daffodils,

That come before the swallow darts, and take  
The winds of March with beauty ; violets dim,  
But sweeter than the lids of Juno's eyes 121  
Or Cytherea's breath ; pale primroses,  
That die unmarried, ere they can behold  
Bright Phoebus in his strength—a malady  
Most incident to maids ; bold oxlips and  
The crown imperial ; lilies of all kinds,  
The flower-de-luce being one ! O, these I lack,  
To make you garlands of, and my sweet friend,  
To strew him o'er and o'er !

*Flo.* What, like a corse ?  
*Per.* No, like a bank for love to lie and play  
on ;

Not like a corse ; or if, not to be buried,  
But quick and in mine arms. Come, take your  
flowers :

Methinks I play as I have seen them do  
In Whitsun pastorals : sure this robe of mine  
Does change my disposition.

*Flo.* What you do  
Still better what is done. When you speak,  
sweet,

I'd have you do it over : when you sing,  
I'd have you try and sell so, so give alms,  
Play so ; and, for the ordering your affairs,

To sing them too : when you do dance, I wish  
you

A wave o' the sea, that you might ever do 140  
Nothing but that ; move still, still so,  
And own no other function : each your doing,  
So singular in each particular,  
Crowns what you are doing in the present deed,  
That all your acts are queens.

*Per.* O Doricles,  
Your praises are too large : but that your youth,  
And the true blood which perpetually  
through's,

Do plainly give you out an unstain'd shepherd,  
With wisdom I might fear, my Doricles, 150  
You wou'd me the false way.

*Flo.* I think you have  
As little skill to fear as I have purpose  
To put you to't. But come ; our dance, I pray :  
Your hand, my Perilita : so turtles pair,  
That never mean to part.

*Per.* I'll swear for 'em.

*Pol.* This is the prettiest low-born lass that  
ever

Ran on the green-sward : nothing she does or  
seems  
But smacks of something greater than herself,  
Too noble for this place.

*Cam.* He tells her something  
That makes her blood look out : good sooth,  
she is 160

The queen of curds and cream.

*Clo.* Come on, strike up !

*Dor.* Mopsa must be your mistress : marry,  
garlic,

To mend her kissing with !

*Mop.* Now, in good time !

*Clo.* Not a word, a word ; we stand upon our  
manners.

Come, strike up !

[*Music. Here a dance of Shepherds and  
Shepherdesses.*]

*Pol.* Pray, good shepherd, what fair swain is  
this

Which dances with your daughter ?

*Shep.* They call him Doricles ; and boasts  
himself

To have a worthy feeding : but I have it  
Upon his own report and I believe it ; 170  
He looks like sooth. He says he loves my  
daughter :

I think so too ; for never gazed the moon  
Upon the water as he'll stand and read  
As 'twere my daughter's eyes : and, to be plain,  
I think there is not half a kiss to choose  
Who loves another best.

*Pol.* She dances feastly.

*Shep.* So she does any thing ; though I re-  
port it.

That should be silent : if young Doricles  
Do light upon her, she shall bring him that  
Which he not dreams of. 180

*Enter Servant.*

*Serv.* O master, if you did but hear the ped-  
lar at the door, you wou'd never dance again  
after a tabor and pipe ; no, the bagpipe could not  
move you : he sings several tunes faster than

you'll tell money; he utters them as he had eaten ballads and all men's ears grew to his tunes.

*Clo.* He could never come better; he shall come in. I love a ballad but even too well, if it be doleful matter merrily set down, or a very pleasant thing indeed and sung lamentably. 100

*Serv.* He hath songs for man or woman, of all sizes; no milliner can so fit his customers with gloves; he has the prettiest love-songs for maids; so without bawdry, which is strange; with such delicate burthens of dildos and fadings, 'jump her and thump her;' and where some stretch-mouthed rascal would, as it were, mean mischief and break a foul gap into the matter, he makes the maid to answer 'Whoop, do me no harm, good man;' puts him off, slights him, with 'Whoop, do me no harm, good man.' 201

*Pol.* This is a brave fellow.

*Clo.* Believe me, thou talkest of an admirable conceited fellow. Has he any unbraided wares?

*Serv.* He hath ribbons of all the colours i' the rainbow; points more than all the lawyers in Bohemia can learnedly handle, though they come to him by the gross; inkles, caddisases, cambrics, lawns; why, he sings 'em over as they were gods or goddesses; you would think a smock were a she-angel, he so chants to the sleeve-hand and the work about the square on't. *Clo.* Prithce bring him in; and let him approach singing.

*Per.* Forewarn him that he use no scurrilous words in's tunes. [*Exit Servant.*]

*Clo.* You have of these pedlars, that have more in them than you'd think, sister.

*Per.* Ay, good brother, or go about to think.

*Enter AUTOLYCUS, singing.*

Lawn as white as driven snow;  
Cyprus black as e'er was crow;  
Gloves as sweet as damask roses;  
Masks for faces and for noses;  
Bugle bracelet, necklace amber,  
Perfume for a lady's chamber;  
Golden quoifs and stomachers,  
For my lads to give their dears:  
Pins and poking-sticks of steel,  
What maids lack from head to heel:  
Come buy of me, come; come buy, come buy;  
Buy, lads, or else your lasses cry: 220  
Come buy.

*Clo.* If I were not in love with Mopsa, thou shouldst take no money of me; but being enthralled as I am, it will also be the bondage of certain ribbons and gloves.

*Mop.* I was promised them against the feast; but they come not too late now.

*Dor.* He hath promised you more than that, or there be liars. 230

*Mop.* He hath paid you all he promised you; may be, he has paid you more, which will shame you to give him again.

*Clo.* Is there no manners left among maids? will they wear their plaquets where they should bear their faces? Is there not milking-time, when you are going to bed, or kiln-hole, to whistle off these secrets, but you must be little

tattling before all our guests? 'tis well they are whispering: clamour your tongues, and not a word more. 251

*Mop.* I have done. Come, you promised me a tawdry-lace and a pair of sweet gloves.

*Clo.* Have I not told thee how I was cozened by the way and lost all my money?

*Aut.* And indeed, sir, there are cozeners abroad; therefore it behoves men to be wary.

*Clo.* Fear not thou, man, thou shalt lose nothing here.

*Aut.* I hope so, sir; for I have about me many parcels of charge. 261

*Clo.* What hast here? ballads?

*Mop.* Pray now, buy some: I love a ballad in print o' life, for then we are sure they are true.

*Aut.* Here's one to a very doleful tune, how a usurer's wife was brought to bed of twenty money-bags at a burthen and how she longed to eat adders' heads and toads carbonadoed.

*Mop.* Is it true, think you?

*Aut.* Very true, and but a month old. 270

*Dor.* Bless me from marrying a usurer!

*Aut.* Here's the midwife's name to't, one Mistress Tale-porter, and five or six honest wives that were present. Why should I carry lies abroad?

*Mop.* Pray you now, buy it.

*Clo.* Come on, lay it by; and let's first see moe ballads: we'll buy the other things anon.

*Aut.* Here's another ballad of a fish, that appeared upon the coast on Wednesday the fourscore of April, forty thousand fathom above water, and sung this ballad against the hard hearts of maids: it was thought she was a woman and was turned into a cold fish for she would not exchange flesh with one that loved her: the ballad is very pitiful and as true.

*Dor.* Is it true too, think you?

*Aut.* Five justices' hands at it, and witnesses more than my pack will hold.

*Clo.* Lay it by too: another. 290

*Aut.* This is a merry ballad, but a very pretty one.

*Mop.* Let's have some merry ones.

*Aut.* Why, this is a passing merry one and goes to the tune of 'Two maids wooing a man:' there's scarce a maid westward but she sings it; 'tis in request, I can tell you.

*Mop.* We can both sing it: if thou't bear a part, thou shalt hear; 'tis in three parts. 300

*Dor.* We had the tune on't a month ago.

*Aut.* I can bear my part; you must know 'tis my occupation; have at it with you.

*Song.*

*A.* Get you hence, for I must go

Where it fits not you to know.

*D.* Whither? *M.* O, whither? *D.* Whither?

*M.* It becomes thy oath full well,

Thou to me thy secrets tell.

*D.* Me too, let me go thither.

*M.* Or thou goest to the grange or mill.

*D.* If to either, thou dost ill. 310

*A.* Neither. *D.* What, neither? *A.* Neither.

*D.* Thou hast sworn my love to be.

*M.* Thou hast sworn it more to me:

Then whither goest? say, whither?

*Cl.* We'll have this song out anon by ourselves: my father and the gentlemen are in sad talk, and we'll not trouble them. Come, bring away thy pack after me. Wenches, I'll buy for you both. Pedlar, let's have the first choice. Follow me, girls.

*[Exit with Dorcas and Mopsa.]*

*Ant.* And you shall pay well for 'em.  
*[Follows singing.]*

Will you buy any tape,  
Or lace for your cape,  
My dainty duck, my dear-a?  
Any silk, any thread,  
Any toys for your head,  
Of the new'st and finest, finest wear-a?  
Come to the pedlar;  
Money's a medler,  
That doth utter all men's ware-a. *[Exit.]*

*Re-enter Servant.*

*Serv.* Master, there is three carters, three shepherds, three neat-herds, three swine-herds, that have made themselves all men of hair, they call themselves Saltiers, and they have a dance which the wenches say is a gallimaufry of gambols, because they are not in't; but they themselves are o' the mind, if it be not too rough for some that know little but bowling, it will please plentifully.

*Shap.* Away! we'll none on't: here has been too much homely foolery already. I know, sir, we weary you.

*Pol.* You weary those that refresh us: pray, let's see these four threes of herdsmen.

*Serv.* One three of them, by their own report, sir, hath danced before the king; and not the worst of the three but jumps twelve foot and a half by the equier.

*Shap.* Leave your prating: since these good men are pleased, let them come in; but quickly now.

*Serv.* Why, they stay at door, sir. *[Exit.]*

*Here a dance of twelve Satyrs.*

*Pol.* O, father, you'll know more of that business.

*[To Cam.]* Is it not too far gone? 'Tis time to part them.

He's simple and tells much. *[To Flor.]* How now, fair shepherd!

Your heart is full of something that does take Your mind from feasting. Sooth, when I was young

And handed love as you do, I was wont To load my she with knucks: I would have ransack'd

The pedlar's siltien treasury and have pour'd it To her acceptance; you have let him go

And nothing marted with him. If your base interpretation should abuse and call this

Your lack of love or bounty, you were straited For a reply, at least if you make a care Of happy holding her.

*Fla.* Old sir, I know She prizes not such trifles as these are:

The gifts she looks from me are pack'd and lock'd

Up in my heart; which I have given already,

But not deliver'd. O, hear me breathe my life Before this ancient sir, who, it should seem, 321 Hath sometime loved! I take thy hand, this hand,

As soft as dove's down and as white as it, Or Ethiopian's tooth, or the fam'd snow that's bolted

By the northern blasts twice o'er.  
*Pol.* What follows this?

How prettily the young swain seems to wash The hand was fair before! I have put you out:

But to your protestation; let me hear What you profess.

*Fla.* Do, and be witness to't. 329  
*Pol.* And this my neighbour too?

*Fla.* And he, and more Than he, and men, the earth, the heavens, and all:

That, were I crown'd the most imperial monarch, Thereof most worthy, were I the fairest youth

That ever made eye swerve, had force and knowledge

More than was ever man's, I would not prize them

Without her love; for her employ them all; Command them and condemn them to her

service Or to their own perdition.

*Pol.* Fairly offer'd.  
*Cam.* This shows a sound affection.

*Shap.* But, my daughter, Say you the like to him?

*Per.* I cannot speak 330 So well, nothing so well; no, nor mean better

By the pattern of mine own thoughts I cut out The purity of his.

*Shap.* Take hands, a bargain! And, friends unknown, you shall bear witness

to't: I give my daughter to him, and will make Her portion equal his.

*Fla.* O, that must be 'T the virtue of your daughter: one being dead,

I shall have more than you can dream of yet: Enough then for your wonder. But, come on, Contract us 'fore these witnesses.

*Shap.* Come, your hand: And, daughter, yours.

*Pol.* Soft, swain, awhile, beseech you: Have you a father?

*Fla.* I have: but what of him? *Pol.* Knows he of this?

*Fla.* He neither does nor shall. *Pol.* Methinks a father

Is at the nuptial of his son a guest That best becomes the table. Pray you once

more, Is not your father grown incapable Of reasonable affairs? Is he not stupid

With age and altering rheums? can he speak? *Fla.* No, good sir;

Know man from man? dispute his own estate? *Fla.* He has his health and simpler strength indeed

Lies he not bed-ridden? and again does nothing But what he did being childish?

*Fla.* No, good sir; He has his health and simpler strength indeed Than most have of his age.

*Pol.* By my white hand,

You offer him, if this be so, a wrong  
Something unfilial: reason my son  
Should choose himself a wife, but as good:  
reason

The father, all whose joy is nothing else  
But fair posterity, should hold some counsel  
In such a business.

*Flo.* I yield all this; 420

But for some other reasons, my grave sir,  
Which 'tis not fit you know, I not acquaint  
My father of this business.

*Pol.* Let him know 't.

*Flo.* He shall not.

*Pol.* Prithee, let him.

*Flo.* No, he must not.

*Shep.* Let him, my son: he shall not need  
to grieve

At knowing of thy choice.

*Flo.* Come, come, he must not

Mark our contract.

*Pol.* Mark your divorce, young sir,  
(*Discovering himself.*)

Whom son I dare not call; thou art too base  
To be acknowledged: thou a sceptre's heir,  
That thus affect'st a sheep-hook! Thou old  
traitor,

I am sorry that by hanging thee I can 431  
But shorten thy life one week. And thou,  
fresh piece

Of excellent witchcraft, who of force must know  
The royal fool thou copest with,—

*Shep.* O, my heart!

*Pol.* I'll have thy beauty scratch'd with  
briers, and made

More homely than thy state. For thee, fond  
boy,

If I may ever know thou dost but sigh  
That thou no more shalt see this knack, as  
never

I mean thou shalt, we'll bar thee from suc-  
cession;

Not hold thee of our blood, no, not our kin, 440  
Far than Deucalion off: mark thou my words:

Follow us to the court. Thou churl, for this  
time,

Though full of our displeasure, yet we free thee  
From the dead blow of it. And you, enchant-  
ment,—

Worthy enough a herdman; yea, him too,  
That makes himself, but for our honour therein,

Unworthy thee,—if ever henceforth thou  
These rural latches to his entrance open,

Or hoop his body more with thy embraces,  
I will devise a death as cruel for thee 450

As thou art tender to 't. [*Exit.*]

*Per.* Even here undone!

I was not much afraid: for once or twice  
I was about to speak and tell him plainly,

The selfsame sun that shines upon his court  
Hides not his visage from our cottage but

Looks on alike. Will't please you, sir, be  
gone!

I told you what would come of this: bunsack  
you,

Of your own state take care: this dream of  
mine,—

Being now awake, I'll queen it no less further,  
But milk my ewes and weep.

*Cam.* Why, how now, father!

Speak ere thou diest.

*Shep.* I cannot speak, nor think,

Nor dare to know that which I know. O sir!

You have undone a man of fourscore three,  
That thought to fill his grave in quiet, yea,

To die upon the bed my father died,  
To lie close by his honest bones: but now

Some hangman must put on my shroud and  
lay me

Where no priest shovels in dust. O cursed  
wretch,

That knew't this was the prince, and wouldst  
adventure

To mingle faith with him! Undone! undone!  
If I might die within this hour, I have lived

To die when I desire. [*Exit.*]

*Flo.* Why look you so upon me!  
am but sorry, not afraid; delay'd,

but nothing alter'd: what I was, I am;  
More straining on for plucking back, not fol-  
lowing

My least unwillingly.

*Cam.* Gracious my lord,  
You know your father's temper: at this time

He will allow no speech, which I do guess  
You do not purpose to him; and as hardly

Will he endure your sight as yet, I fear: 460  
Then, till the fury of his highness settle,

Come not before him.

*Flo.* I not purpose it

I think, Camillo!

*Cam.* Even he, my lord.

*Per.* How often have I told you 'twould be  
thus!

How often said, my dignity would last  
But till 'twere known!

*Flo.* It cannot fail but by  
The violation of my faith; and then

Let nature crush the sides o' the earth together  
And mar the seeds within! Lift up thy looks:

From my succession wipe me, father; I 470  
Am heir to my affection.

*Cam.* Be advised.

*Flo.* I am, and by my fancy: if my reason  
Will thereto be obedient, I have reason;

If not, my senses, better pleased with madness,  
Do bid it welcome.

*Cam.* This is desperate, sir.

*Flo.* So call it: but it does fulfil my vow;  
I needs must think it honesty. Camillo,

Not for Bohemia, nor the pomp that may  
Be thereat glean'd, for all the sun sees or 480

The close earth womb or the profound sea hide  
In unknown fathoms, will I break my oath:

To this my fair beloved: therefore, I pray you,  
As you have ever been my father's honour'd

friend,  
When he shall raise me,—as, in faith, I  
not

To see him any more,—cut your good  
Upon his passion: let myself and fortune

Tug for the time to come. This you may know  
And so deliver, I am put to am

With her whom here I cannot hold on shame;  
And meet opportunity to our need I have

A vessel ready to lay, but not prepared  
For this design. What course I mean to hold

Shall nothing benefit your knowledge, nor  
Concern me the reporting.

*Cam.* O my lord!  
I would your spirit were easier for advice,  
Or stronger for your need.

*Flo.* Hark, Perdita. [*Drawing her aside.*]  
I'll hear you by and by.

*Cam.* He's irremovable,  
Resolved for flight. Now were I happy, if  
His going I could frame to serve my turn.  
Save him from danger, do him love and honour,  
Purchase the sight again of dear Sicilia 521  
And that unhappy king, my master, whom  
I so much thirst to see.

*Flo.* Now, good Camillo:  
I am so fraught with curious business that  
I leave out ceremony.

*Cam.* Sir, I think  
You have heard of my poor services, if the love  
That I have borne your father?

*Flo.* Very nobly  
Have you deserved: it is my father's music  
To speak your deeds, not little of his care  
To have them recompensed as thought on.

*Cam.* Well, my lord,  
If you may please to think I love the king 531  
And through him what is nearest to him,  
which is

Your gracious self, embrace but my direction:  
If your more ponderous and settled project  
May suffer alteration, on mine honour,  
I'll point you where you shall have such  
receiving

As shall become your highness; where you may  
Enjoy your mistress, from the whom, I see,  
There's no disjunction to be made, but by—  
As heavens forfend!—your ruin; marry her,  
And, with my best endeavours in your absence,  
Your discontenting father strive to qualify  
And bring him up to liking.

*Flo.* How, Camillo,  
May this, almost a miracle, be done?

That I may call thee something more than man  
And after that trust to thee.

*Cam.* Have you thought on  
A place whereto you'll go?

*Flo.* Not any yet:  
But as the unthought-on accident is guilty  
To what we wildly do, so we profess  
Ourselves to be the slaves of chance and flies  
Of every wind that blows.

*Cam.* Then list to me: 551  
This follows, if you will not change your  
purpose

But undergo this flight, make for Sicilia,  
And there present yourself and your fair  
prince.

For so I see she must be, Yore Leontes:  
She shall be habit'd as it becomes

The partner of your bed. Methinks I see  
Leontes opening his free arms and weeping  
His welcomes forth; asks thee the son forgive-

ment.  
As twice I the father's person; kisses the  
heads

Of you: 560  
Twice I ; o'er and o'er divides him  
and his kindness; the

He chides to hell and bids the other grow  
Faster than thought or time.

*Flo.* Worthy Camillo,  
What colour for my visitation shall I  
Hold up before him?

*Cam.* Sent by the king your father  
To greet him and to give him comfort. Sir,  
The manner of your hearing towards him, with  
What you as from your father shall deliver,  
Things known betwixt us three, I'll wait you  
down: 570

The which shall point you forth at every sitting  
What you must say; that he shall not perceive  
But that you have your father's bosom there  
And speak his very heart.

*Flo.* I am bound to you:  
There is some sap in this.

*Cam.* A course more promising  
Than a wild dedication of yourselves  
To unpath'd waters, undream'd shores, most  
certain

To miseries enough; no hope to help you,  
But as you shake off one to take another;  
Nothing so certain as your anchors, who 580  
Do their best office, if they can but stay you

Where you'll be loath to be: besides you know  
Prosperity's the very bond of love,  
Whose fresh complexion and whose heart to-  
gether

Affliction alters.

*Per.* One of these is true:  
I think affliction may subdue the cheek,  
But not take in the mind.

*Cam.* Yea, say you so!  
There shall not at your father's house these  
seven years

Be born another such.

*Flo.* My good Camillo,  
She is as forward of her breeding as 600  
She is of the rear our birth.

*Cam.* I cannot say 'tis pity  
She lacks instructions, for she seems a mistress  
To meet that teach.

*Per.* Your pardon, sir; for this  
I'll blush you thanks.

*Flo.* My prettiest Perdita!  
But O, the thorns we stand upon! Camillo,  
Preserver of my father, now of me.  
The medicine of our house, how shall we do?  
We are not furnish'd like Bohemia's son,  
Nor shall appear in Sicilia.

*Cam.* My lord,  
Fear none of this: I think you know my  
fortunes 610

Do all lie there: it shall be so my care  
To have you royally appointed as if

The scene you play were mine. For instance,  
sir,

That you may know you shall not want, one  
word. [*They talk aside.*]

*Re-enter AUTOLYOUS.*

*Aut.* Ha, ha! what a fool Honesty is! and  
Trust, his sworn brother, a very simple gentle-  
man! I have sold all my trumpery; not a  
counterfeit stone, not a ribbon, glass, pom-  
ander, brooch, table-book, ballad, knife, tape,  
glove, shoe-lace, bracelet, haen-ring, to keep my



pack from fasting: they throng who should buy first, as if my trinkets had been hallowed and brought a benediction to the buyer: by which means I saw whose purse was best in picture; and what I saw, to my good use I remembered. My clown, who wants but something to be a reasonable man, grew so in love with the wenches' song, that he would not stir his petticoats till he had both tune and words; which so drew the rest of the herd to me that all their other senses stuck in ears: you might have pinched a placket, it was senseless; 'twas nothing to geld a codpiece of a purse; I could have filed keys off that hung in chains: no hearing, no feeling, but my sir's song, and admiring the nothing of it. So that in this time of lethargy I picked and cut most of their festival purses; and had not the old man come in with a whoo-hub against his daughter and the king's son and scared my choughs from the chaff, I had not left a purse alive in the whole army.

*Camillo, Florizel, and Perdita come forward.*

*Cam.* Nay, but my letters, by this means being there

So soon as you arrive, shall clear that doubt.

*Flo.* And those that you'll procure from King Leontes—

*Cam.* Shall satisfy your father.

*Per.* Happy be you! All that you speak shows fair.

*Cam.* Who have we here? [*Seeing Autolycus.*]

We'll make an instrument of this, omit

Nothing may give us aid.

*Aut.* If they have overheard me now, why, hanging.

*Cam.* How now, good fellow! why shakest thou so? Fear not, man; here's no harm intended to thee.

*Aut.* I am a poor fellow, sir.

*Cam.* Why, be so still; here's nobody will steal that from thee: yet for the outside of thy poverty we must make an exchange; therefore disrobe thee instantly,—thou must think there's a necessity in't,—and change garments with this gentleman: though the pennyworth on his side be the worst, yet hold thee, there's some boot.

*Aut.* I am a poor fellow, sir. [*Aside*] I know ye well enough.

*Cam.* Nay, prithee, dispatch: the gentleman is half slayed already.

*Aut.* Are you in earnest, sir! [*Aside*] I smell the trick on't.

*Flo.* Dispatch, I prithee.

*Aut.* Indeed, I have had earnest; but I cannot with conscience take it.

*Cam.* Unbuckle, unbuckle.

[*Florizel and Autolycus exchange garments.*]

Fortunate mistress,—let my prophecy

Come home to ye!—you must retire yourself

Into some covert: take your sweetheart's hat

And pluck it o'er your brows, muffle your face,

Dismantle you, and, as you can, dilute

The truth of your own seeming; that you may—

For I do fear eyes over—to shipboard

Get undescried.

*Per.* I see the play so lies

That I must bear a part.

*Cam.* No remedy.

Have you done there?

*Flo.* Should I now meet my father

He would not call me son.

*Cam.* Nay, you shall have no hat.

[*Giving it to Perdita.*]

Come, lady, come. Farewell, my friend.

*Aut.* Adieu, sir.

*Flo.* O Perdita, what have we twain forgot!

Pray you, a word.

*Cam.* [*Aside*] What I do next, shall be to

tell the king

Of this escape and whither they are bound;

Wherein my hope is I shall so prevail

To force him after: in whose company

I shall review Sicilia, for whose sight

I have a woman's longing.

*Flo.* Fortune speed us!

Thus we set on, Camillo, to the sea-side.

*Cam.* The swifter speed the better.

[*Exeunt Florizel, Perdita, and Camillo.*]

*Aut.* I understand the business, I hear it: to

have an open ear, a quick eye, and a nimble

hand, is necessary for a cut-purse: a good nose

is requisite also, to smell out work for the other

senses. I see this is the time that the unjust

man doth thrive. What an exchange had this

been without boot! What a boot is here with

this exchange! Sure the gods do this year

connive at us, and we may do any thing ex

tempore. The prince himself is about a piece

of iniquity, stealing away from his father with

his clog at his heels: if I thought it were a piece

of honesty to acquaint the king withal, I would

not do't: I hold it the more knavery to con

ceal it; and therein am I constant to my pro

fession.

*Re-enter Clown and Shepherd.*

*Aside, aside:* here is more matter for a hot

brain: every lane's end, every shop, church,

session, hanging, yields a careful man work.

*Clow.* See, see; what a man you are now!

There is no other way but to tell the king

she's a changeling and none of your flesh and

blood.

*Shep.* Nay, but hear me.

*Clow.* Nay, but hear me.

*Shep.* Go to, then.

*Clow.* She being none of your flesh and blood,

your flesh and blood has not offended the king;

and so your flesh and blood is not to be punished

by him. Show those things you found about

her, those secret things, all but what she has

with her: this being done, let the law go whither

I warrant you.

*Shep.* I will tell the king all, every word,

you, and his son's pranks too; who, I may say,

is no honest man, neither to his father nor to

me, to go about to make me the king's brother

in-law.

*Clow.* Indeed, brother-in-law was the farthest

off you could have been to him and then your

blood had been the dearer by I know how much

an ounce.

*Aut.* [*Aside*] Very wisely, puggins!

Wall, let us to the king: there is that in this fardel will make him scratch his beard.

*Aut.* *[Aside]* I know not what impediment this complaint may be to the flight of my master.

*Clo.* Pray heartily he be at palace. 730

*Aut.* *[Aside]* Though I am not naturally honest, I am so sometimes by chance; let me pocket up my pedlar's excrement. *[Takes off his faldel beard.]* How now, rusties! whither are you bound?

*Shep.* To the palace, an it like your worship.

*Aut.* Your affairs there, what, with whom, the condition of that fardel, the place of your dwelling, your names, your ages, of what having, breeding, and any thing that is fitting to be known, discover. 741

*Clo.* We are but plain fellows, sir.

*Aut.* A lie; you are rough and hairy. Let me have no lying: it becomes none but tradesmen, and they often give us soldiers the lie: but we pay them for it with stamped coin, not stabbing steel; therefore they do not give us the lie.

*Clo.* Your worship had like to have given us one, if you had not taken yourself with the manner. 751

*Shep.* Are you a courtier, an't like you, sir?

*Aut.* Whether it like me or no, I am a courtier. Best thou not the air of the court in these enfoldings? hath not my gait in it the measure of the court? receives not thy nose court-odour from me? reflect I not on thy base-born court-contempt? Thinkest thou, for that I intimate, or frown from thee thy business, I am therefore no courtier? I am courtier cap-a-pe; and one that will either push on or pluck back thy business there: whereupon I command thee to open thy affair.

*Shep.* My business, sir, is to the king.

*Aut.* What advocate hast thou to him?

*Shep.* I know not, an't like you.

*Clo.* Advocate's the court-word for a pleazant; say you have none.

*Shep.* None, sir; I have no pleazant, cook nor hen. 770

*Aut.* How blessed are we that are not simple men!

Yet nature might have made me as these are. Therefore I will not disdain.

*Clo.* This cannot be but a great courtier.

*Shep.* His garments are rich, but he wears them not handsomely.

*Clo.* He seems to be the more noble in being fastidious; a great man, I'll warrant; I know by the picking on 's teeth.

*Aut.* The fardel there! what's i' the fardel? Wherefore that box? 781

*Shep.* Sir, there lies such secrets in this fardel and box, which none must know but the king; and which he shall know within this hour, if I may come to the speech of him.

*Aut.* Ah, then hast lost thy labour.

*Shep.* ...hy, sir!

*Aut.* The king is not at the palace; he is gone about some other way to purge melancholy and at his heart. If then hast capable of thine own sense, must know the king is full of grief.

*Shep.* So 'tis said, sir; about his son, that should have married a shepherd's daughter.

*Aut.* If that shepherd be not in hand-fast, let him fly: the curser he shall have, the tortures he shall feel, will break the back of man, the heart of monster.

*Clo.* Think you so, sir?

*Aut.* Not he alone shall suffer what wit can make heavy and vengeance bitter; but those that are worms to him, though removed fifty times, shall all come under the hangman: which though it be great pity, yet it is necessary. An old sheep-whistling rogue, a ram-tender, to offer to have his daughter come into grace! Some say he shall be stoned; but that death is too soft for him, say I: draw our throne into a sheep-cote; all deaths are too few, the sharpest too easy.

*Clo.* Has the old man e'er a son, sir, do you hear, an't like you, sir? 810

*Aut.* He has a son, who shall be flayed alive; then 'mounted over with honey, set on the head of a wasp's nest; then stand till he be three quarters and a dram dead; then recovered again with aqua-vite or some other hot infusion: then, raw as he is, and in the hottest day pre-nostication proclaims, shall he be set against a brick-wall, the sun looking with a southward eye upon him, where he is to behold him with flies blown to death. But what talk we of these traitorly rascals, whose miseries are to be smiled at, their offences being so capital? Tell me, for you seem to be honest plain men, what you have to the king: being something gently considered, I'll bring you where he is abroad, tender your persons to his presence, whisper him in your behalfs; and if it be in man besides the king to effect your suits, here is man shall do it.

*Clo.* He seems to be of great authority: close with him, give him gold; and though authority be a stubborn bear, yet he is oft led by the nose with gold: show the inside of your purse to the outside of his hand, and no more ado. Remember 'stomach, and 'flayed alive.

*Shep.* An't please you, sir, to undertake the business for us, here is that gold I have: I'll make it as much more and leave this young man in pawn till I hear of you.

*Aut.* After I have done what I promised!

*Shep.* Ay, sir. 840

*Aut.* Well, give me the moiety. Are you a party in this business?

*Clo.* In some sort, sir; but though my case be a pitiful one, I hope I shall not be flayed out of it.

*Aut.* O, that's the case of the shepherd's son: hang him, he'll be made an example.

*Clo.* Comfort, good comfort! We must to the king and show our strange suits; he must know 'tis none of your daughter nor my sister; we are gone else. Sir, I will give you as much as this old man does when the business is past, and remain, as he says, your pawn till he be brought you.

*Aut.* I will trust you. Walk before toward the sea-side; go on the right hand: I will but look upon the horse and follow you.

*Clo.* We see what in this man, as I may say, even blast.

*Step.* Let's before as he bids us: he was provided to do us good.

[*Exeunt Shepherd and Clown.*]

*Aut.* If I had a mind to be honest, I see Fortune would not suffer me: she drops booties in my mouth. I am courted now with a double occasion, gold and a means to do the prince my master good; which who knows how that may turn back to my advancement? I will bring these two moles, these blind ones, aboard him: if he think it fit to shore them again and that the complaint they have to the king concerns him nothing, let him call me rogue for being so fawcious; for I am proof against that title and what shame else belongs to't. To him will I present them: there may be matter in it.

[*Exit.*]

## ACT V.

## SCENE I. A room in LEONTES' palace.

*Enter LEONTES, CLOWNES, DION, PAULINA, and Servants.*

*Clea.* Sir, you have done enough, and have perform'd  
A saint-like sorrow: no fault could you make,  
Which you have not redeem'd; indeed, paul  
down

More penitence than done trespass: at the last,  
No as the heavens have done, forget your evil;  
With them forgive yourself.

*Leon.* Whilst I remember  
Her and her virtues, I cannot forget  
My blemishes in them, and so still think of  
The wrong I did myself; which was so much,  
That heinous it hath made my kingdom and  
Destroy'd the sweetest companion that ever man  
Bred his hopes out of.

*Paul.* True, too true, my lord:  
If, one by one, you welded all the world,  
'r from the all that are took something good,  
'r make a perfect woman, she you kill'd  
'ould be unparalleled.

*Leon.* I think so. Kill'd!  
She I kill'd! I did so: but thou strik'st me  
orely, to say I did; it is as bitter  
Upon thy tongue as in my thought: now, good  
now.

*Clea.* Not at all, good lady: so  
You might have spoken a thousand things that  
would  
have done the three mores benefit and grand  
our kindness better.

*Paul.* You are one of those  
Would have him wed again.

*Dion.* If you would not so,  
You pity not the state, nor the remembrance  
of his most sovereign name; consider little  
What dangers, by his highness' fall of issue,  
May drop upon his kingdom and devour  
Incertains lookers on. What were more holy  
Than to rejoice the former queen is well!  
What holier than, for royalty's repute,  
For present comfort and for future good,  
To bless the bed of majesty again  
With a sweet fellow to't?

*Paul.* There is none worthy,  
Respecting her that's gone. Besides, the gods  
Will have fulfill'd their secret purposes;  
For has not the divine Apollo said,  
Is't not the tenour of his oracle,  
That King Leontes shall not have an heir  
Till his lost child be found? which that it shall,  
Is all as monstrous to our human reason  
As my Antigonus to break his grave  
And come again to me; who, on my life,  
Did perish with the infant. 'Tis your counsel  
My lord should to the heavens be contrary,  
Oppose against their wills. [*To Leontes.*] Care  
not for issue;

The crown will find an heir: great Alexander  
Left his to the worthiest; so his successor  
Was like to be the best.

*Leon.* Good Paulina,  
Who hast the memory of Hermione,  
I know, in honour, O, that ever I  
Had squared me to thy counsel! then, even  
now,

I might have look'd upon my queen's full eyes,  
Have taken treasure from her lips—

*Paul.* And left them  
More rich for what they yielded.

*Leon.* Thou speak'st truth.  
No more such wives; therefore, no wife: one  
worse,  
And better used, would make her painted spirit  
Again possess her corpse, and on this stage,  
Where we're offenders now, appear soul-rear'd,  
'And begin, 'Why to me!'

*Paul.* Had she such power, to  
She had just cause.

*Leon.* She had; and would incense me  
To murder her I married.

*Paul.* I should so.  
Were I the ghost that walk'd, I'd bid you mark  
Her eye, and tell me for what dull part in't  
You chose her; then I'd strike, that even your  
ears

Should rift to hear me; and the words that  
follow'd

Should be 'Remember mine.'

*Leon.* Stern, stern.  
And all eyes also dead coals! Fear thou no  
wife;

I'll have no wife, Paulina.

*Paul.* Will you swear  
Never to marry but by my free leave?

*Leon.* Never, Paulina; so be blest my spirit!

*Paul.* Then, good my lords, bear witness to  
his oath.

*Clea.* You tempt him overmuch.  
*Paul.* Unless another,  
As like Hermione as is her picture,  
Affront his eye.

*Clea.* Good mistress,—

*Paul.* I have done.  
Yet, if my lord will marry,—if you will, sir,  
No remedy, but you will,—give me the office  
To choose you a queen: she shall not be so  
young

As was your daughter; but she shall be such  
As, walk'd your first queen's ghost, should make  
joy

To see her in your arms.

*Leon.* My true Paulina,  
We shall not marry till thou bidst us.  
*Paul.* That  
Shall be when your first queen's again in  
breath;  
Never till then.

*Enter a Gentleman.*

*Gent.* One that gives out himself Prince  
Florizel,  
Son of Polixenes, with his princess, she  
The fairest I have yet beheld, desires access  
To your high presence.

*Leon.* What with him? he comes not  
Like to his father's greatness: his approach,  
So out of circumstance and sudden, tells us  
'Tis not a visitation framed, but forced  
By need and accident. What train?

*Gent.* But few,  
And those but mean.

*Leon.* His princess, say you, with him?  
*Gent.* Ay, the most peerless piece of earth, I  
think,

That e'er the sun shone bright on.

*Paul.* O Hermione,  
As every present time doth boast itself  
Above a better gone, so must thy grave  
Give way to what's seen now! Sir, you yourself  
Have said and writ so, but your writing now  
Is colder than that theme. 'She had not been,  
Nor was not to be equal'd;'—thus your verse  
Flaw'd with her beauty once: 'tis shrewdly  
ebb'd.

To say you have seen a better.

*Gent.* Pardon, madam:—  
The one I have almost forgot,—your pardon:—  
The other, when she has obtain'd your eye,  
Will have your tongue too. This is a creature,  
Would she begin a sect, might quench the zeal  
Of all professors else, make proselytes  
Of who she but bid follow.

*Paul.* How! not women?  
*Gent.* Women will love her, that she is a  
woman

More worth than any man; men, that she is  
The rarest of all women.

*Leon.* Go, Cleomenes;  
Yourself, assisted with your honour'd friends,  
Bring them to our embracement. Still, 'tis  
strange [*Exeunt Cleomenes and others.*]  
He thou shouldst steal upon us.

*Paul.* Had our prince,  
Jewel of children, seen this hour, he had pair'd  
Well with this lord: there was not full a month  
Between their births.

*Leon.* Prithce, no more; cease; thou know'st  
He dies to me again when talk'd of: sure,  
When I shall see this gentleman, thy speeches  
Will bring me to consider that which may  
Unfurnish me of reason. They are come.

*Re-enter CLEOMENES and others, with  
FLORIZEL and PERDITA.*

Your mother was most true to wedlock, prince;  
For she did print your royal father off,  
Conceiving you: were I but twenty one,  
Your father's image is so hit in you,  
His very air, that I should call you brother,

As I did him, and speak of something wildly  
By us perform'd before. Most dearly welcome!  
And your fair-princess,—goddess!—O, alas! 131  
I lost a couple, that 'twixt heaven and earth  
Might thus have stood begetting wonder as  
You, gracious couple, do: and then I lost—  
All mine own folly—the society,  
Amity too, of your brave father, whom,  
Though bearing misery, I desire my life  
Once more to look on him.

*Flo.* By his command  
Have I here touch'd Sicilia and from him  
Give you all greetings that a king, at friend,  
(Can send his brother: and, but infirmity  
Which waits upon worn times hath something  
seiz'd

His wish'd ability, he had himself  
The lands and waters 'twixt your throne and his  
Measured to look upon you; whom he loves.  
He bade me say so—more than all the sceptres  
And those that bear them living.

*Leon.* O my brother,  
Good gentleman! the wrongs I have done thee  
atir

Afresh within me, and these thy offices,  
So rarely kind, are as interpreters 139  
Of my behind-hand slackness. Welcome hither,  
As is the spring to the earth. And hath he too  
Expos'd this paragon to the fearful usage,  
At least ungentle, of the dreadful Neptune,  
To greet a man not worth her pains, much less  
The adventure of her person?

*Flo.* Good my lord,  
She came from Libya.

*Leon.* Where the warlike Sinalus,  
That noble honour'd lord, is fear'd and loved.

*Flo.* Most royal sir, from thence; from him,  
whose daughter  
His tears proclaim'd his, parting with her  
thence,

A prosperous south-wind friendly, we have  
cross'd.

To execute the charge my father gave me  
For visiting your highness: my best train  
I have from your Sicilian shores dismiss'd;  
Who for Bohemia bend, to signify  
Not only my success in Libya, sir,  
But my arrival and my wife's in safety  
Here where we are.

*Leon.* The blessed gods  
Purge all infection from our air whilst you  
Do climate here! You have a holy father, 17  
A graceful gentleman; against whose person,  
So sacred as it is, I have done sin;  
For which the heavens, taking angry note,  
Have left me issueless; and your father's bless'd  
As he from heaven merits it, with you  
Worthy his goodness. What night I have been  
Night I a son and daughter now have look'd on  
Such goodly things as you!

*Enter a Lord.*

*Lord.* Most noble sir,  
That which I shall report will bear no credit,  
Were not the proof so nigh. Please you, great  
sir,  
Bohemia greets you from himself by me:  
Desires you to attach his son, who has—

His dignity and duty both cast off—  
Fled from his father, from his hopes, and with  
A shepherd's daughter.

*Leon.* Where's Bohemia? speak.  
*Lord.* Here in your city; I now came from  
him:

I speak amazedly; and it becomes  
My marvel and my message. To your court  
Whiles he was hastening, in the chase, it seems,  
Of this fair couple, meets he on the way 190  
The father of this seeming lady and  
Her brother, having both their country quitted  
With this young prince.

*Flo.* Camillo has betray'd me;  
Whose honour and whose honesty till now  
Endured all weathers.

*Lord.* Lay't so to his charge:  
He's with the king your father.

*Leon.* Who? Camillo?

*Lord.* Camillo, sir; I spake with him; who  
now  
Has these poor men in question. Never saw I  
Wretches so quake: they kneel, they kiss the  
earth;

Forswear themselves as often as they speak: 200  
Bohemia stops his ears, and threatens them  
With divers deaths in death.

*Per.* O my poor father!  
The heaven sets spices upon us, will not have  
Our contract celebrated.

*Leon.* You are married?  
*Flo.* We are not, sir, nor are we like to be:  
The stars, I see, will kiss the valleys first:  
The odds for high and low's alike.

*Leon.* My lord,  
Is this the daughter of a king?

*Flo.* She is,

When once she is my wife.

*Leon.* That 'once,' I see by your good  
father's speed, 210

Will come on very slowly. I am sorry,  
Most sorry, you have broken from his hiving  
Where you were tied in duty, and as sorry  
Your choice is not so rich in worth as beauty,  
That you might well enjoy her.

*Flo.* Dear, look up:  
Though Fortune, visible an enemy,  
Should chase us with my father, power no jot  
Hath she to change our loves. Beseech you,  
sir,

Remember since you owed no more to time  
Than I do now: with thought of such affections,  
up forth mine advocate; at your request 221  
My father will grant precious things as trifles.

*Leon.* Would he do so, I'd buy your precious  
mistress,

Which he counts but a trifle.

*Paul.* Sir, my liege,  
Your eye hath too much youth in't: not a  
month

Fore your queen died, she was more worth such  
spaces

Than what you look on now.

*Leon.* I thought of her,  
Even in these looks I made. [*To Florisel.*]

But your petition  
Is yet unanswered. I will to your father:  
Your honour not o'erthrown by your desires, 230

I am friend to them and you: upon which  
errand

I now go toward him, therefore follow me  
And mark what way I make: come, good my  
lord. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. Before LEONTES' palace.

Enter AUTOLYOUS and a Gentleman.

*Aut.* Beseech you, sir, were you present at  
this relation?

*First Gent.* I was by at the opening of the  
fardel, heard the old shepherd deliver the  
manner how he found it: whereupon, after a  
little amazement, we were all commanded out  
of the chamber; only this methought I heard  
the shepherd say, he found the child.

*Aut.* I would most gladly know the issue  
of it. 9

*First Gent.* I make a broken delivery of the  
business; but the changes I perceived in the  
king and Camillo were very notes of admira-  
tion: they seemed almost, with staring on one  
another, to tear the cases of their eyes; there  
was speech in their dumbness, language in their  
very gesture; they looked as they had heard of  
a world ransom'd, or one destroyed: a notable  
passion of wonder appeared in them; but the  
wisest beholder, that knew no more but  
seeing, could not say if the importance were  
joy or sorrow; but in the extremity of the one,  
it must needs be.

## Enter another Gentleman.

Here comes a gentleman that haply knows  
more. The news, Rogero?

*Sec. Gent.* Nothing but bonfires: the oracle  
is fulfilled; the king's daughter is found: such a  
deal of wonder is broken out within this hour  
that ballad-makers cannot be able to express it.

## Enter a third Gentleman.

Here comes the Lady Paulina's steward: he can  
deliver you more. How goes it now, sir? this  
news which is called true is so like an old tale,  
that the verity of it is in strong suspicion: has  
the king found his heir?

*Third Gent.* Most true, if ever truth were  
pregnant by circumstance: that which you  
hear you'll swear you see, there is such unity  
in the proofs. The mantle of Queen Hermione's,  
her jewel about the neck of it, the letters of  
Antigonus found with it which they know to  
be his character, the majesty of the creature in  
resemblance of the mother, the affection of  
nobleness which nature shows above her breed-  
ing, and many other evidences proclaim her  
with all certainty to be the king's daughter.  
Did you see the meeting of the two kings?

*Sec. Gent.* No.

*Third Gent.* Then have you lost a sight,  
which was to be seen, cannot be spoken of.  
There might you have beheld one joy crown  
another, so and in such manner that it seemed  
sorrow wept to take leave of them, for their  
joy waded in tears. There was casting up of  
eyes, holding up of hands, with countenance of

such distraction that they were to be known by garment, not by favour. Our king, being ready to leap out of himself for joy of his found daughter, as if that joy were now become a loss, cries 'O, thy mother, thy mother!' then asks Bohemia forgiveness; then embraces his son-in-law; then again worries he his daughter with clipping her; now he thanks the old shepherd, which stands by like a weather-bitten conduit of many kings' reigns. I never heard of such another encounter, which lames report to follow it and undoes description to do it.

*Sec. Gent.* What, pray you, became of Antigonus, that carried hence the child?

*Third Gent.* Like an old tale still, which will have matter to rehearse, though credit be asleep and not an ear open. He was torn to pieces with a bear: this avouches the shepherd's son; who has not only his innocence, which seems much, to justify him, but a handkerchief and rings of his that Paulina knows.

*First Gent.* What became of his bark and his followers?

*Third Gent.* Wrecked the same instant of their master's death and in the view of the shepherd: so that all the instruments which aided to expose the child were even then lost when it was found. But O, the noble combat that 'twixt joy and sorrow was fought in Paulina! She had one eye declined for the loss of her husband, another elevated that the oracle was fulfilled: she lifted the princess from the earth, and so locks her in embracing, as if she would pin her to her heart that she might no more be in danger of losing.

*First Gent.* The dignity of this act was worth the audience of kings and princes; for by such was it acted.

*Third Gent.* One of the prettiest touches of all and that which angler for mine eyes, caught the water though not the fish, was when, at the relation of the queen's death, with the manner how she came to 't bravely confessed and lamented by the king, how attentiveness wounded his daughter: till, from one sign of colour to another, she did, with an 'Alas,' I would fain say, bleed tears, for I am sure my heart wept blood. Who was most marble there changed colour; some swooned, all sorrowed: if all the world could have seen 't, the woe had been universal.

*First Gent.* Are they returned to the court?

*Third Gent.* No: the princess hearing of her mother's statue, which is in the keeping of Paulina,—a piece many years in doing and now newly performed by that rare Italian master, Julio Romano, who, had he himself eternity and could put breath into his work, would beguile Nature of her custom, so perfectly he is her ape; he so near to Hermione hath done Hermione that they say one would speak to her and stand in hope of answer: thither with all greediness of affection are they gone, and there they intend to sup.

*Sec. Gent.* I thought she had some great matter there in hand; for she hath privately twice or thrice a day, ever since the death of Hermione, visited that removed house. Shall

we thither and with our company piece the rejoicing?

*First Gent.* Who would be thence that has the benefit of access? every wink of an eye some new grace will be born: our absence makes us unthrifty to our knowledge. Let's along.

[*Exeunt Gentlemen.*]

*Aut.* Now, had I not the dash of my former life in me, would preferment drop on my head. I brought the old man and his son aboard the prince: told him I heard them talk of a fardel and I know not what; but he at that time, overfond of the shepherd's daughter, so he then took her to be, who began to be much sea-sick, and himself little better, extremity of weather continuing, this mystery remained undiscovered. But 'tis all one to me; for had I been the finder out of this secret, it would not have relished among my other discredita.

### Enter Shepherd and Clown.

Here come those I have done good to against my will, and already appearing in the blossoms of their fortune.

*Shep.* Come, boy; I am past mee children, but thy sons and daughters will be all gentlemen born.

*Clow.* You are well met, sir. You denied to fight with me this other day, because I was no gentleman born. See you these clothes? say you see them not and think me still no gentleman born: you were best say these robes are not gentlemen born: give me the lie, do, and try whether I am not now a gentleman born.

*Aut.* I know you are now, sir, a gentleman born.

*Clow.* Ay, and have been so any time these four hours.

*Shep.* And so have I, boy.

*Clow.* So you have: but I was a gentleman born before my father; for the king's son took me by the hand, and called me brother; and then the two kings called my father brother; and then the prince my brother and the princess my sister called my father father; and so we wept, and there was the first gentleman-like tears that ever we shed.

*Shep.* We may live, son, to shed many more.

*Clow.* Ay; or else 'twere hard luck, being in so preposterous estate as we are.

*Aut.* I humbly beseech you, sir, to pardon me all the faults I have committed to your worship and to give me your good report to the prince my master.

*Shep.* Prithee, son, do; for we must be gentle, now we are gentlemen.

*Clow.* Thou wilt amend thy life?

*Aut.* Ay, an it like your good worship.

*Clow.* Give me thy hand: I will swear to the prince thou art as honest a true fellow as any is in Bohemia.

*Shep.* You may say it, but not swear it.

*Clow.* Not swear it, now I am a gentleman! Let loons and franklins say it, I'll swear it.

*Shep.* How if it be false, son?

*Clow.* If it be never so false, a true gentleman may swear it in the behalf of his friend: and

I'll swear to the prince thou art a tall fellow of thy hands and that thou wilt not be drunk; but I know thou art no tall fellow of thy hands and that thou wilt be drunk: but I'll swear it, and I would thou wouldst be a tall fellow of thy hands.

*Aut.* I will prove so, sir, to my power.

*Clo.* Ay, by any means prove a tall fellow: if I do not wonder how thou dar'st venture to be drunk, not being a tall fellow, trust me not. Hark! the kings and the princes, our kindred, are going to see the queen's picture. Come, follow us: we'll be thy good masters. [*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III. A chapel in PAULINA'S house.

*Enter LEONTES, POLIXENES, FLORIZEL, PERDITA, CAMILLO, PAULINA, Lords, and Attendants.*

*Leon.* O grave and good Paulina, the great comfort  
That I have had of thee!

*Paul.* What, sovereign sir,  
I did not well I meant well. All my services  
You have paid home: but that you have vouchsafed,  
With your crown'd brother and these your contracted

Heirs of your kingdoms, my poor house to visit,  
It is a surplus of your grace, which never  
My life may last to answer.

*Leon.* O Paulina,  
We honour you with trouble: but we came  
To see the statue of our queen: your gallery  
Have we pass'd through, not without much content

In many singularities; but we saw not  
That which my daughter came to look upon,  
The statue of her mother.

*Paul.* As she lived peerless,  
So her dead likeness, I do well believe,  
Excels whatever yet you look'd upon  
Or hand of man hath done; therefore I keep it  
Lonely, apart. But here it is: prepare  
To see the life as lively mock'd as ever  
Still sleep mock'd death: behold, and say 'tis well. [*Paulina draws a curtain, and discovers Hermione standing like a statue.*]

I like your silence, it the more shows off  
Your wonder: but yet speak; first, you, my niece.

*Flor.* Does it not something near?

*Leon.* Her natural posture!  
Hide me, dear stone, that I may say indeed  
That Hermione; or rather, thou art she  
In thy not chiding, for she was as tender  
As infancy and grace. But yet, Paulina,  
Hermione was not so much wrinkled, nothing  
So aged as this seems.

*Paul.* O, not by much.

*Paul.* So much the more our carver's excellence;  
Which lets go by some sixteen years and makes

As she lived now.

*Leon.* As now she might have done,  
So much to my good comfort, as it is

Now piercing to my soul. O, thus she stood,  
Even with such life of majesty, warm life,  
As now it coldly stands, when first I woo'd her!  
I am ashamed: does not the stone rebuke me  
For being more stone than it? O royal piece,  
There's magic in thy majesty, which has  
My evils conjured to remembrance and  
From thy admiring daughter took the spirits,  
Standing like stone with thee.

*Per.* And give me leave,  
And do not say 'tis superstition, that  
I kneel and then implore her blessing. Lady,  
Dear queen, that ended when I but began,  
Give me that hand of yours to kiss.

*Paul.* O, patience!  
The statue is but newly fix'd, the colour's  
Not dry.

*Cam.* My lord, your sorrow was too sore  
laid on,

Which sixteen winters cannot blow away,  
So many summers dry: scarce any joy  
Did ever so long live; no sorrow  
But kill'd itself much sooner.

*Pol.* Dear my brother,  
Let him that was the cause of this have power  
To take off so much grief from you as he  
Will piece up in himself.

*Paul.* Indeed, my lord,  
If I had thought the sight of my poor image  
Would thus have wrought you,—for the stone  
is mine—

I'd not have show'd it.

*Leon.* Do not draw the curtain.  
*Paul.* No longer shall you gaze on't, lest  
your fancy  
May think anon it moves.

*Leon.* Let be, let be.  
Would I were dead, but that, methinks, already—

What was he that did make it? See, my lord,  
Would you not deem it breath'd? and that  
those veins  
Did verily bear blood?

*Pol.* Masterly done:  
The very life seems warm upon her lip.

*Leon.* The figure of her eye has motion in't.  
As we are mock'd with art.

*Paul.* I'll draw the curtain:  
My lord's almost so far transported that  
He'll think anon it lives.

*Leon.* O sweet Paulina,  
Make me to think so twenty years together!  
No settled senses of the world can match  
The pleasure of that madness. Let's alone.

*Paul.* I am sorry, sir, I have thus far stir'd  
you: but  
I could afflict you farther.

*Leon.* No, Paulina;  
For this affliction has a taste as sweet  
As any cordial comfort. Still, methinks,  
There is an air comes from her: what fine chisel  
Could ever yet cut breath? Let no man mock  
me,

For I will kiss her.

*Paul.* Good my lord, forbear: so  
The ruddiness upon her lip is wet;  
You'll mar it if you kiss it, stain your own  
With oily painting. Shall I draw the curtain?

*Leon.* No, not these twenty years.

*Per.* So long could I

Stand by, a looker on.

*Paul.* Either forbear.

Quit presently the chapel, or resolve you

For more amusement. If you can behold it,

I'll make the statue move indeed, descend

And take you by the hand: but then you'll think—

Which I protest against—I am assisted 90  
By wicked powers.

*Leon.* What you can make her do,  
I am content to look on: what to speak,

I am content to hear; for 'tis as easy

To make her speak as move.

*Paul.* It is required

You do awake her faith. Then all stand still;

On: those that think it is unlawful business

I am about, let them depart.

*Leon.* Proceed:

No foot shall stir.

*Paul.* Music, awake her; strike! [*Music.*

'Tis time; descend; be stone no more; ap-  
proach: 99

Strike all that look upon with marvel. Come,  
I'll fill your grave up: stir, nay, come away,

Bequeath to death your numbness, for from  
him

Dear life redeems you. You perceive she stirs:  
[*Hermione comes down.*

Start not; her actions shall be holy as

You hear my spell is lawful: do not shun her

Until you see her die again; for then

You kill her double. Nay, present your hand:

When she was young you woo'd her; now in  
age

Is she become the suitor?

*Leon.* O, she's warm!

If this be magic, let it be an art 110  
Lawful as eating.

*Pol.* She embraces him.

*Cam.* She hangs about his neck:

If she pertain to life let her speak too.

*Pol.* Ay, and make't manifest where she has  
lived,

Or how stolen from the dead.

*Paul.* That she is living,

Were it but told you, should be hooted at

Like an old tale: but it appears she lives,  
Though yet she speak not. Mark a little while.

Please you to interpose, fair madam: kneel  
And pray your mother's blessing. Turn, good  
lady: 121

Our Perdita is found.

*Her.* You gods, look down  
And from your sacred vials pour your graces  
Upon my daughter's head! Tell me, mine own

Where hast thou been preserved? where lived  
how found

Thy father's court? for thou shalt hear that I,  
Knowing by Paulina that the oracle

Gave hope thou wast in being, have preserved  
Myself to see the issue.

*Paul.* There's time enough for that:  
Lest they desire upon this push to trouble

Your joys with like relation. Go together, 130  
You precious winners all; your exultation  
Partake to every one. I, an old turtle,

Will wing me to some wither'd bough and there  
My mate, that's never to be found again,

Lament till I am lost.

*Leon.* O, peace, Paulina!  
Thou shouldst a husband take by my consent;

As I by thine a wife: this is a match,  
And made between's by vows. Thou hast found  
mine;

But how, is to be question'd: for I saw her,  
As I thought, dead, and have in vain as-  
many 140

A prayer upon her grave. I'll not seek far—  
For him, I partly know his mind—to find thee

An honourable husband. Come, Camillo,  
And take her by the hand, whose worth and  
honesty

Is richly noted and here justified  
By us, a pair of kings. Let's from this place

What! look upon my brother: both your  
pardons,

That e'er I put between your holy looks  
My ill suspicion. This is your son-in-law 145

And son unto the king, who, heavens directing,  
Is troth-plight to your daughter. Good Paulina

Lead us from hence, where we may leisurely  
Each one demand and answer to his part

Perform'd in this wide gap of time since first  
We were dismember'd: hastily lead away. [*Exeunt.*



# THE LIFE AND DEATH OF KING JOHN

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

KING JOHN.

PRINCE HENRY, son to the king.

ARTHUR, Duke of Bretagne, nephew to the king.

The Earl of PEMBROKE.

The Earl of ESSEX.

The Earl of SALISBURY.

The Lord BIGOT.

HUBERT DE BURGH.

ROBERT FAULCONBRIDGE, son to Sir Robert Faulconbridge.

PHILIP the BASTARD, his half-brother.

JAMES GURNEY, servant to Lady Faulconbridge.

PETER of Pomfret, a prophet.

PHILIP, King of France.

LEWIS, the Dauphin.

LYMOGES, Duke of AUSTRIA.

CARDINAL PANDULPH, the Pope's legate.

MELUN, a French Lord.

CHATILLON, ambassador from France to King John.

QUEEN ELINOR, mother to King John.

CONSTANCE, mother to Arthur.

BLANCH of Spain, niece to King John.

LADY FAULCONBRIDGE.

Lords, Citizens of Angiers, Sheriff, Herald,  
Officers, Soldiers, Messengers, and other  
Attendants.

SCENE: *Partly in England, and partly in France.*

## ACT I.

### SCENE I. KING JOHN'S palace.

Enter KING JOHN, QUEEN ELINOR, PEMBROKE, ESSEX, SALISBURY, and others, with CHATILLON.

*K. John.* Now, say, Chatillon, what would France with us?

*Chat.* Thus, after greeting, speaks the King of France

In my behaviour to the majesty,  
The borrow'd unmajesty, of England here.

*Elin.* A strange beginning: 'borrow'd majesty'!

*K. John.* Silence, good mother; hear the embassy.

*Chat.* Philip of France, in right and true behalf

Of thy deceased brother Geoffrey's son,  
Arthur Plantagenet, lays most lawful claim  
To this fair island and the territories,  
To Ireland, Poitiers, Anjou, Touraine, Maine  
Demanding thee to lay aside the sword  
Which sways usurpingly these several titles,  
And put the same into young Arthur's hand,  
The nephew and right royal sovereign.

*K. John.* What follows if we disallow of this?

*Chat.* The proud control of fierce and bloody war,

To enforce these rights so forcibly withheld.

*K. John.* Here have we war for war and blood for blood,

Controlment for controlment: so answer France

*Chat.* Then take my king's defiance from my mouth,

The farthest limit of my embassy.

*K. John.* Bear mine to him, and so depart in peace:

Be thou as lightning in the eyes of France;

For ere thou canst report I will be there;

The thunder of my cannon shall be heard:

So hence! Be thou the trumpet of our wrath

And sullen preface of your own decay.

An honourable conduct let him have:

Pembroke, look to't. Farewell, Chatillon. 30

[*Exeunt Chatillon and Pembroke.*]  
*Elin.* What now, my son! have I not ever said

How that ambitious Constance would not cease

Till she had kindled France and all the world,

Upon the right and party of her son?

This might have been prevented and made whole

With very easy arguments of love,  
Which now the manage of two kingdoms must

With fearful bloody issue arbitrate.

*K. John.* Our strong possession and our right for us.

*Elin.* Your strong possession much more than

Or else it must go wrong with you and me:

So much my conscience whispers in your ear,  
Which none but heaven and you and I shall hear.

*Enter a Sheriff.*

*Sheriff.* My lords, here is the strongest controversy

Come from the country to be judged by you  
That e'er I heard : shall I produce the men ?

*K. John.* Let them approach.  
Our abbeyes and our priories shall pay  
This expedition's charge.

*Enter ROBERT FAULCONBRIDGE, and PHILIP  
his bastard brother.*

What men are you ?  
*Bast.* Your faithful subject I, a gentleman  
Born in Northamptonshire and eldest son, 51  
As I suppose, to Robert Faulconbridge,  
A soldier, by the honour-giving hand  
Of Cœur-de-lion knighted in the field.

*K. John.* What art thou ?

*Rob.* The son and heir to that same Faulcon-  
bridge.

*K. John.* Is that the elder, and art thou the  
heir ?

You came not of one mother then, it seems.

*Bast.* Most certain of one mother, mighty  
king ;

That is well known ; and, as I think, one father :  
But for the certain knowledge of that truth : 61  
As I put you o'er to heaven and to my mother :  
Of that I doubt, as all men's children may.

*Eliz.* Out on thee, rude man ! thou dost shame  
thy mother

And wound her honour with this diffidence.

*Bast.* I, madam ! no, I have no reason for it ;  
That is my brother's plea and none of mine ;  
The which if he can prove, a' pops me out  
At least from fair five hundred pound a year :  
Heaven guard my mother's honour and my land !

*K. John.* A good blunt fellow. Why, being  
younger born, 71

Doth he lay claim to thine inheritance ?

*Bast.* I know not why, except to get the land.  
But once he slander'd me with bastardy :  
But whether I be as true begot or no,  
That still I lay upon my mother's head ;  
But that I am as well begot, my liege, —  
Fair fall the bones that took the pains for me ! —  
Compare our faces and be judge yourself.  
If old sir Robert did beget us both, 80  
And were our father and this son like him,  
O old sir Robert, father, on my knee  
I give heaven thanks I was not like to thee !

*K. John.* Why, what a madcap hath heaven  
lent us here !

*Eliz.* He hath a trick of Cœur-de-lion's face ;  
The accent of his tongue affecteth him.  
Do you not read some tokens of my son  
In the large composition of this man ?

*K. John.* Mine eye hath well examined his  
parts

And finds them perfect Richard. Sirrah, speak,  
What doth move you to claim your brother's  
land ? 91

*Bast.* Because he hath a half-face, like my  
father.

With half that face would he have all my land :  
A half-faced groat five hundred pound a year !

*Rob.* My gracious liege, when that my father  
lived,

Your brother did employ my father much, —

*Bast.* Well, sir, by this you cannot get my  
land :

Your tale must be how he employ'd my mother.

*Rob.* And once dispatch'd him in an embassy  
To Germany, there with the emperor 100

To treat of high affairs touching that time.  
The advantage of his absence took the king

And in the mean time sojourn'd at my father's ;  
Where how he did prevail I shame to speak,

But truth is truth : large lengths of seas and  
shores

Between my father and my mother lay,  
As I have heard my father speak himself,

When this same lusty gentleman was got.  
Upon his death-bed he by will bequeath'd 110

His lands to me, and took it on his death ;  
That this my mother's son was none of his ;

And if he were, he came into the world  
Full fourteen weeks before the course of time.

Then, good my liege, let me have what is mine,  
My father's land, as was my father's will.

*K. John.* Sirrah, your brother is legitimate.  
Your father's wife did after wellock bear him,

And if she did play false, the fault was hers ;  
Which fault lies on the hazards of all husbands.

That marry wives. Tell me, how if my brother,  
Who, as you say, took pains to get this son, 120

Had of your father claim'd this son for his ?  
In sooth, good friend, your father might have

kept  
This calf bred from his cow from all the world ;

In sooth he might ; then, if he were my brother,  
My brother might not claim him ; nor your

father,  
Being none of his, refuse him : this concludes :

My mother's son did get your father's heir ;  
Your father's heir must have your father's land.

*Rob.* Shall then my father's will be of no  
force 125

To dispossess that child which is not his ?  
*Bast.* Of no more force to dispossess me, sir,

Than was his will to get me, as I think.

*Eliz.* Whether hadst thou rather be a Faul-  
conbridge

And like thy brother, to enjoy thy land,  
Or the reputed son of Cœur-de-lion,

Lord of thy presence and no land beside ?  
*Bast.* Madam, an if my brother had my

shape,  
And I had his, sir Robert's his, like him ;

And if my legs were two such riding-rods,  
My arms such eel-skins stuff'd, my face so thin

That in mine ear I durst not stick a rose  
Least men should say 'Look, where three-farth-

ings goes !'  
And, to his shape, were heir to all this land.

Would I might never stir from off this place,  
I would give it every foot to have this face ;

I would not be sir Nob in any case.

*Eliz.* I like thee well : wilt thou forsake thy  
fortune,

Bequeath thy land to him and follow me ?  
I am a soldier and now bound to France. 135

*Bast.* Brother, take you my land, I'll take  
my chance.

Your face hath got five hundred pound a year,  
Yet sell your face for five pence and 'tis dear.

Madam, I'll follow you unto the death.

*Eliz.* Nay, I would have you go before me  
thither.

*Bast.* Our country manners give our betters way.

*K. John.* What is thy name?

*Bast.* Philip, my liege, so is my name begun; Philip, good old sir Robert's wife's eldest son.

*K. John.* From henceforth bear his name whose form thou bearest: 160

Kneel thou down Philip, but rise more great, Arise sir Richard and Plantagenet.

*Bast.* Brother by the mother's side, give me your hand:

My father gave me honour, yours gave land. Now blessed be the hour, by night or day,

When I was got, sir Robert was away!

*Ed.* The very spirit of Plantagenet!

I am thy grandam, Richard; call me so.

*Bast.* Madam, by chance but not by truth; what though!

Something about, a little from the right, 170

In at the window, or else o'er the hatch:

Who dares not stir by day must walk by night,

And have is have, however men do catch:

Near or far off, well won is still well shot,

And I am I, howe'er I was begot.

*K. John.* Go, Faulconbridge; now hast thou thy desire;

A landless knight makes thee a landed squire. Come, madam, and come, Richard, we must speed

For France, for France, for it is more than need.

*Bast.* Brother, adieu: good fortune come to thee! 180

For thou wast got 't the way of honesty.

[*Exeunt all but Bastard.*]

A foot of honour better than I was;

But many a many foot of land the worse.

Well, now can I make any Joan a lady.

'Good den, sir Richard!—'Go-a-mercy, fellow!'

And if his name be George, I'll call him Peter;

For new-made honour doth forget men's names;

'Tis too respective and too sociable

For your conversion. Now your traveller,

He and his toothpick at my worship's mess, 190

And when my knightly stomach is sufficed,

Why then I suck my teeth and catechize

My picked man of countries: 'My dear sir,

Thus, leaning on mine elbow, I begin,

'I shall beseech you—that is question now;

And then comes answer like an Absey book:

'O sir,' says answer, 'at your best command;

At your employment; at your service, sir:'

'No, sir,' says question, 'I, sweet sir, at yours:'

And so, ere answer knows what question would,

saving in dialogue of compliment, 201

And talking of the Alps and Apennines,

The Pyrenean and the river Po,

It draws toward supper in conclusion so.

But this is a worshipful society

And fits the mounting spirit like myself,

For he is but a bastard to the time

That doth not smack of observation;

And so am I, whether I smack or no;

And not alone in habit and device, 210

Exterior form, outward accoutrement,

But from the inward motion to deliver

Sweet, sweet, sweet poison for the age's tooth;

Which, though I will not practise to deceive,

Yet, to avoid deceit, I mean to learn;

For it shall strew the footsteps of my rising.

But who comes in such haste in riding-robes?

What woman-post is this? hath she no husband

That will take pains to blow a horn before her!

*Enter LADY FAULCONBRIDGE and JAMES GURNEY.*

O me! it is my mother. How now, good lady!

What brings you here to court so hastily? 221

*Lady F.* Where is that slave, thy brother?

where is he,

That holds in chase mine honour up and down?

*Bast.* My brother Robert! old sir Robert's

son?

Colbrand the giant, that same mighty man?

Is it sir Robert's son that you seek so?

*Lady F.* Sir Robert's son! Ay, thou un-

reverend boy,

Sir Robert's son: why scorn'st thou at sir

Robert?

He is sir Robert's son, and so art thou.

*Bast.* James Gurney, wilt thou give us leave

awhile! 230

*Gur.* Good leave, good Philip.

*Bast.* Philip! sparrow: James,

There's toys abroad: anon I'll tell thee more.

[*Exit Gurney.*]

Madam, I was not old sir Robert's son:

Sir Robert might have eat his part in me

Upon Good-Friday and ne'er broke his fast:

Sir Robert could do well: marry, to confess,

'ould he get me? Sir Robert could not do it:

We know his handiwork: therefore, good

mother,

To whom am I beholding for these limbs?

Sir Robert never help to make this leg. 240

*Lady F.* Hast thou conspired with thy brother too?

That for thine own gain shouldst defend mine

honour!

What means this scorn, thou most untoward

knave!

*Bast.* Knight, knight, good mother, Basil-

isco-like.

What! I am dubb'd! I have it on my shoulder.

But, mother, I am not sir Robert's son;

I have disclaim'd sir Robert and my land;

Legitimation, name and all is gone:

Then, good my mother, let me know my father;

Some proper man, I hope: who was it, mother?

*Lady F.* Hast thou denied thyself a Faul-

conbridge? 251

*Bast.* As faithfully as I deny the devil.

*Lady F.* King Richard Cœur-de-lion was

thy father:

By long and vehement suit I was reduced

To make room for him in my husband's bed:

Heaven lay not my transgression to my charge!

Thou art the issue of my dear offence,

Which was so strongly urged past my defence.

*Bast.* Now, by this light, were I to get again,

Madam, I would not wish a better father. 260

None sins do bear their privilege on earth,

And so doth yours; your fault was not your

folly:

Needs must you lay your heart at his dispose,

Subjected tribute to commanding love,

Against whose fury and unmatched force  
The aweside lion could not wage the fight,  
Nor keep his princely heart from Richard's hand.  
He that perforce robe lions of their hearts  
May easily win a woman's. Ay, my mother,  
With all my heart I thank thee for my father!  
Who lives and dares but say thou didst not well  
When I was got, I'll send his soul to hell.  
Come, lady, I will show thee to my kin;  
And they shall say, when Richard me begot,  
If thou hadst said him nay, it had been sin:  
Who says it was, he lies; I say 'twas not.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

## SCENE I. France. Before Angiers.

*Enter AUSTRIA and forces, drums, etc. on one side; on the other KING PHILIP of France and his power; LEWIS, ARTHUR, CONSTANCE and attendants.*

*Lew.* Before Angiers will met, brave Austria.  
Arthur, that great forerunner of thy blood,  
Richard, that robb'd the lion of his heart  
And fought the holy wars in Palestine,  
By this brave duke came early to his grave:  
And for amends to his posterity,  
At our importance hither is he come,  
To spread his colours, boy, in thy behalf,  
And to rebuke the usurpation  
Of thy unnatural uncle, English John: 10  
Embrace him, love him, give him welcome  
hither.

*Arth.* God shall forgive you Cœur-de-lion's death

The rather that you give his offspring life,  
Shadowing their right under your wings of war:  
I give you welcome with a powerless hand,  
But with a heart full of unstained love:  
Welcome before the gates of Angiers, duke.

*Lew.* A noble boy! Who would not do thee right!

*Aust.* Upon thy cheek lay I this zealous kiss,  
As seal to this indenture of my love, 20  
That to my home I will no more return.  
Till Angiers and the right thou hast in France,  
Together with that pale, that white-faced shore,  
Whose foot spurs back the ocean's roaring  
tides

And coops from other lands her islanders,  
Even till that England, hedged in with the main,  
That water-walled bulwark, still secure  
And confident from foreign purposes,  
Even till that utmost corner of the west  
Salute thee for her king: till then, fair boy, 30  
Will I not think of home, but follow arms.

*Const.* O, take his mother's thanks, a widow's  
thanks,

Till your strong hand shall help to give him  
strength

To make a more requital to your love!

*Aust.* The peace of heaven is theirs that lift  
their swords

In such a just and charitable war.

*K. Phil.* Well then, to work: our cannon  
shall be beat

Against the brows of this resisting town.

Call for our chiefest men of discipline,  
To cull the plots of best advantages: 40  
We'll lay before this town our royal bones,  
Wade to the market-places in Frenchmen's  
blood,

But we will make it subject to this boy.

*Const.* Stay for an answer to your embassy,  
Least unadvised you stain your swords with  
blood:

My Lord Chatillon may from England bring  
That right in peace which here we urge in war,  
And then we shall repent each drop of blood  
That hot rash haste so indirectly shed.

*Enter CHATILLON.*

*K. Phil.* A wonder, lady! lo, upon thy wish,  
(our messenger Chatillon is arrived) 51

What England says, say briefly, gentle lord:  
We coldly pause for thee; Chatillon, speak.

*Chat.* Then turn your forces from this paltry  
siege

And stir them up against a mightier task.  
England, impatient of your just demands,  
Hath put himself in arms: the adverse winds,  
Whose leisure I have stay'd, have given him  
time

To land his legions all as soon as I;  
His marches are expedient to this town, 60  
His forces strong, his soldiers confident.

With him along is come the mother-queen,  
An Ate, stirring him to blood and strife:

With her her niece, the Lady Blanche of Spain:  
With them a bastard of the king's deceased;

And all the unsettled humours of the land,  
Rash, inconsiderate, fiery voluntaries,

With ladies' faces and heroes' spleens,  
Have sold their fortunes at their native houses,

Fearing their birthrights proudly on their backs,  
To make a hazard of new fortunes here: 71

In brief, a braver choice of dauntless spirits  
Than now the English bottoms have waft o'er

Did never float upon the swelling tide,  
To do offence and scath in Christendom.

[*Drum beats.*]

The interruption of their churlish drums  
Cuts off more circumstance: they are at hand,

To parley or to fight; therefore, prepare.

*K. Phil.* How much unlook'd for is this ex-  
pedition!

*Aust.* By how much unexpected, by so  
much 80

We must awake endeavour for defence;  
For courage mounteth with occasion:

Let them be welcome then; we are prepared.

*Enter KING JOHN, BLINCH, BLANCH,  
the Bastard, Lords, and forces.*

*K. John.* Peace be to France, if France in  
peace permit

Our just and lineal entrance to our own;  
If not, bleed France, and peace ascend to

heaven,  
Whiles we, God's wrathful agent, do correct

Their proud contempt that beats His peace to  
heaven.

*K. Phil.* Peace be to England, if that war  
return 89

From France to England, there to live in peace.

England we love; and for that England's sake  
 With burden of our armour here we sweat.  
 This soil of ours should be a work of thine;  
 But thou from loving England art so far,  
 That thou hast under-wrought his lawful king,  
 Cut off the sequence of posterity,  
 Out-faced infant state and done a rape  
 Upon the maiden virtue of the crown.  
 Look here upon thy brother Geoffrey's face;  
 These eyes, these brows, were moulded out of  
 his: 100

This little abstract doth contain that large  
 Which died in Geoffrey, and the hand of time  
 Shall draw this brief into as huge a volume.  
 That Geoffrey was thy elder brother born,  
 And this his son; England was Geoffrey's right  
 And this is Geoffrey's: in the name of God  
 How comes it then that thou art call'd a king.  
 When living blood doth in these temples beat,  
 Which owe the crown that thou o'ermasterest?  
*K. John.* From whom hast thou this great  
 commission, France, 110

To draw my answer from thy articles?  
*K. Phi.* From that supernal judge, that stirs  
 good thoughts

In any breast of strong authority,  
 To look into the blot and stains of right:  
 That judge hath made me guardian to this boy  
 Under whose warrant I impeach thy wrong  
 And by whose help I mean to chastise it.

*K. John.* Alack, thou dost usurp authority.  
*K. Phi.* Excuse; it is to beat usurping down.  
*Eli.* Who is it thou dost call usurper,  
 France? 120

*Const.* Let me make answer; thy usurping  
 son.

*Eli.* Out, insolent! thy bastard shall be king,  
 That thou mayst be a queen, and check the  
 world!

*Const.* My bed was ever to thy son as true  
 As thine was to thy husband; and this boy  
 Liked in feature to his father Geoffrey  
 Than thou and John in manners; being as like  
 As rain to water, or devil to his dam.  
 My boy a bastard! By my soul, I think  
 His father never was so true begot: 130

It cannot be, an if thou wert his mother.

*Eli.* There's a good mother, boy, that blots  
 thy father.

*Const.* There's a good grandam, boy, that  
 would blot thee.

*Aust.* Peace!

*Bast.* Hear the crier.

*Aust.* What the devil art thou?

*Bast.* One that will play the devil, sir, with  
 you,

An a' may catch your hide and you alone:  
 You are the hare of whom the proverb goes,  
 Whose valour plucks dead lions by the beard:

Smoke your skin-out, an I catch you right:  
 Surrah, look to 't; I faith, I will, I faith. 140

*Blanch.* O, well did he become that lion's  
 robe

That did disrobe the lion of that robe!

*Bast.* It lies as sightly on the back of him  
 As great Alcides' shows upon an ass:

But, an, I'll take that burthen from your back,  
 Or lay on that shall make your shoulders crack.

*Aust.* What cracker is this came that doth  
 our ears

With this abundance of superfluous breath?

*K. Phi.* Lewis, determine what we shall do  
 straight.

*Lew.* Women and fools, break off your con-  
 ference. 150

King John, this is the very sum of all;  
 England and Ireland, Anjou, Touraine, Maine,  
 In right of Arthur do I claim of thee;

Wilt thou resign them and lay down thy arms?  
*K. John.* My life as soon: I do defy thee,  
 France.

Arthur of Bretagne, yield thee to my hand;  
 And out of my dear love I'll give thee more  
 Than e'er the coward hand of France can win:

Submit thee, boy.

*Eli.* Come to thy grandam, child.

*Const.* Do, child, go to it grandam, child;  
 Give grandam kingdom, and it grandam will  
 Give it a plum, a cherry, and a fig:

There's a good grandam.

*Arth.* Good my mother, peace!  
 I would that I were low laid in my grave:

I am not worth this coil that's made for me.

*Eli.* His mother shames him so, poor boy,  
 he weeps.

*Const.* Now shame upon you, whether she  
 does or no!

His grandam's wrongs, and not his mother's  
 shames,

Draws those heaven-moving pearls from his poor  
 eyes,

Which heaven shall take in nature of a fee; 170  
 Ay, with these crystal beads heaven shall be  
 bribed

To do him justice and revenge on you.

*Eli.* Thou monstrous slanderer of heaven  
 and earth!

*Const.* Thou monstrous injurer of heaven  
 and earth!

Call not me slanderer; thou and thine usurp  
 The dominations, royalties and rights

Of this oppressed boy: this is thy old son's  
 son,

Unfortunate in nothing but in thee:  
 Thy sins are visited in this poor child;

The canon of the law is laid on him, 180  
 Being but the second generation  
 Removed from thy sin-conceiving womb.

*K. John.* Bedlam, have done.

*Const.* I have but this to say  
 That he is not only plagued for her sin,

But God hath made her sin and her the plague  
 On this removed issue, plagued for her

And with her plague: her sin his injury,  
 Her injury the beadle to her sin,

All punish'd in the person of this child,  
 And all for her; a plague upon her! 190

*Eli.* Thou unadvised scold, I can produce  
 A will that bars the title of thy son.

*Const.* Ay, who doubts that! a will! a  
 wicked will;

A woman's will; a canker'd grandam's will!

*K. Phi.* Peace, lady! pause, or be more tem-  
 perate:

It ill becomes this presence to cry aim  
 To these ill-timed repetitions.

Some trumpet summon hither to the walls  
These men of Angiers: let us hear them speak  
Whose title they admit, Arthur's or John's. *see*

*Trumpet sounds. Enter certain Citizens upon the walls.*

*First Cit.* Who is it that hath warn'd us to the walls?

*K. Phi.* 'Tis France, for England.

*K. John.* England, for itself.

You men of Angiers, and my loving subjects,—

*K. Phi.* You loving men of Angiers,  
Arthur's subjects,

Our trumpet call'd you to this gentle parie—

*K. John.* For our advantage; therefore hear us first.

These flags of France, that are advanced here  
Before the eye and prospect of your town,

Have hither march'd to your enlammement:

The cannons have their bowels full of wrath,  
And ready mounted are they to spit forth

Their iron indignation 'gainst your walls:

All preparation for a bloody siege

And merciless proceeding by these French

Confronts your city's eyes, your winking gates;

And but for our approach those sleeping stones,  
That as a waist doth girdle you about,

By the compulsion of their orrinance

By this time from their fixed beds of lime

Had been disshabited, and wide havoc made

For bloody power to rush upon your peace.

But on the sight of us your lawful king,

Who painfully with much expedient march

Have brought a countercheck before your gates,

To save unscar'd'd your city's threaten'd

cheeks,

Behold, the French amaz'd vouchsafe a parie;

And now, instead of bulwarks wrapp'd in fire,

To make a shaking fever in your walls,

They shoot but calm words folded up in smoke,

To make a faithless error in your ears:

Which trust accordingly, kind citizens,

And let us in, your king, whose labour'd spirits,

Forwearing in this action of swift speed,

Crave harbourage within your city walls.

*K. Phi.* When I have said, make answer to us both.

Lo, in this right hand, whose protection

Is most divinely yow'd upon the right

Of him it holds, stands young Plantagenet,

Brother to the elder brother of this man,

And king o'er him and all that he enjoys:

For this down-trodden equity, we tread

In warlike march these greens before your town,

Being no further enemy to you

Than the constraint of hospitable zeal

In the relief of this oppressed child

Religiously provoked. Be pleased then

To pay that duty which you truly owe

To him that owes it, namely this young prince:

And then our arms, like to a muzzled bear,

Save in aspect, hath all offence seal'd up;

Our cannons' malice vainly shall be spent

Against the invulnerable clouds of heaven;

And with a blessed and unwey'd retire,

With unback'd swords and helmets all un-

blessed,

We will bear home that lusty blood again

Which here we came to spout against your town,

And leave your children, wives and you in peace.

But if you fondly pass our proffer'd offer,  
'Tis not the roundure of your old-faced walls

Can hide you from our messengers of war,

Though all these English and their discipline

Were harbour'd in their rude circumference.

Then tell us, shall your city call us home?

In that behalf which we have challenged it?

Or shall we give the signal to our rage?

And stalk in blood to our possession?

*First Cit.* In brief, we are the king of

England's subjects:

For him, and in his right, we hold this town.

*K. John.* Acknowledge then the king, and

let me in.

*First Cit.* That can we not; but he that

proves the king,

To him will we prove loyal: till that time

Have we ram'd up our gates against the world.

*K. John.* Doth not the crown of England

prove the king?

And if not that, I bring you witnesses,

Twice fifteen thousand hearts of England's

breed,—

*Bast.* Bastards, and else.

*K. John.* To verify our title with their lives.

*K. Phi.* As many and as well-born bloods

as these,—

*Bast.* Some bastards too.

*K. Phi.* Stand in his face to contradict his

claim.

*First Cit.* Till you compound whose right is

worthiest,

We for the worthiest hold the right from both.

*K. John.* Then God forgive the sin of all

these souls

That to their everlasting residences,

Before the dew of evening fall, shall fleet,

In dreadful trial of our kingdom's king!

*K. Phi.* Amen, amen! Mount, chivaliers!

to arms!

*Bast.* Saint George, that swung the dragon,

and e'er since

Sits on his horse back at mine hostess' door,

Teach us some fence! [To *Aust.*] Sirrah, were

I at home,

At your den, sirrah, with your lioness,

I would set an ox-head to your lion's hide,

And make a monster of you.

*Aust.* Peace! no more.

*Bast.* O, tremble, for you hear the lion roar.

*K. John.* Up higher to the plain; where

we'll set forth

In heat appointment all our regiments.

*Bast.* Speed then, to take advantage of the

field.

*K. Phi.* It shall be so; and at the other hill

Command the rest to stand. God and our

right! [Exeunt.]

Here after excursions, enter the Herald of

France, with trumpets, to the gates.

*F. Her.* You men of Angiers, open wide

your gates,

And let young Arthur, Duke of Bretagne, i

Who by the hand of France this day hath  
made  
Much work for tears in many an English  
mother,  
Whose sons lie scattered on the bleeding  
ground;  
Many a widow's husband grovelling lies,  
Coldly embracing the discolour'd earth;  
And victory, with little loss, doth play  
Upon the dancing banners of the French,  
Who are at hand, triumphantly display'd,  
To enter conquerors and to proclaim  
Arthur of Bretagne England's king and yours. 310

*Enter English Herald, with trumpet.*

*E. Her.* Rejoice, you men of Angiers, ring  
your bells;  
King John, your king and England's, doth ap-  
proach,  
(Commander of this hot malicious day:  
Their armours, that march'd hence so silver-  
bright,  
Hither return all gilt with Frenchmen's blood;  
There stuck no plume in any English crest  
That is removed by a staff of France;  
Our colours do return in those same hands  
That did display them when we first march'd  
forth; 320  
And, like a jolly troop of huntmen, come  
Our lusty English, all with purpled hands,  
Dyed in the dying slaughter of their foes:  
Open your gates and give the victors way.  
*First Cit.* Heralds, from off our towers we  
might behold,  
From first to last, the onset and retire  
Of both your armies; whose equality  
By our best eyes cannot be censured;  
Blood hath bought blood and blows have  
answer'd blows;  
Strength match'd with strength, and power con-  
fronted power: 330  
Both are alike; and both alike we like.  
One must prove greatest: while they weigh so  
even,  
We hold our town for neither, yet for both.

*Re-enter the two KINGS, with their powers,  
severally.*

*K. John.* France, hast thou yet more blood  
to cast away?

Say, shall the current of our right run on?  
Whose passage, vex'd with thy impediment,  
Shall leave his native channel and o'erswell  
With course disturb'd even thy confining shores,  
Unless thou let his silver water keep  
A peaceful progress to the ocean. 340

*K. Phi.* England, thou hast not saved one  
drop of blood.

In this hot trial, more than we of France;  
Either, lost more. And by this hand I swear,  
That sways the earth this climate overlooks,  
Before we will lay down our just-borne arms,  
We'll put thee down, 'gainst whom these arms  
we bear,

Or add a royal number to the dead,  
Gracing the scroll that tells of this war's loss.  
With slaughter coupled to the name of kings.

*Bast.* Ha, majesty! how high thy glory  
towers, 350

When the rich blood of kings is set on fire!  
O, now doth Death line his dead chaps with  
steel;

The swords of soldiers are his teeth, his fangs;  
And now he feasts, mousing the flesh of men,  
In undetermined differences of kings.

Why stand these royal fronts amazed thus?  
Cry, 'havoc!' kings: back to the stained field,  
You equal potents, fiery kindled spirits!  
Then let confusion of one part confirm  
The other's peace; till then, blows, blood and  
death! 360

*K. John.* Whose party do the townsmen yet  
admit?

*K. Phi.* Speak, citizens, for England; who's  
your king?

*First Cit.* The king of England, when we  
know the king.

*K. Phi.* Know him in us, that here hold up  
his right.

*K. John.* In us, that are our own great  
deputy,

And bear possession of our person here,  
Lord of our presence, Angiers, and of you.

*First Cit.* A greater power than we denies  
all this;

And till it be undoubted, we do lock  
Our former scruple in our strong-barr'd gates;  
King'd of our fears, until our fears, resolved, 370  
lie by some certain king purged and deposed.

*Bast.* By heaven, these scroyles of Angiers  
flout you, kings,

And stand securely on their battlements,  
As in a theatre, whence they gape and point  
At your industrious scenes and acts of death.

Your royal presences be ruled by me:  
Do like the mutines of Jerusalem,  
Be friends awhile and both conjointly bend  
Your sharpest deeds of malice on this town:  
By east and west let France and England  
mount 380

Their battering cannon charged to the mouths,  
Till their soul-fearing clamours have baw'd  
down

The flinty ribs of this contemptuous city:  
I'd play incessantly upon these jades,

Even till unfenced desolation  
Leave them as naked as the vulgar air.

That done, discover your united strengths,  
And part your mingled colours once again;

Turn face to face and bloody point to point; 390  
Then, in a moment, Fortune shall call forth  
Out of one side her happy minion,

To whom in favour she shall give the day,  
And kiss him with a glorious victory.

How like you this wild counsel, mighty states?  
Smacks it not something of the policy?

*K. John.* Now, by the sky that hangs above  
our heads,

I like it well. France, shall we knit our powers  
And lay this Angiers even with the ground?

Then after fight who shall be king of it? 400

*Bast.* An if thou hast the mettle of a king,  
Being wrong'd as we are by this peevish town,  
Turn thou the mouth of thy artillery,  
As we will ours, against these sancy walls;

And when that we have dash'd them to the

Why then defy each other, and pell-mell  
s work upon ourselves, for heaven or hell.

*Phi.* Let it be so. Say, where will you  
sunt!

*John.* We from the west will send de-  
struction

Into this city's bosom. 410

*Aust.* I from the north.

*K. Phi.* Our thunder from the south  
Shall rain their drift of bullets on this town.

*Bas.* O prudent discipline! From north to  
south:

Austria and France shoot in each other's mouth:  
I'll stir them to it. Come, away, away!

*First Cit.* Hear us, great kings: vouchsafe  
awhile to stay,

And I shall show you peace and fair-faced  
league:

Win you this city without stroke or wound;  
Rescue those breathing lives to die in beds,

That here come sacrifices for the field: 420  
Persever not, but hear me, mighty kings.

*K. John.* Speak on with favour; we are bent  
to hear.

*First Cit.* That daughter there of Spain, the  
Lady Blanch,

Is niece to Lewis the Dauphin and that lovely maid:  
Of Lewis the Dauphin and that lovely maid:

If lusty love should go in quest of beauty,  
Where should he find it fairer than in Blanch?

If seasons love should go in search of virtue,  
Where should he find it purer than in Blanch?

If love ambitious sought a match of birth, 430  
Whose reins bound richer blood than Lady  
Blanch!

Such as she is, in beauty, virtue, birth,  
Is the young Dauphin every way complete:

If not complete of, say he is not she;  
And she again wants nothing, to name want,

If want it be not that she is not he:  
He is the half part of a blessed man,

Left to be finished by such as she;  
And she a fair divided excellence,

Whose fulness of perfection lies in him. 440  
O, two such silver currents, when they join,  
Do glorify the banks that bound them in;

And two such shores to two such streams made  
one.

Two such controlling bounds shall you be, kings,  
To these two princes, if you marry them.

This union shall do more than battery can  
To our fast-closed gates; for at this match,

With swifter spleen than powder can enforce,  
The mouth of passage shall we fling wide open,

And give you entrance: but without this match,  
The sea enraged is not half so deaf, 451

None more confident, mountains and rocks  
More free from motion, no, not Death himself

In mortal fury half so peremptory,  
As we to keep this city.

*Bas.* Here's a stay  
That shakes the rotten carcass of old Death

Out of his nest. Here's a large mouth, indeed,  
That spits forth death and mountains, rocks and

Tells us of roaring lions

As maids of thirteen do of puppy-dogs! 460  
What cannoner begot this lusty blood?

He speaks plain cannon fire, and smokes and  
bounce;

He gives the bastinado with his tongue;  
Our ears are cudgell'd: not a word of his

But buffets better than a fist of France:  
Zounds! I was never so bethump'd with words

Since I first call'd my brother's father dead.  
*Elk.* Son, list to this conjunction, make this

match:  
Give with our niece a dowry large enough:

For by this knot thou shalt so surely tie, 470  
Thy now unsured assurance to the crown,

That you green boy shall have no sun to ripe  
The bloom that promiseth a mighty fruit.

I see a yielding in the looks of France;  
Mark, how they whisper: urge them while their

souls  
Are capable of this ambition,

Lest zeal, now melted by the windy breath  
Of soft petitions, pity and remorse,

Cool and congeal again to what it was.  
*First Cit.* Why answer not the double

majesties 480  
This friendly treaty of our threaten'd trust?

*K. Phi.* Speak England first, that hath been  
forward first

To speak unto this city: what say you?  
*K. John.* If that the Dauphin there, thy

princely son,  
Can in this book of beauty read 'I love,'

Her dowry shall weigh equal with a queen:  
For Anjou and fair Touraine, Maine, Poitiers,

And all that we upon this side the sea,  
Except this city now by us besieged,

Find liable to our crown and dignity. 490  
Shall gild her bridal bed and make her rich

In titles, honours and promotions,  
As she in beauty, education, blood,

Holds hand with any princess of the world.  
*K. Phi.* What sayst thou, boy? I look in the

lady's face.

*Lea.* I do, my lord; and in her eye I find  
A wonder, or a wondrous miracle,

The shadow of myself form'd in her eye;  
Which, being but the shadow of your son,

Becomes a sun and makes your son a shadow:  
I do protest I never loved myself 501

Till now intix'd I beheld myself  
Drawn in the flattering table of her eye.

[*Whispers with Blanch.*  
*Bas.* Drawn in the flattering table of her eye!

Hang'd in the frowning wrinkle of her brow!  
And quarter'd in her heart! he doth spy

Himself love's traitor: this is pity now,  
That, hang'd and drawn and quarter'd, there

should be  
In such a love so vile a lout as he.

*Blanch.* My uncle's will in this respect is  
mine: 510

If he see aught in you that makes him like,  
That any thing he sees, which moves his liking,

I can with ease translate it to my will;  
Or if you will, to speak more properly,

I will enforce it easily to my love.  
Further I will not flatter you, my lord,

That all I see in you is worthy love,



Than this; that nothing do I see in you,  
Though churlish thoughts themselves should be  
your judge.

That I can find should merit any hate. 320

*K. John.* What say these young ones? What  
say you, my niece?

*Blanch.* That she is bound in honour still  
to do

What you in wisdom still vouchsafe to say.

*K. John.* Speak then, prince Dauphin; can  
you love this lady?

*Lew.* Nay, ask me if I can refrain from love;

For I do love her most unfeignedly.

*K. John.* Then do I give Volquessen, Tou-  
raine, Maine,

Poitiers and Anjou, these five provinces,  
With her to thee; and this addition more,

Full thirty thousand marks of English coin. 330

Philip of France, if thou be pleased withal.

Command thy son and daughter to join hands.

*K. Phil.* It likes us well; young princes,  
close your hands.

*Anst.* And your lips too; for I am well  
assured

That I did so when I was first assured.

*K. Phil.* Now, citizens of Angers, ope your  
gates,

Let in that amity which you have made;

For at Saint Mary's chapel presently

The rites of marriage shall be solemnized.

Is not the Lady Constance in this troop? 340

I know she is not, for this match made up

Her presence would have interrupted much:

Where is she and her son? tell me, who knows.

*Lew.* She is sad and passionate at your  
highness' tent.

*K. Phil.* And, by my faith, this league that  
we have made

Will give her sadness very little cure.

Brother of England, how may we content

This widow lady? In her right we came;

Which we, God knows, have turn'd another way,  
To our own vantage.

*K. John.* We will heal up all; 350

For we'll create young Arthur Duke of Bretagne

And Earl of Richmond; and this rich fair town

We make him lord of. Call the Lady Constance;

Some speedy messenger bid her repair

To our solemnity: I trust we shall,

If not fill up the measure of her will,

Yet in some measure satisfy her so

That we shall stop her exclamation.

Go we, as well as haste will suffer us,

To this unlook'd for, unprepared pomp. 360

[*Exeunt all but the Bastard.*  
*Bast.* Mad world! mad kings! mad compo-  
sition!

John, to stop Arthur's title in the whole,  
Hath willingly departed with a part,

And France, whose armour conscience buckled  
on,

Whom zeal and charity brought to the field

As God's own soldier, rounded in the ear

With that same purpose-changer, that sly devil,

That broker, that still breaks the pate of faith,

That daily break-vow, he that wins of all,

Of kings, of beggars, old men, young men,

maids, 370

Who, having no external thing to lose  
But the word 'maid,' cheats the poor maid of  
that,

That smooth-faced gentleman, tickling Com-  
modity,

Commodity, the bias of the world,

The world, who of itself is peised well,

Made to run even upon even ground,

Till this advantage, this vile-drawing bias,

This sway of motion, this Commodity,

Makes it take head from all indifferency,

From all direction, purpose, course, intent; 380

And this same bias, this Commodity,

This bawd, this broker, this all-changing word,

Clapp'd on the outward eye of fickle France,

Hath drawn him from his own determined aid,

From a resolved and honourable war,

To a most base and vile-concluded peace.

And why rail I on this Commodity?

But for because he hath not woo'd me yet:

Not that I have the power to clutch my hand,

When his fair angels would salute my palm;

But for my hand, as unattempted yet, 390

Like a poor beggar, railleth on the rich.

Well, whiles I am a beggar, I will rail

And say there is no sin but to be rich;

And being rich, my virtue then shall be

To say there is no vice but beggary.

Since kings break faith upon commodity,

Gain, be my lord, for I will worship thee. [*Exit.*

### ACT III.

#### SCENE I. *The French King's pavilion.*

*Enter CONSTANCE, ARTHUR, and SALISBURY.*

*Const.* Gone to be married! gone to swear a

peace!

False blood to false blood join'd! gone to be

friends!

Shall Lewis have Blanch, and Blanch these

provinces?

It is not so; thou hast misspoke, misheard;

Be well advised, tell o'er thy tale again:

It cannot be; thou dost but say 'tis so:

I trust I may not trust thee; for thy word

Is but the vain breath of a common man:

Believe me, I do not believe thee, man;

I have a king's oath to the contrary. 40

Thou shalt be punish'd for thus frightening me,

For I am sick and capable of fears,

Oppress'd with wrongs and therefore full of

fears,

A widow, husbandless, subject to fears,

A woman, naturally born to fears;

And though thou now confess thou didst but

jest,

With my vex'd spirits I cannot take a truce,

But they will quake and tremble all this day.

What dost thou mean by shaking of thy head?

Why dost thou look so sadly on my son? 40

What means that hand upon that breast of

thine?

Why holds thine eye that lamentable rheum,

Like a proud river peering o'er his bounds?

Be these and signs confirmers of thy words?

Then speak again; not all thy former tale,

But this one word, whether thy tale be true.

*Sal.* As true as I believe you think them false  
That give you cause to prove my saying true.

*Const.* O, if thou teach me to believe this sorrow,

Teach thou this sorrow how to make me die, go  
And let belief and life encounter so  
As doth the fury of two desperate men  
Which in the very meeting fall and die.  
Lewis marry Blanch! O boy, then where art thou!

France friend with England, what becomes of me!

Fellow, be gone: I cannot brook thy sight:  
This news hath made thee a most ugly man.

*Sal.* What other harm have I, good lady, done,

But spoke the harm that is by others done!

*Const.* Which harm within itself so heinous is  
As it makes harmful all that speak of it.

*Arch.* I do beseech you, madam, be content.

*Const.* If thou, that bid'st me be content, wert grim,

Ugly and slanderous to thy mother's womb,  
Full of unpleasing blots and sightless stains,  
Lame, foolish, crooked, swart, prodigious,  
Patch'd with foul moles and eye-offending marks,

I would not care, I then would be content.  
For then I should not love thee, no, nor thou  
Become thy great birth nor deserve a crown.

But thou art fair, and at thy birth, dear boy,  
Nature and Fortune join'd to make thee great:  
Of Nature's gifts thou may'st with lilies boast  
And with the half-blown rose. But Fortune, O,  
She is corrupted, changed and won from thee;  
She adulterates hourly with thine uncle John,  
And with her golden hand hath pluck'd on France

To tread down fair respect of sovereignty,  
And made his majesty the bawd to theirs. 59  
France is a bawd to Fortune and King John,  
That strumpet Fortune, that usurping John!  
Tell me, thou fellow, is not France forsworn?  
Evenom him with words, or get thee gone  
And leave those woes alone which I alone  
Am bound to under-bear.

*Sal.* Pardon me, madam,  
I may not go without you to the king.

*Const.* Thou may'st, thou shalt; I will not go with thee:

I will instruct my sorrows to be proud;  
For grief is proud and makes his owner stoop.  
To me and to the state of my great grief 70  
Let kings assemble; for my grief's so great  
That no supporter but the huge firm earth  
Can hold it up: here I and sorrows sit;  
Here is my throne, bid kings come how to it.

[*Sits herself on the ground.*]

*Enter KING JOHN, KING PHILIP, LEWIS, BLANCH, ELINOR, the BASTARD, AUSTRIA, and Attendants.*

*K. Phil.* This true, fair daughter; and this blessed day

Ever in France shall be kept festival:  
To solemnise this day the glorious sun

Stays in his course and plays the alchemist,  
Turning with splendour of his precious eye  
The meagre cloddy earth to glittering gold: 80  
The yearly course that brings this day about  
Shall never see it but a holiday.

*Const.* A wicked day, and not a holy day! *[Rising.]*

What hath this day deserved? what hath it done,

That it in golden letters should be set  
Among the high tides in the calendar?

Nay, rather turn this day out of the week,  
This day of shame, oppression, perjury.

Or, if it must stand still, let wives with child  
Pray that their burthens may not fall this day,

Lest that their hopes prodigiously be cross'd:  
But on this day let seamen fear no wreck:

No bargains break that are not this day made:  
This day, all things begun come to ill end,

Yea, faith itself to hollow falsehood change!

*K. Phil.* By heaven, lady, you shall have no cause

To curse the fair proceedings of this day:

Have I not pawn'd it to you my majesty?

*Const.* You have beguiled me with a counterfeit

Resembling majesty, which, being touch'd and tried, 100

Proves valueless: you are forsworn, forsworn;

You came in arms to spill mine enemies' blood,  
But now in arms you strengthen it with yours:

The grappling vigour and rough frown of war  
Is cold in amity and painted peace.

And our oppression hath made up this league.  
Arm, arm, you heavens, against these perjured kings!

A widow cries; be husband to me, heavens!  
Let not the hours of this ungodly day

Wear out the day in peace; but, ere sunset, 110  
Set armed discord 'twixt these perjured kings:

Hear me, O, hear me!

*Aust.* Lady Constance, peace!  
*Const.* War! war! no peace! peace is to me

a war.

O Lymoges! O Austria! thou dost shame  
That bloody spoil: thou slave, thou wretch, thou

coward!

Thou little valiant, great in villany!  
Thou ever strong upon the stronger side!

Thou Fortune's champion that dost never fight  
But when her humorous ladyship is by

To teach thee safety! thou art perjured too, 120  
And sourest up greatness. What a fool art thou,

A ramping fool, to brag and stamp and swear  
Upon my party! Thou cold-blooded slave,

Hast thou not spoke like thunder on my side,  
Been sworn my soldier, bidding me depend

Upon thy stars, thy fortune and thy strength,  
And dost thou now fall over to my foes?

Thou wear a lion's hide! doff it for shame,  
And hang a calf's-skin on those recreant limbs.

*Aust.* O, that a man should speak those words to me! 130

*Bast.* And hang a calf's-skin on those recreant limbs.

*Aust.* Thou dar'st not say so, villain, for thy life.

*Bast.* And hang a calf's-skin on those recreant limbs.

*K. John.* We like not this; thou dost forget thyself.

*Enter PANDULPH.*

*K. Phi.* Here comes the holy legate of the pope.

*Pand.* Hail, you anointed deputies of heaven! To thee, King John, my holy errand is.

I Pandulph, of fair Milan cardinal, And from Pope Innocent the legate here,

Do in his name religiously demand 140 Why thou against the church, our holy mother,

So wilfully dost spurn; and force perforce Keep Stephen Langton, chosen archbishop

Of Canterbury, from that holy see? This, in our foresaid holy father's name,

Pope Innocent, I do demand of thee.

*K. John.* What earthy name to interrogatories

Can task the free breath of a sacred king? Thou canst not, cardinal, devise a name

So slight, unworthy and ridiculous, 150 To charge me to an answer, as the pope.

Tell him this tale; and from the mouth of England

Add thus much more, that no Italian priest Shall tithe or toll in our dominions;

But as we, under heaven, are supreme head, So under Him that great supremacy,

Where we do reign, we will alone uphold, Without the assistance of a mortal hand:

So tell the pope, all reverence set apart To him and his usurp'd authority. 160

*K. Phi.* Brother of England, you blasphemous in this.

*K. John.* Though you and all the kings of Christendom

Are led so grossly by this meddling priest, Dreading the curse that money may buy out;

And by the merit of vile gold, dross, dust, Purchase corrupted pardon of a man,

Who in that sale sells pardon from himself, Though you and all the rest so grossly led

This juggling witchcraft with revenue cherish, Yet I alone, alone do me oppose 170

Against the pope and count his friends my foes.

*Pand.* Then, by the lawful power that I have,

Thou shalt stand cursed and excommunicate: And blessed shall he be that doth revolt

From his allegiance to an heretic; And meritorious shall that hand be call'd,

Unonized and worshipp'd as a saint, That takes away by any secret course

Thy hateful life.

*Const.* O, lawful let it be That I have room with Rome to curse awhile!

Good father cardinal, cry thou amen 180 To my keen curses; for without my wrong

There is no tongue hath power to curse him right.

*Pand.* There's law and warrant, lady, for my curse.

*Const.* And for mine too: when law can do no right,

Let it be lawful that law bar no wrong:

Law cannot give my child his kingdom here, For he that holds his kingdom holds the law;

Therefore, since law itself is perfect wrong, 180 How can the law forbid my tongue to curse?

*Pand.* Philip of France, on peril of a curse, Let go the hand of that arch-heretic;

And raise the power of France upon his head, Unless he do submit himself to Rome.

*Eli.* Look'st thou pale, France? do not let go thy hand.

*Const.* Look to that, devil; lest that France repent.

And by disjoining hands, hell lose a soul.

*Aust.* King Philip, listen to the cardinal.

*Bast.* And hang a calf's-skin on his recreant limbs.

*Aust.* Well, ruffian, I must pocket up these wrongs, 200

Because—

*Bast.* Your breeches best may carry them.

*K. John.* Philip, what say'st thou to the cardinal?

*Const.* What should he say, but as the cardinal?

*Lew.* Bethink you, father; for the difference Is purchase of a heavy curse from Rome,

(Or the light loss of England for a friend: Forego the easier.

*Blanch.* That's the curse of Rome.

*Const.* O Lewis, stand fast! the devil tempts thee here

In likeness of a new untrimmed bride.

*Blanch.* The Lady Constance speaks not from her faith, 210

But from her need.

*Const.* O, if thou grant my need, Which only lives but by the death of faith,

That need must needs infer this principle, That faith would live again by death of need.

O then, tread down my need, and faith mounts up:

Keep my need up, and faith is trodden down!

*K. John.* The king is moved, and answers not to this.

*Const.* O, be removed from him, and answer well!

*Aust.* Do so, King Philip; hang no more in doubt.

*Bast.* Hang nothing but a calf's-skin, most sweet lout. 220

*K. Phi.* I am perplex'd, and know not what to say.

*Pand.* What canst thou say but will perplex thee more,

If thou stand excommunicate and cursed!

*K. Phi.* Good reverend father, make my person yours.

And tell me how you would bestow yourself. This royal hand and mine are newly knit,

And the conjunction of our inward souls Married in league, coupled and link'd together

With all religious strength of sacred vows; 230 The latest breath that gave the sound of words

Was deep-sworn faith, peace, amity, true love Between our kingdoms and our royal selves,

And even before this truce, but new before, No longer than we well could wash our hands

To clap this royal bargain up of peace,

Heaven knows, they were besmear'd and over-  
stain'd

With slaughter's pencil, where revenge did  
paint

The fearful difference of incensed kings:  
And shall these hands, so lately purged of  
blood,

So newly join'd in love, so strong in both, 250  
Unyoke this seizure and this kind regret?  
Play fast and loose with faith? so jest with  
heaven,

Make such unconstant children of ourselves,  
As now again to snatch our palm from palm,  
Unwear faith sworn, and on the marriage-bed  
Of smiling peace to march a bloody host,  
And make a riot on the gentle brow  
Of true sincerity? O, holy sir,  
My reverend father, let it not be so!  
Out of your grace, devise, ordain, impose 255  
Some gentle order; and then we shall be blest  
To do your pleasure and continue friends.

Pand. All form is formless, order orderless,  
Save what is opposite to England's love.  
Therefore to arms! be champion of our church,  
Or let the church, our mother, breathe her curse,  
A mother's curse, on her revoking son.

France, thou mayest hold a serpent by the  
tongue,

A chafed lion by the mortal paw,  
A fasting tiger safer by the tooth, 260  
Than keep in peace that hand which thou dost  
hold,

K. Phi. I may disjoin my hand, but not  
my faith.

Pand. So makest thou faith an enemy to  
faith;

And like a civil war set'st oath to oath,  
Thy tongue against thy tongue. O, let thy vow  
First made to heaven, first be to heaven per-  
form'd.

That is, to be the champion of our church!  
What since thou sworest is sworn against thy-  
self

And may not be performed by thyself,  
For that which thou hast sworn to do amiss  
Is not amiss when it is truly done, 271  
And being not done, where doing tends to ill,  
The truth is then most done not doing it:

The better act of purposes mistook  
Is to mistake again; though indirect,  
Yet indirection thereby grows direct,

And falsehood falsehood cures, as fire cools fire  
Within the scorched veins of one new-burn'd.  
It is religion that doth make vows kept;  
But thou hast sworn against religion, 280

By what thou swear'st against the thing thou  
swear'st,

And makest an oath the surety for thy truth  
Against an oath: 't the truth thou art unsure  
To swear, swears only not to be forsworn;

Then what a mockery should it be to swear!  
But thou dost swear only to be forsworn;  
And most forsworn, to keep what thou dost  
swear.

Therefore thy later vows against thy first  
Is in thyself rebellion to thyself; 285  
And better conquest never canst thou make  
Than arm thy constant and thy nobler parts

Against these giddy loose suggestions:

Upon which better part our prayers come in,  
If thou vouchsafe them. But if not, then know  
The peril of our courses light on thee  
So heavy as thou shalt not shake them off,  
But in despair die under their black weight.

Aust. Rebellion, flat rebellion!  
Bast. Will 'not be!

Will not a calf's-skin stop that mouth of thine?  
Lew. Father, to arms!

Blanch. Upon thy wedding-day? 300  
Against the blood that thou hast married?  
What, shall our feast be kept with slaughter'd  
men?

Shall braying trumpets and loud churlish drums,  
'Inmours of hell, be measures to our pomp?  
O husband, hear me! ay, alack, how new  
Is husband in my mouth! even for that name,  
Which till this time my tongue did ne'er pro-  
nounce,

Upon my knee I beg, go not to arms  
Against mine uncle.

Const. O, upon my knee,  
Made hard with kneeling, I do pray to thee, 310  
Thou virtuous Dauphin, alter not the doom  
Forethought by heaven!

Blanch. Now shall I see thy love: what  
motive may

Be stronger with thee than the name of wife?  
Const. That which upholdeth him that thee  
upholds,

His honour: O, thine honour, Lewis, thine  
honour!

Lew. I muse your majesty doth seem so  
cold,

When such profound respects do pull you on.  
Pand. I will denounce a curse upon his head.

K. Phi. Thou shalt not need. England, I  
will fall from thee. 320

Const. O fair return of banish'd majesty!  
Eli. O foul revolt of French inconstancy!

K. John. France, thou shalt rue this hour  
within this hour.

Bast. Old Time the clock-setter, that baid  
sexton Time,

Is it as he will! well then, France shall rue.

Blanch. The sun's o'ercast with blood: fair  
day, adieu!

Which is the side that I must go withal?  
I am with both: each army hath a hand;

And in their rage, I having hold of both,  
They whirl asunder and dismember me. 330

Husband, I cannot pray that thou mayst win:  
Uncle, I needs must pray that thou mayst lose;

Father, I may not wish the fortune thine;  
Grandam, I will not wish thy wishes thrive:

Whoever wins, on that side shall I lose;  
Assured loss before the match be play'd.

Lew. Lady, with me, with me thy fortune  
lies.

Blanch. There where my fortune lives, there  
my life lies.

K. John. Cousin, go draw our puissance  
together. [Exit Bastard.]

France, I am burn'd up with flaming wrath.  
A rage whose heat hath this condition, 341

That nothing can allay, nothing but blood,  
The blood, and dearest-valued blood, of France.

*K. Phi.* Thy rage shall burn thee up, and thou shalt turn  
To ashes, ere our blood shall quench that fire:  
Look to thyself, thou art in jeopardy.  
*K. John.* No more than he that threatens. To arms let's his! [Exeunt.]

SCENE II. *The same. Plains near Angiers.*  
*Alarums, excursions. Enter the BASTARD, with AUSTRIA'S head.*

*Bast.* Now, by my life, this day grows wondrous hot;  
Some airy devil hovers in the sky  
And pours down mischief. Austria's head lies there,  
While Philip breathes.

*Enter KING JOHN, ARTHUR, and HUBERT.*  
*K. John.* Hubert, keep this boy. Philip, make up:  
My mother is assailed in our tent,  
And 'a'en, I fear.

*Hubert.* My lord, I rescued her;  
Her highness is in safety, fear you not:  
But on, my liege; for very little pains  
Will bring this labour to an happy end. [Exeunt.]

SCENE III. *The same.*

*Alarums, excursions, retreat. Enter KING JOHN, ELINOR, ARTHUR, the BASTARD, HUBERT, and Lords.*

*K. John.* [To Elinor] So shall it be; your grace shall stay behind  
So strongly guarded. [To Arthur] Cousin, look not sad:

Thy grandam loves thee; and thy uncle will  
As dear be to thee as thy father was.  
*Arth.* O, this will make my mother die with grief!

*K. John.* [To the Bastard] Cousin, away for England! haste before:

And, ere our coming, see thou shake the bags  
Of hoarding abbots; imprisoned angels  
Set at liberty: the fat ribs of peace  
Must by the hungry now be fed upon: 10  
Use our commission in his utmost force.

*Bast.* Bell, book, and candle shall not drive me back.

When gold and silver beck me to come on.  
I leave your highness. Grandam, I will pray,  
If ever I remember to be holy,  
For your fair safety; so, I kiss your hand.

*Elin.* Farewell, gentle cousin.  
*K. John.* Coz, farewell. [Exit Bastard.]

*Elin.* Come hither, little kinsman; hark, a word.

*K. John.* Come hither, Hubert. O my gentle Hubert,

We owe thee much! within this wall of flesh as  
There is a soul counts thee her creditor  
And with advantage means to pay thy love:  
And, my good friend, thy voluntary oath  
Lives in this bosom, dearly cherished.  
Give me thy hand. I had a thing to say,  
But I will fit it with some better time.  
By heaven, Hubert, I am almost ashamed

To say what good respect I have of thee.

*Hub.* I am much bounden to your majesty.

*K. John.* Good friend, thou hast no cause to say so yet, 30  
But thou shalt have; and crop time ne'er so slow,

Yet it shall come for me to do thee good.

I had a thing to say, but let it go:  
The sun is in the heaven, and the proud day,

Attended with the pleasures of the world,  
Is all too wanton and too full of gawds

To give me audience: if the midnight bell  
Did, with his iron tongue and brazen mouth,

Sound on into the drowsy race of night:  
If this same were a churchyard where we stand,

And thou possessed with a thousand wrongs, 40  
Or if that surly spirit, melancholy,

Had baked thy blood and made it heavy-thick,  
Which else runs tickling up and down the veins,

Making that idiot, laughter, keep men's eyes  
And strain their cheeks to idle merriment

A passion hateful to my purposes,  
Or if that thou couldst see me without eyes,

Hear me without thine ears, and make reply  
Without a tongue, using conceit alone, 50

Without eyes, ears and harmful sound of words:  
Then, in despite of brooded watchful day,

I would into thy bosom pour my thoughts:  
But, ah, I will not! yet I love thee well;

And, by my truth, I think thou lovest me well.  
*Hub.* So well, that what you bid me under

take,

Though that my death were adjunct to my act,  
By heaven, I would do it.

*K. John.* Do not I know thee wouldst?  
(Good Hubert, Hubert, Hubert, throw thine eye

On yon young boy: I'll tell thee what, my friend, 60

He is a very serpent in my way;  
And wheresoe'er this foot of mine doth tread,

He lies before me: dost thou understand me?  
Thou art his keeper.

*Hub.* And I'll keep him so,  
That he shall not offend your majesty.

*K. John.* Death.

*Hub.* My lord!

*K. John.* A grave.

*Hub.* He shall not live.

*K. John.* Enough.

I could be merry now. Hubert, I love thee:  
Well, I'll not say what I intend for thee:

Remember. Madam, fare you well:  
I'll send those powers o'er to your majesty. 70

*Elin.* My blessing go with thee!

*K. John.* For England, cousin, go:  
Hubert shall be your man, attend on you

With all true duty. On toward Calais, ho! [Exeunt.]

SCENE IV. *The same. The French King's tent.*

*Enter KING PHILIP, LEWIS, FANDOLPH, and Attendants.*

*K. Phi.* So, by a roaring tempest on the flood,

A whole armada of convicted sin  
Is scatter'd and disjoint'd from fellowship.

*Pand.* Courage and comfort! all shall yet go well.

*K. Phi.* What can go well, when we have run so ill!

Are not beaten? Is not Angiers lost? Arthur taken prisoner? divers dear friends slain? And bloody England into England gone, O'erbearing interruption, spite of France?

*Lew.* What he hath won, that hath he fortified: 10

So hot a speed with such advice disposed, Such temperate order in so fierce a cause, Doth want example: who hath read or heard Of any kindred action like to this?

*K. Phi.* Well could I bear that England had this praise,

So we could find some pattern of our shame.

*Enter CONSTANCE.*

Look, who comes here! a grave unto a soul: Holding the eternal spirit, against her will, In the vile prison of afflicted breath.

*I* prithee, lady, go away with me. 20

*Const.* Lo, now! now see the issue of your peace.

*K. Phi.* Patience, good lady! comfort, gentle Constance!

*Const.* No, I defy all counsel, all redress, But that which ends all counsel, true redress, Death, death; O amiable lovely death!

Thou odoriferous stench! sound rottenness!

Arise forth from the couch of lasting night,

Thou hate and terror to prosperity,

And I will kiss thy detestable bones

And put my eyeballs in thy vaulty brows 30 And ring these fingers with thy household worms

And stop this gap of breath with fulsome dust

And be a carrion monster like thyself:

Come, grin on me, and I will think thou smilest

And kiss thee as thy wife. Misery's love,

O, come to me!

*K. Phi.* O fair affliction, peace!

*Const.* No, no, I will not, having breath to cry:

O, that my tongue were in the thunder's mouth!

Then with a passion would I shake the world:

And rouse from sleep that fell anatomy 40 Which cannot hear a lady's feeble voice,

Which scorns a modern invocation.

*Pand.* Lady, you utter madness, and not sorrow.

*Const.* Thou art not holy to belie me so;

I am not mad: this hair I tear is mine;

My name is Constance; I was Geoffrey's wife;

Young Arthur is my son, and he is lost:

I am not mad: I would to heaven I were!

For then, 'tis like I should forget myself:

O, if I could, what grief should I forget!

French some philosophy to make me mad,

And thou shalt be canonized, cardinal;

For being not mad but sensible of grief,

My reasonable part produces reason

How I may be deliver'd of these woes,

And teaches me to kill or hang myself:

If I were mad, I should forget my son,

O' meady think a babe of clouts were he:

I am not mad; too well, too well I feel

The different plague of each calamity. 60

*K. Phi.* Bind up those tresses. O, what love I note

In the fair multitude of those her hairs!

Where but by chance a silver drop hath fallen,

Even to that drop ten thousand wiry friends

Do glue themselves in sociable grief,

Like true, inseparable, faithful loves,

Sticking together in calamity.

*Const.* To England, if you will.

*K. Phi.* Bind up your hairs.

*Const.* Yes, that I will; and wherefore will I do it?

I tore them from their bonds and cried aloud 70

'O that these hands could so redeem my son,

As they have given these hairs their liberty!'

But now I envy at their liberty,

And will again commit them to their bonds,

Because my poor child is a prisoner.

And, father cardinal, I have heard you say

That we shall see and know our friends in heaven:

If that be true, I shall see my boy again;

For since the birth of Cain, the first male child,

To him that did but yesterday expire, 80

There was not such a gracious creature born.

But now will canker sorrow eat my bud

And chase the native beauty from his cheek

And he will look as hollow as a ghost,

As dim and meagre as an ague's fit,

And so he'll die; and, rising so again,

When I shall meet him in the court of heaven

I shall not know him: therefore never, never

Must I behold my pretty Arthur more.

*Pand.* You hold too heinous a respect of grief. 90

*Const.* He talks to me that never had a son.

*K. Phi.* You are as fond of grief as of your child.

*Const.* Grief fills the room up of my absent child,

Lies in his bed, walks up and down with me,

Puts on his pretty looks, repeats his words,

Remembers me of all his gracious parts,

Stuffs out his vacant garments with his form:

Then, have I reason to be fond of grief!

Fare you well: had you such a loss as I,

I could give better comfort than you do. 100

I will not keep this form upon my head,

When there is such disorder in my wit.

O Lord! my boy, my Arthur, my fair son!

My life, my joy, my food, my all the world!

My widow-comfort, and my sorrows' cure!

*[Exit.*

*K. Phi.* I fear some outrage, and I'll follow her. *[Exit.]*

*Lew.* There's nothing in this world can make me joy:

Life is as tedious as a twice-told tale

Vexing the dull ear of a drowsy man;

And bitter shame hath spoil'd the sweet world's

taste. 110

That it yields nought but shame and bitterness.

*Pand.* Before the curing of a strong disease,

Even in the instant of repair and health,

The fit is strongest: evils that take leave,

On their departure most of all show evil:

What have you lost by losing of this day?

*Lew.* All days of glory, joy and happiness.

*Pand.* If you had won it, certainly you had.  
No, no; when Fortune means to men most good,

She looks upon them with a threatening eye, 120  
'Tis strange to think how much King John hath lost

In this which he accounts so clearly won:  
Are not you grieved that Arthur is his prisoner?

*Lew.* As heartily as he is glad he hath him.

*Pand.* Your mind is all as youthful as your blood.

Now hear me speak with a prophetic spirit;  
For even the breath of what I mean to speak  
Shall blow each dust, each straw, each little rub,  
Out of the path which shall directly lead  
Thy foot to England's throne; and therefore mark. 130

John hath seized Arthur; and it cannot be  
That, whilst warm life plays in that infant's veins,

The misplaced John should entertain an hour,  
One minute, nay, one quiet breath of rest.  
A sceptre snatch'd with an unruly hand  
Must be as boisterously maintain'd as gain'd;  
And he that stands upon a slippery place  
Makes nice of no vile hold to stay him up:  
That John may stand, then Arthur needs must fall;

So be it, for it cannot be but so. 140

*Lew.* But what shall I gain by young Arthur's fall?

*Pand.* You, in the right of Lady Blanch your wife,

May then make all the claim that Arthur did.

*Lew.* And lose it, life and all, as Arthur did.

*Pand.* How green you are and fresh in this old world!

Ohn says you plots; the times conspire with you;

Or he that steeps his safety in true blood  
Shall find but bloody safety and untrue.  
This act so evilly born shall cool the hearts  
Of all his people and freeze up their zeal, 150  
That none so small advantage shall step forth  
To check his reign, but they will cherish it;  
No natural exhalation in the sky,  
No scope of nature, no distemper'd day,  
No common wind, no custom'd event,

But they will pluck away his natural cause  
And call them meteors, prodigies and signs,  
Abortives, presages and tongues of heaven,  
Mainly denouncing vengeance upon John.

*Lew.* May be he will not touch young Arthur's life. 160

But hold himself safe in his prisonment.

*Pand.* O, sir, when he shall hear of your approach,

If that young Arthur be not gone already,  
Even at that news he dies; and then the hearts

Of all his people shall revolt from him  
And kiss the lips of unacquainted change

And pick strong matter of revolt and wrath  
Out of the bloody fingers' ends of John.

Methinks I see this hurly all on foot:  
And, O, what better matter breeds for you, 170

Than I have named! The bastard Faulconbridge

Is now in England, ransacking the church,  
Offending charity: if but a dozen French  
Were there in arms, they would be as a call  
To train ten thousand English to their side,  
Or as a little snow, tumbled about,  
Anon becomes a mountain. O noble Dauphin,  
Go with me to the king: 'tis wonderful  
What may be wrought out of their discontent,  
Now that their souls are topfull of offence. 180  
For England go: I will whet on the king.

*Lew.* Strong reasons make strong actions:  
let us go:

If you say ay, the king will not say no.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I. A room in a castle.

*Enter HUBERT and Executioners.*

*Hub.* Heat me these irons hot; and look thou stand

Within the arras: when I strike my foot  
Upon the bosom of the ground, rush forth,  
And bind the boy which you shall find with me

Fast to the chair: be heedful: hence, and watch.

*First Exec.* I hope your warrant will bear out the deed.

*Hub.* Uncleanly scruples! fear not the look to't. [*Exeunt Executioners.*]

Young lad, come forth; I have to say with you.

*Enter ARTHUR.*

*Arth.* Good morrow, Hubert.

*Hub.* Good morrow, little prince.

*Arth.* As little prince, having so great a title  
To be more prince, as may be. You are sad.

*Hub.* Indeed, I have been merrier.

*Arth.* Mercy on me!

Methinks no body should be sad but I:  
Yet, I remember, when I was in France,

Young gentlemen would be as sad as night,  
Only for wantonness. By my christendom,

So I were out of prison and kept sheep,  
I should be as merry as the day is long;

And so I would be here, but that I doubt  
My uncle practises more harm to me: 20

He is afraid of me and I of him;  
Is it my fault that I was Geoffrey's son?

No, indeed, is't not; and I would to heaven  
I were your son, so you would love me, Hubert.

*Hub.* [*Aside*] If I talk to him, with his innocent prate

He will awake my mercy which lies dead;  
Therefore I will be sudden and dispatch.

*Arth.* Are you sick, Hubert? you look pale to-day:

In sooth, I would you were a little sick,  
That I might sit all night and watch with you:

I warrant I love you more than you do me. 30

*Hub.* [*Aside*] His words do take possession of my bosom.

Read here, young Arthur. [*Showing a paper.*]

*Arth.* [*Aside*] How now, foolish dream!

Turning displeasure torture out of door!  
I must be brief, lest resolution drop.

Out at mine eyes in tender womanish

Can you not read it? Is it not fair writ?

*Arth.* Too fairly, Hubert, for so foul effect:  
Must you with hot irons burn out both mine eyes?

*Hub.* Young boy, I must.

*Arth.* And will you?

*Hub.* And I will. 40

*Arth.* Have you the heart? When your head did but ache,

I knit my handkercher about your brows,  
The best I had, a princess wrought it me,  
And I did never ask it you again;

And with my hand at midnight held your head,  
And like the watchful minutes to the hour,

Still and anon cheer'd up the heavy time,  
Saying, 'What lack you?' and 'Where lies

your grief?'

Or 'What good love may I perform for you?'

Many a poor man's son would have lien still  
And ne'er have spoke a loving word to you; 51

But you at your sick service had a prince.  
Nay, you may think my love was crafty love

And call it cunning: do, an if you will:  
If heaven be pleased that you must use me ill,

Why then you must. Will you put out mine eyes?

These eyes that never did nor never shall  
So much as frown on you.

*Hub.* I have sworn to do it:  
And with hot irons must I burn them out.

*Arth.* Ah, none but in this iron age would  
do it! 60

The iron of itself, though heat red-hot,  
Approaching near these eyes, would drink my

tears  
And quench his fiery indignation  
Even in the matter of mine innocence;

Nay, after that, consume away in rust;  
But for containing fire to harm mine eye.

Are you more stubborn-hard than hammer'd  
iron?

An if an angel should have come to me  
And told me Hubert should put out mine eyes,

I would not have believed him,—no tongue but  
Hubert's. 70

*Hub.* Come forth. [*Stamps.*]

*Re-enter Executioners, with a cord, irons, &c.*

Do as I bid you do.

*Arth.* O, save me, Hubert, save me! my  
eyes are out

Even with the fierce looks of these bloody men.

*Hub.* Give me the iron, I say, and bind him  
here.

*Arth.* Alas, what need you be so boisterous-  
rough?

I will not struggle, I will stand stone-still.  
For heaven sake, Hubert, let me not be bound!

Nay, hear me, Hubert, drive these men away,  
And I will sit as quiet as a lamb; 80

I will not stir, nor wince, nor speak a word,  
Nor look upon the iron angrily:

Thrust but these men away, and I'll forgive  
you,

Whatever torment you do put me to.

*Hub.* Go, stand within; let me alone with  
him.

*First Exec.* I am best pleased to be from  
such a deed. [*Exit Executioners.*]

*Arth.* Alas, I then have chid away my  
friend!

He hath a stern look, but a gentle heart:  
Let him come back, that his compassion may

Give life to yours.

*Hub.* Come, boy, prepare yourself. 90

*Arth.* Is there no remedy?

*Hub.* None, but to lose your eyes.

*Arth.* O heaven, that there were but a mote  
in yours,

A grain, a dust, a gnat, a wandering hair,  
Any annoyance in that precious sense!

Then feeling what small things are boisterous  
there,

Your vile intent must needs seem horrible.

*Hub.* Is this your promise? I go to, hold your  
tongue.

*Arth.* Hubert, the utterance of a brace of  
tongues

Must needs want pleading for a pair of eyes:  
Let me not hold my tongue, let me not, Hubert;

Or, Hubert, if you will, cut out my tongue, 101

So I may keep mine eyes: O, spare mine eyes,  
Though to no use but still to look on you!

I.e. by my troth, the instrument is cold  
And would not harm me.

*Hub.* I can heat it, boy.

*Arth.* No, in good sooth; the fire is dead  
with grief.

Being create for comfort, to be used  
In undesired extremes: see else yourself;

There is no malice in this burning coal;  
The breath of heaven hath blown his spirit

out  
And strew'd repentant ashes on his head.

*Hub.* But with my breath I can revive it,  
boy.

*Arth.* An if you do, you will but make it  
blush

And glow with shame of your proceedings.  
Hubert:

Nay, it perchance will sparkle in your eyes;  
And like a dog that is compell'd to fight,

Snatch at his master that doth tarre him on.  
All things that you should use to do me wrong

Deny their office: only you do lack  
That mercy which fierce fire and iron extend.

Creatures of note for mercy-lacking usage. 121

*Hub.* Well, see to live; I will not touch  
thine eye

For all the treasure that thine uncle owes:  
Yet am I sworn and I did purpose, boy,

With this same very iron to burn them out.

*Arth.* O, now you look like Hubert! all this  
while

You were disguised.

*Hub.* Peace; no more. Adieu.  
Your uncle must not know but you are dead:

I'll fill these dogged spies with false reports:  
And, pretty child, sleep doubtless and secure.

That Hubert, for the wealth of all the world,  
Will not offend thee.

*Arth.* O heaven! I thank you, Hubert.

*Hub.* Silence; no more: go closely in with  
me:  
Much danger do I undergo for thee. [*Exit.*]



## SCENE II. KING JOHN'S palace.

Enter KING JOHN, PEMBROKE, SALISBURY,  
and other Lords.

*K. John.* Here once again we sit, once again  
crown'd.

And looked upon, I hope, with cheerful eyes.

*Pem.* This 'once again,' but that your high-  
ness pleased,

Was once superfluous: you were crown'd before,  
And that high royalty was ne'er pluck'd off;  
The faiths of men ne'er stained with revolt;  
Fresh expectation troubled not the land  
With any long d-for change or better state.

*Sal.* Therefore, to be possess'd with double  
pomp,

To guard a title that was rich before,  
To gild refined gold, to paint the lily,  
To throw a perfume on the violet,  
To smooth the ice, or add another hue  
Unto the rainbow, or with taper-light  
To seek the beauteous eye of heaven to garnish,  
Is wasteful and ridiculous excess.

*Pem.* But that your royal pleasure must be  
done,

This act is as an ancient tale new told,  
And in the last repeating troublesome,  
Being urged at a time unreasonable.

*Sal.* In this the antique and well noted face  
Of plain old form is much disfigured;  
And, like a shifted wind unto a sail,  
It makes the course of thoughts to fetch about,  
Startles and frights consideration,  
Makes sound opinion sick and truth suspected,  
For putting on so new a fashion'd robe.

*Pem.* When workmen strive to do better  
than well,

They do confound their skill in covetousness;  
And oftentimes excusing of a fault  
Doth make the fault the worse by the excuse;  
As patches set upon a little blemish  
Discredit more in hiding of the fault  
Than did the fault before it was so patch'd.

*Sal.* To this effect, before you were new  
crown'd,

We breathed our counsel: but it pleased your  
highness

To overbear it, and we are all well pleased,  
To see all and every part of what we would  
ch make a stand at what your highness will.

*K. John.* Some reasons of this double cor-  
nation

have possess'd you with and think them  
strong;

And more, more strong, then lesser is my fear,  
shall induce you with: meantime but ask  
that you would have reform'd that is not well,  
and well shall you perceive how willingly  
will both hear and grant you your requests.

*Pem.* Then I, as one that am the tongue of  
these

around the purposes of all their hearts,  
both for myself and them, but, chief of all,

for our safety, for the which myself and them go  
bend their best studies, heartily request

The enfranchisement of Arthur: whose re-  
straint

Doth move the murmuring lips of discontent  
To break into this dangerous argument.—  
If what in rest you have in right you hold,  
Why then your fears, which, as they say, attend  
The steps of wrong, should move you to mew up  
Your tender kinsman and to choke his days  
With barbarous ignorance and deny his youth  
The rich advantage of good exercise? 60  
That the time's enemies may not have this  
To grace occasions, let it be our suit  
That you have bid us ask his liberty;  
Which for our goods we do no further ask  
Than whereupon our weal, on you depending,  
Counts it your weal he have his liberty.

Enter HUBERT.

*K. John.* Let it be so: I do commit his  
youth

To your direction. Hubert, what news with  
you? [Taking him apart.]

*Pem.* This is the man should do the bloody  
deed;

He shew'd his warrant to a friend of mine: 70  
The image of a wicked heinous fault  
Lives in his eye; that close aspect of his  
Does show the mood of a much troubled breast;

And I do fearfully believe 'tis done,  
What we so fear'd he had a charge to do.

*Sal.* The colour of the king doth come  
and go

Between his purpose and his conscience.  
Like heralds 'twixt two dreadful battles set:

His passion is so ripe, it needs must break.

*Pem.* And when it breaks, I fear will issue  
thence

The foul corruption of a sweet child's death.

*K. John.* We cannot hold mortality's strong  
hand:

Good lords, although my will to give is living,  
The suit which you demand is gone and dead:

He tells us Arthur is deceased to-night.

*Sal.* Indeed we fear'd his sickness was past  
cure.

*Pem.* Indeed we heard how near his death  
he was

Before the child himself felt he was sick:  
This must be answer'd either here or hence.

*K. John.* Why do you bend such solemn  
brows on me? 90

Think you I bear the shears of destiny?  
Have I commandment on the pulse of life?

*Sal.* It is apparent foul play; and 'tis shame  
That greatness should so grossly offer it:

So thrive it in your game! and so, farewell.

*Pem.* Stay yet, Lord Salisbury; I'll go with  
thee.

And find the inheritance of this poor child,  
His little kingdom of a forced grave.

That blood which owed the breadth of all this  
isle,

Three foot of it doth hold: bad would the  
white!

This must not be thus borne: this will break  
out

To all our sorrows, and ere long I doubt  
[Exeunt Lords.]

*K. John.* They burn in indignation. I  
repent:

There is no sure foundation set on blood,  
No certain life achieved by others' death.

*Enter a Messenger.*

A fearful eye thou hast: where is that blood  
That I have seen inhabit in those cheeks?  
So foul a sky clears not without a storm:  
Pour down thy weather: how goes all in France?  
*Mess.* From France to England. Never such  
a power 170

For any foreign preparation  
Was levied in the body of a land.  
The copy of your speed is learn'd by them:  
For when you should be told they do prepare,  
The tidings comes that they are all arrived.

*K. John.* O, where hath our intelligence  
been drunk?

Where hath it slept? Where is my mother's  
care,  
That such an army could be drawn in France,  
And she not hear of it?

*Mess.* My liege, her ear  
Is stopp'd with dust: the first of April died 120  
Your noble mother: and, as I hear, my lord,  
The Lady Constance in a frenzy died  
Three days before: but this from rumour's  
tongue

I idly heard; if true or false I know not.

*K. John.* Withhold thy speech, dreadful  
occasion!

O, make a league with me, till I have pleased  
My discontented peers! What! mother dead!  
How wildly then walks my estate in France!  
Under whose conduct came those powers of  
France

That thou for truth givest out are landed here?  
*Mess.* Under the Dauphin.

*K. John.* Thou hast made me giddy 171  
With these ill tidings.

*Enter the BASTARD and PETER of Pomfret.*

Now, what says the world  
To your proceedings? do not seek to stuff  
My head with more ill news, for it is full.

*Bast.* But if you be afraid to hear the worst,  
Then let the worst unheard fall on your head.

*K. John.* Bear with me, cousin; for I was  
amazed

Under the tide: but now I breathe again  
Aloft the flood, and can give audience  
To any tongue, speak it of what it will. 140

*Bast.* How I have sped among the clergy-  
men,

The sums I have collected shall express.  
But as I travell'd hither through the land,  
I find the people strangely fantasied;  
Possess'd with rumours, full of idle dreams,  
Not knowing what they fear, but full of fear:  
And here's a prophet, that I brought with me  
From forth the streets of Pomfret, whom I  
found

With many hundreds treading on his heels;  
To whom he sung, in rude harsh-sounding  
rhymes, 150

That, ere the next Ascension-day at noon,  
Your highness should deliver up your crown.

*K. John.* Thou idle dreamer, wherefore didst  
thou so!

*Peter.* Foreknowing that the truth will fall  
out so.

*K. John.* Hubert, away with him; imprison  
him!

And on that day at noon, whereon he says  
I shall yield up my crown, let him be hang'd.  
Deliver him to safety; and return,  
For I must use thee. *[Exit Hubert with Peter.*  
O my gentle cousin,

Hear'st thou the news abroad, who are arrived:  
*Bast.* The French, my lord; men's mouths  
are full of it: 161

Besides, I met Lord Bigot and Lord Salisbury,  
With eyes as red as new-enkindled fire,  
And others more, going to seek the grave  
Of Arthur, whom they say is kill'd to-night  
On your suggestion.

*K. John.* Gentle kinsman, go,  
And thrust thyself into their companies:  
I have a way to win their loves again;  
Bring them before me.

*Bast.* I will seek them out.

*K. John.* Nay, but make haste; the better  
foot before. 170

O, let me have no subject enemies,  
When adverse foreigners alight my towns  
With dreadful pomp of stout invasion!  
Be Mercury, set feathers to thy heels,  
And fly like thought from them to me again.

*Bast.* The spirit of the time shall teach me  
speed. *[Exit]*

*K. John.* Spoke like a sprightly noble gentle-  
man.

Go after him; for he perhaps shall need  
Some messenger betwixt me and the peers:  
And be thou he.

*Mess.* With all my heart, my liege. 1  
*[Exit]*

*K. John.* My mother dead!

*Re-enter HUBERT.*

*Hub.* My lord, they say five moons were  
seen to-night:

Four fixed, and the fifth did whirl about  
The other four in wondrous motion.

*K. John.* Five moons!

*Hub.* Old men and beldams in the streets  
Do prophesy upon it dangerously:  
Young Arthur's death is common in their  
mouths:

And when they talk of him, they shake their  
heads

And whisper one another in the ear;  
And he that speaks doth gripe the hearer's  
wrist, 150

Whilst he that hears makes fearful action.  
With wrinkled brows, with nods, with rolling  
eyes.

I saw a smith stand with his hammer, thus,  
The whilst his iron did on the anvil cool,  
With open mouth swallowing a tailor's news:  
Who, with his shears and measure in his hand,  
Standing on slippers, which his nimble haste  
Had falsely thrust upon contrary feet,  
Told of a many thousand warlike French  
That were embattail'd and rank'd in Kent: 200  
Another lean unwash'd artificer  
Cuts off his tale and talks of Arthur's death.

*K. John.* Why seek'st thou to possess me  
with these fears?  
Why urgest thou so oft young Arthur's death?  
Thy hand hath murder'd him: I had a mighty  
cause

To wish him dead, but thou hadst none to kill  
him.

*Hub.* No had, my lord! why, did you not  
provoke me?

*K. John.* It is the curse of kings to be at-  
tended

By slaves that take their humours for a warrant  
To break within the bloody house of life, 210  
And on the winking of authority

To understand a law, to know the meaning  
Of dangerous majesty, when perchance it  
frowns

More upon humour than advised respect.

*Hub.* Here is your hand and seal for what I  
did.

*K. John.* O, when the last account 'twixt  
heaven and earth

Is to be made, then shall this hand and seal  
Witness against us to damnation!

How oft the sight of means to do ill deeds  
Make deeds ill done! Hadst not thou been by,  
A fellow by the hand of nature mark'd, 221

Quoted and sign'd to do a deed of shame,  
This murder had not come into my mind:

But taking note of thy abhor'd aspect,  
Finding thee fit for bloody villany,

Apt, liable to be employ'd in danger,  
I faintly broke with thee of Arthur's death;

And thou, to be endeared to a king,  
Made it no conscience to destroy a prince.

*Hub.* My lord, — 230  
*K. John.* Hadst thou but shook thy head or  
made a pause

When I spake darkly what I purposed,  
Or turn'd an eye of doubt upon my face,

As bid me tell my tale in express words,  
Deep shame had struck me dumb, made me  
break off,

And those thy fears might have wrought fears  
in me:

But thou didst understand me by my signs  
And didst in signs again parley with sin;

Yea, without stop, didst let thy heart consent,  
And consequently thy rude hand to act 240

The deed, which both our tongues held vile to  
name.

Out of my sight, and never see me more!  
My nobles leave me: and my state is braved,

Even at my gates, with ranks of foreign powers:  
Nay, in the body of this fleshly land,

This kingdom, this confine of blood and breath,  
Hostility and civil tumult reigns

Between my conscience and my cousin's death.  
*Hub.* Arm you against your other enemies,

I'll make a peace between your soul and you.  
Young Arthur is alive: this hand of mine 251

Is yet a maiden and an innocent hand,  
Not painted with the crimson spots of blood.

Within this bosom never enter'd yet  
The dreadful motion of a murderous thought;

And you have slander'd nature in my form,  
Which, howsoever rude exteriorly,

Is yet the cover of a fairer mind

Than to be butcher of an innocent child.

*K. John.* Doth Arthur live? O, haste thee  
to the peers, 260

Throw this report on their incensed rage,  
And make them tame to their obedience!

Forgive the comment that my passion made  
Upon thy feature; for my rage was blind,

And foul imaginary eyes of blood  
Presented thee more hideous than thou art.

O, answer not, but to my closet bring  
The angry lords with all expedient haste.

I conjure thee but slowly; run more fast.  
[Exeunt.]

### SCENE III. Before the castle.

Enter ARTHUR, on the walls.

*Arth.* The wall is high, and yet will I leap  
down:

Good ground, be pitiful and hurt me not!  
There's few or none do know me: if they did,

This ship-boy's semblance hath disguised me  
quite.

I am afraid; and yet I'll venture it.  
If I get down, and do not break my limbs,

I'll find a thousand shifts to get away:  
As good to die and go, as die and stay.

[Leaps down.]  
O me! my uncle's spirit is in these stones:

Heaven take my soul, and England keep my  
bones! [Dies. 10

Enter PEMBROKE, SALISBURY, and BLOOT.

*Sal.* Lords, I will meet him at Saint Ed-  
mundsbury:

It is our safety, and we must embrace  
This gentle offer of the perilous time.

*Pem.* Who brought that letter from the  
cardinal?

*Sal.* The Count Melun, a noble lord of  
France;

Whose private with me of the Dauphin's love  
Is much more general than these lines import.

*Big.* To-morrow morning let us meet him  
then.

*Sal.* Or rather then set forward; for 'twill be  
Two long days' journey, lords, or ere we meet.

Enter the BASTARD.

*Bast.* Once more to-day well met, disem-  
per'd lords! 21

The king by me requests your presence straight.  
*Sal.* The king hath disposess'd himself of us:

We will not line his thin bestained cloak  
With our pure honours, nor attend the foot

That leaves the print of blood where'er it walks.  
Return and tell him so: we know the worst.

*Bast.* What'er you think, good words, I  
think, were best.

*Sal.* Our griefs, and not our manners, rea-  
son now. 22

*Bast.* But there is little reason in your grief;  
Therefore 'twere reason you had manners now.

*Pem.* Sir, sir, impatience hath his privilege.  
*Bast.* 'Tis true, to hurt his master, no man  
else.

*Sal.* This is the prison. What is he like here?  
[Seeing Arthur.]

*Pem.* O death, made proud with pure and princely beauty!  
The earth had not a hole to hide this deed.

*Sal.* Murder, as hating what himself hath done,  
Doth lay it open to urge on revenge.

*Big.* Or, when he doom'd this beauty to a grave,  
Found it too precious-princely for a grave.

*Sal.* Sir Richard, what think you? have you beheld,  
Or have you read or heard? or could you think?

Or do you almost think, although you see,  
That you do see? could thought, without this object,  
Form such another? This is the very top,  
The height, the crest, or crest unto the crest,  
Of murder's arms: this is the bloodiest shame,  
The wildest savagery, the vilest stroke,  
That ever wall-eyed wrath or staring rage  
Presented to the tears of soft remorse.

*Pem.* All murders past do stand excused in this:  
And this, so sole and so unmatchable,  
Shall give a holiness, a purity,  
To the yet unbegotten sin of times;  
And prove a deadly bloodshed but a jest,  
Exemplary by this heinous spectacle.

*Bas.* It is a damned and a bloody work;  
The graceless action: a heavy hand,  
If that it be the work of any hand.

*Sal.* If that it be the work of any hand!  
We had a kind of light what would ensue;  
It is the shameful work of Huler's hand;  
The practice and the purpose of the king:  
From whose obedience I forbid my soul,  
Kneeling before this ruin of sweet life,  
And breathing to his breathless excellence  
The incense of a vow, a holy vow,  
Never to taste the pleasures of the world,  
Never to be infected with delight,  
Nor conversant with ease and idleness,  
Till I have set a glory to this hand,  
By giving it the worship of revenge.

*Pem.* Our souls religiously confirm thy  
*Big.* words.

*Enter HUBERT.*  
*Hub.* Lords, I am hot with haste in seeking you:  
Arthur doth live: the king hath sent for you.

*Sal.* O, he is bold and blishes not at death.  
Avaunt, thou hateful villain, get thee gone!

*Hub.* I am no villain.  
*Sal.* Must I rob the law?  
[Drawing his sword.]

*Bas.* Your sword is bright, sir; put it up again.

*Sal.* Not till I sheathe it in a murderer's skin.

*Hub.* Stand back, Lord Salisbury, stand back, I say;  
By heaven, I think my sword's as sharp as yours:  
I would not have you, lord, forget yourself,  
Nor tempt the danger of my true defenses;  
Lest I, by marking of your rage, forget  
Your worth, your greatness and nobility.

*Big.* Out, dunghill! darrest thou brave a nobleman?

*Hub.* Not for my life: but yet I dare defend  
My innocent life against an emperor.

*Sal.* Thou art a murderer.  
*Hub.* Do not prove me so; go  
Yet I am none: whose tongue soever speaks  
Not truly speaks; who speaks not truly, lies.

*Pem.* Out him to pieces.  
*Bas.* Keep the peace, I say.  
*Sal.* Stand by, or I shall gall you, Faulconbridge.

*Bas.* Thou wert better gall the devil, Salisbury:  
If thou but frown on me, or stir thy foot,  
Or teach thy hasty spleen to do me shame,  
I'll strike thee dead. Put up thy sword betime;  
Or I'll so maul you and your twisting-iron,  
That you shall think the devil is come from hell.

*Big.* What wilt thou do, renowned Faulconbridge?  
Second a villain and a murderer!

*Hub.* Lord Bagot, I am none.  
*Big.* Who kill'd this prince?

*Hub.* 'Tis not an hour since I left him well  
I honour'd him, I lov'd him, and will weep  
My date of life out for his sweet life's loss.

*Sal.* Trust not those cunning waters of his eyes.  
For villany is not without such rheum;  
And he, long traded in it, makes it seem  
Like rivers of remorse and innocency.  
Away with me, all you whose souls abhor  
The uncleanly savours of a slaughter-house;  
For I am stuff'd with this smell of sin.

*Big.* Away toward Bury, to the Dauphin there!  
*Pem.* There tell the king he may inquire  
us out.

*Bas.* Here's a good world! Knew you of this fair work?  
Beyond the infinite and boundless reach  
Of mercy, if thou didst this deed of death,  
Art thou damn'd, Hubert.

*Hub.* Do but hear me, sir.  
*Bas.* Ha! I'll tell thee what;  
Thou'rt damn'd as black—nay, nothing is so black;  
Thou art more deep damn'd than Prince Lucifer:  
There is not yet so ugly a fiend of hell  
As thou shalt be, if thou didst kill this child.

*Hub.* Upon my soul—  
*Bas.* If thou didst but consent  
To this most cruel act, do but despair;  
And if thou want'st a cord, the smallest thread  
That ever spider twisted from her womb  
Will serve to strangle thee; a rush will be a beam  
To hang thee on; or wouldst thou drown thyself,  
Put but a little water in a spoon,  
And it shall be as all the ocean,  
Enough to stifle such a villain up.  
I do suspect thee very grievously.

*Hub.* If I in act, consent, or sin of thought,  
Be guilty of the stealing that sweet breath

## SCENE III.]

## KING JOHN

Which was embounded in this beauteous clay,  
Let hell wait pains enough to torture me.

nd I left him well.

*Bast.* Go, bear him in thine arms.  
I am amazed, methinks, and lose my way  
Among the thorns and dangers of this world.  
How easy dost thou take all England up!  
From forth this mortal of dead royalty,  
The life, the right and truth of all this realm  
Is fled to heaven; and England now is left  
To tug and scramble and to part by the teeth  
The unwon interest of proud-swelling state.  
Now for the bare-pick'd bone of majesty  
Doth dogged war bristle his angry crest  
And snarlth in the gentle eyes of peace: 150  
Now powers from home and discontents at home

Meet in one line; and vast confusion waits,  
As doth a raven on a sick-fall'n beast,  
The imminent decay of wrested pomp.  
Now happy he whose cloak and cincture can  
Hold out this tempest. Fear away that child  
And follow me with speed: I'll to the king:  
A thousand businesses are brief in hand,  
And heaven itself doth frown upon the land.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

## SCENE I. KING JOHN'S palace.

*Enter KING JOHN, PANDULPH, and Attendants.*

*K. John.* Thus have I yielded up into your hand  
The circle of my glory. [*Giving the crown.*]

*Pand.* Take again  
From this my hand, as holdness of the pope  
Your sovereign greatness and authority.

*K. John.* Now keep your holy word: go  
meet the French,

And from his holiness use all your power  
To stop their marches 'fore we are inflamed.  
Our discontented counties do revolt;

our people quarrel with obedience,  
wearing allegiance and the love of soul 10  
to stranger blood, to foreign royalty.  
his inundation of mistemper'd humour  
tests by you only to be qualified:  
men pause not: for the present time 's so sick,  
that present medicine must be minister'd,  
or overthrow incurable ensues.

*Pand.* It was my breath that blew this  
tempest up,  
upon your stubborn usage of the pope;  
but since you are a gentle convertite, 19  
my tongue shall hush again this storm of war.  
And make fair weather in your blustering land.  
In this Ascension-day, remember well,  
upon your oath of service to the pope,  
I to make the French lay down their arms.

*K. John.* Is this Ascension-day? Did not  
the prophet  
say that before Ascension-day at noon  
My crown I should give off? Even so I have:

I did suppose it should be on constraint;  
But, heaven be thank'd, it is but voluntary.

*Enter the BASTARD.*

*Bast.* All Kent hath yielded; nothing there  
holds out  
But Dover castle: London hath received,  
Like a kind host, the Dauphin and his powers:  
Your nobles will not hear you, but are gone  
To offer service to your enemy,  
And wild amazement hurries up and down  
The little number of your doubtful friends.

*K. John.* Would not my lords return to me  
again,  
After they heard young Arthur was alive?

*Bast.* They found him dead and cast into  
the streets.  
An empty casket, where the jewel of life 40  
By some damn'd hand was robb'd and ta'en  
away.

*K. John.* That villain Hubert told me he  
did live.

*Bast.* So, on my soul, he did, for aught he  
knew.  
But wherefore do you droop? why look you  
sall?

Be great in act, as you have been in thought;  
Let not the world see fear and sad distrust  
Govern the motion of a kingly eye:  
Be stirring as the time; be fire with fire;  
Threaten the threatener and outface the brow  
Of bragging horror: so shall inferior eyes, 50  
That borrow their behaviours from the great,  
Grow great by your example and put on  
The dauntless spirit of resolution.

Away, and glister like the god of war,  
When he intendeth to become the field:  
Show boldness and aspiring confidence.  
What, shall they seek the lion in his den,  
And fright him there? and make him tremble  
there?

O, let it not be said: forage, and run  
To meet displeasure farther from the doors, 60  
And grapple with him ere he come so nigh.

*K. John.* The legate of the pope hath been  
with me,  
And I have made a happy peace with him;  
And he hath promised to dismiss the powers  
Led by the Dauphin.

*Bast.* O inglorious league!  
Shall we, upon the footing of our land,  
Send fair-play orders and make compromise,  
Insinuation, parley and base truce  
To arms invasive? shall a beardless boy,  
A cocker'd sicken wanton, brave our fields, 70  
And flesh his spirit in a warlike soil,  
Mocking the air with colours idly spread,  
And find no check? Let us, my lords, to arms:  
Perchance the cardinal cannot make your peace;  
Or if he do, let it at least be said  
They saw we had a purpose of defence.

*K. John.* Have thou the ordering of this  
present time.

*Bast.* Away, then, with good courage! yet  
I know,  
Our party may well meet a prosperer foe. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *The DAUPHIN's camp at St Edmundsbury.*

*Enter, in arms, LEWIS, SALISBURY, MELUN, PEMBROKE, BIGOT, and Soldiers.*

*Lew.* My Lord Melun, let this be copied out.

And keep it safe for our remembrance :  
Return the precedent to these lords again ;  
That, having our fair order written down,  
Both they and we, perusing o'er these notes,  
May know wherefore we took the sacrament  
And keep our faiths firm and inviolable.

*Sal.* Upon our sides it never shall be broken.  
And, noble Dauphin, albeit we swear  
A voluntary zeal and an unurged faith  
To your proceedings ; yet believe me, prince,  
I am not glad that such a sort of time  
Should seek a plaster by condemn'd revolt,  
And heal the inveterate canker of one wound  
By making many. O, it grieves my soul,  
That I must draw this metal from my side  
To be a widow-maker ! O, and there  
Where honourable rescue and defence  
Cries out upon the name of Salisbury !  
But such is the infection of the time,  
That, for the health and physic of our right,  
We cannot deal but with the very hand  
Of stern injustice and confused wrong.  
And is't not pity, O my grieved friends,  
That we, the sons and children of this isle,  
Were born to see so sad an hour as this ;  
Wherein we step after a stranger march  
Upon her gentle bosom, and fill up  
Her enemies' ranks,—I must withdraw and weep

Upon the spot of this enforced cause,—  
To grace the gentry of a land remote,  
And follow unacquainted colours here ?  
What, here ? O nation, that thou couldst re-  
move !

That Neptune's arms, who clippeth thee about,  
Would bear thee from the knowledge of thyself,  
And grapple thee unto a pagan shore ;  
Where these two Christian armies might com-  
bine

The blood of malice in a vein of leazure,  
And not to spend it so unneighbourly !

*Lew.* A noble temper dost thou show in  
this ;

And great affections wrestling in thy bosom  
Doth make an earthquake of nobility.  
O, what a noble combat hast thou fought  
Between compulsion and a brave respect !  
Let me wipe off this honourable dew.  
That silverly doth progress on thy cheeks :  
My heart hath melted at a lady's tears,  
Being an ordinary inundation ;  
But this effusion of such manly drops,  
This shower, blown up by tempest of the soul,  
Startles mine eyes, and makes me more amazed  
Than had I seen the vaulty top of heaven  
Figured quite o'er with burning meteors.  
Lift up thy brow, renowned Salisbury,  
And with a great heart heave away this storm :  
Commend these waters to those baby eyes  
That never saw the giant world enraged ;

Nor met with fortune other than at feasts,  
Full of warm blood, of mirth, of gossiping.  
Come, come ; for thou shalt thrust thy hand as  
deep

Into the purse of rich prosperity  
As Lewis himself : so, nobles, shall you all,  
That knit your sinews to the strength of mine.  
And even there, methinks, an angel spake :

*Enter PANDULPH.*

Look, where the holy legate comes apace,  
To give us warrant from the hand of heaven,  
And on our actions set the name of right  
With holy breath.

*Pand.* Hail, noble prince of France !  
The next is this, King John hath reconciled  
Himself to Rome ; his spirit is come in,  
That so stood out against the holy church,  
The great metropolis and see of Rome :  
Therefore thy threatening colours now wind up ;  
And tame the savage spirit of wild war,  
That, like a lion foster'd up at hand,  
It may lie gently at the foot of peace,  
And be no further harmful than in show.

*Lew.* Your grace shall pardon me, I will not  
back :

I am too high-born to be propertied,  
To be a secondary at control,  
Or useful serving-man and instrument,  
To any sovereign state throughout the world.  
Your breath first kindled the dead coal of war  
Between this chaste kingdom and myself,  
And brought in matter that should feed the  
fire ;

And now 'tis far too huge to be blown out  
With that same weak wind which enkindled it.  
You taught me how to know the face of right,  
Acquainted me with interest to this land,  
Yea, thrust this enterprise into my heart :  
And come ye now to tell me John hath made  
His peace with Rome ? What is that peace  
to me ?

I, by the honour of my marriage bed,  
After young Arthur, claim this land for mine :  
And, now it is half-conquer'd, must I back  
Because that John hath made his peace with  
Rome ?

Am I Rome's slave ? What penny hath Rome  
borne,

What men provided, what munition sent,  
To underprop this action ? Is't not I  
That undergo this charge ? who else but I,  
And such as to my claim are liable,  
Sweat in this business and maintain this war ?  
Have I not heard these islanders shout out  
'Vive le roi !' as I have bank'd their towns ?  
Have I not here the best cards for the game,  
To win this easy match play'd for a crown ?  
And shall I now give o'er the yielded net ?  
No, no, on my soul, it never shall be said.

*Pand.* You look but on the outside of this  
work.

*Lew.* Outside or inside, I will not return  
Till my attempt so much be glorified  
As to my ample hope was promised  
Before I drew this gallant head of war,  
And cul'd these fiery spirits from the world,  
To outlook conquest and to win renown

Even in the jaws of danger and of death.

[*Trumpet sounds.*  
What lusty trumpet thus doth summon us?

*Enter the BASTARD, attended.*

*Bast.* According to the fair play of the world,  
Let me have audience; I am sent to speak:  
My holy lord of Milan, from the king 100  
I come, to learn how you have dealt for him;  
And, as you answer, I do know the scope  
And warrant limited unto my tongue.

*Prind.* The Dauphin is too wilful-opposite,  
And will not temporize with my entreaties;  
He flatteringly says he'll not lay down his arms.

*Bast.* By all the blood that ever fury  
breathed,  
The youth says well. Now hear our English  
king:

For thus his royalty doth speak in me.  
He is prepared, and reason too he should: 13  
This apish and unmanly approach,  
This harness'd masque and unadvised revel,  
This unhair'd sauciness and boyish troop,  
The king doth smile at; and is well prepared  
To whip this dwarfish war, these pigmy arms,  
From out the circle of his territories.  
That hand which had the strength, even at your  
door,

To cudgel you and make you take the hatch,  
To dive like buckets in concealed wells,  
To crouch in litter of your stable planks, 140  
To lie like pawns lock'd up in chests and trunks,  
To hug with swine, to seek sweet safety out  
In vaults and prisons, and to thrill and shake  
Even at the crying of your nation's crow,  
Thinking his voice an armed Englishman;  
Shall that victorious hand be feeble here,  
That in your chambers gave you chastisement:  
No: know the gallant monarch is in arms  
And like an eagle o'er his airy towers,  
To some annoyance that comes near his nest.  
And you degenerate, you ingrate revolts, 151  
You bloody Neroes, ripping up the womb  
Of your dear mother England, blush for shame;  
For your own ladies and pale-visaged maids  
Like Amazons come tripping after drums,  
Their thimbles into armed gauntlets change,  
Their needles to lances, and their gentle hearts  
To fierce and bloody inclination.

*Lew.* There end thy brave, and turn thy face  
in peace;  
We grant thou canst outscold us: fare thee well  
We hold our time too precious to be spent 16  
With such a brabber.

*Pand.* Give me leave to speak  
*Bast.* No, I will speak.

*Lew.* We will attend to neither.  
Strike up the drums; and let the tongue of war  
Reel for our interest and our being here.

*Bast.* Indeed, your drums, being beaten, will  
cry out:

And so shall you, being beaten: do but start  
An echo with the clamour of thy drum,  
And even at hand a drum is ready braced  
That shall reverberate all as loud as thine; 170  
Sound but another, and another shall  
As loud as thine rattle the welkin's ear

And mock the deep-mouth'd thunder: for at  
hand,

Not trusting to this halting legate here,  
Whom he hath used rather for sport than need,  
- warlike John; and in his forehead sits  
bare-ribb'd death, whose office is this day  
to feast upon whole thousands of the French.  
*Lew.* Strike up your drums, to find this  
danger out.

*Bast.* And thou shalt find it, Dauphin, do  
not doubt. [*Exeunt.* 180

SCENE III. *The field of battle.*

*Alarums. Enter KING JOHN and HUBERT.*

*K. John.* How goes the day with us? O,  
tell me, Hubert.

*Hub.* Badly, I fear. How fares your majesty?  
*K. John.* This fever, that hath troubled me  
so long,

Lies heavy on me; O, my heart is sick!

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My lord, your valiant kinsman, Faul-  
conbridge,  
Desires your majesty to leave the field  
And send him word by me which way you go.

*K. John.* Tell him, toward Swinstead, to the  
abbey there.

*Mess.* Be of good comfort; for the great  
supply  
That was expected by the Dauphin here, 10  
Are wreck'd three nights ago on Goodwin  
Sands.

This news was brought to Richard but even  
now:

The French fight coldly, and retire themselves.  
*K. John.* Ay me! this tyrant fever burns  
me up.

And will not let me welcome this good news.  
Set on toward Swinstead: to my litter straight;  
Weakness possesseth me, and I am faint. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV. *Another part of the field.*

*Enter SALISBURY, PEMBROKE, and BIGOT.*

*Sal.* I did not think the king so stored with  
friends.

*Pem.* Up once again; put spirit in the  
French:

If they miscarry, we miscarry too.

*Sal.* That misbegotten devil, Faulconbridge,  
In spite of spite, alone upholds the day.

*Pem.* They say King John sore sick hath  
left the field.

*Enter MELUN, wounded.*

*Mel.* Lead me to the revolts of England  
here.

*Sal.* When we were happy we had other  
names.

*Pem.* It is the Count Melun.

*Sal.* Wounded to death.

*Mel.* Fly, noble English, you are bought  
and sold;

Unthread the rude eye of rebellion  
And welcome home again discarded faith.

Seek out King John and fall before his feet;  
For if the French be lords of this loud day,  
He means to recompense the pains you take  
By cutting off your heads: thus hath he sworn  
And I with him, and many more with me,  
Upon the altar at Saint Edmundsbury:  
Even on that altar where we swore to you  
Dear amity and everlasting love.

*Sal.* May this be possible? may this be true? <sup>20</sup>

*Met.* Have I not hideous death within my  
view,

Retaining but a quantity of life,  
Which bleeds away, even as a form of wax  
Resolveth from his figure 'gainst the fire?  
What in the world should make me now deceive,  
Since I must lose the use of all deceit?  
Why should I then be false, since it is true  
That I must die here and live hence by truth?  
I say again, if Lewis do win the day, <sup>30</sup>  
He is forsworn, if e'er those eyes of yours  
Behold another day break in the east:  
But even this night, whose black contagious  
breath

Already smokes about the burning crest  
Of the old, feeble and day-weary'd sun,  
Even this ill night, your breathing shall expire,  
Paying the fine of rated treachery,  
Even with a treacherous fine of all your lives,  
If Lewis by your assistance win the day.  
Commend me to one Hubert with your king: <sup>40</sup>  
The love of him, and this respect besides,  
For that my grandsire was an Englishman,  
Awakes my conscience to confess all this.  
In lieu whereof, I pray you, bear me hence  
From forth the noise and rumour of the field,  
Where I may think the remnant of my thoughts  
In peace, and part this body and my soul  
With contemplation and devout desires.

*Sal.* We do believe thee: and beswore thy  
soul

But I do love the favour and the form  
Of this most fair occasion, by the which <sup>50</sup>  
We will untread the steps of damned flight,  
And like a lated and retired fool,  
Leaving our rankness and irregular course,  
Stoop low within those bounds we have erlook'd  
And calmly run on in obedience  
Even to our ocean, to our great King John.  
My arm shall give thee help to bear thee hence;  
For I do see the cruel pangs of death  
Right in thine eye. Away, my friends! New  
flight; <sup>60</sup>  
And happy newness, that intends old right.

[*Exeunt, leading off Melun.*]

BOENE V. *The French camp.*

*Enter LEWIS and his train.*

*Lew.* The sun of heaven methought was  
loath to set,  
But stay'd and made the western welkin blush,  
When English measure backward their own  
ground

In saint's retina. O, bravely came we off,  
When with a volley of our needles shot,  
After such bloody toil, we bid good night;  
And wound our tattering colours clearly up,  
Lost in the field, and almost lords of it!

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Where is my prince, the Dauphin?

*Lew.* Here: what news?

*Mess.* The Count Melun is slain; the English  
lords <sup>20</sup>

By his persuasion are again fall'n off,  
And your supply, which you have wish'd so  
long,

Are cast away and sunk on Goodwin Sands.

*Lew.* Ah, foul shrewd news! beswore thy  
very heart!

I did not think to be so sad to-night  
As this hath made me. Who was he that said

King John did fly an hour or two before  
The stumbling night did part our weary powers?

*Mess.* Whoever spoke it, it is true, my lord.

*Lew.* Well: keep good quarter and good  
care to-night: <sup>30</sup>

The day shall not be up so soon as I,  
To try the fair adventure of to-morrow.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI. *An open place in the neighbour-  
hood of Swinestead Abbey.*

*Enter the BASTARD and HUBERT, severally.*

*Hub.* Who's there! speak, ho! speak quickly,  
or I shoot.

*Bast.* A friend. What art thou?

*Hub.* Of the part of England.

*Bast.* Whither dost thou go?

*Hub.* What's that to thee? why may not I  
demand

Of thine affairs, as well as thou of mine?

*Bast.* Hubert, I think!

*Hub.* Thou hast a perfect thought:  
I will upon all hazards well believe

Thou art my friend, that know'st my tongue so  
well.

What art thou?

*Bast.* Who thou wilt: and if thou please,  
Thou mayst befriend me so much as to think <sup>20</sup>

I come one way of the Plantagenets.

*Hub.* Unkind remembrance! thou and eye-  
less night

Have done me shame: brave soldier, pardon me,  
That any accent breaking from thy tongue

Should scape the true acquaintance of mine  
ear.

*Bast.* Come, come; sans compliment, what  
news abroad?

*Hub.* Why, here walk I in the black brow  
of night,

To find you out.

*Bast.* Brief, then; and what's the news?

*Hub.* O, my sweet sir, news sitting to the  
night,

Black, fearful, comfortless and horrible.

*Bast.* Show me the very wound of this ill  
news:

I am no woman, I'll not swoon at it.

*Hub.* The king, I fear, is poison'd by a monk:

I left him almost speechless; and broke out

To acquaint you with this evil, that you might

The better arm you to the sudden time,

Than if you had at leisure known of this.



*Bast.* How did he take it! who did taste to him!

*Hub.* A monk, I tell you; a resolved villain, Whose bowels suddenly burst out: the king so Yet speaks and peradventure may recover.

*Bast.* Who didst thou leave to tend his majesty?

*Hub.* Why, know you not? the lords are all come back.

And brought Prince Henry in their company; At whose request the king hath pardon'd them, And they are all about his majesty.

*Bast.* Withhold thine indignation, mighty heaven,

And tempt us not to hear above our power! I'll tell thee, Hubert, half my power this night,

Passing these flats, are taken by the tide: 40 These Lincoln Washes have devoured them; Myself, well mounted, hardly have escaped.

Away before: conduct me to the king; I doubt he will be dead ere I come.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VII. *The orchard in Swinstead Abbey.*

*Enter Prince HENRY, SALISBURY, and BIGOT.*

*P. Hen.* It is too late: the life of all his blood

Is touch'd corruptibly, and his pure brain, Which some suppose the soul's frail dwelling-house

Doth by the idle comments that it makes Foretell the ending of mortality.

*Enter PEMBROKE.*

*Pem.* His highness yet doth speak, and holds belief

That, being brought into the open air, It would allay the burning quality

Of that fell poison which assaileth him.

*P. Hen.* Let him be brought into the orchard here. 10

Doth he still rage? [*Exit Bigot.*]

*Pem.* He is more patient Than when you left him; even now he sung.

*P. Hen.* O vanity of sickness! fierce extremes

In their continuance will not feel themselves, Death, having prey'd upon the outward parts,

Leaves them invisible, and his siege is now Against the mind, the which he pricks and wounds

With many legions of strange fantasies, Which, in their throng and press to that last hold,

Confound themselves. 'Tis strange that death should sing. 20

I am the cygnet to this pale faint swan, Who chants a doleful hymn to his own death,

And from the organ-pipe of frailty sings His soul and body to their lasting rest.

*Sol.* Be of good comfort, prince; for you are born

To set a form upon that indigent Which he hath left so shapeless and so rude.

*Enter Attendants, and BIGOT, carrying KING JOHN in a chair.*

*K. John.* Ay, marry, now my soul hath elbow-room;

It would not out at windows nor at dooms. There is so hot a summer in my bosom, 30

That all my bowels crumble up to dust: I am a scribbled form, drawn with a pen

Upon a parchment, and against this fire Do I shrink up.

*P. Hen.* How fares your majesty?

*K. John.* Poison'd,—ill fare—dead, foomok, cast off:

And none of you will bid the winter come To thrust his icy fingers in my maw,

Nor let my kingdom's rivers take their course Through my burn'd bosom, nor entreat the north

To make his bleak winds kiss my parched lips And comfort me with cold. I do not ask you much, 41

I beg cold comfort; and you are so strait And so ingrateful, you deny me that.

*P. Hen.* O that there were some virtue in my tears,

That might relieve you!

*K. John.* The salt in them is hot. Within me is a hell; and there the poison

Is as a fiend confined to tyrannize On unreprieveable condemned blood.

*Enter the BASTARD.*

*Bast.* O, I am scalded with my violent motion,

And spleen of speed to see your majesty! 50

*K. John.* O cousin, thou art come to set mine eye:

The tackle of my heart is crack'd and burn'd, And all the shrouds wherewith my life should sail

Are turned to one thread, one little hair: My heart hath one poor string to stay it by,

Which holds but till thy news be uttered; And then all this thou seest is but a clod

And module of confounded royalty.

*Bast.* The Dauphin is preparing hitherward, Where heaven He knows how we shall answer him; 60

For in a night the best part of my power, As I upon advantage did remove,

Were in the Washes all unwarily Devoured by the unexpected flood.

[*The king dies.*]

*Sol.* You breathe these dead news in an dead ear.

My liege! my lord! but now a king, now thus

*P. Hen.* Even so must I run on, and even so stop.

What surety of the world, what hope, what stay, When this was now a king, and now is clay?

*Bast.* Art thou gone so! I do but stay behind 70

To do the office for thee of revenge, And then my soul shall wait on thee to heaven,

As it on earth hath been thy servant still. Now, now, you stars that move in your right spheres,

Where be your powers? show now your intended faith,

And instantly return with me again,  
To push destruction and perpetual shame  
Out of the weak door of our fainting land.  
Straight let us seek, or straight we shall be sought;

The Dauphin rages at our very heels. 80  
*Sal.* It seems you know not, then, so much as we:

The Cardinal Pandulph is within at rest,  
Who half an hour since came from the Dauphin,  
And brings from him such offers of our peace  
As we with honour and respect may take,  
With purpose presently to leave this war.

*Bast.* He will the rather do it when he sees  
Ourselves well sinewed to our defence.

*Sal.* Nay, it is in a manner done already;  
For many carriages he hath dispatch'd 80  
To the sea-side, and put his cause and quarrel  
To the disposing of the cardinal:

With whom yourself, myself and other lords,  
If you think meet, this afternoon will post  
To consummate this business happily.

*Bast.* Let it be so: and you, my noble prince,  
With other princes that may best be spared,

Shall wait upon your father's funeral.

*P. Hen.* At Worcester must his body be interr'd;

For so he will'd it.

*Bast.* Thither shall it thither shall it thither  
And happily may your sweet self put on  
The lineal state and glory of the land!

To whom, with all submission, on my knee  
I do bequeath my faithful services  
And true subjection everlastingly.

*Sal.* And the like tender of our love we make,

To rest without a spot for evermore.

*P. Hen.* I have a kind soul that would give you thanks

And knows not how to do it but with tears.

*Bast.* O, let us pay the time but needful woe,  
Since it hath been beforehand with our griefs.  
This England never did, nor never shall,  
Lie at the proud foot of a conqueror,  
But when it first did help to wound itself.

Now these her princes are come home again,  
Come the three corners of the world in arms,  
And we shall shock them. Nought shall make us rue,

If England to itself do rest but true. [Exeunt]

# THE TRAGEDY OF KING RICHARD II

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

KING RICHARD the Second.  
JOHN OF GAUNT, Duke  
of Lancaster, } uncles to the King.  
EDMUND OF LANGLEY, Duke of York,  
HENRY, surnamed BOLINGBROKE, Duke of  
Hereford, son to John of Gaunt; after-  
wards KING HENRY IV.  
DUKE OF AUMERLE, son to the Duke of  
York.  
THOMAS MOWBRAY, Duke of Norfolk.  
DUKE OF SURREY.  
EARL OF SALISBURY.  
LORD BERKELEY.  
BUNNY, }  
BAGOT, } servants to King Richard.  
GREEN, }  
EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND.  
HENRY PERCY, surnamed Hotspur, his son.

LORD ROSS.  
LORD WILLOUGHBY.  
LORD FITZWATER.  
Bishop of Carlisle.  
Abbot of Westminster.  
Lord Marshal.  
SIR STEPHEN SCROOP.  
SIR PIERCE of Exton.  
Captain of a band of Welshmen.

QUEEN to King Richard.  
DUCHESS OF YORK.  
DUCHESS OF GLOUCESTER.  
Lady attending on the Queen.

Lords, Herald, Officers, Soldiers, two Garden-  
ers, Keeper, Messenger, Groom, and other  
Attendants.

SCENE: *England and Wales.*

## ACT I.

SCENE I. *London. KING RICHARD'S palace.*

*Enter KING RICHARD, JOHN OF GAUNT, with  
other Nobles and Attendants.*

*K. Rich.* Old John of Gaunt, time-honour'd  
Lancaster,

Hast thou, according to thy oath and band,  
Brought hither Henry Hereford thy bold son,  
Here to make good the boisterous late appeal,  
Which then our leisure would not let us hear,  
Against the Duke of Norfolk, Thomas Mow-  
bray?

*Gaunt.* I have, my liege.

*K. Rich.* Tell me, moreover, hast thou  
sounded him,

If he appeal the duke on ancient malice;  
Is worthily, as a good subject should, }  
In some known ground of treachery in him? }  
*Gaunt.* As near as I could sift him on that }  
argument, }  
In some apparent danger seen in him }

And at your highness, no inveterate malice.

*K. Rich.* Then call them to our presence;  
face to face,

And frowning brow to brow, ourselves will hear  
The accuser and the accused freely speak:  
High-stomach'd are they both, and full of ire,  
In rage deaf as the sea, hasty as fire.

*Enter BOLINGBROKE and MOWBRAY.*

*Boling.* Many years of happy days befall so  
My gracious sovereign, my most loving liege!  
*Mow.* Each day still better other's happiness;  
Until the heavens, envying earth's good hap,  
Add an immortal title to your crown!

*K. Rich.* We thank you both: yet one but  
flatters us,

As well appeareth by the cause you come;  
Namely, to appeal each other of high treason.  
Cousin of Hereford, what dost thou object  
Against the Duke of Norfolk, Thomas Mow-  
bray?

*Boling.* First, heaven be the record to my  
speech! }  
In the devotion of a subject's love,

Tendering the precious safety of my prince,  
And free from other misbegotten hate,  
(Come I appellant to this princely presence.  
Now, Thomas Mowbray, do I turn to thee,  
And mark my greeting well; for what I speak  
My body shall make good upon this earth,  
Or my divine soul answer it in heaven.  
Thou art a traitor and a miscreant,  
Too good to be so and too bad to live, }  
Since the more fair and crystal is the sky, }  
The uglier seem the clouds that in it fly. }  
(Once more, the more to aggravate the note,  
With a foul traitor's name stuff I thy throat;

And wish, so please my sovereign, ere I move,  
What my tongue speaks my right drawn sword  
may prove.

*Mow.* Let not my cold words here accuse  
my zeal:

'Tis not the trial of a woman's war,  
The bitter clamour of two eager tongues,  
Can arbitrate this cause betwixt us twain: 50  
The blood is hot that must be cool'd for this:  
Yet can I not of such tame patience boast  
As to be hush'd and nought at all to say:  
First, the fair reverence of your highness  
curbs me

From giving reins and spurs to my free speech;  
Which else would post until it had return'd  
These terms of treason doubled down his throat.  
Setting aside his high blood's royalty,  
And let him be no kinsman to my liege,  
I do defy him, and I spit at him; 60  
Call him a slanderous coward and a villain:  
Which to maintain I would allow him odds,  
And meet him, were I tied to run afoot  
Even to the frozen ridges of the Alps,  
Or any other ground inhabitable,  
Where ever Englishman durst set his foot.  
Mean time let this defend my loyalty,  
By all his hopes, most falsely doth he lie.

*Boling.* Pale trembling coward, there I throw  
my rage,

Disclaiming here the kindred of the king, 70  
And lay aside my high blood's royalty,  
Which fear, not reverence, makes thee to except.  
If guilty dread have left thee so much strength  
As to take up mine honour's pawn, then stoop:  
By that and all the rites of knighthood else,  
Will I make good against thee, arm to arm,  
What I have spoke, or thou canst worse devise.

*Mow.* I take it up; and by that sword I  
swear,

Which gently laid my knighthood on my  
shoulder,  
I'll answer thee in any fair degree. 80  
Or chivalrous design of knightly trial:  
And when I mount, alive may I not light,  
If I be traitor or unjustly fight!

*K. Rich.* What doth our cousin lay to Mow-  
bray's charge?

It must be great that can inherit us  
So much as of a thought of ill in him.

*Boling.* Look, what I speak, my life shall  
prove it true:

That Mowbray hath received eight thousand  
nobles

In name of lendings for your highness' soldiers,  
The which he hath detain'd for lewd employ-  
ments, 90

Like a false traitor and injurious villain.  
Besides I say and will in battle prove,  
Or here or elsewhere to the furthest verge  
That ever was survey'd by English eye,  
That all the treasons for these eighteen years  
Complotted and contrived in this land  
Fetch from false Mowbray their first head and  
spring.

Further I say and further will maintain  
Upon his life to make all this good.  
That I will plot the Duke of Gloucester's death,  
And his soon-believing adherers, 101

And consequently, like a traitor coward,  
Sluic'd out his innocent soul through streams  
of blood:

Which blood, like sacrificing Abel's, cries,  
Even from the tongueless caverns of the earth,  
To me for justice and rough chastisement;  
And, by the glorious worth of my decent,  
This arm shall do it, or this life be spent.

*K. Rich.* How high a pitch his resolution  
soars!

Thomas of Norfolk, what say'st thou to this?

*Mow.* O, let my sovereign turn away his  
face 111

And bid his ears a little while be deaf,  
Till I have told this slander of his blood:  
How God and good men hate so foul a liar.

*K. Rich.* Mowbray, impartial are our eyes  
and ears:

Were he my brother, nay, my kingdom's heir,  
As he is but my father's brother's son,  
Now, by my sceptre's awe, I make a vow,  
Such neighbour nearness to our sacred blood  
Should nothing privilege him, nor partialize  
The unstooping firmness of my upright soul:  
He is our subject, Mowbray; so art thou:  
Free speech and fearless I to thee allow.

*Mow.* Then, Bolingbroke, as low as to thy  
heart,

Through the false passage of thy throat, thou  
liest.

Three parts of that receipt I had for Calais  
Disburs'd I duly to his highness' soldiers;  
The other part reserved I by consent,  
For that my sovereign liege was in my debt  
Upon remainder of a dear account,  
Since last I went to France to fetch his queen:  
Now swallow down that lie. For Gloucester's  
death,

I slew him not; but to my own disgrace  
Neglected my sworn duty in that case.  
For you, my noble Lord of Lancaster,  
The honourable father to my foe,  
Once did I lay an ambush for your life,  
A trespass that doth vex my grieved soul;  
But ere I last received the sacrament  
I did confess it, and exactly begg'd

Your grace's pardon, and I hope I had it.  
This is my fault: as for the rest appeal'd,  
It issues from the rancour of a villain,  
A recreant and most degenerate traitor:  
Which in myself I boldly will defend;  
And interchangeably hurl down my gage  
Upon this overweening traitor's foot,  
To prove myself a loyal gentleman.  
Even in the best blood chamber'd in his bosom.  
In haste whereof, most heartily I pray  
Your highness to assign our trial day.

*K. Rich.* Wrath-kindled gentlemen, be ruled  
by me:

Let's purge this choler without letting blood:  
This we prescribe, though no physician;  
Deep malice makes too deep incision:  
Forget, forgive; conclude and be agreed;  
Our doctors say this is no month to bleed.  
Good uncle, let this end where it began;  
We'll calm the Duke of Norfolk, you your son.  
Gaunt, To be a make-peace shall become  
my age: 160

Throw down, my son, the Duke of Norfolk's

*K. Rich.* And, Norfolk, throw down his.  
*Gaunt.* When, Harry, when?  
Obedience bids I should not bid again.

*K. Rich.* Norfolk, throw down, we bid;  
there is no bout.

*Mow.* Myself I throw, dread sovereign, at  
thy foot.

My life thou shalt command, but not my shame:  
The one my duty owes; but my fair name,  
Despite of death that lives upon my grave,  
To dark dishonour's use thou shalt not have.  
I am disgraced, impeach'd and baffled here, 170  
Pierced to the soul with slander's venom'd spear,  
The which no balm can cure but his heart-blood  
Which breathed this poison.

*K. Rich.* Rage must be withstood:  
Give me his page: lions make leopards tame.

*Mow.* Yea, but not change his spots: take  
but my shame.

And I resign my gage. My dear dear lord,  
The purest treasure mortal times afford  
Is spotless reputation: that away,  
Men are but gilded loam or painted clay.

A jewel in a ten-times-harr'd-up chest 180  
Is a bold spirit in a loyal breast.

Mine honour is my life; both grow in one;  
Take honour from me, and my life is done:

Then, dear my liege, mine honour let me try;  
In that I live and for that will I die.

*K. Rich.* Cousin, throw up your gage; do  
you begin.

*Boling.* O, God defend my soul from such  
deep sin!

Shall I seem crest-fall'n in my father's sight?  
Or with pale beggar-fear impeach my bright  
Before this out-dared dastard? Ere my tongue  
Shall wound my honour with such feeble wrong.  
Or sound so base a parle, my teeth shall tear  
The slavish motive of recanting fear,  
And spit it bleeding in his high disgrace,  
Where shame doth harbour, even in Mowbray's

face. [*Exit Gaunt.*]

*K. Rich.* We were not born to sue, but to  
command;

Which since we cannot do to make you friends,  
Be ready, as your lives shall answer it,  
At Coventry, upon Saint Lambert's day: 199  
There shall your sword and lances arbitrate  
The swelling difference of your settled hate:

Once we can not alone you, we shall see  
Justice design the victor's chivalry.

And marshal, command our officers at arms  
Be ready to direct these home alarms. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *The Duke of Lancaster's palace.*

*Enter JOHN OF GAUNT with the DUCHESSES  
OF GLOUCESTER.*

*Gaunt.* Alas, the part I had in Woodstock's

blood  
both more solicit me than your exclamations,  
To stir against the butchers of his life!

But since correction lieth in those hands  
Which made the fault that we cannot correct,  
Put we our quarrel to the will of heaven:

Who, when they see the hour ripe on earth,

Will rain hot vengeance on offenders' heads.

*Duch.* Finds brotherhood in thee no sharper  
spur?

Hath love in thy old blood no living fire? 20

Edward's seven sons, whereof thyself art one,  
Were as seven vials of his sacred blood,

Or seven fair branches springing from one root:  
Some of those seven are dried by nature's

course,  
Some of those branches by the Destinies cut;  
But Thomas, my dear lord, my life, my Glou-

cester,  
One vial full of Edward's sacred blood,  
(One flourishing branch of his most royal root,

Is crack'd, and all the precious liquor spilt,  
Is hack'd down, and his summer leaves all

faded, 20  
By envy's hand and murder's bloody axe.

Ah, Gaunt, his blood was thine! that bed, that  
womb,

That metal, that self mould, that fashion'd thee  
Made him a man; and though thou livest and

breathest,  
Yet art thou slain in him: thou dost consent  
In some large measure to thy father's death,

In that thou seest thy wretched brother die,  
Who was the model of thy father's life.

Call it not patience, Gaunt; it is despair:  
In suffering thus thy brother to be slaughter'd,

Thou showest the naked pathway to thy life, 32  
Teaching stern murder how to butcher thee:

That which in mean men we impute patience  
Is pale cold cowardice in noble breasts.

What shall I say! to safeguard thine own life,  
The best way is to vengeance my Gloucester's death.

*Gaunt.* God's is the quarrel; for God's sub-

stitute,  
His deputy anointed in His sight,  
Hath caused his death: the which if wrongfully,

Let heaven revenge; for I may never lift 40  
An angry arm against His minister.

*Duch.* Where then, alas, may I complain  
myself?

*Gaunt.* To God, the widow's champion and  
defence.

*Duch.* Why, then, I will. Farewell, old  
Gaunt.

Thou goest to Coventry, there to behold  
Our cousin Hereford and fell Mowbray fight;

O, sit my husband's wrongs on Hereford's  
spear,

That it may enter butcher Mowbray's breast!  
Or, if misfortune miss the first career,

Be Mowbray's mine so heavy in his bosom, 50  
That they may break his foaming courser's  
back.

And throw the rider headlong in the lists,  
A catlike recreant to my cousin Hereford!

Farewell, old Gaunt: thy sometimes brother's  
wife

With her companion grief must end her life.

*Gaunt.* Stay, farewell! I must to Coventry:  
As much good stay with thee as go with me!

*Duch.* Yet one word more: grief burns here,  
where it falls,

Not with the                      but weight;  
I take my leave                      have begun.

For                      canst not when it seemeth done.

Commend me to thy brother, Edmund York.  
Lo, this is all—may, yet depart not so;  
Though this be all, do not so quickly go;  
I shall remember more. Bid him—ah, what I—  
With all good speed at Plasby visit me.  
Alack, and what shall good old York there see  
But empty lodgings and unfurnish'd walls,  
Unpeopled offices, untrodden stones!  
And what hear there for welcome but my  
groans!  
Therefore commend me; let him not come  
there,  
To seek out sorrow that dwells every where.  
Desolate, desolate, will I hence and die:  
The last leave of thee takes my weeping eye.

[*Exit*].SCENE III. *The lists at Coventry.*

*Enter the Lord Marshal and the DUKE OF AUMERLE.*

*Mar.* My Lord Aumerle, is Harry Hereford arm'd?

*Aum.* Yea, at all points; and longs to enter in.

*Mar.* The Duke of Norfolk, sprightly and bold,  
Stays but the summons of the appellant's trumpet.

*Aum.* Why, then, the champions are prepared, and stay  
For nothing but his majesty's approach.

*The trumpets sound, and the KING enters with his nobles, GAUNT, BUNNY, BAGOT, GREEN, and others. When they are set, enter MOWBRAY in arms, defendant, with a Herald.*

*K. Rich.* Marshal, demand of yonder champion

The cause of his arrival here in arms:  
Ask him his name and orderly proceed  
To swear him in the justice of his cause.

*Mar.* In God's name and the king's, may who thou art

And why thou comest thus knightly clad in arms,

Against what man thou comest, and what thy quarrel:

Speak truly, on thy knighthood and thy oath;  
As so defend thee heaven and thy valour!

*Mow.* My name is Thomas Mowbray, Duke of Norfolk;

Who hither come engaged by my oath—  
Which God defend a knight should violate!—

Both to defend my loyalty and truth  
To God, my king and my succeeding issue,

Against the Duke of Hereford that appeals me;  
And, by the grace of God and this mine arm,

To prove him, in defending of myself,  
A traitor to my God, my king, and me;

And as I truly fight, defend me heaven!

*The trumpets sound. Enter BOLINGBROKE, appellant, in armour, with a Herald.*

*K. Rich.* Marshal, ask yonder knight in

And why he cometh hither

Thus plated in habiliments of war,  
And formally, according to our law,  
Depose him in the justice of his cause.

*Mar.* What is thy name! and wherefore comest thou hither,

Before King Richard in his royal lists!  
Against whom comest thou? and what's thy quarrel?

Speak like a true knight, so defend thee heaven!

*Boling.* Harry of Hereford, Lancaster and Derby

Am I; who ready here do stand in arms,  
To prove, by God's grace and my body's valour,

In lists, on Thomas Mowbray, Duke of Norfolk,  
That he is a traitor, foul and dangerous;

To God of heaven, King Richard and to me;  
And as I truly fight, defend me heaven!

*Mar.* On pain of death, no person be bold

Or daring-hardy as to touch the lists,  
Except the marshal and such officers

Appointed to direct these fair designs.

*Boling.* Lord marshal, let me kiss my sovereign's hand,

And bow my knee before his majesty:  
For Mowbray and myself are like two men

That vow a long and weary pilgrimage;  
Then let us take a ceremonious leave

And loving farewell of our several friends.

*Mar.* The appellant in all duty greets you:  
And craves to kiss your hand and take his leave.

*K. Rich.* We will descend and fold him in our arms.

Cousin of Hereford, as thy cause is right,  
So be thy fortune in this royal fight!

Farewell, my blood; which if to day thou shed,  
Lament we may, but not revenge thee dead.

*Boling.* O, let no noble eye profane a war  
For me, if I be gored with Mowbray's spear:

As confident as is the falcon's flight  
Against a bird, do I with Mowbray fight.

My loving lord, I take my leave of you;  
Of you, my noble cousin, Lord Aumerle;

Not sick, although I have to do with death,  
But lusty, young, and cheerily drawing breath.

I, as at English feasts, so I regret  
The daintiest last, to make the end most sweet:

O thou, the earthly author of my blood,  
Whose youthful spirit, in me regenerate,

Doth with a twofold vigour lift me up  
To reach at victory above my head,

Add proof unto mine armour with thy prayers;  
And with thy blessings steel my lance's point,

That it may enter Mowbray's waxen coat,  
And furnish new the name of John a Gaunt,

Even in the lusty haughty of his son.

*Gaunt.* God in thy good cause make thee prosperous!

Be swift like lightning in the execution;  
And let thy blows, doubly redoubled,

Fall like amazing thunder on the onset  
Of thy adverse pernicious enemy:

Rouse up thy youthful blood, be valiant and live.

*Boling.* Mine innocency and Saint George to thrive!

*Mow.* However God or fortune cast my lot,  
These lives or dies, true to King Richard's  
throne,

A loyal, just and upright gentleman:  
Never did captive with a freer heart  
Cast off his chains of bondage and embrace  
His golden uncontrol'd enfranchisement,  
More than my dancing soul doth celebrate  
This feast of battle with mine adversary.  
Most mighty liege, and my companion peers,  
Take from my mouth the wish of happy years:  
As gentle and as jocund as to jest  
Go I to fight: truth hath a quiet breast.

*K. Rich.* Farewell, my lord: securely I espy  
Virtue with valour couched in thine eye.  
Order the trial, marshal, and begin.

*Mar. Harry of Hereford, Lancaster and*  
*Derby,* Receive thy lance; and God defend the right!

*Boling.* Strong as a tower in hope, I cry  
amen.

*Mar.* Go bear this lance to Thomas, Duke  
of Norfolk.

*First Her. Harry of Hereford, Lancaster*  
*and Derby,*

Stands here for God, his sovereign and himself,  
On pain to be found false and recreant,  
To prove the Duke of Norfolk, Thomas Mow-  
bray,

A traitor to his God, his king and him;  
And dares him to set forward to the fight.

*Sec. Her.* Here standeth Thomas Mowbray,  
Duke of Norfolk,

On pain to be found false and recreant,  
Both to defend himself and to approve  
Henry of Hereford, Lancaster, and Derby,  
To God, his sovereign and to him disloyal;  
Courageously and with a free desire  
Attending but the signal to begin.

*Mar.* Sound, trumpets; and set forward,  
combatants.

*[A charge sounded.]*

*K. Rich.* Let them lay by their helmets and  
their spears,

And both return back to their chairs again: 100  
Withdraw with us: and let the trumpets sound  
While we return these dukes what we decree.

*[A long flourish.]*

Draw near,  
And list what with our council we have done.

For that our kingdom's earth should not be  
soil'd

With that dear blood which it hath fostered;  
And for our eyes do hate the dire aspect

Of civil wounds plough'd up with neighbour's  
sword;

And for we think the eagle-winged pride  
Of sky-ascending and ambitious thoughts, 130

With rival-hating envy, set on you  
To wake our peace, which in our country's  
cradle

Draws the sweet infant breath of gentle sleep;  
Which so roused up with boisterous untuned  
drums,

With harsh-responding trumpets' dreadful bray,  
And grating shock of wrathful iron arms,

Might from our quiet confines fright fair peace  
And make us waste even in our kindred's blood;

Therefore, we banish you our territories:  
You, cousin Hereford, upon pain of life, 140

Till twice five summers have enrich'd our fields  
Shall not regret our fair dominions,

But tread the stranger paths of banishment.

*Boling.* Your will be done: this must my  
comfort be,

That sun that warms you here shall shine  
on me;

And those his golden beams to you here lent  
Shall point on me and gild my banishment.

*K. Rich.* Norfolk, for thee remains a heavier  
doom,

Which I with some unwillingness pronounce:  
The sly slow hours shall not determinate 150

The dateless limit of thy dear exile:  
The hopeless word of 'never to return'

Breathes I against thee, upon pain of life.

*Mow.* A heavy sentence, my most sovereign  
liege,

And all unlook'd for from your highness' mouth:  
A dearer merit, not so deep a ruin

As to be cast forth in the common air,  
Have I deserved at your highness' hands.

The language I have learn'd these forty years,  
My native English, now I must forego: 160

And now my tongue's use is to me no more  
Than an unstringed viol or a harp,

Or like a cunning instrument cased up,  
Or, being open, put into his hands

That knows no touch to tune the harmony:  
Within my mouth you have engoird my  
tongue,

Doubly portcullis'd with my teeth and lips;  
And dull unfeeling barren ignorance

Is made my gaoler to attend on me.  
I am too old to fawn upon a nurse, 170

Too far in years to be a pupil now:  
What is thy sentence then but speechless death,

Which robs my tongue from breathing native  
breath?

*K. Rich.* It boots thee not to be compas-  
sionate:

After our sentence plaining comes too late.

*Mow.* Then thus I turn me from my country's  
light,

To dwell in solemn shades of endless night.

*K. Rich.* Return again, and take an oath  
with thee.

Lay on our royal sword your banish'd hands;  
Swear by the duty that you owe to God— 180

Our part therein we banish with yourselves—  
To keep the oath that we administer:

You never shall, so help you truth and God!  
Embrace each other's love in banishment;

Nor never look upon each other's face;  
Nor never write, regret, nor reconcile

This louring tempest of your home-bred hate;  
Nor never by advised purpose meet

To plot, contrive, or compass any ill  
Against us, our state, our subjects, or our land.

*Boling.* I swear.

*Mow.* And I, to keep all this.

*Boling.* Norfolk, so far as to mine enemy—  
By this time, had the king permitted us,

One of our peers had wander'd in the air,  
Banish'd this traitor equinox of our flesh.

As now our flesh is banish'd from this land:

Confess thy treasons ere thou fly the realm;  
Since thou hast far to go, bear not along  
The clogging burthen of a guilty soul.

*Moss.* No, Bolingbroke: if ever I were traitor,  
My name be blotted from the book of life,  
And I from heaven banish'd as from hence!  
But what thou art, God, thou, and I do know;  
And all too soon, I fear, the king shall rue.  
Farewell, my liege. Now no way can I stray;  
Save back to England, all the world's my way.

*Exe.*  
*K. Rich.* Uncle, even in the glasses of thine  
eyes

I see thy griev'd heart: thy sad aspect  
Hath from the number of his banish'd years  
Pluck'd four away. [*To Boling.*] Six frozen  
winters spent,

Return with welcome home from banishment.  
*Boling.* How long a time lies in one little  
word!

Four lagging winters and four wanton springs  
End in a word: such is the breath of kings.

*Gaunt.* I thank my liege, that in regard  
of me

He shortens four years of my son's exile:  
But little vantage shall I reap thereby;  
For, ere the six years that he hath to spend  
Can change their moons and bring their times  
about,

My oil-dried lamp and time-bewasted light  
Shall be extinct with age and endless night;  
My inch of taper will be burnt and done,  
And blindfold death not let me see my son.

*K. Rich.* Why, uncle, thou hast many years  
to live.

*Gaunt.* But not a minute, king, that thou  
canst give:

Shorten my days thou canst with sullen sorrow,  
And pluck nights from me, but not lend a  
morrow;

Thou canst help time to furrow me with age,  
But stop no wrinkle in his pilgrimage;  
Thy word is current with him for my death,  
But dead, thy kingdom cannot buy my breath.

*K. Rich.* Thy son is banish'd upon good  
advice.

Where'st thy tongue a party-verdict gave;  
Why at our justice seem'st thou then to lour?

*Gaunt.* Things sweet to taste prove in diges-  
tion sour.

You urged me as a judge; but I had rather  
You would have bid me argue like a father.  
O, had it been a stranger, not my child,  
To smooth his fault I should have been more  
ready.

A partial slander sought I to avoid,  
And in the sentence my own life destroy'd.  
Alas, I look'd when some of you should say,  
I was too strict to make mine own away;  
But you gave leave to my unwilling tongue  
Against my will to do myself this wrong.

*K. Rich.* Cousin, farewell; and, uncle, bid  
him so.

Shew him how I banish him, and he shall go.  
[*Exeunt. A cry. Richard and Gaunt.*]

*Alar.* Cousin, farewell: what presence must  
I leave you?

*Richard.* My days do remain let paper show.

*Mar.* My lord, no leave take I; for I will  
ride,  
As far as land will let me, by your side.

*Gaunt.* O, to what purpose dost thou hoard  
thy words,

That thou return'st no greeting to thy friends?

*Boling.* I have too few to take my leave of  
you.

When the tongue's office should be prodigal  
To breathe the abundant dolour of the heart.

*Gaunt.* Thy grief is but thy absence for a  
time.

*Boling.* Joy absent, grief is present for that  
time.

*Gaunt.* What is six winters? they are quickly  
gone.

*Boling.* To men in joy; but grief makes one  
hour ten.

*Gaunt.* Call it a travel that thou takest for  
pleasure.

*Boling.* My heart will sigh when I miscall  
it so.

Which finds it an enforced pilgrimage.  
*Gaunt.* The sullen passage of thy weary steps

Esteem as foil wherein thou art to set  
The precious jewel of thy home return.

*Boling.* Nay, rather, every tedious stride  
I make

Will but remember me what a deal of world  
I wander from the jewels that I love.

Must I not serve a long apprenticeshood  
To foreign passages, and in the end,

Having my freedom, boast of nothing else  
But that I was a journeyman to grief?

*Gaunt.* All places that the eye of heaven  
visits

Are to a wise man ports and happy havens.  
Teach thy necessity to reason thus;

There is no virtue like necessity.  
Think not the king did banish thee,

But thou the king. Woe doth the heavier sit,  
Where it perceives it is but faintly borne.

Go, say I sent thee forth to purchase honour  
And not the king exiled thee; or suppose

Devouring pestilence hangs in our air  
And thou art flying to a fresher clime:

Look, what thy soul holds dear, imagine it  
To lie that way thou go'st, not whence thou

comest:

Suppose the singing birds musicians,  
The grass whereon thou tread'st the presence

strew'd,  
The flowers fair ladies, and thy steps no more

Than a delightful measure or a dance;  
For gnawing sorrow hath less power to bite

The man that mocks at it and sets it light.  
*Boling.* O, who can hold a fire in his hand

By thinking on the frosty Caucasus?  
Or cloy the hungry edge of appetite

By bare imagination of a feast?  
Or wallow naked in December snow

By thinking on fantastic summer's heat?  
O, no! the apprehension of the good

Gives but the greater feeling to the worse:  
Fell sorrow's tooth doth never rankle more

Than when he bites, but longeth for the sore.  
*Gaunt.* Come, come, my son, I'll bring thee

on thy way:



Had I thy youth and cause, I would not stay.  
*Boling.* Then, England's ground, farewell;  
 sweet soil, adieu;  
 My mother, and my nurse, that bears me yet!  
 Where'er I wander, boast of this I can,  
 Though banish'd, yet a trueborn Englishman.  
 [Exeunt.]

SCENE IV. *The court.*

*Enter the KING, with BAGOT and GREEN at one door; and the DUKE OF AUMERLE at another.*

*K. Rich.* We did observe, Cousin Aumerle,  
 How far brought you high Hertford on his way?  
*Aum.* I brought high Hertford, if you call  
 him so,

But to the next highway, and there I left him.

*K. Rich.* And say, what store of parting  
 tears were shed?

*Aum.* Faith, none for me; except the north-  
 east wind,

Which then blew bitterly against our faces,  
 Awaked the sleeping rheum, and so by chance  
 Did grace our hollow parting with a tear.

*K. Rich.* What said our cousin when you  
 parted with him?

*Aum.* 'Farewell.'  
 And, for my heart disclaim'd that my tongue  
 Should so profane the word, that taught me  
 craft

To counterfeit oppression of such grief  
 That words seem'd buried in my sorrow's grave.  
 Marry, would the word 'farewell' have length-  
 en'd hours

And added years to his short banishment,  
 He should have had a volume of farewells;  
 But since it would not, he had none of me.

*K. Rich.* He is our cousin, cousin; but 'tis  
 doubt,

When time shall call him home from banish-  
 ment,

Whether our kinsman come to see his friends.  
 Ourselves and Bushy, Bagot here and Green

Observed his courtship to the common people;  
 How he did seem to dive into their hearts

With humble and familiar courtesy,  
 What reverence he did throw away on slaves,

wooing poor craftsmen with the craft of smiles  
 And patient underbearing of his fortune.

As 'twere to banish their affects with him.  
 Off goes his bonnet to an oyster-wench;

A brace of draymen bid God speed him well  
 And had the tribute of his supple knee,

With 'Thanks, my countrymen, my loving  
 friends.'

As were our England in reversion his,  
 And he our subjects' next degree in hope.

*Green.* Well, he is gone; and with him go  
 these thoughts.

Now for the rebels which stand out in Ireland,  
 Expedient manage must be made, my liege,

For further leisure yield them further means;  
 For their advantage and your highness' loss.

*K. Rich.* We will ourselves in person to this  
 war;

And, for our coffers, with too great a court  
 And liberal largess, are grown somewhat light,

We are enforced to farm our royal realm;  
 The revenue whereof shall furnish us  
 For our affairs in hand; if that come short,  
 Our substitutes at home shall have blank  
 charters;

Where to, when they shall know what men are  
 rich,

They shall subscribe them for large sums of  
 gold

And send them after to supply our wants;  
 For we will make for Ireland presently.

*Enter BUSHY.*

Bushy, what news?

*Bushy.* Old John of Gaunt is grievous sick,  
 my lord,

Suddenly taken; and hath sent post haste  
 To entreat your majesty to visit him.

*K. Rich.* Where lies he?

*Bushy.* At Ely House.

*K. Rich.* Now put it, God, in the physician's  
 mind

To help him to his grave immediately! 60

The lining of his coffers shall make coats

To deck our soldiers for these Irish wars.

(Come, gentlemen, let's all go visit him:

Pray God we may make haste, and come too  
 late!

*All.* Amen.

[Exeunt.]

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *Ely House.*

*Enter JOHN OF GAUNT sick, with the DUKE  
 OF YORK, &c.*

*Gaunt.* Will the king come, that I may  
 breathe my last

In wholesome counsel to his unstaid youth?

*York.* Vex not yourself, nor strive not with  
 your breath;

For all in vain comes counsel to his ear.

*Gaunt.* O, but they say the tongues of dying  
 men

Enforce attention like deep harmony;  
 Where words are scarce, they are seldom spent

in vain,  
 For they breathe truth that breathe their words

in pain.  
 He that no more must say is listen'd more

Than they whom youth and ease have taught  
 to glose;

More are men's ends mark'd than their lives  
 before:

The setting sun, and music at the close,  
 As the last taste of sweets, is sweetest last,

Wits in remembrance more than things long  
 past:

Though Richard my life's counsel would not  
 hear,

My death's and tale may yet undeaf his ear.

*York.* No; it is stopp'd with other flattering  
 sounds,

As flattery, of whose taste the wine are fond,  
 Lascivious metres, to whose venom sound

The open ear of youth doth always listen: 20  
 Report of fashions in great Italy,  
 Whose manners still our tardy apish nation

*Limps after in base imitation.*

Where doth the world thrust forth a vanity—  
So it be new, there's no respect how vile—  
That is not quickly buzz'd into his ears?  
Then all too late comes counsel to be heard,  
Where will doth mutiny with wit's regard.  
Direct not him whose way himself will choose:  
'Tis breath thou lack'st, and that breath wilt  
thou lose.

*Gaunt.* Methinks I am a prophet new in-  
spired

And thus expiring do foretell of him:  
His rash fierce blaze of riot cannot last,  
For violent fires soon burn out themselves;  
Small showers last long, but sudden storms are  
short;

He times betimes that spurs too fast betimes;  
With eager feeding food doth choke the feeder:  
Light vanity, insatiate connoisseur,  
Consuming means, soon preys upon itself.  
This royal throne of kings, this scepter'd isle,  
This earth of majesty, this seat of Mars, 41  
This other Eden, demi-paradise,  
This fortress built by Nature for herself  
Against infection and the hand of war,  
This happy breed of men, this little world,  
This precious stone set in the silver sea,  
Which serves it in the office of a wall  
Or as a moat defensive to a house,  
Against the envy of less happier lands,  
This blessed plot, this earth, this realm, this 50  
England,

This nurse, this teeming womb of royal kings,  
Fond'd by their breed and famous by their birth,  
Renowned for their deeds as far from home,  
For Christian service and true chivalry,  
As is the sepulchre in stubborn Jewry  
Of the world's ransom, blessed Mary's Son,  
This land of such dear souls, this dear dear 55  
land,

Dear for her reputation through the world,  
Is now leased out, I die pronouncing it,  
Like to a tenement or pelting farm: 60  
England, bound in with the triumphant sea,  
Whose rocky shore beats back the envious siege  
Of watery Neptune, is now bound in with  
shame,

With ink blot and rotten parchment bonds:  
That England, that was wont to conquer others,  
Hath made a shameful conquest of itself.  
Ah, would the scandal vanish with my life,  
How happy then were my ensuing death!

*Enter KING RICHARD and QUEEN, AUMERLE,  
BURKE, GREEN, BAGOT, ROSS, and WILL-  
LOUGHBY.*

*York.* The king is come: deal mildly with  
his youth;

For young hot coits being rag'd do rage the  
more.

*Queen.* How fares our noble uncle, Lan-  
caster?

*K. Rich.* What comfort, man! how is't  
with aged Gaunt?

*Gaunt.* O, how that name befits my com-  
pensation!

*K. Rich.* But indeed, and gaunt in being old:  
Whence the grief hath kept a tedious fast;

And who abstains from meat that is not gaunt?  
For sleeping England long time have I watch'd:  
Watching breeds leanness, leanness is all gaunt:  
The pleasure that some fathers feed upon, 70  
Is my strict fast; I mean, my children's looks:  
And therein fasting, hast thou made me gaunt:  
Gaunt am I for the grave, gaunt as a grave,  
Whose hollow womb inherits nought but bones.

*K. Rich.* Can sick men play so nimbly with  
their names?

*Gaunt.* No, misery makes sport to mock  
itself:

Since thou dost seek to kill my name in me,  
I mock my name, great king, to flatter thee.

*K. Rich.* Should dying men flatter with  
those that live?

*Gaunt.* No, no, men living flatter those  
that die.

*K. Rich.* Thou, now a-dying, say'st thou  
flatterest me.

*Gaunt.* O, no: thou diest, though I the 80  
sicker be.

*K. Rich.* I am in health, I breathe, and see  
thee ill.

*Gaunt.* Now He that made me knows I see  
thee ill:

Ill in myself to see, and in thee seeing ill.  
Thy death-bed is no lesser than thy land  
Wherein thou liest in reputation sick;  
And thou, too careless patient as thou art,  
Commit'st thy anointed body to the cure  
Of those physicians that first wounded thee:  
A thousand flatterers sit within thy crown, 100  
Whose compass is no bigger than thy head;  
And yet, incaged in so small a verge,  
The waste is no whit lesser than thy land.  
O, had thy grandsire with a prophet's eye  
Seen how his son's son should destroy his sons,  
From forth thy reach he would have laid thy  
shame!

Deposing thee before thou wert possess'd,  
Which art possess'd now to depose thyself.  
Why, cousin, wert thou regent of the world,  
It were a shame to let this land by lease: 110  
But for thy world enjoying but this land,  
Is it not more than shame to shame it so?  
Landlord of England art thou now, not king:  
Thy state of law is bondslave to the law;  
And thou—

*K. Rich.* A lunatic lean-witted fool,  
Presuming on an ague's privilege,  
Darest with thy frozen admonition  
Make pale our cheek, chasing the royal blood  
With fury from his native residence.  
Now, by my seat's right royal majesty, 120  
Wert thou not brother to great Edward's son,  
This tongue that runs so roundly in thy head  
Should run thy head from thy unwearying  
shoulders.

*Gaunt.* O, spare me not, my brother Ed-  
ward's son,

For that I was his father Edward's son;  
That blood already, like the pelican,  
Hast thou tapp'd out and drunkenly caroused:  
My brother Gloucester, plain well-meaning soul,  
Whom fair befal in heaven 'mongst happy 130  
souls!

May be a precedent and witness good 130

That thou respect'st not spilling Edward's blood:

Join with the present sickness that I have;  
And thy unkindness be like crooked age,  
To crop at once a too long wither'd flower.  
Live in thy shame, but die not shame with thee!  
These words hereafter thy tormentors be!  
(Convey me to my bed, then to my grave:  
Love they to live that love and honour have.)

[Exit, borne off by his Attendants.]

K. Rich. And let them die that age and  
sullens have;

Or both hast thou, and both become the grave.  
York. I do beseech your majesty, impute  
his words

to wayward sickness and age in him:  
He loves you, on my life, and holds you dear  
As Harry Duke of Hereford, were he here.

K. Rich. Right, you say true: as Hereford's  
love, so his;

As theirs, so mine; and all be as it is.

Enter NORTHUMBERLAND.

North. My liege, old Gaunt commends him  
to your majesty.

K. Rich. What says he?

North. Nay, nothing; all is said:  
His tongue is now a stringless instrument:  
Words, life and all, old Lancaster hath spent.

York. Be York the next that must be bankrupt  
so!

Though death be poor, it ends a mortal woe.

K. Rich. The ripest fruit first falls, and so  
doth he;

His time is spent, our pilgrimage must be.  
So much for that. Now for our Irish wars:

We must supplant those rough rug-headed  
kerns,

Which live like venom where no venom else  
but only they have privilege to live.

And for these great affairs do ask some charge.  
Towards our assistance we do seize to us

The plate, coin, revenues and moveables,  
Whereof our uncle Gaunt did stand possess'd.

York. How long shall I be patient? ah, how  
long

Shall tender duty make me suffer wrong?  
Not Gloucester's death, nor Hereford's banish-  
ment,

Not Gaunt's rebukes, nor England's private  
wrongs,

Nor the prevention of poor Bolingbroke  
About his marriage, nor my own disgrace,

Have ever made me sour my patient cheek,  
Or bend one wrinkle on my sovereign's face.

I am the last of noble Edward's sons,  
Of whom thy father, Prince of Wales, was first:

In war was never lion rag'd more fierce,  
In peace was never gentle lamb more mild,

Than was that young and princely gentleman.  
His face thou hast, for even so look'd he,

Accomplish'd with the number of thy hours;  
But when he frown'd, it was against the French

And not against his friends; his noble hand  
Did win what he did spend and spent not that

Which his triumphant father's hand had won;  
His hands were guilty of no kindred blood,

But bloody with the enemies of his kin.

O Richard! York is too far gone with grief,  
Or else he never would compare between.

K. Rich. Why, uncle, what's the matter?  
York.

Pardon me, if you please; if not, I, please  
Not to be pardon'd, am content withal.

Seek you to seize and gripe into your hands  
The royalties and rights of banish'd Here-  
ford?

Is not Gaunt dead, and doth not Hereford live?  
Was not Gaunt just, and is not Harry true?

Did not the one deserve to have an heir?  
Is not his heir a well-deserving son?

Take Hereford's rights away, and take from  
Time

His charters and his customary rights;  
Let not to-morrow then ensue to-day:

Be not thyself; for how art thou a king  
But by fair sequence and succession?

Now, afore God!—God forbid I say true!—  
If you do wrongfully seize Hereford's rights,

Call in the letters patents that he hath  
By his attorney-general to sue

His livery, and deny his offer'd  
You pluck a thousand dangers on your

You lose a thousand well-disposed hearts  
And prick my tender patience to those thoughts

Which honour and allegiance cannot think.

K. Rich. Think what you will, we seize  
into our hands

His plate, his goods, his money and his lands.  
York. I'll not be by the while; my liege,

farewell:  
What will ensue hereof, there's none can tell;

But by bad courses may be understood  
That their events can never fall out good.

[Exit.]  
K. Rich. Go, Bushy, to the Earl of Wiltshire  
straight:

Bid him repair to us to Ely House  
To see this business. To-morrow next

We will for Ireland; and 'tis time, I trow;  
And we create, in absence of ourself,

Our uncle York lord governor of England;  
For he is just and always loved us well.

Come on, our queen: to-morrow must we part;  
Be merry, for our time of stay is short.

[Flourish. Enter King, Queen, Anselme,  
Bushy, Green, and Bagot.]

North. Well, lords, the Duke of Lancaster  
is dead.

Ross. And living too; for now his son is  
duke.

Will. Barely in title, not in revenues.

North. Richly in both, if justice had her  
right.

Ross. My heart is great; but it must break  
with silence.

Ere 't be burden'd with a liberal tongue.

North. Nay, speak thy mind; and let him  
ne'er speak more

That speaks thy words again to do thee hurt.  
Will. Tends that thou wouldst speak to  
the Duke of Hereford?

If it be so, out with it boldly, man;  
Quick is mine ear to hear of good towards him.

Ross. No good at all that I can do for him;  
Unless you call it good to pity him.

Bereft and gelded of his patrimony.

*North.* Now, afore God, 'tis shame such wrongs are borne

In him, a royal prince, and many moe  
Of noble blood in this declining land.

The king is not himself, but basely led

By flatterers; and what they will inform,

Mercy in hate, 'gainst any of us all,

That will the king severely prosecute

'Gainst us, our lives, our children, and our heirs.

*Ross.* The commons hath he pill'd with  
grievous taxes,

† And quite lost their hearts: the nobles hath  
he fined

For ancient quarrels, and quite lost their hearts.

*Will.* And daily new exactions are devised,

As blanks, benevolences, and I wot not what:

But what, o' God's name, doth become of this?

*North.* Wars have not wasted it, for warr'd

he hath not,

But basely yielded upon compromise

That which his noble ancestors achieved with  
blows:

More hath he spent in peace than they in wars.

*Ross.* The Earl of Wiltshire hath the realm  
in farm.

*Will.* The king's grown bankrupt, like a  
broken man.

*North.* Reproach and dissolution hangeth  
over him.

*Ross.* He hath not money for these Irish wars.  
His burthenous taxations notwithstanding,

But by the robbing of the banish'd duke.

*North.* His noble kinsman: must degenerate  
king!

But, lords, we hear this fearful tempest sing,

Yet seek no shelter to avoid the storm;

We see the wind sit sore upon our sails,

And yet we strike not, but securely perish.

*Ross.* We see the very wreck that we must  
suffer:

And unavoids is the danger now.

For suffering so the causes of our wreck.

*North.* Not so; even through the hollow  
eyes of death

I spy life peering; but I dare not say

How near the tidings of our comfort is.

*Will.* Nay, let us share thy thoughts, as  
thou dost ours.

*Ross.* Be confident to speak, Northumber-  
land:

We three are but thyself; and, speaking so,  
Thy words are but as thoughts; therefore, be  
bold.

*North.* Then thus: I have from Port le  
Blanc, a bay

In Brittany, received intelligence

That Harry Duke of Hereford, Rainold Lord

Of Gloucestre,

† Late broke from the Duke of Exeter,

Archbishop late of Canterbury,

at Birmingham, Sir John Rameton,

Morbey, Sir Robert Waterton and

Francis Quene,

have well furnish'd by the Duke of Bretagne

with twelve thousand men of war,

and are come with all due expedience

And shortly mean to touch our northern shore

Perhaps they had ere this, but that they stay

The first departing of the king for Ireland.

If then we shall shake off our slavish yoke,

Imp out our drooping country's broken wing,

Redeem from broking pawn the blench'd crown,

Wipe off the dust that hides our sceptre's gilt

And make high majesty look like it

Away with me in post to Ravenspu

But if you faint, as fearing to do so,

Stay and be secret, and myself will

† To horse, to horse! urge doubts

them that fear.

*Will.* Hold out my horse, and I will fir-

be there. [Exeunt.]

## SCENE II. Windsor Castle.

Enter QUEEN, BUSHY, and BAGOT.

*Busby.* Madam, your majesty is too much  
sail:

You promised, when you parted with the king,  
To lay aside life-harming heaviness

And entertain a cheerful disposition.

*Queen.* To please the king I did; to please  
myself

I cannot do it; yet I know no cause

Why I should welcome such a guest as grief,

Save bidding farewell to so sweet a guest

As my sweet Richard: yet again, methinks,

Some unborn sorrow, ripe in fortune's womb

Is coming towards me, and my inward soul

With nothing trembles: at some thing

grieves,

More than with parting from my lord the king.

*Busby.* Each substance of a grief hath

twenty shadows,

Which shows like grief itself, but is not so:

For sorrow's eye, glazed with blinding tears,

Divides one thing entire to many objects;

Like perspectives, which rightly gazed upon

Show nothing but confusion, eyed awry

Distinguish form: so your sweet majesty,

Looking awry upon your lord's departure,

Find shapes of grief, more than himself, to

wail;

Which, look'd on as it is, is nought but shadow:

Of what it is not. Then, thrice-gracious queen,

More than your lord's departure weep not.

more's not seen;

(If it be, 'tis with false sorrow's eye,

Which for things true weeps things imaginary

*Queen.* It may be so; but yet my inward

soul

Persuades me it is otherwise: howe'er it be,

I cannot but be sad; so heavy sad

As, though on thinking on no thought I think,

Makes me with heavy nothing faint and shrink.

*Busby.* 'Tis nothing but conceit, my gracious

lady.

*Queen.* 'Tis nothing less: conceit is still

derived

From some forefather grief; mine is not so.

For nothing hath begot my something grief:

Or something hath the nothing that I grieve:

'Tis in reversion that I do possess;

But what it is, that is not yet known; what

I cannot name; 'tis nameless woe, I wot.

*Enter GREEN.*

*Green.* God save your majesty! and well met, gentlemen:  
I hope the king is not yet shipp'd for Ireland.

*Queen.* Why hopest thou so? 'tis better hope he is;

For his designs crave haste, his haste good hope:  
Then wherefore dost thou hope he is not shipp'd?

*Green.* That he, our hope, might have retired his power,  
And driven into despair an enemy's hope,  
Who strongly hath set footing in this land:  
The banish'd Bolingbroke repeals himself,  
And with uplifted arms is safe arrived  
At Ravenspurgh. 50

*Queen.* Now God in heaven forbid!  
*Green.* Ah, madam, 'tis too true: and that is worse.

The Lord Northumberland, his son young Henry Percy,  
The Lords of Ross, Beaumont, and Willoughby,  
With all their powerful friends, are fled to him.

*Bushy.* Why have you not proclaim'd Northumberland

And all the rest revolted faction traitors?

*Green.* We have: whereupon the Earl of Worcester

Hath broke his staff, resign'd his stewardship,  
And all the household servants fled with him  
To Bolingbroke. 61

*Queen.* So, Green, thou art the midwife to my woe,

And Bolingbroke my sorrow's dismal heir:  
Now hath my soul brought forth her prodigy,  
And I, a gasping new-deliver'd mother,

Have woe to woe, sorrow to sorrow join'd.  
*Bushy.* Despair not, madam.

*Queen.* Who shall hinder me? I will despair, and be at enmity

With cozening hope: he is a flatterer,  
A parasite, a keeper back of death, 70

Who gently would dissolve the bands of life,  
Which false hope lingers in extremity.

*Enter YORK.*

*Green.* Here comes the Duke of York.  
*Queen.* With signs of war about his aged neck:

(1) full of careful business are his looks!  
Uncle, for God's sake, speak comfortable words.

*York.* Should I do so, I should belie my thoughts;

Comfort's in heaven; and we are on the earth,  
Where nothing lives but crosses, cares and grief.

Your husband, he is gone to save far off, 80  
Whilst others come to make him lose at home:  
Here am I left to underprop his land,

Who, weak with age, cannot support myself;  
Now comes the stroke hour that his surfeit made:

Now shall he try his friends that flatter'd him.

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* My lord, your son was gone before I came.

N 2

*York.* He was? Why, so! go all which way it will!

The nobles they are fled, the commons they are cold,

And will, I fear, revolt on Hereford's side.  
Sirrah, get thee to Plashy, to my sister Gloucester;

Bid her send me presently a thousand pound:  
Hold, take my ring. 90

*Serv.* My lord, I had forgot to tell your lordship,

To-day, as I came by, I called there;  
But I shall grieve you to report the rest.

*York.* What is't, knave?

*Serv.* An hour before I came, the duchess died.

*York.* God for his mercy! what a tide of woes

Comes rushing on this woeful land at once!  
I know not what to do: I would to God, 100

So my untruth had not provoked him to it,  
The king had cut off my head with my brother's.

What, are there no posts dispatch'd for Ireland?

How shall we do for money for these wars?  
Come, sister,—cousin, I would say,—pry, pardon me.

Go, fellow, get thee home, provide some carts  
And bring away the armour that is there.

[Exit Servant.  
Gentlemen, will you go muster men?

If I know how or which way to order these affairs

Thus thrust disorderly into my hands, 110  
Never believe me. Both are my kinsmen:

The one is my sovereign, whom both my oath  
And duty bids defend; the other again

Is my kinsman, whom the king hath wrong'd,  
Whom conscience and my kindred bids to right.

Well, somewhat we must do. Come, cousin, I'll

Dispose of you.  
Gentlemen, go, muster up your men,

And meet me presently at Berkeley.  
I should to Plashy too; 120

But time will not permit: all is uneven,  
And every thing is left at six and seven.

[Exit York and Queen.  
*Bushy.* The wind sits fair for news to go to Ireland,

But none returns. For us to levy power  
Proportionable to the enemy

Is all impossible.  
*Green.* Besides, our nearness to the king in love

Is near the hate of these love not the king.  
*Bagot.* And that's the wavering commons:

for their love 125  
Lies in their purses, and whose empties them

By so much fills their hearts with deadly hate.  
*Bushy.* Wherein the king stands generally condemn'd.

*Bagot.* If judgment lie in them, then so do we,

Because we ever have been near the king.

*Green.* Well, I will for refuge straight to Bristol castle;

The Earl of Wiltshire is already there.

*Bushy.* Thither will I with you; for little office

The hateful commons will perform for us,  
Except like curs to tear us all to pieces.

Will you go along with us?

*Bagot.* No; I will to Ireland to his majesty.

*Farwell:* if heart's presages be not vain,

We three here part that ne'er shall meet again.

*Bushy.* That's as York thrives to beat back

Bolingbroke.

*Green.* Alas, poor duke! the task he under-

takes

In numbering sands and drinking oceans dry:

Where one on his side fights, thousands will fly.

Farwell at once, for once, for all, and ever.

*Bushy.* Well, we may meet again.

*Bagot.*

I fear me, never.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III. *Woods in Gloucestershire.*

*Enter BOLINGBROKE and NORTHUMBERLAND, with Forces.*

*Boling.* How far is it, my lord, to Berkeley now?

*North.* Believe me, noble lord,

I am a stranger here in Gloucestershire:

These high wild hills and rough uneven ways

Draw out our miles, and makes them wearisome;

And yet your fair discourse hath been as sugar,

Making the hard way sweet and delectable.

But I bethink me what a weary way

From Ravenspurgh to Cotswold will be found

In Ross and Willoughby, wanting your com-

pany.

Which, I protest, hath very much beguiled

The tediousness and process of my travel:

But theirs is sweetened with the hope to have

The present benefit which I possess;

And hope to joy is little less in joy

Than hope enjoy'd: by this the weary lords

Shall make their way seem short, as mine hath

done

By sight of what I have, your noble company.

*Boling.* Of much less value is my company

Than your good words. But who comes here?

*Enter HENRY PERCY.*

*North.* It is my son, young Harry Percy, as

Sent from my brother Worcester, whencesoever.

*Harry.* how fares your uncle?

*Percy.* I had thought, my lord, to have

learn'd his health of you.

*North.* Why, is he not with the queen?

*Percy.* No, my good lord; he hath forsook

the court,

Broken his staff of office and dispersed

The household of the king.

*North.* What was his reason?

He was not so resolved when last we spake

together.

*Percy.* Because your lordship was pro-

claimed traitor.

To seek service to the Duke of Hereford,

And sent me over by Berkeley, to discover

What power the Duke of York had levied there;

Then with directions to repair to Ravenspurgh.

*North.* Have you forgot the Duke of Here-

ford, boy?

*Percy.* No, my good lord, for that is not

forgot

Which ne'er I did remember: to my know-

ledge,

I never in my life did look on him.

*North.* Then learn to know him now; this

is the duke.

*Percy.* My gracious lord, I tender you my

service,

Such as it is, being tender, raw and young;

Which elder days shall ripen and confirm

To more approved service and desert.

*Boling.* I thank thee, gentle Percy; and be

sure

I count myself in nothing else so happy

As in a soul remembering my good friends;

And, as my fortune ripens with thy love,

It shall be still thy true love's recompense:

My heart this covenant makes, my hand thus

seals it.

*North.* How far is it to Berkeley? and what

stir

Keeps good old York there with his men of

war?

*Percy.* There stands the castle, by yon tuft

of trees,

Mann'd with three hundred men, as I have

heard;

And in it are the Lords of York, Berkeley, and

Seymour;

None else of name and noble estimate.

*Enter ROSS and WILLOUGHBY.*

*North.* Here come the Lords of Ross and

Willoughby,

Bloody with spurring, fiery-red with haste.

*Boling.* Welcome, my lords. I wot your

love pursues

A banish'd traitor: all my treasury

Is yet but unfelt thanks, which more enrich'd

Shall be your love and labour's recompense.

*Ross.* Your presence makes us rich, most

noble lord.

*Will.* And far surmounts our labour to

attain it.

*Boling.* Evermore thanks, the exchequer of

the poor;

Which, till my infant fortune comes to years,

Stands for my bounty. But who comes here?

*Enter BERKELEY.*

*North.* It is my Lord of Berkeley, as I guess.

*Berk.* My Lord of Hereford, my message is

to you.

*Boling.* My lord, my answer is—to Lan-

caster;

And I am come to seek that name in England:

And I must find that title in your tongue.

Before I make reply to aught you say.

*Berk.* Mistake me not, my lord; 'tis not

my meaning

To raise one title of your honour out:

To you, my lord, I come, what lord you will,

From the most gracious regent of this land,

The Duke of York, to know what pains you on

To take advantage of the absent time  
And fright our native peace with self-born arms.

*Enter YORK attended.*

*Boling.* I shall not need transport my words  
by you; 81

Here comes his grace in person.

*My noble uncle! [Kneels.*

*York.* Show me thy humble heart, and not  
thy knee,

Whose duty is deceivable and false.

*Boling.* My gracious uncle—

*York.* Tut, tut!

Grace me no grace, nor uncle me no uncle:

I am no traitor's uncle; and that word 'grace'  
In an ungracious mouth is but profane.

Why have those banish'd and forbidden legs go  
Dared once to touch a dust of England's ground?  
But then more 'why?' why have they dared to  
march

So many miles upon her peaceful bosom,  
Frighting her pale-faced villages with war  
And ostentation of despoiled arms?

'Comest thou because the anointed king is hence?  
Why, foolish boy, the king is left behind,  
And in my loyal bosom lies his power.

Were I but now the lord of such hot youth  
As when brave Gaunt, thy father, and myself

Rescued the Black Prince, that young Mars of  
men, 101

From forth the ranks of many thousand French,  
(I) then how quickly should this arm of mine,  
Now prisoner to the pulsy, chasteise thee  
And minister correction to thy fault!

*Boling.* My gracious uncle, let me know my  
fault:

On what condition stands it and wherein?

*York.* Even in condition of the worst degree,  
In gross rebellion and detested treason:

Thou art a banish'd man, and here art come  
Before the expiration of thy time,

In braving arms against thy sovereign.

*Boling.* As I was banish'd, I was banish'd  
Hereford;

But as I come, I come for Lancaster.

And, noble uncle, I beseech your grace  
Look on my wrongs with an indifferent eye:

You are my father, for methinks in you  
I see old Gaunt alive; O, then, my father,

Will you permit that I shall stand condemn'd  
A wandering vagabond; my rights and royalties

Pluck'd from my arms perforce and given away  
To upstart untirlits? Wherefore was I born?

If that my cousin king be King of England,  
It must be granted I am Duke of Lancaster.

You have a son, Aumerle, my noble cousin;  
Had you first died, and he been thus trod down,

He should have found his uncle Gaunt a father,  
To rouse his wrongs and chase them to the bay.

I am denied to sue my livery here,  
And yet my letters-patents give me leave: 130

My father's goods are all distrain'd and sold,  
And these and all are all arms employ'd.

What would you have me do? I am a subject,  
And I challenge law: attorneys are denied me;

And therefore personally I lay my claim  
To my inheritance of free descent.

*North.* The noble duke hath been too much  
abused.

*Ross.* It stands your grace upon to do him  
right.

*Will.* Base men by his endowments are  
made great.

*York.* My lords of England, let me tell you  
this: 140

I have had feeling of my cousin's wrongs  
And labour'd all I could to do him right;  
But in this kind to come, in braving arms,  
Be his own carver and cut out his way,  
To find out right with wrong, it may not be;  
And you that do abet him in this kind  
Cherish rebellion and are rebels all.

*North.* The noble duke hath sworn his  
coming is

But for his own; and for the right of that  
We all have strongly sworn to give him aid: 150  
And let him ne'er see joy that breaks that oath!

*York.* Well, well, I see the issue of these arms:  
I cannot mend it, I must needs confess.

Because my power is weak and all ill left:  
But if I could, by Him that gave me life,

I would attach you all and make you stoop  
Unto the sovereign mercy of the king;

But since I cannot, be it known to you  
I do remain as neuter. So, fare you well;

Unless you please to enter in the castle 160  
And there repose you for this night.

*Boling.* An offer, uncle, that we will accept:  
But we must win your grace to go with us

To Bristol castle, which they may is held  
By Bushy, Bagot and their complices,

The caterpillars of the commonwealth,  
Which I have sworn to weed and pluck away.

*York.* May be I will go with you: but yet  
I'll pause;

For I am loath to break our country's laws.  
Nor friends nor foes, to me welcome you are: 170

Things past redress are now with me past care.  
[Exeunt.

#### SCENE IV. A camp in Wales.

*Enter SALISBURY and a Welsh Captain.*

*Cap.* My Lord of Salisbury, we have stay'd  
ten days,

And hardly kept our countrymen together,  
And yet we hear no tidings from the king;

Therefore we will disperse ourselves: farewell.  
*Sai.* Stay yet another day, thou trusty

Welshman:  
The king reposeeth all his confidence in thee.

*Cap.* 'Tis thought the king is dead; we will  
not stay.

The bay-trees in our country are all wither'd  
And meteors fright the fixed stars of heaven;

The pale-faced moon looks bloody on the earth  
And lean-look'd prophets whisper fearful

change; 22  
Rich men look sad and ruffians dance and leap,  
The one in fear to lose what they enjoy.

Rich men look sad and ruffians dance and leap,  
The one in fear to lose what they enjoy.

Rich men look sad and ruffians dance and leap,  
The one in fear to lose what they enjoy.

Rich men look sad and ruffians dance and leap,  
The one in fear to lose what they enjoy.

Rich men look sad and ruffians dance and leap,  
The one in fear to lose what they enjoy.

Rich men look sad and ruffians dance and leap,  
The one in fear to lose what they enjoy.

# KING RICHARD II

[ACT II

**Bushy.** Thither will I with you; for little office  
The hateful commons will perform for us,  
Except like curs to tear us all to pieces.  
Will you go along with us?

**Bagot.** No; I will to Ireland to his majesty.  
Farewell: if heart's presages be not vain,  
We three here part that ne'er shall meet again.

**Bushy.** That's as York thrives to beat back  
Bolingbroke.  
**Green.** Alas, poor duke! the task he under-  
takes

Is numbering sands and drinking oceans dry:  
Where one on his side fights, thousands will fly.  
Farewell at once, for once, for all, and ever.  
**Bushy.** Well, we may meet again.

**Bagot.** I fear me, never.  
[Exit.]

## SCENE III. *Wilds in Gloucestershire.*

*Enter BOLINGBROKE and NORTHUMBERLAND,  
with Forces.*

**Boling.** How far is it, my lord, to Berkeley  
now?

**North.** Believe me, noble lord,  
I am a stranger here in Gloucestershire:  
These high wild hills and rough uneven ways  
Draws out our miles, and makes them wearisome;

And yet your fair discourse hath been as sugar,  
Making the hard way sweet and delectable.  
But I bethink me what a weary way  
From Ravenspurgh to Cotswold will be found  
In Ross and Willoughby, wanting your com-  
pany.

Which, I protest, hath very much beguiled  
The tediousness and process of my travel:  
But theirs is sweetened with the hope to have  
The present benefit which I possess;  
And hope to joy in little less in joy  
Than hope enjoy'd: by this the weary lords  
Shall make their way seem short, as mine hath  
done

By sight of what I have, your noble company.

**Boling.** Of much less value is my company  
Than your good words. But who comes here?

*Enter HENRY PERCY.*

**North.** It is my son, young Harry Percy, as  
Sent from my brother Worcester, whencesoever.  
Harry, how fares your uncle?

**Percy.** I had thought, my lord, to have  
learn'd his health of you.

**North.** Why, is he not with the queen?

**Percy.** No, my good lord; he hath forsook  
the court.

Broken his staff of office and dispersed  
The household of the king.

**North.** What was his reason?  
He was not so resolved when last we spake  
together.

**Percy.** Because your lordship was pro-  
claimed traitor.

But he, my lord, is gone to Ravenspurgh,  
To offer service to the Duke of Hereford,  
And sent me over by Berkeley, to discover  
What power the Duke of York had levied there;

Then with directions to repair to Ravenspurgh.  
**North.** Have you forgot the Duke of Here-  
ford, boy?

**Percy.** No, my good lord, for that is not  
forgot  
Which ne'er I did remember: to my know-  
ledge,

I never in my life did look on him.

**North.** Then learn to know him now; this  
is the duke.

**Percy.** My gracious lord, I tender you my  
service,

Such as it is, being tender, raw and young;  
Which elder days shall ripen and confirm  
To more approved service and desert.

**Boling.** I thank thee, gentle Percy; and be  
sure

I count myself in nothing else so happy  
As in a soul remembering my good friends;  
And, as my fortune ripens with thy love,  
It shall be still thy true love's recompense:

My heart this covenant makes, my hand thus  
seals it.

**North.** How far is it to Berkeley? and what  
stir

Keeps good old York there with his men of  
war?

**Percy.** There stands the castle, by yon tuft  
of trees,

Mann'd with three hundred men, as I have  
heard;

And in it are the Lords of York, Berkeley, and  
Seymour;

None else of name and noble estimate.

*Enter ROSS and WILLOUGHBY.*

**North.** Here come the Lords of Ross and  
Willoughby,

Bloody with spurring, fiery-red with haste.

**Boling.** Welcome, my lords. I wot your  
love pursues

A Danish'd traitor: all my treasury  
Is yet but unfelt thanks, which more enrich'd

Shall be your love and labour's recompense.

**Ross.** Your presence makes us rich, most  
noble lord.

**Will.** And far surmounts our labour to  
attain it.

**Boling.** Evermore thanks, the exchequer of  
the poor:

Which, till my infant fortune comes to yearn,  
Stands for my bounty. But who comes here?

*Enter BERKELEY.*

**North.** It is my Lord of Berkeley, as I guess.

**Berk.** My Lord of Hereford, my message is  
to you.

**Boling.** My lord, my answer is—to Lan-  
caster;

And I am come to seek that name in England:  
And I must find that title in your tongue.

Before I make reply to aught you say.

**Berk.** Mistake me not, my lord; 'tis not  
my meaning

To raise one title of your honour out:  
To you, my lord, I come, what lord you will,  
From the most gracious request of this land,  
The Duke of York, to know what picks you on



To take advantage of the absent time  
And fright our native peace with self-born arms.

*Enter YORK attended.*

*Boling.* I shall not need transport my words  
by you; 81

Here comes his grace in person.

My noble uncle! [*Kneels.*

*York.* Show me thy humble heart, and not  
thy knee,

Whose duty is deceivable and false.

*Boling.* My gracious uncle—

*York.* Tut, tut!

Grace me no grace, nor uncle me no uncle;  
I am no traitor's uncle; and that word 'grace'  
In an ungracious mouth is but profane.

Why have those banish'd and forbidden legs  
Dared once to touch a dust of England's ground?  
But thou more 'why?' why have they dared to  
march

So many miles upon her peaceful bosom,  
Frighting her pale-faced villages with war  
And ostentation of despised arms?

Comest thou because the anointed king is hence?  
Why, foolish boy, the king is left behind,  
And in my loyal bosom lies his power.

Were I but now the lord of such hot youth  
As when brave Gaunt, thy father, and myself  
Rescued the Black Prince, that young Mars of  
men, 101

From forth the ranks of many thousand French,  
(I, then how quickly should this arm of mine,  
Now prisoner to the pulsey, chasteise thee  
And minister correction to thy fault!

*Boling.* My gracious uncle, let me know my  
fault:

On what condition stands it and wherein?

*York.* Even in condition of the worst degree,  
In gross rebellion and detested treason:  
Thou art a banish'd man, and here art come 110  
Before the expiration of thy time,  
In braving arms against thy sovereign.

*Boling.* As I was banish'd, I was banish'd  
Hereford;

But as I come, I come for Lancaster.  
And, noble uncle, I beseech your grace  
Look on my wrongs with an indifferent eye:

You are my father, for methinks in you  
I see old Gaunt alive; O, then, my father,  
Will you permit that I shall stand condemn'd  
A wandering vagabond; my rights and royalties  
Pluck'd from my arms perforce and given away  
To upstart thrifths? Wherefore was I born?

If that my cousin king be King of England,  
It must be granted I am Duke of Lancaster.

You have a son, Aumerle, my noble cousin;  
Had you first died, and he been thus trod down,  
He should have found his uncle Gaunt a father,  
To rouse his wrongs and chase them to the bay.

I am denied to sue my livery here,  
And yet my letters-patents give me leave: 120  
My father's goods are all distrain'd and sold,  
And these and all are all armies employ'd.

What would you have me do? I am a subject,  
And I challenge law; attorneys are denied me  
And therefore personally I lay my claim  
To my inheritance of free descent.

*North.* The noble duke hath been too much  
abused.

*Ross.* It stands your grace upon to do him  
right.

*Willo.* Base men by his endowments are  
made great.

*York.* My lords of England, let me tell you  
this: 140

I have had feeling of my cousin's wrongs  
And labour'd all I could to do him right;  
But in this kind to come, in braving arms,  
Be his own carver and cut out his way,  
To find out right with wrong, it may not be;  
And you that do abet him in this kind  
Cherish rebellion and are rebels all.

*North.* The noble duke hath sworn his  
coming is

But for his own; and for the right of that  
We all have strongly sworn to give him aid; 150  
And let him ne'er see joy that breaks that oath!

*York.* Well, well, I see the issue of these arms:  
I cannot mend it, I must needs confess,  
Because my power is weak and all ill left:  
But if I could, by Him that gave me life,

I do remain as neuter. So, fare you well;  
Unless you please to enter in the castle 160  
And there repose you for this night.

*Boling.* An offer, uncle, that we will accept:  
But we must win your grace to go with us  
To Bristol castle, which they say is held  
By Bushy, Bagot and their complices,  
The caterpillars of the commonwealth,  
Which I have sworn to weed and pluck away.

*York.* It may be I will go with you: but yet  
I'll pause;

For I am loath to break our country's laws.  
Nor friends nor foes, to me welcome you are: 170  
Things past redress are now with me past care.

[*Exeunt.*

#### SCENE IV. A camp in Wales.

*Enter SALISBURY and a Welsh Captain.*

*Cap.* My Lord of Salisbury, we have stay'd  
ten days,

And hardly kept our countrymen together,  
And yet we hear no tidings from the king;

Therefore we will disperse ourselves: farewell.

*Sal.* Stay yet another day, thou trusty  
Welshman:

The king reposeeth all his confidence in thee.  
*Cap.* 'Tis thought the king is dead; we will  
not stay.

The bay-trees in our country are all wither'd  
And meteors fright the fixed stars of heaven:

The pale-faced moon looks bloody on the earth  
And lean-look'd prophets whisper fearful  
change; 11

Rich men look sad and ruffians dance and leap,  
The one in fear to lose what they enjoy.

The other to enjoy by rage and war:  
These signs forebode the death or fall of kings.

Farewell: our countrymen are gone and lost,  
As well assured Richard their king is dead.

[*Exeunt.*

*Sol.* Ah, Richard, with the eyes of heavy mind  
I see thy glory like a shooting star  
Fall to the base earth from the firmament. <sup>30</sup>  
Thy sun sets weeping in the lowly west,  
Witnessing storms to come, woe and unrest:  
Thy friends are fled to wait upon thy foes,  
And crossly to thy good all fortune goes.

[Exit.]

## ACT III

## SCENE I. Bristol. Before the castle.

*Enter BOLINGBROKE, YORK, NORTHUMBERLAND, ROSS, PERCY, WILLOUGHBY, with BUSBY and GREEN, prisoners.*

*Boling.* Bring forth these men.  
Busby and Green, I will not vex your souls—  
Since presently your souls must part your  
bodies—

With too much urging your pernicious lives,  
For 'twere no charity; yet, to wash your blood  
From off my hands, here in the view of men  
I will unfold some causes of your deaths.  
You have misled a prince, a royal king,  
A happy gentleman in blood and lineaments,  
By you unhappied and disfigured clean: <sup>10</sup>  
You have in manner with your sinful hours  
Made a divorce betwixt his queen and him,  
Broke the possession of a royal bed  
And stain'd the beauty of a fair queen's cheeks  
With tears drawn from her eyes by your foul  
wrongs.

Myself, a prince by fortune of my birth,  
Near to the king in blood, and near in love  
Till you did make him misinterpret me,  
Have stoop'd my neck under your injuries,  
And sigh'd my English breath in foreign clouds,  
Eating the bitter bread of banishment; <sup>21</sup>  
Whilst you have fed upon my signories,  
Dispar'd my parks and fell'd my forest woods,  
From my own windows torn my household  
coat,

Raz'd out my impress, leaving me no sign,  
Save men's opinions and my living blood,  
To show the world I am a gentleman.  
This and much more, much more than twice all  
this,

Condemns you to the death. See them deliver'd  
over

To execution and the hand of death. <sup>30</sup>

*Busby.* More welcome is the stroke of death  
to me

Than Bolingbroke to England. Lords, farewell.  
*Green.* My comfort is that heaven will take  
our souls

and plague infestation with the pains of hell.

*Boling.* My Lord Northumberland, see them  
dispar'd.

[*Exit Northumberland and others, with the prisoners.*]

Uncle, you say the queen is at your house;  
For God's sake, fairly let her be entreated;

and bid I send to her my kind commands;  
I care my greetings be deliver'd.

*York.* A gentleman of mine I have dis-  
par'd.

With letters of your love to her at large.

*Boling.* Thanks, gentle uncle. Come, lords,  
away.

To fight with Glendower and his complices:  
Awhile to work, and after holiday. [*Exit.*]

SCENE II. The coast of Wales. A castle  
in view.

*Drums: flourish and colours. Enter KING  
RICHARD, the BISHOP OF CARLISLE, AU-  
MERLE, and Soldiers.*

*K. Rich.* Barkloughly castle call they this  
at hand!

*Aum.* Yea, my lord. How brooks your  
grace the air,

After your late tossing on the breaking seas?

*K. Rich.* Needs must I like it well: I weep  
for joy

To stand upon my kingdom once again.

Dear earth, I do salute thee with my hand,

Though rebels wound thee with their horses'  
hoofs:

As a long-parted mother with her child  
Plays fondly with her tears and smiles in  
meeting,

So, weeping, smiling, greet I thee, my earth, <sup>10</sup>

And do thee favours with my royal hands.

Feel not thy sovereign's foe, my gentle earth:  
Nor with thy sweetest comfort his ravenous sense:

But let thy spiders, that suck up thy venom,  
And heavy-gaited toads lie in their way,

Doing annoyance to the treacherous feet  
Which with usurping steps do trample thee:

Yield stinging nettles to mine enemies;

And when they from thy bosom pluck a flower,  
Guard it, I pray thee, with a lurking adder— <sup>21</sup>

Whose double tongue may with a mortal touch  
Throw death upon thy sovereign's enemies.

Mock not my senseless conjuration, lords:

This earth shall have a feeling and these stones  
Prove armed soldiers, ere her native king  
Shall falter under foul rebellion's arms.

*Car.* Fear not, my lord: that Power that  
made you king

Hath power to keep you king in spite of all.

The means that heaven yields must be em-  
braced,

And not neglected; else, if heaven would, <sup>30</sup>

And we will not, heaven's offer we refuse.

The proffer'd means of succour and redress.

*Aum.* He means, my lord, that we are too  
remiss;

Whilst Bolingbroke, through our security,  
Grows strong and great in substance and in  
power.

*K. Rich.* Discomfortable cousin! know'st  
thou not

That when the searching eye of heaven is hid,  
Behind the globe, that lights the lower world,  
Then thieves and robbers range abroad unseen  
In murders and in outrage, boldly here; <sup>40</sup>

But when from under this terrestrial ball  
He fires the proud tops of the eastern pines  
And darts his light through every guilty hole,  
Then murders, treasons, and detested sins,  
The cloak of night being pluck'd from off their  
backs,

Stand bare and naked, trembling at themselves!  
So when this thief, this traitor, Bolingbroke,  
Who all this while hath revel'd in the night  
Whilst we were wandering with the antipodes,  
Shall see us rising in our throne, the east, 50  
His treasons will sit blushing in his face,  
Not able to endure the sight of day,  
But self-affrighted tremble at his sin.  
Not all the water in the rough rude sea  
Can wash the balm off from an anointed king;  
The breath of worldly men cannot depose  
The deputy elected by the Lord:  
For every man that Bolingbroke hath press'd  
To lift shrewd steel against our golden crown,  
God for his Richard hath in heavenly pay 60  
A glorious angel: then, if angels fight,  
Weak men must fall, for heaven still guards the  
right.

*Enter SALISBURY.*

Welcome, my lord: how far off lies your power!  
*Sal.* Nor near nor farther off, my gracious  
lord.

Than this weak arm: discomfort guides my  
tongue

And bids me speak of nothing but despair.

(One day too late, I fear me, noble lord,  
Hath clouded all thy happy days on earth:  
O, call back yesterday, bid time return,  
And thou shalt have twelve thousand fighting  
men! 70

To-day, to-day, unhappy day, too late,  
O'erthrows thy joys, friends, fortune and thy  
state:

For all the Welshmen, hearing thou wert dead,  
Are gone to Bolingbroke, dispersed and fled.

*Aum.* Comfort, my liege: why looks your  
grace so pale?

*K. Rich.* But now the blood of twenty thou-  
sand men

Did triumph in my face, and they are fled;  
And, till so much blood thither come again,  
Have I not reason to look pale and dead?

All souls that will be safe fly from my side, 80  
For time hath set a blot upon my pride.

*Aum.* Comfort, my liege: remember who  
you are.

*K. Rich.* I had forgot myself: am I not  
king?

Awake, thou coward majesty! thou sleepest.  
Is not the king's name twenty thousand names?

Arm, arm, my name! a puny subject strikes  
At thy great glory. Look not to the ground,  
Ye favourites of a king: are we not high?  
High be our thoughts: I know my uncle York  
Hath power enough to serve our turn. But who  
comes here? 90

*Enter SCROOP.*

*Scroop.* More health and happiness betide  
my liege

Than can my care-tuned tongue deliver him!

*K. Rich.* Mine ear is open and my heart  
prepared:

The worst is readily loss thou cannot unfold.  
Say, is my kingdom lost? why, 'twas my care;  
And what loss is it to be rid of care?  
Strives Bolingbroke to be as great as we?

Greater he shall not be; if he serve God,  
We'll serve Him too and be his fellow so:  
Revolt our subjects! that we cannot mend: 100  
They break their faith to God as well as us:  
Cry woe, destruction, ruin and decay:  
The worst is death, and death will have his day.

*Scroop.* Glad am I that your highness is so  
arm'd

To bear the tidings of calamity,  
Like an unseasonable stormy day,  
Which makes the silver rivers drown their  
shores,

As if the world were all dissolved to tears,  
So high above his limits swells the rage  
Of Bolingbroke, covering your fearful land: 110  
With hard bright steel and hearts harder than  
steel.

White-beards have arm'd their thin and hairless  
scalps

Against thy majesty; boys, with women's  
voices,

Strive to speak big and clap their female joints  
In stiff unwieldy arms against thy crown:  
Thy very beadsmen learn to bend their bows  
Of double-fatal yew against thy state;

Yea, distaff-women manage rusty bills  
Against thy seat: both young and old rebel,  
And all goes worse than I have power to tell. 120

*K. Rich.* Too well, too well thou tell'st a  
tale so ill.

Where is the Earl of Wiltshire? where is Bagot?  
What is become of Bushy? where is Green?

That they have let the dangerous enemy  
Measure our confines with each peaceful step?

If we prevail, their heads shall pay for it;  
I warrant they have made peace with Boling-  
broke.

*Scroop.* Peace have they made with him  
indeed, my lord.

*K. Rich.* O villains, vipers, damn'd without  
redemption!

Dogs, easily won to fawn on any man! 130  
Snakes, in my heart-blood warm'd, that sting  
my heart!

Three Judases, each one thrice worse than  
Judas!

Would they make peace? terrible hell make war  
Upon their spotted souls for this offence!

*Scroop.* Sweet love, I see, changing his  
property,

Turns to the sourest and most deadly hate:  
Again unseams their souls; their peace is made  
With heads, and not with hands: those whom  
you curse

Have felt the worst of death's destroying wound  
And lie full low, grav'd in the hollow ground.

*Aum.* Is Bushy, Green, and the Earl of  
Wiltshire dead? 140

*Scroop.* Ay, all of them at Bristol lost their  
heads.

*Aum.* Where is the duke my father with his  
power?

*K. Rich.* No matter where; of comfort no  
man speak:

Let's talk of graves, of worms and epitaphs;  
Make dust our paper and with mining eyes  
Write censure on the bones of the earth.  
Let's choose executors and talk of wills:

And yet not so, for what can we bequeath  
Save our deposed bodies to the ground? 150  
Our lands, our lives and all are Bolingbroke's,  
And nothing can we call our own but death  
And that small model of the barren earth  
Which serves as paste and cover to our bones.  
For God's sake, let us sit upon the ground  
And tell sad stories of the death of kings:  
How some have been deposed; some slain in  
war;

Some haunted by the ghosts they have deposed;  
Some poison'd by their wives; some sleeping  
kill'd;

All murder'd: for within the hollow crown 160

That rounds the mortal temples of a king

Keeps Death his court and there the antic sits,

Scolding his state and grinning at his pomp,

Allowing him a breath, a little scene,

To monarchize, be fear'd and kill with looks,

Infusing him with self and vain conceit,

As if this flesh which walls about our life

Were brass impregnable, and humour'd thus

Comes at the last and with a little pin 165

Bore through his castle wall, and farewell king!

Cover your heads and mock not flesh and blood

With solemn reverence: throw away respect,

Tradition, form and ceremonious duty,

For you have but mistook me all this while:

I live with bread like you, feel want,

Taste grief, need friends: subjected thus,

How can you say to me, I am a king?

*Car.* My lord, wise men ne'er sit and wail

their woes,

But presently prevent the ways to wail.

To fear the foe, since fear oppresseth strength,

Gives in your weakness strength unto your 171

foe,

And so your follies fight against yourself.

Fear, and be slain; no worse can come to fight:

And fight and die is death destroying death;

Where fearing dying pays death servile breath.

*Aum.* My father hath a power; inquire of

him,

And learn to make a body of a limb.

*K. Rich.* Thou chidest me well: proud

Bolingbroke, I come

To change blows with thee for our day of doom.

Thisague fit of fear is over-blown; 190

An easy task it is to win our own.

*Say.* Scroop, where lies our uncle with his power?

*Speak sweetly, man, although thy looks be sour.*

*Scroop.* Men judge by the complexion of the

sky

The state and inclination of the day:

So say you by my dull and heavy eye.

My tongue hath but a heavier tale to say.

I play the torturer, by small and small

To lengthen out the worst that must be spoken:

Your uncle York is join'd with Bolingbroke, 200

And all your northern castles yielded up.

And all your southern gentlemen in arms

Upon his party.

*K. Rich.* Thou hast said enough.

Behow thee, cousin, which didst lead me forth

[To Aumerle.]

Of that sweet way I was in to despair!

What say you now! what comfort have we

now?

By heaven, I'll hate him everlastingly

That bids me be of comfort any more.

Go to Flint castle: there I'll pine away;

A king, woe's slave, shall kingly woe obey. 210

That power I have, discharge; and let them go

To ear the land that hath some hope to grow,

For I have none: let no man speak again

To alter this, for counsel is but vain.

*Aum.* My liege, one word.

*K. Rich.* He does me double wrong

That wounds me with the flatteries of his

tongue.

Discharge my followers: let them hence away,

From Richard's night to Bolingbroke's fair day.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III. Wales. Before Flint castle.

*Enter, with drum and colours, BOLINGBROKE,*

*YORK, NORTHUMBERLAND, Attendants, and*

*forces.*

*Boling.* So that by this intelligence we learn:

The Welshmen are dispers'd, and Salisbury

is gone to meet the king, who lately landed

With some few private friends upon this coast

*North.* The news is very fair and good, my

lord;

Richard not far from hence hath hid his head.

*York.* It would beseem the Lord Northum-

berland

To say 'King Richard': slack the heavy day

When such a sacred king should hide his head!

*North.* Your grace mistakes; only to be

brief,

Left I his title out.

*York.* The time hath been,

Would you have been so brief with him, he

would

Have been so brief with you, to shorten you,

For taking so the head, your whole head's

length.

*Boling.* Mistake not, uncle, further than you

should.

*York.* Take not, good cousin, further than

you should.

Lest you mistake the heavens as o'er our heads.

*Boling.* I know it, uncle, and oppose not

myself

Against their will. But who comes here?

*Enter PERCY.*

Welcome, Harry: what, will not this castle

yield? 20

*Percy.* The castle royally is mann'd, my lord,

Against thy entrance.

*Boling.* Royally!

Why, it contains no king?

*Percy.* Yes, my good lord,

It doth contain a king: King Richard lies

Within the limits of yon lime and stone:

And with him are the Lord Aumerle, Lord

Salisbury,

Sir Stephen Scroop, besides a clergyman

Of holy reverence; who, I cannot learn.

*North.* O, be like it is the Bishop of Carlisle.

*Boling.* Noble lords,

Go to the rude ribs of that ancient castle; 21

Through brazen trumpet send the breath of  
parley  
Into his ruin'd ears, and thus deliver :

Henry Bolingbroke

On both his knees doth kiss King Richard's  
hand

And sends allegiance and true faith of heart  
To his most royal person, hither come  
Even at his feet to lay my arms and power,  
Provided that my banishment repeal'd 40  
And lands restored again be freely granted :  
If not, I'll use the advantage of my power  
And lay the summer's dust with showers of  
blood

Rain'd from the wounds of slaughter'd English-  
men :

The which, how far off from the mind of  
Bolingbroke

It is, such crimson tempest should bedrench  
The fresh green lip of fair King Richard's land,  
My stooping duty tenderly shall show.

Go, signify as much, while here we march  
Upon the grassy carpet of this plain. 50

Let's march without the noise of threatening  
drum,

That from this castle's tatter'd battlements  
Our fair appointments may be well perused.  
Methinks King Richard and myself should  
meet

With no less terror than the elements  
Of fire and water, when their thundering shock  
At meeting tears the cloudy cheeks of heaven.  
Be he the fire, I'll be the yielding water :  
The rage be his, whilst on the earth I rain  
My waters ; on the earth, and not on him. 60  
March on, and mark King Richard how he  
looks.

*Parle without, and answer within. Then a  
Mourner. Enter on the walls, KING RICHARD,  
the BISHOP OF CARLISLE, AUMERLE, SCROOP,  
and SALISBURY.*

See, see, King Richard doth himself appear,  
As doth the blushing discontented sun  
From out the fiery portal of the east,  
When he perceives the envious clouds are bent  
To dim his glory and to stain the track  
Of his bright passage to the occident.

York. Yet looks he like a king : behold,  
his eye,

As bright as is the eagle's, lightens forth  
Controlling majesty : alack, alack, for woe, 70  
That any harm should stain so fair a show !

K. Rich. We are amazed ; and thus long  
have we stood

To watch the fearful bending of thy knee.

*(To North.)*

Because we thought ourself thy lawful king :  
And if we be, how dare thy joints forget

To pay their awful duty to our presence ?  
If we be not, show us the hand of God

That hath dismiss'd us from our stewardship ;  
For well we know, no hand of blood and bone

Can gripe the sacred handle of our sceptre, 80  
Unless he do profane, steal, or usurp.

And though you think that all, as you have  
done,

Have torn their souls by turning them from us,  
And we are barren and bereft of friends ;

Yet know, my master, God omnipotent,  
Is mustering in his clouds on our behalf

Armies of pestilence ; and they shall strike  
Your children yet unborn and unbegot

That lift your vassal hands against my head  
And threat the glory of my precious crown. 90

Tell Bolingbroke—for yond methinks he  
stands—

That every stride he makes upon my land  
Is dangerous treason : he is come to open

The purple testament of bleeding war ;

Change the complexion of her maid-pale peace  
To scarlet indignation and bedew

Her pastures' grass with faithful English blood.  
*North. The king of heaven forbid our lord*

the king 101

Should so with civil and uncivil arms  
Be rush'd upon ! Thy thrice noble cousin

Harry Bolingbroke doth humbly kiss thy hand ;  
And by the honourable tomb he swears,

That stands upon your royal grandsire's bones,  
And by the royalties of both your bloods,

Currents that spring from one most gracious  
head,

And by the buried hand of warlike Gaunt,  
And by the worth and honour of himself, 110

Comprising all that may be sworn or said,  
His coming hinter hath no further scope

Than for his lineal royalties and to beg  
Enfranchisement immediate on his knees :

Which on thy royal party granted once,  
His glittering arms he will commend to rust,

His barbed steeds to stables, and his heart  
To faithful service of your majesty.

This swears he, as he is a prince, is just ;  
And, as I am a gentleman, I credit him. 120

K. Rich. Northumberland, say thus the  
king returns :

His noble cousin is right welcome hither ;  
And all the number of his fair demands

Shall be accomplish'd without contradiction :  
With all the gracious utterance thou hast

Speak to his gentle hearing kind commands.  
We do debase ourselves, cousin, do we not,

*(To Aumerle.)*

To look so poorly and to speak so fair ?  
Shall we call back Northumberland, and send

Defiance to the traitor, and so die ? 130

Aum. No, good my lord ; let's fight with  
gentle words

Till time lend friends and friends their helpful  
swords.

K. Rich. O God, O God ! that's this  
tongue of mine,

That laid the sentence of dread banishment  
On yon proud man, should take it off again

With words of sooth ! O that I were as great  
As is my grief, or lesser than my name !

Or that I could forget what I have been,  
Or not remember what I must be now !

Swell at thou, proud heart ! I'll give thee scope  
to beat, 140

Since thou have scope to beat both thee and me.

*Alcon.* Northumberland comes back from Bolingbroke.

*K. Rich.* What must the king do now? must he submit?

The king shall do it: must he be deposed?  
The king shall be contented: must he lose  
The name of king? O God's name, let it go:  
I'll give my jewels for a set of beads,  
My gorgeous palace for a hermitage,  
My gay apparel for an almsman's gown,  
My figured goblets for a dish of wood,  
My sceptre for a palmer's walking-staff,  
My subjects for a pair of carved saints  
And my large kingdom for a little grave,  
A little little grave, an obscure grave;  
Or I'll be buried in the king's highway,  
Some way of common trade, where subjects' feet

May hourly trample on their sovereign's head;  
For on my heart they tread now whilst I live;  
And buried once, why not upon my head?  
*Ammeric.* thou weep'st, my tender-hearted cousin!  
We'll make foul weather with despaired tears;  
Our sighs and they shall lodge the summer corn.

And make a dearth in this revolting land.  
Or shall we play the wantons with our woes,  
And make some pretty match with shedding tears?  
As thus, to drop them still upon one place,  
Till they have fretted us a pair of graves  
Within the earth; and, therein laid,—there lies  
Two kinsmen digg'd their graves with weeping eyes.

Would not this ill do well? Well, well, I see  
I talk but folly, and you laugh at me.  
Most mighty prince, my Lord Northumberland,  
What says King Bolingbroke? will his majesty  
Give Richard leave to live till Richard die?  
You make a leg, and Bolingbroke says ay.

*North.* My lord, in the base court he doth attend  
To speak with you; may it please you to come down.

*K. Rich.* Down, down I come; like glittering Phaethon,  
Wanting the manage of unruly jades.

In the base court! Base court, where kings grow base,  
To come at traitors' calls and do them grace.

In the base court! Come down! Down, court! down, king!

For night-owls shriek where mounting larks should sing.

*Boling.* What says his majesty?

*North.* Sorrow and grief of heart  
Makes him speak fondly, like a frantic man:  
Yet he is come.

*Enter KING RICHARD and his attendants below.*

*Boling.* Stand all apart,  
And show fair duty to his majesty.

*[He kneels down.]*  
*Rich.* Fair cousin, you debase your majesty knee

To make the base earth proud with kissing it:  
Me rather had my heart might feel your love  
Than my unpleased eye see your courtesy.  
Up, cousin, up; your heart is up, I know,  
Thus high at least, although your knee be low.

*Boling.* My gracious lord, I come but for mine own.

*K. Rich.* Your own is yours, and I am yours, and all.

*Boling.* So far be mine, my most adoubted lord,

As my true service shall deserve your love.

*K. Rich.* Well you deserve: they well deserve to have,

That know the strong'st and surest way to get.  
Uncle, give me your hands: nay, dry your eyes;  
Tears show their love, but want their remedies.  
Cousin, I am too young to be your father,  
Though you are old enough to be my heir.

What you will have, I'll give, and willing too;  
For do we must what force will have us do.  
Set on towards London, cousin, is it so?

*Boling.* Yea, my good lord.

*K. Rich.* Then I must not say no.  
*[Flourish. Exeunt.]*

SCENE IV. *Langley. The DUKE OF YORK's garden.*

*Enter the QUEEN and two Ladies.*

*Queen.* What sport shall we devise here in this garden,

To drive away the heavy thought of care?

*Lady.* Madam, we'll play at bowls.

*Queen.* 'Twill make me think the world is full of rubs,

And that my fortune runs against the bias.

*Lady.* Madam, we'll dance.

*Queen.* My legs can keep no measure in delight,

When my poor heart no measure keeps in grief:  
Therefore, no dancing, girl; some other sport.

*Lady.* Madam, we'll tell tales.

*Queen.* Of sorrow or of joy?

*Lady.* Queen, Of either, madam.

*Queen.* Of neither, girl:  
For if of joy, being altogether wanting,  
It doth remember me the more of sorrow;  
Or if of grief, being altogether had,  
It adds more sorrow to my want of joy:

For what I have I need not to repeat;  
And what I want it boots not to complain.

*Lady.* Madam, I'll sing.

*Queen.* 'Tis well that thou hast cause;  
But thou shouldst please me better, wouldst thou weep.

*Lady.* I could weep, madam, would it do you good.

*Queen.* And I could sing, would weeping do me good,  
And never borrow any tear of thee.

*Enter a Gardener, and two Servants.*

But stay, here come the gardeners:  
Let's step into the shadow of these trees.  
My wretchedness unto a row of plants.  
They'll talk of state; for every one hath as

## SCENE IV]

## KING RICHARD II

Against a change; woe is forerun with woe.

*[Queen and Ladies retire.]*

*Gard.* Go, bind thou up yon dangling apricocks,

Which, like unruly children, make their sire so  
Stoop with oppression of their prodigal weight:

Give some supportance to the bending twigs.  
(Go thou, and like an executioner,

Cut off the heads of too fast growing sprays,  
That look too lofty in our commonwealth:

All must be even in our government.

You thus employ'd, I will go root away

The noisome weeds, which without profit suck  
The soil's fertility from wholesome flowers.

*Serv.* Why should we in the compass of a  
pale

Keep law and form and due proportion,  
showing, as in a model, our firm estate,

When our sea-walled garden, the whole land,  
Is full of weeds, her fairest flowers choked up,

Her fruit trees all unpruned, her hedges ruin'd,  
Her kuots disorder'd and her wholesome herbs

Swarming with caterpillars?

*Gard.* Hold thy peace:  
He that hath suffer'd this disorder'd spring

Hath now himself met with the fall of leaf:

The weeds which his broad-spreading leaves did  
shelter,

That seem'd in eating him to hold him up,

Are pluck'd up root and all by Bolingbroke,

I mean the Earl of Wiltshire, Husky, Green.

*Serv.* What, are they dead?

*Gard.* They are; and Bolingbroke  
Hath seized the wasteful king. O, what pity

is it  
That he had not so trimm'd and dress'd his  
land

As we this garden! We at time of year  
do wound the bark, the skin of our fruit-trees,

Least, being over-proud in sap and blood,  
With too much riches it confound itself:

Had he done so to greet and growing men,  
They might have lived to bear and he to taste

Their fruits of duty: superfluous branches  
We lop away, that bearing boughs may live:

Had he done so, himself had borne the crown,  
Which waste of idle hours hath quite thrown

down.

*Serv.* What, think you then the king shall  
be deposed?

*Gard.* Depress'd he is already, and deposed  
Th' doubt he will be: letters came last night

To a dear friend of the good Duke of York's, so  
That tell black tidings.

*Queen.* O, I am press'd to death through  
want of speaking! *[Coming forward.]*

Thou, old Adam's likeness, set to dress this  
garden,

How darest thy harsh rude tongue sound this  
unpleasing news?

What Eve, what serpent, hath suggested thee  
To make a second fall of cursed man?

Why dost thou say King Richard is deposed?

Darest thou, show little better thing than earth,  
Divine his downfall? Say, where, when, and

how.

Canst thou by this ill tidings? speak, thou  
wretch.

*Gard.* Pardon me, madam: little joy  
have I

To breathe this news; yet what I say is true.  
King Richard, he is in the mighty hold

Of Bolingbroke: their fortunes both are  
weigh'd:

In your lord's scale is nothing but himself,  
And some few vanities that make him light;

But in the balance of great Bolingbroke,  
Besides himself, are all the English peers,

And with that odds he weighs King Richard  
down.

Post you to London, and you will find it so; so  
I speak no more than every one doth know.

*Queen.* Nimble mischance, that art so light  
of foot,

Doth not thy embassy belong to me,

And am I last that knows it? O, thou think'st  
To serve me last, that I may longest keep

Thy sorrow in my breast. Come, ladies, go,  
To meet at London London's king in woe.

What, was I born to this, that my sad look  
Should grace the triumph of great Bolingbroke?

Gentle, for telling me these news of woe, too  
I pray God the plants thou graft'st may never

grow. *[Exeunt Queen and Ladies.]*

*Gard.* Poor queen! so that thy state might  
be no worse,

I would my skill were subject to thy curse.

Here did she fall a tear; here in this place

I'll set a bank of rue, sour herb of grace:

Rue, even for ruth, here shortly shall be seen,  
In the remembrance of a weeping queen.

*[Exeunt.]*

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I. Westminster Hall.

*Enter, as to the Parliament, BOLINGBROKE,  
AUMERLE, NORTHUMBERLAND, BAGOT,  
FITZWATER, SURREY, the BISHOP OF CAR-  
LISLE, the ABBOT OF WESTMINSTER, and  
another Lord, Herald, Officers, and Bagot.*

*Boling.* Call forth Bagot.

Now, Bagot, freely speak thy mind:

What thou dost know of noble Gloucester's  
death,

Who wrought it with the king, and who  
performed

The bloody office of his timeless end.

*Bagot.* Then set before my face the Lord  
Aumerle.

*Boling.* Cousin, stand forth, and look upon  
that man.

*Bagot.* My Lord Aumerle, I know your  
daring tongue

Scorns to unsay what once it hath deliver'd.

In that dead time when Gloucester's death was  
plotted,

I heard you say, 'Is not my arm of length  
That reacheth from the restless English coast

As far as Calais, to mine uncle's head?'

Amongst much other talk, that very time,  
I heard you say that you had rather return

The offer of an hundred thousand crowns  
Than Bolingbroke's return to England.

Adding withal, how blest this land would be  
In this your cousin's death.

*Aum.* Princes and noble lords,  
What answer shall I make to this base man? so  
Shall I so much dishonour my fair stars,  
On equal terms to give him chastisement?  
Either I must, or have mine honour soil'd  
With the attainer of his slanderous lips.  
There is my gage, the manual seal of death,  
That marks thee out for hell: I say, thou liest,  
And will maintain what thou hast said is false  
In thy heart-blood, though being all too base  
To stain the temper of my knightly sword.

*Boling.* Bagot, forbear; thou shalt not take  
it up.

*Aum.* Excepting one, I would he were the  
best.

In all this presence that hath moved me so.

*Fitz.* If that thy valour stand on sympathy,  
There is my gage, Aumerle, in gage to thine:  
By that fair sun which shows me where thou  
stand'st,

I heard thee say, and vauntingly thou spakest it,  
That thou wert cause of noble Gloucester's  
death.

If thou deny'st it twenty times, thou liest;  
And I will turn thy falsehood to thy heart,  
Where it was forged, with my rapier's point.

*Aum.* Thou dar'st not, coward, live to see  
that day.

*Fitz.* Now, by my soul, I would it were this  
hour.

*Aum.* Fitzwater, thou art damn'd to hell  
for this.

*Percy.* Aumerle, thou liest; his honour is  
as true.

In this appeal as thou art all unjust;  
And that thou art so, there I throw my gage;  
To prove it on thee to the extremest point  
Of mortal breathing: seize it, if thou dar'st.

*Aum.* An if I do not, may my hands rot off  
And never brandish more revengeful steel  
Over the glittering helmet of my foe!

*Another Lord.* I task the earth to the like,  
forsworn Aumerle;

And spur thee on with full as many lies  
As may be hollock'd in thy treacherous ear  
From sun to sun: there is my honour's pawn;  
— it to the trial, if thou dar'st.

*A.* Who sets me else? by heaven, I'll  
throw at all:

I have a thousand spirits in one breast,  
To answer twenty thousand such as you.

*Surrey.* My Lord Fitzwater, I do remember  
well

The very time Aumerle and you did talk.  
*Fitz.* 'Tis very true: you were in presence  
then:

And you can witness with me this is true.  
*Surrey.* As false, by heaven, as heaven  
itself is true.

*Fitz.* Surrey, thou liest.

*Surrey.* Dishonourable boy!

That he shall be so heavy on my sword,  
That he shall render vengeance and revenge  
on the be-giver and that he do lie  
as quiet as thy father's skull;  
I warrant, there is my honour's pawn;

Engage it to the trial, if thou dar'st.

*Fitz.* How fondly dost thou spur a forward  
horse!

If I dare eat, or drink, or breathe, or live,  
I dare meet Surrey in a wilderness,  
And spit upon him, whilst I say he lies.  
And lies, and lies: there is my bond of faith,  
To tie thee to my strong correction.  
As I intend to thrive in this new world,  
Aumerle is guilty of my true appeal;  
Besides, I heard the banish'd Norfolk say  
That thou, Aumerle, didst send two of thy men  
To execute the noble duke at Calais.

*Aum.* Some honest Christian trust me with  
a gage.

That Norfolk lies: here do I throw down this,  
If he may be repeal'd, to try his honour.

*Boling.* These differences shall all rest under  
gage.

Till Norfolk be repeal'd: repeal'd he shall be,  
And, though mine enemy, restored again  
To all his lands and signories: when he's  
return'd,

Against Aumerle we will enforce his trial.

*Car.* That honourable day shall ne'er  
seen.

Many a time hath banish'd Norfolk fought  
For Jesu Christ in glorious Christian field,  
Streaming the ensign of the Christian cross  
Against black pagans, Turks, and Saracens;  
And toil'd with works of war, retired himself  
To Italy; and there at Venice gave  
His body to that pleasant country's earth,  
And his pure soul unto his captain Christ,  
On ler whose colours he had fought so long.

*Boling.* Why, bishop, is Norfolk dead?

*Car.* As surely as I live, my lord.

*Boling.* Sweet peace conduct his sweet soul  
to the known

Of good old Abraham! Lords appellants,

Your differences shall all rest under gage  
Till we assign you to your days of trial.

*Enter YORK, attended.*

*York.* Great Duke of Lancaster, I come to  
thee

From plume-pluck'd Richard; who with willing  
soul

Adopts thee heir, and his high sceptre yields  
To the possession of thy royal hand:

Ascend his throne, descending now from him;  
And long live Henry, fourth of that name!

*Boling.* In God's name, I'll ascend the regal  
throne.

*Car.* Marry, God forbid!

Worst in this royal presence may I speak,  
Yet best becoming me to speak the truth.

Would God that any in this noble presence  
Were enough noble to be upright judge

Of noble Richard; then true nobles would  
Learn him forbearance from so foul a wrong:

What subject can give sentence on his king?  
And who sits here that is not Richard's subject?

Thieves are not judged but they are by law;  
Although apparent guilt be seen in them;

And shall the figure of God's majesty,  
His captain, steward, deputy-claim,  
Anointed, crowned, planted many years,



Be judged by subject and inferior breath,  
And he himself not present? O, forfend it,  
God.

That in a Christian climate souls refined 130  
Should show so heinous, black, obscene a deed!  
I speak to subjects, and a subject speaks,  
Stirr'd up by God, thus boldly for his king.  
My Lord of Hereford here, whom you call king,  
Is a foul traitor to proud Hereford's king:  
And if you crown him, let me prophesy:  
The blood of English shall manure the ground,  
And future ages groan for this foul act;  
Peace shall go sleep with Turks and infidels,  
And in this seat of peace tumultuous wars 140  
Shall kind with kin and kind with kind  
confound;

Disorder, horror, fear and mutiny  
Shall here inhabit, and this land be call'd  
The field of Golgotha and dead men's skulls.  
O, if you raise this house against this house,  
It will the woe fullest division prove  
That ever fell upon this cursed earth.  
Prevent it, resist it, let it not be so,  
Least, woe! child's children, cry against you  
'woe!'

*North.* Well have you argued, sir; and, for  
your pains, 150

Of capital treason we arrest you here.  
My Lord of Westminster, be it your charge  
To keep him safely till his day of trial.  
May it please you, lords, to grant the commons'  
suit.

*Boling.* Fetch hither Richard, that in com-  
mon view

He may surrender; so we shall proceed  
Without suspicion.

*York.* I will be his conduct. [*Exit.*]  
*Boling.* Lords, you that here are under our  
arrest,

Procure your sureties for your days of answer.  
Little are we beholding to your love, 160  
And little look'd for at your helping hands.

*Re-enter YORK, with RICHARD, and Officers  
bearing the regalia.*

*K. Rich.* Alack, why am I sent for to a king,  
Before I have shook off the regal thoughts  
Wherewith I reign'd? I hardly yet have learn'd  
To insinuate, flatter, bow, and bend my limbs:  
(Give sorrow leave awhile to tutor me  
To this submission. Yet I well remember  
The favours of these men: were they not mine?  
Did they not sometime cry, 'all hail!' to me?  
So Judas did to Christ: but he, in twelve, 170  
Found truth in all but one; I, in twelve  
thousand, none.

God save the king! Will no man say amen?  
Am I both priest and clerk? Well then, amen.  
God save the king! although I be not he;  
And yet, amen, if heaven do think him me.  
To do what service am I sent for hither?

*York.* To do that office of thine own good  
will

Which thine majesty did make thee offer,  
The resignation of thy state and crown  
To Henry Bolingbroke. 180

*K. Rich.* Give me the crown. Here, cousin,  
seize the crown;

Here, cousin;  
On this side my hand, and on that side yours.  
Now is this golden crown like a deep well  
That owes two buckets, filling one another,  
The emptier ever dancing in the air,  
The other down, unseen and full of water:  
That bucket down and full of tears am I,  
Drinking my griefs, whilst you mount up on  
high.

*Boling.* I thought you had been willing to  
resign. 190

*K. Rich.* My crown I am; but still my griefs  
are mine:

You may my glories and my state depose,  
But not my griefs; still am I king of those.

*Boling.* Part of your cares you give me with  
your crown.

*K. Rich.* Your cares set up do not pluck my  
cares down.

My care is loss of care, by old care done;  
Your care is gain of care, by new care won:  
The cares I give I have, though given away;  
They tend the crown, yet still with me they  
stay.

*Boling.* Are you contented to resign the  
crown? 200

*K. Rich.* Ay, no; no, ay; for I must  
nothing be;

Therefore no no, for I resign to thee.  
Now mark me, how I will undo myself:  
I give this heavy weight from off my head  
And this unwieldy sceptre from my hand,  
The pride of kingly sway from out my heart;  
With mine own tears I wash away my balm,  
With mine own hands I give away my crown,  
With mine own tongue deny my sacred state,  
With mine own breath release all duty's rites:  
All pomp and majesty I do forswear;  
My manors, rents, revenues I forego; 210  
My acts, decrees, and statutes I deny:  
(God pardon all oaths that are broke to me!)  
(God keep all vows unbroke that swear to thee!)  
Make me, that nothing have, with nothing  
grieved,

And thou with all pleased, that hast all  
achieved!

Long mayst thou live in Richard's seat to sit,  
And soon lie Richard in an earthy pit! 220  
God save King Harry, unking'd Richard says,  
And send him many years of sunshine days!  
What more remains?

*North.* No more, but that you read  
These accusations and these grievous crimes  
Committed by your person and your followers  
Against the state and profit of this land;

That, by confessing them, the souls of men  
May deem that you are worthily deposed.

*K. Rich.* Must I do so? and must I moral  
out

My weaved-up folly! Gentle Northumberland,  
If thy offences were upon record, 230

Would it not shame thee in so fair a troop  
To read a lecture of them? If thou wouldst,

There shouldst thou find one heinous article,  
Containing the deposing of a king

And cracking the strong warrant of an oath.  
Mark'd with a blot, damn'd in the book of  
heaven:

Nay, all of you that stand and look upon,  
Whilst that my wretchedness doth bait myself,  
Through some of you with Pilate wash your  
hands

Showing an outward pity; yet you Pilates  
Have here deliver'd me to my sour cross,  
And water cannot wash away your sin.

*North.* My lord, dispatch; read o'er these  
articles.

*K. Rich.* Mine eyes are full of tears, I cannot see:

And yet salt water blinds them not so much  
But they can see a sort of traitors here.  
Nay, if I turn mine eyes upon myself,  
I find myself a traitor with the rest;  
For I have given here my soul's consent  
To undeck the pompous body of a king; 250  
Made glory base and sovereignty a slave,  
Proud majesty a subject, state a peasant.

*North.* My lord,  
*K. Rich.* No lord of thine, thou haught insulting man,

Nor no man's lord; I have no name, no title,  
No, not that name was given me at the font.  
But 'tis usurp'd: alack the heavy day,  
That I have worn so many winters out,  
And know not now what name to call myself!  
O that I were a mockery king of snow, 250  
Standing before the sun of Bolingbroke,  
To melt myself away in water-drops!  
Good king, great king, and yet not greatly good,  
An if my word be sterling yet in England,  
Let it command a mirror hither straight,  
That it may show me what a face I have,  
Since it is bankrupt of his majesty.

*Boling.* Go some of you and fetch a looking-glass. [*Exit an attendant.*]

*North.* Read o'er this paper while the glass doth come.

*K. Rich.* Friend, thou torment'st me ere I come to hell!

*Boling.* Urge it no more, my Lord Northumberland.

*North.* The commons will not then be satisfied.

*K. Rich.* They shall be satisfied: I'll read enough.

When I do see the very book indeed  
Where all my sins are writ, and that's myself.

*Re-enter Attendant, with a glass.*  
Give me the glass, and therein will I read.  
No deeper wrinkles yet! hath sorrow struck  
So many blows upon this face of mine,  
And made no deeper wounds? O flattering glass,  
Like to my followers in prosperity, 250  
Thou dost beguile me! Was this face the face  
That every day under his household roof  
Did keep ten thousand men? was this the face  
That like the sun did make beholders wink?  
Was this the face that fann'd so many follies,  
And was at last out-faced by Bolingbroke?  
A little glory slipper in this face:  
As little as the glory in the face;

[*Dashes the glass against the ground.*  
For thus it is, crack'd in a hundred shivers,  
Like to my king, the moral of this sport, 250  
Hath made my sorrow hath destroy'd my face.

*Boling.* The shadow of your sorrow hath destroy'd  
The shadow of your face.

*K. Rich.* Say that again.  
The shadow of my sorrow! ha! let a see:  
'Tis very true, my grief lies all within;  
And these external manners of lamentation  
Are merely shadows to the unseen grief  
That swells with silence in the tortured soul;  
There lies the substance: and I thank thee,  
king,

For thy great bounty, that not only gives  
Me cause to wail but teachest me the way  
How to lament the cause. I'll beg one boon,  
And then be gone and trouble you no more.  
Shall I obtain it?

*Boling.* Name it, fair cousin.  
*K. Rich.* 'Fair cousin'! I am greater than  
a king;

For when I was a king, my flatterers  
Were then but subjects; being now a subject,  
I have a king here to my flatterer.  
Being so great, I have no need to beg.

*Boling.* Yet ask. 310

*K. Rich.* And shall I have!

*Boling.* You shall.

*K. Rich.* Then give me leave to go.

*Boling.* Whither?

*K. Rich.* Whither you will, so I were from  
your sights.

*Boling.* Go, some of you convey him to the  
Tower.

*K. Rich.* O, good! convey! conveyers are  
you all,

That rise thus nimble by a true king's fall.

[*Exeunt King Richard, some Lords,  
and a Guard.*]

*Boling.* On Wednesday next we solemnly  
set down

Our coronation: lords, prepare yourselves. 320  
[*Exeunt all except the Bishop of Carlisle, the  
Abbot of Westminster, and Aumerle.*]

*Abbot.* A woful pageant have we here be-  
held.

*Car.* The woe's to come; the children yet  
unborn

Shall feel this day as sharp to them as thorn.

*Aumerle.* You holy clergymen, is there no plot  
To rid the realm of this pernicious blot?

*Abbot.* My lord,

Before I freely speak my mind herein,  
You shall not only take the sacrament

To bury mine intents, but also to effect  
Whatever I shall happen to devise. 330

I see your brows are full of discontent,  
Your hearts of sorrow and your eyes of tears:

Come home with me to supper; and I'll lay  
A plot shall show us all a merry day. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

SCENE I. *London. A street leading to the  
Tower.*

*Enter QUEEN and Ladies.*

*Queen.* This way the king will come; this is  
the way

To Julius Caesar's ill-constituted tower,  
To whose flint bosom my embowell'd lord

Is doom'd a prisoner by proud Bolingbroke :  
Here let us rest, if this rebellious earth  
Have any resting for her true king's queen.

*Enter RICHARD and Guard.*

But soft, but see, or rather do not see,  
My fair rose wither : yet look up, behold,  
That you in pity may dissolve to dew, 9  
And wash him fresh again with true-love tears.  
Ah, thou, the model where old Troy did stand,  
Thou map of honour, thou King Richard's  
tomb,

And not King Richard ; thou most beauteous  
inn,  
Why should hard-favour'd grief be lodged in  
thee.

When triumph is become an alehouse guest !

*K. Rich.* Join not with grief, fair woman,  
do not so,

To make my end too sudden : learn, good soul,  
To think our former state a happy dream ;  
From which awaked, the truth of what we are  
Shows us but this : I am sworn brother, sweet,  
To grim Necessity, and he and I 21  
Will keep a league till death. Hie thee to

France

And cloister thee in some religious house :  
Our holy lives must win a new world's crown,  
Which our profane hours here have stricken  
down.

*Queen.* What, is my Richard both in shape  
and mind  
Transform'd and weaken'd ? hath Bolingbroke  
deposed

Thine intellect ? hath he been in thy heart ?  
The lion dying thrusteth forth his paw,  
And wounds the earth, if nothing else, with  
rage 30

To be o'erpower'd ; and wilt thou, pupil-like,  
Take thy correction mildly, kiss the rod,  
And fawn on rage with base humility,  
Which art a lion and a king of beasts ?

*K. Rich.* A king of beasts, indeed ; if aught  
but beasts.

I had been still a happy king of men.  
Good sometime queen, prepare thee hence for  
France :

Think I am dead and that even here thou  
takest,  
As from my death-bed, thy last living leave.  
In winter's tedious nights sit by the fire 40  
With good old folks and let them tell thee  
tales

(Of woful ages long ago betid ;  
And ere thou bid good night, to quill their  
griefs.

Tell thou the lamentable tale of me  
And send the hearers weeping to their beds :  
For why, the senseless brands will sympathize  
The heavy accent of thy moving tongue  
And in compassion weep the fire out ;  
And some will mourn in ashes, some coal-  
black.

For the deposing of a rightful king. 50

*Enter NORTHUMBERLAND and others.*

*North.* My lord, the mind of Bolingbroke is  
changed :

You must to Pomfret, not unto the Tower.

And, madam, there is order ta'en for you ;  
With all swift speed you must away to France.

*K. Rich.* Northumberland, thou ladder  
wherewithal

The mounting Bolingbroke ascends my throne,  
The time shall not be many hours of age  
More than it is ere foul sin gathering head  
Shall break into corruption : thou shalt think  
Though he divide the realm and give thee half,  
It is too little, helping him to all ; 61  
And he shall think that thou, which know'st  
the way

To plant unrightful kings, wilt know again,  
Being ne'er so little urged, another way  
To pluck him headlong from the usurped throne.  
The love of wicked men converts to fear ;  
That fear to hate, and hate turns one or both  
To worthy danger and deserved death.

*North.* My guilt be on my head, and there  
an end.

Take leave and part ; for you must part forth-  
with. 70

*K. Rich.* Doubly divorced ! Bad men, you  
violate

A twofold marriage, 'twixt my crown and me,  
And then betwixt me and my married wife.  
Let me unkins the oath 'twixt thee and me ;  
And yet not so, for with a kiss 'twas made.  
Part us, Northumberland ; I towards the north,  
Where shivering cold and sickness pines the  
clime ;

My wife to France : from whence, set forth in  
pomp,

She came adorned hither like sweet May,  
Sent back like Hallowmas or short'st of day. 80

*Queen.* And must we be divided ? must we  
part !

*K. Rich.* Ay, hand from hand, my love, and  
heart from heart.

*Queen.* Banish us both and send the king  
with me.

*North.* That were some love but little policy.

*Queen.* Then whither he goes, thither let  
me go.

*K. Rich.* So two, together weeping, make  
one woe.

Weep thou for me in France, I for thee here ;  
Better far off than near, be ne'er the near.

Go, count thy way with sighs ; I mine with  
groans.

*Queen.* So longest way shall have the longest  
moans. 90

*K. Rich.* Twice for one step I'll groan, the  
way being short.

And place the way out with a heavy heart.  
Come, come, in woeful sorrow let's be part.  
Since wedding it, there is such length in grief :  
One kiss shall stop our mouths, and dumbly  
part ;

Thus give I mine, and thus take I thy heart.

*Queen.* Give me mine own again ; 'twere no  
good part

To take on me to keep and kill thy heart.  
So, now I have mine own again, be gone.

That I may strive to kill it with a groan.

*K. Rich.* We make woe tedious  
long delay :

Once more, adieu; the rest let sorrow say.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *The Duke of York's palace.*

*Enter YORK and his DUCHESS.*

*Duch.* My lord, you told me you would tell the rest.

When weeping made you break the story off,  
Of our two cousins coming into London.

*York.* Where did I leave it?

*Duch.* At that sad stop, my lord,  
Where rude misgovern'd hands from windows' tops  
Threw dust and rubbish on King Richard's head.

*York.* Then, as I said, the duke, great Bolingbroke,  
Mounted upon a hot and fiery steed

Which his aspiring rider seem'd to know,  
With slow but stately pace kept on his course,  
Whilst all tongues cried 'God save thee, Bolingbroke!'

You would have thought the very windows spake,

So many greedy looks of young and old  
Through casements darted their desiring eyes  
Upon his visage, and that all the walls  
With painted imagery had said at once  
'Jean preserve thee! welcome, Bolingbroke!'

Whilst he, from the one side to the other turning,  
Bareheaded, lower than his proud steed's neck,  
Bespoke them thus: 'I thank you, countrymen.'

And thus still doing, thus he pass'd along.

*Duch.* Alack, poor Richard! where rode he the whilst?

*York.* As in a theatre, the eyes of men,  
After a well-graced actor leaves the stage,  
Are idly bent on him that enters next,  
Thinking his prattle to be tedious;  
Even so, or with much more contempt, men's eyes

Did snow on gentle Richard; no man cried  
'God save him!'

No joyful tongues gave him his welcome home;  
But dust was thrown upon his sacred head;

Which with such gentle sorrow he shook off,  
His face still combating with tears and smiles,  
The badges of his grief and patience,  
That had not God, for some strong purpose,  
steal'd

The hearts of men, they must perforce have melted

And barbarism itself have pitied him.

But heaven hath a hand in these events,  
To whose high will we bound our calm contents.

To Bolingbroke are we sworn subjects now,  
Whose state and honour I for aye allow.

*Duch.* Here comes my son Aumerle.

*York.* Aumerle that was;  
But that is lost for being Richard's friend.

And, madam, you must call him Rutland now;  
I am in parliament pledge for his truth  
And lasting fealty to the new made king.

*Enter AUMERLE.*

*Duch.* Welcome, my son; who are the violets now?

That strew the green lap of the new come spring!

*Aum.* Madam, I know not, nor I greatly care not;

God knows I had as lief be none as one.

*York.* Well, bear you well in this new spring of time,

Lest you be cropp'd before you come to prime.

What news from Oxford? hold those justs and triumphs!

*Aum.* For aught I know, my lord, they do.

*York.* You will be there, I know.

*Aum.* If God prevent not, I purpose so.

*York.* What seal is that, that hangs without thy bosom?

Yea, look'st thou pale? let me see the writing.

*Aum.* My lord, 'tis nothing.

*York.* No matter, then, who see it: I will be satisfied; let me see the writing.

*Aum.* I do beseech your grace to pardon me: it is a matter of small consequence,

Which for some reasons I would not have seen.

*York.* Which for some reasons, air, I mean to see.

I fear, I fear,—

*Duch.* What should you fear?

'Tis nothing but some bond, that he is enter'd into

For gay apparel 'gainst the triumph day.

*York.* Bound to himself! what doth he with a bond

That he is bound to? Wife, thou art a fool.

Boy, let me see the writing.

*Aum.* I do beseech you, pardon me; I may not show it.

*York.* I will be satisfied; let me see it, I say.

[*He plucks it out of his bosom and reads it.*]

Treason! foul treason! Villain! traitor! slave!

*Duch.* What is the matter, my lord?

*York.* Ho! who is within there?

*Enter a Servant.*

Saddle my horse.

God for his mercy, what treachery is here!

*Duch.* Why, what is it, my lord?

*York.* Give me my boots, I say; saddle my horse.

Now, by mine honour, by my life, by my troth, I will appeach the villain.

*Duch.* What is the matter?

*York.* Peace, foolish woman.

*Duch.* I will not peace. What is the matter.

*Aumerle!*

*Aum.* Good mother, be content; it is no more

Than my poor life must answer.

*Duch.* Thy life answer!

*York.* Bring me my boots: I will unto the king.

*Re-enter Servant with boots.*

*Duch.* Strike him, Aumerle. Poor boy, thou art amazed.

Hence, villain! never more come in my sight.

*York.* Give me my boots, I say.

*Duch.* Why, York, what wilt thou do?

Wilt thou not hide the trespass of thine own?

Have we more sons? or are we like to have? 90

Is not my teeming date drunk up with time?  
And wilt thou pluck my fair son from mine age,  
And rob me of a happy mother's name?  
Is he not like thee? is he not thine own?

*York.* Thou fond mad woman,  
Wilt thou conceal this dark conspiracy?  
A dozen of them here have ta'en the sacrament,  
And interchangeably set down their hands,  
To kill the king at Oxford.

*Duch.* He shall be none;  
We'll keep him here: then what is that to him?  
*York.* Away, fond woman! were he twenty  
times my son, 101

I would appeach him.

*Duch.* Hadst thou groan'd for him  
As I have done, thou wouldst be more pitiful.  
But now I know thy min: thou dost suspect  
That I have been disloyal to thy bed,  
And that he is a bastard, not thy son:  
Sweet York, sweet husband, be not of that  
mind:

He is as like thee as a man may be,  
Not like to me, or any of my kin,  
And yet I love him.

*York.* Make way, unruly woman! 110  
(*Exit.*)

*Duch.* After, Aumerle! mount thee upon  
his horse;

Spur post, and get before him to the king.  
And beg thy pardon ere he do accuse thee.  
I'll not be long behind; though I be old,  
I doubt not but to ride as fast as York:  
And never will I rise up from the ground  
Till Bolingbroke have pardon'd thee. Away, be  
gone! (*Exit.*)

### SCENE III. A royal palace.

Enter BOLINGBROKE, PERCY, and other Lords.

*Boling.* Can no man tell me of my unthrifty  
son?

Tis full three months since I did see him last:  
If any plague hang over us, 'tis he.

I would to God, my lords, he might be found:  
Inquire at London, amongst the taverns there,

For there, they say, he daily doth frequent,  
With unrestrained loose companions,

Even such, they say, as stand in narrow lanes,  
And beat our watch, and rob our passengers;

Which he, young wanton and effeminate boy,  
Takes on the point of honour to support 11

So dissolute a crew.

*Percy.* My lord, some two days since I saw  
the prince,

And told him of those triumphs held at Oxford.  
*Boling.* And what said the gallant?

*Percy.* His answer was, he would unto the  
news,

And from the common'st creature pluck a glove,  
And wear it as a favour; and with that

He would unhorse the lustiest challenger.  
*Boling.* As dissolute as desperate; yet through  
both 120

I see some sparks of better hope, which elder  
years

May happily bring forth. But who comes here?

Enter AUWERLE.

*Aum.* Where is the king?

*Boling.* What means our cousin, that he  
stares and looks

So wildly!

*Aum.* God save your grace! I do beseech  
your majesty,

To have some conference with your grace alone.  
*Boling.* Withdraw yourselves, and leave us  
here alone. (*Exit Percy and Lords.*)

What is the matter with our cousin now?  
*Aum.* For ever may my knees grow to the  
earth,

My tongue cleave to my roof within my mouth,  
Unless a pardon ere I rise or speak.

*Boling.* Intended or committed was this  
fault?

If on the first, how heinous e'er it be,  
To win thy after-love I pardon thee.

*Aum.* Then give me leave that I may turn  
the key,

That no man enter till my tale be done.  
*Boling.* Have thy desire.

*York.* [*Within*] My liege, beware; look to  
thyself;

Thou hast a traitor in thy presence there. 40  
*Boling.* Villain, I'll make thee safe.

[*Drawing.*]  
*Aum.* Stay thy revengeful hand; thou hast  
no cause to fear.

*York.* [*Within*] Open the door, secure, fool-  
hardly king:

Shall I for love speak treason to thy face?  
Open the door, or I will break it open.

Enter YORK.

*Boling.* What is the matter, uncle? speak;  
Recover breath; tell us how near is danger,

That we may arm us to encounter it.  
*York.* Peruse this writing here, and thou  
shalt know

The treason that my haste forbids me show, 50  
*Aum.* Remember, as thou read'st, thy pro-  
mise pass'd:

I do repent me; read not my name there;  
My heart is not to confederate with my hand.

*York.* It was, villain, ere thy hand did set it  
down.

I tore it from the traitor's bosom, king;  
Fear, and not love, begets his penitence:

Forget to pity him, lest thy pity prove  
A serpent that will sting thee to the heart.

*Boling.* O heinous, strong and bold conspir-  
acy!

O loyal father of a treacherous son! 60  
Thou sheer, immaculate and silver fountain,  
From whence this stream through manly

Hath held his current and defiled himself!  
Thy overflow of good converts to bad,

And thy abundant goodness shall excuse  
This deadly blot in thy disgracing son.

*York.* So shall my virtue be his vice's  
bawd;

And he shall spend mine honour with his  
shame,

As thriftless sons their accepting fathers' gold.

Mine honour lives when his dishonour dies, 70  
Or my shamed life in his dishonour lies:  
Thou wilt kill me in his life; giving him breath,  
The traitor lives, the true man's put to death.

*Duch.* [Within] What ho, my liege! for  
God's sake, let me in.

*Boling.* What shrill-voiced suppliant makes  
this eager cry?

*Duch.* A woman, and thy aunt, great king;  
'tis I.

Speak with me, pity me, open the door:

A beggar begs that never begg'd before.

*Boling.* Our scene is alter'd from a serious  
thing,

And now changed to 'The Beggar and the  
King.' 80

My dangerous cousin, let your mother in:

I know she is come to pray for your foul sin.

*York.* If thou do pardon, whosoever pray,

More sins for this forgiveness prosper may.

This fester'd joint cut off, the rest rest sound;

This let alone will all the rest confound.

*Enter DUCHESS.*

*Duch.* O king, believe not this hard-hearted  
man!

Love loving not itself none other can.

*York.* Thou frantic woman, what dost thou  
make here?

Shall thy old dugs once more a traitor rear? 90

*Duch.* Sweet York, be patient. Hear me,  
gentle liege. [Kneels.]

*Boling.* Rise up, good aunt.

*Duch.* Not yet, I thee beseech:

For ever will I walk upon my knees,

And never see day that the happy sees,

Till thou give joy; until thou bid me joy,

By pardoning Rutland, my transgressing boy.

*Aun.* Unto my mother's prayers I bend my  
knees.

*York.* Against them both my true joints  
bended be.

It mayst thou thrive, if thou grant any grace!

*Duch.* Pleads he in earnest? look upon his  
face; 100

His eyes do drop no tears, his prayers are in  
jest;

His words come from his mouth, ours from our  
breast:

He prays but faintly and would be denied;

We pray with heart and soul and all beside;

His weary joints would gladly rise, I know;

Our knees shall kneel till to the ground they  
grow:

His prayers are full of false hypocrisy;

Ours of true zeal and deep integrity.

Our prayers do out-pray his; then let them  
have 109

That sneer which true prayer ought to have.

*Boling.* Good aunt, stand up.

*Duch.* Nay, do not say, 'stand up;'

Say 'pardon' first, and afterwards 'stand up;'

And I were thy nurse, thy tongue to teach,

'Pardon' should be the first word of thy speech.

I cannot long to hear a word till now;

Say 'pardon, king; let pity teach thee how;

The word is short, but not so short as sweet;

No word like 'pardon' for kings' mouths so  
meet.

*York.* Speak it in French, king; say, 'par-  
donne moi.'

*Duch.* Dost thou teach pardon pardon to  
destroy? 120

Ah, my sour husband, my hard-hearted lord,  
That set at the word itself against the word!

Speak 'pardon' as 'tis current in our land;

The chopping French we do not understand.

Thine eye begins to speak; set thy tongue there;

Or in thy piteous heart plant thou thine ear;

That hearing how our plaints and prayers do  
pierce,

Pity may move thee 'pardon' to rehearse.

*Boling.* Good aunt, stand up.

*Duch.* I do not sue to stand;

Parlon is all the suit I have in hand. 125

*Boling.* I pardon him, as God shall pardon  
me.

*Duch.* O happy vantage of a kneeling knee!

Yet am I sick for fear: speak it again;

Twice saying 'pardon' doth not pardon twain,

But makes one pardon strong.

*Boling.* With all my heart

I pardon him.

*Duch.* A god on earth thou art.

*Boling.* But for our trusty brother-in-law

and the abbot,

With all the rest of that consorted crew,

Destruction straight shall dog them at the  
heels.

Good uncle, help to order several powers 140

To Oxford, or wher'er these traitors are:

They shall not live within this world, I swear,

But I will have them, if I once know where.

Uncle, farewell: and, cousin too, adieu!

Your mother well hath pray'd, and prove you  
true.

*Duch.* Come, my old son: I pray God make  
thee new. [Exeunt.]

SCENE IV. *The same.*

*Enter EXTON and Servant.*

*Exton.* Didst thou not mark the king, what  
words he spake.

'Have I no friend will rid me of this living  
fear!'

Was it not so?

*Ser.* These were his very words.

*Exton.* 'Have I no friend?' quoth he: he  
spake it twice.

And urged it twice together, did he not?

*Ser.* He did.

*Exton.* And speaking it, he wistly look'd  
on me;

As who should say, 'I would thou wert the  
man 149

That would divorce this terror from my heart!'

Meaning the king at Pomfret. Come, let's go:

I am the king's friend, and will rid him of his fear. [Exeunt.]

SCENE V. *Pomfret castle.*

*Enter KING RICHARD.*

*K. Rich.* I have been studying how I may  
compare

This prison where I live unto the world:  
And for because the world is populous  
And here is not a creature but myself,  
I cannot do it; yet I'll hammer it out.  
My brain I'll prove the female to my soul,  
My soul the father: and these two beget  
A generation of still-breeding thoughts,  
And these same thoughts people this little  
world,

In humours like the people of this world, 10  
For no thought is contented. The better sort,  
As thoughts of things divine, are intermix'd  
With scruples and do set the word itself  
Against the word:

As thus, 'Come, little ones,' and then again,  
'It is as hard to come as for a camel  
To thread the postern of a small needle's eye.'  
Thoughts tending to ambition, they do plot  
Unlikely wonders; how these vain weak nails  
May tear a passage through the flinty ribs 20  
Of this hard world, my ragged prison walls,  
And, for they cannot, die in their own pride.  
Thoughts tending to content flatter themselves  
That they are not the first of fortune's slaves,  
Nor shall not be the last; like silly beggars  
Who sitting in the stocks refuge their shame,  
That many have and others must sit there;  
And in this thought they find a kind of ease,  
Bearing their own misfortunes on the back  
(Of such as have before endured the like. 30

Thus pass I in one person many people,  
And none contented: sometimes am I king;  
Then treasons make me wish myself a beggar,  
And so I am: then crushing penury  
Persuades me I was better when a king;  
Then am I king'd again: and by and by  
Think that I am unking'd by Bolingbroke,  
And straight am nothing: but whate'er I be,  
Nor I nor any man that but man is 39  
With nothing shall be pleased, till he be eased  
With being nothing. Music do I hear? [*Music.*  
Ha, ha! keep time: how sour sweet music is,  
When time is broke and no proportion kept!  
So is it in the music of men's lives.

And here have I the daintiness of ear  
To check time broke in a disorder'd string;  
But for the concord of my state and time  
Had not an ear to hear my true time broke.  
I wasted time, and now doth time waste me;  
For now hath time made me his numbering  
clock:

My thoughts are minutes; and with sighs they jar 50  
Their watches on unto mine eyes, the outward  
watch,  
Whereto my finger, like a dial's point,  
Is pointing still, in cleansing them from tears.  
Now sir, the sound that tells what hour it is  
Are clamorous groans, which strike upon my  
heart,

Which is the bell: so sighs and tears and  
groans  
Show minutes, times, and hours: but my time  
Runs posting on in Bolingbroke's proud joy,  
While I stand fooling here, his Jack o' the  
clock. 60

This music made me; let it sound no more;  
For though it have help madmen to their wits,

In me it seems it will make wise men mad.  
Yet blessing on his heart that gives it me!  
For 'tis a sign of love; and love to Richard  
Is a strange brooch in this all-hating world.

*Enter a Groom of the Stable.*

*Groom.* Hall, royal prince!

*K. Rich.*

Thanks, noble peer;  
The cheapest of us is ten groats too dear.  
What art thou? and how comest thou hither,  
Where no man never comes but that sad dog? 70  
That brings me food to make misfortune live!

*Groom.* I was a poor groom of thy stable,  
king,

When thou wert king; who, travelling towards  
York,

With much ado at length have gotten leave  
To look upon my sometimes royal master's  
face.

O, how it yearn'd my heart when I beheld  
In London streets, that coronation-day,  
When Bolingbroke rode on roan Barbary,  
That horse that thou so often hast bestrid,  
That horse that I so carefully have dress'd! 80

*K. Rich.* Rode he on Barbary? Tell me,  
gentle friend,

How went he under him?

*Groom.* So proudly as if he disdain'd the  
ground.

*K. Rich.* So proud that Bolingbroke was on  
his back!

That jade hath eat bread from my royal hand;  
This hand hath made him proud with clapping  
him.

Would he not stumble? would he not fall down,  
Since pride must have a fall, and break the  
neck?

Of that proud man that did usurp his back!  
Forgiveness, horse! why do I rail on thee, 90

Since thou, created to be swayed by man,  
Wast born to bear? I was not made a horse;

And yet I bear a burthen like an ass,  
Spur-gall'd and tired by jaunting Boling-  
broke.

*Enter Keeper, with a dish.*

*Kerp.* Fellow, give place; here is no longer  
stay.

*K. Rich.* If thou love me, 'tis time thou  
wert away.

*Groom.* What my tongue dares not, that my  
heart shall say. [*Exit.*

*Kerp.* My lord, will't please you to fall to?

*K. Rich.* Taste of it first, as thou art wont  
to do. 99

*Kerp.* My lord, I dare not: Sir Plesant  
of Exton, who lately came from the king, com-  
mands the contrary.

*K. Rich.* The devil take Henry of Lancaster  
and thee!

Patience is stale, and I am weary of it. [*Bent the Keeper.*

*Kerp.* Help, help, help!

*Enter EXTON and Servants, armed.*

*K. Rich.* How now! what means death in  
this rude manner?

Villain, thy own hand yields thy death's instrument.

[*Snatching an axe from a Servant and killing him.*

Go thou, and fill another room in hell.

[*He kills another. Then Exton strikes him down.*

That hand shall burn in never-quenching fire  
That staggers thus my person. Exton, thy  
fierce hand

Hath with the king's blood stain'd the king's  
own land.

Mount, mount, my soul! thy seat is up on  
high;

Whilst my gross flesh sinks downward, here  
to die.

*Exton.* As full of valour as of royal blood:  
Both have I spill'd; O would the deed were  
good!

For now the devil, that told me I did well,

Says that this deed is chronicled in hell.

This dead king to the living king I'll bear;

Take hence the rest, and give them burial here.  
[*Exeunt.*

#### SCENE VI. Windsor castle.

*Flourish.* Enter BOLINGBROKE, YORK, with  
other Lords, and Attendants.

*Boling.* Kind uncle York, the latest news  
we hear

Is that the rebels have consumed with fire  
Our town of Cicester in Gloucestershire;  
But whether they be ta'en or slain we hear not.

#### Enter NORTHUMBERLAND.

Welcome, my lord: what is the news?

*North.* First, to thy sacred state wish I all  
happiness.

The next news is, I have to London sent  
The heads of Oxford, Salisbury, Blunt, and  
Kent:

The manner of their taking may appear  
At large discoursed in this paper here.

*Boling.* We thank thee, gentle Percy, for  
thy pains;

And to thy worth will add right worthy gains.

#### Enter FITZWATER.

*Fitz.* My lord, I have from Oxford sent to  
London

The heads of Brocas and Sir Bennet Seely,

Two of the dangerous consorted traitors  
That sought at Oxford thy dire overthrow.

*Boling.* Thy pains, Fitzwater, shall not be  
forgot;

Right noble is thy merit, well I wot.

#### Enter PERCY, and the BISHOP OF CARLISLE.

*Percy.* The grand conspirator, Abbot of  
Westminster,

With clog of conscience and sour melancholy  
Hath yielded up his body to the grave;

But here is Carlisle living, to abide  
Thy kingly doom and sentence of his pride.

*Boling.* Carlisle, this is your doom:  
Choose out some secret place, some reverend

room,  
More than thou hast, and with it joy thy life;

So as thou livest in peace, die free from strife:  
For though mine enemy thou hast ever been,  
High sparks of honour in thee have I seen.

#### Enter EXTON, with persons bearing a coffin.

*Exton.* Great king, within this coffin I  
present

Thy buried fear: herein all breathless lies  
The mightiest of thy greatest enemies,

Richard of Bonleaux, by me hither brought.  
*Boling.* Exton, I thank thee not; for thou

hast wrought  
A deed of slander with thy fatal hand

Upon my head and all this famous land.  
*Exton.* From your own mouth, my lord, did  
I this deed.

*Boling.* Thy love not poison that do poison  
need.

Nor do I thee: though I did wish him dead,  
I hate the murderer, love him murdered.

The guilt of conscience take thou for thy labour,  
But neither my good word nor princely favour:

With Cain go wander through shades of night,  
And never show thy head by day nor light.

*Lords.* I protest, my soul is full of woe,  
That blood should sprinkle me to make me  
grow:

Come, mourn with me for that I do lament,  
And put on sullen black incontinent:

I'll make a voyage to the Holy Land,  
To wash this blood off from my guilty hand;

March sadly after: grace my mournings here;  
In weeping after this untimely bier. [*Exeunt.*



# THE FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE FOURTH

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

KING HENRY the Fourth.  
HENRY, Prince of Wales, } sons to the  
JOHN of Lancaster, } King.  
EARL OF WESTMORELAND.  
SIR WALTER BLUNT.  
THOMAS PERCY, Earl of Worcester.  
HENRY PERCY, Earl of Northumberland.  
HENRY PERCY, surnamed HOTSPUR, his  
son.  
EDMUND MORTIMER, Earl of March.  
RICHARD SCROOP, Archbishop of York.  
ARCHIBALD, Earl of DOUGLAS.  
OWEN GLENDOWER.  
SIR RICHARD VERNON.  
SIR JOHN FALSTAFF.  
SIR MICHAEL, a friend to the Archbishop  
of York.

POINTS.  
GADSHILL.  
PETO.  
BARDOLFE.

LADY PERCY, wife to Hotspur, and sister  
to Mortimer.  
LADY MORTIMER, daughter to Glendower,  
and wife to Mortimer.  
MISTRESS QUICKLY, hostess of a tavern in  
Eastcheap.

Lords, Officers, Sheriff, Vintner, Chamberlain,  
Drawers, two Carriers, Travellers, and At-  
tendants.

SCENE: *England.*

## ACT I.

SCENE I. *London. The palace.*

*Enter KING HENRY, LORD JOHN OF LAN-  
CASTER, the EARL OF WESTMORELAND, SIR  
WALTER BLUNT, and others.*

*King.* So shaken as we are, so wan with  
care,

Find we a time for frightened peace to pant,  
And breathe short-winded accents of new broils  
To be commenced in strands afar remote.

\*No more the thirsty entrance of this soil  
Shall daub her lips with her own children's  
blood;

No more shall trenching war channel her fields,  
Nor bruise her flowerets with the armed hoots  
Of hostile paces: those opposed eyes  
Which, like the meteors of a troubled heaven, <sup>10</sup>  
All of one nature, of one substance bred,  
Did lately meet in the intestine shock  
And furious close of civil butchery  
Shall now, in mutual well-beseeming ranks,  
March all one way and be no more opposed  
Against acquaintance, kindred and allies:  
The edge of war, like an ill-sheathed knife,  
No more shall cut his master. Therefore,  
friends,

As far as to the sepulchre of Christ,  
Whose soldier now, under whose blessed cross  
We are impressed and engaged to fight, <sup>21</sup>  
Forthwith a power of English shall we levy;

Whose arms were moulded in their mothers'  
womb

To chase these pagans in those holy fields  
Over whose acres walk'd those blessed feet  
Which fourteen hundred years ago were nail'd  
For our advantage on the bitter cross.

But this our purpose now is twelve month old,  
And bootless 'tis to tell you we will go:

Therefore we meet not now. Then let me hear  
Of you, my gentle cousin Westmoreland, <sup>31</sup>

What yesternight our council did decree  
In forwarding this dear expedience.

*West.* My liege, this haste was hot in  
question,

And many limits of the charge set down:  
But yesternight: when all athwart there came  
A post from Wales laden with heavy news;  
Whose worst was, that the noble Mortimer,  
Leading the men of Herefordshire to fight  
Against the irregular and wild Glendower, <sup>40</sup>  
Was by the rude hands of that Welshman  
taken,

A thousand of his people butchered;  
Upon whose dead corpses there was such maiming,  
Such beastly shameless transformation,  
By those Welshwomen done as may not be  
Without much shame retold or spoken of.

*King.* It seems then that the tidings of this  
broil

Broke off our business for the Holy Land.  
*West.* This march'd with other did, my  
gracious lord;

For more uneven and unwelcome news 50  
 Came from the north and thus it did import :  
 On Holy-rood day, the gallant Hotspur there,  
 Young Harry Percy and brave Archibald,  
 That ever-vallant and approved Scot,  
 At Holmedon met,  
 Where they did spend a sad and bloody hour ;  
 As by discharge of their artillery,  
 And shape of likelihood, the news was told ;  
 For he that brought them, in the very heat  
 And pride of their contention did take horse, 60  
 Uncertain of the issue any way.

*King.* Here is a dear, a true industrious friend,

Sir Walter Blunt, new lighted from his horse,  
 Stain'd with the variation of each soil  
 Betwixt that Holmedon and this seat of ours ;  
 And he hath brought us smooth and welcome news.

The Earl of Douglas is discomfited :  
 Ten thousand bold Scots, two and twenty knights,

Balk'd in their own blood did Sir Walter see  
 On Holmedon's plains. Of prisoners, Hotspur took 70

Mordake the Earl of Fife, and eldest son  
 To beate Douglas ; and the Earl of Athol,  
 Of Murray, Angus, and Menteith :  
 And is not this an honourable spoil ?  
 A gallant prize ? ha, cousin, is it not ?

*West.* In faith,  
 It is a conquest for a prince to boast of.

*King.* Yea, there thou makest me sad and makest me sin

In envy that my Lord Northumberland  
 Should be the father to so blest a son, 80  
 A son who is the theme of honour's tongue ;  
 Amongst a grove, the very straightest plant ;  
 Who is sweet Fortune's minion and her pride :  
 Whilst I, by looking on the praise of him,  
 See riot and dishonour stain the brow  
 Of my young Harry. O that it could be proved  
 That some night-tripping fairy had exchanged  
 In cradle-clothes our children where they lay,  
 And call'd mine Percy, his Plantagenet !  
 Then would I have his Harry, and he mine. 90  
 But let him from my thoughts. What think you, coz,

Of this young Percy's pride ? the prisoners,  
 Which he in this adventure hath surprised,  
 To his own use he keeps ; and sends me word,  
 I shall have none but Mordake Earl of Fife.

*West.* This is his uncle's teaching : this is Worcester's,

Malevolent to you in all aspects ;  
 Which makes him prune himself, and bristle up

The crest of youth against your dignity.

*King.* But I have sent for him to answer this ; 100

And for this cause awhile we must neglect  
 Our holy purpose to Jerusalem.

On Wednesday next our council we  
 Will hold at Windsor ; so inform the lords :  
 I come yourself with speed to us again ;  
 For more is to be said and to be done  
 In our court than can be uttered  
 Post. I have my legs.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *London. An apartment of the Prince's.*

*Enter the PRINCE OF WALES and FALSTAFF.*

*Fal.* Now, Hal, what time of day is it, lad ?

*Prince.* Thou art so fat-witted, with drinking of old sack and unbuttoning thee after supper and sleeping upon benches after noon, that thou hast forgotten to demand that truly which thou wouldst truly know. What a devil hast thou to do with the time of the day ! Unless hours were cups of sack and minutes capons and clocks the tongues of bawds and dials the signs of leaping-houses and the blessed sun himself a fair hot wench in flame-coloured taffeta, I see no reason why thou shouldst be so superfluous to demand the time of the day.

*Fal.* Indeed, you come near me now, Hal ; for we that take purges go by the moon and the seven stars, and not by Phoebus, he, 'that wandering knight so fair.' And, I prithee, sweet wag, when thou art king, as God save thy grace,—majesty I should say, for grace thou wilt have none,— 20

*Prince.* What, none ?

*Fal.* No, by my troth, not so much as will serve to be prologue to an egg and butter.

*Prince.* Well, how then ? come, roundly, roundly.

*Fal.* Marry, then, sweet wag, when thou art king, let not us that are squires of the night's body be called thieves of the day's beauty : let us be Diana's foresters, gentlemen of the shade, minions of the moon ; and let men say we be men of good government, being governed, as the sea is, by our noble and chaste mistress the moon, under whose countenance we steal.

*Prince.* Thou sayest well, and it holds well too ; for the fortune of us that are the moon's men doth ebb and flow like the sea, being governed, as the sea is, by the moon. As, for proof, now : a purse of gold most resolutely snatched on Monday night and most dissolutely spent on Tuesday morning ; got with swearing 'Lay by' and spent with crying 'Bring in' ; now in as low an ebb as the foot of the ladder, and by and by in as high a flow as the ridge of the gallows.

*Fal.* By the Lord, thou sayest true, lad. And is not my hostess of the tavern a most sweet wench !

*Prince.* As the honey of Hybla, my old lad of the castle. And is not a buff jerkin a most sweet robe of durance ? 40

*Fal.* How now, how now, mad wag ! what, in thy quips and thy quiddities ? what a plague have I to do with a buff jerkin ?

*Prince.* Why, what a pox have I to do with my hostess of the tavern ?

*Fal.* Well, thou hast called her to a reckoning many a time and oft.

*Prince.* Did I ever call for thee to pay thy part ?

*Fal.* No ; I'll give thee thy due, thou hast paid all there.

*Prince.* Yea, and elsewhere, so far as my coin would stretch ; and where it would not, I have used my credit.

*Fal.* Yea, and so used it that, were it not here apparent that thou art heir apparent—But, I prithee, sweet wag, shall there be gallows standing in England when thou art king? and resolution thus fobbed as it is with the rusty curb of old father antic the law? Do not thou, when thou art king, hang a thief. 70

*Prince.* No; thou shalt.

*Fal.* Shall I! O rare! By the Lord, I'll be a brave judge.

*Prince.* Thou judgest false already; I mean, thou shalt have the hanging of the thieves and so become a rare hangman.

*Fal.* Well, Hal, well; and in some sort it jumps with my humour as well as waiting in the court, I can tell you.

*Prince.* For obtaining of suits? 80

*Fal.* Yea, for obtaining of suits, wherein the hangman hath no lean wardrobe. 'Blood, I am as melancholy as a gib cat or a lugged bear.

*Prince.* Or an old lion, or a lover's lute.

*Fal.* Yea, or the drone of a Lincolnshire bagpipe.

*Prince.* What sayest thou to a hare, or the melancholy of Moor-ditch?

*Fal.* Thou hast the most unsavoury similes and art indeed the most comparative, rascaliest, sweet young prince. But, Hal, I prithee, trouble me no more with vanity. I would to God thou and I knew where a commodity of good names were to be bought. An old lord of the council rated me the other day in the street about you, sir, but I marked him not; and yet he talked very wisely, but I regarded him not; and yet he talked wisely, and in the street too.

*Prince.* Thou didst well; for wisdom cries out in the streets, and no man regards it. 100

*Fal.* O, thou hast damnable iteration and art indeed able to corrupt a saint. Thou hast done much harm upon me, Hal; God forgive thee for it! Before I knew thee, Hal, I knew nothing; and now am I, if a man should speak truly, little better than one of the wicked. I must give over this life, and I will give it over: by the Lord, an I do not, I am a villain: I'll be damned for never a king's son in Christendom.

*Prince.* Where shall we take a purse to-morrow, Jack? 110

*Fal.* 'Zounds, where thou wilt, lad; I'll make one; an I do not, call me villain and baffle me.

*Prince.* I see a good amendment of life in thee; from praying to purse-taking.

*Fal.* Why, Hal, 'tis my vocation, Hal; 'tis no sin for a man to labour in his vocation.

*Enter Poins.*

*Poins!* Now shall we know if Gadshill have set a match. O, if men were to be saved by merit, what hole in hell were hot enough for him? This is the most omnipotent villain that ever cried 'Blood' to a true man.

*Prince.* Good morrow, Ned.

*Poins.* Good morrow, sweet Hal. What says Monsieur Remorse? what says Sir John Sack and Sugar? Jack! how agrees the devil

and thee about thy soul, that thou soldst him on Good-Friday last for a cup of Madeira and a cold capon's leg? 120

*Prince.* Sir John stands to his word, the devil shall have his bargain; for he was never yet a breaker of proverbs: he will give the devil his due.

*Poins.* Then art thou damned for keeping thy word with the devil.

*Prince.* Else he had been damned for consenting the devil.

*Poins.* But, my lads, my lads, to-morrow morning, by four o'clock, early at Gadshill! there are pilgrims going to Canterbury with rich offerings, and traders riding to London with fat purses: I have vizards for you all; you have horses for yourselves: Gadshill lies to-night in Rochester: I have bespoken supper to-morrow night in Eastcheap: we may do it as secure as sleep. If you will go, I will stuff your purses full of crowns; if you will not, tarry at home and be hanged.

*Fal.* Hear ye, Yedward; if I tarry at home and go not, I'll hang you for going. 130

*Poins.* You will, chaps?

*Fal.* Hal, wilt thou make one?

*Prince.* Who, I rob? I a thief? not I, by my faith.

*Fal.* There's neither honesty, manhood, nor good fellowship in thee, nor thou earnest met of the blood royal, if thou dar'st not stand for ten shillings.

*Prince.* Well then, once in my days I'll be a madcap. 140

*Fal.* Why, that's well said.

*Prince.* Well, come what will, I'll tarry at home.

*Fal.* By the Lord, I'll be a traitor then, when thou art king.

*Prince.* I care not.

*Poins.* Sir John, I prithee, leave the prince and me alone: I will lay him down such reasons for this adventure that he shall go. 150

*Fal.* Well, God give thee the spirit of persuasion and him the ear of profiting, that what thou speakest may move and what he hears may be believed, that the true prince may, for recreation sake, prove a false thief; for the poor abuses of the time want countenance. Farewell: you shall find me in Eastcheap.

*Prince.* Farewell, thou latter spring! farewell, all-bellows summer! *[Exit Fal.]*

*Poins.* Now, my good sweet honey lord, ride with us to-morrow: I have a jest to execute that I cannot manage alone. Bardolph, Peto and Gadshill shall rob those men that we have already waylaid; yourself and I will not be there; and when they have the booty, if you and I do not rob them, cut this head off from my shoulders.

*Prince.* How shall we part with them in setting forth?

*Poins.* Why, we will not forth before or after them, and appoint them a place of meeting, wherein it is at our pleasure to fail, and then will they adventure upon the English themselves; which they shall have no chance achieved, but we'll not upon them.

*Prince.* Yes, but 'tis like that they will know us by our horses, by our habits and by every other appointment, to be ourselves.

*Polix.* Tut! our horses they shall not see; I'll tie them in the wood; our vizards we will change after we leave them: and, sirrah, I have cases of buckram for the nonce, to immaak our noted outward garments.

*Prince.* Yes, but I doubt they will be too hard for us.

*Polix.* Well, for two of them, I know them to be as true-bred cowards as ever turned back; and for the third, if he fight longer than he sees reason, I'll forswear arms. The virtue of this jest will be, the incomprehensible lies that this same fat rogue will tell us when we meet at supper: how thirty, at least, he fought with; what wards, what blows, what extremities he endured; and in the reproof of this lies the jest.

*Prince.* Well, I'll go with thee: provide us all things necessary and meet me to-morrow night in Eastcheap; there I'll sup. Farewell.

*Polix.* Farewell, my lord. *[Exit.]*

*Prince.* I know you all, and will awhile uphold

The unyok'd humour of your idleness:  
Yet herein will I imitate the sun,  
Who doth permit the base contagious clouds  
To smother up his beauty from the world,  
That, when he pleases again to be himself,  
Being wanted, he may be more wonder'd at,  
By breaking through the foul and ugly mists  
Of vapours that did seem to strangle him.  
If all the year were playing holidays,  
To sport would be as tedious as to work;  
But when they seldom come, they wish'd for  
come.

And nothing pleaseeth but rare accidents:  
So, when this leaseth behaviour I throw off  
And pay the debt I never promised,  
By how much better than my word I am,  
By so much shall I falsify men's hopes;  
And like bright metal on a sullen ground,  
My reformation, glittering o'er my fault,  
Shall show more goodly and attract more eyes  
Than that which hath no foil to set it off.  
I'll so offend, to make offence a skill;  
Redeeming time when men think least I will.

*[Exit.]*

### SCENE III. *London. The palace.*

*Enter the KING, NORTHUMBERLAND, WORCESTER, HOTSPUR, SIR WALTER BLUNT, with others.*

*King.* My blood hath been too cold and temperate,

Unset to stir at these indignities,  
And you have found me; for accordingly  
You tread upon my patience: but be sure  
I will from henceforth rather be myself,  
Mighty and to be fear'd, than my condition;  
Which hath been smooth as oil, soft as young

lamb.  
And therefore lost that title of respect  
Which the proud soul ne'er pays but to the  
ground.

*Wor.* Our house, my sovereign liege, little deserves

The scourge of greatness to be used on it;  
And that same greatness too which our own hands

Have help to make so portly.

*North.* My lord,—

*King.* Worcester, get thee gone; for I do see

Danger and disobedience in thine eye;

O, sir, your presences is too bold and presumptuous,

And majesty might never yet endure

The moody frontier of a servant brow.

You have good leave to leave us! when we need

Your use and counsel, we shall send for you.

You were about to speak. *[Exit Wor.]*

*North.* Yes, my good lord.

Those prisoners in your highness' name demanded,

Which Harry Percy here at Holmeidon took,

Were, as he says, not with such strength denied

As is deliver'd to your majesty:

Either envy, therefore, or misprision

Is guilty of this fault and not my son.

*Hot.* My liege, I did deny no prisoners.

But I remember, when the fight was done,

When I was dry with rage and extreme toil,

Breathless and faint, leaning upon my sword,

Came there a certain lord, neat, and trimly

dress'd,

Fresh as a bridegroom; and his chin new

reap'd

Show'd like a stubble-land at harvest-home;

He was perfum'd like a milliner;

And 'twixt his finger and his thumb he held

A pouncet-box, which ever and anon

He gave his nose and took't away again;

Who therewith angry, when it next came

there,

Took it in snuff; and still he smiled and talk'd

And as the soldiers bore dead bodies by,

He call'd them untaught knaves, unmannerly,

To bring a slovenly unhandsome corpse

Between the wind and his nobility.

With many holiday and lady terms

He question'd me; amongst the rest, de-

manded

My prisoners in your majesty's behalf.

I then, all smarting with my wounds being

cold,

To be so pester'd with a popinjay,

Out of my grief and my impatience,

Answer'd neglectingly I know not what,

He should, or he should not; for he made me

mad

To see him shine so brisk and smell so sweet

And talk so like a waiting-gentleman

Of guns and drums and wounds,—God save the

mark!

And telling me the sovereign'st thing on earth

Was paracelsi for an inward bruise;

And that it was great pity, so it was

This villanous salt-petre should be

Out of the bowels of the harmless

Which many a good tall fellow has

So cowardly; and but for these vile guns,  
He would himself have been a soldier.  
This bald unjointed chat of his, my lord,  
I answer'd indirectly, as I said;  
And I beseech you, let not his report  
Come current for an accusation  
Betwixt my love and your high majesty.

*Blunt.* The circumstance consider'd, good my lord,

What'er Lord Harry Percy then had said  
To such a person and in such a place,  
At such a time, with all the rest retold,  
May reasonably die and never rise  
To do him wrong or any way impeach  
What then he said, so he unsay it now.

*King.* Why, yet he doth deny his prisoners,  
But with proviso and exception,  
That we at our own charge shall ransom  
straight

His brother-in-law, the foolish Mortimer; 80  
Who, on my soul, hath wilfully betray'd  
The lives of those that he did lead to fight  
Against that great magician, damn'd Glendower.

Whose daughter, as we hear, the Earl of March  
Hath lately married. Shall our coffers, then,  
Be emptied to redeem a traitor home?  
Shall we buy treason? and indent with fears,  
When they have lost and forfeited themselves?  
No, on the barren mountains let him starve;  
For I shall never hold that man my friend 90  
Whose tongue shall ask me for one penny cost  
To ransom home revolted Mortimer.

*Hot.* Revolted Mortimer!  
He never did fall off, my sovereign liege,  
But by the chance of war: to prove that true  
Needs no more but one tongue for all those  
wounds.

Those mouthed wounds, which valiantly he  
took,

When on the gentle Severn's sedgy bank,  
In single opposition, hand to hand,  
He did confound the best part of an hour 100  
In changing hardiment with great Glendower:  
Three times they breathed and three times did  
they drink,

Upon agreement, of swift Severn's flood;  
Who then, affrighted with their bloody looks,  
Ran fearfully among the trembling reeds,  
And hid his crisp head in the hollow bank  
Bloodstained with these valiant combatants.  
Never did base and rotten policy  
Colour her working with such deadly wounds;  
Nor never could the noise Mortimer 110  
Receive so many, and all willingly:  
Then let not him be slander'd with revolt.

*King.* Thou dost belie him, Percy, thou dost  
believe him;

He never did encounter with Glendower:  
I tell thee.

He durst as well have met the devil alone  
As Owen Glendower for an enemy.  
Art thou not ashamed? But, sirrah, hence-  
forth

Let me not hear you speak of Mortimer:  
Send me your prisoners with the speediest  
means 120

Or you shall hear in such a kind from me

As will displease you. My Lord Northumber-  
land,

We license your departure with your son.  
Send us your prisoners, or you will hear of it.

*(Exeunt King Henry, Blunt, and train.)*

*Hot.* An if the devil come and roar for them,  
I will not send them: I will after straight  
And tell him so; for I will ease my heart,  
Albeit I make a hazard of my head.

*North.* What, drunk with choler? stay and  
pause awhile:  
Here comes your uncle.

*Re-enter WORCESTER.*

*Hot.* Speak of Mortimer! 130  
'Zounds, I will speak of him; and let my soul  
Want mercy, if I do not join with him:  
Yea, on his part I'll empty all these veins,  
And shed my dear blood drop by drop in the  
dust.

But I will lift the down-trod Mortimer  
As high in the air as this unthankful king,  
As this ingrate and canker'd Bolingbroke.

*North.* Brother, the king hath made your  
nephew mad.

*Wor.* Who struck this heat up after I was  
gone?

*Hot.* He will, forsooth, have all my pri-  
soners; 140

And when I urged the ransom once again  
Of my wife's brother, then his cheek look'd  
pale,

And on my face he turn'd an eye of death,  
Trembling even at the name of Mortimer.

*Wor.* I cannot blame him: was not he pro-  
claim'd

By Richard that dead is the next of blood?  
*North.* He was; I heard the proclamation:

And then it was when the unhappy king—  
Whose wrongs in us God pardon!—did set  
forth

Upon his Irish expedition; 150  
From whence he intercepted did return  
To be deposed and shortly murdered.

*Wor.* And for whose death we in the world's  
wide mouth

Live scandalized and foully spoken of.

*Hot.* But, soft, I pray you; did King Richard  
then

Proclaim my brother Edmund Mortimer  
Heir to the crown?

*North.* He did; myself did hear it.

*Hot.* Nay, then I cannot blame his cousin  
king,

That wish'd him on the barren mountains  
starve.

But shall it be, that you, that set the crown 160  
Upon the head of this forgetful man  
And for his sake wear the detested blot  
Of murderous subornation, shall it be,

That you a world of curses undergo,  
Being the agents, or base second means,  
The cords, the ladders, or the hangmen rather?

O, pardon me that I descend so low,  
To show the line and the predicament  
Wherein you range under this subtle king.

Shall it for shame to spoken in these days, 170  
Or fill up chronicles in time to come,

That men of your nobility and power  
Did gage them both in an unjust behalf  
As both of you—God pardon it!—have done,  
To put down Richard, that sweet lovely rose,  
And plant this thorn, this canker, Bolingbroke!  
And shall it in more shame be further spoken,  
That you are fool'd, discarded and shook off  
By him for whom these shames ye under-  
went?

No; yet time serves wherein you may redeem  
Your banish'd honours and restore yourselves

Of this proud king, who counts you as  
To answer all the debt he owes to you  
Even with the bloody payment of your deaths:  
Therefore, I say,—

Wor. Peace, cousin, say no more:  
And now I will unclasp a secret book,  
And to your quick-conceiving discontents  
I'll read you matter deep and dangerous, 190  
As full of peril and adventurous spirit  
As to o'er-walk a current roaring loud  
On the unsteady footing of a spear.

Hot. If he fall in, good night! or sink or swim:

Send danger from the east unto the west,  
So honour cross it from the north to south,  
And let them grapple: O, the blood more stirs  
To rouse a lion than to start a hare!

North. Imagination of some great exploit  
Drives him beyond the bounds of patience. 200

Hot. By heaven, methinks it were an easy

To pluck bright honour from the pale-faced moon,  
Or dive into the bottom of the deep,

Where fathom-line could never touch the ground,  
And pluck up drowned honour by the locks;

So he that doth redeem her thence might wear  
Without corral all her dignities:  
But out upon this half-faced fellowship!

Wor. He apprehends a world of figures here,  
But not the form of what he should attend. 210  
Good cousin, give me audience for a while.

Hot. I cry you mercy.

Wor. Those same noble Scots  
That are your prisoners,—

Hot. I'll keep them all;  
By God, he shall not have a Scot of them;  
No, if a Scot would save his soul, he shall not:  
I'll keep them, by this hand.

Wor. You start away  
And lend no ear unto my purposes,  
Those prisoners you shall keep.

Hot. Nay, I will; that's flat:  
He said he would not ransom Mortimer;  
Forsook my tongue to speak of Mortimer; 220  
But I will find him when he lies asleep,  
And in his ear I'll hail: Mortimer!

Nay,  
I'll have a starting shall be taught to speak  
Nothing but 'Mortimer,' and give it him,  
To keep his anger still in motion.

Wor. Hear you, cousin; a word.  
Hot. All sciences have I solemnly defy,  
Save how to gild and sink this Bolingbroke:

And that same sword-and-buckler Prince of Wales, 230

But that I think his father loves him not  
And would be glad he met with some mis-  
chance,

I would have him poison'd with a pot of ale.  
Wor. Farewell, kinsman; I'll talk to you  
When you are better temper'd to attend.

North. Why, what a wasp-stung and im-  
patient fool

Art thou to break into this woman's mood,  
Tying thine ear to no tongue but thine own!

Hot. Why, look you, I am whipp'd and  
scourged with rods,

Nettled and stung with pismires, when I hear  
Of this vile politician, Bolingbroke.

In Richard's time,—what do you call  
place?

A plague upon it, it is in Gloucestershire;  
'Twas where the madcap Duke his uncle kept,

His uncle York; where I first bow'd my knee  
Unto this king of smiles, this Bolingbroke,—

'Silwood!—  
When you and he came back from Raven-  
purgh.

North. At Berkley castle.  
Hot. You say true: 250

Why, what a candy deal of courtesy  
This fawning greyhound then did proffer me!

Look, 'when his infant fortune came to age,'  
And 'gentle Harry Percy,' and 'kind cousin,'

O, the devil take such counsels! God forgive  
me!

Good uncle, tell your tale; I have done.

Wor. Nay, if you have not, to it again;  
We will stay your leisure.

Hot. I have done, I faith.  
Wor. Then once more to your Scottish  
prisoners. 255

Deliver them up without their ransom straight,  
And make the Douglas son your only mean

For powers in Scotland; which, for divers  
reasons

Which I shall send you written, be assured,  
Will easily be granted. You, my lord,

Your son in Scotland being thus employ'd,  
Shall secretly into the bosom creep

(Of that same noble prelate, well beloved,  
The archbishop.

Hot. Of York, is it not?

Wor. True; who bears hard 270

His brother's death at Bristol, the Lord Scroop.  
I speak not this in estimation,

As what I think might be, but what I know  
Is ruminated, plotted and set down,

And only stays but to behold the face  
Of that occasion that shall bring it on.

Hot. I smell it; upon my life, it will do  
well.

North. Before the game is shoot, thou still  
let'st slip.

Hot. Why, it cannot choose but be a noble  
plot:

And then the power of Scotland and of York, 280  
To join with Mortimer, ha!

Wor. And so they shall.

Hot. In faith, it is exceedingly well said.

*Wor.* And 'tis no little reason bids us speed,  
To save our heads by minding of a head;  
For, bear ourselves as even as we can,  
The king will always think him in our debt,  
And think we think ourselves unsatisfied,  
Till he hath found a time to pay us home:  
And see already how he doth begin

To make us strangers to his looks of love. *290*  
*Hol.* He does, he does: we'll be revenged  
on him.

*Wor.* Cousin, farewell: no further go in  
this.

Than I by letters shall direct your course.  
When time is ripe, which will be suddenly,  
I'll steal to Glendower and Lord Mortimer;  
Where you and Douglas and our powers at  
ones,

As I will fashion it, shall happily meet,  
To bear our fortunes in our own strong arms,  
Which now we hold at much uncertainty.

*North.* Farewell, good brother: we shall  
thrive, I trust. *300*

*Hol.* Uncle, adieu: O, let the hours be  
short  
Till fields and blows and groans applaud our  
sport! *[Exit.]*

## ACT II

SCENE I. *Rochester. An inn yard.*

*Enter a Carrier with a lantern in his hand.*

*First Car.* Heigh-ho! an it be not four by  
the day, I'll be hanged: Charles' wain is over  
the new chimney, and yet our horse not packed.  
What, ostler!

*Ost.* *[Within.]* Anon, anon.

*First Car.* I prithee, Tom, beat Cut's saddle,  
put a few flocks in the point; poor jade, is  
wrung in the withers out of all com.

*Enter another Carrier.*

*Sec. Car.* Peas and beans are as dank here  
as a dog, and that is the next way to give poor  
jades the bots: this house is turned upside  
down since Robin Ostler died.

*First Car.* Poor fellow, never joyed since  
the price of oats rose; it was the death of him.

*Sec. Car.* I think this be the most villainous  
house in all London road for fleas: I am stung  
like a tench.

*First Car.* Like a tench! by the mass, there  
is ne'er a king christen could be better bit than  
I have been since the first cock. *30*

*Sec. Car.* Why, they will allow us ne'er a  
jordan, and then we leak in your chimney; and  
your chamber-lie breeds fleas like a loach.

*First Car.* What, ostler! come away and  
be hanged! come away.

*Sec. Car.* I have a gammon of bacon and  
two rases of ginger, to be delivered as far as  
Charing-cross.

*First Car.* God's body! the turkeys in my  
pannier are quite starved. What, ostler! A  
plague on thee! hast thou never an eye in thy  
head! canst not hear? An 'twere not as good  
deed as drink, to break the pate on thee, I am  
a very villain. Come, and be hanged! hast no  
fish in thee?

*Enter GADSHILL.*

*Gads.* Good morrow, carriers. What's  
o'clock?

*First Car.* I think it be two o'clock.

*Gads.* I prithee, lend me thy lantern, to see  
my gelding in the stable.

*First Car.* Nay, by God, soft; I know a  
trick worth two of that, I' faith. *41*

*Gads.* I pray thee, lend me thine.

*Sec. Car.* Ay, when! canst tell? Lend me  
thy lantern, quoth he! marry, I'll see thee  
hanged first.

*Gads.* Sirrah carrier, what time do you  
mean to come to London?

*Sec. Car.* Time enough to go to bed with  
a candle, I warrant thee. Come, neighbour  
Mugs, we'll call up the gentlemen; they will  
along with company, for they have great  
charge. *[Exit Carriers.]*

*Gads.* What, ho! chamberlain!

*Cham.* *[Within.]* At hand, quoth pick-purse.

*Gads.* That's even as fair as—at hand, quoth  
the chamberlain; for thou variest no more  
from picking of purses than giving direction  
doth from labouring; thou layest the plot now.

*Enter Chamberlain.*

*Cham.* Good morrow, Master Gadshill. It  
holds current that I told you yesterday:  
there's a franklin in the wild of Kent hath  
brought three hundred marks with him in  
gold: I heard him tell it to one of his com-  
pany last night at supper; a kind of auditor;  
one that hath abundance of charge too, God  
knows what. They are up already, and call for  
eggs and butter: they will away presently.

*Gads.* Sirrah, if they meet not with Saint  
Nicholas' clerks, I'll give thee this neck. *60*

*Cham.* No, I'll none of it: I pray thee,  
keep that for the hangman; for I know thou  
worshipp'st Saint Nicholas as truly as a man  
of falsehood may.

*Gads.* What talkest thou to me of the hang-  
man? if I hang, I'll make a fat pair of gallows;  
for if I hang, old Sir John hangs with me, and  
thou knowest he is no starveling. Tut! there  
are other Trojans that thou dreamest not of,  
the which for sport sake are content to do the  
profession some grace; that would, if matters  
should be looked into, for their own credit sake,  
make all whole. I am joined with no foot  
land-rakers, no long-staff sirpenny strikers,  
none of these mad manticos, purple-lined  
malt-worms; but with nobility and tranquility,  
burgomasters and great oneyers, such as can  
hold in, such as will strike sooner than speak,  
and speak sooner than drink, and drink sooner  
than pray; and yet, 'rounds, I lie; for they  
pray continually to their saint, the common-  
wealth; or rather, not pray to her, but pray on  
her, for they ride up and down on her and  
make her their boots. *70*

*Cham.* What, the commonwealth, their  
boots! I will she hold out water in her bowl.

*Gads.* She will, she will; justice  
liquored her. We steal as in a castle.

sure; we have the receipt of fern-seed, we walk invisible.

*Cham.* Nay, by my faith, I think you are more beholding to the night than to fern-seed for your walking invisible.

*Gads.* Give me thy hand; thou shalt have a share in our purchase, as I am a true man. 101

*Cham.* Nay, rather let me have it, as you are a false thief.

*Gads.* Go to; 'homo' is a common name to all men. Bid the ostler bring my gelding out of the stable. Farewell, you muddy knave. [Exit.

## SCENE II. The highway, near Gadshill.

Enter PRINCE HENRY and POINS.

*Poins.* Come, shelter, shelter: I have removed Falstaff's horse, and he frets like a gummied velvet.

*Prince.* Stand close.

Enter FALSTAFF.

*Fal.* Poins! Poins, and be hanged! Poins!  
*Prince.* Peace, ye fat-kidneyed rascal! what a bawling dost thou keep!

*Fal.* Where's Poins, Hal?

*Prince.* He is walked up to the top of the hill; I'll go seek him. 9

*Fal.* I am accursed to rob in that thief's company: the rascal hath removed my horse, and tied him I know not where. If I travel but four foot by his further foot, I shall break my wind. Well, I doubt not but to die a fair death for all this, if I scape hanging for killing that rogue. I have forsworn his company hourly any time this two and twenty years, and yet I am bewitched with the rogue's company. If the rascal have not given me medicines to make me love him, I'll be hanged; it could not be else; I have drunk medicines. Poins! Hal! a plague upon you both! Bardolph! Peto! I'll starve ere I'll rob a foot further. An 'twere not as good a deed as drink, to turn true man and to leave these rogues, I am the veriest varlet that ever chewed with a tooth. Eight yards of uneven ground is threescore and ten miles afoot with me; and the stony-hearted villains know it well enough: a plague upon it when thieves cannot be true one to another! [They whistle.] Whew! A plague upon you all! Give me my horse, you rogues; give me my horse, and be hanged!

*Prince.* Peace, ye fat-guts! lie down; lay thine ear close to the ground and list if thou canst hear the tread of travellers.

*Fal.* Have you any levers to lift me up again, being down? 'Blood, I'll not bear mine own flesh so far afoot again for all the coin in thy father's exchequer. What a plague mean ye to colt me thus! 40

*Prince.* Thou liest; thou art not colted, thou art uncolted.

*Fal.* I praise thee, good Prince Hal, help me to my horse, good king's son.

*Prince.* Out, ye rogue! shall I be your ostler!

*Fal.* Go hang thyself in thine own hair-apparent garters! If I be ta'en, I'll peach for this. An I have not ballads made on you all and sung to filthy tunes, let a cup of sack be my poison: when a jest is so forward, and about too! I hate it.

Enter GADSHILL, BARDOLPH and PETO with him.

*Gads.* Stand.

*Fal.* So I do, against my will.

*Poins.* O, 'tis our setter: I know his voice. Bardolph, what news?

*Bard.* Case ye, case ye; on with your virgils: there's money of the king's coming down the hill; 'tis going to the king's exchequer.

*Fal.* You lie, ye rogue; 'tis going to the king's tavern.

*Gads.* There's enough to make us all. 60

*Fal.* To be hanged.

*Prince.* Sirs, you four shall front them in the narrow lane: Ned Poins and I will walk lower: if they scape from your encounter, than they light on us.

*Peto.* How many be there of them?

*Gads.* Some eight or ten.

*Fal.* 'Zounds, will they not rob us?

*Prince.* What, a coward, Sir John Paunch?

*Fal.* Indeed, I am not John of Gaunt, your grandfather; but yet no coward, Hal.

*Prince.* Well, we leave that to the proof.

*Poins.* Sirrah Jack, thy horse stands behind the hedge: when thou needest him, there thou shalt find him. Farewell, and stand fast.

*Fal.* Now cannot I strike him, if I should be hanged.

*Prince.* Ned, where are our disguises?

*Poins.* Here, hand by: stand close.

[Exit Prince and Poins]

*Fal.* Now, my masters, happy man be his dole, say I: every man to his business.

Enter the Travellers.

*First Trav.* Come, neighbour: the boy shall lead our horses down the hill; we'll walk about awhile, and ease our legs.

*Thieves.* Stand!

*Travellers.* Jesus bless us!

*Fal.* Strike; down with them; cut the villains' throats: ah! whoreson caterpillars! bacon-fed knaves! they hate us youth: down with them; fleece them. 90

*Travellers.* O, we are undone, both we and ours for ever!

*Fal.* Hang ye, gorbellied knaves, are ye undone! No, ye fat chuffs; I would - store were here! On, lacouns, on! What, ye knaves! young men must live. You are grand jurors, are ye? we'll jure ye, Yalsh. [Here they rob them and bind them. Exit.

Re-enter PRINCE HENRY and POINS.

*Prince.* The thieves have bound the true men. Now could thou and I rob the thieves and go merrily to London, it would be argument for a week, laughter for a month and a good jest for ever.

*Poins.* Stand close; I hear them coming.



*Enter the Thieves again.*

*Fal.* Come, my masters, let us share, and then to horse before day. An the Prince and Poins be not two arrant cowards, there's no equity stirring: there's no more valour in that Poins than in a wild-duck.

*Prince.* Your money!

*Poins.* Villains!

*[As they are sharing, the Prince and Poins set upon them; they all run away; and Falstaff, after a blow or two, runs away too, leaving the booty behind them.]*

*Prince.* Got with much ease. Now merrily to horse:

The thieves are all scatter'd and possess'd with fear

So strongly that they dare not meet each other: Each takes his fellow for an officer.

Away, good Ned. Falstaff sweats to death,

And lards the lean earth as he walks along:

Were't not for laughing, I should pity him.

*Poins.* How the rogue roard! *[Exit.]*

### SCENE III. Warkworth castle.

*Enter HOTSPUR, solus, reading a letter.*

*Hot.* 'But, for mine own part, my lord, I could be well contented to be there, in respect of the love I bear your house.' He could be contented: why is he not, then? In respect of the love he bears our house: he shows in this, he loves his own barn better than he loves our house. Let me see some more. 'The purpose you undertake is dangerous:—why, that's certain: 'tis dangerous to take a cold, to sleep, to drink; but I tell you, my lord fool, out of this nettle, danger, we pluck this flower, safety.' 'The purpose you undertake is dangerous: the friends you have named uncertain; the time itself unsorted; and your whole plot too light for the counterpoise of so great an opposition.' Say you so, say you so? I say unto you again, you are a shallow cowardly hind, and you lie. What a lack-brain is this! By the Lord, our plot is a good plot as ever was laid; our friends true and constant; a good plot, good friends, and full of expectation; an excellent plot, very good friends. What a frosty-spirited rogue is this! Why, my lord of York commends the plot and the general course of the action. 'Zounds, an I were now by this rascal, I could brain him with his lady's fan. Is there not my father, my uncle and myself? lord Edmund Mortimer, my lord of York and Owen Glendower? Is there not besides the Douglas? have I not all their letters to meet me in arms by the ninth of the next month? and are they not some of them set forward already? What a pagan rascal is this! an infidel! Ha! you shall see now in very sincerity of fear and cold heart, will he to the king and lay open all our proceedings. O, I could divide myself and go to buffets, for moving such a dish of skrim milk with so honourable an action! Hang him! let him tell the king: we are prepared. I will set forward to-night.

*Enter LADY PERCY.*

How now, Kate! I must leave you within these two hours.

*Lady.* O, my good lord, why are you thus alone?

For what offence have I this fortnight been

A banish'd woman from my Harry's bed?

Tell me, sweet lord, what is't that takes from thee

Thy stomach, pleasure and thy golden sleep?

Why dost thou bend thine eyes upon the earth, And start so often when thou sit'st alone?

Why hast thou lost the fresh blood in thy cheeks;

And given my treasures and my rights of thee

To thick-eyed musing and cursed melancholy?

In thy faint slumbers I by thee have watch'd,

And heard thee murmur tales of iron wars;

Speak terms of manage to thy bounding steed;

Cry 'Courage! to the field!' And thou hast talk'd

Of sallies and retires, of trenches, tents,

Of palisadoes, frontiers, parapets,

Of basilisks, of cannon, culverin,

Of prisoners' ransom and of soldiers slain,

And all the currents of a heady fight.

The spirit within thee hath been so at war

And thus hath so bestir'd thee in thy sleep,

That beads of sweat have stood upon thy brow,

Like bubbles in a late-disturbed stream;

And in thy face strange motions have appear'd,

Such as we see when men restrain their breath

On some great sudden death. O, what portents are these?

Some heavy business hath my lord in hand,

And I must know it, else he loves me not.

*Hot.* What, ho!

*Enter Servant.*

Is Gilliams with the packet gone?

*Serv.* He is, my lord, an hour ago.

*Hot.* Hath Butler brought those horses from the sheriff?

*Serv.* One horse, my lord, he brought even now.

*Hot.* What horse? a roan, a crop-ear, is it not?

*Serv.* It is, my lord.

*Hot.* That roan shall be my throne.

Well, I will back him straight: O espérance!

Bid Butler lead him forth into the park.

*[Exit Servant.]*

*Lady.* But hear you, my lord.

*Hot.* What say'st thou, my lady?

*Lady.* What is it carries you away?

*Hot.* Why, my horse, my love, my horse.

*Lady.* Oul, you mad-headed ape!

A vessel hath not such a deal of spleen

As you are toss'd with. In faith,

I'll know your business, Harry, that I will.

I fear my brother Mortimer doth stir

About his title, and hath sent for you

To line his enterprise; but if you go,—

*Hot.* So far afoot, I shall be weary, leave.

*Lady.* Come, come, you partridge,

Directly unto this question that I ask:

In faith, I'll break thy little finger, Harry, 90  
 An if thou wilt not tell me all things true.

*Hes. Away.*

Away, you trifle! Love! I love thee not,  
 I care not for thee, Kate: this is no world  
 To play with mummings and to tilt with ligs;  
 We must have bloody noses and crack'd

crowns,  
 And pass them current too. God's me, my  
 home!

What say'st thou, Kate! what would'st thou  
 have with me?

*Lady.* Do you not love me! do you not,  
 indeed? 99

Well, do not then; for since you love me not,  
 I will not love myself. Do you not love me!

Nay, tell me if you speak in jest or no.

*Hes.* Come, wilt thou see me ride!  
 And when I am o' horseback, I will swear

I love thee infinitely. But hark you, Kate;  
 I must not have you henceforth question me

Whither I go, nor reason whereabout:  
 Whither I must, I must; and, to conclude,

This evening must I leave you, gentle Kate.  
 I know you wise, but yes no farther wise 100

Than Harry Percy's wife: constant you are,  
 But yet a woman; and for secrecy,

No lady closer; for I well believe  
 Thou wilt not utter what thou dost not know;

And so far will I trust thee, gentle Kate.  
*Lady.* How! so far!

*Hes.* Not an inch further. But hark you,  
 Kate;

Whither I go, thither shall you go too;  
 To-day will I set forth, to-morrow you. 110

Will this content you, Kate?

*Lady.* It must of force. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *The Boar's-Head Tavern,  
 Eastcheap.*

*Enter the PRINCE, and POINS.*

*Prince.* Ned, prithee, come out of that fat  
 room, and lend me thy hand to laugh a little.

*Poins.* Where hast been, Hal?

*Prince.* With three or four loggerheads  
 amongst three or four score hoppers. I have  
 sounded the very base-string of humility. Sirrah,

I am sworn brother to a leash of drawers;  
 and can call them all by their christen names,

as Tom, Dick, and Francis. They take it  
 already upon their salvation, that though I be

but Prince of Wales, yet I am the king of  
 courtesy; and tell me flatly I am no proud

Jack, like Falstaff, but a Corinthian, a lad of  
 mettle, a good boy, by the Lord, so they call

me, and when I am king of England, I shall  
 command all the good lads in Eastcheap.

They call drinking deep, dyeing scarlet; and  
 when you breathe in your watering, they cry

'hem!' and bid you play it off. To conclude,  
 I am so good a proficient in one quarter of an

hour, that I can drink with any unkin in his  
 own language during my life. I tell thee, Ned,

that thou hast much honour, that thou wert  
 not to be taken which name of Ned, I give thee this

pennyworth of sugar, clapp'd even now into

my hand by an under-stinker, one that never  
 spake other English in his life than 'Eight'

shillings and sixpence, and 'You are welcome,'  
 with this shrill addition, 'Anon, anon, sir!'

Score a pint of bastard in the - moon, or  
 so. But, Ned, to drive away time till

Falstaff come, I prithee, do thou - in some  
 by-room, while I question my pu - drawer to

what end he gave me the sugar. I'd do thou  
 never leave calling 'Francis,' that his tale to

me may be nothing but 'Anon.' aside,  
 and I'll show thee a precedent.

*Poins.* Francis!

*Prince.* Thou art perfect.

*Poins.* Francis! [*Exit Poins.*]

*Enter FRANCIS.*

*Fran.* Anon, anon, sir. Look down into  
 the Pomegranet, Ralph.

*Prince.* Come hither, Francis.

*Fran.* My lord!

*Prince.* How long hast thou to serve,  
 Francis!

*Fran.* Forsooth, five years, and as much  
 as to—

*Poins.* [*Within*] Francis!

*Fran.* Anon, anon, sir. 41

*Prince.* Five year! by'r lady, a long leave  
 for the clinking of pewter. But, Francis, dare'st

thou be so valiant as to play the coward with thy  
 indenture and show it a fair pair of heels and

run from it!

*Fran.* O Lord, sir, I'll be sworn upon all  
 the books in England, I could find in my heart.

*Poins.* [*Within*] Francis!

*Fran.* Anon, sir.

*Prince.* How old art thou, Francis?

*Fran.* Let me see—about Michaelmas next 61

I shall be—

*Poins.* [*Within*] Francis!

*Fran.* Anon, sir. Pray stay a little, my  
 lord.

*Prince.* Nay, but hark you, Francis: for the  
 sugar thou gavest me, 'twas a pennyworth,

was't not!

*Fran.* O Lord, I would it had been two!

*Prince.* I will give thee for it a thousand  
 pound: ask me when thou wilt, and thou shalt

have it. 70

*Poins.* [*Within*] Francis!

*Fran.* Anon, anon.

*Prince.* Anon, Francis? No, Francis; but  
 to-morrow, Francis; or Francis, o' Thursday;

or indeed, Francis, when thou wilt. But,  
 Francis!

*Fran.* My lord!

*Prince.* Wilt thou rob this lantern jerkin,  
 crystal-button, not-pated, agate-ring, puke-  
 stocking, caddis-garter, smooth-tongue, Spanish-  
 pouch,—

*Fran.* O Lord, sir, who do you mean!

*Prince.* Why, then, your brown beard is  
 your only drink; for look you, Francis, your  
 white canvas doublet will only; in Eastcheap,  
 sir, it cannot come to so much.

*Fran.* What, sir?

*Poins.* [*Within*] Francis!

*Prince.* Away, you rogue! dost thou not hear them call?

[*Here they both call him; the drawer stands amazed, not knowing which way to go.*]

*Enter Vintner.*

*Vint.* What, standest thou still, and hearest such a calling? Look to the guests within. [*Exit Francis.*] My lord, old Sir John, with half-a-dozen more, are at the door: shall I let them in?

*Prince.* Let them alone awhile, and then open the door. [*Exit Vintner.*] Poins!

*Re-enter POINS.*

*Poins.* Anon, anon, sir.

*Prince.* Sirrah, Falstaff and the rest of the thieves are at the door: shall we be merry? 99

*Poins.* As merry as crickets, my lad. But hark ye; what cunning match have you made with this jest of the drawer? come, what's the issue?

*Prince.* I am now of all humours that have showed themselves humours since the old days of goulman Adam to the pupil age of this present twelve o'clock at midnight.

*Re-enter FRANCIS.*

What's o'clock, Francis!

*Fran.* Anon, anon, sir.

[*Exit.*]

*Prince.* That ever this fellow should have fewer words than a parrot, and yet the son of a woman! His industry is up-stairs and down-stairs; his eloquence the parcel of a reckoning. I am not yet of Percy's mind, the Hotspur of the north; he that kills me some six or seven dozen of Scots at a breakfast, washes his hands, and says to his wife 'Fie upon this quiet life! I want work.' 'O my sweet Harry,' says she, 'how many hast thou killed to-day?' 'Give my nan horse a drench,' says he; and answers 'Some fourteen,' an hour after; 'a trifle, a trifle.' I prithee, call in Falstaff: I'll play Percy, and that damned brawn shall play Dame Mortimer his wife. 'Rivo!' says the drunkard. Call in ribs, call in tallow.

*Enter FALSTAFF, GADSHILL, BARDOLPH, and PETO; FRANCIS following with wine.*

*Poins.* Welcome, Jack: where hast thou been?

*Fal.* A plague of all cowards, I say, and a vengeance too! marry, and amen! Give me a cup of sack, boy. Ere I lead this life long, I'll sew neither stocks and mend them and foot them too. A plague of all cowards! Give me a cup of sack, rogue. Is there no virtue extant?

[*He drinks.*]

*Prince.* Didst thou never see Titan kiss a dish of better? pitiful-hearted Titan, that melted at the sweet tale of the sun's! if thou didst, then behold that compound.

*Fal.* You rogues, here's a lime in this sack too: there is nothing but rogues to be found in villainous men; yet a coward is worse than a cup of sack with lime in it. A villainous coward! Go thy ways, old Jack; die when thou wilt, if manhood, good manhood, be not forgot upon

the face of the earth, then am I a shotten her-ring. There live not three good men unchanged in England; and one of them is fat and grows old: God help the while! a bad world, I say. I would I were a weaver; I could sing palms or any thing. A plague of all cowards, I say still.

*Prince.* How now, wool-sack! what matter you? 149

*Fal.* A king's son! If I do not beat thee out of thy kingdom with a dagger of lath, and drive all thy subjects afore thee like a flock of wild-geese, I'll never wear hair on my face more. You Prince of Wales!

*Prince.* Why, you whorson round man, what's the matter?

*Fal.* Are not you a coward? answer me to that; and Poins there?

*Poins.* 'Zounds, ye fat paunch, an ye call me coward, by the Lord, I'll stab thee. 150

*Fal.* I call thee coward! I'll see thee damned ere I call thee coward: but I would give a thousand pound I could run as fast as thou canst. You are straight enough in the shoulders, you care not who sees your back: call you that lacking of your friends! A plague upon such backing! give me them that will face me. Give me a cup of sack: I am a rogue, if I drunk to-day.

*Prince.* O villain! thy lips are scarce wiped since thou drunkenest last. 151

*Fal.* All's one for that. [*He drinks.*] A plague of all cowards, still say I!

*Prince.* What's the matter?

*Fal.* What's the matter! there be four of us here have ta'en a thousand pound this day morning.

*Prince.* Where is it, Jack! where is it?

*Fal.* Where is it! taken from us it is: a hundred upon poor four of us. 152

*Prince.* What, a hundred, man?

*Fal.* I am a rogue, if I were not at half-sword with a dozen of them two hours together. I have 'scaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through the doublet, four through the hose; my buckler cut through and through; my sword hacked like a hand-saw—*once again!* I never dealt better since I was a man; all would not do. A plague of all cowards! Let them speak: if they speak more or less than truth, they are villains and the sons of darkness. 153

*Prince.* Speak, sirs; how was it?

*Gads.* We four set upon some dozen—

*Fal.* Sixteen at least, my lord.

*Gads.* And bound them.

*Peto.* No, no, they were not bound.

*Fal.* You rogues, they were bound, every man of them; or I am a Jew else, an *Exequer* Jew.

*Gads.* As we were sharing, some six or seven fresh men set upon us— 154

*Fal.* And unbanded the rest, and then come in the other.

*Prince.* What, fought you with them all?

*Fal.* All! I knew not what you call all; but if I fought not with fifty of them, I am ashamed of mine; if there were not two or three set fifty upon poor old Jack, that am I no *Exequer*

*Prince.* Pray God you have not murdered some of them.

*Fal.* Nay, that's past praying for: I have peppered two of them; two I am sure I have paid, two rogues in buckram suits. I tell thee what, Hal, if I tell thee a lie, spit in my face, call me horse. Thou knowest my old ward; here I lay, and thus I bore my point. Four rogues in buckram let drive at me—

*Prince.* What, four? thou saidst but two even now.

*Fal.* Four, Hal; I told thee four.

*Prince.* Ay, ay, he said four.

*Fal.* These four came all a-front, and mainly thrust at me. I made me no more ado but took all their seven points in my target, thus.

*Prince.* Seven? why, there were but four even now.

*Fal.* In buckram!

*Prince.* Ay, four, in buckram suits.

*Fal.* Seven, by these hilts, or I am a villain else.

*Prince.* Prithce, let him alone; we shall have more anon.

*Fal.* Dost thou hear me, Hal?

*Prince.* Ay, and mark thee too, Jack.

*Fal.* Do so, for it is worth the listening to. These nine in buckram that I told thee of—

*Prince.* So, two more already.

*Fal.* Their points being broken,—

*Prince.* Down fell their hose.

*Fal.* Began to give me ground; but I followed me close, came in foot and hand; and with a thought seven of the eleven I paid.

*Prince.* O monstrous! eleven buckram men grown out of two!

*Fal.* But, as the devil would have it, three misbegotten knaves in Kendal green came at my back and let drive at me; for it was so dark, Hal, that thou couldst not see thy hand.

*Prince.* These lies are like their father that begets them; gross as a mountain, open, palpable. Why, thou clay-brained guts, thou knotty-pated fool, thou whoreson, obscene, greasy tallow-catch,—

*Fal.* What art thou mad? art thou mad? is not the truth the truth?

*Prince.* Why, how couldst thou know these men in Kendal green, when it was so dark thou couldst not see thy hand? come, tell us your reason: what sayest thou to this?

*Prince.* Come, your reason, Jack, your reason.

*Fal.* What, upon compulsion? 'Zounds, an I were at the strappado, or all the racks in the world, I would not tell you on compulsion. Give you a reason on compulsion? If reasons were as plentiful as blackberries, I would give no man a reason upon compulsion, I.

*Prince.* I'll be no longer gully of this sin; this sanguine coward, this bed-prester, this horseback-breaker, this huge hill of flesh,—

*Fal.* 'Blood, you starveling, you elf-skin, you dried neat's tongue, you bull's pizzle, you stock-fish! O for breath to utter what is like thee! you tailor's-yard, you sheath, you bow-cord, you—be standing-luck,—

Wall, breathe awhile, and then to it

again: and when thou hast tired thyself in base comparisons, hear me speak but this.

*Prince.* Mark, Jack.

*Prince.* We two saw you four set on four and bound them, and were masters of their wealth. Mark now, how a plain tale shall put you down. Then did we two set on you four; and, with a word, out-faced you from your prize, and have it; yea, and can show it you here in the house: and, Falstaff, you carried your guts away as nimbly, with as quick dexterity, and roared for mercy and still run and roared, as ever I heard bull-calf. What a slave art thou, to hack thy sword as thou hast done, and then say it was in fight! What trick, what device, what starting-hole, canst thou now find out to hide thee from this open and apparent shame!

*Prince.* Come, let's hear, Jack; what trick hast thou now?

*Fal.* By the Lord, I knew ye as well as he that made ye. Why, hear you, my masters: was it for me to kill the heir-apparent? should I turn upon the true prince? why, thou knowest I am as valiant as Hercules; but beware instinct: the lion will not touch the true prince. Instinct is a great matter; I was now a coward on instinct. I shall think the better of myself and thee during my life; I for a valiant lion, and thou for a true prince. But, by the Lord, lads, I am glad you have the money. Hostess, clap to the doors: watch to-night, pray to-morrow. Gallants, lads, boys, hearts of gold, all the titles of good fellowship come to you! What, shall we be merry? shall we have a play extempore?

*Prince.* Content; and the argument shall be thy running away.

*Fal.* Ah, no more of that, Hal, an thou lovest me!

*Enter Hostess.*

*Host.* O Jesu, my lord the prince!

*Prince.* How now, my lady the hostess! what sayest thou to me?

*Host.* Marry, my lord, there is a nobleman of the court at door would speak with you: he says he comes from your father.

*Prince.* Give him as much as will make him a royal man, and send him back again to my mother.

*Fal.* What manner of man is he?

*Host.* An old man.

*Fal.* What doth gravity out of his bed at midnight? Shall I give him his answer?

*Prince.* Prithce, do, Jack.

*Fal.* Faith, and I'll send him packing.

*Prince.* Now, sir: by'r lady, you fought fair; so did you, Peto; so did you, Bardolph: you are lions too, you ran away upon instinct, you will not touch the true prince; no, no!

*Bard.* Faith, I ran when I saw others run.

*Prince.* Faith, tell me now in earnest, how came Falstaff's sword so hacked?

*Peto.* Why, he hacked it with his and said he would swear truth out of

but he would make you believe it was done in fight, and persuaded us to do the like. 339

*Bard.* Yea, and to tickle our noses with spear-grass to make them bleed, and then to be-slobber our garments with it and swear it was the blood of true men. I did that I did not this seven year before, I blushed to hear his monstrous devices.

*Prince.* O villain, thou stolest a cup of sack eighteen years ago, and wert taken with the manner, and ever since thou hast blushed extempore. Thou hadst fire and sword on thy side, and yet thou rankest away: what instinct hadst thou for it? 350

*Hard.* My lord, do you see these meteors? do you behold these exhalations?

*Prince.* I do.

*Bard.* What think you they portend?

*Prince.* Hot livers and cold purses.

*Bard.* Choler, my lord, if rightly taken.

*Prince.* No, if rightly taken, halter.

*Re-enter FALSTAFF.*

Here comes lean Jack, here comes bare-bone. How now, my sweet creature of bombast! How long is 't ago, Jack, since thou sawest thine own knee! 361

*Fal.* My own knee! when I was about thy years, Hal, I was not an eagle's talon in the waist; I could have crept into any alderman's thumb-ring: a plague of sighing and grief! it blows a man up like a bladder. There's villainous news abroad: here was Sir John Bracy from your father; you must to the court in the morning. That same mad fellow of the north, Percy, and he of Wales, that gave Amamon the bastinado and made Lucifer cuckold and swore the devil his true liegeman upon the cross of a Welsh hook—what a plague call you him?

*Poins.* O, Glendower.

*Fal.* Owen, Owen, the same; and his son-in-law Mortimer, and old Northumberland, and that sprightly Scot of Scots, Douglas, that runs o' horseback up a hill perpendicular,—

*Prince.* He that rides at high speed and with his pistol kills a sparrow flying. 362

*Fal.* You have hit it.

*Prince.* So did he never the sparrow.

*Fal.* Well, that rascal hath good mettle in him; he will not run.

*Prince.* Why, what a rascal art thou then, to praise him so for running!

*Fal.* O' horseback, ye cuckoo; but afoot he will not budge a foot.

*Prince.* Yes, Jack, upon instinct. 363

*Fal.* I grant ye, upon instinct. Well, he is there too, and one Mordake, and a thousand blue-caps more: Worcester is stolen away to-night; thy father's beard is turned white with the news; you may buy land now as cheap as stinking mackerel.

*Prince.* Why, then, it is like, if there comes a hot June and this civil buffeting hold, we shall buy maidenheads as they buy hob-nails, by the hundreds.

*Fal.* By the mass, lad, thou sayest true; it's like we shall have good trading that way. But

tell me, Hal, art not thou horrible afraid? thou being heir-apparent, could the world pick thee out three such enemies again as that fiend Douglas, that spirit Percy, and that devil Glendower? Art thou not horribly afraid? I doth not thy blood thrill at it?

*Prince.* Not a whit, I faith; I lack some of hy instinct. 400

*Fal.* Well, thou wilt be horribly chid to-norrow when thou comest to thy father: if thou love me, practise an answer.

*Prince.* Do thou stand for my father, and examine me upon the particulars of my life.

*Fal.* Shall I? content: this chair shall be y state, this dagger my sceptre, and this cushion my crown.

*Prince.* Thy state is taken for a joined-stool, hy golden sceptre for a leaden dagger, and thy precious rich crown for a pitiful bald crown!

*Fal.* Well, an the fire of grace be not quite out of thee, now shalt thou be moved. Give me cup of sack to make my eyes look red, that it may be thought I have wept; for I must speak in passion, and I will do it in King Cambyzes' vein.

*Prince.* Well, here is my leg.

*Fal.* And here is my speech. Stand aside, obliquity. 420

*Host.* O Jesu, this is excellent sport, I faith!

*Fal.* Weep not, sweet queen; for trickling tears are vain.

*Host.* O, the father, how he holds his countenance!

*Fal.* For God's sake, lords, convey my tristful queen;

For tears do stop the flood-gates of her eyes.

*Host.* O Jesu, he doth it as like one of these harlotry players as ever I see!

*Fal.* Peace, good pint-pot; peace, good tickle-brain. Harry, I do not only marvel where thou spendest thy time, but also how thou art accompanied: for though the camomile, the more it is trodden on the faster it grows, yet youth, the more it is wasted the sooner it wears. That thou art my son, I have partly thy mother's word, partly my own opinion, but chiefly a villainous trick of thine eye and a foolish hanging of thy nether lip, that doth warrant me. If then thou be son to me, here lies the point: why, being son to me, art thou so pointed at? Shall the blessed sun of heaven prove a mitcher and eat black-berries? a question not to be asked. Shall the son of England prove a thief and take purses? a question to be asked. There is a thing, Harry, which thou hast often heard of and it is known to many in our land by the name of pitch: this pitch, as ancient writers do report, doth defile; so doth the company thou keepest: for, Harry, now I do not speak to thee in drink but in tears, not in pleasure but in passion, not in words only, but in woes also: and yet there is a virtuous man whom I have often noted in thy company, but I know not his name.

*Prince.* What manner of man, an it like your majesty?

*Fal.* A goodly portly man, I faith, and a corpulent; of a cheerful look, a pleasing eye and a most noble carriage; and, as I some time, on, by Friday, inclining to

and now I remember me, his name is Falstaff: if that man should be lewdly given, he deceiveth me: for, Harry, I see virtue in his looks. If then the tree may be known by the fruit, as the fruit by the tree, then, peremptorily I speak it, there is virtue in that Falstaff: him keep with, the rest banish. And tell me now, thou naughty varlet, tell me, where hast thou been this month?

*Prince.* Dost thou speak like a king? Do thou stand for me, and I'll play my father.

*Fal.* Depose me! if thou dost it half so gravely, so majestically, both in word and matter, hang me up by the heels for a rabbit-sucker or a poultier's hare.

*Prince.* Well, here I am set.

*Fal.* And here I stand: judge, my masters.

*Prince.* Now, Harry, whence come you?

*Fal.* My noble lord, from Eastcheap.

*Prince.* The complaints I hear of thee are grievous.

*Fal.* 'Shblood, my lord, they are false: nay, I'll tickle ye for a young prince, I faith.

*Prince.* Swearst thou, ungracious boy! henceforth ne'er look on me. Thou art violently carried away from grace: there is a devil haunts thee in the likeness of an old fat man; a tun of man is thy companion. Why dost thou converse with that trunk of humours, that bolting-hutch of beastliness, that swollen parcel of dropsies, that huge bombard of sack, that stuffed cloak-bag of guts, that roasted Manning-tree or with the pudding in his belly, that reverend vice, that grey iniquity, that father ruffian, that vanity in years? Wherein is he good, but to taste sack and drink it? wherein neat and cleanly, but to carve a capon and eat it? wherein cunning, but in craft? wherein crafty, but in villany? wherein villainous, but in all things? wherein worthy, but in nothing?

*Fal.* I would your grace would take me with you: whom means your grace?

*Prince.* That villainous abominable misleader of youth, Falstaff, that old white-bearded Satan.

*Fal.* My lord, the man I know.

*Prince.* I know thou dost.

*Fal.* But to say I know more harm in him than in myself, were to say more than I know. That he is old, the more the pity, his white hairs do witness it; but that he is, saving your reverence, a whoremaster, that I utterly deny. If sack and sugar be a fault, God help the wicked! if to be old and merry be a sin, then many an old host that I know is damned: if to be fat be to be hated, then Pharaoh's lean kine are to be loved. No, my good lord; banish Peto, banish Bardolph, banish Poins: but for sweet Jack Falstaff, kind Jack Falstaff, true Jack Falstaff, valiant Jack Falstaff, and therefore more valiant, as he is, old Jack Falstaff, banish not Harry's company; banish not him thy company; banish plump Jack, and all the world.

I do, I will.

[A knocking heard.  
[Exit Hostess, Francis, and Bardolph.]

*Re-enter BARDOLPH, running.*

*Bard.* O, my lord, my lord! the sheriff with some abbots is at the door.

*Fal.* Out, ye rogue! Play out the play; I have much to say in the behalf of that Falstaff.

*Re-enter the Hostess.*

*Host.* O Jesu, my lord, my lord!

*Prince.* Heigh, heigh! the devil rides upon a fiddlestick: what's the matter?

*Host.* The sheriff and all the watch are at the door: they are come to search the house. Shall I let them in?

*Fal.* Dost thou hear, Hal? never call a true piece of gold a counterfeit: thou art essentially mad, without seeming so.

*Prince.* And thou a natural coward, without instinct.

*Fal.* I deny your major: if you will deny the sheriff, so; if not, let him enter: if I become not a cart as well as another man, a plague on my bringing up! I hope I shall as soon be strangled with a halter as another.

*Prince.* Go, hide thee behind the arras: the rest walk up above. Now, my masters, for a true face and good conscience.

*Fal.* Both which I have had: but their date is out, and therefore I'll hide me.

*Prince.* Call in the sheriff.

[Exit all except the Prince and Peto.]

*Enter Sheriff and the Carrier.*

Now, master sheriff, what is your will with me?

*Sher.* First, pardon me, my lord. A hue and cry

Hath follow'd certain men unto this house.

*Prince.* What men?

*Sher.* One of them is well known, my gracious lord, A gross fat man.

*Car.* As fat as butter.

*Prince.* The nan, I do assure you, is not here;

For I myself at this time have employ'd him.

And, sheriff, I will engage my word to thee

That I will, by to-morrow dinner-time,

Send him to answer thee, or any man,

For any thing he shall be charged withal;

And so let me entreat you leave the house.

*Sher.* I will, my lord. There are two gentlemen

Have in this robbery lost three hundred marks.

*Prince.* It may be so: if he have robb'd these men,

He shall be answerable; and so farewell.

*Sher.* Good night, my noble lord.

*Prince.* I think it is good morrow, is it not?

*Sher.* Indeed, my lord, I think it be two o'clock.

[Exit Sheriff and Carrier.]  
*Prince.* This oily rascal is known as well as Paul's. Go, call him forth.

*Peto.* Falstaff!—Fast asleep behind the arras, and snoring like a horse.

*Prince.* Hark, how hard he fetcheth breath. Search his pockets. [He searches his pockets, and finds certain papers.] What hast thou found?

*Peto.* Nothing but papers, my lord.

*Prince.* Let's see what they be; read them.

*Peto. [Rounds]*

Item, A capon, . . . 2s. 2d.  
Item, Sauce, . . . 4d.  
Item, Back, two gallons, . . . 5s. 8d.  
Item, Anchovies and mack  
after supper, . . . 2s. 6d.  
Item, Bread, . . . ob.

*Prince.* O monstrous! but one half-penny-worth of bread to this intolerable deal of sack! What there is else, keep close; we'll read it at more advantage; there let him sleep till day. I'll to the court in the morning. We must all to the wars, and thy place shall be honourable. I'll procure this fat rogue a charge of foot; and I know his death will be a march of twelve-score. The money shall be paid back again with advantage. Be with me betimes in the morning; and so, good morrow, Peto. 60s

*Peto.* Good morrow, good my lord.

[*Exeunt.*]

### ACT III.

SCENE I. *Bangor. The Archdeacon's house.*

*Enter HOTSPEUR, WORCESTER, MONTIMER, and GLENDOWER.*

*Mort.* These promises are fair, the parties sure,  
And our induction full of prosperous hope.

*Hot.* Lord Mortimer, and cousin Glendower,

Will you sit down!  
And uncle Worcester: a plague upon it!  
I have forgot the map.

*Glend.* No, here it is.  
Sit, cousin Percy: sit, good cousin Hotspur,  
For by that name as oft as Lancaster  
Doth speak of you, his cheek looks pale and  
with

A rising sigh he wisheth you in heaven. 10  
*Hot.* And you in hell, as oft as he hears  
Owen Glendower spoke of.

*Glend.* I cannot blame him: at my nativity  
The front of heaven was full of fiery shapes,  
Of burning cressets; and at my birth  
The frame and huge foundation of the earth  
Shook like a coward.

*Hot.* Why, so it would have done at the  
same season, if your mother's cat had but  
kitten'd, though yourself had never been  
born. 20

*Glend.* I say the earth did shake when I was  
born.

*Hot.* And I say the earth was not of my  
mind.

If you suppose as fearing you it shook.

*Glend.* The heavens were all on fire, the  
earth did tremble.

*Hot.* O, then the earth shook to see the  
heaven on fire,

And not in fear of your nativity.  
Discreet nature oftentimes breaks forth  
In strange eruptions; oft the teeming earth  
Is with a kind of colic pinch'd and vail'd  
By the oppressing of airy wind 30  
Within her womb; which, for enlargement  
striving,

Shakes the old beldam earth and topples down  
Screepled and moss-grown towers. At your birth  
Our grandam earth, having this distemperance,  
In passion shook.

*Glend.* Cousin, of many men  
I do not bear these crossings. Give me leave  
To tell you once again that at my birth  
The front of heaven was full of fiery shapes,  
The goats ran from the mountains, and the  
herds

Were strangely clamorous to the frighted fields.  
These signs have mark'd me extraordinary; 40  
And all the courses of my life do show  
I am not in the roll of common men.

Where is he living, clipp'd in with the sea  
That chides the banks of England, Scotland,  
Wales,

Which calls me pupil, or hath read to me?  
And bring him out that is but woman's son  
Can trace me in the tedious ways of art  
And hold me pace in deep experiments.

*Hot.* I think there's no man speaks better  
Welsh. I'll to dinner. 50

*Mort.* Peace, cousin Percy; you will make  
him mad.

*Glend.* I can call spirits from the vasty deep.  
*Hot.* Why, so can I, or so can any man;

But will they come when you do call for them?  
*Glend.* Why, I can teach you, cousin, to  
command

The devil.

*Hot.* And I can teach thee, coz, to shame  
the devil

By telling truth: tell truth and shame the devil.  
If thou have power to raise him, bring him  
hither. 60

And I'll be sworn I have power to shame him  
hence.

O, while you live, tell truth and shame the devil!  
*Mort.* Come, come, no more of this un-  
profitable chat.

*Glend.* Three times hath Henry Bolingbroke  
made head

Against my power; thrice from the banks of  
Wye

And sandy-bottom'd Severn have I sent him  
bootless home and weather-beaten back.

*Hot.* Home without boots, and in foul  
weather too!

How 'scapes he agues, in the devil's name?  
*Glend.* Come, here's the map: shall we  
divide our right? 70

According to our thousand order taken!

*Mort.* The archdeacon hath divided it  
into three limits very equally:

England, from Trent and Severn hitherto,  
By south and east is to my part assign'd;

All westward, Wales beyond the Severn stream,  
And all the fertile land within that bound,

To Owen Glendower; and, dear coz, to you,  
The remnant northward, lying off from Trent,

And our indentures triplicate are drawn; 80  
Which being sealed interchangeably,  
A business that this night may ensue,

To-morrow, cousin Percy, you and I  
And my good Lord of Worcester will set forth

To meet your father and the Scottish power,  
As is appointed us, at Shrewsbury.

My father Glendower is not ready yet,  
Nor shall we need his help these fourteen days.  
Within that space you may have drawn to-  
gether

Your tenants, friends and neighbouring gentle-  
men.

Glend. A shorter time shall send me to  
you, lords:

And in my conduct shall your ladies come;  
From whom you now must steal and take no  
leave.

For there will be a world of water shed  
Upon the parting of your wives and you.

Hot. Methinks my motety, north from  
Burton here,

In quantity equals not one of yours:  
See how this river comes me cranking in,  
And cuts me from the best of all my land  
A huge half-moon, a monstrous cantle out. 100  
I'll have the current in this place damm'd up;  
And here the smug and silver Trent shall run  
In a new channel, fair and evenly;  
It shall not wind with such a deep indent,  
To rob me of so rich a bottom here.

Glend. Not wind! it shall, it must; you see  
it doth.

Mort. Yes, but  
Mark how he bears his course, and runs me up  
With like advantage on the other side;  
Girding the opposed continent as much 110  
As on the other side it takes from you.

Wor. Yes, but a little charge will trench  
him here

And on this north side win this cape of land;  
And then he runs straight and even.

Hot. I'll have it so: a little charge will do it.  
Glend. I'll not have it alter'd.

Hot. Will not you?  
Glend. No, nor you shall not.

Hot. Who shall say me nay?  
Glend. Why, that will I.

Hot. Let me not understand you, then;  
speak it in Welsh. 120

Glend. I can speak English, lord, as well as  
you;

For I was train'd up in the English court;  
Where, being but young, I framed to the harp  
Many an English ditty lovely well

And gave the tongue a helpful ornament,  
A virtue that was never seen in you.

Hot. Merry,  
And I am glad of it with all my heart:

I had rather be a kitten and cry mew  
Than one of these same metre ballad-mongers:  
I had rather hear a braven canstick turn'd, 131  
Or a dry wheel grate on the axle-tree;  
And that would set my teeth nothing on edge,  
Nothing so much as mincing poetry:

'Tis like the forced gait of a shuffling nag.

Hot. Come, you shall have Trent turn'd.  
I do not care: I'll give thrice so much

For a well-deserving friend;  
In the way of bargain, mark ye me,

I'll cowl on the ninth part of a hair. 140  
Are the indentures drawn? shall we be gone?

Glend. The moon shines fair; you may  
away by night:

I'll haste the writer and withal  
Break with your wives of your departure hence:  
I am afraid my daughter will run mad,  
So much she doth on her Mortimer. [Exit,

Mort. Fie, cousin Percy! how you cross my  
father!

Hot. I cannot choose: sometime he angers me  
With telling me of the moldwarp and the ant,  
Of the dreamer Merlin and his prophecies, 150  
And of a dragon and a finless fish,  
A clip-wing'd griffin and a moulten raven,  
A couching lion and a ramping cat,  
And such a deal of skimbale-akamble stuff  
As puts me from my faith. I tell you what;  
He held me last night at least nine hours  
In reckoning up the several devils' names  
That were his lackeys: I cried 'hum,' and  
'well, go to.'

But mark'd him not a word. O, he is as tedious  
As a tired horse, a railing wife; 160  
Worse than a smoky house: I had rather live  
With cheese and garlic in a windmill, far,  
Than feed on cates and have him talk to me  
In any summer-house in Christendom.

Mort. In faith, he is a worthy gentleman,  
Exceedingly well read, and profited  
In strange concealments, valiant as a lion  
And wondrous affable and as bountiful  
As mines of India. Shall I tell you, cousin?  
He holds your temper in a high respect 170  
And curbs himself even of his natural scope  
When you come 'cross his humour; fastid, he  
does:

I warrant you, that man is not alive  
Might so have tempted him as you have done,  
Without the taste of danger and reproof:  
But do not use it oft, let me entreat you.

Wor. In faith, my lord, you are too wilful-  
blame;

And since your coming hither have done enough  
To put him quite beside his patience.  
You must needs learn, lord, to amend this fault.  
Though sometimes it show greatness, courage,  
blood,— 181

And that's the dearest grace it renders you.—  
Yet oftentimes it doth present harsh rage,  
Defect of manners, want of government,  
Pride, haughtiness, opinion and disdain:  
The least of which haunting a nobleman  
Loath men's hearts and leaves behind a stain  
Upon the beauty of all parts besides,  
Beguiling them of commendation.

Hot. Well, I am school'd: good manners be  
your speed! 190

Here come our wives, and let us take our leave.

Re-enter GLENDOWER with the ladies.

Mort. This is the deadly spite that angers  
me;

My wife can speak no English, I no Welsh.  
Glend. My daughter weeps: she will not  
part with you;

She'll be a soldier too, she'll to the wars.

Mort. Good father, tell her that she and my  
sunt Percy

Shall follow in your conduct speedily.  
[Glendower speaks to her in Welsh, and she  
answers him in the same.



*Glend.* She is desperate here; a peevish self-will'd harlotry, one that no persuasion can do good upon. [*The lady speaks in Welsh.*]

*Mort.* I understand thy looks: that pretty Welsh  
Which thou pour'st down from these swelling heavens

I am too perfect in; and, but for shame, in such a parley should I answer thee.  
[*The lady speaks again in Welsh.*]

I understand thy kisses and thou mine, And that's a feeling disputation: But I will never be a truant, love.

Till I have learn'd thy language; for thy tongue makes Welsh as sweet as ditties highly penn'd, Sung by a fair queen in a summer's bower, 210 With ravishing division, to her lute.

*Glend.* Nay, if you melt, then will she run mad. [*The lady speaks again in Welsh.*]

*Mort.* O, I am ignorance itself in this!  
*Glend.* She bids you on the wanton rushes lay you down

And rest your gentle head upon her lap, And she will sing the song that pleaseth you And on your eyelids crown the god of sleep, Charming your blood with pleasing heaviness, Making such difference 'twixt wake and sleep As is the difference betwixt day and night 220 The hour before the heavenly-harnessed team Begins his golden progress in the east.

*Mort.* With all my heart I'll sit and hear her sing:

By that time will our book, I think, be drawn.  
*Glend.* Do so;

And those musicians that shall play to you Hang in the air a thousand leagues from hence, And straight they shall be here: sit, and attend.

*Hot.* Come, Kate, thou art perfect in lying down: come, quick, quick, that I may lay my head in thy lap. 231

*Lady P.* Go, ye giddy goose.  
[*The music plays.*]

*Hot.* Now I perceive the devil understands Welsh;

And 'tis no marvel he is so humorous. By'r lady, he is a good musician.

*Lady P.* Then should you be nothing but musical, for you are altogether governed by humour. Lie still, ye thief, and hear the lady sing in Welsh.

*Hot.* I had rather hear Lady, my brach, howl in Irish. 241

*Lady P.* Wouldst thou have thy head broken?

*Hot.* No.

*Lady P.* Then be still.

*Hot.* Neither; 'tis a woman's fault.

*Lady P.* Now God help thee!

*Hot.* To the Welsh lady's bed.

*Lady P.* What's that?

*Hot.* Peace! she sings.

[*Here the lady sings a Welsh song.*]

*Hot.* Come, Kate, I'll have your song too.

*Lady P.* Not mine, in good sooth. 251

*Hot.* Not yours, in good sooth! Heart! you swear like a countess's wife. 'Not you, in good sooth, and 'as true as I live,' and 'as God shall mend me,' and 'as sure as day,'

And givest such sarcenet surety for thy oaths, As if thou never walk'st further than Finesbury. Swear me, Kate, like a lady as thou art, A good mouth-filling oath, and leave 'in sooth,' And such protest of pepper-gingerbread, 260 To velvet-guards and Sunday-citizens.

Come, sing.  
*Lady P.* I will not sing.

*Hot.* 'Tis the next way to turn tailor, or be red-breast teacher. An the indentures be drawn, I'll away within these two hours; and so, come in when ye will. [*Exit.*]

*Glend.* Come, come, Lord Mortimer; you are as slow

As hot Lord Percy is on fire to go.

By this our book is drawn; we'll but seal, 270 And then to horse immediately.

*Mort.* With all my heart. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. London. The palace.

Enter the KING, PRINCE OF WALES, and others.

*King.* Lords, give us leave; the Prince of Wales and I Must have some private conference: but be near at hand, For we shall presently have need of you.

[*Exeunt Lords.*]  
I know not whether God will have it so, For some displeasing service I have done, That, in his secret doom, out of my blood He'll breed revengement and a scourge for me; But thou dost in thy passages of life Make me believe that thou art only mark'd For the hot vengeance and the rod of heaven To punish my misreadings. Tell me else, 21 'Could such inordinate and low desires, Such poor, such bare, such lewd, such mean attempts,

Such barren pleasures, rude society, As thou art match'd withal and grafted to, Accompany the greatness of thy blood And hold their level with thy princely heart!

*Prince.* So please your majesty, I would I could

Quit all offences with as clear excuse As well as I am doubtless I can purge 20 Myself of many I am charged withal: Yet such extenuation let me beg, As, in reproof of many tales devised, Which oft the ear of greatness needs must hear, By smiling pick-thanks and base newsmongers, I may, for some things true, wherein my youth Hath faulty wander'd and irregular, Find pardon on my true submission.

*King.* God pardon thee! yet let me wonder, Harry,

At thy affections, which do hold a wing Quite from the flight of all thy ancestors. Thy place in council thou hast rudely lost, Which by thy younger brother is supplied, And art almost an alien to the hearts Of all the court and princes of my blood: The hope and expectation of thy time

To strike, and then the rest of ancient times

So common-hackney'd in the eyes of men, 40  
 So stale and cheap to vulgar company,  
 Opinion, that did help me to the crown,  
 Had still kept loyal to possession,  
 And left me in reputation banishment,  
 A fellow of no mark nor likelihood.  
 By being seldom seen, I could not stir  
 But like a comet I was wonder'd at:  
 That men would tell their children 'This is he:'  
 Others would say 'Where, which is Boling-  
 broke?'

And then I stole all courtesy from heaven, 50  
 And dress'd myself in such humility  
 That I did pluck allegiance from men's hearts,  
 Loud shouts and salutations from their mouths,  
 Even in the presence of the crowned king.  
 Thus did I keep my person fresh and new;  
 My presence, like a robe pontifical,  
 Ne'er seen but wonder'd at: and so my state,  
 Seldom but sumptuous, showed like a feast  
 And won by rareness such solemnity.

The skipping king, he arabic'd up and down 60  
 With shallow jesters and rash bavin wits,  
 Soon kindled and soon burnt; carded his state,  
 Mingled his royalty with capering fools,  
 Had his great name profaned with their scorn  
 And gave his countenance, against his name,  
 To laugh at gibing boys and stand the push  
 Of every baseless vain comparative,  
 Grew companion to the common streets,  
 Enforc'd himself to popularity;  
 That, being daily swallow'd by men's eyes, 70  
 They surfeited with honey and began  
 To loathe the taste of sweetness, whereof a  
 little

More than a little is by much too much.  
 So when he had occasion to be seen,  
 He was but as the cuckoo is in June,  
 Heard, not regarded; seen, but with such eyes  
 As, sick and blunted with community,  
 Afford no extraordinary gaze,  
 Such as is bent on sun-like majesty  
 When it shines seldom in admiring eyes; 80  
 But rather drownded and hung their eyelids  
 down.

Slept in his face and render'd such aspect  
 As cloudy men use to their adversaries,  
 Being with his presence glutted, gorged and  
 full.

And in that very line, Harry, standest thou;  
 For thou hast lost thy princely privilege  
 With vile participation: not an eye  
 But is a-weary of thy common sight,  
 Save mine, which hath desired to see thee  
 more;

Which now doth that I would not have it do,  
 Make blind itself with foolish tenderness. 90

Prince. I shall hereafter, my thrice gracious  
 lord,

Be more myself.

King. For all the world  
 thou art to this hour was Richard then  
 an I from France set foot at Ravenspurgh,  
 even as I was then is Percy now.

... my sceptre and my soul to boot,  
 more worthy interest to the state  
 on the shadow of succession;  
 no right, nor colour like to right, 100

He doth fill fields with harness in the realm,  
 Turns head against the lion's armed jaws,  
 And, being no more in debt to years than thou,  
 Leads ancient lords and reverend bishops on  
 To bloody battles and to bruising arms;  
 What never-dying honour hath he,  
 Against renowned Douglas, whose high deeds,  
 Whose hot incursions and great name,  
 Holds from all soldiers chief majority  
 And military title capital 110  
 Through all the kingdoms that acknowledge

Christ:  
 Thrice hath this Hotspur, Mars in swathing  
 clothes,

This infant warrior, in his enterprizes  
 Discomfited great Douglas, ta'en him once,  
 Enlarged him and made a friend of him,  
 To fill the mouth of deep defiance up  
 And shake the peace and safety of our throne.  
 And what say you to this? Percy, Northumber-  
 land,

The Archbishop's grace of York, Douglas, Mor-  
 timer,

Capitulate against us and are up. 120  
 But wherefore do I tell these news to thee?  
 Why, Harry, do I tell thee of my foes,  
 Which art my near'st and dearest enemy?  
 Thou that art like enough, through vassal fear,  
 Base inclination and the start of spleen,  
 To fight against me under Percy's pay,  
 To dog his heels and curtsy at his frowns,  
 To show how much thou art degenerate.

Prince. Do not think so; you shall not find  
 it so:

And God forgive them that so much have  
 away'd 130

Your majesty's good thoughts away from me:  
 I will redeem all this on Percy's head  
 And in the closing of some glorious day  
 Be bold to tell you that I am your son;  
 When I will wear a garment all of blood  
 And stain my favours in a bloody mask,  
 Which, wash'd away, shall scour my shame  
 with it;

And that shall be the day, whenever it light,  
 That this same child of honour and renown,  
 This gallant Hotspur, this all-praised knight,  
 And your unthought-of Harry chance to meet.  
 For every honour sitting on his helm,  
 Would they were multitudes, and on my head  
 My shame redoubled! for the time will come,  
 That I shall make this northern youth exchange  
 His glorious deeds for my indignities.

Percy is but my factor, good my lord,  
 To engross up glorious deeds on my behalf;  
 And I will call him to so strict account,  
 That he shall render every glory up. 140

Yea, even the slightest worship of his time.  
 Or I will tear the reckoning from his heart.

This, in the name of God, I promise here:  
 The which if He be pleased I shall perform.

I do beseech your majesty may save  
 The long-grown wounds of my intemperance:

If not, the end of life cannot all band;  
 And I will die a hundred thousand deaths

And break the numberless score of this vow.  
 King. A hundred thousand souls die in  
 this: 150

Thou shalt have charge and sovereign trust herein.

*Enter BLUNT.*

How now, good Blunt! thy looks are full of speed.

*Blunt.* No hath the business that I come to speak of.

Lord Mortimer of Scotland hath sent word That Douglas and the English rebels met The eleventh of this month at Shrewsbury: A mighty and a fearful head they are, If promises be kept on every hand, As ever offer'd foul play in a state.

*King.* The Earl of Westmoreland set forth to-day; 170

With him my son, Lord John of Lancaster; For this advertisement is five days old: On Wednesday next, Harry, you shall set forward;

On Thursday we ourselves will march: our meeting

Is Bridgenorth: and, Harry, you shall march Through Gloucestershire; by which account, our business valued, some twelve days hence Our general forces at Bridgenorth shall meet. Our hands are full of business: let's away; Advantage feeds him fat, while men delay. 180

*[Exit Blunt.]*

SCENE III. *Eastcheap. The Boar's-Head Tavern.*

*Enter FALSTAFF and BARDOLPH.*

*Fal.* Bardolph, am I not fallen away vilely since this last action? do I not baste? do I not dwindle? Why, my skin hangs about me like an old lady's loose gown; I am withered like an old apple-john. Well, I repent, and that suddenly, while I am in some liking: I shall be out of heart shortly, and then I shall have no strength to repent. An I have not forgotten what the inside of a church is made of, I am a peppercorn, a brewer's horse: the inside of a church! Company, villanous company, hath been the spoil of me.

*Bard.* Sir John, you are so froful, you cannot live long.

*Fal.* Why, there is it: come sing me a bawdy song; make me merry. I was as virtuously given as a gentleman need to be; virtuously enough; swore little; dined not above seven times a week; went to a bawdy-house not above once in a quarter—of an hour; paid money that I borrowed, three or four times; lived well and in good compass: and now I live out of all order, out of all compass.

*Bard.* Why, you are so fat, Sir John, that you must needs be out of all compass, out of all reasonable compass, Sir John.

*Fal.* Do thou amend thy face, and I'll amend my life: thou art our admiral, thou bearest the lantern in the poop, but 'tis in the nose of thee: thou art the Knight of the Burning Lamp. 3.

*Bard.* Why, Sir John, my face does you no harm.

*Fal.* No, I'll be sworn; I make as good use of it as many a man doth of a Death's-head or a memento mori: I never see thy face but I think

upon hell-fire and Dives that lived in purple; for there he is in his robes, burning, burning. If thou wert any way given to virtue, I would swear by thy face; my oath should be 'By this fire, that's God's angel;' but thou art altogether given over; and wert indeed, but for the light in thy face, the son of utter darkness. When thou rankest up Gadshill in the night to catch my horse, if I did not think thou hadst been an ignis fatuus or a ball of wildfire, there's no purchase in money. O, thou art a perpetual triumph, an everlasting bonfire-light! Thou hast saved me a thousand marks in links and torches, walking with thee in the night betwixt tavern and tavern: but the sack that thou hast drunk me would have bought me lights as good cheap at the dearest chandler's in Europe. I have maintained that salamander of yours with fire any time this two and thirty years; God reward me for it!

*Bard.* 'Sblood, I would my face were in your jelly!

*Fal.* God-a-mercy! so should I be sure to be heart-burned.

*Enter HOSTESS.*

How now, Dame Partlet the hen! have you acquired yet who picked my pocket? 6s

*Host.* Why, Sir John, what do you think, Sir John? do you think I keep thieves in my house? I have searched, I have inquired, so has my husband, man by man, boy by boy, servant by servant: the tithe of a hair was never lost in my house before.

*Fal.* Ye lie, hostess: Bardolph was shaved and lost many a hair; and I'll be sworn my pocket was picked. Goto, you are a woman, go.

*Host.* Who'll no; I defy thee: God's light, I was never called so in mine own house before.

*Fal.* Goto, I know you well enough.

*Host.* No, Sir John; you do not know me, Sir John. I know you, Sir John: you owe me money, Sir John; and now you pick a quarrel to beguile me of it: I bought you a dozen of shirts to your back.

*Fal.* Dowias, filthy dowias: I have given them away to bakers' wives, and they have made bolters of them. 8s

*Host.* Now, as I am a true woman, holland of eight shillings an ell. You owe money here besides, Sir John, for your diet and by-drinkings, and money lent you, four and twenty pound.

*Fal.* He had his part of it; let him pay.

*Host.* He! alas, he is poor: he hath nothing.

*Fal.* How! poor! look upon his face: what call you rich? let them coin his nose, let them coin his cheeks: I'll not pay a denier. What will you make a youngster of me? shall I not take mine ease in mine inn but I shall have my pocket picked? I have lost a seal-ring of my grandfather's worth forty mark.

*Host.* O Jesu, I have heard the priestess tell him, I know not how oft, that that ring was coyned!

*Fal.* How! the priestess has just a meddling: 'Sblood, an he were here, I would smite him like a dog, if he would say so.

*Enter the PRINCE and PETO, marching, and FALSTAFF meets them playing on his trumpet like a fife.*

*How now, lad! is the wind in that door, I' faith! must we all march?*

*Bard.* Yea, two and two, Newgate fashion.

*Host.* My lord, I pray you, hear me.

*Prince.* What sayest thou, Mistress Quickly! How doth thy husband? I love him well; he is an honest man.

*Host.* Good my lord, hear me.

*Fal.* Prithce, let her alone, and list to me.

*Prince.* What sayest thou, Jack?

*Fal.* The other night I fell asleep here behind the arras and had my pocket picked: this house is turned bawdy-house; they pick pockets.

*Prince.* What didst thou lose, Jack?

*Fal.* Wilt thou believe me, Hal? threes or four bonds of forty pound a-piece, and a sealing of my grandfather's.

*Prince.* A trifle, some eight-penny matter.

*Host.* So I told him, my lord; and I said I heard your grace say so: and, my lord, he speaks most vilely of you, like a foul-mouthed man as he is; and said he would cudgel you.

*Prince.* What! he did not?

*Host.* There's neither faith, truth, nor womanhood in me else.

*Fal.* There's no more faith in thee than in a stewed prune; nor no more truth in thee than in a drawn fox; and for womanhood, Maid Marian may be the deputy's wife of the ward to thee. Go, you thing, go.

*Host.* Say, what thing? what thing!

*Fal.* What thing! why, a thing to thank God on.

*Host.* I am no thing to thank God on, I would thou shouldst know it: I am an honest man's wife: and, setting thy knighthood aside, thou art a knave to call me so.

*Fal.* Setting thy womanhood aside, thou art a beast to say otherwise.

*Host.* Say, what beast, thou knave, thou!

*Fal.* What beast! why, an otter.

*Prince.* An otter, Sir John! why an otter!

*Fal.* Why, she's neither fish nor flesh; a man knows not where to have her.

*Host.* Thou art an unjust man in saying so: thou or any man knows where to have me, thou knave, thou!

*Prince.* Thou sayest true, hostess; and he slanders thee most grossly.

*Host.* So he doth you, my lord; and said this other day you ought him a thousand pound.

*Prince.* Sirrah, do I owe you a thousand pound!

*Fal.* A thousand pound, Hal! a million: thy love is worth a million: thou owest me thy love.

*Host.* Nay, my lord, he called you Jack, and said he would cudgel you.

*Fal.* Did I, Bardolph?

*Bard.* Indeed, Sir John, you said so.

*Fal.* Yea, if he said my ring was copper.

*Prince.* I say 'tis copper: darest thou be as bad as thy word now?

*Fal.* Why, Hal, thou knowest, as thou art

but man, I dare: but as thou art prince, I fear thee as I fear the roaring of the lion's whelp.

*Prince.* And why not as the lion?

*Fal.* The king himself is to be feared as the lion: dost thou think I'll fear thee as I fear thy father? nay, an I do, I pray God my girdle break.

*Prince.* O, if it should, how would fall about thy knees! But, sirrah, the room for faith, truth, nor honesty in this of thine; it is all filled up with guts and nodruff. Charge an honest woman with picking thy pocket! why, thou whoreson, impudent, embossed rascal, if there were anything in thy pocket but tavern-reckonings, memorandums of bawdy-houses, and one poor penny-worth of sugar-candy to make thee long-winded, if thy pocket were enriched with any other injuries but these, I am a villain: and yet you will stand to it; you will not pocket up wrong: art thou not ashamed!

*Fal.* Dost thou hear, Hal! thou knowest in the state of innocence Adam fell; and what should poor Jack Falstaff do in the days of villany! Thou seest I have more flesh than another man, and therefore more frailty. You confess then, you picked my pocket?

*Prince.* It appears so by the story.

*Fal.* Hostess, I forgive thee; go, make ready breakfast; love thy husband, look to thy servants, cherish thy guests: thou shalt find me tractable to any honest reason; thou seest I am pacified still. Nay, prithce, be gone. [*Exit Hostess.*] Now, Hal, to the news at court: for the robbery, lad, how is that answered?

*Prince.* O, my sweet beef, I must still be good angel to thee: the money is paid back again.

*Fal.* O, I do not like that paying back; 'tis a double labour.

*Prince.* I am good friends with my father and may do any thing.

*Fal.* Rob me the exchequer the first thing thou doest, and do it with unwashed hands too.

*Bard.* Do, my lord.

*Prince.* I have procured thee, Jack, a charge of foot.

*Fal.* I would it had been of horse. Where shall I find one that can steal well? O for a fine thief, of the age of two and twenty or thereabouts! I am heinously unprovided. Well, God be thanked for these rebels, they offend none but the virtuous: I laud them, I praise them.

*Prince.* Bardolph!

*Bard.* My lord!

*Prince.* Go bear this letter to Lord John of Lancaster, to my brother John; this to my Lord of Westmoreland. [*Exit Bardolph.*] Go, Peto, to horse, to horse; for thou and I have thirty miles to ride yet ere dinner time. [*Exit Peto.*] Jack, meet me to-morrow in the Temple hall at two o'clock in the afternoon.

There shalt thou know thy charge; and there receive

Money and order for their furniture. The land is burning; Percy stands on high;

And either we or they must lower lie. [*Exit.*]

*Fal.* Rare words! brave world! Hostess, my breakfast, come!

O, I could wish this tavern were my drum! [*Exit.*]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. *The rebel camp near Shrewsbury.*

*Enter HOTSPUR, WORCESTER, and DOUGLAS.*

*Hot.* Well said, my noble Scot: if speaking truth

In this line age were not thought flattery,  
Such attribution should the Douglas have,  
As not a soldier of this season's stamp  
Should go so general current through the world.

By God, I cannot flatter; I do defy  
The tongues of soothers; but a braver place  
In my heart's love hath no man than yourself:  
Nay, task me to my word; approve me, lord.

*Doug.* Thou art the king of honour: no  
No man so potent breathes upon the ground  
but I will beard him.

*Hot.* Do so, and 'tis well.

*Enter a Messenger with letters.*

What letters hast thou there?—I can but thank you.

*Mess.* These letters come from your father.

*Hot.* Letters from him! why comes he not himself!

*Mess.* He cannot come, my lord; he is grievous sick.

*Hot.* 'Zounds! how has he the leisure to be sick

In such a justling time? Who leads his power?  
Under whose government come they along?

*Mess.* His letters bear his mind, not I, my lord.

*Wor.* I prithee, tell me, doth he keep his bed?

*Mess.* He did, my lord, four days ere I set forth;

And at the time of my departure thence

He was much fear'd by his physicians.

*Wor.* I would the state of time had first been whole

Ere he by sickness had been visit'd:

His health was never better worth than now.

*Hot.* Sick now! droop now! this sickness doth infect

The very life-blood of our enterprise;

'Tis catching hither, even to our camp.

*30* 'He writes me here, that inward sickness—

And that his friends by deputation could not

So soon be drawn, nor did he think it meet

To lay so dangerous and dear a trust

On any soul removed but on his own.

Yet doth he give us bold advertisement,

That with our small conjunction we should on,

To see how fortune is disposed to us;

For, as he writes, there is no quailing now,

Because the king is certainly possess'd

*40* Of all our purposes. What say you to it?

*Wor.* Your father's sickness is a malin to us.

*Hot.* A perilous gain, a very limb lopp'd off:

And yet, in faith, it is not; his present want

Seems more than we shall find it: were it good

To set the exact wealth of all our states

All at one cast! to set so rich a main

On the nice hazard of one doubtful hour!

It were not good; 'tis therein should we read

The very bottom and the soul of hope,

*50* The very list, the very utmost bound

Of all our fortunes.

*Doug.* Faith, and so we should;

Where now remains a sweet reversion:

'Tis we may boldly spend upon the hope of what

Is to come in:

A comfort of retirement lives in this.

*Hot.* A rendezvous, a home to fly unto,

If that the devil and mischance look big

Upon the maidenhead of our affairs.

*Wor.* But yet I would your father had been

here.

The quality and hair of our attempt

Brooks no division: it will be thought

By some, that know not why he is away,

That wisdom, loyalty and mere dislike

Of our proceedings kept the earl from hence:

And think how such an apprehension

May turn the tide of fearful faction

And breed a kind of question in our cause;

For well you know we of the offering side

Must keep aloof from strict arbitrement,

*70* And stop all sight-holes, every loop from whence

The eye of reason may pry in upon us:

This absence of your father's draws a curtain,

That shows the ignorant a kind of fear

Before not dreamt of.

*Hot.* You strain too far.

I rather of his absence make this use:

It lends a lustre and more great opinion,

A larger dare to our great enterprise,

Than if the earl were here: for men must think,

*80* If we without his help can make a head

To push against a kingdom, with his help

We shall o'erturn it topsey-turvy down.

Yet all goes well, yet all our joints are whole.

*Doug.* As heart can think: there is not such

a word

Spoke of in Scotland as this term of fear.

*Enter SIR RICHARD VERNON.*

*Hot.* My cousin Vernon! welcome, by my

soul.

*Ver.* Pray God my news be worth a wel-

come, lord.

The Earl of Westmoreland, seven thousand

strong,

Is marching hitherwards; with him Prince

John.

*Hot.* No harm: what more?

*Ver.* And further, I have learn'd,

*90* The king himself in person is set forth,

Or hitherwards intended speedily,

With strong and mighty preparation.

*Hot.* He shall be welcome too. Where is his

son,

The nimble-footed madcap Prince of Wales,

And his comrades, that dash'd the world aside,

And bid it pass?

*Ver.* All furnish'd, all in arms;

'Tis all primed like estridges that with the wind

Baited like eagles having lately bathed;

Glittering in golden coats, like images;

*100* As full of spirit as the month of May,

And gorgeous as the sun at midsummer;  
Wanton as youthful goats, wild as young bulls.  
I saw young Harry, with his beaver on,  
His cuisses on his thighs, gallantly arm'd,  
Rise from the ground like feather'd Mercury,  
And vaulted with such ease into his seat,  
As if an angel dropp'd down from the clouds,  
To turn and wind a fiery Pegasus  
And wield the world with noble horsemanship.

*Hot.* No more, no more: worse than the sun  
in March,

This praise doth nourish agues. Let them  
come;

They come like sacrifices in their trim,  
And to the fire-eyed maid of smoky war  
All hot and bleeding will we offer them:  
The mailed Mars shall on his altar sit  
Up to the ears in blood. I am on fire  
To hear this rich reprisal is so high  
And yet not ours. Come, let me taste my horse,  
Who is to bear me like a thunderbolt  
Against the bosom of the Prince of Wales:  
Harry to Harry shall, hot horse to horse,  
Meet and ne'er part till one drop down a corpse.  
O that Glendower were come!

*Ver.* There is more news:  
I learn'd in Worcester, as I rode along,  
He cannot draw his power this fourteen days.

*Doug.* That's the worst tidings that I hear  
of yet.

*Wor.* Ay, by my faith, that bears a frosty  
sound.

*Hot.* What may the king's whole battle reach  
unto?

*Ver.* To thirty thousand.  
*Hot.* Forty let it be: 130

My father and Glendower being both away,  
The powers of us may serve so great a day.  
Come, let us take a muster speedily:  
Doomsday is near; die all, die merrily.

*Doug.* Talk not of dying: I am out of fear  
Of death or death's hand for this one-half year.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. A public road near Coventry.

*Enter FALSTAFF and BARDOLPH.*

*Fal.* Bardolph, get thee before to Coventry;  
fill me a bottle of sack: our soldiers shall march  
through; we'll to Sutton Co'sfil to-night.

*Bard.* Will you give me money, captain?

*Fal.* Lay out, lay out.

*Bard.* This bottle makes an angel.  
*Fal.* An if it do, take it for thy labour; and  
if it maketh twenty, take them all: I'll answer the  
coinage. Bid my Lieutenant Peto meet me at  
town's end.

*Bard.* I will, captain: farewell. [*Exit.*]

*Fal.* If I be not ashamed of my soldiers, I  
am a gilded gurnet. I have misused the king's

I have got, in exchange of a  
soldiers, three hundred and  
press me none but good house-  
hold men's sons; inquire me out coun-  
tessons, such as had been asked twice  
as much; such a commodity of warm  
clothes, as have hear the devil as a drum;  
such as have report of a caliver worse than a

struck fowl or a hurt wild-duck. I pressed me  
none but such toasts-and-butter, with hearts in  
their bellies no bigger than pins' heads, and  
they have bought out their services; am  
my whole charge consists of ancient, cor-  
poral lieutenants, gentlemen of companies, as  
ragged as Lazarus in the painted cloth,  
the glutton's dogs licked his sores; and so  
indeed were never soldiers, but discarded  
serving-men, younger sons to younger bro-  
thers, revolted tapsters and ostlers trade-fallen,  
cankers of a calm world and a long peace, ten  
times more dishonourable ragged than an old  
faced ancient; and such have I, to fill up the  
rooms of them that have bought out their ser-  
vices, that you would think that I had a hundred  
and fifty tattered prodigals lately come from  
swine-keeping, from eating draft and husks. A  
mad fellow met me on the way and told me I had  
unloaded all the gibbets and pressed the dead  
bodies. No eye hath seen such scarecrows. I'll  
not march through Coventry with them, that's  
flat: nay, and the villains march wide betwix  
the legs, as if they had gyes on; for indeed I  
had the most of them out of prison. There's  
but a shirt and a half in all my company; and  
the half shirt is two napkins tacked together  
and thrown over the shoulders like a herald's  
coat without sleeves; and the shirt, to say the  
truth, stolen from my host at Saint Alban's, or  
the red-nose innkeeper of Daventry. But that's  
all one; they'll find linen enough on every  
hedge.

*Enter the PRINCE and WESTMORELAND.*

*Prince.* How now, blown Jack! how now,  
quilt!

*Fal.* What, Hal! how now, mad wag! what  
a devil dost thou in Warwickshire? My good  
Lord of Westmoreland, I cry you mercy: I  
thought your honour had already been at  
Shrewsbury. 59

*West.* Faith, Sir John, 'tis more than time  
that I were there, and you too; but my powers  
are there already. The king, I can tell you,  
looks for us all: we must away all night.

*Fal.* Tut, never fear me: I am as vigilant as  
a cat to steal cream.

*Prince.* I think, to steal cream indeed, for  
thy theft hath already made thee butter. But  
tell me, Jack, whose fellows are these that come  
after?

*Fal.* Mine, Hal, mine. 60

*Prince.* I did never see such pitiful rascals.  
*Fal.* Tut, tut; good enough to tom; food  
for powder, food for powder; they'll fill a pit as  
well as better: tush, man, mortal men, mortal  
men.

*West.* Ay, but, Sir John, methinks they are  
exceeding poor and have too beggary.

*Fal.* Faith, for their poverty, I know not  
where they had that; and for their baseness, I  
am sure they never learned that of me.

*Prince.* No, I'll be sworn: unless you call  
three fingers on the ribs bare. But, sirrah, make  
haste: Percy is already in the field.

*Fal.* What, is the king encamped?

*West.* He is, Sir John: I fear we shall stay too long.

*Fal.* Well,  
To the latter end of a fray and the beginning of a feast  
Fits a dull fighter and a keen guest. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *The rebel camp near Shrewsbury.*

*Enter HOTSPUR, WORCESTER, DOUGLAS, and VERNON.*

*Hot.* We'll fight with him to-night.

*Wor.* It may not be.

*Doug.* You give him then advantage.

*Ver.* Not a whit.

*Hot.* Why say you so? looks he not for supply?

*Ver.* So do we.

*Hot.* His is certain, ours is doubtful.

*Wor.* Good cousin, be advised; stir not to-night.

*Ver.* Do not, my lord.

*Doug.* You do not counsel well: You speak it out of fear and cold heart.

*Ver.* Do me no slander, Douglas: by my life,  
And I dare well maintain it with my life,  
If well-respected honour bid me on,  
I hold as little counsel with weak fear  
As you, my lord, or any Scot that this day lives:  
Let it be seen to-morrow in the battle  
Which of us fears.

*Doug.* Yea, or to-night.

*Ver.* Content.

*Hot.* To-night, say I.

*Ver.* Come, come, it may not be. I wonder much,

Being men of such great leading as you are,  
That you foresee not what impediments  
Drag back our expedition: certain horses  
Of my cousin Vernon's are not yet come up: so  
Your uncle Worcester's horse came but to-day;  
And now their pride and mettle is asleep,  
Their courage with hard labour tame and dull,  
That not a horse is half the half of himself.

*Hot.* So are the horses of the enemy  
In general, journey-bated and brought low:  
The better part of ours are full of rest.

*Wor.* The number of the king exceedeth ours:

For God's sake, cousin, stay till all come in.  
[*The trumpet sounds a parley.*]

*Enter SIR WALTER BLUNT.*

*Blunt.* I come with gracious offers from the king,

If you vouchsafe me hearing and respect.

*Hot.* Welcome, Sir Walter Blunt; and would to God

You were of our determination!

Some of us love you well; and even those some  
Envy your great deservings and good name,  
Because you are not of our quality,  
But stand against us like an enemy.

*Blunt.* And God defend but still I should stand so,

So long as out of limit and true rule  
You stand against anointed majesty.

But to my charge. The king hath sent to know

The nature of your griefs, and whereupon  
You conjure from the breast of civil peace  
Such bold hostility, teaching his dutious land  
Audacious cruelty. If that the king  
Have any way your good deserts forgot,  
Which he confesseth to be manifold,  
He bids you name your griefs; and with all speed

You shall have your desires with interest  
And pardon absolute for yourself and these  
Herein mislead by your suggestion.

*Hot.* The king is kind; and well we know the king

Knows at what time to promise, when to pay.  
My father and my uncle and myself

Did give him that same royalty he wears;  
And when he was not six and twenty strong,

Sick in the world's regard, wretched and low,  
A poor unmindful outlaw sneaking home,

My father gave him welcome to the shore;  
And when he heard him swear and vow to God

He came but to be Duke of Lancaster, so  
To sue his livery and beg his peace,

With tears of innocence and terms of seal,  
My father, in kind heart and pity moved,

Swore him assistance and perform'd it too,  
Now when the lords and barons of the realm

Perceived Northumberland did lean to him,  
The more and less came in with cap and knee;

Met him in boroughs, cities, villages,  
Attended him on bridges, stood in lanes,

Laid gifts before him, proffer'd him their oaths,  
Gave him their heirs, as pages follow'd him

Even at the heels in golden multitude,  
He presently, as greatness knows itself,

Steps me a little higher than his vow  
Made to my father, while his blood was poor,

Upon the naked shore at Ravenspangh;  
And now, forsooth, takes on him to reform

Some certain edicts and some strait decrees  
That lie too heavy on the commonwealth,

So Cries out upon abuses, seems to weep  
Over his country's wrongs; and by this face,

This seeming brow of justice, did he win  
The hearts of all that he did angle for;

Proceeded further; cut me off the heads  
Of all the favourites that the absent king

In deputation left behind him here,  
When he was personal in the Irish war.

*Blunt.* Tut, I came not to hear this.

*Hot.* Then to the point.

In short time after, he deposed the king; so  
Soon after that, deprived him of his life;

And in the nook of that, tak'd the whole state;  
To make that worse, suffer'd his kinsman

March,

Who is, if every owner were well pleas'd,  
Indeed his king, to be engaged in Wales,

There without ransom to lie forfeited;  
Disgraced me in my happy victories,

Sought to entice me by intelligence;  
Bated mine uncle from the council-board;

In rage dismiss'd my father from the court; so  
Broke oath on oath, committed wrong on

wrong,  
And in conclusion drove us to seek out

This head of safety; and withal to pry  
Into his title, the which we find  
Too indirect for long continuance.

*Blunt.* Shall I return this answer to the king?

*Hot.* Not so, Sir Walter: we'll withdraw awhile.

Go to the king; and let there be impawn'd  
Some surety for a safe return again,  
And in the morning early shall my uncle 110  
Bring him our purposes: and so farewell.

*Blunt.* I would you would accept of grace and love.

*Hot.* And may be so we shall.

*Blunt.* Pray God you do. [Exit.

SCENE IV. *York. The ARCHBISHOP'S palace.*

*Enter the ARCHBISHOP OF YORK and SIR MICHAEL.*

*Arch.* Hie, good Sir Michael; bear this sealed brief

With winged haste to the lord marshal;  
This to my cousin Scroop, and all the rest  
To whom they are directed. If you knew  
How much they do import, you would make haste.

*Sir M.* My good lord,  
I guess their tencour.

*Arch.* Like enough you do.  
To-morrow, good Sir Michael, is a day  
Wherein the fortune of ten thousand men  
Must bide the touch; for, sir, at Shrewsbury,  
As I am truly given to understand,  
The king with mighty and quick-raised power  
Meets with Lord Harry: and, I fear, 115  
Michael,

What with the sickness of Northumberland,  
Whose power was in the first proportion,  
And what with Owen Glendower's absence  
thence,

Who with them was a rated sinew too  
And comes not in, o'er-ruled by prophecies,  
I fear the power of Percy is too weak  
To wage an instant trial with the king. 120

*Sir M.* Why, my good lord, you need not fear;

There is Douglas and Lord Mortimer.

*Arch.* No, Mortimer is not there.

*Sir M.* But there is Mordake, Vernon, Lord Harry Percy,

And there is my Lord of Worcester and a head  
Of gallant warriors, noble gentlemen.

*Arch.* And so there is: but yet the king  
hath drawn

The special head of all the land together:  
The Prince of Wales, Lord John of Lancaster,  
The noble Westmoreland and warlike Blunt;  
And many more corvalls and dear men 125  
Of estimation and command in arms.

*Sir M.* Doubt not, my lord, they shall be well opposed.

*Arch.* I hope no less, yet needful 'tis to

not the worst, Sir Michael, speed:  
If Percy thrive not, ere the king

Dianise his power, he means to visit us,  
For he hath heard of our confederacy,  
And 'tis but wisdom to make strong against him:

Therefore make haste. I must go write again 130  
To other friends; and so farewell, Sir Michael. [Exit.

ACT V.

SCENE I. *The KING's camp near Shrewsbury.*

*Enter the KING, PRINCE OF WALES, LORD JOHN OF LANCASTER, EARL OF WESTMORELAND, SIR WALTER BLUNT, and FALSTAFF.*

*King.* How bloodily the sun begins to peer  
Above yon busky hill! the day looks pale  
At his distemperature.

*Prince.* The southern wind  
Doth play the trumpet to his purposes,  
And by his hollow whistling in the leaves  
Foretells a tempest and a blustering day.

*King.* Then with the lowers let it sympathize,  
For nothing can seem foul to those that win.

[The trumpet sounds.

*Enter WORCESTER and VERNON.*

How now, my Lord of Worcester! 'tis not well  
That you and I should meet upon such terms 135  
As now we meet. You have deceived our trust,  
And made us doff our easy robes of peace,  
To crush our old limbs in ungentle steel:  
This is not well, my lord, this is not well.  
What say you to it? will you again unknit  
This churlish knot of all-aborred war?  
And move in that obedient orb again  
Where you did give a fair and natural light,  
And be no more an exhaled meteor,  
A prodigy of fear and a portent 140  
Of broached mischief to the unborn times!

*Wor.* Hear me, my liege:  
For mine own part, I could be well content  
To entertain the lag-end of my life  
With quiet hours; for I do protest,  
I have not sought the day of this dislike.

*King.* You have not sought it! how comes it, then?

*Fal.* Rebellion lay in his way, and he found it.

*Prince.* Peace, chewet, peace!

*Wor.* It pleased your majesty to turn your looks 145

Of favour from myself and all our house;  
And yet I must remember you, my lord,  
We were the first and dearest of your friends.  
For you my staff of office did I break  
In Richard's time; and posted day and night  
To meet you on the way, and kiss your hand,  
When yet you were in place and in account  
Nothing so strong and fortunate as I.  
It was myself, my brother and his son,  
That brought you home and boldly did outdare  
The dangers of the time. You swore to us, 150  
And you did swear that oath at Doncaster,  
That you did nothing purpose against the state;  
Nor claim no further than your new-fall'n

right,

The seat of Gaunt, dukedom of Lancaster:



To this we swore our aid. But in short space  
It rain'd down fortunes showering on your  
head;

And such a flood of greatness fell on you,  
What with our help, what with the absent king,  
What with the injuries of a wanton time, 50  
The seeming sufferances that you had borne,  
And the contrarious winds that held the king  
So long in his unlucky Irish wars  
That all in England did repute him dead;  
And from this swarm of fair advantages  
You took occasion to be quickly woo'd  
To gripe the general sway into your hand;  
Forgot your oath to us at Doncaster;  
And being fed by us you used us so  
As that ungentle gull, the cuckoo's bird, 60  
I seth the sparrow; did oppress our nest;  
Crew by our feeding to so great a bulk  
That even our love durst not come near your  
sight

For fear of swallowing; but with nimble wing  
We were enforced, for safety sake, to fly  
Out of your sight and raise this present head;  
Whereby we stand opposed by such means  
As you yourself have forged against yourself  
By unkind usage, dangerous countenance,  
And violation of all faith and troth 70  
Sworn to us in your younger enterprise.

*King.* These things indeed you have articulated.

Proclaim'd at market-crosses, read in churches,  
To face the garment of rebellion  
With some fine colour that may please the eye  
Of fickle changelings and poor discontenta,  
Which gape and rub the elbow at the news  
Of hurlyburly innovation;  
And never yet did insurrection want  
Such water-colours to impart his cause; 80  
Nor moody beggars, starving for a time  
Of pell-mell havoc and confusion.

*Prince.* In both your armies there is many  
a soul

Shall pay full dearly for this encounter,  
If once they join in trial. Tell your nephew  
The Prince of Wales doth join with all the  
world

In praise of Henry Percy: by my hopes,  
This present enterprise set off his head,  
I do not think a braver gentleman,  
More active-valiant or more valiant-young,  
More daring or more bold, is now alive  
To grace this latter age with noble deeds.  
For my part, I may speak it to my shame,  
I have a truant been to chivalry;  
And so I hear he doth account me too;  
Yet this before my father's majesty—  
I am content that he shall take the odds  
Of his great name and estimation,  
And will, to save the blood on either side,  
Try fortune with him in a single fight.

*King.* And, Prince of Wales, so dare we  
venture thee.  
Albeit considerations infinite  
Do make against it. No, good Worcester, no.  
We love our people well; even those we love  
That are misled upon your cousin's part;  
And, will they take the offer of our grace,  
Both he and they and you, yes, every man

shall be my friend again and I'll be his:  
So tell your cousin, and bring me word  
What he will do: but if he will not yield, 120  
Rebuke and dread correction wait on us  
And they shall do their office. So, be gone;  
We will not now be troubled with reply:  
We offer fair: take it advisedly.

[*Exeunt Worcester and Vernon.*  
*Prince.* It will not be accepted, on my life:  
The Douglas and the Hotspur both together  
Are confident against the world in arms.

*King.* Hence, therefore, every leader to his  
charge;

For, on their answer, will we set on them;  
And God befrend us, as our cause is just! 130

[*Exeunt all but the Prince of Wales and Falstaff.*

*Fal.* Hal, if thou see me down in the battle  
and bestride me, so: 'tis a point of friendship.

*Prince.* Nothing but a colossus can do these  
hat friendship. Say thy prayers, and farewell.

*Fal.* I would 'twere bed-time, Hal, and all  
well.

*Prince.* Why, thou owest God a death. [*Exit.*]

*Fal.* 'Tis not due yet; I would be loath to  
pay him before his day. What need I be so  
forward with him that calls not on me? Well,  
'tis no matter; honour pricks me on. Yes, but  
how if honour prick me off when I come on?  
how then? Can honour set to a leg? no: or an  
arm? no: or take away the grief of a wound?  
no. Honour hath no skill in surgery, then?  
no. What is honour? a word. What is in that  
word honour? what is that honour? air. A  
trim reckoning! Who hath it? he that died o'  
Wednesday. Doth he feel it? no. Doth he  
hear it? no. 'Tis insensible, then? Yes, to  
the dead. But will it not live with the living?  
no. Why? detraction will not suffer it. There-  
fore I'll none of it. Honour is a mere scut-  
cheon: and so ends my catechism. [*Exit.*]

## SCENE II. The rebel camp.

*Enter WORCESTER and VERNON.*

*Wor.* O, no, my nephew must not know,  
Sir Richard,  
The liberal and kind offer of the king.  
*Vern.* 'Twere best he did.

*Wor.* Then are we all undone.  
It is not possible, it cannot be.  
The king should keep his word in loving us;  
He will suspect us still and find a time  
To punish this offence in other faults:  
Suspicion all our lives shall be stuck full of  
eyes;

For treason is but trusted like the fox,  
Who, ne'er so tame, so cherish'd and look'd up,  
Will have a wild trick of his ancestors. 11  
Look how we can, or sad or merrily,  
Interpretation will misquote our looks,  
And we shall feed like oxen at a stall,  
The better cherish'd, still the nearer death.  
My nephew's trespass may be well forgot;  
It hath the tannage of youth and heat of blood,  
And an adopted name of gentlemen.  
A hare-brain'd Hotspur, govern'd by a spleen:

All his offences live upon my head  
And on his father's; we did train him on,  
And, his corruption being taken from us,  
We, as the spring of all, shall pay for all.  
Therefore, good cousin, let not Harry know,  
In any case, the offer of the king.

Var. Deliver what you will; I'll say 'tis so.  
Here comes your cousin.

Enter HOTSPUR and DOUGLAS.

Hot. My uncle is return'd:  
Deliver up my Lord of Westmoreland.  
Uncle, what news?

Var. The king will bid you battle presently.

Doug. Defy him by the Lord of Westmoreland.

Hot. Lord Douglas, go you and tell him so.

Doug. Marry, and shall, and very willingly.

[Exit.]

Var. There is no seeming mercy in the king.

Hot. Did you beg any? God forbid!

Var. I told him gently of our grievances,  
Of his oath-breaking; which he mended thus,  
By now forswearing that he is forsworn:  
He calls us rebels, traitors; and will scourge us  
With haughty arms this hateful name in us.

Re-enter DOUGLAS.

Doug. Arm, gentlemen; to arms! for I  
have thrown  
A brave defiance in King Henry's teeth,  
And Westmoreland, that was engaged, did  
bear it;

Which cannot choose but bring him quickly on.

Var. The Prince of Wales stepp'd forth  
before the king,

And, nephew, challenged you to single fight.

Hot. O, would the quarrel lay upon our  
heads,

And that no man might draw short breath  
to-day

But I and Harry Monmouth! Tell me, tell me,  
How show'd his taking! seem'd it in con-  
tempt!

life 51

To gentle exercise and proof of arms.  
He gave you all the duties of a man;  
Triumf'd up your praises with a princely tongue,  
Spoke your deserving like a chronicler,  
Making you ever better than his praise  
By still disparaging praise valued with you; 60  
And, when he became him like a prince indeed,  
He made a blushing cital of himself;  
And did his transient youth with such a grace  
As if he master'd there a double spirit  
Of teaching and of learning instantly.  
There did he praise: but let me tell the world,  
If he outlive the envy of this day,  
England did never owe so sweet a hope,  
No man misconstrued in his wantonness.

Var. Cousin, I think thou art enamour'd 70  
of his praises: never did I hear  
of a man so wild a libertine.

Hot. All he will, yet once ere night  
I'll show him the use of a soldier's arm,

And will not think under any courtesy.

so Arm, arm with speed: and, fellows, soldiers,  
friends,

Better consider what you have to do  
Than I, that have not well the gift of tongue,  
Can lift your blood up with persuasion.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. My lord, here are letters for you. 80

Hot. I cannot read them now.

O gentlemen, the time of life is short!  
To spend that shortness basely were too long,  
If life did ride upon a dial's point,  
Still ending at the arrival of an hour.

An if we live, we live to tread on kings;

If die, brave death, when princes die with us!

Now, for our consciences, the arms are fair,

When the intent of bearing them is just.

Enter another Messenger.

Mess. My lord, prepare; the king comes on  
apace. 90

Hot. I thank him, that he cuts me from my  
tale,

For I profess not talking; only this—

Let each man do his best: and here draw I

A sword, whose temper I intend to stain

With the best blood that I can meet withal

In the adventure of this perilous day.

Now, Esperance! Percy! and set on.

Sound all the lofty instruments of war,

And by that music let us all embrace;

For, heaven to earth, some of us never shall 100

A second time do such a courtesy.

[The trumpets sound. They embrace, and  
exunt.]

SCENE III. Plain between the camps.

The KING enters with his power. Alarm to  
the battle. Then enter DOUGLAS and Sir  
WALTER BLUNT.

Blunt. What is thy name, that in the battle  
thus

Thou crossest me? what honour dost thou seek  
Upon my head?

Doug. Know then, my name is Douglas;  
And I do haunt thee in the battle thus

Because some tell me that thou art a king.

Blunt. They tell thee true.

Doug. The Lord of Stafford dear to-day hath  
bought

Thy likeness, for instead of thee, King Harry,

This sword hath ended him: so shall it thee,

Unless thou yield thee as my prisoner. 10

Blunt. I was not born a yielder, thou proud  
Scot;

And thou shalt find a king that will revenge

Lord Stafford's death. [They fight. Douglas  
kills Blunt.]

Enter HOTSPUR.

Hot. O Douglas, hadst thou fought at  
Holmedon thus,

I never had triumph'd upon a Scot.

Doug. All's done, all's won; have breath-  
less lies the king.

Hot. Where?

Doug. Here.

*Hot.* This, Douglas! no: I know this face full well:

A gallant knight he was, his name was Blunt; Specially furnish'd like the king himself.

*Doug.* A fool go with thy soul, whither it goes!

A borrow'd title hast thou bought too dear: Why didst thou tell me that thou wert a king?

*Hot.* The king hath many marching in his coats.

*Doug.* Now, by my sword, I will kill all his coats;

I'll murder all his wardrobe, piece by piece, Until I meet the king.

*Hot.* Up, and away! Our soldiers stand full fairly for the day.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Alarum. Enter FALSTAFF, solus.*

*Fal.* Though I could scape shot-free at London, I fear the shot here: here's no scoring but upon the pate. Soft! who are you? Sir Walter Blunt: there's honour for you! here's no vanity! I am as hot as molten lead, and as heavy too: God keep lead out of me! I need no more weight than mine own bowels. I have led my ragamuffins where they are peppered: there's not three of my hundred and fifty left alive; and they are for the town's end, to beg during life. But who comes here?

*Enter the PRINCE.*

*Prince.* What, stand'st thou idle here? lend me thy sword:

Many a nobleman lies stark and stiff Under the hoofs of vaunting enemies, Whose deaths are yet unrevenged: I prithee, lend me thy sword.

*Fal.* O Hal, I prithee, give me leave to breathe awhile. Turk Gregory never did such deeds in arms as I have done this day. I have paid Percy, I have made him sure.

*Prince.* He is indeed: and living to kill thee. I prithee, lend me thy sword.

*Fal.* Nay, before God, Hal, if Percy be alive, thou get'st not my sword; but take my pistol, if thou wilt.

*Prince.* Give it me: what, is it in the case? *Fal.* Ay, Hal: 'tis hot, 'tis hot; there's that will sack a city.

[*The Prince draws it out, and Ands it to be a bottle of sack.*]

*Prince.* What, is it a time to jest and dally now? [*He throws the bottle at him.*]

*Fal.* Well, if Percy be alive, I'll pierce him. If he do come in my way, so: if he do not, if I come in his willingly, let him make a carbonado of me. I like not such grinning honour as Sir Walter hath: give me life: which if I can save, so: if not, honour comes unlooked for, and there's an end.

*SCENE IV. Another part of the field.*

*Alarum. Excursions. Enter the KING, the PRINCE, LORD JOHN OF LANCASTER, and EARL OF WESTMORELAND.*

*King.* I prithee, Harry, withdraw thyself; thou bleed'st too much.

Lord John of Lancaster, go you with him.

*Lan.* Not I, my lord, unless I did bleed too.

*Prince.* I beseech your majesty, make up.

Lest your retirement do amaze your friends.

*King.* I will do so.

My Lord of Westmoreland, lead him to his tent.

*West.* Come, my lord, I'll lead you to your tent.

*Prince.* Lead me, my lord! I do not need your help:

And God forbid a shallow scratch should drive The Prince of Wales from such a field as this.

Where stain'd nobility lies trodden on, And rebels' arms triumph in massacres!

*Lan.* We breathe too long: come, cousin Westmoreland.

Our duty this way lies; for God's sake, come.

[*Exeunt Prince John and Westmoreland.*]

*Prince.* By God, thou hast deceived me, Lancaster:

I did not think thee lord of such a spirit:

Before, I loved thee as a brother, John;

But now, I do respect thee as my soul.

*King.* I saw him hold Lord Percy at the point

With lustier maintenance than I did look for Of such an ungrown warrior.

*Prince.* O, this boy lends mettle to us all!

[*Exit.*]

*Enter DOUGLAS.*

*Doug.* Another king! they grow like Hydra's heads:

I am the Douglas, fatal to all those That wear those colours on them: what art thou, That counterfeits the person of a king?

*King.* The king himself; who, Douglas, grieves at heart

So many of his shadows thou hast met

And not the very king. I have two boys

Seek Percy and thyself about the field: But, seeing thou fall'st on me so luckily,

I will assay thee: so, defend thyself.

*Doug.* I fear thou art another counterfeit:

And yet, in faith, thou bear'st thee like a king: But mine I am sure thou art, whose'er thou be,

And thus I win thee. [*They fight; the King being in danger, re-enter Prince of Wales.*]

*Prince.* Hold up thy head, vile Scot, or thou art like

Never to hold it up again: the spirits

Of valiant Shirley, Stafford, Blunt, are in my arms:

It is the Prince of Wales that threatens thee: Who never promiseth but he means to pay.

[*They fight; Douglas slain.*]

Cheerily, my lord: how fares your grace?

Sir Nicholas Gurney hath for me cut out, And so hath Clifton: I'll to Clifton straight.

*King.* Stay, and breathe awhile: Thou hast redeem'd thy lost opinion,

And show'd thou makest some tender of my life, In this fair rescue thou hast brought to me.

*Prince.* O God! they did me too much injury

That ever said I hearten'd for your death. If it were so, I might have let alone The scuffling hand of Douglas over you.

Which would have been as speedy in your end  
As all the poisonous potions in the world  
And saved the treacherous labour of your son.

King. Make up to Clifton: I'll to Sir  
Nicholas Gawayne. [Exit.]

Enter HOTSPUR.

Hot. If I mistake not, thou art Harry  
Monmouth.

Prince. Thou speak'st as if I would deny my  
name.

Hot. My name is Harry Percy.

Prince. Why, then I see  
A very valiant rebel of the name.

I am the Prince of Wales; and think not, Percy,  
To share with me in glory any more:

Two stars keep not their motion in one sphere;  
Nor can one England brook a double reign;  
Of Harry Percy and the Prince of Wales.

Hot. Nor shall it, Harry; for the hour is  
come

To end the one of us; and would to God  
Thy name in arms were now as great as mine!

Prince. I'll make it greater ere I part from  
thee;

And all the budding honours on thy crest  
I'll crop, to make a garland for my head.

Hot. I can no longer brook thy vanities.  
[They fight.]

Enter FALSTAFF.

Fal. Well said, Hal! to it, Hal! Nay, you  
shall find no boy's play here, I can tell you.

Re-enter DOUGLAS; he fights with FALSTAFF,  
who falls down as if he were dead, and exit  
DOUGLAS. HOTSPUR is wounded, and falls.

Hot. O, Harry, thou hast robb'd me of my  
youth!

I better brook the loss of brittle life  
Than those proud titles thou hast won of me;  
They wound my thoughts worse than thy sword  
my flesh;

But thought's the slave of life, and life time's  
fool;

And time, that takes survey of all the world,  
Must have a stop. O, I could prophesy,  
But that the earthy and cold hand of death  
Lies on my tongue: no, Percy, thou art dust,  
And food for— [Dies.]

Prince. For worms, brave Percy: fare thee  
well, great heart!

Ill-wear'd ambition, how much art thou shrunk!  
When that this body did contain a spirit,

A kingdom for it was too small a bound;

But now two paces of the vilest earth  
Is room enough: this earth that bears thee dead  
Bears not alive so stout a gentleman.

If thou wert sensible of courtesy,  
I should not make so dear a show of zeal;

But let my favourite hide thy mangled face;  
And even in thy behalf, I'll thank myself  
For doing thee this fair office of tenderness.

And take thy praise with thee to heaven!  
I'll bury thee in my eternal sleep with thee in the grave, 100

Remember'd in thy epitaph!

[He speaks softly on the ground,  
and could not all this flesh

Keep in a little life! Poor Jack, farewell!

I could have better spared a better man:

O, I should have a heavy miss of thee,

If I were much in love with vanity!

Death hath not struck so fat a deer to-day,

Though many dearer, in this bloody fray.

Embowell'd will I see thee by and by:

Till then in blood by noble Percy lie. [Exit.] 110

Fal. [Rising up.] Embowell'd! If thou em-  
bowel me to-day, I'll give you leave to powder

me and eat me too to-morrow. 'Blood, 'twas  
time to counterfeit, or that hot termagant Scot

had paid me scot and lot too. Counterfeit! I  
lie, I am no counterfeit: to die, is to be a

counterfeit; for he is but the counterfeit of a  
man who hath not the life of a man: but to

counterfeit dying, when a man thereby liveth,  
is to be no counterfeit, but the true and

perfect image of life indeed. The better part of  
valour is discretion; in the which better part I

have saved my life. 'Zounds, I am afraid of  
this gunpowder Percy, though he be dead; how,

if he should counterfeit too and rise! by my  
faith, I am afraid he would prove the better

counterfeit. Therefore I'll make him sure; yea,  
and I'll swear I killed him. Why may not he

rise as well as I? Nothing confutes me but  
eyes, and nobody sees me. Therefore, sirrah

[stabbing him], with a new wound in your  
thigh, come you along with me.

[Takes up Hotspur on his back.]

Re-enter the PRINCE OF WALES and LORD  
JOHN OF LANCASTER.

Prince. Come, brother John; full bravely  
hast thou flesh'd

Thy maiden sword.

Jan. But, soft! whom have we here?  
Did you not tell me thus fat man was dead?

Prince. I did; I saw him dead,  
Breathless and bleeding on the ground. Art

thou alive?

[It is it fantasy that plays upon our eyesight?  
I prithee, speak; we will not trust our eyes

Without our ears: thou art not what thou  
seem'st.

Fal. No, that's certain; I am not a double  
man: but if I be not Jack Falstaff, then am I

a Jack. There is Percy [throwing the body  
down]; if your father will do me any honour,

so; if not, let him kill the next Percy himself.  
I look to be either earl or duke, I can assure

you.

Prince. Why, Percy I killed myself and saw  
thee dead.

Fal. Didst thou? Lord, Lord, how this world  
is given to lying! I grant you I was down and

out of breath; and so was he: but we rose both  
at an instant and fought a long hour by Shrews-

bury clock. If I may be believed, so; if not, let  
them that should reward valour bear the sin

upon their own heads. I'll take it upon my  
death, I gave him this wound in the thigh: if

the man were alive and would deny it, 'zounds,  
I would make him eat a piece of my sword.

Jan. This is the strangest tale that ever I  
heard.

*Prince.* This is the strangest fellow, brother John.

Come, bring your luggage nobly on your back:  
For my part, if a lie may do thee grace, 161  
I'll gild it with the happiest terms I have.

[*A retreat is sounded.*  
The trumpet sounds retreat; the day is ours.  
Come, brother, let us to the highest of the field,  
To see what friends are living, who are dead.

[*Exeunt Prince of Wales and Lancaster.*  
*Fal.* I'll follow, as they say, for reward. He  
that rewards me, God reward him! If I do grow  
great, I'll grow less; for I'll purge, and leave  
sack, and live cleanly as a nobleman should do.  
[*Exit.*

SCENE V. *Another part of the field.*

*The trumpets sound. Enter the KING, PRINCE  
OF WALES, LORD JOHN OF LANCASTER,  
EARL OF WESTMORELAND, with WORCESTER  
and VERNON prisoners.*

*King.* Thus ever did rebellion find rebuke.  
Escorted Worcester! did not we send grace,  
Parlon and terms of love to all of you?  
And wouldst thou turn our offers contrary?  
Misuse the lenour of thy kinsman's trust?  
Three knights upon our party slain to-day,  
A noble earl and many a creature else  
Had been alive this hour.  
If like a Christian thou hast truly borne  
Extort our armies true intelligence. 17

*Wor.* What I have done my safety urged me  
to;  
And I embrace this fortune patiently,  
Since not to be avoided it falls on me.

*King.* Bear Worcester to the death and  
Vernon too:

Other offenders we will pause upon.

[*Exeunt Worcester and Vernon, guarded.*  
How goes the field?

*Prince.* The noble Scot, Lord Douglas, when  
he saw

The fortune of the day quite turn'd from him,  
The noble Percy slain, and all his men  
Upon the foot of fear, fled with the rest; 20  
And falling from a hill, he was so bruised  
That the pursuers took him. At my tent  
The Douglas is; and I beseech your grace  
I may dispose of him.

*King.* With all my heart.

*Prince.* Then, brother John of Lancaster,  
to you

This honourable bounty shall belong:  
Go to the Douglas, and deliver him  
Up to his pleasure, ransomless and free:  
His valour shown upon our crests to-day  
Hath taught us how to cherish such high deeds  
Even in the bosom of our adversaries. 31

*Lan.* I thank your grace for this high  
courtesy.

Which I shall give away immediately.

*King.* Then this remains, that we divide our  
power.

You, son John, and my cousin Westmoreland  
Towards York shall bend you with your dearest  
speed,  
To meet Northumberland and the prelate  
Scroop.

Who, as we hear, are busily in arms:  
Myself and you, son Harry, will towards Wales,  
To fight with Glendower and the Earl of March.  
Rebellion in this land shall lose his way, 41

Meeting the check of such another day:  
And since this business so fair is done,  
Let us not leave till all our own be won.

[*Exeunt.*

# THE SECOND PART OF KING HENRY IV

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

**RUMOUR**, the Presenter.

**KING HENRY** the Fourth.

**HENRY**, PRINCE OF WALES, afterwards King Henry V.

**THOMAS**, DUKE OF CLARENCE,

**PRINCE JOHN** OF LANCASTER,

**PRINCE HUMPHREY** OF GLOUCESTER

**EARL OF WARWICK.**

**EARL OF WESTMORELAND.**

**EARL OF SURREY.**

**GOWER.**

**HARCOURT.**

**BLUNT.**

**Lord Chief-Justice** of the King's Bench.

**A Servant** of the Chief-Justice.

**EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND.**

**SCHOOP**, Archbishop of York.

**LORD MOWBRAY.**

**LORD HASTINGS.**

**LORD BARDOLPH.**

**SIR JOHN COLEVILLE.**

**TRAVERS** and **MORTON**, retainers of Northumberland.

**SIR JOHN FALSTAFF.**

**His Page.**

**BARDOLPH.**

**PISTOL.**

**POINS.**

**PETO.**

**SHALLOW, } country justices.**

**SILENCE, }**

**DAVEY**, Servant to Shallow.

**MOULDT**, **SHADOW**, **WART**, **FEEBLE**, and

**BULLCAUF**, recruits.

**FANG** and **SNARE**, sheriff's officers.

**LADY NORTHUMBERLAND.**

**LADY PERCY.**

**MISTRESS QUICKLY**, hostess of a tavern in Eastcheap.

**DOLL TEAR SHEET.**

**Lords and Attendants**: Porter, Drawers, Beadles, Groomes, &c.

**A Dancer**, speaker of the epilogue.

**SCENE**: England.

## INDUCTION.

*Warkworth. Before the castle.*

*Enter Rumour, painted full of tongues.*

**Rum.** Open your ears; for which of you will stop

The vent of hearing when loud Rumour speaks?

I, from the orient to the drooping west,

Making the wind my post-horse, still unfold

The acts commenced on this ball of earth:

Upon my tongues continual slanders ride,

The which in every language I pronounce,

Stuffing the ears of men with false reports.

I speak of peace, while covert enmity

Under the smile of safety wounds the world: 10

And who but Rumour, who but only I,

Make fearful musters and prepared defence,

Whiles the big year, swollen with some other

grief,

bought with child by the stern tyrant war,

Is no such matter? Rumour is a pipe

by surmises, jealousies, conjectures,

set on, and so plain a stop

sets with uncounted heads,

wavering multitude,

Can play upon it. But what need I thus

My well-known body to anatomize

Among my household? Why is Rumour here

I run before King Harry's victory;

Who in a bloody field by Shrewsbury

Hath beaten down young Hotspur and his

troops,

Quenching the flame of bold rebellion

Even with the rebels' blood. But what mean I

To speak so true at first? my office is

To noise abroad that Harry Monmouth fell

Under the wrath of noble Hotspur's sword. 20

And that the king before the Douglas' rage

Stoop'd his anointed head as low as death.

This have I runnour'd through the peasant

towns

Between that royal field of Shrewsbury

And this worm-eaten hold of ragged stone.

Where Hotspur's father, old Northumberland,

Lies crafty-sick: the poets come tiring on,

And not a man of them brings other news

Than they have learn'd of me: from Rumour's

tongues

They bring smooth comforts false, worse than

true wrongs. *[Exit.]*

## ACT I.

SCENE I. *The same.**Enter* LORD BARDOLPH.*L. Bard.* Who keeps the gate here, ho!*The Porter opens the gate.*

Where is the earl?

*Port.* What shall I say you are!*L. Bard.* Tell thou the earl  
That the Lord Bardolph doth attend him here.*Port.* His lordship is walk'd forth into the  
orchard:Please it your honour, knock but at the gate,  
And he himself will answer.*Enter* NORTHUMBERLAND.*L. Bard.* Here comes the earl.*[Exit Porter.]**North.* What news, Lord Bardolph? every  
minute nowShould be the father of some stratagem:  
The times are wild; contention, like a horse  
Full of high feeding, madly hath broke loose; so  
And bears down all before him.*L. Bard.* Noble earl,  
I bring you certain news from Shrewsbury.*North.* Good, an God will!*L. Bard.* As good as heart can wish:  
The king is almost wounded to the death;  
And, in the fortune of my lord your son,  
Prince Harry slain outright; and both the  
Bluntsslain by the hand of Douglas; young Prince  
JohnAnd Westmoreland and Stafford fled the field;  
And Harry Monmouth's brawn, the hulk SirJohn,  
Is prisoner to your son: O, such a day, so  
So fought, so follow'd and so fairly won,came not till now to dignify the times,  
Since Caesar's fortunes!*North.* How is this derived?  
saw you the field? came you from Shrewsbury?*L. Bard.* I spake with one, my lord, that  
came from thence.A gentleman well bred and of good name,  
that freely render'd me these news for true.*North.* Here comes my servant Travers,  
whom I sent

On Tuesday last to listen after news.

*Enter* TRAVERS.*L. Bard.* My lord, I over-rode him on the  
way, soAnd he is furnish'd with no certainties  
More than he haply may retail from me.*North.* Now, Travers, what good tidings  
comes with you?*Trs.* My lord, Sir John Umfreville turn'd me  
backWith joyful tidings; and, being better horsed,  
out-rode me. After him came spurring hardA gentleman, almost forewent with speed,  
That stopp'd by me to breathe his bloodied

horse.

He ask'd the way to Chester; and of him  
I did demand what news from Shrewsbury: soHe told me that rebellion had had lock  
And that young Harry Percy's spur was cold.  
With that, he gave his able horse the head,  
And bending forward struck his armed heels  
Against the panting sides of his poor jade  
Up to the rowl-head, and starting so  
He seem'd in running to devour the way,  
Staying no longer question.*North.* Ha! Again:  
Said he young Harry Percy's spur was cold?  
Of Hotspur Coldspur! that rebellion so  
Had met ill luck!*L. Bard.* My lord, I'll tell you what;  
If my young lord your son have not the day,  
Upon mine honour, for a silken point  
I'll give my barony: never talk of it.*North.* Why should that gentleman that  
rode by Travers  
Give then such instances of loss?*L. Bard.* Who, he?  
He was some hilding fellow that had stolen  
The horse he rode on, and, upon my life,  
Spoke at a venture. Look, here comes more  
news.*Enter* MORTON.*North.* Yea, this man's brow, like to a title-  
leaf, soForetells the nature of a tragic volume:  
So looks the strand whereon the imperious flood  
Hath left a witness'd usurpation.

Say, Morton, didst thou come from Shrewsbury?

*Mor.* I ran from Shrewsbury, my noble lord;  
Where hateful death put on his ugliest mask  
To fright our party.*North.* How doth my son and brother?  
Thou tremblest; and the whiteness in thy cheek  
Is sifter than thy tongue to tell thy errand.Even such a man, so faint, so spiritless, so  
So dull, so dead in look, so woe-begone, soDrew Priam's curtain in the dead of night,  
And would have told him half his Troy was

burnt;

But Priam found the fire ere he his tongue,  
And I my Percy's death ere thou report of it.Thus thou wouldst say, 'Your son did thus and  
thus;Your brother thus: so fought the noble  
Douglas.'Ending with 'Brother, son, and all are dead.'  
*Mor.* Douglas is living, and your brother, yet;

But, for my lord your son,—

*North.* Why, he is dead.  
See what a ready tongue suspicious hath!He that but fears the thing he would not know  
Hath by instinct knowledge from others' eyesThat what he fear'd is chanced. Yet speak,  
Morton;Tell thou an earl his divination lies,  
And I will take it as a sweet diagnosisAnd make thee rich for doing me such wrongs; so  
*Mor.* You are too great to be by me deceived.Your spirit is too true, your fears too certain.  
*North.* Yet, for all this, say not that I was  
dead.

I see a strange confession in thine eye :  
Thou abasest thy head and hold'st it fear or sin  
To speak a truth. If he be slain, say so ;  
The tongue offends not that reports his death :  
And he doth sin that doth belie the dead,  
Not he which says the dead is not alive.  
Yet the first bringer of unwelcome news 100  
Hath but a losing office, and his tongue  
Sounds ever after as a sullen bell,  
Remember'd tolling a departing friend.

*L. Bard.* I cannot think, my lord, your son  
is dead.

*Mor.* I am sorry I should force you to believe  
That which I would to God I had not seen ;  
But these mine eyes saw him in bloody state,  
Rendering faint quittance, wearied and out-  
breathed,

To Harry Monmouth ; whose swift wrath beat  
down

The never-daunted Percy to the earth, 110  
From whence with life he never more sprung up.  
In few, his death, whose spirit lent a fire  
Even to the dullest peasant in his camp,  
Being bruited once, took fire and heat away  
From the best-temper'd courage in his troops ;  
For from his metal was his party steel'd ;  
Which once in him abated, all the rest  
Turn'd on themselves, like dull and heavy lead :  
And as the thing that's heavy in itself,  
Upon enforcement flies with greatest speed, 120  
So did our men, heavy in Hotspur's loss,  
Lend to this weight such lightness with their fear  
That arrows fled not swifter toward their aim  
Than did our soldiers, aiming at their safety,  
Fly from the field. Then was that noble  
Worcester

Too soon taken prisoner ; and that furious Scot,  
The bloody Douglas, whose well-labouring  
sword  
Had three times slain the appearance of the  
king,

'Gan vault his stomach and did grace the shame  
Of those that turn'd their backs, and in his  
flight, 130

Stumbling in fear, was took. The sum of all  
Is that the king hath won, and hath sent out  
A speedy power to encounter you, my lord,  
Under the conduct of young Lancaster  
And Westmoreland. This is the news at full.

*North.* For this I shall have time enough  
to mourn.

In poison there is physic ; and these news,  
Having been well, that would have made me  
sick,

Being sick, have in some measure made me well :  
And as the wretch, whose fever-weakn'd joints,  
Like strengthless hinges, buckle under life, 140  
Impatient of his fit, breaks like a fire  
(Out of his keeper's arms, even so my limbs,  
Weaken'd with grief, being now enrag'd with  
grief,

Are thrice themselves. Hence, therefore, thou  
nice crutch !  
A rusty gauntlet now with joints of steel  
Must glove this hand : and hence, thou sickly  
quail !

I set a guard too wanton for the head  
of a prince, slain with conquest, aim to hit.

Now bind my brows with iron ; and approach  
The raggedst hour that time and spite dare  
bring 150

To frown upon the enraged Northumberland !  
Let heaven kiss earth ! now let not Nature's  
hand

Keep the wild flood confined ! let order die !  
And let this world no longer be a stage  
To feed contention in a lingering act ;  
But let one spirit of the first-born Cain  
Reign in all bosoms, that, each heart being set  
(In bloody courses, the rude scene may end,  
And darkness be the burier of the dead ! 160

*Tra.* This strained passion doth you wrong,  
my lord.

*L. Bard.* Sweet earl, divorce not wisdom  
from your honour.

*Mor.* The lives of all your loving complices  
Lean on your health ; the which, if you give o'er  
To stormy passion, must perforce decay.  
You cast the event of war, my noble lord,  
And sum'd'd the account of chance, before you  
said

'Let us make head.' It was your presumise,  
That, in the dole of blows, your son might drop ;  
You knew he walk'd o'er perils, on an edge, 170  
More likely to fall in than to get o'er ;  
You were advis'd his flesh was capable  
Of wounds and scars and that his forward spirit  
Would lift him where most trade of danger  
ranged :

Yet did you say 'Go forth ;' and none of this,  
Though strongly apprehended, could restrain  
The stiff-borne action : what hath then befallen,  
Or what hath this bold enterprise brought forth,  
More than that being which was like to be !

*L. Bard.* We all that are engaged to this  
loss 180

Knew that we ventured on such dangerous seas  
That if we wrought out life 'twas ten to one ;  
And yet we ventured, for the gain proposed  
'Chok'd the respect of likely peril fear'd ;  
And since we are o'er-set, venture again.  
Come, we will all put forth, body and goods.

*Mor.* 'Tis more than time : and, my most  
noble lord,

I hear for certain, and do speak the truth,  
The gentle Archbishop of York is up  
With well-appointed powers : he is a man 190  
Who with a double surety binds his followers.  
My lord your son had only but the corpse,  
But shadows and the shows of men, to fight ;  
For that same word, rebellion, did divide  
The action of their bodies from their souls ;  
And they did fight with queasiness, constrain'd  
As men drink potions, that their weapons only  
Seem'd on our side ; but, for their spirits and  
souls,

This word, rebellion, it had froze them up,  
As fish are in a pond. But now the bishop 200  
Turns insurrection to religion ;  
Supposed sincere and holy in his thoughts,  
He's followed both with body and with mind ;  
And doth enlarge his rising with the blood  
Of fair King Richard, escaped from Pomfret  
stones ;

Derives from heaven his quarrel and his cause ;  
Tells them he doth beset a bleeding land,



(*Gasping for life under great Bolingbrokes;*  
And more and less do flock to follow him.

*North.* I knew of this before; but, to speak truth,

This present grief had wiped it from my mind.  
(*Go in with me; and counsel every man.*)

The aptest way for safety and revenge:  
Get posts and letters, and make friends with speed:

Never so few, and never yet more need.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. London. A street.

*Enter FALSTAFF, with his Page bearing his sword and buckler.*

*Fal.* Sirrah, you giant, what says the doctor to my water?

*Page.* He said, sir, the water itself was a good healthy water; but, for the party that used it, he might have more diseases than he knew for.

*Fal.* Men of all sorts take a pride to gird at me: the brain of this foolish-compounded clay, man, is not able to invent any thing that tends to laughter, more than I invent or is invented on me: I am not only witty in myself, but the cause that wit is in other men. I do here walk before thee like a sow that hath overwhelmed all her litter but one. If the prince put thee into my service for any other reason than to set me off, why then I have no judgement. Thou whoreson mandrake, thou art fitter to be worn in my cap than to wait at my heels. I was never manned with an agate till now: but I will inset you neither in gold nor silver, but in vile apparel, and send you back again to your master, for a jewel,—the juvenal, the prince your master, whose chin is not yet fagged. I will sooner have a beard grow in the palm of my hand than he shall get one on his cheek; and yet he will not stick to say his face is a face-royal: God may finish it when he will, 'tis not a hair amiss yet: he may keep it still at a face-royal, for a barber shall never earn sixpence out of it; and yet he'll be crowing as if he had writ man ever since his father was a bachelor. He may keep his own race, but he's almost out of mine, I can assure him. What said Master Dumbleton about the satin for my short cloak and my slops?

*Page.* He said, sir, you should procure him better assurance than Bardolph: he would not take his hand and yours: he liked not the security.

*Fal.* Let him be damned, like the glutton! Pray God his tongue be hotter! A whoreson Achitophel! a rascally yea-fornoth knave! to hear a gentleman in hand, and then stand upon security! The whoreson smooth-pates do now wear nothing but high shoes, and bunches of keys at their girdles; and if a man is through with them in honest taking up, then they must stand upon security. I had as lief they would put ratsbane in my mouth as offer to stop it with security. I looked a' should have sent me two and twenty yards of satin, as I am a true knight, and he sends me security. Well, he

may sleep in security; for he hath the horn of abundance, and the lightness of his wife shines through it: and yet cannot he see, though he have his own lantern to light him. Where's Bardolph?

*Page.* He's gone into Smithfield to buy your worship a horse.

*Fal.* I bought him in Paul's, and he'll buy me a horse in Smithfield: an I could get me but a wife in the stews, I were manned, horsed, and wived.

*Enter the Lord Chief-Justice and Servant.*

*Page.* Sir, here comes the nobleman that committed the prince for striking him about Bardolph.

*Fal.* Wait close; I will not see him.

*Ch. Just.* What's he that goes there?

*Serv.* Falstaff, an't please your lordship.

*Ch. Just.* He that was in question for the robbery?

*Serv.* He, my lord; but he hath since done good service at Shrewsbury; and, as I hear, is now going with some charge to the Lord John of Lancaster.

*Ch. Just.* What, to York? Call him back again.

*Serv.* Sir John Falstaff!

*Fal.* Boy, tell him I am deaf.

*Page.* You must speak louder; my master is deaf.

*Ch. Just.* I am sure he is, to the hearing of any thing good. Go, pluck him by the elbow; I must speak with him.

*Serv.* Sir John!

*Fal.* What! a young knave, and begging! Is there not wars? Is there not employment? doth not the king lack subjects? do not the rebels need soldiers? Though it be a shame to be on any side but one, it is worse shame to beg than to be on the worst side, were it worse than the name of rebellion can tell how to make it.

*Serv.* You mistake me, sir.

*Fal.* Why, sir, did I say you were an honest man? setting my knighthood and my soldiery aside, I had lied in my throat, if I had said so.

*Serv.* I pray you, sir, then set your knighthood and your soldiery aside; and give me leave to tell you, you lie in your throat, if you say I am any other than an honest man.

*Fal.* I give thee leave to tell me so! I lay aside that which grows to me! If thou gettest any leave of me, hang me; if thou takest leave, thou wert better be hanged. You hunt counter: hence! avaunt!

*Serv.* Sir, my lord would speak with you.

*Ch. Just.* Sir John Falstaff, a word with you.

*Fal.* My good lord! God give your lordship good time of day. I am glad to see your lordship abroad: I heard say your lordship was sick: I hope your lordship goes abroad by advice. Your lordship, though not clean past your youth, hath yet some smack of age in you, some relish of the saltiness of time; and I most humbly beseech your lordship to have a reverent care of your health.

*Ch. Just.* Sir John, I sent for you before your expedition to Shrewsbury.

*Fal.* An't please your lordship, I hear his majesty is returned with some discomfort from Wales.

*Ch. Just.* I talk not of his majesty: you would not come when I sent for you.

*Fal.* And I hear, moreover, his highness is fallen into this same whoremongery apoplexy.

*Ch. Just.* Well, God mend him! I pray you, let me speak with you.

*Fal.* This apoplexy is, as I take it, a kind of lethargy, an't please your lordship: a kind of sleeping in the blood, a whoremongery tingling.

*Ch. Just.* What tell you me of it? be it as it is.

*Fal.* It hath its original from much grief, from study and perturbation of the brain: I have read the cause of his effects in Galen: it is a kind of deafness.

*Ch. Just.* I think you are fallen into the disease; for you hear not what I say to you.

*Fal.* Very well, my lord, very well: rather, an't please you, it is the disease of not listening, the malady of not marking, that I am troubled withal.

*Ch. Just.* To punish you by the heels would amend the attention of your ears; and I care not if I do become your physician.

*Fal.* I am as poor as Job, my lord, but not so patient: your lordship may minister the potion of imprisonment to me in respect of poverty; but how I should be your patient to follow your prescriptions, the wise may make some dram of a scruple, or indeed a scruple itself.

*Ch. Just.* I sent for you, when there were matters against you for your life, to come speak with me.

*Fal.* As I was then advised by my learned counsel in the laws of this land-service, I did not come.

*Ch. Just.* Well, the truth is, Sir John, you live in great infamy.

*Fal.* He that buckles him in my belt cannot live in less.

*Ch. Just.* Your means are very slender, and your waste is great.

*Fal.* I would it were otherwise: I would my means were greater, and my waist slenderer.

*Ch. Just.* You have misled the youthful prince.

*Fal.* The young prince hath misled me: I am the fellow with the great belly, and he my dog.

*Ch. Just.* Well, I am loath to gill a new-healed wound: your day's service at Shrewsbury hath a little gilded over your night's exploits on God's hill: you may thank the auspicious time for your quiet o'er-posting that action.

*Fal.* My lord!

*Ch. Just.* But since all is well, keep it so: make not a sleeping wolf.

*Fal.* To wake a wolf is as bad as to smell a

*Fal.* A wassail candle, my lord, all tallow: if I did say of wax, my growth would approve the truth.

*Ch. Just.* There is not a white hair on your face but should have its effect of gravity.

*Fal.* His effect of gravity, gravity, go!

*Ch. Just.* You follow the young prince up and down, like his ill angel.

*Fal.* Not so, my lord; your ill angel is light; but I hope he that looks upon me will take me without weighing: and yet, in some respects, I grant, I cannot go: I cannot tell. Virtue is of so little regard in these costermonger times that true valour is turned bear-herd: pregnancy is made a tapster, and hath his quick wit wasted in giving reckonings: all the other gifts appertinent to man, as the malice of this age shapes them, are not worth a gooseberry. You that are old consider not the capacities of us that are young; you do measure the heat of our livers with the bitterness of your galls: and we that are in the vaward of our youth, I must confess, are wags too.

*Ch. Just.* Do you set down your name in the scroll of youth, that are written down old with all the characters of age! Have you not a moist eye! a dry hand! a yellow cheek! a white beard! a decreasing leg! an increasing belly! is not your voice broken! your wind short! your chin double! your wit single! and every part about you blasted with antiquity! and will you yet call yourself young! No, he, Sir John!

*Fal.* My lord, I was born about three of the clock in the afternoon, with a white head and something a round belly. For my voice, I have lost it with hallooing and singing of anthems. To approve my youth further, I will not: the truth is, I am only old in judgement and understanding; and he that will caper with me for a thousand marks, let him lend me the money, and have at him! For the box of the ear that the prince gave you, he gave it like a rude prince, and you took it like a sensible lord. I have checked him for it, and the young lion repents; marry, not in ashes and sackcloth, but in new silk and old sack.

*Ch. Just.* Well, God send the prince a better companion!

*Fal.* God send the companion a better prince! I cannot rid my hands of him.

*Ch. Just.* Well, the king hath severed you and Prince Harry: I hear you are going with Lord John of Lancaster against the Archbishop and the Earl of Northumberland.

*Fal.* Yea; I thank your pretty sweet wit for it. But look you pray, all you that kiss my lady Peace at home, that our armies join not in a hot day; for, by the Lord, I take but two shirts out with me, and I mean not to sweat extraordinarily: if it be a hot day, and I brandish any thing but a bottle, I would I might never spit white again. There is no dangerous action can be put out his head but I am thrust upon it: well, cannot last ever; but it was always yet the trick of our English nation, if they have a good thing, to make it too common. If ye will needs say I am an

What! you are as a candle, the better you burn, the shorter you are.

old man, you should give me rest. I would to God my name were not so terrible to the enemy as it is: I were better to be eaten to death with a rust than to be scoured to nothing with perpetual motion.

*Ch. Just.* Well, be honest, be honest; and God bless your expedition!

*Fal.* Will your lordship lend me a thousand pound to furnish me forth?

*Ch. Just.* Not a penny, not a penny; you are too impatient to bear crosses. Fare you well: commend me to my cousin Westmoreland. [*Exeunt Chief Justice and Servant.*]

*Fal.* If I do, fillip me with a three-man beetle. A man can no more separate age and courtousness than a can part young limbs and lechery: but the gout galls the one, and the pox pinches the other; and so both the degrees prevent my cures. Boy!

*Page.* Sir?

*Fal.* What money is in my purse?

*Page.* Seven groats and two pence.

*Fal.* I can get no remedy against this consumption of the purse: borrowing only lingers and lingers it out, but the disease is incurable. Go bear this letter to my Lord of Lancaster; this to the prince; this to the Earl of Westmoreland; and this to old Mistress Ursula, whom I have weekly sworn to marry since I perceived the first white hair on my chin. About it: you know where to find me. [*Exit Page.*]

A pox of this gout! or, a gout of this pox! for the one or the other plays the rogue with my great toe. 'Tis no matter if I do halt: I have the wars for my colour, and my pension shall seem the more reasonable. A good wit will make use of any thing: I will turn diseases to commodity. [*Exit.*]

### SCENE III. York. The ARCHBISHOP'S palace.

*Enter the ARCHBISHOP, the LORDS HASTINGS, MOWBRAY, and BARDOLPH.*

*Arch.* Thus have you heard our cause and known our means:

And, my most noble friends, I pray you all, speak plainly your opinions of our hopes:

And first, lord marshal, what say you to it?

*Mowb.* I well allow the occasion of our arms, but gladly would be better satisfied

How in our means we should advance ourselves

To look with forehead bold and big enough

Upon the power and puissance of the king.

*Hast.* Our present musters grow upon the file

To five and twenty thousand men of choice;

And our supplies live largely in the hope

Of great Northumberland, whose bosom burns

With an incensed fire of injuries.

*L. Bard.* The question then, Lord Hastings,

standeth thus:

Whether our present five and twenty thousand

May hold up head without Northumberland?

*Hast.* With him, we may.

*L. Bard.* Yes, marry, there's the point

But if without him we be thought too feeble,

My judgement is, we should not sleep too far

Till we had his assistance by the hand;

For in a theme so bloody-faced as this

Conjecture, expectation, and surmise

Of aids incertain should not be admitted.

*Arch.* 'Tis very true, Lord Bardolph; for

indeed

't was young Hotspur's case at Shrewsbury.

*L. Bard.* It was, my lord; who lined him-

self with hope,

Eating the air on promise of supply,

Flattering himself in project of a power

Much smaller than the smallest of his thoughts:

And so, with great imagination

Proper to madmen, led his powers to death

And winking leap'd into destruction.

*Hast.* But, by your leave, it never yet did

hurt

To lay down likelihoods and forms of hope.

*L. Bard.* 'Tis yes, if this present quality of

war,

indeed the instant action: a cause on foot

Lives so in hope as in an early spring

We see the appearing buds; which to prove

fruit,

Hope gives not so much warrant as despair

That frosts will bite them. When we mean to

build,

We first survey the plot, then draw the model;

And when we see the figure of the house,

Then must we rate the cost of the erection;

Which if we find outweighs ability,

What do we then but draw anew the model

In fewer offices, or at last desert

To build at all? Much more, in this great

work,

Which is almost to pluck a kingdom down

And set another up, should we survey

The plot of situation and the model,

Consent upon a sure foundation,

Question surveyors, know our own estate,

How able such a work to undergo,

To weigh against his opposite: or else

We fortify in paper and in figures,

Using the names of men instead of men:

Like one that draws the model of a house

Beyond his power to build it; who, half through,

Gives o'er and leaves his part-erected cost

A naked subject to the weeping clouds

And waste for churlish winter's tyranny.

*Hast.* Grant that our hopes yet likely of

fair birth,

Should be still-born, and that we now possess'd

The utmost man of expectation,

king,

but five and

twenty thousand!

*Hast.* To us no more; nay, not so much,

Lord Bardolph.

For his divisions, as the times do brawl,

Are in three heads: one power against the

French,

And one against Glendower; perforce a third

Must take up us: so is the uniform king

In three divided; and his officers sound

With hollow poverty and emptiness.

*Arch.* That he should draw his

strengths together

And come against us in full puissance,  
Need not be dreaded.

*Host.* If he should do so,  
He leaves his back unarm'd, the French and Welsh

Baying him at the heels: never fear that. So  
*L. Bard.* Who is it like should lead his  
forces hither?

*Host.* The Duke of Lancaster and West-  
moreland:

Against the Welsh, himself and Harry Mon-  
mouth:

But who is substituted 'gainst the French,  
I have no certain notice.

*Arch.* Let us on,  
And publish the occasion of our arms.  
The commonwealth is sick of their own choice;  
Their over-greedy love hath surfeited:

An habitation giddy and unsure  
Hath he that buildeth on the vulgar heart. So  
O thou fond many, with what loud applause  
Didst thou beat heaven with blessing Boling-  
broke,

Before he was what thou wouldst have him be!  
And being now trimm'd in thine own desires,  
Thou, beastly feeder, art so full of him,  
That thou provokest thyself to cast him up.  
So, so, thou common dog, didst thou disgorge  
Thy glutted bosom of the royal Richard;  
And now thou wouldst eat thy dead vomit up,  
And howl'st to find it. What trust is in these  
times!

They that, when Richard lived, would have  
him die,

Are now become sparrow'd on his grave:  
Thou, that threw'st dust upon his goodly head  
When through proud London he came sighing  
on.

After the admired heels of Bolingbroke,  
Cries now 'O earth, yield us that king again,  
And take thou this!' O thoughts of men  
accursed!

Past and to come seems best; things present  
worst.

*Mowb.* Shall we go draw our numbers and  
set on?

*Host.* We are time's subjects, and time bids  
be gone. *[Exeunt. 110]*

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. London. A street.

*Enter Hostess, FANG and his Boy with her,  
and SNARE following.*

*Host.* Master Fang, have you entered the  
action?

*Fang.* It is entered.

*Host.* Where's your yeoman? Is't a lusty  
yeoman? will a stand to't?

*Fang.* Sirrah, where's Snare?

*Host.* O Lord, ay! good Master Snare.

*Snare.* Here, here.

*Fang.* Snare, we must arrest Sir John Fal-  
staff.

*Host.* Yes, good Master Snare; I have en-  
tered him and all.

*Snare.* It may chance cost some of us our  
lives, for he will stab.

*Host.* Alas the day! take heed of him; he  
stabbed me in mine own house, and that most  
beastly: in good faith, he cares not what mis-  
chief he does, if his weapon be out: he will foil  
like any devil; he will spare neither man, wo-  
man, nor child.

*Fang.* If I can close with him, I care not  
for his thrust.

*Host.* No, nor I neither: I'll be at your  
elbow.

*Fang.* An I but fist him once; an a' come  
but within my vice,—

*Host.* I am undone by his going; I warrant  
you, he's an infinitive thing upon my score.  
Good Master Fang, hold him sure: good Master  
Snare, let him not 'scape. A' comes contin-  
antly to Pie-corner—saying your manhoods—to  
buy a saddle; and he is indicted to dinner to  
the Lubber's-head in Lumbers street, to Master  
Smooth's the silkman: I pray ye, since my  
exion is entered and my case so openly know-  
to the world, let him be brought in to his  
answer. A hundred mark is a long one for a  
poor lone woman to bear: and I have borne,  
and borne, and borne, and have been fubbed  
off, and fubbed off, and fubbed off, from this  
day to that day, that it is a shame to be thought  
on. There is no honesty in such dealing; unless  
a woman should be made an ass and a beast,  
to bear every knave's wrong. Yonder he comes;  
and that arrant malmsey-nose knave, Bardolph,  
with him. Do your offices, do your offices:  
Master Fang and Master Snare, do me, do me,  
do me your offices.

*Enter FALSTAFF, Page, and BARDOLPH.*

*Fal.* How now! whose mare's dead? what's  
the matter?

*Fang.* Sir John, I arrest you at the suit of  
Mistress Quickly.

*Fal.* Away, varlets! Draw, Bardolph: cut  
me off the villain's head: throw the queen in  
the channel.

*Host.* Throw me in the channel! I'll throw  
thee in the channel. Wilt thou? wilt thou?  
thou bastardy rogue! Murder, murder! Ah,  
thou honey-suckle villain! wilt thou kill God's  
officers and the king's! Ah, thou honey-seed  
rogue! thou art a honey-seed, a man-queller,  
and a woman-queller.

*Fal.* Keep them off, Bardolph.

*Fang.* A rescue! a rescue!

*Host.* Good people, bring a rescue or two!  
Thou wo't, wo't thou? thou wo't, wo't! do,  
do, thou rogue! do, thou hemp-seed!

*Fal.* Away, you scullion! you rampallian!  
you fustilurian! I'll tickle your catastrophe.

*Enter the LORD CHIEF-JUSTICE, and his men*

*Ch. Just.* What is the matter? keep the  
peace here, ho!

*Host.* Good my lord, be good to me. I be-  
seach you, stand to me.

*Ch. Just.* How now, Sir John! what  
you bewailing here?

Doth this become your place, your time and business?

You should have been well on your way to York.

Stand from him, fellow: wherefore hang'st upon him?

*Host.* O my most worshipful lord, an't please your grace, I am a poor widow of Eastcheap, and he is arrested at my suit.

*Ch. Just.* For what sum?

*Host.* It is more than for some, my lord; it is for all, all I have. He hath eaten me out of house and home; he hath put all my substance into that fat belly of his: but I will have some of it out again, or I will ride thee o' nights like the mare.

*Fal.* I think I am as like to ride the mare, if I have any vantage of ground to get up.

*Ch. Just.* How comes this, Sir John? Fie! what man of good temper would endure this tempest of exclamation? Are you not ashamed to enforce a poor widow to so rough a course to come by her own?

*Fal.* What is the gross sum that I owe thee?

*Host.* Marry, if thou wert an honest man, thyself and the money too. Thou didst swear to me upon a parcel-gilt goblet, sitting in my Dolphin-chamber, at the round table, by a sea-cold fire, upon Wednesday in Wheason week, when the prince broke thy head for liking his father to a singing-man of Windsor, thou didst swear to me then, as I was washing thy wound, to marry me and make me my lady thy wife. Canst thou deny it? Did not goodwife Keech, the butcher's wife, come in then and call me gossip Quickly? coming in to borrow a mess of vinegar; telling us she had a good dish of prawns; whereby thou didst desire to eat some; whereby I told thee they were ill for a green wound? And didst thou not, when she was gone down stairs, desire me to be no more so familiarly with such poor people; saying that ere long they should call me madam? And didst thou not kiss me and bid me fetch thee thirty shillings? I put thee now to thy book-oth: deny it, if thou canst.

*Fal.* My lord, this is a poor mad soul; and she says up and down the town that her eldest son is like you: sir hath been in good case, and the truth is, poverty hath distracted her. But for these foolish officers, I beseech you I may have redress against them.

*Ch. Just.* Sir John, Sir John, I am well acquainted with your manner of wrenching the true cause the false way. It is not a comident brow, nor the throng of words that come with such more than impudent sauciness from you, can thrust me from a level consideration: you have, as it appears to me, practised upon the easy-yielding spirit of this woman, and made her serve your uses both in purse and in person.

*Host.* Yea, in truth, my lord.

*Ch. Just.* Pray thee, peace. Pay her the

without reply. You call honourable boldness impudent sauciness: if a man will make courtesy and say nothing, he is virtuous: no, my lord, my humble duty remembered, I will not be your suitor. I say to you, I do desire deliverance from these officers, being upon hasty employment in the king's affairs.

*Ch. Just.* You speak as having power to do wrong: but answer in the effect of your reputation, and satisfy the poor woman.

*Fal.* Come hither, hostess.

*Enter GOWER.*

*Ch. Just.* Now, Master Gower, what news?

*Gow.* The king, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales

Are near at hand: the rest the paper tells.

*Fal.* As I am a gentleman.

*How.* Faith, you said so before.

*Fal.* As I am a gentleman. Come, no more words of it.

*Host.* By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my dining-chambers.

*Fal.* Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking: and for thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the Prodigal, or the German hunting in water-work, is worth a thousand of these bawling hangings and these fly-bitten tapestries. Let it be ten pound, if thou canst. Come, an't were not for thy humours, there's not a better vench in England. Go, wash thy face, and draw the action. Come, thou must not be in this humour with me; dost not know me? come, come, I know thou wast set on to this.

*Host.* Pray thee, Sir John, let it be but twenty nobles: I faith, I am loath to pawn my plate, so God save me, is!

*Fal.* Let it alone; I'll make other shift: you'll be a fool still.

*Host.* Well, you shall have it, though I pawn my gown. I hope you'll come to supper. You'll pay me all together!

*Fal.* Will I live? [*To Bardolph*] Go, with her, with her; book on, hook on.

*Host.* Will you have Doll Tearheart meet you at supper?

*Fal.* No more words; let's have her.

[*Exeunt Hostess, Bardolph, Officers, and Boy.*]

*Ch. Just.* I have heard better news.

*Fal.* What's the news, my lord?

*Ch. Just.* Where lay the king last night?

*Gow.* At Basingstoke, my lord.

*Fal.* I hope, my lord, all's well: what is the news, my lord?

*Ch. Just.* Come all his forces back!

*Gow.* No; fifteen hundred foot, five hundred horse.

Are march'd up to my lord of Lancaster Against Northumberland and the Archbishop.

*Fal.* Comes the king back from Wales, my noble lord?

*Ch. Just.* You shall have letters of me presently.

Come, go along with me, good Master Gower.

*Fal.* My lord!

*Ch. Just.* What's the matter?

*repentance.*

*Fal.* My lord, I will not undergo this sheep

*Fal.* Master Gower, shall I entreat you with me to dinner?

*Gow.* I must wait upon my good lord here; I thank you, good Sir John.

*Oh. Just.* Sir John, you loiter here too long, being you are to take soldiers up in counties as you go.

*Fal.* Will you sup with me, Master Gower?  
*Oh. Just.* What foolish master taught you these manners, Sir John?

*Fal.* Master Gower, if they become me not, he was a fool that taught them me. This is the right fencing grace, my lord; tap for tap, and so part fair.

*Oh. Just.* Now the Lord lighten thee! thou art a great fool. [Exit.]

SCENE II. London. Another street.

Enter PRINCE HENRY and POINS.

*Prince.* Before God, I am exceeding weary.

*Poins.* Is't come to that? I had thought weariness durst not have attacked one of so high blood.

*Prince.* Faith, it does me; though it discolors the complexion of my greatness to acknowledge it. Doth it not show vilely in me to desire small beer?

*Poins.* Why, a prince should not be so loosely studied as to remember so weak a composition.

*Prince.* Believe then my appetite was not princely got; for, by my troth, I do now remember the poor creature, small beer. But, indeed, these humble considerations make me out of love with my greatness. What a disgrace is it to me to remember thy name! or to know thy face to-morrow! or to take note how many pair of silk stockings thou hast, viz. these, and those that were thy peach-coloured ones! or to hear the inventory of thy shirts, as, one for superfluity, and another for use! But that the tennis-court-keeper knows better than I; for it is a low ebb of linen with thee when thou keepest not racket there; as thou hast not done a great while, because the rest of thy low countries have made a shift to eat up thy holland; and God knows, whether those that bawl out the ruins of thy linen shall inherit his kingdom; but the midwives say the children are not in the fault; whereupon the world increases, and kindreds are mightily strengthened.

*Poins.* How ill it follows, after you have laboured so hard, you should talk so idly! Tell me, how many good young princes would do so, their fathers being so sick as yours at this time is?

*Prince.* Shall I tell thee one thing, Poins?

*Poins.* Yes, faith; and let it be an excellent good thing.

*Prince.* It shall serve among wits of no higher breeding than thine.

*Poins.* Go so; I stand the push of your one thing that you will tell.

*Prince.* Marry, I tell thee, it is not meet that I should be sad, now my father is sick; albeit I could tell to thee, as to one it pleases me, for sight of a better, to call my friend, I could indeed too.

*Poins.* Very hardly upon such a subject.

*Prince.* By this hand, thou thinkest me as far in the devil's book as thou and Falstaff for obduracy and persistency; let the end try the man. But I tell thee, my heart bleeds inwardly that my father is so sick; and keeping such vile company as thou art hath in reason taken from me all ostentation of sorrow.

*Poins.* The reason?

*Prince.* What wouldst thou think of me, if I should weep?

*Poins.* I would think thee a most hypocrite.

*Prince.* It would be every man's thought; and thou art a blessed fellow to think as every man thinks: never a man's thought in the world keeps the road-way better than thine: every man would think me an hypocrite indeed. And what accuses your most worshipful thought to think so?

*Poins.* Why, because you have been so lewd, and so much engrafted to Falstaff.

*Prince.* And to thee.

*Poins.* By this light, I am well spoke on; I can hear it with mine own ears: the worst that they can say of me is that I am a second brother and that I am a proper fellow of my hands; and those two things, I confess, I cannot help. By the mass, here comes Bardolph.

Enter BARDOLPH and Page.

*Prince.* And the boy that I gave Falstaff: 's had him from me Christian; and look, if the fat villain have not transformed him ape.

*Bard.* God save your grace!

*Prince.* And yours, most noble Bardolph!

*Bard.* Come, you virtuous ass, you bashful fool, must you be blushing? wherefore blush you now? What a maidenly man-at-arms are you become! Is't such a matter to get a pottle-pot's maidenhead?

*Page.* 'A calls me e'en now, my lord, through a red lattice, and I could discern no part of his face from the window: at last I spied his eyes, and methought he had made two holes in the ale-wife's new petticoat and so peeped through.

*Prince.* Has not the boy profited?

*Bard.* Away, you whorson upright rabbit, away!

*Page.* Away, you rascally Altham's dream, away!

*Prince.* Instruct us, boy: what dream, boy?  
*Page.* Marry, my lord, Altham dreamed he was delivered of a fire-brand; and therefore I call him her dream.

*Prince.* A crown's worth of good interpretation: there 'tis, boy.

*Poins.* O, that this good blossom could be kept from cankers! Well, there is sirenix to preserve thee.

*Bard.* An you do not make him hanged among you, the gallows shall have wrong.

*Prince.* And how doth thy master, Bardolph?

*Bard.* Well, my lord. He heard of your grace's coming to town; there's a letter for you.

*Poins.* Delivered with good speed. And how doth the merchantman, your master?

*Bard.* In bodily health, sir.

*Poins.* Marry, the immortal part needs!

physician; but that moves not him: though that be sick, it does not.

*Prince.* I do allow this wen to be as familiar with me as my dog; and he holds his place; for look you how he writes.

*Poins.* [Reads] 'John Falstaff, knight,'—every man must know that, as oft as he has occasion to name himself: even like those that are kin to the king; for they never prick their finger but they say, 'There's some of the king's blood spilt.' How comes that?' says he, that takes upon him not to conceive. The answer is as ready as a borrower's cap, 'I am the king's poor cousin, sir.'

*Prince.* Nay, they will be kin to us, or they will fetch it from Japhet. But to the letter:

*Poins.* [Reads] 'Sir John Falstaff, knight, the son of the king, nearest his father, Harry Prince of Wales, greeting.' Why, this is a certificate.

*Prince.* Peace!

*Poins.* [Reads] 'I will imitate the honourable Romans in brevity:' he sure means brevity in breath, short-winded. 'I commend me to thee. I commend thee, and I leave thee. Be not too familiar with Poins; for he misuses thy favours so much, that he swears thou art to marry his sister Nell. Repeat at idle times as thou mayest; and so, farewell.'

'Thine, by yea and no, which is as much as to say, as thou usest him, JACK FALSTAFF with my familiars, JOHN with my brothers and sisters, and SIR JOHN with all Europe.'

My lord, I'll steep this letter in sack and make him eat it.

*Prince.* That's to make him eat twenty of his words. But do you use me thus, Ned must I marry your sister!

*Poins.* God send the wench no worse fortune. But I never said so.

*Prince.* Well, thus we play the fools with the time, and the spirits of the wise sit in the clouds and mock us. Is your master here in London?

*Bard.* Yes, my lord.

*Prince.* Where sups he? doth the old bear feed in the old frank?

*Bard.* At the old place, my lord, in Eastcheap.

*Prince.* What company?

*Poins.* Ephesians, my lord, of the old church.

*Prince.* Sup any women with him?

*Poins.* None, my lord, but old Mistress Quickly and Mistress Doll Tearsheet.

*Prince.* What pagan may that be?

*Poins.* A proper gentlewoman, sir, and a knowersome of my master's.

*Prince.* Even such kin as the parish bellows are to the town ball. Shall we steal upon them, Ned, as ushers?

*Poins.* I am your shadow, my lord; I'll follow you.

*Prince.* Shrink, you boy, and Bardolph, no word to your master that I am yet come to town: there's for your silence.

*Bard.* I have no tongue, sir.

*Poins.* And for mine, sir, I will govern it.

*Prince.* Fare you well; go. [Exeunt Bardolph and Poins.] This Doll Tearsheet should be some rood.

*Poins.* I warrant you, as common as the way between Saint Alban's and London.

*Prince.* How might we see Falstaff bestow himself to-night in his true colours, and not ourselves be seen?

*Poins.* Put on two leathern jerkins and pouns, and wait upon him at his table as drawers.

*Prince.* From a God to a hulk! a heavy descension! it was Jove's case. From a prince to a prentice! a low transformation! that shall be mine; for in every thing the purpose must weigh with the folly. Follow me, Ned.

[Exeunt.]

### SCENE III. Warkworth. Before the castle.

Enter NORTHUMBERLAND, LADY NORTHUMBERLAND, and LADY PERCY.

*North.* I pray thee, loving wife, and gentle daughter,

Give even way unto my rough affairs:

'ut not you on the vantage of the times

And be like them to Percy troublesome.

*Lady N.* I have given over, I will speak no more:

Do what you will; your wisdom be your guide.

*North.* Alas, sweet wife, my honour is at pawn;

And, but my going, nothing can redeem it.

*Lady P.* O yet, for God's sake, go not to these wars!

The time was, father, that you broke your word,

When you were more endear'd to it than now;

When your own Percy, when my heart's dear Harry,

Threw many a northward look to see his father

Bring up his powers; but he did long in vain.

Who then persuaded you to stay at home?

There were two honours lost, yours and your son's.

For yours, the God of heaven brighten it!

For his, it stuck upon him as the sun

In the gray vault of heaven, and by his light

Did all the chivalry of England move

To do brave acts: he was indeed the glass

Wherein the noble youth did dress themselves:

He had no legs that practised not his gait;

And speaking thick, which nature made his

blemish,

Became the accents of the valiant;

For those that could speak low and tardily

Would turn their own perfection to abuse.

To seem like him: so that in speech, in gait,

In diet, in actions of courage,

In military rules, humours of blood,

He was the mark and glass, copy and book,

That fashion'd others. And him, O wondrous

him!

O friends of men! him did you leave

Second to none, surrounded by you

To look upon the hid

In disadvantage; to abide it!

Where nothing but the sound of Hotspur's  
name

Did seem defensible: so you left him.  
Never, O never, do his ghost the wrong  
To hold your honour more precise and nice 40  
With others than with him! let them alone:  
The marshal and the archbishop are strong:  
Had my sweet Harry had but half their numbers,  
To-day might I, hanging on Hotspur's neck,  
Have talk'd of Monmouth's grave.

*North.* Bearwour your heart,  
Fair daughter, you do draw my spirits from me  
With new lamenting ancient oversights.  
But I must go and meet with danger there,  
Or it will seek me in another place  
And find me worse provided.

*Lady N.* O, fly to Scotland, 50  
Till that the nobles and the armed commons  
Have of their puissance made a little taste.

*Lady P.* If they get ground and vantage of  
the king,

Then join you with them, like a rib of steel,  
To make strength stronger; but, for all our  
loves,

First let them try themselves. So did your son;  
He was so suffer'd: so came I a widow;  
And never shall have length of life enough  
To rain upon remembrance with mine eyes,  
That it may grow and sprout as high as heaven,  
For recordation to my noble husband. 61

*North.* Come, come, go in with me. 'Tis  
with my mind

As with the tide swell'd up unto his height,  
That makes a still-stand, running neither way:  
Fain would I go to meet the archbishop,  
But many thousand reasons hold me back.  
I will resolve for Scotland: there am I,  
Till time and vantage crave my company.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *London. The Boar's-head Tavern  
in Eastcheap.*

*Enter two Drawers.*

*First Draw.* What the devil hast thou  
brought there! apple-johns! thou knowest Sir  
John cannot endure an apple-john.

*Sec. Draw.* Mass, thou sayest true. The  
prince once eat a dish of apple-johns before  
him, and told him there were five more Sir  
Johns; and, putting off his hat, said 'I will now  
take my leave of these six dry, round, old,  
withered knights.' It angered him to the heart:  
but he hath forgot that. 10

*First Draw.* Why, then, cover, and set them  
down: and see if thou canst find out Snek's  
noise; Mistress Tearsheet would fain hear some  
music. Dispatch: the room where they supped  
is too hot; they'll come in straight.

*Sec. Draw.* Sirrah, here will be the prince  
and Master Pious anon; and they will put on  
two of our jerkins and aprons; and Sir John  
must not know of it: Bardolph hath brought  
word. 20

*First Draw.* By the mass, here will be old  
Uls: it will be an excellent stratagem.

*Sec. Draw.* I'll see if I can find out Snek.  
[*Exit.*]

*Enter Hostess and DOLL TEARSHEET.*

*Host.* I faith, sweetheart, methinks now you  
are in an excellent good temperality: your pul-  
sidge beats as extraordinarily as heart would  
desire; and your colour, I warrant you, is as  
red as any rose, in good truth, is! But, I faith,  
you have drunk too much canaries; and that's  
a marvellous searching wine, and it perfumes  
the blood ere one can say 'What's this!' How  
do you now?

*Dol.* Better than I was: hem!

*Host.* Why, that's well said; a good heart's  
worth gold. Lo, here comes Sir John.

*Enter FALSTAFF.*

*Fal.* [Singing] 'When Arthur first in court'  
— Empty the jonian. [*Exit First Drawer.*]  
[Singing] 'And was a worthy king.' How now,  
Mistress Doll!

*Host.* Sick of a calm; yea, good faith. 40

*Fal.* So is all her sect; an they be once in a  
calm, they are sick.

*Dol.* You muddy rascal, is that all the com-  
fort you give me?

*Fal.* You make fat rascals, Mistress Doll.

*Dol.* I make them! gluttony and diseases  
make them; I make them not.

*Fal.* If the cook help to make the gluttony,  
you help to make the diseases, Doll: we catch  
of you, Doll, we catch of you; grant that, my  
poor virtue, grant that. 51

*Dol.* Yea, joy, our chains and our jewels.

*Fal.* 'Your brooches, pearls, and oouches:'  
for to serve bravely is to come halting off, you  
know: to come off the breach with his pike  
bent bravely, and to survery bravely; to venture  
upon the charged chambers bravely.

*Dol.* Hang yourself, you muddy conger,  
hang yourself! 50

*Host.* By my troth, this is the old fashion;  
you two never meet but you fall to some dis-  
cord: you are both, I good truth, as rheumatic  
as two dry toasts; you cannot one bear with  
another's confirmities. What the good-year!  
one must bear, and that must be you: you are  
the weaker vessel, as they say, the emptier  
vessel.

*Dol.* Can a weak empty vessel bear such a  
huge full hogshead! there's a whole merchant's  
venture of Bourdeaux stuff in him; you have not  
seen a hulk better stuffed in the hold. Come.  
I'll be friends with thee, Jack: thou art going  
to the wars; and whether I shall ever see thee  
again or no, there is nobody cares.

*Re-enter First Drawer.*

*First Draw.* Sir, Ancient Pistol's below,  
and would speak with you.

*Dol.* Hang him, swaggering rascal! let him  
not come hither: it is the foul-mouthed  
rogue in England.

*Host.* If he swagger, let him not come here:  
no, by my faith; I must live among my neigh-  
bours; I'll no swaggers: I am of good name  
and fame with the very best; shut the door;  
there comes no swaggers here: I have not



lived all this while, to have swaggering now: shut the door, I pray you.

*Fal.* Dost thou hear hostess!

*Host.* Pray ye, pacify yourself, Sir John: there comes no swaggerers here.

*Fal.* Dost thou hear? it is mine ancient.

*Host.* Tilly-fally, Sir John, ne'er tell me: our ancient swaggerer comes not in my doors. I was before Master Tisick, the deputy, t'other day; and, as he said to me, 'twas no longer ago than Wednesday last, 'I good faith, neighbour Quickly,' says he; 'Master Dumble, our minister, was by then; 'neighbour Quickly,' says he, 'receive those that are civil; for,' said he, 'you are in an ill name:' now a said so, I can tell whereupon; 'for,' says he, 'you are an honest woman, and well thought on; therefore take heed what guests you receive: receive,' says he, 'no swaggering companions.' There comes none here: you would bless you to hear what he said: no, I'll no swaggerers.

*Fal.* He's no swaggerer, hostess; a tame cheater, 'I faith; you may stroke him as gently as a puppy greyhound: he'll not swagger with a livery hen, if her feathers turn back in any show of resistance. Call him up, drawer.

[*Exit First Drawer.*]

*Host.* Cheater, call you him! I will bar no honest man my house, nor no cheater; but I do not love swaggering, by my troth; I am the worse, when one says swagger: feel, masters, how I shake; look you, I warrant you.

*Jhl.* So you do, hostess.

*Host.* Do I? yea, in very truth, do I, an I were an aspen leaf: I cannot abide swaggers.

*Enter PISTOL, BARDOLPH, and Page.*

*Pist.* God save you, Sir John! 119

*Fal.* Welcome, Ancient Pistol. Here, Pistol, I charge you with a cup of sack: do you discharge upon mine hostess.

*Pist.* I will discharge upon her, Sir John, with two bullets.

*Fal.* She is pistol-proof, sir; you shall hardly offend her.

*Host.* Come, I'll drink no proofs nor no bullets: I'll drink no more than will do me good, for no man's pleasure.

*Pist.* Then to you, Mistress Dorothy; I will charge you. 121

*Dol.* Charge me! I scorn you, scurvy companion. What! you poor, base, rascally, cheating, lack-linen mate! Away, you mouldy rogue, away! I am meat for your master.

*Pist.* I know you, Mistress Dorothy.

*Dol.* Away, you cut-purse rascal! you filthy me, away! by this wine, I'll thrust my knife at your mouldy chaps, an you play the saucy cuttle with me. Away, you bottle-ale rascal!

[*He basket-hilt stale jagger, you!* Since when, I pray you, sir? God's light, with two points on your shoulder! much!]

*Pist.* God let me not live, but I will murder your ruff for this.

*Fal.* No more, Pistol; I would not have you go on here: discharge yourself of our company, Pistol.

*Host.* No, good Captain Pistol; not here, sweet captain. 120

*Dol.* Captain! thou abominable damned cheater, art thou not ashamed to be called captain! An captains were of my mind, they would truncheon you out, for taking their names upon you before you have earned them. You a captain! you slave, for what? for tearing a poor whore's ruff in a lawdy-house! He a captain! hang him, rogue! he lives upon mouldy stewed prunes and dried cakes. A captain! God's light, these villains will make the word as odious as the word 'occupy'; which was an excellent good word before it was ill sorted: therefore captains had need look to't.

*Bard.* Pray thee, go down, good ancient.

*Fal.* Hark thee hither, Mistress Doll.

*Pist.* Not I: I tell thee what, Corporal Bardolph, I could tear her: I'll be revenged of her.

*Page.* Pray thee, go down.

*Pist.* I'll see her damned first; to Pluto's damned lake, by this hand, to the infernal deep, with Erebus and tortures vile also. Hold hook and line, say I. Down, down, dogs! down, tailors! Have we not Hiren here?

*Host.* Good Captain Peesel, be quiet; 'tis very late, 'I faith: I beseech you now, aggravate your cholera.

*Pist.* These be good humours, indeed! Shall pack-horses

And hollow pamper'd jades of Asia,  
Which cannot go but thirty mile a-day,  
Compare with Caesars, and with Cannibals, 120  
And Trojan Greeks! nay, rather damn them

King Cerberus; and let the welkin roar.

Shall we fall foul for toys!

*Host.* By my troth, captain, these are very bitter words.

*Bard.* Be gone, good ancient: this will grow to a brawl anon.

*Pist.* Die men like dogs! give crowns like pins! Have we not Hiren here! 121

*Host.* O' my word, captain, there's none such here. What the good-year! do you think I would deny her? For God's sake, be quiet.

*Pist.* Then feed, and be fat, my fair Calipolia. Come, give's some sack.

'Si fortune me tormento, sperato me contento.' Fear ye broadsides! no, let the fiend give fire:

Give me some sack: and, sweetheart, lie thou there. [Laying down his sword.

Come we to full points here; and are etceteras nothing!

*Fal.* Pistol, I would be quiet.

*Pist.* Sweet knight, I kiss thy neck: what! we have seen the seven stars. 122

*Dol.* For God's sake, thrust him down stairs: I cannot endure such a fastidious rascal.

*Pist.* Thrust him down stairs! know we not Galloway nags!

*Fal.* Quoit him down, Bardolph, like a shove-groat shilling: nay, an'st do nothing but speak nothing, 'st shall be nothing here.

*Bard.* Come, get you down stairs.

*Pist.* What! shall we have incision? shall we imbrue?

[*Snatching up his sword.*]

These death reek me asleep, aldrige my doubtful days!

Why, then, let grievous, ghostly, musing wounds  
Unkine the Sisters Three! Come, Atropos,  
I say!

Host. Here's goodly stuff toward!

Fal. Give me my rapier, boy.

Dol. I pray thee, Jack, I pray thee, do not draw.

Fal. Get you down stairs.

(Drawing, and driving Pistol out.

Host. Here's a goodly tumult! I'll forswear keeping house, afore I'll be in these thrills and frights. So; murder, I warrant now. Alas, alas! put up your naked weapons, put up your naked weapons.

(Exeunt Pistol and Bardolph.

Dol. I pray thee, Jack, be quiet; the rascal's gone. Ah, you whorson little valiant villain, you!

Host. Are you not hurt i' the groin? methoughts a' made a shrewd thrust at your belly.

Re-enter BARDOLPH.

Fal. Have you turned him out o' doors?

Bard. Yes, sir. The rascal's drunk: you have hurt him, sir, i' the shoulder.

Fal. A rascal! to brave me!

Dol. Ah, you sweet little rogue, you! Alas, poor spee, how thou sweetest! come, let me wipe thy face; come on, you whorson chops: ah, rogue! i' faith, I love thee: thou art as valorous as Hector of Troy, worth five of Agamemnon, and ten times better than the Nine Worthies: ah, villain!

Fal. A rascally scoundrel! I will toss the rogue in a blanket.

Dol. Do, an thou dar'st for thy heart: an thou dost, I'll canvass thee between a pair of sheets.

Enter Music.

Page. The music is come, sir.

Fal. Let them play. Play, sir. Sit on my knee, Doll. A rascal bragging there! the rogue sed from me like quicksilver.

Dol. I faith, and thou followedst him like a church. Thou whorson little tidy Bartholomew boar-pig, when wilt thou leave fighting o' days and joining o' nights, and begin to patch up thine old body for heaven?

Enter, behind, PRINCE HENRY and POINS, disguised.

Fal. Peace, good Doll! do not speak like a death's-head; do not bid me remember mine end.

Dol. Sirrah, what humour's the prince of?

Fal. A good shallow young fellow: a' would have made a good painter, a' would he chipped heads well.

Dol. They say Poins has a good wit.

Fal. He a good wit? hang him, beboon! his wit's as thick as Tewkesbury mustard; there's no more conceit in him than in a mallet.

Dol. Why does the prince love him so, then?

Fal. Because their legs are both of a bigness,

and a' ——— well, and eats ——— : and fennel, and dri ——— off candles' ends ——— flap-dragons, and rides the wild-mare with the boys, and jumps upon joined-schoals, and ——— ears with a good grace, and wears his boots ——— smooth, like unto the sign of the leg, and be ——— no hate with telling of discreet stories; and ——— each other gambol faculties a' has, that show a' ——— (weak mind) and an able body, for the which t' admits him: for the prince himself another: the weight of a hair will scales between their avoidupols.

Prince. Would not this save of a wheel have his ears cut off?

Poins. Let's beat him before his whore.

Prince. Look, whether the withered elder hath not his poll clawed like a parrot.

Poins. Is it not strange that desire should so many years outlive performance?

Fal. Kiss me, Doll.

Prince. Saturn and Venus this year in conjunction! what says the almanac to that?

Poins. And, look, whether the fiery Trigon, his man, be not lipping to his master's old tables, his note-book, his counsel-keeper.

Fal. Thou dost give me flattering blows.

Dol. By my troth, I kiss thee with a most constant heart.

Fal. I am old, I am old.

Dol. I love thee better than I love e'er a scurvy young boy of them all.

Fal. What stuff will have a kittle of! I shall receive money o' Thursday: shall have a cap to-morrow. A merry song, come: it grows late; we'll to bed. Thou'st forget me when I am gone.

Dol. By my troth, thou'lt set me a-weeping, an thou sayest so: prove that ever I drew myself handsome till thy return: well, bawdize at the end.

Fal. Some sack, Francis.

Prince. } Anon, anon, sir. (Coming forward.

Poins. }

Fal. Ha! a bastard son of the king's! And art not thou Poins his brother?

Prince. Why, thou globe of sinful continents, what a life dost thou lead!

Fal. A better than thou: I am a gentleman; thou art a drawer.

Prince. Very true, sir; and I come to draw you out by the ears.

Host. O, the Lord preserve thy good grace! by my troth, welcome to London. Now, the Lord bless that sweet face of thine! O, as are you come from Wales?

Fal. Thou whorson mad compound majesty, by this light Bash and enrag'd blood, thou art welcome.

Dol. How, you fat fool! I scorn you.

Poins. My lord, he will drive you out of your revenge and turn all to a merriment, if you take not the heat.

Prince. You whorson candle-stone, you how vilely did you speak of me even now before this honest, virtuous, civil gentleman!

Host. O, the blessing of your good heart!

and so she is, by my troth.

Fal. Didst thou hear me?

*Prince.* Yea, and you knew me, as you did  
 en you ran away by Gad's-hill: you knew  
 as at your back, and spoke it on purpose to  
 my patience.

*Fal.* No, no, no; not so; I did not think  
 to wait within hearing.

*Prince.* I shall drive you then to confess  
 wilful abuse; and then I know how to  
 rule you.

*Fal.* No abuse, Hal, o' mine honour; no  
 use.

*Prince.* Not to dispraise me, and call me  
 ntlr and bread-chipper and I know not what!

*Fal.* No abuse, Hal.

*Poins.* No abuse!

*Fal.* No abuse, Ned, i' the world; honest  
 el, none. I dispraised him before the wicked,  
 at the wicked might not fall in love with  
 m; in which doing, I have done the part of  
 careful friend and a true subject, and thy  
 shur is to give me thanks for it. No abuse,  
 lad: none, Ned, none; no, faith, boys, none.

*Prince.* See now, whether pure fear and  
 pure cowardice doth not make thee wrong  
 us virtuous gentlewoman to close with us,  
 she of the wicked? is thine hostess here of  
 the wicked? or is thy boy of the wicked? or  
 onest Bardolph, whose zeal burns in his nose,  
 if the wicked!

*Poins.* Answer, thou dead elm, answer.

*Fal.* The fiend hath pricked down Bardolph  
 recoverable; and his face is Lucifer's privy-  
 hen, where he doth nothing but roast mal-  
 vomus. For the boy, there is a good angel  
 bout him; but the devil outbids him too.

*Prince.* For the women?

*Fal.* For one of them, she is in hell already,  
 and burns poor souls. For the other, I owe her  
 money; and whether she be damned for that, I  
 know not.

*Host.* No, I warrant you.

*Fal.* No, I think thou art not; I think thou  
 art quit for that. Marry, there is another in-  
 flictment upon thee, for suffering flesh to be  
 slain in thy house, contrary to the law; for the  
 which I think thou wilt howl.

*Host.* All victuals do so: what's a joint  
 of mutton or two in a whole Lent?

*Prince.* You, gentlewoman,—

*Fal.* What says your grace?

*Fal.* His grace says that which his flesh  
 tells against. [Knocking within.]

*Host.* Who knocks so loud at door? Look  
 the door there, Francis.

*Enter Peto.*

*Prince.* Peto, how now! what news?

*Peto.* The king your father is at West-  
 minster;

and there are twenty weak and wearied posts  
 come from the north; and, as I came along,

I met and overtook a dozen captains,  
 head-headed, sweating, knocking at the taverns,

and asking every one for Sir John Falstaff.

*Prince.* By heaven, Poins, I feel me match  
 to him,

and idly to put  
 When tempest

Borne with black vapour, doth begin to melt  
 And drop upon our bare unarmed heads.  
 Give me my sword and cloak. Falstaff, good  
 night.

[*Exeunt Prince Henry, Poins, Peto,  
 and Bardolph.*]

*Fal.* Now comes in the sweetest morsel of  
 the night, and we must hence and leave it un-  
 picked. [Knocking within.] More knocking at  
 the door!

*Re-enter BARDOLPH.*

How now! what's the matter?

*Bard.* You must away to court, sir, presently;  
 A dozen captains stay at door for you.

*Fal.* [To the Page] Pay the musicians,  
 sirrah. Farewell, hostess; farewell, Doll. You  
 see, my good wenches, how men of merit are  
 sought after: the undeserver may sleep, when  
 the man of action is called on. Farewell, good  
 wenches: if I be not sent away post, I will see  
 you again ere I go.

*Dol.* I cannot speak; if my heart be not  
 ready to burst,—well, sweet Jack, have a care  
 of thyself.

*Fal.* Farewell, farewell. [*Exeunt Falstaff  
 and Bardolph.*]

*Host.* Well, fare thee well: I have known  
 thee these twenty nine years, come passio-  
 time; but an honest and truer-hearted man,  
 —well, fare thee well.

*Bard.* [Within] Mistress Tearsheet!

*Host.* What's the matter?

*Bard.* [Within] Bid Mistress Tearsheet  
 come to my master.

*Host.* O, run, Doll, run; run, good Doll:  
 come. [She comes blubbered.] Yea, will you  
 come, Doll?

[*Exeunt.*]

### ACT III.

#### SCENE I. Westminster. The palace.

*Enter the KING in his nightgown, with a Page.*

*King.* Go call the Earls of Surrey and of  
 Warwick;

But, ere they come, bid them o'er-read these  
 letters.

And well consider of them: make good speed.

[*Exit Page.*]

How many thousand of my poorest subjects  
 Are at this hour asleep! O sleep, O gentle  
 sleep,

Nature's soft nurse, how have I frightened thee,  
 That thou no more wilt weigh my eyelids down  
 And steep my senses in forgetfulness?

Why rather, sleep, liest thou in smoky crib,  
 Upon uneasy pallets stretching thee,  
 And hunch'd with bawling night-larks to thy  
 slumber,

Than in the perfumed chambers of the great,  
 Under the canopy of costly state?

And liest' with sound of sweetest melody?  
 O thou dull god, why liest thou with the vile  
 In loathsome beds, and leavest the

A watch-case or a common tabor  
 With thee upon the high and mighty seat?

Seal up the shut-shut eyes, and rock the cradle

Of this great king!

Seal up the shut-shut eyes, and rock the cradle

Of this great king!

In cradle of the rude imperious surge  
And in the visitation of the winds,  
Who take the ruffian billows by the top,  
Curling their monstrous heads and hanging  
them  
With deafening clamour in the slippery clouds,  
That, with the hurly, death itself awakes?  
Carest thou, O partial sleep, give thy repose  
To the wet sea-boy in an hour so rude,  
And in the calmest and most stillest night,  
With all appliances and means to boot,  
Deny it to a king? Then happy low, lie down!  
Uneasy lies the head that wears a crown. 31

*Enter WARWICK and SURREY.*

*War.* Many good morrows to your majesty!

*King.* Is it good morrow, lords?

*War.* 'Tis one o'clock, and past.

*King.* Why, then, good morrow to you all, my lords.

Have you read o'er the letters that I sent you?

*War.* We have, my liege.

*King.* Then you perceive the body of our kingdom

How foul it is; what rank diseases grow  
And with what danger, near the heart of it. 40

*War.* It is but as a body yet distemper'd;  
Which to his former strength may be restored  
With good advice and little medicine:

My Lord Northumberland will soon be cool'd.

*King.* O God! that one might read the book of fate,

And see the revolution of the times  
Make mountains level, and the continent,

Weary of solid firmness, melt itself  
Into the sea! and, other times, to see

The beachy girdle of the ocean 50  
Too wide for Neptune's hips; how chances

mock,  
And changes fill the cup of alteration  
With divers liquors! O, if this were seen,

The happiest youth, viewing his progress  
through,

What perils past, what crosses to ensue,  
Would shut the book, and sit him down and die.

'Tis not ten years gone  
Since Richard and Northumberland, great

friends,  
Did feast together, and in two years after

Were they at wars: it is but eight years since  
This Percy was the man nearest my soul, 61

Who like a brother toid me in my affairs  
And laid his love and life under my foot,

Yea, for my sake, even to the eyes of Richard  
Gave him defiance. But which of you was by—

Yea, cousin Nevil, as I may remember—

*(To Warwick.)*

When Richard, with his eye brimful of tears,  
Then check'd and rated by Northumberland,

Did speak these words, now proved a prophecy?  
Northumberland, thou ladder by the which, 70

My cousin Bolingbroke ascends my throne;

I then, God knows, I had no such intent  
It necessary so bow'd the state

I and greatness were compell'd to him:

'The time shall come,' thus did he follow it,  
'The time will come, that foul sin, gathering

head,

Shall break into corruption: ' so went on,  
Foretelling this same time's condition  
And the division of our amity.

*War.* There is a history in all men's lives, and

Figuring the nature of the times deceased;

The which observed, a man may prophesy  
With a near aim, of the main chance of things;

As yet not come to life, which in their seeds  
And weak beginnings lie intresured.

Such things become the hatch and brood of  
time;

And by the necessary form of this  
King Richard might create a perfect guess

That great Northumberland, then false to him,  
Would of that seed grow to a greater falseness;

Which should not find a ground to root upon,  
Unless on you.

*King.* Are these things then necessities?

Then let us meet them like necessities:  
And that same word even now cries out on us.

They say the bishop and Northumberland  
Are fifty thousand strong.

*War.* It cannot be, my lord;

Rumour doth double, like the voice and echo,  
The numbers of the fear'd. Please it your

grace  
To go to bed. Upon my soul, my lord,

The powers that you already have sent forth  
Shall bring this prize in very easily. 131

To comfort you the more, I have received  
A certain instance that Glendower is dead.

Your majesty hath been this fortnight ill,  
And these unseason'd hours perforce must add

Unto your sickness.

*King.* I will take your counsel:  
And were these inward wars once out of hand,  
We would, dear lords, unto the Holy Land.

*(Exeunt.)*

SCENE II. Gloucestershire. Before JUSTICE  
SHALLOW's house.

*Enter SHALLOW and SILENCE, meeting;*

MOULDY, SHADOW, WANT, FEEBLE, BULL-  
CALF, a Servant or two with them.

*Shal.* Come on, come on, come on, sir;

give me your hand, sir, give me your hand,  
sir: an early stirrer, by the rood! And

doth my good cousin Silence?

*Sil.* Good morrow, good cousin Shallow.

*Shal.* And how doth my cousin, your be-  
fellow! and your fairest daughter and mine,  
my god-daughter Ellen?

*Sil.* Alas, a black owl, cousin Shallow!

*Shal.* By yea and nay, sir, I dare say my  
cousin William is become a good scholar: he is

at Oxford still, is he not?

*Sil.* Indeed, sir, to my cost.

*Shal.* A' must, then, to the inn o' com-  
monly. I was once of Clement's Inn, where

think they will talk of mad Shallow yet.

*Sil.* You were called 'lusty Shallow' then,  
cousin.

*Shal.* By the mass, I was called any thing;  
and I would have done any thing indeed to  
and roundly too. There was I, and little John  
Dot of Gloucestershire, and black George Bates  
and Francis Pickburn, and Will Squeal,

Cotswold man; you had not four such swinge-bucklers in all the inns o' court again: and I may say to you, we knew where the bona-robas were and had the best of them all at commandment. Then was Jack Falstaff, now Sir John, a boy, and page to Thomas Mowbray, Duke of Norfolk.

*Sil.* This Sir John, cousin, that comes hither anon about soldiers?

*Shal.* The same Sir John, the very same. I see him break Skogan's head at the court-gate, when a' was a crack not thus high: and the very same day did I fight with one Sampson Stockfish, a fruiterer, behind Gray's Inn. Jesu, Jesu, the mad days that I have spent! and to see how many of my old acquaintance are dead!

*Sil.* We shall all follow, cousin.

*Shal.* Certain, 'tis certain; very sure, very sure: death, as the Psalmist saith, is certain to all: all shall die. How a good yoke of bullocks at Stamford fair?

*Sil.* By my troth, I was not there.

*Shal.* Death is certain. Is old Double of your town living yet?

*Sil.* Dead, sir.

*Shal.* Jesu, Jesu, dead! a' drew a good bow; and dead! a' shot a fine shoot: John a Gaunt loved him well, and betted much money on his head. Dead! a' would have clapped i' the clout at twelve score; and carried you a forehand shaft a fourteen and fourteen and a half, that it could have done a man's heart good to see. How a score of ewes now?

*Sil.* Thereafter as they be: a score of good wies may be worth ten pounds.

*Shal.* And is old Double dead?

*Sil.* Here come two of Sir John Falstaff's men, as I think.

*Enter BARDOLPH and one with him.*

*Bard.* Good morrow, honest gentlemen: I beseech you, which is Justice Shallow?

*Shal.* I am Robert Shallow, sir: a poor capture of this county, and one of the king's justices of the peace: what is your good pleasure with me?

*Bard.* My captain, sir, commends him to you; my captain, Sir John Falstaff, a tall gentleman, by heaven, and a most gallant leader.

*Shal.* He greets me well, sir. I knew him a good backword man. How doth the good knight? may I ask how my lady his wife doth?

*Bard.* Sir, pardon: a soldier is better accommodated than with a wife.

*Shal.* It is well said, in faith, sir; and it is well said indeed too. Better accommodated! it is good; yes, indeed, it is: good phrases are surely, and ever were, very commendable. Accommodated! it comes of 'accommodo': very good; a good phrase.

*Bard.* Pardon me, sir; I have heard the word. Phrase call you it? by this good day, I know not the phrase; but I will maintain the word with my sword to be a soldier-like word, and a word of exceeding good command, by heaven. Accommodated; that is, when a man is, as they say, accommodated; or when a man

is, being, whereby a' may be thought to be accommodated; which is an excellent thing.

*Shal.* It is very just.

*Enter FALSTAFF.*

Look, here comes good Sir John. Give me your good hand, give me your worship's good hand: by my troth, you like well and bear your years very well: welcome, good Sir John.

*Fal.* I am glad to see you well, good Master Robert Shallow: Master Surecard, as I think?

*Shal.* No, Sir John; it is my cousin Silence, in commission with me.

*Fal.* Good Master Silence, it well befits you should be of the peace.

*Sil.* Your good worship is welcome.

*Fal.* Fie! this is hot weather, gentlemen. Have you provided me here half a dozen sufficient men?

*Shal.* Marry, have we, sir. Will you sit?

*Fal.* Let me see them, I beseech you.

*Shal.* Where's the roll? where's the roll? where's the roll? Let me see, let me see, let me see. So, so, so, so, so, so, so: yes, marry, sir: Ralph Mouldy! Let them appear as I call: let them do so, let them do so. Let me see; where is Mouldy?

*Moul.* Here, an't please you.

*Shal.* What think you, Sir John? a good-limbed fellow; young, strong, and of good friends.

*Fal.* Is thy name Mouldy?

*Moul.* Yea, an't please you.

*Fal.* 'Tis the more time thou wert used.

*Shal.* Ha, ha, ha! most excellent, i' faith! things that are mouldy lack use: very singular good! in faith, well said, Sir John, very well said.

*Fal.* Prick him.

*Moul.* I was pricked well enough before, an you could have let me alone: my old dame will be undone now for one to do her husbandry and her drudgery: you need not to have pricked me; there are other men fitter to go out than I.

*Fal.* Go to: peace, Mouldy; you shall go. Mouldy, it is time you were spent.

*Moul.* Spent!

*Shal.* Peace, fellow, peace; stand aside: know you where you are? For the other, Sir John: let me see: Simon Shadow!

*Fal.* Yes, marry, let me have him to sit under: he's like to be a cold soldier.

*Shal.* Where's Shadow?

*Shad.* Here, sir.

*Fal.* Shadow, whose son art thou?

*Shad.* My mother's son, sir.

*Fal.* Thy mother's son! like thy father's shadow: so the son of the shadow of the male: it is often so, but much of the father's substance!

*Shal.* Do you like him, Sir John?

*Fal.* Shadow will serve for summer; prick him, for we have a number of shadows to fill up the master-book.

*Shad.* Thomas Wart!

*Fal.* Where's he?

*Wart.* Here, sir.

*Fal.* Is thy name Wart? 170

*Wart.* Yes, sir.

*Fal.* Thou art a very ragged wart.

*Shal.* Shall I prick him down, Sir John?

*Fal.* It were superfluous; for his apparel is built upon his back and the whole frame stands upon pins: prick him no more.

*Shal.* Ha, ha, ha! you can do it, sir; you can do it: I commend you well. Francis Feeble!

*Fec.* Here, sir.

*Fal.* What trade art thou, Feeble? 160

*Fec.* A woman's tailor, sir.

*Shal.* Shall I prick him, sir?

*Fal.* You may: but if he had been a man's tailor, he'd ha' pricked you. Wilt thou make as many holes in an enemy's battle as thou hast done in a woman's petticoat?

*Fec.* I will do my good will, sir: you can have no more.

*Fal.* Well said, good woman's tailor! well said, courageous Feeble! thou wilt be as valiant as the wrathful dove or most magnanimous mouse. Prick the woman's tailor: well, Master Shallow; deep, Master Shallow.

*Fec.* I would Wart might have gone, sir.

*Fal.* I would thou wert a man's tailor, that thou mightst mend him and make him fit to go. I cannot put him to a private soldier that is the leader of so many thousands: let that suffice, most forcible Feeble.

*Fec.* It shall suffice, sir. 180

*Fal.* I am bound to thee, reverend Feeble. Who is next?

*Shal.* Peter Bullcalf o' the green!

*Fal.* Yes, marry, let's see Bullcalf.

*Bull.* Here, sir.

*Fal.* Fore God, a likely fellow! Come, prick me Bullcalf till he roar again.

*Bull.* O Lord! good my lord captain.—

*Fal.* What, dost thou roar before thou art pricked? 190

*Bull.* O Lord, sir! I am a diseased man.

*Fal.* What disease hast thou?

*Bull.* A whoreson cold, sir, a cough, sir, which I caught with ringing in the king's affairs upon his coronation-day, sir.

*Fal.* Come, thou shalt go to the wars in a gown: we will have away thy cold: and I will take such order that thy friends shall ring for thee. Is here all? 199

*Shal.* Here is two more called than your number: you must have but four here, sir: and so, I pray you, go in with me to dinner.

*Fal.* Come, I will go drink with you, but I cannot tarry dinner. I am glad to see you, by my troth, Master Shallow.

*Shal.* O, Sir John, do you remember since we lay all night in the windmill in Saint George's field?

*Fal.* No more of that, good Master Shallow, no more of that.

*Shal.* Ha! 'twas a merry night. And is Jane Nightwork alive? 211

*Fal.* She lives, Master Shallow.

*Shal.* She never could away with me.

*Fal.* Never, never: she would always say she could not abide Master Shallow.

*Shal.* By the mass, I could anger her to the

heart. She was then a bona-roba. Doth she hold her own well?

*Fal.* Old, old, Master Shallow. 210

*Shal.* Nay, she must be old; she cannot choose but be old; certain she's old; and had Robin Nightwork by old Nightwork before I came to Clement's Inn.

*Sir.* That's fifty five year ago.

*Shal.* Ha, cousin Silence, that thou hadst seen that that this knight and I have seen! Ha, Sir John, said I well?

*Fal.* We have heard the chimes at midnight, Master Shallow. 220

*Shal.* That we have, that we have, that we have; in faith, Sir John, we have; our watchword was 'Hem boys!' Come, let's to dinner; come, let's to dinner: Jesus, the days that we have seen! Come, come.

[*Exeunt Falstaff and the Justice.*]

*Bull.* Good Master Corporate Bardolph, stand my friend; and here's four Harry ten shillings in French crowns for you. In very truth, sir, I had as lief be hanged, sir, as go; and yet, for mine own part, sir, I do not care; but rather, because I am unwilling, and, for mine own part, have a desire to stay with my friends; else, sir, I did not care, for mine own part, so much.

*Bard.* Go to; stand aside.

*Moul.* And, good master corporal captain, for my old dame's sake, stand my friend: she has nobody to do any thing about her when I am gone; and she is old, and cannot help herself: you shall have forty, sir.

*Bard.* Go to; stand aside. 240

*Fec.* By my troth, I care not: a man can die but once: we owe God a death: I'll never bear a base mind: an't be my destiny, so; an't be not, so: no man is too good to serve's prince; and let it go which way it will, he that dies this year is quit for the next.

*Bard.* Well said; thou'rt a good fellow.

*Fec.* Faith, I'll bear no base mind.

[*Re-enter FALSTAFF and the Justice.*]

*Fal.* Come, sir, which man shall I have!

*Shal.* Four of which you please.

*Bard.* Sir, a word with you: I have three pound to free Mouldy and Bullcalf. 261

*Fal.* Go to; well.

*Shal.* Come, Sir John, which four will you have?

*Fal.* Do you choose for me.

*Shal.* Marry, then, Mouldy, Bullcalf, Feeble and Shadow.

*Fal.* Mouldy and Bullcalf: for you, Mouldy, stay at home till you are past service: and for your part, Bullcalf, grow till you come unto it: I will none of you. 271

*Shal.* Sir John, Sir John, do not yourself wrong: they are your likeliest men, and I would have you served with the best.

*Fal.* Will you tell me, Master Shallow, to choose a man? Care I for the limb, the shew, the stature, bulk, and big members of a man? Give me the spirit, Master Shallow! Here's a Wart: you see what a ragged appearance it is: a' shall change you and discharge you the fraction of a penny's ransom.

Fondly brought here and foolishly sent hence.  
Stakes up our drums, pursue the scatter'd stray:  
God, and not we, hath safely fought to-day. 121  
Some guard these traitors to the block of death,  
Treason's true bed and yielder up of breath.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *Another part of the forest.*

*Alarm. Excursions. Enter FALSTAFF and COLEVILLE, meeting.*

*Fal.* What's your name, sir? of what condition are you, and of what place, I pray?

*Cole.* I am a knight, sir; and my name is Coleville of the dale.

*Fal.* Well, then, Coleville is your name, a knight is your degree, and your place the dale: (Coleville shall be still your name, a traitor your degree, and the dungeon your place, a place deep enough; so shall you be still Coleville of the dale.)

*Cole.* Are not you Sir John Falstaff?

*Fal.* As good a man as he, sir, when I am. Do ye yield, sir? or shall I sweat for you? If I do sweat, they are the drops of thy lovers, and they weep for thy death; therefore rouse up fear and trembling, and do observance to my mercy.

*Cole.* I think you are Sir John Falstaff, and in that thought yield me.

*Fal.* I have a whole school of tongues in this belly of mine, and not a tongue of them all speaks any other word but my name. An I had but a belly of any indifferency, I were simply the most active fellow in Europe: my womb, my womb, my womb, undoes me. Here comes our general.

*Enter PRINCE JOHN OF LANCASTER, WESTMORELAND, BLUNT, and others.*

*Lan.* The heat is past; follow no further now.

Call in the powers, good cousin Westmoreland.

*[Exit Westmoreland.]*  
Now, Falstaff, where have you been all this while?

When every thing is ended, then you come: 30  
These tardy tricks of yours will, on my life,  
One time or other break some gallows back.

*Fal.* I would be sorry, my lord, but it should be thus: I never knew yet but rebuke and check was the reward of valour. Do you think me a swallow, an arrow, or a bullet? have I, in my poor and old motion, the expedition of thought? I have speeded hither with the very extremest inch of possibility; I have foundered nine score and odd posts: and here, travel-tainted as I am, have in my pure and immaculate valour, taken Sir John Coleville at the dale, a most furious bright and valorous enemy. But what of that? he saw me, and yielded: that I may justly say, with the bookish fellow of Borne, 'I came, saw, and overcame.'

*Lan.* It was more of his courtesy than your deserving.

*Fal.* I know not: have he in, and have I yield him: and I beseech your grace, let it be

looked with the rest of this day's deeds; or, by the Lord, I will have it in a particular ballad else, with mine own picture on the top on't. Coleville kissing my foot; to the which course if I be enforced, if you do not all show like gilt two-pences to me, and I in the clear sky of fame o'ershine you as much as the full moon doth the cinders of the element, which show like pins' heads to her, believe not the word of the noble: therefore let me have right, and let desert mount.

*Lan.* Thine's too heavy to mount.

*Fal.* Let it shine, then.

*Lan.* Thine's too thick to shine.

*Fal.* Let it do something, my good lord, that may do me good, and call it what you will.

*Lan.* Is thy name Coleville?

*Cole.* It is, my lord.

*Lan.* A famous rebel art thou, Coleville.

*Fal.* And a famous true subject took him.

*Cole.* I am, my lord, but as my betters are. That led me hither: had they been ruled by me, You should have won them dearer than you have.

*Fal.* I know not how they sold themselves; but thou, like a kind fellow, gavest thyself away gratis; and I thank thee for thee.

*Re-enter WESTMORELAND.*

*Lan.* Now, have you left pursuit?

*West.* Retreat is made and execution stay'd.

*Lan.* Send Coleville with his confederates To York, to present execution: 30  
Blunt, lead him hence; and see you guard him sure.

*[Exeunt Blunt and others with Coleville.]*  
And now dispatch we toward the court, my lords:

hear the king my father in sore sick;  
our news shall go before us to his majesty.  
Which, cousin, you shall hear to comfort him,  
And we with other speed will follow you.

*Fal.* My lord, I beseech you, give me leave to go  
through Gloucestershire: and, when you come to court,

Stand my good lord, pray, in your good report.

*Lan.* Give you well, Falstaff; I, in my condition,  
Shall better speak of you than you deserve.

*[Exeunt all but Falstaff.]*

*Fal.* I would you had but the wit: 'twere better than your discretion. Good faith, this same young cock-brooded boy doth not love me; nor a man cannot make him laugh; but that's no marvel, he drinks no wine. There's never none of these demure boys come to my ---- for thin drink doth so overcome their ---- and making many fish-meals, that they ---- I into a kind of state of insensibility; and then, when they marry, they get themselves they are generally fools and covetous; which kind of us should be too, but for insensibility. I need shorten with a two-fold operation. It spends me into the brain: then, when they are the foolish and dull and covetous, which cannot do nothing but quarrel, they are full of sin, the sin of quarrel, and the sin of covetousness.





Fondly brought here and foolishly sent hence.  
Stakes up our drums, pursue the scatter'd stray:  
God, and not we, hath safely fought to-day. 121  
Some guard these traitors to the block of death,  
Treason's true bed and yielder up of breath.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *Another part of the forest.*

*Alarm. Excursions. Enter FALSTAFF and COLEVILLE, meeting.*

*Fal.* What's your name, sir? of what condition are you, and of what place, I pray?

*Cole.* I am a knight, sir; and my name is Coleville of the dale.

*Fal.* Well, then, Coleville is your name, a knight is your degree, and your place the dale: (Coleville shall be still your name, a traitor your degree, and the dungeon your place, a place deep enough; so shall you be still Coleville of the dale.)

*Cole.* Are not you Sir John Falstaff?

*Fal.* As good a man as he, sir, when I am. Do ye yield, sir? or shall I sweat for you? If I do sweat, they are the drops of thy lovers, and they weep for thy death; therefore rouse up fear and trembling, and do observance to my mercy.

*Cole.* I think you are Sir John Falstaff, and in that thought yield me.

*Fal.* I have a whole school of tongues in this belly of mine, and not a tongue of them all speaks any other word but my name. An I had but a belly of any indifferency, I were simply the most active fellow in Europe: my womb, my womb, my womb, undoes me. Here comes our general.

*Enter PRINCE JOHN OF LANCASTER, WESTMORELAND, BLUNT, and others.*

*Lan.* The heat is past; follow no further now.

Call in the powers, good cousin Westmoreland.

*[Exit Westmoreland.]*  
Now, Falstaff, where have you been all this while?

When every thing is ended, then you come: 30  
These tardy tricks of yours will, on my life,  
One time or other break some gallows back.

*Fal.* I would be sorry, my lord, but it should be thus: I never knew yet but rebuke and check was the reward of valour. Do you think me a swallow, an arrow, or a bullet? have I, in my poor and old motion, the expedition of thought? I have speeded hither with the very extremest inch of possibility; I have foundered nine score and odd posts: and here, travel-tainted as I am, have in my pure and immaculate valour, taken Sir John Coleville of the dale, a most furious, bright and valorous enemy. But what of that? he saw me, and yielded: that I may justly say, with the bookish fellow of Borne, 'I came, saw, and overcame.'

*Lan.* It was more of his courtesy than your deservings.

*Fal.* I know not: have he in, and have I yield him: and I beseech your grace, let it be

looked with the rest of this day's deeds; or, by the Lord, I will have it in a particular ballad also, with mine own picture on the top on't. Coleville kissing my foot; to the which course if I be enforced, if you do not all show like gilt two-pences to me, and I in the clear sky of fame o'ershine you as much as the full moon doth the cinders of the element, which show like pins' heads to her, believe not the word of the noble: therefore let me have right, and let desert mount.

*Lan.* Thine's too heavy to mount.

*Fal.* Let it shine, then.

*Lan.* Thine's too thick to shine.

*Fal.* Let it do something, my good lord, that may do me good, and call it what you will.

*Lan.* Is thy name Coleville?

*Cole.* It is, my lord.

*Lan.* A famous rebel art thou, Coleville.

*Fal.* And a famous true subject took him.

*Cole.* I am, my lord, but as my betters are. That led me hither: had they been ruled by me, You should have won them dearer than you have.

*Fal.* I know not how they sold themselves; but thou, like a kind fellow, gavest thyself away gratis; and I thank thee for thee.

*Re-enter WESTMORELAND.*

*Lan.* Now, have you left pursuit?

*West.* Retreat is made and execution stay'd.

*Lan.* Send Coleville with his confederates To York, to present execution: 30  
Blunt, lead him hence; and see you guard him sure.

*[Exeunt Blunt and others with Coleville.]*  
And now dispatch we toward the court, my lords:

hear the king my father in sore sick;  
his news shall go before us to his majesty.  
Which, cousin, you shall hear to comfort him,  
And we with other speed will follow you.

*Fal.* My lord, I beseech you, give me leave to go  
through Gloucestershire: and, when you come to court,

Stand my good lord, pray, in your good report.

*Lan.* Give you well, Falstaff; I, in my condition,  
Shall better speak of you than you deserve.

*[Exeunt all but Falstaff.]*

*Fal.* I would you had but the wit: 'twere better than your discretion. Good faith, this same young ocher-blooded boy doth not love me; nor a man cannot make him laugh; but that's no marvel, he drinks no wine. There's never none of these demure boys come to my ---- for thin drink doth so overcome their ---- and making many fish-meals, that they ---- I into a kind of state of ---- and then, when they marry, they get ---- they are generally fools and covetous; ---- of us should be too, but for ---- I find short-necked with a two-fold operation: it ---- spends me into the brain: then they ---- the foolish and dull and heavy wits ---- cannot do this: it ---- negative fall of sin the ---- and ----

which, delivered o'er to the voice, the tongue, which is the birth, becomes excellent wit. The second property of your excellent sherris is, the warming of the blood; which, before cold and settled, left the liver white and pale, which is the badge of pusillanimity and cowardice; but the sherris warms it and makes it course from the inwards to the parts extreme: it illumineth the face, which as a beacon gives warning to all the rest of this little kingdom, man, to arm; and then the vital commoners and inland petty spirits muster me all to their captain, the heart, who, great and puffed up with this retinue, doth any deed of courage; and this valour comes of sherris. So that skill in the weapon is nothing without sack, for that sets it a-work; and learning a mere hoard of gold kept by a devil, till sack commences it and sets it in act and use. Hereof comes it that Prince Harry is valiant; for the cold blood he did naturally inherit of his father, he hath, like lean, sterile and bare land, manured, husbanded and tilled with excellent endeavour of drinking good and good store of fertile sherris, that he is become very hot and valiant. If I had a thousand sons, the first humane principle I would teach them should be, to forswear thin potations and to addict themselves to sack.

*Enter BARDOLPH.*

How now, Bardolph?

*Bard.* The army is discharged all and gone.

*Fal.* Let them go. I'll through Gloucestershire; and there will I visit Master Robert Shallow, esquire: I have him already tempering between my finger and my thumb, and shortly will I seal with him. Come away. *[Exit.]*

SCENE IV. *Westminster. The Jerusalem Chamber.*

*Enter the KING, the PRINCES THOMAS OF CLARENCE and HUMPHREY OF GLOUCESTER, WARWICK, and others.*

*King.* Now, lords, if God doth give successful end

To this debate that bleedeth at our doors,  
We will our youth lead on to higher fields  
And draw no swords but what are sanctified.  
Our navy is address'd, our power collected,  
Our substitutes in absence well invested,  
And every thing lies level to our wish:  
Only, we want a little personal strength;  
And pains us, till these rebels, now afoot,  
Come underneath the yoke of government. <sup>10</sup>

*War.* Both which we doubt not but your majesty shall soon enjoy.

*King.* Humphrey, my son of Gloucester, Where is the prince your brother?

*Glow.* I think he's gone to hunt, my lord, at Windsor.

*King.* And how accompanied?

*Glow.* I do not know, my lord.

*King.* Is not his brother, Thomas of Clarence, with him?

*Glow.* No, my good lord; he is in presence here.

*Clar.* What would my lord and father?

*King.* Nothing but well to thee, Thomas of Clarence.

How chance thou art not with the prince thy brother?

He loves thee, and thou dost neglect him, Thomas:

Thou hast a better place in his affection

Than all thy brothers: cherish it, my!

And noble offices thou mayst effect

Of mediation, after I am dead,

Between his greatness and thy other brethren:

Therefore omit him not; blunt not his love,

Nor lose the good advantage of his grace

By seeming cold or careless of his will;

For he is gracious, if he be observed: <sup>30</sup>

He hath a tear for pity and a hand

Open as day for melting charity:

Yet notwithstanding, being incensed, he's flint,

As humorous as winter and as sudden

As flaws congealed in the spring of day.

His temper, therefore, must be well observed:

Chide him for faults, and do it reverently,

When you perceive his blood inclined to mirth;

But, being moody, give him line and scope;

Till that his passions, like a whale on ground,

Confound themselves with working. Learn <sup>41</sup>

this, Thomas,

And thou shalt prove a shelter to thy friends,

A hoop of gold to bind thy brothers in,

That the united vessel of their blood,

Mingled with venom of suggestion—

As, force perforce, the age will pour it in—

Shall never leak, though it do work as strong

As acornitum or rash gunpowder.

*Clar.* I shall observe him with all care and

love.

*King.* Why art thou not at Windsor with

him, Thomas? <sup>50</sup>

*Clar.* He is not there to-day; he dines in

London.

*King.* And how accompanied? canst thou

tell that?

*Clar.* With Poins, and other his continual

followers.

*King.* Most subject is the fattest soil to

weeds;

And he, the noble image of my youth,

Is overspread with them: therefore my grief

Stretches itself beyond the hour of death:

The blood weeps from my heart when I do

shape

In forms imaginary the unguided days

And rotten times that you shall look upon <sup>60</sup>

When I am sleeping with my ancestors.

For when his headstrong riot hath no curb,

When rage and hot blood are his counsellors,

When means and lavish manners meet together,

O, with what wings shall his affections fly

Towards fronting peril and opposed decay!

*War.* My gracious lord, you look beyond

him quite:

The prince but studies his companions

Like a strange tongue, wherein, to gain the

language,

'Tis needful that the most immodest word <sup>70</sup>

Be look'd upon and learn'd; which once

attain'd,

Your highness knows, comes to no further use  
But to be known and hated. So, like gross  
terms,

The prince will in the perfectness of time  
Cast off his followers; and their memory  
Shall as a pattern or a measure live,  
By which his grace must mete the lives of  
others.

Turning past evils to advantages.

*King.* 'Tis seldom when the bee doth leave  
her comb  
In the dead carrion.

*Enter WESTMORELAND.*

Who's here? Westmoreland! So  
West. Health to my sovereign, and new  
happiness

Added to that that I am to deliver!  
Prince John your son doth kiss your grace's  
hand:

Mowbray, the Bishop Scroop, Hastings and all  
Are brought to the correction of your law;  
'There is not now a rebel's sword unsheathed,  
But Peace puts forth her olive every where.  
The manner how this action hath been borne  
Here at more leisure may your highness read,  
With every course in his particular.

*King.* O Westmoreland, thou art a summer  
bird,

Which ever in the haunch of winter sings  
The lifting up of day.

*Enter HARCOURT.*

Look, here's more news.

*Har.* From enemies heaven keep your  
majesty;

And, when they stand against you, may they  
fall

As those that I am come to tell you of!  
The Earl Northumberland and the Lord Bar-  
dolph,

With a great power of English and of Scots,  
Are by the sheriff of Yorkshire overthrown:  
The manner and true order of the fight  
This packet, please it you, contains at large.

*King.* And wherefore should these good  
news make me sick!

Will Fortune never come with both hands full,  
But write her fair words still in foulest letters!  
She either gives a stomach and no food;  
Such are the poor, in health; or else a feast  
And takes away the stomach; such are the rich,  
That have abundance and enjoy it not.

I should rejoice now at this happy news;  
And now my sight fails, and my brain is  
giddy:

O me! come near me; now I am much ill.

*Glou.* Comfort, your majesty!

*Clar.* O my royal father!

*West.* My sovereign lord, cheer up yourself,  
look up.

*War.* Be patient, princes; you do know,  
these fits

Are with his highness very ordinary.  
Stand from him, give him air; he'll straight be  
well.

*Clar.* No, no, he cannot long hold out these  
pangs;

The incessant care and labour of his mind  
Hath wrought the mure that should confine  
it in

So thin that life looks through and will break  
out.

*Glou.* The people fear me; for they do  
observe

Unfather'd heirs and loathly births of nature:  
The seasons change their manners, as the year  
Had found some months asleep and leap'd them  
over.

*Clar.* The river hath thrice flow'd, no ebb  
between;

And the old folk, time's doting chronicles,  
Say it did so a little time before

That our great-grandairs, Edward, sick'd and  
died.

*War.* Speak lower, princes, for the king re-  
covers.

*Glou.* This apoplexy will certain be his end.

*King.* I pray you, take me up, and bear me  
hence

Into some other chamber: softly, pray.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. Another chamber.

*The KING lying on a bed: CLARENCE,  
GLOUCESTER, WARWICK, and others in at-  
tendance.*

*King.* Let there be no noise made, my  
gentle friends;

Unless some dull and favourable hand  
Will whisper music to my weary spirit.

*War.* Call for the music in the other room.

*King.* Set me the crown upon my pillow  
here.

*Clar.* His eye is hollow, and he changes  
much.

*War.* Less noise, less noise!

*Enter PRINCE HENRY.*

*Prince.* Who saw the Duke of Clarence?

*Clar.* I am here, brother, full of heaviness.

*Prince.* How now! main within doors, and  
none abroad!

How doth the king?

*Glou.* Exceeding ill.

*Prince.* Heard he the good news yet?

Tell it him.

*Glou.* He alter'd much upon the hearing it.

*Prince.* If he be sick with joy, he'll recover  
without physic.

*War.* Not so much noise, my lords: sweet

prince, speak low;

The king your father is disposed to sleep.

*Clar.* Let us withdraw into the other room.

*War.* Will't please your grace to go along  
with us?

*Prince.* No; I will sit and watch here by the  
king.

[*Exeunt all but the Prince.*]

Why doth the crown lie there upon his pillow?

Being so troublesome a bedfellow!

O polish'd perturbation! golden care!

That keep'st the ports of slumber open wide

To many a watchful night! sleep with it now!

Yet not so sound and half so deeply sweet

As his whose brow with heavily blagg'd brows

Shooes out the watch of night. O majesty!

When thou dost pinch thy bearer, thou dost sit  
Like a rich armour worn in heat of day,  
That scalds with safety. By his gates of breath  
There lies a downy feather which stirs not :  
Did he expire, that light and weightless down  
Perforce must move. My gracious lord! my  
father!

This sleep is sound indeed : this is a sleep  
That from this golden rigol hath divorced  
So many English kings. Thy due from me  
Is tears and heavy sorrows of the blood,  
Which nature, love, and filial tenderness,  
Shall, O dear father, pay thee plenteously :  
My due from thee is this imperial crown,  
Which, as immediate from thy place and blood,  
Derives itself to me. Lo, here it sits,  
Which God shall guard : and put the world's  
whole strength

Into one giant arm, it shall not force  
This lineal honour from me : this from thee  
Will I to mine leave, as 'tis left to me. *[Exit.*  
*King.* Warwick! Gloucester! Clarence!

*Re-enter WARWICK, GLOUCESTER, CLARENCE,  
and the rest.*

*Clar.* Doth the king call?

*War.* What would your majesty? How fares  
your grace?

*King.* Why did you leave me here alone,  
my lords?

*Clar.* We left the prince my brother here,  
my liege,

Who undertook to sit and watch by you.

*King.* The Prince of Wales! Where is he?  
let me see him :

He is not here.

*War.* This door is open : he is gone this way.

*Glov.* He came not through the chamber  
where we stay'd.

*King.* Where is the crown? who took it  
from my pillow?

*War.* When we withdrew, my liege, we left  
it here.

*King.* The prince hath ta'en it hence : go,  
seek him out.

Is he so hasty that he doth suppose

My sleep my death?

Find him, my Lord of Warwick; chide him  
hither. *[Exit Warwick.*

This part of his conjoins with my disease,  
And helps to end me. See, sons, what things  
you are!

How quickly nature falls into revolt

When gold becomes her object!

For this the foolish over-careful fathers

Have broke their sleep with thoughts, their  
brains with care.

Their bones with industry;

For this they have engross'd and piled up

The common heaps of strange-acquired gold;

For this they have been thoughtful to invest

Their sons with arms and martial exercises :

When, like the bee, sucking from every flower

The virtuous sweets,

Our thighs pack'd with wax, our mouths with

poison.

We bring it to the hive, and, like the bee,

Are stung for our pains. This bitter taste

Yield his engrossments to the ending father. So

*Re-enter WARWICK.*

Now, where is he that will not stay so long  
Till his friend sickness hath determined me?

*War.* My lord, I found the  
next room,

Washing with kindly tears his gentle

With such a deep demeanour in great

That tyranny, which never quail'd but

Would, by beholding him, have wash'd

knife

With gentle eye-drops. He is coming hither.

*King.* But wherefore did he take away the

crown?

*Re-enter PRINCE HENRY.*

Lo, where he comes. Come hither to me,  
Harry.

Depart the chamber, leave us here alone.

*[Exit Warwick and the rest.*

*Prince.* I never thought to hear you speak  
again.

*King.* Thy wish was father, Harry, to that  
thought :

I stay too long by thee, I weary thee.

Dost thou so hunger for mine empty chair

That thou wilt needs invest thee with my  
honours

Before thy hour be ripe? O foolish youth!

Thou seek'st at the greatness that will overwhelm  
thee.

Stay but a little ; for my cloud of dignity  
Is held from falling with so weak a wind

That it will quickly drop : my day is dim.

Thou hast stolen that which after some few  
hours

Were thine without offence ; and at my death

Thou hast seal'd up my expectation :

Thy life did manifest thou lov'dst me not,

And thou wilt have me die assur'd of it.

Thou hidest a thousand daggers in thy  
thoughts,

Which thou hast whetted on thy stony heart,

To stab at half an hour of my life.

What! canst thou not forbear me half an hour?

Let all the tears that should bedew my cheeks

Be drops of balme to sanctify thy head :

Only compound me with forgotten dust ;

Give that which gave thee life unto the worms.

Pluck down my officers, break my decrees ;

For now a time is come to mock at foam :

Harry the Fifth is crown'd ; up, vanity!

Down, royal state! all you sage counsellors,  
hence!

And to the English court assemble now,

From every region, seas of idleness!

Now, neighbour confines, purge you of your  
scurf :

Have you a ruffian that will swear, drink, dance,

Revel the night, rob, murder, and commit

The oldest sins the newest kind of ways?

Be happy, he will trouble you no more ;

England shall give him office, I

For the fifth Harry from our'd license plucks  
The muzzle of restraint, and the wild dog  
Shall flesh his tooth on every innocent.

O my poor kingdom, sick with civil blows!  
When that my care could not withhold thy  
riots.

What wilt thou do when riot is thy care?  
O, thou wilt be a wilderness again.  
Peopled with wolves, thy old inhabitants!

Prince. O, pardon me, my liege! but for  
my tears,

The moist impediments unto my speech, 140  
I had forestall'd this dear and deep rebuke  
Ere you with grief had spoke and I had heard  
The course of it so far. There is your crown;  
And He that wears the crown immortally  
Long guard it yours! If I affect it more  
Than as your honour and as your renown,  
Let me no more from this obedience rise,  
Which my most inward true and dutiful spirit  
Teacheth, this prostrate and exterior bending.  
God witness with me, when I here came in, 150  
And found no course of breath within your  
majesty,

How cold it struck my heart! If I do feign,  
O, let me in my present wildness die  
And never live to show the incredulous world  
The noble change that I have purposed!  
Coming to look on you, thinking you dead,  
And dead almost, my liege, to think you were,  
I spake unto this crown as having sense,  
And thus upbraided it: 'The care on thee de-  
pending

Hath fed upon the body of my father; 160  
Therefore, thou best of gold art worst of gold:  
Other, less fine in carat, is more precious,  
Preserving life in medicine potable;  
But thou, most fine, most honour'd, most re-  
nown'd,

Hast eat thy bearer up.' Thus, my most royal  
liege,

Accusing it, I put it on my head,  
To try with it, as with an enemy  
That had before my face murder'd my father,  
The quarrel of a true inheritor.

But if it did infect my blood with joy, 170  
Or swell my thoughts to any strain of pride;  
If any rebel or vain spirit of mine  
Did with the least affection of a welcome  
Give entertainment to the might of it,  
Let God for ever keep it from my head  
And make me as the poorest vassal is  
That doth with awe and terror kneel to it!

King. O my son,  
God put it in thy mind to take it hence,  
That thou mightest win the more thy father's  
love, 180

Pleading so wisely in excuse of it!  
Come hither, Harry, sit thou by my bed;  
And hear, I think, the very latest counsel  
That ever I shall breathe. God knows, my son,  
By what by-paths and indirect crook'd ways  
I met this crown; and I myself know well  
How troublesome it sat upon my head.  
To thee it shall descend with better quiet,

For all the toil of these many years  
With me into the earth. It

But as an honour snatch'd with boisterous  
hand,

And I had many living to upbraid  
My gain of it by their assistances;  
Which daily grew to quarrel and to bloodshed,  
Wounding supposed peace: all these hold fears  
'thou see'st with peril I have answered;  
'or all my reign hath been but as a scene  
Acting that argument: and now my death  
Changes the mode; for what in me was pur-  
chased, 200

'alls upon thee in a more fairer sort;  
to thou the garland wear'st successively.  
Yet, though thou stand'st more sure than I  
could do,

'thou art not firm enough, since griefs are  
green;

And all my friends, which thou must make thy  
friends,

Have but their stings and teeth newly ta'en  
out;

By whose fell working I was first advanced  
And by whose power I well might lodge a fear

To be again displaced: which to avoid,  
cut them off; and had a purpose now, 210

To lead out many to the Holy Land,  
Least rest and lying still might make them look

Too near unto my state. Therefore, my Harry,  
Be it thy course to busy giddy minds

With foreign quarrels; that action, hence borne  
out,

May waste the memory of the former days.  
More would I, but my lungs are wasted so

That strength of speech is utterly denied me.  
How I came by the crown, O God forgive!

And grant it may with thee in true peace live!  
Prince. My gracious liege, 220

You won it, wore it, kept it, gave it me;  
Then plain and right must my possession be:

Against I with more than with a common pain  
'Gainst all the world will rightfully maintain.

Enter LORD JOHN OF LANCASTER.

King. Look, look, here comes my John of  
Lancaster.

Lon. Health, peace, and happiness to my  
royal father!

King. Thou bring'st me happiness and peace,  
son John;

But health, alack, with youthful wings is flown  
From this bare wither'd trunk: upon thy sight

My worldly business makes a period. 230  
Where is my Lord of Warwick?

Prince. My Lord of Warwick!

Re-enter WARWICK, and others.

King. Doth any name particular belong  
Unto the lodging where I first did swear?

War. 'Tis call'd Jerusalem, my noble lord.

King. Lend be to God! even there my life  
must end.

It hath been prophesied to me many years  
I should not die but in Jerusalem:

Which verily I accomplish this day. 240  
But that one be that chamber: there I will  
In that Jerusalem shall Henry die.

## ACT V.

SCENE I. Gloucestershire. SHALLOW's house.

*Enter SHALLOW, FAUSTAFF, BARDOLPH, and Page.**Shal.* By cock and pie, sir, you shall not away to-night. What, Davy, I say!*Fal.* You must excuse me, Master Robert Shallow.*Shal.* I will not excuse you; you shall not be excused; excuses shall not be admitted; there is no excuse shall serve; you shall not be excused. Why, Davy!*Enter DAVY.**Davy.* Here, sir.*Shal.* Davy, Davy, Davy, Davy, let me see, Davy; let me see, Davy; let me see: yea, marry, William cook, bid him come hither. Sir John, you shall not be excused.*Davy.* Marry, sir, thus; those precepts cannot be served; and, again, sir, shall we sow the headland with wheat?*Shal.* With red wheat, Davy. But for William cook: are there no young pigeons?*Davy.* Yes, sir. Here is now the smith's note for shoeing and plough-irons.*Shal.* Let it be cast and paid. Sir John, you shall not be excused.*Davy.* Now, sir, a new link to the bucket must needs be had; and, sir, do you mean to stop any of William's wages, about the sack he lost the other day at Hincley fair?*Shal.* A' shall answer it. Some pigeons, Davy, a couple of short-legged hens, a joint of mutton, and any pretty little tiny kickshaws, tell William cook.*Davy.* Doth the man of war stay all night, sir?*Shal.* Yea, Davy. I will use him well: a friend of the court is better than a penny in purse. Use his men well, Davy; for they are arrant knaves, and will backbite.*Davy.* No worse than they are backbitten, sir; for they have marvellous foul linen.*Shal.* Well conceited, Davy: about thy business, Davy.*Davy.* I beseech you, sir, to countenance William Visor of Woncot against Clement Freston of the hill.*Shal.* There is many complaints, Davy, against that Visor; that Visor is an arrant knave, on my knowledge.*Davy.* I grant your worship that he is a knave, sir; but yet, God forbid, sir, but a knave should have some countenance at his friend's request. An honest man, sir, is able to speak for himself, when a knave is not. I have served your worship truly, sir, this eight years; and if I cannot once or twice in a quarter bear out a knave against an honest man, I have but a very little credit with your worship. The knave is mine honest friend, sir; therefore, I beseech your worship, let him be countenanced.*Shal.* Go to; I say he shall have no wrong. Look upon Davy. *[Exit Davy.]* Where are you, Sir John? Come, come, come, off with

your boots. Give me your hand, Master Bardolph.

*Bard.* I am glad to see your worship.*Shal.* I thank thee with all my heart, kind Master Bardolph; and welcome, my tall fellow *[to the Page]*. Come, Sir John.*Fal.* I'll follow you, good Master Robert Shallow. *[Exit Shallow.]* Bardolph, look to our horses. *[Excunt Bardolph and Page.]* If I were sawed into quantities, I should make four dozen of such bearded hermits' staves as Master Shallow. It is a wonderful thing to see the semblable coherence of his men's spirits and his: they, by observing of him, do bear themselves like foolish justices; he, by conversing with them, is turned into a justice-like serving-man: their spirits are so married in conjunction with the participation of society that they flock together in consent, like so many wild-geese. If I had a suit to Master Shallow, I would humour his men with the imputation of being near their master: if to his men, I would curry with Master Shallow that no man could better command his servants. It is certain that either wise bearing or ignorant carriage is caught, as men take diseases, one of another: therefore let men take heed of their company. I will devise matter enough out of this Shallow to keep Prince Harry in continual laughter the wearing out of six fashions, which is four terms, or two actions, and a' shall laugh without intervallams. (1), it is much that a lie with a slight oath and a jest with a sad brow will do with a fellow that never had the ache in his shoulders! (2), you shall see him laugh till his face be like a wet cloak ill laid up!*Shal.* *[Within]* Sir John!*Fal.* I come, Master Shallow; I come. Master Shallow. *[Exit.]*

SCENE II. Westminster. The palace

*Enter WARWICK and the LORD CHIEF-JUSTICE, meeting.**War.* How now, my lord chief-justice! whither away?*Ch. Just.* How doth the king?*War.* Exceeding well; his cares are now all ended.*Ch. Just.* I hope, not dead.*War.* He's walk'd the way of nature; And to our purposes he lives no more.*Ch. Just.* I would his majesty had call'd me with him:

The service that I truly did his life

Hath left me open to all injuries.

*War.* Indeed I think the young king loves you not.*Ch. Just.* I know he doth not, and do arm myself.To welcome the condition of the time,  
Which cannot look more hideously upon me  
Than I have drawn it in my fantasy.*Enter LANCASTER, CLARENCE, GLOUCESTER, WESTMORELAND, and others.**War.* Here come the heavy legs of good Harry:

O that the living Harry had the temper  
Of him, the worst of these three gentlemen!  
How many nobles then should hold their places,  
That must strike sail to spirits of vile sort!

*Ch. Just.* O God, I fear all will be over-  
turn'd!

*Lan.* Good morrow, cousin Warwick, good  
morrow.

*Glow.* } Good morrow, cousin.  
*Clar.* }

*Lan.* We meet like men that had forgot to  
speak.

*War.* We do remember; but our argument  
Is all too heavy to admit much talk.

*Lan.* Well, peace be with him that hath  
made us heavy!

*Ch. Just.* Peace be with us, lest we be  
heavier!

*Glow.* O, good my lord, you have lost a friend  
indeed!

And I dare swear you borrow not that face  
Of seeming sorrow, it is sure your own.

*Lan.* Though no man be assured what grace  
to find,

You stand in coldest expectation:  
I am the sorrier; would 'twere otherwise.

*Clar.* Well, you must now speak Sir John  
Falstaff fair;

Which swims against your stream of quality.

*Ch. Just.* Sweet princes, what I did, I did  
in honour.

Led by the impartial conduct of my soul;

And never shall you see that I will beg  
ragged and forestall'd remission.

If truth and upright innocency fail me,

'Til to the king my master that is dead,  
And tell him who hath sent me after him.

*War.* Here comes the prince.

*Enter KING HENRY the Fifth, attended.*

*Ch. Just.* Good morrow; and God save your  
majesty!

*King.* This new and gorgeous garment, ma-  
jesty,

Is not so easy on me as you think.

Others, you mix your sadness with some fear:  
His is the English, not the Turkish court;

Of Amurath an Amurath succeeds,  
But Harry Harry. Yet be sad, good brothers,

By my faith, it very well becomes you: so  
Narrow so royally in you appears

That I will deeply put the fashion on  
And wear it in my heart: why then, be sad;

But entertain no more of it, good brothers,  
Than a joint burden laid upon us all.

Or me, by heaven, I bid you be assured,  
'Til be your father and your brother too;

Let me but bear your love, I'll bear your cares:  
Yet weep that Harry's dead; and so will I;

But Harry lives, that shall convert those tears  
By number into hours of happiness.

*Princes.* We hope no other from your ma-  
jesty.

*King.* You all look strangely on me; and  
you most;

You are, I think, assured I love you not.

*Ch. Just.* I am assured, if I be measured  
rightly,

Your majesty hath no just cause to hate me.

*King.* No!

How might a prince of my great hopes forget  
So great indignities you laid upon me!

What! rate, rebuke, and roughly send to prison  
The immediate heir of England! Was this easy!

May this be wash'd in Lethe, and forgotten!

*Ch. Just.* I then did use the person of your  
father;

The image of his power lay then in me:  
And, in the administration of his law,

While I was busy for the commonwealth,  
Your highness pleased to forget my place.

The majesty and power of law and justice,  
The image of the king whom I presented;

And struck me in my very seat of judgement:  
Whereon, as an offender to your father,

I gave bold way to my authority  
And did commit you. If the dead were ill,

Be you contented, wearing now the garland,  
To have a son set your decrees at naught,

To pluck down justice from your awful bench,  
To trip the course of law and blunt the sword

That guards the peace and safety of your person;  
Nay, more, to spurn at your most royal image

And mock your workings in a second body. go  
Question your royal thoughts, make the case  
yours:

Be now the father and propose a son,  
Hear your own dignity so much profaned,

See your most dreadful laws so loosely slighted,  
Behold yourself so by a son disdain'd;

And then imagine me taking your part  
And in your power soft silencing your son:

After this cold consideration, sentence me;  
And, as you are a king, speak in your state

What I have done that misbecame my place,  
My person, or my liege's sovereignty.

*King.* You are right, justice, and you weigh  
this well:

Therefore still bear the balance and the sword:  
And I do wish your honours may increase,

Till you do live to see a son of mine  
Offend you and obey you, as I did.

So shall I live to speak my father's words:  
'Happy am I, that have a man so bold,

That dares do justice on my proper son;  
And not less happy, having such a son,

That would deliver up his greatness so  
Into the hands of justice.' You did commit me;

For which, I do commit into your hand  
The unstained sword that you have used to

bear;

With this remembrance, that you use the same  
With the like bold, just and impartial spirit

As you have done against me. There is my  
hand.

You shall be as a father to my youth:  
My voice shall sound as you do pronounce me,

And I will stoop and humble my incline  
To your well-weighed wise direction.

And, princes all, believe me, I beseech you:  
My father is gone wild into his grave,

For in his tomb lie my affections;  
And with his spirit only I survive.

To mock the expectation of the world,  
To frustrate prophecies and to run out

Bottom opinion, who hath writ me down

After my seeming. The tide of blood in me  
Hath proudly flow'd in vanity till now : 130  
Now death is true and ebb back to the sea,  
Where it shall mingle with the state of floods  
And flow henceforth in formal majesty.  
Now call we our high court of parliament :  
And let us choose such limbs of noble counsel,  
That the great body of our state may go  
In equal rank with the best govern'd nation ;  
That war, or peace, or both at once, may be  
As things acquainted and familiar to us ;  
In which you, father, shall have foremost hand.  
Our coronation done, we will accite, 141  
As I before remember'd, all our state :  
And, God consigning to my good intent,  
No prince nor peer shall have just cause to say,  
God shorten Harry's happy life one day !

[Exeunt.]

SCENE III. Gloucestershire. SHALLOW'S  
orchard.

Enter FALSTAFF, SHALLOW, SILENCE, DAVY,  
RANDOLPH, and the Page.

Shal. Nay, you shall see my orchard, where,  
in an arbour, we will eat a last year's pippin  
of my own grafting, with a dish of caraways,  
and so forth : come, cousin Silence : and then  
to bed.

Fal. Fore God, you have here a goodly  
dwelling and a rich.

Shal. Barren, barren, barren ; beggars all,  
beggars all, Sir John : marry, good air. Spread,  
Davy ; spread, Davy : well said, Davy. 10

Fal. This Davy serves you for good uses ;  
he is your serving-man and your husband.

Shal. A good varlet, a good varlet, a very  
good varlet, Sir John : by the mass, I have  
drunk too much sack at supper : a good varlet.  
Now sit down, now sit down : come, cousin.

Sil. Ah, sirrah ! quoth-a, we shall  
Do nothing but eat, and make good cheer,  
[Singing.]

And praise God for the merry year ;  
When flesh is cheap and females dear, 20  
And lusty lads roam here and there  
So merrily,

And ever among so merrily.

Fal. There's a merry heart ! Good Master  
Silence, I'll give you a health for that moon.

Shal. Give Master Bardolph some wine,  
Davy.

Davy. Sweet sir, sir : I'll be with you anon ;  
most sweet sir, sir. Master page, good master  
page, sir. Proches ! What you want in meat,  
we'll have in drink : but you must bear ; the  
heart's all. [Exit.]

Shal. Be merry, Master Bardolph ; and, my  
little soldier there, be merry.

Sil. Be merry, be merry, my wife has all ;  
[Singing.]

For women are shrews, both short and tall ;  
Tis merry in hell when hells was all.

And welcome hussy Shallow's tide.  
Be merry, be merry.

Fal. I did not think Master Silence had  
been a mate of this mettle. 41

Sil. Who, I ! I have been merry twice and  
once ere now.

Re-enter DAVY.

Davy. There's a dish of leather-coats for you.  
[To Bardolph]

Shal. Davy !

Davy. Your worship ! I'll be with you  
straight [to Bardolph]. A cup of wine, sir !

Sil. A cup of wine that's brisk and fine,  
[Singing.]

And drink unto the leman mine ;

And a merry heart lives long'a. 30

Fal. Well said, Master Silence.

Sil. An we shall be merry, now comes in the  
sweet o' the night.

Fal. Health and long life to you, Master  
Silence.

Sil. Fill the cup, and let it come ; [Singing.]  
I'll pledge you a mile to the bottom.

Shal. Honest Bardolph, welcome : if thou  
wantest any thing, and wilt not call, bestir  
thy heart. Welcome, my little tiny thief [to  
the Page], and welcome indeed too. I'll drink  
to Master Bardolph, and to all the cavaliers  
about London.

Davy. I hope to see London once ere I die.

Bard. An I might see you there, Davy.—

Shal. By the mass, you'll crack a quart to-  
gether, ha ! will you not, Master Bardolph !

Fal. Yea, sir, in a pottle-pot.

Shal. By God's higness, I thank thee : the  
knave will stick by thee, I can assure thee that.  
A will not out ; he is true bred.

Bard. And I'll stick by him, sir.

Shal. Why, then, spoke a king. Look no-  
thing : be merry. [Knocking within.] Look  
who's at door there, ho ! who knocks !

[Exit Davy]

Fal. Why, now you have done me right.

[To Silence, seeing him take off a bumper.]  
Sil. Do me right, [Singing.]

And dub me knight :

Samingo.

Is't not so !

Fal. Tis so.

Sil. Is't not ! Why then, say an old man  
can do somewhat. 30

Re-enter DAVY.

Davy. An't please your worship, there's one  
Pistol come from the court with news.

Fal. From the court ! let him come in.

Enter PISTOL.

How now, Pistol !

Pist. Sir John, God save you !

Fal. What wind blow you hither, Pistol !

Pist. Not the ill wind which blows no man  
to good. Sweet knight, thou art now one of the  
greatest men in this realm.

Sil. My'r lady, I think a' be, but Goodman  
Puff of Barren.

Pist. Puff !

Puff in thy teeth, most reverent counsel !  
Sir John, I am thy Pistol and thy friend,  
And hereafter have London calls.  
And tidings do I bring and lucky joys 40



And golden times and happy news of price.

*Fal.* I pray thee now, deliver them like a man of this world.

*Pist.* A souter for the world and worldlings base!

I speak of Africa and golden joys.

*Fal.* O base Assyrian knight, what is thy news?

Let King Cophetua know the truth thereof.

*Sil.* And Robin Hood, Scarlet, and John.

*Pist.* Shall dunghill curs confront the Helicons?

And shall good news be baffled?

Then, Pistol, lay thy head in Furies' lap. 110

*Shal.* Honest gentleman, I know not your breeding.

*Pist.* Why then, lament therefore.

*Shal.* Give me pardon, sir: if, sir, you come with news from the court, I take it there's but two ways, either to utter them, or to conceal them. I am, sir, under the king, in some authority.

*Pist.* Under which king, Bosonian? speak, or die.

*Shal.* Under King Harry.

*Pist.* Harry the Fourth? or Fifth?

*Shal.* Harry the Fourth.

*Pist.* A souter for thine office! 121

Sir John, thy tender lambkin now is king;

Harry the Fifth's the man. I speak the truth:

When Pistol lies, do this; and fig me, like

The bragging Spaniard.

*Fal.* What is the old king dead?

*Pist.* As nail in door: the things I speak

are just.

*Fal.* Away, Bardolph! saddle my horse.

Master Robert Shallow, choose what office thou

wilt in the land, 'tis thine. Pistol, I will double-charge thee with dignities. 131

*Bard.* O joyful day!

would not take a knighthood for my fortune.

*Pist.* What! I do bring good news.

*Fal.* Carry Master Silence to bed. Master

Shallow, my Lord Shallow,—be what thou wilt;

I am fortune's steward—get on thy boots: we'll

ride all night. O suspect Pistol! Away, Bardolph!

[*Exit Bard.*] Come, Pistol, utter more to me;

and withal devise something to do thyself good.

Look, look, Master Shallow: I know the young

king is sick for me. Let us take any man's

horses; the laws of England are at my commandment.

Blessed are they that have been

my friends; and woe to my lord chief-justice!

*Pist.* Let vultures vile seize on his lungs

also!

'Where is the life that late I led?' say they;

Why, here it is; welcome these pleasant days!

[*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE IV. London. A street.

Enter Bardolph, dragging in HOSTES QUICKLY

and DOLL TRANKER.

*Host.* No, thou art not grave; I would to

God that I might die, that I might have thee

langed; thou hast drawn my shoulder out of

joint.

*First Bead.* The constables have delivered her over to me; and she shall have whipping-cheer enough, I warrant her: there hath been a man or two lately killed about her.

*Doll.* Nut-hook, nut-hook, you lie. Come; I'll tell thee what, thou damned tripe-legged rascal, an the child I now go with do niscarry, thou wert better thou hadst struck thy mother, thou paper-faced villain.

*Host.* O the Lord, that Sir John were come! he would make this a bloody day to somebody. But I pray God the fruit of her womb miscarry!

*First Bead.* If it do, you shall have a dozen of cushions again; you have but eleven now. Come, I charge you both go with me; for the man is dead that you and Pistol beat amongst you. 19

*Doll.* I'll tell you what, you thin man in a censer, I will have you as soundly swung for this,—you blue-bottle rogue, you filthy furnished correctioner, if you be not swung, I'll forswear half-kirtles.

*First Bead.* Come, come, you she knight-errant, come.

*Host.* O God, that right should thus overcome might! Well, of surffiance comes ease.

*Doll.* Come, you rogue, come; bring me to a justice. 30

*Host.* Ay, come, you starved blood-hound.

*Doll.* Goodman death, goodman bones!

*Host.* Thou stony, thou!

*Doll.* Come, you thin thing; come, you rascal.

*First Bead.* Very well. [*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE V. A public place near Westminster Abbey.

Enter two Grooms, strewing rushes.

*First Groom.* More rushes, more rushes.

*Sec. Groom.* The trumpets have sounded twice.

*First Groom.* 'Twill be two o'clock ere they come from the coronation: dispatch, dispatch. [*Exeunt.*]

#### Enter FALSTAFF, SHALLOW, PISTOL, BARDOLPH, and PAGE.

*Fal.* Stand here by me, Master Robert Shallow; I will make the king do you grace;

I will lean upon him as 't' comes by; and so but mark the countenance that he will give me.

*Pist.* God bless thy lungs, good knight.

*Fal.* Come here, Pistol; stand behind me! O, if I had had time to have made new!

I would have bestowed the thousand I borrowed of you. But 'tis no matter; this show doth better: this doth infer the suit

to see him.

*Shal.* It doth so.

*Fal.* It shows my earnestness of affection.

*Shal.* It doth so.

*Fal.* My devotion.

*Shal.* It doth, it doth, it doth.

*Fal.* As it were, to ride day and night; and not to deliberate, not to remember, not to have patience to chide me.

*Shal.* It is best, certain.

*Fal.* But to stand stained with travel, and sweating with desire to see him; thinking of nothing else, putting all affairs else in oblivion, as if there were nothing else to be done but to see him.

*Pist.* 'Tis 'semper idem,' for 'obsque hoc nihil est': 'his all in every part.

*Shal.* 'Tis so, indeed.

*Pist.* My knight, I will inflame thy noble liver,

And make thee rage.

Thy Doll, and Helen of thy noble thoughts,

Is in base durance and contagious prison;

Haled thither

By most mechanical and dirty hand:

Rouse up revenge from ebon den with fell

Alecto's snake.

For Doll is in. Pistol speaks nought but truth.

*Fal.* I will deliver her.

[*Shouts within, and the trumpets sound.*

*Pist.* There roard's the sea, and trumpet-clangor sounds.

*Enter the KING and his train, the LORD*

*CHIEF-JUSTICE among them.*

*Fal.* God save thy grace, King Hal! my royal Hal!

*Pist.* The heavens thee guard and keep, most royal imp of fame!

*Fal.* God save thee, my sweet boy!

*King.* My lord chief-justice, speak to that vain man.

*Ch. Just.* Have you your wits? know you what 'tis you speak?

*Fal.* My king! my Jove! I speak to thee, my heart!

*King.* I know thee not, old man: fall to thy prayers;

How ill white hairs become a fool and jester! I have long dream'd of such a kind of man,

So surfeit-swell'd, so old and so profane;

But, being awaked, I do despise my dream.

Make less thy body hence, and more thy grace;

Leave gormandizing; know the grave doth gape

For thee thrice wider than for other men.

Reply not to me with a fool-born jest:

Presume not that I am the thing I was;

For God doth know, so shall the world perceive,

That I have turn'd away my former self;

So will I those that kept me company.

When thou dost hear I am as I have been,

Approach me, and thou shalt be as thou wast,

The tator and the feeder of my riots:

Till then, I banish thee, on pain of death,

As I have done the rest of my misleaders,

Not to come near our person by ten mile.

For competence of life I will allow you,

That lack of means enforce you not to evil:

And, as we hear you do reform yourselves,

We will, according to your strengths and

qualities,

Give you advancement. Be it your charge, my

lord,

To see perform'd the tenour of our word.

Set on.

[*Exeunt King, &c.*

*Fal.* Master Shallow, I owe you a thousand

pounds.

*Shal.* Yea, marry, Sir John; which I beseech you to let me have home with me.

*Fal.* That can hardly be, Master Shallow. Do not you grieve at this; I shall be sent for in private to him: look you, he must seem thus to the world: fear not your advancements; I will be the man yet that shall make you great.

*Shal.* I cannot well perceive how, unless you should give me your doublet and stuff me out with straw. I beseech you, good Sir John, let me have five hundred of my thousand.

*Fal.* Sir, I will be as good as my word: this that you heard was but a colour.

*Shal.* A colour that I fear you will die in, Sir John.

*Fal.* Fear no colours: go with me to dinner. come, Lieutenant Pistol; come, Bardolph: I shall be sent for soon at night.

*Re-enter PRINCE JOHN, the LORD CHIEF-JUSTICE; Officers with them.*

*Ch. Just.* Go, carry Sir John Falstaff to the Fleet:

Take all his company along with him.

*Fal.* My lord, my lord,—

*Ch. Just.* I cannot now speak: I will bear you soon.

Take them away.

*Pist.* Si fortuna me tormenta, spero contenta. [*Exeunt all but Prince John and the Chief-Justice.*

*Lan.* I like this fair proceeding of the king's:

He hath intent his wonted followers

Shall all be very well provided for;

But all are banish'd till their conversations

Appear more wise and modest to the world.

*Ch. Just.* And so they are.

*Lan.* The king hath call'd his parliament, my lord.

*Ch. Just.* He hath.

*Lan.* I will lay odds that, ere this year expires,

We hear our civil swords and native fire

As far as France: I heard a bird so sing,

Whose music, to my thinking, pleased the king.

Come, will you hence? [*Exeunt.*

## EPILOGUE.

*Spoken by a Dancer.*

First my fear; then my courtesy; last my speech. My fear is, your displeasure; my courtesy, my duty; and my speech, to beg your pardons. If you look for a good speech now, you undo me: for what I have to say is of mine own making; and what indeed I should say will, I doubt, prove mine own marring. But to the purpose, and so to the venture. Be it known to you, as it is very well, I was lately here in the end of a displeasing play, to pray your patience for it and to promise you a better. I meant indeed to pay you with this; which, if I like an ill venture it come unluckily home, I break, and you, my gentle creditors, know. Here I promised you I would be and have I committed my body to your mercies: take me some and

I will pay you some and, as most debtors do, promise you infinitely.

If my tongue cannot entreat you to acquit me, will you command me to use my legs? and yet that were but light payment. *to dance out*

One word more, I beseech you. If you be not too much cloyed with fat meat, our humble author will continue the story, with Sir John in it, and make you merry with fair Katharine of France: where, for any thing I know, Falstaff shall die of a sweat, unless already a' be killed with your hard opinions; for Oldcastle died a martyr, and this is not the man. My tongue is weary; when my legs are too, I will bid you good night: and so kneel down before you; but, in the mean time, I will pray for the queen.

# THE LIFE OF KING HENRY THE FIFTH

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

KING HENRY the Fifth.  
DUKE OF GLOUCESTER, } brothers to the  
DUKE OF BEDFORD, } King.  
DUKE OF EXETER, uncle to the King.  
DUKE OF YORK, cousin to the King.  
EARLS OF SALISBURY, WESTMORELAND,  
and WARWICK.  
ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY.  
BISHOP OF ELY.  
EARL OF CAMBRIDGE.  
LORD SCROOP.  
SIR THOMAS GREY.  
SIR THOMAS ERPFINGHAM, GOWER, FLECELLEN,  
MACMORRIS, JANY, officers in  
King Henry's army.  
BATES, COURT, WILLIAMS, soldiers in the  
same.  
PISTOL, NYM, BARDOLPH.  
Boy.  
A Herald.

CHARLES the Sixth, King of France.

LEWIS, the Dauphin.  
DUKES OF BURGUNDY, ORLEANS, and  
BOURBON.  
The Constable of France.  
RAMBURES and GRANDPRÉ, French Lords,  
Governor of Harfleur.  
MONTJOY, a French Herald.  
Ambassadors to the King of England.

ISABEL, Queen of France.  
KATHARINE, daughter to Charles and  
Isabel.  
ALICE, a lady attending on her.  
Hostess of a tavern in Fastcheap, formerly  
Mistress Quickly, and now married to  
Pistol.

Lords, Ladies, Officers, Soldiers, Citizens, Mes-  
sengers, and Attendants.  
Chorus.

SCENE: *England; afterwards France.*

## PROLOGUE.

*Enter Chorus.*

*Chor.* O for a Muse of fire, that would ascend  
The brightest heaven of invention,  
A kingdom for a stage, princes to act  
And monarchs to behold the swelling scene!  
Then should the warlike Harry, like himself,  
Assume the port of Mars; and at his heels,  
Leash'd in like hounds, should famine, sword  
and fire

Crouch for employment. But pardon, gentles  
all,

The flat unraised spirits that have dared  
On this unworthy scaffold to bring forth  
So great an object: can this cockpit hold  
The vasty fields of France? or may we cram  
Within this wooden O the very casques  
That did affright the air at Agincourt?  
O, pardon! since a crooked figure may  
Atone in little place a million;  
And let us, ciphers to this great account,  
On your imaginary forces work.  
Suppose within the girdle of these walls  
Are now confined two mighty monarchies,  
Whose high-pitched voices and abutting fronts  
The purpled narrow ocean parts asunder:

Piece out our imperfections with your thoughts;  
Into a thousand parts divide one man,  
And make imaginary poissiance;  
Think, when we talk of horses, that you see  
them  
Printing their proud hoofs i' the receiving earth:  
For 'tis your thoughts that now must deck our  
kings,  
Carry them here and there; jumping o'er times,  
Turning the accomplishment of many years 30  
Into an hour-glass: for the which supply,  
Admit me Chorus to this history;  
Who prologue-like your humble patience pray,  
Gently to hear, kindly to judge, our play. *[Exit.]*

## ACT I.

SCENE I. *London. An ante-chamber in the  
King's palace.*

*Enter the ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY, and  
the BISHOP OF ELY.*

*Can.* My lord, I'll tell you; that self bill  
is urged,  
Which in the eleventh year of the last king's  
25th  
W. , and had indeed against us pass'd.

But that the scrambling and unquiet time  
Did push it out of farther question.

*Ely.* But how, my lord, shall we resist it now!

*Cam.* It must be thought on. If it pass against us,

We lose the better half of our possession:  
For all the temporal lands which men devout  
By testament have given to the church 10  
Would they strip from us: being valued thus;  
As much as would maintain, to the king's honour,

Full fifteen earls and fifteen hundred knights,  
Six thousand and two hundred good esquires;  
And, to relief of lazars and weak age,

A thousand pounds by the year: thus runs the bill.

*Ely.* This would drink deep.

*Cam.* 'Twould drink the cup and all. 20

*Ely.* But what prevention!

*Cam.* The king is full of grace and fair regard.

*Ely.* And a true lover of the holy church.

*Cam.* The courses of his youth promised it not.

The breath no sooner left his father's body,  
But that his wildness, mortified in him,  
Seem'd to die too; yea, at that very moment  
Consideration, like an angel, came  
And whipp'd the offending Adam out of him,  
Leaving his body as a paradise. 30

To envelope and contain celestial spirits.  
Never was such a sudden scholar made;  
Never came reformation in a flood,  
With such a heady currance, scouring faults;  
Nor never Hydra-headed wilfulness  
So soon did lose his seat and all at once  
As in this king.

*Ely.* We are blessed in the change.

*Cam.* Hear him but reason in divinity,  
And all-admiring with an inward wish

You would desire the king were made a prelate:  
Hear him debate of commonwealth affairs, 40

You would say it hath been all in all his study:  
List his discourse of war, and you shall hear

A fearful battle render'd you in music:  
Turn him to any cause of policy,

The guardian knot of it he will unloose,  
Familiar as his garter: that, when he speaks,

The air, a charter'd libertine, is still,  
And the mute wonder lurketh in men's ears,

To steal his sweet and honey'd sentences; 50  
So that the art and practice part of life  
Must be the mistress to this theorist:

Which is a wonder how his grace should glean it,

Since his addiction was to courses vain,  
His companies unletter'd, rude and shallow,

His hours fill'd up with riots, banquets, sports,  
And never noted in him any study,

Any retirement, any sequester'd life,  
From open haunts and popularity.

*Ely.* The strawberry grows underneath the nettle

And which comes bristled thistle and ripen time

Neighbour'd by fruit of baser quality:

And so the prince obscured his contemplation  
Under the veil of madness; which, no doubt,  
Grew like the summer grass, fastest by night,  
Unseen, yet crevice in his faculty.

*Cam.* It must be so; for miracles are ceased;  
And therefore we must needs admit the means  
How things are perfected.

*Ely.* But, my good lord,  
How now for mitigation of this bill  
Urged by the commons? Doth his majesty  
Incline to it, or no? 70

*Cam.* He seems indifferent,  
Or rather swaying more upon our part

Than cherishing the exhibitors against us;  
For I have made an offer to his majesty,

Upon our spiritual convocation  
And in regard of causes now in hand,

Which I have open'd to his grace at large,  
As touching France, to give a greater sum

Than ever at one time the clergy yet 80  
Did to his predecessors part withal.

*Ely.* How did this offer seem received, my lord?

*Cam.* With good acceptance of his majesty;  
Save that there was not time enough to hear,

As I perceived his grace would fain have done,  
The severals and unhidden passages

Of his true titles to some certain dukedoms  
And generally to the crown and seat of France

Derived from Edward, his great-grandfather.  
*Ely.* What was the impediment that broke

this off? 90

*Cam.* The French ambassador upon that instant

Craved audience; and the hour, I think, is come

To give him hearing: is it four o'clock?

*Ely.* It is.

*Cam.* Then go we in, to know his embassy;  
Which I could with a ready guess declare.

Before the Frenchman speak a word of it.  
*Ely.* I'll wait upon you, and I long to

hear it. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II. The same. The Presence chamber.

Enter KING HENRY, GLOUCESTER, 1

EXETER, WARWICK, WESTMORELAND, 2

Attendants.

*K. Hen.* Where is my gracious Lord of Canterbury?

*Exe.* Not here in presence.

*K. Hen.* Send for him, good uncle.

*West.* Shall we call in the ambassador, my liege?

*K. Hen.* Not yet, my cousin: we would be resolved,

Before we hear him, of some things of weight.  
That task our thoughts, concerning us and France.

Enter the ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY, and the BISHOP OF ELY.

*Cam.* God and his angels guard your sacred throne

And make you long become it!

*K. Hen.* Sure, we thank you.

My learned lord, we pray you to proceed  
And justly and religiously unfold  
Why the law Salique that they have in France  
Or should, or should not, bar us in our claim:  
And God forbid, my dear and faithful lord,  
That you should fashion, wrest, or bow your  
reading.

Or nicely charge your understanding soul  
With opening titles miscreant, whose right  
Suits not in native colours with the truth;  
For God doth know how many now in health  
Shall drop their blood in approbation  
Of what your reverence shall incite us to.  
Therefore take heed how you impawn our  
person,

How you awake our sleeping sword of war:  
We charge you, in the name of God, take heed;  
For never two such kingdoms did contend  
Without much fall of blood; whose guiltless  
drops

Are every one a woe, a sore complaint  
'Gainst him whose wrongs give edge unto the  
swords

That make such waste in brief mortality.  
Under this conjunction speak, my lord;  
For we will hear, note and believe in heart  
That what you speak is in your conscience  
wash'd

As pure as sin with baptism.

*Cent.* Then hear me, gracious sovereign, and  
you peers,

That owe yourselves, your lives and services  
To this imperial throne. There is no bar  
To make against your highness' claim to France  
But this, which they produce from Pharamond,  
'In terram Salicam mulieres ne succedant':  
'No woman shall succeed in Salique land';

Which Salique land the French unjustly glose  
To be the realm of France, and Pharamond  
The founder of this law and female bar.  
Yet their own authors faithfully affirm  
That the land Salique is in Germany,  
Between the floods of Sala and of Elbe;  
Where Charles the Great, having subdued the  
Saxons,

There left behind and settled certain French;  
Who, holding in disdain the German women  
For some dishonest manners of their life,  
Establish'd then this law: to wit, no female

Should be inheritrix in Salique land:  
Which Salique, as I said, 'twixt Elbe and Sala,

Is at this day in Germany call'd Meisen.  
Then doth it well appear the Salique law  
Was not devised for the realm of France;

Nor did the French possess the Salique land  
Until four hundred one and twenty years  
After defunction of King Pharamond,  
Idly supposed the founder of this law:

Who died within the year of our redemption 60  
Four hundred twenty-six; and Charles the  
Great

Subdued the Saxons, and did seat the French  
Along the river Sala, in the year

hundred five. Besides, their writers say,  
1. which deposed Childeric,  
2. general, being descended  
3. which was daughter to King

120

120

120

Make claim and title to the crown of France.

Hugh Capet also, who usurp'd the crown

Of Charles the duke of Lorraine, sold heir male  
Of the true line and stock of Charles the Great,

To find his title with some shows of truth,  
Though, in pure truth, it was corrupt and  
naught.

Convey'd himself as heir to the Lady Ingare,  
Daughter to Charlemain, who was the

To Lewis the emperor, and Lewis the son  
Of Charles the Great. Also King Lewis the  
Tenth,

Who was sole heir to the usurper Capet,  
Could not keep quiet in his conscience,

Wearing the crown of France, till satisfied  
That fair Queen Isabel, his grandmother,

Was lineal of the Lady Ermengare,  
Daughter to Charles the foresaid duke of  
Lorraine:

By the which marriage the line of Charles the  
Great

Was re-united to the crown of France.  
So that, as clear as is the summer's sun,

King Pepin's title and Hugh Capet's claim,  
King Lewis his satisfaction, all appear

To hold in right and title of the female:  
So do the kings of France unto this day:

Howbeit they would hold up this Salique law  
To bar your highness claiming from the female,

And rather choose to hide them in a net  
Than amply to imbar their crooked titles

Usurp'd from you and your progenitors.  
*K. Hen.* May I with right and conscience

make this claim?

*Cent.* The sin upon my head, dread sove-  
reign!

For in the book of Numbers it is writ,  
When the man dies, let the inheritance

Descend unto the daughter. Gracious lord,  
Stand for your own; unwind your bloody flag;

Look back into your mighty ancestors:  
Go, my dread lord, to your great-grandfire's  
tomb,

From whom you claim; invoke his warlike  
spirit,

And your great-uncle's, Edward the Black  
Prince.

Who on the French ground play'd a tragedy,  
Making defeat on the full power of France,

Whiles his most mighty father on a hill  
Stood smiling to behold his lion's whelp

Forge in blood of French nobility.  
(O noble English, that could entertain

With half their forces the full pride of France  
And let another half stand laughing by,  
All out of work and cold for action!

*Ely.* Awake remembrance of these valiant  
dead

And with your puissant arm renew their feats:  
You are their heir; you sit upon their throne;

The blood and courage that renews'd them  
Runs in your veins; and my three-puissant  
leg

Is in the very May-morn of his youth,

Kins for exploits and mighty enterprises.

*Ere.* Your brother kings and monarchs of  
the earth

Do all expect that you should renege yourself,

As did the former lions of your blood.

*West.* They know your grace hath cause and means and might;

So hath your highness; never king of England Had nobles richer and more loyal subjects, Whose hearts have left their bodies here in England

And lie pavilion'd in the fields of France.

*Cam.* O, let their bodies follow, my dear liege, 130

With blood and sword and fire to win your right:

In aid whereof we of the spirituality Will raise your highness such a mighty sum As never did the clergy at one time Bring in to any of your ancestors.

*K. Hen.* We must not only arm to invade the French,

But lay down our proportions to defend Against the Scot, who will make road upon us With all advantages.

*Cam.* They of those marches, gracious sovereign, 140

Shall be a wall sufficient to defend Our inland from the pilfering borderers.

*K. Hen.* We do not mean the couraging snatchers only,

But fear the main intendment of the Scot, Who hath been still a giddy neighbour to us;

For you shall read that my great-grandfather Never went with his forces into France

But that the Scot on his unfurnish'd kingdom Came pouring, like the tide into a breach,

With ample and brim fulness of his force, 150 Galling the gleamed land with hot assays,

Girding with grievous siege castles and towns; That England, being empty of defence,

Hath shook and trembled at the ill neighbour-hood.

*Cam.* She hath been then more fear'd than harm'd, my liege;

For hear her but exemplify herself:

When all her chivalry hath been in France And she a mourning widow of her nobles,

She hath herself not only well defended But taken and impounded as a stray 160

The King of Scots; whom she did send to France.

To fill King Edward's fame with prisoner kings And make her chronicle as rich with praise

As is the ooze and bottom of the sea With sunken wreck and sumless treasures.

*West.* But there's a saying very old and true,

If that you will France win, Then with Scotland first begin:

For once the eagle England being in prey, To her unguarded nest the weasel Scot 170

Comes sneaking and so sucks her princely eyes, Playing the mouse in absence of the cat,

To tear and havoc more than she can eat.

*Etc.* It follows then the cat must stay at home:

Yet that is but a crush'd necessity, Since we have locks to safeguard necessities,

And pretty traps to catch the petty thieves. While that the armed hand doth fight abroad,

The advised head defends itself at home;

For government, though high and low and lower, 180

Put into parts, doth keep in one consent, Congreering in a full and natural close,

Like music.

*Cam.* Therefore doth heaven divide The state of man in divers functions,

Setting endeavour in continual motion; To which is fixed, as an aim or butt,

Obedience: for so work the honey-bees, Creatures that by a rule in nature teach

The act of order to a peopled kingdom. They have a king and officers of sorts; 190

Where some, like magistrates, correct at home, Others, like merchants, venture trade abroad,

Others, like soldiers, armed in their stings, Make boot upon the summer's velvet buds,

Which pillage they with merry march bring home

To the tent-royal of their emperor; Who, busied in his majesty, surveys

The singing maçons building roofs of gold, The civil citizens kneading up the honey,

The poor mechanic porters crowding in Their heavy burdens at his narrow gate, 200

The sad-eyed justice, with his surly hum, Delivering o'er to executors pale

The lazy yawning drone. I this infer, That many things, having full reference

To one consent, may work contrariety: As many arrows, loosed several ways,

Come to one mark; as many ways meet in one town;

As many fresh streams meet in one salt sea; As many lines close in the dial's centre; 210

So may a thousand actions, once afout, End in one purpose, and be all well borne

Without defeat. Therefore to France, my liege, Divide your happy England into four;

Whereof take you one quarter into France, And you withal shall make all Gallia shake.

If we, with thrice such powers left at home, Cannot defend our own doors from the dog,

Let us be worried and our nation lose The name of hardiness and policy. 220

*K. Hen.* Call in the messengers sent from the Dauphin. [*Exeunt some Attendants.*]

Now are we well resolved; and, by God's help, And yours, the noble stewards of our power,

France being ours, we'll bend it to our awe, Or break it all to pieces; or there we'll sit,

Trailing in large and ample camp, O'er France and all her almost kingly dukes,

Or lay these bones in an unworthy urn, Tombless, with no remembrance over them;

Either our history shall with full mouth Speak freely of our acts, or else our grave,

Like Turkish mounds, shall have a tongueless mouth,

Not worshipp'd with a wazen epitaph.

*Enter Ambassadors of France.*

Now are we well prepared to know the pleasure Of our fair cousin Dauphin; for we have

Your greeting in from him, not from the King.

*First Amb.* May I please your majesty to give us leave

Freely to render what we have in charge;  
Or shall we sparingly show you far off  
The Dauphin's meaning and our embassy? 240

*K. Hen.* We are no tyrant, but a Christian king;

Unto whose grace our passion is as subject  
As are our wretches fetter'd in our prisons;

Therefore with frank and with uncurbed plain-  
ness

Tell us the Dauphin's mind.

*First Amb.* Thus, then, in few.

Your highness, lately sending into France,  
Did claim some certain dukedoms, in the right  
Of your great predecessor, King Edward the  
Third.

In answer of which claim, the prince our  
master

Says that you savour too much of your youth,  
And bids you be advised there's nought in  
France 251

That can be with a nimble galliard won;  
You cannot revel into dukedoms there.

He therefore sends you, meeter for your spirit,  
This tun of treasure; and, in lieu of this,

Desires you let the dukedoms that you claim  
Hear no more of you. This the Dauphin speaks.

*K. Hen.* What treasure, uncle?

*Eze.* Tennis-balls, my liege.

*K. Hen.* We are glad the Dauphin is so  
pleasant with us;

His present and your pains we thank you for:  
When we have match'd our rackets to these  
balls, 261

We will, in France, by God's grace, play a set  
Shall strike his father's crown into the hazard.

Tell him he hath made a match with such a  
wrangler

That all the courts of France will be disturb'd  
With chaces. And we understand him well,

How he comes o'er us with our wilder days,  
Not measuring what use we made of them.

We never valued this poor seat of England;  
And therefore, living hence, did give ourselves

To barbarous license; as 'tis ever common 271  
That men are merriest when they are from  
home.

But tell the Dauphin I will keep my state,  
Be like a king and show my sail of greatness

When I do rouse me in my throne of France:  
For that I have laid by my majesty

And gladd'd like a man for working-days,  
But I will rise there with so full a glory

That I will dazzle all the eyes of France, 279  
Yea, strike the Dauphin blind to look on us.

And tell the pleasant prince this mock of his  
Hath turn'd his balls to gun-stones; and his  
goal 280

Shall stand ace charged for the wasteful venge-  
ance

That shall fly with them: for many a thousand  
widows

Shall this his mock mock out of their dear  
husbands;

Many mothers from their sons, mock castles  
down;

And some are yet unborn  
And shall have cause to curse the Dauphin's

And some are yet unborn  
And shall have cause to curse the Dauphin's

And some are yet unborn  
And shall have cause to curse the Dauphin's

And some are yet unborn  
And shall have cause to curse the Dauphin's

And some are yet unborn  
And shall have cause to curse the Dauphin's

And some are yet unborn  
And shall have cause to curse the Dauphin's

But this lies all within the will of (

To whom I do appeal; and in whose name 290

Tell you the Dauphin I am coming  
To venge me as I may and to put

My rightful hand in a well-hallow'd  
So get you hence in peace; and

Dauphin  
His jest will savour but of shallow wit,  
When thousands weep more than did laugh  
at it.

Convey them with safe conduct. Fare you  
well. [*Exeunt Ambassadors.*]

*Eze.* This was a merry message.

*K. Hen.* We hope to make the sender blush  
at it.

Therefore, my lords, omit no happy hour 300  
That may give furtherance to our expedition;

For we have now no thought in us but France,  
Save those to God, that run before our business.

Therefore let our proportions for these wars  
Be soon collected and all things thought upon

That may with reasonable swiftness add  
More feathers to our wings: for, God before,

We'll chide this Dauphin at his father's door.  
Therefore let every man now task his thought,

That this fair action may on foot be brought.  
[*Exeunt. Flourish.*]

## ACT II.

## PROLOGUE.

*Flourish. Enter Chorus.*

*Chor.* Now all the youth of England are on  
fire,

And silken dalliance in the wardrobe lies:  
Now thrive the armourers, and honour's thought

Reigns solely in the breast of every man:  
They sell the pasture now to buy the horse,

Following the mirror of all Christian kings,  
With winged heels, as English Mercuries.

For now sits Expectation in the air,  
And hides a sword from hilts unto the point

With crowns imperial, crowns and coronets, 10  
Promised to Harry and his followers.

The French, advised by good intelligence  
Of this most dreadful preparation,

Shake in their fear and with pale policy  
Seek to divert the English purposes.

O England! model to thy inward greatness,  
Like little body with a mighty heart,

What mightiest thou do, that honour would  
thee do,

Were all thy children kind and natural!  
But see thy faults! France hath in thee found  
out 20

A nest of hollow bosoms, which he fills  
With treacherous crowns; and three corrupted  
men,

One, Richard Earl of Cambridge, and the  
second,

Isopod of Marston, and the third,  
Jrey, knight of Northumberland,

— galls of France. — O galls indeed!  
Confirm'd conspirator with fearful France;

And by their hands this grace of kings must  
be,

If hell and hold their

hell and hold their

hell and hold their

hell and hold their

hell and hold their



Hee he take ship for France, and in Southampton.

Engage your patience on; and we'll digest  
The abuse of distance; force a play:  
The sum is paid; the traitors are agreed;  
The king is set from London; and the scene  
Is now transported, gentles, to Southampton;  
There is the playhouse now, there must you sit:  
And thence to France shall we convey you safe,  
And bring you back, charming the narrow seas  
To give you gentle pass; for, if we may,  
We'll not offend one stomach with our play. 40  
But, till the king come forth, and not till then,  
Unto Southampton do we shift our scene.

[Exit.

SCENE I. London. A street.

Enter Corporal Nym and Lieutenant  
BARDOLPH.

Bard. Well met, Corporal Nym.

Nym. Good morrow, Lieutenant Bardolph.

Bard. What, are Ancient Pistol and you  
friends yet?

Nym. For my part, I care not: I say little;  
but when time shall serve, there shall be smiles;  
but that shall be as it may. I dare not fight;  
but I will wink and hold out mine iron: it is  
a simple one; but what though! it will toast  
cheese, and it will endure cold as another man's  
sword will: and there's an end. 11

Bard. I will bestow a breakfast to make you  
friends; and we'll be all three sworn brothers  
to France: let it be so, good Corporal Nym.

Nym. Faith, I will live so long as I may,  
that's the certain of it; and when I cannot live  
any longer, I will do as I may: that is my rest,  
that is the rendezvous of it.

Bard. It is certain, corporal, that he is  
married to Nell Quickly; and certainly she did  
you wrong: for you were troth-plight to her. 22

Nym. I cannot tell: things must be as they  
may: men may sleep, and they may have their  
throats about them at that time; and some say  
knives have edges. It must be as it may:  
though patience be a tired mare, yet she will  
plod. There must be conclusions. Well, I  
cannot tell.

Enter PISTOL and Hostess.

Bard. Here comes Ancient Pistol and his  
wife: good corporal, be patient here. How now,  
mine host Pistol!

Pist. Here like, callst thou me host?  
Now, by this hand, I swear, I scorn the term;  
Nor shall my Nell keep lodgers.

Host. No, by my troth, not long; for we  
cannot lodge and board a dozen or fourteen  
gentlemen that live honestly by the prick of  
their needles; but it will be thought we keep  
a lewd house straight. [Nym and Pistol  
draw.] O well-a-day, lady, if he be not drawn  
now! we shall see villain, adultery and murder  
committed. 30

Bard. Good Lieutenant! good corporal! offer  
nothing here.

Nym. Fight.

Pist. Fight for thee, England dog! thou pick-  
ear'd cur of Iceland!

Host. Good Corporal Nym, show thy valour,  
and put up your sword.

Nym. Will you shog off? I would have you  
solus.

Pist. 'Solus' egreuous dog! O viper vile!  
The 'solus' in thy most mercurious face; 30  
The 'solus' in thy teeth, and in thy throat,  
And in thy hateful lungs, yea, in thy maw,  
erdy.

which is worse, within thy nasty mouth!  
I do retort the 'solus' in thy bowels;  
For I can take, and Pistol's cock is up,  
And flashing fire will follow.

Nym. I am not Barbason; you cannot con-  
jure me. I have an humour to knock you  
indifferently well. If you grow foul with me,  
Pistol, I will scour you with my rapier, as I  
may, in fair terms: if you would walk off, I  
would prick your guts a little, in good terms, as  
I may: and that's the humour of it.

Pist. O braggart vile and damned furious  
wight!

The grave doth gape, and doting death is near;  
Therefore exhaile.

Bard. Hear me, hear me what I say: he  
that strikes the first stroke, I'll run him up to  
the hills, as I am a soldier. [Draws.]

Pist. An oath of mickle might; and fury  
shall abate. 30

Give me thy fist, thy fore-foot to me give:  
Thy spirits are most tall.

Nym. I will cut thy throat, one time or  
other, in fair terms: that is the humour of it.

Pist. 'Couple a purge!'

That is the word. I thee defy again.

O sound of Cuck, thinkst thou my spouse  
to get!

No; to the spital go,  
And from the powdering-tub of infancy  
Fetch forth the lamar kite of Cressid's kind, 30  
Doll Tearsheet she by name, and her exposure:  
I have, and I will hold, the quondam Quickly  
For the only she; and—pauca, there's enough.  
Go to.

Enter the Boy.

Boy. Mine host Pistol, you must come to  
my master, and you, hostess: he is very sick,  
and would to bed. Good Bardolph, wash the  
face between his cheeks, and do the office of a  
warming-pan. Faith, he's very ill.

Bard. Away, you rogue!

Host. By my troth, he's  
pudding one of these  
his heart. Good husband, come. 30

[Exeunt Hostess and Boy.]  
Bard. Come shall I make you two friends?  
We must to France together: with this sword  
should we keep knives to cut one another's  
throats?

Pist. Let foods o'newell, and foods o'newell  
be it!

Nym. You'll pay me the slight shilling I  
am at present standing?

Pist. Here is the maw that pays.

*Nym.* That now I will have: that's the humour of it.

*Pist.* As manhood shall compound: push home. *[They draw.]*

*Bard.* By this sword, he that makes the first thrust, I'll kill him; by this sword, I will.

*Pist.* Sword is an oath, and oaths must have their course.

*Bard.* Corporal Nym, an thou wilt be friends, be friends: an thou wilt not, why, then, be enemies with me too. Prithce, put up.

*Nym.* I shall have my eight shillings I won of you at betting?

*Pist.* A noble shalt thou have, and present pay;

And liquor likewise will I give to thee, And friendship shall combine, and brotherhood:

I'll live by Nym, and Nym shall live by me; Is not this just? for I shall suttler be Unto the camp, and profits will accrue.

Give me thy hand.

*Nym.* I shall have my noble?

*Pist.* In cash most justly paid.

*Nym.* Well, then, that's the humour of't.

*Re-enter Hostess.*

*Host.* As ever you came of women, come in quickly to Sir John. Ah, poor heart! he is so shaken of a burning quotidian tertian, that it is most lamentable to behold. Sweet men, come to him.

*Nym.* The king hath run bad humours on the knight; that's the even of it.

*Pist.* Nym, thou hast spoke the right; His heart is fracted and corroborate.

*Nym.* The king is a good king; but it must be as it may; he passes some humours and careers.

*Pist.* Let us condole the knight; for, lamb-king, we will live.

SCENE II. Southampton. A council-chamber.

*Enter EXETER, BEDFORD, and WESTMORELAND.*

*Bed.* 'Fore God, his grace is bold, to trust these traitors.

*Exe.* They shall be apprehended by and by.

*West.* How smooth and even they do bear themselves!

As if allegiance in their bosoms sat, Crowned with faith and constant loyalty.

*Bed.* The king hath note of all that they intend.

By intercession which they dream not of.

*Exe.* Nay, but the man that was his bed-fellow,

Whom he hath dail'd and cloy'd with gracious favours,

That he should, for a foreign purse, so sell His sovereign's life to death and treachery.

*Trumpets sound. Enter KING HENRY, SCROOP, CAMBRIDGE, GREY, and Attendants.*

*K. Hen.* Now sit the wind fair, and we will aboard.

My Lord of Cambridge, and my kind Lord of Masham,

And you, my gentle knight, give me your thoughts:

Think you not that the powers we bear with us Will cut their passage through the force of France,

Doing the execution and the act For which we have in head assembled

*Scroop.* No doubt, my liege, if each man do his best.

*K. Hen.* I doubt not that; since we are well persuaded

We carry not a heart with us from hence That grows not in a fair consent with ours,

Nor leave not one behind that doth not wish Success and conquest to attend on us.

*Cam.* Never was monarch better fear'd and loved

Than is your majesty: there's not, I think, a subject

That sits in heart-grief and uneasiness Under the sweet shade of your government.

*Grey.* True: those that were your father's enemies

Have steep'd their galls in honey and do serve you

With hearts create of duty and of zeal.

*K. Hen.* We therefore have great cause of thankfulness;

And shall forget the office of our hand, Sooner than quitance of desert and merit

According to the weight and worthiness.

*Scroop.* So service shall with steeld sinews toil,

And labour shall refresh itself with hope, To do your grace incessant services.

*K. Hen.* We judge no less. Uncle of Exeter, Enlarge the man committed yesterday,

That rail'd against our person: we consider It was excess of wine that set him on;

And on his more advice we pardon him.

*Scroop.* That's mercy, but too much security: Let him be punish'd, sovereign, lest example

Breed, by his sufferance, more of such a kind.

*K. Hen.* O, let us yet be merciful.

*Cam.* So may your highness, and yet punish too.

*Grey.* Sir,

You show great mercy, if you give him life, so After the taste of much correction.

*K. Hen.* Alas, your too much love and care of me

Are heavy orisons 'gainst this poor wretch! If little faults, proceeding on distemper,

Shall not be wink'd at, how shall we stretch our eye

When capital crimes, chew'd, swallow'd and digested,

Appear before us? We'll yet enlarge that man, Though Cambridge, Scroop and Grey, in their

dear care And tender preservation of our person, Would have him punish'd. And now to our French causes:

Who are the late commissioners?

*Cam.* I one, my lord:

Your highness bids me ask for it to-day.

*Scroop.* So did you me, my liege.

*Grey.* And I, my royal sovereign.

*K. Hen.* Then, Richard Earl of Cambridge, there is yours;

There yours, Lord Scroop of Masham; and, sir knight,

Grey of Northumberland, this same is yours: read them; and know, I know your worthiness.

My Lord of Westmoreland, and uncle Exeter, We will aboard to night. Why, how now, gentlemen!

What see you in those papers that you lose So much complexion! Look ye, how they change!

Their cheeks are paper. Why, what read you there,

That hath so cowarded and chased your blood out of appearance!

*Cam.* I do confess my fault; And do submit me to your highness' mercy.

*Grey.* } To which we all appeal.

*Scroop.* }  
*K. Hen.* The mercy that was quick in us but late,

By your own counsel is suppress'd and kill'd: So you must not dare, for shame, to talk of mercy;

For your own reasons turn into your bosoms, As dogs upon their masters, worrying you.

See you, my princes and my noble peers, these English monsters! My Lord of Cambridge here,

You know how apt our love was to accord To furnish him with all appointments

belonging to his honour; and this man hath, for a few light crowns, lightly conspired,

And sworn unto the practices of France, To kill us here in Hampton: to the which

this knight, no less for bounty bound to us than Cambridge is, hath likewise sworn.

But, O, What shall I say to thee, Lord Scroop! thou cruel,

grateful, savage and inhuman creature!

How that didst bear the key of all my counsels, that knew'st the very bottom of my soul,

that almost mightst have coin'd me into gold, couldst thou have practised on me for thy use!

How it is possible, that foreign hire should out of thee extract one spark of evil

That might annoy my finger! 'tis so strange, That, though the truth of it stands off as gross

As black and white, my eye will scarcely see it. Treason and murder ever kept together,

As two yoke-devils sworn to either's purpose, Working so grossly in a natural cause,

That admiration did not hoop at them: But thou, against all proportion, didst bring in

Wonder to wait on treason and on murder: And

And

|| All other devils that suggest by treasons do botch and bungle up damnation

With patches, colours, and with forms being fetch'd

From glittering semblances of piety: But he that temper'd these bodies thus stand up,

have thee no instance why thou shouldst do treason,

Unless to dub thee with the name of traitor. 120 I that same demon that hath gull'd thee thus should with his lion gait walk the whole world,

He might return to vasty Tartar back, And tell the legions 'I can never win

A soul so easy as that Englishman's.' How hast thou with jealousy infected

the sweetness of affiance! Show men dutiful! Why, so didst thou: seem they grave and learned!

Why, so didst thou: come they of noble family! Why, so didst thou: seem they religious! 130

Why, so didst thou: or are they spare in diet, free from gross passion or of mirth or anger,

constant in spirit, not swerving with the blood, I amish'd and deck'd in modest complement,

Not working with the eye without the ear, And but in purged judgement trusting neither!

Such and so finely bolted didst thou seem: And thus thy fall hath left a kind of blot,

To mark the full-fraught man and best indued With some suspicion. I will weep for thee; 140

For this revolt of thine, methinks, is like Another fall of man. Their faults are open:

Arrest them to the answer of the law; And God acquit them of their practices!

*Exc.* I arrest thee of high treason, by the name of Richard Earl of Cambridge.

I arrest thee of high treason, by the name of Henry Lord Scroop of Masham.

I arrest thee of high treason, by the name of Thomas Grey, knight, of Northumberland. 150

*Scroop.* Our purposes God justly hath discovered;

And I repent my fault more than my death; Which I beseech your highness to forgive,

Although my body pay the price of it.

*Cam.* For me, the gold of France did not seduce:

Although I did admit it as a motive The sooner to effect what I intended:

But God be thanked for prevention; Which I in suffrance heartily will rejoice,

Beseeching God and you to pardon me. 160

*Grey.* Never did faithful subject more rejoice

At the discovery of most dangerous treason Than I do at this hour joy o'er myself,

Prevented from a damned enterprise: My fault, but not my body, pardon, sovereign.

*K. Hen.* God quit you in his mercy! Hear your sentences.

You have conspired against our royal person, Join'd with an enemy proclaim'd and from his coffers

Received the golden earnest of our death: Wherein you would have sold your king to slaughter,

His princes and his peers to servitude, His subjects to oppression and contempt,

And his whole kingdom into desolation. Touching our person seek we no revenge;

But we our kingdom's safety must so touch, Where ruin you have sought, that to us now

We do deliver you. Get you therefore hence: Four miserable wretches, to your death!

The taste whereof, God of his mercy give  
You patience to endure, and true repentance : so  
Of all your dear offences ! Bear them hence.

[*Exeunt Cambridge, Scroop and Grey, guarded.*]

Now, lords, for France ; the enterprise whereof  
Shall be to you, as us, like glorious.  
We doubt not of a fair and lucky war,  
Since God so graciously hath brought to light  
This dangerous treason lurking in our way  
To hinder our beginnings. We doubt not now  
But every rub is smoothened on our way.  
Then forth, dear countrymen : let us deliver  
Our puissance into the hand of God, 190  
Putting it straight in expedition.  
Cheerly to sea ; the signs of war advance :  
No king of England, if not king of France.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *London. Before a tavern.*

*Enter* PISTOL, Hostess, NYM, BARDOLPH,  
and Boy.

Host. Prithce, honey-sweet husband, let me  
bring thee to Staines.

Pist. No ; for my manly heart doth yearn.  
Bardolph, be blithe : Nym, rouse thy vaulting  
veins :

Boy, bristle thy courage up ; for Falstaff he  
is dead.

And we must yearn therefore.

Bord. Would I were with him, where-  
soever he is, either in heaven or in hell !

Host. Nay, sure, he's not in hell : he's in  
Arthur's bosom, if ever man went to Arthur's  
bosom. A' made a finer end and went away an  
it had been any christom child ; a' parted even  
just between twelve and one, even at the turn-  
ing o' the tide : for after I saw him fumble with  
the sheets and play with flowers and smile  
upon his fingers' ends, I knew there was but  
one way ; for his nose was as sharp as a pen,  
and a' babbled of green fields. 'How now,  
Sir John !' quoth I : 'what, man ! be o' good  
cheer. So a' cried out 'God, God, God !' three  
or four times. Now I, to comfort him, bid  
him a' should not think of God ; I hoped there  
was no need to trouble himself with any such  
thoughts yet. So a' bade me lay more clothes  
on his feet : I put my hand into the bed and  
felt them, and they were as cold as any stone ;  
then I felt to his knees, and they were as cold as  
any stone, and so upward and upward, and all  
was as cold as any stone.

Nym. They say he cried out of sack.

Host. Ay, that a' did.

Bord. And of women.

Host. Nay, that a' did not.

Bys. Yes, that a' did ; and said they were  
devils incarnate.

Host. A' could never abide carnation ; 'twas  
a colour he never liked.

A' said once, the devil would have him

Host. A' did in some sort, indeed, handle  
women ; but then he was rheumatic, and talked  
of the signs of Babylon.

Bys. Do you not remember, a' saw a fine

stick upon Bardolph's nose, and a' said it was a  
black soul burning in hell-fire !

Bord. Well, the fact is gone that maintained  
that fire : that's all the riches I got in his  
service.

Nym. Shall we ahog ? the king will be gone  
from Southampton.

Pist. Come, let's away. My love, give me  
thy lips.

Look to my chattels and my movables :

Let senses rule ; the word is 'Pitch and Pay.'

Trust none ;

For oaths are straws, men's faiths are water-  
cakes,

And hold-fast is the only dog, my duck :

Therefore, 'aveto be thy counsellor.

Go, clear thy crystals. Yoke-fellows in arms,

Let us to France ; like horse-leeches, my boys.

To suck, to suck, the very blood to suck !

Boy. And that's but unwholesome food,  
they say.

Pist. Touch her soft mouth, and roinch.

Bord. Farewell, hostess. [Kissing her]

Nym. I cannot kiss, that is the humour of

it ; but, adieu.

Pist. Let housewifery appear : keep close, I

thee command.

Host. Farewell ; adieu. [Exeunt.]

SCENE IV. *France. The KING's palace.*

*Flourish. Enter the FRENCH KING, the DUC  
PHIN, the DUKES OF BERRI and BRETAGNE,  
the CONSTABLE, and others.*

Fr. King. Thus comes the English with  
full power upon us ;

And more than carefully it us concerns

To answer royally in our defence.

Therefore the Dukes of Berri and of Bretagne,

Of Brabant and of Orleans, shall make forth,

And you, Prince Dauphin, with all swift dis-  
patch,

To line and new repair our towns of war

With men of courage and with means de-  
fendant ;

For England his approaches makes as fierce

As waters to the sucking of a gulf.

It fits us then to be as provident

As fear may teach us out of late examples

Left by the fatal and neglected English

Upon our fields.

Dau. My most redoubted father,

It is most meet we arm us 'gainst the foe ;

For peace itself should not so dull a kingdom.

Though war nor no known quarrel were in

question,

But that defence, masters, preparations,

Should be maintain'd, assembled and collected,

As were a war in expectation.

Therefore, I say 'tis meet we all go forth

To view the sick and feeble parts of France :

And let us do it with no show of fear ;

No, with no more than if we heard that England

Were busied with a Whitsun merriment :

For, my good boys, she is so fully bent

Her scepter so industriously borne

By a vain, giddy, shallow, unconstant youth,

That fear offendeth her not.

*Con.* O peace, Prince Dauphin!  
 You are too much mistaken in this king:  
 Question your grace the late ambassadors,  
 With what great state he heard their embassy,  
 How well supplied with noble counsellors,  
 How modest in exception, and withal  
 How terrible in constant resolution,  
 And you shall find his vanities forespent  
 Were but the outside of the Roman Brutus,  
 Covering discretion with a coat of folly;  
 As gardeners do with ordure hide those roots  
 That shall first spring and be most delicate. 40

*Das.* Well, 'tis not so, my lord high constable;  
 But though we think it so, it is no matter:  
 In cases of defence 'tis best to weigh  
 The enemy more mighty than he seems:  
 So the proportions of defence are fill'd;  
 Which of a weak and niggardly projection  
 Doth, like a miser, spoil his coat with scanting  
 A little cloth.

*Fr. King.* Think we King Harry strong;  
 And, princes, look you strongly arm to meet  
 him.

The kindred of him hath been flesh'd upon us;  
 And he is bred out of that bloody strain 51  
 That haunted us in our familiar paths:  
 Witness our too much memorable shame  
 When Cressy battle fatally was struck,  
 And all our princes captived by the hand  
 Of that black name, Edward, Black Prince of  
 Wales;

Whiles that his mountain air, on mountain  
 standing,  
 Up in the air, crown'd with the golden sun,  
 Saw his heroic seed, and smiled to see him,  
 Mangle the work of nature and deface 60  
 The patterns that by God and by French  
 fathers

Had twenty years been made. This is a stem  
 Of that victorious stock; and let us fear  
 The native mightiness and fate of him.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Ambassadors from Harry King of  
 England

Do crave admittance to your majesty.

*Fr. King.* We'll give them present audience.  
 Go, and bring them.

*[Errant Messenger and certain Lords.]*

You see this chase is hotly follow'd, friends.

*Das.* Turn head, and stop pursuit; for  
 coward dogs

Most spend their mouths when what they seem  
 to threaten 70

Runs far before them. Good my sovereign,  
 Take up the English short, and let them know

Of what a monarchy you are the head:

Self-love, my liege, is not so vile a sin  
 As self-neglecting.

*Re-enter Lords, with EXETER and train.*

*Fr. King.* From our brother England!

*Ex.* From him; and thus he greets your  
 majesty.

He wills you, in the name  
 That you divest yourself, and  
 The burrow'd glories that by

By law of nature and of nations, long 80  
 To him and to his heirs; namely, the crown  
 And all wide-stretched honours that pertain  
 By custom and the ordinance of times  
 Unto the crown of France. That you may  
 know

'Tis no sinister nor no awkward claim,  
 Pick'd from the worm-holes of long-vanish'd  
 days,

Nor from the dust of old oblivion raked,

He sends you this most memorable line,

In every branch truly demonstrative;

Willing you overlook this pedigree: 90

And when you find him evenly derived

From his most famed of famous ancestors,

Edward the Third, he bids you then resign

Your crown and kingdom, indirectly held

From him the native and true challenger.

*Fr. King.* Or else what follows?

*Ex.* Bloody constraint; for if you hide the

crown

Even in your hearts, there will he rake for it:

Therefore in fierce tempest is he coming,

In thunder and in earthquake, like a Jove, 100

That, if requiring fail, he will compel;

And bids you, in the bowels of the Lord,

Deliver up the crown, and to take mercy

On the poor souls for whom this hungry war

Opens his vasty jaws; and on your head

Turning the widows' tears, the orphans' cries,

The dead men's blood, the pining maidens'

groans,

For husbands, fathers and betrothed lovers,

That shall be swallow'd in this controversy.

This is his claim, his threatening, and my 110

message;

Unless the Dauphin be in presence here,

To whom expressly I bring greeting too.

*Fr. King.* For us, we will consider of this

further:

To-morrow shall you hear our full intent

Back to our brother England.

*Das.* For the Dauphin,

I stand here for him: what to him from

England?

*Ex.* Scorn and defiance; slight regard,

contempt,

And any thing that may not misbecome

The mighty sender, doth he prize you at.

Thus says my king: an if your father's

highness 120

Do not, in grant of all demands at large,

Sweeten the bitter mock you sent his majesty,

He'll call you to so hot an answer of it,

That caves and wombly vaultings of France

Shall chide your trespass and return your mock

In second accent of his ordinance.

*Das.* Say, if my father render fair return,

It is against my will; for I desire

Nothing but odds with England: to that end,

As matching to his youth and vanity, 130

I did present him with the Paris bulls.

*Ex.* He'll make your Paris Louvre chains

for it.

Were it the mistress-court of mighty Europe;

And, be assured, you'll find a difference

As we his subjects have in wonder found

Between the promise of his greater days.

And these he masters now: now he weighs  
time

Even to the utmost grain: that you shall read.  
In your own senses, if he stay in France.

*Fr. King.* To-morrow shall you know our  
mind at full.

*Exc.* Dispatch us with all speed, lest that  
our king

Come here himself to question our delay;  
For he is footed in this land already.

*Fr. King.* You shall be soon dispatch'd with  
fair conditions:

A night is but small breath and little pause  
To answer matters of this consequence.

[*Flourish. Excunt.*]

### ACT III

#### PROLOGUE.

*Enter Chorus.*

*Chor.* Thus with imagined wing our swift  
scene flies

In motion of no less celerity  
Than that of thought. Suppose that you have  
seen

The well-appointed king at Hampton pier  
Embark his royalty; and his brave fleet

With silken streamers the young Phœbus  
fanning:

Play with your fancies, and in them behold  
Upon the humpen tackle ship-boys climbing;

Hear the shrill whistle which doth order give  
To sounds confused: behold the threaten'd sails,

Borne with the invisible and creeping wind,  
Draw the huge bottoms through the furrow'd  
sea,

Breasting the lofty surge: O, do but think  
You stand upon the rivage and behold

A city on the inconstant billows dancing:  
For so appears this fleet majestical.

Holding due course to Harfleur. Follow, follow:  
Grapple your minds to sterneage of this navy,

And leave your England, as dead midnight still,  
Guarded with granddaughters, babies and old women,

Either past or not arrived to pith and puissance;  
For who is he, whose chin is but enrich'd

With one appearing hair, that will not follow  
These snail'd and choice-drawn cavaliers to  
France?

Work, work your thoughts, and therein see  
\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_ see on their carriages,  
With fatal mouths gaping on girded Harfleur.

Suppose the ambassador from the French comes  
back;

Tells Henry that the king doth offer him  
Catherine his daughter, and with her, to dowry,

Some petty and unprofitable dukedoms.  
The offer likes not: and the nimble gunner

With blackstock now the devilish cannon touches.  
[*Alarm, and chambers go off.*]

And \_\_\_\_\_ all before them. Still he kind,  
And \_\_\_\_\_ our performance with your mind.

[*Exit.*]

#### SCENE I. France. Before Harfleur.

*Alarm.* Enter KING HENRY, EXETER,  
BEDFORD, GLOUCESTER, and Soldiers, with  
scaling-ladders.

*K. Hen.* Once more unto the breach, dear  
friends, once more;

Or close the wall up with our English dead.  
In peace there's nothing so becomes a man

As modest stillness and humility:  
But when the blast of war blows in our ears,

Then imitate the action of the tiger;  
Stiffen the sinews, summon up the blood,

Disguise fair nature with hard-favour'd rage;  
Then lend the eye a terrible aspect;

Let it pry through the portage of the head  
to  
Like the brass cannon; let the brow o'erwhelm  
it

As fearfully as doth a galled rock  
O'erhang and jutty his confounded base,

Swill'd with the wild and wasteful ocean.  
Now set the teeth and stretch the nostril wide,

Hold hard the breath and bend up every spirit  
To his full height. On, on, you noble English,

Whose blood is fet from fathers of war-proof!  
Fathers that, like so many Alexanders,

Have in these parts from morn till even fought  
And sheathed their swords for lack of argument:

Dishonour not your mothers; now attest  
That those whom you call'd fathers did beget  
you.

Be copy now to men of grosser blood,  
And teach them how to war. And you, good  
yeomen,

Whose limbs were made in England, show us  
here

The mettle of your pasture; let us swear  
That you are worth your breeding; which I  
doubt not;

For there is none of you so mean and base,  
That hath not noble lustre in your eyes.

I see you stand like greyhounds in the slips,  
Straining upon the start. The game's afoot:

Follow your spirit, and upon this charge  
Cry 'God for Harry, England, and Saint  
George!'

[*Excunt. Alarm, and chambers go off.*]

#### SCENE II. The same.

*Enter NYM, BARBOLPH, PISTOL, and Boy.*

*Bard.* On, on, on, on, on! to the breach, to  
the breach!

*Nym.* Pray thee, corporal, stay: the knocks  
are too hot; and, for mine own part, I have not  
a case of lives; the humour of it is too hot, that  
is the very plain-song of it.

*Pist.* The plain-song is most just; for  
humours do abound;

Knocks go and come; God's vassals drop and  
die;

And sword and shield,  
In bloody field

Doth win immortal fame.

*Boy.* Would I were  
I would give all my  
safety,

in London!

**Pist.** And I:

If wishes would prevail with me,  
My purpose should not fall with me,  
But thither would I hie.

**Boy.** As duly, but not as truly,  
As bird doth sing on bough. 20

*Enter FLUELLEN.*

**Mrs.** Up to the breach, you dogs! avaunt,  
you cullions! [*Driving them forward.*]

**Pist.** Be merciful, great duke, to men of  
mould.

Abate thy rage, abate thy manly rage,  
Abate thy rage, great duke!  
Good bawcock, bate thy rage; use lenity, sweet  
chuck!

**Nym.** These be good humours! your honour  
wins bad humours. [*Exeunt all but Boy.*]

**Boy.** As young as I am, I have observed  
these three swabbers. I am boy to them all  
three: but all they three, though they would  
serve me, could not be man to me; for indeed  
three such antics do not amount to a man.  
For Bardolph, he is white-livered and red-faced;  
by the means whereof a faces it out, but fights  
not. For Pistol, he hath a killing tongue and a  
quiet sword; by the means whereof a breaks  
words, and keeps whole weapons. For Nym,  
he hath heard that men of few words are the  
best men; and therefore he scorns to say his  
prayers, lest a' should be thought a coward:  
but his few bad words are matched with as few  
good deeds; for a never broke any man's head  
but his own, and that was against a post when  
he was drunk. They will steal any thing, and  
call it purchase. Bardolph stole a lute-case,  
bore it twelve leagues, and sold it for three  
half-pence. Nym and Bardolph are sworn  
brothers in flogging, and in Calais they stole  
a fire-shovel: I knew by that piece of service  
the men would carry coals. They would have  
me as familiar with men's pockets as their  
gloves or their handkerchers: which makes  
much against my manhood, if I should take  
from another's pocket to put into mine; for it  
is plain pecketing up of wrongs. I must leave  
them, and seek some better service: their villany  
goes against my weak stomach, and therefore I  
must cast it up. [*Exit.*]

*Re-enter FLUELLEN, GOWER following.*

**Gow.** Captain Fluellen, you must come pre-  
sently to the mines: the Duke of Gloucester  
would speak with you. 60

**Flu.** To the mines! tell you the duke, it is  
not so good to come to the mines; for, look  
you, the mines is not according to the disciplines  
of the war: the concavities of it is not sufficient;  
for, look you, th' adversary, you may discuss  
unto the duke, look you, is dig himself four  
yard under the converselines: by Cheshu, I  
think a' will plow up all, if there is not better  
directions.

**Gow.** The Duke of Gloucester, to whom  
the order of the siege is given, is altogether  
directed by an Irishman, a very valiant gentle-  
man, I faith.

**Flu.** It is Captain Macmorris, is it not?

**Gow.** I think it be.

**Flu.** By Cheshu, he is an ass, as in the  
world: I will verify as much in his beard: he  
has no more directions in the true disciplines  
of the wars, look you, of the Roman disciplines,  
than is a puppy-dog.

*Enter MACMORRIS and Captain JAMY.*

**Gow.** Here a' comes; and the Scots captain,  
Captain Jamy, with him. 80

**Flu.** Captain Jamy is a marvellous valorous  
gentleman, that is certain; and of great ex-  
pedition and knowledge in th' aunchient wars,  
upon my particular knowledge of his directions:  
by Cheshu, he will maintain his argument as  
well as any military man in the world, in the  
disciplines of the pristine wars of the Romans.

**Jamy.** I say gud-day, Captain Fluellen.

**Flu.** God-den to your worship, good Captain  
James. 90

**Gow.** How now, Captain Macmorris! have  
you quit the mines? have the pioneers given o'er?

**Mrs.** By Cheshu, la! tish ill done: the work  
ish give over, the trumpet sound the retreat.  
By my hand, I swear, and my father's soul, the  
work ish ill done; it ish give over: I would  
have blowed up the town, so Cheshu save me,  
la! in an hour: O, tish ill done, tish ill done;  
by my hand, tish ill done! 95

**Flu.** Captain Macmorris, I beseech you now,  
will you voutsafe me, look you, a few disputa-  
tions with you, as partly touching or concerning  
the disciplines of the war, the Roman wars, in  
the way of argument, look you, and friendly  
communication; partly to satisfy my opinion,  
and partly for the satisfaction, look you, of my  
mind, as touching the direction of the military  
discipline: that is the point.

**Jamy.** It shall be very gud, gud faith, gud  
captains both: and I shall quit you with gud  
leve, as I may pick occasion: that shall I, marry.

**Mac.** It is no time to discourse, so Cheshu  
save me: the day is hot, and the weather, and  
the wars, and the king, and the dukes: it is no  
time to discourse. The town is beseeched, and  
the trumpet call us to the breach; and we talk,  
and, be Cheshu, do nothing: 'tis shame for us  
all: so God sa' me, 'tis shame to stand still: it  
is shame, by my hand: and there is thanks to  
be cut, and works to be done; and there ish  
nothing done, so Cheshu sa' me, la! 105

**Jamy.** By the mees, are these eyes of mine  
take themselves to slumber, ay 't' de gud service,  
or ay 't' lig 't' the grund for it; ay, or go to death;  
and ay 't' pay 't' as valorously as I may, that shall  
I surely do: that is the truth and the real-  
Marry, I wad fall fain hear some question 'twixt  
you tway.

**Flu.** Captain Macmorris, I think, look you,  
under your correction, there is not many of  
your nation— 110

**Mac.** O, my nation! What ish my nation?  
Is a villain, and a bastard, and a knave, and a  
rascal—What ish my nation? Who talketh of my  
nation!

**Flu.** Look you, if you take the matter  
with them is meant, Captain Macmorris, I  
venture I shall think you do not use me!

that affability as in discretion you ought to use me, look you; being as good a man as yourself, both in the disciplines of war, and in the derivation of my birth, and in other particularities.

*Mac.* I do not know you so good a man as myself: so Christ save me, I will cut off your head.

*Gow.* Gentlemen both, you will mistake each other.

*Jamy.* Al! that's a foul fault.

[A parley sounded.

*Gow.* The town sounds a parley. 149

*Flu.* Captain Macmorris, when there is more better opportunity to be required, look you, I will be so bold as to tell you I know the disciplines of war; and there is an end. [Exeunt.

SCENE III. *The same. Before the gates. The Governor and some Citizens on the walls; the English forces below. Enter KING HENRY and his train.*

*K. Hen.* How yet resolves the governor of the town?

This is the latest parley we will admit: Therefore to our best mercy give yourselves; Or like to men proud of destruction Duty us to our worst: for, as I am a soldier, A name that in my thoughts becomes me best, If I begin the battery once again,

I will not leave the half-achieved Harfleur Till in her ashes she lie buried.

The gates of mercy shall be all shut up, 10 And the flesh'd soldier, rough and hard of heart,

In liberty of bloody hand shall range With conscience wide as hell, mowing like grass

Your fresh-fair virgins and your flowering infants.

What is it then to me, if impious war, Army'd in flames like to the prince of fiends, Do, with his smirch'd complexion, all fell feats Enlink'd to waste and desolation?

What is 't to me, when you yourselves are cause, If your pure maidens fall into the hand 20 Of hot and forcing violation?

What rein can hold licentious wickedness When down the hill he holds his fierce career? We may as bootless spend our vain command

Upon the enraged soldiers in their spoil As send precepts to the levathan

To come ashore. Therefore, you men of Harfleur,

Take pity of your town and of your people, Whiles yet his soldiers are in my command; Whiles yet the cool and temperate wind of

grace 30 O'erblows the filthy and contagious clouds Of heady murder, spoil and villany.

If not, why, in a moment look to see The blind and bloody soldier with foul hand Dulle the locks of your shrill-shrieking daughters;

Your fathers taken by the silver beards, And your most reverend heads dash'd to the

ground, as split upon pikes,

Whiles the mad mothers with their howls confused

Do break the clouds, as did the wives of Jewry At Herod's bloody-hunting slaughtermen. 41

What say you? will you yield, and this avoid, Or, guilty in defence, be thus destroy'd?

*Gow.* Our expectation hath this day an end: The Dauphin, whom of succours we entreated, Returns us that his powers are yet not ready To raise so great a siege. Therefore, great

king, We yield our town and lives to thy soft mercy. Enter our gates; dispose of us and ours;

For we no longer are defensible. 50

*K. Hen.* Open your gates. Come, uncle Exeter,

Go you and enter Harfleur; there remain, And fortify it strongly against the French: Use mercy to them all. For up, dear uncle,

The winter coming on and sickness growing Upon our soldiers, we will retire to Calais.

To-night in Harfleur will we be your guest; To-morrow for the march are we address'd.

[Flourish. The King and his train enter the town.

SCENE IV. *The French King's palace.*

*Enter KATHARINE and ALICE.*

*Kath.* Alice, tu as été en Angleterre, et tu parles bien le langage.

*Alice.* Un peu, madame.

*Kath.* Je te prie, m'enseigner; il faut que j'apprenne à parler. Comment appelez-vous la main en Anglois?

*Alice.* La main? elle est appelée de hand.

*Kath.* De hand. Et les doigts?

*Alice.* Les doigts? ma foi, j'oublie les doigts; mais je me souviendrai. Les doigts? je pense qu'ils sont appelées de fingers; oui, de fingers.

*Kath.* La main, de hand; les doigts, de fingers. Je pense que je suis le bon écolier; j'ai gagné deux mots d'Anglois vitelement. Comment appelez-vous les ongles?

*Alice.* Les ongles? nous les appelons de nails.

*Kath.* De nails. Écoutez; dites-moi, si je parle bien: de hand, de fingers, et de nails.

*Alice.* C'est bien dit, madame; il est fort bon Anglois. 50

*Kath.* Dites-moi l'Anglois pour le bras.

*Alice.* De arm, madame.

*Kath.* Et le coude?

*Alice.* De elbow.

*Kath.* De elbow. Je m'en fais la répétition de tous les mots que vous m'avez appris dès à présent.

*Alice.* Il est trop difficile, madame, comme je pense.

*Kath.* Excusez-moi, Alice; écoutez: de hand, de fingers, de nails, de arma, de bilbow. 51

*Alice.* De elbow, madame.

*Kath.* O Seigneur Dieu, je m'en oublie! de elbow. Comment appelez-vous le col?

*Alice.* De neck, madame.

*Kath.* De neck. Et le menton?

*Alice.* De chin.





There is an ancient Lieutenant there at the bridge, I think in my very conscience he is as valiant a man as Mark Antony; and he is a man of no estimation in the world; but I did see him do as gallant service.

*Gow.* What do you call him?

*Flu.* He is called Ancient Pistol.

*Gow.* I know him not.

*Enter PISTOL.*

*Flu.* Here is the man.

*Pist.* Captain, I thee beseech to do me favours:

The Duke of Exeter doth love thee well.

*Flu.* Ay, I praise God; and I have merited some love at his hands.

*Pist.* Bardolph, a soldier, firm and sound of heart,

And of buckram valour, hath, by cruel fate,

And giddy Fortune's furious fickle wheel,

That goddess blind,

That stands upon the rolling restless stone—

*Flu.* By your patience, Ancient Pistol, Fortune is painted blind, with a muffler afore her eyes, to signify to you that Fortune is blind; and she is painted also with a wheel, to signify to you, which is the moral of it, that she is turning, and inconstant, and mutability, and variation: and her foot, look you, is fixed upon a spherical stone, which rolls, and rolls, and rolls: in good truth, the poet makes a most excellent description of it: Fortune is an excellent moral.

*Pist.* Fortune is Bardolph's foe, and frowns on him;

For he hath stolen a pax, and hanged must 'a be:

A damned death!

Let gallows gaze for dog; let man go free

And let not hemp his wind-pipe advocate:

But Exeter hath given the doom of death

For pax of little price.

Therefore, go speak; the duke will hear thy voice;

And let not Bardolph's vital thread be cut

With edge of penny cord and vile reproach;

*Flu.* Speak, captain, for his life, and I will thee requite.

*Flu.* Ancient Pistol, I do partly understand your meaning.

*Pist.* Why then, rejoice therefore.

*Flu.* Certainly, ancient, it is not a thing to rejoice at: for if, look you, he were my brother, I would desire the duke to use his good pleasure, and put him to execution; for discipline ought to be used.

*Pist.* Die and be damn'd! and figo for thy ship!

*Flu.* It is well.

*Pist.* The first of Spain!

[Exit.

*Flu.* Very good.

*Gow.* Why, this is an arrant counterfeit sword; I remember him now; a bawd, a cat-

I'll assure you, 'a' uttered as pensive as at the bridge as you shall see in a campaign. But it is very well; what he has

spoke to me, that is well, I warrant you, when time is serve.

*Gow.* Why, 'tis a gull, a fool, a rogue, that now and then goes to the wars, to grace himself at his return into London under the form of a soldier. And such fellows are perfect in the great commanders' names: and they will learn you by rote where services were done; at such and such a scone, at such a breach, at such a convoy; who came off bravely, who was shot, who disgraced, what terms the enemy stood on; and this they can perfectly in the phrase of war, which they trick up with new-tuned oaths, and what a beard of the general's cut and a horrid suit of the camp will do among foaming bottles and ale-washed wits, is wonderful to be thought on. But you must learn to know such slanders of the age, or else you may be marvelously mistook.

*Flu.* I tell you what, Captain Gower; I do perceive he is not the man that he would gladly make show to the world he is: if I find a hole in his coat, I will tell him my mind. [Drum heard.] Hark you, the king is coming, and I must speak with him from the bridge.

*Drum and colours. Enter KING HENRY, GLOUCESTER, and Soldiers.*

God bless your majesty!

*K. Hen.* How now, Fluellen! camest thou from the bridge?

*Flu.* Ay, so please your majesty. The Duke of Exeter has very gallantly maintained the bridge: the French is gone off, look you; and there is gallant and most brave passages; marry, th' adversary was have possession of the bridge: but he is enforced to retire, and the Duke of Exeter is master of the bridge: I can tell your majesty, the duke is a brave man.

*K. Hen.* What men have you lost, Fluellen?

*Flu.* The perdition of th' adversary hath been very great, reasonable great: marry, for my part, I think the duke hath lost never a man, but one that is like to be executed for robbing a church, one Bardolph, if your majesty know the man: his face is all bubukles, and whelks, and knobs, and flames o' fire; and his lips blows at his nose, and it is like a coal of fire, sometimes plus and sometimes red; but his nose is executed, and his fire's out.

*K. Hen.* We would have all such offenders so cut off: and we give express charge, that in our marches through the country, there be nothing compelled from the villages, nothing taken but paid for, none of the French unbraided or abused in disdainful language; for when lenity and cruelty play for a kingdom, the gentler gamester is the soonest winner.

*Tucket. Enter MONTJOY.*

*Mont.* You know me by my habits.

*K. Hen.* Well then, I know thee; what shall I know of thee?

*Mont.* My master's mind.

*K. Hen.* Unfold it.

*Mont.* Thus says my king: Say thou to Harry of England—Through we passed dead.

we did but sleep: advantage is a better soldier than rashness. Tell him we could have rebuked him at Harfleur, but that we thought not good to bruise an injury till it were full ripe: now we speak upon our cue, and our voice is imperial: England shall repent his folly, see his weakness, and admire our sufferance. Bid him therefore consider of his ransom; which must proportion the losses we have borne, the subjects we have lost, the disgrace we have digested; which in weight to re-answer, his pettiness would bow under. For our losses, his exchequer is too poor; for the effusion of our blood, the muster of his kingdom too faint a number; and for our disgrace, his own person, kneeling at our feet, but a weak and worthless satisfaction. To this add defiance: and tell him, for conclusion, he hath betrayed his followers, whose condemnation is pronounced. So far my king and master; so much my office.

*K. Hen.* What is thy name? I know thy quality.

*Mont.* Montjoy.

*K. Hen.* Thou dost thy office fairly. Turn thee back.

And tell thy king I do not seek him now; but could be willing to march on to Calais: so Without impeachment: for, to say the sooth, Though 'tis no wisdom to confess so much Unto an enemy of craft and vantage, My people are with sickness much enfeebled, My numbers lessen'd, and those few I have Almost no better than so many French: Who when they were in health, I tell thee, herald,

I thought upon one pair of English legs Did march three Frenchmen. Yet, forgive me, God, 159

That I do brag thus! This your air of France Hath blown that vice in me; I must repent. Go therefore, tell thy master here I am; My ransom is this frail and worthless trunk, My army but a weak and sickly guard; Yet, God before, tell him we will come on, Though France himself and such another neighbour Stand in our way. There's for thy labour, Montjoy.

(Go, bid thy master well advise himself: If we may pass, we will; if we be hinder'd, We shall your tawny ground with your red blood 170

Discolour: and so, Montjoy, fare you well. The sum of all our answer is but this: We would not seek a battle, as we are; Nor, as we are, we say we will not shun it: So tell your master.

*Mont.* I shall deliver so. Thanks to your highness. [Exit.

*Clou.* I hope they will not come upon us now.

*K. Hen.* We are in God's hand, brother, not in theirs.

March to the bridge; it now draws toward night:

Beyond the river we'll encamp ourselves. 180

And on to-morrow bid them march away. [Exeunt.

SCENE VII. *The French camp, near Agincourt.*

*Enter the CONSTABLE OF FRANCE, the LORD RAMBURG, ORLEANS, DAUPHIN, with others.*

*Con.* Tut! I have the best armour of the world. Would it were day!

*Orl.* You have an excellent armour; but let my horse have his due.

*Con.* It is the best horse of Europe.

*Orl.* Will it never be morning?

*Dau.* My Lord of Orleans, and my lord high constable, you talk of horse and armour!

*Orl.* You are as well provided of both as any prince in the world. 10

*Dau.* What a long night is this! I will not change my horse with any that treads but on four pasterns. *Ca, ha!* he bounds from the earth, as if his entrails were hairs; le cheval volant, the Pegasus, chez les nuages de feu! When I bestride him, I soar, I am a hawk: he trots the air; the earth sings when he touches it; the basest horn of his hoof is more musical than the pipe of Hermes.

*Orl.* He's of the colour of the nutmeg. 20  
*Dau.* And of the heat of the ginger. It is a beast for Perseus: he is pure air and fire; and the dull elements of earth and water never appear in him, but only in patient stiffness while his rider mounts him: he is indeed a horse; and all other jades you may call heasts.

*Con.* Indeed, my lord, it is a most absolute and excellent horse.

*Dau.* It is the prince of palfreys; his neigh is like the bidding of a monarch and his countenance enforces homage. 31

*Orl.* No more, cousin.

*Dau.* Nay, the man hath no wit that cannot, from the rising of the lark to the lodging of the laub, vary deserved praise on my palfrey: it is a theme as fluent as the sea: turn the reins into eloquent tongues, and my horse is ment for them all: 'tis a subject for a score to reason on, and for a sovereign's sovereign to ride on; and for the world, familiar to us and unknown, to lay apart their particular fictions and wonder at him. I once writ a sonnet in his praise and began thus: 'Wonder of nature. —'

*Orl.* I have heard a sonnet begin so to one's mistress.

*Dau.* Then did they imitate that which I composed to my cousin, for my horse is my mistress.

*Orl.* Your mistress bears well.

*Dau.* Me well; which is the prettiest quality and perfection of a good and particularly mistress.

*Con.* Nay, for methought yesterday your mistress shrewdly shook your back.

*Dau.* So perhaps did yours.

*Con.* Mine was not bridled.

*Dau.* O then belies she was old and gentle; and you rode, like a barn of Ireland, your French horse off, and in your strut stream.

*Con.* You have good judgment in horse-manship. 40

*Dau.* Be warned by me, then: they that

ride so and ride not warily, fall into foul bogs. I had rather have my horse to my mistress.

Con. I had as lief have my mistress a jade.

Daw. I tell thee, constable, my mistress wears his own hair.

Con. I could make as true a boast as that, if I had a sow to my mistress.

Daw. 'Le chien est retourné à son propre vomissement, et la truie lavée au borbier': thou makest use of any thing.

Con. Yet do I not use my horse for my mistress, or any such proverb so little kin to the purpose.

Ram. My lord constable, the armour that I saw in your tent to-night, are those stars or suns upon it?

Con. Stars, my lord.

Daw. Some of them will fall to-morrow, I hope.

Con. And yet my sky shall not want.

Daw. That may be, for you hear a many superfluously, and 'twere more honour some were away.

Con. Even as your horse bears your praises; who would trot as well, were some of your brags dismounted.

Daw. Would I were able to load him with his desert! Will it never be day? I will trot to-morrow a mile, and my way shall be paved with English faces.

Con. I will not say so, for fear I should be faced out of my way; but I would it were morning; for I would fain be about the ears of the English.

Ram. Who will go to hazard with me for twenty prisoners?

Con. You must first go yourself to hazard, ere you have them.

Daw. 'Tis midnight; I'll go arm myself. *[Exit.]*

Orl. The Dauphin longs for morning.

Ram. He longs to eat the English.

Con. I think he will eat all he kills.

Orl. By the white hand of my lady, he's a gallant prince.

Con. Swear by her foot, that she may tread out the oath.

Orl. He is simply the most active gentleman of France.

Con. Doing is activity; and he will still be

He never did harm, that I heard of.

Con. Nor will do none to-morrow: he will keep that good name still.

Orl. I know him to be valiant.

Con. I was told that by one that knows him

— you.

Orl. 'Tis he? *[Enter Henry.]* he told me so himself; and he said he cared not who knew it.

Orl. He needs not; it is no hidden virtue in him.

Con. By my faith, sir, but it is; never any body saw it but his lackey: 'tis a hooded valour; and when it appears, it will late.

Orl. He will never said well.

Con. I will cap that proverb with 'There is safety in friendship.'

Orl. And I will take up that with 'Give the devil his due.'

Con. Well placed: there stands your friend for the devil: have at the very eye of that proverb with 'A pox of the devil.'

Orl. You are the better at proverbs, by how much 'A fool's bolt is soon shot.'

Con. You have shot over.

Orl. 'Tis not the first time you were overshot.

*Enter a Messenger.*

Mess. My lord high constable, the English lie within fifteen hundred paces of your tents.

Con. Who hath measured the ground?

Mess. The Lord Grandpré.

Con. A valiant and most expert gentleman. Would it were day! Alas, poor Harry of England! he longs not for the dawning as we do.

Orl. What a wretched and peevish fellow is this king of England, to mope with his fat-brained followers so far out of his knowledge!

Con. If the English had any apprehension, they would run away.

Orl. That they lack; for if their heads had any intellectual armour, they could never wear such heavy head-pieces.

Ram. That island of England breeds very valiant creatures; their mastiffs are of unmatchable courage.

Orl. Foolish curs, that run winking into the mouth of a Russian bear and have their heads crushed like rotten apples! You may as well say, that's a valiant flea that dare eat his breakfast on the lip of a lion.

Con. Just, just; and the men do sympathize with the mastiffs in robustious and rough coming on, leaving their wits with their wives; and then give them great meals of beef and iron and steel, they will eat like wolves and fight like devils.

Orl. Ay, but these English are shrewdly out of beef.

Con. Then shall we find to-morrow they have only stomachs to eat and none to fight. Now is it time to arm: come, shall we about it?

Orl. It is now two o'clock: but, let me see, by ten

We shall have each a hundred Englishmen. *[Exeunt.]*

## ACT IV.

### PROLOGUE.

#### *Enter Chorus.*

Chor. Now entertain conjecture of a time  
When creeping murmur and the pining dark  
Fills the wide vessel of the universe.  
From camp to camp through the foul womb of  
night

The hum of either army stilly sounds,  
That the fix'd sentinels almost receive,  
The secret whispers of each other's watch:

Piercing the night's dull ear; and from the tents

The armourers, accomplishing the knights,  
With busy hammers closing rivets up,  
Give dreadful note of preparation:  
The country cocks do crow, the clocks do toll,  
And the third hour of drowsy morning name.  
Proud of their numbers and secure in soul,  
The confident and over-justy French  
Do the low-rated English play at dice;  
And chide the cripple tardy-gaited night 20  
Who, like a foul and ugly witch, doth limp  
So tediously away. The poor condemned  
English,

Like sacrifices, by their watchful fires  
Sit patiently and inly ruminate  
The morning's danger, and their gesture sad  
Investing lank-lean cheeks and war-worn coats  
Presenteth them unto the gazing moon  
So many horrid ghosts. O now, who will  
behold

The royal captain of this ruin'd band  
Walking from watch to watch, from tent to tent,  
Let him cry 'Praise and glory on his head!' 30  
For forth he goes and visits all his host,  
Bids them good morrow with a modest smile  
And calls them brothers, friends and country-men.

Upon his royal face there is no note  
How dread an army hath enrounded him;  
Nor doth he dedicate one jot of colour  
Unto the weary and all-watched night,  
But freshly looks and over-bears attaint  
With cheerful semblance and sweet majesty;  
That every wretch, pining and pale before, 41  
Beholding him, plucks comfort from his looks.  
A largess universal like the sun  
His liberal eye doth give to every one,  
Thawing cold fear, that mean and gentle all  
Behold, as may unworthiness define,  
A little touch of Harry in the night.  
And so our scene must to the battle fly;  
Where—O for pity!—we shall much disgrace  
With four or five most vile and ragged foils, 50  
Right ill-disposed in brawl ridiculous,  
The name of Agincourt. Yet sit and see,  
Minding true things by what their mockeries be.

[Exit.]

SCENE I. *The English camp at Agincourt.*

Enter KING HENRY, BEDFORD, and GLOUCESTER.

K. Hen. Gloucester, 'tis true that we are  
great danger;  
The greater therefore should our courage be.  
Good morrow, brother Bedford. God Almighty  
There is some sort of madness in them still.

For our bad neighbour makes us early stirre  
Which is both healthful and good husbands.  
Besides, they are our outward consciences,  
And preachers to us all, admonishing  
That we should dress us fairly for our end.  
Thus may we gather honey from the weed,  
And make a moral of the devil himself.

Enter ERPINGHAM.

Good morrow, old Sir Thomas Erpingham:  
A good soft pillow for that good white head  
Were better than a churlish turf of France.

Erp. Not so, my liege: this lodging likes  
me better,

since I may say 'Now lie I like a king.'

K. Hen. 'Tis good for men to love their  
present pains

Upon example; so the spirit is eased:

And when the mind is quicken'd, out of doubt,

The organs, though defunct and dead before, 22

Break up their drowsy grave and newly move,

With casted slough and fresh legerity.

Lend me thy cloak, Sir Thomas. Brothers

both,

Commend me to the princes in our camp;

So my good morrow to them, and anon

Desire them all to my pavilion.

Glou. We shall, my liege.

Erp. Shall I attend your grace?

K. Hen. No, my good knight;

So with my brothers to my lords of England:

I and my bosom must debate a while, 31

And then I would no other company.

Erp. The Lord in heaven bless thee, noble

Harry! [Exeunt all but King.]

K. Hen. God-a-mercy, old heart! thou

speak'st cheerfully.

Enter PISTOL.

Pist. Qui va là!

K. Hen. A friend.

Pist. Discuss unto me: art thou officer?

Or art thou base, common and popular?

K. Hen. I am a gentleman of a company.

Pist. Traill'st thou the pulisment pike? 40

K. Hen. Even so. What are you?

Pist. As good a gentleman as the emperor.

K. Hen. Then you are a better than the

king.

Pist. The king's a hawcock, and a heart of  
gold.

A lad of life, an imp of fame;

Of parents good, of fist most valiant:

I kiss his dirty shoe, and from heart-string

I love the lovely bully. What is thy name?

K. Hen. Harry le Roy.

Pist. Le Roy! a Cornish name: art thou of

Cornish crew? 50

K. Hen. No, I am a Welshman.

Pist. Knew'st thou Fluellen?

K. Hen. Yes.

Pist. Tell him, I'll knock his look about his

pate

Upon Saint Davy's day.

K. Hen. Do not you wear your dagger in  
your cap that day, lest he knock that about  
your ears.

Pist. Art thou his friend?

K. Hen. And his kinsman too.

Pist. The dog for thee, then! 60

K. Hen. I thank you: God be with you!

K. Hen. I thank you: God be with you!

Pist. My name is Pistol call'd. [Exit.]

K. Hen. It sorts well with your swagger.



was before guilty of those impieties for the which they are now visited. Every subject's duty is the king's; but every subject's soul is his own. Therefore should every soldier in the wars do as every sick man in his bed, wash every mote out of his conscience; and dying so, death is to him advantage; or not dying, the time was blessedly lost wherein such preparation was gained; and in him that escapes, it were not sin to think that making God so free an offer, He let him outlive that day to see His greatness and to teach others how they should prepare.

*Will.* 'Tis certain, every man that dies ill, the ill upon his own head, the king is not to answer it.

*Bates.* I do not desire he should answer for me; and yet I determine to fight lustily for him.

*K. Hen.* I myself heard the king say he would not be ransomed.

*Will.* Ay, he said so, to make us fight cheerfully: but when our throats are cut, he may be ransomed, and we never the wiser.

*K. Hen.* If I live to see it, I will never trust his word after.

*Will.* You pay him then. That's a perilous shot out of an elder-gun, that a poor and a private displeasure can do against a monarch: you may as well go about to turn the sun to ice with fanning in his face with a peacock's feather. You'll never trust his word after! come, 'tis a foolish saying.

*K. Hen.* Your reproof is something too round: I should be angry with you, if the time were convenient.

*Will.* Let it be a quarrel between us, if you live.

*K. Hen.* I embrace it.

*Will.* How shall I know thee again?

*K. Hen.* Give me any gage of thine, and I will wear it in my bonnet: then, if ever thou darest acknowledge it, I will make it my quarrel.

*Will.* Here's my glove: give me another of thine.

*K. Hen.* There.

*Will.* This will I also wear in my cap: if ever thou come to me and say, after to-morrow, 'This is my glove,' by this hand, I will take thee a box on the ear.

*K. Hen.* If ever I live to see it, I will challenge it.

*Will.* Thou darest as well be hanged.

*K. Hen.* Well, I will do it, though I take thee in the king's company.

*Will.* Keep thy word: fare thee well.

*Bates.* Be friends, you English fools, be friends: we have French quarrels enow, if you could tell how to reckon.

*K. Hen.* Indeed, the French may lay twenty French crowns to one, they will beat us; for they bear them on their shoulders: but it is no English treason to cut French crowns, and to-morrow the king himself will be a clipper.

*(Exeunt Soldiers.)*

Upon the king! let us our lives, our souls,  
Our debts, our careful wives,

Our children and our sins lay on the king!  
We must bear all. O hard condition,  
Twin-born with greatness, subject to the breath  
Of every fool, whose sense no more can feel  
But his own wringing! What infinite heart-  
eases

Must kings neglect, that private men enjoy!  
And what have kings, that privates have not  
too,

Save ceremony, save general ceremony!  
And what art thou, thou idol ceremony!  
What kind of god art thou, that suffer'st more  
(Of mortal grieves than do thy worshippers!

What are thy rents! what are thy comings in!  
O ceremony, show me but thy worth!  
What is thy soul of adoration?

Art thou sought else but place, degree and  
form,

Creating awe and fear in other men?  
Wherein thou art less happy being fear'd  
Than they in fearing.

What drink'st thou oft, instead of homage  
sweet,

But poison'd flattery! O, be sick, great great-  
ness,

And bid thy ceremony give thee cure!  
Think'st thou the fiery fever will go out  
With titles blown from adulation!

Will it give place to flexure and low bending!  
Canst thou, when thou command'st the bagger's  
knee,

Command the health of it! No, thou proud  
dram,

That play'st so subtly with a king's repose;  
I am a king that find thee, and I know  
'Tis not the balm, the sceptre and the ball,  
The sword, the mace, the crown imperial,  
The intertissued robe of gold and pearl,  
The farced title running fore the king,

The throne he sits on, nor the tide of pomp  
That beats upon the high shore of this world,  
No, not all these, thrice-gorgeous ceremony,  
Not all these, laid in bed majestical,  
Can sleep so soundly as the wretched slave,  
Who with a body fill'd and vacant mind  
Gets him to rest, cramm'd with shameful  
bread;

Never sees horrid night, the child of hell,  
But, like a lackey, from the rise to set  
Sweats in the eye of Phoebus and all night  
Sleeps in Elysium; next day after dawn  
Doth rise and help Hyperion to his horse,  
And follows so the ever-running year,  
With profitable labour, to his grave:

And, but for ceremony, such a wretch  
Winding up days with toils and nights with  
sleep,

Had the fore-hand and vantage of a king.  
The slave, a member of the country, a poor  
Enjoys it; but in gross brain little worth  
What watch the king keeps to maintain the  
peace,

Whose hours the peasant best advantage takes.

*Re-enter BERTRAM.*

*Ber.* My lord, your nobles, knowing of your  
absence,

Seek through your camp to find you.

*K. Hen.* Good old knight,  
Collect them all together at my tent:  
I'll be before thee.

*Exe.* I shall do't, my lord. [*Exit.*]  
*K. Hen.* O God of battles! steel my soldiers'  
hearts;

Possess them not with fear; take from them  
now

The sense of reckoning, if the opposed numbers  
Fluck their hearts from them. Not to-day, O  
Lord,

O, not to-day, think not upon the fault 320

My father made in compassing the crown!

I Richard's body have interred new;

And on it have bestow'd more contrite tears

Than from it issued forced drops of blood:

Five hundred poor I have in yearly pay,

Who twice a-day their wither'd hands hold up

Toward heaven, to pardon blood; and I have  
built

Two chantries, where the sad and solemn  
priests

Sing still for Richard's soul. More will I do;

Though all that I can do is nothing worth, 320

Since that my penitence comes after all,

Implying pardon.

#### Re-enter GLOUCESTER.

*Glow.* My liege!

*K. Hen.* My brother Gloucester's voice? Ay;

I know thy errand, I will go with thee:

The day, my friends and all things stay for me.  
[*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE II. The French camp.

*Enter the DAUPHIN, ORLEANS, RAMBURES,  
and others.*

*Orl.* The sun doth gild our armour; up, my  
lords!

*Des.* Montez à cheval! My horse! varlet!  
Isquais! ha!

*Orl.* O brave spirit!

*Des.* Via! les eaux et la terre.

*Orl.* Bien puis! l'air et le feu.

*Des.* Ciel, cousin Orleans.

#### Enter CONSTABLE.

Now, my lord constable!

*Con.* Hark, how our steeds for present  
carries neigh!

*Des.* Mount them, and make incision in  
their hides. 9

That their hot blood may spin in English eyes,  
And dunt them with superfluous courage, ha!

*Des.* What will you have them weep our  
horses' blood?

How shall we, then, behold their natural tears!

#### Enter Messenger.

*Mess.* The English are embattled, you French  
peeps.

*Con.* To horse, you gallant princes! straight  
to horse!

Do but behold yon poor and starved band,  
How shall suck away their souls,

There is not work enough for all our hands;  
Scarce blood enough in all their sickly veins 20  
To give each naked curtle-axe a stain;  
That our French gallants shall to-day draw out,  
And sheathe for lack of sport: let us but blow  
on them.

The vapour of our valour will o'erturn them.

'Tis positive 'gainst all exceptions, lords,

That our superfluous lackeys and our peasants,

Who in unnecessary action swarm

About our squares of battle, were enow

To purge this field of such a hiding foe,

Though we upon this mountain's basis by 30

Took stand for idle speculation:

But that our honours must not. What's to  
say!

A very little little let us do,

And all is done. Then let the trumpets sound

The tucket sonance and the note to mount;

For our approach shall so much dare the field

That England shall couch down in fear and  
yield.

#### Enter GRANDPRÉ.

*Grand.* Why do you stay so long, my lords  
of France!

Yon island carrions, desperate of their bones,

Ill-favour'dly become the morning field: 40

Their ragged curtains poorly are let loose,

And our air shakes them passing scornfully:

Big Mars seems bankrupt in their beggar'd  
hoes

And faintly through a rusty beaver peeps:

The horsemen sit like fixed candlesticks,

With torch-staves in their hand; and their poor  
jades

Lob down their heads, dropping the hides and  
hips,

The gum down-roping from their pale-dead  
eyes.

And in their pale dull mouths the gimball bit

Lies foul with chew'd grass, still and motion-  
less; 50

And their executors, the knavish crows,

Fly o'er them, all impatient for their hour.

Description cannot suit itself in words

To demonstrate the life of such a battle

In life so lifeless as it shows itself.

*Con.* They have said their prayers, and they  
stay for death.

*Des.* Shall we go send them dinners and  
fresh suits

And give their fasting horses provender,

And after fight with them!

*Con.* I stay but for my guidon: to the field!

I will the banner from a trumpet take, 61

And use it for my haste. Come, come, away!

The sun is high, and we outwear the day.  
[*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE III. The English camp.

*Enter GLOUCESTER, BEDFORD, EXETER, ED-  
MUNDHAM, with all his host; SALISBURY  
and WESTMORELAND.*

*Glow.* Where is the king?

*Bed.* The king himself is rode to view their  
battle.



*West.* Of fighting men they have full three score thousand.

*Eze.* There's five to one; besides, they all are fresh.

*Sal.* God's arm strike with us! 'tis a fearful odds.

God be wi' you, princes all; I'll to my charge: If we no more meet till we meet in heaven, Then, joyfully, my noble Lord of Bedford, My dear Lord Gloucester, and my good Lord Exeter,

And my kind kinsman, warriors all, adieu! to *Bed.* Farewell, good Salisbury; and good luck go with thee!

*Eze.* Farewell, kind lord; fight valiantly to-day;

And yet I do thee wrong to mind thee of it, For thou art framed of the firm truth of valour.

[*Exit Salisbury.*]

*Bed.* He is as full of valour as of kindness; Princely in both.

*Enter the KING.*

*West.* O that we now had here But one ten thousand of those men in England That do no work to-day!

*K. Hen.* What's he that wishes so? My cousin Westmoreland? No, my fair cousin: If we are mark'd to die, we are crows To do our country loss; and if to live, The fewer men, the greater share of honour. God's will! I pray thee, wish not one man more.

By Jove, I am not covetous for gold, Nor care I who doth feed upon my cost; It yearns me not if men my garments wear; Such outward things dwell not in my desires: But if it be a sin to covet honour, I am the most offending soul alive. No, faith, my coz, wish not a man from England:

God's peace! I would not lose so great an honour

As one man more, methinks, would share from me

For the best hope I have. O, do not wish one more!

Rather proclaim it, Westmoreland, through my host,

That he which hath no stomach to this fight, Let him depart; his passport shall be made And crowns for convoy put into his purse: We would not die in that man's company. That fears his fellowship to die with us.

This day is call'd the feast of Crispian: He that outlives this day, and comes safe home,

Will stand a tip-toe when this day is named, And rouse him at the name of Crispian.

He that shall live this day, and see old age, Will yearly on the vigil feast his neighbours,

And say 'To-morrow is Saint Crispian:' Then will he strip his sleeve and show his scars,

And say 'These wounds I had on Crispian's day.'

Old men forget; yet all shall be forgot, But he'll remember with advantages

What feats he did that day: then shall our names,

'amiliar in his mouth as household words, Harry the king, Bedford and Exeter,

Warwick and Talbot, Salisbury and Gloucester, Be in their flowing cups freshly remember'd.

This story shall the good man teach his son; And Crispin Crispian shall ne'er go by,

From this day to the ending of the world, But we in it shall be remembered;

We few, we happy few, we band of brothers; For he to-day that sheds his blood with me

shall be my brother; be he ne'er so vile, 'his day shall gentle his condition;

And gentlemen in England now a-bed Shall think themselves accursed they were not

here, And hold their manhoods cheap whiles any speaks

That fought with us upon Saint Crispian's day.

*Re-enter SALISBURY.*

*Sal.* My sovereign lord, bestow yourself with speed:

The French are bravely in their battles set, And will with all expedience charge on us.

*K. Hen.* All things are ready, if our minds be so.

*West.* Perish the man whose mind is backward now!

*K. Hen.* Thou dost not wish more help from England, coz?

*West.* God's will! my liege, would you and I alone,

Without more help, could fight this royal battle!

*K. Hen.* Why, now thou hast unwish'd five thousand men;

Which likes me better than to wish us one. You know your places: God be with you all!

*Tucket. Enter MONTAGUT.*

*Mont.* Once more I come to know of thee, King Harry,

If for thy ransom thou wilt now compound, so Before thy most assured overthrow:

For certainly thou art so near the gulf, Thou needs must be engulft. Besides, in mercy,

The constable desires thee thou wilt mind Thy followers of repentance; that their souls

May make a peaceful and a sweet retire From off these fields, where, wretches, their

poor bodies

Must lie and fester.

*K. Hen.* Who hath sent thee now?

*Mont.* The Constable of France.

*K. Hen.* I pray thee, bear my former answer back:

Bid them achieve me and then sell my bones. Good God! why should they mock poor fellows thus?

The man that once did sell the lion's skin While the beast lived, was killed with hunting him.

A many of our bodies shall no doubt Find native graves; upon the which, I trust, Shall witness live in brass of this day's work.

And those that leave their valiant bones in France,  
Dying like men, though buried in your dang-  
erous hills.

They shall be famed; for there the sun shall  
glare them,  
And draw their honours reeking up to heaven;  
Leaving their earthly parts to choke your  
crops.

The smell whereof shall breed a plague in  
France.

Mark them abounding valour in our English,  
That being dead, like to the bullet's grazing,  
Break out into a second course of mischief,  
Killing in relapse of mortality.

Let me speak proudly: tell the constable  
We are but warriors for the working-day;  
Our gayness and our gilt are all besmirch'd  
With rainy marching in the painful field; <sup>111</sup>  
There's not a piece of feather in our host—  
Good argument, I hope, we will not fly—  
And time hath worn us into slovenry:

But, by the mass, our hearts are in the trim;  
And my poor soldiers tell me, yet ere night  
They'll be in fresher robes, or they will pluck  
The gay new coats o'er the French soldiers'  
heads.

And turn them out of service. If they do  
this—

As, if God please, they shall,—my ransom then  
Will soon be levied. Herald, save thou thy  
labour:

Come thou no more for ransom, gentle herald!  
They shall have none, I swear, but these my  
joins:

Which if they have as I will leave 'em them,  
Shall yield them little, tell the constable.

Most, I shall, King Harry. And so fare  
these well:

Thou never shalt hear herald any more. [*Exit.*  
K. Hen. I fear thou'lt once more come  
again for ransom.

*Enter York.*

York. My lord, meet humbly on my knee  
I beg

The lending of the vaward. <sup>130</sup>

K. Hen. Take it, brave York. Now, soldiers,  
march away:

And how thou pleasest, God, dispose the day!  
[*Exeunt.*

#### SCENE IV. The field of battle.

Alarm. Excursions. *Enter Pistol, French  
Soldier, and Boy.*

Pist. Yield, our!

Fr. Sol. Je pense que vous êtes gentilhomme  
de bonne qualité.

Pist. Quelque enlaine costume me! Art thou  
a gentleman? what is thy name? discuss.

Fr. Sol. O Seigneur Dieu!

Pist. O, Seigneur Dew should be a gentle-  
man.

Follow my words, O Seigneur Dew, and mark;  
O Seigneur Dew, thou dost me point of son,  
Seigneur, O Seigneur, thou do give to me  
longueurs de son.

Fr. Sol. O, prenez miséricorde! avez pitié  
de moi!

Pist. May shall not serve; I will have forty  
mores;

Or I will fetch thy rim out at thy throat  
In drops of crimson blood.

Fr. Sol. Est-il impossible d'échapper la force  
de ton bras?

Pist. Brass, cur!

Thou damned and luxurious mountain,  
Offer'st me brass?

Fr. Sol. O pardonnez moi!

Pist. Say'st thou me so? Is that a ton of  
moys?

Come hither, boy: ask me this slave in French  
What is his name.

Boy. Ecoutez: comment êtes-vous appelé?

Fr. Sol. Monsieur le Fer.

Boy. He says his name is Master Fer.

Pist. Master Fer! I'll fer him, and fer him,  
and ferret him: discuss the name in French  
unto him.

Boy. I do not know the French for fer, and  
ferret, and ferik.

Pist. Bid him prepare: for I will cut his  
throat.

Fr. Sol. Que dit-il, monsieur?

Boy. Il me commande de vous dire que vous  
faites vous prêt: car ce soldat ici est disposé  
tout à cette heure de couper votre gorge.

Pist. (*Uw, cupplee gorge, permaloy,*  
Peasant, unless thou give me crowns, leave  
crowns;

Or mangled shalt thou be by this my sword. <sup>40</sup>

Fr. Sol. O, je vous supplie, pour l'amour de  
Dieu, me pardonner! Je suis gentilhomme de  
bonne maison: gardez ma vie, et je vous don-  
nerai deux cents écus.

Pist. What are his words?

Boy. He prays you to save his life: he is a  
gentleman of a good house: and for his ransom  
he will give you two hundred crowns.

Pist. Tell him my fury shall abate, and I'll  
The crowns will take.

Fr. Sol. Petit monsieur, que dit-il?

Boy. Encore qu'il est contre son jugement de  
pardonner aucun prisonnier, néanmoins, pour  
les écus que vous l'avez promis, il est content  
de vous donner la liberté, le franchissement.

Fr. Sol. Sur mes genoux je vous donne mille  
remerciemens; et je m'estime heureux que je  
suis tombé entre les mains d'un chevalier, je  
pense, le plus brave, vaillant, et très distingué  
seigneur d'Angleterre. <sup>60</sup>

Pist. Expound unto me, boy.

Boy. He gives you, upon his knees, a thou-  
sand thanks: and he esteems himself happy  
that he hath fallen into the hands of one, as he  
thinks, the most brave, valiant, and three-  
worthy signior of England.

Pist. As I suck blood, I will some merry  
show.

Follow me!

Boy. Suivez-vous le

Pist. and French

so full a voice being

the saying is true, a

greatest sound.

a. [*Alarum*  
now.] I did never know  
so empty a head: but  
— my vessel making the  
and eyes had no

times more valour than this roaring devil? the old play, that every one may pare his nails with a wooden dagger; and they are both hanged; and so would this be, if he durst steal any thing adventurously. I must stay with the lackeys, with the luggage of our camp: the French might have a good prey of us, if he knew of it; for there is none to guard it but boys. *[Exit.]*

SCENE V. *Another part of the field.*

*Enter* CONSTABLE, ORLEANS, ROUBON, DAUPHIN, and RAMBURG.

*Con.* O diable!

*Orl.* O seigneur! le jour est perdu, tout est perdu!

*Dau.* Mort de ma vie! all is confounded, all! Reproach and everlasting shame sits mocking in our plumes. O méchante fortune!

Do not run away. *[A short alarm.]*

*Con.* Why, all our ranks are broke.

*Dau.* O perdurable shame! let's stab ourselves.

Be these the wretches that we play'd at dice for? *Orl.* Is this the king we sent to for his ransom!

*Bour.* Shame and eternal shame, nothing but shame!

Let us die in honour: once more back again; And he that will not follow Bourbon now, Let him go hence, and with his cap in hand, like a base pandar, hold the chamber-door whilst by a slave, no gentler than my dog, His fairest daughter is contaminated.

*Con.* Disorder, that hath spoil'd us, friend us now!

Let us on heaps go offer up our lives. *Orl.* We are now yet living in the field To smother up the English in our throngs, so If any order might be thought upon.

*Bour.* The devil take order now! I'll to the throng:

Let life be short; else shame will be too long.

*[Exeunt.]*

SCENE VI. *Another part of the field.*

*Alarums. Enter* KING HENRY and forces, EXETER, and others.

*K. Hen.* Well have we done, thrice valiant countrymen:

But all's not done; yet keep the French the field.

*Exe.* The Duke of York commends him to your majesty.

*K. Hen.* Lives he, good uncle? thrice within this hour

I saw him down: thrice up again, and fighting; From helmet to the spur all blood he was.

*Exe.* In which array, brave soldier, doth he lie?

Larding the plain; and by his bloody side, Yoke-fellow to his honour-owing wounds,

The noble Earl of Suffolk also lies. so

Suffolk first died; and York, all huddled over, Comes to him, where in gore he lay intrapp'd, And takes him by the hand; kisses the gashes

That bloodily did yawn upon his face; And cries aloud 'Tarry, dear cousin Suffolk! My soul shall thine keep company to heaven; Tarry, sweet soul, for mine, then fly abroad,

Upon these words I came and cheer'd him up: He smiled me in the face, rought me his hand, And, with a feeble gripe, says 'Dear my lord, Commend my service to my sovereign. So did he turn and over Suffolk's neck He threw his wounded arm and kiss'd his lips: And so espoused to death, with blood he seal'd A testament of noble-ending love. The pretty and sweet manner of it forced Those waters from me which I would have stopp'd;

But I had not so much of man in me, so And all my mother came into mine eyes And gave me up to tears.

*K. Hen.* I blame you not; For, hearing this, I must perforce compound With mistiful eyes, or they will issue too.

*[Alarm]* But, hark! what new alarm is this same! The French have reinforced their scatter'd men: Then every soldier kill his prisoners: Give the word through. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE VII. *Another part of the field.*

*Enter* FLUELLEN and GOWER.

*Flu.* Kill the boys and the luggage! 'tis expressly against the law of arms: 'tis as arrant a piece of knavery, mark you now, as can be offer'd: in your conscience, now, is it not?

*Gow.* 'Tis certain there's not a boy left alive; and the cowardly rascals that ran from the battle ha' done this slaughter: besides, they have burned and carried away all that was in the king's tent; wherefore the king, most worthily, hath caused every soldier to cut his prisoner's throat. O, 'tis a gallant king!

*Flu.* Ay, he was born at Monmouth, Captain Gower. What call you the town's name where Alexander the Pig was born?

*Gow.* Alexander the Great.

*Flu.* Why, I pray you, is not pig great? the pig, or the great, or the mighty, or the lion, or the magnanimous, are all one reckonings; here the phrase is a little variations.

*Gow.* I think Alexander the Great was born in Macedon; his father was called Philip of Macedon, as I take it.

*Flu.* I think it is in Macedon where Alexander is born. I tell you, captain, if you look in the maps of the world, I warrant you find, in the comparison between Monmouth, that the situation both alike. There is a river in Monmouth, and there is also moreover a river at Monmouth: it is called Wyre at Monmouth; but it is called my prairie what is the name of the other river? but 'tis all one, 'tis all as my finger in my finger, and there is shame in both; mark Alexander's life well. Every of Monmouth's life is come after it.

for there is figures in all things. Alexander, God knows, and you know, in his rage, and his furies, and his wraths, and his choler, and his moods, and his displeasures, and his indignations, and also being a little intoxicated in his prains, did, in his ales and his angers, look you, kill his best friend, Cleitus.

*Gow.* Our king is not like him in that: he never killed any of his friends.

*Flu.* It is not well done, mark you now, to take the tales out of my mouth, ere it is made and finished. I speak but in the figures and comparisons of it: as Alexander killed his friend Cleitus, being in his ales and his cups; so also Harry Monmouth, being in his right wits and his judgements, turned away the fat knight with the great-belly doublet: he was full of jests, and gipes, and knaveries, and mocks; I have forgot his name.

*Gow.* Sir John Falstaff.

*Flu.* That is he: I'll tell you there is good men born at Monmouth.

*Gow.* Here comes his majesty.

*Alarum.* Enter KING HENRY, and forces; WARWICK, GLOUCESTER, EXETER, and others.

*K. Hen.* I was not angry since I came to France

Until this instant. Take a trumpet, herald; hide thou unto the horsemen on yon hill: If they will fight with us, bid them come down. Or yold the field; they do offend our sight: If they'll do neither, we will come to them, And make them skirr away, as swift as stones Enforced from the old Assyrian slings: Besides, we'll cut the throats of those we have, And not a man of them that we shall take Shall taste our mercy. Go and tell them so.

Enter MONTJOY.

*Exc.* Here comes the herald of the French, my liege.

*Glo.* His eyes are humbler than they used to be.

*K. Hen.* How now! what means this, herald? know'st thou not

That I have slain these bones of mine for ransom?

Comest thou again for ransom?

*Mont.* No, great king: I come to thee for charitable license,

That we may wander o'er this bloody field To look our dead, and then to bury them;

To sort our nobles from our common men. For many of our princes—was the while!

As drownd and sunk'd in mercenary blood;

So do our vulgar drench their peasant limbs to

in the blood of princes; and their wounded steeds

betwixt lock deep in gore and with wild rage

kick out their armed heels at their dead masters,

tear them twice. O, give us leave, great

field in safety and dispose

of dead bodies!

*Exc.* I tell thee truly, herald, that if the day be ours or no;

we'll give thee the field.

*Mont.* The day is yours.

*K. Hen.* Praise be God, and not our strength, for it!

What is this castle call'd that stands hard by?

*Mont.* They call it Agincourt.

*K. Hen.* Then call we this the field of Agincourt.

Fought on the day of Crispin Crispianus.

*Flu.* Your grandfather of famous memory, an't please your majesty, and your great-uncle Edward the Black Prince of Wales, as I have read in the chronicles, fought a most brave battle here in France.

*K. Hen.* They did, Fluellen.

*Flu.* Your majesty says very true: if your majesties is remembered of it, the Welshmen did good service in a garden where leeks did grow, wearing leeks in their Monmouth caps:

which, your majesty know, to this hour is an honourable badge of the service; and I do believe your majesty takes no scorn to wear the leek upon Saint Tavy's day.

*K. Hen.* I wear it for a memorable honour; For I am Welsh, you know, good countryman.

*Flu.* All the water in Wye cannot wash your majesty's Welsh blood out of your body, I can tell you that: God bless it and preserve it, as long as it pleases his grace, and his majesty too!

*K. Hen.* Thanks, good my countryman.

*Flu.* By Jesus, I am your majesty's countryman, I care not who know it; I will confess it to all the world: I need not to be ashamed of your majesty, praised be God, so long as your majesty is an honest man.

*K. Hen.* God keep me so! Our heralds go with him:

Bring me just notice of the numbers dead On both our parts. Call yonder fellow hither.

[Points to Williams. *Exeunt Herald with Montjoy.*]

*Exc.* Soldier, you must come to the king.

*K. Hen.* Soldier, why wearest thou that glove in thy cap?

*Will.* An't please your majesty, 'tis the page of one that I should fight withal, if he be alive.

*K. Hen.* An Englishman?

*Will.* An't please your majesty, a Frenchman that swaggered with me last night; who, if alive and ever dare to challenge this glove, I have sworn to take him a box o' the ear; or if I can see my glove in his cap, which he swore, as he was a soldier, he would wear it alive, I will strike it out soundly.

*K. Hen.* What think you, Captain Fluellen? is it fit this soldier keep his oath?

*Flu.* He is a craven and a villain else, an't please your majesty, in my conscience.

*K. Hen.* It may be his enemy is a gentleman of great sort, quite from the answer of his degree.

*Flu.* Though he be as good a gentleman as the devil is, as Lucifer and Belshazzar himself, it is necessary keep your grace, that he keep his vow and his oath: if he be perjured, see you now, his reputation is as good as a villain and a Jackanapes, as ever his throat does trod



*Fla.* I will none of your money.

*Fla.* It is with a good will; I can tell you, it will serve you to mend your shoes: come, wherefore should you be so peevish? your shoes is not so good: 'tis a good sitting, I warrant you, or I will change it.

*Enter an English Herald.*

*K. Hen.* Now, herald, are the dead number'd?

*Her.* Here is the number of the slaughter'd French.

*K. Hen.* What prisoners of good sort are taken, uncle?

*Her.* Charles Duke of Orleans, nephew to the king;

John Duke of Bourbon, and Lord Bouciquault: Of other lords and barons, knights and squires, Full fifteen hundred, besides common men.

*K. Hen.* This note doth tell me of ten thousand French

That in the field lie slain: of princes, in this number,

And nobles bearing banners, there lie dead One hundred twenty six: added to these,

Of knights, esquires, and gallant gentlemen, Eight thousand and four hundred; of the which,

Five hundred were but yesterday dubb'd knights:

So that, in these ten thousand they have lost, There are but sixteen hundred mercenaries;

The rest are princes, barons, lords, knights, squires,

And gentlemen of blood and quality. The names of those their nobles that lie dead:

Charles Dethabreth, high constable of France; Jacques of Chatillon, admiral of France;

The master of the cross-bows, Lord Rambures; Great Master of France, the brave Sir Guichard Dufchin,

John Duke of Alençon, Anthony Duke of Beabant,

The brother to the Duke of Burgundy, And Edward Duke of Bar: of lusty earls,

Grandpré and Roussi, Fauconberg and Foix, Beaumont and Marle, Vaudemont and Lestrale.

Here was a royal fellowship of death! What is the number of our English dead?

*[Herald shows him another paper.]* Edward the Duke of York, the Earl of Suffolk,

Sir Richard Ketil, Davy Gam, esquire: None else of name; and of all other men

But five and twenty. O God, thy arm was here!

And not to us, but to thy arm alone, Ascribe we all! When, without stratagem,

But in plain shock and even play of battle, Was ever known so great and little loss

On one part and on the other? Take it, God, For it is none but thine!

*Fla.* 'Tis wonderful!

*K. Hen.* Come, go we in procession to the grave:

And he is death proclaimed through our host

By sound of this or that that comes from God

Which is his only.

*Fla.* Is it not lawful, an please your majesty, to tell how many is killed?

*K. Hen.* Yes, captain; but with this acknowledgement,

That God fought for us.

*Fla.* Yes, my conscience, he did us great good.

*K. Hen.* Do we all holy rites; Let there be sung 'Non nobis' and 'Te Deum';

The dead with charity enclosed in clay;

And then to Calais; and to England then; 130 Where ne'er from France arrived more happy men.

## ACT V.

### PROLOGUE.

*Enter Chorus.*

*Chor.* Vouchsafe to those that have not read the story,

That I may prompt them: and of such as have, I humbly pray them to admit the excuse

Of time, of numbers and due course of things, Which cannot in their huge and proper life

Be here presented. Now we bear the king Toward Calais: grant him there; there seen,

Heave him away upon your winged thoughts Athwart the sea. Behold, the English beach

Pales in the flood with men, with wives and boys,

Whose shouts and claps out-voice the deep-mouth'd sea,

Which like a mighty whiffler Yare the king Seems to prepare his way: so let him land,

And solemnly see him set on to London. So swift a pace hath thought that even now

You may imagine him upon Blackheath; Where that his lords desire him to have borne

His bruised helmet and his bended sword Before him through the city: he forbids it,

Being free from vainness and self-glorious pride; Giving full trophy, signal and ostent

Quite from himself to God. But now behold, In the quick forge and working-house of

thought,

How London doth pour out her citizens! The mayor and all his brethren in best sort,

Like to the senators of the antique Rome, With the plebeians swarming at their heels,

Go forth and fetch their conquering Caesar in: As by a lower but loving likelihood,

We're now the general of our gracious empress, As in good time he may, from Ireland coming,

Bringing rebellion broached on his sword, How many would the peaceful city quit,

To welcome him! much more, and much more cause,

Did they this Harry. Now in London place him:

As yet the lamentation of the French Invites the King of England's stay at home;

The emperor's coming in behalf of France, To order peace between them; and until

All the occurrences, whatever chance, Till Harry's bath return again to us

There must we bring him; and have play'd

The Interspersed, by remembering you 'tis past.  
Then brook abridgement, and your eyes advance,  
After your thoughts, straight back again to  
France. [Exit.]

## SCENE I. France. The English camp.

Enter FLUELLEN and GOWER.

Gow. Nay, that's right; but why wear you your look to-day? Saint Davy's day is past.

Flu. There is occasions and causes why and wherefore in all things: I will tell you, once my friend, Captain Gower: the rascally, scould, beggary, lousy, prancing knave, Pistol, which you and yourself and all the world know to be no better than a fellow, look you now, of no merits, he is come to me and prings me bread and salt yesterday, look you, and bid me eat my leak: it was in a place where I could not breed no contention with him; but I will be so bold as to wear it in my cap till I see him once again, and then I will tell him a little piece of my desires.

Enter PISTOL.

Gow. Why, here he comes, swelling like a turkey-cock.

Flu. 'Tis no matter for his swellings nor his turkey-cocks. God bless you, Auncient Pistol! you scurvy, lousy knave, God bless you!

Pist. Ha! art thou bedlam? dost thou thirst, base Trojan,

To have me fold up Parca's fatal web?

Hence! I am qualmish at the smell of leek.

Flu. I peseech you heartily, scurvy, lousy knave, at my desires, and my requests, and my petitions, to eat, look you, this leek: because, look you, you do not love it, nor your affections and your appetites and your disquisitions doo's not agree with it, I would desire you to eat it.

Pist. Not for Cadwallader and all his goats.  
Flu. There is one goat for you. [Strikes him.] Will you be so good, scould knave, as eat it?

Pist. Base Trojan, thou shalt die.

Flu. You say very true, scould knave, when God's will is: I will desire you to live in the lean time, and eat your victuals: come, there's sauce for it. [Strikes him.] You called me yesterday mountain-squire; but I will make you to-day a squire of low degree. I pray you, fall to: if you can mock a leek, you can eat a leek.

Gow. Enough, captain: you have astonished him.

Flu. I say, I will make him eat some part of my leek, or I will peat his pate four days. I bite, I pray you: it is good for your green round and your bloody oxcomb.

Pist. Must I bite?

Flu. Yes, certainly, and out of doubt and out of question too, and amiable too.

Pist. By this leek, I will most heartily revenge: I eat and eat, I swear—

Flu. Eat, I pray you: will you have some more sauce to your leek? there is not enough leek to swear by.

Pist. Quot thy cudgel; thou dost see I eat.

Flu. Much good do you, scould knave, heartily. Nay, pray you, throw nose away; the skin is good for your broken oxcomb. When you take occasions to see leeks hereafter, I pray you, mock at 'em; that is all.

Pist. Good.

Flu. Ay, leeks is good: hold you, there is a groat to heal your pate.

Pist. Me a groat!

Flu. Yes, verily and in truth, you shall take it; or I have another leek in my pocket, which you shall eat.

Pist. I take thy groat in earnest of revenge.

Flu. If I owe you any thing, I will pay you in cudgels: you shall be a woodmonger, and buy nothing of me but cudgels. God b' wi' you, and keep you, and heal your pate. [Exit.]

Pist. All hell shall stir for this.

Gow. Go, go; you are a counterfeited cowardly knave. Will you mock at an ancient tradition, begun upon an honourable respect, and worn as a memorable trophy of predeceased valour and dare not avouch in your deeds any of your words? I have seen you gleeing and galling at this gentleman twice or thrice. You thought, because he could not speak English in the native garb, he could not therefore handle an English cudgel: you find it otherwise; and henceforth let a Welsh correction teach you a good English condition. Fare ye well. [Exit.]

Pist. Both Fortune play the housewife with me now!

News have I, that my Nell is dead if the spirit (if malady of France;

And there my rendezvous is quite cut off.

Oh! I do wax; and from my weary limbs

Honour is cudgelled. Well, bawd I'll turn, so

And something lean to outpurse of quick hand.

To England will I steal, and there I'll steal;

And patches will I get unto these cudgell'd scars.

And swear I got them in the Gallia wars. [Exit.]

## SCENE II. France. A royal palace.

Enter, at one door, KING HENRY, KENT, BEDFORD, GLOUCESTER, WARWICK, WESTMORELAND, and other Lords; at another, the FRENCH KING, QUEEN ISABELL, the PRINCESS KATHARINE, ALICE and other Ladies; the DUKE OF BURGUNDY, and his train.

K. Hen. Peace to this morn'g where we are met!

Unto our brother France, and to our sister, Health and fair time of day: joy and good wishes

To our most fair and princely cousin Katharine; And, as a branch and member of this royal tree,

By whom this great assembly is convened, We do salute you, Duke of Burgundy;

And, prince, French, and peers, salute you all.

F. King. Right joyous are we to behold your face.

Most worthy brother England! hail! we see thee you, prince, English, every one.

*Q. Isa.* So happy be the issue, brother England,

Of this good day and of this gracious meeting.  
As we are now glad to behold your eyes;  
Your eyes, which hitherto have borne in them  
Against the French, that met them in their  
bent,

The fatal balls of murdering basilisks:  
The venom of such looks, we fairly hope,  
Have lost their quality, and that this day  
Shall change all griefs and quarrels into love. 20

*K. Hen.* To cry amen to that, thus we appear.

*Q. Isa.* You English princes all, I do salute you.

*Bur.* My duty to you both, on equal love,  
Great Kings of France and England! That I  
have laboured,  
With all my wits, my pains and strong endea-  
vours,

To bring your most imperial majesties  
Unto this bar and royal interview,  
Your mightiness on both parts best can witness.  
Since then my office hath so far prevail'd  
That, face to face and royal eye to eye, 30

You have congreteed, let it not disgrace me,  
If I demand, before this royal view,  
What rub or what impediment there is,  
Why that the naked, poor and mangled Peace,  
Dear nurse of arts, plenty and joyful births,  
Should not in this best garden of the world  
Our fertile France, put up her lovely visage!  
Alas, she hath from France too long been  
chased,

And all her husbandry doth lie on heaps,  
Corrupting in its own fertility. 40  
Her vine, the merry cheerer of the heart,  
Unpruned dies; her hedges even-pleach'd,  
Like prisoners wildly over-grown with hair,  
Put forth disorder'd twigs; her fallow leas  
The darnel, hemlock and rank fumitory  
Doth root upon, while that the coulter rusts  
That should deracinate such savagery;  
The even mead, that erst brought sweetly forth  
The freckled cowslip, burnet and green clover,  
Wanting the scythe, all uncorrected, rank, 50  
Conceives by idleness and nothing teems  
But hateful docks, rough thistles, keekles,  
burs,

Losing both beauty and utility.  
And as our vineyards, fallows, meads and  
hedges,

Defective in their natures, grow to wildness,  
Even so our houses and ourselves and children  
Have lost, or do not learn for want of time,  
The sciences that should become our country;  
But grow like savages,—as soldiers will  
That nothing do but meditate on blood.— 60  
To swearing and stern looks, defused attire  
And every thing that seems unnatural  
Which to reduce into our former favour  
You are assembled; and my speech entreats  
That I may know the let, why gentle Peace  
Should not expect these inconveniences  
And thus we with her former qualities.

*K. Hen.* If, Duke of Burgundy, you would  
the peace,  
Whose want gives growth to the imperfections

Which you have cited, you must buy that  
peace 70

With full accord to all our just demands;  
Whose tenours and particular effects  
You have enasheduled briefly in your hands.

*Bur.* The king hath heard them; to the  
which as yet

There is no answer made.

*K. Hen.* Well then the peace,  
Which you before so urged, lies in his answer.

*Fr. King.* I have but with a cursory eye  
O'erglanced the articles: pleaseth your grace  
To appoint some of your council presently  
To sit with us once more, with better heed 80  
To re-survey them, we will suddenly  
Pass our accept and peremptory answer.

*K. Hen.* Brother, we shall. Go, uncle  
Exeter,

And brother Clarence, and you, brother Glou-  
cester,

Warwick and Huntingdon, go with the king;  
And take with you free power to ratify,  
Augment, or alter, as your wisdoms best  
Shall see advantageous for our dignity,  
Any thing in or out of our demands.  
And we'll consign thereto. Will you, fair  
sister, 90

Go with the princes, or stay here with us?

*Q. Isa.* Our gracious brother, I will go with  
them:

Haply a woman's voice may do some good,  
When articles too nicely urged be stood on.

*K. Hen.* Yet leave our cousin Katharine  
here with us:

She is our capital demand, comprised  
Within the fore-rank of our articles.

*Q. Isa.* She hath good leave.  
[Exeunt all except Henry, Katharine,  
and Alice.]

*K. Hen.* Fair Katharine, and most fair,  
Will you vouchsafe to teach a soldier terms  
Such as will enter at a lady's ear? 100

And plead his love-suit to her gentle heart?

*Kath.* Your majesty shall mock at me; I  
cannot speak your English.

*K. Hen.* O fair Katharine, if you will love  
me soundly with your French heart, I will be  
glad to hear you confess it brokenly with your  
English tongue. Do you like me, Kate?

*Kath.* Pardonnez-moi, I cannot tell what is  
'like me.'

*K. Hen.* An angel is like you, Kate, and you  
are like an angel. 110

*Kath.* Que dit-il? que je suis semblable à des  
anges?

*Alice.* Oui, vraiment, sauf votre grace, ainsi  
dit-il.

*K. Hen.* I said so, dear Katharine; and I  
must not blush to affirm it.

*Kath.* O bon Dieu! les langues des hommes  
sont pleines de tromperies.

*K. Hen.* What says she, fair one? that the  
tongues of men are full of deceits?

*Alice.* Oui, dat de tongues of de mans is be  
full of decits; dat is de prince. 120

*K. Hen.* The princess is the better English-  
woman. I faith, Kate, my wooing is fit for thy  
understanding: I am glad thou canst speak so



better English; for, if thou couldst, thou wouldst find me such a plain king that thou wouldst think I had sold my farm to buy my crown. I know no ways to mince it in love, but directly to say 'I love you;' then if you urge me farther than to say 'do you in faith!' I wear out my suit. Give me your answer; I'll faith, do: and so clap hands and a bargain: how say you, lady?

*Kath.* Sauf votre honneur, me understand well.

*K. Hen.* Marry, if you would put me to verses or to dance for your sake, Kate, why you undid me: for the one, I have neither words nor measure, and for the other, I have no strength in measure, yet a reasonable measure in strength. If I could win a lady at leap-frog, or by vaulting into my saddle with my armour on my back, under the correction of bragging be it spoken, I should quickly leap into a wife. Or if I might buffet for my love, or bound my horse for her favours, I could lay on like a butcher and sit like a jack-an-apes, never off. But, before God, Kate, I cannot look greenly nor gasp out my eloquence, nor I have no cunning in protestation; only downright oaths, which I never use till urged, nor never break for urging. If thou canst love a fellow of this temper, Kate, whose face is not worth sunburning, that never looks in his glass for love of any thing he sees there, let thine eye be thy cook. I speak to thee plain soldier: if thou canst love me for this, take me; if not, to say to thee that I shall die, is true; but for thy love, by the Lord, no; yet I love thee too. And while thou livest, dear Kate, take a fellow of plain and uncoined constancy; for he performs must do thee right, because he hath not the gift to woo in other places: for these fellows of infinite tongue, that can rhyme themselves into ladies' favours, they do always reason themselves out again. What! a speaker is but a prater; a rhyme is but a ballad. A good leg will fall; a straight back will stoop; a black beard will turn white; a curled pate will grow bald; a fair face will wither; a full eye will wax hollow; but a good heart, Kate, is the sun and the moon; or rather the sun and not the moon; for it shines bright and never changes, but keeps his course truly. If thou would have such a one, take me; and take me, take a soldier; take a soldier, take a king. And what sayest thou then to my love? speak, my fair, and fairly, I pray thee.

*Kath.* Is it possible that I should love de enemy of France? 170

*K. Hen.* No; it is not possible you should love the enemy of France, Kate: but, in loving me, you should love the friend of France: for I love France so well that I will not part with a village of it; I will have it all mine: and, Kate, when France is mine and I am yours, then yours is France and you are mine.

*Kath.* I cannot tell what is dat.

*K. Hen.* No, Kate! I will tell thee in French; which I am sure will hang upon my tongue like a new-married wife about her husband's neck, hardly to be shook off. Je quand

sur la possession de France, et quand vous avez le possession de moi, — let me see, what then? Saint Denis be my speed! — done votre est France et vous êtes mienne. It is as easy for me, Kate, to conquer the kingdom as to speak so much more French: I shall never move thee in French, unless it be to laugh at me.

*Kath.* Sauf votre honneur, le François que vous parlez, il est meilleur que l'Anglois lequel ie parle.

*K. Hen.* No, faith, is't not, Kate: but thy speaking of my tongue, and I thine, most truly-falsely, must needs be granted to be much at me. But, Kate, dost thou understand thus much English, canst thou love me?

*Kath.* I cannot tell.

*K. Hen.* Can any of your neighbours tell, Kate? I'll ask them. Come, I know thou lovest me: and at night, when you come into your closet, you'll question this gentlewoman about me; and I know, Kate, you will to her dispraise those parts in me that you love with your heart: but, good Kate, mock me mercifully; the rather, gentle princess, because I love thee cruelly. If ever thou beest mine, Kate, as I have a saving faith within me tells me thou shalt, I get thee with scrambling, and thou must therefore needs prove a good soldier-breeder; shall not thou and I, between Saint Denis and Saint George, compound a boy, half French, half English, that shall go to Constantinople and take the Turk by the beard? I shall we not? What sayest thou, my fair flower-de-luce?

*Kath.* I do not know dat.

*K. Hen.* No; 'tis hereafter to know, but now to promise: do but now promise, Kate, you will endeavour for your French part of such a boy; and for my English moiety take the word of a king and a bachelor. How answer you, la plus belle Katharine du monde, mon très cher et dévot déesse!

*Kath.* Your majestee ave faume French enough to deceive de most sage demoiselle dat is en France.

*K. Hen.* Now, lie upon my false French! By mine honour, in true English, I love thee, Kate: by which honour I dare not swear thou lovest me; yet my blood begins to flatter me that thou dost, notwithstanding the poor and untempering effect of my vengeance. Now, be shrew my father's ambition! he was thinking of civil wars when he got me: therefore was I created with a stubborn outside, with an aspect of iron, that, when I come to woo ladies, I fright them. But, in faith, Kate, the easier I wax, the better I shall appear: my comfort is, that old age, that ill layer up of beauty, can do no more spoil upon my face: thou hast me, if thou hast me, at the worst; and thou shalt wear me, if thou wear me, better and better; and therefore tell me, most fair Katharine, will you have me? Put off your maiden blushes; awaken the thoughts of your heart with the!

me by the

an'thine:

thou almost") and so thine, and Henry Plantagenet.

thine; who, though I speak it before his face, if he be not fellow with the best king, thou shalt find the best king of good fellows. Come, your answer in broken music; for thy voice is muffled and thy English broken; therefore, queen of all, Katharine, break thy mind to me in broken English; wilt thou have me?

*Kath.* Dat is as it sall please de roi mon pere.

*K. Hen.* Nay, it will please him well, Kate; it shall please him, Kate.

*Kath.* Dem it sall also content me. 270

*K. Hen.* Upon that I kiss your hand, and I call you my queen.

*Kath.* Laissez, mon seigneur, laissez, laissez : ma foi, je ne veux point que vous abaissez votre grandeur en baisant la main d'une de votre seigneurie indigne serviteur; excusés-moi, je vous supplie, mon très-puissant seigneur.

*K. Hen.* Then I will kiss your lips, Kate.

*Kath.* Les dames et demoiselles pour être baisées devant leur noce, il n'est pas la coutume de France. 281

*K. Hen.* Madam my interpreter, what says she?

*Alice.* Dat it is not be de fashion pour les ladies of France,—I cannot tell vat is baiser en English.

*K. Hen.* To kiss.

*Alice.* Your majesty entendre better que moi.

*K. Hen.* It is not a fashion for the maids in France to kiss before they are married, would she say?

*Alice.* Oui, vraiment.

*K. Hen.* O Kate, nice customs curtesy to great kings. Dear Kate, you and I cannot be confined within the weak list of a country's fashion; we are the makers of manners, Kate; and the liberty that follows our places stops the mouth of all find-faults; as I will do yours, for upholding the nice fashion of your country in denying me a kiss: therefore, patiently and yielding, [Kissing her.] You have witchcraft in your lips, Kate: there is more eloquence in a sugar touch of them than in the tongues of the French council; and they should sooner persuade Harry of England than a general petition of monarchs. Here comes your father.

*Re-enter the FRENCH KING and his QUEEN, BURGUNDY, and other Lords.*

*Bur.* God save your majesty! my royal cousin, teach you our princess English!

*K. Hen.* I would have her learn, my fair cousin, how perfectly I love her; and that is good English.

*Bur.* Is she not apt?

*K. Hen.* Our tongue is rough, coz, and my condition is not smooth; so that, having neither the voice nor the heart of flattery about me, I cannot so conjure up the spirit of love in her, that he will appear in his true likeness.

*Bur.* Pardon the frankness of my mirth, if I answer you for that. If you would conjure in his true likeness, he must be blind. Can you blame her

being a maid yet rosed over with the virgin crimson of modesty, if she deny the appearance of a naked blind boy in her naked seeing self? It were, my lord, a hard condition for a maid to consign to.

*K. Hen.* Yet they do wink and yield, as love is blind and enforces.

*Bur.* They are then excused, my lord, when they see not what they do. 330

*K. Hen.* Then, good my lord, teach your cousin to consent winking.

*Bur.* I will wink on her to consent, my lord, if you will teach her to know my meaning: for maids, well summered and warm kept, are like flies at Bartholomew-tide, blind, though they have their eyes; and then they will endure handling, which before would not abide looking on.

*K. Hen.* This moral ties me over to time and a hot summer; and so I shall catch the fly, your cousin, in the latter end and she must be blind too.

*Bur.* As love is, my lord, before it loves.

*K. Hen.* It is so: and you may, some of you, thank love for my blindness, who cannot see many a fair French city for one fair French maid that stands in my way.

*Fr. King.* Yes, my lord, you see them respectively, the cities turned into a maid; for they are all girdled with maiden walls that hath never entered. 350

*K. Hen.* Shall Kate be my wife?

*Fr. King.* So please you.

*K. Hen.* I am content; so the maiden cities you talk of may wait on her: so the maid that stood in the way for my wish shall show me the way to my will.

*Fr. King.* We have consented to all terms of reason.

*K. Hen.* Is't so, my lords of England?

*West.* The king hath granted every article: His daughter first, and then in sequel all, 361 According to their firm proposed natures.

*Eze.* Only he hath not yet subscribed this: Where your majesty demands, that the King of France, having any occasion to write for matter of grant, shall name your highness in this form and with this addition, In French, Notre très-cher fils Henri, Roi d'Angleterre, Hérédité de France; and thus in Latin, Preciarissimus filius noster Henricus, Rex Angliæ, et Hæres Franciæ.

*Fr. King.* Nor this I have not, brother, so denied, But your request shall make me let it pass.

*K. Hen.* I pray you then, in love and dear alliance,

Let that one article rank with the rest; And thereupon give me your daughter.

*Fr. King.* Take her, fair son, and from her blood raise up

Issue to me; that the contending Of France and England, whose very

With envy each other's happiness, May cease their hatred, and this dear conjunction Plant neighbourhood and Christian-like accord 380

In their sweet bosoms, that never war advance | And may our oaths well kept and prosperous  
His bleeding sword 'twixt England and fair | be!  
France. [Sennet. Exeunt.]

All. Amen!

K. Hen. Now, welcome, Kate: and bear me  
witness all,  
That here I kiss her as my sovereign queen.

[Flourish.]  
Q. Isa. God, the best maker of all marriages,  
Combine your hearts in one, your realms in  
one!

As man and wife, being two, are one in love,  
So be there 'twixt your kingdoms such a  
spousal, 390

That never may ill office, or fell jealousy,  
Which troubles oft the bed of blessed marriage,  
Thrust in between the paction of these king-  
doms,

To make divorce of their incorporate league:  
That English may as French, French English-  
men,

Receive each other. God speak this Amen!

All. Amen!

K. Hen. Prepare we for our marriage: on  
which day,

My Lord of Burgundy, we'll take your oath,  
And all the peers', for surety of our leagues.  
Then shall I swear to Kate, and you to me;

## EPILOGUE.

Enter Chorus.

Chor. Thus far, with rough and all-unable  
pen,

Our bending author hath pursued the story,  
In little room confining mighty men,  
Mangling by starts the full course of their  
glory.

Small time, but in that small most greatly lived  
This star of England: Fortune made his  
sword;

By which the world's best garden he achieved,  
And of it left his son Imperial lord.

Henry the Sixth, in infant bands crown'd King  
Of France and England, did this king suc-  
ceed; 40

Whose state so many had the managing,  
That they lost France and made his England  
bleed;

Which oft our stage hath shown; and, for their  
sake,

In your fair minds let this acceptance take.

[Exit.]

# THE FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

**KING HENRY** the Sixth.  
**DUKE OF GLOUCESTER**, uncle to the King, and Protector.  
**DUKE OF BEDFORD**, uncle to the King, and Regent of France.  
**THOMAS BRAUFORT**, Duke of Exeter, great-uncle to the King.  
**HENRY BRAUFORT**, great-uncle to the King, Bishop of Winchester, and afterwards Cardinal.  
**JOHN BRAUFORT**, Earl, afterwards Duke, of Somerset.  
**RICHARD PLANTAGENET**, son of Richard late Earl of Cambridge, afterwards Duke of York.  
**EARL OF WARWICK**.  
**EARL OF SALISBURY**.  
**EARL OF SUFFOLK**.  
**LORD TALBOT**, afterwards Earl of Shrewsbury.  
**JOHN TALBOT**, his son.  
**EDMUND MORTIMER**, Earl of March.  
**SIR JOHN FASTOLFE**.  
**SIR WILLIAM LUCY**.  
**SIR WILLIAM GLANSDALE**.  
**SIR THOMAS GARGRAVE**, Mayor of London.  
**WOODVILLE**, Lieutenant of the Tower.  
**VERNON**, of the White-Rose or York faction.

**BASSET**, of the Red-Rose or Lancaster faction.  
**A Lawyer**. Mortimer's Keepers.

**CHARLES**, Dauphin, and afterwards King of France.  
**REIGNIER**, Duke of Anjou, and titular King of Naples.  
**DUKE OF BURGUNDY**.  
**DUKE OF ALENÇON**.  
**BASTARD OF ORLEANS**, Governor of Paris.  
**Master-Gunner of Orleans**, and his Son.  
**General of the French forces in Bourdeaux**.  
**A French Sergeant**. A Porter.  
**An old Shepherd**, father to Joan la Pucelle.

**MARGARET**, daughter to Reignier, afterwards married to King Henry.  
**COUNTESS OF AUVERGNE**.  
**JOAN LA PUCELLE**, commonly called Joan of Arc.

**Lords, Wardens of the Tower, Herald, Officers, Soldiers, Messengers, and Attendants.**

**Fiends appearing to La Pucelle.**

**SCENE:** *Partly in England, and partly in France.*

## ACT I.

### SCENE I. Westminster Abbey.

*Dead March. Enter the Funeral of KING HENRY the Fifth, attended on by the DUKE OF BEDFORD, Regent of France; the DUKE OF GLOUCESTER, Protector; the DUKE OF EXETER, the EARL OF WARWICK, the BISHOP OF WINCHESTER, Herald, &c.*

*Hed.* Hung be the heavens with black, yield day to night!

*Comets,* importing change of times and states,  
 Brandish your crystal tresses in the sky,  
 And with them scourge the bad revolting stars  
 That have consorted unto Henry's death!  
*King Henry the Fifth, too famous to live long!*  
*Angland's ne'er lost a king of so much worth.*

*Glou.* England ne'er had a king until his time.

Virtue he had, deserving to command:  
 His brandish'd sword did blind men with his beams:  
 His arms spread wider than a dragon's wings;  
 His sparkling eyes, replete with wrathful fire,  
 More dazzled and drove back his enemies  
 Than mid-day sun fierce bent against their faces.

What should I say? his deeds exceed all speech:  
 He ne'er lift up his hand but conquered.

*Exc.* We mourn in black: why mourn we not in blood?

Henry is dead and never shall revive:  
 Upon a wooden coffin we attend,  
 And death's dishonourable victory  
 We with our stately presence glorify.

Like captives bound to a triumphant car,  
What! shall we curse the planets of mishap  
That plotted thus our glory's overthrow?  
(Or shall we think the subtle-witted French  
Conjurers and sorcerers, that afraid of him  
By magic verses have contrived his end?)

*Win.* He was a king bless'd of the King of kings.

Unto the French the dreadful judgement-day  
So dreadful will not be as was his sight,  
The battles of the Lord of hosts he fought:  
The church's prayers made him so prosperous.

*Glou.* The church! where is it? Had not churchmen pray'd,

His thread of life had not so soon decay'd:  
None do you like but an effeminate prince,  
Whom, like a school-boy, you may over-awe.

*Win.* Gloucester, whatever we like, thou art protector

And lookest to command the prince and realm.  
Thy wife is proud; she holdeth thee in awe,  
More than God or religious churchmen may.

*Glou.* Name not religion, for thou lovest the flesh,

And ne'er throughout the year to church thou go'st

Except it be to pray against thy foes.

*Bed.* Cense, cease these jars and rest your minds in peace:

Iet's to the altar: heralds, wait on us:  
Instead of gold, we'll offer up our arms;

Since arms avail not now that Henry's dead.  
Posterity, await for wretched years,

When at their mothers' moist eyes babes shall suck,

Our isle be made a nourish of salt tears,  
And none but women left to wail the dead.

Henry the Fifth, thy ghost I invoke:  
Prosper this realm, keep it from civil broils,

Combat with adverse planets in the heavens!  
A far more glorious star thy soul will make

Than Julius Cæsar or bright—

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My honourable lords, health to you all!

Sad tidings bring I to you out of France,  
Of loss, of slaughter and discomfiture:

Guienne, Champagne, Rheims, Orleans, 60  
Paris, Guyonn, Poitiers, are all quite lost.

*Bed.* What say'st thou, man, before dead Henry's come?

Speak softly, or the loss of those great towns  
Will make him burst his lead and rise from death.

*Glou.* Is Paris lost? Is Rouen yielded up?  
If Henry were recall'd to life again,

Those news would cause him once more yield the ghost.

*Ere.* How were they lost? what treachery was used?

*Mess.* No treachery; but want of men and money.

Amongst the soldiers this is muttered, 70  
That here you maintain several factions,

And whilst a field should be dispatch'd and fought,

You are disputing of your generals:

One would have lingering wars with little cost;  
Another would fly swift, but wanteth wings;

A third thinks, without expense at all,  
By guileful fair words peace may be obtain'd

Awake, awake, English nobility!  
Let not sloth dim your honours new-begot:

Cropp'd are the flower-de-luces in your arms;  
Of England's coat one half is cut away. 81

*Ere.* Were our tears wanting to this funeral,  
These tidings would call forth their flowing tides.

*Bed.* Me they concern; Regent I am of France.

Give me my steeled coat. I'll fight for France.  
Away with these disgraceful waiting robes!

Wounds will I lend the French instead of eyes,  
To weep their intermissive miseries.

*Enter to them another Messenger.*

*Mess.* Lords, view these letters full of bad  
nuisance.

France is revolted from the English quite, 90  
Except some petty towns of no import:

The Dauphin Charles is crowned king in Rheims;

The Bastard of Orleans with him is join'd;  
Reignier, Duke of Anjou, doth take his part;

The Duke of Alençon fleeth to his side.

*Ere.* The Dauphin crowned king! all fly to him!

O, whether shall we fly from this reproach!

*Glou.* We will not fly, but to our enemies' throats.

Bedford, if thou be slack, I'll fight it out.

*Bed.* Gloucester, why doubt'st thou of my forwardness? 100

An army have I muster'd in my thoughts,  
Wherewith already France is overrun.

*Enter another Messenger.*

*Mess.* My gracious lords, to add to your  
laments,

Wherewith you now bedew King Henry's  
hearse,

I must inform you of a dismal fight  
Betwixt the stout Lord Talbot and the French.

*Win.* What! wherein Talbot overcame?

*Mess.* O, no; wherein Lord Talbot was o'er-  
thrown:

The circumstance I'll tell you more at large.  
The tenth of August last this dreadful lord, 110

Retiring from the siege of Orleans,  
Having full scarce six thousand in his troop,

By three and twenty thousand of the French  
Was round encompassed and set upon.

No leisure had he to enrank his men;  
He wanted pikers to set before his archers;

Instead whereof sharp stakes pick'd out of  
hedges

They pitched in the ground confusedly,  
To keep the horsemen off from breaking in.

More than three hours the fight continued; 120  
When valiant Talbot above human thought

Enacted wonders with his sword and lance:  
Hundreds he sent to hell, and none durst name

him;

# FIRST PART OF KING HENRY VI

[ACT I

and every where, enraged he flew:  
 ... exclaim'd, the devil was in arms;  
 ... whole army stood amazed on him:  
 ... soldiers spying his undaunted spirit  
 A Talbot! a Talbot! cried out again  
 And rush'd into the bowels of the battle.  
 Here had the conquest fully been seal'd up, 130  
 If Sir John Fastolf had not play'd the coward:  
 He, being in the vaward, placed behind  
 With purpose to relieve and follow them,  
 Cowardly fled, not having struck one stroke.  
 Hence grew the general wreck and massacre;  
 Enclosed were they with their enemies:  
 A base Walloon, to win the Dauphin's grace,  
 Thrust Talbot with a spear into the back,  
 Whom all France with their chief assembled  
 strength

Durst not presume to look once in the face. 140  
*Bed.* Is Talbot slain? then I will slay myself.

For living idly here in pomp and ease,  
 Whilst such a worthy leader, wanting aid,  
 Unto his dastard foemen is betray'd.  
*Mess.* O no, he lives; but is took prisoner,  
 And Lord Scales with him and Lord Hungerford:

Most of the rest slaughter'd or took likewise.  
*Bed.* His ransom there is none but I shall pay:

I'll take the Dauphin headlong from his throne: 149

His crown shall be the ransom of my friend;  
 Four of their lords I'll change for one of ours.  
 Farewell, my masters; to my task will I;  
 Bonfires in France forthwith I am to make,  
 To keep our great Saint George's feast withal:  
 Ten thousand soldiers with me I will take,  
 Whose bloody deeds shall make all Europe  
 quake.

*Mess.* So you had need; for Orleans is besieged;  
 The English army is grown weak and faint:  
 The Earl of Salisbury craveth supply,  
 And hardly keeps his men from mutiny, 160  
 Since they, so few, watch such a multitude.

*Bed.* Remember, lords, your oaths to Henry sworn,

Either to quell the Dauphin utterly,  
 Or bring him in obedience to your yoke.

*Bed.* I do remember it; and here take my leave,

To go about my preparation. [Exit.]  
*Glo.* I'll to the Tower with all the haste I can.

To view the artillery and munition;  
 And then I will proclaim young Henry king. [Exit.]

*Bed.* To Eatham will I, where the young king is. 170

Being certain'd his special governor,  
 And for his safety there I'll best devise. [Exit.]

*Win.* Each hath his place and function to attend:

I am left out; for me nothing remains.  
 But hang I will not be Jack out of office:

The king from Eatham I intend to steal  
 And sit at chiefest stem of public weal.

[Exeunt.]

## SCENE II. France. Before Orleans.

*Sound a flourish. Enter CHARLES, ALENÇON, and BURGUNDY, marching with drum and soldiers.*

*Char.* Mars his true moving, even as in the heavens

So in the earth, to this day is not known:  
 Late did he shine upon the English side;

Now we are victors; upon us he smiles.  
 What towns of any moment but we have?

At pleasure here we lie near Orleans;  
 Otherwhiles the famish'd English, like pale

ghosts,  
 Faintly besiege us one hour in a month.

*Alen.* They want their porridge and their faul bull-beeves:

Either they must be dieted like mules  
 And have their provender tied to their mouths:

Or pitcous they will look, like drowned mice.  
*Resp.* Let's raise the siege: why live we

idly here?  
 Talbot is taken, whom we wont to fear:

Remaineth none but mad-brain'd Salisbury;  
 And he may well in fretting spend his gall,

Nor men nor money hath he to make war.  
*Char.* Sound, sound alarm! we will rush

on them.  
 Now for the honour of the forlorn French!

Him I forgive my death that killeth me  
 When he sees me go back one foot or fly. [Exeunt.]

*Here alarm: they are beaten back by the English with great loss. Re-enter CHARLES, ALENÇON, and BURGUNDY.*

*Char.* Who ever saw the like! what men have I!

Dogs! cowards! dastards! I would ne'er have fled.

But that they left me 'midst my enemies.  
*Resp.* Salisbury is a desperate homicide;

He fighteth as one weary of his life.  
 The other lords, like lions wanting food,

Do rush upon us as their hungry prey.  
*Alen.* Froismart, a countryman of our

records,  
 England all Oivers and Rowlands bred

During the time Edward the Third did reign.  
 More truly now may this be verified;

For none but Samsons and Goliaths  
 It sendeth forth to skirmish. One to ten!

Lean raw-boned rascals! who would e'er suppose

They had such courage and audacity!  
*Char.* Let's leave this town; for they are

hard-brain'd slaves,  
 And hunger will enforce them to be more

eager:  
 Of old I know them; rather with their teeth

The walls they'll tear down than forsake the siege.

*Resp.* I think, by some odd glimmers of device

Their arms are set like clocks, still to strike on;  
 Else ne'er could they hold out so as they do.

By my consent, we'll even let them alone.  
*Alen.* Be it so.

*Enter the BASTARD of Orleans.*

*Bast.* Where's the Prince Dauphin? I have news for him.

*Char.* Bastard of Orleans, thrice welcome to us.

*Bast.* Methinks your looks are sad, your cheer appall'd:

Hath the late overthrow wrought this offence? Be not dismay'd, for succour is at hand:

A holy maid hither with me I bring, 50  
Which by a vision sent to her from heaven  
Ordained is to raise this tedious siege

And drive the English forth the bounds of France.

The spirit of deep prophecy she hath,  
Exceeding the nine sibyls of old Rome:

What's past and what's to come she can descry.  
Speak, shall I call her in? Believe my words,

For they are certain and unfallible.

*Char.* Go, call her in. [*Exit Bastard.*]

But first, to try her skill, 60  
Reignier, stand thou as Dauphin in my place:

Question her proudly; let thy looks be stern:  
By this means shall we sound what skill she hath.

[*Re-enter the BASTARD of Orleans, with JOAN LA PUCELLE.*]

*Reig.* Fair maid, is't thou wilt do these wondrous feats?

*Puc.* Reignier, is't thou that thinkest to beguile me?

Where is the Dauphin? Come, come from behind:

I know thee well, though never seen before.  
Be not amazed, there's nothing hid from me:

In private will I talk with thee apart.  
Stand back, you lords, and give us leave awhile.

*Reig.* She takes upon her bravely at first dash.

*Puc.* Dauphin, I am by birth a shepherd's daughter, 70

My wit untrain'd in any kind of art.  
Heaven and our Lady gracious hath it pleased

To shine on my contemptible estate:  
Lo, whilst I waited on my tender lambs,

And to sun's parishing heat display'd my cheeks,  
God's mother deigned to appear to me

And in a vision full of majesty  
Will'd me to leave my base vocation 80

And free my country from calamity:  
Her aid she promised and assured success:

In complete glory she reveal'd herself;  
And, whereas I was black and swart before,

With those clear eyes which she infused on me  
That beauty am I blest with which you see.

Ask me what question thou canst possible,  
And I will answer unpermeditated:

My courage try by combat, if thou darest,  
And thou shalt find that I exceed my sex. 90

Resolve on this, thou shalt be fortunate,  
If thou receive me for thy warlike mate.

*Char.* Thou hast astonish'd me with thy terms;

Only this proof I'll of thy valour make:  
In single combat thou shalt buckle with me.

And if thou vanquishest, thy words are true;  
Otherwise I renounces all confidence.

*Puc.* I am prepared: here is my keen-edged sword.

Deck'd with five flower-de-luces on each side;  
The which at Toursaine, in Saint Katharine's

churchyard, 100  
Out of a great deal of old iron I chose forth.

*Char.* Then come, o' God's name; I fear no woman.

*Puc.* And while I live, I'll ne'er fly from a man.

[*Here they fight, and Joan La Pucelle overcomes.*]

*Char.* Stay, stay thy hands! thou art an Amazon

And fightest with the sword of Deborah.  
*Puc.* Christ's mother helps me, else I were

too weak.  
*Char.* Whoe'er helps thee, 'tis thou that

must help me:  
Impatiently I burn with thy desire;

My heart and hands thou hast at once subdued.  
Excellent Pucelle, if thy name be so, 110

Let me thy servant and not sovereign be:  
Tis the French Dauphin sueth to thee thus.

*Puc.* I must not yield to any rites of love,  
For my profession's sacred from above:

When I have chased all thy foes from hence,  
Then will I think upon a recompense.

*Char.* Meantime look gracious on thy prostrate thrall.

*Reig.* My lord, methinks, is very long in talk.

*Alen.* Doubtless he shaves this woman to her smock;

Else ne'er could he so long protract his speech.  
*Reig.* Shall we disturb him, since he keeps

no mean? 120  
*Alen.* He may mean more than we poor

men do know:  
These women are shrewd tempters with their

tongues.  
*Reig.* My lord, where are you? what devise

you on?

Shall we give over Orleans, or no?

*Puc.* Why, no, I say, distrustful remnants!  
Fight till the last gasp; I will be your guard.

*Char.* What she says I'll confirm; we'll fight it out.

*Puc.* Asign'd am I to be the English scourge.

This night the siege assuredly I'll raise: 130  
Expect Saint Martin's summer, halcyon days,

Since I have entered into these wars.  
Glory is like a circle in the water,

Which never ceaseth to enlarge itself  
Till by broad spreading it disfigure to 140

With Henry's death the English circle:  
Dispersed are the glories it included.

Now am I like that proud insulting ship  
Which Caesar and his fortune borest down:

*Char.* Was Mahomet inspired with a dove?  
Thou with an eagle art inspired? 150

Helen, the mother of great Constantine,  
Was yet Saint Philip's daughter, maid

And yet she was the daughter of a king,  
How may I reverently worship thee enough?

*Alen.* Leave off delays, and let us raise the

*Brig.* Woman, do what thou canst to save our honours;

Drive them from Orleans and be immortalised.

*Char.* Presently we'll try: come, let's away about it:

No prophet will I trust, if she prove false. 150  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *London. Before the Tower.*

*Enter the DUKE OF GLOUCESTER, with his Serving-men in blue coats.*

*Glos.* I am come to survey the Tower this day:

Since Henry's death, I fear, there is conveyance. Where be these warders, that they wait not here!

Open the gates; 'tis Gloucester that calls.

*First Warder.* [Within] Who's there that knocks so imperiously!

*First Serv.* It is the noble Duke of Gloucester.

*Second Warder.* [Within] Whoe'er he be, you may not be let in.

*First Serv.* Villains, answer you so the lord protector!

*First Warder.* [Within] The Lord protect him! so we answer him:

We do no otherwise than we are will'd. 10

*Glos.* Who willed you? or whose will stands but mine!

There's none protector of the realm but I. Break up the gates, I'll be your warrant:

Shall I be flouted thus by dunghill grooms?

[*Gloucester's men rush at the Tower Gates, and Woodville the Lieutenant speaks within.*]

*Woods.* What noise is this! what traitors have we here?

*Glos.* Lieutenant, is it you whose voice I hear?

Open the gates; here's Gloucester that would enter.

*Woods.* Have patience, noble duke; I may not open:

The Cardinal of Winchester forbids: From him I have express commandment 20

That thou nor none of thine shall be let in.

*Glos.* Faint-hearted Woodville, prizest him for me!

Arrogant Winchester, that haughty prelate, Whom Henry, our late sovereign, ne'er could break!

Thou art no friend to God or to the king: Open the gates, or I'll shut thee out shortly.

*Serving-men.* Open the gates unto the lord protector,

Or we'll burst them open, if that you come not quickly.

*Enter to the Protector at the Tower Gates WINCHESTER and his men in tawny coats.*

*Win.* How now, ambitious Humphry! what's this?

So he shut out!

me 30

*Win.* I do, thou most usurping proditor, And not protector, of the king or realm.

*Glos.* Stand back, thou manifest constable; Thou that contrivedst to murder our dead lord;

Thou that givest whores indulgences to sin: I'll canvass thee in thy broad cardinal's hat,

If thou proceed in this thy insolence.

*Win.* Nay, stand thou back; I will not budge a foot:

This be Damascus, be thou cursed Cain, To slay thy brother Abel, if thou wilt.

*Glos.* I will not slay thee, but I'll drive thee back:

Thy scarlet robes as a child's bearing-cloth I'll use to carry thee out of this place.

*Win.* Do what thou darest; I beard thee to thy face.

*Glos.* What! am I dared and bearded to my face?

Draw, men, for all this privileged place; Blue coats to tawny coats. Priest, beware your beard;

I mean to tug it and to cuff you soundly: Under my feet I stamp thy cardinal's hat:

In spite of pope or dignities of church, 30 Here by the cheeks I'll drag thee up and down.

*Win.* Gloucester, thou wilt answer this before the pope.

*Glos.* Winchester goose, I cry, a rope! a rope!

Now beat them hence; why do you let them stay!

Thee I'll chase hence, thou wolf in sheep's array.

Out, tawny coats! out, scarlet hypocrite!

*Here Gloucester's men beat out the Cardinal's men, and enter in the hurly-burly the Mayor of London and his Officers.*

*May.* Fie, lords! that you, being supreme magistrates,

Thus contumeliously should break the peace!

*Glos.* Peace, mayor! thou knowst little of my wrongs:

Here's Beaufort, that regards not God nor king, 60

Hath here distrain'd the Tower to his use.

*Win.* Here's Gloucester, a foe to citizens. One that still motions war and never peace.

(*Vercharging your free purses with large fines,*

That seeks to overthrow religion,

Because he is protector of the realm, And would have armour here out of the Tower,

To crown himself king and suppress the prince.

*Glos.* I will not answer thee with words, but blows. [*Here they skirmish again.*]

*May.* Nought rests for me in this tumultuous strife 70

But to make open proclamation: Come, officer; as loud as e'er thou canst Cry.

*Off.* All manner of men assembled here in arms this day against God's peace and the king's, we charge and command you, in his highness' name, to depart from all dwelling-places; and not to wear sword, weapon, or dagger, upon

pain of death.



*Glow.* Cardinal, I'll be no breaker of the law:

But we shall meet, and break our minds at large.

*Win.* Gloucester, we will meet; to thy cost, be sure:

Thy heart-blood I will have for this day's work.

*May.* I'll call for clubs, if you will not away.

This cardinal's more haughty than the devil.

*Glow.* Mayor, farewell: thou dost but what thou mayst.

*Win.* Abominable Gloucester, guard thy head:

For I intend to have it ere long.

[*Exeunt, severally, Gloucester and Winchester with their Serving-men.*]

*May.* See the coast clear'd, and then we will depart.

Good God, these nobles should such stomachs bear!

I myself fight not once in forty year. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE IV. Orleans.

*Enter, on the walls, a Master Gunner and his Boy.*

*M. Gun.* Sirrah, thou know'st how Orleans is besieged,

And how the English have the suburbs won.

*Boy.* Father, I know; and oft have shot at them,

How'er unfortunate I miss'd my aim.

*M. Gun.* But now thou shalt not. Be thou ruled by me:

Chief master-gunner am I of this town;

Something I must do to procure me grace.

The prince's capials have inform'd me

How the English, in the suburbs close in-trench'd,

Went through a secret grate of iron bars

In yonder tower to overpeer the city

And thence discover how with most advantage

They may vex us with shot or with assault.

To intercept this inconvenience,

A piece of ordnance 'gainst it I have placed;

And even these three days have I watch'd,

If I could see them.

Now do thou watch, for I can stay no longer.

If thou spy'st any, run and bring me word;

And thou shalt find me at the governor's. [*Exit.*]

*Boy.* Father, I warrant you; take you no care;

I'll never trouble you, if I may spy them. [*Exit.*]

*Enter, on the turrets, the LORDS SALISBURY and TALBOT, SIR WILLIAM GLANSDALE, SIR THOMAS GARGRAVE, and others.*

*Sal.* Talbot, my life, my joy, again return'd!

How wert thou handled being prisoner?

Or by what means got at thou to be released?

*Discount.* I prithee, on this turret's top.

*Tal.* The Duke of Bedford had a prisoner

Call'd the brave Lord Ponton de Santilles;

For him was I exchanged and ransomed.

But with a haire man of arms by far

Once in contempt they would have barter'd me:

Which I disdain'd scorn'd and crav'd death

Rather than I would be so vile-esteem'd.

In fine, redeem'd I was as I desired.

But, O! the treacherous Fastolfe wounds my heart.

Whom with my bare fists I would execute,

If I now had him brought into my power.

*Sal.* Yet tell'st thou not how thou wert entertain'd.

*Tal.* With scoffs and scorns and contumelious taunts.

In open market-place produced they me,

To be a public spectacle to all.

Here, said they, is the terror of the French,

The scarecrow that affrights our children so.

Then broke I from the officers that led me,

And with my nails digg'd stones out of the ground.

To hurt at the beholders of my shame:

My grisly countenance made others fly;

None durst come near for fear of sudden death.

In iron walls they deem'd me not secure;

So great fear of my name 'mongst them was spread

That they supposed I could rend bars of steel

And spurn in pieces posts of adamant:

Wherefore a guard of chosen shot I had

That walk'd about me every minute while;

And if I did but stir out of my bed,

Ready they were to shoot me to the heart.

*Enter the Boy with a linstock.*

*Sal.* I grieve to hear what torments you endured.

But we will be revenged sufficiently.

Now it is supper-time in Orleans:

Here, through this grate, I count each one

And view the Frenchmen how they fortify;

Let us look in; the sight will much delight thee.

Sir Thomas Gargrave, and Sir William Glansdale,

Let me have your express opinions

Where is best place to make our battery next.

*Gar.* I think, at the north gate; for there stand lords.

*Glas.* And I, here, at the bulwark of the bridge.

*Tal.* For aught I see, this city must be famish'd,

Or with light skirmishes enfeebled.

[*Here they shoot. Salisbury and Gargrave fall.*]

*Sal.* O Lord, have mercy on us, wretched sinners!

*Gar.* O Lord, have mercy on me, woful man!

*Tal.* What chance is this that suddenly hath crown'd us!

Speak, Salisbury; at least, if thou canst speak:

How farrest thou, mirror of all martial men?

One of thy eyes and thy cheek's side struck off!

Accused tower! accused fatal hand!

That hath contrived this woful tragedy!

In thirteen battles Salisbury's brains;

Henry the Fifth he first train'd to the wars;

Whilst any trumpet did sound, or drum struck up,

Sword did ne'er leave striking in the field,

At least thou, Salisbury!

doth

One eye thou hast, to look to heaven for grace:  
The sun with one eye vieweth all the world.  
Heaven, be thou gracious to none alive,  
If Salisbury wants mercy at thy hands!  
Here hence his body: I will help to bury it.  
Sir Thomas Gargrave, hast thou any life?  
Speak unto Talbot; nay, look up to him.  
Salisbury, cheer thy spirit with this comfort;  
Thou shalt not die whiles—  
He beckons with his hand and smiles on me,  
As who should say 'When I am dead and gone,  
Remember to avenge me on the French.'  
Plantagenet, I will; and like thee, Nero,  
Play on the lute, beholding the towns burn:  
Wretched shall France be only in my name.  
*[Here an alarm, and it thunders and lightens.]*  
What stir is this? what tumult 's in the heavens?  
Whence cometh this alarm and the noise?

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My lord, my lord, the French have  
gather'd head:  
The Dauphin, with one Joan la Pucelle joir'd,  
A holy prophetess new risen up,  
Is come with a great power to raise the siege.  
*[Here Salisbury lifteth himself up and groans.]*  
*Tal.* Hear, hear how dying Salisbury doth  
groan!  
It irks his heart he cannot be revenged.  
Frenchmen, I'll be a Salisbury to you:  
Pucelle or puzzle, dolphin or dogfish,  
Your hearts I'll stamp out with my horse's  
heels,  
And make a quagmire of your mingled brains.  
Convey me Salisbury into his tent,  
And then we'll try what these dastard French-  
men dare, *[Alarm. Exit.]*

*SCENE V. The same.*

*Here an alarm again; and TALBOT pursueth  
the DAUPHIN, and driveth him; then enter  
JOAN LA PUCELLE, driving Englishmen  
before her, and exit after them: then re-  
enter TALBOT.*

*Tal.* Where is my strength, my valour, and  
my force?  
Our English troops retire, I cannot stay them;  
A woman clad in armour chaseth them.

*Re-enter LA PUCELLE.*

Here, here she comes, I'll have a bout with  
thee;  
Devil or devil's dam, I'll conjure thee:  
Blood will I draw on thee, thou art a witch,  
And straightway give thy soul to him thou

*Puc.* Unea, come, 'tis only I that must  
disgrace thee. *[Here they fight.]*  
*Tal.* Heavena, can you suffer hell so to pre-  
vail?

My breast I'll burst with straining of my  
arms;  
And when my shoulders crack my arms aunder,  
I'll chasise this high-minded strumpet.  
*[They fight again.]*  
*Talbot.* Harewell; thy hour is not yet  
come.

I must go victual Orleans forthwith.

*[A short alarm; then enter the town  
with soldiers.]*

O'ertake me, if thou canst; I scorn strength.  
Go, go, cheer up thy hungry men;  
Help Salisbury to make his list:  
This day is ours, as many more  
*Tal.* My thoughts are whirled  
wheel;

I know not where I am, nor what I  
A witch, by fear, not force, like Hannibal,  
Drives back our troops and conquers as she  
lists:

So bees with smoke and doves with noisome  
stench

Are from their hives and houses driven away.  
They call'd us for our fierceness English dogs;  
Now, like to whelps, we crying run away.

*[A short alarm.]*

Hark, countrymen! either view the fight,  
Or tear the lions out of England's coat;  
Renounce your soil, give sheep in lions' stead!  
Sheep run not half so treacherous from the  
wolf,

Or horse or oxen from the leopard,  
As you fly from your oft-subdued slaves.

*[Alarm. Here another skirmish.]*

It will not be: retire into your trenches:  
You all consented unto Salisbury's death,  
For none would strike a stroke in his revenge.  
Pucelle is enter'd into Orleans,  
In spite of us or aught that we could do.  
O, would I were to die with Salisbury!  
The shame hereof will make me hide my head.  
*[Exit Talbot. Alarm; retreat; flourish.]*

*SCENE VI. The same.*

*Enter, on the walls, LA PUCELLE, CHARLES,  
REIGNIER, ALENÇON, and Soldiers.*

*Puc.* Advance our waving colours on the  
walls;

Rescued is Orleans from the English:  
Thus Joan la Pucelle hath perform'd her word.

*Char.* Divinest creature, Astraea's daughter,  
How shall I honour thee for this success?  
Thy promises are like Adonis' gardens  
That one day bloom'd and fruitful were the  
next.

France, triumph in thy glorious prophesies:  
Recovered is the town of Orleans:

More blessed hap did ne'er befall our state.

*Reig.* Why ring not out the bells aloud  
throughout the town?

Dauphin, command the citizens make bonfires  
And feast and banquet in the open streets,  
To celebrate the joy that God hath given us.

*Alen.* All France will be replete with mirth  
and joy,

When they shall hear how we have play'd the  
men.

*Char.* 'Tis Joan, not we, by whom the day  
is won:

For which I will divide my crown with her,  
And all the priests and monks in my realm  
shall in procession sing her endless praises.  
A statelier pyramid to her I'll surmount  
Than Rhodope's or Mount Olympus was:

In memory of her when she is dead,  
 Her ashes in an urn more precious  
 Than the rich-jewell'd coffer of Darius,  
 Transported shall be at high festivals  
 Before the kings and queens of France.  
 No longer on Saint Denis will we cry,  
 But Jean la Pucelle shall be France's saint.  
 Come in, and let us banquet royally,  
 After this golden day of victory. 30  
*[Flourish. Excunt.]*

## ACT II.

## SCENE I. Before Orleans.

*Enter a Sergeant of a band, with two  
 Sentinels.*

*Serg.* Sirs, take your places and be vigilant:  
 If any noise or soldier you perceive  
 Near to the walls, by some apparent sign  
 Let us have knowledge at the court of guard.

*First Sent.* Sergeant, you shall. *[Exit Ser-  
 geant.]* Thus are poor servitors,  
 When others sleep upon their quiet beds,  
 Constrain'd to watch in darkness, rain and  
 cold.

*[Enter TALBOT, BEDFORD, BURGUNDY, and  
 forces, with scaling-ladders, their drums  
 beating a dead march.]*

*Tal.* Lord Regent, and redoubt'd Burgundy,  
 By whose approach the regions of Artois,  
 Wallon and Picardy are friends to us, 10  
 This happy night the Frenchmen are secure,  
 Having all day caroused and banqueted:  
 Embrace we then this opportunity  
 As fitting best to quittance their deceit  
 Contrived by art and baleful sorcery.

*Bed.* Coward of France! how much he  
 wrongs his fame,  
 Despairing of his own arm's fortitude,  
 To join with witches and the help of hell!  
*Bur.* Traitors have never other company,  
 But what's that Pucelle whom they term so  
 pure! 20

*Tal.* A maid, they say.

*Bed.* A maid! and be so martial!  
*Bur.* Pray God she prove not masculine ere  
 long.

If underneath the standard of the French  
 She carry armour as she hath begun.

*Tal.* Well, let them practise and converse  
 with spirits:

God is our fortress, in whose conquering name  
 Let us resolve to scale their stinky bulwarks.

*Bed.* Ascend, brave Talbot; we will follow  
 thee.

*Tal.* Not all together: better far, I guess,  
 That we do make our entrance several ways; 30  
 That, if it chanceth that one of us do fail,  
 The other yet may rise against their force.

*Bed.* Agreed: I'll to yond corner.

*Bur.* And I to this.

*Tal.* And here will Talbot mount, or make  
 his grave.  
 Now, Salisbury, see thee, and for the right  
 Of English Henry, shall this night appear  
 How much in duty I am bound to both.

*Sent.* Arm! arm! the enemy doth make  
 assault! *[Cry: 'St George,' 'A Talbot!']*

*The French leap over the walls in their shirts.  
 Enter, several ways, the BASTARD OF ORLEANS,  
 ALENÇON, and REIGNIER, half ready, and  
 half unready.*

*Alen.* How now, my lords! what, all un-  
 ready so!

*Bast.* Unready! ay, and glad we 'scaped so  
 well.

*Reig.* Was time, I trow, to wake and leave  
 our beds,

Hearing alarms at our chamber-doors.

*Alen.* Of all exploits since first I follow'd  
 arms,

Ne'er heard I of a warlike enterprise  
 More venturous or desperate than this.

*Bast.* I think this Talbot be a fiend of hell.

*Reig.* If not of hell, the heavens, sure, favour  
 him.

*Alen.* Here cometh Charles: I marvel how  
 he sped.

*Bast.* Tut, holy Joan was his defensive  
 guard.

*Enter CHARLES and LA PUCELLE.*

*Char.* Is this thy cunning, thou deceitful  
 dame! 50

Didst thou at first, to flatter us withal,  
 Make us partakers of a little gain,

That now our loss might be ten times so much?

*Puc.* Wherefore is Charles impatient with  
 his friend?

At all times will you have my power alike?  
 Sleeping or waking must I still prevail,

Or will you blame and lay the fault on me?  
 Improvident soldiers! had your watch been  
 good,

This sudden mischief never could have fall'n.

*Char.* Duke of Alençon, this was your  
 default, 60

That, being captain of the watch to-night,  
 Did look no better to that weighty charge.

*Alen.* Had all your quarters been as safely  
 kept

As that whereof I had the government,  
 We had not been thus shamefully surpris'd.

*Bast.* Mine was secure.

*Reig.* And so was mine, my lord.

*Char.* And, for myself, most part of all this  
 night,

Within her quarter and mine own precinct  
 I was employ'd in passing to and fro,

About relieving of the sentinels: 70  
 Then how or which way should they first  
 break in!

*Puc.* Question, my lords, no further of the  
 case,

How or which way: 'tis sure they found some  
 place

But weakly guarded, where the breach was

And now there remains no other shift but this:  
 To gather our soldiers, counter it with arrows,  
 And lay new platforms to undermine them.

*Alarm.* Enter an English Soldier, crying 'A Talbot! a Talbot!' They fly, leaving their clothes behind.

*Sold.* I'll be so bold to take what they have left.

The cry of Talbot serves me for a sword;  
For I have loaden me with many spoils, 80  
Using no other weapon but his name. [Exit.]

SCENE II. Orleans. Within the town.

Enter TALBOT, BEDFORD, BURGUNDY, a Captain, and others.

*Bed.* The day begins to break, and night is fled,

Whose pitchy mantle over-veil'd the earth.  
Here sound retreat, and cease our hot pursuit. [Retreat sounded.]

*Tal.* Bring forth the body of old Salisbury,  
And here advance it in the market-place,  
The middle centre of this cursed town.  
Now have I paid my vow unto his soul;  
For every drop of blood was drawn from him  
There hath at least five Frenchmen died to-night.

And that hereafter ages may behold 20  
What ruin happen'd in revenge of him,  
Within their chiefest temple I'll erect  
A tomb, wherein his corpse shall be interr'd:  
Upon the which, that every one may read,  
Shall be engraved the sack of Orleans,  
The treacherous manner of his mournful death  
And what a terror he had been to France.  
But, lords, in all our bloody massacre,  
I muse we met not with the Dauphin's grace,  
His new-come champion, virtuous Joan of Arc,  
Nor any of his false confederates. 21

*Bed.* 'Tis thought, Lord Talbot, when the fight began,

Roused on the sudden from their drowsy beds,  
They did amongst the troops of armed men  
Leap o'er the walls for refuge in the field.

*Bur.* Myself, as far as I could well discern  
For smoke and dusky vapours of the night,  
Am sure I scared the Dauphin and his trull,  
When arm in arm they both came swiftly running.

Like to a pair of loving turtle-doves 30  
That could not live asunder day or night.  
After that things are set in order here,  
We'll follow them with all the power we have.

Enter a Messenger.

*Mess.* All hail, my lords! Which of this princely train  
Call ye the warlike Talbot, for his acts  
So much applauded through the realm of France!

*Tal.* Here is the Talbot: who would speak with him!

*Mess.* The virtuous lady, Countess of

Wilt, modestly admiring thy renown,  
By me, entreats, great lord, thou wouldst vouch-

40

your house she hath beheld the man

Whose glory fills the world with loud report.

*Bur.* Is it even so? Nay, then, I see our wars

Will turn unto a peaceful comic sport.  
When ladies crave to be encounter'd with.  
You may not, my lord, despise her gentle suit.

*Tal.* Ne'er trust me then; for when a world of men

Could not prevail with all their oratory,  
Yet hath a woman's kindness over-ruled:

And therefore tell her I return great thanks,  
And in submission will attend on her.

Will not your honours bear me company?  
*Bed.* No, truly; it is more than manners will:

And I have heard it said, unbidden guests  
Are often welcome when they are gone.

*Tal.* Well then, alone, since there's no remedy,

I mean to prove this lady's courtesy.  
Come hither, captain. [Whisper.] You perceive my mind!

*Capt.* I do, my lord, and mean accordingly. [Exit, &c.]

SCENE III. Auvergne. The Countess's castle.

Enter the COUNTESS and her Porter.

*Count.* Porter, remember what I gave in charge;

And when you have done so, bring the keys to me.

*Port.* Madam, I will. [Exit.]

*Count.* The plot is laid: if all things fall out right,

I shall as famous be by this exploit  
As Scythian Tonyris by 'tyrus' death.

Great is the rumour of this dreadful knight,  
And his achievements of no less account:

Fain would mine eyes be witness with mine ears,  
To give their censure of these rare reports.

Enter Messenger and TALBOT.

*Mess.* Madam,  
According as your ladyship desired,  
By message craved, so is Lord Talbot come.

*Count.* And he is welcome. What! is this the man?

*Mess.* Madam, it is.

*Count.* Is this the scourge of France?  
Is this the Talbot, so much fear'd abroad?

That with his name the mothers still their babes?

I see report is fabulous and false:  
I thought I should have seen some Hercules,

A second Hector, for his grim aspect,  
And large proportion of his strong-knit limbs.

Alas, this is a child, a silly dwarf!  
It cannot be this weak and wrinkled shrump

Should strike such terror to his enemies.  
*Tal.* Madam, I have been told to trouble

you;  
But since your ladyship is not at leisure,

I'll sort some other time to visit you.  
*Count.* What means he now? Go ask him

whither he goes.

*Mess.* Stay, my Lord Talbot; for my lady <sup>craves</sup>  
To know the cause of your abrupt departure. 30  
*Tal.* Marry, for that she's in a wrong belief,  
I go to certify her Talbot's here.

*Re-enter Porter with keys.*

*Count.* If thou be he, then art thou prisoner.  
*Tal.* Prisoner! to whom?

*Count.* To me, blood-thirsty lord;  
And for that cause I train'd thee to my house.  
Long time thy shadow hath been thrall to me,  
For in my gallery thy picture hangs:  
But now the substance shall endure the like,  
And I will chain these legs and arms of thine,  
That hat by tyranny these many years 40  
Wasted our country, slain our citizens  
And sent our sons and husbands captivate.

*Tal.* Ha, ha, ha!

*Count.* Laughest thou, wretch! thy mirth  
shall turn to moan.

*Tal.* I laugh to see your ladyship so fond  
To think that you have aught but Talbot's  
shadow

Whereon to practise your severity.

*Count.* Why, art not thou the man!

*Tal.* I am indeed.

*Count.* Then have I substance too.

*Tal.* No, no, I am but shadow of myself: 50  
You are deceived, my substance is not here;  
For what you see is but the smallest part  
And least proportion of humanity:  
I tell you, madam, were the whole frame here,  
It is of such a spacious lofty pitch,  
Your roof were not sufficient to contain't.

*Count.* This is a riddling merchant for the  
nonce;

He will be here, and yet he is not here:

How can these contraries agree!

*Tal.* That will I show you presently. 60  
[*Winds his horn. Drums strike up: a*

*peal of ordnance. Enter Soldiers.*  
How say you, madam! are you now persuaded  
That Talbot is but shadow of himself?  
These are his substance, sinews, arms and  
strength,

With which he yoketh your rebellious necks,  
Liazeth your cities and subverts your towns  
And in a moment makes them desolate.

*Count.* Victorious Talbot! pardon my abuse:  
I find thou art no less than fame hath bruited  
And more than may be gather'd by thy shape.  
Let my presumption not provoke thy wrath; 70  
For I am sorry that with reverence  
I did not entertain thee as thou art.

*Tal.* Be not dismay'd, fair lady; nor mis-  
construe

The mind of Talbot, as you did mistake  
The outward composition of his body.

What you have done hath not offended me;  
Nor other satisfaction do I crave,

But only, with your patience, that we may  
Taste of your wine and see what cates you have;  
For soldiers' stomachs always serve them well.

*Count.* With all my heart, and think me  
honoured

To feast so great a warrior in my house.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV. *London. The Temple-garden.*

*Enter the EARLS OF SOMERSET, SUFFOLK, and  
WARWICK; RICHARD PLANTAGENET, VER-  
NON, and another Lawyer.*

*Plan.* Great lords and gentlemen, what  
means this silence!

Dare no man answer in a case of truth!

*Suf.* Within the Temple-hall we were too  
loud;

The garden here is more convenient.

*Plan.* Then say at once if I maintain'd the  
truth;

Or else was wrangling Somerset in the error!

*Suf.* Faith, I have been a truant in the law,  
And never yet could frame my will to it;

And therefore frame the law unto my will.  
*Som.* Judge you, my Lord of Warwick, then,  
between us.

*War.* Between two hawks, which flies the  
higher pitch;

Between two dogs, which hath the deeper  
mouth;

Between two blades, which bears the better  
temper;

Between two horses, which doth bear him best;  
Between two girls, which hath the merriest eye;

I have perhaps some shallow spirit of judge-  
ment;

But in these nice sharp quillets of the law,

Good faith, I am no wiser than a daw.

*Plan.* Tut, tut, here is a mannerly forbear-  
ance:

The truth appears so naked on my side 80  
That any purblind eye may find it out.

*Som.* And on my side it is so well apparell'd,  
So clear, so shining and so evident

That it will glimmer through a blind man's eye.  
*Plan.* Since you are tongue-tied and so loath  
to speak,

In dumb significants proclaim your thoughts:  
Let him that is a true-born gentleman

And stands upon the honour of his birth,

If he suppose that I have pleaded truth,  
From off this brier pluck a white rose with me. 90

*Som.* Let him that is no coward nor so faint-  
terer,

But dare maintain the party of the truth,  
Pluck a red rose from off this thorn with me.

*War.* I love no colour, and without all  
colour

Of base insinuating flattery

I pluck this white rose with Plantagenet.

*Suf.* I pluck this red rose with young  
Somerset

And say withal I think he held the right.

*Ver.* Stay, lords and gentlemen, and pluck  
no more.

Till you conclude that he upon whose side 90  
The fewest roses are cropp'd from the tree

Shall yield the other in the right opinion.

*Som.* Good Master Vernon, it is well ob-  
jected:

If I have forest, I subscribe in silence.

*Plan.* And I.

*Ver.* Then for the truth and pleasure of the

I pluck this pale and maiden blossom here,  
Giving my verdict on the white rose side.

*Som.* Pluck not your finger as you pluck it  
off.

Least bleeding you do paint the white rose red  
And fall on my side so, against your will.

*Ver.* If I, my lord, for my opinion bleed,  
Opinion shall be surgeon to my hurt  
And keep me on the side where still I am.

*Som.* Well, well, come on: who else?

*Law.* Unless my study and my books be  
false,

The argument you held was wrong in you:

[*To Somerset.*]

In sign whereof I pluck a white rose too.

*Plan.* Now, Somerset, where is your argu-  
ment?

*Som.* Here in my scabbard, meditating that  
shall dye your white rose in a bloody red.

*Plan.* Meantime your cheeks do counterfeit  
our roses;

For pale they look with fear, as witnessing  
The truth on our side.

*Som.* No, Plantagenet,

'Tis not for fear but anger that thy cheeks  
Blush for pure shame to counterfeit our roses,  
And yet thy tongue will not confess thy error.

*Plan.* Hath not thy rose a canker, Somer-  
set?

*Som.* Hath not thy rose a thorn, Plantagenet?

*Plan.* Ay, sharp and piercing, to maintain  
his truth;

Whence thy consuming canker eats his false-  
hood.

*Som.* Well, I'll find friends to wear my  
bleeding roses.

That shall maintain what I have said is true,  
Where false Plantagenet dare not be seen.

*Plan.* Now, by this sudden blossom in my  
hand,

I scorn thee and thy fashion, peevish boy.

*Suf.* Turn not thy scorn this way, Planta-  
genet.

*Plan.* Proud Pole, I will, and scorn both  
him and thee.

*Suf.* I'll turn my part thereof into thy  
scurf.

*Som.* Away, away, good William de la  
Pole!

We grace the yeoman by conversing with him.

*Ver.* Now, by God's will, thou wrong'st him,  
Somerset;

His grandfather was Lionel Duke of Clarence,  
Third son to the third Edward King of Eng-  
land;

Spring countless yeomen from so deep a root!

*Plan.* He bears him on the place's privilege,  
Or dare not, for his craven heart, say thus.

*Som.* By him that made me, I'll maintain  
my words.

And, by his treason, stand 'st not thou attainted,  
Overgrown, and exempt from ancient enmity!

His treason yet lives guilty in thy blood;  
And thou, though be matured, thou art a yeoman.

*Plan.* My father was attainted, not attainted,

Condemn'd to die for treason, but no traitor;  
And that I'll prove on better men than Somer-  
set.

Were growing time once ripen'd to my will.  
For your partaker Pole and you

I'll note you in my book of re-  
proach.

To scourge you for this apparel.

Look to it well and say you are well warn'd.

*Som.* Ah, thou shalt find us ready for thee  
still;

And know us by these colours for thy foes,  
For these my friends in spite of thee shall wear.

*Plan.* And, by my soul, this pale and ang-  
ry rose,

As cognizance of my blood-drinking hate,  
Will I for ever and my faction wear.

Until it wither with me to my grave.

Or flourish to the height of my degree.

*Suf.* Go forward and be check'd with thy  
ambition!

And so farewell until I meet thee next.

*Som.* Have with thee, Pole. Farewell, am-  
bitious Richard.

*Plan.* How I am braved and must performe  
endure it!

*War.* This blot that they object against your  
house

Shall be wiped out in the next parliament  
Call'd for the truce of Winchester and Glou-  
cester;

And if thou be not then counted York,  
I will not live to be accounted Warwick.

Meantime, in signal of my love to thee,

Against proud Somerset and William Pole,

Will I upon thy party wear this rose;

And here I prophesy: this brawl to-day,  
Grown to this faction in the Temple garden,

Shall send between the red rose and the white  
A thousand souls to death and deadly night.

*Plan.* Good Master Vernon, I am bound to  
you.

That you on my behalf would pluck a flower.

*Ver.* In your behalf still will I wear the  
same.

*Law.* And so will I.

*Plan.* Thanks, gentle sir.

Come, let us four to dinner: I dare say  
This quarrel will drink blood another day.

[*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE V. The Tower of London.

Enter MORTIMER, brought in a chair, and  
Gardens.

*Mor.* Kind keepers of my weak decaying age,  
Let dying Mortimer here rest himself.

Even like a man new healed from the mock,  
So fare my limbs with long imprisonment;

And these gray locks, the parents of death,  
Nectar-like aged in an age of care.

Argue the end of Edmund Mortimer.

These eyes, like lamps whose swelling oil is  
spent,

Wax dim, as drawing to their extinct;

Weak shoulders, overborne with burdening  
grief,

And pining limbs, like to a wither'd vine  
That droops his capricious branches to the ground:

Yet see these feet, whose strengthless stay is  
unstable.

Unable to support this lump of clay,  
Swift-winged with darts to get a grave,  
As wishing I no other comfort have.  
But tell me, keeper, will my nephew come?

*First Guard.* Richard Plantagenet, my lord,  
will come:

We sent unto the Temple, unto his chamber;  
And answer was returned that he will come.

*Mor.* Enough: my soul shall then be satisfied.

Poor gentleman! his wrong doth equal mine.  
Since Henry Monmouth first began to reign,  
Before whose glory I was great in arms,  
This loathsome sequestration have I had;  
And even since then hath Richard been obscured,

Deprived of honour and inheritance.  
But now the arbitrator of despair,  
Just death, kind umpire of men's miseries,  
With sweet enlargement doth dismiss me  
hence:

I would his troubles likewise were expired,  
That so he might recover what was lost.

*Enter RICHARD PLANTAGENET.*

*First Guard.* My lord, your loving nephew  
now is come.

*Mor.* Richard Plantagenet, my friend, is he  
come?

*Plant.* Ay, noble uncle, thus ignobly used,  
Your nephew, late despised Richard, comes.

*Mor.* Direct mine arms I may embrace his  
neck,

And in his bosom spend my latter gasp:  
O, tell me when my lips do touch his cheeks,  
That I may kindly give one fainting kiss.  
And now declare, sweet stem from York's great  
stock,

Why didst thou say, of late thou wert despised?

*Plant.* First, lean thine aged back against  
mine arm;

And, in that case, I'll tell thee my di-

This day, in argument upon a case,

Some words there grew twixt Somerset and me;  
Among which terms he used his Jewish tongue

And did upbraid me with my father's death:  
Which oblique cut him before my tongue,

Else with the like I had requited him.  
Therefore, good uncle, for my father's sake,

In honour of a true Plantagenet  
And for alliance sake, declare the cause

My father, Earl of Cambridge, lost his head.  
*Mor.* That cause, fair nephew, that im-

prison'd me

And bathed details'd me all my flowering youth  
Within a loathsome duncheon, there to pine,  
Was caused instrument of his decease.

*Plant.* Discover more at large what cause  
that was,

For I am ignorant and cannot guess.

*Mor.* I will, if that my fading breath permit  
And death approach not ere my tale be done.

Henry the Sixth, grandfather to this king,  
Deposed his nephew Richard, Edward's son,  
The first begotten and the lawful heir  
Of Edward the third, and thus of that descent:

During whose reign the Percies of the north,  
Finding his usurpation most unjust,  
Endeavour'd my advancement to the throne:  
The reason mov'd these warlike lords to this  
Was, for that—young King Richard thus re-  
moved,

Leaving no heir begotten of his body—  
I was the next by birth and parentage;  
For by my mother I derived am  
From Lionel Duke of Clarence, the third son  
To King Edward the Third; whereas he  
From John of Gaunt doth bring his pedigree,  
Being but fourth of that heroic line.

But mark: as in this haughty great attempt  
They labour'd to plant the rightful heir,

I lost my liberty and they their lives.  
Long after this, when Henry the Fifth,  
Succeeding his father Bolingbroke, did reign,

Thy father, Earl of Cambridge, then derived  
From famous Edmund Langley, Duke of York,

Marrying my sister that thy mother was,  
Again in pity of my hard distress

Levied an army, wooing to redeem  
And have install'd me in the diadem:

But, as the rest, so fell that noble earl  
And was beheaded. Thus the Mortimers,  
In whom the title rested, were suppress'd.

*Plant.* Of which, my lord, your honour is  
the last.

*Mor.* True; and thou wast that I no issue  
have

And that my fainting words do warrant death:  
Thou art my heir; the rest I wish thee gather:

But yet be wary in thy studious care.

*Plant.* Thy grave admonishments prevail  
with me:

But yet, methinks, my father's execution  
Was nothing less than bloody tyranny.

*Mor.* With silence, nephew, be thou still:  
Strung-fixed is the house of Lancaster

And like a mountain, not to be removed.  
But now thy uncle is removing hence;

As princes do their courts, when they are stay'd  
With long continuance in a settled place.

*Plant.* O, uncle, would some part of my  
young years

Might but redeem the passage of your age!

*Mor.* Thou dost then wrong me, as that  
slaughterer doth

Which giveth many wounds when one will kill.  
Mourn not, except thou sorrow for my good;

Only give order for my funeral;  
And so farewell, and fair be all thy hopes

And prosperous be thy life in peace and war.

*Plant.* And peace, no war, bethall thy parting  
soul!

In prison hast thou spent a pilgrimage;  
And like a hermit overpass'd thy days.

Well, I will lock his counsel in my ear  
And what I do imagine let that rest.

Keepers, convey him hence, and I myself  
Will see his burial better than his life.

[*Exeunt Officers, bearing away the body of Mortimer.*]

Here dies the dusky torch of Mortimer,  
Choked with smother of the Lancaster line.

And far these wrongs, these bitter injuries,

Which Somerset hath offer'd to my house,  
I doubt not but with honour to redress;  
And therefore haste I to the parliament,  
Either to be restored to my blood,  
Or make my ill the advantage of my good.  
[Exit.]

## ACT III.

SCENE I. *London. The Parliament-house.*

*Flourish. Enter KING, EXETER, GLOUCESTER, WARWICK, SOMERSET, and SUFFOLK; the BISHOP OF WINCHESTER, RICHARD PLANTAGENET, and others. GLOUCESTER offers to put up a bill; WINCHESTER snatches it, and tears it.*

*Win.* Comest thou with deep premeditated lines,  
With written pamphlets studiously devised,  
Humphrey of Gloucester? If thou canst accuse,

Or aught intend'st to lay unto my charge,  
Do it without invention, suddenly;  
As I with sudden and extemporal speech  
Purpose to answer what thou canst object.  
*Glow.* Presumptuous priest! this place commands my patience,

Or thou shouldst find thou hast dishonour'd me.  
Think not, although in writing I prefer'd  
The manner of thy vile outrageous crimes,  
That therefore I have forg'd, or am not able  
Verbatim to rehearse the method of my pen:  
No, prelate; such is thy audacious wickedness,  
Thy low, pestiferous and dissentious pranks,  
As very infants prattle of thy pride.  
Thou art a most pernicious usurer,  
Froward by nature, enemy to peace;  
Lecherous, wanton, more than well becomes  
A man of thy profession and degree;  
And for thy treachery, what's more manifest  
In that thou laid'st a trap to take my life,  
As well at London bridge as at the Tower.  
Beside, I fear me, if thy thoughts were sided,  
The king, thy sovereign, is not quite exempt  
From envious malice of thy swelling heart.

*Win.* Gloucester, I do defy thee. Lords, vouchsafe

To give me hearing what I shall reply.  
If I were covetous, ambitious or perverse,  
As he will have me, how am I so poor!  
Or how hope it I seek not to advance  
Or raise myself, but keep my wonted calling?  
And for dissension, who preferreth peace  
More than I do!—except I be provoked.  
No, my good lords, it is not that offends;  
It is not that that hath incensed the duke:  
It is, because no one should sway but he;  
No one but he should be about the king;  
And that engendereth thunder in his breast  
And makes him roar these accusations forth.  
But he shall know I am as good—

*Glow.* As good! Then bastard of my grandfather!

*Win.* Ay, lordly sir; for what are you, I pray,

But one usurper in another's throne?

*Glow.* Am I not protector, uncle priest?

*Win.* And am not I a prelate of the church?

*Glow.* Yea, as an outlaw in a castle keeps  
And useth it to patronage his

*Win.* Unreverent Gloucester!

*Glow.* Thou art reverent  
Touching thy spiritual function, not thy life.

*Win.* Rome shall remedy this.

*War.* Roam thither, then.

*Som.* My lord, it were your duty to forbear.

*War.* Ay, see the bishop be not overborne.

*Som.* Methinks my lord should be religious  
And know the office that belongs to such.

*War.* Methinks his lordship should be humbler;

It fitteth not a prelate so to plead.

*Som.* Yea, when his holy state is touch'd so near.

*War.* State holy or unhallow'd, what of that?

Is not his grace protector to the king?

*Plan.* [Aside] Plantagenet, I see, must hold his tongue.

Lest it be said 'Speak, sirrah, when you should;  
Must your bold verdict enter talk with lords!'

Else would I have a fling at Winchester.

*King.* Uncles of Gloucester and of Winchester,

The special watchmen of our English weal,  
I would prevail, if prayers might prevail,  
To join your hearts in love and amity.

O, what a scandal is it to our crown,  
That two such noble peers as ye should jar!

Believe me, lords, my tender years can tell  
Civil dissension is a viperous worm  
That gnaws the bowels of the commonwealth.

[A noise within, 'Down with the tawny-coats!'  
What tumult's this!]

*War.* An uproar, I dare warrant,  
Begun through malice of the bishop's men.

[A noise again, 'Stones! stones!'

*Enter Mayor.*

*May.* O, my good lords, and virtuous Henry,

Pity the city of London, pity us!

The bishop and the Duke of Gloucester's men,  
Forbidden late to carry any weapon,  
Have fill'd their pockets full of pebble stones to  
And banding themselves in contrary parts  
Do pelt so fast at one another's pate  
That many have their giddy brains knock'd out:  
Our windows are broke down in every street  
And we for fear compell'd to shut our shops.

*Enter Serving-men, in skirmish, with bloody pates.*

*King.* We charge you, on allegiance to ourself,  
To hold your slaughtering hands and keep the peace.

Pray, uncle Gloucester, mitigate this strife.

*First Serv.* Nay, if we be forbidden stones,  
we'll fall to it with our teeth.

*Sec. Serv.* Do what ye dare, we are as resolute.

*Glow.* You of my household, have this peevish broil  
And set this unbecom'd fight aside.



*Third Serv.* My lord, we know your grace  
to be a man

Just and upright; and, for your royal birth,  
Inferior to none but to his majesty:  
And ere that we will suffer such a prince,  
So kind a father of the commonweal,  
To be disgraced by an inhorn mate.  
We and our wives and children all will fight too  
And have our bodies slaughter'd by thy foes.

*First Serv.* Ay, and the very parings of our  
nails  
Shall pitch a field when we are dead.

*Glou.*

Stay, stay, I say!  
And if you love me, as you say you do,  
Let me persuade you to forbear awhile.

*King.* O, how this discord doth afflict my  
soul!

Can you, my Lord of Winchester, behold  
My sighs and tears and will not once relent?  
Who should be pitiful, if you be not?  
Or who should study to prefer a peace,  
If holy churchmen take delight in broils?

*War.* Yield, my lord protector; yield, Win-  
chester;

Except you mean with obstinate repulse  
To slay your sovereign and destroy the realm.  
You see what mischief and what murder too  
Hath been enacted through your enmity:  
Then be at peace, except ye thirst for blood.

*Win.* He shall submit, or I will never yield.  
*Glou.* Compassion on the king commands  
me stoop;

Or I would see his heart cut, ere the priest  
Should ever get that privilege of me.

*War.* Behold, my Lord of Winchester, the  
duke

Hath banish'd moody discontented fury,  
As by his smoothed brows it doth appear:  
Why look you still so stern and tragical?

*Glou.* Here, Winchester, I offer thee my  
hand.

*King.* Fie, uncle Beaufort! I have heard  
you preach

That malice was a great and grievous sin;  
And will not you maintain the thing you  
teach,

But prove a chief offender in the same?

*War.* Sweet king! the bishop hath a kindly  
gird.

For shame, my Lord of Winchester, relent!  
What, shall a child instruct you what to do?

*Win.* Well, Duke of Gloucester, I will yield  
to thee;

Love for thy love and hand for hand I give.

*Glou.* [Aside] Ay, but, I fear me, with a  
hollow heart.

See here, my friends and loving countrymen,  
This token serveth for a flag of truce

Between ourselves and all our followers:  
So help me God, as I dissemble not!

*Win.* [Aside] So help me God, as I intend  
it not!

*King.* O loving uncle, kind Duke of Glou-  
cester,

How joyful am I made by this contract!  
Away, my masters! trouble us no more;

But join in friendship, as your lords have done.

*First Serv.* Content: I'll to the surgeon's.

*Sec. Serv.* And so will I.

*Third Serv.* And I will see what physic the  
tavern affords.

[*Exeunt Serving-men, Mayor, &c.*  
*War.* Accept this scroll, most gracious  
sovereign,

Which in the right of Richard Plantagenet  
We do exhibit to your majesty.

*Glou.* Well urged, my Lord of Warwick:  
for, sweet prince,

An if your grace mark every circumstance,  
You have great reason to do Richard right;

Especially for those occasions  
At Eltham Place I told your majesty.

*King.* And those occasions, uncle, were of  
force:

Therefore, my loving lords, our pleasure is  
That Richard be restored to his blood.

*War.* Let Richard be restored to his blood;  
So shall his father's wrongs be recompensed.

*Win.* As will the rest, so will Ith Win-  
chester.

*King.* If Richard will be true, not that  
alone

But all the whole inheritance I give  
That doth belong unto the house of York,

From whence you spring by lineal descent.  
*Plan.* Thy humble servant vows obedience  
And humble service till the point of death.

*King.* Stoop then and set your knee against  
my foot;

And, in requerdon of that duty done,  
I gird thee with the valiant sword of York:

Rise, Richard, like a true Plantagenet,  
And rise created princely Duke of York.

*Plan.* And so thrive Richard as thy foes  
may fall!

And as my duty springs, so perish they  
That grudge one thought against your majesty!

*All.* Welcome, high prince, the mighty  
Duke of York!

*Son.* [Aside] Perish, base prince, ignoble  
Duke of York!

*Glou.* Now will it best avail your majesty  
To cross the seas and to be crown'd in France:

The presence of a king engenders love  
Amongst his subjects and his loyal friends,

As it disanimates his enemies.

*King.* When Gloucester says the word, *King*  
Henry goes;

For friendly counsel cuts off many foes.

*Glou.* Your ships already are in readiness.  
[Sennet. Flourish. *Exeunt all but Brother.*

*Eze.* Ay, we may march in England or in  
France,

Not seeing what is likely to ensue.

This late disunion grown betwixt the peers  
Burns under tainted ashes of forged love

And will at last break out into a flame:  
An fever'd members rot but by degrees,

Till bones and flesh and sinews fall away.  
So will this base and envious discord breed

And now I fear that fatal prophecy  
Which in the time of Henry named the Fifth

Was in the mouth of every sucking babe:  
That Henry born at Monmouth should win all

And Henry born at Windsor lose all.

Which is so plain that Rouser doth wish  
His days may finish ere that hapless time. *[Exit.]*

**BOHEN II.** *France. Before Rouen.*

*Enter LA PUCELLE disguised, with four  
Soldiers with sacks upon their backs.*

**Puc.** These are the city gates, the gates of Rouen.

Through which our policy must make a breach:  
Take heed, be wary how you place your words;  
Talk like the vulgar sort of market men  
That come to gather money for their corn.

If we have entrance, as I hope we shall,  
And that we find the noiseful watch but weak,  
I'll by a sign give notice to our friends,  
That Charles the Dauphin may encounter them.

*First Sol.* Our sacks shall be a mean to sack the city.

And we be lords and rulers over Rouen;  
Therefore we'll knock. *[Knocks.]*

*Watch.* *[Within.]* Qui cat là!

**Puc.** Payens, parves gens de France;  
Poor market folks that come to sell their corn.

*Watch.* Enter, go in; the market bell is rung.

**Puc.** Now, Rouen, I'll shake thy bulwarks to the ground. *[Exeunt.]*

*Enter CHARLES, the BASTARD OF ORLEANS,  
ALENÇON, REIGNIER, and forces.*

**Char.** Saint Denis bless this happy stratagem!

And once again we'll sleep secure in Rouen.

**Bast.** Here enter'd Pucelle and her practisants;

Now she is there, how will she specify  
Where is the best and safest passage in!

**Reig.** By thrusting out a torch from yonder tower;

Which, once discern'd, shows that her meaning is,

No way to that, for weakness, which she enter'd.

*Enter LA PUCELLE on the top, thrusting out  
a torch burning.*

**Puc.** Behold, this is the happy wedding torch

That joineth Rouen unto her countrymen,  
But burning fatal to the Talbotites! *[Exit.]*

**Bast.** See, noble Charles, the beacon of our friend;

The burning torch in yonder turret stands.

**Char.** Now shine it like a comet of revenge,  
A prophet to the fall of all our foes!

**Reig.** Defer no time, delays have dangerous ends;

Enter, and cry 'The Dauphin!' presently,  
And then do execution on the watch. *[Alarm. Exeunt.]*

*An alarm. Enter TALBOT in an excursion.*

**Tal.** France, thou shalt rue this treason with thy tears.

If Talbot but survive thy treachery,  
Pucelle, that witch, that damned sorceress,  
Shall answer this heinous mischief unwares,  
For we are the pride of France. *[Exit.]*

*An alarm: excursions. BEDFORD, brought in sick in a chair. Enter TALBOT and BURGUNDY without: within LA PUCELLE, CHARLES, BASTARD, ALENÇON, and REIGNIER, on the walls.*

**Puc.** Good morrow, gallants! want ye corn for bread?

I think the Duke of Burgundy will fast  
Before he'll buy again at such a rate:

'Twas full of darnel; do you like the taste?

**Bur.** Scoff on, vile fiend and courtizan!

I trust ere long to choke thee with thine own  
And make thee curse the harvest of that corn.

**Char.** Your grace may starve perhaps before that time.

**Bed.** O, let no words, but deeds, revenge this treason!

**Puc.** What will you do, good grey-beard! break a lance.

And run a tilt at death within a chair?

**Tal.** Fool fiend of France, and hag of all despite,

Encompass'd with thy lustful paramours!  
Becomes it thee to taunt his valiant age

And twit with cowardice a man half dead?  
Darnel, I'll have a bout with you again,

Or else let Talbot perish with this shame.

**Puc.** Are ye so hot, sir? yet, Pucelle, hold thy peace;

If Talbot do but thunder, rain will follow.

*[The English whisper together in counsel.]*  
God speed the parliament! who shall be the speaker?

**Tal.** Dare ye come forth and meet us in the field?

**Puc.** Belike your lordship takes us then for fools.

To try if that our own be ours or no.

**Tal.** I speak not to that railing Hecate.  
But unto thee, Alençon, and the rest;

Will ye, like soldiers, come and fight it out?

**Alen.** Signior, no.

**Tal.** Signior, hang! base muleters of France!  
Like peasant foot-boys do they keep the walls

And dare not take up arms like gentlemen.

**Puc.** Away, captains! let's get us from the walls;

For Talbot means no goodness by his looks.  
God be wi' you, my lord! we came but to tell you

That we are here. *[Exeunt from the walls.]*

**Tal.** And there will be too, ere it be long.

Or else reproach be Talbot's greatest shame!

Vow, Burgundy, by honour of thy house,  
Prick'd on by public wrongs sustain'd in France,

Either to get the town again or die:

And I, as sure as English Henry lives  
And as his father here was conqueror,  
As sure as in this late-betrayed town  
Great Cornu-de-lion's heart was buried,  
So sure I swear to get the town or die.

**Bur.** My vows are equal partners with thy vows.

**Tal.** But, see we go, march with dying prince,

The valiant Duke of Bedford. Come, my lord,  
We will bestow you in some better place,  
Fitter for sickness and for crasy age.

*Bed.* Lord Talbot, do not so dishonour me:  
Here will I sit before the walls of Rouen  
And will be partner of your weal or woe.

*Bur.* Courageous Bedford, let us now persuade you.

*Bed.* Not to be gone from hence; for once I read

That stout Pendragon in his litter sick  
'Ame to the field and vanquished his foes:  
Nethinks I should revive the soldiers' hearts,  
Because I ever found them as myself.

*Tal.* Undaunted spirit in a dying breast!  
Then be it so: heavens keep old Bedford safe!  
And now no more ado, brave Burgundy,  
But gather we our forces out of hand  
And set upon our boasting enemy.

[*Exeunt all but Bedford and Attendants.*]

*An alarm: excursions. Enter SIR JOHN FASTOLFE and a Captain.*

*Cap.* Whither away, Sir John Fastolfe, in such haste?

*Fast.* Whither away! to save myself by flight:

We are like to have the overthrow again.

*Cap.* What! will you fly, and leave Lord Talbot?

*Fast.* Ay,  
All the Talbots in the world, to save my life.

*Cap.* Cowardly knight! ill fortune follow thee! [*Exit.*]

*Retreat: excursions. LA PUCELLE, ALENÇON, and CHARLES fly.*

*Bed.* Now, quiet soul, depart when heaven please,

For I have seen our enemies' overthrow.  
What is the trust or strength of foolish man!  
They that of late were daring with their scoffs  
Are glad and fain by flight to save themselves.

[*Bedford dies, and is carried in by two to his chair.*]

[*An alarm. Re-enter TALBOT, BURGUNDY, and the rest.*]

*Tal.* Lost, and recovered in a day again!

This is a double honour, Burgundy:

Yet heavens have glory for this victory!

*Bur.* Warlike and martial Talbot, Burgundy  
Enshrines thee in his heart and there erects  
Thy noble deeds as valour's monuments.

*Tal.* Thanks, gentle duke. But where is Pucelle now?

I think her old familiar is asleep:

Now where's the Bastard's braves, and Charles his clocks?

What, all absent! Rouen hangs her head for grief.

That such a valiant company are fled.

Now will we take some order in the town,

Placing therein some expert officers,

And then depart to Paris to the king.

For a young Henry with his nobles lie.

*Bur.* What wills Lord Talbot pleaseeth Burgundy?

*Tal.* But yet, before we go, let's not forget  
The noble Duke of Bedford late deceased,  
But see his exequies fulfill'd in Rouen:  
A braver soldier never couch'd lance,  
A gentler heart did never sway in court;  
But kings and mightiest potentates must die,  
For that's the end of human misery. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *The plains near Rouen.*

*Enter CHARLES, the BASTARD of Orleans, ALENÇON, LA PUCELLE, and forces.*

*Puc.* Dismay not, princes, at this accident,  
Nor grieve that Rouen is so recovered:  
'Care is no cure, but rather corrosive,  
For things that are not to be remedied.  
Let frantic Talbot triumph for a while  
And like a peacock sweep along his train;  
We'll pull his plumes and take away his train,  
If Dauphin and the rest will be but ruled.

*Char.* We have been guided by thee hitherto  
And of thy cunning had no diffidence:  
One sudden foil shall never breed distrust.

*Bast.* Search out thy wit for secret policies,  
And we will make thee famous through the world.

*Alen.* We'll set thy statue in some holy place,  
And have thee reverenced like a blessed saint  
Employ thee then, sweet virgin, for our

*Puc.* Then thus it must be; this doth devise:

By fair persuasions mix'd with sugar'd words  
We will entice the Duke of Burgundy  
To leave the Talbot and to follow us.

*Char.* Ay, marry, sweeting, if we could do that,  
France were no place for Henry's warriors;

Nor should that nation boast it so with us,  
But be extirped from our provinces.

*Alen.* For ever should they be expulst from France  
And not have title of an earldom here.

*Puc.* Your honours shall perceive how I will work

To bring this matter to the wished end.

[*Drum sounds afar off.*]

Hark! by the sound of drum you may perceive  
Their powers are marching unto Paris-ward,

Here sound an English march. *Enter, and pass over at a distance, TALBOT and his forces.*

There goes the Talbot, with his colours spread,  
And all the troops of English after him.

*French march. Enter the DUKE OF BURGUNDY and forces.*

Now in the rearward comes the duke and his:  
Fortune in favour makes him lag behind.

Summon a parley; we will talk with him.

[*Trumpets sound a parley.*]

*Char.* A parley with the Duke of Burgundy.

*Bur.* Who answers a parley with the Burgundians?

*Puc.* The princely Charles of France, your countryman.

*Bur.* What say'st thou, Charles? for I am marching hence.

*Char.* Speak, Pucelle, and enchant him with thy words.

*Puc.* Brave Burgundy, undoubted hope of France!

Stay, let thy humble handmaid speak to thee.

*Bur.* Speak on; but be not over-tedious.

*Puc.* Look on thy country, look on fertile France,

And see the cities and the towns defaced  
By wasting ruin of the cruel foe.

As looks the mother on her lowly babe

When death doth close his tender dying eyes,

See, see the pining malady of France;

Behold the wounds, the most unnatural wounds,

Which thou thyself hast given her woful breast.

O, turn thy edged sword another way;

Strike those that hurt, and hurt not those that

help.

One drop of blood drawn from thy country's

bosom

Should grieve thee more than streams of foreign

gore;

Return thee therefore with a flood of tears,

And wash away thy country's stained spots.

*Bur.* Either she hath bewitch'd me with her

words,

Or nature makes me suddenly relent.

*Puc.* Besides, all French and France ex-

claims on thee,

Doubting thy birth and lawful progeny.

Who join it thou with but with a lordly nation

That will not trust thee but for profit's sake!

When Talbot hath set footing once in France

And fashion'd thee that instrument of ill,

Who then but English Henry will be lord

And thou be thrust out like a fugitive!

Call we to mind, and mark but this for proof,

Was not the Duke of Orleans thy foe?

And was he not in England prisoner?

But when they heard he was thine enemy,

They set him free without his ransom paid,

In spite of Burgundy and all his friends.

See, then, thou fight at against thy countrymen

And join at with them will be thy slaughter-men.

Come, come, return; return, thou wandering

lord;

Charles and the rest will take thee in their arms.

*Bur.* I am vanquished; these haughty words

of hers

Have batter'd me like roaring cannon-shot,

And made me almost yield upon my knees.

*So* Forgive me, country, and sweet countrymen,

And, lords, accept this hearty kind embrace:

My forces and my power of men are yours;

So farewell, Talbot; I'll no longer trust thee.

*Puc.* *(Aside)* Done like a Frenchman: turn,

and turn again!

*Char.* Welcome, brave duke! thy friendship

makes us fresh.

*Bast.* And doth beget new courage in our

bravets.

*Alen.* Pucelle hath bravely play'd her part

in this.

And doth deserve a coronet of gold.

*Char.* Now let us on, my lords, and join

our powers,

And seek how we may prejudice the foe.

*(Exit.)*

# SCENE IV. Paris. The palace.

*Enter the KING, GLOUCESTER, BISHOP OF WINCHESTER, YORK, SUFFOLK, SOMERSET, WARWICK, EXETER; VERNON, BASSET, and others. To them with his Soldiers, TALBOT.*

*Tal.* My gracious prince, and honourable peers,

Hearing of your arrival in this

I have awhile given truce unto my

To do my duty to my sovereign:

In sign whereof, this arm, that hath reclaim'd

To your obedience fifty fortresses,

Twelve cities and seven walled towns of strength,

Beside five hundred prisoners of esteem,

Lets fall his sword before your highness' feet,

And with submissive loyalty of heart

Ascribes the glory of his conquest got

First to my God and next unto your grace.

*(Kneels.)*

*King.* Is this the Lord Talbot, uncle Glou-

cestre,

That hath so long been resident in France?

*Glou.* Yea, if it please your majesty, my

liege.

*King.* Welcome, brave captain and vic-

torious lord!

When I was young, as yet I am not old,

I do remember how my father said

A stouter champion never handled sword.

Long since we were resolved of your truth,

Your faithful service and your toil in war;

Yet never have you tasted our reward,

(Or been reckon'd) with so much as thanks,

Because till now we never saw your face;

Therefore, stand up; and, for these good deeds,

We here create you Earl of Shrewsbury;

And in our coronation take your place.

*(Sennet. Flourish. Exit all but Vernon and Basset.)*

*Vern.* Now, sir, to you, that were so hot at

sea,

Disgracing of these colours that I wear

In honour of my noble Lord of York:

Darest thou unmain the former words thou

spakest?

*Bas.* Yea, sir: as well as you dare patronage

The envious barking of your saucy tongue

Against my lord the Duke of Somerset.

*Vern.* Sirrah, thy lord I honour as he is.

*Bas.* Why, what is he? as good a man as

York.

*Vern.* Hark ye: not so: in witness, take ye

that.

*Bas.* Villain, thou know'st the law of arms

is such

That whose draws a sword, 'tis present death.

Or else this blow should breach thy dearest

blood.

But I'll unto his majesty, and crave

I may have liberty to vengeance this wrong;

When thou shalt see I'll meet thee to thy cost.

*Vern.* Well, miscreant, I'll be there as soon

as you!

And, after, meet you sooner than you would.

*(Exit.)*

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I. Paris. A hall of state.

Enter the KING, GLOUCESTER, BISHOP OF WINCHESTER, YORK, SUFFOLK, SOMERSET, WARWICK, TALBOT, EXETER, the Governor of Paris, and others.

*Glos.* Lord bishop, set the crown upon his head.

*Win.* God save King Henry, of that name the sixth!

*Glos.* Now, governor of Paris, take your oath,

That you elect no other king but him;  
Esteem none friends but such as are his friends,  
And none your foes but such as shall pretend  
Malicious practices against his state:  
This shall ye do, so help you righteous God!

Enter SIR JOHN FASTOLFE.

*Fast.* My gracious sovereign, as I rode from Calais

To haste unto your coronation, 10

A letter was deliver'd to my hands,

Writ to your grace from the Duke of Burgundy.

*Tal.* Shame to the Duke of Burgundy and thee!

I vow'd, base knight, when I did meet thee next,

To tear the garter from thy craven's leg,

[*Plucking it off.*]

Which I have done, because unworthily

Thou wast installed in that high degree.

Pardon me, princely Henry, and the rest:

This dastard, at the battle of Patay,

When but in all I was six thousand strong 20

And that the French were almost ten to one,

Before we met or that a stroke was given,

Like to a trusty squire did run away:

In which assault we lost twelve hundred men;

Myself and divers gentlemen beside

Were there surpris'd and taken prisoners.

Then judge, great lords, if I have done amiss;

Or whether that such cowards ought to wear

This ornament of knighthood, yea or no.

*Glos.* To say the truth, this fact was in- 30

famous

And ill becoming any common man,

Much more a knight, a captain and a leader.

*Tal.* When first this order was ordain'd, my

lords,

Knights of the garter were of noble birth,

Valiant and virtuous, full of haughty courage,

Such as were grown to credit by the wars;

Not fearing death, nor shrinking for distress,

But always resolute in most extremes.

He then that is not furnish'd in this sort

Doth but usurp the sacred name of knight, 40

Profaning this most honourable order,

And should, if I were worthy to be judge,

Be quite degraded, like a hedge-born swain

That doth presume to boast of gentle blood.

*King.* Stain to thy countrymen, thou hear'st

thy doom!

Be packing: therefore, thou that wast a knight:

He we banish thee, on pain of death.

[*Exit Fastolfe.*]

And now, my lord protector, view the letter  
Sent from our uncle Duke of Burgundy.

*Glos.* What means his grace, that he hath  
changed his style?

No more but, plain and bluntly, 'To the king!'

Hath he forgot he is his sovereign?

Or doth this churlish superscription

Pretend some alteration in good will?

What's here? [*Reads*] 'I have, upon especial

cause,

Moved with compassion of my country's wreck,

Together with the pitiful complaints

Of such as your oppression feeds upon,

Forsaken your pernicious faction

And join'd with Charles, the rightful King of

France.' 60

O monstrous treachery! can this be so,

That in alliance, amity and oaths,

There should be found such false dissembling

guile?

*King.* What! doth my uncle Burgundy re-

volt?

*Glos.* He doth, my lord, and is become your

foe.

*King.* Is that the worst this letter doth con-

tain?

*Glos.* It is the worst, and all, my lord, he

writes.

*King.* Why, then, Lord Talbot there shall

talk with him

And give him chastisement for this abuse.

How say you, my lord? are you not content? 70

*Tal.* Content, my liege! yea, but that I am

prevented,

I should have begg'd I might have been em-

ploy'd.

*King.* Then gather strength and march unto

him straight:

Let him perceive how ill we brook his treason

And what offence it is to flout his friends.

*Tal.* I go, my lord, in heart desiring still

you may behold confusion of your foes.

[*Exit.*]

Enter VERNON and BASSET.

*Ver.* Grant me the combat, gracious

sovereign.

*Bas.* And me, my lord, grant me the com-

bat too.

*York.* This is my servant: hear him, noble

prince. 80

*Som.* And this is mine: sweet Henry, favour

him.

*King.* Be patient, lords; and give them

leave to speak.

Say, gentlemen, what makes you thus enjoin?

And wherefore crave you combat? or with

whom?

*Ver.* With him, my lord; for he hath done

me wrong.

*Bas.* And I with him; for he hath done me

wrong.

*King.* What is that wrong wherewith you

both complain?

First let me know, and then I'll answer you.

*Bas.* Crossing the sea from England into

France,

*This follow*

Upbraid me about the rose I wear;  
 King, the sanguine colour of the leaves  
 Represent my master's blushing cheeks,  
 And stubbornly he did repugn the truth  
 About a certain question in the law  
 Argued betwixt the Duke of York and him;  
 With other vile and ignominious terms:  
 In contumacy of which rude reproach  
 And in defence of my lord's worthiness,  
 I crave the benefit of law of arms.

*Ver.* And that is my petition, noble lord:  
 For though he seem with forged quaint conceit  
 To set a gloss upon his bold intent,  
 Yet know, my lord, I was provoked by him;  
 And he first took exceptions at this badge,  
 Pronouncing that the paleness of this flower  
 Bewray'd the faintness of my master's heart.

*York.* Will not this malice, Somerset, be left?  
*Som.* Your private grudge, my Lord of York,  
 Will out.

Though ne'er so cunningly you smother it. 100  
*King.* Good Lord, what madness rules in  
 brainsick men,

When for so slight and frivolous a cause  
 Such factious circulations shall arise!  
 Good cousins both, of York and Somerset,  
 Quiet yourselves, I pray, and be at peace.

*York.* Let this discussion first be tried by  
 fight,

And then your highness shall command a peace.  
*Som.* The quarrel toucheth none but us  
 alone;

Betwixt ourselves let us decide it then.  
*York.* There is my pledge; accept it, Somers-  
 set.

*Ver.* Nay, let it rest where it began at first.  
*Bas.* Confirm it so, mine honourable lord.

*Glo.* Confirm it so! Confounded be your  
 strife!

And perish ye, with your audacious prate!  
 Presumptuous vassals, are you not ashamed  
 With this immodest clamorous outrage  
 To trouble and disturb the king and us?  
 And you, my lords, methinks you do not well  
 To bear with their perverse objections;  
 Much less to take occasion from their mouths  
 To raise a mutiny betwixt yourselves: 131  
 Let me persuade you take a better course.

*Ecc.* It grieves his highness: good my lords,  
 be friends.

*King.* Come hither, you that would be com-  
 fortable:

Henceforth I charge you, as you love our  
 favour,

Quite to forget this quarrel and the cause.  
 And you, my lords, remember where we are;  
 In France, amongst a fickle wavering nation:  
 If they perceive dissension in our looks  
 And that within ourselves we disagree, 140  
 How will their grudging stomachs be provoked  
 To wild disobedience, and rebel!

Beasts, what injury will there arise,  
 If each foreign prince shall be certified  
 That for a toy, a thing of no regard,  
 King Henry's power and chief nobility  
 Fight themselves, and lost the realm of  
 France!

O, think upon the conquest of my father,  
 My tender years, and let us not forego  
 That for a trifle that was bought with blood!  
 Let me be umpire in this doubtful strife. 151  
 I see no reason, if I wear this rose,

*[Putting on a red rose.]*  
 That any one should therefore be suspicious  
 I more incline to Somerset than York:  
 Both are my kinsmen, and I love them both:  
 As well they may upbraid me with my crown,  
 Because, forsooth, the king of Scots is crown'd.  
 But your discretions better can persuade  
 Than I am able to instruct or teach:

And therefore, as we hither came in peace, 160  
 So let us still continue peace and love.  
 Cousin of York, we institute your grace  
 To be our regent in these parts of France:  
 And, good my Lord of Somerset, unite  
 Your troops of horsemen with his bands of foot;  
 And, like true subjects, sons of your progenitors,  
 Go cheerfully together and digest  
 Your angry choler on your enemies.

Ourself, my lord protector and the rest  
 After some respite will return to Calais; 170  
 From thence to England; where I hope ere long  
 To be presented, by your victories,  
 With Charles, Alençon and that traitorous rout.  
*[Flourish. Accent all but York, Warwick,*

*Exeter and Vernon.]*  
*War.* My Lord of York, I promise you, the king  
 Prettily, methought, did play the orator.

*York.* And so he did; but yet I like it not,  
 In that he wears the badge of Somerset.

*War.* Tush, that was but his fancy, blame  
 him not;

I dare presume, sweet prince, he thought no  
 harm.

*York.* An if I wist he did,—but let it rest; 180  
 Other affairs must now be managed.

*[Exeunt all but Exeter.]*  
*Ecc.* Well didst thou, Richard, to suppress  
 thy voice;

For, had the passions of thy heart burst out,  
 I fear we should have seen decipher'd there  
 More rancorous spite, more furious raging  
 broils.

Than yet can be imagined or supposed.  
 But howsoever, no simple man that sees  
 This jarring discord of nobility,  
 This shouldering of each other in the court,  
 This factious bandying of their favourites, 190  
 But that it doth presage some ill event.  
 'Tis much when sceptres are in children's hands;  
 But more when envy breeds unkind division;  
 There comes the ruin, there begins confusion.  
*[Exit.]*

#### SCENE II. Before Bourdeaux.

*Enter TALBOT, with trumpet and drum.*

*Tal.* Go to the gates of Bourdeaux, trumpet;  
 Summon their general unto the wall.

*Trumpet sounds. Enter General and others, alight.*

English John Talbot, captain, calls you forth,  
 Servant in arms to Henry King of England;  
 And thus he would: Open your city gates;

Be humble to us; call my sovereign yours,  
And do him homage as obedient subjects;  
And I'll withdraw me and my bloody power:  
But, if you frown upon this proffer'd peace,  
You tempt the fury of my three attendants, 10  
Lean famine, quartering steel, and climbing  
fire:

Who in a moment even with the earth  
Shall lay your stately and air-braving towers,  
If you forsake the offer of my love.

Gen. Thou ominous and fearful owl of  
death,

Our nation's terror and their bloody scourge!  
The period of thy tyranny approacheth.  
On us thou canst not enter but by death;  
For, I protest, we are well fortified  
And strong enough to issue out and fight; 20  
If thou desire, the Dauphin, well appointed,  
Stands with the snarers of war to tangle thee:  
On either hand thee there are squadrons  
pitch'd,

To wait thee from the liberty of flight;  
And no way canst thou turn thee for redress,  
But death doth front thee with apparent spoil  
And pale destruction meets thee in the face.  
Ten thousand French have ta'en the sacrament  
To rive their dangerous artillery  
Upon no Christian soul but English Talbot. 30  
Lo, there thou stand'st, a breathing valiant  
man.

Of an invincible unconquer'd spirit!  
This is the latest glory of thy praise  
That I, thy enemy, due thee withal;  
For ere the glass, that now begins to run,  
Finish the process of his sandy hour,  
These eyes, that see thee now well coloured,  
Shall see thee wither'd, bloody, pale and dead.

[Drum afar off.]  
Hark! hark! the Dauphin's drum, a warning  
bell,

Sings heavy music to thy timorous soul; 40  
And mine shall ring thy dire departure out.

[Exeunt General, &c.]  
Tal. He fables not; I hear the enemy:  
Out, some light horsemen, and pursue their  
wings.

O, negligent and heedless discipline!  
How are we park'd and bounded in a pale,  
A little herd of England's timorous deer,  
Mazed with a yelping kennel of French curs!  
If we be English deer, be then in blood;  
Not rascal-like, to fall down with a pinch,  
But rather, moody-mad and desperate stage, 50  
Turn on the bloody hounds with heads of steel  
And make the cowardly stand aloof at bay:  
Sell every man his life as dear as mine,  
And they shall find dear death of us, my friends.  
God and Saint George, Talbot and England's  
right,

Prosper our colours in this dangerous fight!  
[Exeunt.]

### SCENE III. Plains in Gascony.

Enter a Messenger that meets YORK. Enter  
YORK with trumpet and many Soldiers:

YORK. Are not the speedy accents return'd  
again,

That dogg'd the mighty army of the Dauphin?  
Mess. They are return'd, my lord, and give  
it out

That he is march'd to Bourdeaux with his  
power,

To fight with Talbot: as he march'd along,  
By your espials were discovered

Two mighty troops than that the Dauphin led,  
Which join'd with him and made their march  
for Bourdeaux.

YORK. A plague upon that villain Somerset,  
That thus delays my promised supply 20

Of horsemen, that were levied for this siege!  
Renowned Talbot doth expect my aid,

And I am lowt'd by a traitor villain  
And cannot help the noble chevalier:

God comfort him in this necessity!  
If he miscarry, farewell wars in France.

Enter SIR WILLIAM LUCY.

Lucy. Thou princely leader of our English  
strength,

Never so needful on the earth of France,  
Spur to the rescue of the noble Talbot,

Who now is girdled with a waist of iron 30  
And hemm'd about with grim destruction:

To Bourdeaux, warlike duke! to Bourdeaux,  
York!

Else, farewell Talbot, France, and England's  
honour.

YORK. O God, that Somerset, who is proud  
heart

Doth stop my cornets, were in Talbot's place!  
So should we save a valiant gentleman

By forfeiting a traitor and a coward.  
Mad ire and wrathful fury makes me weep,

That thus we die, while renegade traitors sleep.  
Lucy. O, send some succour to the distressed  
lord! 40

YORK. He dies, we lose; I break my warlike  
word;

We mourn, France smiles; we lose, they daily  
get;

All long of this vile traitor Somerset.  
Lucy. Then God take mercy on brave  
Talbot's soul;

And on his son young John, who two hours  
since

I met in travel toward his warlike father:  
This seven years did not Talbot see his son;

And now they meet where both their lives are  
done.

YORK. Alas, what joy shall noble Talbot  
have

To bid his young son welcome to his grave! 50  
Away! vexation almost stops my breath.

That summer'd friends greet in the hour of  
death.

Lucy, farewell: no more my fortunes care,  
But curses the enemy I cannot aid the man

Maine, Blois, Poitiers, and Tours, are won  
aw—

Lucy. Then, while the village of  
Reeds in the bosom of

Sleeping negligence doth bring to pass  
The conquest of our shores and conquests

That ever living man of memory,  
Henry the Fifth: whiles they each other cross,  
Lives, honours, lands and all hurry to loss.  
[Exit.

SCENE IV. *Other plains in Gascony.*

Enter SOMERSET, with his army; a Captain  
of TALBOT'S with him.

Som. It is too late; I cannot send them  
now:

This expedition was by York and Talbot  
Too rashly plotted: all our general force  
Might with a sally of the very town  
Be buckled with: the over-daring Talbot  
Hath sullied all his glores of former honour  
By this unheeded, desperate, wild adventure:  
York set him on to fight and die in shame,  
That, Talbot dead, great York might bear the  
name.

Cap. Here is Sir William Lucy, who with me  
Set from our o'match'd forces forth for aid.

Enter SIR WILLIAM LUCY.

Som. How now, Sir William! whither were  
you sent?

Lucy. Whither, my lord! from bought and  
sold Lord Talbot:

Who, ring'd about with bold adversity,  
Cries out for noble York and Somerset:  
To best assailing death from his weak regions:  
And whiles the honourable captain there  
Drops bloody sweat from his war-wearied limbs,  
And, in advantage lingering, looks for rescue,  
You, his false hopes, the trust of England's  
honour,

Keep off aloof with worthless emulation.  
Let not your private discord keep away  
The levied succours that should lend him aid,  
While he, renowned noble gentleman,  
Yields up his life unto a world of odds:  
Orleans the Bastard, Charles, Burgundy,  
Alençon, Reigner, compass him about,  
And Talbot perisheth by your default.

Som. York set him on; York should have  
sent him aid.

Lucy. And York as fast upon your grace  
exclaims:

Swearing that you withhold his levied host,  
Collected for this expedition.

Som. York lies; he might have sent and  
had the horse:

I owe him little duty, and less love;  
And take foul scorn to fawn on him by sending.

Lucy. The fraud of England, not the force  
of France,

Hath now entrapp'd the noble-minded Talbot:  
Never to England shall he bear his life;  
But dies, betray'd to fortune by your strife.

Som. Come, go; I will dispatch the horsemen  
straight:

Within six hours they will be at his aid.

Lucy. Too late comes rescue: he is ta'en or  
slain;

For he could not, if he would have fled;  
would Talbot never, though he might.

If he be dead, brave Talbot, then  
!!

Lucy. His fame lives in the world, his  
shame in you.  
[Exit.

SCENE V. *The English camp near Bourdeaux.*

Enter TALBOT and JOHN his son.

Tal. O young John Talbot! I did send for  
thee

To tutor thee in stratagems of  
That Talbot's name might be in thee revived  
When sapless age and weak unable limbs  
Should bring thy father to his drooping chair.  
But, O malignant and ill-boding stars!  
Now thou art come unto a feast of death,  
A terrible and unavowed danger:  
Therefore, dear boy, mount on my swiftest  
horse;

And I'll direct thee how thou shalt escape  
By sudden flight: come, dally not, be gone.

John. Is my name Talbot? and am I your  
son?

And shall I fly! O, if you love my mother,  
Dishonour not her honourable name,  
To make a bastard and a slave of me!  
The world will say, he is not Talbot's blood,  
That basely fled when noble Talbot stood.

Tal. Fly, to revenge my death, if I be slain.

John. He that flies so will ne'er return  
again.

Tal. If we both stay, we both are sure to  
die.

John. Then let me stay; and, father, do you  
fly:

Your loss is great, so your regard should be;  
My worth unknown, no loss is known in me.  
Upon my death the French can little boast;  
In yours they will, in you all hopes are lost.  
Flight cannot stain the honour you have  
won:

But mine it will, that no exploit have done:  
You fled for vantage, every one will swear;  
But, if I bow, they'll say it was for fear.  
There is no hope that ever I will stay,  
If the first hour I shrink and run away.

Here on my knee I beg mortality,  
Rather than life preserved with infamy.

Tal. Shall all thy mother's hopes lie in one  
tomb!

John. Ay, rather than I'll shame my mother's  
womb.

Tal. Upon my blessing, I command thee go.

John. To fight I will, but not to fly the foe.

Tal. Part of thy father may be saved in  
thee.

John. No part of him but will be shame in  
me.

Tal. Thou never hadst renown, nor cannot not  
lose it.

John. Yes, your renowned name: shall  
flight abuse it!

Tal. Thy father's charge shall clear thee  
from that stain.

John. You cannot witness for me, being  
slain.

If death be so apparent, then both fly.

Tal. And leave my followers here to fight  
and die!

My age was never tainted with such shame.



*John.* And shall my youth be guilty of such blame?

No more can I be sever'd from your side,  
Than can yourself yourself in twain divide:

Stay, go, do what you will, the like do I:  
For live I will not, if my father die.

*Tal.* Then here I take my leave of thee, fair son,

Born to eclipse thy life this afternoon.

Come, side by side together live and die;

And soul with soul from France to heaven fly.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI. *A field of battle.*

*Alarum: excursions, wherein TALBOT'S Son is hemmed about, and TALBOT rescues him.*

*Tal.* Saint George and victory! fight, soldiers, fight!

The regent hath with Talbot broke his word  
And left us to the rage of France his sword.  
Where is John Talbot? Pause, and take thy breath;

I gave thee life and rescued thee from death.

*John.* O, twice my father, twice am I thy son!

The life thou gavest me first was lost and done,  
Till with thy warlike sword, despite of fate,  
To my determined time thou gavest new date.

*Tal.* When from the Dauphin's crest thy sword struck fire,

It warm'd thy father's heart with proud desire  
Of bold-faced victory. Then leaden age,  
Quicken'd with youthful spleen and warlike

rage,  
Beat down Alençon, Orleans, Burgundy,  
And from the pride of Gallia rescued thee.

The ireful bastard Orleans, that drew blood  
From thee, my boy, and had the maidenhood  
Of thy first fight, I soon encountered,

And interchanging blows I quickly shed  
Some of his bastard blood; and in disgrace

bespoke him thus: 'Contaminated, base  
And misbegotten blood I spill of thine.

Mean and right poor, for that pure blood of mine

Which thou didst force from Talbot, my brave boy!'

Here, purposing the Bastard to destroy,  
Came in strong rescue. Speak, thy father's

care,  
Art thou not weary, John? how dost thou fare?

Wilt thou yet leave the battle, boy, and fly,  
Now thou art seal'd the son of chivalry?

Fly, to revenge my death when I am dead:  
The help of one stands me in little stead.

O, too much folly is it, well I wot,  
To hazard all our lives in one small boat!

If I to-day die not with Frenchmen's rage,  
To-morrow I shall die with mickle age:

By me they nothing gain an if I stay;  
'Tis but the shortening of my life one day:

In thee thy mother dies, our household's name,  
My death's revenge, thy youth, and England's

fame:  
All these and more we hazard by thy stay;  
All these are saved if thou wilt fly away.

*John.* The sword of Orleans hath not made me smart;

These words of yours draw life-blood from my heart;

On that advantage, bought with such a shame,  
To save a paltry life and slay bright fame,

Before young Talbot from old Talbot fly,  
The coward horse that bears me fall and die!

And like me to the peasant boys of France,  
To be shame's scorn and subject of mischance!

Surely, by all the glory you have won,  
An if I fly, I am not Talbot's son:

Then talk no more of flight, it is no boot;  
If son to Talbot, die at Talbot's foot.

*Tal.* Then follow thou thy desperate sire of Crete,  
Thou Icarus; thy life to me is sweet:

If thou wilt fight, fight by thy father's side;  
And, commendable proved, let's die in pride.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VII. *Another part of the field.*

*Alarum: excursions. Enter old TALBOT led by a Servant.*

*Tal.* Where is my other life! mine own is gone;

O, where's young Talbot! where is valiant John!

Triumphant death, smear'd with captivity,  
Young Talbot's valour makes me smile at thee:

When he perceived me shrink and on my knee,  
His bloody sword he brandish'd over me,

And, like a hungry lion, did commence  
Rough deeds of rage and stern impatience;

But when my angry guardant stood alone,  
Tendering my ruin and assail'd of none,

Dizzy-eyed fury and great rage of heart  
Suddenly made him from my side to start

Into the clustering battle of the French;  
And in that sea of blood my boy did drench

His over-mounting spirit, and there died,  
My Icarus, my blossom, in his pride.

*Serv.* O my dear lord, lo, where your son is borne!

*Enter Soldiers, with the body of young TALBOT.*

*Tal.* Thou antic death, which laugh'at us here to scorn,

Anon, from thy insulting tyranny,  
Coupled in bonds of perpetuity,

Two Talbots, winged through the lither sky,  
In thy despite shall 'scape mortality.

O thou, whose wounds become hard-favour'd death,

Speak to thy father ere thou yield thy breath!  
Brave death by speaking, whether he will or no;

Imagine him a Frenchman and thy foe.  
Poor boy! he smiles, methinks, as who should

say,  
Had death been French, then death had died to-day.

Come, come and lay him in his father's arms:  
My spirit can no longer bear these torments.

*Soldiers, adieu! I have what I would have.*  
Now my old arms are young John Talbot's grave.

**Enter CHARLES, ALANCON, BURGUNDY, BARRARD, LA PUCELLE, and forces.**

**Char.** Had York and Somerset brought rescue in.

We should have found a bloody day of this.

**Barr.** How the young whelp of Talbot's, raising wood,

Did slash his puny sword in Frenchmen's blood!

**Puc.** Once I encounter'd him, and thus I said:

born  
To be the pillage of a giglot wench:  
So, pushing in the bowels of the French,  
He left me proudly, as unworthy fight.

**Barr.** Doubtless he would have made a noble knight;

See, where he lies inhearsed in the arms  
Of the most bloody nurser of his harms!

**Barr.** Hew them to pieces, hack their bones  
asunder,

Whose life was England's glory, Gallia's  
wonder.

**Char.** O, no, forbear! for that which we  
have fled

During the life, let us not wrong it dead. 50

**Enter** SIR WILLIAM LUCY, attended; Herald  
of the French preceding.

**Lucy.** Herald, conduct me to the Dauphin's  
tent,

To know who hath obtain'd the glory of the  
day.

**Char.** On what submissive message art thou  
sent?

**Lucy.** Submission, Dauphin! 'tis a mere  
French word;

We English warriors wot not what it means.  
I come to know what prisoners thou hast taken

And to survey the bodies of the dead.

**Char.** For prisoners ask't thoust hell our  
prison is.

But tell me whom thou seek'st.

**Lucy.** But where's the great Alcides of the  
Achaia?

Valiant Lord Talbot, Earl of Shrewsbury,  
Crested for his rare success in arms,

Great Earl of Warburton, Watford and  
Fulham;

Lord Talbot of Goodric and Urchinfield,  
Lord Strange of Blackmere, Lord Verdon of

Alton,  
Lord Cromwell of Wingfield, Lord Furnival of

Stoke Newington,  
The brave victorious Lord of Falconbridge;

Knight of the noble order of Saint George,  
Worthy Saint Michael and the Golden fleece;

Great Admiral to Henry the Sixth 70  
Of all his wars within the realm of France!

**Lucy.** How is an ally's steady style indeed!

For that, that two and fifty kingdoms hath,  
Whom not as authors write as thou,

How dost thou magnify with all these titles  
standing and by-blown lies here at our feet.

**Lucy.** In Talbot slain, the Frenchmen's only  
scourge,

Your kingdom's terror and black Nemesis!

O, were mine eye-balls into bullets turn'd,  
That I in rage might shoot them at your faces!

(1) that I could but call these dead to life! 80  
It were enough to fright the realm of France:

Were but his picture left amongst you here,  
It would amaze the proudest of you all.

Give me their bodies, that I may bear them  
hence

And give them burial as becometh their worth.

**Puc.** I think this upstart is old Talbot's  
ghost,

He speaks with such a proud commanding  
spirit.

For God's sake, let him have 'em; to keep them  
here,

They would but stink, and putrefy the air. 90  
**Char.** Go, take their bodies hence.

**Lucy.** I'll bear them hence; but from their  
ashes shall be reard

A phoenix that shall make all France afraid.

**Char.** So we be rid of them, do with 'em  
what thou wilt.

And now to Paris, in this conquering vein  
All will be ours, now bloody Talbot's slain.

[Exeunt.]

## ACT V.

### SCENE I. London. The palace.

**Scenact.** Enter KING, GLOUCESTER, and  
EXETER.

**King.** Have you perused the letters from  
the pope.

The emperor and the Earl of Armagnac?

**Glow.** I have, my lord: and their intent is  
this:

They humbly sue unto your excellencies  
To have a godly peace concluded of

Between the realms of England and of France.

**King.** How doth your grace affect their  
motion?

**Glow.** Well, my good lord; and as the only  
means

To stop effusion of our Christian blood  
And stablish quietness on every side. 10

**King.** Ay, marry, uncle; for I always  
thought

It was both impious and unnatural  
That such immanity and bloody strife

Should reign among professors of one faith.

**Glow.** Beside, my lord, the sooner to effect  
And surer bind this knot of amity,

The Earl of Armagnac, near knit to Charles,  
A man of great authority in France,

Proffers his only daughter to your grace  
In marriage, with a large and sumptuous  
dowry. 20

**King.** Marriage, uncle! alas, thy years are  
young!

And sister is my study and my toils  
To win a husband with a pennance.

Yet call the ambassadors; and, as you please,  
So let them have their answers every one!

I shall be well content with any choice  
Tends to God's glory and my country's good.

*Enter WINCHESTER in Cardinal's habit, a Legate and two Ambassadors.*

*Ecc.* What! is my Lord of Winchester installed?

And call'd unto a cardinal's degree?

Then I perceive that will be verified

Henry the Fifth did sometime prophesy,

'If once he come to be a cardinal,

He'll make his cap co-equal with the crown.'

*King.* My lords ambassadors, your several suits

Have been consider'd and debated on.

Your purpose is both good and reasonable;

And therefore are we certainly resolved

To draw conditions of a friendly peace;

Which by my Lord of Winchester we mean

Shall be transported presently to France.

*Glov.* And for the proffer of my lord your

master,

I have inform'd his highness so at large

As liking of the lady's virtuous gifts,

Her beauty and the value of her dower,

He doth intend she shall be England's queen.

*King.* In argument and proof of which

contract,

Bear her this jewel, pledge of my affection.

And so, my lord protector, see them guarded

And safely brought to Dover; where I shipp'd

Commit them to the fortune of the sea.

*[Exeunt all but Winchester and Legate.]*

*Win.* Stay, my lord legate; you shall first

receive

The sum of money which I promised

Should be deliver'd to his holiness

For clothing me in these grave ornaments.

*Leg.* I will attend upon your lordship's

leisure.

*Win.* *[Aside]* Now Winchester will not sub-

mit, I trow,

Or be inferior to the proudest peer.

Humphrey of Gloucester, thou shalt well

perceive

That, neither in birth or for authority,

The bishop will be overcome by thee:

I'll either make thee stoop and bend thy knee,

Or sack this country with a mutiny. *[Exeunt.]*

## SCENE II. France. Plains in Anjou.

*Enter CHARLES, BURGUNDY, ALENÇON, BASTARD, REIGNIER, LA PUCELLE, and forces.*

*Char.* These news, my lords, may cheer our drooping spirits:

'Tis said the stout Parisians do revolt

And turn again unto the warlike French.

*Alen.* Then march to Paris, royal Charles of France.

And keep not back your powers in dalliance.

*Puc.* Peace be amongst them, if they turn to us;

Else, ruin combat with their palaces!

## Enter Scout.

*Scout.* Success unto our valiant general, and happiness to his accomplishments!

*Char.* What things send our scouts? I prize, speak.

*Scout.* The English army, that divid'd was into two parties, is now confin'd in one,

And means to give you battle presently.

*Char.* Somewhat too sudden, sir, the warning is;

But we will presently provide for them.

*Bur.* I trust the ghost of Talbot is not there:

Now he is gone, my lord, you need not fear.

*Puc.* Of all base passions, fear is most accursed.

Command the conquest, Charles, it shall be thine.

Let Henry fret and all the world repine.

*Char.* Then on, my lords; and France be fortunate! *[Exeunt.]*

## SCENE III. Before Angiers.

*Alarm. Excursions. Enter LA PUCELLE.*

*Puc.* The regent conquers, and the Frenchmen fly.

Now help, ye charming spells and peripatets;

And ye choice spirits that admonish me

And give me signs of future accidents.

*[Thunder.]*

You speedy helpers, that are substitutes

Under the lordly monarch of the north,

Appear and aid me in this enterprise.

## Enter Fiends.

This speedy and quick appearance argues proof

Of your accustomed diligence to me.

Now, ye familiar spirits, that are call'd

Out of the powerful regions under earth,

Help me this once, that France may get the field.

*[They wait, and speak not.]*

O, hold me not with silence over-long!

Where I was wont to feed you with my blood,

I'll lop a member off and give it you

In earnest of a further benefit,

So you do condescend to help me now.

*[They hang their heads.]*

No hope to have redress! My body shall

Pay recompense, if you will grant my suit.

*[They shake their heads.]*

Cannot my body nor blood sacrifice

Entreat you to your wonted fierceness?

Then take my soul, my body, soul and all,

Before that England give the French the field.

*[They depart.]*

See, they forsake me! Now the time is

That France must vall her lofty-plumed

And let her head fall into England's lap.

My ancient incantations are too weak,

And hold too strong for me to buckle with;

Now, France, thy glory droopeth to the dust.

*[Exit.]*

*Excursions. Re-enter LA PUCELLE.*

*band to hand with YORK: LA PUCELLE.*

*YORK.* The French fly.

*YORK.* Damsel of France, I think I have you fast!

Unchain your spirits now with swelling;

And try if they can gain your heart.

A goodly prize, in her the devil's grace!

See, how she goes, with such a hand and foot!

As if with Circe she would change my shape!

*Puc.* Changed to a worse shape thou canst not be.

*York.* O, Charles the Dauphin is a proper man;

No shape but his can please your dainty eye.

*Puc.* A plaguing mischief light on Charles and thee!

And may ye both be suddenly surprised 40  
By bloody hands, in sleeping on your beds!

*York.* Fell banning hag, enchantress, hold thy tongue!

*Puc.* I prithee, give me leave to curse awhile.

*York.* Curse, miscreant, when thou comest to the stake. [Exeunt.]

*Alarum.* Enter SUFFOLK, with MARGARET in his hand.

*Suf.* Be what thou wilt, thou art my prisoner.

[Gazes on her.]

O fairest beauty, do not fear nor fly!

For I will touch thee but with reverent hands;

I kiss these fingers for eternal peace,

And lay them gently on thy tender side.

Who art thou? say, that I may honour thee. 50

*Mar.* Margaret my name, and daughter to a king.

The King of Naples, whose'er thou art.

*Suf.* An earl I am, and Suffolk am I call'd.

Be not offended, nature's miracle,

Thou art allotted to be taken by me:

So doth the swan her downy cygnet save,

Keeping them prisoner underneath her wings.

Yet, if this servile usage once offend,

Go and be free again as Suffolk's friend.

[She is going.]

O, stay! I have no power to let her pass: 60

My hand would free her, but my heart says no.

As plays the sun upon the glassy streams,

Twinkling another counterfeited beam,

So seems this gorgeous beauty to mine eyes.

Fain would I woo her, yet I dare not speak;

I'll call for pen and ink, and write my mind.

*Fie, de la Pote!* disable not thyself;

Hast not a tongue? is she not here?

Wilt thou be daunted at a woman's sight?

Ay, beauty's princely majesty is such, 70

Confounds the tongue and makes the senses rough.

*Mar.* Say, Earl of Suffolk—if thy name be so—

What ransom must I pay before I pass?

For I perceive I am thy prisoner.

*Suf.* How canst thou tell she will deny thy suit.

Before thou make a trial of her love?

*Mar.* Why speak'st thou not? what ransom

*Suf.* She's useful and therefore to be

would;

She is a woman, therefore to be won.

*Mar.* Wilt thou accept of ransom? yes,

or no?

*Suf.* Fond man, remember that thou hast a

king's

That how can Margaret be thy paramour?

*Mar.* I were best to leave him, for he will not hear.

*Suf.* There all is marr'd; there lies a cooling card.

*Mar.* He talks at random; sure, the man is mad.

*Suf.* And yet a dispensation may be had.

*Mar.* And yet I would that you would answer me.

*Suf.* I'll win this Lady Margaret. For whom?

Why, for my king: tush, that's a wooden thing!

*Mar.* He talks of wood: it is some carpenter.

*Suf.* Yet so my fancy may be satisfied, 91

And peace established between these realms.

But there remains a scruple in that too;

For though her father be the King of Naples,

Duke of Anjou and Maine, yet is he poor,

And our nobility will scorn the match.

*Mar.* Hear ye, captain, are you not at

leisure?

*Suf.* It shall be so, disdain they ne'er so

much:

Henry is youthful and will quickly yield.

Madam, I have a secret to reveal. 100

*Mar.* What though I be enthralld? he seems

a knight,

And will not any way dishonour me.

*Suf.* Lady, vouchsafe to listen what I say.

*Mar.* Perhaps I shall be rescued by the

French;

And then I need not crave his courtesy.

*Suf.* Sweet madam, give me hearing in a

cause—

*Mar.* Tush, women have been captivate ere

now.

*Suf.* Lady, wherefore talk you so?

*Mar.* I cry you, mercy, 'tis but Quid pro

Quo.

*Suf.* Say, gentle princess, would you not

suppose 110

Your bondage happy, to be made a queen?

*Mar.* To be a queen in bondage is more

vile

Than is a slave in base servility;

For princes should be free.

*Suf.* And so shall you,

If happy England's royal kin be free.

*Mar.* Why, what concerns his freedom

unto me?

*Suf.* I'll undertake to make thee Henry's

queen.

To put a golden sceptre in thy hand

And set a precious crown upon thy head,

If thou wilt condescend to be my— 120

*Mar.* What!

*Suf.* His love.

*Mar.* I am unworthy to be Henry's wife.

*Suf.* No, gentle madam; I unworthy am

To woo so fair a dame to be his wife

And have no portion in the choice myself.

How say you, madam, are ye so content?

*Mar.* An if my father please, I am content.

*Suf.* Then call our captains and our colours

forth.

And, madam, at your father's castle walls

We'll crave a parley, to confer with him. 130

*A parley sounded. Enter REIGNIER on the walls.*

See, Reignier, see, thy daughter prisoner!

*Reig.* To whom!

*Suf.* To me.

*Reig.* Suffolk, what remedy? I am a soldier and unapt to weep Or to exclaim on fortune's fickleness.

*Suf.* Yes, there is remedy enough, my lord: Consent, and for thy honour give consent, Thy daughter shall be wedded to my king; Whom I with pain have woo'd and won thereto;

And this her easy-held imprisonment Hath gain'd thy daughter princely liberty. 140

*Reig.* Speaks Suffolk as he thinks!

*Suf.* Fair Margaret knows That Suffolk doth not flatter, face, or feign.

*Reig.* Upon thy princely warrant, I descend To give thee answer of thy just demand.

*[Exit from the walls.]*

*Suf.* And here I will expect thy coming.

*Trumpets sound. Enter REIGNIER, below.*

*Reig.* Welcome, brave earl, into our territories:

Command in Anjou what your honour pleases. *Suf.* Thanks, Reignier, happy for so sweet a child,

Fit to be made companion with a king: What answer makes your grace unto my suit?

*Reig.* Since thou dost deign to woo her little worth

To be the princely bride of such a lord; Upon condition I may quietly Enjoy mine own, the country Maine and Anjou, Free from oppression or the stroke of war, My daughter shall be Henry's, if he please.

*Suf.* That is her ransom; I deliver her; And those two counties I will undertake Your grace shall well and quietly enjoy.

*Reig.* And I again, in Henry's royal name, As deputy unto that gracious king, Give thee her hand, for sign of plighted faith.

*Suf.* Reignier of France, I give thee kingly thanks,

Because this is in traffic of a king.

*[Aside]* And yet, methinks, I could be well content

To be mine own attorney in this case.

I'll over then to England with this news, And make this marriage to be solemnized. So farewell, Reignier; set this diamond safe In golden palaces, as it becomes. 170

*Reig.* I do embrace thee, as I would embrace The Christian prince, King Henry, were he here.

*Mer.* Farewell, my lord: good wishes, praise and prayers

Shall Suffolk ever have of Margaret. *[Going.]*

*Suf.* Farewell, sweet madam: but hark you, Margaret:

No princely commendations to my king!

*Mer.* Such commendations as becomes a maid,

A virgin and his servant, say to him, Words sweetly placed and modestly

But, madam, I must trouble you again; No loving token to his majesty!

*Mar.* Yes, my good lord, a pure unspotted heart.

Never yet tainted with love, I send the king.

*Suf.* And this withal. *[Kisses her.]*

*Mar.* That for thyself: I will not so presume To send such peevish tokens to a king.

*[Exeunt Reignier and Margaret.]*  
*Suf.* O, wert thou for myself! But, Suffolk, stay;

Thou mayst not wander in that labyrinth; There Minotaurs and ugly treasons lurk.

Solicit Henry with her wondrous praise: 190 Bethink thee on her virtues that surmount,

And natural graces that extinguish art; Repeat their semblance often on the seas,

That, when thou comest to kneel at Henry's feet,

Thou mayst bereave him of his wits with wonder. *[Exit.]*

SCENE IV. Camp of the DUKE OF YORK in Anjou.

*Enter YORK, WARWICK, and others.*

*York.* Bring forth that sorceress condemn'd to burn.

*Enter LA PUCELLE, guarded, and a Shepherd.*

*Shep.* Ah, Joan, this kills thy father's heart outright!

Have I sought every country far and near, And, now it is my chance to find thee out, Must I behold thy timeless cruel death! Ah, Joan, sweet daughter Joan, I'll die with thee!

*Puc.* Decrepit miser! base ignoble wretch! I am descended of a gentler blood;

Thou art no father nor no friend of mine. *Shep.* Out, out! My lords, an please you,

'tis not so; I did beget her, all the parish knows:

Her mother liveth yet, can testify She was the first fruit of my bachelorship.

*War.* Graceless! wilt thou deny thy parentage?

*York.* This argues what her kind of life hath been,

Wicked and vile; and so her death concludes. *Shep.* Fie, Joan, that thou wilt be so obstinate!

God knows thou art a collop of my flesh; And for thy sake have I shed many a tear:

Deny me not, I pray thee, gentle Joan. 200

*Puc.* Passant, avant! You have suborn'd this man,

Of purpose to obscure my noble birth.

*Shep.* 'Tis true, I gave a noble to the priest The morn that I was wedded to her mother.

Kneel down and take my blessing, good my girl.

Wilt thou not stoop? Now cursed be the time (If thy nativity) I would the milk

Thy mother gave thee when thou suck'dst her breast;

Had been a little rathbone for thy sake! Or else, when thou didst creep my lambs' track,

I wish some ravenous wolf had eaten thee! 21

Dost thou deny thy father, cursed dæb!  
O, burn her, burn her! hanging is too good.

*[Exit.]*  
York. Take her away; for she hath lived too long.

To fill the world with vicious qualities.

*Puc.* First, let me tell you whom you have condemn'd:

Not me begotten of a shepherd swain,  
But issued from the progeny of kings;

Virtuous and holy; chosen from above,  
By inspiration of celestial grace,

To work exceeding miracles on earth.

I never had to do with wicked spirits:  
But you, that are polluted with your lusts,

Stain'd with the guiltless blood of innocents,  
Corrupt and tainted with a thousand vices,

Because you want the grace that others have,  
You judge it straight a thing impossible

To compass wonders but by help of devils.

No, misconceived! Joan of Arc hath been  
A virgin from her tender infancy,

Chaste and immaculate in very thought;

Whose maiden blood, thus rigorously effused,  
Will cry for vengeance at the gates of heaven.

*York.* Ay, ay: away with her to execution!

*War.* And hark ye, sirs; because she is a maid,

Spare for no faggots, let there be snow:

Place barrels of pitch upon the fatal stake,

That so her torture may be shortened.

*Puc.* Will nothing turn your unrelenting hearts!

Then, Joan, discover thine infirmity,

That warranteth by law to be thy privilege.

I am with child, ye bloody homicides:

Murder not then the fruit within my womb,

Although ye hale me to a violent death.

*York.* Now heaven forswear! the holy maid  
with child!

*War.* The greatest miracle that e'er ye wrought:

Is all your strict preciseness come to this!

*York.* She and the Dauphin have been juggling:

I did imagine what would be her refuge.

*War.* Well, go to; we'll have no bastards live;

Especially since Charles must father it.

*Puc.* You are deceived; my child is none of his;

It was Alençon that enjoy'd my love.

*York.* Alençon! that notorious Machiavel!  
It dies, an if it had a thousand lives.

*Puc.* O, give me leave, I have deluded you:  
Twas neither Charles nor yet the duke I named;

But Reignier, king of Naples, that prevail'd.

*War.* A married man! that's most intolerable.

*York.* Why, how's a girl! I think she knows not well,

There were so many, whom she may accuse.

*War.* It's sign she hath been liberal and free.

*York.* And yet, forsooth, she is a virgin pure,  
Bumpet, thy words condemn thy best and

Use to marriage, for it is in vain.

*Puc.* Then lead me hence; with whom I leave my curse:

May never glorious sun reflect his beams  
Upon the country where you make abode;

But darkness and the gloomy shade of death

Environ you, till mischief and despair;

Drive you to break your necks or hang yourselves!

*[Exit, guarded.]*  
*York.* Break thou in pieces and consume to ashes,

Thou foul accursed minister of hell!

*Enter CARDINAL BEAUFORT,*

*Winchester, attended.*

*Car.* Lord regent, I do greet your excellence  
With letters of commission from the king.

For know, my lords, the states of Christendom,

Moved with remorse of these outrageous broils,

Have earnestly implored a general peace

Between our nation and the aspiring French;

And hereat hand the Dauphin and his train

Approacheth, to confer about some matter.

*York.* Is all our travail turn'd to this effect:

After the slaughter of so many peers,

So many captains, gentlemen and soldiers,

That in this quarrel have been overthrow'n

And sold their bodies for their country's benefit,

Shall we at last conclude extenuate peace?

I have we not lost most part of all the towns,

By treason, falsehood and by treachery,

Our great progenitors had conquered?

*[Enter Warwick.]* Warwick! I forewarn with grief

The utter loss of all the realm of France.

*War.* Be patient, York: if we conclude a peace,

It shall be with such strict and severe covenants

As little shall the Frenchmen gain thereby.

*Enter CHARLES, ALENÇON, BASTARD, REIGNIER, and others.*

*Char.* Since, lords of England, it is thus agreed

That peaceful truce shall be proclaim'd in France,

We come to be informed by yourselves  
What the conditions of that league must be.

*York.* Speak, Winchester: for boiling choler chokes

The hollow passage of my poison'd voice,  
By sight of these our hateful enemies.

*Car.* Charles, and the rest, it is enacted thus:

That, in regard King Henry gives consent,  
Of mere compassion and of lenity,

To ease your country of distressful war,  
And suffer you to breathe in fruitful peace,

You shall become true liegemen to his crown:

And, Charles, upon condition then wilt swear  
To pay him tribute, and submit thyself,

Thou shalt be placed as viceroy under him,  
And still enjoy thy regal dignity.

*Alen.* Must he be then as shadow of himself?

Adorn his temples with a coronet,  
And yet, in substance and authority,

Beam but privilege of a private man!

This proffer is absurd and unreasonable.

*Char.* 'Tis known already that I am possess'd  
With more than half the Gallican territories,  
And these in reverence for their lawful king:  
Shall I, for lucre of the rest unvanquish'd, 141  
Detract so much from that prerogative,  
As to be call'd but viceroy of the whole?  
No, lord ambassador, I'll rather keep  
That which I have than, coveting for more,  
Be cast from possibility of all.

*York.* Insulting Charles! hast thou by secret means

Used intercession to obtain a league,  
And, now the matter grows to compromise,  
Standst thou aloof upon comparison? 150

Either accept the title thou usurpst,  
Of benefit proceeding from our king  
And not of any challenge of desert,  
Or we will plague thee with incessant wars.

*Rein.* My lord, you do not well in obstinacy  
To cavil in the course of this contract:  
If once it be neglected, ten to one  
We shall not find like opportunity.

*Alen.* To say the truth, it is your policy  
To save your subjects from such massacre 160  
And ruthless slaughters as are daily seen  
By our proceeding in hostility:  
And therefore take this compact of a truce,  
Although you break it when your pleasure serves.

*War.* How say'st thou, Charles! shall our  
condition stand?

*Char.* It shall;  
Only reserved, you claim no interest  
In any of our towns of garrison.

*York.* Then swear allegiance to his majesty,  
As thou art knight, never to disobey 170  
Nor be rebellious to the crown of England,  
Thou, nor thy nobles, to the crown of England.  
So, now dismiss your army when ye please:  
Hang up your ensigns, let your drums be still,  
For here we entertain a solemn peace.

[*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE V. London. The palace.

*Enter SUFFOLK in conference with the KING,  
GLOUCESTER and EXETER.*

*King.* Your wondrous rare description, noble  
earl,

Of beauteous Margaret hath astonish'd me:  
Her virtues graced with external gifts  
Do breed love's settled passions in my heart:  
And like as rigour of tempestuous gusts  
Provokes the mightiest hulk against the tide,  
So am I driven by breath of her renown  
Either to suffer shipwreck or arrive  
Where I may have fruition of her love.

*Suf.* Tush, my good lord, this superficial  
tale

Is but a preface of her worthy praise;  
The chief perfections of that lovely dame,  
Had I sufficient skill to utter them,  
Would make a volume of enticing lines,  
Able to ravish any dull conceit:  
And, which is more, she is not so divine,  
So full-replete with choies of all delights,  
But with as humble lowliness of mind

She is content to be at your command;  
Command, I mean, of virtuous chaste intents,  
To love and honour Henry as her lord. 21

*King.* And otherwise will Henry never pre-  
sume.

Therefore, my lord protector, give consent  
That Margaret may be England's royal queen.

*Glow.* So should I give consent to foster sin.  
You know, my lord, your highness is betroth'd  
Unto another lady of esteem:

How shall we then dispense with that contract,  
And not deface your honour with reproach?

*Suf.* As doth a ruler with unlawful oaths; 30  
Or one that, at a triumph having vow'd  
To try his strength, forsaketh yet the lists  
By reason of his adversary's odds:

A poor earl's daughter is unequal odds,  
And therefore may be broke without offence.

*Glow.* Why, what, I pray, is Margaret more  
than that?

Her father is no better than an earl,  
Although in glorious titles he excel.

*Suf.* Yes, my lord, her father is a king,  
The King of Naples and Jerusalem; 40

And of such great authority in France  
As his alliance will confirm our peace  
And keep the Frenchmen in allegiance.

*Glow.* And so the Earl of Armagnac may do,  
Because he is near kinsman unto Charles.

*Eze.* Beside, his wealth doth warrant a  
liberal dower,

Where Reignier sooner will receive than give.

*Suf.* A dower, my lords! disgrace not so your  
king,

That he should be so abject, base and poor,  
To choose for wealth and not for perfect love. 50

Henry is able to enrich his queen  
And not to seek a queen to make him rich:

So worthless peasants bargain for their wives,  
As market-men for oxen, sheep, or horses.

Marriage is a matter of more worth  
Than to be dealt in by attorneyship;

Not whom we will, but whom his grace affects,  
Must be companion of his nuptial bed:

And therefore, lords, since he affects her most,  
It most of all these reasons bindeth us. 60

In our opinions she should be preferred,  
For what is wedlock forced but a hell,

An age of discord and continual strife?  
Whereas the contrary bringeth bliss,

And is a pattern of celestial peace.  
Whom should we match with Henry, being a  
king,

But Margaret, that is daughter to a king?  
Her peerless feature, joined with her birth,

Approves her fit for none but for a king;  
Her valiant courage and undaunted spirit, 70

More than in women commonly is seen,  
Will answer our hope in issue of a king;

For Henry, son unto a conqueror,  
Is likely to beget more conquerors,

If with a lady of so high resolve  
As is fair Margaret he be link'd in love.

Then yield, my lords; and here conclude with  
me

That Margaret shall be queen, and none but she.  
*King.* Whether it be through force of your  
report,

My noble Lord of Suffolk, or for that  
 My tender youth was never yet attain'd  
 With any passion of inflaming love,  
 I cannot tell; but this I am assured,  
 I feel such sharp dissension in my breast,  
 Such fierce alarms both of hope and fear,  
 As I am sick with working of my thoughts.  
 Take, therefore, shipping; post, my lord, to  
 France;

Agree to any covenants, and procure  
 That Lady Margaret do vouchsafe to come  
 To cross the seas to England and be crown'd 50  
 King Henry's faithful and anointed queen:  
 For your expenses and sufficient charge,  
 Among the people gather up a tenth.  
 Be gone, I say; for, till you do return,  
 I rest perplexed with a thousand cares.

So And you, good uncle, banish all offence:  
 If you do censure me by what you were,  
 Not what you are, I know it will excuse  
 This sudden execution of my will.  
 And so, conduct me where, from company, 200  
 I may revolve and ruminate my grief. [Exit.  
 Glou. Ay, grief, I fear me, both at first and  
 last. [Reunt Gloucester and Exeter.  
 Suff. Thus Suffolk hath prevail'd; and thus  
 he goes,  
 As did the youthful Paris once to Greece  
 With hope to find the like event in love,  
 But prosper better than the Trojan did.  
 Margaret shall now be queen, and rule the  
 king;  
 But I will rule both her, the king and realm.  
 [Exit.



# THE SECOND PART OF KING HENRY VI

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

KING HENRY the Sixth.  
HUMPHREY, Duke of Gloucester, his uncle.  
CARDINAL BEAUFORT, Bishop of Winchester, great-uncle to the King.  
RICHARD PLANTAGENET, Duke of York.  
EDWARD and RICHARD, his sons.  
DUKE OF SOMERSET.  
DUKE OF SUFFOLK.  
DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM.  
LORD CLIFFORD.  
Young CLIFFORD, his son.  
EARL OF SALISBURY.  
EARL OF WARWICK.  
LORD SCALES.  
LORD SAY.  
SIR HUMPHREY STAFFORD, and WILLIAM STAFFORD, his brother.  
SIR JOHN STANLEY.  
VAUX.  
MATTHEW GOFFE.  
A Sea-captain, Master, and Master's-Mate, and WALTER WHITMORE.  
Two Gentlemen, prisoners with Suffolk.  
JOHN HUME and JOHN SOUTHWELL, priests.

BOLINGBROKE, a conjurer.  
THOMAS HORNER, an armourer. PETER, his man.  
Clerk of Chatham. Mayor of Saint Alban's.  
SIMPOOX, an impostor.  
ALEXANDER IDEN, a Kentish gentleman.  
JACK CADE, a rebel.  
GEORGE BEVIS, JOHN HOLLAND, DIOR the butcher, SMITH the weaver, MICHAEL, &c., followers of Cade.  
Two Murderers.

MARGARET, Queen to King Henry.  
ELEANOR, Duchess of Gloucester.  
MARGARET JOURDAIN, a witch.  
Wife to Simpcox.

Lords, Ladies, and Attendants, Petitioners, Aldermen, a Herald, a Beadle, Sheriff, and Officers, Citizens, Prentices, Falconers, Guards, Soldiers, Messengers, &c.

A Spirit.

SCENE: *England.*

## ACT I.

### SCENE I. *London. The palace.*

*Flourish of trumpets: then hautboys. Enter the KING, HUMPHREY, Duke of Gloucester, SALISBURY, WARWICK, and CARDINAL BEAUFORT, on the one side; the QUEEN, SUFFOLK, YORK, SOMERSET, and BUCKINGHAM, on the other.*

*Suf.* As by your high imperial majesty I had in charge at my depart for France, As procurator to your excellence, To marry Princess Margaret for your grace, So, in the famous ancient city Tours, In presence of the Kings of France and Sicil, The Dukes of Orleans, Calaber, Bretagne and Alencon, Seven earls, twelve barons and twenty reverend bishops,

I have perform'd my task and was espoused: And humbly now upon my bended knee, In sight of England and her lordly peers,

Deliver up my title in the queen  
To your most gracious hands, that are the substance

Of that great shadow I did represent;  
The happiest gift that ever marquess gave,  
The fairest queen that ever king received.

*King. Suffolk, arise. Welcome, Queen Margaret:*

I can express no kinder sign of love  
Than this kind kiss. O Lord, that lends me life,

Lend me a heart replete with thankfulness: so  
For thou hast given me in this beauteous face  
A world of earthly blessings to my soul,  
If sympathy of love unite our thoughts.

*Queen. Great King of England and my gracious lord,*

The mutual conference that my mind hath had,  
By day, by night, waking and in my dreams,

In courtly company or at my lute  
With you, mine elder-liest and

Makes me the bolder to salute my Lord  
With ruder terms, such as my wit affords

And over-joy of heart doth minister.

*King.* Her sight did ravish; but her grace  
In speech,

Her words y-clad with wisdom's majesty,  
Makes me from wondering fall to weeping joys;  
Such is the fulness of my heart's content.

*Lords.* With one cheerful voice welcome my  
love.

*All [kneeling].* Long live Queen Margaret,  
England's happiness!

*Queen.* We thank you all. *[Flourish.]*

*Suf.* My lord protector, so it please your  
grace,

Here are the articles of contracted peace  
Between our sovereign and the French king  
Charles.

For eighteen months concluded by consent.

*Glos. [Reads.]* 'Imprimis, It is agreed be-  
tween the French king Charles, and William de  
la Pole, Marquess of Suffolk, ambassador for  
Henry King of England, that the said Henry  
shall espouse the Lady Margaret, daughter unto  
Reignier King of Naples, Sicilia and Jerusalem,  
and crown her Queen of England ere the  
thirtieth of May next ensuing. Item, that the  
duchy of Anjou and the county of Maine shall  
be released and delivered to the king her father'—  
*[Lays the paper fall.]*

*King.* Uncle, how now!

*Glos.* Pardon me, gracious lord:  
Some sudden quake hath struck me at the  
heart

And dimm'd mine eyes, that I can read no  
further.

*King.* Uncle of Winchester, I pray, read  
on.

*Car. [Reads.]* 'Item, It is further agreed be-  
tween them, that the duchies of Anjou and  
Maine shall be released and delivered over to  
the king her father, and she sent over of the King  
of England's own proper cost and charges, with-  
out having any dowry.'

*King.* They please us well. Lord marquess,  
kneel down:

We have create thee the first duke of Suffolk,  
And gird thee with the sword. Cousin of York,  
We have discharge your grace from being regent  
of the parts of France, till term of eighteen  
months

Be full expired. Thanks, uncle Winchester,  
Gloucester, York, Buckingham, Somerset,  
Salisbury, and Warwick: *70*

We thank you all for this great favour done,  
In entertainment to my princely queen.  
Come, let us in, and with all speed provide  
To see her coronation be perform'd.

*[Exeunt King, Queen, and Suffolk.]*  
*Glos.* Have peers of England, pillars of the  
state,

To you, Duke Humphrey must unload his grief,  
Your grief, the common grief of all the land.  
What did my brother Henry spend his youth,  
His valour, coin and people, in the wars?

Did he not often lodge in open field, *80*  
In cold and summer's parching heat,

—France, his true inheritance?  
My brother Bedford toll his wife,  
Yea, what Henry got!

Have you yourselves, Somerset, Buckingham,  
Brave York, Salisbury, and victorious Warwick,  
Received deep scars in France and Normandy?  
Or hath mine uncle Beaufort and my:  
With all the learned council of the  
Studied so long, sat in the council— *90*  
Early and late, debating to and fro  
How France and Frenchmen might | kept in

awe.  
And had his highness in his infancy  
Crowned in Paris in despite of foes?

And shall these labours and these honours die?  
Shall Henry's conquest, Bedford's vigilance,  
Your deeds of war and all our counsel—  
O peers of England, shameful is this league!

Fatal this marriage, cancelling your fame,  
Blotting your names from books of memory, *100*  
Razing the characters of your renown,  
Defacing monuments of conquer'd France,  
Undoing all, as all had never been!

*Car.* Nephew, what means this passionate  
discourse,

This peroration with such circumstance?  
For France, 'tis ours; and we will keep it still.

*Glos.* Ay, uncle, we will keep it, if we can;  
But now it is impossible we should:

Suffolk, the new-made duke that rules the roost,  
Hath given the duchy of Anjou and Maine *110*  
Unto the poor King Reignier, whose large style  
Agrees not with the leanness of his purse.

*Sal.* Now, by the death of Him that died for  
all,

These counties were the keys of Normandy.  
But wherefore weeps Warwick, my valiant son?

*War.* For grief that they are past recovery:  
For, were there hope to conquer them again,  
My sword should shed hot blood, mine eyes no  
tears.

Anjou and Maine! myself did win them both:  
Those provinces these arms of mine did con-  
quer: *120*

And are the cities, that I got with wounds,  
Deliver'd up again with peaceful words?

*Mort Dieu!*

*York.* For Suffolk's duke, may he be suffo-  
cate,

That dims the honour of this warlike isle!  
France should have torn and rent my very  
heart,

Before I would have yielded to this league.  
I never read but England's kings have had  
large sums of gold and dowries with their  
wives:

And our King Henry gives away his own, *130*  
To match with her that brings no advantages.

*Glos.* A proper jest, and never heard before.  
That Suffolk should demand a whole fifteenth  
For costs and charges in transporting her!  
She should have stay'd in France and starv'd in  
France,

Before—  
*Car.* My Lord of Gloucester, now ye grow  
too hot:

It was the pleasure of *lord the!* *your*

*Glos.* My Lord of  
mind;

'Tis not my speeches  
But 'tis my presence *yes.*

Rancour will out:

I see thy fury: if I longer stay,  
We shall begin our ancient bickerings.  
Lordings, farewell; and say, when I am gone,  
I prophesied France will be lost ere long.

[Exit.

Car. So, there goes our protector in a rage.  
'Tis known to you he is mine enemy,  
Nay, more, an enemy unto you all,  
And no great friend, I fear me, to the king. 150  
Consider, lords, he is the next of blood,  
And heir apparent to the English crown:  
Had Henry got an empire by his marriage,  
And all the wealthy kingdoms of the west,  
There's reason he should be displeased at it.  
Look to it, lords; let not his smothering words  
Bewitch your hearts; be wise and circumspect.  
What though the common people favour him,  
Calling him 'Humphrey, the good Duke of  
Gloucester,'

Clapping their hands, and crying with loud  
voice, 160

'Jesu maintain your royal excellence!'

With 'God preserve the good Duke Humphrey!'  
I fear me, lords, for all this flattering gloss,  
He will be found a dangerous protector.

Buck. Why should he, then, protect our  
sovereign,

He being of age to govern of himself?  
'Cousin of Somerset, join you with me,  
And all together, with the Duke of Suffolk,  
We'll quickly noise Duke Humphrey from his  
seat.

Car. This weighty business will not brook  
delay: 170

I'll to the Duke of Suffolk presently. [Exit.

Som. Cousin of Buckingham, though Hum-  
phrey's pride

And greatness of his place be grief to us,  
Yet let us watch the haughty cardinal:

His insolence is more intolerable  
Than all the princes in the land beside:

If Gloucester be displaced, he'll be protector.

Buck. Or thou or I, Somerset, will be pro-  
tector,

Despite Duke Humphrey or the cardinal.

[Exeunt Buckingham and Somerset.

Sal. Pride went before, ambition follows  
him. 180

While these do labour for their own preferment,  
Behoves it us to labour for the realm.

I never saw but Humphrey Duke of Gloucester

Did bear him like a noble gentleman.

Oft have I seen the haughty cardinal,

More like a soldier than a man o' the church,

As stout and proud as he were lord of all,

Swear like a ruffian and demean himself

Unlike the ruler of a commonweal.

Warwick, my son, the comfort of my age, 190

Thy deeds, thy plainness and thy housekeeping,

Hath won the greatest favour of the commons,

Exceeding none but good Duke Humphrey:

And, brother York, thy acts in Ireland,

In bringing them to civil discipline,

Thy late exploits done in the heart of France,

When thou wert regret for our sovereign,

Have made thee fear'd and honour'd of the

people:

Join we together, for the public good,  
In what we can, to bridle and suppress 200  
The pride of Suffolk and the cardinal,  
With Somerset's and Buckingham's ambition;  
And, as we may, cherish Duke Humphrey's  
deeds.

While they do tend the profit of the land.

War. So God help Warwick, as he loves the  
land,

And common profit of his country!

York. [Aside] And so says York, for he hath  
greatest cause.

Sal. Then let's make haste away, and look  
unto the main.

War. Unto the main! O father, Maine is  
lost;

That Maine which by main force Warwick did  
win, 210

And would have kept so long as breath did last!

Main chance, father, you meant; but I meant  
Maine,

Which I will win from France, or else be slain.

[Exeunt Warwick and Salisbury.

York. Anjou and Maine are given to the  
French;

Paris is lost; the state of Normandy

Stands on a tickle point, now they are gone:

Suffolk concluded on the articles,

The peers agreed, and Henry was well pleased

To change two dukedoms for a duke's fair

daughter.

I cannot blame them all: what is't to them? 220

'Tis thine they give away, and not their own.

Pirates may make cheap pennyworths of their  
pillage

And purchase friends and give to courtiers;

Still revelling like lords till all be gone;

While as the silly owner of the goods

Weeps over them and wrings his hapless hands

And shakes his head and trembling stands aloof,

While all is shared and all is borne away.

Ready to starve and dare not touch his own:

So York must sit and fret and bite his tongue, 230

While his own lands are bargain'd for and sold.

Methinks the realms of England, France and  
Ireland

Bear that proportion to my flesh and blood

As did the fatal brand Athene burn'd

Unto the prince's heart of Calydon.

Anjou and Maine both given unto the French!

Cold news for me, for I had hope of France,

Even as I have of fertile England's soil.

A day will come when York shall claim his own;

And therefore I will take the Nevils' parts, 240

And make a show of love to proud Duke Hum-  
phrey,

And, when I spy advantage, claim the crown,

For that's the golden mark I seek to hit:

Nor shall proud Lancaster usurp my right.

Nor hold the sceptre in his childish fist.

Nor wear the diadem upon his head.

Whose chance-like humours fit not for a crown.

Then, York, be still awhile, till time do serve:

Watch thou and wake when others be asleep.

To pry into the secrets of the state; 250

Till Henry, surfeiting in joys of love

With his new bride and England's

queen,

# SECOND PART OF KING HENRY VI

[ACT I

... per-  
fumed;  
And in my standard bear the arms of York,  
To grapple with the house of Lancaster;  
And, for force, I'll make him yield the  
crown,  
Whose bookish rule hath pull'd fair England  
down. [Exit.]

## SCENE II. The DUKE OF GLOUCESTER'S house.

Enter DUKE HUMPHREY and his wife ELEANOR.

Duch. Why droops my lord, like over-  
ripen'd corn,  
Hanging the head at Ceres' plenteous load?  
Why doth the great Duke Humphrey knit his  
brows,  
As frowning at the favours of the world?  
Why are thine eyes fix'd to the sullen earth,  
Gazing on that which seems to dim thy sight?  
What seest thou there? King Henry's diadem,  
Enchased with all the honours of the world?  
If so, gaze on, and grovel on thy face,  
Until thy head be circled with the same. 10  
Put forth thy hand, reach at the glorious gold.  
What, is't too short? I'll lengthen it with  
mine;

And, having both together heaved it up,  
We'll both together lift our heads to heaven,  
And never more abase our sight so low  
As to vouchsafe one glance unto the ground.  
Glow. O Nell, sweet Nell, if thou dost love  
thy lord,

Banish the canker of ambitious thoughts.  
And may that thought, when I imagine ill  
Against my king and nephew, virtuous Henry,  
Be my last breathing in this mortal world! 21  
My troublous dream this night doth make  
me sad.

Duch. What dream'd my lord? tell me, and  
I'll requite it

With sweet rehearsal of my morning's dream.

Glow. Methought this staff, mine office-  
badge in court,

Was broke in twain; by whom I have forgot,  
But, as I think, it was by the cardinal;  
And on the pieces of the broken wand  
Were placed the heads of Edmund Duke of  
Somerset,

And William de la Pole, first duke of Suffolk. 30  
This was my dream: what it doth bode, God  
knows.

Duch. Tut, this was nothing but an argument  
That he that breaks a stick of Gloucester's grove  
Shall lose his head for his presumption.

But let to me, my Humphrey, my sweet duke:  
Methought I sat in seat of majesty

In the cathedral church of Westminster,  
And in that chair where kings and queens are  
crown'd;

When Henry and dame Margaret kneel'd to me  
As when my hand did set the diadem. 40

Duch. Nay, Eleanor, then must I chide out-  
rageously.

Presumptuous dame, ill-nurtured Eleanor,  
Art thou not second woman in the realm,  
And the protector's wife, beloved of him?  
Hast thou not worldly pleasure at command,  
Above the reach or compass of thy thought?  
And wilt thou still be hammering treachery,  
To tumble down thy husband and thyself  
From top of honour to disgrace's feet?  
Away from me, and let me hear no more!

Duch. What, what, my lord! are you a  
cholerick

With Eleanor, for telling but her dream?  
Next time I'll keep my dreams unto myself,  
And not be check'd.

Glow. Nay, be not angry; I am pleas'd  
again.

Enter Messenger.

Mess. My lord protector, 'tis his highness'  
pleasure

You do prepare to ride unto Saint Alban's,  
Where as the king and queen do mean to hawk.  
Glow. I go. Come, Nell, thou wilt ride  
with us!

Duch. Yes, my good lord, I'll follow pre-  
sently. 6c

[Exeunt Gloucester and Messenger.  
Follow I must; I cannot go before,  
While Gloucester bears this base and humble  
mind.

Were I a man, a duke, and next of blood,  
I would remove these tedious stumbling-blocks  
And smooth my way upon their headless necks.  
And, being a woman, I will not be slack  
To play my part in Fortune's pageant.

Where are you there? Sir John! nay, fear not,  
man,

We are alone; here's none but thee and I.

Enter HUME.

Hume. Jesus preserve your royal majesty!  
Duch. What say'st thou? majesty? I am  
but grace.

Hume. But, by the grace of God, and Hume's  
advice,

Your grace's title shall be multiplied.  
Duch. What say'st thou, man? hast thou as  
yet conferr'd

With Margery Jourdain, the cunning witch,  
With Roger Bolingbroke, the conjurer?  
And will they undertake to do me good?

Hume. This they have promised, to show  
your highness

A spirit raised from depth of under-ground,  
That shall make answer to such questions. 80  
As by your grace shall be propounded him.

Duch. It is enough; I'll think upon the  
questions:

When from Saint Alban's we do make return,  
We'll see these things effected to the full.

Here, Hume, take this reward; make merry,  
man,

With thy confederates in this weighty cause. [Exit.]

Hume. Hume must make merry with the  
duchess' gold;

Marry, and shall. But, how now, Sir John  
Hume!

Seal up your lips, and give no words but mum :  
The business asketh silent secrecy.

Dame Eleanor gives gold to bring the witch :  
(Gold cannot come amiss, were she a devil.  
Yet have I gold flies from another coast ;  
I dare not say, from the rich cardinal  
And from the great and new-made Duke of

Suffolk,  
Yet I do find it so ; for, to be plain,  
They, knowing Dame Eleanor's aspiring hu-  
mour,

Have hired me to undermine the duchess  
And buz these conjurations in her brain.  
They say 'A crafty knave does need no broker ;'  
Yet am I Suffolk and the cardinal's broker. 101  
Hume, if you take not heed, you shall go near  
To call them both a pair of crafty knaves.  
Will, so it stands ; and thus, I fear, at last  
Hume's knavery will be the duchess' wreck.  
And her attainure will be Humphrey's fall :  
Sort how it will, I shall have gold for all. [Exit.

## SCENE III. The palace.

Enter three or four Petitioners, PETER, the  
Armourer's man, being one.

First Petit. My masters, let's stand close ;  
my lord protector will come this way by and  
by, and then we may deliver our supplications  
in the quill.

Sec. Petit. Marry, the Lord protect him, for  
he's a good man ! Jesu bless him !

Enter SUFFOLK and QUEEN.

Peter. Here a' comes, methinks, and the  
queen with him. I'll be the first, sure.

Sec. Petit. Come back, fool ; this is the  
Duke of Suffolk, and not my lord protector. 10

Suf. How now, fellow ! wouldst any thing  
with me ?

First Petit. I pray, my lord, pardon me ; I  
took ye for my lord protector.

Queen. [Reading] 'To my Lord Protector !'  
Are your supplications to his lordship ! Let me  
see them : what is thine ?

First Petit. Mine is, an't please your grace,  
against John Goodman, my lord cardinal's man,  
for keeping my house, and lands, and wife and  
all, from me. 21

Suf. Thy wife too ! that's some wrong,  
indeed. What's yours ? What's here ! [Reads]  
'Against the Duke of Suffolk, for enclosing the  
commons of Melford.' How now, sir knave !

Sec. Petit. Alas, sir, I am but a poor peti-

[Non] Against my  
Duke of York was rightful heir to the crown.

Queen. What sayst thou ! did the Duke of  
York say he was rightful heir to the crown ?

Peter. That my master was ! no, forsooth :  
my master said that he was, and that the king  
was an usurper.

Suf. Who is there ? [Enter Servant.] Take  
this fellow in, and send for his master with  
a pursuivant presently : we'll hear more of your  
matter before the king.

[Exit Servant with Peter.

Queen. And as for you, that love to be pro-  
tected 40

Under the wings of our protector's grace,  
Begin your suits anew, and sue to him.

[Tears the supplications.  
Away, base cullions ! Suffolk, let them go.

All. Come, let's be gone. [Exeunt.

Queen. My Lord of Suffolk, say, is this the  
guise,

Is this the fashion in the court of England ?  
Is this the government of Britain's isle,

And this the royalty of Albion's king ?  
What, shall King Henry be a pupil still

Under the surly Gloucester's governance ? 50  
Am I a queen in title and in style,  
And must be made a subject to a duke ?

I tell thee, Pole, when in the city Tours  
Thou ranst a tilt in honour of my love  
And stolest away the ladies' hearts of France,

I thought King Henry had resembled thee  
In courage, courtship and proportion :

But all his mind is bent to holiness,  
To number Ave-Maries on his beads ;

His champions are the prophets and apostles,  
His weapons holy saws of sacred writ, 61

His study is his tilt-yard, and his loves  
Are brzen images of canonized saints.

I would the college of the cardinals  
Would choose him pope and carry him to Rome,

And set the triple crown upon his head :  
That were a state fit for his holiness.

Suf. Madam, be patient : as I was cause  
Your highness came to England, so will I

In England work your grace's full content. 70

Queen. Beside the haughty protector, have  
we Beaufort

The imperious churchman, Somerset, Bucking-  
ham,

And grumbling York ; and not the least of  
these

But can do more in England than the king.

Suf. And he of these that can do most  
of all

Cannot do more in England than the Nevils :  
Salisbury and Warwick are no simple peers.

Queen. Not all these lords do vex me half  
so much

As that proud dame, the lord protector's wife.  
She sweeps it through the court with troops of

ladies, 80

More like an empress than Duke Humphrey's  
wife :

Strangers in court do take her for the queen :  
She bears a duke's revenues on her back,

And in her heart she scorns our poverty :  
Shall I not live to be avenged on her ?

Contempruous base-born callet as she is,  
She vaunted 'mongst her minions 't other day,

The very train of her worst wearing gown  
Was better worth than all my father's lands.

Till Suffolk gave two dukedoms for his daughter.

Suf. Madam, myself have lined a hauberk for  
her,

And placed a girdle of such enticing links,  
That she will fight to listen to the lady,

And never mount to trouble you again.  
So, let her rest : and, madam, list to me !

For I am beld to counsel you in this.

Although we fancy not the cardinal,  
Yet must we join with him and with the lords,  
Till we have brought Duke Humphrey in

As for the Duke of York, this late complaint  
Will make but little for his benefit. 104  
So, sons by one, we'll weed them all at last.  
And you yourself shall steer the happy helm.

*Sounded a sennet. Enter the KING, DUKE HUMPHREY of Gloucester, CARDINAL BEAUFORT, BUCKINGHAM, YORK, SOMERSET, SALISBURY, WARWICK, and the DUCHESS of GLOUCESTER.*

*King.* For my part, noble lords, I care not which;

Or Somerset or York, all's one to me.

*York.* If York have ill demean'd himself in France,

Then let him be deny'd the regentship.

*Som.* If Somerset be unworthy of the place,  
Let York be regent; I will yield to him.

*War.* Whether your grace be worthy, yes or no, 110

Dispute not that: York is the worthier.

*Cor.* Ambitious Warwick, let thy betters speak.

*War.* The cardinal's not my better in the field.

*Buck.* All in this presence are thy betters, Warwick.

*War.* Warwick may live to be the best of all.

*Sol.* Peace, sons! and show some reason, Buckingham.

Why Somerset should be preferr'd in this.

*Queen.* Because the king, forsooth, will have it so.

*Glou.* Madam, the king is old enough himself.

To give his censure: these are no women's matters. 120

*Queen.* If he be old enough, what needs your grace

To be protector of his excellence?

*Glou.* Madam, I am protector of the realm;  
And, at his pleasure, will resign my place.

*Sol.* Remains it then and leave this inscience.

Since thou wert king—as who is king but thou?—

The commonwealth hath daily run to wreck;  
The Dauphin hath prevail'd beyond the seas;

And all the peers and nobles of the realm  
Have been as bondmen to thy sovereignty. 130

*Cor.* The common best thou rack'd; the clergy's bags

Are leak and lean with thy extortions.

*Som.* Thy sumptuous buildings and thy wife's cities

Have cost a mass of public treasury.

*Buck.* Thy cruelty in execution  
Upon offenders hath exceeded law

And left none to the mercy of the law.

*Queen.* Thy sale of offices and towns in France.

If they were known, as the suspect is great,

Would make thee quickly hop without thy head.  
[*Exit Gloucester. The Queen drops her fan.*]

Give me my fan: what, minion! can ye not?

[*She gives the Duchess a box on the ear.*]  
I cry you mercy, madam; was it you?

*Duch.* Was't! yes, it was, proud French woman.

Could I come near your beauty with my nails,  
I'd set my ten commandments in your face.

*King.* Sweet aunt, be quiet; 't is against her will.

*Duch.* Against her will! good king, look to't in time;

She'll hamper thee, and dandle thee like a baby:  
Though in this place most master wear no breeches,

She shall not strike Dame Eleanor unrevenge'd.  
[*Exit.*]

*Buck.* Lord cardinal, I will follow Eleanor,  
And listen after Humphrey, how he proceeds:

She's tickled now; her fume needs no spurs.  
She'll gallop far enough to her destruction.  
[*Exit.*]

# Re-enter GLOUCESTER.

*Glou.* Now, lords, my choler being over-blown  
With walking once about the quadrangle,

I come to talk of commonwealth affairs.  
As for your spiteful false objections,

Prove them, and I lie open to the law;  
But God in mercy so deal with my soul, 160

As I in duty love my king and country!  
But, to the matter that we have in hand:

I say, my sovereign, York is meetest man  
To be your regent in the realm of France.

*Suf.* Before we make election, give me leave  
To show some reason, of no little force.

That York is most unmeet of any man.

*York.* I'll tell thee, Suffolk, why I am unmeet:

First, for I cannot flatter thee in pride;  
Next, if I be appointed for the place, 170

My Lord of Somerset will keep me here,  
Without discharge, money, or furniture.

Till France be won into the Dauphin's hands:  
Last time, I danced attendance on his will.

Till Paris was besieged, furnish'd, and lost.

*War.* That can I witness; and a fouler fact  
Did never traitor in the land commit.

*Suf.* Peace, headstrong Warwick!

*War.* Image of pride, why should I hold my peace?

*Enter HORTER, the Armourer, and his man PETER, guarded.*

*Suf.* Because here is a man accus'd of treason:

Pray God the Duke of York excuse himself!

*York.* Doth any one accuse York for a traitor?

*King.* What mean'st thou, Suffolk; tell me, what are these?

*Suf.* Please it your

That doth accuse his master: is the man treason?

His words were these: that Duke of York

Was rightful heir unto the English crown  
And that your majesty was an usurper.

*King.* Say, man, were these thy words?

*Hor.* An't shall please your majesty, I never said nor thought any such matter: God is my witness, I am falsely accused by the villain.

*Pat.* By these ten bones, my lords, he did speak them to me in the garret one night, as we were scouring my Lord of York's armour.

*York.* Base dunghill villain and mechanical, I'll have thy head for this thy traitor's speech. I do beseech your royal majesty,

Let him have all the rigour of the law. 299

*Hor.* Alas, my lord, hang me, if ever I spake the words. My accuser is my prentice; and when I did correct him for his fault the other day, he did vow upon his knees he would be even with me: I have good witness of this; therefore I beseech your majesty, do not cast away an honest man for a villain's accusation.

*King.* Uncle, what shall we say to this in law?

*Glou.* This doom, my lord, if I may judge: Let Somerset be regent o'er the French, because in York this breeds suspicion: 210

And let these have a day appointed them For single combat in convenient place, For he hath witness of his servant's malice: This is the law, and this Duke Humphrey's doom.

*Som.* I humbly thank your royal majesty

*Hor.* And I accept the combat willingly.

*Pat.* Alas, my lord, I cannot fight; for God's sake, pity my case. The spite of man prevaileth against me. O Lord, have mercy upon me! I shall never be able to fight a blow. O Lord, my heart!

*Glou.* Sirrah, or you must fight, or else be hang'd.

*King.* Away with them to prison; and the lay of combat shall be the last of the next month. Come, Somerset, we'll see thee sent away. *[Flourish. Exit.]*

#### SCENE IV. GLOUCESTER'S garden.

*Enter MARGERY JOURDAIN, HUME, SOUTHWELL, and BOLINGBROKE.*

*Hume.* Come, my masters: the duchess, I call you, expects performance of your promises.

*Boling.* Master Hume, we are therefore provided: with her ladyship behold and hear our exorcisms!

*Hume.* Ay, what else? fear you not her courage.

*Boling.* I have heard her reported to be a woman of an invincible spirit: but it shall be convenient, Master Hume, that you be by her aloft, while we be busy below; and so, I pray you, go in God's name, and leave us.

*Hume.* Mother Jourdain, be you prostrate and grovel on the earth; John Southwell, read you; and let us to our work.

*Enter Duchess aloft, HUME following.*

*Duch.* Well said, my masters; and welcome all. To this gear the sooner the better.

*Boling.* Faithless, good lady; who'd know their times?

Deep night, dark night, the silent of the night, The time of night when Troy was set on fire; so The time when screech-owls cry and bat-dogs howl

And spirits walk and ghosts break up their graves.

That time best fits the work we have in hand. Madam, sit you and fear not: whom we raise, We will make fast within a hollow'd vane.

*[Here they do the ceremonies belonging, and make the circle; Bolingbroke or Southwell reads, Conjuro te, &c. It thunders and lightens terribly; then the Spirit riseth.]*

*Spir.* Adsum.

*M. Jourd.* Asmath, By the eternal God, whose name and power Thou tremblest at, answer that I shall ask; For, till thou speak, thou shalt not pass from hence.

*Spir.* Ask what thou wilt. That I had said and done!

*Boling.* 'First of the king: what shall of him become?' *[Reading out of a paper.]*

*Spir.* The duke yet lives that Henry shall depose;

But him outlive, and die a violent death.

*[As the Spirit speaks, Southwell writes the answer.]*

*Boling.* 'What fates await the Duke of Suffolk?'

*Spir.* By water shall he die, and take his end.

*Boling.* 'What shall befall the Duke of Somerset?'

*Spir.* Let him shun castles;

Safer shall he be upon the sandy plains Than where castles mounted stand.

*Boling.* Descend to darkness and the burning lake!

False fiend, avoid!

*[Thunder and lightning. Exit Spirit.]*

*Enter the DUKE OF YORK and the DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM with their Guard and break in.*

*York.* Lay hands upon these traitors and their trash.

*Beldam,* I think we watch'd you at an inch.

What, madam, are you there? the king and commonweal

Are deeply indebted for this piece of pains: My lord protector with I doubt it not

See you well guard'd for these good deeds.

*Duch.* Not half so bad as thine to England's king.

*Injurious duke,* that threaten where's no danger.

*Duch.* True, madam, none at all: what shall you this?

Away with them! let them be chop'd up close, And kept asunder. You, madam, shall wait on Stafford, take her to thee.

*[Exeunt above Duchess and Hume, overheard.]*

We'll see your traitors have all satisfaction.

*[Exeunt above with Jourdain, Somerset, &c.]*

*York.* Lord Buckingham, methinks you watch'd our well:

A pretty plot, well almost to build upon.

Now, pray, my lord, let's see the devil's writ. 60  
What have we here? [Reads.]

'The duke yet lives, that Henry shall depose;  
But him outlive, and die a violent death.'

Why, this is just

'Alto te, Eecidia, Romanos vincere posse.'

Well, to the rest:

'Tell me what fate awaits the Duke of Suffolk?

By water shall he die, and take his end.

What shall betide the Duke of Somerset?

Let him shun castles;

Safer shall he be upon the sandy plains

Than where castles mounted stand.'

Come, come, my lords;

These oracles are hardly attain'd,

And hardly understood.

The king is now in progress towards Saint

Alban's.

With him the husband of this lovely lady:

Thither go these news, as fast as horse can

carry them:

A sorry breakfast for my lord protector.

Buck. Your grace shall give me leave, my

Lord of York, 80

To be the post, in hope of his reward

York. At your pleasure, my good lord.

Who's within there, ho!

*Enter a Servingman.*

Invite my Lords of Salisbury and Warwick

To sup with me to-morrow night. Away!

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. Saint Alban's.

*Enter the KING, QUEEN, GLOUCESTER, CARDINAL, and SUFFOLK, with Falconers hal-  
loing.*

Queen. Believe me, lords, for flying at the  
brook,

I saw not better sport these seven years' day:

Yet, by your leave, the wind was very high;

And, ten to one, old Joan had not gone out.

King. But what a point, my lord, your

falcon made.

And what a pitch she flew above the rest!

To see how God in all his creatures works!

Yea, man and birds are fain of climbing high.

Suf. No marvel, an it like your majesty.

My lord protector's hawks do tower so well; so

They know their master loves to be aloft

And bears his thoughts above his falcon's

pitch.

Glou. My lord, 'tis but a base ignoble mind

That mounts no higher than a bird can soar.

Car. I thought as much; he would be above

the clouds.

Glou. Ay, my lord cardinal? how think you

by that?

Was it not good your grace could fly to heaven?

King. The treasury of everlasting joy.

Car. Thy heaven is on earth; thine eyes

and thoughts

Rest on a grove, the treasure of thy heart; so

Forgetting Gloucester, dangerous peer.

That smooths it so with king and common-  
weal!

Glou. What, cardinal, is your priesthood  
grown peremptory?

Tantene animis celestibus ira?

Churchmen so hot! good uncle, hide such

malice;

With such holiness can you do it?

Suf. No malice, sir; no more than well

becomes

So good a quarrel and so bad a peer.

Glou. As who, my lord?

Suf. Why, as you, my lord,

An't like your lordly lord-protectorship. 30

Glou. Why, Suffolk, England knows thine

insolence.

Queen. And thy ambition, Gloucester.

King. I prithee, peace, good queen,

And whet not on these furious peers;

For blessed are the peacemakers on earth.

Car. Let me be blessed for the peace I make.

Against this proud protector, with my sword:

Glou. [Aside to Car.] Faith, holy uncle,

would 'twere come to that!

Car. [Aside to Glou.] Marry, when thou

darest.

Glou. [Aside to Car.] Make up no factious

numbers for the matter; 40

In thine own person answer thy abuse.

Car. [Aside to Glou.] Ay, where thou darest

not peep: an if thou darest,

This evening, on the east side of the grove.

King. How now, my lords!

Car. Believe me, cousin Gloucester,

Had not your man put up the fowl so suddenly,

We had had more sport. [Aside to Glou.]

Come with thy two-hand sword.

Glou. True, uncle.

Car. [Aside to Glou.] Are ye advised? the

east side of the grove!

Glou. [Aside to Car.] Cardinal, I am with

you.

King. Why, how now, uncle Gloucester?

Glou. Talking of hawking; nothing else.

my lord. 50

[Aside to Car.] Now, by God's mother, priest,

I'll have your crown for this,

Or all my fence shall fail.

Car. [Aside to Glou.] Medice, teipsum-

Protector, see to't well, protect yourself.

King. The winds grow high; so do your

stomachs, lords.

How irksome is this music to my heart!

When such strings jar, what hope of harmony!

I pray, my lords, let me compound this strife.

*Enter a Townsman of Saint Alban's, crying*

'A miracle!'

Glou. What means this noise?

Fellow, what miracle dost thou proclaim? 60

Towns. A miracle! a miracle!

Suf. Come to the king and tell him what

miracle.

Towns. Forsooth, a blind man at Saint

Alban's shrine.

Within this half-hour, hath received his sight;

A man that ne'er saw in his life before.



*King.* Now, God be praised, that to believing souls  
Gives light in darkness, comfort in despair!

*Enter the Mayor of Saint Alban's and his brethren, bearing SIMPOOX, between two in a chair, SIMPOOX's Wife following.*

*Car.* Here comes the townsmen on procession,

To present your highness with the man.

*King.* Great is his comfort in this earthly vale,

Although by his sight his sin be multiplied.

*Glou.* Stand by, my masters: bring him near the king;

His highness' pleasure is to talk with him.

*King.* Good fellow, tell us here the circumstance,

That we for thee may glorify the Lord.

What hast thou been long blind and now restored?

*Simp.* Born blind, an't please your grace.

*Wife.* Ay, indeed, was he.

*Suf.* What woman is this?

*Wife.* His wife, an't like your worship.

*Glou.* Hadst thou been his mother, thou couldst have better told.

*King.* Where wert thou born?

*Simp.* At Berwick in the north, an't like your grace.

*King.* Poor soul, God's goodness hath been great to thee:

at never day nor night unhallow'd pass,  
'till still remember what the Lord hath done.

*Queen.* Tell me, good fellow, camest thou here by chance,

Or of devotion, to this holy shrine?

*Simp.* God knows, of pure devotion; being called

hundred times and oftener, in my sleep,

by good Saint Alban; who said, 'Simpcox, come,

and offer at my shrine, and I will help thee.'

*Wife.* Most true, forsooth; and many time and oft

I myself have heard a voice to call him so.

*Car.* What, art thou lame?

*Simp.* Ay, God Almighty help me!

*Suf.* How camest thou so?

*Simp.* A fall off of a tree.

*Wife.* A plum-tree, master.

*Glou.* How long hast thou been blind?

*Simp.* O, born so, master.

*Glou.* What, and wouldst climb a tree?

*Simp.* But that in all my life, when I was a youth,

*Wife.* Too true; and bought his climbing very dear.

*Glou.* Mass, thou lovedst plums well, that wouldst venture so.

*Simp.* Alas, good master, my wife desired some damascens,

and made me climb, with danger of my life.

*Glou.* A subtle knave! but yet it shall not serve.

me see thine eyes: wink now: now open them:

my opinion yet thou see'st not well.

*Simp.* Yes, master, clear as day, I thank God and Saint Alban.

*Glou.* Say'st thou me so? What colour is this cloak of?

*Simp.* Red, master; red as blood.

*Glou.* Why, that's well said. What colour is my gown of?

*Simp.* Black, forsooth: coal-black as jet.

*King.* Why, then, thou know'st what colour jet is of!

*Suf.* And yet, I think, jet did he never see.

*Glou.* But cloaks and gowns, before this day, a many.

*Wife.* Never, before this day, in all his life.

*Glou.* Tell me, sirrah, what's my name?

*Simp.* Alas, master, I know not.

*Glou.* What's his name?

*Simp.* I know not.

*Glou.* Nor his?

*Simp.* No, indeed, master.

*Glou.* What's thine own name?

*Simp.* Saunder Simpcox, an if it please you, master.

*Glou.* Then, Saunder, sit there, the lyingest knave in Christendom.

If thou hadst been born blind, thou mightst as well have known all our names as thus to name the several colours we do wear.

Sight may distinguish of colours, but suddenly to nominate them all, it is impossible.

My lords, Saint Alban here hath done a miracle; and would ye not think his cunning to be great, that could restore this cripple to his legs again?

*Simp.* O master, that you could!

*Glou.* My masters of Saint Alban's, have you not beades in your town, and things called whips?

*May.* Yes, my lord, if it please your grace.

*Glou.* Then send for one presently.

*May.* Sirrah, go fetch the beades hither straight.

[*Exit an Attendant.*]

*Glou.* Now fetch me a stool hither by and by.

Now, sirrah, if you mean to save yourself from whipping, leap me over this stool and run away.

*Simp.* Alas, master, I am not able to stand alone:

You go about to torture me in vain.

*Enter a Beadle with whips.*

*Glou.* Well, sir, we must have you find your Sirrah beadle, whip him till he leap over that same stool.

*Bead.* I will, my lord. Come on, sirrah; off with your doublet quickly.

*Simp.* Alas, master, what shall I do? I am not able to stand.

[*After the Beadle hath hit him once, he leaps over the stool and runs away; and they follow and cry, 'A miracle!'*]

*King.* O God, see'st Thou this, and become so long!

*Queen.* It made me laugh to see the villain run.

*Glou.* Follow the knave; and take this Simpcox away.

*Wife.* Alas, sir, we did it for pure need.

*Glow.* Let there be whipped through every market-town, till they come to Berwick, from whence they came.

*Car.* Duke Humphrey has done a miracle to-day.

*Sol.* True; made the lame to leap and fly away.

*Glow.* But you have done more miracles than I; You made in a day, say lord, whole towns to fly.

*Enter BUCKINGHAM.*

*King.* What tidings with our cousin Buckingham?

*Buck.* Such as my heart doth tremble to unfold.

A sort of naughty persons, lowly bent,  
Under the countenance and confederacy  
Of Lady Eleanor, the protector's wife,  
The ringleader and head of all this rout,  
Have practised dangerously against your state,  
Dealing with witches and with conjurers:  
Whom we have apprehended in the fact;  
Raising up wicked spirits from under ground,  
Demanding of King Henry's life and death,  
And other of your highness' privy-council;  
As more at large your grace shall understand.

*Car.* [Aside to *Glow.*] And so, my lord protector, by this means

Your lady is forthcoming yet at London.

This news, I think, hath turn'd your weapon's edge;

'Tis like, my lord, you will not keep your hour.  
*Glow.* Ambitious churchman, leave to afflict my heart:

Sorrow and grief have vanquish'd all my powers;

And, vanquish'd as I am, I yield to thee,  
Or to the meanest groom.

*King.* O God, what mischiefs work the wicked ones,

Hopping confusion on their own heads thereby!

*Queen.* Gloucester, see here the tainture of thy nest,

And look thyself be faultless, thou wert best.

*Glow.* Madam, for myself, to heaven I do appeal,

How I have loved my king and commonweal:  
And, for my wife, I know not how it stands;

Sorry I am to hear what I have heard;  
Noble she is, but if she have forgot

Honour and virtue and conversed with such  
As like to pick, defile nobility,

I banish her my bed and company  
And give her up as prey to law and shame,

That hath dishonour'd Gloucester's honest name.

*King.* Well, for this night we will repose us to-morrow toward London back again,

And call these four officers to their answers  
And bring the cause in justice' equal scales,

Whose wrong stands sure, whose righted cause

SCENE II. London. The DUKE OF YORK'S garden.

*Enter YORK, SALISBURY, and WARWICK.*

*York.* Now, my good Lords of Salisbury and Warwick,

Our simple supper ended, give me leave  
In this close walk to satisfy myself,  
In craving your opinion of my title,  
Which is infallible to England's crown.

*Sol.* My lord, I long to hear it at full.

*War.* Sweet York, begin: and if thy claim be good,

The Nevils are thy subjects to command.

*York.* Then thus:  
Edward the Third, say lords, had seven sons:

The first, Edward the Black Prince, Prince of Wales;

The second, William of Hatfield, and the third,  
Lionel Duke of Clarence: next to whom

Was John of Gaunt, the Duke of Lancaster:  
The fifth was Edmund Langley, Duke of York;

The sixth was Thomas of Woodstock, Duke of Gloucester;

William of Windsor was the seventh and last.  
Edward the Black Prince died before his father

And left behind him Richard, his only son,  
Who after Edward the Third's death reign'd as king;

Till Henry Bolingbroke, Duke of Lancaster,  
The eldest son and heir of John of Gaunt,

Crown'd by the name of Henry the Fourth,  
Seized on the realm, deposed the rightful king

Sent his poor queen to France, from whence she came.

And him to Fomfret; where, as all you know,  
Harmless Richard was murder'd traitorously.

*War.* Father, the duke hath told the truth;  
Thus got the house of Lancaster the crown.

*York.* Which now they hold by force and not by right;

For Richard, the first son's heir, being dead,  
The issue of the next son should have reign'd.

*Sol.* But William of Hatfield died without an heir.

*York.* The third son, Duke of Clarence, from whose line

I claim the crown, had issue, Philippe, a daughter,

Who married Edmund Mortimer, Earl of March:

Edmund had issue, Roger Earl of March;  
Roger had issue, Edmund, Anne and Eleanor.

*Sol.* This Edmund, in the siege of Salisbroke,

As I have read, laid claim unto the crown;

And, but for Owen Glendower, had been king.  
Who kept him in captivity till he died.

But to the rest.

*York.* His eldest sister, Anne,  
My mother, being heir unto the crown,

Married Richard Earl of Cambridge; who was son

To Edmund Langley, Edward the Third's fifth

son: she was heir to the crown.

Of Edmund Mortimer, who married Philippe,  
Sole daughter unto Lionel Duke of Clarence:  
So, if the issue of the elder son  
Succeed before the younger, I am king.

*War.* What plain proceeding is more plain  
than this?

Henry hath claim the crown from John of  
Gaunt.

The fourth son; York claims it from the third.  
Till Lionel's issue fails, his ahead not reign:  
It fails not yet, but flourishes in these  
And in thy sons, fair slips of such a stock.  
Then, father Salisbury, kneel we together;  
And in this private plot be we the first  
That shall salute our rightful sovereign  
With honour of his birthright to the crown.

*Both.* Long live our sovereign Richard,  
England's king!

*York.* We thank you, lords. But I am not  
your king.

Till I be crown'd and that my sword be stain'd  
With heart-blood of the house of Lancaster;  
And that's not suddenly to be perform'd,  
But with advice and silent secrecy.

Do you as I do in these dangerous days:  
Wink at the Duke of Suffolk's insolence.

*War.* At Beaufort's pride, at Somerset's ambition,  
At Buckingham and all the crew of them.

Till they have smother'd the shepherd of the flock,  
That virtuous prince, the good Duke Humphrey:

'Tis that they seek, and they in seeking that  
Shall find their deaths, if York can prophesy.

*Sol.* My lord, break we off; we know your  
mind at full.

*War.* My heart assures me that the Earl of  
Warwick

Shall one day make the Duke of York a king.  
*York.* And, Nevil, this I do assure myself:  
Richard shall live to make the Earl of Warwick  
The greatest man in England but the king.

*[Exeunt.]*

### SCENE III. A hall of justice.

*Sound trumpets. Enter the KING, the QUEEN,  
GLOUCESTER, YORK, SUFFOLK, and SALIS-  
BURY: the DUCHESSES OF GLOUCESTER, MAR-  
GARET JOURDAIN, BOUTWELL, HUME, and  
BOLINGBROKE, under guard.*

*King.* Stand forth, Dame Eleanor Cobham,  
Gloucester's wife:

In sight of God and us, your guilt is great:  
Receive the sentence of the law for sins

Such as by God's book are adjudged to death.  
You four, from hence to prison back again;

From thence unto the place of execution:  
The witch in Smithfield shall be burnt to ashes,

And you three shall be strangled on the gallows.  
You, madam, for you are more nobly born,

Despoiled of your honour in your life,  
Shall, after three days' open penance done

Live in your country here in banishment.  
With Sir John Stanley, in the Isle of Man.

*Duch.* Welcome to banishment; welcome  
were my death.

*Glo.* Welcome, the law, thou seest, hath  
judged thus.

cannot justify whom the law condemns.  
*Exeunt Duches and other prisoners, guarded.*

My eyes are full of tears, my heart of grief.  
Ah, Humphrey, this dishonour in thine age!

Will bring thy head with sorrow to the ground!  
I beseech your majesty, give me leave to go; so  
Sorrow would solace and mine age would ease.

*King.* Stay, Humphrey Duke of Gloucester:  
ere thou go,

Give up thy staff: Henry will to himself  
Protector be; and God shall be my hope.

My stay, my guide and lantern to my tent:  
And go in peace, Humphrey, no less beloved  
Than when thou wert protector to thy king.

*Queen.* I see no reason why a king of years  
Should be to be protected like a child.

God and King Henry govern England's realm.  
Give up your staff, sir, and the king his realm.

*Glo.* My staff here, noble Henry, is my  
staff:

As willingly do I the same resign  
As e'er thy father Henry made it mine;

And even as willingly at thy foot I leave it  
As others would ambitiously receive it.

Farewell, good king: when I am dead and  
gone.

May honourable peace attend thy throne!  
*[Exit.]*

*Queen.* Why, now is Henry king, and Mar-  
garet queen;

And Humphrey Duke of Gloucester comes him-  
self.

That beam he showed a main; two palls at  
once;

His lady banish'd, and a limb lopp'd off.  
This staff of honour caught, there let it stand

Where it best fits to be, in Henry's hand.  
*Sol.* Thus droops this lofty pine and hangs  
his sprays:

Thus Eleanor's pride dies in her youngest days.  
*York.* Lords, let him go. Please it your  
majesty,

This is the day appointed for the combat;  
And ready are the appellant and defendant.

The armourer and his man, to enter the lists.  
So please your highness to behold the fight.

*Queen.* Ay, good my lord; but purposely  
therefore

Left I the court, to see this quarrel tried.  
*King.* O God's name, see the lists and all  
things fit:

Here let them and it; and God defend the  
right!

*York.* I never saw a fellow worse hated,  
Or more afraid to fight, than is the appellant.

The servant of this armourer, my lord.

*Enter at one door, HUME, the Ar-  
mourer, and his Neighbour, drinking to him so  
much that he is drunk; and he enters with  
a drum before him and his staff with a  
sand-bag fastened to it; and at the other  
door FUMBY, his own, with a drum and  
sand-bag, and his Neighbour drinking to him.*

*First Neigh.* Hume, neighbour Hume, I  
drink to you in a cup of sack; and here, my  
neighbour, you shall do well enough.

*Second Neigh.* Hume, neighbour Hume, I  
drink to you in a cup of sack; and here, my  
neighbour, you shall do well enough.

*Third Neigh.* Hume, neighbour Hume, I  
drink to you in a cup of sack; and here, my  
neighbour, you shall do well enough.

*Fourth Neigh.* Hume, neighbour Hume, I  
drink to you in a cup of sack; and here, my  
neighbour, you shall do well enough.

*Fifth Neigh.* Hume, neighbour Hume, I  
drink to you in a cup of sack; and here, my  
neighbour, you shall do well enough.

*Sixth Neigh.* Hume, neighbour Hume, I  
drink to you in a cup of sack; and here, my  
neighbour, you shall do well enough.

*Seventh Neigh.* Hume, neighbour Hume, I  
drink to you in a cup of sack; and here, my  
neighbour, you shall do well enough.

*Eighth Neigh.* Hume, neighbour Hume, I  
drink to you in a cup of sack; and here, my  
neighbour, you shall do well enough.

*Sec. Neigh.* And here, neighbour, here's a cup of charneco.

*Third Neigh.* And here's a pot of good double beer, neighbour: drink, and fear not your man.

*Hor.* Let it come, I' faith, and I'll pledge you all; and a fig for Peter!

*First 'Preu.* Here, Peter, I drink to thee: and be not afraid.

*Sec. 'Preu.* Be merry, Peter, and fear not thy master: fight for credit of the 'prentices.

*Peter.* I thank you all: drink, and pray for me, I pray you: for I think I have taken my last draught in this world. Here, Robin, an if I die, I give thee my apron: and, Will, thou shalt have my hammer: and here, Tom, take all the money that I have. O Lord bless me! I pray God! for I am never able to deal with my master, he hath learnt so much fence already.

*Sal.* Come, leave your drinking, and fall to blows. Sirrah, what's thy name? 8:

*Peter.* Peter, forsooth.

*Sal.* Peter! what more?

*Peter.* Thump.

*Sal.* Thump! then see thou thump thy master well.

*Hor.* Masters, I am come hither, as it were, upon my man's instigation, to prove him a knave and myself an honest man: and touching the Duke of York, I will take my death, I never meant him any ill, nor the king, nor the queen: and therefore, Peter, have at thee with a downright blow!

*York.* Dispatch: this knave's tongue begins to double.

Sound, trumpets, alarum to the combatants!  
[*Alarm. They fight, and Peter strikes him down.*]

*Hor.* Hold, Peter, hold! I confess, I confess treason. 9:

*York.* Take away his weapon. Fellow, thank God, and the good wine in thy master's way.

*Peter.* O God, have I overcome mine enemy in this presence? O Peter, thou hast prevailed in right!

*King.* Go, take hence that traitor from our sight;

For by his death we do perceive his guilt:  
And God in justice hath reveal'd to us  
The truth and innocence of this poor fellow,  
Which he had thought to have murder'd wrong-fully.

Come, fellow, follow us for thy reward.  
[*Sound a flourish. Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE IV. A street.

Enter GLOUCESTER and his Servingmen, in mourning cloaks.

*Gloss.* Thus sometimes hath the brightest day a cloud;

And after summer evermore succeeds  
A winter, with his watchful nipping cold:  
So curse and joys abound, as seasons fleet.  
[*Enter a clock.*]

*York.* Ten, my lord.  
[*Enter a clock.*]

That was appointed me

To watch the coming of my punish'd duchess:  
Unceasing may she endure the flinty streets,  
To tread them with her tender-feeling feet.  
Sweet Nell, ill can thy noble mind abrook 20  
The subject people gazing on thy face,  
With envious looks, laughing at thy shame,  
That erst did follow thy proud chariot-wheels  
When thou didst ride in triumph through the streets.  
But, soft! I think she comes; and I'll prepare  
My tear-stain'd eyes to see her miseries.

Enter the DUCHESS OF GLOUCESTER in white sheet, and a taper burning in her hand; with SIR JOHN STANLEY, the Sheriff, and Officers.

*Serv.* So please your grace, we'll take her from the sheriff.

*Gloss.* No, stir not, for your lives; let her pass by.

*Duch.* Come you, my lord, to see my open shame!

Now thou dost penance too. Look how they gaze!

See how the giddy multitude do point,  
And nod their heads, and throw their eyes on thee!

Ah, Gloucester, hide thee from their hateful looks.

And, in thy closet pent up, rue my shame,  
And ban thine enemies, both mine and thine!

*Gloss.* Be patient, gentle Nell; forget this grief.

*Duch.* Ah, Gloucester, teach me to forget myself!

For whilst I think I am thy married wife  
And thou a prince, protector of this land,

Methinks I should not thus be led along, 30  
Mail'd up in shame, with papers on my back,  
And follow'd with a rabble that rejoice

To see my tears and hear my deep-set groans.  
The ruthless flint doth cut my tender feet.

And when I start, the envious people laugh  
And bid me be advised how I tread.

Ah, Humphrey, can I bear this shameful yoke!  
Trow'st thou that e'er I'll look upon the world,

Or count them happy that enjoy the sun!  
No: dark shall be my light and night my day:

To think upon my pomp shall be my hell. 40  
Sometimes I'll say, I am Duke Humphrey's wife,  
And lie a prince and ruler of the land:

Yet so he ruled and such a prince he was  
As he stood by whilst I, his forlorn duchess,

Was made a wonder and a pointing-stock  
To every idle rascal follower.

But be thou mild and blush not at my shame,  
Nor stir at nothing till the axe of death

Hang over thee, as, sure, it shortly will; 50  
For Suffolk, he that can do all in all  
With her that hateth thee and hates us all,

And York and impious Beaufort, that false priest,

Have all flim'd bushes to betray thy wings.  
And, fly thou how thou canst, they'll track thee:

But fear not thou, until thy foot be maim'd,  
Nor never seek prevention of thy foes.

*Glou.* Ah, Nell, forbear! thou almost all  
 away;  
 I must offend before I be attainted;  
 And had I twenty times so many foes, 60  
 And each of them had twenty times their  
 power,  
 All these could not procure me any scathe,  
 So long as I am loyal, true and crimeless.  
 Wouldst have me rescue thee from this re-  
 proach?  
 Why, yet thy scandal were not wiped away,  
 But I in danger for the breach of law.  
 Thy greatest help is quiet, gentle Nell:  
 I pray thee, sort thy heart to patience;  
 These few days' wonder will be quickly worn.

*Enter a Herald.*

*Her.* I summon your grace to his majesty's  
 parliament,  
 Holden at Bury the first of this next month.  
*Glou.* And my consent ne'er ask'd herein  
 before!

This is close dealing. Well, I will be there.

*[Exit Herald.]*  
*My Nell,* I take my leave: and, master sheriff,  
 Let not her penance exceed the king's com-  
 mission.

*Sher.* An't please your grace, here my com-  
 mission stays,  
 And Sir John Stanley is appointed now  
 To take her with him to the Isle of Man.

*Glou.* Must you, Sir John, protect my lady  
 here?

*Stan.* So am I given in charge, may't please  
 your grace. 80

*Glou.* Entreat her not the worse in that  
 I pray

You use her well: the world may laugh again;  
 And I may live to do you kindness if

You do it her: and so, Sir John, farewell!

*Duch.* What, gone, my lord, and bid me  
 not farewell!

*Glou.* Witness my tears, I cannot stay to  
 speak.

*[Exeunt Gloucester and Scoldingmen.]*  
*Duch.* Art thou gone too! all comfort go  
 with thee!

For none abides with me: my joy is death;  
 Death, at whose name I oft have been afraid,

Because I wish'd this world's eternity. 90

*Stanley,* I prithee, go, and take me hence;  
 I care not whither, for I beg no favour.

Only convey me where thou art commanded.

*Stan.* Why, madam, that is to the Isle of  
 Man;

There to be used according to your state.

*Duch.* That's bad enough, for I am but re-  
 proachful:

And shall I then be used reproachfully?

*Stan.* Like to a duchess, and Duke Hum-  
 phrey's lady;

According to that state you shall be used.

*Duch.* Sheriff, farewell, and better than I  
 ---  
*[Although thou hast been conduct of my shame.]*  
*Sher.* It is my office; and, madam, pardon  
 me.

*Duch.* Ay, ay, farewell; thy office is dis-  
 charged.

Come, Stanley, shall we go?

*Stan.* Madam, your penance done, throw off  
 this sheet,

And go we to attire you for our journey.

*Duch.* My shame will not be shifted with  
 my sheet:

No, it will hang upon my richest robes  
 And show itself, attire me how I can.

Go, lead the way; I long to see my prison. 110  
*[Exeunt.]*

## ACT III.

SCENE I. *The Abbey at Bury St Edmund's.*  
*Sound a sennet. Enter the KING, the QUEEN,*  
*CARDINAL BEAUFORT, SUFFOLK, YORK,*  
*BUCKINGHAM, SALISBURY and WARWICK*  
*to the Parliament.*

*King.* I muse my Lord of Gloucester is not  
 come;

'Tis not his wont to be the hindmost man,  
 Whate'er occasion keeps him from us now.

*Queen.* Can you not see? or will ye not  
 observe

The strangeness of his alter'd countenance?  
 With what a majesty he bears himself,

How insolent of late he is become,  
 How proud, how peremptory, and unlike him-  
 self?

We know the time since he was mild and  
 affable.

And if we did but glance a far-off look, 30  
 Immediately he was upon his knee,

That all the court admired him for submission:  
 But meet him now, and, be it in the morn,

When every one will give the time of day,  
 He knits his brow and shows an angry eye

And passeth by with stiff untow'd knees,  
 Disdaining duty that to us belongs.

Small curs are not regarded when they grin;  
 But great men tremble when the lion roars;

And Humphrey is no little man in England. 40  
 First note that he is near you in descent,

And should you fall, he is the next will mount.  
 Me seemeth then it is no policy,

Respecting what a rancorous mind he bears  
 And his advantage following your decease,

That he should come about your royal person  
 Or be admitted to your highness' council.

By flattery hath he won the commons' hearts,  
 And when he please to make commotion,

'Tis to be fear'd they all will follow him. 50  
 Now 'tis the spring, and weeds are shallow-

rooted;

Suffer them now, and they'll o'ergrow the

And choke the herbs for want of husbandry.

The reverent care I bear unto my lord  
 Made me collect these dangers in the duke.

If it be fond, call it a woman's fear;  
 Which fear if better reasons can supplant,

I will subscribe and say I wrong'd the duke.

My Lord of Suffolk, Buckingham, and York,  
 Reprove my allegation, if you can;

Or else conclude my words effectual.

*Suf.* Well hath your highness seen into this duke;  
And, had I first been put to speak my mind,  
I think I should have told your grace's tale.  
The duchess by his subornation,  
Upon my life, began her devilish practices:  
O, if he were not privy to those faults,  
Yet, by reputing of his high descent,  
As next the king he was successive heir,  
And such high vaunts of his nobility,  
Did instigate the bedlam brain-sick duchess  
By wicked means to frame our sovereign's fall.  
Smooth runs the water where the brook is deep;  
And in his simple show he harbours treason.  
The fox barks not when he would steal the lamb.

No, no, my sovereign; Gloucester is a man  
Unaccounted yet and full of deep deceit.

*Cur.* Did he not, contrary to form of law,  
Devise strange deaths for small offences done?

*York.* And did he not, in his protectorship,  
Levy great sums of money through the realm  
For soldiers' pay in France, and never sent it?  
By means whereof the towns each day revolted.

*Buck.* Tut, these are petty faults to faults  
unknown,  
Which time will bring to light in smooth Duke  
Humphrey.

*King.* My lords, at once: the care you have  
of us,

To mow down thorns that would annoy our  
foot,

Is worthy praise: but, shall I speak my con-  
science,

Our kinsman Gloucester is as innocent  
From meaning treason to our royal person 70  
As is the sucking lamb or harmless dove:  
The duke is virtuous, mild and too well given  
To dream on evil or to work my downfall.

*Queen.* Ah, what's more dangerous than  
this fond alliance!

Seems he a dove? his feathers are but borrow'd,  
For he's disposed as the hateful raven:

Is he a lamb? his skin is surely lent him,  
For he's inclined as is the ravenous wolf.

Who cannot steal a shape that means deceit?  
Take heed, my lord; the welfare of us all 80  
Hangs on the cutting short that fraudulent man.

*Enter SOMERSET.*

*King.* All health unto my gracious sovereign!  
*King.* Welcome, Lord Somerset. What news  
from France?

*Som.* That all your interest in those terri-  
tories

Is utterly bereft you: all is lost.

*King.* Cold news, Lord Somerset: but God's  
will be done!

*York.* [Aside] Cold news for me; for I had  
hope of France

As fruitful as I hope for fertile England.  
Thus are my blossoms blasted in the bud

And withers ere my leaves away;  
But I will remedy this gear ere long.

Or else my tale for a glorious grave.

*Enter GLOUCESTER.*

*Queen.* All happiness unto my lord the king!

Pardon, my liege, that I have stay'd so long.

*Suf.* Nay, Gloucester, know that thou art  
come too soon.

Unless thou wert more loyal than thou art:  
I do arrest thee of high treason!

*Glon.* Well, Suffolk, thou shalt not see me  
blush.

Nor change my countenance for this arrest:

A heart unsupported is not easily daunted.

The purest spring is not so free from mud.

As I am clear from treason to my sovereign:

Who can accuse me? wherein am I guilty?

*York.* 'Tis thought, my lord, that you took  
bribes of France,

And, being protector, stay'd the soldiers' pay:

By means whereof his highness hath lost  
France.

*Glon.* Is it but thought so? what are they  
that think it?

I never robb'd the soldiers of their pay.

Nor ever had one penny bribe from France.

So help me God, as I have watch'd the night,

At night by night, in studying good for  
England,

That doth that else I wrested from the king.

Or any great I hoarded to my use.

Be brought against me at my trial-day!

No; many a pound of mine own proper store.

Because I would not tax the needy commons,

Have I depurged to the garrisons,

And never ask'd for restitution.

*Cur.* It serves you well, my lord, to say so  
much.

*Glon.* I say no more than truth, so help me  
God!

*York.* In your protectorship you did devise  
Strange tortures for offenders never heard of.

That England was defamed by tyranny.

*Glon.* Why, 'tis well known that, when  
I was protector,

Pity was all the fault that was in me;

For I should melt at an offender's tears,

And lowly words were ransom for their fault.

Unless it were a bloody murderer,

Or foul felonious thief that flood poor pas-  
sengers,

I never gave them condign punishment:

Murder indeed, that bloody sin, I tortured

Above the felon or what trespass else.

*Suf.* My lord, these faults are easy, quickly  
answer'd:

But mightier crimes are laid unto your charge.

Whereof you cannot easily purge yourself.

I do arrest you in his highness' name;

And here commit you to my lord cardinal

To keep, until your further time of trial.

*King.* My Lord of Gloucester, be my special  
hope

That you will clear yourself from all suspect:

My conscience tells me you are innocent.

*Glon.* Ah, gracious lord, these days are  
dangerous:

Virtue is choked with foul ambition

And charity chased hence by rancour's hand;

Foul subornation is predominant

And equity exiled your highness' land.

I know their compact is to harm my life.

And if my death might hurt them, they would have  
me dead.

And prove the period of their tyranny,  
I would expend it with all willingness: 150  
But mine is made the prologue to their play;  
For thousands more, that yet suspect no peril,  
Will not conclude their plotted tragedy.  
Beaufort's red sparkling eyes blab his heart's  
malice;

And Suffolk's cloudy brow his stormy hate;  
Sharp Buckingham unburies with his tongue  
The envious load that lies upon his heart;  
And dogged York, that reaches at the moon,  
Whose overweening arm I have pluck'd back,  
By false accuse doth level at my life: 160

And you, my sovereign lady, with the rest,  
Causeless have laid disgraces on my head  
And with your best endeavour have stirr'd up  
My best liege to be mine enemy:  
Ay, all of you have laid your heads together—  
Myself had notice of your conventicles—  
And all to make away my guiltless life.

I shall not want false witness to condemn me,  
Nor store of treasons to augment my guilt;  
The ancient proverb will be well effected: 170  
'A staff is quickly found to beat a dog.'

Car. My liege, his railing is intolerable:  
If those that care to keep your royal person  
From treason's secret knife and traitors' rage  
Be thus upbraided, child and railed at,  
And the offender granted scope of speech,  
'Twill make them cool in zeal unto your grace.

Suf. Hath he not twist our sovereign lady  
here

With ignominious words, though clerkly  
couch'd,

As if she had suborned some to swear 180  
False allegations to overthrow his state!

Queen. But I can give the loser leave to  
chide.

Glor. Far truer spoke than meant: I lose,  
indeed;

Boastrow the winners, for they play'd me false!  
And well such losers may have leave to speak.

Buck. He'll wrest the sense and hold us  
here all day:

Lord cardinal, he is your prisoner.

Car. Sirs, take away the duke, and guard  
him sure.

Glor. Ah! thus King Henry throws away  
his crutch

Before his legs be firm to bear his body. 190

Thus is the shepherd beaten from his side  
And wolves are gnawing who shall gnaw thee  
first.

Ah, that my fear were false! ah, that it were!  
For, good King Henry, thy decay I fear.

[Exit, guarded.]

King. My lords, what to your wisdoms  
seemeth best,

To do or undo, as if ourself were here.

Queen. What, will your highness leave the  
parliament?

King. Ay, Margaret; my heart is drown'd  
with grief,

Whose flood begins to flow within mine eyes,  
My body round engirt with misery. 200

For what's more miserable than discontent?  
Ah, uncle Humphrey! in thy face I see  
The map of honour, truth and loyalty:

And yet, good Humphrey, is the hour to come  
That e'er I proved thee false or fear'd thy faith.  
What lurking star now envies thy estate,  
That these great loads and Margaret our queen  
Do seek subversion of thy harmless life!  
Thou never didst them wrong nor no man  
wrong;

And as the butcher takes away the calf 210  
And binds the wretch and beats it when it  
strays,

Bearing it to the bloody slaughter-house,  
Even so remorseless have they borne him  
hence;

And as the dam runs lowing up and down,  
Looking the way her harmless young one went,  
And can do nought but wall her darling's loss,  
Even so myself bewails good Gloucester's case  
With sad unhelpful tears, and with dimm'd eyes  
Look after him and cannot do him good,  
So mighty are his vowed enemies. 220

His fortunes I will weep and twist each groan  
Say 'Who's a traitor! Gloucester he is none.'

[Exeunt all but Queen, Cardinal Beaufort,  
Suffolk, and York; Somerset remains apart.]

Queen. Free lords, cold snow melts with the  
sun's hot beams.

Henry my lord is cold in great affairs,  
Too full of foolish pity, and Gloucester's shew  
Beguiles him as the mournful crocodile

With sorrow snares relenting passengers,  
(Or as the snake roll'd in a flowering bank,  
With shining checker'd sloughs, doth sting a  
child

That for the beauty thinks it excellent. 230

Believe me, lords, were none more wise than I—  
And yet herein I judge mine own wit good—  
This Gloucester should be quickly rid the world,  
To rid us from the fear we have of him.

Car. That he should die is worthy policy;  
But yet we want a colour for his death:

'Tis meet he be condemn'd by course of law.

Suf. But, in my mind, that were no policy:  
The king will labour still to save his life,  
The commons haply rise, to save his life; 240  
And yet we have but trivial argument,  
More than mistrust, that shows him worthy  
death.

York. So that, by this, you would not have  
him die.

Suf. Ah, York, no man alive so false as I!

York. 'Tis York that hath more reason for  
his death.

But, my lord cardinal, and you, my Lord of  
Suffolk,

Say as you think, and speak it from your souls,  
Were't not all one, an empty eagle were set  
To guard the chicken from a hungry king,  
As place Duke Humphrey for the king's pro-  
tector? 250

Queen. So the poor chicken should be sure  
of death.

Suf. Madam, 'tis true; and were't not  
madness, then,

To make the fox surveyor of the fold;  
Who being named a crafty murderer,  
His guile should be but idly posted over  
Because his purpose is not concealed;  
No; let him die, in that he is a fox.

By nature proved an enemy to the flock,  
Before his chaps be stain'd with crimson blood,  
As Humphrey, proved by reasons, to my liege.  
And do not stand on quillets how to slay  
him :

Be it by gins, by snares, by subtlety,  
Sleeping or waking, 'tis no matter how,  
So he be dead : for that is good deceit  
Which makes him first that first intends deceit.

Queen. Thrice-noble Suffolk, 'tis resolutely  
spoke.

Suf. Not resolute, except so much were  
done ;

For things are often spoke and seldom meant :  
But that my heart accordeth with my tongue,  
Seeing the deed is meritorious, 270  
And to preserve my sovereign from his foe,  
Say but the word, and I will be his priest.

Car. But I would have him dead, my Lord  
of Suffolk,  
Ere you can take due orders for a priest :  
Say you consent and censure well the deed,  
And I'll provide his exonerer,  
I tender so the safety of my liege.

Suf. Here is my hand, the deed is worthy  
doing.

Queen. And so say I.

York. And I : and now we three have spoke  
it. 280  
It skills not greatly who impugns our doom.

Enter a Post.

Post. Great lords, from Ireland am I come

To signify that rebels there are up  
And put the Englishmen unto the sword :  
Send succours, lords, and stop the rage betime,  
Before the wound do grow incurable :  
For, being green, there is great hope of help.

Car. A breach that craves a quick expedient  
stop !

What counsel give you in this weighty cause ?  
York. That Somerset be sent as regent  
thither : 290

'Tis meet that lucky ruler be employ'd ;  
Witness the fortune he hath had in France.

Som. If York, with all his far-fet policy,  
Had been the regent here instead of me,  
He never would have stay'd in France so long.

York. No, not to lose it all, as thou hast  
done :

I rather would have lost my life betimes  
Than bring a burthen of dishonour home  
By staying there so long till all were lost.  
Show me one scar character'd on thy skin : 300  
Men's flesh preserved so whole do seldom win.

Queen. Nay, then, this spark will prove a  
raging fire,

If wind and fuel be brought to feed it with :  
No more, good York ; sweet Somerset, be still :  
Thy fortune, York, hadst thou been regent  
there,

Might happily have proved far worse than his.

York. What worse than nought ? nay, then,  
a chance falls all !

Som. And, in the number, thee that wisest

Car. My Lord of York, try what your  
fortune is.

The uncivil kerns of Ireland are in arms 310  
And temper clay with blood of Eng  
To Ireland will you lead a band of  
Collected choicely, from each count  
And try your hap against the Irishmen ?

York. I will, my lord, so please his ma  
Suf. Why, our authority is his comen  
And what we do establish he confirms :  
Then, noble York, take thou this task in  
York. I am content : provide me soldiers,  
lords,

Whiles I take order for mine own affairs. 320

Suf. A charge, Lord York, that I will see  
perform'd.

But now return we to the false Duke Humphrey.  
Car. No more of him ; for I will deal with  
him

That henceforth he shall trouble us no more.  
And so break off : the day is almost spent :

Lord Suffolk, you and I must talk of that event  
York. My Lord of Suffolk, within fourteen  
days

At Bristol I expect my soldiers :  
For there I'll ship them all for Ireland.

Suf. I'll see it truly done, my Lord of York.  
[Exeunt all but York.]

York. Now, York, or never, steel thy fearful  
thoughts, 331

And change misdoubt to resolution :  
Be that thou hegest to be, or what thou art

Resign to death : it is not worth the enjoying :  
Let pale-faced fear keep with the mean-born  
man,

And find no harbour in a royal heart.  
Faster than spring-time showers comes thought  
on thought,

And not a thought but thinks on dignity.  
My brain more busy than the labouring spider

Weaves tedious snares to trap mine enemies.  
Well, nobles, well, 'tis politicly done,

To send me packing with an host of men :  
I fear me you but warm the starved snake,

Who, cherish'd in your breasts, will sting your  
hearts.

'Twas men I lack'd and you will give them me :  
I take it kindly ; yet be well assured

You put sharp weapons in a madman's hands.  
Whiles I in Ireland nourish a mighty band,

I will stir up in England some black storm  
Shall blow ten thousand souls to heaven or hell :

And this fell tempest shall not cease to rage 351  
Until the golden circuit on my head,

Like to the glorious sun's transparent beams,  
Do calm the fury of this mad-bred flaw.

And, for a minister of my intent,  
I have seduced a headstrong Kentishman,

John Cade of Ashford,  
To make commotion, as full well he can,

Under the title of John Mortimer.  
In Ireland have I seen this stubborn Cade 360

Oppose himself against a troop of kerns,  
And fought so long, till that his thighs with  
darts

Were almost like a sharp-quill'd porcupine :  
And, in the end being rescued, I have seen

Him caper upright like a wild mandrake.



Shaking the bloody darts as he his bells.  
Full often, like a snag-hair'd crafty kern,  
Hath he conversed with the enemy,  
And undiscover'd come to me again  
And given me notice of their villanies. 370  
This devil here shall be my substitute;  
For that John Mortimer, which now is dead,  
In face, in gait, in speech, he doth resemble:  
By this I shall perceive the commons' mind,  
How they affect the house and claim of York.  
Say he be taken, rack'd and tortured,  
I know no pain they can inflict upon him  
Will make him say I moved him to those arms.  
Say that he thrive, as 'tis great like he will,  
Why, then from Ireland come I with my  
strength 380  
And reap the harvest which that rascal sow'd;  
For Humphrey being dead, as he shall be,  
And Henry put apart, the next for me. *[Exit.]*

SCENE II. *Bury St Edmund's. A room  
of state.*

*Enter certain Murderers, hastily.*

*First Mur.* Run to my Lord of Suffolk; let  
him know

We have dispatch'd the duke, as he commanded.

*Sec. Mur.* O that it were to do! What have  
we done!

Didst ever hear a man so penitent!

*Enter SUFFOLK.*

*First Mur.* Here comes my lord.

*Suf.* Now, sir, have you dispatch'd this  
thing!

*First Mur.* Ay, my good lord, he's dead.

*Suf.* Why, that's well said. Go, get you to  
my house;

I will reward you for this venturous deed.  
The king and all the peers are here at hand. 390

Have you laid fair the bed? Is all things well  
According as I gave directions!

*First Mur.* 'Tis, my good lord.

*Suf.* Away! be gone. *[Exit Murderers.]*

*Sound trumpets. Enter the KING, the QUEEN,  
CARDINAL BEAUFORT, SOMERSET, with At-  
tendants.*

*King.* Go, call our uncle to our presence  
straight;

Say we intend to try his grace to-day,

If he be guilty, as 'tis published.

*Suf.* I'll call him presently, my noble lord. *[Exit.]*

*King.* Lords, take your places; and, I pray  
you all,

Proceed no straiter 'gainst our uncle Gloucester  
Than from true evidence of good esteem  
He be approved in practice culpable.

*Queen.* God forbid any malice should prevail  
That faultless may condemn a nobleman!

Pray God he may acquit him of suspicion!

*King.* I thank thee, Meg; these words con-  
tent me much.

*Re-enter SUFFOLK.*

How now! why look'st thou pale? why tremblest  
thou!

Where is our uncle! what's the matter, Suffolk!

*Suf.* Dead in his bed, my lord; Gloucester  
is dead.

*Queen.* Marry, God forbid!

*Car.* God's secret judgement: I did dream  
to-night

he duke was dumb and could not speak a  
word. *[The King swoons.]*

*Queen.* How fares my lord? Help, lords!  
the king is dead.

*Som.* Bear up his body; wring him by the  
nose.

*Queen.* Run, go, help, help! O Henry, ope  
thine eyes!

*Suf.* He doth revive again: madam, be  
patient.

*King.* O heavenly God!

*Queen.* How fares my gracious lord!

*Suf.* Comfort, my sovereign! gracious Henry,  
comfort!

*King.* What, doth my Lord of Suffolk  
comfort me!

Came he right now to sing a raven's note, 40  
Whose dismal tune bereft my vital powers;

And thinks he that the chirping of a wren,  
By crying comfort from a hollow breast,

Can chase away the first-conceived sound!

Hide not thy poison with such sugar'd words;  
Lay not thy hands on me; forbear, I say;

Their touch affrights me as a serpent's sting.  
Thou baleful messenger, out of my sight!

Upon thy eye-balls murderous tyranny  
Sits in grim majesty, to fright the world. 50

Look not upon me, for thine eyes are wounding:  
Yet do not go away: come, basilisk,

And kill the innocent gazer with thy sight;  
For in the shade of death I shall find joy;

In life but double death, now Gloucester's dead.

*Queen.* Why do you rate my Lord of Suffolk  
thus!

Although the duke was enemy to him,  
Yet he most Christian-like laments his death:

And for myself, foe as he was to me,  
Might liquid tears or heart-offending groans 60

Or blood-consuming sighs recall his life,  
would be blind with weeping, sick with  
groans,

Look pale as primrose with blood-drinking  
signs,

And all to have the noble duke alive.

What know I how the world may deem of me!  
For it is known we were but hollow friends:

It may be judged I made the duke away;  
So shall my name with slander's tongue be  
wounded.

And princes' courts be fill'd with my reproach.  
This get I by his death: ay me, unhappy! 70

To be a queen, and crown'd with infamy!

*King.* Ah, woe is mine for Gloucester, wretched  
man!

*Queen.* Be woe for me, more wretched than  
he is.

What, dost thou turn away and hide thy face?  
I am no loathsome leper; look on me.

What! art thou, like the adder, wrenn deaf?  
Be poisonous too and kill thy father's queen.

Is all thy comfort shut in Gloucester's tomb?  
Why, then, dame Margaret was never thy joy.

Break his statues and worship it,  
And make my image but an alehouse sign.  
Was I for this nigh wreck'd upon the sea  
And twice by awkward wind from England's  
bank

Drove back again unto my native clime?  
What boded this, but well forewarning wind  
Did seem to say 'Seek not a scorpion's nest,  
Nor set no footing on this unkind shore'!  
What did I then, but cursed the gentle gusts  
And he that tossed them forth their brazen  
caves;

And bid them blow towards England's blessed  
shore,

Or turn our stern upon a dreadful rock!  
Yet Æolus would not be a murderer,  
But left that hateful office unto thee:  
The pretty-vaulting sea refused to drown me,  
Knowing that thou wouldst have me drown'd  
on shore,

With tears as salt as sea, through thy un-  
kindness:

The splitting rocks cower'd in the sinking sands  
And would not dash me with their ragged  
sides,

Because thy flinty heart, more hard than they,  
Might in thy palace perish Margaret.  
As far as I could ken thy chalky cliffs,  
When from thy shore the tempest beat us back,  
I stood upon the hatches in the storm,  
And when the dusky sky began to rob  
My earnest-gazing sight of thy land's view,  
I took a costly jewel from my neck,  
A heart it was, bound in with diamonds,  
And threw it towards thy land: the sea re-  
ceived it,

And so I wish'd thy body might my heart:  
And even with this I lost fair England's view  
And bid mine eyes be packing with my heart  
And call'd them blind and dusky spectacles,  
For losing ken of Albion's wished coast.  
How often have I tempted Suffolk's tongue,  
The agent of thy foul inconstancy,  
To sit and witch me, as Ascanius did  
When he to maddening Dido would unfold  
His father's acts commenced in burning Troy!  
Am I not witch'd like her? or thou not false  
like him?

Ay me, I can no more! die, Margaret!  
For Henry weeps that thou dost live so long.

*Noise within. Enter WARWICK, SALISBURY,  
and many Commons.*

War. It is reported, mighty sovereign,  
That good Duke Humphrey traitorously is  
murder'd  
By Suffolk and the Cardinal Beaufort's means.  
The commons, like an angry hive of bees  
That want their leader, scatter up and down  
And care not who they sting in his revenge.  
Myself have calm'd their spiteful mutiny,  
Until they hear the order of his death.

King. That he is dead, good Warwick, 'tis  
too true.

But how he died God knows, not Henry:  
Examine the commons, view his breathless corpse,  
And lament them upon his sudden death.

War. That shall I do, my liege. Stay, Salis-  
bury,

With the rude multitude till I return. [*Exit.*  
King. O Thou that judgest all things, stay  
my thoughts,

My thoughts, that labour to persuade my soul  
Some violent hands were laid on Humphrey's  
life!

If my suspect be false, forgive me,  
For judgement only doth belong to Thee.  
Fain would I go to chafe his paly lips  
With twenty thousand kisses and to drain  
Upon his face an ocean of salt tears,  
To tell my love unto his dumb deaf trunk  
And with my fingers feel his hand unfeeling:  
But all in vain are these mean obsequies;  
And to survey his dead and earthly image,  
What were it but to make my sorrow greater!

*Re-enter WARWICK, and others, bearing  
GLOUCESTER's body on a bed.*

War. Come hither, gracious sovereign, view  
this body.

King. That is to see how deep my grave he  
made;

For with his soul fled all my worldly solace,  
For seeing him I see my life in death.

War. As surely as my soul intends to live  
With that dread King that took our state upon  
him

To free us from his father's wrathful curse,  
I do believe that violent hands were laid  
Upon the life of this thrice-famed duke.

Suf. A dreadful oath, sworn with a solemn  
tongue!

What instance gives Lord Warwick for his  
vow!

War. See how the blood is settled in his  
face.

Oft have I seen a timely-parted ghost,  
Of ashy semblance, measure, pale and bloodless,  
Being all descended to the labouring heart;  
Who, in the conflict that it holds with death,  
Attracts the same for aidance 'gainst the enemy;  
Which with the heart there cools and new  
returneth

To blush and beautify the cheek again.  
But see, his face is black and full of blood,  
His eye-balls further out than when he lived,  
Staring full ghastly like a strangled man;  
His hair upreard, his nostrils stretched with  
struggling;

His hands abroad display'd, as one that grasp'd  
And tug'd for life and was by strength sub-  
dued:

Look, on the sheets his hair, you see, is  
sticking;

His well-proportion'd beard made rough and  
rugged,

Like to the summer's corn by tempest lodged.  
It cannot be but he was murder'd here!

The least of all these signs were probable.  
Suf. Why, Warwick, who should do the  
duke to death?

Myself and Beaufort had him in protection;  
And we, I hope, are no murderers.

War. But both of you were yew'd Duke  
Humphrey's foes,

And you, forsooth, had the good duke to keep :  
 'Tis like you would not feast him like a friend ;  
 And 'tis well seen he found an enemy.

*Queen.* Then you, belike, suspect these noble-  
 men

As guilty of Duke Humphrey's timeless death.

*War.* Who finds the heifer dead and bleeding  
 fresh

And sees fast by a butcher with an axe,  
 But will suspect 'twas he that made the  
 slaughter ?

Who finds the partridge in the puttock's nest,  
 But may imagine how the bird was dead,  
 Although the kite soar with unbloody beak !  
 Even so suspicious is this tragedy.

*Queen.* Are you the butcher, Suffolk ?  
 Where's your knife ?

Is Beaumont term'd a kite ? Where are his  
 talons !

*Suf.* I wear no knife to slaughter sleeping  
 men ;

But here's a vengeful sword, rusted with ease,  
 That shall be scoured in his rancorous heart  
 That slanders me with murder's crimson badge.  
 Say, if thou dar'st, proud Lord of Warwick-  
 shire,

That I am faulty in Duke Humphrey's death.

[*Exeunt Cardinal, Somerset, and others.*  
*War.* What dares not Warwick, if false  
 Suffolk dare him ?

*Queen.* He dares not calm his contumelious  
 spirit

Nor cease to be an arrogant controller,  
 Though Suffolk dare him twenty thousand  
 times.

*War.* Madam, be still ; with reverence may  
 I say ;

For every word you speak in his behalf  
 Is slander to your royal dignity.

*Suf.* Blunt-witted lord, ignoble in demean-  
 our !

If ever lady wrong'd her lord so much,  
 Thy mother took into her shameful bed  
 Some stern untutor'd churl, and noble stock  
 Was graft with crab-tree slip ; whose fruit  
 thou art

And never of the Nevils' noble race.  
*War.* But that the guilt of murder bucklers  
 thee

And I should rob the deathman of his fee,  
 Quitting thee thereby of ten thousand shames,  
 And that my sovereign's presence makes me  
 mild,

I would, false murderous coward, on thy knee  
 Make thee beg pardon for thy passed speech  
 And say it was thy mother that thou meant'st,  
 That thou thyself wast born in bastardy ;  
 And after all this fearful homage done,

*Suf.* Thou shalt be waking while I shed  
 thy blood,

If from this presence thou dar'st go with me.

*War.* Away even now, or I will drag thee  
 hence :

Unworthy though thou art, I'll cope with thee  
 And do some service to Duke Humphrey's  
 ghost. [*Exeunt Suffolk and Warwick.*

*King.* What stronger breastplate than a  
 heart untainted !

Thrice is he arm'd that hath his quarrel just,  
 And he but naked, though lock'd up in steel,  
 Whose conscience with injustice is corrupted.

*Queen.* What noise is this ?

*Re-enter SUFFOLK and WARWICK, with their  
 weapons drawn.*

*King.* Why, how now, lords ! your wrathful  
 weapons drawn

Here in our presence ! dare you be so bold ?  
 Why, what tumultuous clamour have we here ?

*Suf.* The traitorous Warwick with the men  
 of Bury

Set all upon me, mighty sovereign.

*Sal.* [*To the Commons, entering*] Sirs, stand  
 apart ; the king shall know your mind.

Dread lord, the commons send you word by me,  
 Unless Lord Suffolk straight be done to death,

Or banished fair England's territories,  
 They will by violence tear him from your palace

And torture him with grievous lingering death.  
 They say, by him the good Duke Humphrey

died ;  
 They say, in him they fear your highness' death ;  
 And mere instinct of love and loyalty,

Free from a stubborn opposite intent,  
 As being thought to contradict your liking,

Makes them thus forward in his banishment.  
 They say, in care of your most royal person,

That if your highness should intend to sleep  
 And charge that no man should disturb your

rest

In pain of your dislike or pain of death,  
 Yet, notwithstanding such a strait edict,

Were there a serpent seen, with forked tongue,  
 That slily glided towards your majesty,

It were but necessary you were waked,  
 Lest, being suffer'd in that harmful slumber,

The mortal worm might make the sleep eternal ;  
 And therefore do they cry, though you forbid,

That they will guard you, whether you will  
 or no,

From such fell serpents as false Suffolk is,  
 With whose envenomed and fatal sting

Your loving uncle, twenty times his worth,  
 They say, is shamefully bereft of life.

*Commons.* [*Within*] An answer from the  
 king, my Lord of Salisbury !

*Suf.* 'Tis like the commons, rude unpolish'd  
 hinds,

Could send such message to their sovereigns :  
 But you, my lord, were glad to be employ'd

To show how quaint an orator you are :  
 But all the honour Salisbury hath won

Is, that he was the lord ambassador  
 Sent from a sort of tinkers to the king.

*Commons.* [*Within*] An answer from the  
 king, or we will all break in !

*King.* Go, Salisbury, and tell them all from  
 me,

I thank them for their tender loving care ;  
 And had I not been cited so by them,

Yet did I purpose as they do counsel ;  
 For, sure, my thoughts do hourly profess

Mischance unto my state by Suffolk's means !

But three days longer, on the pain of death.

*[Exit Salisbury.]*  
*Queen.* O Henry, let me plead for gentle

*Suffolk!*

*King.* Ungentle queen, to call him gentle

*Suffolk!* 290

No more, I say: if thou dost plead for him,

Thou wilt but add increase unto my wrath.

Had I but said, I would have kept my word,

But when I swear, it is irrevocable.

If, after three days' space, thou here be'st found

On any ground that I am ruler of,

The world shall not be ransom for thy life.

Come, Warwick, come, good Warwick, go with

me;

I have great matters to impart to thee.

*[Exeunt all but Queen and Suffolk.]*

*Queen.* Mischance and sorrow go along with

you! 300

Heart's discontent and sour affliction

Be playfellows to keep you company!

There's two of you; the devil make a third!

And threefold vengeance tend upon your steps!

*Suf.* Cease, gentle queen, these execrations

And let thy Suffolk take his heavy leave.

*Queen.* Fie, coward woman and soft-hearted

wretch!

Hast thou not spirit to curse thine enemy?

*Suf.* A plague upon them! wherefore should

I curse them!

Would curses kill, as doth the mandrake's

groom, 310

I would invent as bitter-searching terms,

As cursè, as harsh and horrible to hear,

Deliver'd strongly through my fixèd teeth,

With full as many signs of deadly hate,

As lean-faced Envy in her loathsome cave:

My tongue should stumble in mine earnest

words;

Mine eyes should sparkle like the beaten flint;

Mine hair be fix'd on end, as one distract;

Ay, every joint should seem to curse and ban:

And even now my burthen'd heart would break,

Should I not curse them. Poison be their

drink! 321

Gall, worse than gall, the daintiest that they

taste!

Their sweetest shade a grove of cypress trees!

Their chiefest prospect murdering basilisks!

Their softest touch as smart as lizards' stings!

Their music frightful as the serpent's hiss,

And hooting screech-owls make the covert full!

All the foul terrors in dark-seated hell—

*Queen.* Enough, sweet Suffolk; thou tor-

ment'st thyself;

And these dread curses, like the sun 'gainst

glaze, 330

Or like an overcharged gun, recoil,

And turn the force of them upon thyself.

*Suf.* You bade me ban, and will you bid me

leave!

Now, by the ground that—

Well could I curse away a winter's night,

Though standing naked on a mountain top,

Where biting cold would never let grass grow,

And think it but a minute sport in sport.

*Queen.* O, let me entreat thee cease. Give

me thy hand,

That I may dew it with my mournful tears;

Nor let the rain of heaven wet this place, 341

To wash away my woful monuments.

O, could this kiss be printed in thy hand,

That thou might'st think upon these by the

seal,

Through whom a thousand sighs are breathed

for thee!

So, get thee gone, that I may know my grief;

'Tis but surmised whiles thou art standing by,

As one that surfeits thinking on a want.

I will repeat thee, or, be well assured,

Adventure to be banished myself: 350

And banished I am, if but from thee.

(Go; speak not to me; even now be gone.

O, go not yet! Even thus two friends con-

demn'd

Embrace and kiss and take ten thousand leaves,

Loather a hundred times to part than die.

Yet now farewell; and farewell life with thee!

*Suf.* Thus is poor Suffolk ten times banished.

Once by the king, and three times thrice by

thee.

'Tis not the land I care for, wert thou thence;

A wilderness is populous enough. 360

So Suffolk had thy heavenly company:

For where thou art, there is the world itself,

With every several pleasure in the world,

And where thou art not, desolation.

I can no more; live thou to joy thy life;

Myself no joy in nought but that thou livest.

*Enter VAUX.*

*Queen.* Whither goes Vaux so fast? what

news, I prithee!

*Vaux.* To signify unto his majesty

That Cardinal Beaufort is at point of death;

For suddenly a grievous sickness took him, 370

That makes him gasp and stare and catch

the air,

Blaspheming God and cursing men on earth.

Sometimes he talks as if Duke Humphrey's

ghost

Were by his side; sometime he calls the king

And whispers to his pillow as to him

The secrets of his overcharged soul:

And I am sent to tell his majesty

That even now he cries aloud for him.

*Queen.* Go tell this heavy message to the

king. *[Exit Vaux.]*

Ay me! what is this world! what news art

these! 380

But wherefore grieve I at an hour's poor loss,

(Mitting Suffolk's exile, my soul's treasure!

Why only, Suffolk, mourn I not for thee,

And with the southern clouds contend in tears

Theirs for the earth's increase, mine for my

sorrows!

Now get thee hence: the king, thou know'st, is

coming;

If thou be found by me, thou art but dead.

*Suf.* If I depart from thee, I cannot live;

And in thy sight to die, what were it else

But like a pleasant slumber in thy lap? 390

Here could I breathe my soul into the air,

As mild and gentle as the cradle-babe  
Dying with mother's dug between its lips:  
Where, from thy sight, I should be raging mad  
And cry out for thee to close up mine eyes,  
To have thee with thy lips to stop my mouth;  
So shouldst thou either turn my flying soul,  
Or I should breathe it so into thy body,  
And then it lived in sweet Elysium.  
To die by thee were but to die in jest;  
From thee to die were torture more than death:  
O, let me stay, befall what may befall!

*Queen.* Away! though parting be a fretful  
corrosive,  
It is applied to a deathful wound.  
To France, sweet Suffolk: let me hear from  
thee;  
For whoso'er thou art in this world's globe,  
I'll have an Iris that shall find thee out.

*Suf.* I go.  
*Queen.* And take my heart with thee.  
*Suf.* A jewel, lock'd in the wofull'st cask  
That ever did contain a thing of worth.  
Even as a splitted bark, so sunder we:  
This way fall I to death.

*Queen.* This way for me.  
[*Exeunt severally.*]

## SCENE III. A bedchamber.

*Enter the King, SALISBURY, WARWICK, to  
the CARDINAL in bed.*

*King.* How fares my lord? speak, Beaufort,  
to thy sovereign.

*Car.* If thou be'st death, I'll give thee Eng-  
land's treasure,

Enough to purchase such another island,  
So thou wilt let me live, and feel no pain.

*King.* Ah, what a sign it is of evil life,  
Where death's approach is seen so terrible!

*War.* Beaufort, it is thy sovereign speaks to  
thee.

*Car.* Bring me unto my trial when you  
will.

Did he not in his bed? where should he die?  
Can I make men live, whether they will or not?

O, torture me no more! I will confess.  
Alive again! then show me where he is:

I'll give a thousand pound to look upon him.  
He hath no eyes, the dust hath blinded them.

Comb down his hair; look, look! it stands up-  
right,

Like lime-twigs set to catch my winged soul.  
Give me some drink; and bid the apothecary

Bring the strong poison that I bought of him.  
*King.* O thou eternal Mover of the heavens,

Look with a gentle eye upon this wretch! so  
(1) beat away the busy meddling fiend

That lays strong siege unto this wretch's soul  
And from his bosom purge this black despair!

*War.* See, how the pangs of death do make  
him grin!

*Suf.* Disturb him not; let him pass peace-  
ably.

*King.* Peace to his soul, if God's good  
pleasure be!

Lord cardinal, if thou think'st on heaven's bliss,  
Hold up thy hand, make signal of thy hope.

He dies, and makes no sign. O God, forgive  
him!

*War.* So bad a death argues a monstrous  
life.

*King.* Forbear to judge, for we are:  
all.

Close up his eyes and draw the curtain close;  
And let us all to meditation. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I. The coast of Kent.

*Alarum.* Fight at sea. Ordinance goes off.  
*Enter a Captain, a Master, a Master's-Mate,*

WALTER WHITMORE, and others; with  
them SUFFOLK, and others, prisoners.

*Cap.* The gaudy, blabbing and remorseful  
day

Is crept into the bosom of the sea;  
And now loud-howling wolves arouse the jades

That drag the tragic melancholy night;  
Who, with their drowy, slow and flagging

wings,  
Clip dead men's graves and from their misty

jaws  
Breathe foul contagious darkness in the air.

Therefore bring forth the soldiers of our prize;  
For, whilst our pinnace anchors in the Downs,

Here shall they make their ransom on the sand,  
(Or with their blood stain this discoloured shore.

Master, this prisoner freely give I thee;  
And thou that art his mate, make boot of this;

The other, Walter Whitmore, is thy share.  
*First Gent.* What is my ransom, master?

let me know.  
*Master.* A thousand crowns, or else lay down

your head.  
*Mate.* And so much shall you give, or off

goes yours.  
*Cap.* What, think you much to pay two

thousand crowns,  
And bear the name and port of gentlemen? so

Cut both the villains' throats; for die you shall:  
The lives of those which we have lost in fight

Be counterpoised with such a petty sum!  
*First Gent.* I'll give it, sir; and therefore

spare my life.  
*Sec. Gent.* And so will I and write home

for it straight.  
*Whit.* I lost mine eye in laying the prize

aboard,  
And therefore to revenge it, shalt thou die;

And so should these, if I might have my will.  
[*To Suf.*]

*Cap.* Be not so rash; take ransom, let him  
live.

*Suf.* Look on my George; I am a gentle-  
man:

Rate me at what thou wilt, thou shalt be paid.  
*Whit.* And so am I; my name is Walter

Whitmore.  
How now! why start'st thou? what, doth death

affright?  
name affrights me, in whose name

A cunning  
And man did calculate my birth:

Yet let not this make thee be bloody-minded;  
Thy name is Qualtier, being rightly sounded;

*Whit.* Qualtier or Walter, which it is, I care not;

Never yet did base dishonour blur our name,  
But with our sword we wiped away the blot; 40  
Therefore, when merchant-like I sell revenge,  
Make me my sword, my arms torn and defaced,  
And I proclaim'd a coward through the world!

*Suf.* Stay, Whitmore; for thy prisoner is a prince.

The Duke of Suffolk, William de la Pole.

*Whit.* The Duke of Suffolk muffled up in rags!

*Suf.* Ay, but these rags are no part of the duke:

Jove sometime went disguised, and why not I!

*Cap.* But Jove was never slain, as thou shalt be.

*Suf.* Obscure and lowly swain, King Henry's blood, 50

The honourable blood of Lancaster,

Must not be shed by such a jaded groom.

Hast thou not kiss'd thy hand and held my stirrup?

Bare-headed plodded by my foot-cloth mule  
And thought thee happy when I shook my head?

How often hast thou waited at my cup,  
Fed from my trencher, kneel'd down at the board,

When I have feasted with Queen Margaret!  
Remember it and let it make thee crest-fall'n,

Ay, and alay this thy abortive pride, 60

How in our voicing lobby hast thou stood  
And duly waited for my coming forth!

This hand of mine hath writ in thy behalf  
And therefore shall it charm thy riotous tongue.

*Whit.* Speak, captain, shall I stab the forlorn swain?

*Cap.* First let my words stab him, as he hath me.

*Suf.* Base slave, thy words are blunt and so art thou.

*Cap.* Convey him hence and on our long-boat's side

Strike off his head.

*Suf.* Thou dar'st not, for thy own.

*Cap.* Yes, Pole.

*Suf.* Pole!

*Cap.* Pool! Sir Pool! lord! 70

Ay, kennel, puddle, sink; whose silt and dirt  
Troubles the silver spring where England drinks.

Now will I dam up this thy yawning mouth  
For swallowing the treasure of the realm;

Thy lips that kiss'd the queen shall sweep the ground;

And thou that smiledst at good Duke Humphrey's death

Against the sweetest winds shalt grin in vain,  
Who in contempt shall him at thee again:

A wedded be thou to the bags of hell,  
Feasting to sully a mighty lord 80

As the daughter of a worthless king  
[subject, wealth, nor diadem.

By art thou grown great  
[ambitious Sylla, overpowered

of thy mother's bleeding heart.

By thee Anjou and Maine were sold to France,  
The false revolting Normans through thee

Disdain to call us lord, and Ploardy  
Hath slain their governors, surprised our forts

And sent the ragged soldiers wounded home, 90  
The princely Warwick, and the Nevils all,  
Whose dreadful swords were never drawn in

vain,  
As hating thee, are rising up in arms:

And now the house of York, thrust from the crown

By shameful murder of a guiltless king  
And lofty proud encroaching tyranny,

Burns with revenging fire; whose hopeful colours

Advance our half-faced sun, striving to shine,  
Under the which is writ 'Invitis nubibus,'

The commons here in Kent are up in arms: 100  
And, to conclude, approach and beggary  
Is crept into the palace of our king.

And all by thee. Away! convey him hence.

*Suf.* O that I were a god, to shoot forth thunder

Upon these paltry, servile, abject drudges!

Small things make base men proud: this villain here,

Being captain of a pinnacle, threatens more  
Than Bargarlus the strong Illyrian pirate.

Drones suck not eagles' blood but rob beehives:

It is impossible that I should die 110  
By such a lowly vassal as this self.

Thy words move rage and not remorse in me:  
I go of message from the queen to France;

I charge thee wait me safely cross the Channel.

*Cap.* Walter,—

*Whit.* Come, Suffolk, I must wait thee to thy death.

*Suf.* Gelidus timor occupat artus, it is the fear.

*Whit.* Thou shalt have cause to fear before I leave thee.

What, are ye daunted now? now will ye stoop!

*First Gent.* My gracious lord, entreat him, speak him fair. 120

*Suf.* Suffolk's imperial tongue is stern and rough.

Used to command, untaught to plead for favour.

Far be it we should honour such as these  
With humble suit: no, rather let my head

Stoop to the block than these knees bow to any  
Save to the God of heaven and to my king;

And sooner dance upon a bloody pole  
Than stand uncovered to the vulgar groom.

True nobility is exempt from fear:  
More can I bear than you dare execute. 130

*Cap.* Hail him away, and let him talk no more.

*Suf.* Come, soldiers, show what cruelty you can,  
That this my death may never be forgot!

Great men oft die by vile bezoniains:  
A Roman sworder and handitto slave

Murder'd sweet Tully; Brutus' bastard hand  
Stabb'd Julius Caesar; savage islanders

Pompey the Great; and Suffolk dies by pirates.  
[Exeunt Whitmore and others with Suffolk.

*Cap.* And so for those whose names we have set,

It is our pleasure one of them depart: 140  
Therefore come you with us and let him go.

[*Exeunt all but the First Gentleman.*]

*Re-enter WHITMORE with SUFFOLK's body.*

*Whit.* There let his head and lifeless body lie.

Until the queen his mistress bury it. [*Exit First Gent.*]  
O barbarous and bloody spectacle!

His body will I bear unto the king:  
If he revenge it not, yet will his friends;  
So will the queen, that living held him dear.  
[*Exit with the body.*]

## SCENE II. Blackheath.

*Enter GEORGE BEVIS and JOHN HOLLAND.*

*Bevis.* Come, and get thee a sword, though made of a bath: they have been up these two days.

*Holl.* They have the more need to sleep now, then.

*Bevis.* I tell thee, Jack Cade the clothier means to dress the commonwealth, and turn it, and set a new nap upon it.

*Holl.* So he had need, for 'tis threadbare. Well, I say it was never merry world in England since gentlemen came up.

*Bevis.* O miserable age! virtue is not regarded in handicrafts-men.

*Holl.* The nobility think scorn to go in leather aprons.

*Bevis.* Nay, more, the king's council are no good workmen.

*Holl.* True; and yet it is said, labour in thy vocation; which is as much to say as, let the magistrates be labouring men; and therefore should we be magistrates.

*Bevis.* Thou hast hit it; for there's no better sign of a brave mind than a hard hand.

*Holl.* I see them! I see them! There's Best's son, the tanner of Wingham.

*Bevis.* He shall have the skins of our enemies, to make dog's-leather of.

*Holl.* And Dick the Butcher.

*Bevis.* Then is sin struck down like an ox, and iniquity's throat cut like a calf.

*Holl.* And Smith the weaver.

*Bevis.* Argo, their thread of life is spun.

*Holl.* Come, come, let's fall in with them.

*Drum.* *Enter CADE, DICK Butcher, SMITH the Weaver, and a Sawyer, with infinite numbers.*

*Cade.* We John Cade, so termed of our supposed father.

*Dick.* [*Aside*] Or rather, of stealing a cade of herrings.

*Cade.* For our enemies shall fall before us, inspired with the spirit of prizing down kings and pri-

*Dick.* *Command silence.*

*Cade.* *See!*

*Dick.* *father was a Mortimer.*

*Dick.* *side.* He was an honest man, and a good l.

*Cade.* *My mother a Flemingst.*

*Dick.* [*Aside*] I knew her well; she was a midwife.

*Cade.* My wife descended of the Ladies.

*Dick.* [*Aside*] She was, indeed, a pedler's daughter, and sold many laces.

*Smith.* [*Aside*] But now of late, not able to travel with her turned pack, she washes backs here at home.

*Cade.* Therefore am I of an honourable house.

*Dick.* [*Aside*] Ay, by my faith, the field is honourable; and there was he born, under a hedge, for his father had never a house but the cage.

*Cade.* Valiant I am.

*Smith.* [*Aside*] A' must needs; for beggary is valiant.

*Cade.* I am able to endure much.

*Dick.* [*Aside*] No question of that; for I have seen him whipped three market-days together.

*Cade.* I fear neither sword nor fire.

*Smith.* [*Aside*] He need not fear the sword; for his coat is of proof.

*Dick.* [*Aside*] But methinks he should stand in fear of fire, being burnt i' the hand for stealing of sheep.

*Cade.* Be brave, then; for your captain is brave, and vows reformation. These shall be in England seven halfpenny loaves sold for a penny: the three-hooped pot shall have ten hoops; and I will make it felony to drink small beer: all the realm shall be in common; and in Cheapside shall my palfrey go to grass; and when I am king, as king I will be.

*All.* God save your majesty!

*Cade.* I thank you, good people: there shall be no money; all shall eat and drink on my score; and I will apparel them all in one livery, that they may agree like brothers and worship me their lord.

*Dick.* The first thing we do, let's kill all the lawyers.

*Cade.* Nay, that I mean to do. Is not this a lamentable thing, that of the skin of an innocent lamb should be made parchment?

that parchment, being scribbled o'er, should undo a man? Some say the bee stings; but I say, 'tis the bee's wax; for I did but seal once to a thing, and I was never mine own man since. How now! who's there?

*Enter some, bringing forward the Clerk of Chatham.*

*Smith.* The clerk of Chatham: he can write and read and cast account.

*Cade.* O monstrous!

*Smith.* We took him setting of boys' eyes.

*Cade.* Here's a villain!

*Smith.* Has a book in his pocket, with all letters in't.

*Cade.* Nay, then, he is a confessor.

*Dick.* Nay, he can make statutes, and write court-hand.

*Cade.* I am sorry for't: the man is a scholar man, of which manner; unless I had him, I should not die. Come hither, stand, and examine thee: what is thy name?

*Clerk.* Emmanuel.

*Dick.* They use to write it on the top of letters: 'twill go hard with you.

*Cade.* Let me alone. Dost thou use to write thy name? or hast thou a mark to thyself, like an honest plain-dealing man?

*Clerk.* Sir, I thank God, I have been so well brought up that I can write my name.

*All.* He hath confessed: away with him! he's a villain and a traitor.

*Cade.* Away with him, I say! hang him with his pen and ink-horn about his neck.

[*Exit one with the Clerk.*]

*Enter MICHAEL.*

*Mich.* Where's our general?

*Cade.* Here I am, thou particular fellow.

*Mich.* Fly, fly, fly! Sir Humphrey Stafford and his brother are hard by, with the king's forces.

*Cade.* Stand, villain, stand, or I'll fell thee down. He shall be encountered with a man as good as himself: he is but a knight, is a!

*Mich.* No.

*Cade.* To equal him, I will make myself a knight presently. [*Kneels*] Rise up Sir John Mortimer. [*Rises*] Now have at him!

*Enter SIR HUMPHREY STAFFORD and his Brother, with drum and soldiers.*

*Staff.* Rebellious hinds, the filth and scum of Kent,

Mark'd for the gallows, lay your weapons down; Home to your cottages, forsake this groom: The king is merciful, if you revolt.

*Bro.* But angry, wrathful, and inclined to blood,

If you go forward; therefore yield, or die.

*Cade.* As for these silken-coated slaves, I pass not:

It is to you, good people, that I speak, Over whom, in time to come, I hope to reign; For I am rightful heir unto the crown.

*Staff.* Villain, thy father was a plasterer; And thou thyself a sheerman, art thou not?

*Cade.* And Adam was a gardener.

*Bro.* And what of that?

*Cade.* Marry, this: Edmund Mortimer, Earl of March,

Marry'd the Duke of Clarence' daughter, did he not?

*Staff.* Ay, sir.

*Cade.* By her he had two children at one birth.

*Bro.* That's false.

*Cade.* Ay, there's the question; but I say, 'tis true:

The elder of them, being put to nurse, Was by a beggar-woman stolen away;

And, ignorant of his birth and parentage, Became a bricklayer when he came to age:

His son am I; deny it, if you can.

*Dick.* Nay, 'tis too true; therefore he shall be king.

*Staff.* Sir, he made a chimney in my father's house, and the bricks are alive at this day to testify it; therefore deny it not.

*Staff.* And will you credit this base drudge's words,

That speaks he knows not what?

*All.* Ay, marry, will we; therefore get ye gone.

*Bro.* Jack Cade, the Duke of York hath taught you this.

*Cade.* [*Aside*] He lies, for I invented it myself.

Go to, sirrah, tell the king from me, that, for his father's sake, Henry the Fifth, in whose time boys went to span-counter for French crowns, I am content he shall reign; but I'll be protector over him.

*Dick.* And furthermore, we'll have the Lord Say's head for selling the dukedom of Maine.

*Cade.* And good reason; for thereby is England maimed, and fain to go with a staff, but that my puissance holds it up. Fellow kings, I tell you that that Lord Say hath gelded the commonwealth, and made it an eunuch; and more than that, he can speak French; and therefore he is a traitor.

*Staff.* O gross and miserable ignorance!

*Cade.* Nay, answer, if you can: the Frenchmen are our enemies; go to, then, I ask but this: can he that speaks with the tongue of an enemy be a good counsellor, or no?

*All.* No, no; and therefore we'll have his head.

*Bro.* Well, seeing gentle words will not prevail,

Assail them with the army of the king.

*Staff.* Herald, away; and throughout every town

Proclaim them traitors that are up with Cade; That those which fly before the battle ends May, even in their wives and children's sight, Be hang'd up for example at their doors:

And you that be the king's friends, follow me.

[*Exeunt the two Staffords, and soldiers.*]

*Cade.* And you that love the common, follow me. Now show yourselves men; 'tis for liberty. We will not leave one lord, one gentleman; Spare none but such as go in clouted shoon; For they are thrifty honest men and such As would, but that they dare not, take our parts.

*Dick.* They are all in order and march toward us.

*Cade.* But then are we in order when we are most out of order. Come, march forward.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. Another part of Blackheath.

Alarums to the fight, wherein both the STAFFORDS are slain. *Enter CADE and the rest.*

*Cade.* Where's Dick, the butcher of Ashford?

*Dick.* Here, sir.

*Cade.* They tell before thee like sheep and oxen, and thou behavest thyself as if thou hadst been in thine own slaughter-house; therefore thus will I reward thee, the Lamb shall be as long again as it is; and thou shalt have a license to kill for a hundred sucking one.



*Dick.* I desire no more.  
*Cade.* And, to speak truth, thou deservest  
 o' less. This monument of the victory will  
 bear [putting on Sir Humphrey's brigandine];  
 and the bodies shall be dragged at my  
 horse heels till I do come to London, where we  
 will have the mayor's sword borne before us.  
*Dick.* If we mean to thrive and do good,  
 break open the goals and let out the prisoners.  
*Cade.* Fear not that, I warrant thee. Come,  
 let's march towards London. [Exeunt. 20]

SCENE IV. London. The palace.

Enter the KING with a supplication, and the  
 QUEEN with Suffolk's head, the DUKE OF  
 BUCKINGHAM and the LORD SAY.

*Queen.* Oft have I heard that grief softens  
 the mind  
 And makes it fearful and degenerate;  
 Think therefore on revenge and cease to weep.  
 But who can cease to weep and look on this!  
 Here may his head lie on my throbbing breast:  
 But where's the body that I should embrace?  
*Buck.* What answer makes your grace to  
 be rebels' supplication?  
*King.* I'll send some holy bishop to entreat;  
 For God forbid so many simple souls  
 should perish by the sword! And I myself,  
 rather than bloody war shall cut them short,  
 will parley with Jack Cade their general:  
 But stay, I'll read it over once again.

*Queen.* Ah, barbarous villains! hath this  
 lovely face  
 Ruled, like a wandering planet, over me,  
 And could it not enforce them to relent,  
 That were unworthy to behold the same?

*King.* Lord Say, Jack Cade hath sworn to  
 have thy head.

*Say.* Ay, but I hope your highness shall  
 have his.

*King.* How now, madam!  
 still lamenting and mourning for Suffolk's  
 death!

fear me, love, if that I had been dead,  
 thou wouldst not have mourn'd so much  
 for me.

*Queen.* No, my love, I should not mourn,  
 but die for thee.

Enter a Messenger.

*King.* How now! what news! why comest  
 thou in such haste!

*Mess.* The rebels are in Southwark; fly, my  
 lord!

Jack Cade proclaims himself Lord Mortimer,  
 Descended from the Duke of Clarence's house,  
 And calls your grace usurper openly.  
 And vows to crown himself in Westminster.  
 His army is a ragged multitude  
 Of hinds and peasants, rude and merciless:  
 Sir Humphrey Stafford and his brother's death  
 Hath given them heart and courage to proceed.  
 All ———, lawyers, courtiers, gentlemen,  
 They call caterpillars and intend their  
 death.

*King.* O graceless men! they know not  
 what they do.

*Buck.* My gracious lord, retire to Killing-  
 worth,

Until a power be raised to put them down.

*Queen.* Ah, were the Duke of Suffolk now  
 alive,

These Kentish rebels would be soon appeased!

*King.* Lord Say, the traitors hate thee;  
 Therefore away with us to Killingworth.

*Say.* So might your grace's person be in  
 danger.

The sight of me is odious in their eyes;  
 And therefore in this city will I stay  
 And live alone as secret as I may.

Enter another Messenger.

*Mess.* Jack Cade hath gotten London bridge:  
 The citizens fly and forsake their houses:

The rascal people, thirsting after prey,  
 Join with the traitor, and they jointly swear

To spoil the city and your royal court.

*Buck.* Then linger not, my lord; away, take  
 horse.

*King.* Come, Margaret; God, our hope, will  
 succour us.

*Queen.* My hope is gone, now Suffolk is de-  
 ceased.

*King.* Farewell, my lord: trust not the  
 Kentish rebels.

*Buck.* Trust nobody, for fear you be be-  
 tray'd.

*Say.* The trust I have is in mine innocence,  
 And therefore am I bold and resolute.

[Exeunt. 60]

SCENE V. London. The Tower.

Enter LORD SCALES upon the Tower, walking.  
 Then enter two or three Citizens below.

*Scales.* How now! is Jack Cade slain?

*First Cit.* No, my lord, nor likely to be  
 slain; for they have won the bridge, killing all  
 those that withstand them: the lord mayor  
 craves aid of your honour from the Tower to  
 defend the city from the rebels.

*Scales.* Such aid as I can spare you shall  
 command;

But I am troubled here with them myself;  
 The rebels have assay'd to win the Tower.

But get you to Smithfield and gather head,  
 And thither I will send you Matthew Goffe;

Fight for your king, your country and your  
 lives;

And so, farewell, for I must hence again.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE VI. London. Cannon Street.

Enter JACK CADE and the rest, and striking  
 his staff on London-stone.

*Cade.* Now is Mortimer lord of this city.  
 And here, sitting upon London-stone, I charge  
 and command that, of the city's cost, the  
 piping-conduit run nothing but claret wine  
 this first year of our reign. And now I charge  
 forward it shall be treason for any that calls  
 me other than Lord Mortimer.

*Enter a Soldier, running.*

*Sold.* Jack Cade! Jack Cade!

*Cade.* Knock him down there.

*[They kill him.]*

*Smith.* If this fellow be wise, he'll never call ye Jack Cade more: I think he hath a very fair warning.

*Dick.* My lord, there's an army gathered together in Smithfield.

*Cade.* Come, then, let's go fight with them: but first, go and set London bridge on fire; and, if you can, burn down the Tower too. Come, let's away. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE VII. London. Smithfield.

*Alarums.* MATTHEW GOFFE is slain, and all the rest. Then enter JACK CADE, with his company.

*Cade.* So, sirs: now go some and pull down the Savoy; others to the inns of court; down with them all.

*Dick.* I have a suit unto your lordship.

*Cade.* Be it a lordship, thou shalt have it for that word.

*Dick.* Only that the laws of England may come out of your mouth.

*Holl.* *[Aside]* Mass, 'twill be sore law, then; for he was thrust in the mouth with a spear, and 'tis not whole yet.

*Smith.* *[Aside]* Nay, John, it will be stinking law; for his breath stinks with eating toasted cheese.

*Cade.* I have thought upon it, it shall be so. Away, burn all the records of the realm: my mouth shall be the parliament of England.

*Holl.* *[Aside]* Then we are like to have biting statutes, unless his teeth be pulled out.

*Cade.* And henceforward all things shall be in common. *[Exit.]*

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My lord, a prize, a prize! here's the Lord Say, which sold the towns in France; he that made us pay one and twenty pence, and one shilling to the pound, the last subsidy.

*Enter GEORGE BEVIS, with the LORD SAY.*

*Cade.* Well, he shall be beheaded for it ten times. Ah, thou say, thou serge, say, thou traitorous lord! now art thou within point-blank of our jurisdiction regal. What canst thou

do my majesty for giving up of Nor-  
unto Monsieur Basinecu, the dauphin  
son? Be it known unto thee by these

promises, even the presence of Lord Mortimer, that I am the becom that must sweep the court  
clean of such filth as thou art. Thou hast

most traitorously corrupted the youth of the  
realm, in erecting a grammar school; and  
whereas before our forefathers had no other

books but the same and the tally, thou hast  
given printing to be read, and, contrary to  
the law, his crown and dignity, thou hast

given a paper-cull. It will be proved to thy  
face that thou hast more about thee that usually  
are of a mean estate, and such abominable

words as no Christian ear can endure to hear.  
Thou hast appointed justices of peace, to call  
poor men before them about matters they were  
not able to answer. Moreover, thou hast put  
them in prison; and because they could not  
read, thou hast hanged them; (when, indeed,  
only for that cause they have been most worthy  
to live. Thou dost ride in a foot-cloth, dost  
thou not!)

*Say.* What of that!

*Cade.* Marry, thou oughtest not to let thy  
horse wear a cloak, when honest men that  
thou go in their hose and doublets.

*Dick.* And work in their shirt too; as my  
self, for example, that am a butcher.

*Say.* You men of Kent—

*Dick.* What say you of Kent?

*Say.* Nothing but this; 'tis 'boua terra  
mala gena.'

*Cade.* Away with him, away with him! he  
speaks Latin.

*Say.* Hear me but speak, and bear me when  
you will.

Kent, in the Commentaries Oresar writ,  
is term'd the civil place of all this isle:  
Sweet is the country, because full of riches;  
The people liberal, valiant, active, wealthy;  
Which makes me hope you are not void of pity:  
I sold not Maine, I lost not Normandy.  
Yet, to recover them, would lose my life.  
Justice with favour have I always done;  
Prayers and tears have moved me, gifts could  
never.

When have I aught exacted at your hands,  
But to maintain the king, the realm and you?  
Large gifts have I bestow'd on learned clerks,  
Because my book prefer'd me to the king.  
And seeing ignorance is the curse of God,  
Knowledge the wing wherewith we fly to heaven.  
Unless you be possess'd with devilish spirits,  
You cannot but forbear to murder me:  
This tongue hath parley'd unto foreign kings  
For your behalf.—

*Cade.* Tut, when struck'st thou one blow in  
the field!

*Say.* Great men have reaching hands: oh  
have I struck

Those that I never saw and struck them dead.

*Geo.* O monstrous coward! what, to count  
behind folks!

*Say.* These cheeks are pale for watching for  
your good.

*Cade.* Give him a box o' the ear and that  
will make 'em red again.

*Say.* Long sitting to determine poor men's  
causes

Hath made me full of sickness and diseases.  
*Cade.* Ye shall have a hamper candle then  
and the help of hatchet.

*Dick.* Why dost thou quiver, man?

*Say.* The palsy, and not that, provokes me.

*Cade.* Nay, be not so at us, as who should  
say, I'll be even with you: I'll see if his head  
will stand steeper on a pole, or no. Take him  
away, and behead him.

*Say.* Tell me wherein!

Have I affected wealth or honour?  
Are my cheeks fill'd up with

Is my apparel sumptuous to behold?  
Whom have I injured, that ye seek my death?  
These hands are free from guiltless blood-

shedding,  
This breast from harbouring foul deceitful  
thoughts.

O, let me live!

*Cade.* [Aside] I feel remorse in myself with  
his words; but I'll bridle it: he shall die, an  
it be but for pleading so well for his life. Away  
with him! he has a familiar under his tongue;  
he speaks not o' God's name. Go, take him  
away, I say, and strike off his head presently;  
and then break into his son-in-law's house, Sir  
James Cromer, and strike off his head, and  
bring them both upon two poles hither.

*All.* It shall be done.

*Say.* Ah, countrymen! if when you make  
your prayers,

God should be so obdurate as yourselves,  
How would it fare with your departed souls?  
And therefore yet relent, and save my life.

*Cade.* Away with him! and do as I com-  
mand ye. [Exeunt some with Lord Say.

The proudest peer in the realm shall not wear a  
head on his shoulders, unless he pay me tribute;  
there shall not a maid be married, but she shall  
pay to me her maidenhead ere they have it:  
men shall hold of me in capite; and we charge  
and command that their wives be as free as  
hearts can wish or tongue can tell.

*Dick.* My lord, when shall we go to Cheap-  
side and take up commodities upon our bills?

*Cade.* Marry, presently.

*All.* O, brave!

*Re-enter one with the heads.*

*Cade.* But is not this braver? Let them  
kiss one another, for they loved well when they  
were alive. Now part them again, lest they  
consent about the giving up of some more  
towns in France. Soldiers, defer the spoil of  
the city until night: for with these borne  
before us, instead of maces, will we ride through  
the streets; and at every corner have them kiss.  
Away! [Exeunt.

#### SCENE VIII. Southwark.

*Alarm and retreat. Enter CADE and all  
his rabblement.*

*Cade.* Up Fish Street! down Saint Magnus'  
(corner) kill and knock down! throw them  
into Thames! [Sound a parley.] What noise  
is this I hear? Pure any be so bold to sound  
retreat or parley, when I command them kill!

*Enter BUCKINGHAM and old CLIFFORD,  
attended.*

*Buck.* Ay, here they be that dare and will  
disturb thee:

Know, Cade, we come ambassadors from the  
king

Unto the commons whom thou hast misled;  
And here pronounce free pardon to them all

That will forsake thee and go home in peace.

*Cif.* What say ye, countrymen! will ye

And yield to mercy whilst 'tis offer'd you;  
Or let a rebel lead you to your deaths?

Who loves the king and will embrace his  
pardon,

Fling up his cap, and say 'God save his ma-  
jesty!'

Who hate him and honours not his father,  
Henry the Fifth, that made all France to  
quake,

Shake he his weapon at us and pass by.

*All.* God save the king! God save the king!

*Cade.* What, Buckingham and Clifford, are  
ye so brave? And you, base peasants, do ye  
believe him? will you needs be hanged with  
your pardons about your necks? Hadst my  
sword therefore broke through London gates,  
that you should leave me at the White Hart  
in Southwark? I thought ye would never have  
given out these arms till you had recovered  
your ancient freedom; but you are all recreants  
and dastards, and delight to live in slavery to  
the nobility. Let them break your backs with  
burthens, take your houses over your heads,  
ravish your wives and daughters before your  
faces: for me, I will make shift for one; and  
so, God's curse light upon you all!

*All.* We'll follow Cade, we'll follow Cade!

*Cif.* Is Cade the son of Henry the Fifth?  
That thus you do exclaim you'll go with him?  
Will he conduct you through the heart of  
France,

And make the meanest of you earls and dukes?

Alas, he hath no home, no place to fly to: 40

Nor knows he how to live but by the spoil,

Unless by robbing of your friends and us.

Were't not a shame, that whilst you live at jar,

The fearful French, whom you late vanquish'd,

Should make a start o'er seas and vanquish you?

Methinks already in this civil broil

I see them lord'ing it in London streets,

Crying 'Villagers!' unto all they meet.

Better ten thousand base-born Cades miscarry

Than you should stoop unto a Frenchman's

mercy.

To France, to France, and get what you have 50

lost;

Spare England, for it is your native coast:

Henry hath money, you are strong and manly;

God on our side, doubt not of victory.

*All.* A Clifford! a Clifford! we'll follow the

king and Clifford.

*Cade.* Was ever feather so lightly blown to

and fro as this multitude? The name of Henry

the Fifth hales them to an hundred mischiefs

and makes them leave me desolate. I see them

lay their heads together to surprise me. My

sword make way for me, for here is no staying.

In despite of the devil and hell, have through

the very midst of you! and heaven and

honour be witness that no want of resolution

in me, but only my followers' base and in-

nominous treasons, makes me bid you to

my heels.

*Buck.* What, is he fled? Go some, and fol-

low him:

And he that brings his head unto the king, 60

Shall have a thousand crowns for his reward.

[Exeunt some of them.]

Follow me, soldiers: we'll devise a mean  
To reconcile you all unto the king. [Exeunt.]

SCENE IX. *Kenilworth Castle.*

*Sound trumpets. Enter KING, QUEEN, and  
SOMERSET, on the terrace.*

*King.* Was ever king that joy'd an earthly  
throne,  
And could command no more content than I!  
No sooner was I crept out of my cradle  
But I was made a king, at nine months old.  
Was never subject long'd to be a king  
As I do long and wish to be a subject.

*Enter BUCKINGHAM and old CLIFFORD.*

*Buck.* Health and glad tidings to your  
majesty!

*King.* Why, Buckingham, is the traitor  
Cade surprised?  
Or is he but retired to make him strong?

*Enter, below, multitudes, with halters about  
their necks.*

*Clif.* He is fled, my lord, and all his powers  
do yield;  
And humbly thus, with halters on their necks,  
Expect your highness' doom, of life or death.

*King.* Then, heaven, set ope thy everlasting  
gates,

To entertain my vows of thanks and praise!  
Soldiers, this day have you redeem'd your lives  
And show'd how well you love your prince and  
country;

Continue still in this so good a mind,  
And Henry, though he be unfortunate,  
Assure yourselves, will never be unkind:  
And so, with thanks and pardon to you all, 20  
I do dismiss you to your several countries.

*All.* God save the king! God save the king!

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Please it your grace to be advertised  
The Duke of York is newly come from Ireland,  
And with a puissant and a mighty power  
Of gallowglasses and stout kerns  
Is marching hitherward in proud array,  
And still proclaimeth, as he comes along,  
His arms are only to remove from thee  
The Duke of Somerset, whom he terms a traitor.

*King.* Thus stands my state, 'twixt Cade  
and York distress'd;

Like to a ship that, having 'scaped a tempest,  
Is straightway calm'd and boarded with a  
pirate;

But now is Cade driven back, his men dis-

— now is York in arms to second him.

I pray thee, Buckingham, go and meet him,

ask him what's the reason of these arms.

When I'll send Duke Edmund to the Tower;

Somer set, we will commit these thither,

— his army be dismissed from him. 40

*King.* My lord,

I would myself to prison willingly,

Or into death, to do my country good.

*King.* In any case, be not too rough in  
terms;

For he is fierce and cannot brook hard language.

*Buck.* I will, my lord; and doubt not so to  
deal

As all things shall redound unto your good.

*King.* Come, wife, let's in, and learn to  
govern better;

For yet may England curse my wretched reign.  
[Flourish. Exeunt.]

SCENE X. *Kent. Iden's garden.*

*Enter CADE.*

*Cade.* Fie on ambition! fie on myself, that  
have a sword, and yet am ready to famish!  
These five days have I hid me in these woods  
and durst not peep out, for all the country is  
laid for me; but now am I so hungry that if I  
might have a lease of my life for a thousand  
years I could stay no longer. Wherefore, on a  
brick wall have I climbed into this garden, to  
see if I can eat grass, or pick a sallot another  
while, which is not amiss to cool a man's  
stomach this hot weather. And I think this  
word 'sallot' was born to do me good: for  
many a time, but for a sallot, my brain-pan  
had been cleft with a brown bill; and many a  
time, when I have been dry and bravely march-  
ing, it hath served me instead of a quart pot to  
drink in; and now the word 'sallot' must serve  
me to feed on.

*Enter IDEN.*

*Iden.* Lord, who would live turmoiled in  
the court,

And may enjoy such quiet walks as these?

This small inheritance my father left me, 20

Contenteth me, and worth a monarchy.

I seek not to wax great by others' waning.

Or gather wealth, I care not, with what envy:

Sufficeth that I have maintains my state

And sends the poor well pleased from my gate.

*Cade.* Here a the lord of the soil come to

seize me for a stray, for entering his fee-simple

without leave. Ah, villain, thou wilt betray

me, and get a thousand crowns of the king

by carrying my head to him: but I'll make

thee eat iron like an ostrich, and swallow my

sword like a great pin, ere thou and I part.

*Iden.* Why, rude companion, whatso'er thou

be,

I know thee not; why, then, should I betray

thee?

Is't not enough to break into my garden,

And, like a thief, to come to rob my grounds,

'climbing my walls in spite of me the owner,

But thou wilt brave me with these saucy terms?

*Cade.* Brave thee! ay, by the best blood

that ever was broached, and heard thee too.

Look on me well: I have eat no meat these

five days; yet, come thou and thy five men,

and if I do not leave you all as dead as a door-

— nail, I pray God I may never eat grass more.

*Iden.* Nay, it shall ne'er be said, while

England stands,

That Alexander Iden, an acquies of Kent,

Took odds to combat a poor famish'd man.

Oppose thy steadfast-gazing eyes to mine,  
See if thou canst outface me with thy looks:  
Set limb to limb, and thou art far the lesser;  
Thy hand is but a finger to my fist,  
Thy leg a stick compared with this truncheon;  
My foot shall fight with all the strength thou  
hast;

And if mine arm be heaved in the air,  
Thy grave is digg'd already in the earth.  
As for words, whose greatness answers words,  
Let this my sword report what speech forbears.  
*Cade.* By my valour, the most complete  
champion that ever I heard! Steel, if thou  
turn the edge, or cut not out the burly-boned  
clown in chins of beef ere thou sleep in thy  
sheath, I beseech God on my knees thou mayst  
be turned to hobnails.

[*Here they fight. Cade falls.*  
O, I am slain! famine and no other hath  
slain me: let ten thousand devils come against  
me, and give me but the ten meals I have lost,  
and I'll defy them all. Wither, garden; and  
be henceforth a burying-place to all that do  
dwell in this house, because the unconquered  
soul of Cade is fled.

*Iden.* Is't Cade that I have slain, that  
monstrous traitor!

Sword, I will hallow thee for this thy deed,  
And hang thee o'er my tomb when I am dead:  
Ne'er shall this blood be wiped from thy point;  
But thou shalt wear it as a herald's coat,  
To emblaze the honour that thy master got.

*Cade.* Iden, farewell, and be proud of thy  
victory. Tell Kent from me, she hath lost her  
best man, and exhort all the world to be cowards;  
for I, that never feared any, am vanquished by  
famine, not by valour. [*Dies.*]

*Iden.* How much thou wrong'st me, heaven  
be my judge.

*Dic.* damned wretch, the curse of her that bare  
thee;

And as I thrust thy body in with my sword,  
So wish I, I might thrust thy soul to hell.  
Hence will I drag thee headlong by the heels  
Into a dunghill which shall be thy grave,  
And there cut off thy most ungracious head;  
Which I will bear in triumph to the king,  
Giving thy trunk for crows to feed upon.

[*Exit.*]

## ACT V.

### SCENE I. *Fields between Dartford and Blackheath.*

[*Enter YORK, and his army of Irish, with drum and colours.*]

*York.* From Ireland thus comes York to  
claim his right,  
And pluck the crown from feeble Henry's head:  
Ring, bells, aloud; burn, bonfires, clear and  
bright,  
To entertain great England's lawful king.  
Ah! sancta majestas, who would not buy thee  
dear!  
et them obey that know not how to rule;  
This hand was made to handle nought but  
gold.

I cannot give due action to my words,  
Except a sword or sceptre balance it:  
A sceptre shall it have, have I a soul,  
On which I'll toss the flower-de-luce of France.

*Enter BUCKINGHAM.*

Whom have we here? Buckingham, to disturb  
me!

The king hath sent him, sure: I must dis-  
semble.

*Buck.* York, if thou meanest well, I greet  
thee well.

*York.* Humphrey of Buckingham, I accept  
thy greeting.

Art thou a messenger, or come of pleasure?

*Buck.* A messenger from Henry, our dread  
liege,

To know the reason of these arms in peace;  
Or why thou, being a subject as I am,  
Against thy oath and true allegiance sworn, so  
Should raise so great a power without his leave,  
Or dare to bring thy force so near the court.

*York.* [*Aside*] Scarce can I speak, my choler  
is so great:

O, I could hew up rocks and fight with flint,  
I am so angry at these abject terms;

And now, like Ajax Telamonius,  
On sheep or oxen could I spend my fury.

I am far better born than is the king:  
More like a king, more kingly in my thoughts:

But I must make fair weather yet a while,  
Till Henry be more weak and I more strong.

*Buckingham,* I prithee, pardon me,  
That I have given no answer all this while;  
My mind was troubled with deep melancholy.  
The cause why I have brought this army hither  
is to remove proud Somerset from the king,  
Seditious to his grace and to the state.

*Buck.* That is too much presumption on thy  
part:

But if thy arms be to no other end,  
The king hath yielded unto thy demand:

The Duke of Somerset is in the Tower.

*York.* Upon thine honour, is he prisoner?

*Buck.* Upon mine honour, he is prisoner.

*York.* Then, Buckingham, I do dismiss my  
powers.

Soldiers, I thank you all; disperse yourselves;  
Meet me to-morrow in Saint George's field.

You shall have pay and every thing you wish.

And let my sovereign, virtuous Henry,  
Command my eldest son, nay, all my sons,

As pledges of my fealty and love;

I'll send them all as willing as I live:

Lands, goods, horse, armour, any thing I have,

Is his to use, so Somerset may die.

*Buck.* York, I commend this kind sub-  
mission:

We twain will go into his highness' tent.

*Enter King and Attendants.*

*King.* Buckingham, doth York intend no  
harm to us,

That thus he marcheth with thee arm in arm?

*York.* In all submission and humility

York doth present himself unto your highness.

*King.* Then what intends these forces thou  
dost bring?

York. To heave the traitor Somerset from hence,  
And fight against that monstrous rebel Cade,  
Who since I heard to be discomfited.

Enter IDEN, with CADE's head.

Iden. If one so rude and of so mean condition

May pass into the presence of a king,  
Io, I present your grace a traitor's head.  
The head of Cade, whom I in combat slew.

King. The head of Cade! Great God, how just art Thou!

O, let me view his visage, being dead,  
That living wrought me such exceeding trouble.  
Tell me, my friend, art thou the man that slew him?

Iden. I was, an't like your majesty.

King. How art thou call'd? and what is thy degree?

Iden. Alexander Iden, that's my name;  
A poor esquire of Kent, that loves his king.

Duck. So please it you, my lord, 'twere not amiss

He were created knight for his good service.

King. Iden, kneel down. [*He kneels.*] Rise up a knight.

We give thee for reward a thousand marks,  
And will that thou henceforth attend on us.

Iden. May Iden live to merit such a bounty,  
And never live but true unto his liege! [*Rises.*]

Enter QUEEN AND SOMERSET.

King. See, Buckingham, Somerset comes with the queen:

Go, bid her hide him quickly from the duke.

Queen. For thousand Yorks he shall not hide his head,

But boldly stand and front him to his face.

York. How now! is Somerset at liberty?

Then, York, unloose thy long-imprison'd thoughts,

And let thy tongue be equal with thy heart.

Shall I endure the sight of Somerset?

False king! why hast thou broken faith with me,

Knowing how hardly I can brook abuse?

King did I call thee? no, thou art not king,

Not fit to govern and rule multitudes,

Which darst not, no, nor canst not rule a traitor.

That head of thine doth not become a crown;

Thy hand is made to grasp a palmer's staff,

And not to grasp an awful princely sceptre.

That gold must round engirt these brows of mine,

Whose smile and frown, like to Achilles' spear,

Is able with the change to kill and cure.

Here is a hand to hold a sceptre up

And with the same to act controlling laws.

Give place: by heaven, thou shalt rule no more

O'er him whom heaven created for thy ruler.

Som. O monstrous traitor! I arrest thee,

York.

Of capital treason 'gainst the king and crown:

Ohey, and down traitor! kneel for grace.

York. Wouldst have me kneel? I will let me

ask of them.

If they can break I bow a knee to man.

Sirrah, call in my sons to be my bail:

I know, ere they will have me go to ward,  
They'll pawn their swords for my enfranchisement.

Queen. Call hither Clifford; bid him come

again,

To say if that the bastard boys of York  
Shall be the surety for their traitor father.

York. O blood-spotted Neapolitan,  
Outcast of Naples, England's bloody scourge:

The sons of York, thy betters in their birth,  
Shall be their father's bail; and hark to those

That for my surety will refuse the boys!

Enter EDWARD and RICHARD.

See where they come: I'll warrant they'll  
make it good.

Enter old CLIFFORD and his Son.

Queen. And here comes Clifford to deny  
their bail.

Cliff. Health and all happiness to my lord  
the king!

York. I thank thee, Clifford: say, what  
news with thee?

Say, do not fright us with an angry look;  
We are thy sovereign, Clifford, kneel again;

For thy mistaking so, we pardon thee.

Cliff. This is my king, York, I do not  
mistake;

But thou mistakest me much to think I do:

To bedlam with him! is the man grown mad?

King. Ay, Clifford; a bedlam and ambitious  
humour

Makes him oppose himself against his king.

Cliff. He is a traitor; let him to the Tower,  
And chop away that factious pate of his.

Queen. He is arrested, but will not obey;

His sons, he says, shall give their words for him.

York. Will you not, sons?

Edw. Ay, noble father, if our words will  
serve.

Rich. And if words will not, then our  
weapons shall.

Cliff. Why, what a brood of traitors have  
we here!

York. Look in a glass, and call thy image  
so:

I am thy king, and thou a false-heart traitor.

Call hither to the stake my two brave bears,  
That with the very shaking of their chains

They may astonish these fell-lurking curs:

Bid Salisbury and Warwick come to me.

Enter the EARLS OF WARWICK and  
SALISBURY.

Cliff. Are these thy bears? we'll bait thy  
bears to death.

And manacle the bear-ward in their chains,  
If thou darst bring them to the baiting place.

Rich. Oft have I seen a hot o'erweening cur  
Run back and bite, because he was witheld:

Who, I  
Hath e-  
And sue

If you oppose yourselves to match Lord Warwick.

*Clif.* Hence, heap of wrath, foal indigested lump,

As crooked in thy manners as thy shape!

*York.* Nay, we shall heat you thoroughly anon.

*Clif.* Take heed, lest by your heat you burn yourselves.

*King.* Why, Warwick, hath thy knee forgot to bow!

Old Salisbury, shame to thy silver hair,  
Thou mad misleader of thy brain-sick son!  
What, wilt thou on thy death-bed play the ruffian,

And seek for sorrow with thy spectacles?  
O, where is faith? O, where is loyalty?  
If it be banish'd from the frosty head,  
Where shall it find a harbour in the earth?  
Wilt thou go dig a grave to find out war,  
And shame thine honourable age with blood?  
Why art thou old, and want'st experience? 171  
(Or wherefore dost abuse it, if thou hast it?)  
For shame! In duty bend thy knee to me  
That bows unto the grave with mickle age.

*Sal.* My lord, I have consider'd with myself  
The title of this most renowned duke;  
And in my conscience do repute his grace  
The rightful heir to England's royal seat.

*King.* Hast thou not sworn allegiance unto me!

*Sal.* I have.

*King.* Canst thou dispense with heaven for such an oath?

*Sal.* It is great sin to swear unto a sin,  
But greater sin to keep a sinful oath.  
Who can be bound by any solemn vow  
To do a murderous deed, to rob a man,  
To force a spotless virgin's chastity,  
To reave the orphan of his patrimony,  
To wring the widow from her custom'd right,  
And have no other reason for this wrong  
But that he was bound by a solemn oath? 190

*Queen.* A subtle traitor needs no sophister.

*King.* Call Buckingham, and bid him arm himself.

*York.* Call Buckingham, and all the friends thou hast,

am resolved for death or dignity.

*Clif.* The first I warrant thee, if dreams prove true.

*War.* You were best to go to bed and dream again.

To keep thee from the tempest of the field.

*Clif.* I am resolved to bear a greater storm  
Than any thou canst conjure up to-day;

And that I'll write upon thy burgonet, 200  
Might I but know thee by thy household badge.

*War.* Now, by my father's badge, old Nevil's crest,

The rampant bear chain'd to the ragged staff,  
This day I'll wear aloft my burgonet,

As on a mountain top the cedar shows  
That keeps his leaves in spite of any storm,

Even to affright thee with the view thereof.

*Clif.* And from thy burgonet I'll read thy bear

And tread it under foot with all contempt,

Despite the bear-ward that protects the bear, 210  
*Y. Clif.* And so to arms, victorious father,

To quell the rebels and their complices.

*Rich.* Fie! charity, for shame! speak not in spite.

For you shall sup with Jesu Christ to-night.

*Y. Clif.* Foul stigmatic, that's more than thou canst tell.

*Rich.* If not in heaven, you'll surely sup in hell.  
[Exeunt severally.]

## SCENE II. Saint Alban's.

*Alarums to the battle. Enter WARWICK.*

*War.* Clifford of Cumberland, 'tis Warwick calls:

And if thou dost not hide thee from the bear,  
Now, when the angry trumpet sounds alarm

And dead men's cries do fill the empty air,  
Clifford, I say, come forth and fight with me:

Proud northern lord, Clifford of Cumberland,  
Warwick is hoarse with calling thee to arms.

## Enter YORK.

How now, my noble lord! what, all afoot?

*York.* The deadly-handed Clifford slew my steed.

But match to match I have encounter'd him 20  
And made a prey for carrion kites and crows  
Even of the bony beast he loved so well.

## Enter old CLIFFORD.

*War.* Of one or both of us the time is come.

*York.* Hold, Warwick, seek thee out some other chase.

For I myself must hunt this deer to death.

*War.* Then, nobly, York; 'tis for a crown thou fight'st.

As I intend, Clifford, to thrive to-day,  
It grieves my soul to leave thee unarm'd. 30

*Clif.* What seest thou in me, York? why dost thou pause?

*York.* With thy brave bearing should I be in love.

But that thou art so fast mine enemy.

*Clif.* Nor should thy prowess want praise and esteem.

But that 'tis shown ignobly and in treason.

*York.* So let it help me now against thy sword.

As I in justice and true right express it.

*Clif.* My soul and body on the action both!

*York.* A dreadful lay! Address thee instantly. [They fight, and Clifford falls.]

*Clif.* In sin compassing his curves. [Clif. falls.]

*York.* Thus war hath given thee power to see thou art still.

Peace with his soul, heaven, if it be thy will! 40

*Enter young CLIFFORD.*

*Y. Clif.* Shame and confusion! all is lost the rout;

Four frames disorder, and disorder wounds  
Where it should guard. O war, thou son of hell,

Whom angry heavens do make their minister,

Throw in the frozen bosoms of our part  
Hot souls of vengeance! Let no soldier fly.  
He that is truly dedicate to war  
Hath no self-love, nor he that loves himself  
Hath not essentially but by circumstance  
The name of valour. *[Seeing his dead father]*

O, let the vile world end.  
And the premised flames of the last day  
Knit earth and heaven together!  
Now let the general trumpet blow his blast,  
Particularities and petty sounds  
To cease! Wast thou ordain'd, dear father,  
To lose thy youth in peace, and to achieve  
The silver livery of advised age,  
And, in thy reverence and thy chair-days, thus  
To die in ruffian battle! Even at this sight  
My heart is turn'd to stone: and while 'tis  
mine  
It shall be stony. York not our old men  
spares;

No more will I their babes: tears virginal  
Shall be to me even as the dew to fire,  
And beauty that the tyrant oft reclaims  
Shall to my flaming wrath be oil and flax.  
Henceforth I will not have to do with pity:  
Meet I an infant of the house of York,  
Into as many gobbets will I cut it  
As wild Medea young Abayrtus did:  
In cruelty will I seek out my fame.  
Come, thou new ruin of old Clifford's house:  
As did Æneas old Anchises bear,  
So bear I thee upon my manly shoulders;  
But then Æneas bare a living load,  
Nothing so heavy as these woes of mine.  
*[Exit, bearing off his father.]*

*Enter RICHARD and SOMERSET to fight.*  
SOMERSET is killed.

Rich. So, lie thou there;  
For underneath an alehouse' paltry sign,  
The Castle in Saint Alban's, Somerset  
Hath made the wizard famous in his death.  
Sword, hold thy temper; heart, be wrathful  
still:  
Priests pray for enemies, but princes kill. *[Exit.]*

*Fight; excursions. Enter KING, QUEEN,  
and others.*

Queen. Away, my lord! you are slow; for  
shame, away!

King. Can we outrun the heavens! good  
Margaret, stay.

Queen. What are you made of! you'll nor  
fight nor fly:

Now is it manhood, wisdom and defence,  
To give the enemy way, and to secure us  
By what we can, which can no more but fly.

*[Alarum afar off.]*  
If you be taken, we then should see the bottom  
Of all our fortunes: but if we haply escape,  
As well we may, if not through your neglect, so  
We shall to London get, where you are loved

And where this breach now in our fortunes  
made  
May readily be stopp'd.

*Re-enter young CLIFFORD.*

Y. Cliff. But that my heart's on future  
mischiefs set,  
I would speak blasphemy ere hid you fly:  
But fly you must; uncurable discontent  
Reigns in the hearts of all our present parts.  
Away, for your relief! and we will live  
To see their day and them our fortune give:  
Away, my lord, away! *[Exit.]*

SCENE III. *Fields near St Alban's.*

*Alarum. Retreat. Enter YORK, RICHARD,  
WARWICK, and Soldiers, with drum and  
colours.*

York. Of Salisbury, who can report of him,  
That winter lion, who in rage forgets  
Aged contusions and all brush of time,  
And, like a gallant in the brow of youth,  
Repairs him with occasion! This happy day  
Is not itself, nor have we won one foot,  
If Salisbury be lost.

Rich. My noble father,  
Three times to-day I help him to his horse,  
Three times bestrid him; thrice I led him off,  
Persuaded him from any further act:  
But still, where danger was, still there I met  
him;  
And like rich hangings in a homely house,  
So was his will in his old feeble body.  
But, noble as he is, look where he comes.

*Enter SALISBURY.*

Sal. Now, by my sword, well hast thou  
fought to-day;

By the mass, so did we all. I thank you,  
Richard:

God knows how long it is I have to live;  
And it hath pleased him that three times  
to-day

You have defended me from imminent death.  
Well, lords, we have not got that which we  
have:

'Tis not enough our foes are this time fled,  
Being opposites of such repairing nature.

York. I know our safety is to follow them;  
For, as I hear, the king is fled to London,  
To call a present court of parliament.

Let us pursue him ere the writs go forth.  
What says Lord Warwick! shall we after them!

War. After them! nay, before them, if we  
can.

Now, by my faith, lords, 'twas a glorious day:  
Saint Alban's battle won by famous York

Shall be eternized in all age to come.  
Sound drums and trumpets, and to London all:  
And more such days as these to us befall!

*[Exit.]*



# THE THIRD PART OF KING HENRY VI

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

KING HENRY the Sixth.  
EDWARD, PRINCE OF WALES, his son.  
LEWIS XI. KING OF FRANCE.  
DUKE OF SOMERSET.  
DUKE OF EXETER.  
EARL OF OXFORD.  
EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND.  
EARL OF WESTMORELAND.  
LORD CLIFFORD.  
RICHARD PLANTAGENET, Duke of York.  
EDWARD, Earl of March, afterwards  
King Edward IV.  
EDMUND, Earl of Rutland,  
GEORGE, afterwards Duke of Clarence,  
RICHARD, afterwards Duke of Gloucester,  
DUKE OF NORFOLK.  
MARQUESS OF MONTAGUE.  
EARL OF WARWICK.  
EARL OF PEMBROKE.  
LORD HASTINGS.

LORD STAFFORD.  
SIR JOHN MORTIMER, } uncles to the Duke  
SIR HUGH MORTIMER, } of York.  
HENRY, Earl of Richmond, a youth.  
LORD RIVERS, brother to Lady Grey.  
SIR WILLIAM STANLEY.  
SIR JOHN MONTGOMERY.  
SIR JOHN SOMERVILLE.  
Tutor to Rutland. Mayor of York.  
Lieutenant of the Tower. A Nobleman.  
Two Keepers. A Huntsman.  
A Son that has killed his father.  
A Father that has killed his son.

QUEEN MARGARET.  
LADY GREY, afterwards Queen to Edward IV.  
BONA, sister to the French Queen.  
Soldiers, Attendants, Messengers,  
Watchmen, &c.  
SCENE : *England and France.*

## ACT I.

SCENE I. *London. The Parliament-house.*

*Alarm. Enter the DUKE OF YORK, EDWARD, RICHARD, NORFOLK, MONTAGUE, WARWICK, and Soldiers.*

*War.* I wonder how the king escaped our hands.

*York.* While we pursued the horsemen of the north,

He slyly stole away and left his men ;  
Whereat the great Lord of Northumberland,  
Whose warlike ears could never brook retreat,  
Cheer'd up the drooping army ; and himself,  
Lord Clifford and Lord Stafford, all abreast,  
Charged our main battle's front, and breaking in  
Were by the swords of common soldiers slain.

*Edw.* Lord Stafford's father, Duke of Buckingham,

Is either slain or wounded dangerously ;  
I cleft his beaver with a downright blow ;  
That this is true, father, behold his blood.

*Mont.* And, brother, here's the Earl of Wiltshire's blood,  
Whom I encounter'd as the battles join'd.

*Rich.* Speak thou for me and tell them what I did.

[*Throwing down the Duke of Somerset's head.*  
*York.* Richard hath best deserved of all my sons.

But is your grace dead, my Lord of Somerset ?  
*Nor.* Such hope have all the line of John of Gaunt !

*Rich.* Thus do I hope to shake King Henry's head.

*War.* And so do I. Victorious Prince of York,

Before I see thee seated in that throne  
Which now the house of Lancaster usurps,  
I vow by heaven these eyes shall never close.

This is the palace of the fearful king,  
And this the regal seat : possess it, York ;

For this is thine and not King Henry's heir.

*York.* Assist me, then, sweet Warwick, and I will ;

For hither we have broken in by force.

*Nor.* We'll all assist you ; he that shall die.

*York.* Thanks, gentle Norfolk : stay by me, my lords ;

And, soldiers, stay and lodge by me this night.

*War.* And when the king comes, offer him no violence.

Unless he seek to thrust you out perforce.

*York.* The queen this day here holds her parliament.

But little thinks we shall be of her council :

By words or blows here let us win our right.

*Rich.* Arm'd as we are, let's stay within this house.

*War.* The bloody parliament shall this be call'd.

Unless Plantagenet, Duke of York, be king, 40

And bashful Henry deposed, whose cowardice

Hath made us by-words to our enemies.

*York.* Then leave me not, my lords ; be resolute ;

I mean to take possession of my right.

*War.* Neither the king, nor he that loves him best,

The proudest he that holds up Lancaster,

Dares stir a wing, if Warwick shake his heels.

I'll plant Plantagenet, root him up who dares :

Resolve thee, Richard ; claim the English crown.

*Flourish.* Enter KING HENRY, CLIFFORD, NORTHUMBERLAND, WESTMORELAND, EXETER, and the rest.

*K. Hen.* My lords, look where the sturly rebel sits, 50

Even in the chair of state : belike he means,

Back'd by the power of Warwick, that false peer,

To aspire unto the crown and reign as king.

Earl of Northumberland, he slew thy father,

And thine, Lord Clifford ; and you both have

your revenge

On him, his sons, his favourites and his friends.

*North.* If I be not, heavens be revenged

on me !

*Clif.* The hope thereof makes Clifford mourn

in steel.

*West.* What, shall we suffer this ! let's

pluck him down :

My heart for anger burns ; I cannot brook it.

*K. Hen.* Be patient, gentle Earl of West-

moreland. 61

*Clif.* Patience is for postrooms, such as he :

He sits not at there, had your father lived.

My gracious lord, here in the parliament

Let us assail the family of York.

*North.* Well hast thou spoken, cousin : be

it so.

*K. Hen.* Ah, know you not the city favours

them.

And they have troops of soldiers at their beck ?

*West.* But when the duke is slain, they'll

quickly fly.

*K. Hen.* But be the thought of this from

Henry's heart, 70

Remember the members of the parliament-house !

Conceals of knaves, frowns, words and threats

Shall be the days that Henry means to use.

Descend thou, Duke of York, descend my throne,

And stand for grace and mercy at my feet ;

For I am thine.

*Exe.* For shame, come down : he made thee Duke of York.

*York.* 'Twas my inheritance, as the earldom was.

*Exe.* Thy father was a traitor to the crown.

*War.* Exeter, thou art a traitor to the crown.

In following this usurping Henry.

*Clif.* Whom should he follow but his natural

king ?

*War.* True, Clifford ; and that's Richard

Duke of York.

*K. Hen.* And shall I stand, and thou sit in

my throne ?

*York.* It must and shall be so : content

thyself.

*War.* Be Duke of Lancaster ; let him be

king.

*West.* He is both king and Duke of Lan-

caster ;

And that the Lord of Westmoreland shall

maintain.

*War.* And Warwick shall disprove it. You

forget

That we are those which chased you, from the

field

And slew your fathers, and with colours spread

March'd through the city to the palace gates.

*North.* Yes, Warwick, I remember it to my

grief ;

And, by his soul, thou and thy house shall

rue it.

*West.* Plantagenet, of thee and these thy

sons,

Thy kinsmen and thy friends, I'll have more

lives

Than drops of blood were in my father's veins.

*Clif.* Urge it no more ; lest that, instead of

words,

I send thee, Warwick, such a messenger

As shall revenge his death before I stir. 100

*War.* Poor Clifford ! how I scorn his word-

less threats !

*York.* Will you we show our title to the

crown ?

If not, our swords shall plead it in the field.

*K. Hen.* What title hast thou, traitor, to

the crown ?

Thy father was, as thou art, Duke of York ;

Thy grandfather, Roger Mortimer, Earl of

March :

I am the son of Henry the Fifth,

Who made the Dauphin and the French to

stoop

And seized upon their towns and provinces.

*War.* Talk not of France, with thou hast

lost it all. 110

*K. Hen.* The land protector lost it, and

not I :

When I was crown'd I was but nine

old.

*Rich.* You are old enough now, and yet,

methinks, you lose.

Father, tear the crown from this usurper's head.

*Edw.* Sweet father, do so ; set it on your

head.

*Mont.* Good brother, as thou lovest And

honourest arms,

Let's fight is out and not stand writhing thus.

*Rich.* Sound drums and trumpets, and the king will fly.

*York.* Sons, peace!

*K. Hen.* Peace, thou! and give King Henry leave to speak.

*War.* Plantagenet shall speak first: hear him, lords;

And be you silent and attentive too,  
For he that interrupts him shall not live.

*K. Hen.* Think'st thou that I will leave my kingly throne,

Wherein my grandsire and my father sat?

No: first shall war unpeople this my realm;

Ay, and their colours, often borne in France,

And now in England to our heart's great sorrow,

Shall be my winding-sheet. Why faint you, lords?

My title's good, and better far than his.

*War.* Prove it, Henry, and thou shalt be king.

*K. Hen.* Henry the Fourth by conquest got the crown.

*York.* 'Twas by rebellion against his king.

*K. Hen.* [Aside] I know not what to say;  
my title's weak.—

Tell me, may not a king adopt an heir?

*York.* What then?

*K. Hen.* An if he may, then am I lawful king;

For Richard, in the view of many lords,  
Design'd the crown to Henry the Fourth,

Whose heir my father was, and I am his.

*York.* He rose against him, being his sovereign,

And made him to resign his crown perforce.

*War.* Suppose, my lords, he did it unconstrain'd,

Think you 'twere prejudicial to his crown?

*Ecc.* No; for he could not so resign his crown

But that the next heir should succeed and reign.

*K. Hen.* Art thou against us, Duke of Exeter?

*Ecc.* His is the right, and therefore pardon me.

*York.* Why whisper you, my lords, and answer not?

*Ecc.* My conscience tells me he is lawful king.

*K. Hen.* [Aside] All will revolt from me, and turn to him.

*North.* Plantagenet, for all the claim thou lay'st,

think not that Henry shall be so deposed.

*War.* Deposed he shall be, in despite of all.

*North.* Thou art deceived: 'tis not thy southern power,

Of Essex, Norfolk, Suffolk, nor of Kent,  
Which makes thee thus presumptuous and proud,

Can set the duke up in despite of me.

*Clif.* King Henry, be thy title right or wrong,

ord Clifford vows to fight in thy defence: so  
may that ground gape and swallow me alive,  
ere I shall kneel to him that slew my father!

*K. Hen.* O Clifford, how thy words revive my heart!

*York.* Henry of Lancaster, resign thy crown.

What matter you, or what conspire you, lords?

*War.* Do right unto this princely Duke of York,

Or I will fill the house with armed men,  
And over the chair of state, where now he sits,

Write up his title with usurping blood.  
[He stamps with his foot, and the Soldiers show themselves.]

*K. Hen.* My Lord of Warwick, hear me but one word:

Let me for this my life-time reign as king.

*York.* Confirm the crown to me and to mine heirs,

And thou shalt reign in quiet while thou livest.

*King.* I am content: Richard Plantagenet, Enjoy the kingdom after my decease.

*Clif.* What wrong is this unto the prince your son?

*War.* What good is this to England and himself?

*West.* Base, fearful and despairing Henry!

*Clif.* How hast thou injured both thyself and us!

*West.* I cannot stay to hear these articles.

*North.* Nor I.

*Clif.* Come, cousin, let us tell the queen these news.

*West.* Farewell, faint-hearted and degenerate king,

In whose cold blood no spark of honour hides.

*North.* Be thou a prey unto the house of York,

And die in hands for this unmanly deed!

*Clif.* Indreadful war mayst thou overcome,  
Or live in peace abandon'd and despised!

[Exeunt North, Clif., and West.]

*War.* Turn this way, Henry, and regard them not.

*Ecc.* They seek revenge and therefore will not yield.

*K. Hen.* Ah, Exeter!

*War.* Why should you sigh, my lord?

*K. Hen.* Not for myself, Lord Warwick, but my son,

Whom I unnaturally shall disinheret.

But be it as it may: I here entail  
The crown to thee and to thine heirs for ever;

Conditionally, that here thou take an oath  
To cease this civil war, and, whilst I live,

To honour me as thy king and sovereign,  
And neither by treason nor hostility

To seek to put me down and reign thyself.

*York.* This oath I willingly take and will perform.

*War.* Long live King Henry! Plantagenet, embrace him.

*K. Hen.* And long live thou and thine thy forward sons!

*York.* Now York and Lancaster were reconcil'd.

*Ecc.* Accus'd be he that seeks to make them foes!

[Sennet. Here they come again.]

*York.* Farewell, my gracious lord; I'll to my castle.

*War.* And I'll keep London with my soldiers.

*Nor.* And I to Norfolk with my followers.

*Mont.* And I unto the sea from whence

I came.

[*Exeunt York and his Sons, Warwick, Norfolk, Montague, their Soldiers, and Attendants.*]

*K. Hen.* And I, with grief and sorrow, to the court. 210

*Enter QUEEN MARGARET and the PRINCE OF WALES.*

*Exc.* Here comes the queen, whose looks bewray her anger:

I'll steal away.

*K. Hen.* Exeter, so will I.

*Q. Mar.* Nay, go not from me; I will follow thee.

*K. Hen.* Be patient, gentle queen, and I will stay.

*Q. Mar.* Who can be patient in such extremes!

Ah, wretched man! would I had died a maid, And never seen thee, never borne thee son, Seeing thou hast proved so unnatural a father! Hath he deserved to lose his birthright thus? Hadst thou but loved him half so well as I, 220 Or felt that pain which I did for him once, Or nourish'd him as I did with my blood, Thou wouldst have left thy dearest heart-blood there.

Rather than have made that savage duke thine heir.

And disinherited thine only son.

*Prince.* Father, you cannot disinherit me: If you be king, why should not I succeed?

*K. Hen.* Pardon me, Margaret: pardon me, sweet son:

The Earl of Warwick and the duke enforced me.

*Q. Mar.* Enforced thee! art thou king, and wilt be forced? 230

I shame to hear thee speak. Ah, timorous wretch!

Thou hast undone thyself, thy son and me;

And given unto the house of York such head

As thou shalt reign but by their sufferance.

To entail him and his heirs unto the crown,

What is it, but to make thy sepulchre

And creep into it far before thy time?

Warwick is chancellor and the lord of Calais;

Stern Falconbridge commands the narrow seas;

The duke is made protector of the realm; 240

And yet shalt thou be safe? such safety finds

The trembling lamb environed with wolves.

Had I been there, which am a silly woman,

The soldiers should have torn'd me on their pikes

Before I would have granted to that act.

But thou prefer'st thy life before thine honour:

And seeing thou dost, I here divorce myself

Both from thy table, Henry, and thy bed,

Until that act of parliament be repeal'd

Whereby my son is disinherited. 250

The northern lords that have forsworn thy

oaths

Will follow mine, if once they see them spread;

And spread they shall be, to thy foul disgrace

And utter ruin of the house of York.

Thus do I leave thee. Come, son, let's away;

Our army is ready; come, we'll after them.

*K. Hen.* Stay, gentle Margaret, and hear me speak.

*Q. Mar.* Thou hast spoke too much already: get thee gone.

*K. Hen.* Gentle son Edward, thou wilt stay with me!

*Q. Mar.* Ay, to be murder'd by his enemies. *Prince.* When I return with victory from the field. 260

I'll see your grace: till then I'll follow her.

*Q. Mar.* Come, son, away; we may not linger thus.

[*Exeunt Queen Margaret and the Prince.*]

*K. Hen.* Poor queen! how love to me and to her son

Hath made her break out into terms of rage!

Revenge'd may she be on that hateful duke,

Whose haughty spirit, winged with desire,

Will cost my crown, and like an empty eagle

Tire on the flesh of me and of my son!

The loss of those three lords torments my heart: 270

I'll write unto them and entreat them fair.

Come, cousin, you shall be the messenger.

*Exc.* And I, I hope, shall reconcile them all. [*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE II. Sandal Castle.

*Enter RICHARD, EDWARD, and MONTAGUE.*

*Rich.* Brother, though I be youngest, give me leave.

*Edw.* No, I can better play the orator.

*Mont.* But I have reasons strong and forcible.

#### Enter the DUKE OF YORK.

*York.* Why, how now, sons and brother! at a strife!

What is your quarrel? how began it first?

*Edw.* No quarrel, but a slight contention.

*York.* About what?

*Rich.* About that which concerns your grace and us;

The crown of England, father, which is yours.

*York.* Mine, boy! not till King Henry be dead. 30

*Rich.* Your right depends not on his life or death.

*Edw.* Now you are heir, therefore enjoy it now:

By giving the house of Lancaster leave to breathe,

It will outrun you, father, in the end.

*York.* I took an oath that he should quietly reign.

*Edw.* But for a kingdom any oath may be broken:

I would break a thousand oaths to reign one year.

*Rich.* No; God forbid your grace should be forsworn.

*York.* I shall be, if I claim by open war.

*Rich.* I'll prove the contrary, if you'll hear me speak. 30

*York.* Thou canst not, son; it is impossible.

*Rich.* An oath is of no moment, being not took

Before a true and lawful magistrate,  
That hath authority over him that swears:  
Henry had none, but did usurp the place;  
Then, seeing 'twas he that made you to depose,  
Your oath, my lord, is vain and frivolous.  
Therefore, to arms! And, father, do but think  
How sweet a thing it is to wear a crown;  
Within whose circuit is Elysium 30  
And all that poets feign of bliss and joy.  
Why do we linger thus? I cannot rest  
Until the white rose that I wear be dyed  
Even in the lukewarm blood of Henry's heart.  
York. Richard, enough; I will be king, or  
die.

Brother, thou shalt to London presently,  
And whet on Warwick to this enterprise.  
Thou, Richard, shalt to the Duke of Norfolk,  
And tell him privily of our intent.  
You, Edward, shall unto my Lord Cobham, 40  
With whom the Kentishmen will willingly rise:  
In them I trust; for they are soldiers,  
Witty, courteous, liberal, full of spirit.  
While you are thus employ'd, what resteth  
more.  
But that I seek occasion how to rise,  
And yet the king not privy to my drift,  
Nor any of the house of Lancaster!

*Enter a Messenger.*

But, stay: what news? Why comest thou in  
such post?

Mess. The queen with all the northern earls  
and lords  
Intend here to besiege you in your castle: 50  
She is hard by with twenty thousand men;  
And therefore fortify your hold, my lord.

York. Ay, with my sword. What! think'st  
thou that we fear them?  
Edward and Richard, you shall stay with me;  
My brother Montague shall post to London:  
Let noble Warwick, Cobham, and the rest,  
Whom we have left protectors of the king,  
With powerful policy strengthen themselves,  
And trust not simple Henry nor his oaths.

Mont. Brother, I go; I'll win them, fear it  
not: 60  
And thus most humbly I do take my leave.

*[Exit.]*

*Enter SIR JOHN MORTIMER and SIR HUGH MORTIMER.*

York. Sir John and Sir Hugh Mortimer,  
mine uncles,  
You are come to Sandal in a happy hour;  
The army of the queen mean to besiege us.  
Sir John. She shall not need; we'll meet  
her in the field.

York. What, with five thousand men?  
Rich. Ay, with five hundred, father, for a  
need:  
A woman's general; what should we fear?

*[A march afar off.]*

Edw. I hear their drums: let's set our men  
in order,  
and issue forth and bid them battle straight.  
York. Five men to twenty! though the odds  
be great,  
I doubt not, uncle, of our victory. 71

Many a battle have I won in France,  
When as the enemy hath been ten to one:  
Why should I not now have the like success?  
*[Alarum. Excort.]*

SCENE III. *Field of battle betwix Sandal  
Castle and Wakefield.*

*Alarums. Enter RUTLAND and his Tutor.*

Rut. Ah, whither shall I fly to 'scape their  
hands?  
Ah, tutor, look where bloody Clifford comes!

*Enter CLIFFORD and Soldiers.*

Clif. Chaplain, away! thy priesthood saves  
thy life.  
As for the brat of this accursed duke,  
Whose father slew my father, he shall die.

Tut. And I, my lord, will bear him company.

Clif. Soldiers, away with him!

Tut. Ah, Clifford, murder not this innocent  
child,  
Lest thou be hated both of God and man!

*[Exit, dragged off by Soldiers.]*  
Clif. How now! is he dead already? or is it  
fear 20  
That makes him close his eyes? I'll open  
them.

Rut. So looks the pent-up lion o'er the  
wretch  
That trembles under his devouring paws;  
And so he walks, insulting o'er his prey,  
And so he comes, to rend his limbs asunder.

Ah, gentle Clifford, kill me with thy sword,  
And not with such a cruel threatening look.  
Sweet Clifford, hear me speak before I die.  
I am too mean a subject for thy wrath:  
Be thou revenged on men, and let me live. 30

Clif. In vain thou speak'st, poor boy; my  
father's blood

Hath stopp'd the passage where thy words  
should enter.

Rut. Then let my father's blood open it  
again:

He is a man, and, Clifford, cope with him.

Clif. Had I thy brethren here, their lives  
and thine

Were not revenge sufficient for me;  
No, if I digg'd up thy forefathers' graves,  
And hung their rotten coffins up in chains,  
It could not slake mine ire, nor ease my heart.  
The sight of any of the house of York  
is as a fury to torment my soul;  
And till I root out their accursed line  
And leave not one alive, I live in hell.  
Therefore— 30

*[Lifting his hand.]*  
Rut. O, let me pray before I take my death!  
To thee I pray; sweet Clifford, pity me!

Clif. Such pity as my rapier's point affords.  
Rut. I never did thee harm: why wilt thou  
slay me!

Clif. Thy father hath.

Rut. But 'twas ere I was born.  
Thou hast one son; for his sake pity me.  
Lest in revenge thereof, altho' God is just,  
He be as miserably slain as I.  
Ah, let me live in prison all my days;  
And w—

# THIRD PART OF KING HENRY VI

[ACT I

Then let me die, for now thou hast no cause.

*Clif.* No cause!

Thy father slew my father; therefore, die.

*But.* Di faciant laudis summa ait ista tunc!  
[Stabs him.  
[Dies.

*Clif.* Plantagenet! I come, Plantagenet!  
And this thy son's blood cleaving to my blade  
Shall rust upon my weapon, till thy blood,  
O'ergoal'd with this, do make me wipe off both.  
[Exit.

SCENE IV. Another part of the field.

*Alarum.* Enter RICHARD, Duke of York.

*York.* The army of the queen hath got the field:

My uncles both are slain in rescuing me;  
And all my followers to the eager foe  
Turn back and fly, like ships before the wind  
Or lambs pursued by hunger-starved wolves.  
My sons, God knows what hath bechanced them:

But this I know, they have demean'd themselves

Like men born to renown by life or death.  
Three times did Richard make a lane to me,  
And thrice cried 'Courage, father! fight it out!'

And full as oft came Edward to my side,  
With purple falchion, painted to the hilt  
In blood of those that had encounter'd him:  
And when the hardest warriors did retire,  
Richard cried 'Charge!' and gave no foot of ground!

And cried 'A crown, or else a glorious tomb!  
A sceptre, or an earthly sepulchre!'  
With this, we charged again: but, out, alas!  
We bodged again: as I have seen a swan

With bootless labour swim against the tide,  
And spend her strength with over-matching waves.  
[A short alarum within.

Ah, hark! the fatal followers do pursue;  
And I am faint and cannot fly their fury:  
And were I strong, I would not shun their fury:

The sands are number'd that make up my life;  
Here must I stay, and here my life must end.

Enter QUEEN MARGARET, CLIFFORD, NORTH-  
UMBERLAND, the young Prince, and Soldiers.  
Come, bloody Clifford, rough Northumberland,  
I dare your quenchless fury to more rage:  
I am your butt, and I slide your shot.

*North.* Yield to our mercy, proud Plan-  
tagenet.

*Clif.* As, to such mercy as his ruthless arm,  
With downright payment, shew'd unto my father.

Now Fleethon hath tumbled from his car,  
And made an evening at the noontide prick.

*York.* My ashes, as the phoenix, may bring forth

A bird that will revenge upon you all:  
And in that hope I throw mine eyes to heaven,  
—sing whatever you can afflict me with,  
—come you not! what! multitudes, and

*Clif.* So cowards fight when they can fly no further;

So doves do peck the falcon's piercing talons;  
So desperate thieves, all hopeless of their lives,  
Breathe out invectives against the officers.

*York.* O Clifford, but bethink thee once again,

And in thy thought o'er-run my former time;  
And, if thou canst for blushing, view this face,  
And bite thy tongue, that slander'd him with cowardice

Whose frown hath made thee faint and fly ere this!

*Clif.* I will not bandy with thee word for word,

But buckle with thee blows, twice two for one.

*Q. Mar.* Hold, valiant Clifford! for a thousand causes

I would prolong awhile the traitor's life.

Wrath makes him deaf: speak thou, Northumberland.

*North.* Hold, Clifford! do not honour him so much

To prick thy finger, though to wound his heart  
What valour were it, when a cur doth grin,  
For one to thrust his hand between his teeth,  
When he might spurn him with his foot away:  
It is war's prize to take all vantages;

And ten to one is no impeachment of valour.  
[They lay hands on York, who struggles.

*Clif.* Ay, ay, so strives the woodcock with the gin.

*North.* So doth the cony struggle in the net.

*York.* So triumph thieves upon their conquer'd booty;

So true men yield, with robbers as o'ermatch'd.

*North.* What would your grace have done unto him now?

*Q. Mar.* Brave warriors, Clifford and Northumberland,

Come, make him stand upon this molehill here.  
That raught at mountains with outstretched arms,

Yet parted but the shadow with his hand.  
What! was it you that would be England's king?

Was't you that revell'd in our parliament,  
And made a precinctment of your high descent!

Where are your mess of sons to back you now!  
The wanton Edward, and the lusty George?

And where's that valiant crook-back prodig,  
Dicky your boy, that with his grumbling voice

Was wont to cheer his dad in matins?

Or, with the rest, where is your darling Rutland?

Look, York: I stain'd this napkin with the blood

That valiant Clifford, with his rapier's point, so

Made issue from the bosom of the boy:  
And if thine eyes can water for his death,

I give thee this to dry thy cheeks withal.

Alas, poor York! but that I hate thee deadly,  
I should lament thy miserable state.

I prithee, grieve, to make me merry, York.

What, hath thy fiery heart so parch'd thine entrails

That not a tear can fall for Rutland's death!

Why art thou patient, man! thou shouldst be mad;

And I, to make thee mad, do mock thee thus.  
stamp, rave, and fret, that I may sing and  
dance.

You wouldst be fce'd, I see, to make me sport:  
York cannot speak, unless he wear a crown.  
A crown for York! and, lords, bow low to him:  
hold you his hands, whilst I do set it on.

[Putting a paper crown on his head.]

Ay, marry, sir, now looks he like a king!  
Ay, this is he that took King Henry's chair,  
And this is he was his adopted heir.  
But how is it that great Plantagenet  
s crown'd so soon, and broke his solemn oath?  
I bethink me, you should not be king:  
ill our King Henry had shook hands with  
death.

And will you pale your head in Henry's glory,  
and rob his temples of the diadem,  
Now in his life, against your holy oath?  
O, 'tis a fault too too unpardonable!  
With the crown; and, with the crown, his  
head;

d, whilst we breathe, take time to do him  
dead.

Clif. That is my office, for my father's sake.  
Q. Mar. Nay, stay; let's hear the orisons  
he makes.

York. She-wolf of France, but worse than  
wolves of France,

Those tongues more poisons than the adder's  
tooth!

How ill-becoming is it in thy sex  
to triumph, like an Amazonian trull,  
Upon their woes whom fortune captivates!  
But that thy face is, visard-like, unchanging,  
Made impudent with use of evil deeds,  
would assay, proud queen, to make thee blush.  
To tell thee whence thou camest, of whom  
derived,

Were shame enough to shame thee, wert thou  
not shameless.

My father bears the type of King of Naples,  
both the Sicils and Jerusalem,  
yet not so wealthy as an English yeoman.

With that poor monarch taught thee to insult?  
Needs not, nor is boots thee not, proud queen,  
Unless the adage must be verified,

That beggars mounted run their horse to death.  
His beauty that deth off make women proud;  
But, (God he knows, thy share thereof is small):

His virtue that doth make them most admired;  
The contrary doth make thee wonder'd at:  
His government that makes them seem devout;  
He want thereof makes thee abominable:

Thou art as opposite to every good  
as the Antipodes are unto us,  
Or as the south to the septentrion.

Thy tiger's heart wrapt in a woman's hide!  
How couldst thou drain the life-blood of the  
child,

To bid the father wipe his eyes withal,  
And yet be seen to bear a woman's face!

Women are soft, mild, pitiful and flexible;  
Thou stern, obdurate, flinty, rough, remorseless.  
Wilt thou me rage? why, now thou hast thy  
wish:

Couldst thou have me weep? why, now thou hast  
thy will:

For raging wind blows up incessant showers,  
And when the rage allays, the rain begins.  
These tears are my sweet Rutland's obsequies:  
And every drop cries vengeance for his death,  
Against thee, fell Clifford, and thee, false French-  
woman.

North. Beahrew me, but his passion moves  
me so

That hardly can I check my eyes from tears.

York. That face of his the hungry cannibals  
Would not have touch'd, would not have stain'd  
with blood:

But you are more inhuman, more inexorable,  
O, ten times more, than tigers of Hyroania.

See, ruthless queen, a hapless father's tears:  
This cloth thou dip'dst in blood of my sweet  
boy,

And I with tears do wash the blood away.  
Keep thou the napkin, and go boast of this:

And if thou tell'st the heavy story right,  
Upon my soul, the hearers will shed tears:

Yea even my foes will shed fast-falling tears,  
And say 'Alas, it was a piteous deed!'

There, take the crown, and, with the crown,  
my curse;

And in thy need such comfort come to thee  
As now I reap at thy too cruel hand!

Hard-hearted Clifford, take me from the world:  
My soul to heaven, my blood upon your heads!

North. Had he been slaughter-man to all  
my kin,

I should not fer my life but weep with him,  
To see how only sorrow gripes his soul.

Q. Mar. What, weeping-ripe, my Lord North-  
umberland?

Think but upon the wrong he did us all,  
And that will quickly dry thy melting tears.

Clif. Here's for my oath, here's for my  
father's death.

Q. Mar. And here's to right our gentle-  
hearted king.

York. Open Thy gate of mercy, gracious  
God!

My soul flies through these wounds to seek out  
Thea.

Q. Mar. Off with his head, and set it on  
York gates;

So York may overlook the town of York.

[Flourish. Exeunt.]

## ACT II.

SCENE I. A plain near Mortimer's Cross in  
Herefordshire.

A march. Enter EDWARD, RICHARD, and  
their power.

Edw. I wonder how our princely father  
'scaped,

Or whether he be 'scaped away or no:  
From Clifford's and Northumberland's pursuits:

Had he been ta'en, we should have heard the  
news;

Had he been slain, we should have heard the  
news;

Or had he 'scaped, methinks we should have  
heard

The happy tidings of his good escape.

How fares my brother? why is he so sad?

*Rich.* I cannot joy, until I be resolved  
Where our right valiant father is become. 10  
I saw him in the battle range about;  
And watch'd him how he singled Clifford forth.  
Methought he bore him in the thickest troop  
As doth a lion in a herd of neat;  
Or as a bear, encompass'd round with dogs,  
Who having pinch'd a few and made them cry,  
The rest stand all aloof, and bark at him.  
So fared our father with his enemies;  
So fled his enemies my warlike father:  
Methinks 'tis prize enough to be his son. 20  
See how the morning opens her golden gates,  
And takes her farewell of the glorious sun!  
How well resembles it the prime of youth,  
Trim'd like a younker prancing to his love!

*Edw.* Dazzle mine eyes, or do I see three  
suns!

*Rich.* Three glorious suns, each one a perfect  
sun;

Not separated with the racking clouds,  
But sever'd in a pale clear-shining sky.  
See, see! they join, embrace, and seem to kiss,  
As if they vow'd some league inviolable: 30  
Now are they but one lamp, one light, one sun.  
In this the heaven figures some event.

*Edw.* 'Tis wondrous strange, the like yet  
never heard of.

I think it cites us, brother, to the field,  
That we, the sons of brave Plantagenet,  
Each one already blazing by our meeds,  
Should notwithstanding join our lights together  
And over-shine the earth as this the world.  
Whate'er it bodes, henceforward will I bear  
Upon my target three fair-shining suns. 40

*Rich.* Nay, bear three daughters: by your  
leave I speak it,

You love the breeder better than the male.

*Enter a Messenger.*

But what art thou, whose heavy looks foretell  
Some dreadful story hanging on thy tongue?

*Mess.* Ah, one that was a woful looker-on  
When as the noble Duke of York was slain,  
Your princely father and my loving lord!

*Edw.* O, speak no more, for I have heard too  
much.

*Rich.* Say how he died, for I will hear it all.

*Mess.* Environed he was with many foes, so  
And stood against them, as the hope of Troy  
Against the Greeks that would have enter'd  
Troy.

But Hercules himself must yield to odds;  
And many strokes, though with a little axe,  
Hew down and fell the hardest-timber'd oak.  
By many hands your father was subdued;  
But only slaughter'd by the ireful arm  
Of unrelenting Clifford and the queen.  
Who crown'd the gracious duke in high despite,  
Laugh'd in his face; and when with grief he  
wept, 60

The ruthless queen gave him to dry his cheeks  
In skin steeped in the harmless blood  
Of sweet young Rutland, by rough Clifford  
slain:

And many scorns, many foul taunts,  
He took on his head, and on the gates of York

They set the same; and there it doth remain,  
The saddest spectacle that e'er I view'd.

*Edw.* Sweet Duke of York, our prop to lean  
upon,

Now thou art gone, we have no staff, no stay,  
O Clifford, botcherous Clifford! thou hast slain  
The flower of Europe for his chivalry,  
And treacherously hast thou vanquish'd him,  
For hand to hand he would have vanquish'd  
thee.

Now my soul's palace is become a  
Ah, would she break from hence, that this  
body

Might in the ground be closed up in rest!  
For never henceforth shall I joy again,  
Never, O never, shall I see more joy!

*Rich.* I cannot weep; for all my body's  
moisture

Scarce serves to quench my furnace-burning  
heart:

Nor can my tongue unload my heart's  
burthen;

For selfsame wind that I should speak withal  
Is kindling coals that fires all my breast,  
And burns me up with flames that tears  
quench.

To weep is to make less the depth of grief:  
Tears then for babes; blows and revenge for me!  
Richard, I bear thy name; I'll venge thy  
Or die renowned by attempting it.

*Edw.* His name that valiant duke hath  
with thee;

His dukedom and his chair with me is left.

*Rich.* Nay, if thou be that princely eagle-  
bird,

Show thy descent by gazing 'gainst the sun:  
For chair and dukedom, throne and kingdom  
say;

Either that is thine, or else thou wert not his.

*March. Enter WARWICK, MARQUESS OF  
MONTAGUE, and their army.*

*War.* How now, fair lords! What fare's  
news abroad?

*Rich.* Great Lord of Warwick, if we  
recount

Our baleful news, and at each word's deliver  
Stab poniards in our flesh till all were told,  
The words would add more anguish than  
wounds.

O valiant lord, the Duke of York is slain!

*Edw.* O Warwick, Warwick! that Plantagenet,

Which held thee dearly as his soul's part,

Is by the stern Lord Clifford done to death.

*War.* Ten days ago I drown'd these news  
in tears;

And now, to add more measure to your weal  
I come to tell you things with then befall'n.

After the bloody fray at Wakefield fought,  
Where your brave father breathed his  
gasp,

Tidings, as swiftly as the wind could run,  
Were brought me of your loss and his depart.

I, then in London, keeper of the king,  
Must'd my golden shepherd's flock of  
And very well appointed, as I thought,



h'd toward Saint Alban's to intercept the queen,  
 aring the king in my behalf along;  
 or by my scouts I was advertised  
 hat she was coming with a full intent  
 o dash our late decree in parliament  
 ouching King Henry's oath and your suc-  
 cession.

short tale to make, we at Saint Alban's met,  
 ur battles join'd, and both sides fiercely  
 fought:

ut whether 'twas the coldness of the king,  
 ho look'd full gently on his warlike queen,  
 hat robb'd my soldiers of their heated spleen;  
 r whether 'twas report of her success;

r more than common fear of Clifford's rigour,  
 Who thunders to his captives blood and death,  
 cannot judge: but, to conclude with truth,  
 Their weapons like to lightning came and went;  
 Our soldiers, like the night-owl's lazy flight,  
 r like an idle thresher with a flail,

Fell gently down, as if they struck their friends.  
 I cheer'd them up with justice of our cause,  
 With promise of high pay and great rewards:

ut all in vain; they had no heart to fight,  
 d we in them no hope to win the day;  
 o that we fled; the king unto the queen;

ord George your brother, Norfolk and myself,  
 n haste, post-haste, are come to join with you;  
 or in the marches here we heard you were,  
 taking another head to fight again.

*Edw.* Where is the Duke of Norfolk, gentle  
 Warwick?

and when came George from Burgundy to  
 England?

*War.* Some six miles off the duke is with  
 the soldiers;

and for your brother, he was lately sent  
 n your kind aunt, Duchess of Burgundy,  
 ith aid of soldiers to this needful war.

*Rich.* 'Twas odds, belike, when valiant War-  
 wick fled:

have I heard his praises in pursuit,  
 ne'er till now his scandal of retire.

*War.* Nor now my scandal, Richard, dost  
 thou hear:

x thou shalt know this strong right hand  
 of mine

un pluck the diadem from faint Henry's head,  
 nd wring the awful sceptre from his fist,

ere he as famous and as bold in war  
 s he is famed for mildness, peace, and prayer.

*Rich.* I know it well, Lord Warwick; blame  
 me not:

is love I bear thy glories makes me speak.  
 ut in this troublous time what's to be done?

hall we go throw away our coats of steel, 150  
 nd wrap our bodies in black mourning gowns,  
 mbering our Avo-Maries with our beads?

r shall we on the helmets of our foes  
 ell our devotion with revengeful arms?

for the last, say ay, and to it, lords.

*War.* Why, therefore Warwick came to seek  
 you out;

nd therefore comes my brother Montague.

Send me, lords. The proud insulting queen,  
 ith Clifford and the taught Northumberland,

nd of their feather many more proud birds,

Have wrought the easy-melting king like wax.

He swore consent to your succession,  
 His oath enrolled in the parliament;

And now to London all the crew are gone,  
 To frustrate both his oath and what beside

May make against the house of Lancaster.  
 Their power, I think, is thirty thousand strong:

Now, if the help of Norfolk and myself,  
 With all the friends that thou, brave Earl of

March, 179  
 Amongst the loving Welshmen canst procure,

Will but amount to five and twenty thousand,  
 Why, Via! to London will we march amain,

And once again bestride our foaming steeds,  
 And once again cry 'Charge upon our foes!'

But never once again turn back and fly.

*Rich.* Ay, now methinks I hear great War-  
 wick speak:

Ne'er may he live to see a sunshine day,  
 That cries 'Retire,' if Warwick bid him stay.

*Edw.* Lord Warwick, on thy shoulder will I  
 lean;

And when thou fail'st—as God forbid the  
 hour!—

Must Edward fall, which perill heaven forend! 190

*War.* No longer Earl of March, but Duke  
 of York:

The next degree is England's royal throne;  
 For King of England shalt thou be proclaim'd

In every borough as we pass along;  
 And he that throws not up his cap for joy

Shall for the fault make forfeit of his head.  
 King Edward, valiant Richard, Montague,

Stay we no longer, dreaming of renown,  
 But sound the trumpets, and about our task.

*Rich.* Then, Clifford, were thy heart as hard  
 as steel, 200

As thou hast shown it flinty by thy deeds,  
 I come to pierce it, or to give thee mine.

*Edw.* Then strike up drums: God and Saint  
 George for us!

*Enter a Messenger.*

*War.* How now! what news?

*Mess.* The Duke of Norfolk sends you word  
 by me,

The queen is coming with a puissant host;  
 And craves your company for speedy counsel.

*War.* Why then it sorts, brave warriors,  
 let's away. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II. Before York.

*Flourish.* Enter KING HENRY, QUEEN MAR-  
 GARET, the PRINCE OF WALES, CLIFFORD,  
 and NORTHUMBERLAND, with drums and  
 trumpets.

*Q. Mar.* Welcome, my lord, to this brave  
 town of York.

Yonder's the head of that arch-enemy  
 That sought to be encompass'd with your

crown:

Doth not the object cheer your heart, my lord?

*R. Hen.* Ay, as the rocks cheer them that  
 fear their wreck:

To see this sight, it irks my very soul.  
 Withhold revenge, dear God! 'tis not my fault,  
 Nor willingly have I infringed my vow.

*Clif.* My gracious liege, this too much lenity  
And harmful pity must be laid aside.

To whom do lions cast their gentle looks?  
Not to the beast that would usurp their den.  
Whose hand is that the forest bear doth lick?  
Not his that spoils her young before her face.  
Who escapes the lurking serpent's mortal sting?  
Not he that sets his foot upon her back.  
The smallest worm will turn being trodden on,  
And doves will peck in safeguard of their  
brood.

Ambitious York did level at thy crown,  
Thou smiling while he knit his angry brows:  
He, but a duke, would have his son a king,  
And raise his issue, like a loving sire;  
Thou, being a king, blest with a goodly son,  
Didst yield consent to disinherit him,  
Which argued thee a most unloving father.  
Unreasonable creatures feed their young;  
And though man's face be fearful to their eyes,  
Yet, in protection of their tender ones,  
Who hath not seen them, even with those wings  
Which sometime they have used with fearful  
flight,

Make war with him that climb'd unto their  
nest,  
Offering their own lives in their young's defence?  
For shame, my liege, make them your prece-  
dent!

Were it not pity that this goodly boy  
Should lose his birthright by his father's fault,  
And long hereafter say unto his child,  
'What my great-grandfather and grandsire got  
My careless father fondly gave away'?

Ah, what a shame were this! Look on the  
boy;  
And let his manly face, which promiseth  
Successful fortune, steel thy melting heart  
To hold thine own and leave thine own with  
him.

*K. Hen.* Full well hath Clifford play'd the  
orator,

Inferring arguments of mighty force.  
But, Clifford, tell me, didst thou never hear  
That things ill-got had ever bad success?  
And happy always was it for that son  
Whose father for his hoarding went to hell?  
I'll leave my son my virtuous deeds behind;  
And would my father had left me no more!  
For all the rest is held at such a rate  
As brings a thousand-fold more care to keep  
Than in possession any jot of pleasure.

Ah, cousin York! would thy best friends did  
know

How it doth grieve me that thy head is here!

*Q. Mar.* My lord, cheer up your spirits: our  
foes are nigh,

And this soft courage makes your followers  
faint.

You promised knighthood to our forward son:  
Unsheathe your sword, and dub him presently.  
Edward, kneel down.

*K. Hen.* Edward Plantagenet, arise a knight;  
And learn this lesson, draw thy sword in right.

*Prince.* My gracious father, by your kindly  
leave,

I'll fight it as apparent to the crown,  
And, if I cannot, I'll give it to the death.

*Clif.* Why, that is spoken like a tower  
prince.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Royal commanders, be in readiness  
For with a band of thirty thousand men  
Comes Warwick, backing of the Duke of York  
And in the towns, as they do march along,  
Proclaims him king, and many fly to him:  
Darraign your battle, for they are at hand.

*Clif.* I would your highness would depart  
the field:  
The queen hath best success when you  
are absent.

*Q. Mar.* Ay, good my lord, and leave us  
our fortune.

*K. Hen.* Why, that's my fortune too; th-  
fore I'll stay.

*North.* Be it with resolution then to fight.

*Prince.* My royal father, cheer these nob-  
le lords  
And hearten those that fight in your defence:  
Unsheathe your sword, good father; cry  
George!

*March.* *Enter EDWARD, GEORGE, RICHARD,  
WARWICK, NORFOLK, MONTAGUE, and  
Soldiers.*

*Edm.* Now, perjured Henry! wilt thou  
for grace,

And set thy diadem upon my head:  
Or hide the mortal fortune of the field?

*Q. Mar.* Go, rate thy minions, proud man!  
ing boy!

Becomes it thee to be thus hold in terms  
Before thy sovereign and thy lawful king?

*Edm.* I am his king, and he should bow his  
knee;

I was adopted heir by his consent:  
Since when, his oath is broke; for, as I hear,

You, that are king, though he do wear the  
crown,

Have caused him, by new act of parliament,  
To blot out me, and put his own son in.

*Clif.* And reason too:

Who should succeed the father but the son?

*Rich.* Are you there, butcher? O, I cannot  
speak!

*Clif.* Ay, crook-back, here I stand to answer  
thee,

Or any less the proudest of thy sort.

*Rich.* 'Twas you that kill'd young Rut-  
land was it not?

*Clif.* Ay, and old York, and yet not with-  
out cause.

*Rich.* For God's sake, lords, give signal  
the fight.

*War.* What say'st thou, Henry, wilt  
yield the crown?

*Q. Mar.* Why, how now, long-tongued War-  
wick! dare you speak?

When you and I met at Saint Alban's last,  
Your legs did better service than your hands.

*War.* Then 'twas my turn to fly, and  
'tis thine.

*Clif.* You said so much before, and yet  
fled.

*War.* 'Twas not your valour, Clifford, that  
me thence.

*North.* No, nor your manhood that durst make you stay.

*Rich.* Northumberland, I hold thee reverently.

Speak off the parley; for scarce I can refrain  
the execution of my big-sworn heart.

*Rich.* Upon that Clifford, that cruel child-killer.

*Rich.* I slew thy father, call'st thou him a child?

*Rich.* Ay, like a dastard and a treacherous coward.

As thou didst kill our tender brother Rutland;  
but ere sunset I'll make thee curse the deed.

*K. Hen.* Have done with words, my lords,  
and hear me speak.

*Q. Mar.* Defy them then, or else hold close thy lips.

*K. Hen.* I prithee, give no limits to my tongue:

am a king, and privileged to speak.

*Rich.* My liege, the wound that bred this meeting here

cannot be cured by words; therefore be still.

*Rich.* Then, executioner, unsheathe thy sword:

by him that made us all, I am resolved  
that Clifford's manhood lies upon his tongue.

*Edw.* Say, Henry, shall I have my right,  
or no?

As thousand men have broke their fasts to-day,  
that ne'er shall dine unless thou yield the crown.

*War.* If thou deny, their blood upon thy head;

For York in justice puts his armour on.

*Prince.* If that be right which Warwick says is right,

ere is no wrong, but every thing is right.

*Rich.* Whoever got thee, there thy mother stands;

as well I wot, thou hast thy mother's tongue.

*Q. Mar.* But thou art neither like thy sire nor dam;

as like a foul mis-shapen stigmatic,  
mark'd by the destinies to be avoided,

as venom toads, or lizards' dreadful stings.

*Rich.* Iron of Naples hid with English gilt,  
whose father bears the title of a king,—

as if a channel should be call'd the sea,—

honest thou not, knowing whence thou art  
extrah't,

as let thy tongue detect thy base-born heart?

*Edw.* A wisp of straw were worth a thousand crowns.

as make this shameless callet know herself.

as Helen of Greece was fairer far than thou,

although thy husband may be Menelaus;

and ne'er was Agamemnon's brother wrong'd  
by that false woman, as this king by thee.

as father revell'd in the heart of France,

as tamed the king, and made the dauphin  
sweep;

and had he match'd according to his state,  
he might have kept that glory to this day;

but when he took a beggar to his bed,  
and graced thy poor sire with his bridal-day,  
when then that sunshine brew'd a shower  
him,

That wash'd his father's fortunes forth of France.

And heap'd sedition on his crown at home.  
For what hath broach'd this tumult but thy pride?

Hadst thou been meek, our title still had slept;  
And we, in pity of the gentle king,

Had slipp'd our claim until another age.

*Geo.* But when we saw our sunshine made  
thy spring,

And that thy summer bred us no increase,  
We set the axe to thy usurping root;

And though the edge hath something hit ourselves,

Yet, know thou, since we have begun to strike,  
We'll never leave till we have hewn thee down.

Or bathed thy growing with our heated bloods.

*Edw.* And, in this resolution, I defy thee;  
Not willing any longer conference,

Since thou deniest the gentle king to speak.

Sound trumpets! let our bloody colours wave!

And either victory, or else a grave.

*Q. Mar.* Stay, Edward.

*Edw.* No, wrangling woman, we'll no longer stay:

These words will cost ten thousand lives this day.

[Exit]

SCENE III. A field of battle between Towton  
and Saxton, in Yorkshire.

*Alarum.* Excursions. Enter WARWICK.

*War.* Forspent with toll, as runness with a race,

I lay me down a little while to breathe;

For strokes received, and many blows repaid,  
Have robb'd my strong-knit sinews of their strength.

And spite of spite needs must I rest awhile.

Enter EDWARD, running.

*Edw.* Smile, gentle heaven! or strike, ungentle death!

For this world frowns, and Edward's sun is clouded.

*War.* How now, my lord! what hap! what hope of good!

Enter GEORGE.

*Geo.* Our hap is loss, our hope but sad despair;

Our ranks are broke, and ruin follows us:

What counsel give you? I whither shall we fly?

*Edw.* Bootless is flight, they follow us with wings;

And weak we are and cannot shun pursuit.

Enter RICHARD.

*Rich.* Ah, Warwick, why hast thou withdrawn thyself?

Thy brother's blood the thirsty earth hath drunk,  
Broach'd with the steely point of Clifford's lance;

And in the very pangs of death he cried,  
Like to a dismal clangor heard from far,

Warwick, revenge! brother, revenge! death!  
So, underneath the belly of their steeds,

That stain'd their fetlocks in his smoking blood,  
The noble gentleman gave up the ghost.

*War.* Then let the earth be drunken with  
our blood:

I'll kill my horse, because I will not fly,  
Why stand we like soft-hearted women here,  
Wailing our losses, whiles the foe doth rage;  
And look upon, as if the tragedy  
Were play'd in jest by counterfeiting actors!  
Here on my knee I vow to God above,  
I'll never pause again, never stand still, 30  
Till either death hath closed these eyes of mine  
Or fortune given me measure of revenge.

*Edw.* O Warwick, I do bend my knee with  
thine;

And in this vow do chain my soul to thine!  
And, ere my knee rise from the earth's cold  
face,

I throw my hands, mine eyes, my heart to thee,  
Thou setter up and plucker down of kings,  
Beseeching thee, if with thy will it stands  
That to my foes this body must be prey,  
Yet that thy brazen gates of heaven may ope,  
And give sweet passage to my sinful soul! 41  
Now, lords, take leave until we meet again,  
Where'er it be, in heaven or in earth.

*Rich.* Brother, give me thy hand; and,  
gentle Warwick,

Let me embrace thee in my weary arms:  
I, that did never weep, now melt with woe  
That winter should cut off our spring-time so.

*War.* Away, away! Once more, sweet lords,  
farewell.

*Geo.* Yet let us all together to our troops,  
And give them leave to fly that will not stay;  
And call them pillars that will stand to us; 51  
And, if we thrive, promise them such rewards  
As victors wear at the Olympian games:  
This may plant courage in their quailing breasts;  
For yet is hope of life and victory.  
Forslow no longer, make we hence again.

[*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE IV. Another part of the field.

*Excursions.* Enter RICHARD and CLIFFORD.

*Rich.* Now, Clifford, I have singled thee  
alone;

Suppose this arm is for the Duke of York,  
And this for Rutland; both bound to revenge,  
Wert thou environ'd with a brazen wall.

*Clif.* Now, Richard, I am with thee here  
alone:

This is the hand that stabb'd thy father York;  
And this the hand that slew thy brother  
Rutland;

And here's the heart that triumphs in their  
death

And cheers these hands that slew thy sire and  
brother

To execute the like upon thyself; 20  
And so, have at thee!

[*A cry fight. Warwick comes; Clifford flies.*]  
*Rich.* Nay, Warwick, single out some other

For will hunt this wolf to death.

[*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE V. Another part of the field.

*Alarum.* Enter KING HENRY alone.

*King.* This battle fares like to the morning's  
war,

When dying clouds contend with growing light,  
What time the shepherd, blowing of his nails,  
Can neither call it perfect day nor night.  
Now ways it this way, like a mighty sea  
Forced by the tide to combat with the wind;  
Now ways it that way, like the selfsame  
Forced to retire by fury of the wind:  
Sometime the flood prevails, and then the  
wind;

Now one the better, then another best; 10  
Both tugging to be victors, breast to breast,  
Yet neither conqueror nor conquered;  
So is the equal poise of this fell war.

Here on this molehill will I sit me down.  
To whom God will, there be the victory!  
For Margaret my queen, and Clifford too,  
Have chid me from the battle; swearing both  
They prosper best of all when I am thence.  
Would I were dead! if God's good will were so;  
For what is in this world but grief and woe! 20  
O God! methinks it were a happy life,  
To be no better than a homely swain;  
To sit upon a hill, as I do now,

To carve out dials quaintly, point by point,  
Thereby to see the minutes how they run,  
How many make the hour full complete;  
How many hours bring about the day;  
How many days will finish up the year;  
How many years a mortal man may live.

When this is known, then to divide the times:  
So many hours must I tend my flock; 31  
So many hours must I take my rest;  
So many hours must I contemplate;  
So many hours must I sport myself;  
So many days my ewes have been with young;  
So many weeks ere the poor fools will ean;  
So many years ere I shall shear the fleece;  
So minutes, hours, days, months, and years,  
Pass'd over to the end they were created,  
Would bring white hairs unto a quiet grave. 40  
Ah, what a life were this! how sweet! how  
lovely!

Gives not the hawthorn-bush a sweeter shade  
To shepherds looking on their silly sheep,  
Than doth a rich embroider'd canopy  
To kings that fear their subjects' treachery?  
O, yes, it doth; a thousand-fold it doth.  
And to conclude, the shepherd's homely curds,  
His cold thin drink out of his leather bottle,  
His wonted sleep under a fresh tree's shade,  
All which secure and sweetly he enjoys,  
Is far beyond a prince's delicate,  
His viands sparkling in a golden cup,  
His body couched in a curious bed,  
When care, mistrust, and treason wait on 50

*Alarum.* Enter a Son that has killed his  
father, dragging in the dead body.

*Son.* Ill blows the wind that profits! 1  
This man, whom hand to hand I  
May be possessed with some store of crowns;  
And I, that haply take them from him now,

say yet ere night yield both my life and them  
 to some man else, as this dead man doth me. 60  
 Who's this? O God! it is my father's face,  
 Whom in this conflict I unware have kill'd.  
 ) heavy times, begetting such events!  
 From London by the king was I press'd forth;  
 My father, being the Earl of Warwick's man,  
 Came on the part of York, press'd by his master;  
 And I, who at his hands received my life,  
 Have by my hands of life bereaved him.  
 Pardon me, God, I knew not what I did!  
 And pardon, father, for I knew not thee! 70  
 My tears shall wipe away these bloody marks;  
 And no more words till they have flow'd their  
 fill.

*K. Hen.* O piteous spectacle! O bloody  
 times!  
 Whiles lions war and battle for their dens,  
 Poor harmless lambs abide their enmity.  
 Weep, wretched man, I'll aid thee tear for  
 tear;  
 And let our hearts and eyes, like civil war,  
 Be blind with tears, and break o'ercharged with  
 grief.

*Enter a Father that has killed his son,  
 bringing in the body.*

*Fath.* Thou that so stoutly hast resisted me,  
 Give me thy gold, if thou hast any gold; 80  
 For I have bought it with an hundred blows.  
 But let me see: is this our foeman's face?  
 Ah, no, no, no, it is mine only son!  
 Ah, boy, if any life be left in thee,  
 Throw up thine eye! see, see what showers  
 arise,  
 Blown with the windy tempest of my heart,  
 Upon thy wounds, that kill mine eye and heart!  
 Ah, pity, God, this miserable age!  
 What stratagems, how fell, how butcherly,  
 Erroneous, mutinous and unnatural, 90  
 This deadly quarrel daily doth beget!  
 O boy, thy father gave thee life too soon,  
 And hath bereft thee of thy life too late!

*K. Hen.* Woe above woe! grief more than  
 common grief!  
 that my death would stay these ruthless  
 deeds!  
 . pity, pity, gentle heaven, pity!  
 . red rose and the white are on his face,  
 . be fatal colours of our striving houses:  
 . he one his purple blood right well resembles;  
 . be other his pale cheeks, methinks, presenteth:  
 . either one rose, and let the other flourish; 101  
 I you contend, a thousand lives must wither.

*Son.* How will my mother for a father's  
 death

take on with me and ne'er be satisfied!

*Fath.* How will my wife for slaughter of  
 my son

shed seas of tears and ne'er be satisfied!

*K. Hen.* How will the country for these  
 woful chances

think the king and not be satisfied!

*Son.* Was ever son so rued a father's death?

*Fath.* Was ever father so bemoan'd his son?

*K. Hen.* Was ever king so grieved for sub-  
 jects' woe?

is your sorrow; mine ten times so much.

*Son.* I'll bear thee hence, where I may weep  
 my fill. *[Exit with the body.]*

*Fath.* These arms of mine shall be thy  
 winding-sheet;

My heart, sweet boy, shall be thy sepulchre,  
 For from my heart thine image ne'er shall go;  
 My sighing breast shall be thy funeral bell;  
 And so obsequious will thy father be,  
 † Even for the loss of thee, having no more,  
 As Priam was for all his valiant sons. 120  
 I'll bear thee hence; and let them fight that  
 will,

For I have murdered where I should not kill.  
*[Exit with the body.]*

*K. Hen.* Sad-hearted men, much overgone  
 with care,

Here sits a king more woful than you are.

*Alarums: excursions. Enter QUEEN MARGA-  
 RET, the PRINCE, and EXETER.*

*Prince.* Fly, father, fly! for all your friends  
 are fled,

And Warwick rages like a chafed bull:  
 Away! for death doth hold us in pursuit.

*Q. Mar.* Mount you, my lord; towards Ber-  
 wick post again:

Edward and Richard, like a brace of greyhounds  
 Having the fearful flying hare in sight, 130

With fiery eyes sparkling for very wrath,  
 And bloody steel grasp'd in their ireful hands,

Are at our backs; and therefore hence again.  
*Ere.* Away! for vengeance comes along with  
 them:

Nay, stay not to expostulate, make speed;  
 Or else come after: I'll away before.

*K. Hen.* Nay, take me with thee, good sweet  
 Exeter:

Not that I fear to stay, but love to go  
 Whither the queen intends. Forward; away!

*[Exeunt.]*

#### SCENE VI. Another part of the field.

*A loud alarm. Enter CLIFFORD, wounded.*

*Clif.* Here burns my candle out; ay, here it  
 dies,

Which, whiles it lasted, gave King Henry light.  
 O Lancaster, I fear thy overthrow

More than my body's parting with my soul!  
 My love and fear giued many friends to thee;

And, now I fall, thy tough commixture melts.  
 Impairing Henry, strengthening misproud

York,  
 The common people swarm like summer flies;

And whither fly the gnats but to the sun?  
 And who shines now but Henry's enemies? 20

(1) Phoebus, hadst thou never given consent  
 That Phaëthon should check thy fiery steeds,

Thy burning car never had scorched the earth!  
 And, Henry, hadst thou sway'd as kings should

do,

Or as thy father and his father did,  
 Giving no ground unto the house of York,

They never then had sprung like summer flies;  
 I and ten thousand in this tickle realm

Had left no mourning widows for our death;  
 And thou this day hadst kept thy chair in peace.

For what doth clerish weeds but gentle air? as

And what makes robbers bold but too much lenity!

Bootless are plaints, and cureless are my wounds;

No way to fly, nor strength to hold out flight:

The foe is merciless, and will not pity;

For at their hands I have deserved no pity.

The air hath got into my deadly wounds,

And much effuse of blood doth make me faint.

Come, York and Richard, Warwick and the

rest;

I stabb'd your fathers' bosoms, split my breast.

[He faints.]

*Alarm and retreat. Enter EDWARD, GEORGE, RICHARD, MONTAGUE, WARWICK, and Soldiers.*

*Edw.* Now breathe we, lords: good fortune bids us pause,

And smooth the frowns of war with peaceful looks.

Some troops pursue the bloody-minded queen,

That led calm Henry, though he were a king,

As doth a sail, fill'd with a fretting gust,

Command an arposy to stem the waves.

But think you, lords, that Clifford fled with them?

*War.* No, 'tis impossible he should escape;

For, though before his face I speak the words,

Your brother Richard mark'd him for the grave:

And wheresoe'er he is, he's surely dead.

[Clifford groans, and dies.]

*Edw.* Whose soul is that which takes her heavy leave?

*Rich.* A deadly groan, like life and death's departing.

*Edw.* See who it is: and, now the battle's ended,

If friend or foe, let him be gently used.

*Rich.* Revoke that doom of mercy, for 'tis Clifford:

Who not contented that he lop'd the branch

In hewing Rutland when his leaves put forth,

But set his murdering knife unto the root

From whence that tender spray did sweetly

spring.

I mean our princely father, Duke of York.

*War.* From off the gates of York fetch down

the head,

Your father's head, which Clifford placed there;

Instead whereof let this supply the room:

Measure for measure must be answered.

*Edw.* Bring forth that fatal screech-owl to

our house,

That nothing sung but death to us and ours:

Now death shall stop his dismal threatening

sound.

And his ill-boding tongue no more shall speak.

*War.* I think his understanding is bereft.

Speak, Clifford, dost thou know who speaks to thee?

Dark cloudy death o'er shades his beams of life,

And he nor sees nor hears us what we say.

*Rich.* O, would he did! and so perhaps he

doth:

Tell him his policy to counterfeit,

Because he would avoid such bitter taunts

Which in the time of death he gave our father.

*Geo.* If so thou think'st, vex him with eager words.

*Rich.* Clifford, ask mercy and obtain no grace.

*Edw.* Clifford, repent in bootless penitence.

*War.* Clifford, devise excuses for thy faults.

*Geo.* While we devise fell tortures for thy faults.

*Rich.* Thou didst love York, and I am son

to York.

*Edw.* Thou pitied'st Rutland; I will pity thee.

*Geo.* Where's thy Captain Margaret, to fence

you now?

*War.* They mock thee, Clifford: swear:

thou wast wont.

*Rich.* What, not an oath? nay, then the

world goes hard

When Clifford cannot spare his friends an oath;

I know by that he's dead; and, by my soul,

If this right hand would buy two hours' life, so

That I in all despite might rail at him,

This hand should chop it off, and with the

issuing blood

Stifle the villain whose unstanched thirst

York and young Rutland could not satisfy.

*War.* Ay, but he's dead: off with the

traitor's head,

And rear it in the place your father's stands.

And now to London with triumphant march,

There to be crowned England's royal king:

From whence shall Warwick cut the sea to

France,

And ask the Lady Bona for thy queen:

So shalt thou sinew both these lands together

And, having France thy friend, thou shalt n

dread

The scatter'd foe that hopes to rise again;

For though they cannot greatly sting to hurt,

Yet look to have them buzz to offend thine ear

First will I see the coronation;

And then to Brittany I'll cross the sea,

To effect this marriage, so it please my lord.

*Edw.* Even as thou wilt, sweet Warwick,

it be:

For in thy shoulder do I build my seat,

And never will I undertake the thing

Wherein thy counsel and consent is wanting.

Richard, I will create thee Duke of Gloucester

And George, of Clarence: Warwick, as counsel

Shall do and undo as him pleaseth best.

*Rich.* Let me be Duke of Clarence, Ge

of Gloucester;

For Gloucester's dukedom is too ominous.

*War.* Tut, that's a foolish observation:

Richard, be Duke of Gloucester. Now

London,

To see these honours in possession.

[Exeunt]

### ACT III.

SCENE I. A forest in the north of England

Enter two Keepers, with cross-bows in their

hands.

*First Keeper.* Under this thick-grown

we'll shroud ourselves;

For through this laurel anon the deer will o

nd in this covert will we make our stand,  
ulling the principal of all the deer.

*Sec. Keep.* I'll stay above the hill, so both  
may shoot.

*First Keep.* That cannot be; the noise of  
thy cross-bow

Will scare the herd, and so my shoot is lost.  
I'll stand we both, and aim we at the best :

and, for the time shall not seem tedious,

I'll tell thee what befel me on a day 10  
in this self-place where now we mean to stand.

*Sec. Keep.* Here comes a man; let's stay  
till he be past.

*Enter KING HENRY, disguised, with a prayer-  
book.*

*K. Hen.* From Scotland am I stol'n, even  
of pure love,

To seek mine own land with my wishful sight.  
*K. Hen.* Harry, Harry, 'tis no land of thine;

My place is fill'd, thy sceptre wrung from thee,  
y balm wash'd off wherewith thou wast

anointed:  
Lending knee will call thee Cæsar now,

humble suitors press to speak for right,  
not a man comes for redress of thee; 20

How can I help them, and not myself?  
*First Keep.* Ay, here's a deer whose skin's

a keeper's fee:  
Is is the quondam king; let's seize up

him.  
*K. Hen.* Let me embrace thee, sour ad-  
versity,

or wise men say it is the wisest course.  
*Sec. Keep.* Why linger we? let us lay hands

upon him.  
*First Keep.* Forbear awhile; we'll hear a

little more.  
*K. Hen.* My queen and son are gone to

France for aid;  
as I hear, the great commanding War-

wick  
tither gone, to crave the French king's

sister  
wife for Edward: if this news be true,

for queen and son, your labour is but lost;  
Warwick is a subtle orator,

Lewis a prince soon won with moving  
words.

his account then Margaret may win him.  
she's a woman to be pitied much:

such will make a battery in his breast;  
tears will pierce into a marble heart;

the tiger will be mild whiles she doth mourn  
and Nero will be tainted with remorse. 40

to hear and see her plaints, her brinish tears.  
but she's come to beg, Warwick, to give;

on his left side, craving aid for Henry,  
on his right, asking a wife for Edward.

he weeps, and says her Henry is deposed;  
he smiles, and says his Edward is install'd;

but she, poor wretch, for grief can speak no  
more:

when Warwick tells his tale, smooths the  
wrong,

bereth arguments of mighty strength,  
and in conclusion wins the king from her,

with promise of his sister, and what else,

to strengthen and support King Edward's place.  
O Margaret, thus 'twill be; and thou, poor soul,

Art then forsaken, as thou went'st forlorn!

*Sec. Keep.* Say, what art thou that talk'st of  
kings and queens?

*K. Hen.* More than I seem, and less than I  
was born to:

A man at least, for less I should not be;  
And men may talk of kings, and why not I?

*Sec. Keep.* Ay, but thou talk'st as if thou  
wert a king.

*K. Hen.* Why, so I am, in mind; and that's  
enough. 60

*Sec. Keep.* But, if thou be a king, where is  
thy crown?

*K. Hen.* My crown is in my heart, not on  
my head;

Not deck'd with diamonds and Indian stones,  
Nor to be seen: my crown is called content:

A crown it is that seldom kings enjoy.

*Sec. Keep.* Well, if you be a king crown'd  
with content,

Your crown content and you must be contented  
To go along with us; for, as we think,

You are the king King Edward hath deposed;  
And we his subjects sworn in all allegiance 70

Will apprehend you as his enemy.  
*K. Hen.* But did you never swear, and

break an oath?  
*Sec. Keep.* No, never such an oath; nor

will not now.  
*K. Hen.* Where did you dwell when I was

King of England?  
*Sec. Keep.* Here in this country, where we

now remain.  
*K. Hen.* I was anointed king at nine months

old;  
My father and my grandfather were kings,

And you were sworn true subjects unto me:  
And tell me, then, have you not broke your

oaths?  
*First Keep.* No; 80

For we were subjects but while you were king.  
*K. Hen.* Why, am I dead? do I not breathe

a man?  
Ah, simple men, you know not what you

swear!  
Look, as I blow this feather from my face,

And as the air blows it to me again,  
Obeying with my mind when I do blow,

And yielding to another when it blows,  
Commanded always by the greater gust;

Such is the lightness of you common men.  
But do not break your oaths; for of that sin 90

My mild entreaty shall not make you guilty.  
Go where you will, the king shall be com-

manded;  
And be you kings command, and I'll obey.

*First Keep.* We are true subjects to the  
king, King Edward.

*K. Hen.* So would you be again to Henry,  
If he were seated as King Edward is.

*First Keep.* We charge you, in God's name,  
and the king's,

To go with us unto the officers.  
*K. Hen.* In God's name, lead; your king's

name be obey'd:  
And what God will, that let your king perform:

And what he will, I humbly yield unto. <sup>101</sup>  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *London. The palace.*

*Enter KING EDWARD, GLOUCESTER,  
CLARENCE, and LADY GREY.*

*K. Edw.* Brother of Gloucester, at Saint  
Alban's field  
This lady's husband, Sir Richard Grey, was  
slain.

His lands then seized on by the conqueror:  
Her suit is now to repossess those lands;  
Which we in justice cannot well deny,  
Because in quarrel of the house of York  
The worthy gentleman did lose his life.

*Glou.* Your highness shall do well to grant  
her suit;

It were dishonour to deny it her.

*K. Edw.* It were no less; but yet I'll make  
a pause. <sup>10</sup>

*Glou.* [*Aside to Clar.*] Yes, is it so!

I see the lady hath a thing to grant,

Before the king will grant her humble suit.

*Clar.* [*Aside to Glou.*] He knows the game:  
how true he keeps the wind!

*Glou.* [*Aside to Clar.*] Silence!

*K. Edw.* Widow, we will consider of your  
suit;

And come some other time to know our mind.

*L. Grey.* Right gracious lord, I cannot brook  
delay:

May it please your highness to resolve me now;  
And what your pleasure is, shall satisfy me. <sup>20</sup>

*Glou.* [*Aside to Clar.*] Ay, widow! then I'll  
warrant you all your lands,

An if what pleases him shall pleasure you.

Fight closer, or good faith, you'll catch a blow.

*Clar.* [*Aside to Glou.*] I fear her not, unless  
she chance to fall.

*Glou.* [*Aside to Clar.*] God forbid that! for  
he'll take vantages.

*K. Edw.* How many children hast thou,  
widow! tell me.

*Clar.* [*Aside to Glou.*] I think he means to  
beg a child of her.

*Glou.* [*Aside to Clar.*] Nay, whip me then:  
he'll rather give her two.

*L. Grey.* Three, my most gracious lord.

*Glou.* [*Aside to Clar.*] You shall have four,  
if you'll be ruled by him. <sup>30</sup>

*K. Edw.* 'Twere pity they should lose their  
father's lands.

*L. Grey.* Be pitiful, dread lord, and grant  
it then.

*K. Edw.* Lords, give us leave: I'll try this  
widow's wit.

*Glou.* [*Aside to Clar.*] Ay, good leave have  
you; for you will have leave,

Till youth take leave and leave you to the crutch.  
[*Glou. and Clar. retire.*]

*K. Edw.* Now tell me, madam, do you love  
your children?

*L. Grey.* Ay, full as dearly as I love myself.

*K. Edw.* And would you not do much to  
do them good?

*L. Grey.* To do them good, I would sustain  
much loss.

*K. Edw.* Then get your husband's lands,  
do them good.

*L. Grey.* Therefore I came unto your  
majesty.

*K. Edw.* I'll tell you how these lands  
are to be got.

*L. Grey.* So shall you bind me to your  
highness' service.

*K. Edw.* What service wilt thou do me, if  
I give them?

*L. Grey.* What you command, that rests  
me to do.

*K. Edw.* But you will take exceptions to  
my boon.

*L. Grey.* No, gracious lord, except I cannot  
do it.

*K. Edw.* Ay, but thou canst do what  
mean to ask.

*L. Grey.* Why, then I will do what you  
grace command.

*Glou.* [*Aside to Clar.*] He plies her hard  
and much rain wears the marble.

*Clar.* [*Aside to Glou.*] As red as fire! nay,  
then her wax must melt.

*L. Grey.* Why stops my lord? shall I  
hear my task?

*K. Edw.* An easy task; 'tis but to love  
a king.

*L. Grey.* That's soon perform'd, because  
I am a subject.

*K. Edw.* Why, then, thy husband's lands  
freely give thee.

*L. Grey.* I take my leave with many thanks.

*Glou.* [*Aside to Clar.*] The match is made  
she seals it with a curtsy.

*K. Edw.* But stay thee, 'tis the fruits of love  
I mean.

*L. Grey.* The fruits of love I mean, I  
loving liege.

*K. Edw.* Ay, but, I fear me, in another  
sense.

What love, think'st thou, I sue so much to get?

*L. Grey.* My love till death, my humble  
thanks, my prayers;

That love which virtue begs and virtue grants.

*K. Edw.* No, by my troth, I did not mean  
such love.

*L. Grey.* Why, then you mean not as  
thought you did.

*K. Edw.* But now you partly may perceive  
my mind.

*L. Grey.* My mind will never grant what  
perceive

Your highness aims at, if I aim aright.

*K. Edw.* To tell thee plain, I aim to  
win thee.

*L. Grey.* To tell you plain, I had rather  
be in prison.

*K. Edw.* Why, then thou shalt not have  
thy husband's lands.

*L. Grey.* Why, then mine honesty shall  
be my dowry;

For by that loss I will not purchase them.

*K. Edw.* Therein thou wrong'st thy children  
mightily.

*L. Grey.* Herein your highness wrongs  
them and me.



t, mighty lord, this merry inclination  
cords not with the sadness of my suit:  
ase you dismiss me, either with 'ay' or 'no.'

K. Edw. Ay, if thou wilt say 'ay' to my  
request;

1, if thou dost say 'no' to my demand. 80  
L. Grey. Then, no, my lord. My suit is at  
an end.

Glou. [Aside to Clar.] The widow likes him  
not, she knits her brows.

Clar. [Aside to Glou.] He is the bluntest  
wooper in Christendom.

K. Edw. [Aside] Her looks do argue her  
replete with modesty;

er words do show her wit incomparable;  
if her perfections challenge sovereignty:

ne way or other, she is for a king;  
nd she shall be my love, or else my queen.—

ay that King Edward take thee for his queen?  
L. Grey. 'Tis better said than done, my  
gracious lord: 90

an a subject fit to jest withal,  
an far unfit to be a sovereign.

K. Edw. Sweet widow, by my state I swear  
to thee

peak no more than what my soul intends;  
and that is, to enjoy thee for my love.

L. Grey. And that is more than I will yield  
unto:

I know I am too mean to be your queen,  
and yet too good to be your concubine.

K. Edw. You cavi, widow: I did mean,  
my queen.

L. Grey. 'Twill grieve your grace my sons  
should call you father. 100

K. Edw. No more than when my daughters  
call thee mother.

part a widow, and thou hast some children;  
nd, by God's mother, I, being but a bachelor,

ve other some: why, 'tis a happy thing  
obe the father unto many sons.

never no more, for thou shalt be my queen.  
Glou. [Aside to Clar.] The ghostly father  
now hath done his shrift.

Clar. [Aside to Glou.] When he was made  
a shriver, 'twas for shift.

K. Edw. Brothers, you muse what chat we  
two have had.

Glou. The widow likes it not, for she looks  
very sad. 110

K. Edw. You 'd think it strange if I should  
marry her.

Clar. To whom, my lord?

K. Edw. Why, Clarence, to myself.

Glou. That would be ten days' wonder at the  
least.

Clar. That's a day longer than a wonder  
lasts.

Glou. By so much is the wonder in extremes.

K. Edw. Well, jest on, brothers: I can tel  
you both

as suit is granted for her husband's lands.

Enter a Nobleman.

Rob. My gracious lord, Henry your foe is  
taken,  
d brought your prisoner to your palace gate.

K. Edw. See that he be convey'd unto the  
Tower: 120

And go we, brothers, to the man that took him.  
To question of his apprehension.

Widow, go you along. Lords, use her honour-  
ably. [Exeunt all but Gloucester.]

Glou. Ay, Edward will use women honour-  
ably.

Would he were wasted, marrow, bones and all,  
That from his loins no hopeful branch may  
spring,

To cross me from the golden time I look for!  
And yet, between my soul's desire and me—

The lustful Edward's title buried— 120

Is Clarence, Henry, and his son young Edward,  
And all the unlook'd for issue of their bodies,

To take their rooms, ere I can place myself:  
A cold premeditation for my purpose!

Why, then, I do but dream on sovereignty;  
Like one that stands upon a promontory

And spies a far-off shore where he would tread,  
Wishing his foot were equal with his eye,

And chides the sea that sunders him from  
thence.

Saying, he 'll lade it dry to have his way:  
So do I wish the crown, being so far off: 120

And so I chide the means that keeps me  
from it;

And so I say, I 'll cut the causes off,  
Flattering me with impossibilities.

My eye's too quick, my heart o'erween's too  
much,

Unless my hand and strength could equal them.  
Well, say there is no kingdom then for Richard;

What other pleasure can the world afford?  
I 'll make my heaven in a lady's lap,

And deck my body in gay ornaments,  
And witch sweet ladies with my words and  
looks. 130

O miserable thought! and more unlikely  
Than to accomplish twenty golden crowns!

Why, love forswore me in my mother's womb:  
And, for I should not deal in her soft laws,

She did corrupt frail nature with some bribe,  
To shrink mine arm up like a wither'd shrub;

To make an envious mountain on my back,  
Where sits deformity to mock my body;

To shape my legs of an unequal size;  
To disproportion me in every part, 130

Like to a chaos, or an unlick'd bear-whelp  
That carries no impression like the dam.

And am I then a man to be beloved?  
O monstrous fault, to harbour such a thought!

Then, since this earth affords no joy to me,  
But to command, to check, to o'erbear such  
As are of better person than myself,

I 'll make my heaven to dream upon the crown,  
And, whilst I live, to account this world but  
hell.

Until my mis-shaped trunk that bears this head  
Be round impaled with a glorious crown. 140

And yet I know not how to get the crown,  
For many lives stand between me and home:

And I—like one lost in a thorny wood,  
That tends the thorns and is rent with the  
thorns,

Seeking a way and straying from the way:  
Not knowing how to find the open air,

But tolling desperately to find it out,—  
 Torment myself to catch the English crown:  
 And from that torment I will free myself, 180  
 Or hew my way out with a bloody axe.  
 Why, I can smile, and murder whiles I smile,  
 And cry 'Content' to that which grieves my  
 heart,  
 And wet my cheeks with artificial tears,  
 And frame my face to all occasions.  
 I'll drown more sailors than the mermaid shall;  
 I'll slay more gazers than the basilisk;  
 I'll play the orator as well as Nestor,  
 Deceive more slyly than Ulysses could,  
 And, like a Sinon, take another Troy. 190  
 I can add colours to the chameleon,  
 Change shapes with Proteus for advantages,  
 And set the murderous Machiavel to school.  
 Can I do this, and cannot get a crown?  
 Tut, were it farther off, I'll pluck it down.

[Exit.]

SCENE III. *France. The King's palace.*

*Flourish. Enter LEWIS the French King, his sister BONA, his Admiral, called BOURBON; PRINCE EDWARD, QUEEN MARGARET, and the EARL OF OXFORD. LEWIS sits, and riseth up again.*

*K. Lew.* Fair Queen of England, worthy Margaret,  
 Sit down with us: it ill befits thy state  
 And birth, that thou shouldst stand while Lewis  
 doth sit.

*Q. Mar.* No, mighty King of France: now Margaret  
 Must strike her sail and learn awhile to serve  
 Where kings command. I was, I must confess,  
 Great Albion's queen in former golden days:  
 But now mischance hath trod my title down,  
 And with dishonour laid me on the ground;  
 Where I must take like seat unto my fortune,  
 And to my humble seat conform myself. 21

*K. Lew.* Why, say, fair queen, whence  
 springs this deep despair?

*Q. Mar.* From such a cause as fills mine  
 eyes with tears  
 And stops my tongue, while heart is drown'd  
 in care.

*K. Lew.* What'er it be, be thou still like  
 thyself,  
 And sit thee by our side: [Seats her by him]  
 yield not thy neck

To fortune's yoke, but let thy dauntless mind  
 Still ride in triumph over all mischance.  
 Be plain, Queen Margaret, and tell thy grief:  
 It shall be eased, if France can yield relief. 20

*Q. Mar.* Those gracious words revive my  
 drooping thoughts

And give my tongue-led sorrows leave to speak.  
 Now, therefore, be it known to noble Lewis,  
 That Henry, sole possessor of my love,  
 Is of a king become a banish'd man,  
 And forced to live in Scotland for a felon;  
 While proud ambitious Edward Duke of York  
 Usurps the regal title and the seat  
 Of England's true-anointed lawful king.  
 This is the cause that I, poor Margaret,

30

With this my son, Prince Edward, Henry's  
 heir,

Am come to crave thy just and lawful aid;  
 And if thou fail us, all our hope is done;  
 Scotland hath will to help, but cannot help;  
 Our people and our peers are both misled,  
 Our treasure seized, our soldiers put to flight,  
 And, as thou seest, ourselves in heavy plight.

*K. Lew.* Renowned queen, with patience  
 calm the storm,

While we bethink a means to break it off.

*Q. Mar.* The more we stay, the stronger  
 grows our foe.

*K. Lew.* The more I stay, the more I'll  
 succour thee.

*Q. Mar.* O, but impatience waiteth on true  
 sorrow.

And see where comes the breeder of my sorrow!

*Enter WARWICK.*

*K. Lew.* What's he approacheth boldly to  
 our presence?

*Q. Mar.* Our Earl of Warwick, Edward's  
 greatest friend.

*K. Lew.* Welcome, brave Warwick! What  
 brings thee to France?

[He descends. She arises.]

*Q. Mar.* Ay, now begins a second storm to  
 rise;

For this is he that moves both wind and tide.

*War.* From worthy Edward, King of Albion,  
 My lord and sovereign, and thy vowed friend,  
 I come, in kindness and unfeigned love, 31  
 First, to do greetings to thy royal person;

And then to crave a league of amity;  
 And lastly, to confirm that amity

With nuptial knot, if thou vouchsafe to grant  
 That virtuous Lady Bona, thy fair sister,  
 To England's king in lawful marriage.

*Q. Mar.* [Aside] If that go forward, Henry's  
 hope is done.

*War.* [To Bona] And, gracious madam, in  
 our king's behalf,

I am commanded, with your leave and favour,  
 Humbly to kiss your hand and with my tongue

To tell the passion of my sovereign's heart;  
 Where fame, late entering at his heedful ears,

Hath placed thy beauty's image and thy virtue.

*Q. Mar.* King Lewis and Lady Bona, hear  
 me speak,

Before you answer Warwick. His demand  
 Springs not from Edward's well-meant honest  
 love,

But from deceit bred by necessity;  
 For how can tyrants safely govern home,

Unless abroad they purchase great alliance? 32  
 To prove him tyrant this reason may suffice,

That Henry liveth still; but were he dead,  
 Yet here Prince Edward stands, King Henry's  
 son.

Look, therefore, Lewis, that by this league and  
 marriage

Thou draw not on thy danger and dishonour;  
 For though usurpers sway the rule awhile,

Yet heavens are just, and time suppresseth  
 wrongs.

*War.* Injurious Margaret!  
 Prince,

And why not queen?

*War.* Because thy father Henry did usurp;  
And thou no more art prince than she is queen.

*Oxf.* Then Warwick disannuls great John of Gaunt,

Which did subdue the greatest part of Spain;  
And, after John of Gaunt, Henry the Fourth,  
Whose wisdom was a mirror to the wisest;  
And, after that wise prince, Henry the Fifth,  
Who by his prowess conquered all France;  
From these our Henry lineally descends.

*War.* Oxford, how haps it, in this smooth discourse,

You told not how Henry the Sixth hath lost  
All that which Henry the Fifth had gotten? <sup>90</sup>  
Methinks these peers of France should smile at that.

But for the rest, you tell a pedigree  
Of threescore and two years; a silly time  
To make prescription for a kingdom's worth.

*Oxf.* Why, Warwick, canst thou speak against thy liege,

Whom thou obeyed'st thirty and six years,  
And not bewray thy treason with a blush?

*War.* Can Oxford, that did ever fence the right,

Now buckler falsehood with a pedigree?

For shame! leave Henry, and call Edward king.

*Oxf.* Call him my king by whose injurious doom

My elder brother, the Lord Aubrey Vere,  
Was done to death! and more than so, my father,

Even in the downfall of his mellow'd years,  
When nature brought him to the door of death?

No, Warwick, no; while life upholds this arm,  
This arm upholds the house of Lancaster.

*War.* And I the house of York.

*K. Lew.* Queen Margaret, Prince Edward,  
and Oxford,

Vouchsafe, at our request, to stand aside, <sup>110</sup>  
While I use further conference with Warwick.

[*They stand aloof.*]  
*Q. Mar.* Heavens grant that Warwick's words bewitch him not!

*K. Lew.* Now, Warwick, tell me, even upon thy conscience,

Is Edward your true king? for I were loath  
To link with him that were not lawful chosen.

*War.* Thereon I pawn my credit and mine honour.

*K. Lew.* But is he gracious in the people's eye?

*War.* The more that Henry was unfortunate.

*K. Lew.* Then further, all dissembling set aside,

Tell me for truth the measure of his love  
Unto our sister Bona.

*War.* Such it seems  
As may besem a monarch like himself.

Myself have often heard him say and swear  
That this his love was an eternal plant,

Whereof the root was fix'd in virtue's ground,  
The leaves and fruit maintain'd with beauty's

sun,  
Exempt from envy, but not from disdain,

Unless the Lady Bona quit his pain.

*K. Lew.* Now, sister, let us hear your firm resolve.

*Bona.* Your grant, or your denial, shall be mine: <sup>120</sup>

*To War.* Yet I confess that often ere this day,

When I have heard your king's desert recounted,  
Mine ear hath tempted judgment to desire.

*K. Lew.* Then, Warwick, thus: our sister shall be Edward's;

And now forthwith shall articles be drawn  
Touching the jointure that your king must make,

Which with her dowry shall be counterpoised.  
Draw near, Queen Margaret, and be a witness

That Bona shall be wife to the English king.

*Prince.* To Edward, but not to the English king. <sup>140</sup>

*Q. Mar.* Deceitful Warwick! it was thy device

By this alliance to make void my suit:  
Before thy coming Lewis was Henry's friend.

*K. Lew.* And still is friend to him and Margaret:

But if your title to the crown be weak,  
As may appear by Edward's good success,

Then 'tis but reason that I be released  
From giving aid which late I promised.

Yet shall you have all kindness at my hand  
That your estate requires and mine can yield.

*War.* Henry now lives in Scotland at his ease, <sup>151</sup>

Where having nothing, nothing can be lost.  
And as for you yourself, our quondam queen,

You have a father able to maintain you;  
And better 'twere you troubled him than France.

*Q. Mar.* Peace, impudent and shameless Warwick, peace,

Proud setter up and puller down of kings!  
I will not hence, till, with my talk and tears,

Both full of truth, I make King Lewis behold  
Thy sly conveyance and thy lord's false love; <sup>160</sup>

For both of you are birds of selfsame feather.

[*Post blows a horn within.*]  
*K. Lew.* Warwick, this is some post to us or thee.

*Enter a Post.*

*Post.* [To *War.*] My lord ambassador, these letters are for you,

Sent from your brother, Marquess Montague:  
[To *Lewis*] These from our king unto your majesty:

[To *Margaret*] And, madam, these for you;  
from whom I know not.

[*They all read their letters.*]  
*Oxf.* I like it well that our fair queen and mistress

Smiles at her news, while Warwick frowns at his.

*Prince.* Nay, mark how Lewis stamps; as he were nettled:

I hope all's for the best. <sup>170</sup>

*K. Lew.* Warwick, what are thy news? and yours, fair queen!

*Q. Mar.* Mine, such as fill my heart with unhop'd joys.

*War.* Mine, full of sorrow and heart's discontent.

*K. Lew.* What! has your king married the Lady Grey?

And now, to soothe your forgery and his,  
Sends me a paper to persuade me patience?  
Is this the alliance that he seeks with France?  
Dare he presume to scorn us in this manner?

*Q. Mar.* I told your majesty as much before:  
This proveth Edward's love and Warwick's honesty.

*War.* King Lewis, I here protest, in sight of heaven,

And by the hope I have of heavenly bliss,  
That I am clear from this misdeed of Edward's,  
No more my king, for he dishonours me,  
But most himself, if he could see his shame.  
Did I forget that by the house of York  
My father came untimely to his death?  
Did I let pass the abuse done to my niece?  
Did I impale him with the regal crown?  
Did I put Henry from his native right?

And am I guerdon'd at the last with shame?  
Shame on himself! for my desert is honour:  
And to repair my honour lost for him,  
I here renounce him and return to Henry.  
My noble queen, let former grudges pass,  
And henceforth I am thy true servitor:  
I will revenge his wrong to Lady Bona  
And replant Henry in his former state.

*Q. Mar.* Warwick, these words have turn'd  
my hate to love;

And I forgive and quite forget old faults,  
And joy that thou becomest King Henry's friend.

*War.* So much his friend, ay, his unfeigned friend,

That, if King Lewis vouchsafe to furnish us  
With some few bands of chosen soldiers,  
I'll undertake to land them on our coast  
And force the tyrant from his seat by war.

Tis not his new-made bride shall succour him:  
And as for Clarence, as my letters tell me,  
He's very likely now to fall from him,  
For matching more for wanton lust than honour,

Or than for strength and safety of our country.

*Bona.* Dear brother, how shall Bona be revenged

But by thy help to this distressed queen?

*Q. Mar.* Renowned prince, how shall poor Henry live,

Unless thou rescue him from foul despair?

*Bona.* My quarrel and this English queen's are one.

*War.* And mine, fair lady Bona, joins with yours.

*K. Lew.* And mine with hers, and thine, and Margaret's.

Therefore at last I firmly am resolved  
You shall have aid.

*Q. Mar.* Let me give humble thanks for all at once.

*K. Lew.* Then, England's messenger, return in post,

And tell false Edward, thy supposed king,  
That Lewis of France is sending over masquers

To revel it with him and his new bride:  
Then seek what's past, go fear thy king

within.

*Bona.* Tell him, in hope he'll prove a widower shortly,

I'll wear the willow garland for his sake.

*Q. Mar.* Tell him, my mourning weeds are laid aside,

And I am ready to put armour on.

*War.* Tell him from me that he hath done me wrong,

And therefore I'll uncrown him ere 'tis long.  
There's thy reward: be gone.

*K. Lew.* But, Warwick, Thou and Oxford, with five thousand men,  
Shall cross the seas, and bid false Edward battle;

And, as occasion serves, this noble queen  
And prince shall follow with a fresh supply.

Yet, ere thou go, bid answer me one doubt,  
What pledge have we of thy firm loyalty?

*War.* This shall assure my constant loyalty,  
That if our queen and this young prince agree,

I'll join mine eldest daughter and my joy  
To him forthwith in holy wedlock bands.

*Q. Mar.* Yes, I agree, and thank you for your motion.

Son Edward, she is fair and virtuous,  
Therefore delay not, give thy hand to Warwick;

And, with thy hand, thy faith irrevocable,  
That only Warwick's daughter shall be thine.

*Prince.* Yes, I accept her, for she well deserves it;

And here, to pledge my vow, I give my hand.

*[He gives his hand to Warwick.]*

*K. Lew.* Why stay we now? Those soldiers shall be levied,

And thou, Lord Bourbon, our high admiral,  
Shalt wait them over with our royal fleet.

I long till Edward fall by war's mischance,  
For mocking marriage with a dame of France.

*[Exeunt all but Warwick.]*

*War.* I came from Edward as ambassador,  
But I return his sworn and mortal foe:

Matter of marriage was the charge he gave me,  
But dreadful war shall answer his demand.

Had he none else to make a stale but me?

Then none but I shall turn his jest to sorrow.  
I was the chief that raised him to the crown,

And I'll be chief to bring him down again:  
Not that I pity Henry's misery,

But seek revenge on Edward's mockery. *[Exit.]*

#### ACT IV.

##### SCENE I. London. The palace.

Enter GLOUCESTER, CLARENCE, SOMERSET, and MONTAGUE.

*Glou.* Now tell me, brother Clarence, what think you

Of this new marriage with the Lady Grey?  
Hath not our brother made a worthy choice?

*Clar.* Alas, you know, 'tis far from hence to France;

How could he stay till Warwick made return?

*Som.* My lords, forbear this talk; here comes the king.

*Glou.* And his well-chosen bride.

*Clar.* I mind to tell him plainly what I think

*Flourish. Enter KING EDWARD, attended ;  
LADY GREY, as Queen ; PEMBROKE, STAF-  
FORD, HASTINGS, and others.*

*K. Edw.* Now, brother of Clarence, how  
like you our choice,

That you stand pensive, as half malcontent ?  
*Clar.* As well as Lewis of France, or the

Earl of Warwick,  
Which are so weak of courage and in judge-  
ment

That they'll take no offence at our abuse.

*K. Edw.* Suppose they take offence without  
a cause,

They are but Lewis and Warwick : I am  
Edward,

Your king and Warwick's, and must have my  
will.

*Glou.* And shall have your will, because our  
king :

Yet hasty marriage seldom proveth well.

*K. Edw.* Yea, brother Richard, are you of-  
fended too ?

*Glou.* Not I :  
No, God forbid that I should wish them sever'd  
Whom God hath join'd together ; ay, and  
twere pity

To sunder them that yoke so well together.

*K. Edw.* Setting your scorns and your mis-  
like aside,

Tell me some reason why the Lady Grey  
Should not become my wife and England's  
queen.

And you too, Somerset and Montague,  
Speak freely what you think.

*Clar.* Then this is mine opinion : that King  
Lewis

Becomes your enemy, for mocking him  
About the marriage of the Lady Bona.

*Glou.* And Warwick, doing what you gave  
in charge,

Is now dishonoured by this new marriage.

*K. Edw.* What if both Lewis and Warwick  
be appeased

By such invention as I can devise ?

*Mont.* Yet, to have join'd with France in  
such alliance

Would more have strengthen'd this our  
commonwealth

'Gainst foreign storms than any home-bred  
marriage.

*Hast.* Why, knows not Montague that of  
itself

England is safe, if true within itself ?

*Mont.* But the safer when 'tis back'd with  
France.

*Hast.* 'Tis better using France than trusting  
France :

Let us be back'd with God and with the seas  
Which He hath given for fence impregnable ;

And with their helps only defend ourselves ;  
In them and in ourselves our safety lies.

*Clar.* For this one speech Lord Hastings  
will deserve

To have the heir of the Lord Hungerford.

*K. Edw.* Ay, what of that ? It was my will  
and grant ;

And for this once my will shall stand for law

*Glou.* And yet methinks your grace hath  
not done well,

To give the heir and daughter of Lord Scales<sup>51</sup>  
Unto the brother of your loving bride ;

She better would have fitted me or Clarence :  
But in your bride you bury brotherhood.

*Clar.* (Or else you would not have bestow'd  
the heir

Of the Lord Bonville on your new wife's son,  
And leave your brothers to go speed elsewhere.

*K. Edw.* Alas, poor Clarence ! is it for a wife  
That thou art malcontent ? I will provide thee.

*Clar.* In choosing for yourself, you show'd  
your judgement,

Which being shallow, you shall give me leave<sup>61</sup>  
To play the broker in mine own behalf ;

And to that end I shortly mind to leave you.

*K. Edw.* Leave me, or tarry, Edward will  
be king,

And not be tied unto his brother's will.

*Q. Eliz.* My lords, before it pleased his  
majesty

To raise my state to title of a queen,  
Do me but right, and you must all confess

That I was not ignoble of descent ;  
And meaner than myself have had like fortune.

But as this title honours me and mine,  
So your dislike, to whom I would be pleasing,

Doth cloud my joys with danger and with  
sorrow.

*K. Edw.* My love, forbear to fawn upon  
their frowns :

What danger or what sorrow can befall thee,  
No long as Edward is thy constant friend,

And their true sovereign, whom they must  
obey ?

Nay, whom they shall obey, and love thee too,  
Unless they seek for hatred at my hands ;

Which if they do, yet will I keep thee safe,  
And they shall feel the vengeance of my wrath.

*Glou.* I hear, yet say not much, but think  
the more. [*Aside.*]

*Enter a Post.*

*K. Edw.* Now, messenger, what letters or  
what news

From France ?

*Post.* My sovereign liege, no letters ; and  
few words.

But such as I, without your special pardon,  
Dare not relate.

*K. Edw.* Go to, we pardon thee : therefore,  
in brief,

Tell me their words as near as thou canst guess  
them.

What answer makes King Lewis unto our  
letters ?

*Post.* At my depart, these were his very  
words :

'Go tell false Edward, thy supposed king,  
That Lewis of France is sending over masquers

To revel it with him and his new bride.'

*K. Edw.* Is Lewis so brave ? belike he thinks  
me Henry.

But what said Lady Bona to my marriage ?

*Post.* These were her words, utter'd with  
mild disdain :

'Tell him, I hope he'll prove a widower shortly,

I'll wear the willow garland for his sake.' 100  
*K. Edw.* I blame not her, she could say little less;

She had the wrong. But what said Henry's queen?

For I have heard that she was there in place.  
*Post.* 'Tell him,' quoth she, 'my mourning weeds are done,

And I am ready to put armour on.'  
*K. Edw.* Belike she minds to play the Amazon.

But what said Warwick to these injuries?

*Post.* He, more incensed against your majesty Than all the rest, discharged me with these words:

'Tell him from me that he hath done me wrong,  
 And therefore I'll uncrown him ere 't be long.'

*K. Edw.* Ha! durst the traitor breathe out so proud words?

Well, I will arm me, being thus forewarn'd:  
 They shall have wars and pay for their presumption.

But say, is Warwick friends with Margaret?

*Post.* Ay, gracious sovereign; they are so link'd in friendship,

That young Prince Edward marries Warwick's daughter.

*Clar.* Belike the elder; Clarence will have the younger.

Now, brother king, farewell, and sit you fast,  
 For I will hence to Warwick's other daughter;

That, though I want a kingdom, yet in marriage I may not prove inferior to yourself.

You that love me and Warwick, follow me.

[*Exit Clarence, and Somerset follows.*  
*Glow.* (*Aside*) Not I:

My thoughts aim at a further matter; I stay not for the love of Edward, but the crown.

*K. Edw.* Clarence and Somerset both gone to Warwick!

Yet am I arm'd against the worst can happen;  
 And haste is needful in this desperate case.

Pembroke and Stafford, you in our behalf 130  
 Go levy men, and make prepare for war;

They are already, or quickly will be landed:  
 Myself in person will straight follow you.

[*Exeunt Pembroke and Stafford.*  
*But,* ere I go, Hastings and Montague.

Resolve my doubt. You twain, of all the rest,  
 Are near to Warwick by blood and by alliance:

Tell me if you love Warwick more than me?  
 If it be so, then both depart to him;

I rather wish you foes than hollow friends;  
 But if you mind to hold your true obedience,

Give me assurance with some friendly vow,  
 That I may never have you in suspect.

*Mont.* So God help Montague as he proves true!

*Hast.* And Hastings as he favours Edward's cause!

*K. Edw.* Now, brother Richard, will you stand by us?

*Glow.* Ay, in despite of all that shall withstand you.

*K. Edw.* Why, so! then am I sure of victory.  
 Now therefore let us hence; and lose no hour.

Till we meet Warwick with his foreign power.

[*Exeunt.*

## SCENE II. A plain in Warwickshire.

*Enter WARWICK and OXFORD, with French soldiers.*

*War.* Trust me, my lord, all hitherto goes well;

The common people by numbers swarm to us.

*Enter CLARENCE and SOMERSET.*

But see where Somerset and Clarence comes!  
 Speak suddenly, my lords, are we all friends?

*Clar.* Fear not that, my lord.

*War.* Then, gentle Clarence, welcome unto Warwick;

And welcome, Somerset: I hold it cowardice  
 To rest mistrustful where a noble heart

Hath pawn'd an open hand in sign of love;  
 Else might I think that Clarence, Edward's

brother, 10  
 Were but a feigned friend to our proceedings:

But welcome, sweet Clarence; my daughter shall be thine.

And now what rests but, in night's coverture,  
 Thy brother being carelessly encamp'd,

His soldiers lurking in the towns about,  
 And but attended by a simple guard,

We may surprise and take him at our pleasure!  
 Our scouts have found the adventure very easy:

That as Ulysses and stout Diomedes  
 With sleight and manhood stole to Rhesus'

tents, 20  
 And brought from thence the Thracian fatal

steels,  
 So we, well cover'd with the night's black

mantle,  
 At unawares may beat down Edward's guard

And seize himself; I say not, slaughter him,  
 For I intend but only to surprise him.

You that will follow me to this attempt,  
 Applaud the name of Henry with your leader.

[*They all cry, 'Henry!'*  
 Why, then, let's on our way in silent sort:

For Warwick and his friends, God and Saint George! 30  
 [*Exeunt.*

## SCENE III. Edward's camp, near Warwick.

*Enter three Watchmen, to guard the KING'S tent.*

*First Watch.* Come on, my masters, each man take his stand;

The king by this is set him down to sleep.

*Second Watch.* What, will he not be dead?

*First Watch.* Why, no; for he hath made a solemn vow

Never to lie and take his natural rest  
 Till Warwick or himself be quite suppress'd.

*Second Watch.* To-morrow then belike shall be the day,

If Warwick be so near as men report.

*Third Watch.* But say, I pray, what nobleman is that

That with the king here resteth in his tent? 40  
*First Watch.* 'Tis the Lord Hastings, the king's chiefest friend.

*Third Watch.* O, is it so! But why commands the king

That his chief followers lodge in towns about him,

While he himself keeps in the cold field!

*Second Watch.* 'Tis the more honour, because more dangerous.

*Third Watch.* Ay, but give me worship and quietness;

I like it better than a dangerous honour.

If Warwick knew in what estate he stands,

'Tis to be doubted he would waken him.

*First Watch.* Unless our halberds did shut up his passage.

*Second Watch.* Ay, wherefore else guard we his royal tent,

But to defend his person from night-foes?

*Enter WARWICK, CLARENCE, OXFORD, SOMERSET, and French soldiers, silent all.*

*War.* This is his tent; and see where stand his guard.

Courage, my masters! honour now or never!

But follow me, and Edward shall be ours.

*First Watch.* Who goes there?

*Second Watch.* Stay, or thou diest!  
[*Warwick and the rest cry all, 'Warwick! Warwick!' and set upon the Guard, who fly, crying, 'Arm! arm!' Warwick and the rest following them.*]

*The drum playing and trumpet sounding, re-enter WARWICK, SOMERSET, and the rest, bringing the KING out in his gown, sitting in a chair. RICHARD and HASTINGS fly over the stage.*

*Son.* What are they that fly there?

*War.* Richard and Hastings: let them go here is

the duke.

*K. Edw.* The duke! Why, Warwick, when we parted,

Thou call'dst me king.

*War.* Ay, but the case is alter'd:

When you disgraced me in my embassy,

Then I degraded you from being king.

And come now to create you Duke of York.

Alas! how should you govern any kingdom,

That know not how to use ambassadors,

Nor how to be contented with one wife,

Nor how to use your brothers brotherly,

Nor how to study for the people's welfare,

Nor how to shroud yourself from enemies!

*K. Edw.* Yes, brother of Clarence, art thou here too?

Nay, then I see that Edward needs must down.

Yet, Warwick, in despite of all mischance,

Of thee thyself and all thy complices,

Edward will always bear himself as king:

Though fortune's malice overthrow my state,

My mind exceeds the compass of her wheel.

*War.* Then, for his mind, be Edward England's king:

But Henry now shall wear the English crown,

And be true king indeed, thou but the shadow.

My Lord of Somerset, at my request,

See that forth with Duke Edward he convey'd

Unto my brother, Archbishop of York.

When I have fought with Pembroke and his

I'll follow you, and tell what answer

Lewis and the Lady Bona send to him.

Now, for a while farewell, good Duke of York.

[*They lead him out forcibly.*]

*K. Edw.* What fates impose, that men must

needs abide;

It boots not to resist both wind and tide.

[*Exit, guarded.*]

*Oxf.* What now remains, my lords, for us

to do

But march to London with our soldiers?

*War.* Ay, that's the first thing that we have

to do;

To free King Henry from imprisonment

And see him seated in the regal throne.

#### SCENE IV. London. The palace.

*Enter QUEEN ELIZABETH and RIVERS.*

*Riv.* Madam, what makes you in this sudden change?

*Q. Eliz.* Why, brother Rivers, are you yet to learn

What late misfortune is befall'n King Edward?

*Riv.* What! loss of some pitch'd battle against Warwick?

*Q. Eliz.* No, but the loss of his own royal person.

*Riv.* Then is my sovereign slain?

*Q. Eliz.* Ay, almost slain, for he is taken

prisoner,

Either betray'd by falsehood of his guard

Or by his foe surprised at unawares;

And, as I further have to understand,

Is new committed to the Bishop of York,

Fell Warwick's brother and by that our foe.

*Riv.* These news I must confess are full of

grief;

Yet, gracious madam, bear it as you may:

Warwick may lose, that now hath won the day.

*Q. Eliz.* Till then fair hope must hinder life's

decay.

And I the rather wean me from despair

For love of Edward's offspring in my womb;

This is it that makes me bridle passion

And bear with mildness my misfortune's cross;

Ay, ay, for this I draw in many a tear

And stop the rising of blood-sucking sighs,

Lest with my sighs or tears I blast or drown

King Edward's fruit, true heir to the English

crown.

*Riv.* But, madam, where is Warwick then

become?

*Q. Eliz.* I am inform'd that he comes towards

London,

To set the crown once more on Henry's head;

Guess thou the rest; King Edward's friends

must down,

But, to prevent the tyrant's violence,—

For trust not him that hath once broken

faith;—

I'll hence forthwith unto the sanctuary

To save at least the heir of Edward's right;

There shall I rest secure from force and fraud.

Come, therefore, let us fly while we may fly:

If Warwick take us we are sure to die.

I'll wear the willow garland for his sake.' 100

*K. Edw.* I blame not her, she could say little less;

She had the wrong. But what said Henry's queen?

For I have heard that she was there in place.

*Post.* 'Tell him,' quoth she, 'my mourning weeds are done,

And I am ready to put armour on.'

*K. Edw.* Belike she minds to play the Amazon.

But what said Warwick to these injuries?

*Post.* He, more incensed against your majesty Than all the rest, discharged me with these words:

'Tell him from me that he hath done me wrong, And therefore I'll uncrown him ere't be long.'

*K. Edw.* Ha! durst the traitor breathe out so proud words?

Well, I will arm me, being thus forewarn'd: They shall have wars and pay for their presumption.

But say, is Warwick friends with Margaret?

*Post.* Ay, gracious sovereign; they are so link'd in friendship,

That young Prince Edward marries Warwick's daughter.

*Clar.* Belike the elder; Clarence will have the younger.

Now, brother king, farewell, and sit you fast,

For I will hence to Warwick's other daughter; That, though I want a kingdom, yet in marriage I may not prove inferior to yourself.

You that love me and Warwick, follow me.

[*Exit Clarence, and Somerset follows.*]

*Glos.* [Aside] Not I: My thoughts aim at a further matter; I stay not for the love of Edward, but the crown.

*K. Edw.* Clarence and Somerset both gone to Warwick!

Yet am I arm'd against the worst can happen; And haste is needful in this desperate case.

Pembroke and Stafford, you in our behalf 130 Go levy men, and make prepare for war;

They are already, or quickly will be landed: Myself in person will straight follow you.

[*Exeunt Pembroke and Stafford.*]

But, ere I go, Hastings and Montague, Resolve my doubt. You twain, of all the rest, Are near to Warwick by blood and by alliance:

Tell me if you love Warwick more than me? If it be so, then both depart to him;

I rather wish you foes than hollow friends: But if you mind to hold your true obedience,

Give me assurance with some friendly vow, That I may never have you in suspect.

*Mont.* So God help Montague as he proves true!

*Hast.* And Hastings as he favours Edward's cause!

*K. Edw.* Now, brother Richard, will you stand by us?

*Glos.* Ay, in despite of all that shall withstand you.

*K. Edw.* Why, so! then am I sure of victory. Now therefore let us hence; and lose no hour,

Till we meet Warwick with his foreign power.

[*Exeunt.*]

# SCENE II. A plain in Warwickshire.

*Enter WARWICK and OXFORD, with French soldiers.*

*War.* Trust me, my lord, all hitherto goes well:

The common people by numbers swarm to us.

*Enter CLARENCE and SOMERSET.*

But see where Somerset and Clarence comes! Speak suddenly, my lords, are we all friends?

*Clar.* Fear not that, my lord.

*War.* Then, gentle Clarence, welcome unto Warwick;

And welcome, Somerset: I hold it cowardlike To rest mistrustful where a noble heart

Hath pawn'd an open hand in sign of love; Else might I think that Clarence, Edward's

brother, Were but a feigned friend to our proceedings:

But welcome, sweet Clarence; my daughter shall be thine.

And now what rests but, in night's coverture, Thy brother being carelessly encamp'd,

His soldiers lurking in the towns about, And but attended by a simple guard,

We may surprise and take him at our pleasure! Our scouts have found the adventure very easy:

That as Ulysses and stout Diomed With sleight and manhood stole to Rhesus'

tents, And brought from thence the Thracian fatal

steels, So we, well cover'd with the night's black

mantle, At unawares may beat down Edward's guard

And seize himself: I say not, slaughter him, For I intend but only to surprise him.

You that will follow me to this attempt, Applaud the name of Henry with your leader.

[*They all cry, 'Henry!'*]

Why, then, let's on our way in silent sort: For Warwick and his friends, God and Saint

George! [*Exeunt.*]

# SCENE III. Edward's camp, near Warwick.

*Enter three Watchmen, to guard the KING's tent.*

*First Watch.* Come on, my masters, each man take his stand:

The king by this is set him down to sleep.

*Second Watch.* What, will he not to bed?

*First Watch.* Why, no; for he hath made a solemn vow

Never to lie and take his natural rest Till Warwick or himself be quite suppress'd.

*Second Watch.* To-morrow then belike shall be the day,

If Warwick be so near as men report.

*Third Watch.* But say, I pray, what nobleman is that

That with the king here resteth in his tent? 10

*First Watch.* 'Tis the Lord Hastings, the king's chiefest friend.

*Third Watch.* O, is it so? But why cometh he to the king?



That his chief followers lodge in towns about him.

While he himself keeps in the cold field!

*Second Watch.* 'Tis the more honour, because more dangerous.

*Third Watch.* Ay, but give me worship and quietness;

I like it better than a dangerous honour.

If Warwick knew in what estate he stands,

'Tis to be doubted he would waken him.

*First Watch.* Unless our halberds did shut up his passage.

*Second Watch.* Ay, wherefore else guard we his royal tent,

But to defend his person from night-foes!

*Enter WARWICK, CLARENCE, OXFORD, SOMERSET, and French soldiers, silent all.*

*War.* This is his tent; and see where stand his guard.

Courage, my masters! honour now or never! But follow me, and Edward shall be ours.

*First Watch.* Who goes there?

*Second Watch.* Stay, or thou diest!

[*Warwick and the rest cry all, 'Warwick! Warwick!' and set upon the Guard, who fly, crying, 'Arm! arm!' Warwick and the rest following them.*

*The drum playing and trumpet sounding, re-enter WARWICK, SOMERSET, and the rest, bringing the KING out in his gown, sitting in a chair. RICHARD and HASTINGS fly over the stage.*

*Som.* What are they that fly there?

*War.* Richard and Hastings: let them go; here is

The duke.

*K. Edw.* The duke! Why, Warwick, when we parted,

Thou call'dst me king.

*War.* Ay, but the case is alter'd: When you disgraced me in my embassy,

Then I degraded you from being king.

And come now to create you Duke of York.

Alas! how should you govern any kingdom,

That know not how to use ambassadors,

Nor how to be contented with one wife,

Nor how to use your brothers brotherly,

Nor how to study for the people's welfare,

Nor how to shroud yourself from enemies!

*K. Edw.* Yea, brother of Clarence, art thou here too!

Now, then I see that Edward needs must down.

Yet, Warwick, in despite of all mischance,

Of thee thyself and all thy complices,

Edward will always bear himself as king:

Though fortune's malice overthrow my state,

My mind exceeds the compass of her wheel.

*War.* Then, for his mind, be Edward England's king:

[*Takes off his crown.*

But Henry now shall wear the English crown,

And be true king indeed, thou but the shadow.

My Lord of Somerset, at my request,

See that forthwith Duke Edward be convey'd

Unto my brother, Archbishop of York.

When I have fought with Pembroke and his fellows,

I'll follow you, and tell what answer Lewis and the Lady Bona send to him.

Now, for a while farewell, good Duke of York.

[*They lead him out forcibly.*

*K. Edw.* What fate imposes, that men must needs abide;

It boots not to resist both wind and tide.

[*Exit, guarded.*

*Oxf.* What now remains, my lords, for us to do

But march to London with our soldiers!

*War.* Ay, that's the first thing that we have to do;

To free King Henry from imprisonment

And see him seated in the regal throne.

[*Exeunt.*

## SCENE IV. London. The palace.

*Enter QUEEN ELIZABETH and RIVERS.*

*Riv.* Madam, what makes you in this sudden change?

*Q. Eliz.* Why, brother Rivers, are you yet to learn

What late misfortune is befall'n King Edward?

*Riv.* What! loss of some pitch'd battle against Warwick?

*Q. Eliz.* No, but the loss of his own royal person.

*Riv.* Then is my sovereign slain?

*Q. Eliz.* Ay, almost slain, for he is taken prisoner,

Either betray'd by falsehood of his guard

(Or by his foe surprised at unawares;

And, as I further have to understand,

Is now committed to the Bishop of York,

Fell Warwick's brother and by that our foe.

*Riv.* These news I must confess are full of grief;

Yet, gracious madam, bear it as you may:

Warwick may lose, that now hath won the day.

*Q. Eliz.* Till then fair hope must hinder life's decay.

And I the rather wean me from despair

For love of Edward's offspring in my womb:

This is it that makes me bride passion

And bear with mildness my misfortune's cross:

Ay, ay, for this I draw in many a tear

And stop the rising of blood-sucking sighs,

Lest with my sighs or tears I blast or drown

King Edward's fruit, true heir to the English crown.

*Riv.* But, madam, where is Warwick then become?

*Q. Eliz.* I am inform'd that he comes towards London.

To set the crown once more on Henry's head:

Guess thou the rest; King Edward's friends must down.

But, to prevent the tyrant's violence,—

For trust not him that hath once broken faith,—

I'll hence forthwith unto the sanctuary

To save at least the heir of Edward's line:

There shall I sit secure from force and fear.

Come, therefore, let us fly while we may.

[*Warwick takes us we are sure to the sanctuary.*

SCENE V. *A park near Middleham Castle in Yorkshire.*

*Enter GLOUCESTER, LORD HASTINGS, and SIR WILLIAM STANLEY.*

*Glos.* Now, my Lord Hastings and Sir William Stanley,  
Leave off to wonder why I drew you hither,  
Into this chiefest thicket of the park.  
Thus stands the case: you know our king, my brother

Is prisoner to the bishop here, at whose hands  
He hath good usage and great liberty,  
And, often but attended with weak guard,  
Comes hunting this way to disport himself.  
I have advertised him by secret means  
That if about this hour he make this way  
Under the colour of his usual game,  
He shall here find his friends with horse and men  
To set him free from his captivity.

*Enter KING EDWARD and a Huntsman with him.*

*Hunt.* This way, my lord; for this way lies the game.

*K. Edw.* Nay, this way, man: see where the huntsmen stand.

Now, brother of Gloucester, Lord Hastings, and the rest,

Stand you thus close, to steal the bishop's deer?  
*Glos.* Brother, the time and case requireth haste:

Your horse stands ready at the park-corner.

*K. Edw.* But whither shall we then?  
*Hast.* To Lynn, my lord, so

And ship from thence to Flanders.  
*Glos.* Well guess'd, believe me; for that was my meaning.

*K. Edw.* Stanley, I will requite thy forwardness.

*Glos.* But wherefore stay we? 'tis no time to talk.

*K. Edw.* Huntsman, what say'st thou! wilt thou go along?

*Hunt.* Better do so than tarry and be hang'd.

*Glos.* Come then, away; let's ha' no more ado.

*K. Edw.* Bishop, farewell: shield thee from Warwick's frown;  
And pray that I may repossess the crown.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI. *London. The Tower.*

*Flourish. Enter KING HENRY, CLARENCE, WARWICK, SOMERSET, young RICHMOND, OXFORD, MONTAGUE, and Lieutenant of the Tower.*

*K. Hen.* Master Lieutenant, now that God  
Has shewn Edward from the regal seat,  
And left me in my captive state to liberty,  
And that I hope, my sorrows unto joys,  
What arguments what are thy due fees?

*Lieu.* Subjects may challenge nothing of their sovereigns;

But if an humble prayer may prevail,  
I then crave pardon of your majesty.

*K. Hen.* For what, lieutenant? for well using me?

Nay, be thou sure I'll well requite thy kindness,  
For that it made my imprisonment a pleasure;  
Ay, such a pleasure as incaged birds  
Conceive when after many moody thoughts  
At last by notes of household harmony  
They quite forget their loss of liberty.

But, Warwick, after God, thou set'st me free,  
And chiefly therefore I thank God and thee;  
He was the author, thou the instrument.

Therefore, that I may conquer fortune's spite  
By living low, where fortune cannot hurt me,  
And that the people of this blessed land  
May not be punish'd with my thwarting stars,  
Warwick, although my head still wear the crown,

I here resign my government to thee.  
For thou art fortunate in all thy deeds.

*War.* Your grace hath still been famed for virtuous;

And now may seem as wise as virtuous,  
By spying and avoiding fortune's malice,  
For few men rightly temper with the stars:  
Yet in this one thing let me blame your grace,  
For choosing me when Clarence is in place.

*Clar.* No, Warwick, thou art worthy of the sway,

To whom the heavens in thy nativity  
Adjudget an olive branch and laurel crown,  
As likely to be blest in peace and war;  
And therefore I yield thee my free consent.

*War.* And I choose Clarence only for protector.

*K. Hen.* Warwick and Clarence, give me both your hands:

Now join your hands, and with your hands your hearts,

That no dissension hinder government: 40  
I make you both protectors of this land,

While I myself will lead a private life  
And in devotion spend my latter days,

To sin's rebuke and my Creator's praise.

*War.* What answers Clarence to his sovereign's will?

*Clar.* That he consents, if Warwick yield consent;

For on thy fortune I repose myself.

*War.* Why, then, though loath, yet must I be content:

We'll yoke together, like a double shadow  
To Henry's body, and supply his place: 50  
I mean, in bearing weight of government,

While he enjoys the honour and his ease.  
And, Clarence, now then it is more than needful  
Forthwith that Edward be pronounced a traitor,  
And all his lands and goods be confiscate.

*Clar.* What else? and that succession be determined.

*War.* Ay, therein Clarence shall not want his part.

*K. Hen.* But, with the first of all your chief affairs,

Let me entreat, for I command no more, 50

That Margaret your queen and my son Edward  
Be sent for, to return from France with speed;  
For, till I see them here, by doubtful fear  
My joy of liberty is half eclipsed.

*Clar.* It shall be done, my sovereign, with  
all speed.

*K. Hen.* My Lord of Somerset, what youth  
is that,  
Of whom you seem to have so tender care?

*Som.* My liege, it is young Henry, earl of  
Richmond.

*K. Hen.* Come hither, England's hope.  
[*Lays his hand on his head.*] If secret powers  
Suggest but truth to my divining thoughts,  
This pretty lad will prove our country's bliss.  
His looks are full of peaceful majesty, 71  
His head by nature framed to wear a crown,  
His hand to wield a sceptre, and himself  
Likely in time to bless a regal throne.  
Make much of him, my lords, for this is he  
Must help you more than you are hurt by me.

*Enter a Post.*

*War.* What news, my friend!

*Post.* That Edward is escaped from your  
brother.

And fled, as he hears since, to Burgundy.

*War.* Unsaoury news! but how made he  
escape? 80

*Post.* He was convey'd by Richard Duke of  
Gloucester

And the Lord Hastings, who attended him  
In secret ambush on the forest side  
And from the bishop's huntmen rescued him;  
For hunting was his daily exercise.

*War.* My brother was too careless of his  
charge.

But let us hence, my sovereign, to provide  
A salve for any sore that may betide.

[*Exeunt all but Somerset, Richmond,  
and Oxford.*]

*Som.* My lord, I like not of this flight of  
Edward's;

For doubtless Burgundy will yield him help, 90  
And we shall have more wars before 't be long.

As Henry's late presaging prophecy  
Did glad my heart with hope of this young

Richmond.

So doth my heart misgive me, in these conflicts  
What may befall him, to his harm and ours:  
Therefore, Lord Oxford, to prevent the worst,  
Forthwith we'll send him hence to Brittany,  
Till storms be past of civil enmity.

*Oxf.* Ay, for if Edward repossess the crown,  
'Tis like that Richmond with the rest shall 100  
down.

*Som.* It shall be so; he shall to Brittany.

Come, therefore, let's about it speedily.  
[*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE VII. Before York.

*Flourish.* Enter KING EDWARD, GLOUCESTER,  
HASTINGS, and Soldiers.

*K. Edw.* Now, brother Richard, Lord  
Hastings, and the rest,  
Yet thus far fortune maketh us amends,  
And says that once more I shall interchange

My waned state for Henry's regal crown.  
Well have we pass'd and now repass'd the seas  
And brought desired help from Burgundy:  
What then remains, we being thus arrived  
From Ravenspurgh haven before the gates of  
York,

But that we enter, as into our dukedom!  
*Glou.* The gates made fast! Brother, I like  
not this;

For many men that stumble at the threshold  
Are well foretold that danger lurks within.

*K. Edw.* Tush, man, abodements must not  
now affright us:

By fair or foul means we must enter in,  
For hither will our friends repair to us.

*Hast.* My liege, I'll knock once more to  
summon them.

*Enter, on the walls, the Mayor of York, and  
his Brethren.*

*May.* My lords, we were forewarned of your  
coming,

And shut the gates for safety of ourselves;  
For now we owe allegiance unto Henry.

*K. Edw.* But, master mayor, if Henry be  
your king, 80

Yet Edward at the least is Duke of York.

*May.* True, my good lord; I know you for  
no less.

*K. Edw.* Why, and I challenge nothing but  
my dukedom,

As being well content with that alone.

*Glou.* [Aside] But when the fox hath once  
got in his nose,

He'll soon find means to make the body follow.

*Hast.* Why, master mayor, why stand you  
in a doubt?

Open the gates; we are King Henry's friends.

*May.* Ay, say you so! the gates shall then  
be open'd. [They descend.]

*Glou.* A wise stout captain, and soon per-  
suaded! 90

*Hast.* The good old man would fain that all  
were well,

So 'twere not 'long of him; but being enter'd,  
I doubt not, I, but we shall soon persuade

Both him and all his brothers unto reason.

*Enter the Mayor and two Aldermen, below.*

*K. Edw.* So, master mayor: these gates  
must not be shut

But in the night or in the time of war.

What! fear not, man, but yield me up the  
keys; [Takes his keys.]

For Edward will defend the town and thee,  
And all those friends that deign to follow me.

*March.* Enter MONTGOMERY, with drum  
and soldiers.

*Glou.* Brother, this is Sir John Montgomery,  
Our trusty friend, unless I be deceived. 41

*K. Edw.* Welcome, Sir John! But why  
come you in arms?

*Mont.* To help King Edward in his time of  
storm.

As every loyal subject ought to do.

*K. Edw.* Thanks, good Montgomery; but  
we now forget

Our title to the crown and only claim

Our children till God please to send the rest.

*Mont.* Then fare you well, for I will hence again:

I came to serve a king and not a duke.

*Drummer*, strike up, and let us march away. *Go*

*[The drum begins to march.]*

*K. Hen.* Nay, stay, Sir John, awhile, and we'll debate

By what safe means the crown may be recover'd.

*Mont.* What talk you of debating? in few words,

If you'll not here proclaim yourself our king,

I'll leave you to your fortune and be gone

To keep them back that come to succour you:

Why shall we fight, if you pretend no title?

*Glov.* Why, brother, wherefore stand you on nice points?

*K. Hen.* When we grow stronger, then we'll make our claim:

Till then, 'tis wisdom to conceal our meaning.

*Hast.* Away with scrupulous wit! now arms must rule.

*Glov.* And fearless minds climb soonest unto crowns.

Brother, we will proclaim you out of hand:

The trait thereof will bring you many friends.

*K. Hen.* Then be it as you will; for 'tis my right.

And Henry but usurps the diadem.

*Mont.* Ay, now my sovereign speaketh like himself;

And now will I be Edward's champion.

*Hast.* Sound trumpet; Edward shall be here proclaim'd:

Come, fellow-soldier, make thou proclamation. *[Flourish.]*

*Sold.* Edward the Fourth, by the grace of God, king of England and France, and lord of Ireland, &c.

*Mont.* And whoso'er gainsays King Edward's right,

By this I challenge him to single fight.

*[Thomas down his pennantlet.]*

*Al.* Long live Edward the Fourth!

*K. Hen.* Thanks, brave Montgomery; and thanks unto you all:

If fortune serve me, I'll requite this kindness. Now, for this night, let's harbour here in York;

And when the morning sun shall raise his car Above the border of this horizon,

We'll forward towards Warwick and his mates; For well I wot that Henry is no soldier.

*Al.* Forward Clarence! how evil it becoms thee, To sister Henry and forsake thy brother!

Yet, as we may, we'll meet both thee and Warwick.

Come on, brave soldiers: doubt not of the day, And, that once gotten, doubt not of large pay.

*[Exeunt.]*

*SOME VIII. London. The palace.*

*Flourish. Enter KING HENRY, WARWICK, MONTAIGU, CLARENCE, EXETER, and OXFORD.*

*War.* What counsel, lords? Edward from

*Bath.*

With hasty Germans and blunt Hollanders, Hath pass'd in safety through the narrow seas,

And with his troops doth march again to London:

And many giddy people flock to him.

*K. Hen.* Let a levy men, and beat him back again.

*Clar.* A little fire is quickly trodden out;

Which, being suffer'd, rivers cannot quench.

*War.* In Warwickshire I have true-hearted friends,

Not mutinous in peace, yet bold in war:

Those will I muster up: and thou, son Clarence,

Shalt stir up in Suffolk, Norfolk and in Kent,

The knights and gentlemen to come with thee:

Thou, brother Montague, in Buckingham,

Northampton and in Leicestershire, shalt find

Men well inclined to hear what thou command'st:

And thou, brave Oxford, wondrous well beloved,

In Oxfordshire shalt muster up thy friends.

My sovereign, with the loving citizens,

Like to his island girl in with the ocean,

Or modest Dian circled with her nymphs,

Shall rest in London till we come to him.

Fair lords, take leave and stand not to reply.

Farewell, my sovereign.

*K. Hen.* Farewell, my Hector, and my Troy's true hope.

*Clar.* In sign of truth, I kiss your highness' hand.

*K. Hen.* Well-minded Clarence, be thou fortunate!

*Mont.* Comfort, my lord; and so I take my leave.

*Oxf.* And thus I seal my truth, and bid adieu.

*K. Hen.* Sweet Oxford, and my loving Montague,

And all at once, once more a happy farewell.

*War.* Farewell, sweet lords: let's meet at Coventry.

*[Exeunt all but King Henry and Exeter.]*

*K. Hen.* Here at the palace will I rest awhile.

Cousin of Exeter, what thinks your lordship? Methinks the power that Edward hath in field

Should not be able to encounter mine.

*Exe.* The doubt is that he will seduce the rest.

*K. Hen.* That's not my fear; my need hath got me fame:

I have not stopp'd mine ears to their demands, Nor posted off their suits with slow delays;

My pity hath been balm to heal their wounds, My mildness hath allay'd their swelling griefs,

My mercy dried their water-flowing tears; I have not been desirous of their wealth,

Nor much oppress'd them with great subsidies. Nor forward of revenge, though they much err'd:

Then why should they love Edward more than me?

No, Exeter, these grooves challenge grace: And when the lion lewys upon the lamb,

The lamb will never cease to follow him.

*[Shout within. "A Lancaster! A Lancaster!"]*

*Ecc.* Hark, hark, my lord! what shouts are these!

*Enter KING EDWARD, GLOUCESTER, and soldiers.*

*K. Edw.* Seize on the shame-faced Henry, bear him hence;  
And once again proclaim us king of England.  
You are the fount that makes small brooks to flow:

Now stops thy spring; my sea shall suck them dry,

And swell so much the higher by their ebb.  
Hence with him to the Tower; let him not speak. [*Exeunt some with King Henry.*]

And, lords, towards Coventry bend we our course,

Where peremptory Warwick now remains:  
The sun shines hot; and, if we use delay,

60 Cold biting winter mars our hoped-for hay.

*Glou.* Away betimes, before his forces join,  
And take the great-grown traitor unawares:

Drive warriors, march ainain towards Coventry. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

## SCENE I. Coventry.

*Enter WARWICK, the Mayor of Coventry, two Messengers, and others upon the walls.*

*War.* Where is the post that came from valiant Oxford?

How far hence is thy lord, mine honest fellow?

*First Mess.* By this at Dunsmore, marching hitherward.

*War.* How far off is our brother Montague?

*Second Mess.* By this at Daintry, with a puissant troop.

*Enter SIR JOHN SOMERVILLE.*

*War.* Say, Somerville, what says my loving son?

And, by thy guess, how nigh is Clarence now?

*Som.* As Southam I did leave him with his forces,

And do expect him here some two hours hence. [*Drum heard.*]

*War.* Then Clarence is at hand; I hear his drum.

*Son.* It is not his, my lord; here Southam lies:

The drum your honour hears marcheth from Warwick.

*War.* Who should that be? belike, unlook'd-for friends.

*Son.* They are at hand, and you shall quickly know.

*March: flourish. Enter KING EDWARD, GLOUCESTER, and soldiers.*

*K. Edw.* Go, trumpet, to the walls, and sound a parle.

*Glou.* See how the surly Warwick mans the wall!

*War.* O unbid spite! is sportful Edward come!

Where slept our scouts, or how are they seduced?

That we could hear no news of his repair? 20

*K. Edw.* Now, Warwick, wilt thou ope the city gates,

Speak gentle words and humbly bend thy knee,  
Call Edward king and at his hands beg mercy?

And he shall pardon thee these outrages.

*War.* Nay, rather, wilt thou draw thy forces hence,

Confess who set thee up and pluck'd thee down,  
Call Warwick patron and be penitent?

And thou shalt still remain the Duke of York.

*Glou.* I thought, at least, he would have said the king;

Or did he make the jest against his will? 30

*War.* Is not a dukedom, sir, a goodly gift?

*Glou.* Ay, by my faith, for a poor earl to give:

I'll do thee service for so good a gift.

*War.* 'Twas I that gave the kingdom to thy brother.

*K. Edw.* Why then 'tis mine, if but by Warwick's gift.

*War.* Thou art no Atlas for so great a weight:

And, weakling, Warwick takes his gift again;

And Henry is my king, Warwick his subject.

*K. Edw.* But Warwick's king is Edward's prisoner:

And, gallant Warwick, do but answer this: 40

What is the body when the head is off?

*Glou.* Alas, that Warwick had no more forecast.

But, whilst he thought to steal the single ten,

The king was silly finger'd from the deck!

You left poor Henry at the Bishop's palace,

And, ten to one, you'll meet him in the Tower.

*K. Edw.* 'Tis even so; yet you are Warwick still.

*Glou.* Come, Warwick, take the time; kneel down, kneel down:

Nay, when? strike now, or else the iron cools.

*War.* I had rather chop this hand off at a blow,

And with the other fling it at thy face,

Than bear so low a sail, to strike to thee. 50

*K. Edw.* Sail how thou canst, have wind and tide thy friend,

This hand, fast wound about thy coal-black hair,

Shall, whilst thy head is warm and now cut off,  
Write in the dust this sentence with thy blood,  
Wind-changing Warwick now can change no more.

*Enter OXFORD, with drum and colours.*  
*War.* O cheeful colours! see where Oxford comes!

*Oxf.* Oxford, Oxford, for Lancaster!

[*He and his forces enter the city.*]

*Glou.* The gates are open, let us enter too.

*K. Edw.* So other foes may not upon our backs.

Stand we in good array; for they no doubt  
Will issue out again and bid us battle:  
If not, the city being but of small defence,  
We'll quickly rouse the traitors in the town.

*War.* O, welcome, Oxford! for we want thy help.

*Enter MONTAGUE, with drum and colours.*

*Mont.* Montague, Montague, for Lancaster!  
[*He and his forces enter the city.*]

*Glow.* Thou and thy brother both shall buy this treason

Even with the dearest blood your bodies bear.

*K. Edw.* The harder match'd, the greater victory:

My mind presseth happy gain and conquest.<sup>70</sup>

*Enter SOMERSET, with drum and colours.*

*Som.* Somerset, Somerset, for Lancaster!  
[*He and his forces enter the city.*]

*Glow.* Two of thy name, both Dukes of Somerset,

Have sold their lives unto the house of York;  
And thou shalt be the third, if this sword hold.

*Enter CLARENCE, with drum and colours.*

*War.* And lo, where George of Clarence sweeps along,

Of force enough to bid his brother battle;  
With whom an upright zeal to right prevails  
More than the nature of a brother's love!

Come, Clarence, come; thou wilt, if Warwick call.<sup>80</sup>

*Clar.* Father of Warwick, know you what this means?

[*Taking his red rose out of his hat.*]  
Look here, I throw my infamy at thee:

I will not ruinate my father's house,  
Who gave his blood to lime the stones together,  
And set up Lancaster. Why, trow'st thou, Warwick,

That Clarence is so harsh, so blunt, unnatural,  
To bend the fatal instruments of war

Against his brother and his lawful king?  
Perhaps thou wilt object my holy oath:

To keep that oath were more impiety  
Than Jephthah's, when he sacrificed his daughter.<sup>90</sup>

I am so sorry for my trespass made  
That, to deserve well at my brother's hands,

I here proclaim myself thy mortal foe,  
With resolution, wheresoe'er I meet thee—

As I will meet thee, if thou stir abroad—  
To plague thee for thy foul misleading me.

And so, proud-hearted Warwick, I defy thee,  
And to my brother turn my blushing cheeks.

Pardon me, Edward, I will make amends:<sup>100</sup>  
And, Richard, do not frown upon my faults.

For I will henceforth be no more unconstant.  
*K. Edw.* Now welcome more, and ten times

more beloved,  
Than if thou never hadst deserved our hate.

*Glow.* Welcome, good Clarence; this is brother-like.

*War.* O passing traitor, perjured and unjust!

*K. Edw.* What, Warwick, wilt thou leave the town and fight?

Or shall we beat the stones about thine ears?

*War.* Alas, I am not coupd here for defence!

I will away towards Barnet presently,<sup>110</sup>  
And bid thee battle, Edward, if thou dar'st.

*K. Edw.* Yes, Warwick, Edward dares, and leads the way.

Lords, to the field; Saint George and victory!  
[*Exeunt King Edward and his company.*]

*March.* Warwick and his company follow.

SCENE II. *A field of battle near Barnet.*

*Alarm and excursions. Enter KING EDWARD, bringing forth WARWICK wounded.*

*K. Edw.* So, lie thou there: die thou, and die our fear;

For Warwick was a bug that fear'd us all:  
Now, Montague, sit fast; I seek for thee,

That Warwick's bones may keep thine company.<sup>120</sup>

*War.* Ah, who is nigh? come to me, friend or foe,

And tell me who is victor, York or Warwick?  
Why ask I that? my mangled body shows,

My blood, my want of strength, my sick heart shows,

That I must yield my body to the earth  
And, by my fall, the conquest to my foe.<sup>130</sup>

Thus yields the cedar to the axe's edge,  
Whose arms gave shelter to the princely eagle,

Under whose shade the ramping lion slept,  
Whose top-branch overpeer'd Jove's spreading

tree  
And kept low shrubs from winter's powerful

wind.  
These eyes, that now are dimm'd with death's

black veil,  
Have been as piercing as the mid-day sun,

To search the secret treasours of the world:  
The wrinkles in my brows, now fill'd with

blood,  
Were liken'd oft to kingly sepulchres;

For who lived king, but I could dig his grave?  
And who durst smile when Warwick bent his

brow?

Lo, now my glory smear'd in dust and blood!  
My parks, my walks, my manors that I had,

Even now forsake me, and of all my lands  
Is nothing left me but my body's length.

Why, what is pomp, rule, reign, but earth and dust?

And, live we how we can, yet die we must.

*Enter OXFORD and SOMERSET.*

*Som.* Ah, Warwick, Warwick! wert thou as we are,

We might recover all our loss again:<sup>140</sup>  
The queen from France hath brought a puissant

power:  
Even now we heard the news: ah, couldst thou

fly!

*War.* Why, then I would not fly. Ah, Montague,

If thou be there, sweet brother, take my hand,  
And with thy lips keep in my soul awhile!

Thou lovest me not; for, brother, if thou  
Thy tears would wash this cold congealed

That glues my lips and will not let me speak.  
Come quickly, Montague, or I am dead.

*Som.* Ah, Warwick! Montague hath breathed his last;<sup>150</sup>

And to the latest gasp cried out for Warwick  
And said 'Commend me to my valiant brother.'  
And more he would have said, and more he  
spoke,

Which sounded like a clamour in a vault,  
That might not be distinguish'd; but at last  
I well might hear, deliver'd with a groan,  
'O, farewell, Warwick!'

*War.* Sweet rest his soul! Fly, lords, and  
save yourselves;

For Warwick bids you all farewell, to meet in  
heaven. *[Dies.]*

*Oxf.* Away, away, to meet the queen's great  
power! *[Here they bear away his body.]*  
*Exeunt.*

### SCENE III. Another part of the field.

*Flourish. Enter KING EDWARD in triumph;  
with GLOUCESTER, CLARENCE, and the rest.*

*K. Edw.* Thus far our fortune keeps an  
upward course,  
And we are graced with wreaths of victory.  
But, in the midst of this bright-shining day,  
I spy a black, suspicious, threatening cloud,  
That will encounter with our glorious sun,  
Ere he attain his easeful western bed:

I mean, my lords, those powers that the queen  
Hath raised in Gallia have arrived our coast  
And, as we hear, march on to fight with us.

*Clar.* A little gale will soon disperse that  
cloud

And blow it to the source from whence it came  
The very beams will dry those vapours up,  
For every cloud engenders not a storm.

*Glow.* The queen is valued thirty thousand  
strong,

And Somerset, with Oxford, fled to her:  
If she have time to breathe, be well assured  
Her faction will be full as strong as ours.

*K. Edw.* We are advertised by our loving  
friends

That they do hold their course toward Tewks-  
bury:

We, having now the best at Barnet field,  
Will thither straight, for willingness rides way;  
And, as we march, our strength will be aug-  
mented

In every county as we go along.  
Strike up the drum; cry 'Courage!' and away  
*[Exeunt.]*

### SCENE IV. Plains near Tewksbury.

*March. Enter QUEEN MARGARET, PRINCE  
EDWARD, SOMERSET, OXFORD, and soldiers.*

*Q. Mar.* Great lords, wise men ne'er sit and  
wail their loss,

But cheerly seek how to redress their harms.  
What though the mast be now blown overboard,  
The cable broke, the holding-anchor lost,  
And half our sailors swallow'd in the flood?

Yet lives our pilot still. Is't meet that he  
Should leave the helm and like a fearful lad  
With tearful eyes add water to the sea

And give more strength to that which hath too  
much,

While, in his moans, the ship splits on the rock,

Which industry and courage might have saved!  
Ah, what a shame! ah, what a fault were this!  
Say Warwick was our anchor; what of that!  
And Montague our topmast; what of him!  
Our slaughter'd friends the tackles; what of  
these!

Why, is not Oxford here another anchor?  
And Somerset another goodly mast?

The friends of France our shrouds and tack-  
lings!

And, though unskilful, why not Ned and I  
For once allow'd the skilful pilot's charge?

We will not from the helm to sit and weep,  
But keep our course, though the rough wind  
say no,

From shelves and rocks that threaten us with  
wreck.

As good to chide the waves as speak them fair.  
And what is Edward but a ruthless sea?

What Clarence but a quicksand of deceit?  
And Richard but a ragged fatal rock?

All these the enemies to our poor bark.  
Say you can swim; alas, 'tis but a while!

Tread on the sand; why, there you quickly  
sink:

Bestride the rock; the tide will wash you off,  
Or else you famish; that's a threefold death.

This speak I, lords, to let you understand,  
If case some one of you would fly from us,

That there's no hoped-for mercy with the  
brothers

More than with ruthless waves, with sands and  
rocks.

Why, courage then! what cannot be avoided  
'Twere childish weakness to lament or fear.

*Prince.* Methinks a woman of this valiant  
spirit

Should, if a coward heard her speak these  
words,

Infuse his breast with magnanimity  
And make him, naked, foil a man at arms,

I speak not this as doubting any here;  
For did I but suspect a fearful man,

He should have leave to go away betimes,  
Lest in our need he might infect another

And make him of like spirit to himself.  
If any such be here—as God forbid!—

Let him depart before we need his help.  
*Oxf.* Women and children of, so high a

courage,

And warriors faint! why, 'twere perpetual  
shame.

O brave young prince! thy famous grandfather  
Doth live again in thee: long mayst thou live

To bear his image and renew his glories!  
*Som.* And he that will not fight for such

a hope,

Go home to bed, and like the owl by day,  
If he arise, be mock'd and wonder'd at.

*Q. Mar.* Thanks, gentle Somerset; sweet  
Oxford, thanks.

*Prince.* And take his thanks that yet hath  
nothing else.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Prepare you, lords, for Edward is at  
hand.

Ready to fight; therefore be resolute.

*Oxf.* I thought no less: it is his policy  
To haste thus fast, to find us unprovided.

*Som.* But he's deceived; we are in readiness.

*Q. Mar.* This cheers my heart, to see your  
forwardness.

*Oxf.* Here pitch our battle; hence we will  
not budge.

*Flourish and march.* Enter KING EDWARD,  
GLOUCESTER, CLARENCE, and soldiers.

*K. Edw.* Brave followers, yonder stands the  
thorny wood,  
Which, by the heavens' assistance and your  
strength,

Must by the roots be hewn up yet ere night.  
I need not add more fuel to your fire, 70

For well I wot ye blaze to burn them out:  
Give signal to the fight, and to it, lords!

*Q. Mar.* Lords, knights, and gentlemen,  
what I should say

My tears gainsay: for every word I speak,  
Ye see, I drink the water of mine eyes.

Therefore, no more but this: Henry, your sove-  
reign,

Is prisoner to the foe; his state usurp'd,  
His realm a slaughter-house, his subjects slain,

His statutes cancell'd and his treasure spent;  
And yonder is the wolf that makes this spoil. 80

You fight in justice: then, in God's name, lords,  
Be valiant and give signal to the fight.

*[Alarm: Retreat: Excursions. Exit.]*

#### SCENE V. Another part of the field.

*Flourish.* Enter KING EDWARD, GLOUCESTER,  
CLARENCE, and soldiers; with QUEEN MAR-  
GARET, OXFORD, and SOMERSET, prisoners.

*K. Edw.* Now here a period of tumultuous  
broils.

Away with Oxford to Hamme Castle straight:  
For Somerset, off with his guilty head.

Go, bear them hence; I will not hear them  
speak.

*Oxf.* For my part, I'll not trouble thee with  
words.

*Som.* Nor I, but stoop with patience to my  
fortune.

*[Exit Oxford and Somerset, guarded.]*

*Q. Mar.* So part we sadly in this troublous  
world.

To meet with joy in sweet Jerusalem.

*K. Edw.* Is proclamation made, that who  
finds Edward

Shall have a high reward, and he his life! 10  
*Glow.* It is: and lo, where youthful Edward  
comes!

*Enter soldiers, with PRINCE EDWARD.*

*K. Edw.* Bring forth the gallant, let us hear  
him speak.

What! can so young a thorn begin to prick?  
Edward, what satisfaction canst thou make

For bearing arms, for stirring up my subjects,  
And all the trouble thou hast turn'd me to?

*Prince.* Speak like a subject, proud ambitious  
York!

Suppose that I am now my father's mouth;

Resign thy chair, and where I stand kneel thou,  
Whilst I propose the selfsame words to thee, 20

Which, traitor, thou wouldst have me answer to.

*Q. Mar.* Ah, that thy father had been so  
resolved!

*Glow.* That you might still have worn the  
petticoat,

And ne'er have stol'n the breech from Lancaster.

*Prince.* Let *Æsop* fable in a winter's night;  
His curriish riddles sort not with this place.

*Glow.* By heaven, brat, I'll plague ye for  
that word.

*Q. Mar.* Ay, thou wast born to be a plague  
to men.

*Glow.* For God's sake, take away this captive  
scold.

*Prince.* Nay, take away this scolding crook-  
back rafter.

*K. Edw.* Peace, wilful boy, or I will charm  
your tongue.

*Clar.* Untutor'd lad, thou art too malapert.

*Prince.* I know my duty; you are all un-  
dutiful:

Lascivious Edward, and thou perjured George,  
And thou mis-shapen Dick, I tell ye all

I am your better, traitors as ye are:  
And thou usurp'st my father's right and mine.

*K. Edw.* Take that, thou likeness of this  
railer here. *[Stabs him.]*

*Glow.* Sprawl'st thou? take that, to end thy  
agony. *[Stabs him.]*

*Clar.* And there's for twitting me with per-  
jury. *[Stabs him.]* 40

*Q. Mar.* O, kill me too!

*Glow.* Marry, and shall. *[Offers to kill her.]*

*K. Edw.* Hohl, Richard, hold; for we have  
done too much.

*Glow.* Why should she live, to fill the world  
with words?

*K. Edw.* What, doth she swoon? use means  
for her recovery.

*Glow.* Clarence, excuse me to the king my  
brother;

I'll hence to London on a serious matter:  
Ere ye come there, be sure to hear some news.

*Clar.* What? what?

*Glow.* The Tower, the Tower. *[Exit.]* 50

*Q. Mar.* O Ned, sweet Ned! speak to thy  
mother, boy!

Canst thou not speak? O traitors! murderers!

Thy that stol'st Caesar shed no blood at all,  
I'd not offend, nor were not worthy blame,

If this foul deed were by to equal it:  
He was a man; this, in respect, a child:

And men ne'er spend their fury on a child.  
What's worse than murderer, that I may name

it!

No, no, my heart will burst, an if I speak:  
And I will speak, that so my heart may burst.

Butchers and villains! bloody cannibals! 60  
How sweet a plant have you untimely crop'd!  
You have no children, butchers! if you had,  
The thought of them would have stirr'd up  
remorse:

But if you ever chance to have a child,  
Look in his youth to have him so cut off  
As, deathmen, you have rid this sweet young  
prince!



*K. Hen.* Away with her; go, bear her hence  
performe.

*Q. Mar.* Nay, never bear me hence, dispatch  
me here;  
Here sheathe thy sword, I'll pardon thee my  
death;

What wilt thou not? then, Clarence, do it  
thou.

*Clar.* By heaven, I will not do thee so much  
ease.

*Q. Mar.* Good Clarence, do; sweet Clarence,  
do thou do it.

*Clar.* Didst thou not hear me swear I would  
not do it?

*Q. Mar.* Ay, but thou wast to forswear thy-  
self:

Twice sin before, but now 'tis charity.

What wilt thou not? Where is that devil's  
butcher,

Hard favour'd Richard! Richard, where art  
thou?

Thou art not here: murder is thy alma-deed;  
Petitioners for blood thou ne'er put'st back.

*K. Hen.* Away, I say; I charge ye, bear her  
hence.

*Q. Mar.* So come to you and yours, as to  
this prince!

*K. Hen.* Where's Richard gone?

*Clar.* To London, all in post; and, as I guess,  
To make a bloody supper in the Tower.

*K. Hen.* He's sudden, if a thing comes in  
his head.

Now march we hence: discharge the common  
sort

With pay and thanks, and let's away to London  
And see our gentle queen how well she fares:

By this, I hope, she hath a son for me. *[Exit.]*

#### SCENE VI. London. The Tower.

*Enter KING HENRY AND GLOUCESTER, with  
the Lieutenant, on the walls.*

*Glou.* Good day, my lord. What, at your  
book so hard?

*K. Hen.* Ay, my good lord:—my lord, I  
should say rather;

'Tis sin to flatter: good' was little better:  
'Good Gloucester' and 'good devil' were alike,

And both preposterous; therefore, not 'good  
lord.'

*Glou.* Sirrah, leave us to ourselves: we must  
confer. *[Exit Lieutenant.]*

*K. Hen.* So flies the reckless shepherd from  
the wolf;

So first the harmless sheep doth yield his fleece  
And next his throat unto the butcher's knife.

What scene of death hath Rascallus now to act?

*Glou.* Suspicion always haunts the guilty  
mind;

The thief doth fear each bush an officer.  
*K. Hen.* The bird that hath been lined in a  
bush,

With trembling wings misdoubteth every bush;  
And I, the hapless male to one sweet bird,

Have now the fatal object in my eye  
Where my poor young was lined, was caught  
and kill'd.

*Glou.* Why, what a peevish fool was that of  
Crete,

That taught his son the office of a tow!

And yet, for all his wings, the fool was drownd.

*K. Hen.* I, Dardanus; my poor boy, Icarus;  
Thy father, Minos, that drownd our course;

The son that fear'd the sea, not my sweet boy  
Thy brother Edward, and himself the sea.

Whose envious gulf did swallow up his life.  
Ah, kill me with thy weapon, not with words!

My breast can better brook thy dagger's point  
Than can my ears that tragic history.

But wherefore dost thou come? is't for my life?

*Glou.* Think'st thou I am an executioner?

*K. Hen.* A persecutor, I am sure, thou art.  
If murdering innocents be executing,

Why, then thou art an executioner.

*Glou.* Thy son I kill'd for his presumption.

*K. Hen.* Hadst thou been kill'd when first  
thou didst presume,

Thou hadst not lived to kill a son of mine.

And thus I prophesy, that many a thousand;  
Which now mistrust no parcel of my fear,

And many an old man's sigh and many a  
widow's,

And many an orphan's water-standing eye—  
Men for their sons, wives for their husbands,

And orphans for their parents' timeless death—  
Shall rue the hour that ever thou wast born.

The owl shriek'd at thy birth,—an evil sign;  
The night-crow cried, boding luckless time;

Dogs howl'd, and hideous tempest shook down  
trees;

The raven rook'd her on the chimney's top,  
And chattering pies in dismal discords sung.

Thy mother felt more than a mother's pain,  
And yet brought forth less than a mother's hope.

To wit, an indigested and deformed lump,  
Not like the fruit of such a goodly tree.

Tooth hadst thou in thy head when thou wast  
born.

To signify thou camest to bite the world;  
And, if the rest be true which I have heard,

Thou camest—  
*Glou.* I'll hear no more: die, prophet, in  
thy speech: *[Exit King.]*

For this, amongst the rest, was I ordain'd.

*K. Hen.* Ay, and for much more slaughter  
after this.

O, God forgive my sins, and pardon thee! *[Exit.]*

*Glou.* What, will the aspiring blood of Lan-  
caster

Sink in the ground? I thought it would have  
mounted.

See how my sword weeps for the poor king's  
death!

O, may such purple tears be always shed  
From those that wish the downfall of our house!

If any spark of life be yet remaining,  
Down, down to hell; and say I sent thee thither:

*[Exit Gloucester.]*  
I, that have neither pity, love, nor fear,  
Indeed, 'tis true that Henry told me of;

For I have often heard my mother say  
I came into the world with my legs forward:

Had I not reason, think ye, to make haste,  
And seek their ruin that usurp'd our right?

The midwife wonder'd and the women cried  
 'O, Jesus bless us, he is born with teeth!'  
 And so I was; which plainly signified  
 That I should snarl and bite and play the dog.  
 Then, since I have heavens have shaped my  
 body so,  
 Let hell make cruel use of my mind to answer it.  
 I have no brother, like no brother; 80  
 And this word 'brother,' which greybeards call  
 divine,  
 Be resident in men like one another  
 And not in me: I am myself alone.  
 Clarence, beware; thou keep'st me from the  
 light:  
 But I will sort a pitchy day for thee;  
 For I will buzz abroad such prophecies  
 That Edward shall be fearful of his life,  
 And then, to purge his fear, I'll be thy death.  
 King Henry and the prince his son are gone:  
 Clarence, thy turn is next, and then the rest, 90  
 Counting myself but bad till I be best.  
 I'll throw thy body in another room  
 And triumph, Henry, in thy day of doom.

[Exit, with the body.]

SCENE VII. London. The palace.

*Flourish.* Enter KING EDWARD, QUEEN ELIZABETH, CLARENCE, GLOUCESTER, HASTINGS, a Nurse with the young Prince, and Attendants.

*K. Edw.* Once more we sit in England's royal throne,  
 Re-purchased with the blood of enemies.  
 What valiant foemen, like to autumn's corn,  
 Have we mow'd down in tops of all their pride!  
 Three Dukes of Somerset, threefold renown'd  
 For hardy and undoubted champions;  
 Two Cliffords, as the father and the son,  
 And two Northumberland; two braver men  
 Ne'er spur'd their coursers at the trumpet's  
 sound;  
 With them, the two brave bears, Warwick and  
 Montague, 20  
 That in their chains fetter'd the kingly lion  
 And made the forest tremble when they roar'd.

Thus have we swept suspicion from our seat  
 And made our footstool of security.  
 Come hither, Bess, and let me kiss my boy.  
 Young Ned, for thee, thine uncles and myself  
 Have in our armours watch'd the winter's night,  
 Went all afoot in summer's scalding heat,  
 That thou might'st repose the crown in peace;  
 And of our labours thou shalt reap the gain. 20  
*Glouc.* [Aside] I'll blast his harvest, if your  
 head were laid;

For yet I am not look'd on in the world.  
 This shoulder was ordain'd so thick to heave;  
 And heave it shall some weight, or break my  
 back:

Work thou the way,—and thou shalt execute.

*K. Edw.* Clarence and Gloucester, love my  
 lovely queen;

And kiss your princely nephew, brothers both.

*Clar.* The duty that I owe unto your majesty  
 I seal upon the lips of this sweet babe.

*Q. Elis.* Thanks, noble Clarence; worthy  
 brother, thanks. 30

*Glouc.* And, that I love the tree from whence  
 thou sprang'st,

Witness the loving kiss I give the fruit.  
 [Aside] To say the truth, so Judas kiss'd his  
 master.

And cried, 'all hail!' when as he meant all  
 harm.

*K. Edw.* Now am I seated as my soul de-  
 lights,

Having my country's peace and brothers' loves.

*Clar.* What will your grace have done with  
 Margaret?

Reignier, her father, to the king of France  
 Hath pawn'd the Sicils and Jerusalem,

And hither have they sent it for her ransom.

*K. Edw.* Away with her, and wait her hence  
 to France. 40

And now what rests but that we spend the  
 time

With stately triumphs, mirthful comic shows,  
 Such as befits the pleasure of the court?

Sound drums and trumpets! farewell sour  
 annoy! 50

For here, I hope, begins our lasting joy.

[Exeunt.]

# THE TRAGEDY OF KING RICHARD THE THIRD

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

KING EDWARD the Fourth.  
EDWARD, Prince of Wales, afterwards King Edward V.,  
RICHARD, Duke of York,  
GEORGE, Duke of Clarence,  
RICHARD, Duke of Gloucester, afterwards King Richard III.,  
A young son of Clarence.  
HENRY, Earl of Richmond, afterwards King Henry VII.  
CARDINAL BOURCHIER, Archbishop of Canterbury.  
THOMAS ROTHERHAM, Archbishop of York.  
JOHN MORTON, Bishop of Ely.  
DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM.  
DUKE OF NORFOLK.  
EARL OF SURREY, his son.  
EARL RIVERS, brother to Elizabeth.  
MARQUIS OF DORSET and LORD GREY, sons to Elizabeth.  
EARL OF OXFORD.  
LORD HASTINGS.  
LORD STANLEY, called also EARL OF DERBY.  
LORD LOVELL.  
SIR THOMAS VAUGHAN.  
SIR RICHARD RATCLIFF.  
SIR WILLIAM CATESBY.

SIR JAMES TYRREL.  
SIR JAMES BLOUNT.  
SIR WALTER HERBERT.  
SIR ROBERT BRAKENBURY, Lieutenant of the Tower.  
CHRISTOPHER URSWICK, a priest. Another Priest.  
TRESSEL and BERKELEY, gentlemen attending on the Lady Anne.  
Lord Mayor of London. Sheriff of Wiltshire.  
ELIZABETH queen to King Edward IV.  
MARGARET, widow of King Henry VI.  
DUCHESS OF YORK, mother to King Edward IV.  
LADY ANNE, widow of Edward Prince of Wales, son to King Henry VI.; afterwards married to Richard.  
A young daughter of Clarence (MARGARET PLANTAGENET).

Ghosts of those murdered by Richard III.,  
Lords and other Attendants; a Pursuivant,  
Scrivener, Citizens, Murderers, Messengers,  
Soldiers, &c.

SCENE: *England.*

## ACT I.

SCENE I. *London. A street.*

*Enter RICHARD, DUKE OF GLOUCESTER, solus.*

*Glow.* Now is the winter of our discontent  
Made glorious summer by this sun of York;  
And all the clouds that lour'd upon our house  
In the deep bosom of the ocean buried.  
Now are our brows bound with victorious  
wreaths;  
Our bruised arms hung up for monuments;  
Our stern alarms changed to merry meetings,  
Our dreadful marches to delightful measures.  
Grim-visaged war hath smooth'd his wrinkled  
front;  
And now, instead of mounting barbed steeds to  
fright the souls of fearful adversaries,  
He capers nimbly in a lady's chamber  
To the lascivious pleasing of a lute.  
But I, that am not shaped for tricks,  
Nor made to court an amorous king's glass;

I, that am rudely stamp'd, and want love's  
majesty  
To strut before a wanton ambling nymph;  
I, that am curtail'd of this fair proportion,  
Cheated of feature by dissembling nature,  
Deform'd, unfinish'd, sent before my time  
Into this breathing world, scarce half made up,  
And that so lamely and unfashionable  
That dogs bark at me as I halt by them;  
Why, I, in this weak piping time of peace,  
Have no delight to pass away the time,  
Unless to spy my shadow in the sun  
And descant on mine own deformity:  
And therefore, since I cannot prove a lover,  
To entertain these fair well-spoken days,  
I am determin'd to prove a villain.  
And hate the idle pleasures of these days.  
Plots have I laid, inductions dangerous,  
By drunken prophecies, libels and dreams,  
To set my brother Clarence and the king  
In deadly hate the one against the other;  
And if King Edward be as true and just

As I am subtle, false and treacherous,  
This day should Clarence closely be mew'd up,  
About a prophecy, which says that G  
Of Edward's heirs the murderer shall be. 40  
Dive, thoughts, down to my soul: here Clarence  
comes.

*Enter CLARENCE, guarded, and  
BRACKENBURY.*

Brother, good day: what means this armed  
guard  
That waits upon your grace?

*Clar.* His majesty,  
Tendering my person's safety, hath appointed  
This conduct to convey me to the Tower.

*Glow.* Upon what cause?

*Clar.* Because my name is George.  
*Glow.* Alack, my lord, that fault is none of  
yours:

He should, for that, commit your godfathers:  
O, belike his majesty hath some intent 49  
That you shall be new-christen'd in the Tower.  
But what's the matter, Clarence? may I know?

*Clar.* Yea, Richard, when I know; for I  
protest

As yet I do not: but, as I can learn,  
He hearkens after prophecies and dreams;  
And from the cross-row plucks the letter G,  
And says a wizard told him that by G  
His issue disinherited should be;

And, for my name of George begins with G,  
It follows in his thoughts that I am he. 59  
Thence, as I learn, and such like toys as these  
Have moved his highness to commit me now.

*Glow.* Why, this it is, when men are ruled  
by women:

'Tis not the king that sends you to the Tower;  
My Lady Grey his wife, Clarence, 'tis she  
That tempests him to this extremity.  
Was it not she and that good man of worship,  
Anthony Woodville, her brother there,  
That made him send Lord Hastings to the  
Tower,

secure  
But the queen's kindred and night-walking  
heralds  
That strudge betwixt the king and Mistress  
Shore.

Hast ye not what an humble suppliant  
Lord Hastings was to her for his delivery?

*Glow.*  
Got my  
I'll tell you what  
If we will keep in favour with the king,  
To be her men and wear her livery: 80  
The jealous overweening widow and herself,  
Since that our brother dubb'd them gentle-  
women,

Are mighty powers in this monarchy.  
*Clar.* I beseech your graces both to pardon  
me

His majesty hath recently given in charge  
That no man shall have private conference,  
Of what degree, rank, with his brother,

*Glow.* Even so; an't please your worship,  
Brackenbury,

You may partake of any thing we  
We speak no treason, man: we say the king 90  
Is wise and virtuous, and his noble queen  
Well struck in years, fair, and not jealous;  
We say that Shore's wife hath a pretty foot,  
A cherry lip, a bonny eye, a passing pleasing  
tongue;  
And that the queen's kindred are made gentle-  
folks:

How say you, sir? can you deny all this?  
*Brak.* With this, my lord, myself have  
nought to do.

*Glow.* Naught to do with Mistress Shore? I  
tell thee, fellow,

He that doth naught with her, excepting one,  
Were best he do it secretly, alone. 100

*Brak.* What one, my lord?  
*Glow.* Her husband, knave: wouldst thou  
betray me?

*Brak.* I beseech your grace to pardon me,  
and withal

Forbear your conference with the noble duke.  
*Clar.* We know thy charge, Brackenbury,  
and will obey.

*Glow.* We are the queen's subjects, and must  
obey.

Brother, farewell: I will unto the king;  
And whatsoever you will employ me in,  
Were it to call King Edward's widow sister,  
I will perform it to enfranchise you. 110  
Meantime, this deep disgrace in brotherhood  
Touches me deeper than you can imagine.

*Clar.* I know it pleaseth neither of us well.

*Glow.* Well, your imprisonment shall not be  
long;

I will deliver you, or else lie for you:

Meantime, have patience.

*Clar.* I must perforce. Farewell.

[*Exit Clarence, Brackenbury, and Guard.*]

*Glow.* Go, tread the path thou shalt  
ne'er return,

Simple, plain Clarence | I do love thee so,  
that I will shortly send thy soul to heaven,  
heaven will take the present at our hands.  
it who comes here! the new-deliver'd  
Hastings! 121

*Enter LORD HASTINGS.*

*Hast.* Good time of day unto my gracious  
lord!

*Glow.* As much unto my good lord chamber-  
lain!

Well are you welcome to the open air.  
How hath your lordship brook'd imprisonment?

*Hast.* With patience, noble lord, as prisoners  
must;

But I shall live, my lord, to give them thanks  
That were the cause of my imprisonment.

*Glow.* No doubt, no doubt; and so shall  
Clarence too;

For they that were your enemies are his, 130  
And have perver'd as much on him as you.

*Hast.* None pity that the eagle should be  
mew'd,

While kites and buzzards prey at liberty.  
*Glow.* What news amongst

*Hast.* No news so bad abroad as this at home;

The king is sickly, weak and melancholy,  
And his physicians fear him mightily.

*Glou.* Now, by Saint Paul, this news is bad indeed.

O, he hath kept an evil diet long,  
And overmuch consumed his royal person: 140  
This very grievous to be thought upon.  
What, is he in his bed?

*Hast.* He is.

*Glou.* Go you before, and I will follow you.  
[*Exit Hastings.*]

He cannot live, I hope; and must not die  
Till George be pack'd with post-horse up to heaven.

I'll in, to urge his hatred more to Clarence,  
With lies well steel'd with weighty arguments;  
And, if I fail not in my deep intent,  
Clarence hath not another day to live: 150  
Which done, God take King Edward to his mercy,

And leave the world for me to bustle in!  
For then I'll marry Warwick's youngest daughter.

What though I kill'd her husband and her father?

The readiest way to make the wench amends  
Is to become her husband and her father:  
The which will I; not all so much for love  
As for another secret close intent,  
By marrying her which I must reach unto.  
But yet I run before my horse to market: 160  
Clarence still breathes; Edward still lives and reigns:

When they are gone, then must I count my gains.  
[*Exit.*]

#### SCENE II. *The same. Another street.*

*Enter the corpse of KING HENRY the Sixth,  
Gentlemen with halberds to guard it; LADY ANNE being the mourner.*

*Anne.* Set down, set down your honourable load,

If honour may be shrouded in a hearse,  
Whilst I a while obsequiously lament  
The untimely fall of virtuous Lancaster.  
Poor key-cold figure of a holy king!  
Pale ashes of the house of Lancaster!  
Thou bloodless remnant of that royal blood!  
Be it lawful that I invoke thy ghost,  
To hear the lamentations of poor Anne,  
Wife to thy Edward, to thy slaughter'd son, 20  
Stab'd by the selfsame hand that made these wounds!

Lo, in these windows that let forth thy life,  
I pour the helpless balm of my poor eyes.  
Curst be the hand that made these fatal holes!  
Curst be the heart that had the heart to do it!  
Curst be the blood that let this blood from hence!  
More direful hap betide that hated wretch,  
That makes us wretched by the death of thee,  
Than I can wish to adders, spiders, toads,  
Or any creeping venom'd thing that lives!  
If ever he have child, abortive be it,  
Prodigious and untimely brought to light,  
Whose ugly and unnatural aspect

May fright the hopeful mother at the view;  
And that be heir to his unhappiness!  
If ever he have wife, let her be made  
As miserable by the death of him  
As I am made by my poor lord and thee!  
Come, now towards Chertsey with your holy load,  
Taken from Paul's to be interred there: 30  
And still, as you are weary of the weight,  
Rest you, whilst I lament King Henry's come.

#### *Enter GLOUCESTER.*

*Glou.* Stay, you that bear the corpse, and set it down.

*Anne.* What black magician conjures up this fiend,

To stop devoted charitable deeds?

*Glou.* Villains, set down the corpse; or, by Saint Paul,

I'll make a corpse of him that disobeys.

*Gent.* My lord, stand back, and let the coffin pass.

*Glou.* Unmanner'd dog! stand thou, when I command:

Advance thy halberd higher than my breast, 40  
Or, by Saint Paul, I'll strike thee to my foot,  
And spurn upon thee, beggar, for thy boldness.

*Anne.* What, do you tremble! are you all afraid?

Alas, I blame you not; for you are mortal,  
And mortal eyes cannot endure the devil.  
Avaunt, thou dreadful minister of hell!

Thou hast but power over his mortal body,  
His soul thou canst not have; therefore, be gone.

*Glou.* Sweet saint, for charity, be not so curst.

*Anne.* Foul devil, for God's sake, hence, and trouble us not; 50

For thou hast made the happy earth thy hell,  
Fill'd it with cursing cries and deep exclaims.

If thou delight to view thy heinous deeds,  
Behold this pattern of thy butcheries.

O, gentlemen, see, see! dead Henry's wounds  
Open their congeal'd mouths and bleed afresh!

Blush, blush, thou lump of foul deformity;  
For 'tis thy presence that exhales this blood

From cold and empty veins, where no blood dwells;

Thy deed, inhuman and unnatural, 60  
Provokes this deluge most unnatural.

O God, which this blood maketh, revenge his death!

O earth, which this blood drinketh, revenge his death!

Either heaven with lightning strike the murderer dead,

Or earth, gape open wide and eat him quick;

As thou dost swallow up this good king's blood,  
Which his hell-govern'd arm hath butcher'd!

*Glou.* Lady, you know no rules of chaste;  
Which renders good for bad, blessings for curses.

*Anne.* Villain, thou know'st no law of God nor man!

No beast so fierce but knows some touch of pity.

*Glou.* But I know none, and therefore have no beast.

*Anne.* O wonderful, when devils tell the truth!

*Glou.* More wonderful, when angels are so

Vouchsafe, divine perfection of a woman,  
Of these supposed evils, to give me leave,  
By circumstance, but to acquit myself.

*Anne.* Vouchsafe, defused infection of a man,

For these known evils, but to give me leave,  
By circumstance, to curse thy cursed self. 80

*Glou.* Fairer than tongue can name thee,  
let me have

Some patient leisure to excuse myself.

*Anne.* Fouler than heart can think thee,  
thou canst make

No excuse current, but to hang thyself.

*Glou.* By such despair, I should accuse my-  
self.

*Anne.* And, by despairing, shouldst thou  
stand excused;

For doing worthy vengeance on thyself,  
Which didst unworthy slaughter upon others.

*Glou.* Say that I slew them not!

*Anne.* Why, then they are not dead:  
But dead they are, and, devilish slave, by thee.

*Glou.* I did not kill your husband.

*Anne.* Why, then he is alive.

*Glou.* Nay, he is dead; and slain by Edward's  
hand.

*Anne.* In thy foul throat thou liest: Queen  
Margaret saw

Thy murderous falchion smoking in his blood;  
The which thou once didst bend against her  
breast,

But that thy brothers beat aside the point.

*Glou.* I was provoked by her slanderous  
tongue,

Which laid their guilt upon my guiltless  
shoulders.

*Anne.* Thou wast provoked by thy bloody  
mind,

Which never dreamt on aught but butcheries:  
Didst thou not kill this king?

*Glou.* I grant ye. 101

*Anne.* Dost grant me, hedgehog! then, God

grant me too

Thou mayst be damned for that wicked deed!

O, he was gentle, mild, and virtuous!

*Glou.* The fitter for the King of heaven, that  
hath him.

*Anne.* He is in heaven, where thou shalt  
never come.

*Glou.* Let him thank me, that help to send  
him thither;

For he was fitter for that place than earth.

*Anne.* And thou unfit for any place but hell.

*Glou.* Yes, one place else, if you will hear  
me name it. 110

*Anne.* Some dungeon.

*Glou.* Your bed-chamber.

*Anne.* Ill rest betide the chamber where  
thou liest!

*Glou.* So will it, madam, till I lie with you.

*Anne.* I hope so.

*Glou.* I know so. But, gentle Lady Anne,  
To have this been encounter of our wits,  
And fall somewhat into a slower method,

Is not the cause of the timeless deaths  
Of these Plantagenets, Henry and Edward,  
As blameful as the executioner!

*Anne.* Thou art the cause, and most accu-  
sation effect.

*Glou.* Your beauty was the cause of that  
effect;

Your beauty, which did haunt me in sleep  
To undertake the death of all the world;

So I might live one hour in your sweet bosom.

*Anne.* If I thought that, I tell thee, homicide,  
These nails should rend that beauty from my  
cheeks.

*Glou.* These eyes could never endure sweet  
beauty's wreck;

You should not blemish it, if I stood by:  
As all the world is cheered by the sun,

So I by that; it is my day, my life. 120

*Anne.* Black night o'ershadow thy day, and  
death thy life!

*Glou.* Curse not thyself, fair creature; thou  
art both.

*Anne.* I would I were, to be revenged on  
thee.

*Glou.* It is a quarrel most unnatural,  
To be revenged on him that loveth you.

*Anne.* It is a quarrel just and reasonable,  
To be revenged on him that slew my husband.

*Glou.* He that bereft thee, lady, of thy  
husband,

Did it to help thee to a better husband.

*Anne.* His better doth not breathe upon the  
earth. 140

*Glou.* He lives that loves thee better than  
he could.

*Anne.* Name him.

*Glou.* Plantagenet.

*Anne.* Why, that was he.

*Glou.* The selfsame name, but one of better  
nature.

*Anne.* Where is he?

*Glou.* Here. [*She spitteth at him.*]

Why dost thou spit at me?

*Anne.* Would it were mortal poison, for  
thy sake!

*Glou.* Never came poison from so sweet a  
place.

*Anne.* Never hung poison on a fouler soul.  
Out of my sight! thou dost infect my eyes.

*Glou.* Thine eyes, sweet lady, have infected  
mine. 150

*Anne.* Would they were basilisks, to strike  
thee dead!

*Glou.* I would they were, that I might die  
at once;

For now they kill me with a living death.

Those eyes of thine from mine have drawn salt  
tears,

Shamed their aspect with store of childish  
drops:

These eyes, which never shed remorseful tear,  
No, when my father York and Edward wept,

To hear the piteous moan that Rutland made  
When black-faced Clifford shook his sword at  
him;

Nor when thy wardlike father, like a child, 160  
Told the sad story of my father's death,  
And twenty times made pause to sob and weep

That all the standers-by had wet their cheeks,  
Like trees bedash'd with rain : in that sad time  
My manly eyes did scorn an humble tear ;  
And what these sorrows could not thence

exhale,  
Thy beauty hath, and made them blind with  
weeping.

I never sued to friend nor enemy ;  
My tongue could never learn sweet smoothing  
words :

But, now thy beauty is proposed my foe, 170  
My proud heart sues and prompts my tongue to  
speak. [*She looks scornfully at him.*]

Teach not thy lips such scorn, for they were  
made

For kissing, lady, not for such contempt.  
If thy revengeful heart cannot forgive,  
Lo, here I lend thee this sharp-pointed sword ;  
Which if thou please to hide in this true bosom,  
And let the soul forth that adoreth thee,  
I lay it naked to the deadly stroke,  
And humbly beg the death upon my knee.

[*He lays his breast open ; she offers at it  
with his sword.*]

*Now enter*

Edward,

But 'twas thy heavenly face that set me on.

[*Here she lets fall the sword.*]

Take up the sword again, or take up me.

Anne. Arise, dissembler : though I wish thy  
death,

I will not be the executioner.

Glow. Then bid me kill myself, and I will  
do it.

Anne. I have already.

Glow. Tush, that was in thy rage

Speak it again, and, even with the word,

That hand, which, for thy love, did kill thy  
love, 190

Shall, for thy love, kill a far truer love ;

To both their deaths thou shalt be accessory.

Anne. I would I knew thy heart.

Glow. 'Tis figured in my tongue.

Anne. I fear me both are false.

Glow. Then never man was true.

Anne. Well, well, put up your sword.

Glow. Say, then, my peace is made.

Anne. That shall you know hereafter.

Glow. But shall I live in hope ?

Anne. All men, I hope, live so.

Glow. Vouchsafe to wear this ring.

Anne. To take is not to give.

Glow. Look, how this ring encompasseth  
thy finger,

Even so thy breast encloseth my poor heart ;  
Wear both of them, for both of them are thine.

And if thy poor devoted suppliant may

But beg one favour at thy gracious hand,

Thou dost confirm his happiness for ever.

Anne. What is it ?

Glow. That it would please thee leave these  
and designs

To him that hath more cause to be a mourner,  
And presently repair to Crosby Place ;

Where, after I have solemnly interr'd

At Chertsey monastery this noble king,

and wet his grave with my repentant tears,  
will with all expedient duty see you :  
or divers unknown reasons, I beseech you,  
grant me this boon.

Anne. With all my heart ; and much it joys  
me too, 220

'o see you are become so penitent.

Tressel and Berkeley, go along with me.

Glow. Bid me farewell.

Anne. 'Tis more than you deserve ;

But since you teach me how to flatter you,

Imagine I have said farewell already.

[*Exeunt Lady Anne, Tressel, and Berkeley.*]

Glow. Sirs, take up the corpse.

Gent. Towards Chertsey, noble lord !

Glow. No, to White-Friars ; there attend my  
coming. [*Exeunt all but Gloucester.*]

Was ever woman in this humour woo'd ?

Was ever woman in this humour won ?

I'll have her ; but I will not keep her long. 230

What ! I, that kill'd her husband and his father,

To take her in her heart's extremest hate,

With curses in her mouth, tears in her eyes,

The bleeding witness of her hatred by ;

Having God, her conscience, and these bars

against me,

And I nothing to back my suit at all,

But the plain devil and dissembling looks,

And yet to win her, all the world to nothing !

Ha !

Hath she forgot already that brave prince, 240

Edward, her lord, whom I, some three months

since,

Stab'd in my angry mood at Tewkesbury ?

A sweeter and a lovelier gentleman,

Framed in the prodigality of nature,

Young, valiant, wise, and, no doubt, right royal,

The spacious world cannot again afford :

And will she yet debase her eyes on me,

That cropp'd the golden prince of this sweet

prince,

And made her widow to a woful bed !

On me, whose all not equals Edward's moiety ?

On me, that halt and am unshapen thus ? 250

My dukedom to a beggarly denier,

I do mistake my person all this while :

Upon my life, she finds, although I cannot,

Myself to be a marvellous proper man.

I'll be at charges for a looking-glass,

And entertain some score or two of tailors,

To study fashions to adorn my body :

Since I am crept in favour with myself,

I will maintain it with some little cost. 260

But first I'll turn you fellow in his grave ;

And then return lamenting to my love.

Shine out, fair sun, till I have bought a glass,

That I may see my shadow as I pass. [*Exit.*]

### SCENE III. The palace.

Enter QUEEN ELIZABETH, LORD RIVERS, and  
LORD GREY.

Riv. Have patience, madam ; there's no  
doubt his majesty

Will soon recover his accustomed health.

Grey. An that you break it ill, it makes him

Therefore, for God's sake, entertain good comfort,  
And cheer his grace with quick and merry words.

*Q. Eliz.* If he were dead, what would betide of me?

*Riv.* No other harm but loss of such a lord.

*Q. Eliz.* The loss of such a lord includes all harm.

*Grey.* The heavens have bless'd you with a goodly son,

To be your comforter when he is gone. 10

*Q. Eliz.* Oh, he is young, and his minority  
Is put unto the trust of Richard Gloucester,  
A man that loves not me, nor none of you.

*Riv.* Is it concluded he shall be protector?

*Q. Eliz.* It is determined, not concluded yet:  
But so it must be, if the king miscarry.

*Enter BUCKINGHAM and DERBY.*

*Grey.* Here come the lords of Buckingham  
and Derby.

*Buck.* Good time of day unto your royal  
grace!

*Der.* God make your majesty joyful as you  
have been!

*Q. Eliz.* The Countess Richmond, good my  
Lord of Derby, 20

To your good prayers will scarcely say amen.  
Yet Derby, notwithstanding she's your wife,  
And loves not me, be you, good lord, assured  
I hate not you for her proud arrogance.

*Der.* I do beseech you, either not believe  
The envious slanders of her false accusers;  
Or, if she be accused in true report,  
Bear with her weakness, which, I think, proceeds

From wayward sickness, and no grounded  
malice.

*Riv.* Saw you the king to-day, my Lord of  
Derby? 30

*Der.* But now the Duke of Buckingham  
and I  
Are come from visiting his majesty.

*Q. Eliz.* What likelihood of his amendment,  
lords?

*Buck.* Madam, good hope; his grace speaks  
cheerfully.

*Q. Eliz.* God grant him health! Did you  
confer with him?

*Buck.* Madam, we did: he desires to make  
amendment.

Between the Duke of Gloucester and your  
brothers,

And between them and my lord chamberlain;  
And sent to warn them to his royal presence.

*Q. Eliz.* Would all were well! but that will  
never be: 40

I fear our happiness is at the highest.

*Enter GLOUCESTER, HASTINGS, and DORSET.*

*Glow.* They do me wrong, and I will not  
endure it:

Who are they that complain unto the king,  
That I am cruel, am stern and love them not?  
They love his grace but lightly  
and with such dissention rumours.

Because I cannot flatter and speak fair,  
Smile in men's faces, smooth, deceive and cog,  
Duck with French nods and apish courtesy,  
I must be held a rancorous enemy. 50

Cannot a plain man live and think no harm,  
But thus his simple truth must be abused

By sliken, sly, insinuating Jacks?

*Riv.* To whom in all this presence speaks  
your grace?

*Glow.* To thee, that hast nor honesty nor  
grace.

When have I injured thee? when done thee  
wrong?

Or thee? or thee? or any of your faction?

A plague upon you all! His royal person,—

Whom God preserve better than you would  
wish!—

Cannot be quiet scarce a breathing-while, 60  
But you must trouble him with lewd com-  
plaints.

*Q. Eliz.* Brother of Gloucester, you mistake  
the matter.

The king, of his own royal disposition,  
And not provoked by any sutor else;

Aiming, belike, at your interior hatred,  
Which in your outward actions shows itself

Against my kindred, brothers, and myself,  
Makes him to send; that thereby he may gather

The ground of your ill-will, and so remove it.

*Glow.* I cannot tell: the world is grown so  
bad, 70

That wrens make prey where eagles dare not  
perch:

Since every Jack became a gentleman,  
There's many a gentle person made a Jack.

*Q. Eliz.* Come, come, we know your meaning.  
brother Gloucester;

You envy my advancement and my friends':  
God grant we never may have need of you!

*Glow.* Meantime, God grants that we have  
need of you:

Our brother is imprison'd by your means,  
Myself disgraced, and the nobility

Held in contempt; whilst many fair promotions  
Are daily given to ennoble those 80

That scarce, some two days since, were worth a  
noble.

*Q. Eliz.* By Him that raised me to this care-  
ful height

From that contented hap which I enjoy'd,  
I never did incense his majesty

Against the Duke of Clarence, but have been  
An earnest advocate to plead for him.

My lord, you do me shameful injury,  
Falsely to draw me in these vile suspects.

*Glow.* You may deny that you were not the  
cause 90

Of my Lord Hastings' late imprisonment.

*Riv.* She may, my lord, for—

*Glow.* She may, Lord Rivers! why, who  
knows not so?

She may do more, sir, than denying that:  
She may help you to many fair promotions

And then deny her aiding hand therein,  
And lay those honours on your high desert.

What may she not? She may, yea, marry, may  
she.

*Riv.* What, marry, may she? 100



*Glow.* What, marry, may she! marry with a king, 100  
 A bachelor, a handsome stripling too:  
 I wis your grandam had a worse match.  
*Q. Eliz.* My Lord of Gloucester, I have too long borne  
 Your blunt upbraidings and your bitter scoffs:  
 By heaven, I will acquaint his majesty  
 With those gross taunts I often have endured.  
 I had rather be a country servant-maid  
 Than a great queen, with this condition,  
 To be thus taunted, scorn'd, and baited at:

*Enter QUEEN MARGARET, behind.*

Small joy have I in being England's queen. 110

*Q. Mar.* And lessen'd be that small, God, I beseech thee!

Thy honour, state and seat is due to me.

*Glow.* What! threat you me with telling of the king!

Tell him, and spare not: look, what I have said I will avouch in presence of the king:

I dare adventure to be sent to the Tower.

'Tis time to speak; my pains are quite forgot.

*Q. Mar.* Out, devil! I remember them too well:

Thou slewest my husband Henry in the Tower,  
 And Edward, my poor son, at Tewksbury. 120

*Glow.* Ere you were queen, yea, or your husband's king,

I was a pack-horse in his great affairs;

A weeder-out of his proud adversaries,

A liberal rewarder of his friends:

To royalise his blood I split mine own.

*Q. Mar.* Yea, and much better blood than his or thine.

*Glow.* In all which time you and your husband Grey

Were factious for the house of Lancaster;

And, Rivers, so were you. Was not your husband

In Margaret's battle at Saint Alban's slain? 130

Let me put in your minds, if you forget,

What you have been ere now, and what you are;

Withal, what I have been, and what I am.

*Q. Mar.* A murderous villain, and so still thou art.

*Glow.* Poor Clarence did forsake his father, Warwick;

Yea, and forswore himself,—which Jesu pardon!

*Q. Mar.* Which God revenge!

*Glow.* To fight on Edward's party for the crown;

And for his meed, poor lord, he is maw'd up.

I would to God my heart were flint, like Edward's; 140

Or Edward's soft and pitiful, like mine:

I am too childish-foolish for this world.

*Q. Mar.* His thee to hell for shame, and leave the world.

Thou cacodemon! there thy kingdom is.

*Riv.* My Lord of Gloucester, in those busy days

Which here you wage to prove us enemies,  
 We follow'd then our lord, our lawful king:

So should we you, if you should be our king.

*Glow.* If I should be! I had rather be a pedlar:

Far be it from my heart, the thought of it! 150

*Q. Eliz.* As little joy, my lord, as you suppose

You should enjoy, were you this country's king.  
 As little joy may you suppose in me,

That I enjoy, being the queen thereof.

*Q. Mar.* A little joy enjoys the queen thereof;

For I am she, and altogether joyless.

can no longer hold me patient. *[Advancing.]*  
 fear me, you wrangling pirates, that fall out

in sharing that which you have pil'd from me!  
 Which of you trembles not that looks on me?

If not, that, I being queen, you bow like subjects, 160

Yet that, by you deposed, you quake like rebels!  
 O gentle villain, do not turn away!

*Glow.* Foul wrinkled witch, what makest thou in my sight?

*Q. Mar.* But repetition of what thou hast marr'd;

That will I make before I let thee go.

*Glow.* Wert thou not banished on pain of death?

*Q. Mar.* I was; but I do find more pain in banishment

Than death can yield me here by my abode.

A husband and a son thou owest to me; 170

And thou a kingdom; all of you allegiance:  
 The sorrow that I have, by right is yours,

And all the pleasures you usurp are mine.

*Glow.* The curse my noble father laid on thee,

When thou didst crown his waklike brows with paper

And with thy scorns drew'st rivers from his eyes,

And then, to dry them, gavest the duke a sheet  
 Steep'd in the faultless blood of pretty

England,—  
 His curses, then from bitterness of soul

Denounced against thee, are all fall'n upon thee; 180

And God, not we, hath plagued thy bloody deed.

*Q. Eliz.* So just is God, to right the innocent.

*Hast.* O, 'twas the foulest deed to slay that babe,

And the most merciless that e'er was heard of!

*Riv.* Tyrants themselves wept when it was reported.

*Dor.* No man but prophesied revenge for it.

*Buck.* Northumberland, then present, wept to see it.

*Q. Mar.* What! were you smiting all before I came,

Ready to catch each other by the throat,  
 And turn you all your hatred now on me! 190

Did York's dead cure prevail so much with heaven?

That Henry's death, my lovely Edward's death,  
 Their kingdoms' loss, my woful Northumberland,

Could all but answer for that hateful deed?  
 Can censure plume the clouds and smite the heaven?

Why, then, give way, dull clouds, to my quick curses!

For Edward my son, which was Prince of Wales,  
Die in his youth by like untimely violence! <sup>202</sup>  
Thyself a queen, for me that was a queen,  
Outlive thy glory, like my wretched self!  
Long mayst thou live to wail thy children's loss;  
And see another, as I see thee now,  
Deck'd in thy rights, as thou art stall'd in mine!  
Long die thy happy days before thy death;  
And, after many lengthen'd hours of grief,  
Die neither mother, wife, nor England's queen!  
Rivers and Dorset, you were standers by, <sup>210</sup>  
And so wast thou, Lord Hastings, when my son  
Was stabb'd with bloody daggers: God, I pray  
him,

That none of you may live your natural age,  
But by some unlook'd accident cut off!  
*Glow.* Have done thy charm, thou hateful  
wither'd hag!

*Q. Mar.* And leave out thee! stay, dog, for  
thou shalt hear me.

If heaven have any grievous plague in store  
Exceeding those that I can wish upon thee,  
O, let them keep it till thy sins be ripe,  
And then hurl down their indignation <sup>220</sup>  
On thee, the troubler of the poor world's peace!  
The worm of conscience still begnaw thy soul!  
Thy friends suspect for traitors while thou  
livest,

And take deep traitors for thy dearest friends!  
No sleep close up that deadly eye of thine,  
Unless it be whilst some tormenting dream  
Affrights thee with a hell of ugly devils!  
Thou elvish-mark'd, abortive, rooting hog!  
Thou that wast seal'd in thy nativity  
The slave of nature and the son of hell! <sup>230</sup>  
Thou slander of thy mother's heavy womb!  
Thou loathed issue of thy father's loins!  
Thou rag of honour! thou detested—

*Glow.* Margaret.

*Q. Mar.* Richard!

*Glow.*

*Q. Mar.* I call thee not.  
*Glow.* I cry thee mercy then, for I had  
thought

That thou hadst call'd me all these bitter names.

*Q. Mar.* Why, so I did; but look'd for no  
reply.

O, let me make the period to my curse!

*Glow.* 'Tis done by me, and ends in 'Mar-  
garet'.

*Q. Mar.* Thus have you breathed your curse

*Q. Mar.* Poor painted queen, vain flourish  
of my fortune!

Why strow'st thou sugar on that bottled spider,  
Whose deadly web ensnareth thee about!

God! thou wilt't a knife to kill thyself.  
Hime will come when thou shalt live for me  
These curse that poisonous bunch-back'd

Woe-boding woman, and thy frantic

Let them from thee move our patience.

*Q. Mar.* Foul shame upon you! you have  
all moved mine.

*Riv.* Were you well served, you would be  
taught your duty. <sup>230</sup>

*Q. Mar.* To serve me well, you all should  
do me duty.

Teach me to be your queen, and you my sub-  
jects:

O, serve me well, and teach yourselves that  
duty!

*Dor.* Dispute not with her; she is lunatic.

*Q. Mar.* Peace, master marquess, you are  
malapert:

Your fire-new stamp of honour is scarce current,  
(1) that your young nobility could judge

What 'twere to lose it, and be miserable!

They that stand high have many blasts to shake  
them;

And if they fall, they dash themselves to pieces.

*Glow.* Good counsel, marry! learn it, learn  
it, marquess. <sup>261</sup>

*Dor.* It toucheth you, my lord, as much as  
me.

*Glow.* Yea, and much more: but I was born  
so high,

Our sery buildeth in the cedar's top,  
And dallies with the wind and scorns the sun.

*Q. Mar.* And turns the sun to shade; alas!  
alas!

Witness my son, now in the shade of death;  
Whose bright out-shining beams thy cloudy  
wrath

Hath in eternal darkness folded up.  
Your sery buildeth in our sery's nest. <sup>270</sup>

(1) God, that seest it, do not suffer it;  
As it was won with blood, lost be it so!

*Buck.* Have done! for shame, if not for  
charity.

*Q. Mar.* Urge neither charity nor shame to  
me:

Uncharitably with me have you dealt,  
And shamefully by you my hopes are butcher'd.

My charity is outrage, life my shame;  
And in that shame still live my sorrow's rage!

*Buck.* Have done, have done.

*Q. Mar.* O princely Buckingham, I'll kiss  
thy hand. <sup>280</sup>

In sign of league and amity with thee:  
Now fair betal thee and thy noble house!

Thy garments are not spotted with our blood,  
Nor thou within the compass of my curse.

*Buck.* Nor no one here; for curses never pass  
The lips of those that breathe them in the air.

*Q. Mar.* I'll not believe but they ascend the  
sky,

And there awake God's gentle-sleeping peace.

(1) Buckingham, take heed of vuffer dog!

Look, when he fawns, he bites; and when he  
bites, <sup>290</sup>

His venom tooth will rankle to the death:  
Have not to do with him, beware of him!

Sin, death, and hell have set their marks on  
him.

And all their ministers attend on him.

*Glow.* What doth she say, my Lord of Buck-  
ingham?

*Buck.* Nothing that I respect, my gracious

*Q. Mar.* What, dost thou scorn me for my gentle counsel?  
 And soothe the devil that I warn thee from?  
 O, but remember this another day,  
 When he shall split thy very heart with sorrow,  
 And say poor Margaret was a prophetess! 301  
 Live each of you the subjects to his hate,  
 And he to yours, and all of you to God's!

[*Exit.*]

*Hast.* My hair doth stand on end to hear her curses.

*Riv.* And so doth mine: I muse why she's at liberty.

*Glow.* I cannot blame her: by God's holy mother,

She hath had too much wrong; and I repent my part thereof that I have done to her.

*Q. Eliz.* I never did her any, to my knowledge.

*Glow.* But you have all the vantage of her wrong. 310

I was too hot to do somebody good,  
 That is too cold in thinking of it now.

Marry, as for Clarence, he is well repaid;  
 He is frank'd up to fattening for his pains:

God pardon them that are the cause of it!

*Riv.* A virtuous and a Christian-like conclusion.

To pray for them that have done scathe to us.

*Glow.* So do I ever: [*Aside*] being well advised.

For had I cursed now, I had cursed myself.

[*Enter CATESBY.*]

*Cates.* Madam, his majesty doth call for you; 32

And for your grace; and you, my noble lords.

*Q. Eliz.* Catesby, we come. Lords, will you go with us?

*Riv.* Madam, we will attend your grace.

[*Exeunt all but Gloucester.*]

*Glow.* I do the wrong, and first begin to brawl.

The secret mischiefs that I set abroad  
 I lay unto the grievous charge of others.

Clarence, whom I, indeed, have laid in darkness,  
 I do bewep for many simple gulls;

Namely, to Hastings, Derby, Buckingham;  
 And say it is the queen and her allies 330

That stir the king against the duke my brother.  
 Now, they believe it; and withal what me

To be revenged on Rivers, Vaughan, Grey:

But then I sigh; and, with a piece of scripture,  
 Tell them that God bids us do good for evil:

And thus I clothe my naked villany

With old odd ends stolen out of holy writ;

And seem a saint, when most I play the devil.

[*Enter two Murderers.*]

But, soft! here come my executioners.

How now, my hardy, stout resolved mates! 34

Are you now going to dispatch this deed?

*First Murder.* We are, my lord; and come to have the warrant.

That we may be admitted where he is.

*Glow.* Well thought upon; I have it here about me. [*Gives the warrant.*]

When you have done, repair to Crosby Place.

But, sirs, be sudden in the execution,  
 Withal obdurate, do not hear him plead;

For Clarence is well-spoken, and perhaps

May move your hearts to pity, if you mark him.

*First Murder.* Tush!

Fear not, my lord, we will not stand to prate;

Talkers are no good doers: be assured

We come to use our hands and not our tongues.

*Glow.* Your eyes drop millstones, when fools' eyes drop tears:

I like you, lads; about your business straight;

Go, go, dispatch.

*First Murder.* We will, my noble lord.

[*Exeunt.*]SCENE IV. *London. The Tower.*[*Enter CLARENCE and BRAKENBURY.*]

*Brak.* Why looks your grace so heavily to-day?

*Clar.* O, I have pass'd a miserable night,

So full of ugly sights, of ghastly dreams,

That, as I am a Christian faithful man,

I would not spend another such a night,

Though 'twere to buy a world of happy days,

So full of dismal terror was the time!

*Brak.* What was your dream? I long to hear you tell it.

*Clar.* Methoughts that I had broken from the Tower,

And was embark'd to cross to Burgundy; 10

And, in my company, my brother Gloucester;

Who from my cabin tempted me to walk

Upon the hatches: thence we look'd toward

England,

And cited up a thousand fearful times,

During the wars of York and Lancaster

That had befall'n us. As we paced along

Upon the giddy footing of the hatches,

Methought that Gloucester stumbled; and, in

falling,

Struck me, that thought to stay him, overboard.

Into the tumbling billows of the main. 20

Lord, Lord! methought, what pain it was to

drown!

What dreadful noise of waters in mine ears!

What ugly sights of death within mine eyes!

Methought I saw a thousand fearful wrecks:

Ten thousand men that fishes gnaw'd upon;

Wedges of gold, great anchors, heaps of pearl,

Inestimable stones, unvalued jewels,

All scatter'd in the bottom of the sea:

Some lay in dead men's skulls; and, in those

holes

Where eyes did once inhabit, there were crept,

As 'twere in scorn of eyes, reflecting gems, 31

Which woo'd the slimy bottom of the deep,

And mock'd the dead bones that lay scatter'd

by

*Brak.* Had you such leisure in the time of

death

To gaze upon the secrets of the deep?

*Clar.* Methought I had; and often did I

stirve

To yield the ghost: but still the evil spirits

Kept in my soul, and would not let it forth:

To seek the empty, vast and wandering air;

But smother'd it within my panting bulk. 32

Which almost burst to belch it in the sea.

*Brak.* Awaked you not with this sore agony?

*Clar.* O, no; my dream was lengthen'd after  
his;

O, then began the tempest to my soul,  
Who pass'd, methought, the melancholy flood,  
With that grim ferryman which poets write of,  
Unto the kingdom of perpetual night.

The first that there did greet my stranger soul,  
Was my great father-in-law, renowned War-  
wick;

Who cried aloud, 'What scourge for perjury so  
Can this dark monarchy afford false Clarence?'  
And so he vanish'd: then came wandering by  
A shadow like an angel, with bright hair

Dabbled in blood; and he squeak'd out aloud,  
'Clarence is come; false, fleeting, perjured  
Clarence.'

That stabb'd me in the field by Tewksbury;  
Seize on him, Furies, take him to your tor-  
ments!

With that, methoughts, a legion of foul fiends  
Environ'd me about, and howled in mine ears  
Such hideous cries, that with the very noise so  
I trembling wak'd, and for a season after  
Could not believe but that I was in hell,  
Such terrible impression made the dream.

*Brak.* No marvel, my lord, though it af-  
frighted you;

I promise you, I am afraid to hear you tell it.

*Clar.* O Brakenbury, I have done those  
things,

Which now bear evidence against my soul  
For Edward's sake; and see how he requites  
me!

O God! if my deep prayers cannot appease thee,  
But thou wilt be avenged on my misdeeds, so

Yet excuse thy wrath in me alone,  
O, spare my guiltless wife and my poor children!

I pray thee, gentle keeper, stay by me;  
My soul is heavy, and I fain would sleep.

*Brak.* I will, my lord: God give your grace  
good rest! [*Clarence sleeps.*]

Sorrow breaks seasons and reposing hours,  
Makes the night morning, and the noon-tide  
night.

Princes have but their titles for their glories,  
An outward honour for an inward taint;

And, for unfelt imagination, so

They often feel a world of restless cares:  
So that, betwixt their titles and low names,  
There's nothing differs but the outward fame.

*Enter the two Murderers.*

*First Murd.* Ho! who's here?

*Brak.* In God's name what are you, and how  
came you hither?

*First Murd.* I would speak with Clarence,  
and I came hither on my legs.

*Brak.* Yes, are you so brief?

*Sec. Murd.* O sir, it is better to be brief than  
t tedious. Show him our commission; talk no  
more. [*Brakenbury reads it.*]

*Brak.* I am, in this, commanded to deliver  
The noble Duke of Clarence to your hands:

I will not reason what is meant hereby,  
Because I will be guiltless of the meaning.  
Here are the Murs, there sits the Duke asleep:

I'll to the king; and signify to him  
That thus I have resign'd my charge to you.

*First Murd.* Do so, it is a point of  
fate you well. [*Exit Brakenbury.*]

*Sec. Murd.* What, shall we stab  
sleeps!

*First Murd.* No; then he will say 'twas done  
cowardly, when he wakes.

*Sec. Murd.* When he wakes! why, fool, he  
shall never wake till the judgement-day.

*First Murd.* Why, then he will say we  
stabbed him sleeping.

*Sec. Murd.* The urging of that word 'judge-  
ment' hath bred a kind of remorse in me. so

*First Murd.* What, art thou afraid?

*Sec. Murd.* Not to kill him, having a war-  
rant for it; but to be damned for killing him,  
from which no warrant can defend us.

*First Murd.* I thought thou hadst been re-  
solute.

*Sec. Murd.* So I am, to let him live.

*First Murd.* Back to the Duke of Glouc-  
cester, tell him so. so

*Sec. Murd.* I pray thee, stay a while: I hope  
my holy humour will change: 'twas wont to hold  
me but while one would tell twenty.

*First Murd.* How dost thou feel thyself  
now?

*Sec. Murd.* 'Faith, some certain drops of  
conscience are yet within me.

*First Murd.* Remember our reward, when  
the deed is done.

*Sec. Murd.* Zounds, he dies: I had forgot  
the reward.

*First Murd.* Where is thy conscience now?

*Sec. Murd.* In the Duke of Gloucester's  
purse. so

*First Murd.* So when he opens his purse  
to give us our reward, thy conscience flies out.

*Sec. Murd.* Let it go; there's few or none  
will entertain it.

*First Murd.* How if it come to thee again?

*Sec. Murd.* I'll not meddle with it: it is a  
dangerous thing; it makes a man a coward: a  
man cannot steal, but it accuseth him; he can-  
not swear, but it checks him; he cannot lie with  
his neighbour's wife, but it detects him: 'tis a  
blushing shamefast spirit that mingles in a  
man's bosom; it fills one full of obstacles: it  
made me once restore a purse of gold that I  
found; it begets any man that keeps it: it is  
turned out of all towns and cities for a danger-  
ous thing; and every man that means to live  
well endeavours to trust to himself and so live  
without it.

*First Murd.* 'Zounds, it is even now at my  
elbow, persuading me not to kill the duke. so

*Sec. Murd.* Take the devil in thy mind, and  
believe him not: he would inlame with thee  
but to make thee sigh.

*First Murd.* Tut, I am strong-hearted, he  
cannot prevail with me, I warrant thee.

*Sec. Murd.* Spoke like a tall fellow that  
respects his reputation. Come, shall we to this  
gear?

*First Murd.* Take him over the shoulder with  
the hilts of thy sword, and then we will chop  
him in the melnays-bute in the next room. so

*Sec. Murd.* O excellent device! make a sop of him.

*First Murd.* Hark! he stirs: ah! I strike!

*Sec. Murd.* No, first let's reason with him.

*Clar.* Where art thou, keeper? give me a cup of wine.

*Sec. Murd.* You shall have wine enough, my lord, anon.

*Clar.* In God's name, what art thou?

*Sec. Murd.* A man, as you are. 170

*Clar.* But not, as I am, royal.

*Sec. Murd.* Nor you, as we are, loyal.

*Clar.* Thy voice is thunder, but thy looks are humble.

*Sec. Murd.* My voice is now the king's, my looks mine own.

*Clar.* How darkly and how deadly dost thou speak!

Your eyes do menace me: why look you pale?

Who sent you hither? Wherefore do you come?

*Both.* To, to, to—

*Clar.* To murder me?

*Both.* Ay, ay.

*Clar.* You scarcely have the hearts to tell me so. 180

And therefore cannot have the hearts to do it.

Wherein, my friends, have I offended you?

*First Murd.* Offended us you have not, but the king.

*Clar.* I shall be reconciled to him again.

*Sec. Murd.* Never, my lord; therefore prepare to die.

*Clar.* Are you call'd forth from out a world of men

To slay the innocent? What is my offence?

Where are the evidence that do accuse me?

What lawful quest have given their verdict up

Unto the frowning judge? or who pronounced

The bitter sentence of poor Clarence' death?

Before I be convict by course of law,

To threaten me with death is most unlawful.

I charge you, as you hope to have redemption

By Christ's dear blood shed for our grievous sins,

That you depart and lay no hands on me:

The deed you undertake is damnable.

*First Murd.* What we will do, we do upon

command.

*Sec. Murd.* And he that hath commanded is

the king.

*Clar.* Erroneous vessel! the great King of

kingdoms 190

Hath in the tables of his law commanded

That thou shalt do no murder: and wilt thou,

then,

Spurn at his edict and fulfil a man's?

Take heed; for he holds vengeance in his hands,

To hurl upon their heads that break his law.

*Sec. Murd.* And that same vengeance doth

he hurl on thee,

For false forswearing and for murder too:

Thou didst receive the holy sacrament,

To fight in quarrel of the house of Lancaster.

*First Murd.* And, like a traitor to the name

of God, 200

Didst break that vow; and with thy treacherous

blade

Unrip'dst the bowels of thy sovereign's son.

*Sec. Murd.* Whom thou wert sworn to cherish and defend.

*First Murd.* How canst thou urge God's dreadful law to us,

When thou hast broke it in so dear degree?

*Clar.* Alas! for whose sake did I that ill deed?

For Edward, for my brother, for his sake:

Why, sir,

He sends ye not to murder me for this;

For in this sin he is as deep as I. 220

If God will be revenged for this deed,

O, know you yet, he doth it publicly:

Take not the quarrel from his powerful arm;

He needs no indirect nor lawless course

To cut off those that have offended him."

*First Murd.* Who made thee, then, a bloody

minister,

When gullant-springing brave Plantagenet,

That princely novice, was struck dead by thee?

*Clar.* My brother's love, the devil, and my

rage.

*First Murd.* Thy brother's love, our duty,

and thy fault, 230

Provoke us hither now to slaughter thee.

*Clar.* Oh, if you love my brother, hate not

me;

I am his brother, and I love him well.

If you be hired for meed, go back again,

And I will send you to my brother Gloucester,

Who shall reward you better for my life

Than Edward will for tidings of my death.

*Sec. Murd.* You are deceived, your brother

Gloucester hates you.

*Clar.* O, no, he loves me, and he holds me

dear;

Go you to him from me.

*Both.* Ay, so we will. 240

*Clar.* Tell him, when that our princely father

York

Bless'd his three sons with his victorious arms,

And charged us from his soul to love each other,

He little thought of this divided friendship:

Did Gloucester think of this, and he will weep.

*First Murd.* Ay, millions; as he season'd

us to weep.

*Clar.* O, do not slander him, for he is kind.

*First Murd.* Right.

As snow in harvest. Thou decidest thyself:

'Tis he that sent us hither now to slaughter

thee. 250

*Clar.* It cannot be; for when I parted with

him,

He hugg'd me in his arms, and swore, with

sobs,

That he would labour my delivery.

*Sec. Murd.* Why, so he doth, now he delivers

thee

From this world's thralldom to the joys of

heaven.

*First Murd.* Make peace with God, for you

must die, my lord.

*Clar.* Hast thou that holy feeling in thy soul,

To counsel me to make my peace with God,

And art thou yet to thy own soul so kind,

That thou wilt war with God by murdering me?

Ah, sir, consider, he that set you on

To do this deed will hate you for the deed.

*Sec. Murd.* What shall we do?

*Clar.* Relent, and save your souls.

*First Murd.* Relent! 'tis cowardly and womanish.

*Clar.* Not to relent is beastly, savage, devilish.

Which of you, if you were a prince's son,  
Being pent from liberty, as I am now,  
If two such murderers as yourselves came to you,

Would not entreat for life!

My friend, I spy some pity in thy looks; 270

O, if thine eye be not a flatterer,

Come thou on my side, and entreat for me,

As you would beg, were you in my distress:

A begging prince what beggar pities not?

*Sec. Murd.* Look behind you, my lord.

*First Murd.* Take that, and that: if all this

will not do, [Stabs him.]

I'll drown you in the malmsey-butt within.

[Exit, with the body.]

*Sec. Murd.* A bloody deed, and desperately

dispatch'd!

How fain, like Pilate, would I wash my hands

Of this most grievous guilty murder done! 280

*Re-enter First Murderer.*

*First Murd.* How now! what mean'st thou,

that thou help'st me not?

By heavens, the duke shall know how slack thou

art!

*Sec. Murd.* I would he knew that I had saved

his brother!

Take thou the fee, and tell him what I say:

For I repent me that the duke is slain. [Exit.]

*First Murd.* So do not I: go, coward as thou

art.

Now must I hide his body in some hole,

Until the duke take order for his burial:

And when I have my heed, I must away;

For this will out, and here I must not stay. 290

[Exit.]

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *London. The palace.*

*Flourish. Enter KING EDWARD sick, QUEEN*

*ELIZABETH, DORSET, RIVERS, HASTINGS,*

*BUCKINGHAM, GREY, and others.*

*K. Edw.* Why, so: now have I done a good

day's work:

You peers, continue this united league:

I every day expect an embassy

From my Redeemer to redeem me hence;

And now in peace my soul shall part to heaven,

Since I have set my friends at peace on earth.

*Rivers and Hastings*, take each other's hand;

Dissemble not your hatred, swear your love.

*Riv.* By heaven, my heart is purged from

grudging hate;

And with my hand I seal my true heart's love. 30

*Hast.* So thrive I, as I truly swear the like!

*K. Edw.* Take heed you daily not before

be that in the supreme King of kings

Confound your hidden falsehood, and award

Each of you to be the other's end.

*Hast.* So thrive I, as I swear perfect love!

*Riv.* And I, as I love Hastings with my heart!

*K. Edw.* Madam, yourself are not exempt in this,

Nor your son Dorset, Buckingham, nor you;

You have been factious one against the other. 30

Wife, love Lord Hastings, let him kiss your

hand;

And what you do, do it unfeignedly.

*Q. Eliz.* Here, Hastings; I will never more

remember

Our former hatred, so thrive I and mine!

*K. Edw.* Dorset, embrace him; Hastings,

love lord marquess.

*Dor.* This interchange of love, I here protest,

Upon my part shall be unviolable.

*Hust.* And so swear I, my lord.

[They embrace.]

*K. Edw.* Now, princely Buckingham, seal

thou this league

With thy embracements to my wife's allies, 30

And make me happy in your unity.

*Buck.* Whenever Buckingham doth turn his

hate

On you or yours [to the Queen], but with all

duteous love

Doth cherish you and yours, God punish me

With hate in those where I expect most love!

When I have most need to employ a friend,

And most assured that he is a friend,

Deep, hollow, treacherous, and full of guile,

Be he unto me: this do I beg of God,

When I am cold in zeal to you or yours. 40

[They embrace.]

*K. Edw.* A pleasing cordial, princely Buck-

ingham,

Is this thy vow unto my sickly heart.

There waitest now our brother Gloucester here,

To make the perfect period of this peace.

*Buck.* And, in good time, here comes the

noble duke.

## Enter GLOUCESTER.

*Glou.* Good morrow to my sovereign king

and queen;

And, princely peers, a happy time of day!

*K. Edw.* Happy, indeed, as we have spent

the day.

Brother, we have done deeds of charity;

Made peace of enmity, fair love of hate, 30

Between these swelling wrong-incensed peers.

*Glou.* A blessed labour, my most sovereign

liege:

Amongst this princely heap, if any here,

By false intelligence, or wrong surmise,

Hold me a foe;

If I unwittingly, or in my rage,

Have sought committed that is hardly borne

By any in this presence, I desire

To reconcile me to his friendly peace:

'Tis death to me to be at enmity; 40

I hate it, and desire all good men's love.

First, madam, I entreat true peace of you.

Which I will purchase with my dangerous service:

Of you, my noble cousin Buckingham,

If ever any grudge were lodged between us

Of you, Lord Rivers, and, Lord Grey, of you;

That all without dissent have frown'd on me;

Dukes, earls, lords, gentlemen; indeed, of all.  
I do not know that Englishman alive  
With whom my soul is any jot at odds  
More than the infant that is born to-night:  
I thank my God for my humility.

*Q. Elia.* A holy day shall this be kept here-  
after:

I would to God all strifes were well compounded.  
My sovereign liege, I do beseech your majesty  
To take our brother Clarence to your grace.

*Glou.* Why, madam, have I offer'd love for  
this,

To be so flouted in this royal presence?

Who knows not that the noble Duke is dead?

*[They all start.]*

You do him injury to scorn his corpse.

*Riv.* Who knows not he is dead! who knows  
he is!

*Q. Elia.* All-seeing heaven, what a world is  
this!

*Buck.* Look I so pale, Lord Dorset, as the  
rest!

*Dor.* Ay, my good lord; and no one in this  
presence

But his red colour hath forsook his cheeks.

*K. Edw.* Is Clarence dead? the order was  
reversed.

*Glou.* But he, poor soul, by your first order  
died.

And that a winged Mercury did bear;  
Some tardy cripple bore the countermand,

That came too lag to see him buried.

God grant that some, less noble and less loyal,  
Nearer in bloody thoughts, but not in blood,

Deserve not worse than wretched Clarence did,  
And yet go current from suspicion!

*Enter DERBY.*

*Der.* A boon, my sovereign, for my service  
done!

*K. Edw.* I pray thee, peace: my soul is full  
of sorrow.

*Der.* I will not rise, unless your highness  
grant.

*K. Edw.* Then speak at once what is it thou  
demand'st.

*Der.* The forfeit, sovereign, of my servant's  
life:

Who slew to-day a riotous gentleman

Lately attendant on the Duke of Norfolk.

*K. Edw.* Have I a tongue to doom my  
brother's death,

And shall the same give pardon to a slave?

My brother slew no man; his fault was thought,  
And yet his punishment was cruel death.

Who sued to me for him? who, in my rage,  
Kneel'd at my feet, and bade me be advised?

Who spake of brotherhood? who spake of love?

Who told me how the poor soul did forsake  
The mighty Warwick, and did fight for me?

Who told me, in the field by Tewkesbury,

When Oxford had me down, he rescued me,  
And said, 'Dear brother, live, and be a king!'

Who told me, when we both lay in the field  
Frozen almost to death, how he did lap me

Even in his own garments, and gave himself  
All thin and naked, to the smart cold night?

All this from my remembrance bristling with

Sinfully pluck'd, and net a tann of you  
Had so much grace to put it in my mind.

But when your carvers or your waiting-women  
Have done a drunken slaughter, and defaced

The precious image of our dear Redeemer,  
You straight are on your knees for pardon,

pardon;

And I, unjustly too, must grant it you:  
But for my brother not a man would speak,

Nor I, ungracious, speak unto myself  
For him, poor soul. The proudest of you all

Have been beholding to him in his life;  
Yet none of you would once plead for this!

O God, I fear thy justice will take hold  
On me, and you, and mine, and yours for this!

Come, Hastings, help me to my closet. Oh,  
poor Clarence!

*[Exeunt some with King and Queen.]*

*Glou.* This is the fruit of rashness! Mark'd  
you not

How that the guilty kindred of the queen  
Look'd pale when they did hear of Clarence'

death?

O, they did urge it still unto the king!  
God will revenge it. But come, let us in,

To comfort Edward with our company.

*Buck.* We wait upon your grace. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE II. *The palace.*

*Enter the DUCHESS OF YORK, with the two  
children of CLARENCE.*

*Boy.* Tell me, good grandam, is our father  
dead?

*Duch.* No, boy.

*Boy.* Why do you wring your hands, and  
beat your breast,

And cry 'O Clarence, my unhappy son!'

*Girl.* Why do you look on us, and shake  
your head,

And call us wretches, orphans, castaways,  
If that our noble father be alive?

*Duch.* My pretty cousins, you mistake me  
much;

I do lament the sickness of the king,  
As loath to lose him, not your father's death;

It were lost sorrow to wail one that's lost.

*Boy.* Then, grandam, you conclude that he  
is dead.

The king my uncle is to blame for this:  
God will revenge it; whom I will importune

With daily prayers all to that effect.

*Girl.* And so will I.

*Duch.* Peace, children, peace! the king doth  
love you well;

Incapable and shallow innocents,  
You cannot guess who caused your father's

death.

*Boy.* Grandam, we can; for my good uncle  
Gloucester

Told me, the king, provoked by the queen,  
Devised impeachments to surprise him;

And when my uncle told me so, he wept,  
And hang'd me in his arms, and kiss'd me

my cheek;

And he would love me dearly as his child.

*Duch.* Oh, that deceit should steal such gentle shapes,  
And with a virtuous vizard hide foul guile!  
He is my son; yea, and therein my shame;  
Yet from my dugs he drew not this deceit. 30

*Boy.* Think you my uncle did dissemble, grandam?

*Duch.* Ay, boy.

*Boy.* I cannot think it. Hark! what noise is this!

*Enter QUEEN ELIZABETH, with her hair about her ears; RIVERS and DORSET after her.*

*Q. Eliz.* Oh, who shall hinder me to wail and weep,  
To chide my fortune, and torment myself?  
I'll join with black despair against my soul,  
And to myself become an enemy.

*Duch.* What means this scene of rude impatience?

*Q. Eliz.* To make an act of tragic violence:  
Edward, my lord, your son, our king, is dead.  
Why grow the branches now the root is wither'd?  
Why wither the leaves the sap being gone?  
If you will live, lament; if die, be brief,  
That our swift-winged souls may catch the king's;

Or, like obedient subjects, follow him  
To his new kingdom of perpetual rest.

*Duch.* Ah, so much interest have I in thy sorrow

As I had title in thy noble husband!  
I have bewept a worthy husband's death,  
And lived by looking on his images: 50  
But now two mirrors of his princely semblance  
Are crack'd in pieces by malignant death,  
And I for comfort have but one false glass,  
Which grieves me when I see my shame in him.  
Thou art a widow; yet thou art a mother,  
And hast the comfort of thy children left thee:  
But death hath snatch'd my husband from mine arms.

And pluck'd two crutches from my feeble limbs,  
Edward and Clarence. O, what cause have I,  
Thine being but a moiety of my grief, 60  
To overgo thy plaints and drown thy cries!

*Boy.* Good aunt, you wept not for our father's death;

How can we aid you with our kindred tears?

*Girl.* Our fatherless distress was left un-mend'd;

Your widow-dolour likewise be unwept!

*Q. Eliz.* Give me no help in lamentation;  
I am not barren to bring forth complaints:  
All sighs reduce their currents to mine eyes,  
That I, being govern'd by the watery moon,  
May send forth piteous tears to drown the world!

Oh for my husband, for my dear lord Edward!

*Child.* Oh for our father, for our dear lord Clarence!

*Duch.* Alas for both, both mine, Edward and Clarence!

*Q. Eliz.* What stay had I but Edward! and he's gone.

*Child.* What stay had we but Clarence! and he's gone.

*Duch.* What stays had I but they! and they are gone.

*Q. Eliz.* Was never widow had so dear a loss!

*Child.* Were never orphans had so dear a loss!

*Duch.* Was never mother had so dear a loss!

Alas, I am the mother of these moans! 80

Their woes are parcel'd, mine are general.

She for an Edward weeps, and so do I;

I for a Clarence weep, so doth not she;

These bales for Clarence weep, and so do I;

I for an Edward weep, so do not they!

Alas, you three, on me, threefold distress'd,

Pour all your tears! I am your sorrow's nurse,

And I will pamper it with lamentations.

*Dor.* Comfort, dear mother; God is much displeased

That you take with unthankfulness his doing:  
In common worldly things, 'tis call'd ungrateful, 91

With dull unwillingness to repay a debt

Which with a bounteous hand was kindly lent;

Much more to be thus opposite with heaven,

For it requires the royal debt it lent you.

*Riv.* Madam, bethink you, like a careful

mother,

Of the young prince your son: send straight

for him;

Let him be crown'd; in him your comfort lives:

Drown desperate sorrow in dead Edward's grave,

And plant your joys in living Edward's throne.

*Enter GLOUCESTER, BUCKINGHAM, DERBY,*

*HASTINGS, and RATCLIFF.*

*Glouc.* Madam, have comfort: all of us have

cause 101

To wail the dimming of our shining star;

But none can cure their harms by wailing them.

Madam, my mother, I do cry you mercy;

I did not see your grace: humbly on my knee

I crave your blessing.

*Duch.* God bless thee; and put meekness in

thy mind,

Love, charity, obedience, and true duty!

*How.* [Aside] Amen; and make me die a

good old man!

That is the butt-end of a mother's blessing: 110

I marvel why her grace did leave it out.

*Buck.* You cloudy princes and heart-sorrow-

ing peers,

That bear this mutual heavy load of moan,

Now cheer each other in each other's love:

Though we have spent our harvest of this king.

We are to reap the harvest of his son.

The broken rancour of your high-swain hearts,

But lately splinter'd, knit, and join'd together,

Must gently be preserved, cherish'd, and kept:

Me seemeth good, that, with some little train,

Forthwith from Ludlow the young prince be

fetch'd

Hither to London, to be crown'd our king.

*Riv.* Why with some little train, my Lord

of Buckingham!

*Buck.* Marry, my lord, lest, by a multitude

The new-heal'd wound of malice should break

out;

Which would be so much the more dangerous

By how much the estate is green and yet un-

govern'd:



Where every horse bears his commanding rein,  
And may direct his course as please himself,  
As well the fear of harm, as harm apparent, 130  
In my opinion, ought to be prevented.

*Glou.* I hope the king made peace with all  
of us;

And the compact is firm and true in me.

*Riv.* And so in me; and so, I think, in all:  
Yes, since it is but green, it should be put  
To no apparent likelihood of breach,  
Which haply by much company might be urged:  
Therefore I say with noble Buckingham,  
That it is meet so few should fetch the prince.

*Hast.* And so say I. 140

*Glou.* Then be it so; and go we to de-  
termine

Who they shall be that straight shall post to  
Ludlow.

Madam, and you, my mother, will you go  
To give your censures in this weighty business?

*Q. Eliz.* } With all our hearts.  
*Duch.* }

[*Exeunt all but Buckingham and Gloucester.*]

*Buck.* My lord, whoever journeys to the  
prince,

For God's sake, let not us two be behind;

For, by the way, I'll sort occasion,

As index to the story we late talk'd of,

To part the queen's proud kindred from the  
king. 150

*Glou.* My other self, my counsel's consistory,  
My oracle, my prophet! My dear cousin,  
I, like a child, will go by thy direction.

Towards Ludlow then, for we'll not stay behind.  
[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III. London. A street.

*Enter two Citizens, meeting.*

*First Cit.* Neighbour, well met: whither  
away so fast?

*Sec. Cit.* I promise you, I scarcely know  
myself:

Hear you the news abroad?

*First Cit.* Ay, that the king is dead.

*Sec. Cit.* Bad news, by'r lady; seldom comes  
the better:

I fear, I fear 'twill prove a troublous world.

*Enter another Citizen.*

*Third Cit.* Neighbours, God speed!

*First Cit.* Give you good morrow, sir.

*Third Cit.* Doth this news hold of good  
King Edward's death?

*Sec. Cit.* Ay, sir, it is too true; God help  
the while!

*Third Cit.* Then, masters, look to see:  
troublous world.

*First Cit.* No, no; by God's good grace his  
son shall reign.

*Third Cit.* Woe to that land that's govern'd  
by a child!

*Sec. Cit.* In him there is a hope of govern-  
ment.

That in his nursery council under him,  
And in his full and ripen'd years himself,  
No doubt, shall then and till then govern well.

*First Cit.* So stood the state when Henry  
the Sixth

Was crown'd in Paris but at nine months old.

*Third Cit.* Stood the state so? No, no, good  
friends, God wot;

'or then this land was famously enrich'd  
With politic grave counsel; then the king so

Had virtuous uncles to protect his grace.

*First Cit.* Why, so hath this, both by the  
father and mother.

*Third Cit.* Better it were they all came by  
the father,

Or by the father there were none at all;  
For emulation now, who shall be nearest,

Will touch us all too near, if God prevent not.  
O, full of danger is the Duke of Gloucester!

And the queen's sons and brothers haught and  
proud:

And were they to be ruled, and not to rule,  
This sickly land might solace as before. 30

*First Cit.* Come, come, we fear the worst;  
all shall be well.

*Third Cit.* When clouds appear, wise men  
put on their cloaks;

When great leaves fall, the winter is at hand;  
When the sun sets, who doth not look for night?

Untimely storms make men expect a dearth.

All may be well; but, if God sort it so,  
'Tis more than we deserve, or I expect.

*Sec. Cit.* Truly, the souls of men are full  
of dread:

Ye cannot reason almost with a man  
That looks not heavily and full of fear. 40

*Third Cit.* Before the times of change, still  
is it so:

By a divine instinct men's minds mistrust  
Ensuing dangers; as, by proof, we see

The waters swell before a boisterous storm.  
But leave it all to God. Whither away?

*Sec. Cit.* Marry, we were sent for to the  
justices.

*Third Cit.* And so was I: I'll bear you  
company. [*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE IV. London. The palace.

*Enter the ARCHBISHOP OF YORK, the young  
DUKE OF YORK, QUEEN ELIZABETH, and  
the DUCHESS OF YORK.*

*Arch.* Last night, I hear, they lay at North-  
ampton;

At Stony-Stratford will they be to-night:  
To-morrow, or next day, they will be here.

*Duch.* I long with all my heart to see the  
prince:

I hope he is much grown since last I saw him.

*Q. Eliz.* But I hear, no; they say my son  
of York

Hath almost overtaken him in his growth.

*York.* Ay, mother; but I would not have  
it so.

*Duch.* Why, my young cousin, it is good  
to grow.

*York.* Grandam, one night, as we did sit at

talk'd how I did love  
than my brother: 'Ay, quoth my uncle  
Gloucester,

'Small herbs have grace, great weeds do grow  
space.'

And since, methinks, I would not grow so fast,  
Because sweet flowers are slow and weeds  
make haste.

Duch. Good faith, good faith, the saying did  
not hold

In him that did object the same to thee;  
He was the wretchedst thing when he was  
young,

So long a-growing and so leisurely,  
That, if this rule were true, he should be  
gracious.

Arch. Why, madam, so, no doubt, he is.  
Duch. I hope he is; but yet let mothers  
doubt.

York. Now, by my troth, if I had been re-  
member'd,

I could have given my uncle's grace a flout,  
To touch his growth nearer than he touch'd  
mine.

Duch. How, my pretty York! I pray thee,  
let me hear it.

York. Marry, they say my uncle grew so  
fast

That he could gnaw a crust at two hours old:  
'Twas full two years ere I could get a tooth.  
Grandam, this would have been a biting jest.

Duch. I pray thee, pretty York, who told  
thee this?

York. Grandam, his nurse.  
Duch. His nurse! why, she was dead ere  
thou wert born.

York. If 'twere not she, I cannot tell who  
told me.

Q. Eliz. A pious boy: go to, you are too  
shrewd.

Arch. Good madam, be not angry with the  
child.

Q. Eliz. Pitchers have ears.

Enter a Messenger.  
Arch. Here comes a messenger. What  
news!

Mess. Such news, my lord, as grieves me to  
unfold.

Q. Eliz. How fares the prince?

Mess. Well, madam, and in health.

Duch. What is thy news then?

Mess. Lord Rivers and Lord Grey are sent  
to Pomfret.

With them Sir Thomas Vaughan, prisoner.  
Duch. Who hath committed them?

Mess. The mighty dukes  
Gloucester and Buckingham.

Q. Eliz. For what offence?

Mess. The sum of all I can, I have disclosed;  
Why or for what these nobles were committed  
is all unknown to me, my gracious lady.

Q. Eliz. Ay me, I see the downfall of our  
house!

The time now hath aimed the gentle hind; so  
a tyranny begins to jet  
the innocent and aweless throne;

destruction, death, and massacre!  
I see, as in a map, the end of all.

Duch. Accursed and unquiet wrangling days,  
How many of you have mine eyes beheld!

My husband lost his life to get the crown;  
And often up and down my sons were toss'd,  
For me to joy and weep their gain and loss:

And being hated, and domestic broils 60  
Clean over-blown, themselves, the conquerors,  
Make war upon themselves; good against

blood,  
Self against self: O, preposterous  
And frantic outrage, and thy damned spleen;

Or let me die, to look on death no more!

Q. Eliz. Come, come, my boy; we will to  
sanctuary.

Madam, farewell.

Duch. I'll go along with you.  
Q. Eliz. You have no cause.

Arch. My gracious lady, go;  
And thither bear your treasure and your goods.

For my part, I'll resign unto your grace 70  
The seal I keep: and so betide to me  
As well I tender you and all of yours!

Come, I'll conduct you to the sanctuary.

[Exeunt.]

ACT III.

SCENE I. London. A street.

The trumpets sound. Enter the young PRINCE,  
the Dukes of GLOUCESTER and BUCKING-  
HAM, CARDINAL BOUCHAMER, CATHERBY, and  
others.

Duch. Welcome, sweet prince, to London,  
to your chamber.

Glouc. Welcome, dear cousin, my thoughts'  
sovereign:

The weary way hath made you melancholy.

Prince. No, uncle; but our crosses on the  
way

Have made it tedious, wearisome, and heavy:  
I want more uncles here to welcome me.

Glouc. Sweet prince, the untainted virtue of  
your years

Hath not yet dived into the world's deceit:  
Nor more can you distinguish of a man

Than of his outward show; which, God he  
knows, 20

Seldom or never jumpeth with the heart.  
Those uncles which you want were dangerous;

Your grace attended to their sugar'd words,  
But look'd not on the poison of their hearts:

God keep you from them, and from such false  
friends!

Prince. God keep me from false friends!  
but they were none.

Glouc. My lord, the mayor of London comes  
to greet you.

Enter the Lord Mayor, and his train.  
May. God bless your grace with health and  
happy days!

Prince. I thank you, good my lord; and  
thank you all.

I thought my mother, and my brother York, 30  
Would long ere this have met us on the way:

Fit, what a slug is Hastings, that he comes not  
To tell us whether they will come or no!

Enter LORD HASTINGS.  
Duch. And, in good time, here comes the  
swearing lord.

*Prince.* Welcome, my lord: what, will our mother come?

*Hast.* On what occasion, God he knows, not I.

The queen your mother, and your brother York, Have taken sanctuary: the tender prince Would fain have come with me to meet your

But by his mother was perforce withheld.  
*Buck.* Fie, what an indirect and peevish course

Is this of hers! Lord cardinal, will your grace Persuade the queen to send the Duke of York Unto his princely brother presently?

If she deny, Lord Hastings, go with him, And from her jealous arms pluck him perforce.

*Card.* My Lord of Buckingham, if my weak oratory

Can from his mother win the Duke of York, Anon expect him here; but if she be obdurate To mild entreaties, God in heaven forbid  
We should infringe the holy privilege  
Of blessed sanctuary! not for all this land  
Would I be guilty of so deep a sin.

*Buck.* You are too senseless-obstinate, my lord,

Too ceremonious and traditional:  
Weigh it but with the grossness of this age,  
You break not sanctuary in seizing him.

The benefit thereof is always granted,  
To those whose dealings have deserved the place,  
And those who have the wit to claim the place:  
This prince hath neither claim'd it nor deserved

it.  
And therefore, in mine opinion, cannot have it:  
Then, taking him from thence that is not there,  
You break no privilege nor charter there.

Oft have I heard of sanctuary men;  
But sanctuary children ne'er till now.

*Card.* My lord, you shall o'er-rule my mind for once.

Come on, Lord Hastings, will you go with me?

*Hast.* I go, my lord.

*Prince.* Good lords, make all the speedy haste you may.

[*Exeunt Cardinal and Hastings.*]

Say, uncle Gloucester, if our brother come,  
Where shall we sojourn till our coronation?

*Glou.* Where it seems best unto your royal self.

If I may counsel you, some day or two  
Your highness shall repose you at the Tower:

Then where you please, and shall be thought  
most fit

For your best health and recreation.

*Prince.* I do not like the Tower, of any place.  
Did Julius Caesar build that place, my lord?

*Buck.* He did, my gracious lord, begin that place;

Which, since, succeeding ages have re-edified.

*Prince.* Is it upon record, or else reported  
Successfully from age to age, he built it?

*Buck.* Upon record, my gracious lord.

*Prince.* But say, my lord, it were not  
registered.

Methinks the truth should live from age to age,  
As 'twere related to all posterity,  
Even to the general all-ending day.

*Glou.* [Aside] So wise so young, they say,  
do never live long.

*Prince.* What say you, uncle?

*Glou.* I say, without characters, fame lives long.

[Aside] Thus, like the formal vice, Iniquity,  
moralize two meanings in one word.

*Prince.* That Julius Caesar was a famous man;

With what his valour did enrich his wit;  
His wit set down to make his valour live:

Death makes no conquest of this conqueror;  
For now he lives in fame, though not in life.

'I tell you what, my cousin Buckingham,—  
*Buck.* What, my gracious lord?

*Prince.* An if I live until I be a man,  
'I win our ancient right in France again,

Or die a soldier, as I lived a king.

*Glou.* [Aside] Short summers lightly have  
a forward spring.

Enter young YORK, HASTINGS, and the  
CARDINAL.

*Buck.* Now, in good time, here comes the  
Duke of York.

*Prince.* Richard of York! how fares our  
loving brother?

*York.* Well, my dread lord; so must I call  
you now.

*Prince.* Ay, brother, to our grief, as it is  
yours:

Too late he died that might have kept that title,  
Which by his death hath lost much majesty.

*Glou.* How fares our cousin, noble Lord of  
York?

*York.* I thank you, gentle uncle. O, my  
lord,

You said that idle weeds are fast in growth;  
The prince my brother hath outgrown me far.

*Glou.* He hath, my lord.

*York.* And therefore is he title!

*Glou.* O, my fair cousin, I trust not yet so.

*York.* Then he is more beholding to you  
than I.

*Glou.* He may command me as my sovereign;

But you have power in me as in a kinsman.

*York.* I pray you, uncle, give me this dagger.

*Glou.* My dagger, little cousin? with all my  
heart.

*Prince.* A beggar, brother?

*York.* Of my kind uncle, that I know will  
give;

And being but a toy, which is no grief to give.

*Glou.* A greater gift than that I'll give my  
cousin.

*York.* A greater gift! O, that's the sword  
to it.

*Glou.* Ay, gentle cousin, were it light enough.

*York.* O, then, I see, you will part but with  
light gifts:

In weightier things you'll say a beggar sees.

*Glou.* It is too heavy for your grace to wear.

*York.* I weigh it lightly, were it heavier.

*Glou.* What would you have my weapon,  
little lord?

*York.* I would, that I might thank you as  
you call me.

*Glou.* How?

York. Little.

Prince. My Lord of York will still be cross in talk :

Uncle, your grace knows how to bear with him.

York. You mean, to bear me, not to bear with me :

Uncle, my brother mocks both you and me ;  
Because that I am little, like an ape, 130

He thinks that you should bear me on your shoulders.

Buck. With what a sharp-provided wit he reasons !

To mitigate the scorn he gives his uncle,

He prettily and aptly taunts himself :

So cunning and so young is wonderful.

Glow. My lord, will 't please you pass along ?

Myself and my good cousin Buckingham

Will to your mother, to entreat of her

To meet you at the Tower and welcome you.

York. What, will you go unto the Tower, my lord ? 140

Prince. My lord protector needs will have it so.

York. I shall not sleep in quiet at the Tower.

Glow. Why, what should you fear ?

York. Marry, my uncle Clarence's angry ghost :  
My grandam told me he was murder'd there.

Prince. I fear no uncles dead.

Glow. Nor none that live, I hope.

Prince. An if they live, I hope I need not fear.

But come, my lord ; and with a heavy heart,  
Thinking on them, go I unto the Tower. 150

[A Sennet. *Exeunt all but Gloucester, Buckingham and Catesby.*]

Buck. Think you, my lord, this little prating York

Was not incensed by his subtle mother  
To taunt and scorn you thus opprobriously ?

Glow. No doubt, no doubt : O, 'tis a pious boy ;

Bold, quick, ingenious, forward, capable :  
He is all the mother's, from the top to toe.

Buck. Well, let them rest. Come hither, Catesby.

Thou art sworn as deeply to effect what we intend

As closely to conceal what we impart : 159

Thou know'st at our reasons urged upon the way ;  
What think'st thou ? is it not an easy matter

To make William Lord Hastings of our mind,  
For the instalment of this noble duke

In the seat royal of this famous isle ?

Cate. He for his father's sake so loves the prince,

That he will not be won to sought against him.

Buck. What think'st thou, then, of Stanley ?  
What will he ?

Cate. He will do all in all as Hastings doth.

Buck. Well, then, no more but this : 160  
gentle Catesby,

And, as it were far off, sound thou Lord Hastings.

How he doth stand affected to our purpose ;  
And summon him to-morrow to the Tower,

To be about the coronation.  
To show him and him tractable to us,

Showing him, and show him all our reasons :

If he be leaden, icy-cold, unwilling,  
Be thou so too ; and so break off your talk,

And give us notice of his inclination :

For we to-morrow hold divided councils.

Wherein thyself shalt highly be employ'd. 160

Glow. Commend me to Lord William : tell him, Catesby.

His ancient knot of dangerous adversaries  
To-morrow are let blood at Pomfret-castle ;

And bid my friend, for joy of this good news,  
Give Mistress Shore one gentle kiss the more.

Buck. Good Catesby, go, effect this business soundly.

Cate. My good lords both, with all the heed I may.

Glow. Shall we hear from you, Catesby, ere we sleep ?

Cate. You shall, my lord.

Glow. At Crosby Place, there shall you find us both. [Exit Catesby. 160]

Buck. Now, my lord, what shall we do, if we perceive

Lord Hastings will not yield to our complots ?

Glow. Chop off his head, man ; somewhat we will do :

And, look, when I am king, claim thou of me  
The earldom of Hereford, and the moveables

Whereof the king my brother stood possess'd.

Buck. I 'll claim that promise at your grace's hands.

Glow. And look to have it yielded with all willingness.

Come, let us sup betimes, that afterwards  
We may digest our complots in some form. 160

[Exeunt.]

## SCENE II. Before Lord Hastings' house.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. What, ho ! my lord !

Hast. [Within] Who knocks at the door !

Mess. A messenger from the Lord Stanley.

Enter LORD HASTINGS.

Hast. What is 't o'clock ?

Mess. Upon the stroke of four.

Hast. Cannot thy master sleep these tedious nights ?

Mess. So it should seem by that I have to say.  
First, he commends him to your noble lordship.

Hast. And then ?

Mess. And then he sends you word 160

He dreamt to-night the boar had razed his helm :

Besides, he says there are two counsils held ;  
And that may be determined at the one

Which may make you and him to rue at the other.

Therefore he sends to know your lordship's pleasure.

If presently you will take horse with him,  
And with all speed post with him toward the north,

To shun the danger that his soul divines.

Hast. Go, fellow, go, return unto thy lord ;  
Bid him not hear the separated counsils :

His honour and myself are at the one.

And at the other is my secret Catesby ;  
Where nothing can proceed that toucheth us

Whereof I shall not have intelligence.  
 Tell him his fears are shallow, wanting instance:  
 And for his dreams, I wonder he is so fond  
 To trust the mockery of unquiet slumbers:  
 To fly the boar before the boar pursues,  
 Were to incense the boar to follow us  
 And make pursuit where he did mean no chase.  
 Go, bid thy master rise and come to me; 42  
 And we will both together to the Tower,  
 Where, he shall see, the boar will use us kindly.  
*Mess.* My gracious lord, I'll tell him what  
 you say. *[Exit.]*

## Enter CATESBY.

*Cate.* Many good morrows to my noble lord!  
*Hast.* Good morrow, Catesby; you are early  
 stirring:  
 What news, what news, in this our tottering  
 state?  
*Cate.* It is a reeling world, indeed, my lord;  
 And I believe 'twill never stand upright  
 Till Richard wear the garland of the realm. 40  
*Hast.* How! wear the garland! dost thou  
 mean the crown?  
*Cate.* Ay, my good lord.  
*Hast.* I'll have this crown of mine cut from  
 my shoulders  
 Ere I will see the crown so foul misplaced.  
 But canst thou guess that he doth aim at it?  
*Cate.* Ay, on my life; and hopes to find you  
 forward

Upon his party for the gain thereof;  
 And thereupon he sends you this good news,  
 That this same very day your enemies,  
 The kindred of the queen, must die at Pomfret.

*Hast.* Indeed, I am no mourner for that  
 news, 51

Because they have been still mine enemies:  
 But, that I'll give my voice on Richard's side,  
 To bar my master's heirs in true descent,  
 God knows I will not do it, to the death.

*Cate.* God keep your lordship in that gracious  
 mind!

*Hast.* But I shall laugh at this a twelve-  
 month hence,  
 That they who brought me in my master's hate,  
 I live to look upon their tragedy.

I tell thee, Catesby,— 60

*Cate.* What, my lord?

*Hast.* Ere a fortnight make me elder,  
 I'll send some packing that yet think not on it.

*Cate.* 'Tis a vile thing to die, my gracious  
 lord,

When men are unprepared and look not for it.  
*Hast.* O monstrous, monstrous! and so falls  
 it out

With Rivers, Vaughan, Grey: and so 'twill do  
 With some men else, who think themselves as  
 safe

As thou and I; who, as thou know'st, are dear  
 To princely Richard and to Buckingham. 70

*Cate.* The princess both make high account  
 of you;

*[Aside.]* For they account his head upon the  
 bridge.

*Hast.* I know they do; and I have well de-  
 served it.

## Enter LORD STANLEY.

Come on, come on; where is your boar-spear,  
 man!

Fear you the boar, and go so unprovided?

*Stan.* My lord, good morrow; good morrow.

*Catesby.*  
 You may jest on, but, by the holy rood,  
 I do not like these several councils, I

*Hast.* My lord,  
 I hold my life as dear as you do yours; 80

And never in my life, I do protest,  
 Was it more precious to me than 'tis now:

Think you, but that I know our state secure,  
 I would be so triumphant as I am!

*Stan.* The lords at Pomfret, when they rode  
 from London,

Were jocund, and supposed their state was sure,  
 And they indeed had no cause to mistrust;

But yet, you see, how soon the day o'ercast.

This sudden stab of rancour I misdo not:  
 Pray God, I say, I prove a needless coward! go

What, shall we toward the Tower! the day is  
 spent,

*Hast.* Come, come, have with you. Wot  
 you what, my lord?

To-day the lords you talk of are beheaded.

*Stan.* They, for their truth, might better  
 wear their heads

Than some that have accused them wear their  
 hats.

But come, my lord, let us away.

## Enter a Pursuivant.

*Hast.* Go on before; I'll talk with this good  
 fellow. *[Exeunt Stanley and Catesby.]*

How now, sirrah! how goes the world with these?

*Purs.* The better that your lordship please  
 to ask.

*Hast.* I tell thee, man, 'tis better with me  
 now 90

Than when I met thee last where now we meet:  
 Then was I going prisoner to the Tower,

By the suggestion of the queen's allies;

But now, I tell thee—keep it to thyself—

This day those enemies are put to death,

And I in better state than e'er I was.

*Purs.* God hold it, to your honour's good  
 content!

*Hast.* Gramercy, fellow: there, drink that  
 for me. *[Throws him his purse.]*

*Purs.* God save your lordship! *[Exit.]*

## Enter a Priest.

*Priest.* Well met, my lord; I am glad to see  
 your honour. 90

*Hast.* I thank thee, good Sir John, with all  
 my heart.

I am in your debt for your last exercise;  
 Come the next Sabbath, and I will content you.

*[He whispers to his man.]*

## Enter BUCKINGHAM.

*Buck.* What, talking with a priest, and  
 chamberlain!

Your friends at Pomfret, they do need the priest;  
 Your honour hath no surviving work to do.

*Hast.* Good faith, and when I see him, my  
 man.

Those men you talk of came into my mind.

What, go you toward the Tower?

*Buck.* I do, my lord; but long I shall not stay: 120

I shall return before your lordship thence.

*Hast.* 'Tis like enough, for I stay dinner there.

*Buck.* [Aside] And supper too, although thou know'st it not.

Come, will you go?

*Hast.* I'll wait upon your lordship. [Exeunt.]

### SCENE III. Pomfret Castle.

*Enter* SIR RICHARD RATCLIFF, with halberds, carrying RIVERS, GREY, and VAUGHAN to death.

*Rat.* Come, bring forth the prisoners.

*Riv.* Sir Richard Ratcliff, let me tell thee this:

To-day shalt thou behold a subject die

For truth, for duty, and for loyalty.

*Grey.* God keep the prince from all the pack of you!

A knot you are of damned blood-suckers.

*Vaug.* You live that shall cry woe for this hereafter.

*Rat.* Dispatch; the limit of your lives is out.

*Riv.* O Pomfret, Pomfret! O thou bloody prison,

Fatal and ominous to noble peers! 10

Within the guilty closure of thy walls

Richard the second here was hack'd to death;

And, for more slander to thy dismal seat,

We give thee up our guiltless blood to drink.

*Grey.* Now Margaret's curse is fall'n upon our heads,

For standing by when Richard stab'd her son.

*Riv.* Then cursed she Hastings, then cursed she Buckingham,

Then cursed she Richard. O, remember, God,

To hear her prayers for them, as now for us!

And for my sister and her princely sons, 20

Be satisfied, dear God, with our true blood,

Which, as thou know'st, unjustly must be spilt.

*Rat.* Make haste; the hour of death is expiate.

*Riv.* Come, Grey, come, Vaughan, let us all embrace:

And take our leave, until we meet in heaven. [Exeunt.]

### SCENE IV. The Tower of London.

*Enter* BUCKINGHAM, DERBY, HASTINGS, the BISHOP OF ELY, RATCLIFF, LOVELL, with others, and take their seats at a table.

*Hast.* My lords, at once: the cause why we are met

Is, to determine of the coronation.

In God's name, speak: when is the royal day?

*Buck.* Are all things fitting for that royal time?

*Der.* It is, and wants but nomination.

*Hast.* To-morrow, then, I judge a happy day.

*Buck.* Who knows the lord protector's mind

with the noble duke?

*Ely.* Your grace, we think, should soonest know his mind.

*Buck.* Who, I, my lord! we know each other's faces, 10

But for our hearts, he knows no more of mine, Than I of yours;

Nor I no more of his, than you of mine.

Lord Hastings, you and he are near in love.

*Hast.* I thank his grace, I know he loves me well;

But, for his purpose in the coronation,

I have not sounded him, nor he deliver'd

His gracious pleasure any way therein:

But you, my noble lords, may name the time;

And in the duke's behalf I'll give my voice,

Which, I presume, he'll take in gentle part.

### Enter GLOUCESTER.

*Ely.* Now in good time, here comes the duke himself.

*Glou.* My noble lords and cousins all, good morrow.

I have been long a sleeper; but, I hope,

My absence doth neglect no great designs,

Which by my presence might have been concluded.

*Buck.* Had not you come upon your cue, my lord,

William Lord Hastings had pronounced your part,—

I mean, your voice,—for crowning of the king.

*Glou.* Than my Lord Hastings no man might be bolder; 20

His lordship knows me well, and loves me well.

*Hast.* I thank your grace.

*Glou.* My lord of Ely!

*Ely.* My lord!

*Glou.* When I was last in Holborn,

I saw good strawberries in your garden there:

I do beseech you send for some of them.

*Ely.* Marry, and will, my lord, with all my heart. [Exit.]

*Glou.* Cousin of Buckingham, a word with you.

Catesby hath sounded Hastings in our business,

And finds the testy gentleman so hot,

As he will lose his head ere give consent 40

His master's son, as worshipful he terms it.

Shall lose the royalty of England's throne.

*Buck.* Withdraw you hence, my lord, I'll follow you.

[Exit Gloucester, Buckingham following.]

*Der.* We have not yet set down this day of triumph.

To-morrow, in mine opinion, is too sudden;

For I myself am not so well provided:

As else I would be, were the day prolong'd.

### Re-enter BISHOP OF ELY.

*Ely.* Where is my lord protector? I have sent for these strawberries.

*Hast.* His grace looks cheerfully and smooth to-day;

There's some conceit or other likes him well,

When he bid good morrow with such a spirit.

I think there's never a man in Christendom

That can less hide his love or hate than he;

For by his face straight shall you know his heart.

*Der.* What of his heart perceive you in his face?

By any likelihood he show'd to-day!

*Hast.* Marry, that with no man here he is offended;

For, were he, he had shown it in his looks.

*Der.* I pray God he be not, I say. 60

*Re-enter GLOUCESTER and BUCKINGHAM.*

*Glos.* I pray you all, tell me what they deserve

That do conspire my death with devilish plots of damned witchcraft, and that have prevail'd Upon my body with their hellish charms!

*Hast.* The tender love I bear your grace, my lord,

Makes me most forward in this noble presence To doom the offenders, whatsoever they be: I say, my lord, they have deserved death.

*Glos.* Then be your eyes the witness of this ill:

See how I am bewitch'd; behold mine arm 70 Is like a blasted sapling, wither'd up:

And this is Edward's wife, that monstrous witch,

Consorted with that harlot strumpet Shore, That by their witchcraft thus have mark'd me.

*Hast.* If they have done this thing, my gracious lord,—

*Glos.* If! thou protector of this damned strumpet,

Tellst thou me of 'its'! Thou art a traitor: Off with his head! Now, by Saint Paul I swear,

I will not dine until I see the same. Lovel and Ratcliff, look that it be done: 80

The rest, that love me, rise and follow me. *[Exeunt all but Hastings, Ratcliff, and Lovel.]*

*Hast.* Woe, woe for England! not a whit for me;

For I, too fond, might have prevented this. Stanley did dream the boar did raze his helm;

And I disdain'd it, and did scorn to fly: Three times to-day my foot-cloth horse did

stumble, And startled, when he look'd upon the Tower, As loath to bear me to the slaughter-house.

Now I want the priest that spake to me: I now repent I told the pursuivant, 90

As 'twere triumphing at mine enemies, How they at Pomfret bloodily were butcher'd,

And I myself secure in grace and favour.

Margaret, Margaret, now thy heavy curse Is lighted on poor Hastings' wretched head!

*Hast.* Dispatch, my lord; the duke would be at dinner:

Make a short shrift; he longs to see your head.

*Hast.* O momentary grace of mortal men, Which we more hunt for than the grace of God!

Who builds his hopes in air of your good looks, Lives like a drunken sailor on a mast, 100

Ready, with every nod, to tumble down Into the fatal bowels of the deep.

*Lov.* Come, come, dispatch; 'tis bootless to exclaim.

*Hast.* O bloody Richard! miserable England! I prophesy the fearfullest time to thee

That ever wretched age hath look'd upon. Come, lead me to the block; bear him my head: They smile at me that shortly shall be dead. *[Exeunt.]*

## SCENE V. The Tower-walls.

*Enter GLOUCESTER and BUCKINGHAM, in rotten armour, marvellous ill-favoured.*

*Glos.* Come, cousin, canst thou quake, and change thy colour, Murder thy breath in middle of a word, And then begin again, and stop again, As if thou wert distraught and mad with terror?

*Buck.* Tut, I can counterfeit the deep tragedian;

Speak and look back, and pry on every side, Tremble and start at wagging of a straw,

Intending deep suspicion: ghastly looks Are at my service, like enforced smiles; 10

And both are ready in their offices. At any time, to grace my stratagems.

But what, is Catesby gone?

*Glos.* He is; and, see, he brings the mayor along.

*Enter the Mayor and CATESBY.*

*Buck.* Lord mayor,—

*Glos.* Look to the drawbridge there!

*Buck.* Hark! a drum.

*Glos.* Catesby, o'erlook the walls.

*Buck.* Lord mayor, the reason we have sent—

*Glos.* Look back, defend thee, here are enemies.

*Buck.* God and our innocency defend and guard us! 20

*Glos.* Be patient, they are friends, Ratcliff and Lovel.

*Enter LOVEL and RATCLIFF, with HASTINGS' head.*

*Lov.* Here is the head of that ignoble traitor, The dangerous and unsuspected Hastings.

*Glos.* So dear I loved the man, that I must weep.

I took him for the plainest harmless creature That breathed upon this earth a Christian;

Made him my book, wherein my soul recorded The history of all her secret thoughts:

So smooth he daub'd his vice with show of virtue,

That, his apparent open guilt omitted, 30 I mean, his conversation with Shore's wife, He lived from all attainder of suspect.

*Buck.* Well, well, he was the covert shelter'd traitor

That ever lived. Would you imagine, or almost believe,

Were't not that, by great preservation, We live to tell it you, the subtle traitor

This day had plotted, in the council-house, To murder me and my good Lord of Gloucester?

*May.* What, had he so?

*Glos.* What, think you we are fools or knaves?

Or that we would, against the form of law, 40

Send any man to the villain's death, without a full and lawful trial?

The peace of England and our persons' safety,  
Enforced us to this execution!

*May.* Now, fair befall you! he deserved his death;

And you my good lords, both have well pro-

To warn false traitors from the like attempts.  
I never look'd for better at his hands, 50

After he once fell in with Mistress Shore.

*Glow.* Yet had not we determined he should die,

Until your lordship came to see his death;  
Which now the loving haste of these our friends,

Somewhat against our meaning, have prevented:  
Because, my lord, we would have had you heard

The traitor speak, and timorously confess  
The manner and the purpose of his treason;

That you might well have signified the same  
Unto the citizens, who haply may 60

Misconstrue us in him and wail his death.

*May.* But, my good lord, your grace's word shall serve,

As well as I had seen and heard him speak;  
And doubt you not, right noble princes both,

But I'll acquaint our duteous citizens  
With all your just proceedings in this cause.

*Glow.* And to that end we wish'd your lordship here,

To avoid the carping censures of the world.

*Buck.* But since you come too late of our intents,

Yet witness what you hear we did intend: 70  
And so, my good lord mayor, we bid farewell.

*Glow.* Go, after, after, cousin Buckingham.  
The mayor towards Guildhall hies him in all

post:

There, at your meet'st advantage of the time,  
Infer the bastardy of Edward's children:

Tell them how Edward put to death a citizen,  
Only for saying he would make his son

Heir to the crown; meaning indeed his house,  
Which, by the sign thereof, was termed so.

Moreover, urge his hateful luxury, 80  
And bestial appetite in change of lust;

Which stretched to their servants, daughters,  
wives,

Even where his lustful eye or savage heart,  
Without control, listed to make his prey.

*May.* For a need, thus far come near my person:

Tell them, when that my mother went with child

Of that unmate Edward, noble York  
My princely father then had wars in France;

And, by just computation of the time,  
Found that the issue was not his legit;

Which well appeared in his lineaments, 90  
Being nothing like the noble duke my father:

But touch this sparingly, as 'twere far off;  
Because you know, my lord, my mother lives.

*Buck.* Fear not, my lord, I'll play the creator

As if the golden fee for which I plead  
Were for myself; and so, my lord, adieu.

*Glow.* If you thrive well, bring them to  
Baynard's Castle;

Where you shall find me well accompanied  
With learned fathers and well-learned bishops.

*Buck.* I go; and towards three or four  
o'clock

Look for the news that the Gui 101  
affords.

*Glow.* Go, Lovel, with all speed to Doctor  
Shaw;

[*To Cate.*] Go thou to Friar Penker; bid them  
both

Meet me within this hour at Baynard's Castle.  
[*Exeunt all but Gloucester.*]

Now will I in, to take some privy order  
To draw the brats of Clarence out of sight;

And to give notice, that no manner of person  
At any time have recourse unto the prince.

[*Exit.*]

#### SCENE VI. The same. A street.

*Enter a Scrivener, with a paper in his hand.*

*Scriv.* This is the indictment of the good  
Lord Hastings;

Which in a set hand fairly is engross'd,  
That it may be this day read o'er in Paul's.

And mark how well the sequel hangs together:  
Eleven hours I spent to write it over,

For yesternight by Cataly was it brought me;  
The precedent was full as long a-doing:

And yet within these five hours lived Lord  
Hastings,

Untainted, unexamined, free, at liberty.  
Here's a good world the while! Why who's so

gross, 10  
That seeth not this palpable device?

Yet who's so blind, but says he sees it not?  
Bad is the world; and all will come to nought,

When such bad dealing must be seen in thought.  
[*Exit.*]

#### SCENE VII. Baynard's Castle.

*Enter GLOUCESTER and BUCKINGHAM, at  
several doors.*

*Glow.* How now, my lord, what say the  
citizens?

*Buck.* Now, by the holy mother of our Lord,  
The citizens are mum and speak not a word.

*Glow.* Touch'd you the bastardy of Edward's  
children?

*Buck.* I did; with his contract with Lady  
Lucy,

And his contract by deputy in France;  
The insatiate greediness of his desires,

And his enforcement of the city wives;  
His tyranny for trifles; his own bastardy.

As being got, your father then in France, 10  
And his resemblance, being not like the duke:

Withal I did infer your lineaments,  
Being the right idea of your father,

Both in your form and nobleness of mind;  
Laid open all your victories in Scotland,

Your discipline in war, wisdom in peace,  
Your bounty, virtue, fair humility;

Indeed, left nothing sitting for the purpose  
Untouch'd, or slightly handled, in discourse:

And when mine oratory grew to an end, 20  
I bid them that did love their country's good

Cry "God save Richard, England's royal king!"  
*Glow.* Ah! and did they so!



*Buck.* No, so God help me, they spake not a word;

But, like dumb statues or breathing stones,  
Gazed each on other, and look'd deadly pale.  
Which when I saw, I reprehended them;  
And ask'd the mayor what meant this wilful silence:

His answer was, the people were not wont  
To be spoke to but by the recorder. 30  
Then he was urged to tell my tale again,  
'Thus saith the duke, thus hath the duke in-  
fer'd':

But nothing spake in warrant from himself.  
When he had done, some followers of mine own,  
At the lower end of the hall, hurl'd up their caps,  
And some ten voices cried 'God save King  
Richard!'

And thus I took the vantage of those few,  
'Thanks, gentle citizens and friends,' quoth I;  
'This general applause and loving shout  
Argues your wisdoms and your love to Richard.'  
And even here brake off, and came away. 41

*Glow.* What tongueless blocks were they!  
would they not speak?

*Buck.* No, by my truth, my lord.

*Glow.* Will not the mayor then and his  
brethren come?

*Buck.* The mayor is here at hand: intend  
some fear;

Be not you spoke with, but by mighty suit:  
And look you get a prayer-book in your hand.  
And stand betwixt two churchmen, good my  
lord;

For on that ground I'll build a holy descent:  
And be not easily won to our request: 50  
Play the maid's part, still answer nay, and  
take it.

*Glow.* I go; and if you plead as well for them  
As I can say nay to thee for myself,  
No doubt we'll bring it to a happy issue.

*Buck.* Go, go, up to the leads; the lord  
mayor knocks. [*Exit Gloucester.*]

*Enter the Mayor and Citizens.*

Welcome, my lord: I dance attendance here;  
I think the duke will not be spoke withal.

*Enter CATESBY.*

Here comes his servant: how now, Catesby,  
What says he?

*Cate.* My lord, he doth entreat your grace  
To visit him to-morrow or next day: 60  
He is within, with two right reverend fathers,  
Devinely bent to meditation;

And in no worldly suit would he be moved,  
To draw him from his holy exercise.

*Buck.* Return, good Catesby, to thy lord  
again;

Tell him, myself, the mayor and citizens,  
In deep designs and matters of great moment,  
No less importing than our general good,  
Are come to have some conference with his  
grace.

*Cate.* I'll tell him what you say, my lord. 70  
[*Exit.*]

*Buck.* Ah, ha, my lord, this prince is not an  
Edward!  
He is not lolling on a lewd day-bed,

but on his knees at meditation;  
Not dallying with a brace of courtizans,  
But meditating with two deep divines;  
Not sleeping, to engross his idle body,  
But praying, to enrich his watchful soul:  
Happy were England, would this gracious prince  
Take on himself the sovereignty thereof:  
But, sure, I fear, we shall ne'er win him to it. 80  
*May.* Marry, God forbid his grace should  
say us nay!  
*Buck.* I fear he will.

*Re-enter CATESBY.*

How now, Catesby, what says your lord?

*Cate.* My lord,  
He wonders to what end you have assembled  
Such troops of citizens to speak with him,  
His grace not being warn'd thereof before:  
My lord, he fears you mean no good to him.

*Buck.* Sorry I am my noble cousin should  
Suspect me, that I mean no good to him:  
By heaven, I come in perfect love to him; 90  
And so once more return and tell his grace.

[*Exit Catesby.*]

When holy and devout religious men  
Are at their beads, 'tis hard to draw them  
thence.

So sweet is zealous contemplation.

*Enter GLOUCESTER aloft, between two Bishops  
CATESBY returns.*

*May.* See, where he stands between two  
clergymen!

*Buck.* Two props of virtue for a Christian  
prince.

To stay him from the fall of vanity:  
And, see, a book of prayer in his hand,  
True ornaments to know a holy man.  
Famous Plantagenet, most gracious prince, see  
Lend favourable ears to our request;  
And pardon us the interruption

Of thy devotion and right Christian zeal.

*Glow.* My lord, there needs no such apology:  
I rather do beseech you pardon me,  
Who, earnest in the service of my God,  
Neglect the visitation of my friends.

But, leaving this, what is your grace's pleasure?

*Buck.* Even that, I hope, which pleases  
God above,

And all good men of this ungovern'd isle. 100  
*Glow.* I do suspect I have done some offence  
That seems disgraceful in the city's eyes.

And that you come to reprehend my ignorance.

*Buck.* You have, my lord: would it might  
please your grace,

At our entreaties, to amend that fault!

*Glow.* Elsewherefore breathe I in a Christian  
land?

*Buck.* Then know, it is your fault that you  
reign

The supreme seat, the throne majestic,  
The scepter'd office of your ancestors.

Your state of fortune and your due of birth, see  
The lineal glory of your royal house.

To the corruption of a blemish'd stock;  
In the midwifery of your sleep;  
In we women to our country;  
In we women want her proper

Her face defaced with scars of infancy,  
Her royal stock graft with ignoble plants,  
And almost should'rd in the swallowing gulf  
Of blind forgetfulness and dark oblivion.  
Which to requite, we heartily solicit 130  
Your gracious self to take on you the charge  
And kingly government of this your land,  
Not as protector, steward, substitute,  
Or lowly factor for another's gain;  
But as successively from blood to blood,  
Your right of birth, your empery, your own.  
For this, consorted with the citizens,  
Your very worshipful and loving friends,  
And by their vehement instigation,  
In this just suit come I to move your grace. 140

*Glouc.* I know not whether to depart in silence,

Or bitterly to speak in your reproof.  
Best fiftieth may degrees or your condition:  
If not to answer, you might haply think  
Tongue-tied ambition, not replying, yielded  
To bear the golden yoke of sovereignty,  
Which fondly you would here impose on me;  
If to reprove you for this suit of yours,  
So season'd with your faithful love to me,  
Then, on the other side, I check'd my friends.  
Therefore, to speak, and to avoid the first, 151  
And then, in speaking, not to incur the last,  
Definitively thus I answer you.

Your love deserves my thanks; but my desert  
Unmeritable shuns your high request.  
First, if all obstacles were cut away,  
And that my path were even to the crown,  
As my ripe revenue and due by birth;  
Yet so much is my poverty of spirit,  
So mighty and so many my defects, 160  
As I had rather hide me from my greatness,  
Being a bark to brook no mighty sea,  
Than in my greatness covet to be hid,  
And in the vapour of my glory smother'd.  
But, God be thanked, there's no need of me,  
And much I need to help you, if need were;  
The royal tree hath left us royal fruit,  
Which, mellow'd by the stealing hours of time,  
Will well become the seat of majesty,  
And make, no doubt, us happy by his reign. 170  
On him I lay what you would lay on me,  
The right and fortune of his happy stars;  
Which God defend that I should wring from him!

*Buck.* My lord, this argues conscience in your grace:

But the respects thereof are nice and trivial,  
As circumstances well considered.  
You say that Edward is your brother's son:  
So say we too, but not by Edward's wife:  
For first he was contract to Lady Lucy—  
Your mother lives a witness to that vow— 180  
And afterward by substitute betroth'd  
To Bona, sister to the King of France.  
Thence both put by, a poor petitioner,  
A poor-creased mother of a many children,  
A heavily-veined and distressed widow,  
Even in the afternoon of her best days,  
Made wife and purchase of his lustful eye,  
The which and her

... his unlovely bed, he

190

This Edward, whom our manners term the prince.

More bitterly could I expostulate,  
Save that, for reverence to some alive,  
I give a sparing limit to my tongue.  
Then, good my lord, take to your royal self  
This proffer'd benefit of dignity;  
If not to bless us and the land withal,  
Yet to draw forth your noble ancestry  
From the corruption of abusing times  
Unto a lineal true-derived course. 200

*May.* Do, good my lord, your citizens entreat you.

*Buck.* Refuse not, mighty lord, this proffer'd love.

*Cate.* O, make them joyful, grant their lawful suit!

*Glouc.* Alas, why would you heap these cares on me!

I am unfit for state and majesty;  
I do beseech you, take it not amiss;  
I cannot nor I will not yield to you.

*Buck.* If you refuse it,—as, in love and zeal  
Loath to depose the child, your brother's son:  
As well we know your tenderness of heart  
And gentle, kind, effeminate remorse,  
Which we have noted in you to your kin,  
And equally indeed to all estates,—

Yet whether you accept our suit or no,  
Your brother's son shall never reign our king:  
But we will plant some other in the throne,  
To the disgrace and downfall of your house:  
And in this resolution here we leave you.—  
Come, citizens! 'rounds! I'll entreat no more

*Glouc.* O, do not swear, my lord of Buckingham.

*Cate.* Call them again, my lord, and accept their suit.

*Another.* Do, good my lord, lest all the land do rue it.

*Glouc.* Would you enforce me to a world o' care!

Well, call them again. I am not made o' stones,

But penetrable to your kind entreats,  
Albeit against my conscience and my soul.

*Re-enter BUCKINGHAM and the rest.*

Cousin of Buckingham, and you sage, grave men,

Since you will buckle fortune on my back.

To bear her burthen, whether I will or no,  
I must have patience to endure the load: 190

But if black scandal or foul-faced reproach  
Attend the sequel of your imposition,

Your more enforcement shall acquaintance me  
From all the impure blot and stains thereof;

For God he knows, and you may partly see,  
How far I am from the desire thereof.

*May.* God bless your grace! we see it, and will say it.

*Glouc.* In saying so, you shall but say the truth.

*Buck.* Then I salute you with this kingly title:

Long live Richard, England's royal king!

*May. and Others.*

*Buck.* To-morrow will it please you to be crown'd?

*Glow.* Even when you please, since you will have it so.

*Buck.* To-morrow, then, we will attend your grace:

And so most joyfully we take our leave.

*Glow.* Come, let us to our holy task again. Farewell, good cousin; farewell, gentle friends.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I. Before the Tower.

*Enter, on one side, QUEEN ELIZABETH, DUCHESS OF YORK, and MARQUESS OF DORSET; on the other, ANNE, DUCHESS OF GLOUCESTER, trailing LADY MARGARET PLANTAGENET, CLARENCE'S young Daughter.*

*Duch.* Who meets us here? my niece Plantagenet led in the hand of her kind aunt of Gloucester? Now, for my life, she's wandering to the Tower. On pure heart's love to greet the tender princes. Daughter, well met.

*Anne.* God give your graces both A happy and a joyful time of day!

*Q. Eliz.* As much to you, good sister! Whither away?

*Anne.* No farther than the Tower; and, as I guess, upon the like devotion as yourselves, to congratulate the gentle princes there.

*Q. Eliz.* Kind sister, thanks: we'll enter all together.

*Enter BRAKENBURY.*

And, in good time, here the lieutenant comes. Master lieutenant, pray you, by your leave, how doth the prince, and my young son of York?

*Brak.* Right well, dear madam. By your patience,

I may not suffer you to visit them: The king hath strictly charged the contrary.

*Q. Eliz.* The king! why, who's that?

*Brak.* I cry you mercy: I mean the lord protector.

*Q. Eliz.* The Lord protect him from that princely title!

Hath he set bounds betwixt their love and me? I am their mother; who should keep me from them?

*Duch.* I am their father's mother; I will see them.

*Anne.* Their aunt I am in law, in love their mother:

Then bring me to their sights; I'll bear thy blame.

*An.* *Brak.* No, madam, no; I may not leave it so:

I am bound by oath, and therefore pardon me.

[*Exit.*]

*Enter LORD STANLEY.*

*Stan.* Let me but meet you, ladies, one hour hence,

And I'll salute your grace of York as mother, And reverend looker on, of two fair queens.

[*To Anne.*] Come, madam, you must straight to Westminster.

There to be crown'd Richard's royal queen.

*Q. Eliz.* O, cut my lace in sunder, that my pent heart

May have some scope to beat, or else I swoon With this dead-killing news!

*Anne.* Despitful tidings! O unpleasant news!

*Dor.* Be of good cheer: mother, how fares your grace?

*Q. Eliz.* O Dorset, speak not to me, get thee hence!

Death and destruction dog thee at the heels; so Thy mother's name is ominous to children.

If thou wilt outstrip death, go cross the seas, And live with Richmond, from the reach of hell:

Go, lie thee, lie thee from this slaughter-house,

Lest thou increase the number of the dead; And make me die the thrall of Margaret's curse,

Nor mother, wife, nor England's counted queen.

*Stan.* Full of wise care is this your counsel, madam.

Take all the swift advantage of the hours; You shall have letters from me to my son

To meet you on the way, and welcome you. Be not taken tardy by unwise delay.

*Duch.* O ill-dispersing wind of misery! O my accursed womb, the bed of death!

A cockatrice hast thou hatch'd to the world, Whose unavoided eye is murderous.

*Stan.* Come, madam, come; I in all haste was sent.

*Anne.* And I in all unwillingness will go. I would to God that the inclusive verge

(Of golden metal that must round my brow) Were red-hot steel, to sear me to the brain!

Anointed let me be with deadly venom, And die, ere men can say, God save the queen!

*Q. Eliz.* Go, go, poor soul, I envy not thy story:

To feed my humour, wish myself no harm.

*Anne.* No! why? When he that is my husband now

Came to me, as I follow'd Henry's corpse, When scarce the blood was well wash'd from his hands

Which issued from my other angel-husband And that dead saint which then I weeping follow'd;

O, when, I say, I look'd on Richard's face,

This was my wish: 'Be thou,' quoth I, 'accursed,

For making me, so young, so old a widow! And, when thou wast, let sorrow haunt thy bed;

And be thy wife—if any be so mad—

As miserable by the life of thee As thou hast made me by my dear husband's death!

Lo, ere I can repeat this curse again.

Even in so short a space, my woman's heart  
Grossly grew captive to his honey words so  
And proved the subject of my own soul's curse,  
Which ever since hath kept my eyes from rest;  
For never yet one hour in his bed  
Have I enjoy'd the golden dew of sleep,  
But have been waked by his timorous dreams.  
Besides, he hates me for my father Warwick;  
And will, no doubt, shortly be rid of me.

*Q. Eliz.* Poor heart, adieu! I pity thy complaining.

*Anne.* No more than from my soul I mourn for yours.

*Q. Eliz.* Farewell, thou woful welcomer of glory!

*Anne.* Adieu, poor soul, that takest thy leave of it!

*Duch. [To Dorset]* Go thou to Richmond, and good fortune guide thee!

*[To Anne]* Go thou to Richard, and good angels guard thee!

*[To Queen Eliz.]* Go thou to sanctuary, and good thoughts possess thee!

I to my grave, where peace and rest lie with me!  
Eighty odd years of sorrow have I seen,  
And each hour's joy wreck'd with a week of teen.

*Q. Eliz.* Stay, yet look back with me unto the Tower.

Pity, you ancient stones, those tender babes  
Whom envy hath immured within your walls!  
Rough cradle for such little pretty ones! 201  
Rude ragged nurse, old sullen playfellow  
For tender princess, use my babies well!  
So foolish sorrow bids your stones farewell.

*[Exeunt.]*

## SCENE II. London. The palace.

*Sennet. Enter RICHARD, in pomp, crowned; BUCKINGHAM, CATESBY, a Page, and others.*

*K. Rich.* Stand all apart. Cousin of Buckingham!

*Buck.* My gracious sovereign!

*K. Rich.* Give me thy hand. *[Here he ascends his throne.]* Thus high, by thy advice

And thy assistance, is King Richard seated;  
But shall we wear these honours for a day?  
Or shall they last, and we rejoice in them?

*Buck.* Still live they and for ever may they last!

*K. Rich.* O Buckingham, now do I play the tough

To try if thou be current gold indeed:  
Young Edward lives: think now what I would say.

*Buck.* Say on, my loving lord.

*K. Rich.* Why, Buckingham, I say, I would be king.

*Buck.* Why, so you are, my thrice renowned king.

*K. Rich.* Ha! am I king? 'tis so: but Edward lives.

*Buck.* True, noble prince.

O bitter consequence,  
That Edward still should live! True, noble

Cousin, thou wert not wont to be dull:  
Shall I be plain? I wish the dead;

And I would have it suddenly 'nd;  
What sayest thou? I speak suddenly be brief.

*Buck.* Your grace may do your pleasure.

*K. Rich.* Tut, tut, thou art all thy kind-  
ness freesth:

Say, have I thy consent that they shall die?

*Buck.* Give me some breath, some little pause, my lord,

Before I positively speak herein:

I will resolve your grace immediately. *[Exit Cate.]*

*Cate. [Aside to a stander by]* The king is angry: see, he bites the lip.

*K. Rich.* I will converse with iron-witted fools

And unrespective boys: none are for me  
That look into me with considerate eyes: 30  
High-reaching Buckingham grows circumspect.

*Page.* My lord!

*K. Rich.* Know'st thou not any whom corrupting gold

Would tempt unto a close exploit of death?

*Page.* My lord, I know a discontented gentleman,

Whose humble means match not his haughty mind:

Gold were as good as twenty orators,  
And will, no doubt, tempt him to any thing.

*K. Rich.* What is his name?

*Page.* His name, my lord, is Tyrrel.

*K. Rich.* I partly know the man: go, call him hither. *[Exit Page.]*

The deep-revolving witty Buckingham  
No more shall be the neighbour to my counsel

Hath he so long held out with me untired,  
And stops he now for breath?

## Enter STANLEY.

How now! what news with you?

*Stan.* My lord, I hear the Marquis Dorset fled

To Richmond, in those parts beyond the sea  
Where he abides. *[Stands apart.]*

*K. Rich.* Catesby!

*Cate.* My lord!

*K. Rich.* Rumour it abroad  
That Anne, my wife, is sick and like to die:

I will take order for her keeping close.  
Inquire me out some mean-born gentleman,  
Whom I will marry straight to Clarence's daughter:

The boy is foolish, and I fear not him.  
Look, how thou dream'st! I say again, give

That Anne my wife is sick and like to die:  
About it: for it stands me much upon.

To stop all hopes whose growth may damage me  
I must be married to my brother's daughter,  
Or else my kingdom stands on brittle glass.  
Murder her brothers, and then marry her!  
Uncertain way of gain! But I am in  
So far in blood that sin will pluck on sin:  
Tear-falling pity dwells not in this eye.

*Re-enter Page, with TYRREL.*  
Is thy name Tyrrel?

*Tyr.* James Tyrrel, and your most obedient subject.

*K. Rich.* Art thou, indeed?

*Tyr.* Prove me, my gracious sovereign.  
*K. Rich.* Darest thou resolve to kill a friend of mine? 70

*Tyr.* Ay, my lord;

But I had rather kill two enemies.

*K. Rich.* Why, there thou hast it: two deep enemies,

Foes to my rest and my sweet sleep's disturbers  
Are they that I would have thee deal upon:  
*Tyrrel*, I mean those bastards in the Tower.

*Tyr.* Let me have open means to come to them,

And soon I'll rid you from the fear of them.

*K. Rich.* Thou sing'st sweet music. Hark,  
come hither, *Tyrrel*:

Go, by this token: rise, and lend thine ear: 80

[*Whispers.*]

There is no more but so: say it is done,

And I will love thee, and prefer thee too.

*Tyr.* 'Tis done, my gracious lord.

*K. Rich.* Shall we hear from thee, *Tyrrel*,  
ere we sleep?

*Tyr.* Ye shall, my lord. [*Exit.*]

*Re-enter BUCKINGHAM.*

*Buck.* My lord, I have consider'd in my mind

The late demand that you did sound me in.

*K. Rich.* Well, let that pass. Darest is fled to Richmond.

*Buck.* I hear that news, my lord.

*K. Rich.* Stanley, he is your wife's son:  
well, look to it. 90

*Buck.* My lord, I claim your gift, my due by promise.

For which your honour and your faith is pawn'd;  
The earldom of Hereford and the moveables  
The which you promised I should possess.

*K. Rich.* Stanley, look to your wife: if she convey

Letters to Richmond, you shall answer it.

*Buck.* What says your highness to my just demand?

*K. Rich.* As I remember, Henry the Sixth

Had prophesy that Richmond should be king.

When Richmond was a little peevish boy. 100

A king, perhaps, perhaps.—

*Buck.* My lord!

*K. Rich.* How chance the prophet could not  
at that time

Have told me, I being by, that I should kill  
him?

*Buck.* My lord, your promise for the earldom.—

*K. Rich.* Richmond! When last I was at  
*Exeter*,

The mayor in courtesy show'd me the castle,  
And call'd it Rougemont: at which name I

started,  
Because a bard of Ireland told me once,  
I should not live long after I saw Richmond.

*Buck.* My lord!

*K. Rich.* Ay, what's o'clock?

*Buck.* I am thus bold to put your grace in  
mind

Of what you promised me.

*K. Rich.* Well, but what's o'clock?

*Buck.* Upon the stroke of ten.

*K. Rich.* Well, let it strike.

*Buck.* Why let it strike?

*K. Rich.* Because that, like a Jack, thou

keep'st the stroke

Between thy begging and my meditation.

I am not in the giving vein to-day.

*Buck.* Why, then resolve me whether you  
will or no. 120

*K. Rich.* Tut, tut,

Thou troublest me; I am not in the vein.

[*Exeunt all but Buckingham.*]

*Buck.* Is it even so! rewards he my true

service

With such deep contempt! made I him king

for this?

O, let me think on Hastings, and be gone

To Brecknock, while my fearful head is on!

[*Exit.*]

### SCENE III. The same.

*Enter TYRREL.*

*Tyr.* The tyrannous and bloody deed is done,

The most arch act of piteous massacre

That ever yet this land was guilty of.

Dighton and Forrest, whom I did suborn

To do this ruthless piece of butchery,

Although they were flesh'd villains, bloody dogs,

Melting with tenderness and kind compassion

Wept like two children in their deaths' and

stories,

'Lo, thus, quoth Dighton, 'lay those tender

babes:'

'Thus, thus,' quoth Forrest, 'girdling one an-

other 20

Within their innocent alabaster arms;

Their lips were four red roses on a stalk,

Which in their summer beauty kiss'd each

other.

A book of prayers on their pillow lay:

Which once, quoth Forrest, 'almost changed

my mind;

But O! the devil!—there the villain stopp'd;

Whilst Dighton thus told on: 'We smothered

The most replenished sweet work of nature,

That from the prime creation e'er was framed,'

Thus both are gone with conscience and re-

morse; 30

They could not speak; and so I left them both,

To bring this tidings to the bloody king.

And here he comes.

*Enter KING RICHARD.*

All hail, my sovereign liege!

*K. Rich.* Kind *Tyrrel*, am I happy in thy

news?

*Tyr.* If to have done the thing you gave in

charge

Beget your happiness, be happy then,

For it is done, my lord.

*K. Rich.* But didst thou see them dead?

*Tyr.* I did, my lord.

*K. Rich.* And buried?

*Tyr.* The chaplain of the Tower

them:

But how or in what place I do not know. 30

*K. Rich.* Come to me, Tyrrel, soon at after supper.

And thou shalt tell the process of their death. Meantime, but think how I may do thee good, I be inheritor of thy desire.

Farewell till soon. [*Exit Tyrrel.*]

The son of Clarence have I pent up close; His daughter meanly have I match'd in marriage;

The sons of Edward sleep in Abraham's bosom, And Anne my wife hath bid the world good night.

Now, for I know the Breton Richmond aims At young Elizabeth, my brother's daughter, 41 And, by that knot, looks proudly o'er the crown, To her I go, a jolly thriving wooer.

*Enter CATSBY.*

*Catsb.* My lord!

*K. Rich.* Good news or bad, that thou comest in so bluntly!

*Catsb.* Bad news, my lord: Ely is fled to Richmond;

And Buckingham, back'd with the hardy Welshmen,

Is in the field, and still his power increaseth.

*K. Rich.* Ely with Richmond troubles me more near Than Buckingham and his rash-levied army. 50

Come, I have heard that fearful commenting Is leaden servitor to dull delay;

Delay leads impotent and snail-paced beggary: Then fiery expedition be my wing,

Jove's Mercury, and herald for a king! Come, muster men: my counsel is my shield;

We must be brief when traitors brave the field. [*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE IV. Before the palace.

*Enter QUEEN MARGARET.*

*Q. Mar.* So, now prosperity begins to mellow And drop into the rotten mouth of death.

Here in these confines slily have I lurk'd, To watch the waning of mine adversaries.

A dire induction am I witness to, And woe to France, hoping the consequence

Will prove as bitter, black, and tragical. Wretched thou, wretched Margaret: who comes here?

*Enter QUEEN ELIZABETH and the DUCHESS OF YORK.*

*Q. Eliz.* Ah, my young princes! ah, my tender babes!

My unknown flowers, new-appearing sweets! 10 If yet your gentle souls fly in the air And be not fix'd in doom perpetual,

Hover about me with your airy wings And hear your mother's lamentation!

*Q. Mar.* Hover about her; say, that right for right

Shall claim'd your infant morn to aged night. Dwell! So many miseries have cras'd my

lips, that my tongue is mute and dumb, And I cannot speak, why art thou dead!

*Q. Mar.* Plantagenet doth quit Plantagenet. Edward for Edward pays a dying debt. 21

*Q. Eliz.* Wilt thou, O God, fly from such gentle lambs,

And throw them in the entrails of the wolf? When didst thou sleep when such a deed was done?

*Q. Mar.* When holy Harry died, and my sweet son.

*Duch.* Blind sight, dead life, poor mortal living ghost,

Woe's scene, world's shame, grave's due by life usurp'd,

Brief abstract and record of tedious days, Rest thy unrest on England's lawful earth,

Unlawfully made drunk with innocents' blood! [*Sitting down.*]

*Q. Eliz.* O, that thou wouldst as well afford a grave

As thou canst yield a melancholy seat! Then would I hide my bones, not rest them here.

O, who hath any cause to mourn but I? [*Sitting down by her.*]

*Q. Mar.* If ancient sorrow be most reverend, Give mine the benefit of seniority,

And let my woes frown on the upper hand. If sorrow can admit society,

Tell o'er your woes again by viewing mine: I had an Edward, till a Richard kill'd him; 40

I had a Harry, till a Richard kill'd him: Thou hadst an Edward, till a Richard kill'd him;

Thou hadst a Richard, till a Richard kill'd him. *Duch.* I had a Richard too, and thou didst

kill him; I had a Richard too, thou help'st to kill him.

*Q. Mar.* Thou hadst a Clarence too, and Richard kill'd him.

From forth the kennel of thy womb hath crept A hell-hound that doth hunt us all to death: 50

That dog, that had his teeth before his eyes, To worry lambs and lap their gentle blood,

That foul defacer of God's handiwork, That excellent grand tyrant of the earth,

That reigns in galled eyes of weeping souls, Thy womb let loose, to chase us to our graves.

O upright, just, and true-disposing God, How do I thank thee, that this carnal cur

Preys on the issue of his mother's body, And makes her pew-fellow with others' moan!

*Duch.* O Harry's wife, triumph not in my woes!

God witness with me, I have wept for thine. 60

*Q. Mar.* Bear with me; I am hungry for revenge.

And now I cloy me with beholding it. Thy Edward he is dead, that stabb'd my

Edward;

Thy other Edward dead, to quit my Edward: Young York he is but boot, because both they

Match not the high perfection of my loss: Thy Clarence he is dead that kill'd my Edward:

And the beholders of this tragedy, The adulterate Hastings, Rivers, Vaughan, Grey,

Untimely smother'd in their dusty graves. 70

Richard yet lives, hell's black intelligence,

Only reserved their factor, to buy souls  
And send them thither : but at hand, at hand,  
Ensues his piteous and unpitied end :  
Earth gapes, hell burns, fiends roar, saints pray,  
To have him suddenly convey'd away.  
Cancel his bond of life, dear God, I pray,  
That I may live to say, The dog is dead !

*Q. Eliz.* O, thou didst prophesy the time  
I would come

That I should wish for thee to help me curse  
That bottled spider, that foul bunch-back'd  
toad !

*Q. Mar.* I call'd thee then vain flourish of  
my fortune ;

I call'd thee then poor shadow, painted queen ;  
The presentation of but what I was ;

The flattering index of a direful pageant ;

One heaved a-high, to be hur'd down below ;

A mother only mock'd with two sweet babes ;

A dream of what thou wert, a breath, a bubble,

A sign of dignity, a garish flag,

To be the aim of every dangerous shot ;

A queen in jest, only to fill the scene.

Where is thy husband now ! where be thy bro-  
thers !

Where are thy children ! wherein dost thou joy !

Who sues to thee and cries 'God save the  
queen !'

Where be the bending peers that flatter'd thee !

Where be the thronging troops that follow'd  
thee !

Decline all this, and see what now thou art :

For happy wife, a most distressed widow ;

For joyful mother, one that wails the name ;

For queen, a very caittif crown'd with care ;

For one being sued to, one that humbly sues ;

For one that scorn'd at me, now scorn'd of me ;

For one being fear'd of all, now fearing of none ;

For one commanding all, obey'd of none.

Thus hath the course of justice wheel'd about,

And left thee but a very prey to time ;

Having no more but thoughts of what thou wert,

To torture thee the more, being what thou art.

Thou didst usurp my place, and dost thou not  
usurp the just proportion of my sorrow !

Now thy proud neck bears half my burthen'd  
yoke ;

From which even here I slip my weary neck,

And leave the burthen of it all on thee.

Farewell, York's wife, and queen of sad mis-  
chance ;

These English woes will make me smile in  
France.

*Q. Eliz.* O thou well skill'd in curses, stay  
awhile,

And teach me how to curse mine enemies !

*Q. Mar.* Forbear to sleep the nights, and  
fast the days ;

Compare dead happiness with living woe ;

Think that thy babes were fairer than they  
were,

And he that slew them fouler than he is ;

Bettering thy loss makes the bad cause worse

Revolving this will teach thee how to curse.

*Q. Eliz.* My woes are dull ; O, quicken  
them with thine !

*Q. Mar.* Thy woes will make them sharp,  
and pierce like thine.

(Exit)

*Duch.* Why should calamity be full of words !

*Q. Eliz.* Windy attorneys to their client's  
woes,

Airy succeders of intestate joys,

Poor breathing orators of miseries !

Let them have scope : though what they do im-  
part

Help not at all, yet do they ease the heart.

*Duch.* If so, then be not tongue-tied : go  
with me,

And in the breath of bitter words let's smother  
My damned son, which thy two sweet sons  
smother'd.

I hear his drum : be copious in exclams.

*Enter KING RICHARD, marching, with drums  
and trumpets.*

*K. Rich.* Who intercepts my expedition !

*Duch.* O, she that might have intercepted  
thee,

By strangling thee in her accursed womb,

From all the slaughters, wretch, that thou hast  
done !

*Q. Eliz.* Hidest thou that forehead with a  
golden crown,

Where should be graven, if that right were  
right,

The slaughter of the prince that owed that  
crown,

And the dire death of my two sons and bro-  
thers ?

Tell me, thou villain slave, where are my chil-  
dren !

*Duch.* Thou toad, thou toad, where is thy  
brother Clarence ?

And little Ned Plantagenet, his son !

*Q. Eliz.* Where is kind Hastings, Rivers,  
Vaughan, Grey !

*K. Rich.* A flourish, trumpets ! strike alarm,  
drums !

Let not the heavens hear these tell-tale women  
Rail on the Lord's anointed : strike, I say !

(Flourish. Alarums.)

Either be patient, and entreat me fair,

(Or with the clamorous report of war  
Thus will I drown your exclamations.

*Duch.* Art thou my son !

*K. Rich.* Ay, I thank God, my father, and  
yourself.

*Duch.* Then patiently hear my impatienties.

*K. Rich.* Madam, I have a touch of your  
condition,

Which cannot brook the accent of reproach.

*Duch.* O, let me speak !

*K. Rich.* Do then ; but I'll not hear.

*Duch.* I will be mild and gentle in my  
speech.

*K. Rich.* And brief, good mother ; for I am  
in haste.

*Duch.* Art thou so hasty ! I have say'd for  
thee,

God knows, in anguish, pain and agony.

*K. Rich.* And came I not at last to comfort  
you !

*Duch.* No, by the holy rood, thou know'st  
it well,

Thou comest on earth to make the world thy  
hell.

A grievous burthen was thy birth to me;  
Tetchy and wayward was thy infancy;  
Thy school-days frightful, desperate, wild, and  
furious,

Thy prime of manhood daring, bold, and ven-  
turous, 170

Thy age confirm'd, proud, subtle, bloody, trea-  
cherous,

More mild, but yet more harmful, kind in  
hatred;

What comfortable hour canst thou name,  
That ever graced me in thy company?

*K. Rich.* Faith, none, but Humphrey Hour,  
that call'd your grace

To breakfast once forth of my company.

If I be so disgracious in your sight,

Let me march on, and not offend your grace.

Strikes up the drum.

*Duch.* I prithee, hear me speak.

*K. Rich.* You speak too bitterly.

*Duch.* Hear me a word; 180

For I shall never speak to thee again.

*K. Rich.* So.

*Duch.* Either thou wilt die, by God's just  
ordinance,

Ere from this war thou turn a conqueror,  
Or I with grief and extreme age shall perish  
And never look upon thy face again.

Therefore take with thee my most heavy curse;  
Which, in the day of battle, tire thee more  
Than all the complete armour that thou wear'st!

My prayers on the adverse party fight; 190

And there the little souls of Edward's children  
Whisper the spirits of thine enemies

And promise them success and victory.

Bloody thou art, bloody will be thy end;  
Shame serves thy life and doth thy death at-  
tend.

[*Exit.*]  
*Q. Eliz.* Though far more cause, yet much  
less spirit to curse

Abides in me: I say amen to all.

*K. Rich.* Stay, madam; I must speak a  
word with you.

*Q. Eliz.* I have no more sons of the royal  
blood:

For thee to murder: for my daughters, Richard,  
They shall be praying nuns, not weeping  
queens; 200

And therefore level not to hit their lives.

*K. Rich.* You have a daughter call'd Eliza-  
beth,

Virtuous and fair, royal and gracious.

*Q. Eliz.* And must she die for this? O, let  
her live.

And I'll corrupt her manners, stain her beauty;  
Slender myself as false to Edward's bed;

Throw over her the veil of infamy;

So she may live unscar'd of bleeding slaughter,  
I will confess she was not Edward's daughter.

*K. Rich.* Wrong not her birth, she is of  
royal blood. 211

*Q. Eliz.* To save her life, I'll say she is not  
so.

*K. Rich.* Her life is only safest in her birth.

*Q. Eliz.* And only in that safety died her  
brothers.

*K. Rich.* Lo, at their births good stars were  
conspiring.

*Q. Eliz.* No, to their lives bad friends were  
contrary.

*K. Rich.* All unavoided is the doom of  
destiny.

*Q. Eliz.* True, when avoided grace makes  
destiny:

My babes were destined to a fairer death,  
If grace had bless'd thee with a fairer life. 220

*K. Rich.* You speak as if that I had slain  
my cousins.

*Q. Eliz.* Cousins, indeed; and by their uncle  
cozen'd

Of comfort, kingdom, kindred, freedom, life.  
Whose hand soever lanced their tender hearts,

Thy head, all indirectly, gave direction:

No doubt the murderous knife was dull and  
blunt

Till it was whetted on thy stone-hard heart,  
To revel in the entrails of my lambs.

But that still use of grief makes wild grief tame,  
My tongue should to thy ears not name my  
boys 230

Till that my nails were anchor'd in thine eyes;

And I, in such a desperate bay of death,  
Like a poor bark, of sails and tackling left,

Rush all to pieces on thy rocky bosom.

*K. Rich.* Madam, so thrive I in my enter-  
prise

And dangerous success of bloody wars,  
As I intend more good to you and yours  
Than ever you or yours were by me wrong'd!

*Q. Eliz.* What good is cover'd with the face  
of heaven,

To be discover'd, that can do me good? 240

*K. Rich.* The advancement of your children,  
gentle lady.

*Q. Eliz.* Up to some scaffold, there to lose  
their heads!

*K. Rich.* No, to the dignity and height of  
honour.

The high imperial type of this earth's glory.

*Q. Eliz.* Flatter my sorrows with report  
of it;

Tell me what state, what dignity, what honour.  
Canst thou demise to any child of mine?

*K. Rich.* Even all I have; yea, and myself  
and all,

Will I withal endow a child of thine;  
So in the Lethes of thy angry soul 250

Thou drown the sad remembrance of those  
wrongs

Which thou supposest I have done to thee.

*Q. Eliz.* Be brief, lest that the process of  
thy kindness

Last longer telling than thy kindness' date.

*K. Rich.* Then know, that from my soul I  
love thy daughter.

*Q. Eliz.* My daughter's mother thinks it  
with her soul.

*K. Rich.* What do you think?

*Q. Eliz.* That thou dost love my daughter  
from thy soul:

So from thy soul's love didst thou love her  
brothers;

And from my heart's love I do thank thee for it.

*K. Rich.* Be not so hasty to confound my  
meaning; 260

I mean, that with my soul I love thy daughter,



And mean to make her queen of England.

*Q. Eliz.* Say then, who dost thou mean shall be her king?

*K. Rich.* Even he that makes her queen: who should be else?

*Q. Eliz.* What, thou?

*K. Rich.* I, even I: what think you of it, madam?

*Q. Eliz.* How canst thou woo her?

*K. Rich.* That would I learn of you,

As one that are best acquainted with her humour.

*Q. Eliz.* And wilt thou learn of me?

*K. Rich.* Madam, with all my heart. 270

*Q. Eliz.* Send to her, by the man that slew her brothers,

A pair of bleeding hearts; thereon engrave Edward and York; then haply she will weep: Therefore present to her,—as sometime Margaret

Did to thy father, steep'd in Rutland's blood,—A handkerchief; which, say to her, did drain

The purple sap from her sweet brother's body. And bid her dry her weeping eyes therewith.

If this inducement force her not to love, Send her a story of thy noble acts; 280

Tell her thou madest away her uncle Clarence, Her uncle Rivers; yea, and, for her sake,

Madest quick conveyance with her good aunt Anne.

*K. Rich.* Come, come, you mock me; this is not the way

To win your daughter.

*Q. Eliz.* There is no other way; Unless thou couldst put on some other shape,

And not be Richard that hath done all this.

*K. Rich.* Say that I did all this for love of her.

*Q. Eliz.* Nay, then indeed she cannot choose but hate thee,

Having bought love with such a bloody spoil.

*K. Rich.* Look, what is done cannot be now amended: 291

Men shall deal unadvisedly sometimes, Which after hours give leisure to repent.

If I did take the kingdom from your sons, To make amends, I'll give it to your daughter.

If I have kill'd the issue of your womb, To quicken your increase, I will beget

Mine issue of your blood upon your daughter: A grandam's name is little less in love

Than is the doting title of a mother; 300

They are as children but one step below, Even of your mettle, of your very blood;

Of all one pain, save for a night of groans Endured of her, for whom you bid like sorrow.

Your children were vexation to your youth, But mine shall be a comfort to your age.

The loss you have is but a son being king, And by that loss your daughter is made queen.

I cannot make you what amends I would, Therefore accept such kindness as I can. 310

Dorset your son, that with a fearful soul Leads discontented steps in foreign soil,

This fair alliance quickly shall call home To high promotions and great dignity;

The king, that calls your beautiful daughter

Familiarly shall call thy Dorset brother; Again shall you be mother to a king,

And all the ruins of distressful times Repair'd with double riches of content.

What! we have many goodly days to see: 320

The liquid drops of tears that you have shed Shall come again, transform'd to orient pearl,

Advantaging thy loan with interest Of ten times double gain of happiness.

So, then, my mother, to thy daughter go; Make bold her bashful years with your experi-

ence; Prepare her ears to hear a wooer's tale;

Put in her tender heart the aspiring flame Of golden sovereignty; acquaint the princess

With the sweet silent hours of marriage joys: And when this arm of mine hath chastised 331

The petty rebel, dull-brain'd Buckingham, Bound with triumphant garlands will I come

And lead thy daughter to a conqueror's bed; To whom I will retail my conquest won,

And she shall be sole victress, Caesar's Caesar.

*Q. Eliz.* What were I best to say? her father's brother

Would be her lord? or shall I say, her uncle? Or, he that slew her brothers and her uncles?

Under what title shall I woo for thee, 340

That God, the law, my honour and her love, Can make seem pleasing to her tender years?

*K. Rich.* Infer fair England's peace by this alliance.

*Q. Eliz.* Which she shall purchase with still lasting war.

*K. Rich.* Say that the king, which may command, entreats.

*Q. Eliz.* That at her hands which the king's King forbids.

*K. Rich.* Say, she shall be a high and mighty queen.

*Q. Eliz.* To wait the title, as her mother doth.

*K. Rich.* Say, I will love her everlastingly.

*Q. Eliz.* But how long shall that title 'ever' last? 350

*K. Rich.* Sweetly in force unto her fair life's end.

*Q. Eliz.* But how long fairly shall her sweet life last?

*K. Rich.* So long as heaven and nature lengthens it.

*Q. Eliz.* So long as hell and Richard liken of it.

*K. Rich.* Say, I, her sovereign, am her subject love.

*Q. Eliz.* But she, your subject, loathes such sovereignty.

*K. Rich.* Be eloquent in my behalf to her.

*Q. Eliz.* An honest tale speeds best being plainly told.

*K. Rich.* Then in plain terms tell her my loving tale.

*Q. Eliz.* Plain and not honest is too harsh a style. 360

*K. Rich.* Your reasons are too shallow and too quick.

*Q. Eliz.* O no, my reasons are too deep and

Too deep and dead, near instant to the shallow

*K. Rich.* Harp not on that string, madam ;  
that is past.

*Q. Eliz.* Harp on it still shall I till heart-strings break.

*K. Rich.* Now, by my George, my garter,  
and my crown,—

*Q. Eliz.* Profaned, dishonour'd, and the  
third usurp'd.

*K. Rich.* I swear—

*Q. Eliz.* By nothing : for this is no oath :  
The George, profaned, hath lost his holy honour ;  
The garter, blemish'd, pawn'd his knightly  
virtue ;

The crown, usurp'd, disgraced his kingly glory.  
If something thou wilt swear to be believed,

Swear then by something that thou hast not  
wrong'd.

*K. Rich.* Now, by the world—

*Q. Eliz.* 'Tis full of thy foul wrongs.

*K. Rich.* My father's death—

*Q. Eliz.* Thy life hath that dishonour'd.

*K. Rich.* Then, by myself—

*Q. Eliz.* Thyself thyself misusest.

*K. Rich.* Why then, by God—

*Q. Eliz.* God's wrong is most of all.

If thou hadst fear'd to break an oath by Him,  
The unity the king thy brother made

Had not been broken, nor my brother slain : 380  
If thou hadst fear'd to break an oath by Him,  
The imperial metal, circling now thy brow,

Had graced the tender temples of my child,  
And both the princes had been breathing here,

Which now, two tender playfellows for dust,  
Thy broken faith hath made a prey for worms.

What canst thou swear by now ?

*K. Rich.* The time to come.

*Q. Eliz.* That thou hast wronged in the  
time o'erpast ;

For I myself have many tears to wash  
Henceforth time, for time past wrong'd by thee.

The children live, whose parents thou hast  
slaughter'd, 391

Un govern'd youth, to wail it in their age ;  
The parents live, whose children thou hast

butcher'd,  
Old wither'd plants, to wail it with their age.

Swear not by time to come ; for that thou hast  
misused are used, by time misused o'erpast.

*K. Rich.* As I intend to prosper and repent,  
So shrike I in my dangerous attempt

Of hostile arms ! myself myself confound !  
Heaven and fortune bar me happy hours ! 400

Day, yield me not thy light ; nor, night, thy  
rest !

Be opposite all planets of good luck  
To my proceedings, if, with pure heart's love,

Immortal devotion, holy thoughts,  
I tender not thy beautiful princely daughter !

In her conspire my happiness and thine ;  
Without her, fellows to this land and me,

To thee, herself, and many a Christian soul,  
Death, desolation, ruin and decay :

not be avoided but by this ; 410  
not be avoided but by this.

Now, good mother,—I must call you so—  
Be the summary of my love to her :

That which I will be, not what I have been ;  
Not what I will be, not what I will deserve :

Urge the necessity and state of times,  
And be not sorrowful in great deeds.

*Q. Eliz.* Shall I be tempted of the devil thus ?

*K. Rich.* Ay, if the devil tempt thee to do  
good.

*Q. Eliz.* Shall I forget myself to be myself ?

*K. Rich.* Ay, if yourself's misadventure  
wrong yourself. 421

*Q. Eliz.* But thou didst kill my children.

*K. Rich.* But in your daughter's womb I  
bury them :

Where in that nest of spicery they shall breed  
Selves of themselves, to your recomforture.

*Q. Eliz.* Shall I go win my daughter to thy  
will ?

*K. Rich.* And be a happy mother by the  
deed.

*Q. Eliz.* I go. Write to me very shortly,  
And you shall understand from me my mind.

*K. Rich.* Bear her my true love's kiss ; and  
so, farewell. [*Exit Queen Elizabeth.*] 430

Relenting fool, and shallow, changing woman !

*Enter RATCLIFF ; CATESBY following.*

How now ! what news ?

*Rat.* My gracious sovereign, on the western  
coast

Rideth a puissant navy ; to the shore  
Throng many doubtful hollow-hearted friends,

Unarm'd, and unresolv'd to beat them back :  
'Tis thought that Richmond is their admiral ;

And there they hull, expecting but the aid  
Of Buckingham to welcome them ashore.

*K. Rich.* Some light-foot friend post to the  
Duke of Norfolk : 440

Ratcliff, thyself, or Catesby ; where is he ?

*Cate.* Here, my lord.

*K. Rich.* Fly to the duke : [*To Ratcliff*]  
Post thou to Salisbury :

When thou comest thither,—[*To Catesby*] Dull,  
unmindful villain,

Why stand'st thou still, and go'st not to the  
duke !

*Cate.* First, mighty sovereign, let me know  
your mind,

What from your grace I shall deliver to him.

*K. Rich.* O, true, good Catesby : bid him  
levy straight

The greatest strength and power he can make,  
And meet me presently at Salisbury. 450

*Cate.* I go. [*Exit.*]

*Rat.* What is't your highness' pleasure I  
shall do

At Salisbury ?

*K. Rich.* Why, what wouldst thou do there  
before I go ?

*Rat.* Your highness told me I should post  
before.

*K. Rich.* My mind is changed, sir, my mind  
is changed.

*Enter LORD STANLEY.*

How now, what news with you ?

*Stan.* None good, my lord, to please you  
with the hearing ;

Nor none so bad, but it may well be told.  
*K. Rich.* Mending, a little ! neither good  
nor bad ! 460

Why dost thou run so many mile about,  
When thou mayest tell thy tale a nearer way?  
Once more, what news?

*Stan.* Richmond is on the seas.

*K. Rich.* There let him sink, and be the seas  
on him!

White-liver'd runagate, what doth he there?

*Stan.* I know not, mighty sovereign, but by  
guess.

*K. Rich.* Well, sir, as you guess, as you  
guess!

*Stan.* Stir'd up by Dorset, Buckingham,  
and Ely.

He makes for England, there to claim the crown.

*K. Rich.* Is the chair empty? is the sword  
unsway'd?

Is the king dead? the empire unpossess'd?

What heir of York is there alive but we?

And who is England's king but great York's  
heir?

Then, tell me, what doth he upon the sea?

*Stan.* Unless for that, my liege, I cannot  
guess.

*K. Rich.* Unless for that he comes to be  
your liege.

You cannot guess wherefore the Welshman  
comes.

Thou wilt revolt, and fly to him, I fear.

*Stan.* No, mighty liege; therefore mistrust  
me not.

*K. Rich.* Where is thy power, then, to beat  
him back?

Where are thy tenants and thy followers?

Are they not now upon the western shore,

Safe-conducting the rebels from their ships?

*Stan.* No, my good lord, my friends are in  
the north.

*K. Rich.* Cold friends to Richard: what do  
they in the north.

When they should serve their sovereign in the  
west?

*Stan.* They have not been commanded,  
mighty sovereign:

Please it your majesty to give me leave,

I'll muster up my friends, and meet your grace

Where and what time your majesty shall please.

*K. Rich.* Ay, ay, thou wouldst be gone to  
join with Richmond:

I will not trust you, sir.

*Stan.* Most mighty sovereign,

You have no cause to hold my friendship

doubtful:

I never was nor never will be false.

*K. Rich.* Well,

Go muster men; but, hear you, leave behind

Your son, George Stanley: look your faith be

firm.

Or else his head's assurance is but frail.

*Stan.* So deal with him as I prove true to

you.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My gracious sovereign, now in Devon-

shire.

As I by friends am well advertised,

Sir Edward Courtney, and the haughty prelate

Bishop of Exeter, his brother there,

With many more confederates, are in arms.

*Enter another Messenger.*

*Sec. Mess.* My liege, in Kent the Guildfords  
are in arms;

And every hour more competitors  
Flock to their aid, and still their power in-  
creaseth.

*Enter another Messenger.*

*Third Mess.* My lord, the army of the  
Duke of Buckingham—

*K. Rich.* Out on you, owls! nothing but  
songs of death! *[He striketh him.]*

Take that, until thou bring me better news.

*Third Mess.* The news I have to tell your  
majesty

Is, that by sudden floods and fall of waters,  
Buckingham's army is dispersed and scatter'd;

And he himself wander'd away alone,

No man knows whither.

*K. Rich.* I cry thee mercy:

There is my purse to cure that blow of thine.

Hath any well-advised friend proclaim'd?

Keward to him that brings the traitor in?

*Third Mess.* Such proclamation hath been  
made, my liege.

*Enter another Messenger.*

*Fourth Mess.* Sir Thomas Lovel and Lord

Marquis Dorset,

'Tis said, my liege, in Yorkshire are in arms.

Yet this good comfort bring I to your grace,

The Breton navy is dispersed by tempest:

Richmond, in Dorsetshire, sent out a boat

Unto the shore, to ask those on the banks

If they were his assistants, yea or no;

Who answer'd him, they came from Bucking-

ham.

Upon his party: he, mistrusting them,

Hoised sail and made away for Brittany.

*K. Rich.* March on, march on, since we are

up in arms:

If not to fight with foreign enemies,

Yet to beat down these rebels here at home.

*Re-enter CATHERINE.*

*Cate.* My liege, the Duke of Buckingham is

taken:

That is the best news: that the Earl of

Richmond

Is with a mighty power landed at Milford;

Is colder tidings, yet they must be told.

*K. Rich.* Away towards Salisbury! while

we reason here.

A royal battle might be won and lost:

Some one take order Buckingham be brought

To Salisbury: the rest march on with me.

*[Flourish. Exeunt.]*

SCENE V. Lord Derby's house.

*Enter DERRY and SIR CHRISTOPHER*

*UNSWICK.*

*Der.* Sir Christopher, tell Richmond this

from me:

I in the way of this most bloody hour

In Stanley is frank to up in battle.

I guess young George's head:

The fear of that withholds my present aid.

But, tell me, where is princely Richmond now?

*Chris.* At Pembroke, or at Harford-west, in Wales.

*Der.* What men of name resort to him?

*Chris.* Sir Walter Herbert, a renowned soldier;

Sir Gilbert Talbot, Sir William Stanley; 10

Oxford, redoubt'd Pembroke, Sir James Blunt,

And Rice ap Thomas, with a valiant crew;

And many more of noble fame and worth:

And towards London they do bend their course,

If by the way they be not fought withal.

*Der.* Return unto thy lord; commend me to him:

Tell him the queen hath heartily consented

He shall espouse Elizabeth her daughter.

These letters will resolve him of my mind.

Farewell. [Exeunt. 20

### ACT V.

#### SCENE I. *Salisbury. An open place.*

*Enter the Sheriff, and BUCKINGHAM, with halberds, led to execution.*

*Buck.* Will not King Richard let me speak with him?

*Sher.* No, my good lord; therefore be patient.

*Buck.* Hastings, and Edward's children,

Rivers, Grey,

Holy King Henry, and thy fair son Edward,

Vaughan, and all that have miscarried

By underhand corrupted foul injustice,

If that your moody discontented souls

Do through the clouds behold this present hour,

Even for revenge mock my destruction!

This is All-Souls' day, fellows, is it not? 10

*Sher.* It is, my lord.

*Buck.* Why, then All-Souls' day is my body's doomsday.

This is the day that, in King Edward's time,

I wish'd might fall on me, when I was found

False to his children or his wife's allies;

This is the day wherein I wish'd to fall

By the false faith of him I trusted most;

This, this All-Souls' day to my fearful soul

Is the determin'd respite of my wrongs:

That high All-Seer that I dallied with 20

Hath turn'd my feigned prayer on my head

And given in earnest what I begg'd in jest.

Thus doth he force the swords of wicked men

To turn their own points on their masters' 30

bosoms:

Now Margaret's curse is fallen upon my head;

When he, quoth she, 'shall split thy heart

with sorrow,

Remember Margaret was a prophetess.'

Come, sir, convey me to the block of shame;

Wrong hath but wrong, and blame the due of 40

blame. [Exeunt.

#### SCENE II. *The camp near Tamworth.*

*Enter RICHMOND, OXFORD, BLUNT, HERBERT, and others, with drum and colours.*

Fellows in arms, and my most

Bruised underneath the yoke of t.---

Thus far into the bowels of the land

Have we march'd on without impediment;

And here receive we from our father's

Lines of fair comfort and encouragement:

The wretched, bloody, and usurping

That spoil'd your summer fields and 50

vine,

Swills your warm blood like wash, and makes

his trough

In your embowell'd bosoms, this foul swine 10

Lies now even in the centre of this isle,

Near to the town of Leicester, as we learn:

From Tamworth thither is but one day's march.

In God's name, cheerly on, courageous friends,

To reap the harvest of perpetual peace

By this one bloody trial of sharp war.

*Oxf.* Every man's conscience is a thousand

swords,

To fight against that bloody homicide.

*Herb.* I doubt not but his friends will fly 15

to us.

*Blunt.* He hath no friends but who are

friends for fear, 20

Which in his greatest need will shrink from him.

*Richm.* All for our vantage. Then, in God's

name, march:

True hope is swift, and flies with swallow's

wings;

Kings it makes gods, and meaner creatures 25

kings. [Exeunt.

#### SCENE III. *Bosworth Field.*

*Enter KING RICHARD in arms, with NORFOLK, the EARL OF SURREY, and others.*

*K. Rich.* Here pitch our tents, even here in Bosworth field.

My Lord of Surrey, why look you so sad?

*Sur.* My heart is ten times lighter than my looks.

*K. Rich.* My Lord of Norfolk,—

*Nor.* Here, most gracious liege.

*K. Rich.* Norfolk, we must have knocks:

ha! must we not?

*Nor.* We must both give and take, my

gracious lord.

*K. Rich.* Up with my tent there! here will

I lie to-night;

But where to-morrow! Well, all's one for that.

Who hath decried the number of the foe?

*Nor.* Six or seven thousand is their utmost 30

power.

*K. Rich.* Why, our battalion trebles that

account;

Besides, the king's name is a tower of strength,

Which they upon the adverse party want.

Up with my tent there! Valiant gentlemen,

Let us survey the vantage of the field;

Call for some men of sound direction:

Let's want no discipline, make no delay;

For, lords, to-morrow is a busy day. [Exeunt. 35

*Enter, on the other side of the field, RICHMOND,*

*SIR WILLIAM BRANDON, OXFORD, and others.*

*Some of the Soldiers pitch Richmond's tent.*

*Richm.* The weary sun hath made a 40

set,

And, by the bright track of his fiery car,  
Gives signal of a goodly day to-morrow :  
Sir William Brandon, you shall bear my  
standard.

Give me some ink and paper in my tent :  
I'll draw the form and model of our battle,  
Limit each leader to his several charge,  
And part in just proportion our small strength.  
My Lord of Oxford, you, Sir William Brandon,  
And you, Sir Walter Herbert, stay with me.  
The Earl of Pembroke keeps his regiment :  
Good Captain Blunt, bear my good-night to him,  
And by the second hour in the morning  
Desire the earl to see me in my tent :  
Yet one thing more, good Blunt, before thou  
go'st.

Where is Lord Stanley quarter'd, dost thou  
know?

*Blunt.* Unless I have mista'en his colours  
much,

Which well I am assured I have not done,  
His regiment lies half a mile at least  
South from the mighty power of the king.

*Richm.* If without peril it be possible,  
Good Captain Blunt, bear my good-night to him,  
And give him from me this most needful scroll.

*Blunt.* Upon my life, my lord, I'll under-  
take it ;

And so, God give you quiet rest to-night !

*Richm.* Good night, good Captain Blunt.  
Come, gentlemen,

Let us consult upon to-morrow's business :  
In to our tent ; the air is raw and cold.

*[They withdraw into the tent.]*

*Enter, to his tent, KING RICHARD, NORFOLK,  
RATCLIFF, CATESBY, and others.*

*K. Rich.* What is't o'clock ?  
*Cate.* It's supper-time, my lord ;

It's nine o'clock.

*K. Rich.* I will not sup to-night.  
Give me some ink and paper.

What, is my beaver easier than it was ?  
And all my armour laid into my tent ?

*Cate.* It is, my liege ; and all things are in  
readiness.

*K. Rich.* Good Norfolk, hie thee to thy  
charge ;

Use careful watch, choose trusty sentinels.

*Nor.* I go, my lord.

*K. Rich.* Stir with the lark to-morrow, gentle  
Norfolk.

*Nor.* I warrant you, my lord. *[Exit.]*

*K. Rich.* Catesby !

*Cate.* My lord !

*K. Rich.* Send out a pursuivant at arms

To Stanley's regiment : bid him bring his power

Before sunrise, lest his son George fall

Into the blind cave of eternal night.

*[Exit Catesby.]*

I'll me a bowl of wine. Give me a watch.

Saddle white Surrey for the field to-morrow.

Look that my staves be sound, and not too  
heavy.

*Ratcliff !*

*Rat.* My lord !

*K. Rich.* Saw'st thou the melancholy Lord

Northumberland ?

*Rat.* Thomas the Earl of Surrey, and him-  
self.

Much about cock-shut time, from troop to troop

Went through the army, cheering up the soldiers.

*K. Rich.* So, I am satisfied. Give me a  
bowl of wine :

I have not that alacrity of spirit,

Nor cheer of mind, that I was wont to have.

Set it down. Is ink and paper ready ?

*Rat.* It is, my lord.

*K. Rich.* Bid my guard watch ; leave me.

*Ratcliff,* about the mid of night come to my  
tent

And help to arm me. Leave me, I say.

*[Exit Ratcliff and the other Attendants.]*

*Enter DERBY to RICHMOND in his tent, Lords*

*and others attending.*

*Der.* Fortune and victory sit on thy helm !

*Richm.* All comfort that the dark night can  
afford

Be to thy person, noble father-in-law !

Tell me, how fares our loving mother ?

*Der.* I, by attorney, bless thee from thy  
mother,

Who prays continually for Richmond's good :

So much for that. The silent hours steal on,

And flaky darkness breaks within the east.

In brief,—for so the season bids us be,—

Prepare thy battle early in the morning.

And put thy fortune to the arbitrement

Of bloody strokes and mortal-staring war.

I, as I may,—that which I would I cannot,—

With best advantage will deceive the time,

And aid thee in this doubtful shock of arms :

But on thy side I may not be too forward,

Lest, being seen, thy brother, tender George,

Be executed in his father's sight.

Farewell : the leisure and the fearful time

Cuts off the ceremonious vows of love

And ample interchange of sweet discourse,

Which so long sunder'd friends should dwell  
upon :

God give us leisure for these rites of love !

Once more, adieu : be valiant, and speed well !

*Richm.* Good lords, conduct him to his regi-  
ment :

I'll strive, with troubled thoughts, to take a nap,

Lest leaden slumber peise me down to-morrow,

When I should mount with wings of victory :

Once more, good night, kind lords and gentle-  
men.

*[Exit all but Richmond.]*

O Thou, whose captain I account myself,

Look on my forces with a gracious eye ;

Put in their hands thy bruising arms of wrath,

That they may crush down with a heavy fall

The usurping helmets of our adversaries !

Make us thy ministers of chastisement,

That we may praise thee in the victory !

To thee I do commend my watchful soul,

Ere I let fall the windows of mine eyes :

Sleeping and waking, O, defend me still !

*[Sleeps.]*

*Enter the Ghost of PRINCE EDWARD, son to*

*HENRY the Sixth.*

*Ghost.* *[To Richard.]* Let me sit heavy on

thy soul to-morrow !

Think, how thou stab'dst me in my prime of youth

*As Tewkesbury*: despair, therefore, and die! 150

*[To Richmond]* Be cheerful, Richmond; for the wronged souls

Of butcher'd princes fight in thy behalf:

King Henry's issue, Richmond, comforts thee.

*Enter the Ghost of HENRY the Sixth.*

*Ghost. [To Richard]* When I was mortal, my anointed body

By thee was punched full of deadly holes:

By thee was the Tower and me: despair, and die!

Harry the Sixth bids thee despair and die!

*[To Richmond]* Virtuous and holy, be thou conqueror!

Harry, that prophesied thou shouldst be king,  
Doth comfort thee in thy sleep: live, and flourish! 150

*Enter the Ghost of CLARENCE.*

*Ghost. [To Richard]* Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-morrow!

I that was wash'd to death with fulsome wine,

Poor Clarence, by thy guile betrayed to death!

To-morrow in the battle think on me,

And fall thy edgeless sword: despair, and die!—

*[To Richmond]* Thou offspring of the house of Lancaster,

The wronged heirs of York do pray for thee;

Good angels guard thy battle! live, and flourish!

*Enter the Ghosts of RIVERS, GREY, and VAUGHAN.*

*Ghost of R. [To Richard]* Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-morrow,

Rivers, that died at Pomfret! despair, and die!

*Ghost of G. [To Richard]* Think upon Grey, and let thy soul despair! 145

*Ghost of V. [To Richard]* Think upon

Vaughan, and, with guilty fear,

Let fall thy lance: despair, and die!

*All. [To Richmond]* Awake, and think our wrongs in Richard's bosom

Will conquer him! awake, and win the day!

*Enter the Ghost of HASTINGS.*

*Ghost. [To Richard]* Bloody and guilty, guiltily awake,

And in a bloody battle end thy days!

Think on Lord Hastings: despair, and die!

*[To Richmond]* Quiet untroubled soul, awake, awake!

Arm, fight, and conquer, for fair England's sake! 150

*Enter the Ghosts of the two young Princes.*

*Ghosts. [To Richard]* Dream on thy cousins smother'd in the Tower:

Let us be lead within thy bosom, Richard,

And weigh thee down to ruin, shame, and death!

Thy nephews' souls bid thee despair and die!

*[To Richmond]* Sleep, Richmond, sleep in peace, and wake in joy;

Good angels guard thee from the bear's annoy!

Thy happy race of kings!

Thy sons do bid thee flourish.

*Enter the Ghost of LADY ANNE.*

*Ghost. [To Richard]* Richard, thy wife, that wretched Anne thy wife,

That never slept a quiet hour with thee, 160

Now fills thy sleep with perturbation.

To-morrow in the battle think on me,

And fall thy edgeless sword: despair, and die!

*[To Richmond]* Thou quiet soul, sleep thou a quiet sleep;

Dream of success and happy victory!

Thy adversary's wife doth pray for thee.

*Enter the Ghost of BUCKINGHAM.*

*Ghost. [To Richard]* The first was I that help'd thee to the crown;

The last was I that felt thy tyranny:

O, in the battle think on Buckingham,

And die in terror of thy guiltiness! 170

Dream on, dream on, of bloody deeds and death:

Fainting, despair; despairing, yield thy breath!

*[To Richmond]* I died for hope ere I could lend thee aid:

But cheer thy heart, and be thou not dismay'd:

God and good angels fight on Richmond's side;

And Richard falls in height of all his pride.

*[The Ghosts vanish. King Richard starts out of his dream.]*

*K. Rich.* Give me another home; bind up my wounds.

Have mercy, Jesu!—Soft! I did but dream.

O coward conscience, how dost thou afflict me!

The lights burn blue. It is now dead midnight.

Cold fearful drops stand on my trembling flesh.

What do I fear? myself? there's none else by:

Richard loves Richard; that is, I am I.

Is there a murderer here? No. Yes, I am;

Then fly. What, from myself? Great reason

why:

Lost I revenge. What, myself upon myself?

Alack, I love myself. Wherefore? for any

good

That I myself have done unto myself?

O, no! alas, I rather hate myself

For hateful deeds committed by myself! 180

I am a villain: yet I lie, I am not.

Fool, of thyself speak well: fool, do not flatter.

My conscience hath a thousand several tongues,

And every tongue brings in a several tale,

And every tale condemns me for a villain.

Perjury, perjury, in the high'st degree;

Murder, stern murder, in the direst degree;

All several sins, all used in each degree,

Throng to the bar, crying all, Guilty!

I shall despair. There is no creature loves me;

And if I die, no soul shall pity me: 190

Nay, wherefore should they, since that I myself

Find in myself no pity to myself?

Mcthought the souls of all that I had murder'd

Came to my tent; and every one did threat

To-morrow's vengeance on the head of Richard.

*Enter BATURIA.*

*Bat.* My lord!

*K. Rich.* 'Tis he! who is there?

*Bat.* Baturia, my lord; 'tis I. The early village-cook

Hath twice done salutation to the morn; <sup>270</sup>  
Your friends are up, and buckle on their  
armour.

*K. Rich.* O Ratcliff, I have dream'd a fearful dream!  
What thinkest thou, will our friends prove all true?

*Rat.* No doubt, my lord.

*K. Rich.* O Ratcliff, I fear, I fear,—

*Rat.* Nay, good my lord, be not afraid of shadows.

*K. Rich.* By the apostle Paul, shadows to-night  
Have struck more terror to the soul of Richard  
Than can the substance of ten thousand soldiers  
Armed in proof, and led by shallow Richmond.  
It is not yet near day. Come, go with me; <sup>220</sup>  
Under our tents I'll play the eaves-dropper,  
To see if any mean to shrink from me. [*Exeunt.*]

*Enter the Lords to RICHMOND, sitting in his tent.*

*Lords.* Good morrow, Richmond!

*Richm.* Cry mercy, lords and watchful gentlemen,  
That you have ta'en a tardy sluggard here.

*Lords.* How have you slept, my lord!

*Richm.* The sweetest sleep, and fairest-boding dreams

That ever enter'd in a drowsy head,  
Have I since your departure had, my lords.  
Methought their souls, whose bodies Richard murder'd, <sup>230</sup>

(Came to my tent, and cried on victory:

I promise you, my soul is very jocund

In the remembrance of so fair a dream.

How far into the morning is it, lords!

*Lords.* Upon the stroke of four.

*Richm.* Why, then 'tis time to arm and give direction.

*His oration to his soldiers.*

More than I have said, loving countrymen,  
The leisure and enforcement of the time  
Forbids to dwell upon: yet remember this,  
God and our good cause fight upon our side;  
The prayers of holy saints and wronged souls,  
Like high-reard bulwarks, stand before our  
faces;

Richard except, those whom we fight against  
Had rather have us win than him they follow:

For what is he they follow? truly, gentlemen,  
A bloody tyrant and a homicide;

One raised in blood, and one in blood established;

One that made means to come by what he hath,  
And slaughter'd those that were the means to  
help him;

A base foul stone, made precious by the foil <sup>250</sup>  
Of England's chain, where he is falsely set;

One that hath ever been God's enemy:

If you do want to put a tyrant down,  
You sleep in peace, the tyrant being slain;

If you do fight against your country's foe,  
Your country's fat shall pay your pains the hire;  
If you do fight in safeguard of your wives, <sup>230</sup>  
Your wives shall welcome home the conquerors;  
If you do free your children from the sword,  
Your children's children quit it in your age.  
Then, in the name of God and all these rights,  
Advance your standards, draw your willing  
swords.

For me, the ransom of my bold attempt  
Shall be this cold corpse on the earth's cold  
face;

But if I thrive, the gain of my attempt  
The least of you shall share his part thereof.  
Sound drums and trumpets boldly and cheer-  
fully;

God and Saint George! Richmond and victory!  
[*Exeunt.* <sup>270</sup>]

*Re-enter KING RICHARD, RATCLIFF, Attendants and Forces.*

*K. Rich.* What said Northumberland as touching Richmond?

*Rat.* That he was never trained up in arms.

*K. Rich.* He said the truth: and what said Surrey then?

*Rat.* He smiled and said 'The better for our purpose.'

*K. Rich.* He was in the right; and so indeed it is. [*Clock strikes.*]

Tell the clock there. Give me a calendar.  
Who saw the sun to-day?

*Rat.* Not I, my lord.

*K. Rich.* Then he disdains to shine; for by the book

He should have braved the east an hour ago:  
A black day will it be to somebody. <sup>280</sup>

*Ratcliff!*

*Rat.* My lord!

*K. Rich.* The sun will not be seen to-day;  
The sky doth frown and lour upon our army.

I would these dewy tears were from the ground.  
Not shine to-day! Why, what is that to me

More than to Richmond! for the selfsame  
heaven

That frowns on me looks sadly upon him.

*Enter NORFOLK.*

*Nor.* Arm, arm, my lord; the foe vaunts in the field.

*K. Rich.* Come, bustle, bustle; caparison my horse.

Call up Lord Stanley, bid him bring his power:  
I will lead forth my soldiers to the plain. <sup>290</sup>

And thus my battle shall be ordered:  
My forward shall be drawn out all in length,

Consisting equally of horse and foot;  
Our archers shall be placed in the midst;

John Duke of Norfolk, Thomas Earl of Surrey,  
Shall have the leading of this foot and horse.

They thus directed, we will follow  
In the main battle, whose puissance on either  
side

Shall be well winged with our chiefest horse.

This, and Saint George to boot! What think'st thou, Norfolk?

*Nor.* A good direction, warlike sovereign.  
This found I on my tent this morning.

*K. Rich.* [*Reads*] 'Jockey of Norfolk, be  
not too bold,

For Dickon thy master is bought and sold.  
A thing devised by the enemy.

Go, gentlemen, every man unto his charge:  
Let not our babbling dreams affright our souls:  
Conscience is but a word that cowards use,  
Devised at first to keep the strong in awe;  
Our strong arms be our conscience, swords our  
law.

March on, join bravely, let us to't pell-mell;  
If not to heaven, then hand in hand to hell.

*His oration to his Army.*

What shall I say more than I have infer'd?  
Remember whom you are to cope withal;  
A sort of vagabonds, rascals, and runaways,  
A scum of Bretons, and base lackey peasants,  
Whom their o'er-cloyed country vomits forth  
To desperate ventures and assured destruction.  
You sleeping safe, they bring to you unrest;  
You having lands, and blest with beauteous  
wives,

They would restrain the one, disdain the other.  
And who doth lead them but a paltry fellow,  
Long kept in Bretagne at our mother's cost?  
A milk-sop, one that never in his life  
Felt so much cold as over shoes in snow!  
Let's whip these stragglers o'er the seas again;  
Lash hence these overweening rags of France,  
These famish'd beggars, weary of their lives;  
Who, but for dreaming on this fond exploit,  
For want of means, poor rats, had hang'd them-  
selves:

If we be conquer'd, let men conquer us,  
And not these bastard Bretons; whom our  
fathers  
Have in their own land beaten, lobb'd, and  
thump'd,

And in record, left them the heirs of shame.  
Shall these enjoy our lands! lie with our wives?  
Ravish our daughters? [*Drum afar off.*] Hark!  
I hear their drum.

Fight, gentlemen of England! fight, bold  
yeomen!

Draw, archers, draw your arrows to the head!  
Spur your proud horses hard, and ride in blood;  
Amass the welkin with your broken staves! 34

*Enter a Messenger.*

What says Lord Stanley? will he bring his  
power?

*Mess.* My lord, he doth deny to come.

*K. Rich.* Off with his son George's head!

*Nor.* My lord, the enemy is past the marsh:  
After the battle let George Stanley die.

*K. Rich.* A thousand hearts are great within  
my bosom:

Advance our standards, set upon our foes;  
Our ancient word of courage, fair Saint George,  
Inspire us with the spleen of fiery dragons!  
Upon them! Victory sits on our helms.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *Another part of the field.*

*Alarum: excursions. Enter NORFOLK and  
forces fighting; to him CATBERT.*

*Cate.* Rescue, my Lord of Norfolk, rescue,  
rescue!

The king enacts more wonders than a man,  
Daring an opposite to every danger:  
His horse is slain, and all on foot he fights,  
Seeking for Richmond in the throat of death.  
Rescue, fair lord, or else the day is lost.

*Alarums. Enter KING RICHARD.*

*K. Rich.* A horse! a horse! my kingdom  
for a horse!

*Cate.* Withdraw, my lord; I'll help you to  
a horse.

*K. Rich.* Slave, I have set my life upon  
a cast,  
And I will stand the hazard of the die: 10  
I think there be six Richmonds in the field;  
Five have I slain to-day instead of him.  
A horse! a horse! my kingdom for a horse!

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. *Another part of the field.*

*Alarum. Enter RICHARD and RICHMOND;  
they fight. RICHARD is slain. Retreat and  
flourish. Re-enter RICHMOND, DERBY bearing  
the crown, with divers other Lords.*

*Richm.* God and your arms be praised,  
victorious friends!

The day is ours, the bloody dog is dead.

*Der.* Courageous Richmond, well hast thou  
acquit thee.

Lo, here, this long-unsurped royalty  
From the dead temples of this bloody wretch  
Have I pluck'd off, to grace thy brows withal:  
Wear it, enjoy it, and make much of it.

*Richm.* Great God of heaven, say Amen  
to all!

But, tell me, is young George Stanley living?  
*Der.* He is, my lord, and safe in Leicester  
town: 10

Whither, if it please you, we may now with-  
draw us.

*Richm.* What men of name are slain on  
either side?

*Der.* John Duke of Norfolk, Walter Lord  
Ferrers,

Sir Robert Brakenbury, and Sir William Bran-  
don.

*Richm.* Inter their bodies as becomes their  
births:

Proclaim a pardon to the soldiers fled  
That in submission will return to us:

And then, as we have ta'en the sacrament,  
We will unite the white rose and the red:

Smile heaven upon this fair conjunction! 20  
That long have frown'd upon their enmity!

What traitor hears me, and says not amen!  
England hath long been mad, and scard's her-  
self;

The brother blindly shed the brother's blood,



The father rashly slaughter'd his own son,  
The son, compell'd, been butcher to the sire :  
All this divided York and Lancaster,  
Divided in their dire division,  
O, now, let Richmond and Elizabeth,  
The true succeeders of each royal house,  
By God's fair ordinance conjoin together !  
And let their heirs, God, if thy will be so,  
Enrich the time to come with smooth-faced  
    peace,  
With smiling plenty and fair prosperous days !

Abate the edge of traitors, gracious Lord,  
That would reduce these bloody days again,  
And make poor England weep in streams of  
    blood !  
Let them not live to taste this land's increase  
That would with treason wound this fair land's  
    peace !  
Now civil wounds are stopp'd, peace lives  
    again :  
That she may long live here, God say amen !  
[Exeunt.]

# THE FAMOUS HISTORY OF THE LIFE OF KING HENRY THE EIGHTH

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

KING HENRY the Eighth.  
CARDINAL WOLSEY.  
CARDINAL CAMPEIUS.  
CAPUCIUS, Ambassador from the Emperor Charles V.  
CRANMER, Archbishop of Canterbury.  
DUKE OF NORFOLK.  
DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM.  
DUKE OF SUFFOLK.  
EARL OF SURREY.  
Lord Chamberlain.  
Lord Chancellor.  
GARDINER, Bishop of Winchester.  
Bishop of Lincoln.  
LORD ABERGAVENNY.  
LORD SANDS.  
SIR HENRY GUILDFORD.  
SIR THOMAS LOVELL.  
SIR ANTHONY DENNY.  
SIR NICHOLAS VAUX.  
Secretaries to Wolsey.  
CROMWELL, Servant to Wolsey.

GRIFFITH, Gentleman-usher to Queen Katharine.  
Three Gentlemen.  
DOCTOR BUTTS, Physician to the King.  
Garter King-at-Arms.  
Surveyor to the Duke of Buckingham.  
BRANDON, and a Sergeant-at-Arms.  
Door-keeper of the Council-chamber. Porter, and his Man.  
Page to Gardiner. A Crier.  
QUEEN KATHARINE, wife to King Henry, afterwards divorced.  
ANNE BULLEN, her Maid of Honour, afterwards Queen.  
An old Lady, friend to Anne Bullen.  
PATIENCE, woman to Queen Katharine.  
Several Lords and Ladies in the Dumb Shows;  
Women attending upon the Queen; Scribes, Officers, Guards, and other Attendants.  
Spirits.  
SCENE: London; Westminster; Kimbolton.

## THE PROLOGUE.

I COME no more to make you laugh: things now,  
That bear a weighty and a serious brow,  
Sad, high, and working, full of state and woe,  
Such noble scenes as draw the eye to flow,  
We now present. Those that can pity, here  
May, if they think it well, let fall a tear;  
The subject will deserve it. Such as give  
Their money out of hope they may believe,  
May here find truth too. Those that come to see

Only a show or two, and so agree  
The play may pass, if they be still and willing.  
I'll undertake may see away their shilling  
Richly in two short hours. Only they  
That come to hear a merry bawdy play,  
A noise of targets, or to see a fellow  
In a long motley coat guarded with yellow,  
Will be deceived; for, gentle hearers, know  
To seek our chosen truth with such a show  
As this and fight is, beside forfeiting  
Our own brains, and the opinion that we bring,  
To make that only true we now intend,  
Which we have never an understanding friend.

Therefore, for goodness' sake, and as you are known

The first and happiest hearers of the town,  
Be sad, as we would make ye: think ye see  
The very persons of our noble story  
As they were living: think you see them great.  
And follow'd with the general throng and sweat  
Of thousand friends: then in a moment, see  
How soon this mightiness meets misery: 30  
And, if you can be merry then, I'll say  
A man may weep upon his wedding-day.

## ACT I.

SCENE I. London. An ante-chamber in the palace.

Enter the DUKE OF NORFOLK at one door; at the other, the DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM and the LORD ABERGAVENNY.

Buck. Good morrow, and well met. How have ye done

Since last we saw in France?

Nor. I thank your grace,  
Healthful; and ever since a fresh admirer  
Of what I saw there.

*Buck.* An untimely ague  
Stay'd me a prisoner in my chamber when  
Those suns of glory, these two lights of men,  
Met in the vale of Andron.

*Nor.* Twixt Guynes and Arde:  
I was then present, saw them salute on horse-  
back;

Beheld them, when they lighted, how they  
clung

In their embracement, as they grew together;  
Which had they, what four throned ones could  
have weigh'd

Such a compounded one?

*Buck.* All the whole time  
I was my chamber's prisoner.

*Nor.* Then you lost  
The view of earthly glory: men might say,

Till this time pomp was single, but now married  
To one above itself. Each following day

Became the next day's master, till the last  
Made former wonders its. To-day the French,

All cluquant, all in gold, like heathen gods,  
Shone down the English; and, to-morrow, they

Made Britain India: every man that stood  
Show'd like a mine. Their dwarfish pages were

As cherubins, all gilt: the madams too,  
Not used to toil, did almost sweat to bear

The pride upon them, that their very labour  
Was to them as a painting: now this masque

Was cried incomparable; and the ensuing  
night

Made it a fool and beggar. The two kings,  
Equal in lustre, were now best, now worst,

As presences did present them; him in eye,  
All him in praise: and, being present both,

I was said they saw but one; and no discern  
er was his tongue in censure. When these

suns—  
or so they phrase 'em—by their heraldis chal-  
lenged

The noble spirits to arms, they did perform  
Beyond thought's compass; that former fabu-  
lous story,

Being now seen possible enough, got credit,  
That Hevis was believed.

*Buck.* O, you go far.  
*Nor.* As I belong to worship and affect

In honour honesty, the tract of every thing  
Would by a good discourser lose some life.

Which action's self was tongue to. All was  
royal;

To the disposing of it nought rebell'd,  
Order gave each thing view; the office did

instinctly his full function.

*Buck.* Who did guide,  
I mean, who set the body and the limbs

Of this great sport together, as you guess?

*Nor.* One, certes, that promises no element  
in such a business.

*Buck.* I pray you, who, my lord?

*Nor.* All this was order'd by the good dis-  
cretion

Of the right reverend Cardinal of York.

*Buck.* The devil speed him! no man's plea  
is freed

From his ambitious finger. What had he  
To do in these sacred vanities? I wonder

That such a leech can with his very hand

Take up the rays o' the beneficial sun  
And keep it from the earth.

*Nor.* Surely, sir,  
There's in him stuff that puts him to these ends;

For, being not propp'd by ancestry, whose  
grace

Chalks successors their way, nor call'd upon to  
For high feats done to the crown; neither

allied  
To eminent assistants; but, spider-like,

Out of his self-drawing web, he gives us note,  
The force of his own merit makes his way;

A gift that heaven gives for him, which buys  
A place next to the king.

*Aber.* I cannot tell  
What heaven hath given him,—let some graver

eye  
Pierce into that; but I can see his pride

Peep through each part of him: whence has he  
that,

If not from hell? the devil is a niggard,  
Or has given all before, and he begins

A new hell in himself.

*Buck.* Why the devil,  
Upon this French going out, took he upon

him,  
Without the privy o' the king, to appoint

Who should attend on him? He makes up  
the file

Of all the gentry; for the most part such  
To whom as great a charge as little honour

He meant to lay upon; and his own letter,  
The honourable board of council out,

Must fetch him in the papers.

*Aber.* I do know  
Kinsmen of mine, three at the least, that have

By this so sicken'd their estates, that never  
They shall abound as formerly.

*Buck.* O, many  
Have broke their backs with laying manors

on 'em  
For this great journey. What did this vanity

But minister communication of  
A most poor issue?

*Nor.* Grievingly I think,  
The peace between the French and us not

values  
The cost that did conclude it.

*Buck.* Every man,  
After the hideous storm that follow'd, was

so  
A thing inspired; and, not consulting, leaped  
into a general prophecy; That this tempest,

Dashing the garment of this peace, aboded  
The sudden breach on't.

*Nor.* Which is bidden only  
For France hath sav'd the league, and hath

attach'd  
Our merchants' goods at Bourdeaux.

*Aber.* Is it therefore  
The ambassador is silenced?

*Nor.* Merry, is't.

*Aber.* A proper title of a peace; and, yet

At a

*Buck.* Why, all this business  
Our reverend cardinal order'd.

*Nor.* Like it your grace?

The state takes notice of the?

Betwixt you and the cardinal. I advise you—  
And take it from a heart that wishes towards  
you

Honour and plentiful safety—that you read  
The cardinal's malice and his potency  
Together; to consider further that  
What his high hatred would effect wants not  
A minister in his power. You know his nature,  
That he's revengful, and I know his sword  
Hath a sharp edge: it's long and, 't may be  
said,

It reaches far, and where 'twill not extend,  
Thither he darts it. Bosom up my counsel,  
You'll find it wholesome. Lo, where comes  
that rock  
That I advise your shunning.

*Enter CARDINAL WOLSEY, the purse borne  
before him, certain of the Guard, and two  
Secretaries with papers. The CARDINAL in  
his passage fixeth his eye on BUCKINGHAM,  
and BUCKINGHAM on him, both full of  
disdain.*

Wol. The Duke of Buckingham's surveyor,  
hail

Where's his examination?

First Sec. Here, so please you.

Wol. Is he in person ready?

First Sec. Ay, please your grace.

Wol. Well, we shall then know more; and  
Buckingham  
Shall lessen this big look.

*[Exeunt Wolsey and his Train.]*

Buck. This butcher's cur is venom-mouth'd,  
and I

Have not the power to muzzle him; therefore  
best

Not wake him in his slumber. A beggar's  
book

Outworth a noble's blood.

Nor. What, are you chafed?

Ask God for temperance; that's the appliance  
only

Which your disease requires.

Buck. I read in 's looks

Matter against me; and his eye reviled  
Me, as his subject object: at this instant

He bores me with some trick: he's gone to the  
king;

I'll follow and outstare him.

Nor. Stay, my lord,

And let your reason with your choler question  
What 'tis you go about: to climb steep hills 131

Requires slow pace at first: anger is like  
A full-hot horse, who being allow'd his way,

Settles him. Not a man in England  
Can advise me like you: be to yourself

As you would to your friend.

Buck. I'll to the king;

And from a mouth of honour quite cry down  
This Ipswich fellow's insolence; or proclaim

There's difference in no persons.

Nor. Be advised;

Put a furnace for your foe so hot 140

That it do singe yourself: we may outrun,  
My noble swainness, that which we run at,

And lose by over-running. Know you not,  
The fire that mounts the liquor till 't run o'er,  
In seeming to augment it wastes it! Be ad-  
vised:

I say again, there is no English soul  
More stronger to direct you than y.  
If with the sap of reason you would quench,  
Or but allay, the fire of passion.

Buck.

Sir,  
I am thankful to you; and I'll go  
By your prescription: but this top-<sup>135</sup>  
Whom from the flow of gall I name of fellow  
From sincere motions, by intelligenc  
And proofs as clear as founts in July  
We see each grain of gravel, I do know  
To be corrupt and treasonous.

Nor.

Say not 'treasonous'  
Nor. To the king I'll say 't; and make my  
vouch as strong

As shore of rock. Attend. This holy fox,  
Or wolf, or both,—for he is equal ravenous

As he is subtle, and as prone to mischief 140

As able to perform 't; his mind and place

Infecting one another, yea, reciprocally—

Only to show his pomp as well in France

As here at home, suggests the king our master

To this last costly treaty, the interview,

That swallow'd so much treasure, and like a

glass

Did break i' the rinsing.

Nor.

Faith, and so it did.  
Buck. Pray, give me favour, sir. This  
cunning cardinal

The articles o' the combination drew  
As himself pleas'd; and they were ratified 170

As he cried 'Thus let be': to as much end

As give a crutch to the dead: but our count-  
cardinal

Has done this, and 'tis well: for worthy Wolsey,

Who cannot err, he did it. Now this follows,—

Which, as I take it, is a kind of puppy

To the old dam, treason.—Charles the emperor,

Under pretence to see the queen his aunt,—

For 'twas indeed his colour, but he came

To whisper Wolsey,—here makes visitation:

His fears were, that the interview betwixt 180

England and France might, through their

amity,

Breed him some prejudice: for from this league

Peep'd harms that menaced him: he privily

Deals with our cardinal; and, as I trow,—

Which I do well; for I am sure the emperor

Paid ere he promised; whereby his suit was

granted

Ere it was ask'd; but when the way was made,

And paved with gold, the emperor thus desired,

That he would please to alter the king's course

And break the forward peace. Let the king

know,

As soon he shall by me, that thus the cardinal

Does buy and sell his honour as he pleases,

And for his own advantage.

Nor.

I am sorry

To hear this of him; and could wish he were

Something mistaken in 't.

Buck.

No, not a syllable:

I do pronounce him in that very shape

He shall appear in proof.

*Enter BRANDON, a Sergeant-at-arms before him, and two or three of the Guard.*

*Bran.* Your office, sergeant; execute it.

*Serv.*

Sir,  
My lord the Duke of Buckingham, and Earl  
Of Hereford, Stafford, and Northampton, I too  
Arrest thee of high treason, in the name  
Of our most sovereign king.

*Buck.* Lo, you, my lord,  
The net has fall'n upon me! I shall perish  
Under device and practice.

*Bran.* I am sorry  
To see you ta'en from liberty, to look on  
The business present: 'tis his highness' pleasure  
You shall to the Tower.

*Buck.* It will help me nothing  
To plead mine innocence; for that dye is on me  
Which makes my whitest part black. The will  
Of heaven

Be done in this and all things! I obey. 210  
O my Lord Abergavenny, fare you well!

*Bran.* Nay, he must bear you company.  
The king [To Abergavenny.  
Is pleased you shall to the Tower, till you know  
How he determines further.

*Aber.* As the duke said,  
The will of heaven be done, and the king's  
pleasure  
By me obey'd!

*Bran.* Here is a warrant from  
The king to attach Lord Montacute; and the  
bodies  
Of the duke's confessor, John de la Car,  
One Gilbert Peck, his chancellor,—

*Buck.* So, so; 210  
These are the limbs o' the plot; no more, I hope.

*Bran.* A monk o' the Chartreux.

*Buck.* O, Nicholas Hopkins!

*Bran.* He.

*Buck.* My surveyor is false; the o'er-great  
cardinal  
Hath show'd him gold; my life is spann'd  
already:

I am the shadow of poor Buckingham,  
Whose figure even this instant cloud puts on,  
By darkening my clear sun. My lord, farewell.  
[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *The same. The council-chamber.*

*Cornets. Enter the KING, leaning on the  
CARDINAL's shoulder, the Nobles, and SIR  
THOMAS LOVELL; the CARDINAL places  
himself under the KING's feet on his right  
side.*

*King.* My life itself, and the best heart of it,  
Thanks you for this great care: I stood i' the  
level  
Of a full-charged confederacy, and give thanks  
To you that choked it. Let be call'd before us  
That gentlemen of Buckingham's; in person  
I'll hear him his confessions justify;  
And point point the treasons of his master  
He shall as a rebel.

*A noise within, crying 'Room for the Queen!'*

*Enter QUEEN KATHARINE, ushered by the  
DUKE OF NORFOLK, and the DUKE OF  
SUFFOLK: she kneels. The KING rises  
from his state, takes her up, kisses and  
placeth her by him.*

*Q. Kath.* Nay, we must longer kneel: I am  
a sutor.

*King.* Arise, and take place by us: half  
your suit 20  
Never name to us; you have half our power:  
The other moiety, ere you ask, is given;  
Repeat your will and take it.

*Q. Kath.* Thank your majesty.  
That you would love yourself, and in that love  
Not unconsider'd leave your honour, nor  
The dignity of your office, is the point  
Of my petition.

*King.* Lady mine, proceed.

*Q. Kath.* I am solicited, not by a few,  
And those of true condition, that your subjects  
Are in great grievance: there have been com-  
missions 20  
Sent down among 'em, which hath flaw'd the  
heart.

Of all their loyalties: wherein, although,  
My good lord cardinal, they vent reproaches  
Most bitterly on you, as putter on  
Of these exactions, yet the king our master—  
Whose honour heaven shield from soil!—even  
he escapes not  
Language unmannerly, yea, such which breaks  
The sides of loyalty, and almost appears  
In loud rebellion.

*Nor.* Not almost appears,  
It doth appear; for, upon these taxation, 30  
The clothiers all, not able to maintain  
The many to them 'longing, have put off  
The spinsters, carders, fullers, weavers, wio,  
Unfit for other life, compell'd by hunger  
And lack of other means, in desperate manner  
Daring the event to the teeth, are all in uproar,  
And danger serves among them.

*King.* Taxation!  
Wherein? and what taxation? My lord cardinal,  
You that are blamed for it alike with us,  
Know you of this taxation?

*Wol.* Please you, sir, 40  
I know but of a single part, in sight  
Pertains to the state; and front but in that file  
Where others tell steps with me.

*Q. Kath.* No, my lord,  
You know no more than others; but you  
frame  
Things that are known alike; which are not  
wholesome  
To those which would not know them, and yet  
must

Perforce be their acquaintance. These tax-  
ations,  
Whereof my sovereign would have note, they  
are

Most pestilent to the hearing; and, to hear 'em,  
The back is sacrifice to the load. They say, so  
They are devised by you; or else you suffer  
Too hard an exaction.

*King.* Still emphasis!

The nature of it! in what kind, let's know,  
Is this erection!

*Q. Kath.* I am much too venturous  
In tempting of your patience; but am bolden'd  
Under your promised pardon. The subjects'  
grief

Comes through commissions, which compel  
from each

The sixth part of his substance, to be levied  
Without delay; and the pretence for this  
Is named, your wars in France: this makes  
bold mouths:

Tongues spit their duties out, and cold hearts  
freeze

Allegiance in them; their curses now  
Live where their prayers did: and it's come to  
pass,

This tractable obedience is a slave  
To each incens'd will. I would your highness  
Would give it quick consideration, for  
There is no prinner business.

*King.* By my life,  
This is against our pleasure.

*Wol.* And for me,  
I have no further gone in this than by  
A single voice; and that not pass'd me but 70  
By learned approbation of the judges. If I am  
Trafuced by ignorant tongues, which neither  
know

My faculties nor person, yet will be  
The chronicles of my doing, let me say

'Tis but the fate of place, and the rough brake  
That virtues must go through. We must not stint  
Our necessary actions, in the fear

To cope malicious censurers; which ever,  
As ravenous fishes, do a vessel follow

That is new-trimm'd, but benefit no further 80  
Than vainly glimming. What we oft do best,  
By sick interpreters, once weak ones, is

Not ours, or not allow'd; what worst, as oft,  
Hitting a grosser quality, is cried up

For our best act. If we shall stand still,  
In fear our motion will be mock'd or carp'd at,

We should take root here where we sit, or sit  
State-statues only.

*King.* Things done well,  
And with a care, exempt themselves from fear:

Things done without example, in their issue 90  
Are to be fear'd. Have you a precedent  
Of this commission? I believe, not any.

We must not read our subjects from our laws,  
And stick them in our will. Sixth part of

each?

A trembling contribution! Why, we take  
From every tree lop, bark, and part o' the

timber;  
And, though we leave it with a root, thus

hack'd

The air will drink the sap. To every county  
Where this is question'd send our letters, with

Free pardon to each man that has denied 100  
The force of this commission: pray, look to't;  
I put it to your care.

A word with you.  
[To the Secretary.]

Let there be letters writ to every shire,  
Of the king's grace and pardon. The grieved

complaints

Hardly conceive of me; let it be noised  
That through our intercession this revocation  
And pardon comes: I shall anon advise you  
Further in the proceeding. [Exit Secretary.]

*Enter Surveyor.*

*Q. Kath.* I am sorry that the Duke of Buck-  
ingham

Is run in your displeasure.

*King.* It grieves many: 110  
The gentleman is learn'd, and a most rare  
speaker;

To nature none more bound; his training  
such,

That he may furnish and instruct great teachers,  
And never seek for aid out of himself. Yet

see,

When these so noble benefits shall prove  
Not well disposed, the mind growing once

corrupt,  
They turn to vicious forms, ten times more

ugly  
Than ever they were fair. This man so

complete,  
Who was enroll'd 'mongst wonders, and when

we,

Almost with ravish'd listening, could not find  
His hour of speech a minute; he, my lady, 120

Hath into monstrous habits put the graces  
That once were his, and is become as black

As if beam'd in hell. Sit by us; you shall  
hear—

This was his gentleman in trust—of him  
Things to strike honour sad. Bid him recount

The fore-recited practices; whereof  
We cannot feel too little, hear too much.

*Wol.* Stand forth, and with bold spirit relate  
what you,

Most like a careful subject, have collected 130  
Out of the Duke of Buckingham.

*King.* Speak freely.

*Surv.* First, it was usual with him, every  
day

It would infect his speech, that if the king  
Should without issue die, he'll carry it so

To make the sceptre his; these very words  
I've heard him utter to his son-in-law,

Lord Aberavenny; to whom by oath he  
menaced

Revenge upon the cardinal.

*Wol.* Please your highness, note  
This dangerous conception in this point. 139

Not friended by his wish, to your high person  
His will is most malignant; and it stretches

Beyond you, to your friends.

*Q. Kath.* My learn'd lord cardinal,  
Deliver all with charity.

*King.* Speak on:

How grounded he his title to the crown,  
Upon our fall? to this point have thou heard

him

At any time speak aught!

*Surv.* He was brought to this  
By a vain prophecy of Nicholas Hopkins.

*King.* What was that Hopkins?

*Surv.* Sir, a Charleux tith.

His confessor: who told him every minute  
With words of sovereignty.

*King.* How know'st thou this? 150  
*Surv.* Not long before your highness sped to France.

The duke being at the Rose, within the parish Saint Lawrence Poultney, did of me demand What was the speech among the Londoners Concerning the French journey: I replied, Men fear'd the French would prove perfidious, To the king's danger. Presently the duke Said, 'twas the fear, indeed; and that he doubted

'Twould prove the verity of certain words Spoke by a holy monk; 'that oft,' says he, 160 'Hath sent to me, wishing me to permit John de la Car, my chaplain, a choice hour To hear from him a matter of some moment: Whom after under the confession's seal He solemnly had sworn, that what he spoke My chaplain to no creature living, but To me, should utter, with demure confidence This pausingly ensued: Neither the king nor's heirs,

Tell you the duke, shall prosper: bid him strive To gain the love o' the commonalty: the duke Shall govern England.'

*Q. Kath.* If I know you well, 171  
 You were the duke's surveyor, and lost your office  
 On the complaint o' the tenants: take good heed

You charge not in your spleen a noble person  
 And spoil your nobler soul: I say, take heed;  
 Yea, heartily beseech you,

*King.* Let him on.  
 So forward.

*Surv.* On my soul, I'll speak but truth.  
 told my lord the duke, by the devil's illusions  
 The monk might be deceived; and that 'twas dangerous for him

To ruminate on this so far, until 180  
 It forged him some design, which, being believed,

'twas much like to do: he answer'd, 'Tush, It can do me no damage;' adding further, That, had the king in his last sickness fall'd, The cardinal's and Sir Thomas Lovell's heads should have gone off.

*King.* Ha! what, so rank? Ah ha!  
 There's mischief in this man: canst thou say further?

*Surv.* I can, my liege.

*King.* Proceed.

*Surv.* Being at Greenwich,  
 After your highness had reprov'd the duke About Sir William Blouner,—

*King.* I remember 190  
 Of such a time; being my sworn servant,  
 The duke retain'd him his. But on; what hence?

*Surv.* 'II,' quoth he, 'I for this had been committed,  
 As to the Tower, I thought, I would have play'd

The part my father meant to act upon  
 The usurper Richard; who, being at Salisbury,  
 Made suits to come in's presence; which I granted,  
 As he made semblance of his duty, would

Have put his knife into him.'

*King.* A giant traitor!  
*Wel.* Now, madam, may his highness live in freedom, 200

And this man out of prison!

*Q. Kath.* God mend all!

*King.* There's something more would out of thee; what say'st?

*Surv.* After 'the duke his father,' with 'the knife,

He stretch'd him, and, with one hand on his dagger,

Another spread on's breast, mounting his eyes,  
 He did discharge a horrible oath; whose tenour

Was,—were he evil used, he would outgo

His father by as much as a performance  
 Does an irresolute purpose.

*King.* There's his period,  
 To slathe his knife in us. He is attach'd;

Call him to present trial: if he may 211  
 Find mercy in the law, 'tis his; if none,

Let him not seek 't of us: by day and night,  
 He's traitor to the height. *[Exeunt.]*

### SCENE III. An ante-chamber in the palace.

Enter the LORD CHAMBERLAIN and LORD SANDS.

*Cham.* Is't possible the spells of France  
 should juggle

Men into such strange mysteries!

*Sands.* New customs,  
 Though they be never so ridiculous,

Nay, let 'em be unmanly, yet we follow'd.

*Cham.* As far as I see, all the good our  
 English

Have got by the late voyage is but merely  
 A fit or two o' the face; but they are shrewd

ones;  
 For when they hold 'em, you would swear

directly

Their very noses had been counsellors

To Pepin or Clotharius, they keep state on. 20

*Sands.* They have all new legs, and handsome  
 ones: one would take it,

That never saw 'em pace before, the spavins

Or springhalt reign'd among 'em.

*Cham.* Death! my lord,

Their clothes are after such a pagan cut too,

That, sure, they've worn out Christendom.

Enter SIR THOMAS LOVELL.

How now?

What news, Sir Thomas Lovell?

*Lov.* Faith, my lord,

I hear of none, but the new proclamation

That's clapp'd upon the court-gate.

*Cham.* What is't?

*Lov.* The reformation of our

galleys.

That fill the court with quarrels, talk, and

tailors.

*Cham.* I'm glad he's there: now I would

pray our mountains

To thick an English counter may be wise.

And never see the Louvre.

*Lov.* They must either,  
For so run the conditions, leave those remnants  
Of fool and feather that they got in France,  
With all their honourable points of ignorance  
Pertaining thereunto, as fights and fireworks,  
Abusing better men than they can be,  
Out of a foreign wisdom, renouncing clean  
The faith they have in tennis, and tall stockings,  
Short blister'd breeches, and those types of  
travel, 31

And understand again like honest men;  
Or pack to their old playfellows: there, I take  
it,

They may, 'cum privilegio,' wear away  
The lag end of their lewdness and be laugh'd at.

*Sands.* 'Tis time to give 'em physic, their  
diseases

Are grown so catching.

*Cham.* What a loss our ladies  
Will have of these trim vanities!

*Lov.* Ay, marry,  
There will be woe indeed, lords: the silly whores-  
sons

Have got a speeding trick to lay down ladies;  
A French song and a fiddle has no fellow. 41

*Sands.* The devil fiddle 'em! I am glad they  
are going,

For, sure, there's no converting of 'em: now  
An honest country lord, as I am, beaten  
A long time out of play, may bring his plain-

And have an hour of hearing; and, by'r lady,  
Held current music too.

*Cham.* Well said, Lord Sands;  
Your colt's tooth is not cast yet.

*Sands.* No, my lord;  
Nor shall not, while I have a stump.

*Cham.* Sir Thomas,  
Whither were you a-going?

*Lov.* To the cardinal's: 50  
Your lordship is a guest too.

*Cham.* O, 'tis true:  
This night he makes a supper, and a great one,  
To many lords and ladies; there will be  
The beauty of this kingdom; I'll assure you.

*Lov.* That churchman bears a bounteous  
mind indeed.

A hand as fruitful as the land that feeds us;  
His dew falls every where.

*Cham.* No doubt he's noble;  
He had a black mouth that said other of  
him.

*Sands.* He may, my lord; has wherewithal:  
in him

Sparring would show a worse sin than ill doc-  
trine; 60

Men of his way should be most liberal;  
They are set here for examples.

*Cham.* True, they are so;  
But how now give so great ones. My barge

Your lordship shall along. Come, good Sir  
Thomas,

We shall be late else; which I would not be,  
For we spoke to, with Sir Henry Guildford  
To be competitors.

*Sands.* I am your lordship's. [Exeunt.

#### SCENE IV. A Hall in York Place.

*Hautboys.* A small table under a state for the  
CARDINAL, a longer table for the guests.  
Then enter ANNE BULLEN and divers other  
Ladies and Gentlemen as guests, at one  
door; at another door, enter SIR HENRY  
GUILDFORD.

*Guil.* Ladies, a general welcome from his  
grace

Salutes ye all: this night he dedicates  
To fair content and you: none here, he hopes,  
In all this noble bevy, has brought with her

One care abroad; he would have all as merry  
As, first, good company, good wine, good wel-

come,

Can make good people. O, my lord, you're  
tardy:

Enter LORD CHAMBERLAIN, LORD SANDS,  
and SIR THOMAS LOVELL.

The very thought of this fair company  
Clapp'd wings to me.

*Cham.* You are young, Sir Harry Guildford.  
*Sands.* Sir Thomas Lovell, had the cardinal

But half my lay thoughts in him, some of these  
Should find a running banquet ere they rested,

I think would better please 'em: by my life,  
They are a sweet society of fair ones.

*Lov.* O, that your lordship were but now  
confessor

To one of two of these!

*Sands.* I would I were;

They should find easy penance.

*Lov.* Faith, how easy!  
*Sands.* As easy as a down-bed would  
afford it.

*Cham.* Sweet ladies, will it please you sit?  
Sir Harry,

Place you that side; I'll take the charge of  
this: 50

His grace is entering. Nay, you must not  
freeze;

Two women placed together makes cold  
weather:

My Lord Sands, you are one will keep 'em  
waking;

Pray, sit between these ladies.

*Sands.* By my faith,  
And thank your lordship. By your leave, sweet  
ladies:

If I chance to talk a little wild, forgive me;  
I had it from my father.

*Anne.* Was he mad, sir?  
*Sands.* O, very mad, exceeding mad, in  
love too: 60

But he would bite none; just as I do now,  
He would kiss you twenty with a branch.

[*Enter her.*  
*Cham.* Well said, my lord. 30  
So, now you're fairly seated. Gentlemen,  
The penance lies on you, if these fair ladies  
Pass away frowning.

*Sands.* For my little wife,  
Let me alone.



*Hautboys. Enter CARDINAL WOLSEY, and takes his state.*

*Wol.* You're welcome, my fair guests: that noble lady, Or gentlemen, that is not freely merry, Is not my friend: this, to confirm my welcome; And to you all, good health. [*Drinks.*]

*Sanda.* Your grace is noble: Let me have such a bowl may hold my thanks, And save me so much talking.

*Wol.* My Lord Sands, 40 I am beholding to you: cheer your neighbours. Ladies, you are not merry: gentlemen, Whose fault is this?

*Sanda.* The red wine first must rise In their fair cheeks, my lord; then we shall have 'em Talk us to silence.

*Anne.* You are a merry gamester, My Lord Sands.

*Sanda.* Yes, if I make my play. Here's to your ladyship: and pledge it, madam, For 'tis to such a thing,—

*Anne.* You cannot show me. *Sanda.* I told your grace they would talk anon.

[*Drum and trumpet, chambers discharged.*]  
*Wol.* What's that?

*Cham.* Look out there, some of ye. [*Exit Servant.*]

*Wol.* What warlike voice, so And to what end, is this? Nay, ladies, fear not;

By all the laws of war you're privileged.

*Re-enter Servant.*

*Cham.* How now! what is't? *Serv.* A noble troop of strangers, For so they seem: they've left their barge and landed;

And hither make, as great ambassadors From foreign princes.

*Wol.* Good lord chamberlain, Go, give 'em welcome; you can speak the French tongue;

And, pray, receive 'em nobly, and conduct 'em Into our presence, where this heaven of beauty Shall shine at full upon them. Some attend him. 60

[*Exit Chamberlain, attended. All rise, and tables removed.*]

You have now a broken banquet; but we'll mend it.

A good digestion to you all: and once more I shower a welcome on ye; welcome all.

*Hautboys. Enter the KING and others, as masquers, habited like shepherds, ushered by the LORD CHAMBERLAIN. They pass directly before the CARDINAL, and gracefully salute him.*

A noble company! what are their pleasures?

*Cham.* Because they speak no English, thus they pray'd

To tell your grace, that, having heard by fame Of this so noble and so fair assembly

This night to meet here, they could do no less,

Out of the great respect they bear to beauty, But leave their flocks; and, under your fair conduct,

Crave leave to view these ladies and entreat An hour of revels with 'em. 70

*Wol.* Say, lord chamberlain, They have done my poor house grace; for which I pay 'em

A thousand thanks, and pray 'em take their pleasures. [*They choose Ladies for the dance. The King chooses Anne Bullen.*]

*King.* The fairest hand I ever touch'd! O beauty,

Till now I never knew thee! [*Music. Dance.*]

*Wol.* My lord!

*Cham.* Your grace?

*Wol.* Pray, tell 'em thus much from me: There should be one amongst 'em, by his person,

More worthy this place than myself; to whom, If I but knew him, with my love and duty 80 I would surrender it.

*Cham.* I will, my lord. [*Whispers the Masquers.*]

*Wol.* What say they?

*Cham.* Such a one, they all confess, There is indeed; which they would have your grace

Find out, and he will take it. *Wol.* Let me see, then.

By all your good leaves, gentlemen; here I'll make

My royal choice. *King.* Ye have found him, cardinal:

[*Unmasking.*]

You hold a fair assembly: you do well, lord; You are a churchman, or, I'll tell you, cardinal,

I should judge now unhappily. *Wol.* I am glad

Your grace is grown so pleasant. *King.* My lord chamberlain, 90

Prithce, come hither: what fair lady's that?

*Cham.* An't please your grace, Sir Thomas Bullen's daughter,—

The Viscount Rochford,—one of her highness' women. 95

*King.* By heaven, she is a dainty one. Sweetheart,

I were unmannerly, to take you out, And not to kiss you. A health, gentlemen!

Let it go round. *Wol.* Sir Thomas Lovell, is the banquet ready

For the privy chamber? *Lov.* Yes, my lord.

*Wol.* Your grace, I fear, with dancing is a little heated. 100

*King.* I fear, too much. *Wol.* There's fresher air, my lord,

In the next chamber. *King.* Lead in your ladies, every one: sweet partner,

I must not yet forsake you: but 's be Good my lord cardinal: I have half a

health To drink to these fair ladies, and a measure

To lead 'em once again; and then sit down. Who's best in favour? Let the music sound. 105

[*Servant with trumpet.*]

# KING HENRY VIII

[ACT II

*Nor.* What's the cause?

*Cham.* It seems the marriage with his brother's wife  
Has crept too near his conscience.

*Suf.* No, his conscience  
Has crept too near another lady.

*Nor.* 'Tis so: 19  
This is the cardinal's doing, the king-cardinal:  
That blind priest, like the eldest son of fortune,  
Turns what he list. The king will know him  
one day.

*Suf.* Pray God he do! he'll never know  
himself else.

*Nor.* How holily he works in all his business!  
And with what zeal! for, now he has crack'd  
the league

Between us and the emperor, the queen's great  
nephew,

He dives into the king's soul, and there scatters  
Dangers, doubts, wringing of the conscience,  
Fears, and despair; and all these for his  
marriage:

And out of all these to restore the king, 30  
He counsels a divorce; a loss of her  
That, like a jewel, has hung twenty years  
About his neck, yet never lost her lustre;  
Of her that loves him with that excellence  
That angels love good men with; even of her  
That, when the greatest stroke of fortune falls,  
Will bless the king: and is not this course  
pious!

*Cham.* Heaven keep me from such counsel!  
'Tis most true

These news are every where; every tongue  
speaks 'em,

And every true heart weeps for't: all that dare  
Look into these affairs see this main end, 41  
The French king's sister. Heaven will one day  
open

The king's eyes, that so long have slept upon  
This bold bad man.

*Suf.* And free us from his slavery.

*Nor.* We had need pray,  
And heartily, for our deliverance;  
Or this imperious man will work us all  
From princes into pages: all men's honours  
Lie like one lump before him, to be fashion'd  
Into what pitch he please.

*Suf.* For me, my lords, 50  
I love him not, nor fear him; there's my creed:  
As I am made without him, so I'll stand,  
If the king please; his curses and his blessings  
Touch me alike, they're breath I not believe in.  
I know him, and I know him; so I leave him  
to him that made him proud, the pope.

*Nor.* Let's in;  
And with some other business put the king  
From these and thoughts, that work too much  
upon him:

My lord, you'll bear us company?

*Cham.* Excuse me;  
The king has sent me elsewhere: besides, 60  
You'll find a most unfit time to disturb him:  
Forth to your lordships.

*Nor.* Thanks, my good lord chamberlain.  
[Exit Lord Chamberlain; and the  
King draws the curtain, and sits  
standing pensively.]

*Suf.* How sad! he looks! sure, he is much  
afflicted.

*King.* Who's there, ha?

*Nor.* Pray God he be not angry.

*King.* Who's there, I say! How dare you  
thrust yourselves

Into my private meditations?  
Who am I? ha!

*Nor.* A gracious king that pardons all  
offences

Malice ne'er meant: our breach of duty this  
way

Is business of estate; in which we come 70  
To know your royal pleasure.

*King.* Ye are too bold:  
Go to: I'll make ye know your times of  
business:

Is this an hour for temporal affairs, ha!

*Enter WOLSEY and CAMPEIUS, with a  
commission.*

Who's there! my good lord cardinal! O my  
Wolsey,

The quiet of my wounded conscience;  
Thou art a cure fit for a king. [To Camp.]

You're welcome,  
Most learned reverend sir, into our kingdom:

Use us and it. [To Wol.] My good lord, have  
great care

I be not found a talker.

*Wol.* Sir, you cannot. 73  
I would your grace would give us but an hour  
Of private conference.

*King.* [To Nor. and Suf.] We are busy; go.

*Nor.* [Aside to Suf.] This priest has no pride  
in him!

*Suf.* [Aside to Nor.] Not to speak of:  
I would not be so sick thought for his place:  
But this cannot continue.

*Nor.* [Aside to Suf.] If it do,  
I'll venture one have-at-him.

*Suf.* [Aside to Nor.] I another.

[Exit Nor. and Suf.]

*Wol.* Your grace has given a precedent of  
wisdom

Above all princes, in committing freely  
Your scruple to the voice of Christendom:

Who can be angry now! what envy reach you!  
The Spaniard, tied by blood and favour to her,

Must now confess, if they have any goodness,  
The trial just and noble. All the clerks,

I mean the learned ones, in Christian kingdoms  
Have their free voices: Rome, the nurse of  
judgement,

Invited by your noble self, hath sent  
One general tongue unto us, this good man,

This just and learned priest, Cardinal Campeius  
Whom once more I present unto your highness

*King.* And once more in mine arms I bid  
him welcome.

And thank the holy conclave for their loves: 80  
They have sent me such a man I would not  
wish'd for.

*Cam.* Your grace must needs deserve a  
stranger's loves.

You are so noble. To your highness' hand  
I tender my commission; by whose virtue

The court of Rome commanding, you, my lord

Cardinal of York, are join'd with me their  
servant

In the impartial judging of this business.

*King.* Two equal men. The queen shall be  
acquainted

Forthwith for what you come. Where's Gardiner?

*Wol.* I know your majesty has always loved  
her

So dear in heart, not to deny her that  
A woman of less place might ask by law :

Scholars allow'd freely to argue for her.

*King.* Ay, and the best she shall have ; and  
my favour

To him that does best : God forbid else.  
Cardinal,

Prithce, call Gardiner to me, my new secretary :  
I find him a fit fellow. [*Exit Wolsey.*]

*Re-enter WOLSEY, with GARDINER.*

*Wol.* [*Aside to Gard.*] Give me your hand :  
much joy and favour to you ;

You are the king's now.

*Gard.* [*Aside to Wol.*] But to be com-  
manded

For ever by your grace, whose hand has raised  
me.

*King.* Come hither, Gardiner.

*Cam.* My Lord of York, was not one Doctor  
Pace

In this man's place before him ?

*Wol.* Yes, he was.

*Cam.* Was he not held a learned man ?

*Wol.* Yes, surely.

*Cam.* Believe me, there's an ill opinion  
spread then

Even of yourself, lord cardinal.

*Wol.* How ! of me ?

*Cam.* They will not stick to say you envied  
him,

And fearing he would rise, he was so virtuous,  
Kept him a foreign man still ; which so grieved  
him,

That he ran mad and died.

*Wol.* Heaven's peace be with him !  
That's a Christian care enough : for living mur-  
murers

There's places of rebuke. He was a fool ;  
For he would needs be virtuous : that good  
fellow,

If I command him, follows my appointment :  
I will have none so near else. Learn this,  
brother,

We live not to be griped by meaner persons.

*King.* Deliver this with modesty to the  
queen. [*Exit Gardiner.*]

The most convenient place that I can think of  
For such receipt of learning is Black-Friars ;

There ye shall meet about this weighty business.  
My Wolsey, see it furnish'd. O, my lord,

Would it not grieve an able man to leave  
So sweet a fellow ! But, conscience, con-  
science !

O, 'tis a tender place ; and I must leave her.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE III. *An ante-chamber of the Queen's  
apartments.*

*Enter ANNE BULLEN and an Old Lady.*

*Anne.* Not for that neither : here's the pang  
that pinches :

His highness having lived so long with her, and  
she

So good a lady that no tongue could ever  
Pronounce dishonour of her ; by my life,

She never knew harm-doing : O, now, after  
So many courses of the sun enthroned,

Still growing in a majesty and pomp, the which  
To leave a thousand-fold more bitter than

'Tis sweet at first to acquire,—after this process,  
To give her the avault ! it is a pity

Would move a monster.

*Old L.* Hearts of most hard temper  
Melt and lament for her.

*Anne.* O, God's will ! much better  
She ne'er had known pomp : though 't be  
temporal,

Yet, if that quarrel, fortune, do divorce  
It from the bearer, 'tis a sufferance panging

As soul and body's severing.

*Old L.* Alas, poor lady !  
She's a stranger now again.

*Anne.* So much the more  
Must pity drop upon her. Verily,

I swear, 'tis better to be lowly born,  
And range with humble lovers in content,

Than to be perk'd up in a glistering grief,  
And wear a golden sorrow.

*Old L.* Our content  
Is our best having.

*Anne.* By my troth and maidenhead,  
I would not be a queen.

*Old L.* Bewhew me, I would,  
And venture maidenhead for 't ; and so would  
you,

For all this spice of your hypocrisy :  
You, that have so fair parts of woman on you,

Have too a woman's heart ; which ever yet  
Affected eminence, wealth, sovereignty ;

Which, to say sooth, are blessings ; and which  
gifts,

Saving your mincing, the capacity  
Of your soft cheveril conscience would receive,

If you might please to stretch it.

*Anne.* Nay, good troth,  
I would not be a queen !

*Anne.* No, not for all the riches under  
heaven.

*Old L.* 'Tis strange : a three-pence bew'd  
would hire me,

Old as I am, to queen it ; but, I pray you,  
What think you of a duchess ? have you limbs

To bear that load of title ?

*Anne.* No, in truth.

*Old L.* Then you are weakly made : pluck  
off a little ;

I would not be a young count in your way,  
For more than blushing comes to ; if your bank

Cannot vouchsafe this burthen, 'tis too weak  
Ever to get a boy.

*Anne.* How you do talk !

I swear again, I would not be a queen  
For all the world.

*Old L.* In faith, for little England  
You 'ld venture an emballing: I myself  
Would for Carnarvonshire, although there 'long'd  
No more to the crown but that. Lo, who  
comes here!

*Enter the LORD CHAMBERLAIN.*

*Cham.* Good morrow, ladies. What were't  
worth to know  
The secret of your conference!

*Anna.* My good lord,  
Not your demand; it values not your asking:  
Our mistress' sorrows we were pitying.

*Cham.* It was a gentle business, and be-  
coming

The action of good women: there is hope  
All will be well.

*Anna.* Now, I pray God, amen!

*Cham.* You bear a gentle mind, and heavenly  
blessings  
Follow such creatures. That you may, fair  
lady,

Perceive I speak sincerely, and high note's  
Taken of your many virtues, the king's majesty  
Commends his good opinion of you, and  
Does purpose honour to you no less flowing  
Than Marchioness of Pembroke; to which title  
A thousand pound a year, annual support,  
Out of his grace he adds.

*Anna.* I do not know  
What kind of my obedience I should tender;  
More than my all is nothing: nor my prayers  
Are not words duly hallow'd; nor my wishes  
More worth than empty vanities; yet prayers  
and wishes

Are all I can return. Beseech your lordship, to  
Vouchsafe to speak my thanks and my obedi-  
ence,

As from a blushing handmaid, to his highness;  
Whose health and royalty I pray for.

*Cham.* Lady,  
I shall not fail to approve the fair conceit  
The king hath of you. [*Aside*] I have perused  
her well;

Beauty and honour in her are so mingled  
That they have caught the king: and who  
knows yet

But from this lady may proceed a gem  
To lighten all this isle! I'll to the king,  
And say I spoke with you.

[*Exit Lord Chamberlain.*]

*Anna.* My honour'd lord, so  
*Old L.* Why, this it is; see, see!

I have been begging sixteen years in court,  
Am yet a courtesier beggary, nor could  
Come yet between too early and too late  
For any suit of pounds; and you, O fate!  
A very fresh fish here—the, fie, fie upon  
This compell'd fortune!—have your mouth fill'd  
up

Before you open it.

*Anna.* This is strange to me.  
*Old L.* How tastes it? Is it bitter? forty  
years, no.

There was a lady once, 'tis an old story, so  
That would make a queen, that would she not,

For all the mud in Egypt: have you heard it?

*Anna.* Come, you are pleasant.

*Old L.* With your theme, I could!  
O'ermount the lark. The

Pembroke!  
A thousand pounds a year for pure  
No other obligation! By my life,  
That promises me thousands: home it's train  
Is longer than his foreskirt. By this time  
I know your back will bear a due  
Are you not stronger than you were!

*Anna.* Good lady,  
Make yourself mirth with your particular far  
And leave me out on't. Would I had n  
If this salute my blood a jot: it faints!  
To think what follows.

The queen is comfortless, and we forgetful  
In our long absence: pray, do not deliver  
What here you've heard to her.

*Old L.* What do you think me?  
[*Exit.*]

#### SCENE IV. A hall in Black-Friars.

*Trumpets, serants, and cornets. Enter two  
Vergers, with short silver wands; next  
them, two Scribes, in the habit of doctors;  
after them, the ARCHBISHOP of CANTER-  
BURY alone; after him, the BISHOPS of  
LINCOLN, ELY, ROCHESTER, and SAINT  
ASAPH; next them, with some small dis-  
tance, follows a Gentleman bearing the  
purse, with the great seal, and a cardinal's  
hut; then two Priests, bearing each a silver  
cross; then a Gentleman-usher bare-headed,  
accompanied with a Sergeant-at-arms bear-  
ing a silver mace; then two Gentlemen  
bearing two great silver pillars; after them,  
side by side, the two CARDINALS; two Nobles  
with the sword and mace. The KING  
takes place under the cloth of state; the two  
CARDINALS sit under him as judges. The  
QUEEN takes place some distance from the  
KING. The Bishops place themselves on  
each side the court, in manner of a con-  
sistory; below them, the Scribes. The Lords  
sit next the Bishops. The rest of the At-  
tendants stand in convenient order about  
the stage.*

*Wol.* Whilst our commission from Rome is  
read,

Let silence be commanded.

*King.* What's the need?

It hath already publicly been read,  
And on all sides the authority allow'd;

You may, then, spare that time.

*Wol.* Be't so, Proceed.

*Scribe.* Say, Henry King of England, come  
into the court.

*Crier.* Henry King of England, &c.

*King.* Here.

*Scribe.* Say, Katherine Queen of England,  
come into the court.

*Crier.* Katherine Queen of England, &c.

[*The Queen makes no answer, rises out  
of her chair, goes about the court,  
comes to the King, and kneels at  
his feet; then speaks.*]

*Q. Kath.* Sir, I desire you do me right and justice;

And to bestow your pity on me: for I am a most poor woman, and a stranger, born out of your dominions; having here no judge indifferent, nor no more assurance Of equal friendship and proceeding. Alas, sir, In what have I offended you? what cause Hath my behaviour given to your displeasure. That thus you should proceed to put me off, 21 And take your good grace from me? Heaven witness,

I have been to you a true and humble wife, At all times to your will conformable; Ever in fear to kindle your dislike, Yea, subject to your countenance, glad or sorry As I saw it inclined: when was the hour I ever contradicted your desire, Or made it not mine too? Or which of your friends

Have I not stove to love, although I knew 30 He were mine enemy? what friend of mine That had to him deriv'd your anger, did I continue in my liking? nay, gave notice He was from thence discharged? Sir, call to mind

That I have been your wife, in this obedience, Upward of twenty years, and have been blest With many children by you: if, in the course And process of this time, you can report, And prove it too, against mine honour aught, My bond to wedlock, or my love and duty, 40 Against your sacred person, in God's name, Turn me away; and let the foul'st contempt Shut door upon me, and so give me up To the sharpest kind of justice. Please you, sir, The king, your father, was reputed for A prince most prudent, of an excellent And unmatched wit and judgement: Ferdinand, My father, king of Spain, was reckon'd one The wisest prince that there had reign'd by many

A year before: it is not to be question'd 50 That they had gather'd a wise council to them Of every realm, that did debate this business, Who deem'd our marriage lawful: wherefore I humbly

Beseech you, sir, to spare me, till I may Be by my friends in Spain advis'd; whose counsel

I will implore: if not, if the name of God, Your pleasure be fulfill'd!

*Wol.* You have here, lady, And of your choice, these reverend fathers; men Of singular integrity and learning. Yea, the elect of the land, who are assembled 60 To plead your cause: it shall be therefore bootless

That longer you desire the court; as well For your own quiet, as to rectify What is unsettled in the king.

*Cum.* His grace Hath spoken well and justly: therefore, madam, It's fit this royal session do proceed; And that, without delay, their arguments Be now produced and heard.

*Q. Kath.* Lord cardinal, To you I speak.

*Wol.* Your pleasure, madam!

*Q. Kath.* Sir, I am about to weep; but, thinking that We are a queen, or long have dream'd so, certain

The daughter of a king, my drops of tears I'll turn to sparks of fire.

*Wol.* Be patient yet, before.

*Q. Kath.* I will, when you are humble; nay, Or God will punish me. I do believe, Induced by potent circumstances, that You are mine enemy, and make my challenge You shall not be my judge: for it is you Have blown this coal betwixt my lord and me; Which God's dew quench! Therefore I say again, 80

I utterly abhor, yes, from my soul I refuse you for my judge; whom, yet once more,

I hold my most malicious foe, and think not At all a friend to truth.

*Wol.* I do profess You speak not like yourself: who ever yet Have stood to charity, and display'd the Of disposition gentle, and of wisdom Overtopping woman's power. Madam, you do me wrong:

I have no spleen against you; nor injustices For you or any: how far I have proceeded, 90 Or how far further shall, is warrant'd By a commission from the consistory, Yea, the whole consistory of Rome. You charge me

That I have blown this coal: I do deny it: The king is present: if it be known to him That I gainsay my deed, how may he wound, And worthily, my falsehood! yea, as much As you have done my truth. If he know That I am free of your report, he knows I am not of your wrong. Therefore in him too It lies to cure me: and the cure is, to Remove these thoughts from you: the which before

His highness shall speak in, I do beseech You, gracious madam, to unthink your speaking And to say so no more.

*Q. Kath.* My lord, my lord, I am a simple woman, much too weak To oppose your cunning. You're meek and humble-mouth'd;

You sign your place and calling, in full seeming, With meekness and humility; but your heart Is cramm'd with arrogancy, spleen, and spite. You have, by fortune and his highness' favour, Gone slightly o'er low steps and now are mounted

Where powers are your retainers, and your words,

Domestics to you, serve your will as slaves Yourself pronounces their office. I trust, my lord, You tender more your person's honour than Your high profession spiritual: that speak I do refuse you for my judge; and beg, Before you all, appeal unto the king. To bring my whole cause before his highness' eyes And to be judged by him. [She turns to the king, and gives to him a paper.]

*Cath.* The queen is obstinate,  
Stubborn to justice, apt to accuse it, and  
Disdainful to be tried by't: 'tis not well.  
She's going away.

*King.* Call her again.

*Crier.* Katharine Queen of England, come  
into the court.

*Grif.* Madam, you are call'd back.

*Q. Kath.* What need you note it? I pray you,  
keep your way;

When you are call'd, return. Now, the Lord  
help,

They vex me past my patience! Pray you,  
pass on: 130

I will not tarry; no, nor ever more  
Upon this business my appearance make  
In any of their courts.

[*Exeunt Queen, and her Attendants.*]

*King.* Go thy ways, Kate:  
That man I the world who shall report he has  
A better wife, let him in nought be trusted,  
For speaking false in that: thou art, alone,  
If thy rare qualities, sweet gentleness,  
Thy meekness saint-like, wife-like government,  
Obedient in commanding, and thy parts 130  
Sovereign and pious else, could speak thee out,  
The queen of earthly queens: she's noble born;  
And, like her true nobility, she has  
Carried herself towards me.

*Wol.* Most gracious sir,  
In humblest manner I require your highness,  
That it shall please you to declare, in hearing  
Of all these ears,—for where I am robb'd and  
bound,

There must I be unloosed, although not there  
At once and fully satisfied,—whether ever I  
Did broach this business to your highness: or  
Laid any scruple in your way, which might 150  
Induce you to the question on't or ever  
Have to you, but with thanks to God for such  
A royal lady, speak one the least word that  
might

Be to the prejudice of her present state,  
Or touch of her good person?

*King.* My lord cardinal,  
I do excuse you; yea, upon mine honour,  
I free you from't. You are not to be taught  
That you have many enemies, that know not  
Why they are so, but, like to village-curs, 150  
Bark when their fellows do: by some of these  
The queen is put in anger. You're excused:  
But will you be more justified? you ever  
Have wish'd the sleeping of this business; never  
desired

It to be stirr'd; but oft have hinder'd, oh.  
The passages made toward it: on my honour,  
I speak my good lord cardinal to this point,  
And thus far clear him. Now, what moved me  
to't?

I will be bold with time and your attention:  
Then mark it,—inducement. Thus it came;  
give heed to't:

My grace first received a tenderness, 170  
Sensible, and prick, on certain speeches utter'd  
By the bishop of Bayonne, then French am-  
bassador

Which hath been hither sent on the debating  
between us, twixt the Duke of Orleans and

Our daughter Mary: I' the progress of this busi-  
ness,

Ere a determinate resolution, he,  
I mean the bishop, did require a respite;  
Wherein he might the king his lord advertise  
Whether our daughter were legitimate,  
Respecting this our marriage with the dowager,  
Sometimes our brother's wife. This respite  
shook 181

The bosom of my conscience, enter'd me,  
Yea, with a splitting power, and made to  
tremble

The region of my breast; which forced such  
way,

That many mazed considerations did throng  
And press'd in with this caution. First, me-  
thought

I stood not in the smile of heaven; who had  
Commanded nature, that my lady's womb,  
If it conceived a male child by me, should 190

Do no more offices of life to't than  
The grave does to the dead; for her male issue  
(Or died where they were made, or shortly after  
This world had air'd them: hence I took a  
thought,

This was a judgement on me; that my king-  
dom,

Well worthy the best heir o' the world, should  
not

Be gladdened in't by me: then follows, that  
I weigh'd the danger which my realms stood in  
By this my issue's fail; and that gave to me  
Many a groaning throe. Thus hulling in  
The wild sea of my conscience, I did steer  
Toward this remedy, whereupon we are  
Now present here together: that's to say,  
I meant to rectify my conscience,—which  
I then did feel full sick, and yet not well,—  
By all the reverend fathers of the land  
And doctors learn'd: first I began in private  
With you, my Lord of Lincoln; you remember  
How under my oppression I did roek,  
When I first moved you.

*Lin.* Very well, my liege.

*King.* I have spoke long: be pleased your-  
self to say 210

How far you satisfied me.

*Lin.* So please your highness,  
The question did at first so stagger me,  
Bearing a state of mighty moment in't  
And consequence of dread, that I committed  
The daringst counsel which I had to doubt;  
And did entreat your highness to this course  
Which you are running here.

*King.* I then moved you,  
My Lord of Canterbury; and got your leave  
To make this present summons: unsolicited  
I left no reverend person in this court; 220

But by particular consent proceeded  
Under your hands and seals: therefore, go on;  
For no dislike I' the world against the person  
Of the good queen, but the sharp thorny points  
Of my alleged reasons, drive this forward:  
Prove but our marriage lawful, by my life  
And kingly dignity, we are contented  
To wear our mortal state to come with her,  
Katharine our queen, before the primest  
creature

That's paragon'd o' the world.

*Cum.* So please your highness, 390  
The queen being absent, 'tis a needful fitness  
That we adjourn this court till further day:  
Meanwhile must be an earnest motion  
Made to the queen, to call back her appeal  
She intends unto his holiness.

*King.* [Aside] I may perceive  
These cardinals trifle with me: I abhor  
This dilatory sloth and tricks of Rome.  
My learn'd and well-beloved servant, Cranmer,  
Prithee, return: with thy approach, I know,  
My comfort comes along. Break up the court:  
I say, set on. 241

[*Exeunt in manner as they entered.*]

### ACT III

SCENE I. *London. The QUEEN's apartments.*

*The QUEEN and her Women, as at work.*

*Q. Kath.* Take thy lute, wench: my soul  
grows sad with troubles;  
Sing, and disperse 'em, if thou canst: leave  
working.

#### SONG.

Orpheus with his lute made trees,  
And the mountain tops that freeze;  
Bow themselves when he did sing:  
To his music plants and flowers  
Ever sprung: as sun and showers  
There had made a lasting spring.  
Every thing that heard him play,  
Even the billows of the sea,  
Hung their heads, and then lay by. 20  
In sweet music is such art,  
Killing care and grief of heart  
Fall asleep, or hearing, die.

*Enter a Gentleman.*

*Q. Kath.* How now!

*Gent.* An't please your grace, the two great  
cardinals

Wait in the presence.

*Q. Kath.* Would they speak with me?  
*Gent.* They will'd me say so, madam.

*Q. Kath.* Pray their graces  
To come near. [*Exit Gent.*] What can be  
their business

With me, a poor weak woman, fall'n from  
favour? 20

I do not like their coming. Now I think on't,  
They should be good men; their affairs as  
righteous:

But all hoods make not monks.

*Enter the two Cardinals, WOLSEY and  
CANBEUS.*

*Wol.* Peace to your highness.

*Q. Kath.* Your graces find me here part of a  
housewife,

I would be all, against the worst may happen.  
What are your pleasures with me, reverend  
lords?

*Wol.* May it please you, noble madam, to  
withdraw  
Into your private chamber, we shall give you

The full cause of our coming.

*Q. Kath.* Speak it here;  
There's nothing I have done yet, o' my con-  
science, 30

Deserves a corner: would all other women  
Could speak this with as free a soul as I do:  
My lords, I care not, so much I am happy  
Above a number, if my actions  
Were tried by every tongue, every eye saw 'em,  
Envy and base opinion set against 'em,  
I know my life so even. If your business  
Seek me out, and that way I am wife in,  
Out with it boldly: truth loves open dealing.

*Wol.* Tanta est erga te mentis integritas,  
regina serenissima, — 41

*Q. Kath.* O, good my lord, no Latin;  
I am not such a truant since my coming.  
As not to know the language I have lived in:  
A strange tongue makes my cause more strange,  
suspicious;

Pray, speak in English: here are some will  
thank you,

If you speak truth, for their poor mistress' sake:  
Believe me, she has had much wrong: lord  
cardinal,

The willing'st sin I ever yet committed  
May be absolv'd in English.

*Wol.* Noble lady, 50  
I am sorry my integrity should breed,  
And service to his majesty and you,  
So deep suspicion, where all faith was meant.  
We come not by the way of accusation,  
To taint that honour every good tongue blesses,  
Nor to betray you any way to sorrow,  
You have too much, good lady: but to know  
How you stand minded in the weighty dif-  
ference

Between the king and you; and to deliver,  
Like free and honest men, our just opinions 60  
And comforts to your cause.

*Cum.* Most honour'd madam,  
My Lord of York, out of his noble nature,  
Zeal and obedience he still bore your grace,  
Forgetting, like a good man, your late censure  
Both of his truth and him, which was too far,  
Offers, as I do, in a sign of peace,  
His service and his counsel.

*Q. Kath.* [Aside] To betray me —  
My lords, I thank you both for your good will;  
Ye speak like honest men; pray God, ye  
prove so!

But how to make ye suddenly an answer, 70  
In such a point of weight, so near mine  
honour, —

More near my life, I fear, — with my weak wit,  
And to such men of gravity and learning.  
In truth, I know not. I was set at work  
Among my maids: full little, God knows,  
looking

Either for such men or such business.  
For her sake that I have been, — for I feel  
The last fit of my greatness, — good your graces,  
Let me have time and counsel for my cause:  
Alas, I am a woman, friendless, hopeless! 80

*Wol.* Madam, you wrong the king's love  
with these fears:

Your hopes and friends are infinite.  
*Q. Kath.* In England

But little for my profit: can you think, lords,  
That any Englishman dare give me counsel?  
Or be a known friend, 'gainst his highness'

pleasure.  
Though he be grown so desperate to be honest,  
And live a subject? Nay, forsooth, my friends,  
They that must weigh out my afflictions,  
They that my trust must grow to, live not here:  
They are, as all my other comforts, far hence  
In mine own country, lords.

*Cam.* I would your grace  
Would leave your griefs, and take my counsel.

*Q. Kath.* How, sir?  
*Cam.* Put your main cause into the king's  
protection;

He's loving and most gracious: 'twill be much  
Both for your honour better and your cause;  
For if the trial of the law o'ertake ye,  
You'll part away disgraced.

*Vol.* He tells you rightly.  
*Q. Kath.* Ye tell me what ye wish for  
both,—my ruin:

Is this your Christian counsel? out upon ye!  
Heaven is above all yet; there sits a judge: 100  
That no king can corrupt.

*Cam.* Your rage mistakes us.  
*Q. Kath.* The more shame for ye: holy  
men I thought ye,

Upon my soul, two reverend cardinal virtues:  
But cardinal sins and hollow hearts I fear ye:  
Mend 'em, for shame, my lords. Is this your  
comfort?

The cordial that ye bring a wretched lady,  
A woman lost among ye, laugh'd at, scorn'd!  
I will not wish ye half my miseries:  
I have more charity: but say, I warn'd ye;  
Take heed, for heaven's sake, take heed, lest at  
once 110

The burden of my sorrows fall upon ye.  
*Vol.* Madam, this is a mere distraction;  
You turn the good we offer into envy.

*Q. Kath.* Ye turn me into nothing: woe  
upon ye  
And all such false professors! would you have  
me—

If you have any justice, any pity;  
If ye be any thing but churchmen's habits—  
Put my sick cause into his hands that hates  
me!

*Alas,* has banish'd me his bed already, 115  
His love, too long ago! I am old, my lords,  
And all the fellowship I hold now with him  
Is only my obedience. What can happen  
To me above this wretchedness! all your studies  
Make me a cure like this.

*Cam.* Your fears are worse.  
*Q. Kath.* Have I lived thus long—let me  
speak myself.

Since virtue finds no friends—a wife, a true  
one!

A woman, I dare say without vain-glory,  
Never yet wounded with suspicion!  
Honest with all her full affections  
'mongst loved him next heaven! 120

superstitious to him!  
That little thought, when she sat fasting here,  
She should have bought her dignities as dear.  
[Exit.]

Bring me a constant woman to her husband.  
One that ne'er dream'd a joy beyond his  
pleasure;

And to that woman, when she has done most,  
Yet will I add an honour, a great patience.

*Vol.* Madam, you wander from the good  
we aim at.

*Q. Kath.* My lord, I dare not make myself  
so guilty,

To give up willingly that noble title 125  
Your master wed me to: nothing but death  
Shall e'er divorce my dignities.

*Vol.* Pray, hear me.  
*Q. Kath.* Would I had never trod this  
English earth,

(Or felt the flatteries that grow upon it!)  
Ye have angels' faces, but heaven knows your  
hearts.

What will become of me now, wretched lady!  
I am the most unhappy woman living.

Alas, poor wench, where are now your  
fortunes!

Shipwreck'd upon a kingdom, where no pity,  
No friends, no hope; no kindred weep for me;  
Almost no grave allow'd me: like the lily, 135  
That once was mistress of the field and flourish'd,  
I'll hang my head and perish.

*Vol.* If your grace  
Could but be brought to know our ends are  
honest,

You'd feel more comfort: why should we,  
good lady,

Upon what cause, wrong you? alas, our places,  
The way of our profession is against it:

We are to cure such sorrows, not to sow 'em.  
For goodness' sake, consider what you do;

How you may hurt yourself, ay, utterly 140  
Grow from the king's acquaintance, by this  
carriage.

The hearts of princes kiss obedience,  
So much they love it; but to stubborn spirits  
They swell, and grow as terrible as storms.

I know you have a gentle, noble temper,  
A soul as even as a calm: pray, think us

Those we profess, peace-makers, friends, and  
servants.

*Cam.* Madam, you'll find it so. You wrong  
your virtues

With these weak women's fears: a noble spirit,  
As yours was put into you, ever casts 145

Such doubts, as false coin, from it. The king  
loves you;

Beware you lose it not: for us, if you please  
To trust us in your business, we are ready

To use our utmost studies in your service.

*Q. Kath.* Do what ye will, my lords: and,  
pray, forgive me.

If I have used myself unmannerly;  
You know I am a woman, lacking wit

To make a seasonable answer to such persons.  
Pray, do my service to his majesty:

He has my heart yet; and shall have my prayers  
While I shall have my life. Come, reverend  
fathers, 150

Bestow your counsels on me: she now begs  
That little thought, when she sat fasting here,  
She should have bought her dignities as dear.

[Exit.]



SCENE II. *Ante-chamber to the King's apartment.*

*Enter the DUKE OF NORFOLK, the DUKE OF SUFFOLK, the EARL OF SURREY, and the LORD CHAMBERLAIN.*

*Nor.* If you will now unite in your complaints,

And force them with a constancy, the cardinal cannot stand under them: if you omit the offer of this time, I cannot promise But that you shall sustain more new disgraces, With these you bear already.

*Sur.* I am joyful To meet the least occasion that may give me Remembrance of my father-in-law, the duke, To be revenged on him.

*Suf.* Which of the peers Have unconteinn'd gone by him, or at least 10 Strangely neglected? when did he regard The stamp of nobleness in any person Out of himself?

*Cham.* My lords, you speak your pleasures: What he deserves of you and me I know; What we can do to him, though now the time Gives way to us, I much fear. If you cannot Bar his access to the king, never attempt Any thing on him; for he hath a witchcraft Over the king in his tongue.

*Nor.* O, fear him not; His spell in that is out: the king hath found Matter against him that for ever mars 21 The honey of his language. No, he's settled, Not to come off, in his displeasure.

*Sur.* Sir, I should be glad to hear such news as this Once every hour.

*Nor.* Believe it, this is true: In the divorce his contrary proceedings Are all unfolded; wherein he appears As I would wish mine enemy.

*Sur.* How came His practices to light?

*Suf.* Most strangely.

*Sur.* (A how, how?)

*Suf.* The cardinal's letters to the pope mis-carried, 30 And came to the eye o' the king: wherein was read,

How that the cardinal did entreat his holiness To stay the judgement o' the divorce; for if it did take place, 'I do,' quoth he, 'perceive My king is tangled in affection to A creature of the queen's, Lady Anne Bullen.'

*Sur.* Has the king this?

*Suf.* Believe it.

*Sur.* Will this work? *Cham.* The king in this perceives him, how he counts

And hedges his own way. But in this point All his tricks founder, and he brings his physic After his patient's death: the king already 41 Hath married the fair lady.

*Sur.* Would he had!

*Suf.* May you be happy in your wish, my lord!

*For, I protest, you have it.*

*Sur.* Now, all my joy.

Trace the conjunction!

*Suf.* My amen to't!

*Nor.* All men's!

*Suf.* There's order given for her coronation: Marry, this is yet but young, and may be left To some ears unaccounted. But, my lords,

She is a gallant creature, and complete 49 In mind and feature: I persuade me, from her Will fall some blessing to this land, which shall In it be memorized.

*Sur.* But, will the king Digest this letter of the cardinal's?

The Lord forbid!

*Nor.* Marry, amen!

*Suf.* No, no;

There be more wasps that buzz about his nose Will make this sting the sooner. Cardinal Campeius

Is stol'n away to Rome; hath ta'en no leave; Has left the cause o' the king unhandled; and Is posted, as the agent of our cardinal, To second all his plot. I do assure you 60 The king cried Ha! at this.

*Cham.* Now, God incense him, And let him cry Ha! louder!

*Nor.* But, my lord,

When returns Cranmer?

*Suf.* He is return'd in his opinions; which Have satisfied the king for his divorce, Together with all famous colleges Almost in Christendom: shortly, I believe, His second marriage shall be publish'd, and Her coronation. Katharine no more

Shall be call'd queen, but princess dowager 70 And widow to Prince Arthur.

*Nor.* This same Cranmer's A worthy fellow, and hath ta'en much pain In the king's business.

*Suf.* He has; and we shall see him For it an archbishop.

*Nor.* So I hear.

*Suf.* 'Tis so.

The cardinal!

*Enter WOLSEY and CROMWELL.*

*Nor.* Observe, observe, he's moody.

*Wol.* The packet, Cromwell, Gave't you the king?

*Crom.* To his own hand, in his bedchamber.

*Wol.* Look'd he o' the inside of the paper?

*Crom.* Presently

He did unseal them: and the first he view'd, He did it with a serious mind; a heed 80 Was in his countenance. You he bade Attend him here this morning.

*Wol.* Is he ready?

To come abroad?

*Crom.* I think, by this he is.

*Wol.* Leave me awhile. *(Exit Cromwell.)*

*[Aside]* It shall be to the Duchess of Angoules, The French king's sister: he shall marry her.

Anne Bullen! No; I'll no Anne Bullen be him:

There's more in't than fair words. Bullen! No, we'll no Bullens. Speedily I will To hear from Rome. The Marchioness of Pembroke!

*Nor.* He's discontented.

*Suf.* May be, he hears the king  
Does what his anger to him.

*Ser.* Sharp enough,  
Lord, for thy justice!

*Vol.* *[Aside]* The late queen's gentlewoman,  
a knight's daughter,  
To be her mistress' mistress! the queen's queen!  
This candle burns not clear: 'tis I must snuff it;  
Then out it goes. What though I know her  
virtuous

And well deserving! yet I know her for  
A spleeny Lutheran; and not wholesome to  
Our cause, that she should lie i' the bosom of  
Our hard-ruled king. Again, there is sprung up  
An heretic, an arch one, Cranmer; one  
Hath crawl'd into the favour of the king,  
And is his oracle.

*Nor.* He is vex'd at something.

*Ser.* I would 'twere something that would  
fret the string,  
The master-cord on 's heart!

*Enter the KING, reading of a schedule, and  
LOVELL.*

*Suf.* The king, the king!  
*King.* What piles of wealth hath he ac-  
cumulated

To his own portion! and what expense by the  
hour  
Seems to flow from him! How, i' the name of  
thrift,

Does he rake this together! Now, my lords,  
Saw you the cardinal?

*Nor.* My lord, we have  
Stood here observing him: some strange com-  
motion

Is in his brain: he bites his lip, and starts;  
Stops on a sudden, looks upon the ground,  
Then lays his finger on his temple; straight  
Springs out into fast gait; then stops again,  
Strikes his breast hard, and anon he casts  
His eye against the moon: in most strange  
postures

We have seen him set himself.

*King.* It may well be;  
This is a mutiny in 's mind. This morning  
Papers of state he sent me to peruse,  
As I required: and wot you what I found  
There,—on my conscience, put unwittingly!  
Smooth, an inventory, thus importing:  
The several parcels of his plate, his treasure,  
Rich stuffs, and ornaments of household; which  
I find at such proud rate, that it out-speaks  
Possession of a subject.

*Nor.* It's heaven's will:  
Some spirit put this paper in the packet,  
To bless your eye withal.

*King.* If we did think  
His contemplation were above the earth,  
And fix'd on spiritual object, he should still  
Dwell in his musings: but I am afraid  
His thoughts are below the moon, not worth  
His pains considering.

*[Lovel takes his seat; whispers Lovell, who  
goes to the Cardinal.]*

*Vol.* Heaven forgive me!  
Sweet God! bless your highness!

*King.* Good my lord,  
You are full of heavenly stuff, and bear the  
inventory

Of your best graces in your mind; the which  
You were now running o'er: you have scarce  
time

To steal from spiritual leisure a brief  
To keep your earthly audit: sure, in th'  
I deem you an ill husband, and am gl'  
To have you therein my companion.

*Vol.* Sir,  
For holy offices I have a time; a time  
To think upon the part of business whic'  
I bear i' the state; and nature does require  
Her times of preservation, which perforce  
I, her frail son, amongst my brethren mortal,  
Must give my tendance to.

*King.* You have said well.  
*Vol.* And ever may your highness yoke  
together,

As I will lend you cause, my doing well  
With my well saying!

*King.* 'Tis well said again;  
And 'tis a kind of good deed to say well:  
And yet words are no deeds. My father loved  
you;

He said he did; and with his deed did crown  
His word upon you. Since I had my office,  
I have kept you next my heart: have not alone  
Employ'd you where high profits might come  
home,

But pared my present havings, to bestow  
My bounties upon you.

*Vol.* *[Aside]* What should this mean! 160

*Ser.* *[Aside]* The Lord increase this busi-  
ness!

*King.* Have I not made you  
The prime man of the state! I pray you, tell  
me,

If what I now pronounce you have found true:  
And, if you may confess it, say withal,  
If you are bound to us or no. What say you?

*Vol.* My sovereign, I confess your royal  
graces,

Shower'd on me daily, have been more than  
could

My studied purposes requite; which went  
Beyond all man's endeavours: my endeavours  
Have ever come too short of my desires, 170  
Yet filed with my abilities: mine own ends  
Have been mine so that evermore they pointed  
To the good of your most sacred person and  
The profit of the state. For your great graces  
Heap'd upon me, poor undeserver, I  
Can nothing render but allegiant thanks,  
My prayers to heaven for you, my loyalty,  
Which ever has and ever shall be growing,  
Till death, that winter, kill it.

*King.* Fairly answer'd;  
A loyal and obedient subject is 180

Therein illustrated: the honour of it  
Does pay the act of it; as, i' the contrary,  
The foulness is the punishment. I presume  
That, as my hand has open'd bounty to you,  
My heart dropp'd love, my power rain'd honour,  
more

On you than any; so your hand and heart,  
Your brain, and every function of your power

Should, notwithstanding that your bond of duty,  
As 'twere in love's particular, be more  
To me, your friend, than any.

*Wol.* I do profess 190  
That for your highness' good I ever labour'd  
More than mine own; that am, have, and  
will be—  
Though all the world should crack their duty  
To you,  
And throw it from their soul; though perils did  
Abound, as thick as thought could make 'em,  
and

Appear in forms more horrid,—yet my duty,  
As doth a rock against the chiding flood,  
Should the approach of this wild river break,  
And stand unshaken yours.

*King.* 'Tis nobly spoken :  
Take notice, lords, he has a loyal breast, 200  
For you have seen him open't. Read o'er  
this; [*Giving him papers.*]  
And after, this: and then to breakfast with  
What appetite you have.

[*Exit King, frowning upon Cardinal  
Wolsey: the Nobles throng after  
him, smiling and whispering.*]

*Wol.* What should this mean ?  
What sudden anger's this? how have I reap'd it!  
He parted frowning from me, as if ruin  
Leap'd from his eyes: so looks the chafed lion  
Upon the daring huntsman that has gall'd him;  
Then makes him nothing. I must read this  
paper;

I fear, the story of his anger. 'Tis so;  
This paper has undone me: 'tis the account 210  
Of all that world of wealth I have drawn to-  
gether

For mine own ends; indeed, to gain the  
popedom.

And see my friends in Rome. O negligence!  
Fit for a fool to fall by: what cross devil  
Made me put this main secret in the packet  
I sent the king? Is there no way to cure this?  
No new device to beat this from his brains?  
I know 'twill stir him strongly; yet I know  
A way, if it take right, in spite of fortune  
Will bring me off again. What's this? 'To  
the Pope!' 220

The letter, as I live, with all the business  
I writ to's holiness. Nay then, farewell!  
I have touch'd the highest point of all my  
greatness;

And, from that full meridian of my glory  
I haste now to my setting: I shall fall  
Like a bright exhalation in the evening,  
And no man see me more.

*Re-enter to WOLSEY, the DUKES OF NORFOLK  
and SUFFOLK, the EARL OF SURREY, and  
the LORD CHAMBERLAIN.*

*Nor.* Hear the king's pleasure, cardinal  
who commands you  
To render up the great seal presently  
Into our hands; and to confine yourself 230  
To Asher House, my Lord of Winchester's,  
Till you hear further from his highness.

*Wol.*

Where's your commission, lords? words cannot  
carry  
Authority so weighty.

*Sur.* Who dare cross 'em,  
Bearing the king's will from his mouth ex-  
pressly?

*Wol.* Till I find more than will or words to  
do it.

I mean your malice, know, officious lords,  
I dare and must deny it. Now I feel  
Of what coarse metal ye are moulded, envy:  
How eagerly ye follow my disgraces, 240  
As if it fed ye! and how sleek and wanton  
Ye appear in every thing may bring my ruin!  
Follow your envious courses, men of malice;  
You have Christian warrant for 'em, and, no  
doubt,

In time will find their fit rewards. That seal,  
You ask with such a violence, the king,  
Mine and your master, with his own hand gave  
me:

Rade me enjoy it, with the place and honours,  
During my life; and, to confirm his goodness,  
Tied it by letters-patents: now, who'll take it?

*Sur.* The king, that gave it.

*Wol.* It must be himself, then. 252

*Sur.* Thou art a proud traitor, priest.

*Wol.* Proud lord, thou liest:  
Within these forty hours Surrey durst better  
Have burnt that tongue than said so.

*Sur.* Thy ambition,

Thou scarlet sin, robb'd this bewailing land  
Of noble Buckingham, my father-in-law:  
The heads of all thy brother cardinals,  
With thee and all thy best parts bound to-  
gether,

Weigh'd not a hair of his. Plagues of your  
policy!

You sent me deputy for Ireland; 260  
Far from his succour, from the king, from all  
That might have mercy on the fault thou  
gavest him;

Whilst your great goodness, out of holy pity,  
Absolved him with an axe.

*Wol.* This, and all else  
This talking lord can lay upon my credit,  
I answer is most false. The duke by law  
Found his deserts: how innocent I was  
From any private malice in his end,  
His noble jury and foul cause can witness.  
If I loved many words, lord, I should tell you  
You have as little honesty as honour, 272  
That in the way of loyalty and truth  
Toward the king, my ever royal master,  
Dare mate a sounder man than Surrey can be,  
And all that love his follies.

*Sur.* By my soul,  
Your long coat, priest, protects you; thou  
shouldst feel

My sword! the life-blood of thee else. My  
lords,

Can ye endure to hear this arrogance?  
And from this fellow? If we live then tamely,  
To be thus jaded by a piece of scarlet, 280  
Farewell nobility: let his grace go forward,  
And dare us with his cap like hats.

*Wol.* All goodness  
Is poison to thy stomach.

*Star.* Yes, that goodness  
Of gleaming all the land's wealth into one,  
Into your own hands, cardinal, by extortion;  
The goodness of your intercepted packets  
You writ to the pope against the king: your  
goodness.

Since you provoke me, shall be most notorious.  
My Lord of Norfolk, as you are truly noble,  
As you respect the common good, the state <sup>ago</sup>  
Of our despised nobility, our issues,  
Wag, if he live, will scarce be gentlemen,  
Produce the grand sum of his sins, the articles  
Collected from his life. I'll startle you  
Worse than the ringing bell, when the brown  
wench

Lay kissing in your arms, lord cardinal.

*Wol.* How much, methinks, I could despise  
this man,

But that I am bound in charity against it!

*Nor.* Those articles, my lord, are in the  
king's hand:

But, thus much, they are foul ones.

*Wol.* So much fairer <sup>300</sup>  
And spotless shall mine innocence arise,  
When the king knows my truth.

*Star.* This cannot save you:  
I thank my memory, I yet remember  
Some of these articles; and out they shall.  
Now, if you can blush and cry 'guilty,' cardinal,  
You'll show a little honesty.

*Wol.* Speak on, sir;  
I dare your worst objections: if I blush,  
It is to see a nobleman want manners.

*Star.* I had rather want those than my head.  
Have at you!

First, that, without the king's assent or know-  
ledge, <sup>310</sup>

You wrought to be a legate; by which power  
You main'd the jurisdiction of all bishops.

*Nor.* Then, that in all you writ to Rome, or  
<sup>else</sup>

To foreign princes, 'Ego et Rex meus'  
Was still inscribed; in which you brought the  
king

To be your servant.

*Star.* Then that, without the knowledge  
Either of king or council, when you went  
Ambassador to the emperor, you made bold  
To carry into Flanders the great seal.

*Star.* Item, you sent a large commission <sup>320</sup>  
To Gregory de Casado, to conclude,  
Without the king's will or the state's allowance,  
A league between his highness and Ferrara.

*Star.* That, out of mere ambition, you have  
censed

Your holy hat to be stamp'd on the king's  
coin.

*Star.* That that you have sent innumerable  
substance

By what means got, I leave to your own con-  
science—

To furnish Rome, and to prepare the ways  
You have for dignities; to the mere undoing  
the kingdom. Many more there are; <sup>330</sup>

since they are of you, and odious,  
not taint my mouth with.

*Star.* O my lord,  
Seeing a falling man too far! his virtue:

His faults lie open to the laws; let them,  
Not you, correct him. My heart weeps to see  
him

So little of his great self.

*Star.* I forgive him.  
*Star.* Lord cardinal, the king's further plea-  
sure is,

Because all those things you have done of late,  
By your power legateine, within this kingdom,  
Fall into the compass of a premunire, <sup>340</sup>  
That therefore such a writ be sued against you;  
To forfeit all your goods, lands, tenements,  
Chattels, and whatsoever, and to be  
out of the king's protection. This is my charge.

*Nor.* And so we'll leave you to your medi-  
tations

How to live better. For your stubborn answer  
About the giving back the great seal to us,  
The king shall know it, and, no doubt, shall  
thank you.

So fare you well, my little good lord cardinal.

*Wol.* So farewell to the little good you bear  
me. <sup>350</sup>

Farewell! a long farewell, to all my greatness!  
This is the state of man: to-day he puts forth  
The tender leaves of hopes; to-morrow blis-  
soms,

And bears his blushing honours thick upon him;  
The third day comes a frost, a killing frost,  
And, when he thinks, good easy man, fall  
surely

His greatness is a-ripening, nips his root,  
And then he falls, as I do. I have ventured,  
Like little wanton boys that swim on bladders,  
This many summers in a sea of glory, <sup>360</sup>

But far beyond my depth: my high-blown pride  
At length broke under me and now has left me,  
Wearied and old with service, to the mercy  
Of a rude stream, that must for ever hide me.

Vain pomp and glory of this world, I hate ye:  
I feel my heart new open'd. O, how wretched  
Is that poor man that hangs on princes' favours!

There is, betwixt that smile we would aspire to,  
That sweet aspect of princes, and their ruin,  
More pangs and fears than wars or women  
have: <sup>370</sup>

And when he falls, he falls like Lucifer,  
Never to hope again.

*Enter CROMWELL, and stands amazed.*

Why, how now, Cromwell!  
*Crom.* I have no power to speak, sir.

*Wol.* What, amazed  
At my misfortune? can thy spirit wonder  
A great man should decline? Nay, an you  
weep,

I am fall'n indeed.

*Crom.* How does your grace!  
*Wol.* Why, well;

Never so truly happy, my good Cromwell,  
I know myself now; and I feel within me  
A peace above all earthly dignities.

A still and quiet conscience. The king has  
cured me. <sup>380</sup>

I humbly thank his grace; and from these  
shoulders,

These ruin'd pillars, out of pity, taken

A load would sink a navy, too much honour:  
O, 'tis a burden, Cromwell, 'tis a burden

Too heavy for a man that hopes for heaven!

*Crom.* I am glad your grace has made that  
right use of it.

*Wol.* I hope I have: I am able now, methinks,

Out of a fortitude of soul I feel,  
To endure more miseries and greater far  
Than my weak-hearted enemies dare offer. 390  
What news abroad?

*Crom.* The heaviest and the worst  
Is your displeasure with the king.

*Wol.* God bless him!

*Crom.* The next is, that Sir Thomas More  
is chosen

Lord chancellor in your place.

*Wol.* That's somewhat sudden:  
But he's a learned man. May he continue  
Long in his highness' favour, and do justice  
For truth's sake and his conscience; that his  
bones,

When he has run his course and sleeps in  
blessings,

May have a tomb of orphans' tears wept on 'em!  
What more?

*Crom.* That Cranmer is return'd with wel-  
come. 400

Install'd lord archbishop of Canterbury.

*Wol.* That's news indeed.

*Crom.* Last, that the Lady Anne,  
Whom the king hath in secrecy long married,  
This day was view'd in open as his queen,  
Going to chapel; and the voice is now  
Only about her coronation.

*Wol.* There was the weight that pull'd me  
down. O Cromwell,

The king has gone beyond me: all my glories  
In that one woman I have lost for ever:  
No sun shall ever usher forth mine honours,  
Or gild again the noble troops that waited 411  
Upon my smiles. Go, get thee from me,

Cromwell;

I am a poor fall'n man, unworthy now  
To be thy lord and master: seek the king;  
That sun, I pray, may never set! I have told  
him

What and how true thou art: he will advance  
thee;

Some little memory of me will stir him—  
I know his noble nature—not to let  
Thy hopeful service perish too: good Cromwell,  
Neglect him not; make use now, and provide  
For thine own future safety.

*Crom.* O my lord, 421

Must I, then, leave you? must I needs forgo  
So good, so noble and so true a master?  
Bear witness, all that have not hearts of iron,  
With what a sorrow Cromwell leaves his lord.  
The king shall have my service; but my prayers  
For ever and for ever shall be yours.

*Wol.* Cromwell, I did not think to see  
a tear

In all my miseries; but thou hast forced me,  
Out of thy honest truth, to play the woman. 430  
Let's dry our eyes: and thus far bear me,  
Cromwell;

And, when I am forgotten, as I shall be,

And sleep in dull cold marble, where no  
mention

Of me more must be heard of, say, I taught  
thee,

Say, Wolsey, that once trod the ways of glory,  
And sounded all the depths and shoals of  
honour,

Found thee a way, out of his wreck, to rise in;  
A sure and safe one, though thy master mis'd it  
Dark but my fall, and that that ruin'd me. 439  
Cromwell, I charge thee, fling away ambition:  
By that sin fell the angels; how can man, then,  
The image of his Maker, hope to win by it?  
Love thyself last: cherish those hearts that  
hate thee;

Corruption wins not more than honesty.  
Still in thy right hand carry gentle peace,

To silence envious tongues. Be just, and fear  
not;

Let all the ends thou aim'st at be thy country's,  
Thy God's, and truth's; then if thou fall'st, O  
Cromwell,

Thou fall'st a blessed martyr! Serve the king;  
And,—prithce, lead me in: 450

There take an inventory of all I have,  
To the last penny: 'tis the king's: my robe,  
And my integrity to heaven, is all  
I dare now call mine own. O Cromwell, Crom-  
well!

Had I but served my God with half the zeal  
I served my king, he would not in mine age  
Have left me naked to mine enemies.

*Crom.* Good sir, have patience.

*Wol.* So I have. Farewell  
The hopes of court! my hopes in heaven do  
dwell. [Exit.

ACT IV.

SCENE I. A street in Westminster.

Enter two Gentlemen, meeting one another.

*First Gent.* You're well met once again.

*Sec. Gent.* So are you.

*First Gent.* You come to take your stand  
here, and behold

The Lady Anne pass from her coronation?

*Sec. Gent.* 'Tis all my business. At our  
last encounter,

The Duke of Buckingham came from his trial.

*First Gent.* 'Tis very true: but that time  
offer'd sorrow;

This, general joy.

*Sec. Gent.* 'Tis well: the citizens,  
I am sure, have shown at full their royal  
minds—

As, let 'em have their rights, they are ever  
forward—

In celebration of this day with shows,  
Pageants and sights of honour.

*First Gent.* Never greater.

Now, I'll assure you, better taken, sir.

*Sec. Gent.* May I be hold to ask what this  
contains,

That paper in your hand?

*First Gent.* Yes: 'tis the list  
Of those that claim their offices this day  
By custom of the constitution.

The Duke of Suffolk is the first, and claims

known those customs.  
I should have been beholding to your paper.  
But, I beseech you, what's become of Katharine,  
The princess dowager? how goes her business?

*First Gent.* That I can tell you too. The  
Archbishop  
Of Canterbury, accompanied with other  
learned and reverend fathers of his order,  
Held a late court at Dunstable, six miles off  
From Ampthill where the princess lay; to which  
She was often cited by them, but appear'd not:  
And, to be short, for not appearance and  
The king's late scruple, by the main assent  
Of all these learned men she was divorced;  
And the late marriage made of none effect:  
Since which she was removed to Kimbolton,  
Where she remains now sick.

*Sec. Gent.* Alas, good lady!  
The trumpets sound: stand close, the queen is  
coming.

#### THE ORDER OF THE CORONATION.

1. *A lively flourish of Trumpets.*
2. Then, two Judges.
3. Lord Chancellor, with the purse and mace  
before him.
4. Choristers, singing. *[Music.]*
5. Mayor of London, bearing the mace.  
Then Garter, in his coat of arms, and  
on his head a gilt copper crown.
6. Marquess DORSET, bearing a sceptre of  
gold, on his head a demi-coronet of gold.  
With him, the Earl of SURREY, bearing  
the rod of silver with the dove, crowned  
with an earl's coronet. Collars of SS.
7. Duke of SUFFOLK, in his robe of estate,  
his coronet on his head, bearing a long  
white wand, as high-steward. With  
him, the Duke of NORFOLK, with the  
rod of marshalship, a coronet on his  
head. Collars of SS.
8. A canopy borne by four of the Cinque-  
ports: under it, the Queen in her robe;  
in her hair richly adorned with  
pearl, crowned. On each side her, the  
Bishops of London and Winchester.
9. The old Duchess of NORFOLK, in a cor-  
onet of gold, wrought with flowers,  
bearing the Queen's train.
10. Certain Ladies or Countesses, with plain  
circlets of gold without flowers.

They pass over the stage in order and state.

*Sec. Gent.* A royal train, believe me. These  
I know:

Who's that that bears the sceptre?  
*First Gent.* Marquess Dorset:  
And that the Earl of Surrey, with the rod.  
*Sec. Gent.* A bold brave gentleman. That  
should be

The Duke of Suffolk?  
*First Gent.* 'Tis the same; high-steward.  
*Sec. Gent.* And that my Lord of Norfolk?  
*First Gent.* Yes.

*Sec. Gent.*

Heaven bless thee!

*[Looking on the Queen.]*

Thou hast the sweetest face I ever look'd on.  
Sir, as I have a soul, she is an angel  
Our king has all the Indies in his arms,  
And more and richer, when he strains that  
lady:

I cannot blame his conscience.

*First Gent.* They that bear  
The cloth of honour over her, are four barons  
Of the Cinque-ports.

*Sec. Gent.* Those men are happy; and so  
are all are near her.

I take it, she that carries up the train  
Is that old noble lady, Duchess of Norfolk.

*First Gent.* It is; and all the rest are count-  
esses.

*Sec. Gent.* Their coronets say so. These are  
stars indeed;

And sometimes falling ones.

*First Gent.* No more of that.  
*[Exit procession, and then a great flourish of trumpets.]*

Enter a third Gentleman.

*First Gent.* God save you, sir! where have  
you been broiling?

*Third Gent.* Among the crowd in the Abbey;  
where a finger

Could not be wedged in more: I am stifled  
With the mere rankness of their joy.

*Sec. Gent.* You saw  
The ceremony?

*Third Gent.* That I did.

*First Gent.* How was it? 60

*Third Gent.* Well worth the seeing.

*Sec. Gent.* Good sir, speak it to us.

*Third Gent.* As well as I am able. The  
rich stream

Of lords and ladies, having brought the queen  
To a prepared place in the choir, fell off

A distance from her; while her grace sat down  
To rest awhile, some half an hour or so,

In a rich chair of state, opposing freely  
The beauty of her person to the people.

Believe me, sir, she is the goodliest woman  
That ever lay by man: which when the people

Had the full view of, such a noise arose  
As the shrouds make at sea in a stiff tempest.

As loud, and to as many tunes: hata, cloaks,  
Doublets, I think,—drew up; and had their  
faces

Been loose, this day they had been lost. Such  
joy

I never saw before. Great-bellied women,  
That had not half a week to go, like rams

In the old time of war, would shake the priest,  
And make 'em reel before 'em. No man living

Could say 'This is my wife' these; all were  
woven 80

So strangely in one place.

*Sec. Gent.* But, what follow'd?

*Third Gent.* At length her grace rose, and  
with modest paces

Came to the altar; where she kneel'd, and saint-  
like

Cast her fair eyes to heaven and pray'd devoutly.  
Then rose again and bow'd her.

When by the Archbishop of Canterbury  
She had all the royal makings of a queen;  
As holy oil, Edward Confessor's crown,  
The rod, and bird of peace, and all such em-  
blems

Laid nobly on her: which perform'd, the choir,  
With all the choicest music of the kingdom, 91  
Together sung 'To Deum.' So she parted,  
And with the same full state paced back again  
To York-place, where the feast is held.

*First Gent.* Sir,  
You must no more call it York-place, that's  
past;

For, since the cardinal fell, that title's lost:  
'Tis now the king's, and call'd Whitehall.

*Third Gent.* I know it;  
But 'tis so lately alter'd, that the old name  
Is fresh about me.

*Sec. Gent.* What two reverend bishops  
Were those that went on each side of the  
queen?

*Third Gent.* Stokesly and Gardiner; the  
one of Winchester,  
Newly prefer'd from the king's secretary,  
The other, London.

*Sec. Gent.* He of Winchester  
Is held no great good lover of the archbishop's,  
The virtuous Cranmer.

*Third Gent.* All the land knows that:  
However, yet there is no great breach; when it  
comes,  
Cranmer will find a friend will not shrink from  
him.

*Sec. Gent.* Who may that be, I pray you?

*Third Gent.* Thomas Cromwell;  
A man in much esteem with the king, and truly  
A worthy friend. The king has made him  
master

O' the jewel house,  
And one, already, of the privy council.

*Sec. Gent.* He will deserve more.

*Third Gent.* Yes, without all doubt.  
Come, gentlemen, ye shall go my way, which  
Is to the court, and there ye shall be my guests:  
Something I can command. As I walk thither,  
I'll tell ye more.

*Both.* You may command us, sir. [Exeunt.]

## SCENE II. Kimbolton.

Enter KATHARINE, Dowager, sick; led be-  
tween GRIFFITH, her gentleman usher, and  
PATIENCE, her woman.

*Grif.* How does your grace?

*Kath.* O Griffith, sick to death!  
My legs, like loaden branches, bow to the earth,  
Willing to leave their burthen. Reach a chair:  
So; now, methinks, I feel a little ease.  
Durst thou not tell me, Griffith, as thou led'st  
me

That the great child of honour, Cardinal  
Wolsey,

Was dead?

*Grif.* Yes, madam; but I think your grace,  
Out of the pain you suffer'd, gave no ear to't.

*Kath.* Prithoe, good Griffith, tell me how he  
died:

If well, he stopp'd before me, happily

For my example.

*Grif.* Well, the voice goes, madam:  
For after the stout Earl Northumberland  
Arrested him at York, and brought him for-  
ward,

As a man sorely tainted, to his answer,  
He fell sick suddenly, and grew so ill  
He could not sit his mule.

*Kath.* Alas, poor man!

*Grif.* At last, with easy roads, he came to  
Leicester.

Lodged in the abbey; where the reverend abbot,  
With all his covent, honourably received him;  
To whom he gave these words, 'O, father abbot,  
An old man, broken with the storms of state,  
Is come to lay his weary bones among ye;  
Give him a little earth for charity!'  
So went to bed; where eagerly his sickness  
Pursued him still: and, three nights after this,  
About the hour of eight, which he himself  
Foretold should be his last, full of repentance,  
Continual meditations, tears, and sorrows,  
He gave his honours to the world again,  
His blessed part to heaven, and slept in peace.

*Kath.* So may he rest; his faults lie gently  
on him!

Yet thus far, Griffith, give me leave to speak  
him,

And yet with charity. He was a man  
Of an unbounded stomach, ever ranking  
Himself with princes; one that, by suggestion,  
Tied all the kingdom; simony was fair-play;  
His own opinion was his law: 't' the presence  
He would say untruths; and be ever double  
Both in his words and meaning: he was never,  
But where he meant to ruin, pitiful:  
His promises were, as he then was, mighty;  
But his performance, as he is now, nothing:  
(Of his own body he was ill, and gave  
The clergy ill example.

*Grif.* Noble madam,  
Men's evil manners live in brass; their virtues  
We write in water. May it please your high-  
ness

To hear me speak his good now!

*Kath.* Yes, good Griffith;

I were malicious else.

*Grif.* This cardinal,  
Though from an humble stock, undoubtedly  
Was fashion'd to much honour from his cradle.  
He was a scholar, and a ripe and good one; 35  
Exceeding wise, fair-spoken, and persuading:  
Lofty and sour to them that loved him not;  
But to those men that sought him sweet as  
summer.

And though he were unsatisfied in getting,  
Which was a sin, yet in bestowing, madam,  
He was most princely: ever witness for him  
Those twins of learning that he raised in you,  
Ipswich and Oxford; one of which fell with  
him.

Unwilling to outlive the good that did it; 40  
The other, though unfinish'd, yet so famous,  
So excellent in art, and still so rising,  
That Christendom shall ever speak his virtues.  
His overthrow heap'd happiness upon him;  
For then, and not till then, he felt himself  
And found the blessedness of being single.

And, to add greater honours to his age  
That man could give him, he died fearing God.

*Kath.* After my death I wish no other  
herald.

No other speaker of my living actions,  
To keep mine honour from corruption,  
But such an honest chronicler as Griffith,  
Whom I most hated living, thou hast made me,  
With thy religious truth and modesty,  
Now in his ashes honour: peace be with him!  
Patience, be near me still; and set me lower:  
I have not long to trouble thee. Good Griffith,  
Cause the musicians play me that sad note  
I named my knell, whilst I sit meditating  
On that celestial harmony I go to.

[Sad and solemn music.

*Grif.* She is asleep: good wench, let's sit  
down quiet,

For fear we wake her: softly, gentle Patience.

*The vision.* Enter, solemnly tripping one  
after another, six personages, clad in white  
robes, wearing on their heads garlands of  
bays, and golden vizards on their faces:  
branches of bays or palm in their hands.  
They first congeal unto her, then dance; and,  
at certain changes, the first two hold a spare  
garland over her head; at which the other  
four make reverent curties; then the two  
that hold the garland deliver the same to the  
other next two, who observe the same order  
in their changes, and holding the garland  
over her head: which done, they deliver the  
same garland to the last two, who likewise  
observe the same order: at which, as it were  
by inspiration, she makes in her sleep signs  
of rejoicing, and holdeth up her hands to  
heaven: and so in their dancing vanish,  
carrying the garland with them. The music  
continues.

*Kath.* Spirits of peace, where are ye? are ye  
all gone,

And leave me here in wretchedness behind ye?  
*Grif.* Madam, we are here.

*Kath.* It is not you I call for:  
Saw ye none enter since I slept?

*Grif.* None, madam.

*Kath.* Not Saw you not, even now, a  
blessed troop

Invite me to a banquet; whose bright faces  
Cast thousand beams upon me, like the sun?

They promised me eternal happiness;  
And brought me garlands, Griffith, which I feel

I am not worthy yet to wear: I shall, assuredly,  
*Grif.* I am most joyful, madam, such good

pleases your fancy.

*Kath.* Bid the music leave,  
They are harsh and heavy to me. [Music ceases.

Do you note  
How much her grace is altered on the sudden?

How long her face is drawn? how pale she  
looks.

Mark her eyes!  
Mark her eyes! pray, pray,

How heaven comfort her!

Enter a Messenger.

*Mess.* An't like your grace,—  
*Kath.* You are a sorry fellow: too

Deserve we no more reverence?  
*Grif.* You are to blame.

Knowing she will not lose her wanted great-  
ness,

To use so rude behaviour: go to, kneel.  
*Mess.* I humbly do entreat your highness'

pardon;  
My haste made me unmannerly. There is

staying  
A gentleman, sent from the king, to see you.

*Kath.* Admit him entrance, Griffith: but  
this fellow

Let me ne'er see again.  
[Exit Griffith and Messenger.

Re-enter GRIFFITH, with CAPUCIUS.

If my sight fail not,  
You should be lord ambassador from the

emperor,  
My royal nephew, and your name Capucius.

*Cap.* Madam, the same; your servant.  
*Kath.* O, my lord,

The times and titles now are alter'd strangely  
With me since first you knew me. But, I pray

you,  
What is your pleasure with me?

*Cap.* Noble lady,  
First, mine own service to your grace; the next,

The king's request that I would visit you;  
Who grieves much for your weakness, and by

me  
Sends you his princely commendations,  
And heartily entreats you take good comfort.

*Kath.* O my good lord, that comfort comes  
too late;

'Tis like a parian after execution:  
That gentle physic, given in time, had cured

me:  
But now I am past all comforts here, but

prayers.  
How does his highness?

*Cap.* Madam, in good health.  
*Kath.* So may he ever do! and ever flourish!

When I shall dwell with worms, and my poor  
name

Danish'd the kingdom! Patience, is that letter  
I caused you write, yet sent away?

*Pat.* No, madam.  
[Giving it to Katharine.

*Kath.* Sir, I most humbly pray you to  
deliver

This to my lord the king.  
*Cap.* Most willing, madam.

*Kath.* In which I have commended to his  
goodness

The motel of our chaste loves, his young  
daughter:

The dew of heaven fall thick in blessings on  
her!

Desecrating him to give her unknown breeding,—  
She is young, and of a noble modest nature,

I hope she will deserve well,—and a little  
To love her for her mother's sake, that loved

him,



Heaven knows how dearly. My next poor petition

Upon my wretched women, that so long  
Have follow'd both my fortunes faithfully:  
(Of which there is not one, I dare avow,  
And now I should not lie, but will deserve,  
For virtue and true beauty of the soul,  
For honesty and decent carriage,  
A right good husband, let him be a noble;  
And, sure, those men are happy that shall have  
em.

The last is, for my men; they are the poorest,  
But poverty could never draw 'em from me;  
That they may have their wages duly paid 'em,  
And something over to remember me by: 151  
If heaven had pleased to have given me longer  
life

And able means, we had not parted thus.  
These are the whole contents: and, good my  
lord,

By that you love the dearest in this world,  
As you wish Christian peace to souls departed,  
Stand these poor people's friend, and urge the  
king

To do me this last right.

Cap. By heaven, I will,  
Or let me lose the fashion of a man!

Kath. I thank you, honest lord. Remember  
me 160

In all humility unto his highness:

Say his long trouble now is passing  
Out of this world; tell him, in death I bless'd  
him,

For so I will. Mine eyes grow dim. Farewell,  
My lord. Griffith, farewell. Nay, Patience,  
You must not leave me yet: I must to bed;  
Call in more women. When I am dead, good  
wench,

Let me be used with honour: strew me over  
With maiden flowers, that all the world may  
know

I was a chaste wife to my grave: embalm me,  
Then lay me forth: although unqueen'd, yet  
like 171

A queen, and daughter to a king, inter me.  
I can no more. [Exeunt, leading Katharine.]

# ACT V.

SCENE I. London. A gallery in the palace.

Enter GARDINER, Bishop of Winchester, a  
Page with a torch before him, met by SIR  
THOMAS LOVELL.

Gar. It's one o'clock, boy, is't not?

Boy. It hath struck.

Gar. These should be hours for necessities,  
Not for delights: times to repair our nature  
With comforting repose, and not for us  
To waste these times. Good hour of night, Sir  
Thomas!

Whither so late?

Lov.

Gar. I am  
primario

With the Duke of Suffolk.

Lov. I must to him too,  
Before he go to bed. I'll take my leave.

Gar. Not yet, Sir Thomas Lovell. What's  
the matter? 180

It seems you are in haste: as if there be  
No great offence belongs to't, give your friend  
Some touch of your late business: affairs, that  
walk,

As they say spirits do, at midnight, have  
In them a wilder nature than the business  
That seeks dispatch by day.

Lov. My lord, I love you;  
And durst commend a secret to your ear:  
Much weightier than this work. The queen's  
in labour,

They say, in great extremity; and fear'd  
She'll with the labour end.

Gar. The fruit she goes with so  
I pray for heartily, that it may find  
Good time, and live: but for the stock, Sir  
Thomas,

I wish it grubb'd up now.

Lov. Methinks I could.

(Cry the amen; and yet my conscience says  
She's a good creature, and, sweet lady, does  
Deserve our better wishes.

Gar. But, sir, sir,  
Hear me, Sir Thomas: you're a gentleman  
Of mine own way: I know you wise, religious;  
And, let me tell you, it will never be well,  
Till not, Sir Thomas Lovell, take't of me, 30  
Till Cranmer, Cromwell, her two hands, and  
she,

Sleep in their graves.

Lov. Now, sir, you speak of two  
The most remark'd in the kingdom. As for  
Cromwell,

Reside that of the jewel house, is made master  
Of the rolls, and the king's secretary; further,  
sir,

Stands in the gap and trade of most preferments,  
With which the time will load him. The arch-  
bishop

Is the king's hand and tongue; and who dare  
speak

One syllable against him?

Gar. Yea, yes, Sir Thomas,  
There are that dare; and I myself have ventured  
To speak my mind of him: and indeed this  
day,

Sir, I may tell it you, I think I have  
Incensed the lords of the council, that he is  
For so I know he is, they know he is.  
A most arch heretic, a pestilence  
That doth infect the land: with which they  
moved

Have broken with the king: who hath as yet  
Given ear to our complaint, of his great crimes,  
And princely ones, foregoing them all, and  
Our reasons told before him, hath committed  
To-morrow morning to the council-house. Sir  
He be convicted. He's a man worth  
Thomas,

And we must root him out. From hence  
I hinder you the king; and night, Sir, farewell.

Lov. My good night, my lord; and your  
servant. [Exeunt Gardiner and Page.]

*Enter the KING and SUFFOLK.*

*King.* Charles, I will play no more to-night; My mind's not on't; you are too hard for me.  
*Suf.* Sir, I did never win of you before.

*King.* But little, Charles;  
Nor shall not, when my fancy's on my play. Go  
Now, Lovell, from the queen what is the news?  
*Lov.* I could not personally deliver to her  
What you commanded me, but by her woman  
I sent your message; who return'd her thanks  
In the greatest humbleness, and desired your  
highness

Most heartily to pray for her.

*King.* What say'st thou, ha!  
To pray for her! what, is she crying out!

*Lov.* So said her woman; and that her sufferance made  
Almost each pang a death.

*King.* Alas, good lady!  
*Suf.* God safely quit her of her burthen, and  
With gentle travail, to the gladdening of  
Your highness with an heir!

*King.* 'Tis midnight, Charles;  
Prithee, to bed; and in thy prayers remember  
The estate of my poor queen. Leave me alone;  
For I must think of that which company  
Would not be friendly to.

*Suf.* I wish your highness  
A quiet night; and my good mistress will  
Remember in my prayers.

*King.* Charles, good night. [*Exit Suffolk.*]

*Enter SIR ANTHONY DENNY.*

Well, sir, what follows?

*Den.* Sir, I have brought my lord the arch-  
bishop, 80

As you commanded me.

*King.* Ha! Canterbury?

*Den.* Ay, my good lord.

*King.* 'Tis true: where is he, Denny?

*Den.* He attends your highness' pleasure.

*King.* Bring him to us.  
[*Exit Denny.*]

*Lov.* [*Aside*] This is about that which the  
bishop spake:  
I am happily come hither.

*Re-enter DENNY, with CHAMBER.*

*King.* Avoid the gallery. [*Lovell seems to  
stay.*] Ha! I have said. Be gone.

What! [*Re-enter Lovell and Denny.*]

*Cham.* [*Aside*] I am fearful: wherefore  
frowns he thus?

'Tis his aspect of terror. All's not well.

*King.* How now, my lord! you do desire to  
know

Whence I sent for you.

*Cham.* [*Kneeling*]. It is my duty 90  
To attend your highness' pleasure.

*King.* Pray you, arise,  
My good and gracious Lord of Canterbury.

Come, you and I must walk a turn together;  
I have news to tell you: come, come, give me  
thy hand.

Alas, good lord, I grieve at what I speak,  
And am sorry to repeat what follows:

That I have done unwillingly, of late

Heard many grievous, I do say, my lord,  
Grievous complaints of you; which, being con-  
sider'd,

Have moved us and our council, that you shall  
This morning come before us; where, I know,

You cannot with such freedom purge yourself,  
But that, till further trial in those

Which will require your answer, you must take  
Your patience to you, and be well

To make your house our Tower: you a brother  
of us,

It fits we thus proceed, or else no will  
Would come against you.

*Cran.* [*Kneeling*]. I humbly thank your  
highness;

And am right glad to catch this good occasion  
Most thoroughly to be winnow'd, where my chaff

And corn shall fly asunder: for, I know, 111  
There's none stands under more calumnious  
tongues

Than I myself, poor man.

*King.* Stand up, good Canterbury:  
Thy truth and thy integrity is rooted

In us, thy friend: give me thy hand, stand up:  
Prithee, let's walk. Now, by my holiday,

What manner of man are you! My lord, I  
look'd

You would have given me your petition, that  
I should have taken some pains to bring together

Yourselves and your accusers; and to have heard  
you, 120

Without indurance, further.

*Cran.* Most dread liege,  
The good I stand on is my truth and honesty:

If they shall fail, I, with mine enemies,  
Will triumph o'er my person; which I weigh

not,  
Being of those virtues vacant. I fear nothing

What can be said against me.

*King.* Know you not  
How your state stands i' the world, with the

whole world?

Your enemies are many, and not small; their  
practices

Must bear the same proportion; and not ever  
The justice and the truth o' the question carries

The due o' the verdict with it; at what ease 131  
Might corrupt minds procure knaves as corrupt

To swear against you! such things have been  
done.

You are potentially opposed; and with a malice  
Of as great size. Ween you of better luck,

I mean, in perjured witness, than your master,  
Whose minister you are, whiles here he liv'd

Upon this naughty earth! Go to, go to;  
You take a precipice for no leap of danger,

And woo your own destruction.

*Cran.* God and your majesty 141  
Protect mine innocence, or I fall into

The trap is laid for me!

*King.* Be of good cheer;  
They shall no more prevail than we give way in.

Keep comfort to you; and this morning see  
You do appear before them: if they shall

chance,  
In charging you with matters, to commit you.

The best possessions to the contrary  
Fail not to use, and with what vehemency

The occasion shall instruct you : if entreaties  
Will render you no remedy, this ring 130  
I deliver them, and your appeal to us  
There make before them. Look, the good man  
weeps!  
He's honest, on mine honour. God's blest  
mother!  
I swear he is true-hearted; and a soul  
None better in my kingdom. (Get you gone,  
And do as I have bid you. [Exit Cranmer.]  
He has strangled  
His language in his tears.

*Enter Old Lady, Lovell following.*

*Grav.* [Within] Come back: what mean  
you!

*Old L.* I'll not come back; the tidings that  
I bring  
Will make my boldness manners. Now, good  
angels 139

Fly o'er thy royal head, and shade thy person  
Under their blessed wings!

*King.* Now, by thy looks  
I guess thy message. Is the queen deliver'd?  
Say, ay; and of a boy.

*Old L.* Ay, ay, my liege;  
And of a lovely boy: the God of heaven  
Both now and ever blest her! 'tis a girl,  
Promises boys hereafter. Sir, your queen  
Desires your visitation, and to be  
Acquainted with this stranger: 'tis as like you  
As cherry is to cherry.

*King.* Lovell!

*Lov.* Sir!

*King.* Give her an hundred marks. I'll to  
the queen. [Exit.]

*Old L.* An hundred marks! By this light,  
I'll ha' more. 171

An ordinary groom is for such payment.

I will have more, or scold it out of him.

Said I for this, the girl was like to him?

I will have more, or else unmay't; and now,

While it is hot, I'll put it to the issue. [Exit.]

SCENE II. *Before the council-chamber.*

*Pursuivants, Pages, &c. attending.*

*Enter CRANMER, Archbishop of Canterbury.*

*Cran.* I hope I am not too late; and yet the  
gentleman,

That was sent to me from the council, pray'd  
me

To make great haste. All fast! what means  
this? Ho!

Who waits there! Sure, you know me!

*Enter Keeper.*

*Keep.* Yes, my lord

But yet I cannot help you.

*Cran.* Why?

*Enter DOCTOR BUTTS.*

*Keep.* Your grace must wait till you be  
call'd for.

*Cran.* So.

*Butts.* [Aside] This is a piece of malice. I  
am glad

I came this way so happily: the king  
will understand it presently. [Exit.]

*Butts.* [Aside] 'Tis Butts, 180

The king's physician: as he pass'd along,  
How earnestly he cast his eyes upon me!

Pray heaven, he sound not my disgrace! For  
certain,

This is of purpose laid by some that hate me—  
'Od turn their hearts! I never sought their  
malice—

To quench mine honour: they would shame to  
make me

Wait else at door, a fellow-counsellor,  
'Mong boys, groomes, and lackeys. But their  
pleasures

Must be fulfill'd, and I attend with patience.

*Enter the KING and BUTTS at a window  
above.*

*Butts.* I'll show your grace the strangest  
sight—

*King.* What's that, Butts? so

*Butts.* I think your highness saw this many  
a day.

*King.* Body o' me, where is it!

*Butts.* There, my lord—  
The high promotion of his grace of Canter-  
bury;

Who holds his state at door, 'mongst pursui-  
vants,

Pages, and footboys.

*King.* Ha! 'tis he, indeed:  
Is this the honour they do one another!

'Tis well there's one above 'em yet. I had  
thought

They had parted so much honesty among 'em,  
At least, good manners, as not thus to suffer

A man of his place, and so near our favour, so  
To dance attendance on their lordships' pleas-  
ures.

And at the door too, like a post with packets.  
By holy Mary, Butts, there's knavery:

Let 'em alone, and draw the curtain close!  
We shall hear more anon. [Exit.]

SCENE III. *The Council-Chamber.*

*Enter LORD CHANCELLOR; places himself at  
the upper end of the table on the left hand;  
a seat being left void above him, as for  
CANTERBURY'S seat. DUKE OF SUFFOLK,  
DUKE OF NORFOLK, SURREY, LORD CRAN-  
MERLAIN, GARDINER, seat themselves in  
order on each side. CROMWELL, at lower  
end, as secretary. Keeper at the door.*

*Chan.* Speak to the business, master sec-  
retary:

Why are we met in council?

*Crom.* Please your honours,  
The chief cause concerns his grace of Canter-  
bury.

*Gar.* Has he had knowledge of it?

*Crom.* Yes.

*Nor.* Who waits there?

*Keep.* Without, my noble lord!

*Gar.* My lord's worship!

And has done half an hour, to know your

*Measure.*  
*Cham.* Let him come in.

*Keep.* Your grace may enter now.

*[Cranmer enters and approaches the council-table.]*

*Cham.* My good lord archbishop, I'm very

*sorry*  
To sit here at this present, and behold  
That chair stand empty: but we all are men, so  
In our own natures frail, and capable  
Of our flesh; few are angels: out of which

*frailty*  
And want of wisdom, you, that best should

teach us,  
Have misdeem'd yourself, and not a little,  
Toward the king first, then his laws, in filling  
The whole realm, by your teaching and your

chaplains,  
For so we are inform'd, with new opinions,  
Diverse and dangerous: which are heresies,  
And, not reform'd, may prove pernicious. 19

*Gar.* Which reformation must be sudden too,  
My noble lords: for those that tame wild horses  
Pace 'em not in their hands to make 'em gentle,  
But stop their mouths with stubborn bits, and

spur 'em,  
Till they obey the manage. If we suffer,  
Out of our easiness and childish pity

To one man's honour, this contagious sickness,  
Farewell all physic: and what follows then?

Comotions, upstarts, with a general taint  
Of the whole state: as, of late days, our neigh-

bours,  
The upper Germany, can dearly witness, 30  
Yet freshly pitied in our memories.

*Cran.* My good lords, hitherto, in all the

progress

Both of my life and office, I have labour'd,  
And with no little study, that my teaching

And the strong course of my authority  
Might go one way, and safely: and the end

Was ever, to do well: nor is there living,  
I speak it with a single heart, my lords,

A man that more detests, more stirs against,  
Both in his private conscience and his place, 40

Defacers of a public peace, than I do.  
Fare heaven, the king may never find a heart

With less allegiance in it! Men that make  
Bury and crooked malice nourishment

Do this the best. I do beseech your lordships,  
That in this case of justice, my accusers,

Be what they will, may stand forth face to face,  
And slowly urge against me.

*Gar.* Nay, my lord,

That cannot be: you are a counselor,  
And, by that virtue, no man dare accuse you. 50

*Gar.* My lord, because we have business of  
more moment,

We will be short with you. 'Tis his highness'

*Measure,*  
And our consent, for better trial of you,

That you should be committed to the Tower;  
Where, being but a private man again,

You shall know many dare accuse you boldly,  
And, I fear, you are provided for.

*Cham.* Ah, my good Lord of Winchester, I

am sorry for it.

You are always my good friend; if your will

*pass,*  
I shall both find your lordship judge and juror.

You are so merciful: I see your end; 61

'Tis my undoing: love and meekness, lord,  
Become a churchman better than ambition:

Win straying souls with modesty again,  
Cast none away. That I shall clear myself,

Lay all the weight ye can upon my  
I make as little doubt, as you do con-

In doing daily wrongs. I could say more,  
But reverence to your calling makes me modest.

*Gar.* My lord, my lord, you are a secretary, 70  
That's the plain truth: your painted gloss

discovers,  
To men that understand you, words and weak-

ness.  
*Cran.* My Lord of Winchester, you are a

little,  
By your good favour, too sharp: men so noble,

However faulty, yet should find respect  
For what they have been 'tis a cruelty

To load a falling man.  
*Gar.* Good master secretary,

I cry your honour mercy: you may, worst  
Of all this table, say so.

*Cran.* Why, my lord?

*Gar.* Do not I know you for a favourer 80  
Of this new sect? ye are not sound.

*Cran.* Not sound?

*Gar.* Not sound, I say.

*Cran.* Would you were half so honest!

Men's prayers then would seek you, not their

fares.  
*Gar.* I shall remember this bold language.

*Cran.* Remember your bold life too.

*Cham.* This is too much:

Forbear, for shame, my lords.

*Gar.* I have done.

*Cran.* And I.

*Cham.* Then thus for you, my lord: it

stands agreed.

I take it, by all voices, that forthwith  
You be convey'd to the Tower a prisoner: 90

There to remain till the king's further pleasure  
Be known unto us: are you all agreed, lords?

*All.* We are.

*Cran.* Is there no other way of mercy,

But I must needs to the Tower, my lords?

*Gar.* What other

Would you expect? you are strangely trouble-

some.  
Let some of the guard be ready there.

*Enter Guard.*

*Cran.* Must I go like a traitor thither?

*Gar.* Receive him,

And see him safe to the Tower.

*Cran.* Stay, good my lords,

I have a little yet to say. Look there, my

lords;

By virtue of that ring, I take my oath

Out of the grips of cruel men, and give it 100

To a most noble judge, the king my master.

*Cham.* This is the king's ring.

*Sur.* 'Tis no counterfeit.

*Suf.* 'Tis this right ring, by heaven: I told ye all,  
When we first put this dangerous stone a-rolling.

'T would fall upon ourselves.

*Nor.* Do you think, my lords,  
The king will suffer but the little finger  
Of this man to be vex'd?

*Chas.* 'Tis now too certain:  
How much more is his life in value with him!  
Would I were fairly out on't!

*Crom.* My mind gave me,  
In seeking tales and informations 110  
Against this man, whose honesty the devil  
And his disciples only envy at,  
Ye blew the fire that burns ye: now have at ye!

*Enter KING, frowning on them; takes his seat.*

*Gar.* Dread sovereign, how much are we bound to heaven

In daily thanks, that gave us such a prince;  
Not only good and wise, but most religious:  
One that, in all obedience, makes the church  
The chief aim of his honour; and, to strengthen  
That holy duty, out of dear respect,  
His royal self in judgement comes to hear. 120  
The cause betwixt her and this great offender.

*King.* You were ever good at sudden commendations.

*Bishop of Winchester.* But know, I come not  
To hear such flattery now, and in my presence;  
They are too thin and bare to hide offences.  
To me you cannot reach, you play the spaniel,  
And think with wagging of your tongue to win me;

But, whatsoever thou takest me for, I'm sure  
Thou hast a cruel nature and a bloody.  
[To Cranmer] Good man, sit down. Now let  
me see the proudest 130

He, that dares most, but wag his finger at thee:  
By all that's holy, he had better starve  
Than but once think this place becomes thee  
not.

*Sur.* May it please your grace,—

*King.* No, sir, it does not please me.  
I had thought I had had men of some understanding

And wisdom of my council: but I find none.  
Was it discretion, lords, to let this man,  
This good man,—few of you deserve that title,—  
This honest man, wait like a lousy footboy  
At chamber-door? and one as great as you are?  
Why, what a shame was this! Did my commission 141

Bid ye so far forget yourselves! I gave ye  
Power as he was a counsellor to try him,  
Not as a grocer; there's some of ye, I see,  
More out of malice than integrity,  
Would try him to the utmost, had ye mean;  
Which ye shall never have while I live.

*Chas.* Thus far,  
My most dread sovereign, may it like your  
grace  
To let my tongue accuse all. What was pur-

Concerning this imprisonment, was rather, 150  
If there be faith in men, meant for his trial,

And fair purgation to the world, than malice,  
I'm sure, in me.

*King.* Well, well, my lords, respect him;  
Take him, and use him well, he's worthy of it,  
I will say thus much for him, if a prince  
May be beholding to a subject, I

Am, for his love and service, so to him,  
Make me no more ado, but all embrace him:  
Be friends, for shame, my lords! My Lord of  
Canterbury, 160

I have a suit which you must not deny me;  
That is, a fair young maid that yet wants  
baptism,

You must be godfather, and answer for her.

*Crom.* The greatest monarch now alive may  
glory

In such an honour: how may I deserve it,  
That am a poor and humble subject to you?

*King.* Come, come, my lord, you'd spare  
your spoons: you shall have two noble partners  
with you; the old Duchess of Norfolk, and Lady  
Marquess Dorset: will these please you? 170  
Once more, my Lord of Winchester, I charge you,  
Embrace and love this man.

*Gar.* With a true heart  
And brother-love I do it.

*Crom.* And let heaven  
Witness, how dear I hold this confirmation.

*King.* Good man, those joyful tears show  
thy true heart:

The common voice, I see, is verified  
Of thee, which says thus, 'Do my Lord of  
Canterbury

A shrewd turn, and he is your friend for ever.'  
(Come, lords, we trifle time away: I long

To have this young one made a Christian. 180  
As I have made ye one, lords, one remain;  
So I grow stronger, you more honour gain.

[Exeunt.]

#### SCENE IV. The palace yard.

Noise and tumult within. *Enter Porter and his Man.*

*Port.* You'll leave your noise and  
rascals: do you take the court for a  
garden? ye rude slaves, leave your gabbling.

[Within.] Good master porter, I belong to the  
laries.

*Port.* Belong to the gallows, and be hang'd,  
ye rogue! is this a place to roar in? Fetch me  
a dozen crab-tree staves, and strong ones: these  
are but switches to 'em. I'll scratch your heads;  
you must be seeing christenings! do you look  
for ale and cakes here, you rude rascals! 191

*Man.* Pray, sir, be patient: tis as much  
impossible—

Unless we sweep 'em from the door with  
cannons—

To scatter 'em, as 'tis to make 'em short.  
On May-day morning; which will serve us.

We may as well push against Fortune,  
sir, as.

*Port.* How got they in, and be hang'd!

*Man.* Alas, I know not: how got they in?

As much as one would expect of such a door!  
You see the poor remainder—could I but see,

I made no spare, sir.

*Port.* You did nothing, sir.  
*Man.* I am not Samson, nor Sir Guy, nor Colbrand.

To mow 'em down before me: but if I spared any

That had a head to hit, either young or old, He or she, cuckold or cuckold-maker, Let me ne'er hope to see a chine again;

And that I would not for a cow, God save her!

*[Within.]* Do you hear, master porter?

*Port.* I shall be with you presently, good master puppy. Keep the door close, sirrah.

*Man.* What would you have me do?

*Port.* What should you do, but knock 'em down by the dozens? Is this Moorfields to muster in? or have we some strange Indian with the great tool come to court, the women so besiege us? Bless me, what a fry of fornication is at door! On my Christian conscience, this one christening will beget a thousand; here will be father, godfather, and all together.

*Man.* The spoons will be the bigger, sir. There is a fellow somewhat near the door, he should be a brazier by his face, for, o' my conscience, twenty of the dog-days now reign in 's nose; all that stand about him are under the line, they need no other penance: that fire-drake did I hit three times on the head, and three times was his nose discharged against me; he stands there, like a mortar-piece, to blow us. There was a haberdasher's wife of small wit near him, that railed upon me till her pinked porringer fell off her head, for kindling such a combustion in the state. I missed the meteor once, and hit that woman; who cried out 'Clubs!' when I might see from far some forty truncheoners draw to her succour, which were the hope o' the Strand, where she was quartered. They fell on; I made good my place: at length they came to the broom-staff to me; I defied 'em still: when suddenly a file of boys behind 'em, loose shot, delivered such a shower of pebbles, that I was fain to draw mine honour in, and let 'em win the work: the devil was amongst 'em, I think, surely.

*Port.* These are the youths that thunder at a playhouse, and fight for luten apples; that no audience, but the tribulation of Tower-hill, or the fumes of Limehouse, their dear brothers, see like to endure. I have some of 'em in Lincolns Patrum, and there they are like to dance these three days; besides the running banquet of two headles that is to come.

*Enter LORD CHAMBERLAIN.*

*Cham.* Mercy o' me, what a multitude are here!

They grow still too; from all parts they are

— a fair here! Where are these

These gay knaves? Ye have made a fine hand,

There is a fine public let in: are all these

These gay fellows o' the suburbs? We shall

Great store of room, no doubt, left for the ladies,

When they pass back from the christening.

*Port.* An't please your honour, We are but men; and what so many may do, Not being torn a-piece, we have done:

An army cannot rule 'em.

*Cham.* As I live, If the king blame me for't, I'll lay ye all By the heels, and suddenly; and on your heads Clap round fines for neglect: ye are lazy knaves; And here ye lie bailing of bombardis, when Ye should do service. Hark! the trumpets

sound; They're come already from the christening: Go, break among the press, and find a way out To let the troop pass fairly; or I'll find A Marshalsea shall hold ye play these two months.

*Port.* Make way there for the princes.

*Man.* You great fellow, Stand close up, or I'll make your head ache.

*Port.* You! the camlet, get up o' the rail; I'll peck you o'er the pales else. *[Exeunt.]*

#### SCENE V. The palace.

*Enter trumpets, sounding; then two Aldermen, LORD MAYOR, GARTER, CRANMER, DUKE OF NORFOLK with his marshal's staff, DUKE OF SUFFOLK, two Noblemen bearing great standing-bowls for the christening-gifts; then four Noblemen bearing a canopy, under which the DUCHESS OF NORFOLK, godmother, bearing the child richly habited in a mantle, &c., train borne by a Lady; then follows the MARCHIONESS DORSET, the other godmother, and Ladies. The troop pass once about the stage, and GARTER speaks.*

*Gart.* Heaven, from thy endless goodness, send prosperous life, long, and ever happy, to the high and mighty princess of England, Elizabeth!

*Flourish. Enter KING and Guard.*

*Cran. [Kneeling.]* And to your royal grace, and the good queen,

My noble partners, and myself, thus pray: All comfort, joy, in this most gracious lady, Heaven ever laid up to make parents happy, May hourly fall upon ye!

*King.* Thank you, good lord archbishop: What is her name?

*Cran.* Elizabeth.

*King.* Stand up, lord. *[The King kisses the child.]*

With this kiss take my blessing: God protect thee!

Into whose hand I give thy life.

*Cran.* Amen.  
*King.* My noble gossip, ye have been too prodigal:

I thank ye heartily; so shall this lady, When she has so much English.

*Cran.* Let me speak, sir.  
*For heaven now bids me; and the words I utter*

Let none think flattery, for they'll find 'em  
truth.

This royal infant—heaven still move about  
her!

Though in her cradle, yet now promises  
Upon this land a thousand thousand blessings,  
Which time shall bring to ripeness: she shall  
be—

But few now living can behold that goodness—  
A pattern to all princes living with her,  
And all that shall succeed: Saba was never  
More covetous of wisdom and fair virtue  
Than this pure soul shall be: all princely  
graces.

That mould up such a mighty piece as this is,  
With all the virtues that attend the good,  
Shall still be doubled on her: truth shall nurse  
her,

Holy and heavenly thoughts still counsel her:  
She shall be loved and fear'd: her own shall  
bless her;

Her foes shake like a field of beaten corn,  
And hang their heads with sorrow: good grows  
with her:

In her days every man shall eat in safety,  
Under his own vine, what he plants; and sing  
The merry songs of peace to all his neighbours:  
God shall be truly known; and those about her  
From her shall read the perfect ways of honour,  
And by those claim their greatness, not by  
blood.

Nor shall this peace sleep with her: but as  
when

The bird of wonder dies, the maiden phoenix,  
Her ashes new create another heir,  
As great in admiration as herself;  
So shall she leave her blessedness to one,  
When heaven shall call her from this cloud of  
darkness.

Who from the sacred ashes of her honour  
Shall star-like rise, as great in fame as she was,  
And so stand fix'd: peace, plenty, love, truth,  
terror,

That were the servants to this chosen infant,  
Shall then be his, and like a vine grow to him  
Wherever the bright sun of heaven shall shine.  
His honour and the greatness of his name  
Shall be, and make new nations: he shall  
flourish,

And, like a mountain cedar, reach his branches

To all the plains about him: our children's  
children

Shall see this, and bless heaven.

*King.* Thou speakest wonders.  
*Cran.* She shall be, to the happiness of  
England,

An aged princess; many days shall see her,  
And yet no day without a deed to crown it.  
Would I had known no more! but she must  
die,

She must, the saints must have her; yet a  
virgin,

A most unspotted lily shall she pass  
To the ground, and all the world shall mourn  
her.

*King.* O lord archbishop,  
Thou hast made me now a man! never, before  
This happy child, did I get any thing:  
This oracle of comfort has so pleased me,  
That when I am in heaven I shall desire  
To see what this child does, and praise my  
Maker.

I thank ye all. To you, my good lord mayor, 70  
And your good brethren, I am much beholding;  
I have received much honour by your presence,  
And ye shall find me thankful. Lead the way,  
lords:

Ye must all see the queen, and she must thank  
ye.

She will be sick else. This day, no man think  
Has business at his house; for all shall stay:  
This little one shall make it holiday. [*Exeunt.*]

## EPILOGUE.

'Tis ten to one this play can never please  
All that are here: some come to take their ease,  
And sleep an act or two; but those, we fear,  
We have frighted with our trumpets; so, 'tis  
clear,

They'll say 'tis naught: others, to hear the city  
Abused extremely, and to cry 'That's witty!  
Which we have not done neither: that, I fear,  
All the expected good we're like to hear  
For this play at this time, is only in  
The merciful construction of good women: so  
For such a one we show'd 'em: if they smile,  
And say 'twill do, I know, within a while  
All the best men are ours; for 'tis ill hap,  
If they hold when their ladies bid 'em clap.

# TROILUS AND CRESSIDA

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

**PRIAM**, king of Troy.

**HECTOR**,

**TROILUS**,

**PARIS**,

**DEIPHOBUS**,

**HELENUS**,

**MARGARELON**, a bastard son of Priam.

**ÆNEAS**,

**ANTENOR**,

**CALCHAS**, a Trojan priest, taking part with

the Greeks.

**PANDARUS**, uncle to Cressida.

**AGAMEMNON**, the Grecian general.

**MENECLAUS**, his brother.

**ACHILLES**,

**AJAX**,

**ULYSSES**,

**NESTOR**,

**DIOMEDES**,

**PATROCLUS**,

Grecian princes.

**THERSITES**, a deformed and scurrilous Grecian.

**ALEXANDER**, servant to Cressida.

Servant to Troilus.

Servant to Paris.

Servant to Diomedes.

**HELEN**, wife to Menelaus.

**ANDROMACHE**, wife to Hector.

**CASSANDRA**, daughter to Priam, a prophetess.

**CRESSIDA**, daughter to Calchas.

Trojan and Greek Soldiers, and Attendants.

SCENE: *Troy, and the Grecian camp before it.*

## PROLOGUE.

In Troy, there lies the scene. From isles of Greece

The princes orgulous, their high blood chafed,  
Have to the port of Athens sent their ships,

Fraught with the ministers and instruments

Of cruel war: sixty and nine, that wore

Their crowns regal, from the Athenian bay

Put forth toward Phrygia; and their vow is made

To sack Troy, within whose strong immures

The virginal Helen, Menelaus' queen,

With wanton Paris sleeps; and that's the general.

To Tenedos they come:

And the deep-drawing barks do there discharge

Their warlike freightage: now on Dardanian plains

The fresh and yet unbruised Greeks do pitch

Their brave pavilions: Priam's six-gated city,

Dardania, and Tymbra, Helina, Chetia, Troien,

And Antenorides, with many staples

And corresponding and fulfilling bolts,

Wrap up the nose of Troy.

Expectation, tickling skittish spirits,

From each side, Trojan and Greek,

Set on on hazard: and hither am I come

Not as a soldier, but not in confidence

Of a poet or actor's voice, but suited

To the occasion as our argument,

To show, fair beholders, that our play

Leaps o'er the vaunt and firstlings of those broils,

Beginning in the middle, starting thence away

To what may be digested in a play.

Like or find fault; do as your pleasures are: so

Now good or bad, 'tis but the chance of war.

## ACT I.

SCENE I. *Troy. Before Priam's palace.*

*Enter TROILUS armed, and PANDARUS.*

*Tro.* Call here my varlet; I'll upbraid again:

Why should I war without the walls of Troy,

That find such cruel battle here within?

Each Trojan that is master of his heart,

Let him to field; Troilus, alas! hath none.

*Pan.* Will this year never be mended?

*Tro.* The Greeks are strong, and skilful to their strength,

Pierced to their skill and to their fierceness valiant;

But I am weaker than a woman's tear,

Tamer than sleep, fonder than ignorance,

Less valiant than the virgin in the night

And skillless as unpractised infancy.

*Pan.* Well, I have told you enough of this: for my part, I'll not meddle nor make no further.

He that will have a cake out of the wheat must needs tarry the grinding.

*Tro.* Have I not tarried?

*Pan.* Ay, the grinding; but you must tarry the bolting.



*Tro.* Have I not tarried?

*Pan.* Ay, the boiling, but you must tarry the leavering.

*Tro.* Still have I tarried.

*Pan.* Ay, to the leavering; but here's yet in the word 'hereafter' the kneading, the making of the cake, the heating of the oven and the baking; nay, you must stay the cooling too, or you may chance to burn your lips.

*Tro.* Patience herself, what goddess e'er she be,

Doth lesser blench at sufferance than I do.

At Priam's royal table do I sit;

And when fair Cressid comes into my thoughts,—

So, traitor! 'When she comes!' When is she thence?

*Pan.* Well, she looked yesternight fairer than ever I saw her look, or any woman else.

*Tro.* I was about to tell thee:—when my heart,

As welked with a sigh, would rive in twain, Lo! Hector or my father should perceive me, I have, as when the sun doth light a storm, Buried this sigh in wrinkle of a smile:

But sorrow, that is couch'd in seeming gladness, Is like that mirth fate turns to sudden sadness.

*Pan.* An her hair were not somewhat darker than Helen's—well, go to—there were no more comparison between the women: but, for my part, she is my kinswoman; I would not, as they term it, praise her: but I would somebody had heard her talk yesterday, as I did. I will not dispraise your sister Cassandra's wit, but—

*Tro.* O Pandarus! I tell thee, Pandarus,—When I do tell thee, there my hopes lie drown'd, Reply not in how many fathoms deep

'They lie indrench'd.' I tell thee I am mad

In Cressid's love: thou answer'st 'she is fair;' Pour'st in the open ulcer of my heart

Her eyes, her hair, her cheek, her gait, her voice,

Handiest in thy discourse, O, that her hand, In whose comparison all whites are ink,

Writing their own reproach, to whose soft seizure

The cygnet's down is harsh and spirit of sense

Hard as the palm of ploughman: this thou tell'st me,

As true thou tell'st me, when I say I love her;

But, saying thus, instead of oil and balm,

Thou lay'st in every gash that love hath given me

The knife that made it.

*Pan.* I speak no more than truth.

*Tro.* Thou dost not speak so much.

*Pan.* Faith, I'll not meddle in't. Let her be as she is: if she be fair, 'tis the better for her; an she be not, she has the mends in her own hands.

*Tro.* Good Pandarus, how now, Pandarus?

*Pan.* I have had my labour for my travail; ill-thought on of her and ill-thought on of you; gone between and between, but small thanks for my labour.

*Tro.* What, art thou angry, Pandarus? what, with me?

*Pan.* Because she's kin to me, therefore she's not so fair as Helen: an she were not kin to me, she would be as fair on Friday as Helen is on Sunday. But what care I? I care not an she were a black-a-moor; 'tis all one to me.

*Tro.* Say I she is not fair?

*Pan.* I do not care whether you do or no. She's a fool to stay behind her father; let her to the Greeks; and so I'll tell her the next time I see her: for my part, I'll meddle now make no more of the matter.

*Tro.* Pandarus,—

*Pan.* Not I.

*Tro.* Sweet Pandarus,—

*Pan.* Pray you, speak no more to me: I will leave all as I found it, and there an end. *[Exit Pandarus. An alarm.]*

*Tro.* Peace, you ungracious clamour! peace, rude sounds!

Fools on both sides! Helen must needs be fair, When with your blood you daily paint her thus.

I cannot fight upon this argument; It is too starved a subject for my sword.

But Pandarus,—O gods, how do you plague me! I cannot come to Cressid, but by Pandar;

And he's as tetchy to be woo'd to woo, As she is stubborn-chaste against all suit.

Tell me, Apollo, for thy Daphne's love, What Cressid is, what Pandar, and what we?

Her bed is India; there she lies, a pearl: Between our Ilium and where she resides,

Let it be call'd the wild and wandering flood, Ourself the merchant, and this sailing Pandar

Our doubtful hope, our convoy and our bark.

*Alarm. Enter ÆNEAS.*

*Æne.* How now, Prince Troilus! wherefore not afield?

*Tro.* Because not there: this woman's answer sorts,

For womanish it is to be from thence.

What news, Æneas, from the field to-day?

*Æne.* That Paris is returned home and hurt.

*Tro.* By whom, Æneas?

*Æne.* Troilus, by Menelaus.

*Tro.* Let Paris bleed: 'tis but a scar to honour; Paris is gored with Menelaus' horn.

*Æne.* Hark, what good sport is out of town to-day!

*Tro.* Better at home, if 'would I might' were 'may.'

But to the sport abroad: are you bound thither?

*Æne.* In all swift haste.

*Tro.* Come, go we then together. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE II. The same. A street.

*Enter CRESSIDA and ALEXANDER.*

*Cres.* Who were these went by?

*Alex.* Queen Hecuba and Priam.

*Cres.* And whither go they?

*Alex.* Up to the wall to see the battle.

Whom he hath contrived as subject to the war, To see the battle. Hecuba, when—

is, as a virtue, first, to-day was—

He came—

# TROILUS AND CRESSIDA

[ACT I

And, like as there were husbandry in war,  
Before the sun rose he was harness'd light,  
And to the field goes he; where every flower  
Did, as a prophet, weep what it forecast  
In Hector's wrath.

*Cres.* What was his cause of anger?

*Alex.* The noise goes, this: there is among  
the Greeks  
A lord of Trojan blood, nephew to Hector;  
They call him Ajax.

*Cres.* Good; and what of him?

*Alex.* They say he is a very man per se,  
And stands alone.

*Cres.* So do all men, unless they are drunk,  
sick, or have no legs.

*Alex.* This man, lady, hath robbed many  
beasts of their particular additions; he is as  
valiant as the lion, churlish as the bear, slow as  
the elephant: a man into whom nature hath  
so crowded humours that his valour is crushed  
into folly, his folly sauced with discretion:  
there is no man hath a virtue that he hath not  
a glimpse of, nor any man an attain but he  
carries some stain of it: he is melancholy with-  
out cause, and merry against the hair: he hath  
the joints of every thing, but every thing so  
out of joint that he is a gouty Briareus, many  
hands and no use, or purblind Argus, all eyes  
and no sight.

*Cres.* But how should this man, that makes  
me smile, make Hector angry?

*Alex.* They say he yesterday coped Hector  
in the battle and struck him down, the disdain  
and shame whereof hath ever since kept Hector  
fasting and waking.

*Cres.* Who comes here?

*Alex.* Madam, your uncle Pandarus.

*Enter PANDARUS.*

*Cres.* Hector's a gallant man.

*Alex.* As may be in the world, lady.

*Pan.* What's that? what's that?

*Cres.* Good morrow, uncle Pandarus.

*Pan.* Good morrow, cousin Cressid: what  
do you talk of? Good morrow, Alexander.  
How do you, cousin? When were you at  
Ilium?

*Cres.* This morning, uncle.

*Pan.* What were you talking of when I  
came? Was Hector armed and gone ere ye  
came to Ilium? Helen was not up, was she?

*Cres.* Hector was gone, but Helen was  
not up.

*Pan.* Even so: Hector was stirring early.

*Cres.* That were we talking of, and of his  
anger.

*Pan.* Was he angry?

*Cres.* So he says here.

*Pan.* True, he was so: I know the cause  
too: he'll lay about him to-day, I can tell  
them that; and there's a Troilus will not come  
for behind him; let them take heed of Troilus,  
I can tell them that too.

*Cres.* What is he angry too?

*Pan.* Who, Troilus? Troilus is the better  
man of the two.

*Cres.* Together! there's no comparison.

*Pan.* What, not between Troilus and Hector?  
Do you know a man if you see him?

*Cres.* Ay, if I ever saw him before and knew  
him.

*Pan.* Well, I say Troilus is Troilus.

*Cres.* Then you say as I say; for, I am sure,  
he is not Hector.

*Pan.* No, nor Hector is not Troilus in some  
degrees.

*Cres.* 'Tis just to each of them; he is  
himself.

*Pan.* Himself! Alas, poor Troilus! I would  
he were.

*Cres.* So he is.

*Pan.* Condition, I had gone barefoot to India.

*Cres.* He is not Hector.

*Pan.* Himself! no, he's not himself: would  
a' were himself! Well, the gods are above:  
time must friend or end: well, Troilus, well:  
I would my heart were in her body. No,  
Hector is not a better man than Troilus.

*Cres.* Excuse me.

*Pan.* He is elder.

*Cres.* Pardon me, pardon me.

*Pan.* Th' other's not come to 't; you shall  
tell me another tale, when th' other's come to 't.  
Hector shall not have his wit this year.

*Cres.* He shall not need it, if he have his  
own.

*Pan.* Nor his qualities.

*Cres.* No matter.

*Pan.* Nor his beauty.

*Cres.* 'Twould not become him; his own's  
better.

*Pan.* You have no judgement, niece: Helen  
herself swore th' other day, that Troilus, for a  
brown favour—for so 'tis, I must confess,—not  
brown neither,—

*Cres.* No, but brown.

*Pan.* Faith, to say truth, brown and not  
brown.

*Cres.* To say the truth, true and not true.

*Pan.* She praised his complexion above  
Paris.

*Cres.* Why, Paris hath colour enough.

*Pan.* So he has.

*Cres.* Then Troilus should have too much:  
if she praised him above, his complexion is  
higher than his; he having colour enough, and  
the other higher, is too flaming a pale for a  
good complexion. I had as lief Helen's golden  
tongue had commended Troilus for a copper  
nose.

*Pan.* I swear to you, I think Helen loves  
him better than Paris.

*Cres.* Then she's a merry Greek indeed.

*Pan.* Nay, I am sure she does. She came  
to him th' other day into the compass'd window,  
—and, you know, he has not past three or four  
hairs on his chin,—

*Cres.* Indeed, a tapestry's arithmetic may soon  
bring his particulars therein to a total.

*Pan.* Why, he is very young; and yet will  
be, within three pound, lift as much as his  
brother Hector.

*Cres.* Is he so young a man and so old a  
lifter?

*Pan.* But to prove to you that Helen loves

him : she came and puts me her white hand to his cloven chin—

*Cres.* Juno have mercy ! how came it cloven ?

*Pan.* Why, you know, 'tis dimpled : I think his smiling becomes him better than any man in all Phrygia.

*Cres.* O, he smiles valiantly.

*Pan.* Does he not ?

*Cres.* O yes, an' 'twere a cloud in autumn.

*Pan.* Why, go to, then : but to prove to you that Helen loves Troilus,—

*Cres.* Troilus will stand to the proof, if you'll prove it so.

*Pan.* Troilus ! why, he esteems her no more than I esteem an addle egg.

*Cres.* If you love an addle egg as well as you love an idle head, you would eat chickens ! the shell.

*Pan.* I cannot choose but laugh, to think how she tickled his chin : indeed, she has a marvellous white hand, I must needs confess,—

*Cres.* Without the rack.

*Pan.* And she takes upon her to spy a white hair on his chin.

*Cres.* Alas, poor chin ! many a wart is richer.

*Pan.* But there was such laughing ! Queen Iocuba laughed that her eyes ran o'er.

*Cres.* With mill-stones.

*Pan.* And Cassandra laughed.

*Cres.* But there was more temperate fire under the pot of her eyes : did her eyes run over too ?

*Pan.* And Hector laughed.

*Cres.* At what was all this laughing ?

*Pan.* Marry, at the white hair that Helen spied on Troilus' chin.

*Cres.* An't had been a green hair, I should have laughed too.

*Pan.* They laughed not so much at the hair as at his pretty answer.

*Cres.* What was his answer ?

*Pan.* Quoth she, 'Here's but two and fifty hairs on your chin, and one of them is white.'

*Cres.* This is her question.

*Pan.* That's true ; make no question of that. 'Two and fifty hairs, quoth he, 'and one white : that white hair is my father, and all the rest are his sons.' 'Jupiter' quoth she, 'which of these hairs is Paris my husband ?' 'The forked one,' quoth he, 'pluck't out, and give it him.' But there was such laughing ! and Helen so blushed, and Paris so chafed, and all the rest so laughed, that it passed.

*Cres.* So let it now ; for it has been a great while going by.

*Pan.* Well, cousin, I told you a thing yesterday ; think on't.

*Cres.* So I do.

*Pan.* I'll be sworn 'tis true ; he will weep you, an' 'twere a man-born in April.

*Cres.* And I'll spring up in his tears, an' 'twere a nettle against May.

[A retreat sounded.

*Pan.* Hark ! they are coming from the field : all we stand up here, and see them as they are toward Ilium ! good niece, do, sweet niece said.

*Cres.* At your pleasure.

*Pan.* Here, here, here's an excellent place ; here we may see most bravely : I'll tell you them all by their names as they pass by ; but mark Troilus above the rest.

*Cres.* Speak not so loud.

*ÆNEAS passes.*

*Pan.* That's Æneas : is not that a brave man ? he's one of the flowers of Troy, I can tell you : but mark Troilus ; you shall see anon.

*ANTENOR passes.*

*Cres.* Who's that ?

*Pan.* That's Antenor : he has a shrewd wit, I can tell you ; and he's a man good enough : he's one o' the soundest judgements in Troy, whosoever, and a proper man of person. When comes Troilus ? I'll show you Troilus anon : if he see me, you shall see him nod at me.

*Cres.* Will he give you the nod ?

*Pan.* You shall see.

*Cres.* If he do, the rich shall have more.

*HECTOR passes.*

*Pan.* That's Hector, that, that, look you, that ; there's a fellow ! Go thy way, Hector ! There's a brave man, niece. O brave Hector ! Look how he looks ! there's a countenance ! is't not a brave man ?

*Cres.* O, a brave man !

*Pan.* Is a' not ! it does a man's heart good. Look you what hacks are on his helmet ! look you yonder, do you see ? look you there : there's no jesting ; there's laying on, take't off who will, as they say : there be hacks !

*Cres.* Be those with swords ?

*Pan.* Swords ! any thing, he cares not ; an the devil come to him, it's all one ; by God's lid, it does one's heart good. Yonder comes Paris, yonder comes Paris.

*PARIS passes.*

Look ye yonder, niece ; is't not a gallant man too, is't not ? Why, this is brave now. Who said he came hurt home to-day ? he's not hurt : why, this will do Helen's heart good now, ha ! Would I could see Troilus now ! You shall see Troilus anon.

*HELENUS passes.*

*Cres.* Who's that ?

*Pan.* That's Helenus. I marvel where Troilus is. That's Helenus. I think he went not forth to-day. That's Helenus.

*Cres.* Can Helenus fight, uncle ?

*Pan.* Helenus ! no. Yes, he'll fight in different well. I marvel where Troilus is. Hark ! do you not hear the people cry 'Troilus' ? Helenus is a priest.

*Cres.* What sneaking fellow comes yonder ?

*TROILUS passes.*

*Pan.* Where ! yonder ! that's Diophobus. 'Tis Troilus ! there's a man, niece ! Hark ! Brave Troilus ! the prince of chivalry !

*Cres.* Peace, for shame, peace !

*Pan.* Mark him ; note him. O brave Troilus !

Look well upon him, niece; look you how his  
sweat is bloodied, and his helms more hacked  
than Hector's; and how he looks, and how he  
goes! O admirable youth! he ne'er saw three  
and twenty. Go thy way, Troilus, go thy way!  
Had I a sister were a grace, or a daughter a  
goddess, he should take his choice. O admir-  
able man! Paris! Paris is dirt to him; and, I  
warrant, Helen, to change, would give an eye to  
hock.

Cress. Here comes more.

Forces pass.

Pan. Asses, fools, dolts! chaff and bran,  
chaff and bran! porridge after meat! I could  
live and die i' the eyes of Troilus. Ne'er look,  
ne'er look; the eagles are gone; crows and  
daws, crows and daws! I had rather be such a  
mum as Troilus than Agamemnon and all  
Greece.

Cress. There is among the Greeks Achilles,  
a better man than Troilus.

Pan. Achilles! a drayman, a porter, a very  
camel.

Cress. Well, well.

Pan. 'Well, well!' Why, have you any  
discretion? have you any eyes? do you know  
what a man is? Is not birth, beauty, good  
shape, discourse, manhood, learning, gentle-  
ness, virtue, youth, liberality, and such like, the  
spice and salt that season a man?

Cress. Ay, a minced man; and then to be  
baked with no date in the pie, for then the  
man's date's out.

Pan. You are such a woman! one knows  
not at what ward you lie.

Cress. Upon my back, to defend my belly;  
upon my wit, to defend my wiles; upon my  
secrecy, to defend mine honesty; my mask, to  
defend my beauty; and you, to defend all these;  
and at all these wards I lie, at a thousand  
watches.

Pan. Say one of your watches.

Cress. Nay, I'll watch you for that; and  
that's one of the chiefest of them too: if I can-  
not ward what I would not have hit, I can  
watch you for telling how I took the blow;  
unless it swell past hiding, and then it's past  
watching.

Pan. You are such another!

Enter TROILUS'S Boy.

Boy. Sir, my lord would instantly speak  
with you.

Cress. Where?

Boy. At your own house; there he unarms  
him.

Cress. Good boy, tell him I come. [Exit Boy.]  
I doubt he is hurt. Fare ye well, good niece.

Cress. Adieu, uncle.

Pan. I'll be with you, niece, by and by.

Cress. To bring, uncle!

Pan. Ay, a token from Troilus.

Cress. By the same token, you are a hawk.

[Exit Pandarus.]  
Wine, vena, gifts, towns, and love's full sacri-  
fice.

And then to another's marriage;

But more in Troilus thousand fold I see.  
Than in the glass of Pandar's praise may be:  
Yet hold I off. Women are angels, wooing:  
Things won are done; joy's soul lies in the  
doing.

That she beloved knows nought that knows not  
this:

Men prize the thing ungain'd more than it is:

That she was never yet that ever knew  
Love got so sweet as when desire did sue.

Therefore this maxim out of love I teach:  
Achievement is command; ungain'd, beseech:

Then though my heart's content firm love doth  
bear,

Nothing of that shall from mine eyes appear.  
[Exit.]

SCENE III. The Grecian camp. Before  
Agamemnon's tent.

Sennet. Enter AGAMEMNON, NESTOR,  
ULYSSES, MENELAUS, and others.

Agam. Princes,

What grief hath set the jaundice on your  
checks?

The ample proposition that hope makes  
In all designs begun on earth below  
Falls in the promised largeness: checks and dis-  
asters

Grow in the veins of actions highest rear'd,  
As knots, by the conflux of meeting sap,

Infect the sound pine and divert his grain  
Tortive and errant from his course of growth.

Nor, princes, is it matter new to us  
That we come short of our suppose so far

That after seven years' siege yet Troy wait-  
stand;

Sith every action that hath gone before,  
Whereof we have record, trial did draw

Bias and thwart, not answering the aim,  
And that unbolted figure of the thought

That gave't surmised shape. Why then, prin-  
ces,

Do you with cheeks abash'd behold our works,  
And call them shames! which are indeed

nought else  
But the protractive trials of great Jove

To find permissive constancy in men:  
The fineness of which metal is not found

In fortune's love; for then the bold and coward,  
The wise and fool, the artist and unlearn'd,

The hard and soft, seem all aligned and kin:  
But, in the wind and tempest of her frown,

Distinction, with a broad and powerful fan,  
Puffing at all, winnows the light away;

And what hath mass or matter, by itself  
Lies rich in virtue and unmingled.

Nest. With due observance of thy godlike  
seat,

Great Agamemnon, Nestor shall apply  
Thy latest words. In the request of chance

Lies the true proof of men: the sea being  
smooth,

How many shallow bantle boats dare sail  
Upon her patient breast, making their way

With those of nobler bulk!  
But let the gulfian surge once sweep

The gentle Troia, and anon behold

The strong-ribb'd bark through liquid mountains  
cut,  
Bounding between the two moist elements,  
Like Perseus' horse: where's then the saucy  
boat

Whose weak untimber'd sides but even now  
Co-rival'd greatness! Either to harbour fled,  
Or made a toast for Neptune. Even so  
Doth valour's show and valour's worth divide  
In storms of fortune; for in her ray and bright-  
ness

The herd hath more annoyance by the breeze  
Than by the tiger; but when the splitting wind  
Makes flexible the knees of knotted oaks,  
And flies fled under shade, why, then the thing  
of courage

As roused with rage with rage doth sympathize,  
And with an accent tuned in selfsame key  
Retorts to chiding fortune.

*Ulysses.*

Agamemnon,  
Thou great commander, nerve and bone of  
Greece,

Heart of our numbers, soul and only spirit,  
In whom the tempers and the minds of all  
Should be shut up, hear what Ulysses speaks.  
Besides the applause and approbation

The which, [*To Agamemnon*] most mighty for  
thy place and sway,  
[*To Nestor*] And thou most reverend for thy  
stretch'd-out life

I give to both your speeches, which were such  
As Agamemnon and the hand of Greece  
Should hold up high in brass, and such again  
As venerable Nestor, hatch'd in silver,  
Should with a bond of air, strong as the axle-  
tree

On which heaven rides, knit all the Greekish  
cars

To his experienced tongue, yet let it please  
both,

Thou great, and wise, to hear Ulysses speak.  
*Agam.* Speak, Prince of Ithaca; and be't of  
less expect

That matter needless, of importless burden,  
Divide thy lips, than we are confident,  
When rank Theraites open his mastic jaws,  
We shall hear music, wit and oracle.

*Ulysses.* Troy, yet upon his basis, had been  
down,

And the great Hector's sword had lack'd a  
master,

But for these instances.

The specialty of rule hath been neglected:  
And, look, how many Grecian tents do stand  
Hollow upon this plain, so many hollow factions.

When that the general is not like the hive:  
To whom the foragers shall all repair,

What honey is expected! Degree being vi-  
sarded,

The unworthiest shows as fairly in the mask.  
The heavens themselves, the planets and this  
centre

Observe degree, priority and place,  
Instature, course, proportion, season, form,  
Office and custom, in all time of order;

And therefore is the glorious planet Sol  
In noble eminence enthroned and spher'd

Amidst the other; whose medicinal are

Corrects the ill aspects of planets evil  
And posts, like the commandment of a king,  
Sans check to good and bad: but when  
planets

in evil mixture to disorder wander,  
What plagues and what portents! what mutiny!  
What raging of the sea! shaking of earth!  
Commotion in the winds! frights, changes,  
horrors,

Divert and crack, rend and deracinate  
The unity and married calm of states  
Quite from their fixure! O, when degree is  
shak'd,

Which is the ladder to all high designs,  
The enterprise is sick! How could communities,  
Degrees in schools and brotherhoods in cities,  
Peaceful commerce from dividable shores,

The primogenitive and due of birth,  
Prerogative of age, crowns, sceptres, laurels,  
But by degree, stand in authentic place!  
Take but degree away, untune that string,  
And, hark, what discord follows! each thing  
meets

In mere oppugnancy: the bounded waters  
Should lift their bosoms higher than the shores  
And make a sop of all this solid globe:

Strength should be lord of imbecility,  
And the rude son should strike his father dead;  
Force should be right; or rather, right and  
wrong,

Between whose endless jar justice resides,  
Should lose their names, and so should justice  
too.

Then every thing includes itself in power,  
Power into will, will into appetite;

And appetite, an universal wolf,  
So doubly seconded with will and power,  
Must make perforce an universal prey,  
And last eat up himself. Great Agamemnon,  
This chace, when degree is suffocate,  
Follows the choking.

And this neglection of degree it is  
That by a pace goes backward, with a purpose  
It hath to climb. The general's disdain'd  
By him one step below, he by the next,

That next by him beneath; so every step,  
Exempl'd by the first pace that is sick  
Of his superior, grows to an envious fever  
Of pale and bloodless emulation:

And 'tis this fever that keeps Troy on foot,  
Not her own sinews. To end a tale of length,  
Troy in our weakness stands, not in her  
strength.

*Nest.* Most wisely hath Ulysses here dis-  
cover'd

The fever whereof all our power is sick.  
*Agam.* The nature of the sickness found,  
*Ulysses,*

What is the remedy?  
*Ulysses.* The great Achilles, whom opinion  
crowns

The sinew and the forehead of our host,  
Having his ear full of his airy fame,  
Grows dainty of his worth and in his  
Lies mocking our designs: with him

Upon a lazy bed the lily-liver'd day  
Breaks scanty fasts,

And with ridiculous and awkward action,

Which, slanderer, he imitation calls, 150  
 Hayagasts us. Sometime, great A  
 Thy topless deputation he puts on,  
 And, like a strutting player, whose conceits  
 Lies in his hamstring, and doth think it rich  
 To hear the wooden dialogue and sound  
 Twine his stretch'd footing and the scaffold.

He-bitied and o'er-wrested seeming  
 He sets thy greatness in: and when he speaks,  
 'Tis like a chime a-mending; with terms un-  
 squared,

Which, from the tongue of roaring Typhon  
 dropp'd, 160

Would seem hyperboles. At this fusty stuff  
 The large Achilles, on his press'd bed lolling,  
 From his deep chest laughs out a loud applause;  
 Cries 'Excellent! 'tis Agamemnon just.  
 Now play me Nestor; hem, and stroke thy  
 beard,

As he being drest to some oration.  
 That's done, as near as the extremest ends  
 Of parallels, as like as Vulcan and his wife:  
 Yet god Achilles still cries 'Excellent!

'Tis Nestor right. Now play him me, Patroclus,  
 Arming to answer in a night alarm. 171

And then, forsooth, the faint defects of age  
 Must be the scene of mirth; to cough and spit,  
 And, with a palsy-fumbling on his gorget,  
 Shake in and out the rivet: and at this sport  
 Sir Valour dies; cries 'O, enough, Patroclus;  
 Or give me ribs of steel! I shall split all  
 In pleasure of my spleen.' And in this fashion,  
 All our abilities, gifts, natures, shapes,  
 Severals and generals of grace enact, 180

Achievements, plots, orders, preventions,  
 Excitements to the field, or speech for truce,  
 Success or loss, what is or is not, serves  
 As stuff for these two to make paradoxes.

Nest. And in the imitation of these twin—  
 Who, as Ulysses says, opinion crowns  
 With an imperial voice—many are infect.

Ajax is grown self-will'd, and bears his head  
 In such a rein, in full as proud a place  
 As broad Achilles; keeps his tent like him; 190  
 Makes factious feasts; rails on our state of war,  
 Bold as an oracle, and sets Therites,  
 A slave whose gall coins slanders like a mint,  
 To match us in comparisons with dirt,  
 To weaken and discredit our exposure,  
 How rank never rounded in with danger.

Ulysses. They tax our policy, and call it cow-  
 ardice,

Count wisdom as no member of the war,  
 Forbearance and esteem no act 199  
 But that of hand; the still and mental parts,  
 That do consider how many hands shall strike,  
 When steers call them on, and know by  
 measure

Of their observant tell the enemies' weight,—  
 Why, this hath not a finger's dignity:

They call this best-work, masonry, closet-war;  
 Be that the ram that battens down the wall,  
 For the great swing and of his poise,  
 Or those that with the firmness of their souls  
 By reason guide his execution. 21

Nest. Let this be granted, and Achilles'  
 horse

Makes many Thetis' sons. [A trumpet.

Agam. What trumpet! look, Menelaus.  
 Men. From Troy.

Enter ÆNEAS.

Agam. What would you fore our tent?  
 Æne. Is this great Agamemnon's tent, I  
 pray you?

Agam. Even this.

Æne. May one, that is a herald and a prince,  
 Do a fair message to his kingly ears?

Agam. With surety stronger than Achilles'  
 arm 220

'Fore all the Greckish heads, which with one  
 voice

Call Agamemnon head and general.

Æne. Fair leave and large security. How  
 may

A stranger to those most imperial looks  
 Know them from eyes of other mortals? How!

Agam. Ay;

Æne. I ask, that I might waken reverence,  
 And bid the cheek be ready with a blush  
 Modest as morning when she coldly eyes  
 The youthful Phoebus: 230

Which is that god in office, guiding men?  
 Which is the high and mighty Agamemnon?

Agam. This Trojan scorns us; or the men  
 of Troy

Are ceremonious courtiers.

Æne. Courtiers as free, as debonaire, un-  
 arm'd,

As bending angels; that's their fame in peace:  
 But when they would seem soldiers, they have  
 galls,

Good arms, strong joints, true swords; and,  
 Jove's accord

Nothing so full of heart. But peace, Æneas,  
 Peace, Trojan; lay thy finger on thy lips! 240

The worthiness of praise dainties his worth,  
 If that the praised himself bring the praise  
 forth:

But what the repining enemy commends,  
 That breath fame blows; that praise, sole pure,  
 transcends.

Agam. Sir, you of Troy, call you yourself  
 Æneas?

Æne. Ay, Greek, that is my name.

Agam. What's your affair, I pray you?

Æne. Sir, pardon; 'tis for Agamemnon's  
 cars.

Agam. He hears nought privately that comes  
 from Troy.

Æne. Nor I from Troy come not to whisper  
 him: 250

I bring a trumpet to awake his ear,  
 To set his senses on the attentive bent,  
 And then to speak.

Agam. Speak frankly as the wind:  
 It is not Agamemnon's sleeping hour.

That thou shalt know, Trojan, he is awake.  
 He tells thee so himself.

Æne. Send thy brass voice  
 tents; 260

And every Greek of mettle, let him know,  
What Troy means fairly shall he spoke aloud.

[Trumpet sounds.]

We have, great Agamemnon, here in Troy 260  
A prince call'd Hector.—Priam is his father,—  
Who in this dull and long-continued truce  
Is rusty grown: he bade me take a trumpet,  
And to this purpose speak. Kings, princes,  
Lords!

If there be one among the fair'st of Greece  
That holds his honour higher than his ease,  
That seeks his praise more than he fears his  
peril,

That knows his valour, and knows not his fear,  
That loves his mistress more than in confession,  
With truant vows to her own lips he loves, 270  
And dare avow her beauty and her worth  
In other arms than hers,—to him this challenge.  
Hector, in view of Trojans and of Greeks,  
Shall make it good, or do his best to do it,  
He hath a lady, wiser, fairer, truer,

Than ever Greek did compass in his arms,  
And will to-morrow with his trumpet call  
Midway between your tents and walls of Troy,  
To rouse a Grecian that is true in love:  
If any come, Hector shall honour him; 280  
If none, he'll say in Troy when he retires,  
The Grecian daries are sunburnt and not worth  
The splinter of a lance. Even so much.

Agam. This shall be told our lovers, Lord  
Æneas!

If none of them have soul in such a kind,  
We left them all at home: but we are soldiers;  
And may that soldier a mere recreant prove,  
That means not, hath not, or is not in love!  
If then one is, or hath, or means to be,  
That one meets Hector; if none else, I am he.

Nest. Tell him of Nestor, one that was a  
man 291

When Hector's grandsire suck'd: he is old now;  
But if there be not in our Grecian host  
One noble man that hath one spark of fire,  
To answer for his love, tell him from me  
I'll hide my silver beard in a gold beaver  
And in my vanbraces put this wither'd brawn,  
And meeting him will tell him that my lady  
Was fairer than his grandam and as chaste  
As may be in the world: his youth in flood, 300  
I'll prove this truth with my three drops of  
blood.

Æne. Now heavens forbid such scarcity of  
youth!

Ulys. Amen.

Agam. Fair Lord Æneas, let me touch your  
hand;

To our pavilion shall I lead you, sir.  
Achilles shall have word of this intent;  
So shall each lord of Greece, from tent to tent:  
Yourself shall feast with us before you go  
And find the welcome of a noble foe.

[Exeunt all but Ulysses and Nestor.]

Ulys. Nestor!

Nest. What says Ulysses?

Ulys. I have a young conception in my  
brain;

Do you my time to bring it to some shape.

Nest. What is't?

Ulys. This is:

Bunt wedges give hard knots: the seeded peide  
That hath to this maturity blown up  
In rank Achilles must or now be crepp'd,  
Or, shedding, breed a nursery of like evil,  
To overbulk us all.

Nest. Well, and how? 320

Ulys. This challenge that the gallant Hector  
sends,

However it is spread in general name,  
Relates in purpose only to Achilles.

Nest. The purpose is pernicious even as  
substance,

Whose grossness little characters sum up:  
And, in the publication, makes no strain,

But that Achilles, were his brain as barren  
As banks of Libya,—though, Apollo known,

'Tis dry enough,—will, with great speed of  
judgement,

At, with celerity, find Hector's purpose 330  
Pointing on him.

Ulys. And wake him to the answer, think  
you?

Nest. Yes, 'tis most meet: whom may you  
else oppose.

That can from Hector bring his honour off,  
If not Achilles? Though't be a sportful  
combat,

Yet in the trial much opinion dwells;  
For here the Trojans taste our dear't repute  
With their finest palate: and trust to me,

Ulysses,

Our imputation shall be oddly poised  
In this wild action; for the success, 340

Although particular, shall give a scanting  
Of good or bad unto the general;

And in such indexes, although small prick'd  
To their subsequent volumes, there is seen  
The baby figure of the giant mass

Of things to come at large. It is supposed:  
He that meets Hector issues from our choice;

And choice, being mutual act of all our souls,  
Makes merit her election, and doth boil

As 'twere from forth us all, a man distill'd: 350  
Out of our virtues; who miscarrying,  
What heart receives from hence the conquering  
part.

To steel a strong opinion to themselves!  
Which entertain'd limbs are his instruments,  
In no less working than are swords and bows  
Directive by the limbs.

Ulys. Give pardon to my speech:

Therefore 'tis meet Achilles meet not Hector.  
Let us, like merchants, show our foulest wares,

And think, perchance, they'll sell; if not, 360  
The lustre of the better yet to show,  
Shall show the better. Do not consent  
That ever Hector and Achilles meet;

For both our honour and our shame in this  
Are dogg'd with two strange followers.

Nest. I see them not with any old eyes:  
what are they?

Ulys. What glory our Achilles shares with  
Hector,

Were he not proud, we all should share with  
him;

But he already is too insolent;  
And we were better punch in Aeneas' nose,  
Than in the pride and salt scorn of his eyes,

Should he 'scape Hector fair: if he were foil'd,  
Why then, we did our main opinion crush  
In faint of our best man. No, make a lottery;  
And, by device, let blockish Ajax draw  
The sort to fight with Hector: among ourselves  
Give him allowance for the better man;  
For that will physic the great Myrmidon  
Who broils in loud applause, and make him fall.

His crest that prouder than blue Iris bends. 380  
If the dull brainless Ajax come safe off,  
We'll dress him up in voices: if he fail,  
Yet go we under our opinion still  
That we have better men. But, hit or miss,  
Our project's life this shape of sense assumes:  
Ajax employ'd plucks down Achilles' plumes.

Ned. Ulysses,  
Now I begin to relish thy advice;  
And I will give a taste of it forthwith  
To Agamemnon: go we to him straight. 390  
Two curs shall tame each other: pride alone  
Must tarre the mastiffs on, as 'twere their bone.  
[Exeunt.]

## ACT II

## SCENE I. A part of the Grecian camp.

Enter AJAX and THERSITES.

Ajax. Thersites!  
Ther. Agamemnon, how if he had boils?  
full, all over, generally!

Ajax. Thersites!  
Ther. And those boils did run? say so: did  
not the general run then? were not that a  
botchy cure?

Ajax. Dog!  
Ther. Then would 'come some matter from  
him; I see none now. 40

Ajax. Thou bitch-wolf's son, canst thou not  
hear? [Beating him] Feel, then.

Ther. The plague of Greece upon thee, thou  
mongrel beef-witted lord!

Ajax. Speak then, thou vineweat leaven,  
speak: I will beat thee into handsomeness.

Ther. I shall sooner rail thee into wit and  
holiness: but, I think, thy horse will sooner  
con an oration than thou learn a prayer without  
book. Thou canst strike, canst thou? a red  
murrain o' thy jade's tricks! 41

Ajax. Toadsfoot, learn me the proclamation.  
Ther. Dost thou think I have no sense, thou  
strildest me thus?

Ajax. The proclamation!  
Ther. Thou art proclaimed a fool, I think.  
Ajax. Do not, serpentine, do not: my  
fingers itch.

Ther. I would thou didst itch from head to  
foot and I had the scratching of thee; I would  
make thee the loathsome scab in Greece.  
When thou art forth in the incursions, thou  
slinkest as slow as another.

Ajax. I say, the proclamation!  
Ther. Thou grumblest and raillest every hour  
on Achilles, and thou art as full of envy at his  
goodness as Calibanus is at Prosperina's beauty,  
saying then harlots at him.

Ajax. Mistrust Thersites!

Ther. Thou shouldst strike him. 40

Ajax. Cobloast!  
Ther. He would pun thee into shivers with  
his fist, as a sailor breaks a biscuit.

Ajax. [Beating him] You whoopson cur!

Ther. Do, do.

Ajax. Thou stool for a witch!

Ther. Ay, do, do; thou sudden-witted lord!  
thou hast no more brain than I have in mine  
elbows; an assinego may tutor thee: thou  
scurry-valiant ass! thou art here but to thrash  
Trojans; and thou art bought and sold among  
those of any wit, like a barbarian slave. If  
thou use to beat me, I will begin at thy heel,  
and tell what thou art by inches, thou thing of  
no bowels, thou!

Ajax. You dog!

Ther. You scurry lord!

Ajax. [Beating him] You cur!

Ther. Mars his idiot! do, rudeness; do,  
camel; do, do. 59

Enter ACHILLES and PATROCLUS.

Achil. Why, how now, Ajax! wherefore do  
you thus? How now, Thersites! what's the  
matter, man?

Ther. You see him there, do you?

Achil. Ay; what's the matter?

Ther. Nay, look upon him.

Achil. So I do: what's the matter?

Ther. Nay, but regard him well.

Achil. 'Well' why, I do so.

Ther. But yet you look not well upon him;  
for, whosoever you take him to be, he is Ajax.

Achil. I know that, fool.

Ther. Ay, but that fool knows not himself.

Ajax. Therefore I beat thee.

Ther. Lo, lo, lo, lo, what modicums of wit  
he utters! his evasions have ears thus long.  
I have bobbed his brain more than he has beat  
my bones: I will buy nine sparrows for a  
penny, and his pia mater is not worth the ninth  
part of a sparrow. This lord, Achilles, Ajax,  
who wears his wit in his belly and his guts  
in his head, I'll tell you what I say of him. 51

Achil. What?

Ther. I say, this Ajax—

[Ajax offers to beat him.]

Achil. Nay, good Ajax.

Ther. Has not so much wit—

Achil. Nay, I must hold you.

Ther. As will stop the eye of Helen's needle,  
for whom he comes to fight.

Achil. Peace, fool!

Ther. I would have peace and quietness,  
but the fool will not: he there: that he: look  
you there.

Ajax. O thou damned cur! I shall—

Achil. Will you set your wit to a fool's?

Ther. No, I warrant you; for a fool's will  
ashame it.

Patr. Good words, Thersites.

Achil. What's the quarrel?

Ajax. I bade the vile owl go learn me the  
tenour of the proclamation, and he rails upon  
me. 100

Ther. I serve thee not.

Ajax. Well, go to, go to.



*Ther.* I serve here voluntary.

*Achil.* Your last service was sufferance, 'twas not voluntary: no man is beaten voluntary: Ajax was here the voluntary, and you as under an impress.

*Ther.* E'en so: a great deal of your wit, too, lies in your sinews, or else there be liars. Hector shall have a great catch, if he knock out either of your brains: a' were as good crack a fusty nut with no kernel.

*Achil.* What, with me too, Thersites?

*Ther.* There's Ulysses and old Nestor, whose wit was mouldy ere your grandsires had nails on their toes, yoke you like draught-oxen and make you plough up the wars.

*Achil.* What, what?

*Ther.* Yes, good sooth: to, Achilles! to, Ajax! to!

*Ajax.* I shall cut out your tongue.

*Ther.* 'Tis no matter; I shall speak as much as thou afterwards.

*Patr.* No more words, Thersites; peace!

*Ther.* I will hold my peace when Achilles' brach bids me, shall I?

*Achil.* There's for you, Patroclus.

*Ther.* I will see you hanged, like cloppoles, ere I come any more to your tents: I will keep where there is wit stirring and leave the faction of fools.

*Patr.* A good riddance.

*Achil.* Marry, this, sir, is proclaim'd through all our host:

That Hector, by the fifth hour of the sun, Will with a trumpet 'twixt our tents and Troy To-morrow morning call some knight to arms That hath a stomach; and such a one that dare Maintain—I know not what: 'tis trash. Farewell.

*Ajax.* Farewell. Who shall answer him?

*Achil.* I know not: 'tis put to lottery; otherwise

He knew his man.

*Ajax.* O, meaning you. I will go learn more of it. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II. *Troy. A room in Priam's palace.*

Enter PRIAM, HECTOR, TROILUS, PARIS, and HELENUS.

*Pri.* After so many hours, lives, speeches spent,

Thus once again says Nestor from the Greeks:

'Deliver Helen, and all damage else—

As honour, loss of time, travail, expense,

Wounds, friends, and what else dear that is consumed

In hot digestion of this cormorant war—

Shall be struck off.' Hector, what say you to't?

*Hect.* Though no man lesser fears the Greeks than I

As far as toucheth my particular,

Yet, dread Priam,

There is no lady of more softer bowels,

More spongy to suck in the sense of fear,

More ready to cry out 'Who knows what follows!'

Than Hector is: the wound of peace is surety, Surety secure; but modest doubt is call'd

The beacon of the wise, the tent that searches To the bottom of the worst. Let Helen go: Since the first sword was drawn about this question,

Every tithe soul, 'mongst many thousand diames,

Hath been as dear as Helen; I mean, of ours:

If we have lost so many tenths of ours,

To guard a thing not ours nor worth to us,

Had it our name, the value of one ten,

What merit 's in that reason which denies

The yielding of her up?

*Tro.* Fie, fie, my brother!

Weigh you the worth and honour of a king

So great as our dread father in a scale

Of common ounces? will you with counters sum

The past proportion of his infinite?

And buckle in a waist most fathomless

With spans and inches so diminutive

As fears and reasons? fie, for godly shame!

*Hec.* No marvel, though you bite so sharp at reasons,

You are so empty of them. Should not our father

Dear the great sway of his affairs with reasons, Because your speech hath none that tells him so?

*Tro.* You are for dreams and slumbers, brother priest;

You fur your gloves with reason. Here are your reasons:

You know an enemy intends you harm;

You know a sword employ'd is perilous,

And reason flies the object of all harm:

Who marvels then, when Helenus beholds

A Grecian and his sword, if he do set

The very wings of reason to his heels

And fly like chidden Mercury from Jove, Or like a star disorb'd? Nay, if we talk of reason,

Let's shut our gates and sleep: manhood and honour

Should have hare-hearts, would they but fat their thoughts

With this cramm'd reason: reason and respect

Make livers pale and lustihood deject.

*Hec.* Brother, she is not worth what she doth cost

The holding.

*Tro.* What is aught, but as 'tis valued?

*Hec.* But value dwells not in particular will:

It holds his estimate and dignity

As well wherein 'tis precious of itself

As in the prizer: 'tis mad idolatry

To make the service greater than the god;

And the will dotes that is attributive

To what infectionally itself affects,

Without some image of the affected merit.

*Tro.* I take to-day a wife, and my election

Is led on in the conduct of my will:

My will enkindled by mine eyes and ears,

Two traded pilots 'twixt the dangerous shores

Of will and judgement: how may I avoid,

Although my will dictate what I should do,

The wife I choose? there can be no evasion To blench from this and to stand fast by honour:

We turn not back the silks upon the merchant,  
When we have sold'd them, nor the remainder  
stands 70

We do not throw in unrespective sieve,  
Because we now are full. It was thought meet  
Paris should do some vengeance on the Greeks:  
Your breath of full consent bellied his sails;  
The seas and winds, old wranglers, took a truce  
And did him service: he touch'd the ports  
desired,

And for an old aunt whom the Greeks held  
captive,  
He brought a Grecian queen, whose youth and  
freshness

Wrinkles Apollo's, and makes stale the morning.  
Why keep we her? the Grecians keep our aunt:  
Is she worth keeping? why, she is a pearl, 81  
Whose price hath launch'd above a thousand  
ships,

And turn'd crown'd kings to merchants.  
If you'll avouch 'twas wisdom Paris went—  
As you must needs, for you all cried 'Go, go, go,—  
If you'll confess he brought home noble prize—  
As you must needs, for you all clapp'd your  
hands,

And cried 'Inestimable!'—why do you now  
The issue of your proper wisdoms rate,  
And do a deed that fortune never did, 90  
Begar the estimation which you priz'd  
Richer than sea and land! O, theft most base,  
That we have stol'n what we do fear to keep!  
But, thieves, unworthy of a thing so stol'n,  
That in their country did them that disgrace,  
We fear to warrant in our native place!

Cas. [Within] Cry, Trojans, cry!  
Pri. What noise? what shriek is this?

Tro. 'Tis our mad sister, I do know her  
voice.

Cas. [Within] Cry, Trojans!

Hec. It is Cassandra. 100

Enter CASSANDRA, raving.

Cas. Cry, Trojans, cry! lend me ten thousand  
eyes.

And I will fill them with prophetic tears.

Hec. Peace, sister, peace!

Cas. Virgins and boys, mid-age and wrinkled  
old,

Soft infancy, that nothing canst but cry,  
Add to my clamours! let us pay betimes  
A moiety of that mass of moan to come.  
Cry, Trojans, cry! practise your eyes with  
tears!

Troy must not be, nor goodly Ilion stand;  
Our greivous brother, Paris, burns us all. 110  
Cry, Trojans, cry! a Helen and a woe:  
Cry, cry! Any burns, or else let Helen go.

[Exit.]  
Hec. Now, youthful Troilus, do not these  
signs move

Of divination in our sister work  
Some anguish of remorse? or is your blood  
So steady that it do not discern of reason,  
Nor fear of bad success in a bad cause,  
One quality the same?

Tro. What, brother Hector,  
We may not think the justices of each not  
Bad and no other than event doth form it, 120

Nor once deject the courage of our minds,  
Because Cassandra's mad: her brain-sick rap-  
tures

Cannot distaste the goodness of a  
Which hath our several honours all engaged  
To make it gracious. For my private part,  
I am no more touch'd than all Priam's sons:  
And Jove forbid there should be done amongst  
us

Such things as might offend the weakest spleen  
To fight for and maintain!

Per. Else might the world convince of  
levity 130

As well my undertakings as your counsels:  
But I attest the gods, your full consent  
Gave wings to my propension and cut off  
All fears attending on so dire a project.  
For what, alas, can these my single arms!  
What propugnator is in one man's valour,  
To stand the push and enmity of those  
This quarrel would excite? Yet, I protest,  
Were I alone to pass the difficulties  
And had as ample power as I have will, 140  
Paris should ne'er retract what he hath done,  
Nor faint in the pursuit.

Pri. Paris, you speak  
Like one beotted on your sweet delights:  
You have the honey still, but these the gall;  
So to be valiant is no praise at all.

Par. Sir, I propose not merely to myself  
The pleasures such a beauty brings with it;  
But I would have the soil of her fair rape  
Wiped off, in honourable keeping her.  
What treason were it to the ramack'd quern,  
Disgrace to your great worths and shame to  
me, 151

Now to deliver her possession up  
(in terms of base compulsion! Can it be  
That so degenerate a strain as this  
Should once set footing in your generous  
bowms!)

There's not the meanest spirit on our party  
Without a heart to dare or sword to draw  
When Helen is defended, nor none so noble  
Whose life were ill bestow'd or death unfam'd  
Where Helen is the subject; then, I say, 161  
Well may we fight for her whom we know well  
The world's large spaces cannot parallel.

Hec. Paris and Troilus, you have both said  
well.

And on the cause and question now in hand  
Have gloss'd, but superficially; not much  
Unlike young men, whom Aristotle thought  
Unfit to hear moral philosophy:  
The reasons you allege do more conduce  
To the hot passion of distemper'd blood  
Than to make up a free determination 170  
Twixt right and wrong, for pleasure and revenge  
Have ears more deaf than adders to the voice  
Of any true decision. Nature craves  
All dues be render'd to their owners; now,  
What nearer debt is in all humanity  
Than wife is to the husband? If this law  
Of nature be corrupted through affection,  
And that great rule of partial indignation  
To their benumb'd wills, quiet the same,  
There is a law in each well-order'd nation 180  
To curb those raging appetites that are

Most disobedient and refractory.  
 If Helen then be wife to Sparta's king,  
 As it is known she is, these moral laws  
 Of nature and of nations speak aloud  
 To have her back return'd: thus to persist  
 In doing wrong extenuates not wrong,  
 But makes it much more heavy. Hector's  
 opinion  
 Is this in way of truth: yet ne'ertheless,  
 My spritely brethren, I propend to you 190  
 In resolution to keep Helen still,  
 For 'tis a cause that hath no mean dependence  
 Upon our joint and several dignities.

*Tro.* Why, there you touch'd the life of our  
 design:

Were it not glory that we more affected  
 Than the performance of our heaving spleens,  
 I would not wish a drop of Trojan blood  
 Spent more in her defence. But, worthy Hector,  
 She is a theme of honour and renown,  
 A spur to valiant and magnanimous deeds, 200  
 Whose present courage may beat down our foes,  
 And fame in time to come canonize us;  
 For, I presume, brave Hector would not lose  
 So rich advantage of a promised glory  
 As smiles upon the forehead of this action  
 For the wide world's revenue.

*Hec.* I am yours,  
 You valiant offspring of great Priamus.  
 I have a roisting challenge sent amongst  
 The dull and factious nobles of the Greeks  
 Will strike amazement to their drowsy spirits:  
 I was advertised their great general slept, 211  
 Whilst emulation in the army crept:  
 This, I presume, will wake him. [Exit.

SCENE III. *The Grecian camp. Before  
 Achilles' tent.*

*Enter THESSITES, solus.*

*Ther.* How now, Thersites! what, lost in the  
 labyrinth of thy fury! Shall the elephant Ajax  
 carry it thus? he beats me, and I rail at him:  
 O, worthy satisfaction! would it were otherwise;  
 that I could beat him, whilst he railed at me.  
 'Stood, I'll learn to conjure and raise devils, but  
 I'll see some issue of my spiteful execrations.  
 Then there's Achilles, a rare engineer! If Troy  
 be not taken till these two undermine it, the  
 walls will stand till they fall of themselves. O  
 thou great thunder-darter of Olympus, forget  
 that thou art Jove, the king of gods, and  
 Mercury, lose all the serpentine craft of thy  
 caduceus, if ye take not that little little less  
 than little wit from them that they have! which  
 short-armed ignorance itself knows is so abund-  
 ant scarce, it will not in circumvention deliver  
 a fly from a spider, without drawing their many  
 irons and cutting the web. After this, the  
 vengeance on the whole camp! or rather, the  
 louse-ache! for that, methinks, is the curse  
 dependant on those that war for a placket. I  
 have said my prayers and devil Envy say Amen.  
 What ho! my Lord Achilles!

*Enter PATROCLUS.*

*Patr.* Who's there? Thersites! Good Ther-  
 sites, come in and rail.

*Ther.* If I could have remembered a gilt  
 counterfeits, thou wouldst not have slipped out  
 of my contemplation: but it is no matter;  
 thyself upon thyself! The common curse of  
 mankind, folly and ignorance, be thine in great  
 revenue! heaven bless thee from a tutor, and  
 discipline come not near thee! Let thy blood be  
 thy direction till thy death! then if she that  
 lays thee out says thou art a fair corpse, I'll be  
 sworn and sworn upon't she never shrouded  
 any but lazars. Amen. Where's Achilles!

*Patr.* What, art thou devout? wast thou in  
 prayer?

*Ther.* Ay: the heavens hear me! 40

*Enter* ACHILLES.

*Achil.* Who's there?

*Patr.* Thersites, my lord.

*Achil.* Where, where? Art thou come!  
 why, my cheese, my digestion, why hast thou  
 not served thyself in to my table so many  
 meals? Come, what's Agamemnon?

*Ther.* Thy commander, Achilles. Then tell  
 me, Patroclus, what's Achilles?

*Patr.* Thy lord, Thersites: then tell me, I  
 pray thee, what's thyself? 50

*Ther.* Thy knower, Patroclus: then tell me,  
 Patroclus, what art thou?

*Patr.* Thou mayst tell that knowest.

*Achil.* O, tell, tell.

*Ther.* I'll decline the whole question. Aga-  
 memnon commands Achilles; Achilles is my  
 lord; I am Patroclus' knower, and Patroclus  
 is a fool.

*Patr.* You rascal!

*Ther.* Peace, fool! I have not done. 60

*Achil.* He is a privileged man. Proceed,  
 Thersites.

*Ther.* Agamemnon is a fool; Achilles is a  
 fool; Thersites is a fool, and, as aforesaid,  
 Patroclus is a fool.

*Achil.* Derive this; come.

*Ther.* Agamemnon is a fool to offer to  
 command Achilles; Achilles is a fool to be  
 commanded of Agamemnon; Thersites is a  
 fool to serve such a fool, and Patroclus is a fool  
 positive. 70

*Patr.* Why am I a fool?

*Ther.* Make that demand of the priest. It  
 suffices me thou art. Look you, who comes  
 here!

*Achil.* Patroclus, I'll speak with nobody.  
 Come in with me, Thersites. [Exit.

*Ther.* Here is such patchery, such juggling  
 and such knavery! all the argument is a cuckold  
 and a whore; a good quarrel to draw curious  
 factions and bleed to death upon. Now, this  
 dry serpio on the subject! and war and beauty  
 confound all!

*Enter* AGAMEMNON, ULYSSES, NESTOR,  
 DIOMEDES, and AJAX.

*Agam.* Where is Achilles?

*Patr.* Within his tent; but ill disposed, my  
 lord.

*Agam.* Let it be known to him that we are  
 here.

He shall bear messages; and we'll be by

# TROILUS AND CRESSIDA

[ACT II

Our appointments, visiting of him :  
Let him be told so ; lest perchance he think  
We dare not move the question of our place,  
Or know not what we are.

*Patr.* I shall say so to him. [*Exit.*]

*Ulyss.* We saw him at the opening of his  
tent :

He is not sick.

*Ajax.* Yes, lion-sick, sick of proud heart :  
you may call it melancholy, if you will favour  
the man ; but, by my head, 'tis pride : but why,  
why ! let him show us the cause. A word, my  
lord. [*Takes Agamemnon aside*]

*Nest.* What moves Ajax thus to bay at him ?

*Ulyss.* Achilles hath inveigled his fool from  
him.

*Nest.* Who, Thersites !

*Ulyss.* He.

*Nest.* Then will Ajax lack matter, if he have  
lost his argument.

*Ulyss.* No, you see, he is his argument that  
has his argument, Achilles.

*Nest.* All the better ; their faction is more  
our wish than their faction : but it was a strong  
composure a fool could disunite.

*Ulyss.* The amity that wisdom knits not,  
folly may easily untie. Here comes Patroclus.

*Re-enter PATROCLUS.*

*Nest.* No Achilles with him.

*Ulyss.* The elephant hath joints, but none  
for courtesy : his legs are legs for necessity, not  
for leisure.

*Patr.* Achilles bids me say, he is much  
sorry,

If any thing more than your sport and pleasure  
Did move your greatness and this noble state  
To call upon him ; he hopes it is no other :  
But for your health and your digestion sake,  
An after-dinner's breath.

*Agam.* Hear you, Patroclus :  
We are too well acquainted with these answers :  
But his evasion, wing'd thus swift with scorn,  
Cannot outfly our apprehensions.

Much attribute he hath, and much the reason  
Why we ascribe it to him ; yet all his virtues,  
Not virtuously on his own part beheld,  
Do in our eyes begin to lose their gloss.  
Yea, like fair fruit in an unwholesome dish,  
Are like to rot untasted. Go and tell him,  
We come to speak with him ; and you shall  
not sin.

If you do say we think him over-proud  
And under-honest, in self-assumption greater  
Than in the note of judgement ; and worthier  
than himself.

How tend the savage strangeness he puts on,  
Disguise the holy strength of their command,  
And underwrite in an observing kind  
His humorous predominance ; yea, watch  
His peevish humours, his ebbs, his flows, as if

The passage and whole carriage of this action  
were on his tide. Go tell him this, and add,  
If he overhold his price so much,  
None of him ; but let him, like an engine  
spectable, lie under this report :

(action either, this cannot go to war :  
; and we do allowance give

Before a sleeping giant.' Tell him so.

*Patr.* I shall ; and bring his answer presently.

*Agam.* In second voice we'll not be satisfied ;  
We come to speak with him. *Ulysses* enter  
you.

*Ajax.* What is he more than another ?

*Agam.* No more than what he thinks he is.  
*Ajax.* Is he so much ? Do you not think  
he thinks himself a better man than I am ?

*Agam.* No question.

*Ajax.* Will you subscribe his thought, and  
say he is ?

*Agam.* No, noble Ajax ; you are as strong,  
as valiant, as wise, no less noble, much more  
gentle, and altogether more tractable.

*Ajax.* Why should a man be proud ? How  
doth pride grow ? I know not what pride is.

*Agam.* Your mind is the clearer, Ajax, and  
your virtues the fairer. He that is proud sets  
up himself ; pride is his own glass, his own  
trumpet, his own chronicle ; and whatever  
praises itself but in the deed, devours the deed  
in the praise.

*Ajax.* I do hate a proud man, as I hate the  
engendering of toads.

*Nest.* Yet he loves himself : is't not strange ?  
[*Aside.*]

*Re-enter ULYSSES.*

*Ulyss.* Achilles will not to the field to-  
morrow.

*Agam.* What's his excuse ?

*Ulyss.* He doth rely on none,  
But carries on the stream of his dispose  
Without observance or respect of any,  
In will peculiar and in self-admission.

*Agam.* Why will he not upon our fair re-  
quest

Untent his person and share the air with us ?

*Ulyss.* Things small as nothing, for request's  
sake only.

He makes important : possess'd he is with  
greatness.

And speaks not to himself but with a pride  
That quarrels at self-breath : imagined worth  
Holds in his blood such swain and not discourse  
That 'twixt his mental and his active parts  
Kingdom'd Achilles in communion rages  
And batters down himself : what should I say !  
He is so plagu'd proud that the death-tokens  
of it.

Cry 'No recovery.'

*Agam.* Let Ajax go to him.

Dear lord, go you and greet him in his tent :  
'Tis said he holds you well, and will be led :  
At your request a little from himself.

*Ulyss.* O Agamemnon, let it not be so !  
We'll consecrate the steps that Ajax makes  
When they go from Achilles : shall the proud  
lord

That bastes his arrogance with his own seem  
And never suffers matter of the world  
Enter his thoughts, save such as do revolve  
And ruminates himself, shall be worshipp'd  
Of that we hold an idol more than he !  
No, this thrice worthy and right valiant lord  
Must not so stale his pains, newly acquired ;

Nor, by my will, amubjugate his merit,

As amply titled as Achilles is,

By going to Achilles:

That were to enlarge his fat already pride

And add more coals to Cancer when he burns

With entertaining great Hyperion.

This lord go to him! Jupiter forbid,

And say in thunder 'Achilles go to him.'

*Nest.* [Aside to *Dio.*] O, this is well; he  
rubs the vein of him. 210

*Dio.* [Aside to *Nest.*] And how his silence  
drinks up this applause!

*Ajax.* If I go to him, with my armed fist

I'll push him o'er the face.

*Agam.* O, no, you shall not go.

*Ajax.* An a' be proud with me, I'll pheeze  
his pride:

Let me go to him.

*Ulyss.* Not for the worth that hangs upon  
our quarrel.

*Ajax.* A paltry, insolent fellow!

*Nest.* How he describes himself!

*Ajax.* Can he not be sociable? 220

*Ulyss.* The raven chides blackness.

*Ajax.* I'll let his humours blood.

*Agam.* He will be the physician that should  
be the patient.

*Ajax.* An all men were o' my mind,—

*Ulyss.* Wit would be out of fashion,

*Ajax.* A' should not bear it so, a' should  
eat swords first: shall pride carry it?

*Nest.* An' would, you 'ld carry half.

*Ulyss.* A' would have ten shares. 230

*Ajax.* I will knead him; I'll make him  
supple.

*Nest.* He's not yet through warm: force  
him with praises: pour in, pour in; his ambition  
is dry.

*Ulyss.* [To *Agam.*] My lord, you feed too  
much on this dislike.

*Nest.* Our noble general, do not do so.

*Dio.* You must prepare to fight without  
Achilles.

*Ulyss.* Why, 'tis this naming of him does  
him harm.

Here is a man—but 'tis before his face; 240  
I will be silent.

*Nest.* Wherefore should you so?

He is not emulous, as Achilles is.

*Ulyss.* Know the whole world, he is as  
valiant.

*Ajax.* A whoreson dog, that shall palter  
thus with us!

Would he were a Trojan!

*Nest.* What a vice were it in Ajax now,—

*Ulyss.* If he were proud,—

*Dio.* Or covetous of praise,—

*Ulyss.* Ay, or surly borne,—

*Dio.* Or strange, or self-affected! 250

*Ulyss.* Thank the heavens, lord, thou art of  
sweet composure;

Praise him that got thee, she that gave thee  
suck:

Famed be thy tutor, and thy parts of nature

Thrice famed, beyond all erudition:

But he that disciplined thy arms to fight,

Let Mars divide eternity in twain,

And give him half: and, for thy vigour,

Bull-bearing Milo his addition yield

To sinewy Ajax. I will not praise thy wisdom,

Which, like a bourn, a pale, a shore, confines

Thy spacious and dilated parts: here's Nestor;

Instructed by the antiquary times,

He must, he is, he cannot but be wise:

But pardon, father Nestor, were your days

As green as Ajax' and your brain so temper'd,

You should not have the eminence of him,

But be as Ajax.

*Ajax.* Shall I call you father?

*Nest.* Ay, my good son.

*Dio.* Be ruled by him, Lord Ajax.

*Ulyss.* There is no tarrying here; the hart

Achilles

Keeps thicket. Please it our great general 260

To call together all his state of war;

Fresh kings are come to Troy: to-morrow

We must with all our main of power stand fast:

And here's a lord,—come knights from east to

west.

And cull their flower, Ajax shall cope the best.

*Agam.* Go we to council. Let Achilles

sleep:

Light boats sail swift, though greater hulks

draw deep. [Exeunt.]

## ACT III

## SCENE I. Troy. Priam's palace.

Enter a Servant and PANDARUS.

*Pan.* Friend, you! pray you, a word: do  
not you follow the young Lord Paris!

*Serv.* Ay, sir, when he goes before me.

*Pan.* You depend upon him, I mean?

*Serv.* Sir, I do depend upon the lord.

*Pan.* You depend upon a noble gentleman;

I must needs praise him.

*Serv.* The lord be praised!

*Pan.* You know me, do you not?

*Serv.* Faith, sir, superficially. 270

*Pan.* Friend, know me better; I am the  
Lord Pandarus.

*Serv.* I hope I shall know your honour  
better.

*Pan.* I do desire it.

*Serv.* You are in the state of grace.

*Pan.* Grace! not so, friend: home- and  
lordship are my titles. [Music within.]

music is this?

*Serv.* I do but partly know, sir: it is music  
in parts. 280

*Pan.* Know you the musicians?

*Serv.* Wholly, sir.

*Pan.* Who play they to?

*Serv.* To the hearers, sir.

*Pan.* At whose pleasure, friend?

*Serv.* At mine, sir, and theirs that love music.

*Pan.* Command, I mean, friend.

*Serv.* Who shall I command, sir?

*Pan.* Friend, we understand not one-an-

other: I am too courtly and thou art too  
cunning. At whose request do these men play?

*Serv.* That's to't indeed, sir: marry, at  
the request of Paris my lord, who's a slave in

person; with him, the martial Venus, the heart-  
blood of beauty, love's invisible god.

*Pan.* Who, my cousin Cressida?

*Serv.* No, sir, Helen: could you not find out that by her attributes?

*Pan.* It should seem, fellow, that thou hast not seen the Lady Cressida. I come to speak with Paris from the Prince Troilus: I will make a complimentary assault upon him, for my business saith so.

*Serv.* Sudden business! there's a stewed phrase indeed!

*Enter PARIS and HELEN, attended.*

*Pan.* Fair be to you, my lord, and to all this fair company! fair desires, in all fair measure, fairly guide them! especially to you, fair queen! fair thoughts be your fair pillow!

*Helen.* Dear lord, you are full of fair words.

*Pan.* You speak your fair pleasure, sweet queen. Fair prince, here is good broken music.

*Par.* You have broke it, cousin: and, by my life, you shall make it whole again; you shall piece it out with a piece of your performance. Well, he is full of harmony.

*Pan.* Truly, lady, no.

*Helen.* O, sir,—

*Pan.* Rude, in sooth; in good sooth, very rude.

*Par.* Well said, my lord! well, you say so in fits.

*Pan.* I have business to my lord, dear queen. My lord, will you vouchsafe me a word?

*Helen.* Nay, this shall not hedge us out: we'll hear you sing, certainly.

*Pan.* Well, sweet queen, you are pleasant with me. But, marry, thus, my lord: my dear lord and most esteemed friend, your brother Troilus,—

*Helen.* My Lord Pandarus; honey-sweet lord,—

*Pan.* Go to, sweet queen, go to:—commends himself most affectionately to you,—

*Helen.* You shall not bob us out of our melody: if you do, our melancholy upon your head!

*Pan.* Sweet queen, sweet queen! that's a sweet queen, I faith.

*Helen.* And to make a sweet lady sad is a sour offence.

*Pan.* Nay, that shall not serve your turn; that shall it not, in truth, la. Nay, I care not for such words; no, no. And, my lord, he desires you, that if the king call for him at supper, you will make his excuse.

*Helen.* My Lord Pandarus,—

*Pan.* What says my sweet queen, my very sweet queen?

*Par.* What exploit's in hand? where sup's he to-night?

*Helen.* Nay, but, my lord,—

*Pan.* What says my sweet queen? My cousin will fall out with you. You must not know where he sup's.

*Par.* I'll lay my life, with my disposer Cressida.

*Pan.* No, no, no such matter; you are wide: your disposer is sick.

*Par.* Well, I'll make excuse.

*Pan.* Ay, good my lord. Why should you not excuse? no, your poor disposer's sick.

*Par.* I lay.

*Pan.* You spy! what do you spy? Come, give me an instrument. Now, sweet queen.

*Helen.* Why, this is kindly done.

*Pan.* My niece is horribly in love with a thing you have, sweet queen.

*Helen.* She shall have it, my lord, if it be not my lord Paris.

*Pan.* He! no, she'll none of ; they two are twain.

*Helen.* Falling in, after fall out, may make them three.

*Pan.* Come, come, I'll hear more of this; I'll sing you a song now.

*Helen.* Ay, ay, prithee now. By my troth, sweet lord, thou hast a fine fo:

*Pan.* Ay, you may, you may.

*Helen.* Let thy song be love: this love will undo us all. O Cupid, Cupid, Cupid!

*Pan.* Love! ay, that it shall, I faith.

*Par.* Ay, good now, love, love, nothing but love.

*Pan.* In good troth, it begins so. [Sings.]

Love, love, nothing but love, still more!

For, O, love a bow

Shoots buck and doe:

The shaft confounds,

Not that it wounds,

But tickles still the sore.

These lovers cry Oh! oh! they die!

Yet that which seems the wound to kill,

Doth turn oh! oh! to ha! ha! he!

So dying love lives still:

Oh! oh! a while, but ha! ha! ha!

Oh! oh! groans out for ha! ha! ha!

Heigh-ho!

*Helen.* In love, I faith, to the very tip of the nose.

*Par.* He eats nothing but doves, love, and that breeds hot blood, and hot blood begets hot thoughts, and hot thoughts beget hot deeds, and hot deeds is love.

*Pan.* Is this the generation of love? ho blood, hot thoughts, and hot deeds? Why they are vipers: is love a generation of viper? Sweet lord, who's a field to-day!

armed to-day, but my men would not move so. How chance my brother Troilus went not?

*Helen.* He hangs the lip at something: you know all, Lord Pandarus.

*Pan.* Not I, honey-sweet queen. I long to hear how they sped to-day. You'll remember your brother's excuse?

*Par.* To a hair.

*Pan.* Farewell, sweet queen.

*Helen.* Commend me to your niece.

*Pan.* I will, sweet queen. [Exit.]

[A retreat sounded.]

*Par.* They're come from field: let us to Priam's hall,

To greet the warriors. Sweet Helen, I must woo you

To help unarm our Hector: his stubborn brother, With these your white enchanting fingers

touch'd,

Shall more obey than to the edge of steel

Or force of Greekish sinners: you shall do more

Than all the island kings,—disarm great Hector.

*Helen.* 'Twill make us proud to be his servant, Paris;

Yes, what he shall receive of us in duty  
Gives us more palm in beauty than we have,  
Yes, overshines himself.

*Par.* Sweet, above thought I love thee. 171  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *The same. Pandarus' orchard.*

*Enter PANDARUS and TROLLUS' Boy, meeting.*

*Par.* How now! where's thy master? at my cousin Cressida's?

*Boy.* No, sir; he stays for you to conduct him thither.

*Par.* O, here he comes.

*Enter TROLLUS.*

How now, how now!

*Tro.* Sirrah, walk off. [Exit Boy.]

*Par.* Have you seen my cousin?

*Tro.* No, Pandarus: I stalk about her door,  
Like a strange soul upon the Stygian banks  
Staying for waftage. O, be thou my Charon,  
And give me swift transference to those fields  
Where I may wallow in the lily-beds  
Proposed for the deserving! O gentle Pandarus,  
From Cupid's shoulder pluck his painted wings,  
And fly with me to Cressid!

*Par.* Walk here 't the orchard, I'll bring her straight. [Exit.]

*Tro.* I am giddy; expectation whirls me round.

The imaginary relish is so sweet  
That it enchants my sense: what will it be,  
When that the watery palate tastes indeed  
Love's thrice repured nectar? death, I fear me,  
Swimming destruction, or some joy too fine,  
Too subtle-potent, tuned too sharp in sweetness,  
For the capacity of my ruder powers:  
I fear it much; and I do fear besides,  
That I shall lose distinction in my joys;  
As doth a battle, when they charge on heaps  
The enemy flying.

*Re-enter PANDARUS.*

*Par.* She's making her ready, she'll come straight: you must be witty now. She does so blush, and fetches her wind so short, as if she were trayed with a sprite: I'll fetch her. It is the prettiest villain: she fetches her breath as short as a new-taken sparrow. [Exit.]

*Tro.* Even such a passion doth embrace my bosom:

My heart beats thicker than a feverous pulse;  
And all my powers do their bestowing lose,  
Like vassalage at unawares encountering  
The eye of majesty.

*Re-enter PANDARUS with CRESSIDA.*

*Par.* Come, come, what need you blush? shame's a baby. Here she is now: swear the oaths now to her that you have sworn to me. What, are you gone again? you must be watched ere you be made tame, must you! Come your ways, come your ways! we'll put you 't the it

speck to her? Come, draw this curtain, and let's see your picture. Alas the day, how loath you are to offend daylight! an 'twere dark, you'd close sooner. So, so; rub on, and kiss the mistress. How now! a kiss in fee-farm! build there, carpenter; the air is sweet. Nay, you shall fight your hearts out ere I part you. The falcon as the turtle, for all the ducks! the river: go to, go to.

*Tro.* You have bereft me of all words, lady.

*Par.* Words pay no debts, give her deeds: but she'll bereave you o' the deeds too, if she call your activity in question. What, billing again? Here's 'In witness whereof the parties interchangeably'—Come in, come in: I'll go get a fire. [Exit.]

*Cres.* Will you walk in, my lord?

*Tro.* O Cressida, how often have I wished me thus!

*Cres.* Wished, my lord! The gods grant,—O my lord!

*Tro.* What should they grant? what makes this pretty abruption? What too curious dreg espies my sweet lady in the fountain of our love?

*Cres.* More dregs than water, if my fears have eyes.

*Tro.* Fears make devils of cherubins; they never see truly.

*Cres.* Blind fear, that seeing reason leads, finds safer footing than blind reason stumbling without fear: to fear the worst oft cures the worse.

*Tro.* O, let my lady apprehend no fear: in all Cupid's pageant there is presented no monster.

*Cres.* Nor nothing monstrous neither!

*Tro.* Nothing, but our undertakings; when we vow to weep, we live in fire, eat rocks, tame tigers; thinking it harder for our mistress to devise imposition enough than for us to undergo any difficulty imposed. This is the monstruosity in love, lady, that the will is infinite and the execution confined, that the desire is boundless and the act a slave to limit.

*Cres.* They say all lovers swear more performance than they are able and yet reserve an ability that they never perform, vowing more than the perfection of ten and discharging less than the tenth part of one. They that have the voice of lions and the act of hares, are they not monsters?

*Tro.* Are there such? such are not we: praise us as we are tasted, allow us as we prove; our head shall go bare till merit crown it: no perfection in reversion shall have a praise in present: we will not name desert before his birth, and, being born, his addition shall be humble. Few words to fair faith: Trollus shall be such to Cressid as what envy can say worst shall be a mock for his truth, and what truth can speak truest not truer than Trollus.

*Cres.* Will you walk in, my lord?

*Re-enter PANDARUS.*

*Par.* What, blushing still? have you not done talking yet?

*Cres.* Well, uncle, what folly I commit, I dedicate to you.

*Pan.* I thank you for that: if my lord get a boy of you, you'll give him me. Be true to my lord: if he flinch, chide me for it.

*Tro.* You know now your hostages; your uncle's word and my firm faith.

*Pan.* Nay, I'll give my word for her too: our kindred, though they be long ere they are wooed, they are constant being won: they are buns, I can tell you; they'll stick where they are thrown.

*Cres.* Boldness comes to me now, and brings me heart.

*Prince Troilus*, I have loved you night and day for many weary months.

*Tro.* Why was my Cressid then so hard to win!

*Cres.* Hard to seem won: but I was won, my lord,

With the first glance that ever—pardon me—

If I confess much, you will play the tyrant.

I love you now; but not, till now, so much.

But I might master it: in faith, I lie;

My thoughts were like unbridled children,

Too headstrong for their mother. See, we fools!

Why have I blabb'd! who shall be true to us,

When we are so unsecret to ourselves?

But, though I loved you well, I woo'd you not:

And yet, good faith, I wish'd myself a man,

Or that we women had men's privilege

Of speaking first. Sweet, bid me hold my tongue,

For in this rapture I shall surely speak

The thing I shall repent. See, see, your silence,

Cunning in dumbness, from my weakness

draws

My very soul of counsel! stop my mouth.

*Tro.* And shall, albeit sweet music issues

thence.

*Pan.* Pretty, I' faith.

*Cres.* My lord, I do beseech you, pardon me:

'Twas not my purpose, thus to beg a kiss:

I am ashamed. O heavens! what have I done?

For this time will I take my leave, my lord.

*Tro.* Your leave, sweet Cressid!

*Pan.* Leave! an you take leave till to-morrow morning.

*Cres.* Pray you, content you.

*Tro.* What offends you, lady?

*Cres.* Sir, mine own company.

*Tro.* You cannot shun

yourself.

*Cres.* Let me go and try:

I have a kind of self resides with you;

But an unkind self, that itself will leave,

To be another's fool. I would be gone:

Where is my wit? I know not what I speak.

*Tro.* Well know they what they speak that

speak so wisely.

*Cres.* Perchance, my lord, I show more craft

than love;

And tell so roundly to a large confession,

To make for your thoughts; but you are wise,

Or else you love not, for to be wise and love

Exceeds man's might; that dwells with gods above.

*Tro.* O that I thought it could be in a woman—

As, if it can, I will presume in you—

To feed for aye her lamp and flames of love;

To keep her constancy in plight and youth,

Outliving beauty's outward, with a mind

That doth renew swifter than blood decays!

Or that persuasion could but thus convince

me,

That my integrity and truth to you

Might be affronted with the match and weight

Of such a winnow'd purity in love;

How were I then uplifted! but, alas!

I am as true as truth's simplicity

And simpler than the infancy of truth.

*Cres.* In that I'll war with you.

*Tro.* O virtuous fight,

When right with right wars who shall be more

right!

True swains in love shall in the world to come

Approve their truths by Troilus: when their

rhythms,

Full of protest, of oath and big compare,

Want similes, truth tired with iteration,

As true as steel, as plantage to the moon,

As sun to day, as turtle to her mate,

As iron to adamant, as earth to the centre,

Yet, after all comparisons of truth,

As truth's authentic author to be cited,

'As true as Troilus' shall crown up the verse,

And sanctify the numbers.

*Cres.* Prophet may you be!

If I be false, or swerve a hair from truth,

When time is old and hath forgot itself,

When waterdrops have worn the stones of

Troy,

And blind oblivion swallow'd cities up,

And mighty states characterless are grated

to dusty nothing, yet let memory,

From false to false, among false maids in love,

Upbraid my falsehood! when they've said 'as

false

As air, as water, wind, or sandy earth,

As fox to lamb, as wolf to heifer's calf,

Pard to the hind, or stepdame to her son,

'Yes,' let them say, to stick the heart of false-

hood,

'As false as Cressid.'

*Pan.* Go to, a bargain made: seal it, seal it:

I'll be the witness. Here I hold your hand,

here my cousin's. If ever you prove false one

to another, since I have taken such pains to

bring you together, let all pitiful goons-between

be called to the world's end and after my name:

call them all Pandars; let all constant men be

Troilus, all false women Cressids, and all

brokers-between Pandars! say, amen.

*Tro.* Amen.

*Cres.* Amen.

*Pan.* Amen. Whereupon I will show you

a chamber with a bed; which bed, because it

shall not speak of your pretty encounters, from

it to death: away!

And Cupid grant all tongue-tied maidens here

Bed, chamber, Pandar to provide this year!



SCENE III. *The Grecian camp. Before Achilles' tent.*

*Enter AGAMEMNON, ULYSSES, DIOMEDES, NESTOR, AJAX, MENELAUS, and CALCHAS.*

*Cal.* Now, princes, for the service I have done you,

The advantage of the time prompts me aloud  
To call for recompense. Appear it to your mind

† That, through the sight I bear in things to love.

I have abandon'd Troy, left my possession,  
Incurr'd a traitor's name; exposed myself,  
From certain and possess'd conveniences,  
To doubtful fortunes; sequestering from me all  
That time, acquaintance, custom and condition  
Made tame and most familiar to my nature, 10  
And here, to do you service, am become  
As new into the world, strange, unacquainted:  
I do beseech you, as in way of taste,  
To give me now a little benefit,  
Out of those many register'd in promise,  
Which, you say, live to come in my behalf.

*Agam.* What wouldst thou of us, Trojan?  
make demand.

*Cal.* You have a Trojan prisoner, call'd  
Antenor,

Yesterday took: Troy holds him very dear.  
† Ift have you—often have you thanks therefore—  
Desired my Cressid in right great exchange, 20  
Whom Troy hath still denied: but this Antenor,  
I know, is such a wrest in their affairs  
That their negotiations all must slack,  
Waiting his manage; and they will almost  
Give us a prince of blood, a son of Priam,  
In change of him: let him be sent, great  
prince,

And he shall buy my daughter; and her  
presence

Shall quite strike off all service I have done,  
In most accepted pain.

*Agam.* Let Diomedes bear him, 30  
And bring us Cressid hither: Calchas shall have  
What he requests of us. Good Diomed,  
Furnish you fairly for this interchange:  
Withal bring word if Hector will to-morrow  
Be answer'd in his challenge: Ajax is ready.

*Dio.* This shall I undertake; and 'tis a  
burden

Which I am proud to bear.

*[Exeunt Diomedes and Calchas.]*

*Enter ACHILLES and PATROCLUS, before  
their tent.*

*Ulys.* Achilles stands 't the entrance of his  
tent:

† Please it our general to pass strangely by him,  
As if he were forgot; and, princes all, 40

Lay negligent and loose regard upon him:  
I will come last. 'Tis like he'll question me

Why such unpleasing eyes are bent on him:  
If so, I have derision medicinable,

To use between your strangeness and his pride,  
Which his own will shall have desire to drink:

It may do good: pride hath no other glass  
To show itself but pride, for supple knees

Feed arrogance and are the proud man's fees.

*Agam.* We'll execute your purpose, and  
put on

A form of strangeness as we pass along:  
So do each lord, and either greet him not,

Or else disdainfully, which shall shake him  
more

Than if not look'd on. I will lead the way.

*Achil.* What, comes the general to speak  
with me?

You know my mind, I'll fight no more 'gainst  
Troy.

*Agam.* What says Achilles? would he aught  
with us?

*Nest.* Would you, my lord, aught with the  
general?

*Achil.* No.

*Nest.* Nothing, my lord.

*Agam.* The letter.

*[Exeunt Agamemnon and Nestor.]*

*Achil.* Good day, good day.

*Men.* How do you? how do you? *[Exit.]*

*Achil.* What, does the cuckold scorn me?

*Ajax.* How now, Patroclus!

*Achil.* Good morrow, Ajax.

*Ajax.* Ha?

*Achil.* Good morrow.

*Ajax.* Ay, and good next day too. *[Exit.]*

*Achil.* What mean these fellows? Know  
they not Achilles?

*Patr.* They pass by strangely: they were  
used to bend,

To send their smiles before them to Achilles;

To come as humbly as they used to creep

To holy altars.

*Achil.* What, am I poor of late?

'Tis certain, greatness, once fall'n out with  
fortune,

Must fall out with men too: what the declined is  
He shall as soon read in the eyes of others

As feel in his own fall; for men, like butterflies,  
Show not their mealy wings but to the summer,

And not a man, for being simply man, 80  
Hath any honour, but honour for those honours

That are without him, as place, riches, favour,  
Prizes of accident as oft as merit:

Which when they fall, as being slippery shadders,  
The love that lean'd on them as slippery too,

Do one pluck down another and together  
Die in the fall. But 'tis not so with me:

Fortune and I are friends: I do enjoy  
At ample point all that I did possess,

Save these men's looks; who do, methinks, 90  
find out

Something not worth in me such rich beholding  
As they have often given. Here is Ulysses:

I'll interrupt his reading.

How now, Ulysses!

*Ulys.* Now, great Thetis' son!

*Achil.* What are you reading?

*Ulys.* A strange fellow here  
Writes me: 'That man, how dearly ever parted,

How much in having, or without or in,  
Cannot make boast to have that which he hath,

Nor feels not what he owns, but by possession;  
As when his virtues shining upon others 100  
Heat them and they seek that heat again  
To the first giver.'

*Achil.* This is not strange, Ulysses.  
The beauty that is borne here in the face  
The bearer knows not, but commends itself  
To others' eyes; nor doth the eye itself,  
That most pure spirit of sense, behold itself,  
Not going from itself; but eye to eye opposed  
Salutes each other with each other's form;  
For speculation turns not to itself.  
Till it hath travell'd and is mirror'd there 110  
Where it may see itself. This is not strange at  
all.

*Ulyss.* I do not strain at the position.—  
It is familiar,—but at the author's drift;  
Who, in his circumstance, expressly proves  
That no man is the lord of any thing,  
Though in and of him there be much consisting,  
Till he communicate his parts to others;  
Nor doth he of himself know them for aught  
Till he behold them form'd in the applause  
Where they're extended; who, like an arch,  
reverberates 120

The voice again, or, like a gate of steel  
Fronting the sun, receives and renders back  
His figure and his heat. I was much wrapt in  
this;

And apprehended here immediately  
The unknown Ajax.  
Heavens, what a man is there! a very horse,  
That has he knows not what. Nature, what  
things there are  
Most object in regard and dear in use!  
What things again most dear in the esteem  
And poor in worth! Now shall we see to-  
morrow— 130

An act that very chance doth throw upon him—  
Ajax renown'd. O heavens, what some men do,  
While some men leave to do!  
How some men creep in skittish fortune's hall,  
While others play the idiots in her eyes!  
How one man eats into another's pride,  
While pride is fasting in his wantonness!  
To see these Grecian lords!—why, even already  
They clap the lubber Ajax on the shoulder,  
As if his foot were on brave Hector's breast 140  
And great Troy shrieking.

*Achil.* I do believe it; for they pass'd by me  
As misers do by beggars, neither gave to me  
Good word nor look: what, are my deeds  
forgot?

*Ulyss.* Time hath, my lord, a wallet at his  
back,

Wherein he puts aims for oblivion,  
A great-sized monster of ingratitude:  
Those scraps are good deeds past; which are  
devour'd 150

As fast as they are made, forgot as soon  
As done: penceverance, dear my lord,  
Keeps honour bright: to have done is to hang  
Quite out of fashion, like a rusty mail  
In monumental mockery. Take the instant  
way;

For honour travels in a suit so narrow,  
Where one but goes ahead: keep then the  
path;

The multitude hath a thousand sons  
That upon one parent: if you give way,  
Others will tread the direct path you  
leave: all enter'd tide, they all rush by

And leave you hindmost: 160  
Or, like a gallant horse fall'n in first rank,  
Lie there for pavement to the abject rear,  
O'er-run and trampled on: show what they do  
in present.

Though less than yours in past, must o'er-top  
yours;  
For time is like a fashionable ha—  
That slightly shakes his parting guest by the  
hand,  
And with his arms outstretch'd, as he would fly,  
Grasps in the corner: welcome even smiles,  
And farewell goes out sighing. O, let not  
virtue seek

Remuneration for the thing it was; 170  
For beauty, wit,  
High birth, vigour of bone, desert in service,  
Love, friendship, charity, are subjects all  
To envious and calumniating time.  
One touch of nature makes the whole world kin,  
That all with one consent praise new-born  
gawds,

Though they are made and moulded of things  
past,

And give to dust that is a little gift  
More laud than gift o'er-dusted.  
The present eye praises the present object: 180  
Then marvel not, thou great and complete man,  
That all the Greeks begin to worship Ajax;  
Since things in motion sooner catch the eye  
Than what not stirs. The cry went once on thee,  
And still it might, and yet it may again,  
If thou wouldst not entomb thyself alive  
And case thy reputation in thy tent;  
Whose glorious deeds, but in these fields of  
late,

Made emulous missions 'mongst the gods them-  
selves

And drove great Mars to faction.

*Achil.* Of this my privacy 190  
I have strong reasons.

*Ulyss.* But 'gainst your privacy  
The reasons are more potent and heroic:  
'Tis known, Achilles, that you are in love  
With one of Priam's daughters.

*Achil.* Ha! known! 200

*Ulyss.* Is that a wonder?  
The providence that's in a watchful state  
Knows almost every grain of Plutus' gold,  
Finds bottom in the uncomprehensive deeps,  
Keeps place with thought and almost, like the  
gods,

Does thoughts unveil in their dumb cradles. 210  
There is a mystery—with whom relation  
Durst never meddle—in the soul of state;  
Which hath an operation more divine  
Than breath or pen can give expression to:  
All the commerce that you have had with Troy  
As perfectly is ours as yours, my lord;  
And better would it fit Achilles much  
To throw down Hector than Polyxenus:  
But it must grieve young Pyrrhus now at home.  
When fame shall in our islands sound her  
trump,

And all the Greekish girls shall tripping sing,  
Great Hector's sister did Achilles win.  
But our great Ajax heavily hath shewn him.  
Farewell, my lord; I am your lover's speak:

The fool slides o'er the ice that you should break.

*Exit.*  
*Patr.* To this effect, Achilles, have I moved you:

A woman impudent and mannish grown  
Is not more loathed than an effeminate man  
In time of action. I stand condemn'd for this;  
They think my little stomach to the war  
And your great love to me restrains you thus:  
Sweet, rouse yourself; and the weak wanton

*Cupid*

Shall from your neck unlodge his amorous fold,  
And, like a dew-drop from the lion's mane,  
Be shook to air.

*Achil.* Shall Ajax fight with Hector?

*Patr.* Ay, and perhaps receive much honour by him.

*Achil.* I see my reputation is at stake;  
My fame is shrewdly gored.

*Patr.* O, then, beware;  
Those wounds heal ill that men do give themselves:

Omission to do what is necessary  
Seals a commission to a blank of danger;  
And danger, like an ague, subtly taints  
Even then when we sit idly in the sun.

*Achil.* Go call Therites hither, sweet Patroclus:

I'll send the fool to Ajax and desire him  
To invite the Trojan lords after the combat  
To see us here unarm'd: I have a woman's  
longing.

An appetite that I am sick withal.  
To see great Hector in his weeds of peace,  
To talk with him and to behold his visage,  
Even to my full of view.

*Enter THERITES.*

A labour saved!

*Ther.* A wonder!

*Achil.* What?

*Ther.* Ajax goes up and down the field,  
asking for himself.

*Achil.* How so?

*Ther.* He must fight singly to-morrow with  
Hector, and is so prophetically proud of an  
heroical cudgelling that he raves in saying  
nothing.

*Achil.* How can that be?

*Ther.* Why, he stalks up and down like a  
peacock,—a stride and a stand; ruminates like  
an hostess that hath no arithmetic but her  
brain to set down her reckoning; bites his lip  
with a politic regard, as who should say 'There  
were wit in this head, an 'twould out;' and  
so there is, but it lies as coldly in him as fire  
in a flint, which will not show without knock-  
ing. The man's undone for ever; for if Hector  
break not his neck i' the combat, he'll break 't  
himself in vain-glory. He knows not me: I  
said 'Good morrow, Ajax;' and he replies  
'Thanks, Agamemnon.' What think you of  
this man that takes me for the general? He's  
grown a very land-fish, languid, a promoter.  
A plague of opinion! a man may wear it on  
both sides, like a leather jerkin.

*Achil.* Thou must be my  
him, Therites.

*Ther.* Who, I? why, he'll answer nobody;  
he professes not answering; speaking is for  
beggars; he wears his tongue in a armo. I will  
put on his presence: let Patroclus make de-  
mands to me, you shall see the payment of  
Ajax.

*Achil.* To him, Patroclus: tell him I humbly  
desire the valiant Ajax to invite the most  
valorous Hector to come unarmed to my tent,  
and to procure safe-conduct for his person of  
the magnanimous and most illustrious six-or-  
seven-times-honoured captain-general of the  
Grecian army, Agamemnon, et cetera. Do  
this.

*Patr.* Jove bless great Ajax!

*Ther.* Hum!

*Patr.* I come from the worthy Achilles,—

*Ther.* Ha!

*Patr.* Who most humbly desires you to  
invite Hector to his tent,—

*Ther.* Hum!

*Patr.* And to procure safe-conduct from  
Agamemnon.

*Ther.* Agamemnon!

*Patr.* Ay, my lord.

*Ther.* Ha!

*Patr.* What say you to 't?

*Ther.* God b' w' you, with all my heart.

*Patr.* Your answer, sir.

*Ther.* If to-morrow be a fair day, by eleven  
o'clock it will go one way or other: however,  
he shall pay for me ere he has me.

*Patr.* Your answer, sir.

*Ther.* Fare you well, with all my heart.

*Achil.* Why, but he is not in this tune,  
is he?

*Ther.* No, but he's out o' time thus. What  
music will be in him when Hector has knocked  
out his brains, I know not; but, I am sure,  
none, unless the fiddler Apollo get his staves  
to make eatings on.

*Achil.* Come, thou shalt bear a letter to him  
straight.

*Ther.* Let me bear another to his horse; for  
that's the more capable creature.

*Achil.* My mind is troubled, like a fountain  
stirr'd:

And I myself see not the bottom of it.

[*Exit Achilles and Patroclus.*]

*Ther.* Would the fountain of your mind  
were clear again, that I might water an ass at  
it! I had rather be a tick in a sheep than such  
a valiant ignorance.

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. Troy. A street.

*Enter, from one side, ENTHA, and Servants  
with a torch; from the other, PARIS, DE-  
PHOBUS, ANTEOR, DIOMEDES, and others,  
with torches.*

*Par.* See, ho! who is that there?

*Des.* It is the Lord.

*Ant.* Is the prince there in person?

*Had I so good occasion to lie long*

*As you, Prince Paris, nothing but*

*business.*

Should rob my bed-mate of my company.

*Dia.* That's my mind too. Good morrow,  
Lord *Aeneas*.

*Par.* A valiant Greek, *Aeneas*,—take his  
hand,—

Witness the process of your speech, wherein  
You told how Diomed, a whole week by days,  
Did haunt you in the field.

*Ane.* Health to you, valiant sir, 10  
During all question of the gentle truce;

But when I meet you arm'd, as black defiance  
As heart can think or courage execute.

*Dia.* The one and other Diomed embraces.  
Our bloods are now in calm; and, so long,  
health!

But when contention and occasion meet,

By Jove, I'll play the hunter for thy life

With all my force, pursuit and policy.

*Ane.* And thou shalt hunt a lion, that  
will fly

With his face backward. In humane gentle-

—Welcome to Troy! now, by Anchises' life,

Welcome, indeed! By Venus' hand I swear,

No man alive can love in such a sort

The thing he means to kill more excellently.

*Dia.* We sympathise: Jove, let *Aeneas* live,

If to my sword his fate be not the glory,

A thousand complete courses of the sun!

But, in mine emulous honour, let him die,

With every joint a wound, and that to-morrow!

*Ane.* We know each other well. 30

*Dia.* We do; and long to know each other  
worse.

*Par.* This is the most spiteful gentle

greeting.

The noblest hateful love, that e'er I heard of.

What business, lord, so early?

*Ane.* I was sent for to the king; but why,

I know not.

*Par.* His purpose meets you: 'twas to bring

this Greek

To Calchas' house, and there to render him,

For the entf'red Antenor, the fair Cressid:

Let's have your company, or, if you please,

Haste there before us: I constantly do think—

Or rather, call my thought a certain know-  
ledge— 41

My brother Troilus lodges there to-night:

Rowse him and give him note of our approach,

With the whole quality wherefore: I fear

We shall be much unwelcome.

*Ane.* That I assure you:

Troilus had rather Troy were borne to Greece

Than Cressid borne from Troy.

*Par.* There is no help;

The bitter disposition of the time

Will have it so. On, lord; we'll follow you.

*Ane.* Good morrow, all. 50

[*Exit with Servant.*]

*Par.* And tell me, noble Diomed, faith, tell

me true,

What in the soul of sound good-fellowship,

What in your thoughts, merits fair Helen best,

Moment or Momentary?

*Dia.* Both alike:

It seems well to have her, that doth seek her,

Not making any scruple of her actions,

With such a hell of pain and world of charge,  
And you as well to keep her, that defend her,  
Not palating the taste of her dishonour.

With such a costly loss of wealth and friends:

He, like a puling cuckold, would drink up 61

The lees and dregs of a flat tainted piece;

You, like a lecher, out of whorish loins

Are pleased to breed out your inheritors:

Both merits poised, each weighs nor less nor

more;

But he as he, the heavier for a whore.

*Par.* You are too bitter to your country-

woman.

*Dia.* She's bitter to her country: bear me,

Paris:

For every false drop in her bawdy veins

A Grecian's life hath sunk; for every scruple

Of her contaminated carrion weight,

A Trojan hath been slain: since she could

speak,

She hath not given so many good words breath

As for her Greeks and Trojans suffer'd death.

*Par.* Fair Diomed, you do as chapmen do,

Dispraise the thing that you desire to buy:

But we in silence hold this virtue well.

We'll but commend what we intend to sell.

Here lies our way. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. The same. Court of Pandarus'

house.

*Enter TROILUS and CRESSIDA.*

*Tro.* Dear, trouble not yourself; the morn

is cold.

*Cres.* Then, sweet my lord, I'll call mine

uncle down;

He shall unbolt the gates.

*Tro.* Trouble him not;

To bed, to bed: sleep kill those pretty eyes,

And give as soft attachment to thy senses

As infants' empty of all thought!

*Cres.* Good morrow, then.

*Tro.* I prithee now, to bed.

*Cres.* Are you a-weary of me!

*Tro.* O Cressida! but that the busy day,

Waked by the lark, hath roused the ribald

crows,

And dreaming night will hide our joys no

longer, 10

I would not from thee.

*Cres.* Night hath been too brief.

*Tro.* Beshrew the witch! with venomous

wights she stays

As tediously as hell, but flies the grapple of love

With wings more momentary-swift than

thought.

You will catch cold, and curse me.

*Cres.* Prithee, tarry:

You men will never tarry.

O foolish Cressid! I might have still held off,

And then you would have tarried. Hark!

there's one up.

*Par.* [*Within.*] What, 's all the doors open

here?

*Tro.* It is your uncle.

*Cres.* A penitence on him! now will he be

mocking:

I shall have such a life!

*Enter PANDARUS.*

*Pan.* How now, how now! how go maiden-heads? Here, you maid! where's my cousin Cressid!

*Cres.* Go hang yourself, you naughty mocking uncle!

You bring me to do, and then you flout me too.

*Pan.* To do what! to do what! let her say what: what have I brought you to do?

*Cres.* Come, come, beshrew your heart! you'll ne'er be good, 30

Nor suffer others.

*Pan.* Ha, ha! Alas, poor wretch! ah, poor capocchia! hast not slept to-night? would he not, a naughty man, let it sleep! a bugbear take him!

*Cres.* Did not I tell you? Would he were knock'd! the head! [*Knocking within.*]

Who's that at door! good uncle, go and sec.

My lord, come you again into my chamber:

You smile and mock me, as if I meant naughtily.

*Tro.* Ha, ha! 39

*Cres.* Come, you are deceived, I think of no such thing. [*Knocking within.*]

How earnestly they knock! Pray you, come in: I would not for half Troy have you seen here.

[*Exeunt Troilus and Cressida.*]

*Pan.* Who's there! what's the matter! will you heat down the door! How now! what's the matter!

*Enter ÆNEAS.*

*Æne.* Good morrow, lord, good morrow.

*Pan.* Who's there! my Lord Æneas! By my troth,

I knew you not: what news with you so early!

*Æne.* Is not Prince Troilus here?

*Pan.* Here! what should he do here! 50

*Æne.* Come, he is here, my lord; do not deny him;

It doth import him much to speak with me.

*Pan.* Is he here, say you? 'tis more than I know, I'll be sworn: for my own part, I came in late.

What should he do here!

*Æne.* Who!—nay, then: come, come, you'll do him wrong ere you're ware: you'll be so true to him, to be false to him: do not you know of him, but yet go fetch him hither; go.

*Re-enter TROILUS.*

*Tro.* How now! what's the matter! 60

*Æne.* My lord, I scarce have leisure to salute you,

My matter is so rash: there is at hand Paris your brother, and Deiphobus, The Grecian Diomed, and our Antenor Deliver'd to us; and for him forthwith, Ere the first sacrifice, within this hour, We must give up to Diomedes' hand The Lady Cressida.

*Tro.* Is it so concluded!

*Æne.* By Priam and the general state of Troy:

They are at hand and ready to effect it.

*Tro.* How my achievements mock me! I will go meet them: and, my Lord Æneas,

We met by chance; you did not find me here.

*Æne.* Good, good, my lord; the secrets of nature

Have not more gift in taciturnity.

[*Exeunt Troilus and Æneas.*]

*Pan.* Is't possible! no sooner got but lost!

The devil take Antenor! the young prince will

go mad; a plague upon Antenor! I would they

had broke's neck!

*Re-enter CRESSIDA.*

*Cres.* How now! what's the matter! who was here! 81

*Pan.* Ah, ah!

*Cres.* Why sigh you so profoundly! where's my lord! gone! Tell me, sweet uncle, what's the matter!

*Pan.* Would I were as deep under the earth

as I am above!

*Cres.* O the gods! what's the matter!

*Pan.* Prithce, get thee in: would thou hadst

ne'er been born! I knew thou wouldst be his

death. O, poor gentleman! A plague upon

Antenor!

*Cres.* Good uncle, I beseech you, on my

knees I beseech you, what's the matter!

*Pan.* Thou must be gone, wench, thou must

be gone; thou art changed for Antenor: thou

must to thy father, and be gone from Troilus:

'twill be his death; 'twill be his bane; he can-

not bear it.

*Cres.* O you immortal gods! I will not go.

*Pan.* Thou must. 101

*Cres.* I will not, uncle: I have forgot my

father;

I know no touch of consanguinity;

No kin, no love, no blood, no soul so near me

As the sweet Troilus. O you gods divine!

Make Cressid's name the very crown of false-

hood,

If ever she leave Troilus! Time, force, and

death,

Do to this body what extremes you can;

But the strong base and building of my love

Is as the very centre of the earth, 110

Drawing all things to it. I'll go in and weep.

*Pan.* Do, do.

*Cres.* Tear my bright hair and scratch my

prais'd cheeks,

Crack my clear voice with sobs and break my

heart

With sounding Troilus. I will not go from

Troy. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. The same. Street before Pandarus' house.

*Enter PARIS, TROILUS, ÆNEAS, DEIPHOBUS, ANTENOR, and DIOMEDES.*

*Par.* It is great morning, and the hour

prof'd

Of her delivery to this valiant Greek

Comes fast upon. Good my brother Troilus,

Tell you the lady what she is to do,

And haste her to the purpose.

*Tro.* Walk into her house;

I'll bring her to the Grecian presently:  
And to his hand when I deliver her,  
Think it an altar, and thy brother Troilus  
A priest there offering to it his own heart.

[Exit.

*Par.* I know what 'tis to love;  
And would, as I shall pity, I could help!  
Please you walk in, my lords. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV. *The same. Pandarus' house.*

*Enter PANDARUS and CRESSIDA.*

*Par.* Be moderate, be moderate.

*Cres.* Why tell you me of moderation?  
The grief is fine, full, perfect, that I taste,  
And violentest in a sense as strong  
As that which causeth it: how can I moderate  
It?

If I could temporise with my affection,  
Or brew it to a weak and colder palate,  
The like allayment could I give my grief:  
My love admits no qualifying dross;  
No more my grief, in such a precious loss.

*Par.* Hens, here, here he comes.

*Enter TROILUS.*

Ah, sweet ducks!

*Cres.* O Troilus! Troilus! [Embracing him.

*Par.* What a pair of spectacles is here!  
Let me embrace too. 'O heart,' as the goodly  
saying is,

—O heart, heavy heart,  
Why sigh'st thou without breaking?

where he answers again,  
'Because thou canst not ease thy smart  
By friendship nor by speaking.'

There was never a truer rhyme. Let us cast  
away nothing, for we may live to have need of  
such a verse: we see it, we see it. How now,  
lamb!

*Tro.* Cressid, I love thee in so strain'd a  
purity,  
That the bless'd gods, as angry with my fancy,  
More bright in seal than the devotion which  
Cold lips blow to their deities, take thee from me.

*Cres.* Have the gods envy?

*Par.* Ay, ay, ay, ay: 'tis too plain a case.

*Cres.* And is it true that I must go from  
Troy?

*Tro.* A hateful truth.

*Cres.* What, and from Troilus too?

*Tro.* From Troy and Troilus.

*Cres.* Is it possible?

*Tro.* And suddenly: where injury of chance  
Puts back leave-taking, justles roughly by  
All time of pause, rudely beguiles our lips  
Of all rejoinders, forcibly prevents

Our look'd embraces, strangles our dear vows  
Even in the birth of our own labouring breath:  
We two, that with so many thousand sighs  
Do press each other, must poorly sell ourselves

—in rude levity and discharge of one  
Injurious time now with a robber's haste

—Ourselves, he that's delivery up, he knows not how:  
As heavy funeral as he goes in heaven,  
With his own hands and crown'd knees to

He fumbles up into a loose adieu,  
And scants us with a single furnish'd kiss,  
Distasted with the salt of broken tears.

*Ans.* [Within.] My lord, is the lady ready?

*Tro.* Mark! you are call'd: some say the

Genius so

Cries 'come' to him that instantly must die.  
Bid them have patience; she shall come anon.

*Par.* Where are my tears? rain, to lay this  
wind, or my heart will be blown up by the root.

[Exit.

*Cres.* I must then to the Grecians?

*Tro.* No remedy.

*Cres.* A woful Cressid 'mongst the merry  
Greeks!

When shall we see again?

*Tro.* Hear me, my love: be thou but true  
of heart,—

*Cres.* I true! how now! what wicked deem  
is this?

*Tro.* Nay, we must use expostulation kindly,  
For it is parting from us:

I speak not 'be thou true,' as fearing thee,  
For I will throw my glove to Death himself.

That there's no maculation in thy heart:  
But 'be thou true,' say I, to fashion in

My sequent protestation: be thou true,  
And I will see thee.

*Cres.* O, you shall be exposed, my lord, to  
dangers

As infinite as imminent! but I'll be true.

*Tro.* And I'll grow friend with danger.

Wear this sleeve.

*Cres.* And you this glove. When shall I  
see you?

*Tro.* I will corrupt the Grecian sentinels,  
To give thee nightly visitation.

But yet be true.

*Cres.* O heavens! 'be true' again!

*Tro.* Hear why I speak it, love:  
The Grecian youths are full of quality;

They're loving, well composed with gifts of  
nature,

Flowing and swelling o'er with arts and ex-  
ercise:

How novelty may move, and parts with person,  
Alas, a kind of godly jealousy—

Which, I beseech you, call a virtuous sin—  
Makes me afraid.

*Cres.* O heavens! you love me not.

*Tro.* Die I a villain, then!

In this I do not call your faith in question  
So mainly as my merit: I cannot sing,

Nor heal the high revolt, nor sweeten talk,  
Nor play at subtle games; fair virtues all,

To which the Grecians are most prompt and  
pregnant:

But I can tell that in each grace of these  
There lurks a still and dumb-discourte devil

That tempts most cunningly: but he not  
tempted.

*Cres.* Do you think I will?

*Tro.* No.

But something may be done that we will not:  
And sometimes we are devils to ourselves.

When we will tempt the frailty of our powers,  
Presuming on their changeful potency.

*Ans.* [Within.] My lord, good my lord,

*Tro.* Come, kiss; and let us part. 300  
*Par.* [With aine] Brother Troilus!

*Tro.* Good brother, come you hither;  
 And bring Æneas and the Grecian with you.

*Cres.* My lord, will you be true!

*Tro.* Who, I! alas, it is my vice, my fault:  
 Whilst others fish with craft for great opinion,  
 I with great truth catch more simplicity;  
 Whilst some with cunning gild their copper  
 crowns,  
 With truth and plainness I do wear mine bare.  
 Fear not my truth: the moral of my wit  
 is 'plain and true'; there's all the reach of it.

*Enter ÆNEAS, PARIS, ANTEOR, DEIPHOBUS,  
 and DIOMEDES.*

Welcome, Sir Diomed! here is the lady 111  
 Which for Antenor we deliver you:  
 At the port, lord, I'll give her to thy hand;  
 And by the way possess thee what she is.  
 Entreat her fair; and, by my soul, fair Greek,  
 If e'er thou stand at mercy of my sword,  
 Name Cressid, and thy life shall be as safe  
 As Priam is in Ilium.

*Dio.* Fair Lady Cressid,  
 So please you, save the thanks this prince  
 expects:

The lustre in your eye, heaven in your cheek,  
 Leads your fair usage; and to Diomed 117  
 You shall be mistress, and command him  
 wholly.

*Tro.* Grecian, thou dost not use me cour-  
 teously.

To shame the zeal of my petition to thee  
 In praising her: I tell thee, lord of Greece,  
 She is as far high-scoring o'er thy praises  
 As thou unworthy to be call'd her servant.  
 I charge thee use her well, even for my charge;  
 For, by the dreadful Pluto, if thou dost not,  
 Though the great bulk Achilles be thy guard,  
 I'll cut thy throat.

*Dio.* O, be not moved, Prince Troilus:  
 Let me be privileged by my place and message,  
 To be a speaker free; when I am hence,  
 I'll answer to my lust: and know you, lord,  
 I'll nothing do on charge: to her own worth  
 She shall be prized; but that you say 'be't so,'  
 I'll speak it in my spirit and honour, 'no.'

*Tro.* Come, to the port. I'll tell thee,  
 Diomed,  
 This brave shall oft make thee to hide thy  
 head.

*120* give me your hand, and, as we walk, 120  
 To our own selves bend we our needful talk.  
*[Æneas, Troilus, Cressida, and Diomedes.*  
*Re-enter Troilus, Cressida, and Diomedes.* *[Trumpet within.]*

*Par.* Hark! Hector's trumpet.

*Æne.* How have we spent this morning!  
 The prince must think me tardy and remiss,  
 That swore to ride before him to the field.

*Par.* 'Tis Troilus' fault: come, come, to  
 field with him.

*Des.* Let us make ready straight.

*Æne.* Yes, with a bridegroom's fire.

Let us address to tend on Hector's heels:  
 The glory of our Troy doth this day lie 129  
 On his fair worth and single chivalry. *[Alarum.*

SCENE V. *The Grecian camp. Lists set out.*

*Enter AJAX, armed; AGAMEMNON, ACHIL-  
 LES, PATROCLUS, MENELAUS, ULYSSES,  
 NESTOR, and others.*

*Agam.* Here art thou in appointment fresh  
 and fair,  
 Anticipating time with starting courage.  
 Give with thy trumpet a loud note to Troy,  
 Thou dreadful Ajax; that the appalled air  
 May pierce the head of the great combatant  
 And hale him hither.

*Ajax.* Thou, trumpet, there's my purse.  
 Now crack thy lungs, and split thy brazen pipe:  
 Blow, villain, till thy spher'd bias cheek  
 Outswell the colic of puff'd Aquilon:  
 Come, stretch thy chest, and let thy eyes spout  
 blood:

Thou blow'st for Hector. *[Trumpet sounds.]*

*Ulyss.* No trumpet answers.

*Achil.* 'Tis but early days,  
*Agam.* Is not yond Diomed, with Calchas'  
 daughter?

*Ulyss.* 'Tis he, I ken the manner of his gait;  
 He rises on the toe: that spirit of his  
 In aspiration lifts him from the earth.

*Enter DIOMEDES, with CRESSIDA.*

*Agam.* Is this the Lady Cressid?

*Dio.* Even she.

*Agam.* Most dearly welcome to the Greeks,  
 sweet lady.

*Nest.* Our general doth salute you with a  
 kiss.

*Ulyss.* Yet is the kindness but particular;

'Twere better she were kiss'd in general. 127  
*Nest.* And very courtly counsel: I'll begin.

So much for Nestor.

*Achil.* I'll take that winter from your lips,  
 fair lady:

Achilles bids you welcome.

*Men.* I had good argument for kissing thee.

*Patr.* But that's no argument for kissing  
 now;

For thus popp'd Paris in his handiment,  
 And parted thus you and your argument.

*Ulyss.* O deadly gail, and theme of all our  
 scorn! 130

For which we lose our heads to gild his haire.

*Patr.* The first was Mountebank him; this,  
 mine:

Patroclus kisses you.

*Men.* O, this is trim!

*Patr.* Paris and I kiss evenmore for him.

*Men.* I'll have my kiss, sir. Lady, by your  
 leave.

*Cres.* In kissing, do you render or receive?

*Patr.* Both take and give.

*Cres.* I'll make my match to him,  
 The kiss you take is better than you give:

Therefore no kiss.

*Men.* I'll give you boot, I'll give you thanks  
 for one.

*Cres.* You're an odd man; give once, or  
 give none.

*Men.* An odd man, lady! every man is odd.

*Cres.* No, Paris is not; for you know 'tis true,  
That you are odd, and he is even with you.

*Men.* You fillip me o' the head.

*Cres.* No, I'll be sworn.

*Ulyss.* It were no match, your nail against

May I, sweet lady, beg a kiss of you?

*Cres.* You may.

*Ulyss.* I do desire it.

*Cres.* Why, beg, then.

*Ulyss.* Why then for Venus' sake, give me a kiss.

When Helen is a maid again, and his.

*Cres.* I am your debtor, claim it when 'tis due.

*Ulyss.* Never's my day, and then a kiss of you.

*Dio.* Lady, a word: I'll bring you to your father. *[Exit with Cressida.]*

*Nest.* A woman of quick sense.

*Ulyss.* Fie, fie upon her!  
There's language in her eye, her cheek, her lip,  
Nay, her foot speaks; her wanton spirits look out

At every joint and motive of her body.  
O, these encounters, so glib of tongue,  
That give accosting welcome ere it comes,  
And wide unclasp the tables of their thoughts  
To every ticklish reader! set them down  
For sluttish spoils of opportunity  
And daughters of the game. *[Trumpet within.]*

*All.* The Trojans' trumpet.

*Agam.* Yonder comes the troop.

*Enter HECTOR, armed; ÆNEAS, TROIILUS, and other Trojans, with Attendants.*

*Æne.* Hail, all you state of Greece! what shall be done

To him that victory commands! or do you purpose

A victor shall be known! will you the knights

Shall to the edge of all extremity

Pursue each other, or shall be divided

By any voice or order of the field? 70

*Hector* bids ask.

*Agam.* Which way would Hector have it?

*Æne.* He cares not; he'll obey conditions.

*Achil.* 'Tis done like Hector; but securely done.

A Hele proudly, and great deal misprizing  
The knight opposed.

*Æne.* If not Achilles, sir,

What is your name?

*Achil.* If not Achilles, nothing.

*Æne.* Therefore Achilles: but, what'er, know this:

In the extremity of great and little,  
Valour and pride excel themselves in Hector;

The one almost as infinite as all,  
The other blank as nothing. Weigh him well,

And that which looks like pride is courtesy.

This Ajax is half made of Hector's blood:

In love whereof, half Hector stays at home;

Half heart, half hand, half Hector comes to seek.

This blunder knight, half Trojan and half Greek.

*Achil.* A maiden battle, then! O, I perceive you.

*Re-enter DIOMEDES.*

*Agam.* Here is Sir Diomed. Go, gentle knight,

Stand by our Ajax: as you and I, Æneas 90

Consent upon the order of their flight,  
So be it; either to the uttermost.

Or else a breath: the combatants bring kin  
Half stints their strife before it is stroken

begin. *[Ajax and Hector exit, the lists.]*

*Ulyss.* They are opposed already.

*Agam.* What Trojan is that same that looks so heavy?

*Ulyss.* The youngest son of Priam, a true knight.

Not yet mature, yet matchless, firm of word,  
Speaking in deeds and deedless in his tongue;

Not soon provoked nor being provoked soon calm'd:

His heart and hand both open and both free;  
For what he has he gives, what thinks he shows;

Yet gives he not till judgement guide his bounty,  
Nor dignifies an impair thought with breath;

Manly as Hector, but more dangerous;  
For Hector in his blaze of wrath subscribes

To tender objects, but he in heat of action  
Is more vindictive than jealous love:

They call him Troilus, and on him erect  
A second hope, as fairly built as Hector.

Thus says Æneas; one that knows the youth  
Even to his inwards, and with private soul

Did in great Ilium thus translate him to me.

*[Alarm. Hector and Ajax fight.]*

*Agam.* They are in action.

*Nest.* Now, Ajax, hold thine own!

*Tro.* Hector, thou sleep'st!

Awake thee!  
*Agam.* His blows are well disposed: there,

Ajax!

*Dio.* You must no more. *[Trumpets cease.]*

*Æne.* Princes, enough, so please you.

*Ajax.* I am not warm yet; let us fight again.

*Dio.* As Hector pleases.

*Hect.* Why, then will I no more:  
Thou art, great lord, my father's sister's son,

A cousin-german to great Priam's seed;

The obligation of our blood forbids  
A gory emulation 'twixt us twain:

Were thy commixtion Greek and Trojan so  
That thou couldst say 'This hand is Grecian all,

And this is Trojan; the sinews of this leg  
All Greek, and this all Troy; my mother's blood

Runs on the dexter cheek, and this sinister  
Bounds in my father's; by Jove omnipotent,

Thou shouldst not bear from me a Greekish member

Wherein my sword had not impressure made  
Of our rank feud: but the just gods gainsay

That any drop thou borrow'dst from thy mother,  
My sacred aunt, should by my mortal sword

Be drain'd! Let me embrace thee, Ajax:  
By him that thunders, thou hast tany arms;

Hector would have them fall upon him thus:



Cousin, all honour to thee!

*Ajax.* I thank thee, Hector: Thou art too gentle and too free a man: I came to kill thee, cousin, and bear hence 140 A great addition earned in thy death.

*Hect.* Not Neoptolemus so mirable, On whose bright crest Fame with her loud'st Oyes

Oyes 'This is he' could promise to himself A thought of added honour torn from Hector.

*Ene.* There is expectation here from both the sides,

What further you will do.

*Hect.* We'll answer it; The issue is embracement: Ajax, farewell.

*Ajax.* If I might in entreaties find success— As said I have the chance—I would desire 150 My famous cousin to our Grecian tents.

*Dio.* 'Tis Agamemnon's wish, and great Achilles Doth long to see unarm'd the valiant Hector.

*Hect.* Aeneas, call my brother Troilus to me, And signify this loving interview To the expecters of our Trojan part; Desire them home. Give me thy hand, my cousin;

I will go eat with thee and see your knights.

*Ajax.* Great Agamemnon comes to meet us here.

*Hect.* The worthiest of them tell me name by name; 160

But for Achilles, mine own searching eyes Shall find him by his large and portly size.

*Agam.* Worthy of arms! as welcome as to one

That would be rid of such an enemy; But that's no welcome: understand more clear.

What's past and what's to come is strew'd with husks

And formless ruin of oblivion; But in this extant moment, faith and troth,

Strain'd purely from all hollow bias-drawing, Hides thee, with most divine integrity, 170

From heart of very heart, great Hector, welcome.

*Hect.* I thank thee, most imperious Agamemnon.

*Agam.* [To Troilus] My well-famed lord of Troy, no less to you.

*Men.* Let me confirm my princely brother's greeting:

You brace of warlike brothers, welcome hither.

*Hect.* Who must we answer?

*Ene.* The noble Menelaus.

*Hect.* O, you, my lord! by Mars his gauntlet, thanks!

Mock not, that I affect the untraded oath; Your quondam wife swears still by Venus' glove;

She's well, but bade me not commend her to you.

*Men.* Name her not now, sir; she's a deadly theme.

*Hect.* O, pardon; I offend.

*Nest.* I have, thou gallant Trojan, seen thee oft

Labouring for destiny make cruel way Through ranks of Greekish youth, and I have seen thee,

As hot as Perseus, spur thy Phrygian steed, Despising many forfeits and subduements, When thou hast hung thy advanced sword f the air,

Not letting it decline on the declined, That I have said to some my standers by 190

'Lo, Jupiter is yonder, dealing life!' And I have seen thee pause and take thy breath,

When that a ring of Greeks have hemm'd thee in,

Like an Olympian wrestling: this have I seen; But this thy countenance, still lock'd in steel,

I never saw till now. I knew thy grandsire, And once fought with him: he was a soldier good;

But, by great Mars, the captain of us all, Never like thee. Let an old man embrace thee; And, worthy warrior, welcome to our tents. 200

*Ene.* 'Tis the old Nestor.

*Hect.* Let me embrace thee, good old chronicle,

That hast so long walk'd hand in hand with time:

Most reverend Nestor, I am glad to clasp thee.

*Nest.* I would my arms could match thee in contention,

As they contend with thee in courtesy.

*Hect.* I would they could.

*Nest.* Ha! By this white beard, I'd fight with thee to-morrow.

Well, welcome, welcome!—I have seen the time. 210

*Ulyss.* I wonder now how yonder city stands When we have here her base and pillar by us.

*Hect.* I know your favour, Lord Ulysses, well.

Ah, sir, there's many a Greek and Trojan dead, Since first I saw yourself and Diomed

In Ilion, on your Greekish embassy.

*Ulyss.* Sir, I foretold you then what would ensue:

My prophecy is but half his journey yet; For yonder walls, that perty front your town,

Yond towers, whose wanton tops do boss the clouds, 220

Must kiss their own feet.

*Hect.* I must not believe you: There they stand yet, and modestly I think,

The fall of every Phrygian stone will cost A drop of Grecian blood: the end crowns all,

And that old common arbitrator, Time, Will one day end it.

*Ulyss.* So to him we leave it. Most gentle and most valiant Hector, welcome:

After the general, I beseech you next To feast with me and see me at my tent.

*Achil.* I shall forestall thee, Lord Ulysses, thou! 230

Now, Hector, I have fed mine eyes on thee; I have with exact view perused thee, Hector,

And quoted joint by joint.

*Hect.* Is this Achilles?

*Achil.* I am Achilles.

*Hect.* Stand fast, I pray thee: let me look on thee.

*Achil.* Behold thy fill.

*Hec.* Nay, I have done already.  
*Achil.* Thou art too brief: I will the second time.

As I would buy thee, view thee limb by limb.  
*Hec.* O, like a book of sport thou'lt read me o'er;

But there's more in me than thou understand'st.

Why dost thou so oppress me with thine eye?  
*Achil.* Tell me, you heavens, in which part of his body

Shall I destroy him? whether there, or there, or there!

That I may give the local wound a name And make distinct the very breach whereout Hector's great spirit flew: answer me, heavens!

*Hec.* It would discredit the blest gods, proud men,

To answer such a question: stand again: Think'st thou to catch my life so pleasantly As to prenominate in nice conjecture Where thou wilt hit me dead?

*Achil.* I tell thee, yea.  
*Hec.* Wert thou an oracle to tell me so, I'd not believe thee. Henceforth guard thee well;

For I'll not kill thee there, nor there, nor there; But, by the forge that stithied Mars his helm, I'll kill thee every where, yea, o'er and o'er. You wisest Grecians, pardon me this brag: His insolence draws folly from my lips; But I'll endeavour deeds to match these words, Or may I never—

*Ajax.* Do not chafe thee, cousin: 260 And you, Achilles, let these threats alone, Till accident or purpose bring you to't: You may have every day enough of Hector. If you have stomach; the general state, I fear, Can scarce entreat you to be odd with him.

*Hec.* I pray you, let us see you in the field: We have had pelting wars, since you refused The Grecians' cause.

*Achil.* Dost thou entreat me, Hector? To-morrow do I meet thee, fell as death; To-night all friends.

*Hec.* Thy hand upon that match. 270  
*Agam.* First, all you peers of Greece, go to my tent:

There in the full convive we: afterwards, As Hector's leisure and your bounties shall Concur together, severally entreat him. Best lord the labourers, let the trumpets blow, That this great soldier may his welcome know.

[*Exeunt all except Troilus and Ulysses.*  
*Tro.* My Lord Ulysses, tell me, I beseech you,

In what place of the field doth Calchas keep?  
*Ulys.* At Menelaus' tent, most princely

There Diomed doth feast with him to-night; 280 Who nothing looks upon the heaven nor earth, But gives all gaze and bent of amorous view On the fair Cressida.

*Tro.* Shall I, sweet lord, be bound to you so much,

In Agamemnon's tent, I kneel to him?

You shall command me, sir.

As gentle tell me, of what honour was This Cressida in Troy? Had she no lover there That waits her absence?

*Tro.* O, sir, to such as boast show their scars

A mock is due. Will you walk my lord? She was beloved, she loved; she and doth: But still sweet love is food for his tooth.

[*Exeunt.*

## ACT V.

SCENE I. The Grecian camp. Before Achilles' tent.

*Enter ACHILLES and PATROCLUS.*

*Achil.* I'll heat his blood with Greekish wine to-night,

Which with my scimitar I'll cool to-morrow. Patroclus, let us feast him to the height.

*Patr.* Here comes Thersites.

*Enter THERSITES.*

*Achil.* How now, thou core of envy! Thou crusty batch of nature, what's the news?

*Ther.* Why, thou picture of what thou seemest, and idol of idiot-worshippers, here's a letter for thee.

*Achil.* From whence, fragment?

*Ther.* Why, thou full dish of fool, from Troy.

*Patr.* Who keeps the tent now?

*Ther.* The surgeon's box, or the patient's wound.

*Patr.* Well said, adversity! and what need these tricks?

*Ther.* Prithes, be silent, boy; I profit not by thy talk: thou art thought to be Achilles' male varlet.

*Patr.* Male varlet, you rogue! what's that?

*Ther.* Why, his masculine whore. Now the rotten diseases of the south, the gut-gripping, ruptures, catarrhs, loads o' gravel i' the back, lethargies, cold palsies, raw eyes, dirt-rotten livers, wheezing lungs, bladders full of imposthume, sciaticas, limekilns i' the palm, incurable bone-ache, and the rivelled fo-simple of the tetter, take and take again such preposterous discoveries!

*Patr.* Why, thou damnable box of ear, thou, what meanest thou to curse thus?

*Ther.* Do I curse thee?

*Patr.* Why, no, you ruinous butt, you whore-son indistinguishable cur, no.

*Ther.* Not why art thou then exasperate, thou idle immaterial skein of sleeve-stitch, thou green sacrospinous flap for a sore eye, thou tassel of a prodigal's purse, thou? Ah, how the poor world is pestered with such waterlies, diminutives of nature!

*Patr.* Out, jail!

*Ther.* Finch-egg!

*Achil.* My sweet Patroclus, I am thwarted quite

From my great purpose in to-morrow's battle. Here is a letter from Queen Hecuba,

A token from her daughter, my fair love, Both taxing me and urging me to haste.

An oath that I have sworn, I will not break it:

Fall Greeks; fall fame; honour or go or stay;  
My major vow lies here, this I'll obey.  
Come, come, Thersites, help to trim my tent:  
This night in banquetting must all be spent. 51  
Away, Patroclus!

[*Exeunt Achilles and Patroclus.*  
*Ther.* There, too much blood and too little brain, these two may run mad; but, if with too much brain and too little blood they do, I'll be a curer of madmen. Here's Agamemnon, an honest fellow enough, and one that loves quails; but he has not so much brain as ear-wax: and the goodly transformation of Jupiter there, his brother, the bull,—the primitive statue, and oblique memorial of cuckolds; a thrifty shoeing-horn in a chain, hanging at his brother's leg,—to what form but that he is, should wit harled with malice and malice forced with wit turn him to! To an ass, were nothing; he is both ass and ox: to an ox, were nothing; he is both ox and ass. To be a dog, a mule, a cat, a fitchew, a toad, a lizard, an owl, a puttock, or a herring without a roe, I would not care; but to be Menelaus! I would conspire against destiny. Ask me not what I would be, if I were not Thersites; for I care not to be the louse of a lazard, so I were not Menelaus. Hoy-day! spirits and fires!

[*Enter Hector, Troilus, Ajax, Agamemnon, Ulysses, Nestor, Menelaus, and Diomedes, with lights.*

*Agam.* We go wrong, we go wrong.

*Ajax.* No, yonder 'tis;  
There, where we see the lights.

*Hect.* I trouble you.

*Ajax.* No, not a whit.

*Ulyss.* Here comes himself to guide you.

[*Re-enter Achilles.*

*Achil.* Welcome, brave Hector; welcome, princes all.

*Agam.* So now, fair Prince of Troy, I bid good night.

*Ajax* commands the guard to tend on you.

*Hect.* Thanks and good night to the Greeks' general. 50

*Nes.* Good night, my lord.

*Hect.* Good night, sweet Lord Menelaus.

*Ther.* Sweet draught: 'sweet' quoth 'a'! sweet sink, sweet sewer.

*Achil.* Good night and welcome, both at once, to those

That go or tarry.

*Agam.* Good night.

[*Exeunt Agamemnon and Menelaus.*  
*Achil.* Old Nestor tarry; and you too, Diomed.

Keep Hector company an hour or two.

*Dio.* I cannot, lord; I have important business.

The tide whereof is now. Good night, great Hector.

*Hect.* Give me your hand.

*Ulyss.* [*Aside to Troilus.*] Follow his torch; he goes to Calchas' tent:

I'll keep you company.

*Tro.*

*Hect.* And so, good night.

[*Exit Diomedes; Ulysses and Troilus following.*

*Achil.* Come, come, enter my tent.

[*Exeunt Achilles, Hector, Ajax, and Nestor.*  
*Ther.* That same Diomed is a false-hearted rogue, a most unjust knave; I will no more trust him when he hears than I will a serpent when he hisses: he will spend his mouth, and promise, like Brablier the hood; but when he performs, astronomers foretell it; it is prodigious, there will come some change; the sun borrows of the moon, when Diomed keeps his word. I will rather leave to see Hector, than not to dog him: they say he keeps a Trojan drah, and uses the traitor Calchas' tent: I'll after. Nothing but lechery! all innocent varlets! 51  
[*Exit.*

SCENE II. *The same. Before Calchas' tent.*

*Enter DIOMEDES.*

*Dio.* What, are you up here, ho! speak.

*Cal.* [*Within.*] Who calls?

*Dio.* Diomed. Calchas, I think. Where's your daughter?

*Cal.* [*Within.*] She comes to you.

[*Enter Troilus and Ulysses, at a distance; after them, Thersites.*

*Ulyss.* Stand where the torch may not discover us.

*Enter CRESSIDA.*

*Tro.* Cressid comes forth to him.

*Dio.* How now, my chagge!

*Cres.* Now, my sweet guardian! Hark, a word with you. [*Whispers.*

*Tro.* Yes, so familiar!

*Ulyss.* She will sing any man at first sight.

*Ther.* And any man may sing her, if he can take her cliff; she's noted. 22

*Dio.* Will you remember?

*Cres.* Remember! yes.

*Dio.* Nay, but do, then;

And let your mind be coupled with your words.

*Tro.* What should she remember?

*Ulyss.* List.

*Cres.* Sweet honey Greek, tempt me no more to folly.

*Ther.* Roguery!

*Dio.* Nay, then,—

*Cres.* I'll tell you what,—

*Dio.* Foh, foh! come, tell a pin: you are forsworn.

*Cres.* In faith, I cannot: what would you have me do?

*Ther.* A juggling trick,—to be secretly open.

*Dio.* What did you swear you would answer on me?

*Cres.* I prithes, do not hold me to mine oath;

Bid me do any thing but that, sweet Greek.

*Dio.* Good night.

*Tro.* Night, patience!

*Ulyss.* How now, Trojan!

*Cres.* Diomed,—

- Dia.* No, no, good night: I'll be your fool  
no more.
- Tro.* Thy better must.
- Cres.* Hark, one word in your ear.
- Tro.* O plague and madness!
- Ulyss.* You are moved, prince; let us depart,  
I pray you,  
Lest your displeasure should enlarge itself  
To wrathful terms: this place is dangerous;  
The time right deadly: I beseech you, go.
- Tro.* Behold, I pray you!
- Ulyss.* Nay, good my lord, go off:  
You flow to great distraction; come, my lord.
- Tro.* I pray thee, stay.
- Ulyss.* You have not patience; come.
- Tro.* I pray you, stay; by hell and all hell's  
torments,  
I will not speak a word!
- Dia.* And so, good night.
- Cres.* Nay, but you part in anger.
- Tro.* Doth that grieve thee?  
O wither'd truth!
- Ulyss.* Why, how now, lord!
- Tro.* By Jove,  
I will be patient.
- Cres.* Guardian!—why, Greek!
- Dia.* Foh, foh! adieu; you palter.
- Cres.* In faith, I do not: come hither once  
again.
- Ulyss.* You shake, my lord, at something:  
will you go!
- Tro.* She strokes his cheek!  
will you break out.
- Ulyss.* Come, come.
- Tro.* Nay, stay; by Jove, I will not speak a  
word!
- There is between my will and all offences  
A guard of patience: stay a little while.
- Ther.* How the devil Luxury, with his fat  
rump and potato-finger, tickles these together!  
Fry, lechery, fry!
- Dia.* But will you, then?
- Cres.* In faith, I will, la; never trust me  
else.
- Dia.* Give me some token for the surety  
of it.
- Cres.* I'll fetch you one.
- Ulyss.* You have sworn patience.
- Tro.* Fear me not, sweet lord;  
I will not be myself, nor have cognition  
Of what I feel: I am all patience.
- Re-enter CRESSIDA.*
- Ther.* Now the pledge; now, now, now!
- Cres.* Here, Diomed, keep this sleeve.
- Tro.* O beauty! where is thy faith!
- Ulyss.* My lord,—
- Tro.* I will be patient; outwardly I will.
- Cres.* You look upon that sleeve; behold it  
well.  
He loved me—O false wench!—Give't me again.
- Dia.* Whose was't?
- Cres.* It is no matter, now I have't again.  
I will not meet with you to-morrow night:  
I'll then, Diomed, visit me no more.
- Ther.* Now she sharpens: well said, whet-  
stone!
- Dia.* I shall have it.
- Cres.* What, this?
- Dia.* Ay, that.
- Cres.* O, all you gods! O pretty, pretty  
pledge!
- Thy master now lies thinking in bed  
Of thee and me, and sighs, and my glove,  
And gives memorial dainty ki- it, so  
As I kiss thee. Nay, do not s- it from me;  
He that takes that doth take my-rt withal.
- Dia.* I had your heart before, thi follows it.
- Tro.* I did swear patience.
- Cres.* You shall not have it, Di- faith,  
you shall not;
- I'll give you something else.
- Dia.* I will have this: whose was it?
- Cres.* It is no matter.
- Dia.* Come, tell me whose it was.
- Cres.* 'Twas one's that loved me better than  
you will.
- But, now you have it, take it.
- Dia.* Whose was it? so
- Cres.* By all Diana's waiting-women yond,  
And by herself, I will not tell you whose.
- Dia.* To-morrow will I wear it on my helm,  
And grieve his spirit that dares not challenge it.
- Tro.* Wert thou the devil, and worst it on  
thy horn,  
It should be challenged.
- Cres.* Well, well, 'tis done, 'tis past: and yet  
it is not;
- I will not keep my word.
- Dia.* Why, then, farewell;
- Thou never shalt mock Diomed again.
- Cres.* You shall not go: one cannot speak a  
word,
- But it straight starts you.
- Dia.* I do not like this fooling.
- Ther.* Nor I, by Pluto: but that that likes  
not you pleases me best.
- Dia.* What, shall I come? the hour?
- Cres.* Ay, come:—O Jove!—do come:—I  
shall be plagued.
- Dia.* Farewell till then.
- Cres.* Good night: I prithe, come.
- [*Exit Diomedes.*]
- Troilus, farewell! one eye yet looks on thee;  
But with my heart the other eye doth see.  
Ah, poor our sex! this fault in us I find,  
The error of our eye directs our mind: 110  
What error leads must err; O, then conclude  
Minds sway'd by eyes are full of turpitude.
- [*Exit.*]
- Ther.* A proof of strength she could not  
publish more.
- Unless she said 'My mind is now turn'd whore.'
- Ulyss.* All's done, my lord.
- Tro.* It is.
- Ulyss.* Why stay we, then?
- Tro.* To make a recordation to my soul  
Of every syllable that here was spoke.  
But if I tell how these two did co-act,  
Shall I not lie in publishing a truth?  
Sith yet there is a credence in my heart,  
An assurance so obstinately strong,  
That doth invert the attant of eyes and ears,  
As if those organs had deceptions functions,  
Created only to extenuate,  
Was Cressida here?

*Ulyss.* I cannot conjure, Trojan.

*Tro.* She was not, sure.

*Ulyss.* Most sure she was.

*Tro.* Why, my negation hath no taste of madness.

*Ulyss.* Nor mine, my lord: Cressid was here but now.

*Tro.* Let it not be believed for womanhood! Think, we had mothers; do not give advantage To stubborn critics, apt, without a theme, 131

For deprecation, to square the general sex By Cressid's rule: rather think this not Cressid.

*Ulyss.* What hath she done, prince, that can soil our mothers?

*Tro.* Nothing at all, unless that this were she.

*Ther.* Will he swagger himself out on's own eyes?

*Tro.* This she! no, this is Diomed's Cressida:

If beauty have a soul, this is not she;

If souls guide vows, if vows be sanctimonies, If sanctimony be the gods' delight, 140

If there be rule in unity itself, This is not she. O madness of discourse,

That cause sets up with and against itself!

Bi-fold authority! where reason can revolt Without perdition, and loss assume all reason

Without revolt: this is, and is not, Cressid. Within my soul there doth conduce a fight

Of this strange nature that a thing inseparate Divides more wider than the sky and earth,

And yet the spacious breadth of this division Admits no orifice for a point as subtle 151

As Ariachne's broken woof to enter. Instance, O instance! strong as Pluto's gates;

Cressid is mine, tied with the bonds of heaven: Instance, O instance! strong as heaven itself;

The bonds of heaven are slipp'd, dissolved, and loos'd;

And with another knot, five-finger-tied, The fractions of her faith, oris of her love,

The fragments, scraps, the bits and greasy relics 159

Of her o'er-eaten faith, are bound to Diomed. *Ulyss.* May worthy Troilus be half attach'd

With that which here his passion doth express? *Tro.* Ay, Greek; and that shall be divulged

well

In characters as red as Mars his heart Inflamed with Venus: never did young man

fancy

With so eternal and so fix'd a soul. Hark, Greek: as much as I do Cressid love,

So much by weight hate I her Diomed: That sleeve is mine that he'll bear on his helm;

Were it a casque compos'd by Vulcan's skill, My sword should bite it: not the dreadful

spout 171

Which shipmen do the hurricane call, Constricting in mass by the almighty sun,

Shall dizzy with more clamour Neptune's ear In his descent than shall my prompted sword

Falling on Diomed. *Ther.* He'll tickle it for his conceit.

*Tro.* O Cressid! O false Cressid! false, false, false!

Let all untruths stand by thy stained name,

And they'll seem glorious.

*Ulyss.* O, contain yourself; 180

Your passion draws ears hither.

*Enter ÆNEAS.*

*Æne.* I have been seeking you this hour, my lord:

Hector, by this, is arming him in Troy; Ajax, your guard, stays to conduct you home.

*Tro.* Have with you, prince. My courteous lord, adieu.

Farewell, revolted fair! and, Diomed, Stand fast, and wear a castle on thy head!

*Ulyss.* I'll bring you to the gates. *Tro.* Accept distracted thanks.

*[Exeunt Troilus, Æneas, and Ulysses.]*

*Ther.* Would I could meet that rogue Diomed! I would croak like a raven; I would

bode, I would bode. Patroclus will give me any thing for the intelligence of this whore:

the parrot will not do more for an almond than he for a commodious drab. Lechery, lechery;

still, wars and lechery; nothing else holds fashion: a burning devil take them! *[Exit.]*

SCENE III. *Troy. Before Priam's palace.*

*Enter HECTOR and ANDROMACHE.*

*And.* When was my lord so much ungently temper'd,

To stop his ears against admonishment? Unarm, unarm, and do not fight to-day.

*Hect.* You train me to offend you; get you in:

By all the everlasting gods, I'll go!

*And.* My dreams will, sure, prove ominous to the day.

*Hect.* No more, I say.

*Enter CASSANDRA.*

*Cas.* Where is my brother Hector?

*And.* Here, sister; arm'd, and bloody in intent.

Consort with me in loud and dear petition, Pursue we him on knees; for I have dream'd

(Of bloody turbulence, and this whole night 11

Hath nothing been but shapes and forms of slaughter.

*Cas.* O, 'tis true. *Hect.* Ho! bid my trumpet sound.

*Cas.* No notes of sally, for the heavens, sweet brother,

*Hect.* Be gone, I say: the gods have heard me swear.

*Cas.* The gods are deaf to hot and peevish vows:

They are polluted offerings, more abhor'd Than spotted livers in the sacrifice.

*And.* O, be persuaded! do not count it holy To hurt by being just: it is as lawful, 20

For we would give much, to use violent thefts, And rob in the behalf of charity.

*Cas.* It is the purpose that makes strong the vow;

But vows to every purpose must not hold: Unarm, sweet Hector.

*Hect.* Hold you still, I say: Mine honour keeps the weakness of my fate.

Life every man holds dear; but the brave man  
Holds honour far more precious-dear than life.

*Enter TROILUS.*

How now, young man! mean'st thou to fight  
to-day?

*And.* Cassandra, call my father to persuade.

*[Exit Cassandra.]*

*Hec.* No, faith, young Troilus; doff thy  
harness, youth;

I am to-day the vein of chivalry:  
Let grow thy sinews till their knots be strong,  
And tempt not yet the brushes of the war.  
Unarm thee, go, and doubt thou not, brave boy,  
I'll stand to-day for thee and me and Troy.

*Tro.* Brother, you have a vice of mercy in  
you,  
Which better fits a lion than a man.

*Hec.* What vice is that, good Troilus? chide  
me for it.

*Tro.* When many times the captive Grecian  
falls,  
Given in the fan and wind of your fair sword,  
You bid them rise, and live.

*Hec.* O, 'tis fair play.

*Tro.* Fool's play, by heaven, Hector.

*Hec.* How now! how now!

*Tro.* For the love of all the gods,  
Let's leave the hermit pity with our mothers,  
And when we have our armour buckled on,  
The venom'd vengeance ride upon our swords,  
Bear them to ruthless work, rein them from  
ruth.

*Hec.* Fie, savage, fie!

*Tro.* Hector, then 'tis war.

*Hec.* Troilus, I would not have you fight  
to-day.

*Tro.* Who should withhold me?

Not fate, obedience, nor the hand of Mars  
Beckoning with fiery truncheon my retire;  
Not Priamus and Hecuba on knees,  
Their eyes o'ergal'd with recourse of tears;  
Nor you, my brother, with your true sword  
drawn,

Opposed to hinder me, should stop my way,  
But by my ruin.

*Re-enter CASSANDRA, with PRIAM.*

*Cas.* Lay hold upon him, Priam, hold him  
fast:

He is shy crutch; now if thou lose thy stay, go  
Thou on him leaning, and all Troy on thee,  
Fall all together.

*Pri.* Come, Hector, come, go back:  
Thy wife hath dream'd; thy mother hath had  
visions;

Cassandra doth foresee; and I myself  
Am like a prophet suddenly entrapt  
To tell thee that this day is ominous:  
Therefore, come back.

*Hec.* Hence is a field;

I do stand engaged to many Greeks,  
even in the faith of valour, to appear  
this morning to them.

*Tro.* Ay, but thou shalt not go.

*Hec.* I must not break my faith.  
You know me doubtful; therefore, dear sir,  
Let me not shame suspect; but give me leave

To take that course by your consent and voice  
Which you do here forbid me, royal Priam.

*Cas.* O Priam, yield not to him!

*And.* Do not, dear father

*Hec.* Andromache, I am offended with you  
Upon the love you bear me, get you in.

*[Exit Andromache.]*

*Tro.* This foolish, dreaming, superstitious  
girl  
Makes all these bodements.

*Cas.* O, farewell! dear Hector!

Look, how thou diest! look, how thy eye turns  
pale!

Look, how thy wounds do bleed at many vents!  
Hark, how Troy roars! how Hecuba cries out!  
How poor Andromache shrills her dolours forth:  
Behold, distraction, frenzy and amazement,  
Like witless antics, one another meet.

And all cry, Hector! Hector's dead! O Hector!  
*Tro.* Away! away!

*Cas.* Farewell! yet, soft! Hector, I take my  
leave:

Thou dost thyself and all our Troy deceive.

*[Exit.]*

*Hec.* You are amazed, my liege, at her ex-  
claim:  
Go in and cheer the town: we'll forth and fight,  
Do deeds worth praise and tell you them:  
night.

*Pri.* Farewell: the gods with safety stand  
about thee!

*[Exeunt severally Priam and Hector.]*

*Tro.* They are at it, hark! Proud Diomed,  
believe,  
I come to lose my arm, or win my sleeve.

*Enter PANDARUS.*

*Pan.* Do you hear, my lord! do you hear!

*Tro.* What now!

*Pan.* Here's a letter come from yond poor  
girl.

*Tro.* Let me read.

*Pan.* A whoreson tisick, a whoreson rascally  
tisick so troubles me, and the foolish fortune of  
this girl; and what one thing, what another,  
that I shall leave you one of these days; and I  
have a rheum in mine eyes too, and such an  
ache in my bones that, unless a man were  
cursed, I cannot tell what to think on't. What  
says she there?

*Tro.* Words, words, mere words, no matter  
from the heart;  
The effect doth operate another way.

Go, wind, to wind, there turn and change  
together.

My love with words and errors still she feeds;  
But edifies another with her deeds.

*[Exeunt severally.]*

SCENE IV. *Plains between Troy and the  
Grecian camp.*

*Alarums; accursions. Enter THROTE.*

*Ther.* Now they are clapper-drawing on  
another; I'll go look on. That dishonourable  
abominable varlet, Diomed, has got that man

curvy dotting foolish young knave's sleeve of Troy there in his helm: I would fain see them meet; that that same young Trojan ass, that loves the whore there, might send that Greekish whomasterly villain, with the sleeve, back to the dissembling luxurious drab, of a sleeveless crand. O' the t'other side, the policy of those crafty swearing rascals, that stale old mouse-eaten dry cheese, Nestor, and that same dog-fox, Ulysses, is not proved worth a blackberry: they set me up, in policy, that mongrel cur, Ajax, against that dog of as bad a kind, Achilles: and now is the cur Ajax prouder than the cur Achilles, and will not arm to-day; whereupon the Grecians begin to proclaim barbarism, and policy grows into an ill opinion. Soft! here comes sleeve, and t'other.

*Enter DIOMEDES, TROILUS following.*

*Tro.* Fly not; for shouldst thou take the river Styx,  
I would swim after.

*Dia.* Thou dost miscall retire:  
I do not fly, but advantageous care  
Withdrew me from the odds of multitude:  
Haste at thee!

*Ther.* Hold thy whore, Grecian!—now for thy whore, Trojan!—now the sleeve, now the sleeve!

*[Exeunt Troilus and Diomedes, fighting.]*

*Enter HECTOR.*

*Hect.* What art thou, Greek? art thou for Hector's match?

Art thou of blood and honour?

*Ther.* No, no, I am a macal; a scurvy railing inave; a very filthy rogue.

*Hect.* I do believe thee: live. *[Exit.]*

*Ther.* God-a-mercy, that thou wilt believe me; but a plague break thy neck for frightening me! What's become of the wenching rogues? I think they have swallowed one another: I would laugh at that miracle; yet, in a sort, lechery eats itself. I'll seek them. *[Exit.]*

SCENE V. *Another part of the plains.*

*Enter DIOMEDES and a Servant.*

*Dia.* Go, go, my servant, take thou Troilus' horse;

Present the fair steed to my lady Cressid:  
Fellow, commend my service to her beauty;  
Tell her I have chastised the amorous Trojan,  
And am her knight by proof.

*Serv.*

I go, my lord. *[Exit.]*

*Enter AGAMEMNON.*

*Agam.* Renew, renew! The Sæpe Polydarnas  
Hath beat down Menon: bastard Margarelon  
Hath Doreus prisoner,  
And stands colossus-wise, waving his beam,  
Upon the peaked crests of the kings;  
Eriophrus and Oedius: Polyxenes is slain,  
Himachus and Thoon deadly hurt,  
Pelus taken or slain, and Palamedes  
hurt and bruised: the steel that slings  
peels our numbers; haste we, Diomedes,

To reinforcement, or we perish all.

*Enter NESTOR.*

*Nest.* Go, bear Patroclus' body to Achilles;  
And bid the small-pac'd Ajax arm for shame.  
There is a thousand Hectors in the field:  
Now here he fights on Galathea his horse,  
And there lacks work; anon he's there shot,  
And there they fly or die, like soiled sculls.  
Before the belching whale; then is he yonder,  
And there the strawy Greeks, ripe for his edge,  
Fall down before him, like the mower's swath:  
Here, there, and every where, he leaves and takes,  
Dexterity so obeying appetite  
That what he will he does, and does so much  
That proof is call'd impossibility.

*Enter ULYSSES.*

*Ulys.* O, courage, courage, princes! great Achilles  
Is arming, weeping, cursing, vowing vengeance:  
Patroclus' wounds have roused his drowy blood,  
Together with his mangled Myrmidons,  
That noiseless, handless, hack'd and chopp'd,  
Come to him,  
Crying on Hector. Ajax hath lost a friend  
And foams at mouth, and he is arm'd and at it.  
Roaring for Troilus, who hath done to-day  
Mad and fantastic execution,  
Engaging and redeeming of himself  
With such a careless force and forceless care  
As if that luck, in very spite of cunning,  
Bade him win all.

*Enter AJAX.*

*Ajax.* Troilus! thou coward Troilus! *[Exit.]*  
*Dia.* Ay, there, there.  
*Nest.* So, so, we draw together.

*Enter ACHILLES.*

*Achil.* Where is this Hector?  
Come, come, thou boy-queller, show thy face:  
Know what it is to meet Achilles angry:  
Hector! where's Hector? I will none but Hector.  
*[Exeunt.]*

SCENE VI. *Another part of the plains.*

*Enter AJAX.*

*Ajax.* Troilus, thou coward Troilus, show thy head!

*Enter DIOMEDES.*

*Dia.* Troilus, I say! where's Troilus?  
*Ajax.* What wouldst thou?  
*Dia.* I would correct him.  
*Ajax.* Were I the general, thou shouldst have my office.  
*Ere that correction.* Troilus, I say! what, Troilus!

*Enter TROILUS.*

*Tro.* O traitor Diomed! turn thy false face,  
thou traitor.  
And pay thy life thou owest me for my horse!  
*Dia.* He art thou there!

# TROILUS AND CRESSIDA

[ACT V

*Ajax.* I'll fight with him alone: stand,  
Dioned.

*Dia.* He is my prize; I will not look upon.

*Tro.* Come, both you cogging Greeks; have  
at you both! *[Exeunt, fighting.]*

*Enter HECTOR.*

*Hect.* Yea, Troilus! O, well fought, my  
youngest brother!

*Enter ACHILLES.*

*Achil.* Now do I see thee, ha! have at thee,  
Hector!

*Hect.* Pause, if thou wilt.

*Achil.* I do disdain thy courtesy, proud  
Trojan:

Be happy that my arms are out of use:  
My rest and negligence befriends thee now,  
But thou anon shalt hear of me again;  
Till when, go seek thy fortune. *[Exit.]*

*Hect.* Fare thee well:

I would have been much more a freer man,  
Had I expected thee. How now, my brother!

*Re-enter TROILUS.*

*Tro.* Ajax hath ta'en Æneas: shall it be?  
No, by the flame of yonder glorious heaven,  
He shall not carry him; I'll be ta'en too,  
Or bring him off: fate, hear me what I say!  
I reck not though I end my life to-day. *[Exit.]*

*Enter one in sumptuous armour.*

*Hect.* Stand, stand, thou Greek; thou art a  
goodly mark:

No! wilt thou not? I like thy armour well;  
I'll crush it and unlock the rivets all,

But I'll be master of it: wilt thou not, beast,  
abide!

Why, then fly on, I'll hunt thee for thy hide. *[Exit.]*

SCENE VII. Another part of the plains.

*Enter ACHILLES, with Myrmidons.*

*Achil.* Come here about me, you my Myr-  
midons;

Mark what I say. Attend me where I wheel:  
Strike not a stroke, but keep yourselves in  
breath:

When I have the bloody Hector found,  
I'll him with your weapons round about;

at manner execute your aims.  
I'll me, sirs, and my proceedings eye:

It is decreed Hector the great must die. *[Exeunt.]*

*Enter MENELAUS and PARIS, fighting: then  
THERSITES.*

*Ther.* The cuckold and the cuckold-maker  
see at it. Now, bull! now, dog! 'Loo, Paris,  
'loo! now my double-henned sparrow! 'loo,  
Paris, 'loo! The bull has the game: ware  
horns, ho! *[Exeunt Paris and Menelaus.]*

*Enter MARGARELON.*

*Mar.* Turn, slave, and fight.

*Ther.* What art thou?

*Mar.* A bastard son of Priam's.

*Ther.* I am a bastard too; I love bastards:

I am a bastard begot, bastard instructed, bastard  
in mind, bastard in valour, in every thing illegi-  
timate. One bear will not bite another, and  
wherefore should one bastard? Take heed,  
the quarrel's most ominous to us: if the son of  
a whore fight for a whore, he's no judgement:  
farewell, bastards! *[Exit.]*

*Mar.* The devil take thee, coward! *[Exit.]*

SCENE VIII. Another part of the plains.

*Enter HECTOR.*

*Hect.* Most putrefied core, so fair without,  
Thy goodly armour thus hath cost thy life.

Now is my day's work done; I'll take good  
breath:

Rest, sword; thou hast thy fill of blood and  
death.

*[Puts off his helmet and hangs his shield  
behind him.]*

*Enter ACHILLES and Myrmidons.*

*Achil.* Look, Hector, how the sun begins to  
set;

How ugly night comes breathing at his heels:  
Even with the veil and darkening of the sun,  
To close the day up, Hector's life is done.

*Hect.* I am unarm'd; forego this vantage,  
Greek.

*Achil.* Strike, fellows, strike; this is the  
man I seek. *[Hector falls.]*

So, Ilium, fall thou next! now, Troy, sink down!  
Here lies thy heart, thy sinews, and thy bone.  
On, Myrmidons, and cry you all amain,  
'Achilles hath the mighty Hector slain.'

*[A retreat sounded.]*  
Hark! a retire upon our Grecian part.

*Myr.* The Trojan trumpets sound the like,  
my lord.

*Achil.* The dragon wing of night o'erspreads  
the earth,

And, stickler-like, the armies separates.  
My half-suppl'd sword, that frankly would have  
fed,

Pleased with this dainty bait, thus goes to bed.  
*[Sheathes his sword.]*

Come, tie his body to my horse's tail; *[Exit.]*  
Along the field I will the Trojan trail. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE IX. Another part of the plains.

*Enter AGAMEMNON, AJAX, MENELAUS,  
NESTOR, DIOMEDES, and others, marching.*

*Shouts within.*

*Agam.* Hark! hark! what about is that!  
*Nest.* Peace, drums!

*[Within.]* Achilles! Achilles! Hector's slain!  
*Achilles!*

*Dia.* The bruit is, Hector's slain, and by  
Achilles.

*Ajax.* If it be so, yet bragless let it be;  
Great Hector was a man as good as he.

*Agam.* March patiently along: let one be  
sent

To pray Achilles see us at our tent,  
If in his death the gods have us befriended.

Great Troy is ours, and our sharp weapons  
ended.



SCENE X. *Another part of the plains.*

*Enter ÆNEAS and Trojans.*

*Æne.* Stand, ho! yet are we masters of the field:  
Never go home; here starve we out the night.

*Enter TROILUS.*

*Tro.* Hector is slain.

*All.* Hector! the gods forbid!

*Tro.* He's dead; and at the murderer's horse's tail,

In beastly sort, dragg'd through the shameful field.

Frown on, you heavens, effect your rage with speed!

Sit, gods, upon your thrones, and smile at Troy!

I say, at once let your brief plagues be mercy,  
And linger not our sure destructions on!

*Æne.* My lord, you do discomfort all the host.

*Tro.* You understand me not that tell me so:  
I do not speak of flight, of fear, of death,

But dare all imminence that gods and men

Address their dangers in. Hector is gone:

Who shall tell Priam so, or Hecuba?

Let him that will a screech-owl eye be call'd,

Go in to Troy, and say there, Hector's dead:

There is a word will Priam turn to stone;

Make wells and Niobes of the maids and wives,

Cold statues of the youth, and, in a word, <sup>so</sup>

Scare Troy out of itself. But, march away:

Hector is dead; there is no more to say.

Stay yet. You vile abominable tents,

Thus proudly pight upon our Phrygian plains,

Let Titan rise as early as he dare.

I'll through and through you! and, thou great-sized coward,

No space of earth shall sunder our two hates:

I'll haunt thee like a wicked conscience still,  
That mouldeth goblins swift as frenzy's thoughts.

Strike a free march to Troy! with comfort go:  
Hope of revenge shall hide our inward woe. <sup>31</sup>

*[Exit Æneas and Trojans.]*

*As TROILUS is going out, enter, from the other side, PANDARUS.*

*Pan.* But hear you, hear you!

*Tro.* Hence, broker-lackey! ignomy and shame

Pursue thy life, and live aye with thy name!

*[Exit.]*

*Pan.* A goodly medicine for my aching bones! O world! world! world! thus is the poor agent despised! O traitors and bawds, how earnestly are you set a-work, and how ill requited! why should our endeavour be so loved and the performance so loathed! what verse for it! what instance for it! Let me see:

Full merrily the humble-bee doth sing,

Till he hath lost his honey and his sting;

And being once subdued in armed tail,

Sweet honey and sweet notes together fail.

Good traders in the flesh, set this in your painted cloths.

As many as be here of pandar's hall,

Your eyes, half out, weep out at Pandar's fall;

Or if you cannot weep, yet give some groans, <sup>32</sup>

Though not for me, yet for your aching bones.

Brethren and sisters of the hold-door trade,

Some two months hence my will shall here be made:

It should be now, but that my fear is this,

Some galled goose of Winchester would hiss:

Till then I'll sweat and seek about for asses,

And at that time bequeathe you my disease. *[Exit.]*

# CORIOLANUS

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

CAIUS MARCIUS, afterwards CAIUS MARCIUS CORIOLANUS.  
 TITUS LARTIUS, } generals against the Vol-  
 COMINIUS, } scians.  
 MENENIUS AGRIPPA, friend to Coriolanus.  
 SICINIUS VELUTUS, } tribunes of the  
 JUNIUS BRUTUS, } people.  
 Young MARCIUS, son to Coriolanus.  
 A Roman Herald.  
 TULLUS AUFIDIUS, general of the Volscians.  
 Lieutenant to Aufidius.  
 Conspirators with Aufidius.  
 A Citizen of Antium.

Two Volscian Guards.

VOLUNTIA, mother to Coriolanus.  
 VIRGILIA, wife to Coriolanus.  
 VALERIA, friend to Virgilia.  
 Gentlewoman, attending on Virgilia.

Roman and Volscian Senators, Patricians,  
 Adiles, Lictors, Soldiers, Citizens, Messen-  
 gers, Servants to Aufidius, and other At-  
 tendants.

SCENE: *Rome and the neighbourhood; Corioli  
 and the neighbourhood; Antium.*

## ACT I.

### SCENE I. *Rome. A street.*

*Enter a company of mutinous Citizens, with  
 slaves, clubs, and other weapons.*

*First Cit.* Before we proceed any further,  
 hear me speak.

*All.* Speak, speak.

*First Cit.* You are all resolved rather to die  
 than to famish?

*All.* Resolved, resolved.

*First Cit.* First, you know Caius Marcius is  
 chief enemy to the people.

*All.* We know't, we know't.

*First Cit.* Let us kill him, and we'll have  
 corn at our own price. Is't a verdict?

*All.* No more talking on't; let it be done:  
 away, away!

*Sec. Cit.* One word, good citizens.

*First Cit.* We are accounted poor citizens,  
 the patricians good. What authority surfeits  
 on would relieve us; if they would yield us but  
 the superfluity, while it were wholesome, we  
 might guess they relieved us humanely; but  
 they think we are too dear: the leanness that  
 afflicts us, the object of our misery, is as an in-  
 ventory to particularize their abundance; our  
 suffering is a gain to them. Let us revenge  
 this with our pikes, ere we become rakes: for  
 the gods know I speak this in hunger for bread,  
 not in thirst for revenge.

*Sec. Cit.* Would you proceed especially  
 against Caius Marcius?

*All.* Against him first: he's a very dog to  
 set on the commonalty.

*Sec. Cit.* Consider you what services he has  
 done for his country?

*First Cit.* Very well; and could be content

to give him good report for't, but that he pays  
 himself with being proud.

*Sec. Cit.* Nay, but speak not maliciously.

*First Cit.* I say unto you, what he hath done  
 famously, he did it to that end: though soft-  
 conscienced men can be content to say it was  
 for his country, he did it to please his mother,  
 and to be partly proud; which he is, even to  
 the altitude of his virtue.

*Sec. Cit.* What he cannot help in his nature,  
 you account a vice in him. You must in no  
 way say he is covetous.

*First Cit.* If I must not, I need not be barren  
 of accusations; he hath faults, with surplus to  
 tire in repetition. [*Shouts within.*] What shouts  
 are these? The other side o' the city is risen:  
 why stay we prating here! to the Capitol!

*All.* Come, come.

*First Cit.* Soft! who comes here?

### *Enter MENENIUS AGRIPPA.*

*Sec. Cit.* Worthy Menenius Agrippa; one  
 that hath always loved the people.

*First Cit.* He's one honest enough: would  
 all the rest were so!

*Men.* What work's, my countrymen, in  
 hand? where go you?

With hats and clubs! The matter? speak, I  
 pray you.

*First Cit.* Our business is not unknown to  
 the senate; they have had inkling this fortnight  
 what we intend to do, which now we'll show  
 'em in deeds. They say poor suitors have  
 strong breaths: they shall know we have strong  
 arms too.

*Men.* Why, masters, my good friends, mine  
 honest neighbours,  
 Will you undo yourselves?

*First Cit.* We cannot, sir, we are undone ready.

*Men.* I tell you, friends, most charitable care are the patricians of you. For your wants, our suffering in this dearth, you may as well strike at the heaven with your staves as lift them

gainst the Roman state, whose course will on he way it takes, cracking ten thousand curbs of more strong link asunder than can ever appear in your impediment. For the dearth, he gods, not the patricians, make it, and our knees to them, not arms, must help.

Alack, you are transported by calamity hither where more attends you, and you slander the helms of the state, who care for you like fathers.

When you curse them as enemies.

*First Cit.* Care for us! True, indeed! They never cared for us yet: suffer us to famish, and their store-houses crammed with grain; make diets for usury, to support usurers; repeal daily any wholesome act established against the rich, and provide more piercing statutes daily, to chain up and restrain the poor. If the wars set us not up, they will; and there's all the love they bear us.

*Men.* Either you must confess yourselves wondrous malicious, or be accused of folly. I shall tell you a pretty tale; it may be you have heard it; but, since it serves my purpose, I will venture state 't a little more.

*First Cit.* Well, I'll hear it, sir; yet you must not think to lob off our disgraces with a tale; but, an 't please you, deliver.

*Men.* There was a time when all the body's members

Rebel'd against the belly, thus accused it: That only like a gulf it did remain in the midst of the body, idle and unactive, still cupboarding the viand, never bearing like labour with the rest, where the other instruments

Did see and hear, devise, instruct, walk, feel, and mutually participate, did minister unto the appetite and affection common of the whole body. The belly answer'd—

*First Cit.* Well, sir, what answer made the belly?

*Men.* Sir, I shall tell you. With a kind of smile, which never came from the lungs, but even thus—

Or, look you, I may make the belly smile as well as speak—it tauntingly replied to the discontented members, the mutinous parts that envied his receipt; even so meet flattery as you malign our senators for that they are not such as you.

*First Cit.* Your belly's answer? What! the kingly-crowned head, the vigilant eye, the counsellor heart, the arm our soldier, our steed the leg, the tongue our trumpet, with other musicians and poets, labour in this our labour, if that they—

*Men.* What then? For me, this fellow speaks! What then? what then?

*First Cit.* Should by the cornucopia belly be restrain'd.

Who is the sink of the body,—

*Men.* Well, what then? *First Cit.* The former agents, if they did complain.

What could the belly answer?

*Men.* I will tell you: If you'll bestow a small—of what you have little—

Patience awhile, you'll hear the belly's answer. *First Cit.* Ye're long about it.

*Men.* Note me this, good friend: Your most grave belly was deliberate,

Not rash like his accusers, and thus answer'd: 'True is it, my incorporate friends, quoth he, 'That I receive the general food at first,

Which you do live upon; and fit it is, Because I am the store-house and the shop

Of the whole body; but, if you do remember, I send it through the rivers of your blood,

Even to the court, the heart, to the seat of the brain;

And, through the cranks and offices of man, The strongest nerves and small inferior veins

From me receive that natural competency Whereby they live; and though that all at once,

You, my good friends,—this says the belly, mark me,—

*First Cit.* Ay, sir; well, well. *Men.* Though all at once cannot

See what I do deliver out to each, Yet I can make my audit up, that all

From me do back receive the flour of all, And leave me but the bran.' What say you to 't?

*First Cit.* It was an answer: how say you this?

*Men.* The senators of Rome are this good belly,

And you the mutinous members; for examine Their counsels and their cares, digest things

rightly, Touching the weal of the common, you shall find

No public benefit which you receive But it proceeds or comes from things to you,

And no way from yourselves. What do you think,

You, the great toe of this assembly?

*First Cit.* I the great toe! why the great toe!

*Men.* For that, being one of the lowest, basest, poorest

Of this most wise rebellion, thou go'st foremost; Thou rascal, that art worst in blood to run,

Lead'st first to win some vantage. But make you ready your stink balls and stink

Rome and her rats are at the point of biting. The one side must have tale.

*Enter CAIUS MARCIUS.*

*Men.* Thanks. What's the news? What's the news? What's the news?



The Volscians have much corn; take these rats  
thither

To gnaw their garners. Worshipful mutiners,  
Your valour puts well forth: pray, follow.

[*Citizens steal away. Exeunt all but  
Sicinius and Brutus.*]

*Sic.* Was ever man so proud as is this  
Marcus?

*Br.* He has no equal.

*Sic.* When we were chosen tribunes for the  
people,—

*Br.* Mark'd you his lip and eyes?

*Sic.* Nay, but his taunts.

*Br.* Being moved, he will not spare to gird  
the gods.

*Sic.* Be-mock the modest moon.

*Br.* The present wars devour him: he is  
grown  
Too proud to be so valiant.

*Sic.* Such a nature,  
Ticked with good success, disdains the shadow  
Which he trends on at noon: but I do wonder  
His insolence can brook to be commanded  
Under Cominius.

*Br.* Fame, at the which he aims,  
In whom already he's well grac'd, can not  
Better be held nor more attain'd than by  
A place below the first: for what miscarries  
Shall be the general's fault, though he perform  
To the utmost of a man, and giddy censure  
Will then cry out of Marcus 'O, if he  
Had borne the business!'

*Sic.* Besides, if things go well,  
Opinion that so sticks on Marcus shall  
Of his demerits rob Cominius.

*Br.* Come:  
Half all Cominius' honours are to Marcus.  
Though Marcus earn'd them not, and all his  
faults

To Marcus shall be honours, though indeed  
In aught he merit not.

*Sic.* Let's hence, and hear  
How the dispatch is made, and in what fashion,  
More than his singularity, he goes  
Upon this present action.

*Br.* Let's along. [*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE II. Corioli. The Senate-house.

Enter TULLUS AUFIDIUS and certain Senators.

*First Sen.* So, your opinion is, Aufidius,  
That they of Rome are enter'd in our counsels  
And know how we proceed.

*Auf.* Is it not yours?  
What ever have been thought on in this state,  
That could be brought to bodily act ere Rome  
Had circumvention? 'Tis not four days gone  
Since I heard thence; these are the words:

I think  
I have the letter here; yea, here it is.  
[*Reads.*] 'They have press'd a power, but it is  
not known

Whether for east or west: the dearth is great; so  
The people mutinous; and it is rumour'd,  
Cominius, Marcus your old enemy,  
Who is of Rome worse hated than of you,  
And Titus Lartius, a most valiant Roman,

These three lead on this preparation  
Whither 'tis bent: most likely 'tis for you:  
Consider of it.'

*First Sen.* Our army's in the field:

We never yet made doubt but Rome was ready  
To answer us.

*Auf.* Nor did you think it folly  
To keep your great pretences veil'd till when?  
They needs must show themselves; which in  
the hatching,

It seem'd, appear'd to Rome. By the discovery  
We shall be shorten'd in our aim, which was  
To take in many towns ere almost Rome  
Should know we were afoot.

*Sec. Sen.* Noble Aufidius,  
Take your commission; hie you to your hands:  
Let us alone to guard Corioli:  
If they set down before's, for the remove  
Bring up your army; but, I think, you'll find  
They've not prepared for us.

*Auf.* O, doubt not that; so  
I speak from certainties. Nay, more,  
Some parcels of their power are forth already,  
And only hitherward. I leave your honours.  
If we and Caius Marcus chance to meet,  
Tis sworn between us we shall ever strike  
Till one can do no more.

*All.* The gods assist you!

*Auf.* And keep your honours safe!

*First Sen.* Farewell.

*Sec. Sen.* Farewell. [*Exeunt.*]

*All.* Farewell.

#### SCENE III. Rome. A room in Marcus' house.

Enter VOLUNIA and VIRGILIA: they set  
them down on two low stools, and sew.

*Vol.* I pray you, daughter, sing; or express  
yourself in a more comfortable sort: if my son  
were my husband, I should freelier rejoice in  
that absence wherein he won honour than in  
the embracements of his bed where he would  
show most love. When yet he was but tender-  
bodied and the only son of my womb, when  
youth with comeliness plucked all gaze his  
way, when for a day of kings' entreaties a  
mother should not sell him an hour from her  
beholding, I, considering how honour would  
become such a person, that it was no better  
than picture-like to hang by the wall, if remembrance  
made it not stir, was pleased to let him seek  
danger where he was like to find fame. To a  
cruel war I sent him; from whence he re-  
turned, his brows bound with oak. I tell thee,  
daughter, I sprang not more in joy at first  
hearing he was a man-child than now in first  
seeing he had proved himself a man.

*Vir.* But had he died in his mother's  
maiden; how then?

*Vol.* Then his good report should have  
my son; I therein would have  
Hear me profess sincerely: had I  
each in my love alike and none  
thine and my good Marcus, I  
eleven die nobly for their country  
voluptuously snuff'd out of action.

*Enter a Gentlewoman.*

*Gent.* Madam, the Lady Valeria is come to visit you.

*Vir.* Heccech you, give me leave to retire myself.

*Vol.* Indeed, you shall not.

*Met.* I hear hither your husband's drum, See him pluck Aufidius down by the hair, As children from a bear, the Volscies shunning him:

*Met.* I see him stamp thus, and call thus: 'Come on, you cowards! you were got in fear, Though you were born in Rome:' his bloody brow

With his mail'd hand then wiping, forth he goes,

Like to a harvest-man that's task'd to mow Or all or lose his hire.

*Vir.* His bloody brow! O Jupiter, no blood!

*Vol.* Away, you fool! it more becomes a man

Than gilt his trophy: the breasts of Hecuba, When she did suckle Hector, look'd not lovelier Than Hector's forehead when it spit forth blood At Grecian sword, contemning. Tell Valeria, We are fit to bid her welcome. *[Exit Gent.]*

*Vir.* Heavens bless my lord from fell Aufidius!

*Vol.* He'll beat Aufidius' head below his knee And tread upon his neck.

*Enter VALERIA, with an Usher and Gentlewoman.*

*Val.* My ladies both, good day to you.

*Vol.* Sweet madam.

*Vir.* I am glad to see your ladyship.

*Val.* How do you both? you are manifest house-keepers. What are you sewing here? A fine spot, in good faith. How does your little son?

*Vir.* I thank your ladyship; well, good madam.

*Vol.* He had rather see the swords, and hear a drum, than look upon his schoolmaster.

*Val.* O my word, the father's son: I'll swear, 'tis a very pretty boy. O my troth, I looked upon him o' Wednesday half an hour together: has such a confirmed countenance. I saw him run after a gilded butterfly; and when he caught it, he let it go again; and after it again; and over and over he comes, and up again; catch'd it again; or whether his fall enamour'd him, or how 'twas, he did so set his teeth and tear it; O, I warrant, how he marmozed it!

*Vol.* Ours on his father's moods.

*Val.* Indeed, 'tis a noble child.

*Vir.* A cruel madam.

*Val.* Come, lay aside your stitchery; I must have you play the little housewife with me this afternoon.

*Vir.* No, good madam; I will not out of doors.

*Val.* Not out of doors!

*Vir.* No, madam, she shall.

*Val.* Indeed, no, by your patience; I'll not

over the threshold till my lord return from the wars.

*Val.* Fie, you confine yourself most unreasonably: come, you must go visit the good lady that lies in.

*Vir.* I will wish her speedy strength, and visit her with my prayers; but I cannot go thither.

*Vol.* Why, I pray you?

*Vir.* 'Tis not to save labour, nor that I want love.

*Val.* You would be another Penelope: yet, they say, all the yarn she spun in Ulysses' absence did but fill Ithaca full of moths. Come; I would your cambric were sensible as your finger, that you might leave pricking it for pity. Come, you shall go with us.

*Vir.* No, good madam, pardon me; indeed, I will not forth.

*Vol.* In truth, la, go with me; and I'll tell you excellent news of your husband.

*Vir.* O, good madam, there can be none yet.

*Val.* Verily, I do not jest with you; there came news from him last night.

*Vir.* Indeed, madam?

*Val.* In earnest, it's true; I heard a senator speak it. Thus it is: the Volscies have an army forth; against whom Cominius the general is gone, with one part of our Roman power; your lord and Titus Lartius are set down before their city Corioli; they nothing doubt prevailing and to make it brief wars. 'Tis true, on mine honour; and so, I pray, go with us.

*Vir.* Give me excuse, good madam; I will obey you in every thing hereafter.

*Vol.* Let her alone, lady: as she is now, she will but disease our better mirth.

*Val.* In truth, I think she would. Fare you well, then. Come, good sweet lady. Prithia, Virginia, turn thy solemnness out o' door, and go along with us.

*Vir.* No, at a word, madam; indeed, I must not. I wish you much mirth.

*Val.* Well, then, farewell.

*[Exeunt.]*

#### SCENE IV. Before Corioli.

*Enter, with drum and colours, MARCIUS, TITUS LARTIUS, Captains and Soldiers. To them a Messenger.*

*Mar.* Yonder comes news. A wager they have met.

*Lart.* My horse to yours, no.

*Mar.* 'Tis done. Agreed.

*Lart.* Agreed.

*Mar.* Say, has our general met the enemy?

*Men.* They lie in view; but have not spoke as yet.

*Lart.* So, the good horse to mine.

*Mar.* I'll buy him of you.

*Lart.* No, I'll not sell nor give him: and you him I will!

For half a hundred years. Summon the town.

*Mar.* How far off lie these armies?

*Men.* Within this mile and half.

*Mar.* Then shall we hear their drums, and they come.

Now, Mars, I prithee, make us quick in work.

## SCENE IV]

## CORIOLANUS

That we with smoking swords may march from  
hence,  
To help our fielded friends! Come, blow thy  
blast.

*They sound a parley. Enter two Senators  
with others on the walls.*

Tullus Aufidius, is he within your walls?

*First Sen.* No, nor a man that fears you less  
than he.

That's lesser than a little. [*Drums afar off.*]

Hark! our drums

Are bringing forth our youth. We'll break our  
walls,

Rather than they shall pound us up: our gates,  
Which yet seem shut, we have but pinn'd with  
rushes;

They'll open of themselves. [*Alarum afar off.*]

Hark you, far off!

There is Aufidius; list, what work he makes so  
Amongst your cloven army.

*Mar.* O, they are at it!

*Lart.* Their noise be our instruction. Lad-  
ders, ho!

*Enter the army of the Volsces.*

*Mar.* They fear us not, but issue forth their  
city.

Now put your shields before your hearts, and  
fight

With hearts more proof than shields. Advance,  
brave Titus:

They do disdain us much beyond our thoughts,  
Which makes me sweat with wrath. Come on,  
my fellows:

He that retires, I'll take him for a Volscian,  
and he shall feel mine edge.

*Alarum.* The Romans are beat back to their  
trenches. *Re-enter MARCIUS, cursing.*

*Mar.* All the contagion of the south light  
on you,

You shames of Rome! you herd of—Boils and  
plagues

Plaster you o'er, that you may be abhorrd  
Further than seen and one infect another

Against the wind a mile! You souls of geese,  
That bear the shapes of men, how have you

run  
From slaves that apes would beat! Pluto and

hell!

All hurt behind; backs red, and faces pale  
With flight and agued fear! Mend and charge

home,  
Or, by the fires of heaven, I'll leave the foe

And make my wars on you: look to't: come  
on;

If you'll stand fast, we'll beat them to their  
wives,

As they us to our trenches followed.

*Another alarum.* The Volscians fly, and  
MARCUS follows them to the gates.

So, now the gates are open: now prove good  
seconds:

Tis for the followers fortune widens them,  
Not for the slayers: thank me, and do the like.

*(Enters the gates.)*

*First Sol.* Boor-hardiness; not I.

*Sec. Sol.* Nor I.

[*Marcus is shut in.*]

*First Sol.* See, they have shut him in.

*All.* To the pot, I warrant him.

[*Alarum continues*]

*Re-enter TITUS LARTIUS.*

*Lart.* What is become of Marcus?

*All.* Slain, sir, doubtless.

*First Sol.* Following the fliers at the very  
heels,

With them he enters; who, upon the sudden, so  
'tapp'd to their gates: he is himself alone,

To answer all the city.

*Lart.* O noble fellow!

Who sensibly outdares his senseless sword,  
And, when it bows, stands up. Thou art left,

Marcus:

A carbuncle entire, as big as thou art,  
Were not so rich a jewel. Thou wast a soldier

Even to Cato's wish, not fierce and terrible  
Only in strokes; but, with thy grim looks and

The thunder-like percussion of thy sounds,  
Thou madest thine enemies shake, as if the

world

Were feverous and did tremble.

*Re-enter MARCIUS, bleeding, assaulted by the  
enemy.*

*First Sol.* Look, sir,

*Lart.* O, 'tis Marcus!

Let's fetch him off, or make remain alike.

[*They fight, and all enter the city.*]

## SCENE V. Corioli. A street.

*Enter certain Romans, with spoils.*

*First Rom.* This will I carry to Rome.

*Sec. Rom.* And I this.

*Third Rom.* A murrain on't! I took this  
for silver. [*Alarum continues still afar off.*]

*Enter MARCIUS and TITUS LARTIUS with  
a trumpet.*

*Mar.* See here these movers that do prize  
their hours

At a crack'd drachma! Cushions, leaden spoons,  
Irons of a doit, doublets that hangmen would

Bury with those that wore them, these base  
slaves,

Ere yet the fight be done, pack up: down with  
them!

And hark, what noise the general makes! To  
him!

There is the man of my soul's hate, Aufidius,  
Piercing our Romans: then, valiant Titus, take

Convenient numbers to make good the city:

Whilst I, with those that have the spirit, will  
hunts

To help Cominius.

*Lart.* Worthy sir, thou bleed'st;

Thy exercise hath been too violent  
For a second course of fight.

*Mar.* Sir, you're mistaken:

My work hath yet not warm'd me: thus you  
well;

The blood I drop is rather physical

Then dangerous to me: to Aufidius thus so  
I will appear, and fight.

*Lart.* Now the fair goddess, Fortune,  
Fall deep in love with thee; and her great  
charms

Misguide thy opposers' swords! Bold gentle-  
man,

Prosperity be thy page!

*Mar.* Thy friend no less  
Than those she placeth highest! So, farewell.

*Lart.* Thou worthiest Marcius!  
[*Exit Marcius.*]

Go sound thy trumpet in the market-place;

Call thither all the officers of the town,

Where they shall know our mind: away!

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI. *Near the camp of Cominius.*

*Enter COMINIUS, as it were in retire, with  
soldiers.*

*Com.* Breathe you, my friends: well fought;  
we are come off

Like Romans, neither foolish in our stands,  
Nor cowardly in retire: believe me, sirs,

We shall be charged again. Whiles we have  
struck,

By interims and conveying gusts we have heard  
The charges of our friends. Ye Roman gods!

Lead their successes as we wish our own,  
That both our powers, with smiling fronts

encountering,

May give you thankful sacrifice.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Thy news!*  
*Mess.* The citizens of Corioli have issued, 10  
And given to Lartius and to Marcius battle:

I saw our party to their trenches driven,  
And then I came away.

*Com.* Though thou speak'st truth,  
Methinks thou speak'st not well. How long

is't since!

*Mess.* Above an hour, my lord.

*Com.* 'Tis not a mile; briefly we heard their  
drums:

How couldst thou in a mile confound an hour,  
And bring thy news so late?

*Mess.* Spies of the Volscians  
Hold me in chase, that I was forced to wheel

Three or four miles about, else had I, sir, 20  
Half an hour since brought my report.

*Com.* Who's yonder,  
That does appear as he were slay'd? O gods!

He has the stamp of Marcius; and I have  
Before-time seen him thus.

*Mar.* [Within] Come I too late?

*Com.* The shepherd knows not thunder from  
a labor

More than I know the sound of Marcius' tongue  
From every meaner man.

*Enter MARCIUS.*

*Mar.* Come I too late?

*Com.* Ay, if you come not in the blood of  
others,

But mangled in your own.

*Mar.* O, let me clip ye

In arms as sound as when I woo'd, in heart,  
As merry as when our nuptial day was done,

And tapers burn'd to bedward!

*Com.* Flower of warlike

How is't with Titus Lartius?

*Mar.* As with a man busied about decrees:  
Condemning some to death, and some to exile;

Ransoming him, or pitying, threatening the  
other;

Holding Corioli in the name of Rome,  
Even like a fawning greyhound in the leash,

To let him slip at will.

*Com.* Where is that slave  
Which told me they had beat you to your  
trenches?

*Mar.* Let him alone;  
He did inform the truth: but for our gentle-  
men,

The common file—a plague! tribunes for  
them!—

The mouse ne'er shunn'd the cat as they did  
budge

From rascals worse than they.

*Com.* But how prevail'd you?

*Mar.* Will the time serve to tell? I do not  
think.

Where is the enemy? are you lords of the field?

If not, why cease you till you are so?

*Com.* Marcius,  
We have at disadvantage fought and did  
retire to win our purpose.

*Mar.* How lies their battle? know you on  
which side

They have placed their men of trust?

*Com.* As I guess, Marcius,  
Their bands 't the vaward are the Antiates,  
Of their best trust; o'er them Aufidius,

Their very heart of hope.

*Mar.* I do beseech you,  
By all the battles wherein we have fought,  
By the blood we have shed together, by the vows

We have made to endure friends, that you  
directly

Set me against Aufidius and his Antiates;  
And that you not delay the present, but, 60  
Filling the air with swords advanced and darts,  
We prove this very hour.

*Com.* Though I could wish  
You were conducted to a gentle bath

And balms applied to you, yet dare I never  
Deny your asking: take your choice of those

That best can aid your action.

*Mar.* Those are they  
That most are willing. If any such be here—  
As it were sin to doubt—that love this painting

Wherein you see me arm'd; if any fear  
Loses his person than an ill report; 70  
If any think brave death outweighs bad life  
And that his country's dearer than himself;

Let him alone, or so many so minded,  
Wave thus, to express his disposition,

And follow Marcius.

[*They all about and wave their swords, take  
him up in their arms, and cast up their  
caps.*]

O, me alone! make you a sword of me!

If these shows be not outward, which of you



But is four Voices! none of you but is  
Able to bear against the great Aufidius  
A shield as hard as his. A certain number, so  
Though thanks to all, must I select from all:

the rest  
Shall bear the business in some other fight,  
As cause will be o'ey'd. Please you to march;  
'And four shall quickly draw out my command,  
Which men are best inclined.

Com. March on, my fellows:  
Make good this ostentation, and you shall  
Divide in all with us. [Exeunt.]

SCENE VII. *The gates of Corioli.*

TITUS LARTIUS, *having set a guard upon  
Corioli, going with drum and trumpet  
toward COMINIUS and CAIUS MARCIUS,  
enters with a Lieutenant, other Soldiers,  
and a Scout.*

Lart. So, let the ports be guarded: keep  
your duties,  
As I have set them down. If I do send,  
dispatch

Those centuries to our aid: the rest will serve  
For a short holding: if we lose the field,  
We cannot keep the town.

Lien. Fear not our care, sir.  
Lart. Hence, and shut your gates upon 'a.  
Our guider, come; to the Roman camp conduct us. [Exeunt.]

SCENE VIII. *A field of battle.*

Alarm as in battle. Enter, from opposite  
sides, MARCIUS and AUFIDIUS.

Mar. I'll fight with none but thee; for I do  
hate thee  
Worse than a promise-breaker.

Auf. We hate alike:  
Not Afric owns a serpent I abhor  
More than thy fame and envy. Fix thy foot.

Mar. Let the first budger die the other's  
slave,  
And the gods doom him after!

Auf. If I fly, Marcius,  
Holla me like a hare.

Mar. Within these three hours, Tullus,  
Alone I fought in your Corioli walls,  
And made what work I pleased: 'tis not my  
blood

Wherein thou seest me mask'd; for thy revenge  
Wrench up thy power to the highest.

Auf. Wert thou the Hector 't  
That was the whip of your bragg'd progeny,  
Thou shouldst not scape me here.

[They fight, and certain Voices come in  
the aid of Aufidius. Marcius fights till  
they are driven in breathless.]

Officious, and not valiant, you have shamed me  
In your condemned seconds. [Exeunt.]

SCENE IX. *The Roman camp.*

Flourish. Alarm. A retreat is sounded.  
Flourish. Enter, from one side, COMINIUS  
with the Romans; from the other side,  
MARCUS, with his arm in a scarf.

Com. If I should tell thee o'er this thy day's  
work,  
Thou'ldst not believe thy deeds: but I'll  
report it

Where senators shall mingle tears with smiles,  
Where great patricians shall attend and shrug,  
I'll the end admire, where ladies shall be frighted,  
And, gladly quaked, hear more; where the dull  
tribunes,

That, with the fusty plebeians, hate thine  
honours,

Shall say against their hearts 'We thank the  
gods

Our Rome hath such a soldier.'  
Yet earnest thou to a morsel of this feast, so  
Having fully dined before.

Enter TITUS LARTIUS, with his power, from  
the pursuit.

Lart. O general,  
Here is the steed, we the caparison:  
Hadst thou beheld—

Mar. Pray now, no more: my mother,  
Who has a charter to extol her blood,  
When she does praise me grieves me. I have  
done

As you have done; that's what I can; induced  
As you have been; that's for my country:  
He that has but effected his good will  
Hath overta'en mine act.

Com. You shall not be  
The grave of your deserving; Rome must know  
The value of her own: 'twere a concealment 't  
Worse than a theft, no less than a traducement,  
To hide your doings; and to silence that,  
Which, to the spire and top of praises vouch'd,  
Would seem but modest: therefore, I beseech  
you—

In sign of what you are, not to reward  
What you have done—before our army hear  
me.

Mar. I have some wounds upon me, and  
they smart

To hear themselves remember'd.

Com. Should they not,  
Well might they fester 'gainst ingratitude, so  
And tent themselves with death. Of all the  
honours,

Whereof we have ta'en good and good store,  
of all

The treasure in this field achieved and city,  
We render you the tenth, to be ta'en forth,  
Before the common distribution, at  
Your only choice.

Mar. I thank you, general;  
But cannot make my heart consent to take  
A bribe to pay my sword: I do refuse it;

And stand upon my common part with these  
That have beheld the doing.

[A long flourish. They all cry 'Marius!  
Marius!'] Exit up their eyes and  
lances: COMINIUS and LARTIUS stand  
back.

Mar. May these same instruments, which  
you profane,  
Never sound more! when drums and trumpets  
shall

I the field prove flatterers, let courts and cities be

Made all of false-faced soothing!  
When steel grows soft as the parasite's silk,  
Let him be made a coverture for the wars!  
No more, I say! For that I have not wash'd  
My nose that bled, or foil'd some debile wretch,—  
Which, without note, here's many else have  
done,—

You shout me forth  
In exclamations hyperbolic;  
As if I loved my little should be dicted  
In praises sauced with lies.

*Com.* Too modest are you;  
More cruel to your good report than grateful  
To us that give you truly: by your patience,  
If 'gainst yourself you be incensed, we'll put  
you,

Like one that means his proper harm, in  
manacles,  
Then reason safely with you. Therefore, be it  
known,

As to us, to all the world, that Caius Marcius  
Wears this war's garland: in token of the  
which,  
My noble steed, known to the camp, I give  
him,

With all his trim belonging; and from this  
time,

For what he did before Corioli, call him,  
With all the applause and clamour of the host,  
CAIUS MARCIUS CORIOLANUS! Bear  
The addition nobly even!

*[Flourish. Trumpets sound, and drums.*  
*Alc.* Caius Marcius Coriolanus!

*Cor.* I will go wash;  
And when my face is fair, you shall perceive  
Whether I blush or no: howbeit, I thank you.  
I mean to stride your steed, and at all times  
To undercrest your good addition  
To the fairness of my power.

*Com.* So, to our tent;  
Where, ere we do repose us, we will write  
To Rome of our success. You, Titus Lartius,  
Must to Corioli back: send us to Rome  
The best, with whom we may articulate,  
For their own good and ours.

*Lart.* I shall, my lord.  
*Cor.* The gods begin to mock me. I, that now  
Requ岸 most princely gifts, am bound to beg  
Of my lord general.

*Com.* Take't; 'tis yours. What is't?  
*Cor.* I sometimes lay here in Corioli  
At a poor man's house; he used me kindly:  
He cried to me; I saw him prisoner;  
But then Antidius was within my view,  
And when o'erwhelm'd my pity: I request you  
To give my poor host freedom.

*Com.* O, well beg'd!  
Were he the butcher of my son, he should  
Be free of this wind. Deliver him, Titus.

*Cor.* I will, my lord.  
*Com.* By Jupiter! forgot.  
I was weary; yea, my memory is tired.

*Com.* Go we to our tent;  
The matter we have done shall drive us:  
It should be sent to: come. *[Exeunt.]*

## SCENE X. The camp of the Volsces.

*A Flourish. Cornets. Enter TULLUS AUFIDIUS,  
bloody, with two or three Soldiers.*

*Auf.* The town is taken!  
*First Sol.* 'Twill be deliver'd back on good  
condition.

*Auf.* Condition!  
I would I were a Roman; for I cannot,  
Being a Volsc, be that I am. Condition!  
What good condition can a treaty find  
I the part that is at mercy? Five times, Mar-  
cius,

I have fought with thee; so often hast thou bea-  
tine,  
And wouldst do so, I think, should we en-  
counter

As often as we eat. By the elements,  
If e'er again I meet him beard to beard,  
He's mine, or I am his: mine emulation  
Hath not that honour in't it had; for where  
I thought to crush him in an equal force,  
True sword to sword, I'll potch at him some  
way  
Or wrath or craft may get him.

*First Sol.* He's the devil.  
*Auf.* Bolder, though not so subtle. My  
valour's poison'd

With only suffering stain by him; for him  
Shall fly out of itself: nor sleep nor sanctuary,  
Being naked, sick, nor fane nor Capital,  
The prayers of priests nor times of sacrifice,  
Embarquements all of fury, shall lift up  
Their rotten privilege and custom 'gainst  
My hate to Marcius: where I find him, were it  
At home, upon my brother's guard, even there,  
Against the hospitable canon, would I  
Wash my fierce hand in his heart. Go you to  
the city;

Learn how 'tis held; and what they are that  
must  
Be hostages for Rome.

*First Sol.* Will not you go?  
*Auf.* I am attended at the cypress grove: I  
pray you—

'Tis south the city mills—bring me word thither  
How the world goes, that to the peace of it  
I may spur on my journey.

*First Sol.* I shall, sir. *[Exeunt.]*

## ACT III

### SCENE I. Rome. A public place.

*Enter MENENIUS with the two Tribunes of  
the people, BRUTIUS and BAURUS.*

*Men.* The augurer tells me we shall have  
news to-night.

*Brut.* Good or bad?

*Men.* Not according to the prayer of the  
people, for they love not Marsius.

*Sic.* Nature teaches beasts to know their  
friends.

*Men.* Pray you, who does the wolf love?

*Sic.* The lamb.

*Men.* Ay, to devour him; so the angry  
plebeians would the noble Marcius.

*Bru.* He's a lamb indeed, that bees like a bear.

*Men.* He's a bear indeed, that lives like a lamb. You two are old men: tell me one thing that I shall ask you.

*Both.* Well, sir.

*Men.* In what enormity is Marcius poor in, that you two have not in abundance?

*Bru.* He's poor in no one fault, but stored with all.

*Sic.* Especially in pride.

*Bru.* And topping all others in boasting.

*Men.* This is strange now: do you two know how you are censured here in the city, I mean of us o' the right-hand file? do you?

*Both.* Why, how are we censured?

*Men.* Because you talk of pride now,—will you not be angry?

*Both.* Well, well, sir, well.

*Men.* Why, 'tis no great matter; for a very little thief of occasion will rob you of a great deal of patience: give your dispositions the reins, and be angry at your pleasures; at the ist, if you take it as a pleasure to you in being so. You blame Marcius for being proud?

*Bru.* We do it not alone, sir.

*Men.* I know you can do very little alone; for your helps are many, or else your actions would grow wondrous single: your abilities are too infant-like for doing much alone. You talk of pride: O that you could turn your eyes toward the napes of your necks, and make but an inferior survey of your good selves: O that you could!

*Bru.* What then, sir?

*Men.* Why, then you should discover a brace of unmeriting, proud, violent, testy magistrates, alias fools, as any in Rome.

*Sic.* Menenius, you are known well enough too.

*Men.* I am known to be a humorous patrician, and one that loves a cup of hot wine with not a drop of allaying Tiber in't: said to be something imperfect in favouring the first complaint; hasty and tinder-like upon too trivial motion; one that converses more with the buttock of the night than with the forehead of the morning: what I think I utter, and spend my malice in my breath. Meeting two such weakmen as you are—I cannot call you Lycurguses—if the drink you give me touch my palate adversely, I make a crooked face at it. I can't say your worships have delivered the matter well, when I find the ass in compound with the major part of your syllables: and though I must be content to hear with those that say you are reverend grave men, yet they lie deadly that tell you you have good faces. If you see this in the map of my microcosm, follows it that I am known well enough too? what harm can your blazon conspicuousness glean out of this character, if I be known well enough too?

*Bru.* Come, sir, come, we know you well enough.

*Men.* You know neither me, yourselves, nor any thing. You see ambitious for your heaven's caps and legs: you wear out a good wholesome forenoon in hearing a cause between an orange-

wife and a fustet-seller; and then rejoin the controversy of three pence to a second day of audience. When you are hearing a matter between party and party, if you chance to be pinched with the colic, you make faces like mummies; set up the bloody flag against all patience; and, in roaring for a chamber-pot, dismiss the controversy bleeding, the more entangled by your hearing: all the peace you make in their cause is, calling both the parties knaves. You are a pair of strange ones.

*Bru.* Come, come, you are well understood to be a perfecter giber for the table than a necessary benchman in the Capitol.

*Men.* Our very priests must become mockers, if they shall encounter such ridiculous subjects as you are. When you speak best unto the purpose, it is not worth the wagging of your beards; and your beards deserve not so honourable a grave as to stuff a butcher's cushion, or to be entombed in an ass's pack-addle. Yet you must be saying, Marcius is proud; who, in a cheap estimation, is worth all your predecessors since Denicion, though peradventure some of the best of 'em were hereditary hangmen. God-den to your worships: more of your conversation would infect my brain, being the heraldmen of the beastly plebeians: I will be bold to take my leave of you.

[*Brutus and Sicinius go aside.*]

*Enter VOLUMNIA, VIRGILIA, and VALENIA.*  
How now, my as fair as noble ladies,—and the moon, were she earthly, no nobler,—whither do you follow your eyes so fast?

*Vir.* Honourable Menenius, my boy Marcius approaches: for the love of Juno, let's go.

*Men.* Ha! Marcius coming home!

*Vol.* Ay, worthy Menenius; and with most prosperous approbation.

*Men.* Take my cap, Jupiter, and I thank thee. Hoo! Marcius coming home!

*Vir.* Nay, 'tis true.

*Vol.* Look, here's a letter from him: the state hath another, his wife another; and, I think, there's one at home for you.

*Men.* I will make my very house rook to-night: a letter for me!

*Vir.* Yes, certain, there's a letter for you; I say't.

*Men.* A letter for me! of seven years' health: in which time I will make a lip at the physician: the most sovereign prescription in Galen is but empiricist, and, to this preservative, of no better report than a horse-drench. Is he not wounded? he was wont to come home wounded.

*Vir.* O, no, no, no.

*Vol.* O, he is wounded; I thank the gods for't.

*Men.* So do I say, if it be not too much: brings a victory in his pocket? the wounds become him.

*Vol.* O, 'tis known: Marcius, he, the third time home with his wounds.

*Men.* O, 'tis known: Marcius, he, the third time home with his wounds.

*Men.* And 'twas time for him too, I'll warrant him that: an he had stayed by him, I would not have been so fiddled for all the chests in Corioli, and the gold that's in them. Is the senate possessed of this?

*Vol.* Good ladies, let's go. Yea, yea, yea; the senate has letters from the general, wherein he gives my son the whole name of the war: he hath in this action outdone his former deeds doubly. 251

*Vol.* In troth, there's wondrous things spoke of him.

*Men.* Wondrous! ay, I warrant you, and not without his true purchasing.

*Vir.* The gods grant them true!

*Vol.* True! pow, wow.

*Men.* True! I'll be sworn they are true. Where is he wounded? [*To the Tribunes*] O God save your good worships! Marcius is coming home: he has more cause to be proud. Where is he wounded?

*Vol.* I the shoulder and i' the left arm: there will be large cicatrices to show the people, when he shall stand for his place. He received in the sepulchre of Tarquin seven hurts i' the body.

*Men.* One i' the neck, and two i' the thigh, — there's nine that I know.

*Vol.* He had, before this last expedition, twenty-five wounds upon him. 150

*Men.* Now it's twenty-seven: every gash was an enemy's grave. [*A shout and flourish.*] Hark! i' the trumpet.

*Vol.* These are the banners of Marcius: before him he carries noise, and behind him he leaves tears: Death, that dark spirit, in's nery arm doth lie; Which, being advanced, declines, and then men die.

*A sennet. Trumpets sound. Enter COMINIUS the general, and TITUS LANTICH; between them, CORIOLANUS, crowned with an oak leaf garland; with Captains and Soldiers, and a Herald.*

*Her.* Know, Rome, that all alone Marcius did fight

Within Corioli gates: where he hath won, 180  
With fame, a name to Caius Marcius; these  
In honour follow Coriolanus.  
Welcome to Rome, renowned Coriolanus!

*All.* Welcome to Rome, renowned Coriolanus! [*Flourish.*]

*Cor.* No more of this; it does offend my heart:

Pray now, no more.

*Com.* Look, sir, your mother!

*Cor.* O,

You have, I know, petition'd all the gods  
For my prosperity! [*Kneels.*]

*Vol.* Nay, my good soldier, up;

My gentle Marcius, worthy Caius, and  
So soon obdying honour newly named, — 190  
What is it I — O, Marcius, must I call thee? —  
No, O, thy wife!

*Cor.* My gracious silence, hail!

Wouldst thou have laugh'd had I come coffin'd home,

That weep'd to see me triumph! Ah, my dear,  
Such eyes the widows in Corioli wear,  
And mothers that lack sons.

*Men.* Now, the gods crown thee!

*Cor.* And live you yet? [*To Valeria*] O my sweet lady, pardon.

*Vol.* I know not where to turn: O, welcome home:

And welcome, general, and ye're welcome all.

*Men.* A hundred thousand welcomes. I could weep

And I could laugh, I am light and heavy. 200  
Welcome.

A curse begin at very root on's heart,  
That is not glad to see thee! You are three  
That Rome should dote on: yet, by the faith of men,

We have some old crab-trees here at home that will not

Be grafted to your relish. Yet welcome, warriors:

We call a nettle but a nettle and

The faults of fools but folly.

*Com.* Ever right.

*Cor.* Menenius ever, ever.

*Herald.* Give way there, and go on!

*Cor.* [*To Valerius and Virgilia*] Your hand, and yours: 210

Ere in our own house I do shade my head,  
The good patricians must be visited;  
From whom I have received not only greetings,  
But with them change of honours.

*Vol.* I have lived  
To see inherited my very wishes

And the buildings of my fancy: only  
There's one thing wanting, which I doubt not

but

Our Rome will cast upon thee.

*Cor.* Know, good mother,  
I had rather be their servant in my way  
Than away with them in theirs.

*Com.* On, to the Capitol!

[*Flourish. Cornets. Excurs in state, as before. Brutus and Sicinius come forward.*]

*Bru.* All tongues speak of him, and the  
bleared sights 221

Are spectacl'd to see him: your prattling nurse  
Into a rapture lets her baby cry

While she chats him: the kitchen malkin pins  
Her richest lockram 'bout her sweeny neck.

Clambering the walls to eye him: stalls, bulls,  
windows,

Are smother'd up, leads fill'd, and ridges horsed  
With variable complexions, all agreeing

In earnestness to see him: and-shown flames  
Do press among the popular throngs and puff

To win a vulgar station: our veld danc'd  
Commit the war of white and demand 231

Of Phoebus' burning knees: such a pother  
As if that whatsoever god who lends him

Were still crapt into his human powers  
And gave him graceful person.

*Sic.* On the sudden,  
I warrant him cometh.

*Bru.* Then our office may,  
 luring his power, go sleep.  
*Sic.* Life cannot temperately transport his  
 honours  
 'rom where he should begin and end, but will  
 ose those he hath won.

*Bru.* In that there's comfort.  
*Sic.* Doubt not  
 he commoners, for whom we stand, but they  
 'pon their ancient malice will forget  
 'ith the least cause these his new honours,  
 which  
 hat he will give them make I as little question  
 as he is proud to do 't.

*Bru.* I heard him swear,  
 ere he to stand for consul, never would he  
 'ppear i' the market-place nor on him put  
 The napless vesture of humility;  
 Nor, showing, as the manner is, his wounds  
 To the people, beg their stinking breaths.

*Sic.* 'Tis right.  
*Bru.* It was his word: O, he would miss it  
 rather  
 Than carry it but by the suit of the gentry  
 to him  
 And the desire of the nobles.

*Sic.* I wish no better  
 Than have him hold that purpose and to put it  
 In execution.

*Bru.* 'Tis most like he will.  
*Sic.* It shall be to him then as our good  
 wills,  
 A sure destruction.

*Bru.* So it must fall out  
 To him or our authorities. For an end, 260  
 We must suggest the people in what hatred  
 He still hath held them; that to's power he  
 would  
 Have made them mules, silenced their pleaders  
 and

Dispropertied their freedoms, holding them,  
 In human action and capacity,  
 Of no more soul nor fitness for the world  
 Than camels in the war, who have their pro-  
 vaud

Only for bearing burdens, and sore blows  
 For sinking under them.

*Sic.* This, as you say, suggested  
 At some time when his soaring insolence 270  
 Shall touch the people—which time shall not  
 want,

If he be put upon 't; and that's as easy  
 As to set dogs on sheep—will be his fire  
 To kindle their dry stubble; and their blaze  
 Shall darken him for ever.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Bru.* What's the matter?  
*Mess.* You are sent for to the Capitol. 'Tis  
 thought  
 That Marcius shall be consul;  
 I have seen the dumb men throng to see him  
 and  
 The blind to hear him speak: matrons flung  
 gloves,  
 dies and made their smocks and handkerchiefs,  
 upon him as he pass'd: the nobles bended  
 As to Jove's statue, and the common people

A shower and thunder with their caps and  
 shouts:  
 I never saw the like.

*Bru.* Let's to the Capitol;  
 And carry with us ears and eyes for the time,  
 But hearts for the event.

*Sic.* Have with you. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II. *The same. The Capitol.*

*Enter two Officers, to lay cushions.*

*First Off.* Come, come, they are almost here.  
 How many stand for consulships?

*Sec. Off.* Three, they say: but 'tis thought  
 of every one Coriolanus will carry it.

*First Off.* That's a brave fellow; but he's  
 vengeance proud, and loves not the common  
 people.

*Sec. Off.* Faith, there have been many great  
 men that have flattered the people, who ne'er  
 loved them; and there be many that they have  
 loved, they know not wherefore: so that, if  
 they love they know not why, they hate upon  
 no better a ground: therefore, for Coriolanus  
 neither to care whether they love or hate him  
 manifests the true knowledge he has in their  
 disposition; and out of his noble carelessness  
 lets them plainly see 't.

*First Off.* If he did not care whether he had  
 their love or no, he waded indifferently 'twixt  
 doing them neither good nor harm; but he  
 seeks their hate with greater devotion than  
 they can render it him; and leaves nothing  
 undone that may fully discover him their oppo-  
 site. Now, to seem to affect the malice and  
 displeasure of the people is as bad as that which  
 he dislikes, to flatter them for their love.

*Sec. Off.* He hath deserved worthily of his  
 country: and his ascent is not by such easy  
 degrees as those who, having been supple and  
 courteous to the people, bonneted, without any  
 further deed to have them at all into their  
 estimation and report: but he hath so planted  
 his honours in their eyes, and his actions in  
 their hearts, that for their tongues to be silent,  
 and not confess so much, were a kind of in-  
 grateful injury: to report otherwise, were a  
 malice, that giving itself the lie, would pluck  
 reproof and rebuke from every ear that heard it.

*First Off.* No more of him; he's a worthy  
 man: make way, they are coming.

*A sennet. Enter, with Lictors before them,  
 COMINIUS the consul, MARCIUS, CORIO-  
 LANUS, Senators, SICINIUS and MENENIUS.  
 The Senators take their places; the Tribunes  
 take their places by themselves. Corio-  
 LANUS stands.*

*Mess.* Having determined of the Volscians  
 and

To send for Titus Lartius, it remains,  
 As the main point of this our after-sitting,  
 To gratify his noble service that  
 Hath thus stood for his country; therefore,  
 please you

Most reverend and grave sirs, to admit  
 The praetor consul, and his council  
 In our well-found succours, to agree

A little of that worthy work perform'd  
By Cains Marcius Coriolanus, whom  
We met here both to thank and to remember  
With honours like himself.

*First Sen.* Speak, good Cominius:  
Leave nothing out for length, and make us  
think

Rather our state's defective for requital  
Than we to stretch it out. *[To the Tribunes]*  
Masters o' the people,  
We do request your kindest ears, and after,  
Your loving motion toward the common body,  
To yield what passes here.

*Sic.* We are convened  
Upon a pleasing treaty, and have hearts  
Inclined to honour and advance  
The theme of our assembly.

*Br.* Which the rather  
We shall be blest to do, if he remember  
A kinder value of the people than  
He hath hereto prized them at.

*Men.* That's off, that's off;  
I would you rather had been silent. Please  
you

To hear Cominius speak?

*Br.* Most willingly;  
But yet my caution was more pertinent  
Than the rebuke you give it.

*Men.* He loves your people;  
But he him not to be their bullfellow.  
Worthy Cominius, speak. *[Coriolanus offers  
to go away.]* Nay, keep your place.

*First Sen.* Sit, Coriolanus; never shame to  
hear

What you have nobly done.  
*Cor.* Your honours' pardon:  
I had rather have my wounds to heal again  
Than hear say how I got them.

*Br.* Sir, I hope  
My words disbench'd you not.

*Cor.* No, sir; yet oft,  
When blows have made me stay, I fled from  
words.  
You soothed not, therefore hurt not: but your  
people,

I love them as they weigh.

*Men.* Pray now, sit down.  
*Cor.* I had rather have one scratch my  
head 'till the sun

When the alarm were struck than idly sit  
To hear my nothings monster'd. *[Exit.]*

*Men.* Masters of the people,  
Your multiplying spawn how can he flatter  
His thousand to one good one—when you

He had rather venture all his limbs for honour  
Than sit on 't to hear it? Proceed, Cominius.

*Br.* I shall lack voice: the deeds of Corio-

lanus not be utter'd fully. It is held  
That none in the children's virtue, and  
Most: unless the heavens if it be,

The great'st streak of sunset in the world  
Is only equal'd.

*As sixteen years,  
When Coriolanus made a head for Rome, he*

*And the mark of honour: set them dictator,*

Whom with all praise I point at, saw him fight,  
When with his Amazonian chin he drove  
The bristled lips before him: he beatrid  
An o'er-press'd Roman and i' the consul's  
view

Slew three opposers: Tarquin's i' the met,  
And struck him on his knee: that day's  
feats,

When he might act the woman in some scene,  
He proved best man i' the field, and for his  
need

Was brow-bound with the oak. His pupil age  
Man-enter'd thus, he waxed like a sea,  
And in the brunt of seventeen battles since  
He lurch'd all swords of the garland. For this  
last,

Before and in Corioli, let me say,  
I cannot speak him home: he stopp'd the files;  
And by his rare example made the coward  
Turn terror into sport: as weeks before  
A vessel under sail, so men obey'd

And fell below his stem: his sword, death's  
stamp,

Where it did mark, it took; from face to foot  
He was a thing of blood, whose every motion  
Was timed with dying cries: alone he enter'd  
The mortal gate of the city, which he painted  
With shunless destiny; silence came off,  
And with a sudden re-inforcement struck  
Corioli like a planet: now all 's his:

When, by and by, the din of war gan pierce  
His ready sense; then straight his doubled  
spirit

Re-quick'n'd what in flesh was fatigate,  
And to the battle came he; where he did  
Run reeking o'er the lives of men, as if  
'Twere a perpetual spoil: and till we call'd  
Both field and city ours, he never stood  
To ease his breast with panting.

*Men.* Worthy man!  
*First Sen.* He cannot but with measure fit  
the honours

Which we devise him.

*Com.* Our spoils he rich'd at,  
And look'd upon things precious as they were  
The common muck of the world: he covets  
less

Than misery itself would give; rewards  
His deeds with doing them, and is content  
To spend the time to end it.

*Men.* He's right noble:  
Let him be call'd for.

*First Sen.* Call Coriolanus.  
*Off.* He doth appear.

*Re-enter CORIOLANUS.*

*Men.* The senate, Coriolanus, are well pleased  
To make thee consul.

*Cor.* I do owe them still  
My life and services.

*Men.* It then remains  
That you do speak to the people.

*Cor.* I do beseech you,  
Let me o'erstep that custom, for I cannot  
Put on the gown, stand naked, and entreat them,  
For my wounds' sake, to give their anthems:  
please you

That I may pass this doing.

*Sic.* Sir, the people must have their voices; neither will they bate One jot of ceremony.

*Men.* Put them not to't: Pray you, go fit you to the custom and Take to you, as your predecessors have, Your honour with your form.

*Cor.* It is a part That I shall blush in acting, and might well Be taken from the people.

*Bru.* Mark you that? 150  
*Cor.* To brag unto them, thus I did, and thus;

Show them the unaching scars which I should hide.

As if I had received them for the hire Of their breath only!

*Men.* Do not stand upon't. We recommend to you, tribunes of the people, Our purpose to them; and to our noble consul Wish we all joy and honour.

*Senators.* To Coriolanus come all joy and honour! [*Flourish of cornets. Exit all but Sicinius and Brutus.*]

*Bru.* You see how he intends to use the people.

*Sic.* May they perceive's intent! He will require them, 160

As if he did condemn what he requested Should be in them to give.

*Bru.* Come, we'll inform them Of our proceedings here: on the market-place, I know, they do attend us. [*Exit.*]

### SCENE III. The same. The Forum.

*Enter seven or eight Citizens.*

*First Cit.* Once, if he do require our voices, we ought not to deny him.

*Sec. Cit.* We may, sir, if we will.

*Third Cit.* We have power in ourselves to do it, but it is a power that we have no power to do; for if he show us his wounds and tell us his deeds, we are to put our tongues into those wounds and speak for them; so, if he tell us his noble deeds, we must also tell him our noble acceptance of them. Ingratitude is monstrous, and for the multitude to be ingrateful, were to make a monster of the multitude; of the which we being members, should bring ourselves to be monstrous members.

*First Cit.* And to make us no better thought of, a little help will serve; for once we stood up about the corn, he himself stuck not to call us the many-headed multitude.

*Third Cit.* We have been called so of many; not that our heads are some brown, some black, some auburn, some bald, but that our wits are no diversely coloured: and truly I think if all our wits were to issue out of one skull, they would fly east, west, north, south, and their consent of one direct way should be at once to all the points of the compass.

*Sec. Cit.* Think you so? Which way do you judge my wit would fly?

*Third Cit.* May, your wit will not so soon out as another man's wits: he strongly weighed

up in a block-head, but if it were at liberty, 'twould, sure, southward.

*Sec. Cit.* Why that way?

*Third Cit.* To lose itself in a fog, where being three parts melted away with rotten dew, the fourth would return for conscience sake, to help to get thee a wife.

*Sec. Cit.* You are never without your tricks: you may, you may.

*Third Cit.* Are you all resolved to give your voices? But that's no matter, the greater part carries it. I say, if he would incline to the people, there was never a worthier man.

*Enter CORIOLANUS in a gown of humility, with MENENIUS.*

Here he comes, and in the gown of humility: mark his behaviour. We are not to stay all together, but to come by him where he stands, by ones, by twos, and by threes. He's to make his requests by particulars; wherein every one of us has a single honour, in giving him our own voices with our own tongues: therefore follow me, and I'll direct you how you shall go by him.

*All.* Content, content. [*Exeunt citizens.*]

*Men.* O sir, you are not right: have you not know?

The worthiest men have done 't!

*Cor.* What must I say? 'I pray, sir,—Plague upon't! I cannot bring My tongue to such a pace:—'Look, sir, my wounds!

I got them in my country's service, when Some certain of your brethren would'd and ran From the noise of our own drums.'

*Men.* O me, the gods! You must not speak of that: you must desire them 60

To think upon you.

*Cor.* Think upon me! hang 'em! I would they would forget me, like the virtues Which our divines lose by 'em.

*Men.* You'll mar all: I'll leave you: pray you, speak to 'em, I pray you, in wholesome manner. [*Exit.*]

*Cor.* Bid them wash their faces And keep their teeth clean. [*Re-enter two of the Citizens.*] So, here comes a brace. [*Re-enter a third Citizen.*]

You know the cause, sir, of my standing here. *Third Cit.* We do, sir; tell us what hath brought you to't.

*Cor.* Mine own desert.

*Sec. Cit.* Your own desert!

*Cor.* Ay, but not mine own desire.

*Third Cit.* How not your own desire?

*Cor.* No, sir, 'twas never my desire yet to trouble the poor with begging.

*Third Cit.* You must think, if we give you any thing, we hope to gain by you.

*Cor.* Well then, I pray, your price of the consulship!

*First Cit.* The price is to ask no price.

*Cor.* Gladly 'tis, I pray, let me then have wounds to show you, which shall be proof as private as your good voice, sir: what say you?

*Sec. Cit.* You shall ha't, worthy sir.

*Cor.* A match, sir. There's in all two worthy voices begged. I have your alms: adieu.

*Third Cit.* But this is something odd.

*Sec. Cit.* An 'twere to give again,—but 'tis no matter. *[Exeunt the three Citizens. go*

*Re-enter two other Citizens.*

*Cor.* Pray you now, if it may stand with the tune of your voices that I may be consul, I have here the customary gown.

*Fourth Cit.* You have deserved nobly of your country, and you have not deserved nobly.

*Cor.* Your enigma?

*Fourth Cit.* You have been a scourge to her enemies, you have been a rod to her friends; you have not indeed loved the common people.

*Cor.* You should account me the more virtuous that I have not been common in my love. I will, sir, flatter my sworn brother, the people, to learn a dearer estimation of them; 'tis a condition they account gentle: and since the wisdom of their choice is rather to have my hat than my heart, I will practise the insinuating nod and be off to them most counterfeitedly; that is, sir, I will counterfeit the bewitchment of some popular man and give it bountifully to the desirers. Therefore, beseech you, I may be consul.

*Fifth Cit.* We hope to find you here friend; and therefore give you our voices heartily.

*Fourth Cit.* You have received many wounds for your country.

*Cor.* I will not seal your knowledge with showing them. I will make much of your voices, and so trouble you no further.

*Both Cit.* The gods give you joy, sir, heartily! *[Exeunt.]*

*Cor.* Most sweet voices!

Better it is to die, better to starve,<sup>120</sup>  
Than crave the hire which first we do deserve.  
Why in this woolvish toge should I stand here,  
To beg of Hob and Dick, that do appear,  
Their needless vouches? Custom calls me to't;  
What custom wills, in all things should we  
do't.

The dust on antique time would lie unswept,  
And mountainous error be too highly heapt  
For truth to o'er-peer. Rather than fool it so,  
Let the high office and the honour go  
To one that would do thus. I am half through;  
The one part suffer'd, the other will I do. <sup>131</sup>

*Re-enter three Citizens more.*

Here come more voices.

Your voices: for your voices I have fought;  
Watch'd for your voices: for your voices bear  
Of wounds two dozen odd; battles thrice six  
I have seen and heard of; for your voices have  
Done many things, some less, some more:

*your voices:*

Indeed, I have done nobly, and cannot  
go without my honest man's voice. <sup>140</sup>

*Second Cit.* Therefore let him be consul:  
It will give him joy, and make him good  
to the people.

*All Cit.* Amen, amen. God save thee, noble  
consul! *[Exeunt.]*

*Cor.* Worthy voices!

*Re-enter MENENIUS, with BRUTUS and  
SICINIUS.*

*Men.* You have stood your limitation and  
the tribunes

Endue you with the people's voice: remains  
That, in the official marks invested, you  
Anon do meet the senate.

*Cor.* Is this done?

*Sic.* The custom of request you have dis-  
charged: <sup>19</sup>

The people do admit you, and are summon'd  
To meet anon, upon your approbation.

*Cor.* Where? at the senate-house?

*Sic.* There, Coriolanus.

*Cor.* May I change these garments?

*Sic.* You may, sir.

*Cor.* That I'll straight do; and, knowing  
myself again,

Repair to the senate-house.

*Men.* I'll keep you company. Will you  
along?

*Brut.* We stay here for the people.

*Sic.* Fare you well.

*[Exeunt Coriolanus and Menenius.]*

He has it now, and by his looks methinks <sup>20</sup>

'Tis warm at's heart.

*Brut.* With a proud heart he wore his  
humble weeds.

Will you dismiss the people?

*Re-enter Citizens.*

*Sic.* How now, my masters! have you  
chose this man?

*First Cit.* He has our voices, sir.

*Brut.* We pray the gods he may deserve  
your loves.

*Sec. Cit.* Amen, sir: to my poor unworthy  
notice,

He mock'd us when he begg'd our voices.

*Third Cit.* Certainly

He flouted us downright.

*First Cit.* No, 'tis his kind of speech: he  
did not mock us.

*Sec. Cit.* Not one amongst us, save your-  
self, but says

He used us scornfully: he should have shew'd  
us

His marks of merit, wounds received for's  
country.

*Sic.* Why, so he did, I am sure.

*Citizens.* No, no; no man saw 'em.

*Third Cit.* He said he had wounds, which  
he could show in private;

And with his hat, thus waving it in scorn,  
'I would be consul,' says he: 'aged custom,

But by your voices, will not so permit me;  
Your voices therefore.' When we granted that

Here was 'I thank you for your voices: thank  
you:

Your most sweet voices: now you have left  
your voices,

I have no further with you.' Was not this  
mockery?

*Sic.* Why either were you ignorant to see't,



Or, seeing it, of such childish friendliness  
To yield your voices!

*Bru.* Could you not have told him  
As you were lesson'd, when he had no power,  
But was a petty servant to the state,  
He was your enemy, ever spake against  
Your liberties and the charters that you bear  
I' the body of the weal; and now, arriving  
A place of potency and sway o' the state, 290  
If he should still malignantly remain  
Fast foe to the piebail, your voices might  
Be curses to yourselves! You should have  
said

That as his worthy deeds did claim no less  
Than what he stood for, so his gracious nature  
Would think upon you for your voices and  
Translate his malice towards you into love,  
Standing your friendly lord.

*Sic.* Thus to have said,  
As you were fore-advised, had touch'd his  
spirit 299

And tried his inclination: from him pluck'd  
Either his gracious promise, which you might,  
As cause had call'd you up, have held him to;  
Or else it would have gall'd his surly nature,  
Which easily endures not article  
Tying him to aught; so putting him to rage,  
You should have ta'en the advantage of his  
choler

And pass'd him unelect.

*Bru.* Did you perceive  
He did sollicit you in free contempt  
When he did need your loves, and do you think  
That his contempt shall not be bruising to you,  
When he hath power to crush? Why, had  
your bodies 311

No heart among you! or had you tongues to  
cry

Against the rectorship of judgement?

*Sic.* Have you  
Ere now denied the asker! and now again  
Of him that did not ask, but mock, bestow  
Your sued-for tongues?

*Third Cit.* He's not confirm'd; we may  
deny him yet.

*Sec. Cit.* And will deny him:  
I'll have five hundred voices of that sound.

*First Cit.* I twice five hundred and their  
friends to piece 'em. 320

*Bru.* Get you hence instantly, and tell those  
friends,

They have chose a consul that will from them  
take

Their liberties: make them of no more voice  
Than dogs that are as often beat for barking  
As therefore kept to do so.

*Sic.* Let them assemble,  
And on a safer judgement all revoke  
Your ignorant election; enforce his pride,  
And his old hate unto you; besides, forget not  
With what contempt he wore the humble weed,  
How in his suit he scorn'd you; but your loves,  
Thinking upon his services, took from you 321  
The

No impediment between, but that you must  
Cast your election on him.

*Sic.* Say, you chose him  
More after our commandment than as guided  
By your own true affections, and that your  
minds,

Pre-occupied with what you rather must do  
Than what you should, made you against the  
grain 341

To voice him consul: lay the fault on us.

*Bru.* Ay, spare us not. Say we read lectures  
to you,

How youngly he began to serve his country,  
How long continued, and what stock he springs  
of,

The noble house o' the Marciana, from whence  
came

That Ancus Marcius, Numa's daughter's son,  
Who, after great Hostilius, here was king:  
Of the same house Publius and Quintus were,  
That our best water brought by conduits hither;  
And [Censorinus,] nobly named so, 351  
Twice being [by the people chosen] censor,  
Was his great ancestor.

*Sic.* One thus descended,  
That hath beside well in his person wrought  
To be set high in place, we did commend  
To your remembrances: but you have found,  
Scaling his present bearing with his past,  
That he's your fixed enemy, and revoke  
Your sudden approbation.

*Bru.* Say, you ne'er had done't—  
Harp on that still—but by our putting on: 360  
And presently, when you have drawn your  
number,

Repair to the Capitol.

*All.* We will go: almost all  
Repent in their election. [Exeunt Citizens.]

*Bru.* Let them go on;  
This mutiny were better put in hazard,  
Than stay, past doubt, for greater:  
If, as his nature is, he fall in rage  
With their refusal, both observe and answer  
The vantage of his anger.

*Sic.* To the Capitol, come:  
We will be there before the stream o' the people;  
And this shall seem, as partly 'tis, their own,  
Which we have goaded onward. [Exeunt.]

## ACT III.

## SCENE I. Rome. A street.

*Cornelia.* Enter CORIOLANUS, MENENIUS, all  
the Centry, COMINIUS, TITUS LARTIUS, and  
other Senators.

*Cor.* Tullus Aufidius then had made new  
head!

*Lart.* He had, my lord; and that it was  
which caused  
Our swifter composition.

*Cor.* So then the Volscs stand but as at  
first,

Ready, when time shall prompt them, to make  
road

Upon's again.

*Com.* They are worn, lead cannot go,  
That we shall hardly in our ages see

*Bru.* Lay  
A fault on us, your tribunes; that we labour'd,

Their banners wave again.

*Cor.* Saw you Antianus?  
*Ant.* On safe-guard he came to me; and  
did come  
Against the voices, for they had so vilely  
Yielded the town: he is retired to Antium.

*Cor.* Spoke he of me?  
*Ant.* He did, my lord.  
*Cor.* How? what?  
*Ant.* How often he had met you, sword to

sword;  
That of all things upon the earth he hated  
Your person most, that he would pawn his  
fortunes  
To hopeless restitution, so he might  
Be call'd your vanquisher.

*Cor.* At Antium lives he?  
*Ant.* At Antium.  
*Cor.* I wish I had a cause to seek him there,  
To oppose his hatred fully. Welcome home. so

*Enter SICINIUS and BRUTUS.*

Behold, these are the tribunes of the people,  
The tongues of the common mouth: I do  
despise them;  
For they do speak them in authority,  
Against all noble sufferance.

*Sic.* Pass no further.  
*Cor.* Ha! what is that?  
*Brus.* It will be dangerous to go on: no  
further.

*Cor.* What makes this change?  
*Men.* The matter!  
*Com.* Hath he not pass'd the noble and the  
common?

*Brus.* Cominius, no.  
*Cor.* Have I had children's voices? so  
*First Sen.* Tribunes, give way: he shall to  
the market-place.

*Brus.* The people are incensed against him.  
*Sic.* Stop,

Or all will fall in broil.  
*Cor.* Are these your herd?  
Must these have voices, that can yield them  
now

And straight disclaim their tongues! What  
are your offices?  
You being their mouths, why rule you not  
their teeth!

Have you not set them on?  
*Men.* Be calm, be calm.

*Cor.* It is a purposed thing, and grows by  
plot.

To curb the will of the nobility:  
Suffer't, and live with such as cannot rule so  
Nor ever will be ruled.

*Brus.* Call't not a plot;  
The people cry you mock'd them, and of late,  
When corn was given them gratis, you repined;  
Scandal'd the supplicants for the people, call'd  
them

Time-pieces, flatterers, foes to nobleness.  
*Cor.* What, this was known before.

*Brus.* Not to them all.  
*Cor.* Have you inform'd them of this?

*Brus.* Now! I inform them!  
*Com.* You are like to

*Brus.* Not unlike,  
Each way, to better yours.

*Cor.* Why then should I be consul? By  
your clouds,  
Let me deserve so ill as you, and make me  
Your fellow tribune.

*Sic.* You show too much of that  
For which the people stir: if you will pass  
To where you are bound, you must inquire  
your way.

Which you are out of, with a gentler spirit,  
(Or never be so noble as a consul,  
Nor yoke with him for tribune.

*Men.* Let's be calm.  
*Com.* The people are abused; set on. This  
patterning

Revenues not Rome, nor has Coriolanus  
Deserved this so dishonour'd rub, laid falsely to  
The plain way of his merit.

*Cor.* Tell me of corn!  
This was my speech, and I will speak't again—

*Men.* Not now, not now.  
*First Sen.* Not in this heat, sir, now.

*Cor.* Now, as I live, I will. My nobler  
friends,

I crave their pardons:  
For the mutable, rank-scented many, let them  
Regard me as I do not flatter, and  
Therein behold themselves: I say again,

In soothing them, we nourish 'gainst our senate  
The cockle of rebellion, insolence, sedition, so  
Which we ourselves have plough'd for, sow'd,  
and scatter'd,

By mingling them with us, the honour'd  
number,  
Who lack not virtue, no, nor power, but that  
Which they have given to beggars.

*Men.* Well, no more.  
*First Sen.* No more words, we beseech you.

*Cor.* How! no more:  
As for my country I have shed my blood,  
Not fearing outward force, so shall my lungs  
Coin words till their decay against those  
menaces.

Which we disdain should't utter us, yet sought  
The very way to catch them.

*Brus.* You speak of the people, &  
As if you were a god to punish, not  
A man of their infirmity.

*Sic.* These well  
We let the people know't.

*Men.* What, what? his chol'er!  
*Cor.* Chol'er!

Were I as patient as the midnight sleep,  
By Jove, 'twould be my island!

*Sic.* It is a snail.  
That shall remain a poison where it is,  
Not poison any further.

*Cor.* Shall remain!  
Hear you this Tribune of the commons? mark  
you  
His absolute 'shall'?

*Com.* 'Twas from the canon,  
*Cor.* 'Twas from the canon!

O good but most unwise patrician! why,  
You grave but sickening sunstroke, have you this  
Given Hydra here to choose an officer,  
That with his pestiferous shall, being but

The horn and noise o' the monster's, wants not  
 spirit

To say he'll turn your current in a ditch,  
 And make your channel his! If he have power,  
 Then veil your ignorance; if none, awake  
 Your dangerous lenity. If you are learn'd,  
 Be not as common fools; if you are not,  
 Let them have cushions by you. You are ple-  
 beians,

If they be senators: and they are no less,  
 When, both your voices blended, the great'st  
 taste

Most palates theirs. They choose their magis-  
 trate,

And such a one as he, who puts his 'shall,'  
 His popular 'shall,' against a graver bench  
 Than ever frown'd in Greece. By Jove himself!  
 It makes the consuls base: and my soul aches  
 To know, when two authorities are up,  
 Neither supreme, how soon confusion  
 May enter 'twixt the gap of both and take  
 The one by the other.

*Com.* Well, on to the market-place.

*Cor.* Whoever gave that counsel, to give  
 forth

The corn o' the storehouse gratis, as 'twas used  
 Sometime in Greece.—

*Men.* Well, well, no more of that.

*Cor.* Though there the people had more  
 absolute power,

I say, they nourish'd disobedience, fed  
 The ruin of the state.

*Bru.* Whv, shall the people give  
 One that speaks thus their voice!

*Cor.* I'll give my reasons,  
 More worthier than their voices. They know  
 the corn

Was not our recompense, resting well assured  
 They ne'er did service for't: being press'd to  
 the war,

Even when the navel of the state was touch'd,  
 They would not thread the gates. This kind of  
 service

Did not deserve corn gratis. Being i' the war,  
 Their mutinies and revolts, wherein they show'd  
 Most valour, spoke not for them: the accusation  
 Which they have often made against the senate,  
 All cause unborn, could never be the motive  
 Of our so frank donation. Well, what then!

How shall this baser multitude digest  
 The senate's courtesy? Let deeds express  
 What's like to be their words: 'We did request  
 it;

We are the greater poll, and in true fear  
 They gave us our demands.' Thus we debate  
 The nature of our seats and make the rabble  
 Call our cases fears: which will in time  
 Break ope the locks o' the senate and bring in  
 The crows to peck the eagles.

*Men.* Come, enough.

*Bru.* Enough, with over-measure.

*Cor.* No, take more: 140

What may be sworn by, both divine and human,  
 Seal what I end wish! This double worship,  
 Where one part does disdain with cause, the  
 other

Inuit without all reason, where gentry, this,  
 wisdom,

Cannot conclude but by the yea and no  
 Of general ignorance.—It must omit  
 Real necessity, and give way the while  
 To unstable alightness: purpose so barr'd, it  
 follows.

Nothing is done to purpose. Therefore, beseech  
 you,—

You that will be less fearful than discreet, 150  
 That love the fundamental part of state  
 More than you doubt the change on't, that  
 prefer

A noble life before a long, and wish  
 To jump a body with a dangerous physic  
 That's sure of death without it, at once pluck  
 out

The multitudinous tongue; let them not lick  
 The sweet which is their poison: your dis-  
 honour

Mangles true judgement and bereaves the state  
 Of that integrity which should become't,  
 Not having the power to do the good it would,  
 For the ill which doth control't.

*Bru.* Has said enough. 162

*Sic.* Has spoken like a traitor, and shall  
 answer

As traitors do.

*Cor.* Thou wretch, despite o'erwhelm thee!  
 What should the people do with these bold  
 tribunes?

On whom depending, their obedience fails  
 To the greater bench: in a rebellion,  
 When what's not meet, but what must be,  
 was law,

Then were they chosen: in a better hour,  
 Let what is meet be said it must be meet, 170  
 And throw their power i' the dust.

*Bru.* Manifest treason!

*Sic.* This a consul! no.

*Bru.* The ediles, ho!

*Enter an Edile.*

Let him be apprehended.

*Sic.* Go, call the people: [Exit Edile] in  
 whose name myself

Attach thee as a traitorous innovator,  
 A foe to the public weal: obey, I charge thee,  
 And follow to thine answer.

*Cor.* Hence, old goat!

*Senators, &c.* We'll smite him.

*Com.* And sit, hands off.

*Cor.* Hence, rotten thing! or I shall shake  
 thy bones

Out of thy garments.

*Sic.* Help, ye citizens! 180

*Enter a rabble of Citizens (Plautians), with the  
 Ediles.*

*Men.* On both sides more respect.

*Sic.* Here's he that would take from you all  
 your power.

*Bru.* Seize him, ediles!

*Citizens.* Down with him! down with him!

*Senators, &c.* Weapons, weapons, weapons!

! "Ediles!" "Citizens!"

! "Ediles!" "Citizens!" "Coriolanus!" "Senators!"

"Peace, peace, peace!" "Down with him!"

*Men.* What is about to be! I am out of breath;  
Confusion's near; I cannot speak. You, tribunes  
To the people! Coriolanus, patience!  
Speak, good Sicinius.

*Sic.* Hear me, people; peace!  
*Citizens.* Let's hear our tribunes: peace!  
Speak, speak, speak.

*Sic.* You are at point to lose your liberties:  
Marcus would have all from you; Marcius,  
Whom late you have named for consul.

*Men.* Fie, fie, fie!  
This is the way to kindle, not to quench.

*First Sen.* To unbuild the city and to lay  
all flat.

*Sic.* What is the city but the people?  
*Citizens.* True,

The people are the city.

*Bru.* By the consent of all, we were es-  
tablish'd

The people's magistrates.

*Citizens.* You so remain.

*Men.* And so are like to do.

*Com.* That is the way to lay the city flat;

To bring the roof to the foundation,

And bury all, which yet distinctly ranges,  
In heaps and piles of ruin.

*Sic.* This deserves death.

*Bru.* Or let us stand to our authority,

Or let us lose it. We do here pronounce,

Upon the part of the people, in whose power

We were elected theirs, Marcius is worthy

Of present death.

*Sic.* Therefore lay hold of him;

Bear him to the rock Tarpeian, and from thence

Into destruction cast him.

*Bru.* Ediles, seize him!

*Citizens.* Yield, Marcius, yield!

*Men.* Hear me one word;

Beseech you, tribunes, hear me but a word.

*Ed.* Peace, peace!

*Men.* [To Brutus] Be that you seem, truly

your country's friend,

And temperately proceed to what you would

Thus violently redress.

*Bru.* Sir, those cold ways,

That seem like prudent helps, are very poisonous

Where the disease is violent. Lay hands upon

him,

And bear him to the rock.

*Cor.* No, I'll die here.

[Drawing his sword.] There's some among you have beheld me

fighting:

Come, try upon yourselves what you have

seen me.

*Men.* Down with that sword! Tribunes,

withdraw awhile.

*Bru.* Lay hands upon him.

*Men.* Help Marcius, help,

You that be noble; help him, young and old!

*Citizens.* Down with him, down with him!

[In this meeting, the Tribunes, the Ediles,

and the People, are beat in.

*Men.* Go, get you to your houses; be gone,

every!

All will be naught else.

*Sec. Sen.* Get you gone.  
*Com.* Stand fast;

We have as many friends as enemies.

*Men.* Shall it be put to that?

*First Sen.* The gods forbid!

I prithee, noble friend, home to thy house;

Leave us to cure this cause.

*Men.* For 'tis a sore upon us,

You cannot tent yourself: be gone, beseech

you.

*Com.* Come, sir, along with us.

*Cor.* I would they were barbarians—as they

are,

Though in Rome litter'd—not Romans—as they

are not,

Though calved I the porch o' the Capitol—

*Men.* Be gone; 240

Put not your worthy rage into your tongue;

One time will owe another.

*Cor.* On fair ground

I could beat forty of them.

*Men.* I could myself

Take up a brace o' the best of them; yes, the

two tribunes.

*Com.* But now 'tis odds beyond arithmetic;

And manhood is call'd foolery, when it stands

Against a falling fabric. Will you hence,

Before the tax return! whose rage doth rend

Like interrupted waters and o'erbear

What they are used to bear.

*Men.* Pray you, be gone: 250

I'll try whether my old wit be in request

With those that have but little: this must be

patch'd

With cloth of any colour.

*Com.* Nay, come away.

[Exit *Coriolanus*, *Cominius*, and others.]

*A Patrician.* This man has marr'd his

fortune.

*Men.* His nature is too noble for the world:

He would not flatter Neptune for his trident,

Or Jove for's power to thunder. His heart's

his mouth:

What his breast forges, that his tongue must

vent;

And, being angry, does forget that ever

he heard the name of death. [A noise within.]

Here's goodly work!

*Sec. Pat.* I would they were a-bed!

*Men.* I would they were in Tiber! What

the vengeance!

Could he not speak 'em fair!

*Re-enter* BAUTUS and SICINIUS, with the

rabble.

*Sic.* Where is this viper

That would depopulate the city and

Be every man himself?

*Men.* You worthy tribunes,—

*Sic.* He shall be thrown down the Tarpeian

rock

With rigorous hands: he hath restor'd law,

And therefore law shall scorn him further trial

Than the severity of the public power

Which he as sets at naught.

*First Cit.* He shall well know 270

The noble tribunes are the people's mouths,

And we their hands.

*Citizens.* He shall, sure on't.

*Men.* Sir, sir,—

*Sic.* Peace!

*Men.* Do not cry havoc, where you should but hunt

With modest warrant.

*Sic.* Sir, how comes 't that you Have help to make this rescue?

*Men.* Hear me speak: As I do know the consul's worthiness, so can I name his faults,—

*Sic.* Consul! what consul?

*Men.* The consul Coriolanus.

*Bru.* He consul! 280

*Citizens.* No, no, no, no, no.

*Men.* If, by the tribunes' leave, and yours, good people,

I may be heard, I would crave a word or two; The which shall turn you to no further harm Than so much loss of time.

*Sic.* Speak briefly then; For we are peremptory to dispatch

This viperous traitor: to eject him hence Were but one danger, and to keep him here (Our certain death: therefore it is decreed He dies to-night.

*Men.* Now the good gods forbid 290 That our renowned Rome, whose gratitude Towards her deserved children is enroll'd In Jove's own book, like an unnatural dam Should now eat up her own!

*Sic.* He's a disease that must be cut away.

*Men.* O, he's a limb that has but a disease; Mortal, to cut it off; to cure it, easy. What has he done to Rome that's worthy death?

Killing our enemies, the blood he hath lost— Which, I dare vouch, is more than that he hath, By many an ounce—he dropp'd it for his country; 301

And what is left, to lose it by his country, Were to us all, that do't and suffer it, A brand to the end o' the world.

*Sic.* This is clean kam.

*Bru.* Merely awry: when he did love his country,

It honour'd him. *Men.* The service of the foot Being once gangrened, is not then respected For what before it was.

*Bru.* We'll hear no more. Pursue him to his house, and pluck him thence; Let his infection, being of catching nature, 310 Spread further.

*Men.* One word more, one word. This tiger-footed rage, when it shall find The harm of unseason'd swiftness, will too late Tie leaden pounds to 's heels. Proceed by process;

Let parties, as he is beloved, break out, And sack great Rome with Romans.

*Bru.* If it were so,—

*Sic.* What do ye talk? Have we not had a taste of his obedience? Our sediles smote 't ourselves resist'd? Come.

*Men.* Consider this: he has been bred 't the wars 320

Since he could draw a sword, and is ill school'd

In bolted language; meal and bran together He throws without distinction. Give me leave, I'll go to him, and undertake to bring him Where he shall answer, by a lawful form, In peace, to his utmost peril.

*First Sen.* Noble tribunes,

It is the humane way: the other course Will prove too bloody, and the end of it Unknown to the beginning.

*Sic.* Noble Menenius, Be you then as the people's officer. 330

Masters, lay down your weapons.

*Bru.* Go not home.

*Sic.* Meet on the market-place. We'll attend you there:

Where, if you bring not Marcius, we'll proceed In our first way.

*Men.* I'll bring him to you.

[To the Senators] Let me desire your company: he must come,

Or what is worst will follow.

*First Sen.* Pray you, let's to him. [Exeunt.]

## SCENE II. A room in Coriolanus's house.

Enter CORIOLANUS with Patricians.

*Cor.* Let them pull all about mine ears, present me

Death on the wheel or at wild horses' heels, Or pile ten hills on the Tarpeian rock,

That the precipitation might down stretch Below the beam of sight, yet will I still

Be thus to them.

*A Patrician.* You do the nobler. *Cor.* I muse my mother

Does not approve me further, who was wont To call them woollen vassals, things created 30

To buy and sell with groats, to show bare heads In congregations, to yawn, be still and wonder,

When one but of my ordinance stood up To speak of peace or war.

## Enter VOLUMENTA.

I talk of you:

Why did you wish me milder? would you have me

False to my nature? Rather say I play The man I am.

*Vol.* O, sir, sir, sir, I would have had you put your power well on,

Before you had worn it out.

*Cor.* Let go. *Vol.* You might have been enough the you are,

With striving less to be so: *Cor.* I had been The thwartings of your ——— If

You had not show'd them ——— ye were dispos'd Ere they lack'd power to cross you.

*Cor.* Let them hang. *A Patrician.* Ay, and burn too.

## Enter MENENIUS and Senators.

*Men.* Come, come, you have been too rough, something too rough;

You must return and mend it.

*First Sen.* There's it: Unless, by not so doing, our good!

Observe in the midst, and perish.

*Vol.* Pray, be counsell'd:  
I have a heart as little apt as yours,  
But yet a brain that leads me use of anger  
To better vantage.

*Men.* Well said, noble woman!  
Before he should thus stoop to the herd, but  
that

The violent fit o' the time craves it as physic  
For the whole state, I would put mine armour on,  
Which I can scarcely bear.

*Cor.* What must I do?

*Men.* Return to the tribunes.

*Cor.* Well, what then? what then?

*Men.* Repent what you have spoke.

*Cor.* For them! I cannot do it to the gods;  
Must I then do't to them?

*Vol.* You are too absolute;  
Though therein you can never be too noble,  
But when extremities speak, I have heard  
you say

Honour and policy, like unsever'd friends,  
F the war do grow together: grant that, and  
tell me,

In peace what each of them by the other lose,  
That they combine not there.

*Cor.* Tush, tush!

*Men.* A good demand.

*Vol.* If it be honour in your wars to seem  
The same you are not, which, for your best  
ends,

You adopt your policy, how is it less or worse,  
That it shall hold companionship in peace  
With honour, as in war, since that to both  
It stands in like request?

*Cor.* Why force you this?

*Vol.* Because that now it lies you on to  
speak

To the people; not by your own instruction,  
Nor by the matter which your heart prompts  
you,

But with such words that are but rotes in  
Your tongue, though but bastards and syllables  
Of no allowance to your bosom's truth.

Now, this no more dishonours you at all  
Than to take in a town with gentle words,  
Which else would put you to your fortune and  
The hazard of much blood.

I would dissemble with my nature where  
My fortunes and my friends at stake required  
I should do so in honour: I am in this,

Your wife, your son, these senators, the nobles;  
And you will rather show our general louts  
How you can frown than spend a fawn upon 'em,

For the inheritance of their loves and safeguard  
Of what that want might ruin.

*Men.* Noble lady!  
Come, go with us; speak fair: you may save us so,  
Not what is dangerous present, but the loss  
Of what is past.

*Vol.* I prithee now, my son,  
Go to them, with this honest in thy hand;  
And thus far having stretch'd it—here be with  
them—

The knee bending the stones—for in such  
business

Admits in eloquence, and the eyes of the  
ignorant

More learned than the ears—waving thy head,  
Which often, thus, correcting thy stout heart,  
Now humble as the ripest mull!  
That wilt not hold the handling: or say to  
them,

Thou art their soldier, and being bred in broils,  
Hast not the soft way which, thou dost confess,  
Were fit for thee to use as they to  
In asking their good loves, but thou wilt frame  
Thyself, forsooth, hereafter theirs, so far  
As thou hast power and person.

*Men.* This put done,  
Even as she speaks, why, their hearts were  
yours;

For they have pardons, being ask'd, as free  
As words to little purpose.

*Vol.* Prithee now,  
Go, and be ruled: although I know thou hadst  
rather

Follow thine enemy in a fiery gulf  
Than flatter him in a bowet. Here is Corinius.

*Enter CORINIUS.*

*Cor.* I have been i' the market-place; and,  
sir, tis fit  
You make strong party, or defend yourself  
By calmness or by absence: all's in anger.

*Men.* Only fair speech.

*Cor.* I think 'twill serve, if he  
Can thereto frame his spirit.

*Vol.* He must, and will.  
I prithee now, say you will, and go about it.

*Cor.* Must I go show them my unbarbed  
scorn?

Must I with base tongue give my noble heart  
A lie that it must bear? Well, I will do't:  
Yet, were there but this single plot to lose,

This mould of Marcius, they to dust should  
grind it

And throw't against the wind. To the market-  
place!

You have put me now to such a part which  
never

I shall discharge to the life.

*Cor.* Come, come, we'll prompt you.

*Vol.* I prithee now, sweet son, as thou hast  
said

My praises made thee first a soldier, so,

To have my praises for this, perform a part

Thou hast not done before.

*Cor.* Well, I must do't:

Away, my disposition, and possess me  
Some harlot's spirit! my throat of war be  
turn'd

Which quired with my drum, into a pipe

Small as an eunuch, or the virgin voice

That babies lull asleep! the smiles of knaves

Tent in my cheeks, and schoolboys' tears take up

The glances of my sight! a beggar's tongue

Make motion through my lips, and my arm'd  
knees

Who bow'd but in my stirrup, bend like his

That hath received an aim! I will not do't, I  
Lest I surmise to honour mine own truth

And by my body's action teach my mind  
A most ignorant husband.

*Vol.* At thy choice, then:

To beg of thee, it is my more

Than thou of them. Come all to ruin; let  
Thy mother rather feel thy pride than fear  
Thy dangerous stoutness, for I mock at death  
With as big heart as thou. Do as thou list.  
Thy valiantness was mine, thou suck'st it  
from me,

But owe thy pride thyself.

Cor. Pray, be content: 130

Mother, I am going to the market-place;

Child me no more. I'll mountebank their  
loves,

Cog their hearts from them, and come home  
beloved

Of all the trades in Rome. Look, I am going:  
Commend me to my wife. I'll return consul;  
or never trust to what my tongue can do  
I the way of flattery further.

Vol. Do your will. [Exit.]

Com. Away! the tribunes do attend you:

arm yourself

To answer mildly; for they are prepared  
With accusations, as I hear, more strong 140

Than are upon you yet.

Cor. The word is 'mildly.' Pray you, let  
us go:

Let them accuse me by invention, I  
Will answer in mine honour.

Men. Ay, but mildly.

Cor. Well, mildly be it then. Mildly!

[Exit.]

### SCENE III. The same. The Forum.

Enter SICINIUS and BRUTUS.

Bru. In this point charge him home, that  
he affects

Trinitional power: if he evade us there,  
Confront him with his envy to the people,  
And that the spoil got on the Antates  
Was never distributed.

Enter an Edile.

What will he come?

Ed. He's coming.

Bru. How accompanied?

Ed. With old Menenius, and those senators  
That always favour'd him.

Sic. Have you a catalogue

Of all the voices that we have procured

Set down by the poll?

Ed. I have: 'tis ready. 150

Sic. Have you collected them by tribes?

Ed. I have.

Sic. Assemble presently the people hither;

And when they hear me say 'It shall be so

I the right and strength o' the commons,' be it  
either

For death, for fine, or banishment, then let  
them

If I say fine, cry 'Fine;' if death, cry 'Death.'

Insisting on the old prerogative

And power o' the truth o' the cause.

Ed. I shall inform them.

Bru. And when such time they have begun  
to cry,

Let them not cease, but with a din confound us  
Enforce the present execution.

Of what we chance to sentence.

Ed. Very well.

Sic. Make them be strong and ready for this  
hint,

When we shall hap to give 't them.

Bru. Go about it. [Exit Edile.]

Put him to choler straight; he hath been used

Ever to conquer, and to have his worth

Of contradiction: being once chafed, he cannot

Be rein'd again to temperance; then he speaks

What's in his heart; and that is those which  
looks

With us to break his neck.

Sic. Well, here he comes. 30

Enter CORIOLANUS, MENENIUS, and COMI-  
NIUS, with Senators and Patricians.

Men. Calmly, I do beseech you.

Cor. Ay, as an oyster, that for the poorest  
piece

Will bear the knave by the volume. The  
honour'd gods

Keep Rome in safety, and the chains of justice  
Supplied with worthy men; plant love among 's!

Through our large temples with the shows of  
peace,

And not our streets with war!

First Sen. Amen, amen.

Men. A noble wish.

Re-enter Edile, with Citizens.

Sic. Draw near, ye people.

Ed. List to your tribunes. Audience! peace,

I say! 40

Cor. First, hear me speak.

Both Tri. Well, say. Peace, ho!

Cor. Shall I be charged no further than this  
present?

Must all determine here?

Sic. I do demand,

If you subvert you to the people's voices,

Allow their officers and are content

To suffer lawful censure for such faults

As shall be proved upon you?

Cor. I am content.

Men. Lo, citizens, he says he is content;

The warlike service he has done, consider;

think 45

Upon the wounds his body bears, which show

Like graves the holy churchyard.

Cor. Scornful with silence,

Scars to move laughter only.

Men. Consider further,

That when he speaks not like a citizen,

You find him like a soldier; do not take

His rougher accents for malicious sounds;

But, as I say, such as become a soldier.

Rather than envy you.

Com. Well, well, no more.

Cor. What is the matter?

That being press'd for consul with full voice,

I am so dishonour'd that the very voice

You take it off again?

Sic. Answer to me.

Cor. Yes, then: 'tis true, I am so.

I charge you, that you have condemn'd

me.

From Rome all senator's office and to what

Youself into a power tyrannical;  
For which you are a traitor to the people.

*Cor.* How! traitor!

*Men.* Nay, temperately; your promise.

*Cor.* The fires! the lowest hell fold-in the people!

Call me their traitor! Thou injurious tribune!  
Within thine eyes sat twenty thousand deaths,  
In thy hands clutch'd as many millions, in  
— lying tongue both numbers, I would say  
— 'liest' unto thee with a voice as free  
As I do pray the gods.

*Sic.* Mark you this, people?

*Citizens.* To the rock, to the rock with him!

*Sic.* Peace!

We need not put new matter to his charge;  
What you have seen him do and heard him  
— speak,

Beating your officers, cursing yourselves,  
— ing laws with strokes and here defying  
— whose great power must try him; even  
— this,

So criminal and in such capital kind,  
Deserves the extremest death.

*Bru.* But since he hath  
Served well for Rome,—

*Cor.* What do you prate of service?

*Bru.* I talk of that, that know it.

*Cor.* You!

*Men.* Is this the promise that you made  
your mother?

*Com.* Know, I pray you,—

*Cor.* I'll know no further:

Let them pronounce the steep Tarpeian death,  
Vagabond exile, flogging, pent to linger  
But with a grain a day, I would not buy  
— Their mercy at the price of one fair word;  
Nor check my courage for what they can give,  
To have't with saying 'Good morrow.'

*Sic.* For that he has,  
As much as in him lies, from time to time  
Envied against the people, seeking means  
To pluck away their power, as now at last  
Given hostile strokes, and that not in the  
— presence

Of dreaded justice, but on the ministers  
That do distribute it; in the name of the people  
And in the power of us the tribunes, we,  
— Even from this instant, banish him our city,  
In peril of precipitation  
From off the rock Tarpeian never more  
To enter our Rome gates: if the people's name,  
I say it shall be so.

*Citizens.* It shall be so, it shall be so; let  
him away!

He's banish'd, and it shall be so.

*Com.* Hear me, my masters, and my common  
— friends,—

*Sic.* He's sentenced; no more hearing.

*Com.* Let me speak:

I have been consul, and can show for Rome

— Her enemies marks upon me. I do love

My country's good with a respect more tender,

More holy and profound, than mine own life,

My dear wife's estimate, her womb's increase,

And mine own of my loins; then if I would

— speak that,—

— We know your drift; speak what?

*Bru.* There's no more to be said, but he is  
banish'd.

As enemy to the people and his country:

It shall be so.

*Citizens.* It shall be so, it shall be so.

*Cor.* You common cry of curs! whose breath  
I hate

As reek of the rotten fens, whose loves I prize

As the dead carcases of unburied men

That do corrupt my air, I banish!

And here remain with your uncertainty!

Let every feeble rumour shake your hearts!

Your enemies, with nodding of their plumes,

Fan you into despair! Have the power still

To banish your defenders; till at length

Your ignorance, which finds not till it feels,

Making not reservation of yourselves,

Still your own foes, deliver you as most

Abused captives to some nation

That won you without blows! Despising,

For you, the city, thus I turn my back:

There is a world elsewhere.

[*Exeunt Coriolanus, Cominius, Menenius, Senators, and Patricians.*]

*Ed.* The people's enemy is gone, is gone!

*Citizens.* Our enemy is banish'd! he is gone!

Hoo! hoo! [*Shouting, and throwing up*

*their caps.*]

*Sic.* Go, see him out at gates, and follow

him,

As he hath follow'd you, with all despite;

Give him deserved vexation. Let a guard

Attend us through the city.

*Citizens.* Come, come; let's see him out at

gates; come.

The gods preserve our noble tribunes! Come.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. *Rome. Before a gate of the city.*

*Enter CORIOLANUS, VOLUMNIA, VIRGILIA, MENENIUS, COMINIUS, with the young Nobility of Rome.*

*Cor.* Come, leave your tears: a brief farewell: the beast

With many heads butts me away. Nay, mother,

Where is your ancient courage? you were used

To say extremity was the trier of spirits;

That common chances common men could bear;

That when the sea was calm all boats alike

Show'd mastership in floating; fortune's blows,

When most struck home, being gentle wounded,

craves

A noble cunning: you were used to load me

With precepts that would make invincible

The heart that could't them.

*Vir.* O heavens!

*Cor.* Nay, I prithee, woman,—

*Vol.* Now the red pestilence strikes all trades

in Rome,

And occupations perish!

*Cor.* What, what, what!

I shall be loved when I am lack'd. Nay, mother,

Resume that spirit, when you were wont to say,

If you had been the wife of Hercules,

Six of his labours you'd have done, and saved

Your husband so much sweat. *Cominius.*



Droop not; adieu. Farewell, my wife, my mother: 20

I'll do well yet. Thou old and true Menenius, Thy tears are saltier than a younger man's, And venomous to thine eyes. My sometime general,

I have seen thee stern, and thou hast oft beheld Heart-hardening spectacles; tell these sad women

'Tis fond to wail inevitable strokes, As 'tis to laugh at 'em. My mother, you wot well

My hazards still have been your solace: and 'Believe't not lightly—though I go alone, like to a lonely dragon, that his fen 30 makes fear'd and talk'd of more than seen—your son

Will or exceed the common or be caught With cautelous baits and practice.

*Vol.* My first son, Whither wilt thou go? Take good Cominius With thee awhile: determine on some course, More than a wild exposure to each chance That starts i' the way before thee.

*Cor.* O the gods! *Com.* I'll follow thee a month, devise with thee

Where thou shalt rest, that thou mayst hear of us

And we of thee: so if the time thrust forth 40 A cause for thy repeal, we shall not send Or the vast world to seek a single man, And lose advantage, which doth ever cool I' the absence of the needier.

*Cor.* Fare ye well: Thou hast years upon thee; and thou art too full

Of the wars' surfeits, to go rove with one That's yet unbruised: bring me but out at gate. Come, my sweet wife, my dearest mother, and My friends of noble touch, when I am forth, Bid me farewell, and smile. I pray you, come. While I remain above the ground, you shall Hear from me still, and never of me aught But what is like me formerly.

*Men.* That's worthily As any ear can hear. Come, let's not weep. If I could shake off but one seven years From these old arms and legs, by the good gods, I'd with thee every foot.

*Cor.* Give me thy hand: *Com.* [Exit.]

SCENE II. *The same. A street near the gate.*

*Enter SICIPIUS, BRUTUS, and an Edile.*

*Sic.* Bid them all home; he's gone, and we'll no further. The nobility are vex'd, whom we see have sided in his behalf.

*Br.* Now we have shown our power, Let us seem humbler after it is done Than when it was a-doing.

*Sic.* Bid them home: Say their great enemy is gone, and they Stand in their ancient strength.

*Br.* Dismiss them home. [Exit Edile.] Here comes his mother.

*Sic.* Let's not meet her.

*Br.* Why?

*Sic.* They say she's mad.

*Br.* They have taken note of us: keep on your way. 10

*Enter VOLUMNIA, VIRGILIA, and MENENIUS.*

*Vol.* O, ye're well met: the hoarded plague o' the gods

Requite your love!

*Men.* Peace, peace; be not so loud. *Vol.* If that I could for weeping, you should hear,—

*Nay,* and you shall hear some. [To Brutus] Will you be gone?

*Vir.* [To Sicipius] You shall stay too: I would I had the power

To say so to my husband.

*Sic.* Are you mankind?

*Vol.* Ay, fool; is that a shame! Note but this fool.

Was not a man my father! Hadst thou fellowship To banish him that struck more blows for Rome

Than thou hast spoken words?

*Sic.* O blessed heavens! *Vol.* More noble blows than ever thou wisest words: 20

And for Rome's good. I'll tell thee what; yet go:

*Nay,* but thou shalt stay too: I would my son Were in Arabia, and thy tribe before him,

His good sword in his hand.

*Sic.* What then? *Vir.* What then!

He'd make an end of thy posterity.

*Vol.* Bastards and all.

Good man, the wounds that he does bear for Rome!

*Men.* Come, come, peace.

*Sic.* I would he had continued to his country As he began, and not unknit himself 30

The noble knot he made.

*Br.* I would he had.

*Vol.* 'I would he had'! 'Twas you incensed the rabble:

Cats, that can judge as fitly of his worth As I can of those mysteries which heaven

Will not have earth to know.

*Br.* Pray, let us go.

*Vol.* Now, pray, sir, get you gone:

You have done a brave deed. Are you go, hear this:—

As far as doth the Capitol exceed 30 The meanest house in Rome, so far my son—

This lady's husband here, this, do you see!— Whom you have banish'd, does exceed you all.

*Br.* Well, well, we'll leave you.

*Sic.* Why stay we to be balked With one that wants her wife?

*Vol.* Takes my prayers with you. [Exit Sicipius.]

I would the gods had nothing else to do But to confirm my curse! Could I meet him But once a-day, it would unclog my heart Of what lies heavy to't.

*Men.* You have told them hence;

And, by my troth, you have cause. You'll sup with me!

*Vol.* Anger's my meat; I sup upon myself, And so shall starve with feeding. Come, let's go:

Leave this faint puling and lament as I do, In anger, Juno-like. Come, come, come. *Men.* Fie, fie, fie! *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE III. A highway between Rome and Antium.

*Enter a Roman and a Volsc, meeting.*

*Rom.* I know you well, sir, and you know me: your name, I think, is Adrian.

*Vol.* It is so, sir: truly, I have forgot you.

*Rom.* I am a Roman; and my services are, as you are, against 'em: know you me yet?

*Vol.* Nicanor? no.

*Rom.* The same, sir.

*Vol.* You had more beard when I last saw you; but your favour is well approved by your tongue. What's the news in Rome? I have a note from the Volscian state, to find you out there: you have well saved me a day's journey.

*Rom.* There hath been in Rome strange insurrections; the people against the senators, patricians, and nobles.

*Vol.* Hath been! is it ended, then? Our state thinks not so: they are in a most warlike preparation, and hope to come upon them in the heat of their division.

*Rom.* The main blaze of it is past, but a small thing would make it flame again: for the nobles receive so to heart the banishment of that worthy Coriolanus, that they are in a ripe aptness to take all power from the people and to pluck from them their tribunes for ever. This lies glowing, I can tell you, and is almost mature for the violent breaking out.

*Vol.* Coriolanus banished!

*Rom.* Banished, sir.

*Vol.* You will be welcome with this intelligence, Nicanor.

*Rom.* The day serves well for them now. I have heard it said, the fittest time to corrupt a man's wife is when she's fallen out with her husband. Your noble Tullus Aufidius will appear well in these wars, his great oppo-  
Coriolanus, being now in no request of his country.

*Vol.* He cannot choose. I am most fortunate, thus accidentally to encounter you: you have ended my business, and I will merrily accompany you home.

*Rom.* I shall, between you and some things from Rome: attending to the good of their adversaries. Have you an answer ready, my you?

*Vol.* A most royal one: the centurions and their charges distinctly billeted, already in the entertainment; and to be on foot at an hour's warning.

*Rom.* I am joyful to hear of their readiness, and, as the man, I think, that shall set them in present action. So, sir, heartily well met.

*Vol.* You take my part from me, sir; I have the most cause to be glad of yours.

*Rom.* Well, let us go together. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE IV. Antium. Before Aufidius's house.

*Enter CORIOLANUS in mean apparel, disguised and:*

*Cor.* A goodly city is this Antium. City, 'Tis I that made thy widows: me, an heir Of these fair edifices fore my wa- Have I heard groan and drop: then know me not, Lest that thy wives with spits and boys with stones In puny battle slay me.

*Enter a Citizen.*

Save you, sir.

*Cit.* And you.

*Cor.* Direct me, if it be your will, Where great Aufidius lies: is he in Antium?

*Cit.* He is, and feasts the nobles of the state At his house this night.

*Cor.* Which is his house, beseech you? 10

*Cit.* This, here before you.

*Cor.* Thank you, sir: farewell.

*[Exit Citizen.]*

O world, thy slippery turn! Friends now fast sworn,

Whose double bosoms seem to wear one heart, Whose hours, whose bed, whose meal, and exercise,

Are still together, who twin, as 'twere, in love Unseparable, shall within this hour, On a dissolution of a doit, break out To bitterest enmity: so, felicitous, Whose passions and whose plots have broke their sleep

To take the one the other, by some chance, 20 Some trick not worth an egg, shall grow dear friends

And interjoin their issues. So with me: My birth-place hate I, and my love's upon This enemy town. I'll enter: if he slay me, He does fair justice; if he give me way, I'll do his country service. *[Exit.]*

SCENE V. The same. A hall in Aufidius's house.

*Music within. Enter a Servingman.*

*First Serv.* Wine, wine, wine! What service is here! I think our fellows are asleep. *[Exit.]*

*Enter a second Servingman.*

*Sec. Serv.* Where's Cotsus! my master calls for him. Cotsus! *[Exit.]*

*Enter CORIOLANUS.*

*Cor.* A goodly house: the feast smells well; but I Appear not like a guest.

*Re-enter the first Servingman.*

*First Serv.* What would you have, friend whence are you? Here's no place for you pray, go to the door.

Cor. I have deserved no better entertainment,  
In being Coriolanus.

*Re-enter second Servingman.*

Sec. Serv. Whence are you, sir? Has the  
porter his eyes in his head, that he gives entrance  
to such companions? Pray, get you out.

Cor. Away!

Sec. Serv. Away! get you away.

Cor. Now thou'rt troublesome.

Sec. Serv. Are you so brave? I'll have you  
talked with anon.

*Enter a third Servingman. The first meets  
him.*

Third Serv. What fellow's this?

First Serv. A strange one as ever I looked  
on: I cannot get him out o' the house; prithee,  
call my master to him. *[Retires.]*

Third Serv. What have you to do here,  
fellow? Pray you, avoid the house.

Cor. Let me but stand; I will not hurt your  
hearth.

Third Serv. What are you?

Cor. A gentleman.

Third Serv. A marvellous poor one.

Cor. True, so I am.

Third Serv. Pray you, poor gentleman, take  
up some other station; here's no place for you;  
pray you, avoid: come.

Cor. Follow your function, go, and batten  
on cold bits. *[Pushes him away.]*

Third Serv. What, you will not? Prithee,  
tell my master what a strange guest he has here.

Sec. Serv. And I shall. *[Exit.]*

Third Serv. Where dwellest thou?

Cor. Under the canopy.

Third Serv. Under the canopy!

Cor. Ay.

Third Serv. Where's that?

Cor. 'Tis the city of kites and crows.

Third Serv. 'Tis the city of kites and crows!  
What an ass it is! Then thou dwellest with  
daws too!

Cor. No, I serve not thy master.

Third Serv. How, sir! do you meddle with  
my master?

Cor. Ay: 'tis an homester service than to  
meddle with thy mistress.  
Thou pratest, and pratest; serve with thy  
trencher, hence!

*[Beats him away. Exit third Servingman.]*

*Enter AUFIDIUS with the second Servingman.*

Auf. Where is this fellow?

Sec. Serv. Here, sir: I'd have beaten him  
like a dog, but for disturbing the lords within. *[Retires.]*

Auf. Whence comest thou? what wouldst  
thou? thy name?

Why speak'st not? speak, man: what's thy  
name?

Cor. Il, Tullius. *[Unwillingly.]*

Not yet thou knowest me, and, seeing me,  
dost not

Think me for the man I am, necessity  
Commands me name myself.

Auf. What is thy name?

Cor. A name unmusical to the Volscians' ears,

And harsh in sound to thine.

Auf. Say, what's thy name?

Thou hast a grim appearance, and thy face  
Bears a command in't; though thy tackle's  
torn,

Thou show'st a noble vessel: what's thy name?

Cor. Prepare thy brow to frown: know'st  
thou me yet?

Auf. I know thee not: thy name?

Cor. My name is Caius Marcius, who hath  
done

To thee particularly and to all the Volscians  
Great hurt and mischief; thereto witness may  
My surname, Coriolanus: the painful service,  
The extreme dangers and the drops of blood  
Shed for my thankless country are requited  
But with that surname; a good memory,  
And witness of the malice and displeasure  
Which thou shouldst bear me: only that name  
remains;

The cruelty and envy of the people,

Permitted by our dastard nobles, who

Have all forsook me, hath devour'd the rest;

And suffer'd me by the voice of slaves to be

Whoop'd out of Rome. Now this extremity

Hath brought me to thy hearth; not out of

hope—

Mistake me not—to save my life, for if

I had fear'd death, of all the men i' the world

I would have voided thee, but in mere spite,

To be full quit of those my banishers,

Stand I before thee here. Then if thou hast

A heart of wreak in thee, that will revenge

Thine own particular wrongs and stop these

mains

Of shame seen through thy country, speed thee

straight,

And make my misery serve thy turn: so use it

That my revengeful services may prove

As benefits to thee, for I will fight

Against my canker'd country with the spleen

Of all the under fiends. But if so be

Thou dar'st not this and that to prove mine

fortunes

Thou'rt tired, then, in a word, I also am

Longer to live most weary, and present

My throat to thee and to thy ancient malice;

Which not to cut would show thee but a fool,

Since I have ever follow'd thee with hate

Drawn turns of blood out of thy country's—

And cannot live but to thy shame, unless

It be to do thee service.

Auf. O Marcius, Marcius!

Each word thou hast spoke hath wooed from

my heart

A root of ancient envy. If I justify

Should from yond cloud speak divine things,

And say 'Tis true, I'd not believe them; mine

Than thou, all noble Marcius. Let me trim

Mine arms about that body, where against

My grained ash an hundred times hath broke,

And scar'd the moon with splendor: shall I

clip

The anvil of my sword, and

Contend against thy valour. Know thou first, I loved the maid I married; never man 120  
Sigh'd truer breath; but that I see thee here,  
Thou noble thing! more dances my rapt heart  
Than when I first my wedded mistress saw  
Beside my threshold. Why, thou Mars! I  
tell thee,

We have a power on foot; and I had purpose  
Once more to hew thy target from thy brown,  
Or lose mine arm for't: thou hast beat me out  
Twelve several times, and I have nightly since  
Dreamt of encounters 'twixt thyself and me;  
We have been down together in my sleep, 130  
Unbuckling helms, fisting each other's throat,  
And waked half dead with nothing. Worthy

Marcus,  
Had we no quarrel else to Rome, but that  
Thou art thence banish'd, we would muster all  
From twelve to seventy, and pouring war  
Into the bowels of ungrateful Rome,  
Like a bold flood o'er-bear. O, come, go in,  
And take our friendly senators by the hands;  
Who now are here, taking their leaves of me,  
Who am prepared against your territories, 140  
Though not for Rome itself.

*Cor.* You bless me, gods!  
*Ant.* Therefore, most absolute sir, if thou  
wilt have

The leading of thine own revenges, take  
The one half of my commission; and set down—  
As best thou art experienced, since thou know'st  
Thy country's strength and weakness,—thine  
own ways;

Whether to knock against the gates of Rome,  
Or rudely visit them in parts remote,  
To fight them, ere destroy. But come in: 149  
Let me commend thee first to those that shall  
Say yes to thy desires. A thousand welcomes!  
And more a friend than e'er an enemy;  
Yet, Marcus, that was much. Your hand:  
most welcome!

[*Exeunt Coriolanus and Aufidius. The  
two Servingsmen come forward.*]

*First Serv.* Here's a strange alteration!

*Sec. Serv.* By my hand, I had thought to  
have stricken him with a cudgel; and yet my  
mind gave me his clothes made a false report of  
him.

*First Serv.* What an arm he has! he turned  
me about with his finger and his thumb, as one  
would set up a top. 151

*Sec. Serv.* Nay, I knew by his face that  
there was something in him: he had, sir, a  
kind of face, methought,—I cannot tell how to  
term it.

*First Serv.* He had so; looking as it were—  
would I were hanged, but I thought there was  
more in him than I could think.

*Sec. Serv.* So did I, I'll be sworn: he is  
surely the meekest man i' the world.

*First Serv.* I think he is: but a greater  
soldier than he, you wot one. 171

*Sec. Serv.* Who, my master!

*First Serv.* Yes, it's no matter for that.

*Sec. Serv.* Worth six on him.

*First Serv.* Nay, not so neither: but I take  
him to be the greater soldier.

*Sec. Serv.* Well, look you, one cannot tell

how to say that: for the defence of a town, our  
general is excellent.

*First Serv.* Ay, and for an assault too. 180

*Re-enter third Servingman.*

*Third Serv.* O slaves, I can tell you news,—  
news, you rascals!

*First and Sec. Serv.* What, what, what!  
let's partake.

*Third Serv.* I would not be a Roman, of all  
nations; I had as lieve be a condemned man.

*First and Sec. Serv.* Wherefore! wherefore!

*Third Serv.* Why, here's he that was wont  
to thwack our general, Caius Marcius.

*First Serv.* Why do you say 'thwack our  
general'?

*Third Serv.* I do not say 'thwack our gen-  
eral'; but he was always good enough for him.

*Sec. Serv.* Counce, we are fellows and friends:  
he was ever too hard for him; I have heard him  
say so himself.

*First Serv.* He was too hard for him directly,  
to say the truth on't: before Coriolanus scotched  
him and notched him like a carbonado.

*Sec. Serv.* An he had been cannibally given,  
he might have broiled and eaten him too. 202

*First Serv.* But, more of thy news?

*Third Serv.* Why, he is so made on here  
within, as if he were son and heir to Mars; set  
at upper end o' the table; no question ask'd  
him by any of the senators, but they stand bald  
before him: our general himself makes a mis-  
tress of him; sanctifies himself with's hand  
and turns up the white o' the eye to his dis-  
course. But the bottom of the news is, our  
general is cut i' the middle and but one half of  
what he was yesterday; for the other has half,  
by the entreaty and grant of the whole table.  
He'll go, he says, and sawl the porter of Rome  
gates by the ears: he will mow all down before  
him, and leave his passage polled.

*Sec. Serv.* And he's as like to do't as any  
man I can imagine.

*Third Serv.* Do't! he will do't; for, look  
you, sir, he has as many friends as enemies;  
which friends, sir, as it were, durst not, look  
you, sir, show themselves, as we term it, his  
friends whilst he's in directitude.

*First Serv.* Directitude! what's that!

*Third Serv.* But when they shall see, sir,  
his crest up again, and the man in blood, they  
will out of their burrows, like conies after rain,  
and revel all with him.

*First Serv.* But when goes this forward!

*Third Serv.* To-morrow: to-day; presently:  
you shall have the drum struck up this after-  
noon: 'tis, as it were, a parcel of their feast,  
and to be executed ere they wipe their lips.

*Sec. Serv.* Why, then we shall have a stir-  
ring world again. This peace is nothing, but  
to rust iron, increase tailors, and breed ballad-  
makers.

*First Serv.* Let me have war, say I; it ex-  
ceeds peace as far as day does night; it's spritely,  
waking, audible, and full of vent. Peace is a  
very apoplexy, lethargy; nullo, dead, sleepy;  
insensible; a gettier of more bastard children  
than war's a destroyer of men. 241

*Sec. Serv.* 'Tis so: and as war, in some sort, may be said to be a ravisher, so it cannot be denied but peace is a great maker of cuckolds.

*First Serv.* Ay, and it makes men hate one another.

*Third Serv.* Reason; because they then less need one another. The wars for my money. I hope to see Romans as cheap as Volscians. They are rising, they are rising.

*All.* In, in, in, in!

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI. *Rome. A public place.*

*Enter SICINUS and BRUTUS.*

*Sic.* We hear not of him, neither need we fear him;

His remedies are tame i' the present peace And quietness of the people, which before Were in wild hurry. Here do we make his friends Blush that the world goes well, who rather had, Though they themselves did suffer by 't, behold Dissentious numbers pestering streets than see Our tradesmen singing in their shops and going About their functions friendly.

*Br.* We stood to 't in good time. [*Enter Menenius.*] Is this Menenius?

*Sic.* 'Tis he, 'tis he: O, he is grown most kind of late.

*Both Tri.* Hail, sir!

*Men.* Hail to you both!

*Sic.* Your Coriolanus Is not much miss'd, but with his friends: The commonwealth doth stand, and so would do, Were he more angry at it.

*Men.* All 's well; and might have been much better. If

He could have temporized.

*Sic.* Where is he, hear you?

*Men.* Nay, I hear nothing: his mother and his wife

Hear nothing from him.

*Enter three or four Citizens.*

*Citizens.* The gods preserve you both!

*Sic.* God-den, our neighbours.

*Br.* God-den to you all, god-den to you all.

*First Cit.* Ourselves, our wives, and children, on our knees,

Are bound to pray for you both.

*Sic.* Live, and thrive!

*Br.* Farewell, kind neighbours: we wish'd Coriolanus

Had loved you as we did.

*Citizens.* Now the gods keep you!

*Both Tri.* Farewell, farewell.

[*Exeunt Citizens.*]

*Sic.* This is a happier and more comely time

Than when these fellows ran about the streets, Crying confusion.

*Br.* Caius Marcius was

A worthy officer i' the war; but insolent, so Overcome with pride, ambitious past all think-

ing. Self-loving.—

*Sic.* And affecting one sole throne, Without assistance.

*Men.* I think not so.

*Sic.* We should by this, to all our lamentation,

If he had gone forth consul, found it so.

*Br.* The gods have well prevented it, and Rome

Sits safe and still without him.

*Enter an Ædile.*

*Æd.* Worthy tribunes, There is a slave, whom we have put in prison, Reports, the Volces with two several powers Are enter'd in the Roman territories, And with the deepest malice of the war Destroy what lies before 'em.

*Men.* 'Tis Aufidius, Who, hearing of our Marcius' banishment, Thrusts forth his horns again into the world; Which were inshell'd when Marcius stood for Rome,

And durst not once peep out.

*Sic.* Come, what talk you Of Marcius?

*Br.* Go see this rumourer whipp'd. It cannot be

The Volces dare break with us.

*Men.* Cannot be!

We have record that very well it can, And three examples of the like have been, so Within my age. But reason with the fellow, Before you punish him, where he heard this, Lest you shall chance to whip your information And heat the messenger who bids beware Of what is to be dreaded.

*Sic.* Tell not me:

I know this cannot be.

*Br.* Not possible.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* The nobles in great earnestness are going

All to the senate-house: some news is come That turns their countenances.

*Sic.* 'Tis this slave:—

Go whip him Yore the people's eyes:—his raising;

Nothing but his report.

*Mess.* Yes, worthy sir,

The slave's report is seconded; and more,

More fearful, is deliver'd.

*Sic.* What more fearful?

*Mess.* It is spoke freely out of many mouths— How probable I do not know—that Marcius,

Join'd with Aufidius, leads a power 'gainst Rome,

And vows revenge as spacious as between

The young'st and oldest thing.

*Sic.* This is most likely!

*Br.* Raised only, that the weaker sort may wish

Good Marcius home again.

*Sic.* The very trick on 't. so

*Men.* This is unlikely:

He and Aufidius can no more alone

Than violentest contrariety.

*Enter a second Messenger.*

*Sec. Mess.* You are sent for to the senate: A fearful army, led by Caius Marcius

Associated with Aufidius, rages  
Upon our territories; and have already  
O'erborne their way, consumed with fire, and  
took  
What lay before them.

*Enter COMINIUS.*

*Com.* O, you have made good work!

*Men.* What news! what news! so

*Com.* You have help to ravish your own  
daughters and

To melt the city leads upon your pates,  
To see your wives dishonour'd to your noses,—

*Men.* What's the news? what's the news?

*Com.* Your temples burned in their cement,  
and

Your franchises, whereon you stood, confined  
into an auger's bore.

*Men.* Pray now, your news?

You have made fair work, I fear me.—Pray,  
your news?

If Marcius should be join'd with Volscians,—

*Com.* If!

He is their god: he leads them like a thing  
Made by some other deity than nature,

That shapes man better; and they follow him,  
Against us brats, with no less confidence

Than boys pursuing summer butterflies,  
Or butchers killing flies.

*Men.* You have made good work,  
You and your apron-men; you that stood so

much  
Upon the voice of occupation and

The breath of garlic-eaters!

*Com.* He will shake

Your Rome about your ears.

*Men.* As Hercules

Did shake down mellow fruit. You have made  
fair work!

*Bru.* But is this true, sir?

*Com.* Ay; and you'll look pale  
Before you find it other. All the regions

Do smilingly revolt; and who resist  
Are mock'd for valiant ignorance,

And perish constant fools. Who is't can blame  
him?

Your enemies and his find something in him.

*Men.* We are all undone, unless  
The noble man have mercy.

*Com.* Who shall ask it?

The tribunes cannot do 't for shame; the people  
Deserve such pity of him as the wolf

Does of the shepherds: for his best friends, if  
they 'Be good to Rome,' they charged  
him even

As those should do that had deserved his hate,  
And therein show'd like enemies.

*Men.* 'Tis true:

If he were getting to my house the brand  
That should consume it, I have not the face

To say 'Beseech you, cease.' You have made  
fair hands.

You and your crafts! you have crafted fair!

*Com.* You have brought

A branding upon Rome, such as was never  
so

*Both Tri.* Say not we brought it, so

*Men.* How! Was it we? we loved him;  
but, like beasts

And cowardly nobles, gave way unto your  
clusters,

Who did hoot him out o' the city.

*Com.* But I fear

They'll roar him in again. Tullus Aufidius,

The second name of men, obeys his points  
As if he were his officer: desperation

Is all the policy, strength and defence,  
That Rome can make against them.

*Enter a troop of Citizens.*

*Men.* Here come the clusters.

And is Aufidius with him? You are they  
That made the air unwholesome, when you cast

Your stinking greasy caps in hooting at  
Coriolanus' exile. Now he's coming;

And not a hair upon a soldier's head  
Which will not prove a whip: as many cor-

combs

As you threw caps up will he tumble down,  
And pay you for your voices. 'Tis no matter;

If he could burn us all into one coal;  
We have deserved it.

*Citizens.* Faith, we hear fearful news.

*First Cit.* For mine own part,

When I said, banish him, I said, 'twas pity.

*Sec. Cit.* And so did I.

*Third Cit.* And so did I; and, to say the  
truth, so did very many of us: that we did, we

did for the best; and though we willingly con-  
sented to his banishment, yet it was against

our will.

*Com.* Ye're goodly things, you voices!

*Men.* You have made

Good work, you and your cry! Shall's to the  
Capitol?

*Com.* O, ay, what else?

*[Exeunt Cominius and Menenius.]*

*Sic.* Go, masters, get you home; be not  
dismay'd:

There are a side that would be glad to have  
This true which they so seem to fear. Go home,  
And show no sign of fear.

*First Cit.* The gods be good to us! Come,  
masters, let's home. I ever said we were i'th  
wrong when we banished him.

*Sec. Cit.* So did we all. But, come, let's  
home.

*[Exeunt Citizens.]*

*Bru.* I do not like this news.

*Sic.* Nor I.

*Bru.* Let's to the Capitol. Would half my  
wealth

Would buy this for a lie!

*Sic.* Pray, let us go.

*[Exeunt.]*

SCENE VII. *A camp, at a small distance  
from Rome.*

*Enter AUFIDIUS and his Lieutenant.*

*Aw.* Do they still fly to the Roman?

*Lien.* I do not know what weakness is in  
him, but

Your soldiers use him as the grace 'fore meat,  
Their talk at table, and their thanks at end;  
And you are darken'd in this action, sir,  
Even by your own.

*Auf.* I cannot help it now;  
Unless, by using means, I lame the foot  
Of our design. He bears himself more proudlier,  
Even to my person, than I thought he would  
When first I did embrace him; yet his nature  
In that's no changeling; and I must excuse  
What cannot be amended.

*Lien.* Yet I wish, sir,—  
I mean for your particular,—you had not  
Join'd in commission with him; but either  
Had borne the action of yourself, or else  
To him had left it solely.

*Auf.* I understand thee well; and be thou  
sure,  
When he shall come to his account, he knows  
not

What I can urge against him. Although it  
seems,

And so he thinks, and is no less apparent  
To the vulgar eye, that he bears all things  
fairly,

And shows good husbandry for the Volscian  
state,  
Fights dragon-like, and does achieve as soon  
As draw his sword; yet he hath left undone  
That which shall break his neck or hazard mine,  
Where'er we come to our account.

*Lien.* Sir, I beseech you, think you he'll  
carry Rome?

*Auf.* All places yield to him ere he sits  
down;

And the nobility of Rome are his:  
The senators and patricians love him too: 30  
The tribunes are no soldiers; and their people  
Will be as rash in the repeal, as hasty  
To expel him thence. I think he'll be to Rome

As is the osprey to the fish, who takes it  
By sovereignty of nature. First he was  
A noble servant to them; but he could not  
Carry his honours even: whether 'twas pride,  
Which out of daily fortune ever taints  
The happy man; whether defect of judgement,  
To fail in the disposing of those chances 40  
Which he was lord of; or whether nature,  
Not to be other than one thing, not moving  
From the casque to the cushion, but com-  
manding peace

Even with the same austerity and garb  
As he controll'd the war; but one of these—  
As he hath spices of them all, not all,  
For I dare so far free him—made him fear'd,  
So hated, and so banish'd: but he has a merit,  
To choke it in the utterance. So our virtues  
Lie in the interpretation of the time: 50  
And power, unto itself most commendable,  
Hath not a tomb so evident as a chair  
To extol what it hath done.

One fire drives out one fire; one nail, one  
nail;  
Rights by rights falter, strengths by strengths  
do fall.

Come, let's away. When Cains, Rome is thine,  
Thou art poorer of all; then shortly art thou  
mine.

## ACT V.

SCENE I. *Rome. A public place.*

*Enter MENENIUS, COMINIUS, SICINIUS,  
BAPTUS, and others.*

*Men.* No, I'll not go: you hear what he  
hath said

Which was sometime his general; who loved him  
In a most dear particular. He call'd me father:  
But what o' that? Go, you that banish'd him;  
A mile before his tent fall down, and knee  
The way into his mercy: nay, if he coy'd  
To hear Cominius speak, I'll keep at home.

*Com.* He would not seem to know me.

*Men.* Do you hear?  
*Com.* Yet one time he did call me by my  
name:

I urged our old acquaintance, and the drops 20  
That we have bled together. Coriolanus  
He would not answer to; forbad all names;  
He was a kind of nothing, titleless,  
Till he had forged himself a name o' the fire  
Of burning Rome.

*Men.* Why, so: you have made good work!  
A pair of tribunes that have rack'd for Rome,  
To make coals cheap,—a noble memory!

*Com.* I minded him how royal 'twas to  
pardon

When it was less expected: he replied,  
It was a bare petition of a state 30  
To one whom they had punish'd.

*Men.* Very well:

Could he say less?  
*Com.* I offer'd to awaken his regard  
For's private friends: his answer to me was,  
He could not stay to pick them in a pile  
(Of noisome musty chaff: he said 'twas folly,  
For one poor grain or two, to leave unburnt,  
And still to nose the offence.

*Men.* For one poor grain or two!  
I am one of those: his mother, wife, his child,  
And this brave fellow too, we are the grains: 30  
You are the musty chaff: and you are smelt  
Above the moon: we must be burnt for you.

*Sic.* Nay, pray, be patient: if you refuse  
your aid

In this so never-needed help, yet do not  
Upbraid's with our distress. But, sure, if you  
Would be your country's plander, your good  
tongue,

More than the instant army we can make,  
Might stop our countryman.

*Men.* No, I'll not meddle.

*Sic.* Pray you, go to him.

*Men.* What should I do?

*Bru.* Only make trial what your love can  
do 40

For Rome, towards Marcius.

*Men.* Well, and say that Marcius  
Return me, as Cominius is return'd,  
Unheard; what then?

But as a discontented friend, greet shot  
With his unkindness: say I be so?

*Sic.* Yes, your good will  
Must have that thanks from Rome, which she  
measures  
As you intended well.

*Men.* I'll undertake 't:  
I think he'll hear me. Yet, to bite his lip  
And hum at good Cominius, much unhearts  
me.

He was not taken well; he had not dined: so  
The veins unfill'd, our blood is cold, and then  
We put upon the morning, are unapt  
To give or to forgive; but when we have stuff'd  
These pipes and these conveyances of our blood  
With wine and feeling, we have suppler souls  
Than in our priest-like fasts: therefore I'll watch  
him

Till he be dieted to my request,  
And then I'll set upon him.

*Bru.* You know the very road into his kind-  
ness,

And cannot lose your way.

*Men.* Good faith, I'll prove him, 60  
Speed how it will. I shall ere long have know-  
ledge

Of my success. [Exit.]

*Com.* He'll never hear him. [Exit.]  
*Sec.* Not!

*Com.* I tell you, he does sit in gold, his eye  
Red as 'twould burn Rome; and his injury  
The goaler to his pity. I kneel'd before him;  
'Twas very faintly he said 'Rise;' dismiss'd me  
Thus, with his speechless hand: what he would  
do,

He sent in writing after me; what he would  
not,

Bound with an oath to yield to his conditions:  
So that all hope is vain, 70

Unless his noble mother, and his wife;  
Who, as I hear, mean to solicit him

For mercy to his country. Therefore, let's  
hence,

And with our fair entreaties haste them on.  
[Exeunt.]

SCENE II. Entrance of the Volscian camp  
before Rome. Two Sentinels on guard.

Enter to them, MENENIUS.

*First Sen.* Stay: whence are you?

*Sec. Sen.* Stand, and go back,

*Men.* You guard like men; 'tis well: but, by  
your leave,

I am an officer of state, and come  
To speak with Coriolanus.

*First Sen.* From whence?

*Men.* From Rome.

*First Sen.* You may not pass, you must  
return: our general

Will no more hear from thence.

*Sec. Sen.* You'll see your Rome embraced  
with fire before

You'll speak with Coriolanus.

*Men.* Good my friends,  
If you have heard your general talk of Rome,  
And of his friends there, it is lots to blanks, 70  
My name hath touch'd your ears: it is Mene-  
nius.

*First Sen.* Be it so; go back: the virtue of  
your name

Is not here payable.

*Men.* I tell thee, fellow,  
The general is my lover: I have been

The book of his good acts, whence men have read  
His fame unparallel'd, haply amplified;  
For I have ever verified my friends,

Of whom he's chief, with all the size that verity  
Would without lapsing suffer: nay, sometimes,  
Like to a bowl upon a subtle ground, 20  
I have tumbled past the throw; and in his  
praise

Have almost stamp'd the leasing: therefore,  
fellow,

I must have leave to pass.

*First Sen.* Faith, sir, if you had told as  
many lies in his behalf as you have uttered  
words in your own, you should not pass here;  
no, though it were as virtuous to lie as to live  
chastely. Therefore, go back.

*Men.* Prithee, fellow, remember my name  
is Menenius, always factionary on the party of  
your general. 31

*Sec. Sen.* Howsoever you have been his liar,  
as you say you have, I am one that, telling true  
under him, must say, you cannot pass. There-  
fore, go back.

*Men.* Has he dined, canst thou tell? for I  
would not speak with him till after dinner.

*First Sen.* You are a Roman, are you?

*Men.* I am, as thy general is. 30

*First Sen.* Then you should hate Rome, as  
he does. Can you, when you have pushed out  
your gates the very defender of them, and, in  
a violent popular ignorance, given your enemy  
your shield, think to front his revenges with  
the easy groans of old women, the virginal  
palms of your daughters, or with the palmed  
intercession of such a decayed dotant as you  
seem to be? Can you think to blow out the  
intended fire your city is ready to flame in,  
with such weak breath as this? No, you are  
deceiv'd; therefore, back to Rome, and prepare  
for your execution: you are condemn'd, our  
general has sworn you out of reprieve and  
pardon.

*Men.* Sirrah, if thy captain knew I were  
here, he would use me with estimation.

*First Sen.* Come, my captain knows you  
not.

*Men.* I mean, thy general.

*First Sen.* My general cares not for you.  
Back, I say, go: lest I let forth your half-pint  
of blood; back,—that's the utmost of your  
having: back.

*Men.* Nay, but, fellow, fellow,—

Enter CORIOLANUS and AUDILIUS.

*Cor.* What's the matter?

*Men.* Now, your companion, I'll say an errand  
for you: you shall know now that I am in  
estimation; you shall perceive that a Jack  
guardant cannot office me from my son Corio-  
lanus: guess, but by my entertainment with  
him, if thou standest not! 'tis the state of hanging,  
or of some death more long in spectation,  
and cruellier in suffering; behold now 40  
and swoon for what's to come upon thee. [1  
*Cor.*] The glorious gods sit in hourly synod  
about thy particular prosperity, and love thee  
no worse than thy old father Menenius does!  
O my son, my son! thou art preparing fire for



us; look thee, here's water to quench it. I was hardly moved to come to thee; but being assured none but myself could move thee, I have been blown out of your gates with sighs; and conjure thee to pardon Rome, and thy petitionary countrymen. The good gods assuage thy wrath, and turn the dregs of it upon this varlet here,—this, who, like a block, hath denied my access to thee.

*Cor.* Away!

*Men.* How! away!

*Cor.* Wife, mother, child, I know not. My affairs

Are servanted to others: though I owe My revenge properly, my remission lies 90 In Volscian breasts. That we have been familiar,

Ingrate forgetfulness shall poison, rather Than pity note how much. Therefore, be gone. Mine ears against your suits are stronger than Your gates against my force. Yet, for I loved thee,

Take this along; I writ it for thy sake,

And would have sent it. *[Gives a letter.]* Another word, Menenius,

I will not hear thee speak. This man, Aufidius, Was my beloved in Rome: yet thou behold'st! 100 *Auf.* You keep a constant temper.

*[Exeunt Coriolanus and Aufidius.]*

*First Sen.* Now, sir, is your name Menenius?

*Sec. Sen.* 'Tis a spell, you see, of much power: you know the way home again.

*First Sen.* Do you hear how we are shent for keeping your greatness back?

*Sec. Sen.* What cause, do you think, I have to swoon?

*Men.* I neither care for the world nor your general: for such things as you, I can scarce think there's any, ye're so slight. He that hath a will to die by himself fears it not from another: let your general do his worst. For you, be that you are, long; and your misery increase with your age! I say to you, as I was said to, Away! *[Exit.]*

*First Sen.* A noble fellow, I warrant him.

*Sec. Sen.* The worthy fellow is our general: he's the rock, the oak not to be wind-shaken. *[Exeunt.]*

### SCENE III. The tent of Coriolanus.

Enter CORIOLANUS, AUFIDIUS, and others.

*Cor.* We will before the walls of Rome to-morrow

Set down our host. My partner in this action, You must report to the Volscian lords, how plainly

I have borne this business.

*Auf.* Only their ends You have respected; stopp'd your ears against The general suit of Rome; never admitted A private whisper, no, not with such friends That thought them sure of you.

*Cor.* This last old man, Whom with a crack'd heart I have sent to Rome, Loved me above the measure of a father: 20 Nay, godded me, indeed. Their latest refuge

Was to send him; for whose old love I have. Though I show'd sourly to him, once more offer'd

The first conditions, which they did refuse And cannot now accept: to grace him only That thought he could do more, a very little I have yielded to: fresh embassies and suits, Nor from the state nor private friends, here-after

Will I lend ear to. Ha! what shout is this? *[Shout within.]*

Shall I be tempted to infringe my vow 20 In the same time 'tis made? I will not.

*Enter, in mourning habits, VIRGILIA, VOLUNIA, leading young MARCIUS, VALERIA, and Attendants.*

My wife comes foremost; then the honour'd mould

Wherein this trunk was framed, and in her hand

The grandchild to her blood. But, out, affection!

All bond and privilege of nature, break! Let it be virtuous to be obstinate.

What is that curst'ay worth! or those doves' eyes,

Which can make gods forsworn! I melt, and am not

Of stronger earth than others. My mother bows;

As if Olympus to a molehill should 30 In supplication nod: and my young boy

Hath an aspect of intercession, which Great nature cries 'Deny not.' Let the Voices

Plough Rome, and harrow Italy: I'll never Be such a goaling to obey instinct, but stand,

As if a man were author of himself And knew no other kin.

*Vir.* My lord and husband!

*Cor.* These eyes are not the same I wore in Rome.

*Vir.* The sorrow that delivers us thus changed Makes you think so.

*Cor.* Like a dull actor now, 40 I have forgot my part, and I am out,

Even to a full disgrace. Best of my flesh, Forgive my tyranny; but do not say

For that 'Forgive our Romans.' O, a kiss Long as my exile, sweet as my revenge!

Now, by the jealous queen of heaven, that kiss I carried from thee, dear; and my true lip

Hath virgin'd it e'er since. You gods! I pray, And the most noble mother of the world,

Leave unsaluted: sink, my knee, to the earth; *[Kneels.]*

(If thy deep duty more impression show 50 Than that of common sons.

*Vol.* O, stand up hieat! Whilst, with no softer cushion than the flint,

I kneel before thee; and unproperly Show duty, as mistaken all this while

Between the child and parent. *[Kneels.]*

*Cor.* What is this? our knees to me? to your corrupted sense?

Let the pabbles on the hungry hemlock the stars; then let the murderous winds the proud cedars 'gainst the fiery sun; so

Murdering impossibility, to make  
What cannot be, slight work.

*Vol.* Thou art my warrior;  
I help to frame thee. Do you know this lady?

*Cor.* The noble sister of Publicola,  
The moon of Rome, chaste as the icicle  
That's curdled by the frost from purest snow  
And hangs on Dian's temple: dear Valeria!

*Vol.* This is a poor epitome of yours,  
Which by the interpretation of full time  
May show like all yourself.

*Cor.* The god of soldiers, 70  
With the consent of supreme Jove, inform  
Thy thoughts with nobleness; that thou mayst  
prove

To shame invulnerable, and stick i' the wars  
Like a great sea-mark, standing every flaw,  
And saving those that eye thee!

*Vol.* Your knee, sirrah.

*Cor.* That's my brave boy!

*Vol.* Even he, your wife, this lady, and  
myself,

Are suitors to you.

*Cor.* I beseech you, peace:  
Or, if you'd ask, remember this before:  
The thing I have forsworn to grant may never  
Be held by you denials. Do not bid me 8:  
Dismiss my soldiers, or capitulate  
Again with Rome's mechanics: tell me not  
Whencein I seem unnatural: desire not  
To allay my rages and revenges with  
Your colder reasons.

*Vol.* O, no more, no more!  
You have said you will not grant us any thing;  
For we have nothing else to ask, but that  
Which you deny already: yet we will ask;  
That, if you fail in our request, the blame 90  
May hang upon your hardness: therefore hear  
us.

*Cor.* Aufidius, and you Volscas, mark; for  
we'll  
Hear nought from Rome in private. Your  
request?

*Vol.* Should we be silent and not speak, our  
rabbint

And state of bodies would bewray what life  
We have led since thy exile. Think with thy-  
self

How more unfortunate than all living women  
Are we come hither: since that thy sight,  
which should

Make our eyes flow with joy, hearts dance with  
content,

Compels them weep and shake with fear and

Making the mother, wife and child to see  
The son, the husband and the father tearing  
His country's bowels out. And to poor we  
Thine enemy's most capital: thou barr'st us  
Our access to the gods, which is a comfort  
That all but we enjoy; for how can we,  
Alas, how can we for our country pray,  
Whence we are bound, together with thy

Whence we are bound? Alack, or we must lose

Our wish, which side should win: for either  
thou

Must, as a foreign recreant, be  
With manacles thorough our streets, or else  
Triumphantly tread on thy country's ruin,  
And bear the palm for having bravely shed  
Thy wife and children's blood. For myself,  
son,

I purpose not to wait on fortune till  
These wars determine: if I cannot persuade  
thee 120

Rather to show a noble grace to both parts  
Than seek the end of one, thou shalt no sooner  
March to assault thy country than to tread—  
Trust to't, thou shalt not—on thy mother's  
womb,

That brought thee to this world.

*Vir.* Ay, and mine,  
That brought you forth this boy, to keep your  
name

Living to time.

*Young Mar.* A' shall not tread on me;  
I'll run away till I am bigger, but then I'll  
fight.

*Cor.* Not of a woman's tenderness to be,  
Requires nor child nor woman's face to see. 130  
I have sat too long.

*Vol.* Nay, go not from us thus.  
If it were so that our request did tend  
To save the Romans, thereby to destroy  
The Volscas whom you serve, you might con-  
demn us,

As poisonous of your honour: no; our suit  
Is, that you reconcile them: while the Volscas  
May say 'This mercy we have show'd'; the  
Romans,

'This we received'; and each in either side  
Give the all-hail to thee, and cry 'Be blest  
For making up this peace!' Thou know'st,  
great son, 140

The end of war's uncertain, but this certain,  
That, if thou conquer Rome, the benefit  
Which thou shalt thereby reap is such a name,  
Whose repetition will be dogg'd with curses:  
Whose chronicle thus writ: 'The man was  
noble,

But with his last attempt he wiped it out;  
He destroy'd his country, and his name remains  
To the ensuing age abhor'd.' Speak to me,  
son:

Thou hast affected the fine strains of honour,  
To imitate the graces of the gods;

To tear with thunder the wide cheeks o' the air,  
And yet to charge thy sulphur with a bolt  
That should but rive an oak. Why dost not  
speak?

Think'st thou it honourable for a noble man  
Still to remember wrongs? Daughters, speak  
you:

He cares not for your weeping. Speak thou,  
boy:

Perhaps thy childhood will move him more  
Than can our remembrance. There's no man in the  
world

More bound to's mother; yet here he lets me  
prate

Like one i' the stocks. Thou hast never in thy

Show'd thy dear mother any courtesy,  
When she, poor hen, fond of no second brood,  
Has chok'd thee to the wars and safely home,  
Loaden with honour. Say my request's unjust,  
And spurn me back: but if it be not so,  
Thou art not honest; and the gods will plague  
thee.

That thou restrain'st from me the duty which  
To a mother's part belongs. He turns away:  
Down, ladies; let us shame him with our knees.  
To his surname Coriolanus' longs more pride  
Than pity to our prayers. Down: an end; 171  
This is the last: so we will home to Rome,  
And die among our neighbours. Nay, behold 's:  
This boy, that cannot tell what he would have,  
But kneels and holds up hands for fellowship,  
Does reason our petition with more strength  
Than thou hast to deny't. Come, let us go:  
This fellow had a Volscian to his mother;  
His wife is in Corioli and his child  
Like him by chance. Yet give us our dispatch:  
I am hush'd until our city be afire, 181  
And then I'll speak a little. [He holds her by  
the hand, silent.]

Cor. O mother, mother!  
What have you done? Behold, the heavens do  
ope.

The gods look down, and this unnatural scene  
They laugh at. O my mother, mother! O!  
You have won a happy victory to Rome;  
But, for your son, — believe it, O, believe it,  
Most dangerously you have with him prevail'd,  
If not most mortal to him. But, let it come.  
Audiens, though I cannot make true wars, 190  
I'll find means convenient peace. Now, good Audiens,

Were you in my stead, would you have heard  
A mother less? or granted less, Audiens?

Auf. I was moved withal.

Cor. I dare be sworn you were:  
And, sir, it is no little thing to make  
Mine eyes to sweat compassion. But, good sir,  
What peace you'll make, advise me: for my  
part,

I'll not to Rome, I'll back with you; and pray  
you,

Stand to me in this cause. O mother! wife!

Auf. [Aside] I am glad thou hast set thy  
mercy and thy honour  
At difference in thee: out of that I'll work  
Myself a former fortune.

[The Ladies make signs to Coriolanus.

Cor. Ay, by and by;

[To Volumentia, Porcia, &c.]  
But we will drink together; and you shall bear  
A better witness back than words, which we,  
In like conditions, will have counter-said.  
Come, enter with us. Ladies, you deserve  
To have a temple built you: all the swords  
In Italy, and her confederate arms,  
Could not have made this peace. [Exeunt. 200]

SCENE IV. Rome. A public place.

Enter MENENIUS and SESTIUS.

Men. See you yond eagle of the Capitol,  
Yond corner-stone?

Sic. Why, what of that?

Men. If it be possible for you to displace it  
with your little finger, there is some hope the  
ladies of Rome, especially his mother, may  
prevail with him. But I say there is no hope  
in't: our throats are sentenced and stay upon  
execution.

Sic. Is't possible that so short a time can  
alter the condition of a man?

Men. There is difference between a grub and  
a butterfly; yet your butterfly was a grub.  
This Marcius is grown from man to dragon:  
he has wings; he's more than a creeping thing.

Sic. He loved his mother dearly.

Men. So did he me: and he no more re-  
members his mother now than an eight-year-  
old horse. The tartness of his face sours ripe  
grapes: when he walks, he moves like an  
engine, and the ground shrinks before his  
treading: he is able to pierce a corset with his  
eye; talks like a knell, and his hum is a battery.  
He sits in his state, as a thing made for Alex-  
ander. What he bids be done is finished with  
his bidding. He wants nothing of a god but  
eternity and a heaven to throne in.

Sic. Yes, mercy, if you report him truly.

Men. I paint him in the character. Mark  
what mercy his mother shall bring from him:  
there is no more mercy in him than there is  
milk in a male tiger; that shall our poor city  
find: and all this is long of you.

Sic. The gods be good unto us!

Men. No, in such a case the gods will not  
be good unto us. When we banished him, we  
respected not them; and, he returning to break  
our necks, they respect not us.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. Sir, if you'd save your life, fly to your  
house:

The plebeians have got your fellow-tribune  
And hale him up and down, all swearing, if  
The Roman ladies bring not comfort home,  
They'll give him death by inches.

Enter a second Messenger.

Sic. What's the news?  
Sec. Mess. Good news, good news; the  
ladies have prevail'd.

The Volscians are dislodged, and Marcius gone:  
A merrier day did never yet greet Rome,  
No, not the expulsion of the Tarquins.

Sic. Friend,  
Art thou certain this is true? Is it most certain?

Sec. Mess. As certain as I know the sun is  
in fire:

Where have you lurk'd, that you make doubt  
of it?

Ne'er through an arch so hurried the Italian  
tide.

As the recomforted through the gates. Why,  
hark you! [Trumpets; shout; drums  
beat; all shouting.]

The trumpets, sackbuts, psalteries and fifes,  
Tabors and cymbals and the shouting of the  
Make the sun dance. Hark you!

Men. [A shout within.]  
This is good news:

I will go meet the ladies. This Volscian

Is worth of consuls, senators, patricians,  
A city full; of tribunes, such as you,  
A sea and land full. You have pray'd well  
to-day;

This morning for ten thousand of your throats  
I'd not have given a doit. Hark, how they  
joy! *[Music still, with shouts.]*

*Sic.* First, the gods bless you for your  
tidings; next,  
Accept my thankfulness.

*Sec. Mess.* Sir, we have all  
Great cause to give great thanks.

*Sic.* They are near the city!  
*Sec. Mess.* Almost at point to enter.

*Sic.* We will meet them,  
And help the joy. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE V. *The same. A street near the gate.*

*Enter two Senators with VOLUMNIA, VIRGILIA,  
VALERIA, &c. passing over the stage, followed  
by Patricians, and others.*

*First Sen.* Behold our patroneess, the life of  
Rome!

Call all your tribes together, praise the gods,  
And make triumphant fires; strew flowers be-  
fore them:

Unshout the noise that banish'd Marcius.  
Repeat him with the welcome of his mother;  
Cry 'Welcome, ladies, welcome!'

*All.* Welcome, ladies,  
Welcome! *[A flourish with drums and trum-  
pets. Exeunt.]*

SCENE VI. *Antium. A public place.*

*Enter TULLUS AUFIDIUS, with Attendants.*

*Auf.* Go tell the lords o' the city I am here:  
Deliver them this paper: having read it,  
Bid them repair to the market-place; where I,  
Even in theirs and in the commons' ears,  
Will vouch the truth of it. Him I accuse  
The city ports by this hath enter'd and  
Intends to appear before the people, hoping  
To purge himself with words: dispatch.  
*[Exeunt Attendants.]*

*Enter three or four Conspirators of AUFIDIUS' faction.*

Most welcome!

*First Con.* How is it with our general?  
*Auf.* Even so. *so*  
As with a man by his own alms empoison'd,  
And with his charity slain.

*Sec. Con.* Most noble sir,  
If you do hold the same intent wherein  
You wish'd us parties, we'll deliver you  
Of your great danger.

*Auf.* Sir, I cannot tell:  
We must proceed as we do find the people.

*Third Con.* The people will remain uncertain  
whilst

'Twixt you there's difference; but the fall of  
either  
Makes the survivor heir of all.

*Auf.* I know it;  
And am resolv'd to strike at him admittin *so*

A good construction. I raised him, and I  
pawn'd

Mine honour for his truth; who being at  
heighten'd,

He water'd his new plants with dews of flattery,  
Seducing so my friends; and, to this end,  
He bow'd his nature, never known before  
But to be rough, unswayable and free.

*Third Con.* Sir, his stoutness  
When he did stand for consul, which he lost  
By lack of stooping—

*Auf.* That I would have spoke of  
Being banish'd for't, he came unto my hearth;  
Presented to my knife his throat: I took him;  
Made him joint-servant with me; gave him

way  
In all his own desires; nay, let him choose  
Out of my files, his projects to accomplish,  
My best and freest men; served his design-  
ments

In mine own person: help to reap the fame  
Which he did end all his; and took some pride  
To do myself this wrong: till, at the last,  
I seem'd his follower, not partner, and  
He waged me with his countenance, as if  
I had been mercenary.

*First Con.* So he did, my lord:  
The army marvell'd at it, and, in the last,  
When he had carried home and that we look'd  
For no less spoil than glory,—

*Auf.* There was it:  
For which my sinews shall be stretch'd upon  
him.

At a few drops of women's rheum, which are  
As cheap as lies, he sold the blood and labour  
Of our great action: therefore shall he die,  
And I'll renew me in his fall. But, hark!

*[Drums and trumpets sound, with great  
shouts of the People.]*  
*First Con.* Your native town you enter'd  
like a post,

And had no welcomes home; but he returns,  
Splitting the air with noise.

*Sec. Con.* And patient fools,  
Whose children he hath slain, their base throats  
tear

With giving him glory.  
*Third Con.* Therefore, at your vantage,  
Ere he express himself, or move the people

With what he would say, let him feel your  
sword,

Which we will second. When he lies along,  
After your way his tale pronounced shall bury  
His reasons with his body.

*Auf.* Say no more: *60*  
Here come the lords.

*Enter the Lords of the city.*

*All the Lords.* You are most welcome home.  
*Auf.* I have not deserved it.

But, worthy lords, have you with heed perused  
What I have written to you?

*Lords.* We have.

*First Lord.* And grieve to hear't.  
What faults he made before the last, I think  
Might have found easy fines; but there to end  
Where he was to begin and give away  
The benefit of our levies, answering us

With our own charge, making a treaty where  
There was a yielding,—this admits no excuse.

*Auf.* He approaches: you shall hear him.

*Enter CORIOLANUS, marching with drum and colours; Commonsers being with him.*

*Cor.* Hail, lords! I am return'd your soldier,  
No more infected with my country's love  
Than when I parted hence, but still subsisting  
Under your great command. You are to know  
That prosperously I have attempted and  
With bloody passage led your wars even to  
The gates of Rome. Our spoils we have brought  
home.

Do more than counterpoise a full third part  
The charges of the action. We have made  
peace.

With no less honour to the Antiates 80  
Than shame to the Romans: and we here  
deliver,

Subscribed by the consuls and patricians,  
Together with the seal o' the senate, what  
We have compounded on.

*Auf.* Read it not, noble lords;  
But tell the traitor, in the highest degree  
He hath abused your powers.

*Cor.* Traitor! how now!

*Auf.* Ay, traitor, Marcius!

*Cor.* Marcius!

*Auf.* Ay, Marcius, Caius Marcius: dost thou

think

I'll grace thee with that robbery, thy stol'n

name

Coriolanus in Corioli! 90

You lords and heads o' the state, perfidiously

He has betray'd your business, and given up,

For certain drops of salt, your city Rome;

I say 'your city,' to his wife and mother;

Breaking his oath and resolution like

A twist of rotten silk, never admitting

Counsel o' the war, but at his nurse's tears

He whined and yow'd away your victory,

That pages blush'd at him and men of heart

Look'd wondering each at other.

*Cor.* Hear'st thou, Mars! 100

*Auf.* Name not the god, thou boy of tears!

*Cor.* Ha!

*Auf.* No more.

*Cor.* Measureless liar, thou hast made my

heart

Too great for what contains it. Boy! O slave!

Pardon me, lords, 'tis the first time that ever

I was forced to scold. Your judgements, my

grave lords,

Must give this cur the lie; and his own notion—

Who wears my stripes impress'd upon him;

that

Must hear my beating to his grave—shall join

To thrust the lie unto him. 120

*First Lord.* Peace, both, and hear me speak.

*Cor.* Cut me to pieces, Volscians; men and ladies,

Stain all your edges on me. Boy! false hound!

If you have writ your annals true, 'tis there,

That, like an eagle in a dove-cote, I

Flutter'd your Volscians in Corioli:

Alone I did it. Boy!

*Auf.* Why, noble lords,

Will you be put in mind of his blind fortune,

Which was your shame; by this unholy brag-

gart,

'Fore your own eyes and ears?

*All Consps.* Let him die for't. 130

*All the people.* 'Tear him to pieces.' 'Do it

presently.' 'He killed my son.' 'My daughter.'

'He killed my cousin Marcus.' 'He killed my

father.'

*Sec. Lord.* Peace, ho! no outrage; peace!

The man is noble and his fame folds in

This orb o' the earth. His last offences to us

Shall have judicious hearing. Stand, Aufidius,

And trouble not the peace.

*Cor.* O that I had him,

With six Aufidiuses, or more, his tribe, 130

To use my lawful sword!

*Auf.* Insolent villain!

*All Consps.* Kill, kill, kill, kill, kill him!

[*The Conspirators draw, and kill Corio-*

*lanus: Aufidius stands on his body.*

*Lords.* Hold, hold, hold, hold!

*Auf.* My noble masters, hear me speak.

*First Lord.* O Tullus,

*Sec. Lord.* Thou hast done a deed whereat

valour will weep.

*Third Lord.* Tread not upon him. Masters

all, be quiet;

Put up your swords.

*Auf.* My lords, when you shall know—as in

this rage,

Provoked by him, you cannot—the great danger

Which this man's life did owe you, you'll

rejoice

That he is thus cut off. Please it your honours

To call me to your senate, I'll deliver 140

Myself your loyal servant, or endure

Your heaviest censure.

*First Lord.* Bear from hence his body;

And mourn you for him: let him be regarded

As the most noble corpse that ever bore a

Did follow to his urn.

*Sec. Lord.* His own impatience

Takes from Aufidius a great part of blame.

Let's make the best of it.

*Auf.* My rage is gone;

And I am struck with sorrow. Take him up.

Help, three o' the chiefest soldiers: I'll be one.

Beat thou the drum, that it speak mournfully:

Trail your steel pikes. Though in this city he

Hath widow'd and unchilded many a one,

Which to this hour bewail the injury,

Yet he shall have a noble memory.

*Assist.* [*Exeunt, bearing the body of Corio-*

*lanus. A dead march sounded.*

# TITUS ANDRONICUS

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

**SATURNINUS**, son to the late Emperor of Rome, and afterwards declared Emperor.  
**BASSIANUS**, brother to Saturninus; in love with Lavinia.

**TITUS ANDRONICUS**, a noble Roman, general against the Goths.

**MARCUS ANDRONICUS**, tribune of the people, and brother to Titus.

**LUCIUS**,  
**QUINTUS**,  
**MARTIUS**,  
**MUTIUS**, } sons to Titus Andronicus.

**YOUNG LUCIUS**, a boy, son to Lucius.

**PUBLIUS**, son to Marcus the Tribune.

**SEMPRONIUS**,  
**CAIUS**,  
**VALENTINE**, } kinsmen to Titus.

**ÆMILIUS**, a noble Roman.

**ALARBUS**,  
**DEMETRIUS**, } sons to Tamora.

**CHIRON**,  
**AARON**, a Moor, beloved by Tamora.

**A Captain**, Tribune, Messenger, and Clown;  
Romans.

Goths and Romans.

**TAMORA**, Queen of the Goths.  
**LAVINIA**, daughter to Titus Andronicus.  
A Nurse.

Senators, Tribunes, Officers, Soldiers, and Attendants.

SCENE: *Rome, and the country near it.*

## ACT I.

### SCENE I. *Rome. Before the Capitol.*

*The Tomb of the ANDRONICI appearing; the Tribunes and Senators aloft. Enter, below, from one side, SATURNINUS and his Followers; and, from the other side, BASSIANUS and his Followers; with drum and colours.*

**Sat.** Noble patricians, patrons of my right,  
Defend the justice of my cause with arms,  
And, countrymen, my loving followers,  
Plead my successive title with your swords:  
I am his first-born son, that was the last  
That wore the Imperial diadem of Rome;  
Then let my father's honours live in me,  
Nor wrong mine age with this indignity.

**Bas.** Romans, friends, followers, favourers  
of my right,

If ever Bassianus, Caesar's son,  
Were gracious in the eyes of royal Rome,  
Keep then this passage to the Capitol  
And suffer not dishonour to approach  
The Imperial seat, to virtue consecrate,  
To justice, continence and nobility;  
But let desert in pure election shine,  
And, Romans, fight for freedom in your choice.

*Enter MARCUS ANDRONICUS, aloft, with the*

*Mars.* Princes, that strive by factions and  
by feuds  
Unlawfully for rule and empire,

Know that the people of Rome, for whom we stand

A special party, have, by common voice,  
In election for the Roman empery,  
Chosen Andronicus, surnamed Pius  
For many good and great deserts to Rome:  
A nobler man, a braver warrior,  
Lives not this day within the city walls:  
He by the senate is accited home

From weary wars against the barbarous Goths;  
That, with his sons, a terror to our foes,  
Hath yoked a nation strong, train'd up in arms.  
Ten years are spent since first he undertook  
This cause of Rome and chastised with arms  
Our enemies' pride: five times he hath return'd  
Bleeding to Rome, bearing his valiant sons  
In coffins from the field;

And now at last, laden with honour's spoils,  
Returns the good Andronicus to Rome,  
Renowned Titus, flourishing in arms.

Let us entreat, by honour of his name,  
Whom worthily you would have now succeed,  
And in the Capitol and senate's right,  
Whom you pretend to honour and adore,  
That you withdraw you and abate your strength:  
Dismiss your followers and, as suitors should,  
Plead your deserts in peace and humbleness.

**Sat.** How fair the tribune speaks to calm  
my thoughts!

**Bas.** Marcus Andronicus, so I do avert  
In thy uprightness and integrity,  
And so I love and honour thee and thine,  
Thy noble brother Titus and his sons,

And her to whom  
(Gracious Lavinia, Rome's rich ornament,  
That I will here dismiss my loving friends,  
And to my fortunes and the people's favour  
Commit my cause in balance to be weigh'd.

*[Exeunt the Followers of Bassianus.]*

*Sat.* Friends, that have been thus forward  
in my right,

I thank you all and here dismiss you all,  
And to the love and favour of my country  
Commit myself, my person and the cause.

*[Exeunt the Followers of Saturninus.]*

Rome, be as just and gracious unto me 60  
As I am confident and kind to thee.

Open the gates, and let me in.

*Bas.* Tribunes, and me, a poor competitor.

*[Flourish. Saturninus and Bassianus go  
up into the Capitol.]*

*Enter a Captain.*

*Cap.* Romans, make way: the good Andro-  
nicus,

Patron of virtue, Rome's best champion,  
Successful in the battles that he fights,  
With honour and with fortune is return'd  
From where he circumscrib'd with his sword,  
And brought to yoke, the enemies of Rome.

*Drums and trumpets sounded. Enter MAR-  
TIUS and MUTIUS; after them, two Men  
bearing a coffin covered with black; then  
LUCIUS and QUINTUS. After them, TITUS  
ANDRONICUS; and then TAMORA, with  
ALARBUS, DEMETRIUS, CHIRON, AARON,  
and other Goths, prisoners; Soldiers and  
People following. The Bearer set down the  
coffin, and TITUS speaks.*

*Tit.* Hail, Rome, victorious in thy mourning  
veils! 70

Lo, as the bark, that hath discharged her freight,  
Returns with precious lading to the bay  
From whence at first she weigh'd her anchorage,  
Cometh Andronicus, bound with laurel boughs,  
To re-salute his country with his tears,  
Tears of true joy for his return to Rome.  
Thou great defender of this Capitol,  
Stand gracious to the rites that we intend!  
Romans, of five and twenty valliant sons,  
Half of the number that King Priam had, 80  
Behold the poor remains, alive and dead!  
These that survive let Rome reward with love  
These that I bring unto their latest home,  
With burial amongst their ancestors:  
Here Goths have given me leave to sheathe my  
sword.

Titus, unkind and careless of thine own,  
Why suffer'st thou thy sons, unburi'd yet,  
To hover on the dreadful shore of Styx?  
Make way to lay them by their brethren.

*[The tomb is opened.]*

There greet in silence, as the dead are wont, 90  
And sleep in peace, slain in your country's  
war!

O sacred receptacle of my  
Sweet cell of virtue and humanity,  
How many sons of mine hast thou in store,  
That thou wilt never render to me more!

*Luc.* Give us the proudlest prisoner of the  
Goths,

That we may hew his limbs, and on a pile  
Ad manes fratrum sacrifice his flesh,  
Before this earthly prison of their bones;  
That so the shadows be not unappeased, 100  
Nor we disturb'd with prodigies on earth.

*Tit.* I give him you, the noblest that survives,  
The eldest son of this distressed queen.

*Tam.* Stay, Roman brethren! Gracious  
conqueror,

Victorious Titus, rue the tears I shed,  
A mother's tears in passion for her son:  
And if thy sons were ever dear to thee,  
O, think my son to be as dear to me!

Sufficeth not that we are brought to Rome,  
To beautify thy triumphs and return, 110  
[Captive to thee and to thy Roman yoke,  
But must my sons be slaughter'd in the streets,  
For valliant doings in their country's cause?  
O, if to fight for king and commonweal  
Were pious in thine, it is in these.

Victorious Titus, stain not thy tomb with blood:  
Wilt thou draw near the nature of the gods?  
Draw near them then in being merciful:  
Sweet mercy is nobility's true badge:

Thrice noble Titus, spare my first-born son. 120

*Tit.* Patient yourself, madam, and pardon  
me.

These are their brethren, whom you Goths  
beheld

Alive and dead, and for their brethren slain  
Religiously they ask a sacrifice:

To this your son is mark'd, and die he must,  
To appease their groaning shadows that are  
gone.

*Luc.* Away with him! and make a fire  
straight:

And with our swords, upon a pile of wood,  
Let's hew his limbs till they be clean consumed.

*[Exeunt Lucius, Quintus, Martius, and  
Murius, with Alarbus.]*

*Tam.* O cruel, irreligious piety! 130

*Chi.* Was ever Scythia half so barbarous!

*Dem.* Oppose not Scythia to ambitious  
Rome.

Alarbus goes to rest; and we survive  
To tremble under Titus' threatening looks.  
Then, madam, stand resolved, but hope withal  
The self-same gods that arm'd the Queen of  
Troy

With opportunity of sharp revenge  
Upon the Thracian tyrant in his tent,  
May favour Tamora, the Queen of Goths—  
When Goths were Goths and Tamora was  
queen— 140

To quit the bloody wrongs upon her foes.

*Re-enter LUCIUS, QUINTUS, MARTIUS,  
MURIUS, with their swords bloody.]*

*Luc.* See, lord and father, how we have  
perform'd

Our Roman rites: Alarbus' limbs are hew'd,  
And entrails feed the sacrificing fire,  
Whose smoke, like incense, doth perfume the  
sky.

Respectfully thought, but to later  
And with loud hurrahs welcome them to!

*Tit.* Let it be so; and let Andronicus  
Make this his latest farewell to their souls.  
[*Trumpets sounded, and the coffin laid in the tomb.*

In peace and honour rest you here, my sons;  
Rome's readiest champions, repose you here in  
rest.

Secure from worldly chances and mishaps!  
Here lurks no treason, here no envy swells,  
Here grow no damned grudges; here are no  
storms.

No noise, but silence and eternal sleep:  
In peace and honour rest you here, my sons!

*Enter LAVINIA.*

*Lav.* In peace and honour live Lord Titus  
long;

My noble lord and father, live in fame!  
Lo, at this tomb my tributary tears  
I render, for my brethren's obsequies; 160  
And at thy feet I kneel, with tears of joy,  
Shed on the earth, for thy return to Rome:  
O, bless me here with thy victorious hand,  
Whose fortunes Rome's best citizens applaud!

*Tit.* Kind Rome, that hath thus lovingly  
reserved

The cordial of mine age to glad my heart!  
Lavinia, live; outlive thy father's days,  
And fame's eternal date, for virtue's praise!

*Enter, below, MARCUS ANDRONICUS and TRIBUNUS; re-enter SATURNINUS and BASILIANTUS, attended.*

*Marc.* Long live Lord Titus, my beloved  
brother,

Gracious triumpher in the eyes of Rome! 170

*Tit.* Thanks, gentle tribune, noble brother  
Marcus.

*Marc.* And welcome, nephews, from suc-  
cessful wars,

You that survive, and you that sleep in fame!

Fair lords, your fortunes are alike in all,  
That in your country's service drew your  
swords:

But order triumph is this funeral pomp,  
That hath aspired to Solon's happiness  
And triumphs over chance in honour's bed.

Thus Andronicus, the people of Rome 179

Whose friend in justice thou hast ever been,  
Send thee by me, their tribune and their trust,  
This pallament of white and spotless hue;

And name thee in election for the empire,  
With these our late-deceased emperor's sons:

Be candidates then, and put it on,  
And bide to set a head on headless Rome.

*Tit.* A better head her glorious body fits  
Than his that shines for age and foolishness:

What should I don this robe, and trouble you?

Be chosen with execrations to-day, 180

To-morrow yield up rule, resign my life,  
And set abroad new business for you all!

Rome, I have been thy soldier forty years,  
And led my country's strength successfully,

And borne off and twenty valiant sons,  
Whom I have seen claim manfully in arms,  
In various services of their noble country;

And now, for mine age,  
I would I could control the world:

Upright he held it, lords, that held it last. *see*  
*Marc.* Titus, thou shalt obtain and ask the  
empire.

*Sat.* Proud and ambitious tribune, canst  
thou tell?

*Tit.* Patience, Prince Saturninus.

*Sat.* Romans, do me right  
Patricians, draw your swords, and sheathe them  
not

Till Saturninus be Rome's em-  
Andronicus, would thou wert shipp'd to hell,  
Rather than rob me of the people's hearts!

*Luc.* Proud Saturnine, interrupter of the  
good

That noble-minded Titus means to thee!

*Tit.* Content thee, prince; I will restore to  
thee

The people's hearts, and wean them from their  
selves.

*Bas.* Andronicus, I do not flatter thee,  
But honour thee, and will do till I die:

My faction if thou strengthen with thy friends,  
I will most thankful be; and thanks to men  
Of noble minds is honourable meed.

*Tit.* People of Rome, and people's tribunes  
here,

I ask your voices and your suffrages:  
Will you bestow them friendly on Andronicus?

*Tribunes.* To gratify the good Andronicus,  
And gratulate his safe return to Rome, 211

The people will accept whom he admires.

*Tit.* Tribunes, I thank you: and this suit  
I make,

That you create your emperor's eldest son,  
Lord Saturnine; whose virtues will, I hope,

Reflect on Rome as Titan's rays on earth,  
And ripen justice in this commonweal:

Then, if you will elect by my advice,  
Crown him, and say 'Long live our emperor!'

*Marc.* With voices and applause of every  
sort, 220

Patricians and plebeians, we create  
Lord Saturninus Rome's great emperor,

And say 'Long live our Emperor Saturnine!'

[*A long flourish till they come down.*  
*Sat.* Titus Andronicus, for thy favours done  
To us in our election this day,

I give thee thanks in part of thy deserts,  
And will with deeds requite thy gentleness:

And, for an onset, Titus, to advance  
Thy name and honourable family,

Lavinia will I make my empress, 240  
Rome's royal mistress, mistress of my heart,  
And in the sacred Pantheon her espouse:

Tell me, Andronicus, doth this motion please  
thee?

*Tit.* It doth, my worthy lord; and in this  
match

I hold me highly honour'd of your grace:  
And here in sight of Rome to Saturnine,

King and commander of our commonweal,  
The wide world's emperor, do I commend

My sword, my chariot and my prisoners;  
Presents well worthy Rome's imperial lord: 250

Receive them then; the tribute that I owe,  
Mine honour's ransom humbly at thy feet.

*Sat.* The more mine eyes, father of my life!  
How proud I am of thee and of thy gifts



Rome shall record, and when I do forget  
The least of these unspeakable deserts,  
Romans, forget your fealty to me.

*Tit.* [*To Tamora*] Now, madam, are you  
prisoner to an emperor;

To him that, for your honour and your state,  
Will use you nobly and your followers. 260

*Sat.* A goodly lady, trust me; of the hue  
That I would choose, were I to choose anew.  
Clear up, fair queen, that cloudy countenance:  
Though chance of war hath wrought this change  
of cheer,

Thou comest not to be made a scorn in Rome:  
Princely shall be thy usage every way.

Rest on my word, and let not discontent  
Daunt all your hopes: madam, he comforts you  
Can make you greater than the Queen of Goths.  
Lavinia, you are not displeased with this? 270

*Lav.* Not I, my lord; with true nobility  
Warrants these words in princely courtesy.

*Sat.* Thanks, sweet Lavinia. Romans, let  
us go;

Ransomless here we set our prisoners free:  
Proclaim our honours, lords, with trumpet and  
drum.

[*Flourish.* Saturninus courts Tamora  
in dumb show.

*Bas.* Lord Titus, by your leave, this maid is  
mine. [*Seizing Lavinia.*]

*Tit.* How, sir! are you in earnest then, my  
lord?

*Bas.* Ay, noble Titus; and resolved withal  
To do myself this reason and this right.

*Marc.* 'Suum cuique' is our Roman justice.  
This prince in justice seizeth but his own. 281

*Lav.* And that he will, and shall, if Lucius  
live.

*Tit.* Traitors, avaunt! Where is the emper-  
or's guard?

Treason, my lord! Lavinia is surprised!  
*Sat.* Surprised! by whom?

*Bas.* By him that justly may  
Bear his betroth'd from all the world away.

*Exeunt Bassianus and Marcus with Lavinia.*

*Mul.* Brothers, help to convey her hence  
away.

And with my sword I'll keep this door safe.  
[*Exeunt Lucius, Quintus, and Martius.*]

*Tit.* Follow, my lord, and I'll soon bring  
her back.

*Mul.* My lord, you pass not here.

*Tit.* What, villain boy!  
Barre me my way in Rome!

[*Striking Mulius.*]  
*Mul.* Help, Lucius, help! [*Dies.*]

[*During the fray, Saturninus, Tamora,  
Demetrius, Chiron and Aaron go out  
and re-enter, above.*]

*Re-enter LUCIUS.*

*Luc.* My lord, you are unjust, and, more  
than so,

In wrongful quarrel you have slain your son.

*Tit.* Nor thou, nor he, are any sons of  
mine;

My sons would never so dishonour me:  
Traitor, restore Lavinia to the emperor.

*Lav.* Dead, if you will; but not to be  
his wife,

That is another's lawful promised love. [*Exit.*]

*Sat.* No, Titus, no; the emperor needs her  
not.

Nor her, nor thee, nor any of thy stock: 300  
I'll trust, by leisure, him that mocks me once;

Thee never, nor thy traitorous haughty sons,  
Confederates all thus to dishonour me.

Was there none else in Rome to make a stale,  
But Saturnine? Full well, Andronicus,

Agree these deeds with that proud brag of thine,  
That said'st I begg'd the empire at thy hands.

*Tit.* O monstrous! what reproachful words  
are these?

*Sat.* But go thy ways; go, give that chang-  
ing piece

To him that flourish'd for her with his sword:  
A valiant son-in-law thou shalt enjoy; 311

(One fit to bandy with thy lawless sons,  
To ruffle in the commonwealth of Rome.

*Tit.* These words are razors to my wounded  
heart.

*Sat.* And therefore, lovely Tamora, queen of  
Goths,

That like the stately Phoebe 'mongst her  
nymphs

Dost overshadow the gallant'st dames of Rome,  
If thou be pleas'd with this my sudden choice,

Behold, I choose thee, Tamora, for my bride,  
And will create thee empress of Rome. 320

*Sat.* Speak, Queen of Goths, dost thou applaud my  
choice?

And here I swear by all the Roman gods,  
Sith priest and holy water are so near

And tapers burn so bright and every thing  
In readiness for Hymeneus stand,

I will not re-ascend the streets of Rome,  
Or climb my palace, till from forth this place

I lead espoused my bride along with me.

*Tam.* And here, in sight of heaven, to Rome  
I swear,

If Saturnine advance the Queen of Goths, 330  
She will a handmaid be to his desires.

A loving nurse, a mother to his youth.

*Sat.* Ascend, fair queen, Pantheon. Lords,  
accompany

Your noble emperor and his lovely bride,  
Sent by the heavens for Prince Saturnine,

Whose wisdom hath her fortune conquer'd:  
There shall we consummate our spousal rites. 340

[*Exeunt all but Titus.*]

*Tit.* I am not bid to wait upon this bride.  
Titus, when wert thou wont to walk alone,  
Dishonour'd thus, and challeng'd of wrong?

*Re-enter MARCUS, LUCIUS, QUINTUS, and  
MARTIUS.*

*Marc.* O Titus, son, O, see what thou hast  
done! 341

In a bad quarrel slain a virtuous son.

*Tit.* No, foolish tribune, no; no son of mine,  
Nor thou, nor these, confederates in the deed

That hath dishonour'd all our family:  
Unworthy brother, and unworthy guest

*Luc.* But let us give him justice, as he  
deserves:

Give justice hand with our vengeance.

*Tit.* Traitors, away! he rests not in this tomb:

This monument five hundred years hath stood,  
Which I have sumptuously re-edified: 351

Here none but soldiers and Rome's servitors  
Repose in fame; none basely slain in brawls;  
Bury him where you can; he comes not here.

*Marc.* My lord, this is impiety in you:  
My nephew Mutius' deeds do plead for him;  
He must be buried with his brethren.

*Quin.* And shall, or him we will accom-  
*Mart.* pany.

*Tit.* And shall! what villain was it spake  
that word?

*Quin.* He that would vouch it in any place  
but here. 360

*Tit.* What, would you bury him in my  
despite?

*Marc.* No, noble Titus, but entreat of thee  
To pardon Mutius and to bury him.

*Tit.* Marcus, even thou hast struck upon  
my crest.

And, with these boys, mine honour thou hast  
wounded:

My foes I do repute you every one;  
So, trouble me no more, but get you gone.

*Mart.* He is not with himself; let us with-  
draw.

*Quin.* Not I, till Mutius' bones be buried.  
[*Marcus and the Sons of Titus kneel.*]

*Marc.* Brother, for in that name doth nature  
plead, — 370

*Quin.* Father, and in that name doth nature  
speak, —

*Tit.* Speak thou no more, if all the rest will  
speed.

*Marc.* Renowned Titus, more than half my  
soul, —

*Lac.* Dear father, soul and substance of  
us all, —

*Marc.* Suffer thy brother Marcus to inter  
His noble nephew here in virtue's nest,

That died in honour and Lavinia's cause.  
Thou art a Roman; be not barbarous:

The Greeks upon advice did bury Ajax  
That slew himself; and wise Laertes' son 380

Did graciously plead for his funerals:  
Let not young Mutius, then, that was thy joy,

Be barr'd his entrance here.

*Tit.* Rise, Marcus, rise.  
The dismal'st day is this that e'er I saw;

To be dishonour'd by my sons in Rome!  
Well, bury him, and bury me the next.

[*Mutius is put into the tomb.*]  
*Lac.* There lie thy bones, sweet Mutius,

with thy friends,  
Till we with trophies do adorn thy tomb.

*All.* [*Kneeling*] No man shed tears for noble  
Mutius;

He lives in fame that died in virtue's cause. 390  
*Marc.* My lord, to step out of these dreary  
dumps,

How comes it that the subtle Queen of Goths  
Is of a sudden thus advanced in Rome?

*Tit.* I know not, Marcus; but I know it  
is:

Whether by device or no, the heavens can tell:  
Is not yet then beholding to the man

That brought  
Yes, and will

this high good turn so far:  
remunerate.

*Flourish.* Re-enter, from one side, SATURNI-  
NUS attended, TAMORA, DEMETRIUS, CHERON,  
and AABON; from the other, BASSIANUS,  
LAVINIA, and others.

*Sat.* So, Bassianus, you have r'd your  
prize:

God give you joy, sir, of your gallant  
*Bas.* And you of yours, my lord

more,  
Nor wish no less; and so, I take my

*Sat.* Traitor, if Rome have law or we have  
power,

Thou and thy faction shall repent this rape.  
*Bas.* Rape, call you it, my lord, to seize my

own,  
My true-betrothed love and now my wife!

But let the laws of Rome determine all;  
Meanwhile I am possess'd of that is mine.

*Sat.* 'Tis good, sir: you are very short with us;  
But, if we live, we'll be as sharp with you. 410

*Bas.* My lord, what I have done, as best  
I may,

Answer I must and shall do with my life.  
Only thus much I give your grace to know:

By all the duties that I owe to Rome,  
This noble gentleman, Lord Titus here,

Is in opinion and in honour wrong'd;  
That in the rescue of Lavinia

With his own hand did slay his youngest son,  
In zeal to you and highly moved to wrath

To be controll'd in that he frankly gave: 420  
Receive him, then, to favour, Saturnine,

That hath express'd himself in all his deeds  
A father and a friend to thee and Rome.

*Tit.* Prince Bassianus, leave to plead my  
deeds:

'Tis thou and those that have dishonour'd me.  
Rome and the righteous heavens be my judge,

How I have loved and honour'd Saturnine!  
*Tam.* My worthy lord, if ever Tamora

Were gracious in those princely eyes of thine,  
Then hear me speak indifferently for all; 430

And at my suit, sweet, pardon what is past.  
*Sat.* What, madam! be dishonour'd openly;

And basely put it up without revenge!  
*Tam.* Not so, my lord; the gods of Rome

forfend  
I should be author to dishonour you!

But on mine honour dare I undertake  
For good Lord Titus' innocence in all;

Whose fury not dissembled speaks his griefs:  
Then, at my suit, look graciously on him;

Loss not so noble a friend on vain suppose. 440  
Nor with sour looks afflict his gentle heart.

[*Aside to Sat.*] My lord, be ruled by me, be  
won at last;

Dissemble all your griefs and discontents:  
You are but newly planted in your throne;

Least, then, the people, and patricians too,  
Upon a just survey, take Titus' part,

And so supplant you for ingratitudes,  
Which Rome reputes to be a heinous sin.

Yield at entreats; and then let me alone: 450  
I'll find a day to massacre them all

And raze their faction and their tan

The cruel father and his traitorous sons,  
To whom I sued for my dear son's life,  
And make them know what 'tis to let a queen  
Kneel in the streets and beg for grace in vain.

Come, come, sweet emperor; come, Andronicus;  
Take up this good old man, and cheer the heart  
That dies in tempest of thy angry frown.

*Sat.* Rise, Titus, rise; my empress hath  
prevail'd.

*Tit.* I thank your majesty, and her, my  
lord:

These words, these looks, infuse new life in me.

*Tam.* Titus, I am incorporate in Rome,  
A Roman now adopted happily,  
And must advise the emperor for his good.  
This day all quarrels die, Andronicus;  
And let it be mine honour, good my lord,  
That I have reconciled your friends and you.  
For you, Prince Bassianus, I have pass'd  
My word and promise to the emperor,  
That you will be more mild and tractable. 470  
And fear not, lords, and you, Lavinia;  
By my advice, all humbled on your knees,  
You shall ask pardon of his majesty.

*Luc.* We do, and vow to heaven and to his  
highness,

That what we did was mildly as we might,  
Tendering our sister's honour and our own.

*Marc.* That, on mine honour, here I do  
protest.

*Sat.* Away, and talk not; trouble us no more.

*Tam.* Nay, nay, sweet emperor, we must all  
be friends: 479

The tribune and his nephews kneel for grace;  
I will not be denied: sweet heart, look back.

*Sat.* Marcus, for thy sake and thy brother's  
here,

And at my lovely Tamora's entreats,  
I do remit these young men's heinous faults:  
Stand up.

Lavinia, though you left me like a churl,  
I found a friend, and sure as death I swore  
I would not part a bachelor from the priest.

Come, if the emperor's court can feast two  
brides,

You are my guest, Lavinia, and your friends.  
This day shall be a love-day, Tamora. 491

*Tit.* To-morrow, an it please your majesty  
To hunt the panther and the hart with me,  
With horn and bound we'll give your grace  
bonjour.

*Sat.* De it so, Titus, and grammarcy too.

[*Flourish. Ecount.*]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. *Rome. Before the palace.*

*Enter AARON.*

*Aar.* Now climbeth Tamora Olympus' top,  
Safe out of fortune's shot; and sits aloft,  
Secure of thunder's crack or lightning flash;  
Advanced above pale envy's threatening reach.  
As when the golden sun salutes the morn,  
And, having gilt the ocean with his beams,  
Gallops the zodiac in his glittering coach,  
And overlooks the highest-peering hills;  
So Tamora;

Upon her wit doth earthly honour wait, 20  
And virtue stoops and trembles at her foot.  
Then, Aaron, arm thy heart, and sit thy  
thoughts,

To mount aloft with thy imperial mistress,  
And mount her pitch, whom thou in triumph  
long

Hast prisoner held, fetter'd in amorous chains  
And faster bound to Aaron's charming eyes  
Than is Prometheus tied to Caucasus.

Away with slavish weeds and servile thoughts!  
I will be bright, and shine in pearl and gold,  
To wait upon this new-made empress. 30

To wait, said I! to wanton with this queen,  
This goddess, this Semiramis, this nymph,  
This siren, that will charm Rome's Saturnine,  
And see his shipwreck and his commotion's  
Holloa! what storm is this?

*Enter DEMETRIUS and CHIRON, braving.*

*Dem.* Chiron, thy years want wit, thy wit  
wants edge,

And manners, to intrude where I am graced;  
And may, for aught thou know'st, affected be.

*Chi.* Demetrius, thou dost over-ween in all;  
And so in this, to bear me down with braves. 30  
'Tis not the difference of a year or two  
Makes me less gracious or thee more fortunate.  
I am as able and as fit as thou.

To serve, and to deserve my mistress' grace;  
And that my sword upon thee shall approve.  
And plead my passions for Lavinia's love.

*Aar.* [*Aside*] Clubs, clubs! these lovers will  
not keep the peace.

*Dem.* Why, boy, although our mother, un-  
advised,

Gave you a dancing-rapier by your side,  
Are you so desperate grown, to threat your  
friends? 40

Go to; have your lath glued within your sheath  
Till you know better how to handle it.

*Chi.* Meanwhile, sir, with the little skill  
I have,

Full well shalt thou perceive how much I dare.  
*Dem.* Ay, boy, grow ye so brave! [*They draw.*]

*Aar.* [*Coming forward*] Why, how now,  
lords!

So near the emperor's palace dare you draw,  
And maintain such a quarrel openly!

Full well I wot the ground of all this grudge:  
I would not for a million of gold

The cause were known to them it most con-  
cerns; 50

Nor would your noble mother for much more  
Be so dishonour'd in the court of Rome.

For shame, put up.

*Dem.* Not I, till I have sheathed  
My rapier in his bosom and withal

Thrust these reproachful speeches down his  
throat

That he hath breathed in my dishonour here.

*Chi.* For that I am prepared and full re-  
solved.

Foul-spoken coward, that thunder'st with thy  
tongue,

And with thy weapon nothing dar'st perform!  
*Aar.* Away, I say!

Now, by the gods that warlike Goths adore, 60

This petty bubble will undo us all.  
 Was, lords, and think you not how dangerous  
 It is to jet upon a prince's right?  
 What, in Lavinia then become so loose,  
 Or Bassianus so degenerate,  
 That for her love such quarrels may be broach'd  
 Without contrivance, justice, or revenge?  
 Young lords, beware! an should the empress  
 This discord's ground, the music would not  
 please.

*Chi.* I care not, I, knew she and all the world;

I love Lavinia more than all the world.  
*Dem.* Youngling, learn thou to make some  
 meaner choice:

Lavinia is thine elder brother's hope.

*Aar.* Why, are ye mad? or know ye not, in  
 Rome

How furious and impatient they be,  
 And cannot brook competitors in love?  
 I tell you, lords, you do but plot your deaths  
 By this device.

*Chi.* Aaron, a thousand deaths  
 Would I propose to achieve her whom I love. So

*Aar.* To achieve her! how?

*Dem.* Why makest thou it so strange?  
 She is a woman, therefore may be woo'd;

She is a woman, therefore may be won;

She is Lavinia, therefore must be loved.

What, man! more water gildeth by the mill

Than wots the miller of; and easy it is

Of a cut loaf to steal a shive, we know:

Though Bassianus be the emperor's brother,  
 Better than he have worn Vulcan's badge.

*Aar.* [Aside] Ay, and as good as Saturninus  
 may.

*Dem.* Then why should he despair that knows  
 to court it

With words, fair looks and liberality?

What, hast not thou full often struck a doe,  
 And borne her cleanly by the keeper's nose?

*Aar.* Why, then, it seems, some certain  
 snatch or so

Would serve your turns.

*Chi.* Ay, so the turn were served.

*Dem.* Aaron, thou hast hit it.

*Aar.* Would you had hit it too!

Then should not we be tired with this ado.

Why, hark ye, hark ye! and are you such fools  
 To square for this? would it offend you, then,

That both should speed?

*Chi.* Faith, not me.

*Dem.* Nor me, so I were one.

*Aar.* For shame, be friends, and join for  
 that you jar:

'Tis policy and stratagem must do

That you affect; and so must you receive,

That what you cannot as you would achieve,

You must perfectly accomplish as you may.

Take this of me: I never was not more chaste

Than this Lavinia, Bassianus' love.

A wonder an lingering languishment

Must so possess, and I have found the path.

My father, a solemn hunting is in hand;

And the lovely Roman ladies troop

And walk the wide and spacious;

And many unthought of spots there are

Fitted by kind for:

Single you thither then this dainty

And strike her home by force, if not by words:

This way, or not at all, stand you in!

Come, come, our empress, with her

To villany and vengeance consecrate.

Will we acquaint with all that we intend

And she shall file our engines with advice.

That will not suffer you to square yourselves,

But to your wishes' height advance you both.

The emperor's court is like the house of Fame,

The palace full of tongues, of eyes, and ears:

The woods are ruthless, dreadful, deaf, and

dull;

There speak, and strike, brave boys, and take

your turns;

There serve your lusts, shadow'd from heaven's

eye,

And revel in Lavinia's treasury.

*Chi.* Thy counsel, lad, smells of no coward-

ice,

*Dem.* Sit fas aut nefas, till I find the stream

To cool this heat, a charm to calm these fits,

Per Styga, per manes vehor. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II. A forest near Rome. Horns and

cry of hounds heard.

Enter TITUS ANDRONICUS, with Hunters, &c.,

MARCUS, LUCIUS, QUINTUS, and MARTIUS.

*Tit.* The hunt is up, the morn is bright and

grey,

The fields are fragrant and the woods are green:

Uncouple here and let us make a bay

And wake the emperor and his lovely bride

And rouse the prince and ring a hunter's peal.

That all the court may echo with the noise.

Sons, let it be your charge, as it is ours,

To attend the emperor's person carefully;

I have been troubled in my sleep this night,

But dawning day new comfort hath inspired. So

A cry of hounds, and horns winded in a peal.

Enter SATURNINUS, TAMORA, BASSIANUS,

LAVINIA, DEMETRIUS, CHIRON, and At-

tendants.

Many good morrows to your majesty;

Madam, to you as many and as good:

I promised your grace a hunter's peal.

*Sat.* And you have rung it lustily, my lord:

Somewhat too early for new-married ladies.

*Bas.* Lavinia, how say you?

*Lav.* I say, no;

I have been broad awake two hours and more.

*Sat.* Come on, then; horse and chariots let

us have,

And to our sport. [To Tamora] Madam, now

shall ye see

Our Roman hunting.

*Marc.* I have done, my lord, so

Will rouse the proudest panther in the chase,

And climb the highest promontory top.

*Tit.* And I have horse will follow where the

game

Makes way, and run like wildflowers on the plain.

*Dem.* Chiron, we have met, we, with horse

nor bound,

But hope to pluck a dainty doe to ground.  
(*Exeunt.*)

SCENE III. *A lonely part of the forest.*

*Enter AARON, with a bag of gold.*

Aar. He that had wit would think that I had none,  
To bury so much gold under a tree,  
And never after to inherit it.  
Let him that thinks of me so abjectly  
Know that this gold must coin a stratagem,  
Which, cunningly effected, will begot  
A very excellent piece of villany:  
And so repose, sweet gold, for their unrest  
That have their aims out of the empress' chest.  
(*Hides the gold.*)

*Enter TAMORA.*

Tam. My lovely Aaron, wherefore look'st  
thou sad,  
When every thing doth make a gleeful boast?  
The birds chant melody on every bush,  
The snake lies rolled in the cheerful sun,  
The green leaves quiver with the cooling wind  
And make a chequer'd shadow on the ground:  
Enter their sweet shade, Aaron, let us sit,  
And, whilst the babbling echo mocks the  
hounds,  
Replying shrilly to the well-tuned horns,  
As if a double hunt were heard at once,  
Let us sit down and mark their yelping noise;  
And, after conflict such as was supposed,  
The wandering prince and Dido once enjoy'd,  
When with a happy storm they were surprised  
And curtain'd with a counsel-keeping cave,  
We may, each wreathed in the other's arms,  
Our pastimes done, possess a golden slumber:  
Whilst hounds and horns and sweet melodious  
birds  
Be unto us as is a nurse's song  
Of lullaby to bring her babe asleep.  
Aar. Madam, though Venus govern your  
desires,  
Saturn is dominator over mine:  
He signifies my deadly-standing eye,  
Silence and my cloudy melancholy,  
A fleece of woolly hair that now uncurls  
Even as an adder when she doth unroll  
To do some fatal execution!  
No, madam, these are no venereal signs:  
Vengeance is in my heart, death in my hand,  
Blood and revenge are hammering in my head.  
Hark, Tamora, the empress of my soul,  
Which never hopes more heaven than rests in  
thee.  
This is the day of doom for Bassianus:  
His Philomel must lose her tongue to-day,  
Thy sons make pillage of her chastity  
And wash their hands in Bassianus' blood.  
Scot thou this letter! take it up, I pray thee,  
And give the king this fatal-plotted scroll.  
Now question me no more: we are suppld;  
Here comes a parcel of our hopeful booty,  
Which dreams not yet their lives' destruction.  
Tam. Ah, my sweet Moor, sweeter to me  
than life!

Aar. No more, great empress; Bassianus  
comes:  
Be cross with him; and I'll go fetch thy stone  
To back thy quarrels, whatsoever they be. (*Exit.*)

*Enter BASSIANUS and LAVINIA.*

Bas. Who have we here? Rome's royal  
empress,  
Unfurnish'd of her well-becoming troop?  
(Or is it Dian, habited like her,  
Who hath abandoned her holy groves  
To see the general hunting in this forest?)  
Tam. Saucy controller of our private steps!  
Had I the power that some say Dian had,  
Thy temples should be planted presently  
With horns, as was Acton's; and the bounds  
Should drive upon thy new-transformed limbs,  
Unmannerly intruder as thou art!

Lav. Under your patience, gentle empress,  
Tis thought you have a goodly gift in horning;  
And to be doubted that your Moor and you  
Are singled forth to try experiments:  
Jove shield your husband from his bounds  
to-day!

Tis pity they should take him for a stag.  
Bas. Believe me, queen, your swarth  
Cimmerian

Doth make your honour of his body's hue,  
Spotted, detestable, and abominable.  
Why are you sequester'd from all your train,  
Dismounted from your snow-white goodly steed,  
And wander'd hither to an obscure plot,  
Accompanied but with a barbarous Moor,  
If foul desire had not conducted you?

Lav. And, being interrupted in your sport,  
Great reason that my noble lord be rated  
For sauciness. I pray you, let us hence,  
And let her joy her raven-colour'd love:  
This valley fits the purpose passing well.

Bas. The king my brother shall have notice  
of this.

Lav. Ay, for these slips have made him  
noted long:

Good king, to be so mightily abused!

Tam. Why have I patience to endure all  
this?

*Enter DEMETRIUS and CHIRON.*

Dem. How now, dear sovereign, and our  
gracious mother!

Why doth your highness look so pale and wan?  
Tam. Have I not reason, think you, to look  
pale?

These two have 'told me hither to this place:  
A barren detested vale, you see it is;  
The trees, though summer, yet barren and dead,  
O'ergrown with mists and fatal mistletoe,  
Here never shines the sun; here nothing breeds,  
Unless the nightly owl or fatal raven.  
And when they show'd me this detested vale,  
They told me here, at dead time of the night,  
A thousand hands, a thousand hissing snakes,  
Ten thousand swelling toads, an infinite number  
Would make each mortal and immortal man  
As any mortal body  
Should straight fall!

No sooner had they told this hellish tale,  
But straight they told me they would bind me  
here

Unto the body of a dismal yew,  
And leave me to this miserable death :  
And then they call'd me foul adulterers,  
Leucivious Goth, and all the bitterest terms :  
That ever ear did hear to such effect :  
And, had you not by wondrous fortune come,  
This vengeance on me had they executed.  
Revenge it, as you love your mother's life,  
Or be ye not henceforth call'd my children.

Dem. This is a witness that I am thy son.

[Stabs Bassianus.

Chi. And this for me, struck home to show  
my strength.

[Also stabs Bassianus, who dies.

Lav. Ay, come, Semiramis, nay, barbarous  
Tamora,

For no name fits thy nature but thy own !

Tam. Give me thy poniard ; you shall know,  
my boys,

Your mother's hand shall right your mother's  
wrong.

Dem. Stay, madam ; here is more belongs  
to her ;

First thrash the corn, then after burn the straw :  
This minion stood upon her chastity,  
Upon her nuptial vow, her loyalty,  
And with that painted hope braves your  
mightiness :

And shall she carry this unto her grave !

Chi. An if she do, I would I were an eunuch.  
Drag hence her husband to some secret hole,  
And make his dead trunk pillow to our lust.

Tam. But when ye have the honey ye desire,  
Let not this wasp outlive, us loth to sting.

Chi. I warrant you, madam, we will make  
that sure.

Come, mistress, now perforce we will enjoy  
That nice-preserved honesty of yours.

Lav. O Tamora ! thou bear'st a woman's  
face,—

Tam. I will not hear her speak ; away with  
her !

Lav. Sweet lords, entreat her hear me but a  
word.

Dem. Listen, fair madam : let it be your  
glory

To see her tears ; but be your heart to them :  
As unrelenting flint to drops of rain.

Lav. When did the tiger's young ones teach  
the dam ?

O, do not learn her wrath : she taught it thee ;  
The milk thou suck'd'st from her did turn to  
marble ;

Even at thy tent thou hadst thy tyranny.

Yet every mother breeds not sons alike :

[To Chiron.] Do thou entreat her show a woman

at. What, wouldst thou have me prove  
myself a bastard !

Lav. 'Tis true ; the raven doth not hatch a

nest.

But I heard,—O, could I find it now !—: so

many paws pared all away :

And now I see foster forlorn children,

The whilst their own birds famish in their  
nests :

O, be to me, though thy hard heart say no,  
Nothing so kind, but something pitiful !

Tam. I know not what it means away  
with her !

Lav. O, let me teach thee ! for my father's  
sake,

That gave thee life, when well he might have  
slain thee,

Be not oblate, open thy deaf ears.

Tam. Hadst thou in person ne'er offended  
me,

Even for his sake am I pitiless.

Remember, boys, I pour'd forth tears in vain,  
To save your brother from the sacrifice ;

But fierce Andronicus would not relent :

Therefore, away with her, and use her as you  
will,

The worse to her, the better loved of me.

Lav. O Tamora, be call'd a gentle queen,  
And with thine own hands kill me in this place !

For 'tis not life that I have begg'd so long :  
Poor I was slain when Bassianus died.

Tam. What begg'st thou, then ! fond woman,  
let me go.

Lav. Thy present death I beg ; and one thing  
more

That womanhood denies my tongue to tell :

O, keep me from their worse than killing lust,  
And tumble me into some loathsome pit

Where never man's eye may behold my body :

Do this, and be a charitable murderer.

Tam. So should I rob my sweet sons of  
their fec :

No, let them satisfy their lust on thee.

Dem. Away ! for thou hast stay'd us here  
too long.

Lav. No grace ! no womanhood ! Ah,  
heavily creature !

The blot and enemy to our general name !

Confusion fall—

Chi. Nay, then I'll stop your mouth. Bring  
thou her husband :

This is the hole where Aaron bid us hide him.

[Demetrius throws the body of Bassianus  
into the pit ; then exeunt Demetrius  
and Chiron, dragging off Lavinia.

Tam. Farewell, my sons : see that you make  
her sure.

Ne'er let my heart know merry cheer indeed,  
Till all the Andronici be made away.

Now will I hence to seek my lovely Moor,  
And let my spleenful sons this trull defour.

[Exit.

Re-enter AARON, with QUINTUS and MARTIUS.

Aar. Come on, my lords, the better foot  
before :

Straight will I bring you to the loathsome pit  
Where I caged the panther fast asleep.

Quin. My sight is very dull, what'er it bodes.

Mart. And mine, I promise you ; were I  
not for shame,

Well could I leave our sport to sleep awhile.

Quin. What, art thou fall'n ? What while  
hole is this,

Whose mouth is cover'd with rude-growing  
brims,

Upon whose leaves are drops of new-shed blood  
As fresh as morning dew distill'd on flowers?  
A very fatal place it seems to me.

Speak, brother, hast thou hurt thee with the  
fall?

*Mart.* O brother, with the dismall'st object  
hurt

That ever eye with sight made heart lament!

*Aar.* [*Aside*] Now will I fetch the king to  
find them here,

That he thereby may give a likely guess  
How these were they that made away his  
brother.

*Mart.* Why dost not comfort me, and help  
me out

From this unhallowed and blood-stained hole!

*Quin.* I am surprised with an uncouth fear:  
A chilling sweat o'er-runs my trembling joints:  
My heart suspects more than mine eye can see.

*Mart.* To prove thou hast a true-divining  
heart,

Aaron and thou look down into this den,  
And see a fearful sight of blood and death.

*Quin.* Aaron is gone; and my compassionate  
heart

Will not permit mine eyes once to behold  
The thing whereat it trembles by surmise:

O, tell me how it is; for ne'er till now  
Was I a child to fear I know not what.

*Mart.* Lord Bassianus lies embrewed here,  
All on a heap, like to a slaughter'd lamb,  
In this detested, dark, blood-drinking pit.

*Quin.* If it be dark, how dost thou know  
'tis he?

*Mart.* Upon his bloody finger he doth wear  
A precious ring, that lightens all the hole,  
Which, like a taper in some monument,

Doth shine upon the dead man's earthy cheeks,  
And shows the ragged entrails of the pit:

So pale did shine the moon on Pyramus  
When he by night lay bathed in maiden blood

O brother, help me with thy fainting hand—  
If fear hath made thee faint, as me it hath—

Out of this fell devouring receptacle,  
As hateful as Cocytus' misty mouth.

*Quin.* Reach me thy hand, that I may help  
thee out;

Or, wanting strength to do thee so much good,  
I may be pluck'd into the swallowing womb

Of this deep pit, poor Bassianus' grave.

I have no strength to pluck thee to the brink.

*Mart.* Nor I no strength to climb without  
thy help.

*Quin.* Thy hand once more; I will not loose  
again,

Till thou art here aloft, or I below:

Thou canst not come to me: I come to thee.

[*Falls in.*]

*Enter SATURNINUS with AARON.*

*Sat.* Along with me: I'll see what hole is  
here,

And what he is that now is tump'd into it.

Say, who art thou that lately didst descend  
into this gaping bottom of the earth?

*Mart.* The unhappy son of old Andronicus

Brought hither in a most unlucky hour,  
To find thy brother Bassianus dead.

*Sat.* My brother dead! I know thou dost  
but jest:

He and his lady both are at the lodge  
Upon the north side of this pleasant chase;

'Tis not an hour since I left him there.

*Mart.* We know not where you left him all  
alive;

But, out, alas! here have we found him dead.

*Re-enter TAMORA, with Attendants; TITUS  
ANDRONICUS, and LUCIUS.*

*Tam.* Where is my lord the king?

*Sat.* Here, Tamora, though grieved with  
killing grief.

*Tam.* Where is thy brother Bassianus?

*Sat.* Now to the bottom dost thou search  
my wound:

Poor Bassianus here lies murdered.

*Tam.* Then all too late I bring this fatal  
writ,

The complot of this timeless tragedy;  
And wonder greatly that man's face can fold  
In pleasing smiles such murderous tyranny.

[*She giveth Saturnine a letter.*]

*Sat.* [*Reads*] 'An if we miss to meet him  
handsomely—

Sweet huntsman, Bassianus 'tis we mean—  
Do thou so much as dig the grave for him:

Thou know'st our meaning. Look for thy  
reward

Among the nettles at the elder-tree  
Which overshades the mouth of that same pit  
Where we decreed to bury Bassianus.

Do this, and purchase us thy lasting friends':  
(O Tamora! was ever heard the like?)

This is the pit, and this the elder-tree.  
Look, sir, if you can find the huntsman out  
That should have murder'd Bassianus here.

*Aar.* My gracious lord, here is the bag of  
gold.

*Sat.* [*To Titus*] Two of thy whelps, fell curs  
of bloody kind,

Have here bereft my brother of his life.

Sirs, drag them from the pit unto the prison:  
There let them bide until we have devised  
Some never-heard-of torturing pain for them.

*Tam.* What, are they in this pit? O won-  
drous thing!

How easily murder is discovered!

*Tit.* High emperor, upon my feeble knee  
I beg this boon, with tears not lightly shed,  
That this fell fault of my accursed sons,

Accursed, if the fault be proved in them,—  
*Sat.* If it be proved! you see it is apparent.

Who found this letter! Tamora, was it you?

*Tam.* Andronicus himself did take it up.

*Tit.* I did, my lord; yet let me be their bail:  
For, by my father's reverend soul, I vow  
They shall be ready at your highness' will  
To answer their suspicion with their lives.

*Sat.* Thou shalt not bail them: see thou  
follow me.

Some bring the murder'd body, some the mur-  
derers:

Let them not speak a word; the guilt is plain;

For, by my soul, were there worse end than death.

That and upon them should be executed.

Tam. Andronicus, I will entreat the king:

Fear not thy sons; they shall do well enough.

Tit. Come, Lucius, come; stay not to talk with them. [Exeunt.]

SCENE IV. *Another part of the forest.*

Enter DEMETRIUS and CHIRON with LAVINIA, ravished; her hands cut off, and her tongue cut out.

Dem. So, now go tell, an if thy tongue can speak,

Who 'twas that cut thy tongue and ravish'd thee.

Chi. Write down thy mind, bewray thy meaning so,

An if thy stumps will let thee play the scribe.

Dem. See, how with signs and tokens she can scrawl.

Chi. Go home, call for sweet water, wash thy hands.

Dem. She hath no tongue to call, nor hands to wash;

And so let's leave her to her silent walks.

Chi. An 'twere my case, I should go hang myself.

Dem. If thou hadst hands to help thee knit the cord. [Exeunt Demetrius and Chiron.]

Enter MARCUS.

Mar. Who is this? my niece, that flies away so fast!

Cousin, a word; where is your husband?

If I do dream, would all my wealth would wake me!

If I do wake, some planet strike me down,

That I may slumber in eternal sleep!

Speak, gentle niece, what stern ungentle hands have lopp'd and hew'd and made thy body bare

Of her two branches, those sweet ornaments, whose circling shadows kings have sought to sleep in,

And might not gain so great a happiness as have thy love? Why dost not speak to me?

Alas, a crimson river of warm blood,

Like to a bubbling fountain stirr'd with wind,

Dash'd and fall between thy rosed lips,

Coming and going with thy honey breath.

But, sure, some Tereus hath deflower'd thee,

And, lest thou shouldst detect him, cut thy tongue.

Al. Now thou turn'st away thy face for shame!

And, notwithstanding all this loss of blood,

As from a conduit with three issuing spouts, so yet do thy cheeks look red as Titan's face

Blushing to be encounter'd with a cloud.

Shall I speak for thee? shall I say 'tis so?

O, that I knew thy heart; and knew the best,

That I might tell as him, to ease my mind!

Sorrow, sorrow, like an oven, heats the heart to chide where it is.

Full of remorse, she but lost her tongue,

And in a tedious whisper saw'd her mind;

But, for thy sake, that mean is cut from thee;

A wretched, wretched cousin, hast thou met,

he have better saw'd than Phloemal.

O, had the monster seen those lily hands

Tremble, like aspen-leaves, upon a lute,

And make the silken strings delight to kiss them.

He would not then have touch'd them for his life!

Or, had he heard the heavenly harmony

Which that sweet tongue hath made,

He would have dropp'd his knife, and fell asleep

As Cerberus at the Thracian poet's feet.

Come, let us go, and make thy father blind:

For such a sight will blind a father's eye:

One hour's storm will drown the fragrant meads;

What will whole months of tears thy father's eyes!

Do not draw back, for we will mourn with thee:

O, could our mourning ease thy misery!

## ACT III.

SCENE I. *Rome. A street.*

Enter Judges, Senators and Tribunes, with MARTIUS and QUINTUS, bound, passing on to the place of execution; TITUS going before, pleading.

Tit. Hear me, grave fathers! noble tribunes, stay!

For pity of mine age, whose youth was spent

In dangerous wars, whilst you securely slept;

For all my blood in Rome's great quarrel shed;

For all the frosty nights that I have watch'd;

And for these bitter tears, which now you see

Filling the aged wrinkles in my cheeks;

Be pitiful to my condemned sons,

Whose souls are not corrupted as 'tis thought.

For two and twenty sons I never wept,

Because they died in honour's lofty bed.

[Lies down; the Judges, &c. pass by him, and Exeunt.]

For these, these, tribunes, in the dust I write

My heart's deep languor and my soul's sad tears:

Let my tears stanch the earth's dry appetite;

My sons' sweet blood will make it shame and blush.

O earth, I will befriend thee more with rain,

That shall distil from these two ancient urns,

Than youthful April shall with all his showers;

In summer's drought I'll drop upon thee still;

In winter with warm tears I'll melt the snow,

And keep eternal spring-time on thy face,

So thou refuse to drink my dear sons' blood.

Enter LUCIUS, with his sword drawn.

O reverend tribunes! O gentle, aged men!

Unbind my sons, reverse the doom of death:

And let me say, that never wept before,

My tears are now prevailing custom.

Luc. O noble father, you lament in vain!

The tribunes hear you not; no man is by:

And you recount your sorrows to a stone.

Tit. Ah, Lucius, for thy brothers let me plead.



Grave tribunes, once more I entreat of you,——

*Luc.* My gracious lord, no tribune hears you speak.

*Tit.* Why, 'tis no matter, man; if they did hear,

They would not mark me, or if they did mark,

They would not pity me, yet plead I must;

And bootless unto them. . . . .

Therefore I tell my sorrows to the stones;

Who, though they cannot answer my distress,

Yet in some sort they are better than the tribunes,

For that they will not intercept my tale: 40

When I do weep, they humbly at my feet

Receive my tears and seem to weep with me;

And, were they but attired in grave weeds,

Rome could afford no tribune like to these.

A stone is soft as wax,—tribunes more hard

than stones;

A stone is silent, and offendeth not,

And tribunes with their tongues doom men to death. [Rises.]

But wherefore stand'st thou with thy weapon

drawn?

*Luc.* To rescue my two brothers from their death:

For which attempt the Judges have pronounced

My everlasting doom of banishment. 51

*Tit.* O happy man! they have befriended thee.

Why, foolish Lucius, dost thou not perceive

That Rome is but a wilderness of tigers?

Tigers must prey, and Rome affords no prey

but me and mine: how happy art thou, then,

From these devourers to be banished!

But who comes with our brother Marcus here?

*Enter MARCUS and LAVINIA.*

*Marc.* Titus, prepare thy aged eyes to weep:

Or, if not so, thy noble heart to break: 60

I bring consuming sorrow to thine age.

*Tit.* Will it consume me? let me see it,

then.

*Marc.* This was thy daughter.

*Tit.* Why, Marcus, so she is.

*Luc.* Ay me, this object kills me!

*Tit.* Faint-hearted boy, arise, and look upon

her.

Speak, Lavinia, what accursed hand

Hath made thee handless in thy father's sight?

What fool hath added water to the sea?

Or brought a faggot to bright-burning Troy?

My grief was at the height before thou camest,

And now, like Nilus, it disdaineth bounds. 71

Give me a sword, I'll chop off my hands too:

For they have fought for Rome, and all in

vain;

And they have nursed this woe, in feeding life;

In bootless prayer have they been held up,

And they have served me to effectless use:

Now all the service I require of them

is that the one will help to cut the other.

'Tis well, Lavinia, that thou hast no hands;

For hands, to do Rome service, are but vain. 80

*Luc.* Speak, gentle sister, who hath martyr'd

thee?

*Marc.* O, that delightful engine of her

thoughts,

That blabb'd them with such pleasing elo-

quence,

Is torn from forth that pretty hollow cage,

Where, like a sweet melodious bird, it sang

Sweet varied notes, enchanting every ear!

*Luc.* O, say thou for her, who hath done

this deed!

*Marc.* O, thus I found her, straying in the

park,

Seeking to hide herself, as doth the deer

That hath received some unrecuring wound. 90

*Tit.* It was my deer; and he that wounded her

Hath hurt me more than had he kill'd me

dead:

For now I stand as one upon a rock

Environ'd with a wilderness of sea,

Who marks the waxing tide grow wave by wave,

Expecting ever when some envious surge

Will in his brinish bowels swallow him.

This way to death my wretched sons are gone;

Here stands my other son, a banish'd man,

And here my brother, weeping at my woes: too

But that which gives my soul the greatest

spurn,

Is dear Lavinia, dearer than my soul.

Had I but seen thy picture in this plight,

It would have maddened me; what shall I do

Now I behold thy lively body so?

Thou hast no hands, to wipe away thy tears,

Nor tongue, to tell me who hath martyr'd thee:

Thy husband he is dead; and for thy death

Thy brothers are condemn'd, and dead by this.

Look, Marcus! ah, son Lucius, look on her! 110

When I did name her brothers, then fresh tears

Stood on her cheeks, as doth the honey-dew

Upon a gather'd lily almost wither'd.

*Marc.* Perchance she weeps because they

kill'd her husband;

Perchance because she knows them innocent.

*Tit.* If they did kill thy husband, then be

joyful,

Because the law hath ta'en revenge on them.

No, no, they would not do so foul a deed;

Witness the sorrow that their sister makes.

Gentle Lavinia, let me kiss thy lips: 120

Or make some sign how I may do thee ease:

Shall thy good uncle, and thy brother Lucius,

And thou, and I, sit round about some fountain,

Looking all downwards, to behold our cheeks

How they are stain'd, as meadows, yet not dry,

With miry slime left on them by a flood?

And in the fountain shall we gaze so long

Till the fresh taste be taken from that clearness,

And made a brine-pit with our bitter tears?

O, shall we cut away our hands, like thine? 130

Or shall we bite our tongues, and in dumb

shows

Pass the remainder of our hateful days?

What shall we do? let us, that have our tongues,

Plot some device of further misery,

To make us wonder'd at in time to come.

*Luc.* Sweet father, cease your tears; sit, at

See how my wretched sister sobs and weeps.

*Marc.* Patience, dear niece. Good niece,

dry thine eyes.

*Tit.* Ah, Marcus, Marcus! brother, well I

Thy napkin cannot drink a tear of mine, 140  
For thou, poor man, hast drown'd it with thine  
own.

*Luc.* Ah, my Lavinia, I will wipe thy cheeks,  
*Tit.* Mark, Marcus, mark! I understand  
her signs:

Had she a tongue to speak, now would she say  
That to her brother which I said to thee:  
His napkin, with his true tears all bewet,  
Can do no service on her sorrowful cheeks.  
O, what a sympathy of woe is this,  
As far from help as Limbo is from bliss!

*Enter AARON.*

*Aar.* Titus Andronicus, my lord! the emperor  
Sends thee this word,—that, if thou love thy  
sons, 151

Let Marcus, Lucius, or thyself, old Titus,  
Or any one of you, chop off your hand,  
And send it to the king: he for the same  
Will send thee hither both thy sons alive;  
And that shall be the ransom for their fault.

*Tit.* O gracious emperor! O gentle Aaron!  
Did ever raven sing so like a lark,  
That gives sweet tidings of the sun's uprise?  
With all my heart, I'll send the emperor 160  
My hand:

Good Aaron, wilt thou help to chop it off?

*Luc.* Stay, father! for that noble hand of  
thine.

That hath thrown down so many enemies,  
Shall not be sent: my hand will serve the  
turn:

My youth can better spare my blood than you;  
And therefore mine shall save my brothers'  
lives.

*Marc.* Which of your hands hath not de-  
fended Rome.

And rear'd aloft the bloody battle-axe,  
Writing destruction on the enemy's castle? 170

O, none of both but are of high desert:  
My hand hath been but idle; let it serve  
To ransom my two nephews from their death;  
Then have I kept it to a worthy end.

*Aar.* Nay, come, agree whose hand shall go  
along.

For fear they die before their pardon come.

*Marc.* My hand shall go.

*Luc.* By heaven, it shall not go!  
*Tit.* Sirs, strive no more: such wither'd  
herbs as these

Are meet for plucking up, and therefore mine.

*Luc.* Sweet father, if I shall be thought thy  
son, 180

Let me redeem my brothers both from death.

*Marc.* And, for our father's sake and mother's  
care,

Now let me show a brother's love to thee.

*Tit.* Agree between you; I will spare my  
hand.

*Luc.* Then I'll go fetch an axe.

*Marc.* But I will use the axe.

*[Exeunt Lucius and Marcus.]*

*Tit.* Come hither, Aaron; I'll deceive them  
both:

Send me thy hand, and I will give thee mine.

*Aar.* *[Aside.]* If that be call'd deceit, I will  
be honest.

And never, whilst I live, deceive men so: 190  
But I'll deceive you in another sort,  
And that you'll say, ere half an hour pass.

*[Outs off Titus's hand.]*

*Re-enter LUCIUS and MARCUS.*

*Tit.* Now stay your strife: what shall be is  
dispatch'd.

Good Aaron, give his majesty my hand  
Tell him it was a hand that ward'd  
From thousand dangers; bid him buy it;  
More hath it merited; that let it have  
As for my sons, say I account of thee.

As jewels purchased at an easy price;  
And yet dear too, because I bought mine

*Aar.* I go, Andronicus: and for thy  
Look by and by to have thy sons with  
*[Aside.]* Their heads, I mean. O, how this  
villany

Doth fat me with the very thoughts of it!  
Let fools do good, and fair men call for grace,  
Aaron will have his soul black like his face.

*[Exit.]*

*Tit.* O, here I lift this one hand up to heaven,  
And bow this feeble ruin to the earth:

If any power pities wretched tears,  
To that I call! *[To Luc.]* What, wilt thou  
kneel with me! 210

Do, then, dear heart; for heaven shall hear our  
prayers;

Or with our sighs we'll breathe the welkin dim,  
And stain the sun with fog, as sometime clouds  
When they do hug him in their melting  
bosoms.

*Marc.* O brother, speak with possibilities,  
And do not break into these deep extremes.

*Tit.* Is not my sorrow deep, having no  
bottom?

Then be my passions bottomless with them.

*Marc.* But yet let reason govern thy lament.

*Tit.* If there were reason for these miseries,  
Then into limits could I bind my woes: 221  
When heaven doth weep, doth not the earth  
o'erflow?

If the winds rage, doth not the sea wax mad,  
Threatening the welkin with his big-swoln face?

And wilt thou have a reason for this coil?

I am the sea; hark, how her sighs do blow!

She is the weeping welkin, I the earth:

Then must my sea be moved with her sighs;

Then must my earth with her continual tears

Become a deluge, overflow'd and drown'd; 230

For why my bowels cannot hide her woes,

But like a drunkard must I vomit them.

Then give me leave, for lovers will have leave

To ease their stomachs with their bitter tongues.

*Enter a Messenger, with two heads and  
a hand.*

*Mess.* Worthy Andronicus, ill art thou re-  
paid

For that good hand thou sent'st the emperor.

Here are the heads of thy two noble sons;

And here's thy hand, in scorn to thee sent  
back;

Thy griefs their sports, thy resolution mock'd;

That woe is me to think upon thy woes 240

More than remembrance of my father's death.

*Marc.* Now let hot *Titus* cool in Sicily,  
And be my heart an ever-burning hell!  
These miseries are more than may be borne.  
To weep with them that weep doth ease some  
deal;

But sorrow flouted at is double death.

*Luc.* Ah, that this sight should make so  
deep a wound,  
And yet detested life not shrink thereat!  
That ever death should let life bear his name,  
Where life hath no more interest but to breathe!

*Lavinia kisses Titus.*  
*Marc.* Alas, poor heart, that kiss is corn-  
fortless

As frozen water to a starved snake.

*Tit.* When will this fearful slumber have  
an end!

*Marc.* Now, farewell, flattery: die, Andro-  
nicus;

Thou dost not slumber: see, thy two sons'  
heads

Thy warlike hand, thy mangled daughter here;  
Thy other banish'd son, with this dear sight  
Struck pale and bloodless; and thy brother, I,  
Even like a stony image, cold and numb.

Ah, now no more will I control thy griefs: 260  
Send off thy silver hair, thy other hand  
Gnawing with thy teeth; and be this dismal  
sight

The closing up of our most wretched eyes:  
Now is a time to storm; why art thou still?

*Tit.* Ha, ha, ha!

*Marc.* Why dost thou laugh! it fits not  
with this hour.

*Tit.* Why, I have not another tear to shed  
Besides, this sorrow is an enemy,

And would usurp upon my watery eyes,  
And make them blind with tributary tears: 270

Then which way shall I find Revenge's cave!  
For these two heads do seem to speak to me,

And threat me I shall never come to bliss  
Till all these mischiefs be return'd again

Even in their throats that have committed  
them.

Come, let me see what task I have to do.  
You heavy people, circle me about,

That I may turn me to each one of you,  
And swear unto my soul to right your wrongs.

The vow is made. Come, brother, take a head  
And in this hand the other will I bear. 28

*Lavinia*, thou shalt be employ'd: these arms!  
Bear thou my hand, sweet wench, between thy  
teeth.

As for thee, boy, go get thee from my sight;  
Thou art an exile, and thou must not stay:

Hie to the Goths, and raise an army there:  
And, if you love me, as I think you do,

Let's kiss and part, for we have much to do.

*[Exeunt Titus, Marcus, and Lavinia.]*  
*Luc.* Farewell, Andronicus, my noble father,

The worst of men that ever lived in Rome: 290  
Farewell, proud Rome; till Lucius come again.  
He leaves his pledges dearer than his life.

Farewell, *Lavinia*, my noble sister;  
O, would thou wast as thou dost love him!

But now nor Lucius nor *Lavinia* lives

But in oblivion and hateful griefs.

If Lucius live, he will requite your wrongs;  
And make proud Saturnine and his empress  
Beg at the gates, like Tarquin and his queen.

Now will I to the Goths, and raise a power, 300  
To be revenged on Rome and Saturnine. *[Exit.]*

## SCENE II. A room in Titus's house. banquet set out.

Enter *TITUS*, *MARCUS*, *LAVINIA*, and young  
LUCIUS, a Boy.

*Tit.* So, so; now sit: and look you eat no  
more

Than will preserve just so much strength in us  
As will revenge these bitter woes of ours.

*Marcus*, unknit that sorrow-wreath knot:  
Thy niece and I, poor creatures, want our  
hands,

And cannot passionate our tenfold grief  
With folded arms. This poor right hand of  
mine

Is left to tyrannise upon my breast;  
Who, when my heart, all mad with misery,  
Beats in this hollow prison of my flesh, 30

Then thus I thump it down.  
To *Lavinia*. Thou map of woe, that thus  
dost talk in signs!

When thy poor heart beats with outrageous  
beating,

Thou canst not strike it thus to make it still.  
Wound it with sighing, girl, kill it with groans;

Or get some little knife between thy teeth,  
And just against thy heart make thou a hole;

That all the tears that thy poor eyes let fall  
May run into that sink, and soaking in  
Drown the lamenting fool in sea-salt tears. 30

*Marc.* Fie, brother, fie! teach her not thus  
to lay

Such violent hands upon her tender life.  
*Tit.* How now! has sorrow made these dots  
already!

Why, *Marcus*, no man should be mad but I.  
What violent hands can she lay on her life!

Ah, wherefore dost thou urge the name of  
hands;

To bid *Aeneas* tell the tale twice o'er,  
How Troy was burnt and he made miserable!

O, handle not the theme, to talk of hands!  
Lest we remember still that we have none. 30

Fie, fie, how frantically I square my talk.  
As if we should forget we had no hands,

If *Marcus* did not name the word of hands!  
Come, let's fall to; and, gentle girl, eat this:

Here is no drink! Hark, *Marcus*, what she says;  
I can interpret all her martyr'd signs;

She says she drinks no other drink but  
Bread with her sorrow, meat upon  
cheeks;

Speechless complainer, I will learn thy thoughts;  
In thy dumb action will I be as perfect. 30

As begging hermits in their holy prayers:  
Thou shalt not sigh, nor hold thy stomach to  
heaven,

Nor wink, nor nod, nor  
But I of these will wreaten  
And by still gestures learn

Boy. Good grandfire, leave these bitter deep  
 sorrows.

Makes my aunt merry with some pleasing tale.

Marc. Alas, the tender boy, in passion  
 moved,

Does want to see his grandsire's heaviness.

Tit. Peace, tender sapling; thou art made  
 of tears.

And tears will quickly melt thy life away.

[*Marcus strikes the dish with a knife.*  
 What dost thou strike at, Marcus, with thy  
 knife?

Marc. At that that I have kill'd, my lord;  
 a fly.

Tit. Out on thee, murderer! thou kill'st my  
 heart;

Mine eyes are cloy'd with view of tyranny:  
 A deed of death done on the innocent

Becomes not Titus' brother: get thee gone;  
 I see thou art not for my company.

Marc. Alas, my lord, I have but kill'd a fly.

Tit. But how, if that fly had a father and  
 mother?

How would he hang his slender gilded wings,  
 And buzz lamenting doings in the air!

Poor harmless fly,  
 That, with his pretty buzzing melody,  
 Came here to make us merry! and thou hast  
 kill'd him.

Marc. Pardon me, sir; it was a black ill-  
 favour'd fly.

Like to the empress' Moor; therefore I kill'd  
 him.

Tit. O, O, O,  
 Then pardon me for reprehending thee,  
 For thou hast done a charitable deed.

Give me thy knife, I will insult on him;  
 Flattering myself, as if it were the Moor

Come hither purposely to poison me.—  
 There's for thyself, and that's for Tamora.

Ah, sirrah!  
 Yet, I think, we are not brought so low,  
 But that between us we can kill a fly

That comes in likeness of a coal-black Moor.

Marc. Alas, poor man! grief has so wrought  
 on him.

He takes false shadows for true substances.

Tit. Come, take away. Lavinia, go with  
 me.

I'll to thy closet; and go read with thee  
 And musing chanced in the times of old.

Come, boy, and go with me: thy sight is young,  
 And thou shalt read when mine begin to dazzle.

[*Exeunt.*

# ACT IV.

Scene I. *Rome. Titus's garden.*

Enter young LUCIUS, and LAVINIA running  
 after him, and the boy flies from her, with  
 books under his arm. Then enter TITUS

and MARCUS.

Young Luc. Help, grandsire, help! my aunt  
 Lavinia

Is fallen in the pool where, I know not why;  
 Great uncle Marcus, see how swift she comes.

Alas, great uncle, I know not what you mean.

Marc. Stand by me, Lucius; do not fear  
 thine aunt.

Tit. She loves thee, boy, too well to do thee  
 harm.

Young Luc. Ay, when my father was in  
 Rome she did.

Marc. What means my niece Lavinia by  
 these signs?

Tit. Fear her not, Lucius: somewhat doth  
 she mean:

See, Lucius, see how much she makes of thee:  
 Somewhither would she have thee go with her.

Ah, boy, Cornelia never with more care  
 Read to her sons than she hath read to thee

Sweet poetry and Tully's Orator.

Marc. Canst thou not guess wherefore she  
 plies thee thus?

Young Luc. My lord, I know not, I, nor  
 can I guess.

Unless some fit or frenzy do possess her:  
 For I have heard my grandsire say full oft,

Extrinity of griefs would make men mad;  
 And I have read that Hecuba of Troy

Was mad for sorrow: that made me to fear;  
 Although, my lord, I know my noble aunt

Loves me as dear as e'er my mother did,  
 And would not, but in fury, fright my youth:

Which made me down to throw my books,  
 and fly,—

Causeless, perhaps. But pardon me, sweet  
 aunt:

And, madam, if my uncle Marcus go,  
 I will most willingly attend your ladyship.

Marc. Lucius, I will.  
 [*Lavinia turns over with her stumps the*

*books which Lucius has let fall.*  
 Tit. How now, Lavinia! Marcus, what  
 means this?

Some book there is that she desires to see.  
 Which is it, girl, of these? Open them, boy.

But thou art deeper read, and better skill'd:  
 Come, and take choice of all my library,

And so beguile thy sorrow, till the heavens  
 Reveal the damn'd contriver of this deed.

Why lifts she up her arms in sequence thus?

Marc. I think she means that there was  
 more than one

Confederate in the fact: ay, more there was;  
 Or else to heaven she heaves them for revenge.

Tit. Lucius, what book is that she toucheth?

Young Luc. Grandsire, 'tis Ovid's *Metamor-*  
*phoses*;

My mother gave it me.

Marc. For love of her that's gone,  
 Perhaps she could't it from among the rest.

Tit. Soft! see how busily she turns the  
 leaves!

What would she find? Lavinia, shall I read?  
 This is the tragic tale of Philopoe.

And treats of Tereus' treason and his rape;  
 And rape, I fear, was root of thine agony.

Marc. See, brother, see; note how she  
 quotes the leaves.

Tit. Lavinia, wert thou thus surprised, sweet  
 girl,

Ravish'd and wrong'd, as Philopoe was,  
 Forc'd in the ruthless vast, and gloomy woods!

See, see!

Ay, such a place there is, where we did hunt—  
O, had we never, never hunted there!—  
Pattern'd by that the poet here describes,  
By nature made for murders and for rapes.

*Marc.* O, why should nature build so foul  
a den,

Unless the gods delight in tragedies! 60

*Tit.* Give signs, sweet girl, for here are none  
but friends.

What Roman lord it was durst do the deed:  
(O slunk not Saturnine, as Tarquin erst,

That left the camp to sin in Lucrece's bed!

*Marc.* Sit down, sweet niece: brother, sit  
down by me.

Apollo, Pallas, Jove, or Mercury,  
Inspire me, that I may this treason find!

My lord, look here: look here, Lavinia:

This sandy plot is plain; guide, if thou canst,

This after me, when I have writ my name 70

Without the help of any hand at all.

*[He writes his name with his staff, and  
guides it with feet and mouth.]*

Cursed be that heart that forced us to this  
shift!

Write thou, good niece; and here display, at  
last,

What God will have discover'd for revenge;  
Heaven guide thy pen to print thy sorrows  
plain.

That we may know the traitors and the truth!

*[She takes the staff in her mouth, and  
guides it with her stumps, and writes.]*

*Tit.* O, do ye read, my lord, what she hath  
writ!

'Suprum. Chiron. Demetrius.'

*Marc.* What, what! the lustful sons of  
Tarnora

Performers of this heinous, bloody deed! 80

*Tit.* Magni Dominator poli,

Tam lentus audis scelera? tam lentus vides?

*Marc.* O, calm thee, gentle lord; although

I know

There is enough written upon this earth

To stir a mutiny in the mildest thoughts

And arm the minds of infants to exclaims.

My lord, kneel down with me; Lavinia, kneel,

And kneel, sweet boy, the Roman Hector's  
hope;

And swear with me, as, with the woful fere

And father of that chaste dishonour'd dame, 90

Lord Junius Brutus aware for Lucrece' rape,

That we will prosecute by good advice

Mortal revenge upon these traitorous Goths.

And see their blood, or die with this reproach.

*Tit.* 'Tis sure enough, as you knew how.

But if you hunt these bear-whelps, then be  
ware:

The dam will wake; and, if she waken once,

She's with the lion deeply still in league,

And lulls him whilst she playeth on her back,

And when he sleeps will she do what she list.

*Marc.* You are a young huntsman, Marcus; let it  
alone;

And, come, I will go get a leaf of brass,

And with a gad of steel will write these words,

And lay it by: the angry northern wind

Will blow these words, like Sibyl's leaves,

abroad.

And where's your lesson, then? Boy, what  
say you!

*Young Luc.* I say, my lord, that if I were a  
man,

Their mother's bed-chamber should not be safe  
or these bad bondmen to the yoke of Rome.

*Marc.* Ay, that's my boy! thy father hath  
full oft

'or his ungrateful country done the like.

*Young Luc.* And, uncle, so will I, and if I  
live.

*Tit.* Come, go with me into mine armoury;  
Lucius, I'll fit thee; and withal, my boy,

Shalt carry from me to the empress' sons  
Presents that I intend to send them both:

Come, come; thou'lt do thy message, wilt thou  
not?

*Young Luc.* Ay, with my dagger in their  
bosoms, grandsire.

*Tit.* No, boy, not so; I'll teach thee another  
course.

Lavinia, come. Marcus, look to my house: 100  
Lucius and I'll go brave it at the court;

Ay, marry, will we, sir; and we'll be waited on.

*[Exeunt Titus, Lavinia, and Young Luc.]*

*Marc.* O heavens, can you hear a good man  
groan,

And not relent, or not compassion him!

Marcus, attend him in his ecstasy.

That hath more scars of sorrow in his heart  
Than foemen's marks upon his batter'd shield;

But yet so just that he will not revenge.  
Revenge, ye heavens, for old Andronicus!

*[Exit.]*

SCENE II. *The same. A room in the palace.*

*Enter, from one side, AARON, DEMETRIUS,  
and CHIRON; from the other side, young*

*LUCIUS, and an Attendant, with a bundle  
of weapons, and verses writ upon them.*

*Chi.* Demetrius, here's the son of Lucius;  
He hath some message to deliver us.

*Aar.* Ay, some mad message from his mad  
grandfather.

*Young Luc.* My lords, with all the humble-  
ness I may,

I greet your honours from Andronicus.

*[Aside.]* And pray the Roman gods confound  
you both!

*Dem.* Gramercy, lovely Lucius: what's the  
news?

*Young Luc.* *[Aside.]* That you are both de-  
cipher'd, that's the news.

For villains mark'd with rape.—May it please  
you,

My grandsire, well advis'd, hath sent by me 10  
The goodliest weapons of his armoury

To gratify your honourable youth,  
The hope of Rome; for so he bids me say;

And so I do, and with his gifts present  
Your lordships, that, whenever you have need,

You may be armed and appointed well:

And so I leave you both: *[Aside.]* Like bloody  
villains.

*[Re-enter young Lucius and Attendant.]*

*Dem.* What's here? A scroll:—and written  
round about!

Let's see:

[Aside] Integer vitæ, scelerisque purus, so  
Non eget Mauri jaculis, nec arcu.

Chi. O, 'tis a verse in Horace; I know it well:  
I read it in the grammar long ago.

Aar. Ay, just; a verse in Horace; right, you have it.

[Aside] Now, what a thing it is to be an ass!  
Here's no sound jest! the old man hath found  
their guilt;

And sends them weapons wrapp'd about with  
lines,

That wound, beyond their feeling, to the quick.  
But were our witty empress well afoot,  
She would applaud Andronicus' conceit: 30  
But let her rest in her unrest awhile.

And now, young lords, was't not a happy star  
Led us to Rome, strangers, and more than so,  
Captives, to be advanc'd to this height!  
It did me good, before the palace gate  
To leave the tribune in his brother's hearing.

Dem. But me more good, to see so great a  
lord

Basely ingennate and send us gifts.

Aar. Had he not reason, Lord Demetrius?  
Did you not use his daughter very friendly? 40

Dem. I would we had a thousand Roman  
dames

At such a bay, by turn to serve our lust.

Chi. A charitable wish and full of love.

Aar. Here lacks but your mother for to say  
amen.

Chi. And that would she for twenty thou-  
sand more.

Dem. Come, let us go; and pray to all the  
gods

For our beloved mother in her pains.

Aar. [Aside] Pray to the devils; the gods  
have given us over.

[Trumpets sound within.]  
Dem. Why do the emperor's trumpets  
flourish thus? 40

Chi. Belike, for joy the emperor hath a son.

Dem. Soft! who comes here?

Enter a Nurse, with a blackamoor Child in  
her arms.

Nur. Good morrow, lords:  
O, tell me, did you see Aaron the Moor?

Aar. Well, more or less, or ne'er a whit  
at all,

Here Aaron is; and what with Aaron now?

Nur. O gentle Aaron, we are all undone!

Now help, or woe betide thee evermore!

Aar. Why, what a caterwauling dost thou  
keep!

What dost thou wrap and fumble in thine  
arms?

Nur. O, that which I would hide from  
heaven's eye,

Our empress' shame, and stately Rome's dis-  
grace!

She is deliver'd, lords; she is deliver'd.

Aar. To whom?

Nur. I mean, she is brought a-bed.

Aar. Well, God give her good rest! What  
hath he sent her?

Nur. A devil.

Aar. Why, then she is the devil's dam; a  
joyful issue.

Nur. A joyless, dismal, black, and sorrow-  
ful issue:

Here is the babe, as loathsome as a  
Amongst the fairest breeders of our clime:  
The empress sends it thee, thy stamp, thy seal,  
And bids thee christen it with thy dagger's  
point.

Aar. 'Zounds, ye whore! is black so base a  
hue!

Sweet blowse, you are a beauteous blossom,  
sure.

Dem. Villain, what hast thou done?

Aar. That which thou canst not un-

Chi. Thou hast undone our mother.

Aar. Villain, I have done thy mother.

Dem. And therein, hellish dog, thou has  
undone.

Woe to her chance, and damn'd her loathe-  
choice!

Accurs'd the offspring of so-foul a fend!

Chi. It shall not live.

Aar. It shall not die.

Nur. Aaron, it must; the mother wills it so

Aar. What, must it, nurse? then let no man  
but I

Do execution on my flesh and blood.

Dem. I'll broach the tadpole on my rapier:  
point:

Nurse, give it me; my sword shall soon dis-  
patch it.

Aar. Sooner this sword shall plough thy  
bowels up.

[Takes the Child from the Nurse,  
and draws.

Stay, murderous villains! will you kill your  
brother?

Now, by the burning tapers of the sky,  
That shone so brightly when this boy was got,

He dies upon my scimitar's sharp point 50  
That touches this my first-born son and heir!

I tell you, younglings, not Enceladus,  
With all his threatening band of Typhon's  
brood,

Nor great Alcides, nor the god of war,  
Shall seize this prey out of his father's hands.

What, what, ye sanguine, shallow-hearted boys!  
Ye white-lun'd walls! ye alehouse painted  
signs!

Coal-black is better than another hue,  
In that it scorns to bear another hue; 50

For all the water in the ocean  
Can never turn the swan's black legs to white,

Although she have them hourly in the flood.  
Tell the empress from me, I am of age

To keep mine own, excuse it how she can.

Dem. Wilt thou betray thy noble mistress  
thus?

Aar. My mistress is my mistress; this myself,  
The vigour and the picture of my youth:

This before all the world do I prefer;  
This mangles all the world will I keep safe, 50

Or some of you shall smother for it in Rome.

Dem. By this our mother is for ever shamed.

Chi. Rome will despise her for this  
escape.

*Nur.* The emperor, in his rage, will doom her death.

*Chi.* I blush to think upon this ignomy.

*Aar.* Why, there's the privilege your beauty bears;

Fie, treacherous hue, that will betray with blushing

The close enacts and counsels of the heart!

Here's a young lad framed of another leer:

Look, how the black slave smiles upon the father,

As who should say 'Old lad, I am thine own.'

He is your brother, lords, sensibly fed

(Of that self-blood that first gave life to you,

And from that womb where you imprison'd were

He is enfranchised and come to light;

Nay, he is your brother by the surer side,

Although my seal be stamped in his face.

*Nur.* Aaron, what shall I say unto the empress?

*Dem.* Advise thee, Aaron, what is to be done,

And we will all subscribe to thy advice:

Save thou the child, so we may all be safe.

*Aar.* Then sit we down, and let us all consult.

My son and I will have the wind of you;

Keep there: now talk at pleasure of your safety.

*Dem.* How many women saw this child of his?

*Aar.* Why, so, brave lords! when we join in league,

am a lamb: but if you brave the Moor,

he chafed boar, the mountain lioness,

he ocean swells not so as Aaron storms.

It say, again, how many saw the child?

*Nur.* Cornelia the midwife and myself:

and no one else but the deliver'd empress.

*Aar.* The empress, the midwife, and yourself:

no may keep counsel when the third's away

to the empress, tell her this I said.

*[He kills the nurse.]*

Heke, weke! so cries a pig prepared to the spit.

*Dem.* What mean'st thou, Aaron? wherefore didst thou this?

*Aar.* O Lord, sir, 'tis a deed of policy:

shall she live to betray this guilt of ours,

long-tongued babbling gossip? no, lords, no

And now be it known to you my full intent.

man;

to bed;

to bed;

to bed;

to bed;

to bed;

to bed;

to bed;

to bed;

to bed;

to bed;

to bed;

to bed;

to bed;

to bed;

to bed;

to bed;

to bed;

to bed;

to bed;

to bed;

to bed;

to bed;

to bed;

to bed;

The midwife and the nurse well made away,

Then let the ladies tattle what they please.

*Chi.* Aaron, I see thou wilt not trust the air

With secrets.

*Dem.* For this care of Tamora,

Herself and hers are highly bound to thee.

*[Exeunt Dem. and Chi. bearing off the Nurse's body.]*

*Aar.* Now to the Goths, as swift as swallow

flies;

There to dispose this treasure in mine arms,

And secretly to greet the empress' friends.

Come on, you thick-lipp'd slave, I'll bear you

hence;

For it is you that puts us to our shifts:

I'll make you feed on berries and on roots,

And feed on curds and whey, and suck the

And cabin in a cave, and bring you up

To be a warrior, and command a camp. *[Exit.]*

### SCENE III. The same. A public place.

*Enter TITUS, bearing arrows with letters at the ends of them; with him, MARCUS, young LUCIUS, PUBLIUS, SEMPRONIUS, CAIUS, and other Gentlemen, with bows.*

*Tit.* Come, Marcus; come, kinsmen; this

is the way.

Sir boy, now let me see your archery;

Look ye draw home enough, and 'tis there

straight.

*Terras Astraea reliquit:*

Be you remember'd, Marcus, she's gone, she's

fled.

Sirs, take you to your tools. You, cousins,

shall

Go sound the ocean, and cast your nets;

Happily you may catch her in the sea;

Yet there's a little justice as at land:

No; Publius and Sempronius, you must do it;

'Tis you must dig with mattock and with spade,

And pierce the inmost centre of the earth:

when you come to Pluto's region,

you, deliver him this petition;

him, it is for justice and for aid

And that it comes from old Andronicus,

Shaken with sorrows in ungrateful Rome.

Ah, Rome! Well, well; I made thee miserable

What time I threw the people's suffrages

On him that thus doth tyrannise o'er me.

Go, get you gone; and pray be careful all.

And leave you not a man-of-war unsearch'd:

This wicked emperor may have shipp'd her

hence;

And, kinsmen, then we may go pipe for justice.

*Marc.* O Publius, is not this a heavy case,

To see thy noble uncle thus distract?

*Pub.* Therefore, my lord, is highly us concerns

By day and night to attend him carefully,

And feed his humour kindly as we may,

Till time bestows some careful remedy.

*Marc.* Kinsmen, his sorrows are past remedy.

Join with the Goths; and with ungrateful war

Take wreak on Rome for this ingratitude,

And vengeance on the traitor Sempronius.

*Tit.* Publius, how now! how now, my masters!

What have you met with her?

*Pub.* No, my good lord; but *Plato* sends you word,

If you will have Revenge from hell, you shall:

*Marry*, for Justice, she is so employ'd.

He thinks, with Jove in heaven, or somewhere else,

So that perforce you must needs stay a time.

*Tit.* He doth me wrong to feed me with delays.

I'll dive into the burning lake below,

And pull her out of Acheron by the heels.

*Marcus*, we are but shrubs, no cedars we,

No big-boned men fram'd of the Cyclops' size.

But metal, *Marcus*, steel to the very back.

Yet wrung with wrongs more than our backs can bear:

And, with there's no justice in earth nor hell,

We will solicit heaven and move the gods.

To send down Justice for to wreak our wrongs.

Come, to this gear. You are a good archer,

*Marcus*; *[He gives them the arrows.]*

'Ad Jovem, that's for you: here, 'Ad Apollinem.'

'Ad Martem, that's for myself:

Here, boy, to *Pallas*: here, to *Mercury*:

To *Saturn*, *Calus*, not to *Saturnine*:

You were as good to shoot against the wind.

To it, boy! *Marcus*, loose when I bid.

Of my word, I have written to effect;

There's not a god left unsolicited.

*Marc.* Kinsmen, shoot all your shafts into

the court:

We will afflict the emperor in his pride.

*Tit.* Now, masters, draw. *[They shoot.]* O,

well said, *Lucius*!

Good boy, in *Virgo*'s lap; give it *Pallas*.

*Marc.* My lord, I aim a mile beyond the

moon;

Your letter is with *Jupiter* by this.

*Tit.* Ha, ha!

*Publius*, *Publius*, what hast thou done?

See, see, thou hast shot off one of *Taurus*'

horns.

*Marc.* This was the sport, my lord: when

*Publius* shot,

The Ball, being gall'd, gave *Aries* such a knock

That down fell both the *Ram*'s horns in the

court;

And who should find them but the empress'

villain!

His laugh'd, and told the Moor he should not

choose

But give them to his master for a present.

*Tit.* Why, these it goes: God give his lord-

ship joy!

*[Enter a Clown, with a basket, and two*

*pigeons in it.]*

News, news from heaven! *Marcus*, the post is

come.

Search, what tidings! have you any letters?

What I have sent! what says *Jupiter*?

*Clow.* O, the gibbet-maker! he says that he

has sent them down again, for the men must

not be hang'd till the next week.

*Tit.* But what says *Jupiter*, I ask thee?

*Clow.* Alas, sir, I know not *Jupiter*; I never

drank with him in all my life.

*Tit.* Why, villain, art not thou the carrier?

*Clow.* Ay, of my pigeons, sir; nothing else.

*Tit.* Why, didst thou not come from heaven?

*Clow.* From heaven! alas, sir, if I never came

there: God forbid I should be so bold to press

to heaven in my young days. Why! I am going

with my pigeons to the tribunal place, to take

up a matter of brawl betwixt my uncle and one

of the imperial's men.

*Marc.* Why, sir, that is as fit as can be to

serve for your oration; and let him deliver the

pigeons to the emperor for you.

*Tit.* Tell me, can you deliver an oration to

the emperor with a grace?

*Clow.* Nay, truly, sir, I could never say grace

in all my life.

*Tit.* Sirrah, come hither: make no more

ado,

But give your pigeons to the emperor:

By me thou shalt have justice at his hands.

Hold, hold; meanwhile here's money for thy

charges.

Give me pen and ink. Sirrah, can you with a

grace deliver a supplication?

*Clow.* Ay, sir.

*Tit.* Then here is a supplication for you.

And when you come to him, at the first ap-

proach you must kneel, then kiss his foot, then

deliver up your pigeons, and then look for your

reward. I'll be at hand, sir; see you do it

bravely.

*Clow.* I warrant you, sir, let me alone.

*Tit.* Sirrah, hast thou a knife? come, let me

see it.

Here, *Marcus*, fold it in the oration;

For thou hast made it like an humble suppliant.

And when thou hast given it the emperor,

Knock at my door, and tell me what he says.

*Clow.* God be with you, sir; I will.

*Tit.* Come, *Marcus*, let us go. *Publius*,

follow me. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE IV. *The same. Before the palace.*

*Enter SATURNINUS, TAMORA, DEMETRIUS,*

*CHIRON, Lords, and others; SATURNINUS*

*with the arrows in his hand that TITUS shot.*

*Sat.* Why, lords, what wrongs are these!

was ever seen

An emperor in Rome thus overborne.

Troubled, confronted thus; and, for the extent

Of equal justice, used in such contempt?

My lords, you know, as know the mighty

gods,

However these disturbers of our peace

Buz in the people's ears, there nought hath

pass'd.

But even with law, against the wilful sons

Of old Andronici. And what an if

His sorrows have so overborne'd his wit,

Shall we be thus afflicted in his wrecks,

His fits, his frenzy, and his bitterness?

And now he writes to heaven for his redress:

See, here's to Jove, and this to *Mercury*!

This to *Apollo*; this to the god of war;



Sweet scrolls to fly about the streets of Rome! What's this but libelling against the senate, And blaspheming our injustices every where! A goodly humour, is it not, my lords? As who would say, in Rome no justice were. So But if I live, his reigned estates Shall be no shelter to these outrages: But he and his shall know that Justice lives In Saturninus' health, whom, if she sleep, He'll so awake as she in fury shall Cut out the proud conspirator that lives.

*Tam.* My gracious lord, my lovely Saturnine,

Lord of my life, commander of my thoughts, Calm thee, and bear the faults of Titus' age, The effects of sorrow for his valiant sons, Whose loss hath pierced him deep and scar'd

his heart; And rather comfort his distressed plight Than prosecute the meanest or the best For these contempta. [*Aside*] Why, thus it shall become

High-witted Tamora to glose with all: But, Titus, I have touch'd thee to the quick, Thy life-blood out. If Aaron now be wise, Then is all safe, the anchor's in the port.

*Enter Clown.*

How now, good fellow! wouldst thou speak with us?

*Cl.* Yea, forsooth, an your mistership be imperial.

*Tam.* Express I am, but yonder sits the emperor.

*Cl.* 'Tis he, God and Saint Stephen give you good den: I have brought you a letter and a couple of pigeons here.

[*Saturninus reads the letter.*]  
*Sat.* Go, take him away, and hang him presently.

*Cl.* How much money must I have?

*Tam.* Come, sirrah, you must be hanged.

*Cl.* Hanged! by'r lady, then I have brought up a neck to a fair end. [*Exit, guarded.*]

*Sat.* Despiteful and intolerable wrongs! So Shall I endure this monstrous villany! I know from whence this same device proceeds: May this be borne?—as if his traitorous sons, That died by law for murder of our brother, Have by my means been butcher'd wrongfully! Go, drag the villain hither by the hair; Nor age nor honour shall shape privilege: For this proud mock I'll be thy slaughter-man; My frantic wretch, that help'd to make me great,

In hope thyself should govern Rome and me. Go

*Enter EMILIUS.*

What news with thee, *Emilius*?

*Emil.* Alas, my lord—Rome never had more cause.

's Goths have gather'd head; and with a power

Of high-resolved men, bent to the spoil, They hither march again, under conduct

! Lucius, son to old Andronicus; Who threats, in course of this revenge, to do As much as ever *Commodus* did.

*Sat.* Is warlike *Lucius* general of the Goths? These tidings nip me, and I hang the head. As flowers with frost or grass beat down with storms:

Ay, now begin our sorrows to approach: 'Tis he the common people love so much; Myself hath often overheard them say, When I have walked like a private man, That *Lucius*' banishment was wrongfully, And they have wish'd that *Lucius* were their emperor.

*Tam.* Why should you fear? is not your city strong?

*Sat.* Ay, but the citizens favour *Lucius*, And will revolt from me to succour him.

*Tam.* King, be thy thoughts imperious, like thy name.

Is the sun dimm'd, that gnats do fly in it? The eagle suffers little birds to sing,

And is not careful what they mean thereby, Knowing that with the shadow of his wings He can at pleasure stint their melody;

Even so mayst thou the giddy men of Rome, Then cheer thy spirit: for know, thou emperor, I will enchant the old *Andronicus*

With words more sweet, and yet more dangerous, Than baits to fish, or honey-stalks to sheep.

When as the one is wounded with the bait, The other rotted with delicious feed.

*Sat.* But he will not entreat his son for us.

*Tam.* If *Tamora* entreat him, then he will: For I can smooth and fill his aged ear

With golden promises: that, were his heart Almost impregnable, his old ears deaf,

Yet should both ear and heart obey my tongue.

[*To Emilius*] Go thou before, be our ambassador:

Say that the emperor requests a parley (Of warlike *Lucius*, and appoint the meeting Even at his father's house, the old *Andronicus*).

*Sat.* *Emilius*, do this message honourably; And if he stand on hostage for his safety,

Bid him demand what pledge will please him best.

*Emil.* Your bidding shall I do effectually.

*Tam.* Now will I to that old *Andronicus*, and temper him with all the art I have,

to pluck proud *Lucius* from the warlike Goths.

And now, sweet emperor, be blithe again, and bury all thy fear in my devices.

*Sat.* Then go successfully, and plead to him.

## ACT V.

### SCENE I. Plains near Rome.

*Enter LUCIUS with an army of Goths, with drum and colours.*

*Luc.* Approved warriors, and my faithful friends,

I have received letters from great *Rome*, Which signify what hate they bear their em-

how dangerous of our sight they are. Therefore, great lords, be in your armour

And whoso Rome hath done you wrong,

Let him make treble satisfaction.

*First Goth.* Brave slip, sprung from the great Andronicus,

Whose name was once our terror, now our comfort;

Whose high exploits and honourable deeds

Ingrateful Rome requites with foul contempt;

Be bold in us: we'll follow where thou lead'st,

Like stinging bees in hottest summer's day

Led by their master to the flower'd fields,

And be avenged on cursed Tamora.

*All the Goths.* And as he saith, so say we all with him.

*Luc.* I humbly thank him, and I thank you all.

But who comes here, led by a lusty Goth?

*Enter a Goth, leading AARON with his Child in his arms.*

*Sec. Goth.* Renowned Lucius, from our troops I stray'd

To gaze upon a ruinous monastery;

And, as I earnestly did fix mine eye

Upon the wasted building, suddenly

I heard a child cry underneath a wall.

I made unto the noise; when soon I heard

The crying babe controll'd with this discourse:

'Peace, tawny slave, half me and half thy dam!

Did not thy hue lewray whose brat thou art,

Had nature lent thee but thy mother's look,

Villain, thou mightest have been an emperor;

But where the bull and cow are both milk-white,

They never do beget a coal-black calf.

Peace, villain, peace!'—even thus he rates the babe,—

'For I must bear thee to a trusty Goth;

Who, when he knows thou art the empress' babe,

Will hold thee dearly for thy mother's sake.'

With this, my weapon drawn, I rush'd upon him,

Surprised him suddenly, and brought him hither,

To use as you think needful of the man.

*Luc.* O worthy Goth, this is the incarnate devil

That robb'd Andronicus of his good hand;

This is the pearl that pleased your empress' eye,

And here's the base fruit of his burning lust.

Say, wall-eyed slave, whither wouldst thou convey

This growing image of thy fiend-like face?

Why dost not speak? what, deaf? not a word?

A halber, soldiers! hang him on this tree,

And by his side his fruit of bastardy.

*Aar.* Touch not the boy; he is of royal blood.

*Luc.* Too like the sire for ever being good.

First hang the child, that he may see it sprawl;

A sight to vex the father's soul withal.

Get me a ladder.

[A ladder brought, which Aaron is made to ascend.]

*Aar.* Lucius, save the child,

And bear it from me to the empress.

Then do this: I'll show thee wondrous things,

That shall more advantage thee to hear:

If thou wilt not, befall what may befall,

I'll speak no more but 'Vengeance rot you all!'

*Luc.* Say on: an if it please me which thou speak'st,

Thy child shall live, and I will see it nourish'd.

*Aar.* An if it please thee! why, assure thee,

Lucius,

'Twill vex thy soul to hear what I shall speak;

For I must talk of murders, rapes and massacres,

Acts of black night, abominable deeds,

Complots of mischief, treason, villainies,

Ruthful to hear, yet piteously perform'd;

And this shall all be buried by my death.

Unless thou swear to me my child shall live.

*Luc.* Tell on thy mind; I say thy child shall live.

*Aar.* Swear that he shall, and then I will begin.

*Luc.* Who should I swear by? thou believest no god:

That granted, how canst thou believe an oath?

*Aar.* What if I do not?—as, indeed, I do not;

Yet, for I know thou art religious,

And hast a thing within thee called conscience,

With twenty popish tricks and ceremonies,

Which I have seen thee careful to observe,

Therefore I urge thy oath: for that I know

An idiot holds his bauble for a god

And keeps the oath which by that god he swears,

To that I'll urge him: therefore thou shalt vow

By that same god, what god so'er it be,

That thou adorest and hast in reverence,

To save my boy, to nourish and bring him up;

Or else I will discover nought to thee.

*Luc.* Even by my god I swear to thee I will.

*Aar.* First know thou, I begot him on the empress.

*Luc.* O most insatiate and luxurious woman!

*Aar.* Tut, Lucius, this was but a deed of charity

To that which thou shalt hear of me anon.

'Twas her two sons that murder'd Bassianus;

They cut thy sister's tongue and ravish'd her

And cut her hands and trimm'd her as thou saw'st.

*Luc.* O detestable villain! call'st thou that trimming?

*Aar.* Why, she was wash'd and cut and trimm'd, and 'twas

Trim sport for them that had the doing of it.

*Luc.* O barbarous, beastly villains, like thyself!

*Aar.* Indeed, I was their tutor to instruct them:

That coddling spirit had they from their mother,

As sure a card as ever won the set;

That bloody mind, I think, they learn'd of me,

As true a dog as ever fought at head.

Well, let my deeds be witness of my worth.

I train'd thy brethren to that guileful hole

Where the dead corpse of Bassianus lay:

I wrote the letter that thy father found

And hid the gold within the letter mention'd.

Confederate with the queen and her two sons

And what not done, that thou hast cause to rue

Whence I had no stroke of—

I play'd the chamber for thy

And, when I had it, drew myself apart  
And almost broke my heart with extreme  
laughter:

I pry'd me through the crevice of a wall  
When, for his hand, he had his two sons' heads;  
Behold his tears, and laugh'd so heartily,  
That both mine eyes were rainy like to his:  
And when I told the empress of this sport,  
She swoon'd almost at my pleasing tale,  
And for my tidings gave me twenty kisses. 120

*First Goth.* What, canst thou say all this,  
and never blush?

*Aar.* Ay, like a black dog, as the saying is.  
*Luc.* Art thou not sorry for these heinous  
deeds?

*Aar.* Ay, that I had not done a thousand  
more.

Even now I curse the day—and yet, I think,  
Few come within the compass of my curse—  
Wherein I did not some notorious ill,  
As kill a man, or else devise his death,  
Ravish a maid, or plot the way to do it,  
Accuse some innocent and forswear myself, 130  
Set deadly enmity between two friends,  
Make poor men's cattle break their necks;  
Set fire on barns and hay-stacks in the night,  
And bid the owners quench them with their  
tears.

Oft have I digg'd up dead men from their  
graves,  
And set them upright at their dear friends'  
doors.

Even when their sorrows almost were forgot;  
And on their skins, as on the bark of trees,  
I have with my knife carved in Roman letters,  
'Let not your sorrow die, though I am dead.'  
Tut, I have done a thousand dreadful things  
As willingly as one would kill a fly,  
And nothing grieves me heartily indeed  
But that I cannot do ten thousand more.

*Luc.* Bring down the devil; for he must not  
die

So sweet a death as hanging presently.

*Aar.* If there be devils, would I were a  
devil,

To live and burn in everlasting fire,  
So I might have your company in hell,  
But to torment you with my bitter tongue! 150

*Luc.* Sir, stop his mouth, and let him speak  
no more.

*Enter a Goth.*

*Third Goth.* My lord, there is a messenger  
from Rome

Desires to be admitted to your presence.

*Luc.* Let him come near.

*Enter ÆMILIUS.*

Welcome, Æmilius: what's the news from  
Rome?

*Æmil.* Lord Lucius, and you princes of the  
Goths,

The Roman emperor greets you all by me;  
And, for he understands you are in arms,

He craves a parley at your father's house.  
Willing you to demand your hostages

And they shall be immediately deliver'd.  
*First Goth.* What says our father

*Luc.* Æmilius, let the emperor give his  
pledges

Unto my father and my uncle Marcus,  
And we will come. March away. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II. *Rome. Before Titus's house.*

*Enter TAMORA, DEMETRIUS, and CHIRON,  
disguised.*

*Tam.* Thus, in this strange and sad habiliment,  
I will encounter with Andronicus,

And say I am Revenge, sent from below  
To join with him and right his heinous wrongs.

Knock at his study, where, they say, he keeps,  
To ruminate strange plots of dire revenge;

Tell him Revenge is come to join with him,  
And work confusion on his enemies.

[They knock.]

*Enter TITUS, above.*

*Tit.* Who doth molest my contemplation?  
Is it your trick to make me open the door, 10

That so my sad decrees may fly away,  
And all my study be to no effect?

You are deceived: for what I mean to do  
See here in bloody lines I have set down;

And what is written shall be executed.  
*Tam.* Titus, I am come to talk with thee.

*Tit.* No, not a word; how can I grace my  
talk,

Wanting a hand to give it action?  
Thou hast the odds of me; therefore no more.

*Tam.* If thou didst know me, thou wouldst  
talk with me.

*Tit.* I am not mad; I know thee well  
enough:

Witness this wretched stump, witness these  
crimson lines;

Witness these trenches made by grief and care;  
Witness the tiring day and heavy night;

Witness all sorrow, that I know thee well  
For our proud empress, mighty Tamora:

Is not thy coming for my other hand?  
*Tam.* Know, thou sad man, I am not  
Tamora;

She is thy enemy, and I thy friend:  
I am Revenge: sent from the infernal kingdom,

To ease the gnawing vulture of thy mind, 30  
By working wreakful vengeance on thy foes.

Come down, and welcome me to this world's  
light;

Confer with me of murder and of death:  
There's not a hollow cave or lurking-place,

No vast obscurity or misty vale,  
Where bloody murder or detested rape

Can couch for fear, but I will find them out;  
And in their ears tell them my dreadful name,

Revenge, which makes the foul offender quake.  
*Tit.* Art thou Revenge? and art thou sent  
to me,

To be a torment to mine enemies?  
*Tam.* I am; therefore come down, and  
welcome me.

*Tit.* Do me some service, ere I come to thee.  
Go, by thy side where Rape and Murder dwell;

Now give some surer proof that thou art Revenge,  
Slab them; or tear them on thy sacred wounds;

And then I'll come and be thy waggoner,  
And whirl along with thee about the globe.  
Provide these two proper palfreys, black as jet,  
To hale thy vengeful waggon swift away;  
And find out murderers in their guilty caves;  
And when thy car is laden with their heads,  
I will dismount, and by the waggon-wheel  
Trot, like a servile footman, all day long.  
Even from Hyperion's rising in the east  
Until his very downfall in the sea:  
And day by day I'll do this heavy task,  
So thou destroy Rapine and Murder there.

*Tam.* These are my ministers, and come  
with me.

*Tit.* Are these thy ministers! what are they  
call'd?

*Tam.* Rapine and Murder; therefore called  
so.

Cause they take vengeance of such kind of men.

*Tit.* Good Lord, how like the empress' sons  
they are!

And you, the empress! but we worldly men  
Have miserable, mad, mistaking eyes.

O sweet Revenge, now do I come to thee;  
And, if one arm's embracement will content  
thee,

I will embrace thee in it by and by. [*Exit above.*]

*Tam.* This closing with him fits his lunacy:  
Whatever I forge to feed his brain-sick fits,

Do you uphold and maintain in your speeches,  
For now he firmly takes me for Revenge;

And, being credulous in this mad thought,  
I'll make him send for Lucius his son;

And, whilst I at a banquet hold him sure,  
I'll find some cunning practice out of hand,

To scatter and disperse the giddy Goths,  
Or, at the least, make them his enemies.

See, here he comes, and I must ply my theme.

*Enter TITUS below.*

*Tit.* Long have I been forlorn, and all for  
thee:

Welcome, dread Fury, to my woful house:  
Rapine and Murder, you are welcome too.

How like the empress and her sons you are!  
Well are you fitted, had you but a Moor:

Could not all hell afford you such a devil?  
For well I wot the empress never wags

But in her company there is a Moor;  
And, would you represent our queen aright,

It were convenient you had such a devil: 90  
But welcome, as you are. What shall we do?

*Tam.* What wouldst thou have us do, Andro-  
nicus!

*Dem.* Show me a murderer, I'll deal with  
him.

*Tit.* Show me a villain that hath done a  
rape.

And I am sent to be revenged on him.

*Tam.* Show me a thousand that have done  
the wrong.

And I will be revenged on them all.

*Tit.* Walk round about the wicked streets of  
Rome

And, when thou find'st a man that's like thy-

self, kill him; he's a murderer. 100

Go thou with him; and when it is thy hap  
To find another that is like to thee,

Good Rapine, stab him; he's a ravisher.

Go thou with them; and in the emperor's court  
There is a queen, attended by a Moor

Well may'st thou know her by thy propo-  
tion,

For up and down she doth resemble  
I pray thee, do on them some violent death;

They have been violent to me and mine.

*Tam.* Well hast thou lesson'd us; I shall  
we do.

But would it please thee, good And  
To send for Lucius, thy thrice-valiant son,

Who leads towards Rome a band of  
Goths,

And bid him come and banquet at thy house;  
When he is here, even at thy solemn feast,

I will bring in the empress and her sons,  
The emperor himself and all thy foes;

And at thy mercy shall they stoop and kneel,  
And on them shalt thou ease thy angry heart.

What says Andronicus to this device? 120

*Tit.* Marcus, my brother! 'tis sad Titus  
calls.

*Enter MARCUS.*

Go, gentle Marcus, to thy nephew Lucius;  
Thou shalt inquire him out among the Goths;

Bid him repair to me, and bring with him  
Some of the chiefest princes of the Goths;

Bid him encamp his soldiers where they are;  
Tell him the emperor and the empress too

Feast at my house, and he shall feast with  
them.

This do thou for my love; and so let him,  
As he regards his aged father's life.

*Marc.* This will I do, and soon return again. 130  
[*Exit.*]

*Tam.* Now will I hence about thy business,  
And take my ministers along with me.

*Tit.* Nay, nay, let Rape and Murder stay  
with me;

Or else I'll call my brother back again,  
And cleave to no revenge but Lucius.

*Tam.* [*Aside to her sons.*] What say you,  
boys! will you bide with him,

Whiles I go tell my lord the emperor  
How I have govern'd our determined jest?

Yield to his humour, smooth and speak him  
fair, 140

And tarry with him till I turn again.

*Tit.* [*Aside.*] I know them all, though they  
suppose me mad.

And will o'erreach them in their own devices:  
A pair of cursed hell-hounds and their dam!

*Dem.* Madam, depart at pleasure; leave us  
here.

*Tam.* Farewell, Andronicus: Revenge now

To lay a complot to betray thy feet.

*Tit.* I know thou dost;

farewell.  
*Tit.* Tell us, old man, how shall we  
play?

*Tit.* Yes, I have work enough for you to do.  
Publius, come hither, Titus, and Valentine!

*Enter PUBLIUS and others.*

*Pub.* What is your will?

*Tit.* Know you these two?

*Pub.* The empress' sons, I take them, Chiron  
and Demetrius.

*Tit.* Phe, Publius, fie! thou art too much  
deceived;

55  
It have you heard me wish for such an hour,  
And now I find it; therefore bind them sure,  
And stop their mouths, if they begin to cry.

*[Exit.*  
*[Publius, &c. lay hold on Chiron and Demetrius.*

*Châ.* Villains, forbear! we are the empress'  
sons.

*Pub.* And therefore do we what we are  
commanded.

*[Stop close their mouths, let them not speak a word.*

*he sure bound! look that you bind them fast.*

*[Re-enter TITUS, with LAVINIA; he bearing a knife, and she a basin.*

*Tit.* Come, come, Lavinia; look, thy foes  
are bound.

*Sirs,* stop their mouths, let them not speak to  
me;

but let them hear what fearful words I utter.

O villains, Chiron and Demetrius!  
170  
Here stands the spring whom you have stain'd  
with mud.

*his* goodly summer with your winter mix'd.  
*you* kill'd her husband, and for that vile fault  
two of her brothers were condemn'd to death,

*My* hand cut off and made a merry jest;  
*with* her sweet hands, her tongue, and that  
more dear

an hands or tongue, her spotless chastity,  
inhuman traitors, you constrain'd and forced.

*What* would you say, if I should let you speak!  
Villains, for shame you could not beg for grace.

*ark,* wretches! how I mean to martyr you.  
*his* one hand yet is left to cut your throats,

*hilst* that Lavinia 'tween her stumps doth  
hold

a basin that receives your guilty blood.

*ou* know your mother means to feast with  
me,

*nd* calls herself Revenge, and thinks me  
mad:

*ark,* villains! I will grind your bones to dust  
and with your blood and it I'll make a paste,

*and* of the paste a coffin I will rear  
180  
*and* make two pasties of your shameful heads;

*bid* that strumpet, your unhallow'd dam,  
*ake* to the earth swallow her own increase.

*is* the feast that I have bid her to,  
*nd* this the banquet she shall surfeit on:

*worse* than Phaedra you and my daughter,  
*d* worse than Phaedra I will be revenged:

*d* now prepare your banquet. Lavinia, come,  
*[She exits with her daughters.*

Receive the blood: and when that they are  
dead,

Let me go grind their bones to powder small  
And with this hateful liquor temper it;

And in that paste let their vile heads be baked.  
Come, come, be every one officious

To make this banquet; which I wish may  
prove

More stern and bloody than the Centaurs' feast.  
So, now bring them in, for I'll play the cook;

And see them ready 'gainst their mother comes.  
*[Exeunt, bearing the dead bodies.*

SCENE III. Court of Titus's house. A banquet  
set out.

*Enter LUCIUS, MARCUS, and Goths, with  
AARON prisoner.*

*Luc.* Uncle Marcus, since it is my father's  
mind

That I repair to Rome, I am content.

*First Goth.* And ours with thine, befall  
what fortune will.

*Luc.* Good uncle, take you in this barbarous  
Moor.

This ravenous tiger, this accursed devil;  
Let him receive no sustenance, fester him,

Till he be brought unto the empress' face,  
For testimony of her foul proceedings:

And see the ambush of our friends be strong;  
I fear the emperor means no good to us.

*Aar.* Some devil whisper curses in mine  
ear,

And prompt me, that my tongue may utter  
forth

The venomous malice of my swelling heart!

*Luc.* Away, inhuman dog! unhallow'd slave!  
Sirs, help our uncle to convey him in.

*[Exeunt Goths, with Aaron. Flourish  
within.*

The trumpets show the emperor is at hand.

*Enter SATURNINUS and TAMORA, with  
ÆMILIUS, Tribunes, Senators, and others.*

*Sat.* What, hath the firmament more sons  
than one!

*Luc.* What boasts it thee to call thyself a  
sun!

*Marc.* Rome's emperor, and nephew, break  
the parle;

Those quarrels must be quietly debated.

The feast is ready, which the careful Titus  
Hath ordain'd to an honourable end.

For peace, for love, for league, and good to  
Rome:

Please you, therefore, draw nigh, and take  
your places.

*Sat.* Marcus, we will  
*[Hautboys sound. The Company sit  
down at table.*

*Enter TITUS dressed like a Cook. LAVINIA,  
veiled, young LUCIUS, and others. TITUS  
places the dishes on the table.*

*Tit.* Welcome, my gracious lord; welcome,  
sweet queen;

Welcome, ye worthy Goths; welcome, Lucius;  
And welcome all; although the feast be poor.

'Twill fill your stomachs; please you eat of it.

*Sat.* Why art thou thus attired, Andronicus?

*Tit.* Because I would be sure to have all well.

To entertain your highness and your empress.

*Tam.* We are beholding to you, good Andronicus.

*Tit.* An if your highness knew my heart, you were.

My lord the emperor, resolve me this:

Was it well done of rash Virginius

To slay his daughter with his own right hand,

Because she was enforced, stain'd, and de-

flower'd?

*Sat.* It was, Andronicus.

*Tit.* Your reason, mighty lord!

*Sat.* Because the girl should not survive her

shame,

And by her presence still renew his sorrows.

*Tit.* A reason mighty, strong, and effectual;

A pattern, precedent, and lively warrant.

For me, most wretched, to perform the like.

Die, die, Lavinia, and thy shame with thee;

And, with thy shame, thy father's sorrow die!

*Sat.* What hast thou done, unnatural and

unkind!

*Tit.* Kill'd her, for whom my tears have

made me blind.

I am as woful as Virginius was,

And have a thousand times more cause than he

To do this outrage; and it now is done.

*Sat.* What, was she ravish'd? tell who did

the deed.

*Tit.* Will't please you eat? will't please your

highness feed?

*Tam.* Why hast thou slain thine only

daughter thus?

*Tit.* Not I; 'twas Chiron and Demetrius:

They ravish'd her, and cut away her tongue;

And they, 'twas they, that did her all this

wrong.

*Sat.* Go fetch them hither to us presently.

*Tit.* Why, there they are both, baked in

that pie!

Whereof their mother daintily hath fed,

Biting the flesh that she herself hath bred.

'Tis true, 'tis true; witness my knife's sharp

point.

*Sat.* Die, frantic wretch, for this accursed

deed!

*Luc.* Can the son's eye behold his father

bleed!

These's meed for meed, death for a deadly deed!

*[Kills Saturninus. A great tumult.]*

*Lucius, Marcus, and others go up*

*into the balcony.*

*Marc.* You sad-faced men, people and sons

of Rome,

No sorer sorrow'd, like a flight of fowl

By winds and high tempestuous gusts,

I teach you how to knit again

A number'd corn into one mutual sheaf,

As broken limbs again into one body;

As Rome herself be knit into herself;

As the weak mightiest kingdoms court ye to,

And as the weak and desperate castaway,

Shall find a haven on himself.

But if my frosty signs and chaps of age,

Grave witnesses of true experience,

Cannot induce you to attend my words,

*[To Lucius.]* Speak, Rome's dear friend, as erst

our ancestor,

When with his solemn tongue he did discourse

To love-sick Dido's sad attending ear

The story of that baleful burning night

When subtle Greeks surprised King Priam's

Troy.

Tell us what Sinon hath bewitch'd our ears,

Or who hath brought the fatal engine in

That gives our Troy, our Rome, the devil wound.

My heart is not compact of flint nor steel;

Nor can I utter all our bitter grief.

But floods of tears will drown my oratory,

And break my utterance, even in the time

When it should move you to attend me most.

Lending your kind commiseration.

Here is a captain, let him tell the tale;

Your hearts will throb and weep to hear him

speak.

*Luc.* Then, noble auditory, be it known to

you,

That cursed Chiron and Demetrius

Were they that murdered our emperor's brother

And they it were that ravish'd our sister:

For their fell faults our brothers were beheld;

Our father's tears despised, and basely coven'd

Of that true hand that fought Rome's quarrel

out,

And sent her enemies unto the grave.

Lastly, myself unkindly banish'd,

The gates shut on me, and turn'd weeping out,

To beg relief among Rome's enemies;

Who drown'd their enmity in my true tears,

And open'd their arms to embrace me as

friend.

I am the turned forth, be it known to you,

That have preserved her welfare in my blood.

And from her bosom took the enemy's point,

Sheathing the steel in my adventurous body.

Alas, you know I am no vaunter, I;

My scars can witness, dumb although they are,

That my report is just and full of truth.

But, soft! methinks I do digress too much,

Citing my worthless praise: O, pardon me!

For when no friends are by, men praise them-

selves.

*Marc.* Now is my turn to speak. Behold

this child:

*[Pointing to the Child in the arms of an*

*Attendant.]*

Of this was Tamora delivered:

The issue of an irreligious Moor,

Chief architect and plotter of these woes:

The villain is alive in Titus's house,

And as he is, to witness this is true.

Now judge what cause had Titus to revenge

These wrongs, unspeakable, past patience,

Or more than any living man could bear.

Now you have heard the truth, what say ye

Romans?

Have we done ought amiss,—show us where!

And, from the place where you behold us no

The poor remainder of Andronicus!

Will, hater in heart, all heartily eat us down

And on the ragged bones beat forth our brain

And make a mutual closure of our house.  
Speak, Romans, speak; and if you say we shall,

Lo, hand in hand, Lucius and I will fall.  
*Emil.* Come, come, thou reverend man of Rome,

And bring our emperor gently in thy hand,  
Lucius our emperor; for well I know  
The common voice do cry it shall be so. 140

*All.* Lucius, all hail, Rome's royal emperor!  
*Marc.* Go, go into old Titus' sorrowful house.

[*To Attendants.*]

And hither hale that misbelieving Moor,  
To be adjudged some direful slaughtering death,  
As punishment for his most wicked life.

[*Exeunt Attendants.*]

LUCIUS, MARCUS, and the others descend.

*All.* Lucius, all hail, Rome's gracious governor!

*Luc.* Thanks, gentle Romans: may I govern so,

To heal Rome's harms, and wipe away her woe!

But, gentle people, give me aim awhile,  
For nature puts me to a heavy task: 150

Stand all aloof: but, uncle, draw you near,  
To shed obsequious tears upon this trunk.

O, take this warm kiss on thy pale cold lips,  
[*Kissing Titus.*]

These sorrowful drops upon thy blood-stain'd face,

The last true duties of thy noble son!  
*Marc.* Tear for tear, and loving kiss for

kiss,  
Thy brother Marcus tenders on thy lips:

O, were the sum of these that I should pay  
Countless and infinite, yet would I pay them!

*Luc.* Come hither, boy; come, come, and learn of us 160

To melt in showers: thy grandsire loved thee well:

Many a time he danced thee on his knee,  
Sung thee asleep, his loving breast thy pillow;

Many a matter hath he told to thee,  
Meet and agreeing with thine infancy;

In that respect, thou, like a loving child,  
Shed yet some small drops from thy tender

spring.

Because kind nature doth require it so:  
Friends should associate friends in grief and woe: 169

Bid him farewell; commit him to the grave;  
Do him that kindness, and take leave of him.

*Young Luc.* O grandsire, grandsire! even with all my heart

Would I were dead, so you did live again!  
O Lord, I cannot speak to him for weeping;

My tears will choke me, if I open my mouth.

*Re-enter Attendants with AARON.*

*Em.* You sad Andronici, have done with woe:

Give sentence on this execrable wretch,  
That hath been breeder of these dire events.

*Luc.* Set him breast-deep in earth, and furnish him;

There let him stand, and rave, and cry for food: 180

If any one relieves or pities him,  
For the offence he dies. This is our doom:

Some stay to see him fasten'd in the earth.  
*Aar.* O, why should wrath be mute, and

fury dumb?  
I am no baby, I, that with base prayers

I should repent the evils I have done:  
Ten thousand worse than ever yet I did

Would I perform, if I might have my will:  
If one good deed in all my life I did,

I do repent it from my very soul. 190  
*Luc.* Some loving friends convey the emperor hence,

And give him burial in his father's grave:  
My father and Lavinia shall forthwith

Be closed in our household's monument.  
As for that heinous tiger, Tamora,

No funeral rite, nor man in mourning weeds,  
No mournful bell shall ring her burial;

But throw her forth to beasts and birds of prey:

Her life was beast-like, and devoid of pity;  
And, being so, shall have like want of pity. 200

See justice done on Aaron, that damn'd Moor,  
By whom our heavy haps had their beginning:

Then, afterwards, to order well the state,  
That like events may ne'er it ruinate. [*Exeunt.*]

# ROMEO AND JULIET

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

ESCALUS, prince of Verona.

PARIS, a young nobleman, kinsman to the prince.

MONTAGUE, } heads of two houses at vari-  
CAPULET, } ance with each other.

An old man, cousin to Capulet.

ROMEO, son to Montague.

MERCUTIO, kinsman to the prince, and friend to Romeo.

BENVOLIO, nephew to Montague, and friend to Romeo.

TYBALT, nephew to Lady Capulet.

FRIAR LAURENCE, } Franciscans.

FRIAR JOHN, }

BALTHASAR, servant to Romeo.

SAMPSON, } servants to Capulet.

GREGORY, }

PETER, servant to Juliet's nurse.

ABRAHAM, servant to Montague.

An Apothecary.

Three Musicians.

Page to Paris; another Page; an Officer.

LADY MONTAGUE, wife to Montague.

LADY CAPULET, wife to Capulet.

JULIET, daughter to Capulet.

Nurse to Juliet.

Citizens of Verona; several Men and Women, relations to both houses: Maskers, Guards, Watchmen, and Attendants.

Chorus.

SCENE: Verona; Mantua.

## PROLOGUE.

Two households, both alike in dignity,

In fair Verona, where we lay our scene,

From ancient grudge break to new mutiny,

Where civil blood makes civil hands unclean.

From forth the fatal loins of these two foes

A pair of star-cross'd lovers take their life;

Whose misadventured piteous overthrows

Do with their death bury their parents' strife.

The fearful passage of their death-mark'd love,

And the continuance of their parents' rage,

Which, but their children's end, nought could

remove,

Is now the two hours' traffic of our stage;

The which if you with patient ears attend,

What here shall miss, our toil shall strive to mend.

## ACT I.

SCENE I. Verona. A public place.

Enter SAMPSON and GREGORY, of the house of Capulet, armed with swords and bucklers.

Sam. Gregory, o' my word, we'll not carry coals.

Gre. No, rather we should be colliers.

Sam. I mean, an we be in choler, we'll

fight.

Gre. Ay, while you live, draw your neck

out o' the collar.

Sam. I draw it quickly, being moved.

Gre. I mean, you draw it not quickly moved to

fight.

Sam. A dog of the house of Montague moves me.

Gre. To move is to stir; and to be valiant is to stand: therefore, if thou art moved, thou runn'st away.

Sam. A dog of that house shall move me to stand: I will take the wall of any man or maid of Montague's.

Gre. That shows thee a weak slave; for the weakest goes to the wall.

Sam. True; and therefore women, being the weaker vessels, are ever thrust to the wall: therefore I will push Montague's men from the wall, and thrust his maids to the wall.

Gre. The quarrel is between our masters and us their men.

Sam. 'Tis all one, I will show myself a tyrant: when I have fought with the men, I will be cruel with the maids, and cut off their heads.

Gre. The heads of the maids!

Sam. Ay, the heads of the maids, or their maidenheads; take it in what sense thou wilt.

Gre. They must take it in sense that feel it.

Sam. Me they shall feel while I am able to stand: and 'tis known I am a pretty piece of flesh.

Gre. 'Tis well thou art not fish: if thou hadst, thou hadst been poor John. Draw thy tool; here comes two of the house of the Montagues.

Sam. My naked weapon is out: quarrel, I will back thee.

Gre. How! turn thy back and run!



*Sam.* Fear me not.

*Gre.* No, marry; I fear thee!

*Sam.* Let us take the law of our sides; let them begin.

*Gre.* I will frown as I pass by, and let them take it as they list.

*Sam.* Nay, as they dare. I will bite my thumb at them; which is a disgrace to them, if they bear it.

*Enter ABRAHAM and BALTHASAR.*

*Abr.* Do you bite your thumb at us, sir?

*Sam.* I do bite my thumb, sir.

*Abr.* Do you bite your thumb at us, sir?

*Sam.* [Aside to *Gre.*] Is the law of our side, if I say ay?

*Gre.* No.

*Sam.* No, sir, I do not bite my thumb at you, sir, but I bite my thumb, sir.

*Gre.* Do you quarrel, sir?

*Sam.* Quarrel, sir! no, sir.

*Sam.* If you do, sir, I am for you: I serve as good a man as you.

*Abr.* No better.

*Sam.* Well, sir.

*Gre.* Say 'better': here comes one of my master's kinsmen.

*Sam.* Yes, better, sir.

*Abr.* You lie.

*Sam.* Draw, if you be men. Gregory, remember thy swashing blow. [They fight.]

*Enter BENVOLIO.*

*Ben.* Part, fools!  
Put up your swords; you know not what you do.  
[Beats down their swords.]

*Enter TYBALT.*

*Tyb.* What, art thou drawn among these heartless hinds?

Turn thee, Benvollio, look upon thy death.

*Ben.* I do but keep the peace: put up thy sword,

Or manage it to part these men with me.

*Tyb.* What, drawn, and talk of peace? I hate the word,

As I hate hell, all Montagues, and thee:  
[They fight.]

*Enter several of both houses, who join the fray; then enter Citizens, with clubs.*

*First Cit.* Clubs, bills, and partisans! strike!  
beat them down!  
own with the Capulets! down with the Montagues!

*Enter CAPULET in his gown, and LADY CAPULET.*

*Cap.* What noise is this? Give me my long sword, ho!

*La. Cap.* A crutch, a crutch! why call you for a sword?

*Cap.* My sword, I say! Old Montague is come,  
and flourishes his blade in spite of me.

*Enter MONTAGUE and LADY MONTAGUE.*

*Mon.* Thou villain Capulet—Hold me not,  
let me go.

*La. Mon.* Thou shalt not stir a foot to seek a foe.

*Enter PRINCE, with Attendants.*

*Prin.* Rebellious subjects, enemies to peace,  
Profaners of this neighbour-stained steel,—  
Will they not hear? What, ho! you men, you

beasts,  
That quench the fire of your pernicious rage

With purple fountains issuing from your veins,  
On pain of torture, from those bloody hands

Throw your mistemper'd weapons to the ground,  
And hear the sentence of your moved prince.

Three civil brawls, bred of an airy word,  
By thee, old Capulet, and Montague,

Have thrice disturb'd the quiet of our streets,  
And made Verona's ancient citizens

Cast by their grave beseeching ornaments,  
To wield old partisans, in hands as old,

Canker'd with peace, to part your canker'd hate:

If ever you disturb our streets again,  
Your lives shall pay the forfeit of the peace.

For this time, all the rest depart away:  
You, Capulet, shall go along with me:

And, Montague, come you this afternoon,  
To know our further pleasure in this case,

To old Free-town, our common judgement-place.

Once more, on pain of death, all men depart.

[Exeunt all but Montague, Lady Montague, and Benvolio.]

*Mon.* Who set this ancient quarrel new abroach?

Speak, nephew, were you by when it began?

*Ben.* Here were the servants of your adversary,

And yours, close fighting ere I did approach:  
I drew to part them; in the instant came

The fiery Tybalt, with his sword prepared,  
Which, as he breathed defiance to my ears,

He swung about his head and cut the winds,  
Who nothing hurt withal hiss'd him in scorn:

While we were exchanging thrusts and blows,  
Came more and more and fought on part and part,

Till the prince came, who parted either part.

*La. Mon.* O, where is Romeo? saw you him to-day?

*Ben.* Madam, an hour before the worshipp'd sun

Peep'd forth the golden window of the east,  
A troubled mind drove me to walk abroad;

Where, underneath the grove of arbutus,  
That westward rooteth from the city's side,

So early walking did I see your son:

Towards him I made, but he was ware of me,  
And stole into the covert of the wood.

He is that way, but he is that way,  
I who challenge him am that way,  
I who challenge him am that way.

**Mos.** Many a morning hath he there been  
seen,  
With tears augmenting the fresh morning's dew,  
Adding to clouds more clouds with his deep

But all so soon as the all-cheering sun 140  
Shed in the furthest east begin to draw  
The shady curtains from Aurora's bed,  
Away from light steals home my heavy son,  
And private in his chamber pens himself,  
Shuts up his windows, locks fair daylight out  
And makes himself an artificial night:  
Black and portentous must this humour prove,  
Unless good counsel may the cause remove.

**Ben.** My noble uncle, do you know the cause?

**Mos.** I neither know it nor can learn of him. 150

**Ben.** Have you importuned him by any means?

**Mos.** Both by myself and many other friends:

But he, his own affections' counsellor,  
Is to himself—I will not say how true—  
But to himself so secret and so close,  
So far from sounding and discovery,  
As is the bad bit with an envious worm,  
Ere he can spread his sweet leaves to the air,  
Or dedicate his beauty to the sun.  
Could we but learn from whence his sorrows grow, 160  
We would as willingly give cure as know.

*Enter ROMEO.*

**Ben.** See, where he comes: so please you, step aside;

I'll know his grievance, or be much denied.

**Mos.** I would thou wert so happy by thy stay,

To hear true shrift. Come, madam, let's away.  
*(Exeunt Montague and Lady.)*

**Ben.** Good morrow, cousin.

**Rom.** Is the day so young?

**Ben.** But new struck nine.

**Rom.** Ay me! sad hours seem long.

Was that my father that went hence so fast?

**Ben.** It was. What sadness lengthens Romeo's hours?

**Rom.** Not having that, which, having, makes them short. 170

**Ben.** In love?

**Rom.** Out—

**Ben.** Of love?

**Rom.** Out of her favour, where I am in love.

**Ben.** Alas, that love, so gentle in his view,  
Should be so tyrannous and rough in proof!

**Rom.** Alas, that love, whose view is muffled still,  
Should, without eyes, see pathways to his will!  
Where shall we dine? O me! What fray was here?

Yet tell me not, for I have heard it all. 180  
Here's much to do with hate, but more with love.

Why then, O brawling love! O loving hate!  
O heavy lids! O heavy lids!  
O heavy lids! O heavy lids!

O heavy lids! O heavy lids!  
O heavy lids! O heavy lids!

Feather of lead, bright smoke, cold fire, sick health!

Still-walking sleep, that is not what it is!

This love feel I, that feel no love in this.  
Dost thou not laugh?

**Ben.** No, coz, I 190 weep.

**Rom.** Good heart, at what?

**Ben.** At thy good heart's oppression.

**Rom.** Why, such is love's transgression.  
Griefs of mine own lie heavy in my breast,  
Which thou wilt propagate, to have it press  
With more of thine: this love lieth thou hast shown

Doth add more grief to too much of mine own.  
Love is a smoke raised with the fume of sighs;  
Being purged, a fire sparkling in lovers' eyes;  
Being vex'd, a sea nourish'd with lovers' tears:  
What is it else? a madness most discreet,  
A choking gall and a preserving sweet. 200  
Farewell, my coz.

**Ben.** Soft! I will go along;  
An if you leave me so, you do me wrong.

**Rom.** Tut, I have lost myself; I am not here;

This is not Romeo, he's some other where.

**Ben.** Tell me in sadness, who is that you love.

**Rom.** What, shall I groan and tell thee?

**Ben.** Groan! why, no:

But sadly tell me who.

**Rom.** Bid a sick man in sadness make his will:

Ah, word ill urg'd to one that is so ill!

In sadness, cousin, I do love a woman. 210

**Ben.** I aim'd so near, when I supposed you loved.

**Rom.** A right good mark-man! And she's fair I love.

**Ben.** A right fair mark, fair coz, is soonest hit.

**Rom.** Well, in that hit you miss: she'll not be hit

With Cupid's arrow; she hath Dian's wit;  
And, in strong proof of chastity well arm'd,  
From love's weak childish bow she lives un-

harm'd.  
She will not stay the siege of loving terms,  
Nor bide the encounter of assailing eyes,  
Nor ope her lap to saint-seducing gold: 220  
O, she is rich in beauty, only poor,  
That when she dies with beauty dies her store.

**Ben.** Then she hath sworn that she will still live chaste?

**Rom.** She hath, and in that sparing makes huge waste.

For beauty starved with her severity  
Cuts beauty off from all posterity.  
She is too fair, too wise, wisely too fair,  
To merit bliss by making me despair:  
She hath forsworn to love, and in that vow  
Do I live dead that live to tell it now. 230

**Ben.** Be ruled by me, forget to think of her.

**Rom.** O, teach me how I should forget to think.

**Ben.** By giving liberty unto thine eyes;  
Examine other beauties.

**Rom.** 'Tis the way  
To call here exquisite, in question move

These happy masks that kiss fair ladies' brows  
Being black put us in mind they hide the fair;  
He that is stricken blind cannot forget  
The precious treasure of his eyesight lost:  
Show me a mistress that is passing fair,  
What doth her beauty serve, but as a note  
Where I may read who pass'd that passing fair?  
Farewell: thou canst not teach me to forget.

Ben. I'll pay that doctrine, or else die in  
debt. [Exeunt.]

## SCENE II. A street.

Enter CAPULET, PARIS, and Servant.

Cap. But Montague is bound as well as I,  
In penalty alike; and 'tis not hard, I think,  
For men so old as we to keep the peace.  
Par. Of honourable reckoning are you both;  
And pity 'tis you lived at odds so long.  
But now, my lord, what say you to my suit?

Cap. But saying o'er what I have said  
before:

My child is yet a stranger in the world;  
He hath not seen the change of fourteen years;  
At two more summers wither in their pride,  
If we may think her ripe to be a bride.

Par. Younger than she are happy mothers  
made.

Cap. And too soon marr'd are those so early  
made.

He hath swallow'd all my hopes but she,  
She is the hopeful lady of my earth:

But woo her, gentle Paris, get her heart,  
She will to her consent is but a part;

An she agree, within her scope of choice  
I'll give my consent and fair accomod voice.

This night I hold an old accustomed feast,  
Whereof I have invited many a guest,

Such as I love; and you, among the store,  
One more, most welcome, makes my number  
more.

At my poor house look to behold this night  
A thousand stars that make dark heaven  
light:

Each comfort as do lusty young men feel  
When well-apparell'd April on the heel  
Of limping winter treads, even such delight  
Among fresh fennel buds shall you this night  
Inherit at my house; hear all, all see,  
And like her most whose merit most shall be:  
Which on more view, of many mine being one,  
May stand in number, though in reckoning  
none.

Go with me. [To Serv., giving a paper.]  
Go, sirrah, trouble about  
rough fair Verona; find those persons out  
whose names are written there, and to them  
say,

and welcome on their pleasure stay.

[Exeunt Capulet and Paris.]

Serv. Find them out whose names are writ  
in here! It is written, that the shoemaker  
should meddle with his yard, and the taylor  
with his last; the fisher with his pencil, and the  
conyer with his nets; but I am sent to find  
those persons whose names are here writ, and  
to never find what names the writing person

hath here writ. I must to the learned.—In  
good time.

Enter BENVOLIO and ROMEO.

Ben. Tut, man, one fire burns out another's  
burning.

One pain is lessen'd by another's anguish;  
Turn giddy, and be help by backward turning;

One desperate grief cures with another's  
languish:

Take thou some new infection to thy eye,  
And the rank poison of the old will die.

Rom. Your plaitain-leaf is excellent for  
that.

Ben. For what, I pray thee?

Rom. For your broken shin.

Ben. Why, Romeo, art thou mad?

Rom. Not mad, but bound more than a  
madman is;

Shut up in prison, kept without my food,  
Whipped and tormented and—God-den, good  
fellow.

Serv. God gi' god-den. I pray, sir, can you  
read?

Rom. Ay, mine own fortune in my misery.

Serv. Perhaps you have learned it without  
book; but, I pray, can you read any thing you  
see?

Rom. Ay, if I know the letters and the  
language.

Serv. Ye may honestly: rest you merry!

Rom. Stay, fellow; I can read. [Reads.]  
'Signior Martino and his wife and daughters;

County Anselme and his beauteous sisters;  
the lady widow of Vitruvio; Signior Paganio  
and his lovely nieces; Mercutio and his brother  
Valentine; mine uncle Capulet, his wife, and  
daughters; my fair niece Rosaline; Livia;  
Signior Valentio and his cousin Tybalt; Lucio  
and the lively Helena.

A fair assembly: whither should they come?

Serv. Up.

Rom. Whither?

Serv. To supper; to our house.

Rom. Whose house?

Serv. My master's.

Rom. Indeed, I should have asked you that  
before.

Serv. Now I'll tell you without asking: my  
master is the great rich Capulet; and if you be  
not of the house of Montagues, I pray, come  
and crush a cup of wine. Rest you merry!

[Exit Serv.]

Ben. At this same ancient feast of Capulet's  
Supper the fair Rosaline whom thou so loves,  
With all the admired beauties of Verona:  
Go thither; and, with untam'd eye,  
Compare her face with some that I shall show,  
And I will make thee think thy swan a crow.

Rom. When the devout religion of mine eye  
Maintains such falsehood, then turn tears to  
fire;

And those who often drown'd could never die,  
Transparent heretics, be burnt for liars!

One fairer than my love! the all-seeing sun  
Ne'er saw her match since first the world  
began.

*Des.* 'Tis, you saw her fair, none else being  
by  
Herself posset with herself in either eye; 300  
But in that crystal scales let there be weigh'd  
Your lady's love against some other maid  
That I will show you shining at this feast,  
And she shall scant show well that now shows  
best.

*Des.* I'll go along, no such sight to be  
shown,  
But to rejoice in splendour of mine own.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. A room in Capulet's house.

*Enter* LADY CAPULET and Nurse.

*La. Cap.* Nurse, where's my daughter?  
Call her forth to me.

*Nurse.* Now, by my maidenhead, at twelve  
year old,  
I bade her come. What, lamb! what, lady-  
bird!  
God forbid! Where's this girl! What, Juliet!

*Enter* JULIET.

*Jul.* How now! who calls?

*Nurse.* Your mother.  
*Jul.* Madam, I am here.

What is your will?

*La. Cap.* This is the matter:—Nurse, give  
leave awhile.  
We must talk in secret:—nurse, come back  
again;

I have remember'd me, thou'st hear our counsel.  
Thou know'st my daughter's of a pretty age, 10

*Nurse.* Faith, I can tell her age unto an  
hour.

*La. Cap.* She's not fourteen.

*Nurse.* I'll lay fourteen of my teeth,—  
And yet, to my teen be it spoken, I have but  
four,—

She is not fourteen. How long is it now  
To Lammastide?

*La. Cap.* A fortnight and odd days.

*Nurse.* Even or odd, of all days in the year,  
Come Lammastide at night shall she be four-  
teen.

Swan and she—God rest all Christian souls!—  
Were of an age; well, Susan is with God;

She was too good for me; but, as I said, 20  
On Lammastide at night shall she be fourteen;  
Thus shall she, marry; I remember it well.

'Tis since the earthquake now eleven years;  
And she was wean'd,—I never shall forget it,—  
On all the days of the year, upon that day:

For I had then laid wormwood to my dug,  
Sitting in the sun under the dove-house wall;

My lord and you were then at Mantua,—  
Nay, I do bent a knee:—but, as I said,

When it did taste the wormwood on the nipple  
Of my dug and felt it bitter, pretty fool, 31

How it did twitch and fall out with the dug!  
But that's no business: the dove-house 'twas no need,

I know,

For I had then laid wormwood to my dug;  
And since that time it is eleven years;

But then the should stand alone; nay, by the  
moon,

She could have run and waddled all about;  
For even the day before, she broke her brow;

And then my husband—God be with his soul!  
A' was a merry man—took up the child:

'Yea,' quoth he, 'dost thou fall upon thy face!  
Thou wilt fall backward when thou hast more  
wit;

Wilt thou not, Juliet?' and, by my holidays,  
The pretty wretch left crying and said 'Ay.'

To see, now, how a jest shall come about!  
I warrant, an I should live a thousand years,

I never should forget it: 'Wilt thou not, Juliet?'  
quoth he;

And, pretty fool, it stinted and said 'Ay.'

*La. Cap.* Enough of this; I pray thee, hold  
thy peace.

*Nurse.* Yes, madam; yet I cannot choose  
but laugh.

To think it should leave crying and say 'Ay.'  
And yet, I warrant, it had upon its brow

A bump as big as a young cockerel's stone;  
A parlous knock; and it cried bitterly:

'Yea,' quoth my husband, 'fall't upon thy  
face!

Thou wilt fall backward when thou comest to  
age;

Wilt thou not, Juliet?' it stinted and said 'Ay.'

*Jul.* And stint thou too, I pray thee, nurse,  
say I.

*Nurse.* Peace, I have done. God mark thee  
to his grace!

Thou wast the prettiest babe that e'er I nursed!  
An I might live to see thee married once, 6

I have my wish.

*La. Cap.* Marry, that 'marry' is the very  
theme

I came to talk of. Tell me, daughter Juliet,  
How stands your disposition to be married?

*Jul.* It is an honour that I dream not of.

*Nurse.* An honour! were not I thine only  
nurse,

I would say thou hadst suck'd wisdom from thy  
teat.

*La. Cap.* Well, think of marriage now  
younger than you,

Here in Verona, ladies of esteem,  
Are made already mothers: by my count,

I was your mother much upon these years  
That you are now a maid. Thus then in brief

The valiant Paris seeks you for his love.

*Nurse.* A man, young lady! lady, such  
man

As all the world—why, he's a man of wax.

*La. Cap.* Verona's summer hath not such  
flower.

*Nurse.* Nay, he's a flower; in faith, a very  
flower.

*La. Cap.* What say you? can you love the  
gentleman?

This night you shall behold him at our feast;  
Read o'er the volumes of young Paris' face

And find delights with which beauty's page  
Examines every married leechman:

And see how one another looks content  
And what obscures in this fair volume lies

First written in the margin of his eye:  
This precious book of love, this unhound love

To beautify him, only lacks a cover:

The fish lives in the sea, and 'tis pride  
For fair without the fair within to hide: 50  
That look in many's eyes doth shape the glory.  
That in gold chains looks in the golden story:  
So shall you share all that he doth possess,  
By having him, making yourself no less.

Nurse. No less! nay, bigger; women grow  
by men.

La. Cap. Speak briefly, can you like of  
Paris' love?

Jul. I'll look to like, if looking liking  
move:

But no more deep will I cindart mine eye  
Than your consent gives strength to make it  
fly.

Enter a Servant.

Serv. Madam, the guests are come, supper  
serv'd up, you called, my young lady asked for,  
the nurse curs'd in the pantry, and every thing  
extremity. I must hence to wait; I beseech  
you, follow straight.

La. Cap. We follow thee. [Exit Servant.]  
Juliet, the county stays.

Nurse. Go, girl, seek happy nights to happy  
days. [Exit.

#### SCENE IV. A street.

Enter ROMEO, MERCUTIO, BENVOLIO, with  
one or six Maskers, Torch-bearers, and  
others.

Rom. What, shall this speech be spoke for  
our excuse?

Ben. Shall we on without apology?

Ben. The date is out of such profligacy:  
e'll have no Cupid hoodwink'd with a scarf,  
earing a Tartar's painted bow of lath,  
aring the ladies like a crow-keeper;  
or no without-book prologue, faintly spoke  
for the prompter, for our entrance:

But let them measure us by what they will;  
we'll measure them a measure, and be gone. 10

Rom. Give me a torch: I am not for this  
ambling;

being but heavy, I will bear the light.

Mer. Nay, gentle Romeo, we must have  
you dance.

Rom. Not I, believe me: you have dancing  
shoes.

With nimble soles: I have a soul of lead  
so stakes me to the ground I cannot move.

Mer. You are a lover; borrow Cupid's  
wings,

and soar with them above a common bound.

Rom. I am too sore enpierced with his shaft  
to soar with his light feathers, and so bound, so  
cannot bound a pitch above dull woe:

Under love's heavy burden do I sink.

Mer. And, to sink in it, should you burden  
love;

so great oppression for a tender thing.

Rom. Is love a tender thing? It is too rough,  
too rude, too boisterous, and it pricks like  
thorn.

Mer. If love be rough with you, be rough  
with love;

Prick love for pricking, and you beat love  
down.

Give me a case to put my visage in:  
A visor for a visor! what case?

What curious eye doth quote deformities? 30  
Here are the beetle brows shall blush for me.

Ben. Come, kneel and enter; and no sooner  
in.

But every man betake him to his legs.

Rom. A torch for me: let wantons light of  
heart

Tickle the senseless rushes with their heels;  
For I am proverb'd with a grandiose phrase;  
I'll be a candle-holder, and look on.

The game was ne'er so fair, and I am done.

Mer. Tut, dun's the mouse, the constable's  
own word:

If thou art dun, we'll draw thee from the mire  
Of this sir-reverence love, wherein thou stick'st  
Up to the ears. Come, we burn daylight, ho!

Rom. Nay, that's not so.

Mer. I mean, sir, in delay  
We waste our lights in vain, like lamps by day.

Take our good meaning, for our judgement sits  
Five times in that ere once in our five wits.

Rom. And we mean well in going to this  
mask;

But 'tis no wit to go.

Mer. Why, may one ask?

Rom. I dream'd a dream to-night.

Mer. And so did I. 50

Rom. Well, what was yours?

Mer. That dreamers often lie.

Rom. In bed asleep, while they do dream  
things true.

Mer. O, then, I see Queen Mab hath been  
with you.

She is the fairies' midwife, and she comes  
In shape no bigger than an agate-stone  
(In the fore-finger of an alderman,  
Drawn with a team of little atomies  
Athwart men's noses as they lie asleep;

Her waggon-spokes made of long spinners' legs,  
The cover of the wings of grasshoppers, 60

The traces of the smallest spider's web,  
The collars of the moonshine's watery beams,  
Her whip of cricket's bone, the lash of film,  
Her waggoner a small grey-coated gnat,  
Not half so big as a round little worm  
Prick'd from the lazy finger of a maid;

Her chariot is an empty hazel-nut  
Made by the joiner squirrel or old grub,  
Time out o' mind the fairies' coachmakers.

And in this state she gallops night by night  
Through lovers' brains, and then they dream of  
love;

O'er courtiers' knees, that dream on courtiers'  
straight,

O'er lawyers' fingers, who straight dream on  
 fees,

O'er ladies' lips, who straight on kisses dream,  
Which oft the angry Mab with bladders plagues;

Because their breaths with sweetmeats tainted  
are:

Sometimes she gallops o'er a courtier's nose,  
And then dreams he of smelling out a lover.

And sometimes comes she with a tinkling bell  
Ticking a person's nose as he lies asleep, 80

# ROMEO AND JULIET

[ACT I]

Then dreams he of another benefice :  
 Sometime she driveth o'er a soldier's neck,  
 And then dreams he of cutting foreign throats,  
 Of breaches, ambuscadoes, Spanish blades,  
 Of healths five-fathom deep ; and then anon  
 Drums in his ear, at which he starts and wakes,  
 And being thus frighted swears a prayer or two  
 And sleeps again. This is that very Mab  
 That plats the manes of horses in the night,  
 And bakes the elf-locks in foul sluttish hairs, <sup>90</sup>  
 Which once untangled much misfortune bodes :  
 This is the hag, when maids lie on their backs,  
 That presses them and learns them first to bear,  
 Making them women of good carriage :  
 This is she—

*Rom.* Peace, peace, Mercutio, peace !  
 Thou talk'st of nothing.

*Mer.* True, I talk of dreams,  
 Which are the children of an idle brain,  
 Begot of nothing but vain fantasy,  
 Which is as thin of substance as the air  
 And more inconstant than the wind, who <sup>100</sup>  
 woos

Even now the frozen bosom of the north,  
 And, being anger'd, puffs away from thence,  
 Turning his face to the dew-dropping south.

*Ben.* This wind, you talk of, blows us from  
 ourselves ;

Supper is done, and we shall come too late.

*Rom.* I fear, too early : for my mind mis-  
 gives

Some consequence yet hanging in the stars  
 Shall bitterly begin his fearful date  
 With this night's revels and expire the term  
 Of a despised life closed in my breast <sup>110</sup>  
 By some vile forfeit of untimely death.  
 But he, that hath the steerage of my course,  
 Direct my sail ! On, lusty gentlemen.

*Ben.* Strike, drum. *[Exeunt.]*

## SCENE V. A hall in Capulet's house.

Musicians waiting. Enter Servingmen, with  
 nuptials.

*First Serv.* Where's Potpan, that he helps  
 not to take away ! He shift a trencher ! he  
 scrape a trencher !

*Sec. Serv.* When good manners shall lie all  
 in one or two men's hands and they unwashed  
 too, 'tis a foul thing.

*First Serv.* Away with the joint-stools, re-  
 move the court-cupboard, look to the plate.  
 Good thou, save me a piece of marchpane ; and,  
 as thou lovest me, let the porter let in Susan  
 Grindstone and Nell. Antony, and Potpan !

*Sec. Serv.* Ay, boy, ready.

*First Serv.* You are looked for and called  
 for, asked for and sought for, in the great  
 chamber.

*Sec. Serv.* We cannot be here and there too.  
 Cheerly, boys ; be brisk awhile, and the longer  
 'twill take all.

Enter CAPULET, with JULIET and others of his  
 house, meeting the Guests and Maskers.

*Cap.* Welcome, gentlemen ! ladies that have  
 their tops

Unplagued with corns will have a bout with  
 you.

Ah ha, my mistresses ! which of you all <sup>20</sup>  
 Will now deny to dance ? she that makes  
 dainty,

She, I'll swear, hath corns ; am I come near  
 ye now !

Welcome, gentlemen ! I have seen the day  
 That I have worn a visor and could tell  
 A whispering tale in a fair lady's ear,  
 Such as would please : 'tis gone, 'tis gone, 'tis  
 gone :

You are welcome, gentlemen ! Come, musicians,  
 play.

A hall, a hall ! give room ! and foot it, girls.

*[Music plays, and they dance.]*  
 More light, you knaves ; and turn the tables up,  
 And quench the fire, the room is grown too hot.  
 Ah, sirrah, this unlook'd-for sport comes well.  
 Nay, sit, nay, sit, good cousin Capulet ;  
 For you and I are past our dancing days ;  
 How long is 't now since last yourself and I  
 Were in a mask !

*Sec. Cap.* By'r lady, thirty years.  
*Cap.* What, man ! 'tis not so much, 'tis not  
 so much :

'Tis since the nuptial of Lucentio,  
 Come pentecost as quickly as it will,  
 Some five and twenty years ; and then we  
 mask'd.

*Sec. Cap.* 'Tis more, 'tis more : his son is  
 elder, sir ;

His son is thirty.

*Cap.* Will you tell me that !

His son was but a ward two years ago.  
*Rom.* *[To a Servingman.]* What lady is that,  
 which doth enrich the hand  
 Of yonder knight !

*Serv.* I know not, sir.

*Rom.* O, she doth teach the torches to burn  
 bright !

It seems she hangs upon the cheek of night  
 Like a rich jewel in an Ethiop's ear ;  
 Beauty too rich for use, for earth too dear !  
 So shows a snowy dove trooping with crows,  
 As yonder lady o'er her fellows shows.  
 The measure done, I'll watch her place of stand,  
 And, touching hers, make blessed my rude  
 hand.

Did my heart love till now ! forswear it, sight !  
 For I ne'er saw true beauty till this night.

*Tyb.* This, by his voice, should be a Mon-  
 tague.

Fetch me my rapier, boy. What dares the  
 slave

Come hither, cover'd with an antic face,  
 To peer and scorn at our solemnity !  
 Now, by the stock and honour of my kin,  
 To strike him dead I hold it not a sin.

*Cap.* Why, how now, kinsman ! where's  
 storm you so !

*Tyb.* Uncle, this is a Montague, our foe,  
 A villain that is hither come in spite,  
 To scorn at our solemnity this night.

*Cap.* Young Romeo is it !

*Tyb.* 'Tis he, that villain Romeo.

*Cap.* Content thee, gentle son, let him alone.  
 He bears him like a portly gentleman ;

And, to my truth, Verona brags of him  
To be a virtuous and well govern'd youth :  
I would not for the wealth of all the town  
Here in my house do him disparagement :  
Therefore be patient, take no note of him :  
It is my will, the which if thou respect,  
Show a fair presence and put off these frowns,  
An ill-beseeming semblance for a feast.  
Tyb. It fits, when such a villain is a guest :  
I'll not endure him.

Cap. He shall be endured :  
What, Goodman boy ! I say, he shall : go to ;  
Am I the master here, or you ? go in. 80  
You'll not endure him ! God shall mend my  
soul !

You'll make a mutiny among my guests !  
You will set cock-a-hoop ! you'll be the man !  
Tyb. Why, uncle, 'tis a shame.

Cap. Go to, go to ;  
You are a saucy boy : is't so, indeed !  
This trick may chance to scathe you, I know  
what :

You must contrary me ! marry, 'tis time.  
Well said, my hearts ! You are a princely ; go ;  
Be quiet, or—More light, more light ! For  
shame !

I'll make you quiet. What, cheerily, my  
hearts ! 90

Tyb. Patience perforce with wilful choler  
meeting  
Makes my flesh tremble in their different  
greeting.

I will withdraw : but this intrusion shall  
Now seeming sweet convert to bitter gall. [Exit.]

Rom. [To Juliet] If I profane with my un-  
worthiest hand

This holy shrine, the gentle fine is this :  
My lips, two blushing pilgrims, ready stand  
To smooth that rough touch with a tender kiss.

Jul. Good pilgrim, you do wrong your hand  
too much,

Which mannerly devotion shows in this ;  
For saints have hands that pilgrims' hands do  
touch. 101

And palm to palm is holy palmers' kiss.  
Rom. Have not saints lips, and holy palmers  
too !

Jul. Ay, pilgrim, lips that they must use in  
prayer.

Rom. O, then, dear saint, let lips do what  
hands do ;

They pray, grant thou, lest faith turn to  
despair.

Jul. Saints do not move, though grant for  
prayers sake.

Rom. Then move not, while my prayer's effect  
I take.

Thus from my lips, by yours, my sin is purged.

Jul. Then have my lips the sin that they  
have took. 110

Rom. Sin from my lips ! O trespass sweetly  
urged !

Give me my sin again.

Jul. You kiss by the book.

Nurse. Madam, your mother craves a word  
with you.

Rom. What is her mother ?  
Nurse. Marry, bachelor,

Her mother is the lady

And a good lady, and a wise and virtuous :  
I nursed her daughter, that you talk'd withal ;  
I tell you, he that can lay hold of her  
Shall have the chinks.

Rom. Is she a Capulet ?  
O dear account ! my life is my foe's debt. 120

Ben. Away, be gone ; the sport is at the  
best.

Rom. Ay, so I fear ; the more is my unrest.

Cap. Nay, gentlemen, prepare not to be  
gone ;

We have a trifling foolish banquet towards.  
Is it e'en so ? why, then, I thank you all ;

I thank you, honest gentlemen ; good night.  
More torches here ! Come on then, let's to bed.

Ah, sirrah, by my fay, it waxes late :  
I'll to my rest.

[Exeunt all but Juliet and Nurse.]  
Jul. Come hither, nurse. What is yond  
gentleman ? 130

Nurse. The son and heir of old Tiberio.

Jul. What's he that now is going out of  
door ?

Nurse. Marry, that, I think, be young Pe-  
truccio.

Jul. What's he that follows there, that  
would not dance ?

Nurse. I know not.

Jul. Go, ask his name : if he be married,  
My grave is like to be my wedding bed.

Nurse. His name is Romeo, and a Montague ;  
The only son of your great enemy.

Jul. My only love sprung from my only  
hate ! 140

Too early seen unknown, and known too late !  
Prodigious birth of love it is to me,  
That I must love a loathed enemy.

Nurse. What's this ? what's this ?  
Jul. A rhyme I learn'd even now  
Of one I danced withal. [One calls within, 'Juliet!']

Nurse. Anon, anon !  
Come, let's away ; the strangers all are gone.

## ACT II

## PROLOGUE

## Enter Chorus.

Chor. Now old desire doth in his death-bed lie,  
And young affection gapes to be his heir ;  
That fair for which love groan'd for and would  
die,

With tender Juliet match'd, is now not fair.  
Now Romeo is beloved and loves again,  
Alike bewitched by the charm of looks,  
But to his foe supposed he must complain.

And she, to her foe's sweet bait from fearful  
hooks :

Being held a foe, he may not have access  
To breathe such vows as lovers use to swear ;  
And she as much in love, her

To meet her new-beloved any  
But passion leads them power, thus means, to  
meet,

Tempering extremities with extreme sweet.

[Exit.]

SCENE I. *A lane by the wall of Capulet's orchard.*

*Enter ROMEO.*

Rom. Can I go forward when my heart is here?  
Turn back, dull earth, and find thy centre out.  
*He climbs the wall, and leaps down within it.*

*Enter BENVOLIO and MERCUTIO.*

Ben. Romeo! my cousin Romeo!

Merc. He is wise: He is wise:  
And, on my life, hath stol'n him home to bed.  
Ben. He ran this way, and leap'd this orchard wall:

Call good Mercutio.

Merc. Nay, I'll conjure too.

RomEO! humours! madman! passion! lover!

Appear thou in the likeness of a sigh!

Speak but one rhyme, and I am satisfied;

Cry but 'Ay me!' pronounce but 'love' and  
dove! 10

Speak to my gossip Venus one fair word,  
One nick-name for her purblind son and heir,  
Young Adam Cupid, he that shot so trim,  
When King Cophetua loved the beggar-maid!  
He heareth not, he stirreth not, he moveth not;  
The ape is dead, and I must conjure him.

I conjure thee by Rosaline's bright eyes,  
By her high forehead and her scarlet lip,  
By her fine foot, straight leg and quivering thigh  
And the demureness that there adjacent lie, 20  
That in thy likeness thou appear to us!

Ben. An if he hear thee, thou wilt anger

him.

Merc. This cannot anger him: 'twould anger

him

To raise a spirit in his mistress' circle  
Of some strange nature, letting it there stand  
Till she had laid it and conjured it down;  
That were some spito: my invocation  
Is fair and honest, and in his mistress' name  
I conjure only but to raise up him.

Ben. Come, he hath hid himself among these  
trees, 30

To be consorted with the humorous night:  
Blind is his love and best befits the dark.

Merc. If love be blind, love cannot hit the  
mark.

Now will he sit under a medlar tree,  
And wish his mistress were that kind of fruit  
As maids call medlars, when they laugh alone.  
O, Romeo, that she were, O, that she were  
An open et cetera, thou a poperin pear!  
Romeo, good night: I'll to my truckle-bed;  
This field-bed is too cold for me to sleep: 40  
Come, shall we go?

Ben. Go, then; for 'tis in vain

To seek him here that means not to be found.  
[Exit Ben.]

SCENE II. *Capulet's orchard.*

*Enter ROMEO.*

Rom. He jests at scars that never felt a  
wound.

*Juliet appears above at a window.*

But, soft! what light through yonder window  
breaks?

It is the east, and Juliet is the sun.

Arise, fair sun, and kill the envious moon,

Who is already sick and pale with grief,

That thou her maid art far more fair than she:

Be not her maid, since she is en-

Her vestal livery is so sick and old,

And none but fools do wear it; cast it off.

It is my lady, O, it is my love!

O, that she knew she were!

She speaks, yet she says nothing: what of that?

Her eye discourses; I will answer it.

I am too bold, 'tis not to me she speaks.

Two of the fairest stars in all the heaven,

Having some business, do entreat her eyes

To twinkle in their spheres till they return.

What if her eyes were there, they in her head!

The brightness of her cheek would shame those

stars,

As daylight doth a lamp; her eyes in heaven

Would through the airy region stream so bright

That birds would sing and think it were not

night.

See, how she leans her cheek upon her hand!

O, that I were a glove upon that hand,

That I might touch that cheek!

Jul. Ay me!

Rom. She speaks

O, speak again, bright angel! for thou art

As glorious to this night, being o'er my head,

As is a winged messenger of heaven

Unto the white-upturned wondering eyes

Of mortals that fall back to gaze on him: 3

When he doth stride the lazy-pacing clouds

And sails upon the bosom of the air.

Jul. O Romeo, Romeo! wherefore art thou

Romeo?

Deny thy father and refuse thy name;

Or, if thou wilt not, be but sworn my love,

And I'll no longer be a Capulet.

Rom. [Aside] Shall I hear more, or shall I

speak at this?

Jul. 'Tis but thy name that is my enemy;

Thou art thyself, though not a Montague.

What's Montague? it is nor hand, nor foot, 40

Nor arm, nor face, nor any other part

Belonging to a man. O, be some other name!

What's in a name? that which we call a rose

By any other name would smell as sweet;

So Romeo would, were he not Romeo call'd,

Retain that dear perfection which he owes

Without that title. Romeo, doff thy name,

And for that name which is no part of thee

Take all myself.

Rom. I take thee at thy word:

Call me but love, and I'll be new baptiz'd;

Henceforth I never will be Romeo.

Jul. What name art thou that thus be-

screen'd in night

So stumblest on my counsel?

Rom. By a name

I know not how to tell thee who I am:

My name, dear saint, is hateful to myself,

Because it is an enemy to thee:

Had I it written, I would tear the word.

Jul. My ears have not yet drunk a han-



That tongue's utterance, yet I know the sound:

Art thou not Romeo and a Montague? 60

Rom. Neither, fair saint, if either thee dislike.

Jul. How earnest thou hither, tell me, and wherefore?

The orchard walls are high and hard to climb,  
And the place death, considering who thou art,  
I any of my kinsmen find thee here.

Rom. With love's light wings did I o'er-  
perch these walls;

For stony limits cannot hold love out,  
And what love can do that dares love attempt;  
Therefore thy kinsmen are no let to me.

Jul. If they do see thee, they will murder thee. 70

Rom. Alack, there lies more peril in thine eye  
Than twenty of their swords: look thou but  
sweet,

And I am proof against their enmity.

Jul. I would not for the world they saw  
thee here.

Rom. I have night's cloak to hide me from  
their sight;

And but thou love me, let them find me here:

My life were better ended by their hate,

Than death prorogued, wanting of thy love.

Jul. By whose direction found'st thou out  
this place?

Rom. By love, who first did prompt me to  
inquire; 80

He lent me counsel and I lent him eyes.

I am no pilot; yet, wert thou as far

As that vast shore wash'd with the farthest sea,  
I would adventure for such merchandise.

Jul. Thou know'st the mask of night is on  
my face,

Else would a maiden blush bepaint my cheek  
For that which thou hast heard me speak to-  
night.

Fain would I dwell on form, fain, fain deny  
What I have spoke: but farewell compliment!

Dost thou love me? I know thou wilt say  
Ay, 90

And I will take thy word: yet, if thou swear'st,  
Thou may'st prove false; at lovers' perjuries,

They say, Jove laughs. O gentle Romeo,  
If thou dost love, pronounce it faithfully:

Or if thou think'st I am too quickly won,  
I'll frown and be perverse and say thee nay,

So thou wilt woo; but else, not for the world.  
In truth, fair Montague, I am too fond,

And therefore thou may'st think my haviour  
light:

But trust me, gentleman, I'll prove more true  
than those that have more cunning to be  
strange.

Should have been more strange, I must  
confess,

but that thou overheard'st, ere I was ware,  
My true love's passion; therefore pardon me,

And not impute this yielding to light love,  
Which the dark night hath so discovered.

Rom. Lady, by yonder blessed moon I swear—  
That tips with silver all these fruit-tree tops—

Jul. O, swear not by the moon, the in-  
constant moon,

That monthly changes in her circled orb, 110  
Lest that thy love prove likewise variable.

Rom. What shall I swear by?

Jul. Do not swear at all;

Or, if thou wilt, swear by thy gracious self,

Which is the god of my idolatry,

And I'll believe thee.

Rom. If my heart's dear love—

Jul. Well, do not swear: although I joy in  
thee,

I have no joy of this contract to-night:

It is too rash, too unadvised, too sudden;

Too like the lightning, which doth cease to be

Ere one can say 'It lightens.' Sweet, good  
night! 120

This bud of love, by summer's ripening breath,

May prove a beautiful flower when next we  
meet.

Good night, good night! as sweet repose and  
rest

Come to thy heart as that within my breast!

Rom. O, wilt thou leave me so unsatisfied?

Jul. What satisfaction canst thou have to-  
night?

Rom. The exchange of thy love's faithful  
vow for mine.

Jul. I gave thee mine before thou didst  
request it:

And yet I would it were to give again.

Rom. Wouldst thou withdraw it? for what  
purpose, love? 130

Jul. But to be frank, and give it thee again.

And yet I wish but for the thing I have:

My bounty is as boundless as the sea,

My love as deep; the more I give to thee,

The more I have, for both are infinite.

[Nurse calls within.]

I hear some noise within: dear love, adieu!

Anon, good nurse! Sweet Montague, be true.

Stay but a little, I will come again. [Exit, above.]

Rom. O blessed, blessed night! I am afear'd,

Being in night, all this is but a dream, 140

Too flattering-sweet to be substantial.

Re-enter JULIET, above.

Jul. Three words, dear Romeo, and good  
night indeed.

If that thy bent of love be honourable,

Thy purpose marriage, send me word to-morrow,

By one that I'll procure to come to thee,

Where and what time thou wilt perform the  
rite;

And all my fortunes at thy foot I'll lay

And follow thee my lord throughout the world.

Nurse. [Within] Madam!

Jul. I come, anon.—But if thou mean'st  
not well, 150

I do beseech thee—

Nurse. [Within] Madam!

Jul. By and by, I come—

To come thy suit, and leave me to my grief;

To-morrow will I send.

Rom. So thrive thy soul!

Jul. A thousand times good night!

[Exit, above.]

Rom. A thousand times the worse, to want  
thy light.

Love gone toward love, as schoolboys from their books,  
But love from love, toward school with heavy looks.  
[Retiring.]

*Re-enter JULIET, above.*

*Jul.* Hist! Romeo, hist! O, for a falconer's voice,  
To lure this tassel-gentle back again! 160  
Bondage is hours, and may not speak aloud;  
Else would I tear the cave where Echo lies,  
And make her airy tongue more hoarse than mine,  
With repetition of my Romeo's name.

*Rom.* It is my soul that calls upon my name:  
How silver-sweet sound lovers' tongues by night,  
Like softest music to attending ears!

*Jul.* Romeo!

*Rom.* My dear!  
*Jul.* At what o'clock to-morrow  
Shall I send to thee?

*Rom.* At the hour of nine.  
*Jul.* I will not fail: 'tis twenty years till then. 170

I have forgot why I did call thee back.  
*Rom.* Let me stand here till thou remember it.

*Jul.* I shall forget, to have thee still stand there,  
Remembering how I love thy company.

*Rom.* And I'll still stay, to have thee still forget,  
Forgetting any other home but this.

*Jul.* 'Tis almost morning; I would have thee gone:

And yet no further than a wanton's bird;  
Who lets it hop a little from her hand,  
Like a poor prisoner in his twisted gyves, 180  
And with a silk thread plucks it back again,  
So loving-jealous of his liberty.

*Rom.* I would I were thy bird.  
*Jul.* Sweet, so would I:

Yet I should kill thee with much cherishing.  
Good night, good night! parting is such sweet sorrow,  
That I shall say good night till it be morrow. [Exit above.]

*Rom.* Sleep dwell upon thine eyes, peace in thy breast!  
Would I were sleep and peace, so sweet to rest!  
Hence will I to my ghostly father's cell,  
His help to crave, and my dear hap to tell. 190 [Exit.]

### SCENE III. Friar Laurence's cell.

*Enter FRIAR LAURENCE, with a basket.*

*Fri. L.* The grey-eyed morn smiles on the frowning night,  
Chattering the eastern clouds with streaks of light,  
And checked darkness like a drunkard reels  
From forth day's path and Titan's fiery wheels:  
Now, ere the sun advance his burning eye,  
The day to cheer and night's dank dew to dry,  
I must up-stair, this color-cage of ours

With baleful weeds and precious-juice flowers.  
The earth that's nature's mother is a tomb;  
What is her burying grave that is her womb;  
And from her womb children of divers kind  
We sucking on her natural bosom find,  
Many for many virtues excellent,  
None but for some and yet all different.  
O, mickle is the powerful grace that lies  
In herbs, plants, stones, and their true qualities:  
For nought so vile that on the earth doth live  
But to the earth some special good doth give,  
Nor aught so good but strain'd from that fair use

Revolts from true birth, stumbling on abuse:  
Virtue itself turns vice, being misapplied; 21  
And vice sometimes by action dignified.  
Within the infant rind of this small flower  
Poison hath residence and medicine power:  
For this, being smelt, with that part cheers each part;

Being tasted, slays all senses with the heart.  
Two such opposed kings encamp them still  
In man as well as herbs, grace and rude will;  
And where the worser is predominant,  
Full soon the canker death eats up that plant.

*Enter ROMEO.*

*Rom.* Good morrow, father.

*Fri. L.* Benedicite! 31  
What early tongue so sweet saluteth me!  
Young son, it argues a distemper'd head  
So soon to bid good morrow to thy bed:  
Care keeps his watch in every old man's eye,  
And where care lodges, sleep will never lie;  
But where unbruised youth with unstuff'd brain  
Doth couch his limbs, there golden sleep doth reign:

Therefore thy carelessness doth me assure  
Thou art up-roused by some distemperature; 40  
(Or if not so, then here I hit it right,  
Our Romeo hath not been in bed to-night.)

*Rom.* That last is true; the sweeter rest was mine.

*Fri. L.* God pardon sin! wast thou with Rosaline?

*Rom.* With Rosaline, my ghostly father!  
no;

I have forgot that name, and that name's voice.

*Fri. L.* That's my good son: but where hast thou been, then?

*Rom.* I'll tell thee, ere thou ask it me again.  
I have been feasting with mine enemy,  
Where on a sudden one hath wounded me, 50  
That's by me wounded: both our remedies  
Within thy help and holy physic lies:  
I bear no hatred, blessed man, for, lo,  
My intercession likewise stands my foe.

*Fri. L.* Be plain, good son, and homely in thy drift;

Riddling confession finds but riddling shrift.

*Rom.* Then plainly know my heart's dear love is set

On the fair daughter of rich Capulet:  
As mine on hers, so hers is set on mine;  
And all combined, save what thou must com-  
bine

By holy marriage: when and where and how  
We met, we woo'd and made exchange of vows

'I'll tell thee as we pass; but this I pray,  
That thou consent to marry us to-day.

*Fri. L.* Holy Saint Francis, what a change  
is here!

[*Rosaline*, whom thou didst love so dear,  
So soon forsaken? young men's love then lies  
Not truly in their hearts, but in their eyes.  
*Jesu Maria*, what a deal of brine  
Hath wash'd thy sorrow cheeks for *Rosaline*! 70  
How much salt water thrown away in waste,  
To season love, that of it doth not taste!  
The sun not yet thy sighs from heaven clears,  
Thy old groans ring yet in my ancient ears;

O, here upon thy cheek the stain doth sit  
Of an old tear that is not wash'd off yet:  
If e'er thou wast thyself and these woes thine,  
And these woes were all for *Rosaline*:  
I art thou changed! pronounce this sentence  
then.

Women may fall, when there's no strength in  
men. 80

*Rom.* Thou chid'st me off for loving *Rosa-  
line*.

*Fri. L.* For doting, not for loving, pupil  
mine.

*Rom.* And bad'st me bury love.

*Fri. L.* Not in a grave,  
To lay one in, another out to have.

*Rom.* I pray thee, chide not: she whom I  
love now

Th grace for grace and love for love allow;  
Another did not so.

*Fri. L.* O, she knew well  
Thy love did read by rote and could not spell.

But come, young waverer, come, go with me,  
In one respect I'll thy assistant be; 90

For this alliance may so happy prove,  
To turn your households' rancour to pure love.

*Rom.* O, let us hence; I stand on sudden  
haste.

[*Fri. L.* Wisely and slow; they stumble but  
run fast. *[Exeunt.]*

#### SCENE IV. A street.

*Enter BENVOLIO AND MERCUTIO.*

*Mer.* Where the devil should this *Romeo* be?  
[*He* not home to-night?

*Ben.* Not to his father's; I spoke with his  
man.

*Mer.* Ah, that same pale hard-hearted wench,  
that *Rosaline*,

ments him so, that he will sure run mad.  
*Ben.* Tybalt, the kinsman of old Capulet,

th sent a letter to his father's house.  
*Mer.* A challenge, on my life.

*Ben.* *Romeo* will answer it.  
*Mer.* Any man that can write may answer a  
letter. 10

*Ben.* Nay, he will answer the letter's master,  
he dares, being dared.

*Mer.* Alas, poor *Romeo*! he is already dead;  
kiss'd with a white wench's black eye; shot

rough the ear with a love-song; the very pin  
his heart cleft with the blind bow-boy's butt-  
sh: and is he a man to encounter Tybalt?

*Ben.* Why, what is Tybalt?

*Mer.* More than prince of cats, I can tell  
you. 15

O, he is the courageous captain of com-  
plements. He fights as you sing prick-song,  
keeps time, distance, and proportion; rests me  
his minim rest, one, two, and the third in your  
bosom: the very butcher of a silk button, a  
duellist, a duellist; a gentleman of the very  
first house, of the first and second cause: ah,  
the immortal passado! the punto reverso! the  
hai!

*Ben.* The what?

*Mer.* The pox of such antic, lisping, affect-  
ing fantasticoes; these new tuners of accents!  
'By *Jesu*, a very good blade! a very tall man!  
a very good whore!' Why, is not this a lament-  
able thing, grandsire, that we should be thus  
afflicted with these strange flies, these fashion-  
mongers, these perditions-incarnate, who stand so much  
on the new form, that they cannot sit at ease on  
the old bench? O, their bones, their bones!

*Enter ROMEO.*

*Ben.* Here comes *Romeo*, here comes *Romeo*.

*Mer.* Without his ree, like a dried herring:  
O flesh, flesh, how art thou fishified! Now is  
he for the numbers that *Petrarch* flow'd in:  
*Laura* to his lady was but a kitchen-wench;  
marry, she had a better love to be-rhyme her;  
*Dido* a dowdy; *Cleopatra* a gipsy; *Helen* and  
*Hero* hildings and harlots; *Thisbe* a grey eye or  
so, but not to the purpose. Signior *Romeo*, bon  
jour! there's a French salutation to your  
French slop. You gave us the counterfeit  
fairly last night.

*Rom.* Good morrow to you both. What  
counterfeit did I give you? 20

*Mer.* The slip, air, the slip; can you not  
conceive?

*Rom.* Pardon, good *Mercutio*, my business  
was great; and in such a case as mine a man  
may strain courtesy.

*Mer.* That's as much as to say, such a case  
as yours constrains a man to bow in the hams.

*Rom.* Meaning, to court'ry.

*Mer.* Thou hast most kindly hit it.

*Rom.* A most courteous exposition. 25

*Mer.* Nay, I am the very pink of courtesy.

*Rom.* Pink for flower.

*Mer.* Right.

*Rom.* Why, then is my pump well flowered.

*Mer.* Well said: follow me this jest now  
till thou hast worn out thy pump, that when  
the single sole of it is worn, the jest may  
remain after the wearing sole singular.

*Rom.* O single-soled jest, solely singular for  
the singleness! 30

*Mer.* Come between us, good *Benvolio*; my  
wits faint.

*Rom.* Switch and spurs, switch and spurs;  
or I'll cry a match.

*Mer.* Nay, if thy wits run the wild-goose  
chase, I have done for thou hast more of the  
wild-goose in one of thy wits than, I am sure, I  
have in my whole five: was I with you there  
for the goose?

*Rom.* Thou wast never with me for any  
thing when thou wast not there for the goose.

*Mer.* I will bite thee by the ear for that  
jest. 35

*Rom.*

*Mer.* Thy wit is a very bitter sweeting; it is a most sharp sauce.

*Rom.* And is it not well served in to a sweet goose?

*Mer.* O, here's a wit of cheveril, that stretches from an inch narrow to an ell broad!

*Rom.* I stretch it out for that word 'broad,' which added to the goose, proves thee far and wide a broad goose.

*Mer.* Why, is not this better now than groaning for love? now art thou sociable, now art thou Romeo; now art thou what thou art, by art as well as by nature: for this drivelling love is like a great natural, that runs lolling up and down to hide his bauble in a hole.

*Rom.* Stop there, stop there.

*Mer.* Thou desirest me to stop in my tale against the hair.

*Rom.* Thou wouldst else have made thy tale large.

*Mer.* O, thou art deceived; I would have made it short: for I was come to the whole depth of my tale; and meant, indeed, to oc-

clude the argument no longer.

Here's goodly gear!

*Enter Nurse and Peter.*

*Mer.* A sail, a sail!

*Rom.* Two, two; a shirt and a smock.

*Nurse.* Peter!

*Peter.* Anon!

*Nurse.* My fan, Peter.

*Mer.* Good Peter, to hide her face; for her fan's the fairer face.

*Nurse.* God ye good morrow, gentlemen.

*Mer.* God ye good den, fair gentlewoman.

*Nurse.* Is it good den?

*Mer.* 'Tis no less, I tell you, for the bawdy hand of the dial is now upon the prick of noon.

*Nurse.* Out upon you! what a man are you!

*Rom.* One, gentlewoman, that God hath made for himself to mar.

*Nurse.* By my troth, it is well said; 'for himself to mar, quoth a'! Gentlemen, can any of you tell me where I may find the young Romeo?

*Rom.* I can tell you; but young Romeo will be older when you have found him than he was when you sought him: I am the youngest of that name, for fault of a worse.

*Nurse.* You say well.

*Mer.* Yea, is the worst well! very well took, I faith; wisely, wisely.

*Nurse.* If you be he, sir, I desire some confidence with you.

*Rom.* She will indite him to some supper.

*Mer.* A bawd, a bawd, a bawd! So ho!

*Rom.* What hast thou found?

*Mer.* No hare, sir; unless a hare, sir, in a hawker's pie, that is something stale and hoar ere it be spent.

An old hare hoar,

And an old hare hoar,

In very good heart in heart:

But a hare—that is hoar

Is too much for a score,

When it hoars ere it be spent.

Romeo, will you come to your father's? we'll to dinner, thither.

*Rom.* I will follow you.

*Mer.* Farewell, ancient lady; farewell, [singing] 'lady, lady, lady.'

[*Exeunt Mercutio and Benvolio.*]  
*Nurse.* Marry, farewell! I pray you, sir, what saucy merchant was this, that was so full of his ropery?

*Rom.* A gentleman, nurse, that loves to hear himself talk, and will speak more in a minute than he will stand to in a month.

*Nurse.* An a' speak any thing against me, I'll take him down, an a' were lustier than he is, and twenty such Jacks; and if I cannot, I'll find those that shall. Scurvy knave! I am none of his flirt-gills; I am none of his skains-mates. And thou must stand by too, and suffer every knave to use me at his pleasure?

*Peter.* I saw no man use you at his pleasure if I had, my weapon should quickly have been out, I warrant you: I dare draw as soon as any other man, if I see occasion in a good quarrel, and the law on my side.

*Nurse.* Now, afore God, I am so vexed, that every part about me quivers. Scurvy knave! Pray you, sir, a word: and as I told you, my young lady bade me inquire you out; what she bade me say, I will keep to myself: but first let me tell ye, if ye should lead her into a fool's paradise, as they say, it were a very gross kind of behaviour, as they say: for the gentlewoman is young; and, therefore, if you should deal double with her, truly it were an ill thing to be offered to any gentlewoman, and very wicked dealing.

*Rom.* Nurse, commend me to thy lady and mistress. I protest unto thee—

*Nurse.* Good heart, and, I faith, I will tell her as much: Lord, Lord, she will be a joyous woman.

*Rom.* What wilt thou tell her, nurse? thou dost not mark me.

*Nurse.* I will tell her, sir, that you do protest; which, as I take it, is a gentleman's offer.

*Rom.* Bid her devise Some means to come to shrift this afternoon: And there she shall at Friar Laurence's cell Be shrived and married. Here is for thy pains.

*Nurse.* No, truly, sir; not a penny.

*Rom.* Go to; I say you shall.

*Nurse.* This afternoon, sir? well, she shall be there.

*Rom.* And stay, good nurse, behind the abbey wall:

Within this hour my man shall be with thee And bring thee cords made like a tackled stair Which to the high top-gallant of my joy Must be my convoy in the secret night. Farewell; be trusty, and I'll quit thy pains: Farewell; commend me to thy mistress.

*Nurse.* Now God in heaven bless thee! Hark you, sir.

*Rom.* What say'st thou, my dear nurse?

*Nurse.* Is your 'hush' secret? Did you not hear say,

Two may keep counsel, putting one away!

Rom. I warrant thee, my man's as true  
as steel.

Nurse. Well, sir; my mistress is the sweetest  
ady—Lord, Lord! when 'twas a little prating  
thing:—O, there is a nobleman in town, one  
Paris, that would fain lay knife aboard; but  
she, good soul, had as lief see a toad, a very  
toad, as see him. I anger her sometimes and  
tell her that Paris is the properer man; but,  
I'll warrant you, when I say so, she looks as  
pale as any clout in the vernal world. Doth  
not rosemary and Romeo begin both with a  
letter?

Rom. Ay, nurse; what of that? both with  
an R.

Nurse. Ah, mocker! that's the dog's name;  
R is for the—No; I know it begins with some  
other letter:—and she hath the prettiest sen-  
tentions of it, of you and rosemary, that it  
would do you good to hear it.

Rom. Commend me to thy lady.

Nurse. Ay, a thousand times. [Exit Romeo.]

Petr. Anon!

Nurse. Peter, take my fan, and go before,  
and space. [Exit.

SCENE V. Capulet's orchard.

Enter JULIET.

Jul. The clock struck nine when I did send  
the nurse;  
in half an hour she promised to return.  
Perchance she cannot meet him: that's not so.  
O, she is lame! love's heralds should be  
thoughtless,  
Which ten times faster glide than the sun's  
beams,  
Driving back shadows over louring hills:  
Therefore do nimble-pinion'd doves draw love,  
And therefore hath the wind-swift Cupid wings.  
Now is the sun upon the highmost hill  
Of this day's journey, and from nine till twelve  
Is three long hours, yet she is not come.  
Had she affections and warm youthful blood,  
She would be as swift in motion as a ball;  
My words would bandy her to my sweet love,  
And his to me:  
[But old folks, many feign as they were dead;  
Unwieldy, slow, heavy and pale as lead.  
O God, she comes!]

Enter Nurse and PETER.

O honey nurse, what news!  
last thou met with him? Send thy man away.  
Nurse. Peter, stay at the gate. [Exit Peter.]  
Jul. Now, good sweet nurse,—O Lord, why  
look'st thou mad?  
though news be sad, yet tell them merrily;  
if good, thou shalt meet the music of sweet news  
by playing it to me with so sour a face.  
Nurse. I am a-weary, give me leave awhile:  
He, how my bones ache! what a jaunt have  
I had!  
Jul. I would thou hadst my bones, and I  
thy news.

Nay, come, I  
these, speak; good, good  
nurse, speak.

Nurse. Jesu, what haste! can you not stay  
awhile?

Do you not see that I am out of breath?

Jul. How art thou out of breath, when thou  
hast breath?

To say to me that thou art out of breath!

The excuse that thou dost make in this delay

Is longer than the tale thou dost excuse.

Is thy news good, or bad? answer to that;

Say either, and I'll stay the circumstance:

Let me be satisfied, is't good or bad?

Nurse. Well, you have made a simple  
choice; you know not how to choose a man:  
Romeo! no, not he; though his face be better  
than any man's, yet his leg excels all men's;  
and for a hand, and a foot, and a body, though  
they be not to be talked on, yet they are past  
compare: he is not the flower of courtesy, but,  
I'll warrant him, as gentle as a lamb. Go thy  
ways, wench; serve God. What, have you  
dined at home?

Jul. No, no; but all this did I know before.

What says he of our marriage? what of that?

Nurse. Lord, how my head aches! what a  
head have I!

It beats as it would fall in twenty pieces.

My back o' t' other side,—O, my back, my  
back!

Bealrew your heart for sending me about.

To catch my death with jaunting up and down!

Jul. I faith, I am sorry that thou art not  
well.

Sweet, sweet, sweet nurse, tell me, what says  
my love?

Nurse. Your love says, like an honest gentle-  
man, and a courteous, and a kind, and a hand-  
some, and, I warrant, a virtuous,—Where is  
your mother?

Jul. Where is my mother! why, she is  
within;

Where should she be? How oddly thou repliest!

'Your love says, like an honest gentleman,  
Where is your mother?'

Nurse. O God's lady dear!

Are you so hot? marry, come up, I trow;

Is this the punishment for my asking bones?

Henceforward do your messages yourself.

Jul. Here's such a coil! come, what says  
Romeo?

Nurse. Have you got leave to go to shrift  
to-day?

Jul. I have.

Nurse. Then hie you hence to Friar Lau-  
rence's cell;

There stays a husband to make you a wife.  
Now comes the wanton blood up in your  
cheeks.

They'll be in scarlet straight at my news.  
Hie you to church; I must another way.

To fetch a ladder, by the which your love  
Must climb a bird's nest soon when it is dark—  
I am the drudge, and toil in your desires.

But you shall hear the burden bear in night;  
Go! I'll so dinner; his yet to supper.

Jul. His is high torture! my heart's  
furnace.

SCENE VI. *Friar Laurence's cell.**Enter* FRIAR LAURENCE *and* ROMEO.

*Fri. L.* So smile the heavens upon this holy act,

That after hours with sorrow chide us not!

*Rom.* Amen, amen! but come what sorrow can,

It cannot countervail the exchange of joy  
That one short minute gives me in her sight:  
Do thou but close our hands with holy words;  
Then love-devouring death do what he dare;  
It is enough I may but call her mine.

*Fri. L.* These violent delights have violent ends

And in their triumph die, like fire and powder,  
Which as they kiss consume: the sweetest  
honey

Is loathsome in his own deliciousness  
And in the taste confounds the appetite:  
Therefore love moderately; long love doth so;  
Too swift arrives as tardy as too slow.

*Enter* JULIET.

Here comes the lady: O, so light a foot  
Will ne'er wear out the everlasting flint:

A lover may bestride the gossamer  
That idles in the wanton summer air,  
And yet not fall; so light is vanity.

*Jul.* Good even to my ghostly confessor.

*Fri. L.* Romeo shall thank thee, daughter,  
for us both.

*Jul.* As much to him, else is his thanks too much.

*Rom.* Ah, Juliet, if the measure of thy joy  
Be heap'd like mine and that thy skill be more  
To blazon it, then sweeten with thy breath  
This neighbour air, and let rich music's tongue  
Unfold the imagined happiness that both  
Receive in either by this dear encounter.

*Jul.* Conceit, more rich in matter than in words,

Brags of his substance, not of ornament:  
They are but beggars that can count their  
worth;

But my true love is grown to such excess  
I cannot sum up sum of half my wealth.

*Fri. L.* Come, come with me, and we will  
make short work;

For, by your leaves, you shall not stay alone  
Till holy church incorporate two in one.

(Exeunt.)

## ACT III.

SCENE I. *A public place.**Enter* MERCUTIO, BENVOLIO, PAGE, *and* Servants.

*Ben.* I pray thee, good Mercutio, let's retire:  
The day is hot, the Capulets abroad,  
And, if we meet, we shall not scape a brawl;  
For now, these hot days, is the mad blood

*Mec.* Thou art like one of those fellows that  
when he enters the confines of a tavern claps me  
his sword upon the table and says 'God send  
me no need of thee!' and by the operation of

the second cup draws it on the drawer, when  
indeed there is no need.

*Ben.* Am I like such a fellow?

*Mec.* O come, come, thou art as hot a Jack in  
thy mood as any in Italy, and as soon moved  
to be moody, and as soon moody to be moved.

*Ben.* And what to?

*Mec.* Nay, an there were two such, we  
should have none shortly, for one would kill  
the other. Thou! why, thou wilt quarrel with  
a man that hath a hair more, or a hair less, in  
his beard, than thou hast: thou wilt quarrel  
with a man for cracking nuts, having no other  
reason but because thou hast hazel eyes: what  
eye but such an eye would spy out such a  
quarrel? Thy head is as full of quarrels as an  
egg is full of meat, and yet thy head hath been  
beaten as siddle as an egg for quarrelling: thou  
hast quarrelled with a man for coughing in the  
street, because he hath wakened thy dog that  
hath lain asleep in the sun: didst thou not fall  
out with a tailor for wearing his new doublet  
before Easter? with another, for tying his new  
shoes with old riband? and yet thou wilt tutor  
me from quarrelling!

*Ben.* An I were so apt to quarrel as thou  
art, any man should buy the fee-simple of my  
life for an hour and a quarter.

*Mec.* The fee-simple! O simple!

*Ben.* By my head, here comes the Capulet.

*Mec.* By my heel, I care not.

*Enter* TYBALT *and* others.

*Tyb.* Follow me close, for I will speak to  
them.

Gentlemen, good den: a word with one of you.

*Mec.* And but one word with one of us!  
couple it with something; make it a word and  
a blow.

*Tyb.* You shall find me apt enough to that,  
sir, an you will give me occasion.

*Mec.* Could you not take some occasion  
without giving?

*Tyb.* Mercutio, thou consort'st with Ro-  
meo,

*Mec.* Consort! what, dost thou make us  
minstrels? an thou make minstrels of us, look  
to hear nothing but discords: here's my fidel-  
stick; here's that shall make you dance.  
Zounds, consort!

*Ben.* We talk here in the public haunt of  
men:

Either withdraw unto some private place,

And reason coldly of your grievances,

Or else depart; here all eyes gaze on us.

*Mec.* Men's eyes were made to look, and let  
them gaze;

I will not budge for no man's pleasure, I.

*Enter* ROMEO.

*Tyb.* Well, peace be with you, sir: here  
comes my man.

*Mec.* But I'll be hang'd, sir, if he wear your  
livery:

Marry, go before to field, he'll be your  
follower;

Your worship in that sense may call him 'man'.  
*Tyb.* Romeo, the hate I bear thee can afford

No better term than this,—thou art a villain.

*Rom.* Tybalt, the reason that I have to love thee

Doth much excuse the appertaining rage  
To such a greeting: villain art thou none;  
Therefore farewell: I see thou know'st me not.

*Tyb.* Boy, this shall not excuse the injuries  
That thou hast done me; therefore turn and  
draw. 70

*Rom.* I do protest I never injured thee,  
But love thee better than thou canst devise,  
Till thou shalt know the reason of my love:  
And so, good Capulet,—which name I tender  
As dearly as my own,—be satisfied.

*Mcr.* O calm, dishonourable, vile submission!  
Alla stoccata carries it away.

*[Draws.]*  
Tybalt, you rat-catcher, will you walk?

*Tyb.* What wouldst thou have with me? 79

*Mcr.* Good king of cats, nothing but one of  
your nine lives; that I mean to make bold  
withal, and, as you shall use me hereafter,  
dry-beat the rest of the eight. Will you pluck  
your sword out of his pitcher by the ears? make  
haste, lest mine be about your ears ere it be out.

*Tyb.* I am for you. *[Drawing.]*

*Rom.* Gentle Mercutio, put thy rapier up.

*Mcr.* Come, sir, your passado. *[They fight.]*

*Rom.* Draw, Benvolio; beat down their  
weapons.

Gentlemen, for shame, forbear this outrage!

Tybalt, Mercutio, the prince expressly hath 91

Forbidden bandying in Verona streets:

Hold, Tybalt! good Mercutio!

*[Tybalt under Romeo's arm stabs Mercutio,*

*and flies with his followers.]*

*Mcr.* I am hurt.

A plague o' both your houses! I am sped.

Is he gone, and hath nothing?

*Ben.* What, art thou hurt?

*Mcr.* Ay, ay, a scratch, a scratch; marry,

'tis enough.

Where is my page? Go, villain, fetch a surgeon.

*[Exit Page.]*

*Rom.* Courage, man; the hurt cannot be

much.

*Mcr.* No, 'tis not so deep as a well, nor so

wide as a church-door; but 'tis enough, 'twill

run: ask for me to-morrow, and you shall find

as grave man. I am peppered, I warrant, for

this world. A plague o' both your houses!

Judas, a dog, a rat, a mouse, a cat, to scratch

man to death! a braggart, a rogue, a villain,

at fights by the book of arithmetic! Why the

evil came you between us? I was hurt under

our arm.

*Rom.* I thought all for the best. 109

*Mcr.* Help me into some house, Benvolio.

I shall faint. A plague o' both your houses!

They have made worms' meat of me: I have it,

and soundly too: your houses!

*[Exeunt Mercutio and Benvolio.]*

*Rom.* This gentleman, the prince's near ally,

My very friend, hath got his mortal hurt

In my behalf; my reputation stain'd

With Tybalt's slander,—Tybalt, that an hour

Before my kinsman! O sweet Juliet,

Thy beauty hath made me effeminate

And in my temper soft'n'd valour's steel! 120

*Re-enter BENVOLIO.*

*Ben.* O Romeo, Romeo, brave Mercutio's  
dead!

That gallant spirit hath aspir'd the clouds.

Which too untimely here did scorn the earth.

*Rom.* This day's black fate on more days

doth depend;

This but begins the woe others must end.

*Ben.* Here comes the furious Tybalt back

again.

*Rom.* Alive, in triumph! and Mercutio

slain!

Away to heaven, respective lenity,

And fire-eyed fury be my conduct now!

*Re-enter TYBALT.*

Now, Tybalt, take the villain back again, 130

That late thou gavest me; for Mercutio's soul

Is but a little way above our heads,

Staying for thine to keep him company:

Either thou, or I, or both, must go with him.

*Tyb.* Thou, wretched boy, that didst consort

him here,

Shalt with him hence.

*Rom.* This shall determine that.

*[They fight; Tybalt falls.]*

*Ben.* Romeo, away, be gone!

The citizens are up, and Tybalt slain.

Stand not amased: the prince will doom thee

death.

If thou art taken: hence, be gone, away! 140

*Rom.* O, I am fortune's fool!

*Ben.* Why dost thou stay?

*[Exit Romeo.]*

*Enter Citizens, &c.*

*First Cit.* Which way ran he that kill'd

Mercutio?

Tybalt, that murderer, which way ran he?

*Ben.* There lies that Tybalt.

*First Cit.* Up, sit, go with me;

I charge thee in the prince's name, obey.

*Enter Prince, attended; MONTAGUE, CAPULET,*

*their Wives, and others.*

*Prin.* Where are the vile beginners of this

tray?

*Ben.* O noble prince, I can discover all

The unlucky manage of this fatal brawl:

There lies the man, slain by young Romeo,

That slew thy kinsman, brave Mercutio. 150

*La. Cap.* Tybalt, my cousin! O my brother's

child!

O prince! O cousin! husband! O, the blood

is spilt

Of my dear kinsman! Prince, as thou art true,

For blood of ours, shed blood of Montague.

O cousin, cousin!

*Prin.* Benvolio, who began this bloody fray?

*Ben.* Tybalt, here slain, whom Romeo's

hand did stay;

Romeo that spoke him fair, bade him bethink

How nice the quarrel was, and urg'd withal

Your high displeasure: all this uttered

With gentle breath, calm look, kneel'd humbly

to you,

Could not take truce with the unsleeping spleen.

Of Tybalt deaf to peace, but that he tilts  
With piercing steel at bold Mercutio's breast,  
Who, all as hot, turns deadly point to point,  
And, with a martial scorn, with one hand beats  
Cold death aside, and with the other sends  
It back to Tybalt, whose dexterity  
Retorts it: Romeo he cries aloud,

'Hold, friends! friends, part!' and, swifter than  
his tongue,

His agile arm beats down their fatal points,  
And 'twixt them rushes; underneath whose  
arm

An envious thrust from Tybalt hit the life  
Of stout Mercutio, and then Tybalt fled;  
But by and by comes back to Romeo,  
Who had but newly entertain'd revenge,  
And to 't they go like lightning, for, ere I  
Could draw to part them, was stout Tybalt  
slain.

And, as he fell, did Romeo turn and fly.  
This is the truth, or let Benvolio die.

*Enter Cap.* He is a kinsman to the Montague;  
Affliction makes him false; he speaks not true:  
Some twenty of them fought in this black strife,  
And all those twenty could but kill one life.

I beg for justice, which thou, prince, must  
give;

Romeo slew Tybalt, Romeo must not live.

*Prin.* Romeo slew him, he slew Mercutio;  
Who now the price of his dear blood doth owe!

*Mou.* Not Romeo, prince, he was Mercutio's  
friend;

His fault concludes but what the law should  
and,

The life of Tybalt.

*Prin.* And for that offence

Immediately we do exile him hence:

I have an interest in your hate's proceeding,  
My blood for your rude brawls doth lie a-  
bleeding;

But I'll amerce you with so strong a fine  
That you shall all repent the loss of mine:

I will be deaf to pleading and excuses;

Nor tears nor prayers shall purchase out abuses;

Therefore use none: let Romeo hence in haste,

Else, when he's found, that hour is his last.

Bear hence this body and attend our will:

Mercy but murders, pardoning those that kill.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. Capulet's orchard.

*Enter JULIET.*

*Jul.* Gallop space, you fiery-footed steeds,  
Towards Phoebus' lodging: such a waggoner  
As Phaedra would whip you to the west,  
And, being at cloudy night immediately.

Spread thy close curtain, love-performing night,

That mine eyes may wink, and Romeo  
Leap to these arms, untalk'd of and unseen.

Love's can see to do their amorous rites  
By their own beauties; or, if love be blind,

It best agrees with night: Come, civil night,

Be thou my secret: Soon will my true-love  
Come to me how to kiss a winning match,

And will be a pair of stainless maidenhoods:

My husband's blood, staining in my cheeks,

With my black mantle; till strange love, grown  
bold,

Think true love acted simple modesty.

Come, night; come, Romeo; come, thou day's  
night;

For thou wilt lie upon the wings of night  
Whiter than new snow on a raven's back.

Come, gentle night, come, loving, black-brow'd  
night,

Give me my Romeo; and, when he shall die,

Take him and cut him out in little stars,

And he will make the face of heaven so fine  
That all the world will be in love with night

And pay no worship to the garish sun.

O, I have bought the mansion of a love,

But not possess'd it, and, though I am sold,

Not yet enjoy'd: so tedious is this day

As is the night before some festival

To an impatient child that hath new robes

And may not wear them. O, here comes my  
nurse.

And she brings news; and every tongue that  
speaks

But Romeo's name speaks heavenly eloquence.

*Enter Nurse, with cords.*

Now, nurse, what news? What hast thou there?  
the cords

That Romeo bid thee fetch?

*Nurse.* Ay, ay, the cords.

[*Throws them down.*]

*Jul.* Ay me! what news! why dost thou  
wring thy hands?

*Nurse.* Ah, well-a-day! he's dead, he's dead,  
he's dead!

We are undone, lady, we are undone!

Alack the day! he's gone, he's kill'd, he's dead!

*Jul.* Can heaven be so envious?

*Nurse.* Romeo can.

Though heaven cannot: O Romeo, Romeo!

Who ever would have thought it? Romeo!

*Jul.* What devil art thou, that dost torment  
me thus!

This torture should be roar'd in dismal hell.

Hath Romeo slain himself? say thou but 'I',

And that bare vowel 'I' shall poison more  
Than the death-darting eye of cockatrice:

I am not I, if there be such an I;

Or those eyes shut, that make thee answer 'I'!

If he be slain, say 'I'; or if not, no:

Brief sounds determine of my woe or woe.

*Nurse.* I saw the wound, I saw it with mine  
eyes,—

God save the mark!—here on his manly breast

A piteous core, a bloody piteous core;

Pale, pale as ashes, all bedaul'd in blood,

All in gore-blood; I swoonded at the sight.

*Jul.* O, break, my heart! poor bankrupt  
break at once!

To prison, eyes, ne'er look on liberty!

Vile earth, to earth resign; and motion here;

And thou and Romeo press one heavy tier!

*Nurse.* O Tybalt, Tybalt, the best friend  
had!

O courteous Tybalt! honest gentleman!

That ever I should live to see thee dead!

*Jul.* What storm is this? how blows no one  
true?



Romeo slaughter'd, and is Tybalt dead?  
O dear-loved cousin, and my dearer lord!  
Hear, dreadful trumpet, sound the general  
doom!

For who is living, if those two are gone?

Nurse. Tybalt is gone, and Romeo banished;  
Romeo that kill'd him, he is banished.

Jul. O God! did Romeo's hand shed Ty-  
balt's blood?

Nurse. It did, it did; alas the day, it did!

Jul. O serpent heart, hid with a flowering  
face!

Did ever dragon keep so fair a cave?

Beautiful tyrant! fiend angelical!

Dove-feather'd raven! wolfish-ravens lamb!

Quipsed substance of divinity show!

Just opposite to what thou justly seem'st,

A damned saint, an honourable villain!

O nature, what hadst thou to do in hell,

When thou didst bower the spirit of a fiend

In mortal paradise of such sweet flesh?

Was ever book containing such vile matter

So fairly bound? O, that deceit should dwell

In such a gorgeous palace!

Nurse. There's no trust,

No faith, no honesty in men; all perjured,

All forsworn, all naught, all dissemblers.

Ah, where's my man? Give me some aqua vitae:

These griefs, these woes, these sorrows make

me old.

Shame come to Romeo!

Jul. Blister'd be thy tongue

For such a wish! he was not born to shame:

Upon his brow shame is assum'd to sit;

For 'tis a throne where honour may be crown'd

Of monarch of the universal earth.

What a beast was I to chide at him!

Nurse. Will you speak well of him that

kill'd your cousin?

Jul. Shall I speak ill of him that is my

husband?

Ah, poor my lord, what tongue shall smooth

thy name,

When I, thy three-hours wife, have mangled it?

Wherefore, villain, didst thou kill my

cousin?

But villain cousin would have kill'd my

husband;

Back, foolish tears, back to your native spring;

Your tributary drops belong to woe,

Which you, mistaking, offer up to joy.

My husband lives, that Tybalt would have

slain;

I Tybalt's dead, that would have slain my

husband;

Alas, this comfort; wherefore weep I then?

One word there was, worse than Tybalt's

death,

But murder'd me: I would forget it fain;

But, O, it presses to my memory,

My damned guilty deeds to sinners' minds:

Tybalt is dead, and Romeo—banished;

But 'banished,' that one word 'banished,'

That slays ten thousand Tybalts. Tybalt's

death

Was woe enough, if it had ended there;

But our woe delights in fellowship,

And needly will be rank'd with other griefs.

Why follow'd not, when she said 'Tybalt's  
dead,'

Thy father, or thy mother, nay, or both, are

Which modern lamentation might have moved!

But with a rearward following Tybalt's death,

'Romeo is banished,' to speak that word,

Is father, mother, Tybalt, Romeo, Juliet,

All slain, all dead. 'Romeo is banished!'

There is no end, no limit, measure, bound,

In that word's death; no words can that woe

be sound.

Where is my father, and my mother, nurse?

Nurse. Weeping and wailing over Tybalt's

corse:

Will you go to them? I will bring you thither.

Jul. Wash they his wounds with tears:

mine shall be spent,

When theirs are dry, for Romeo's banishment.

Take up those cords: poor ropes, you are be-

guiled,

Both you and I; for Romeo is exil'd;

He made you for a highway to my bed;

But I, a maid, die maiden-widowed.

Come, cords, come, nurse; I'll to my wedding-

bed;

And death, not Romeo, take my maidenhead!

Nurse. Hie to your chamber: I'll find

Romeo

To comfort you: I wot well where he is.

Hark ye, your Romeo will be here at night: 140

I'll to him; he is hid at Laurence's cell.

Jul. O, find him! give this ring to my true

knight,

And bid him come to take his last farewell.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE III. Friar Laurence's cell.

Enter FRIAR LAURENCE.

Fri. L. Romeo, come forth; some soothing

thou fearful man!

Affliction is enamour'd of thy parts,

And thou art wedded to calamity.

Enter ROMEO.

Rom. Father, what news? what is the

prince's doom?

What sorrow craves acquaintance at my hand,

That I yet know not?

Fri. L. Too familiar

Is my dear son with such sour company:

I bring thee tidings of the prince's doom.

Rom. What less than doom-day is the

prince's doom?

Fri. L. A gentler judgement vanish'd from

his lips,

Not body's death, but body's banishment.

Rom. Ha, banishment! be merciful, say

'death.'

For exile hath more terror in his look,

Much more than death: do not say 'banish-

ment.'

Fri. L. Hence from Verona see thou ban-

ished:

Be patient, for the world is broad and wide.

Rom. There is no world without Verona walls,

But purgatory, torment, hell itself.

Hence-banished is banish'd from the world,

Hence-banished is banish'd from the world,

Hence-banished is banish'd from the world,

Hence-banished is banish'd from the world,

And world's exile is death : then banished, so  
In death mis-term'd : calling death banishment,  
Thou cut'st my head off with a golden axe,  
And smilest upon the stroke that murders me.

*Fri. L.* O deadly sin ! O rude unthankful-  
ness !

Thy fault our law calls death ; but the kind  
prince,

Taking thy part, hath rush'd aside the law,  
And turn'd that black word death to banish-  
ment :

This is dear mercy, and thou seest it not.

*Rom.* 'Tis torture, and not mercy : heaven  
is here.

Where Juliet lives ; and every cat and dog 30  
And little mouse, every unworthy thing,  
Live here in heaven and may look on her ;

But Romeo may not : more validity,  
More honourable state, more courtship lives

In carrion-fles than Romeo : they may seize  
On the white wonder of dear Juliet's hand

And steal immortal blessing from her lips,  
Who, even in pure and vestal modesty,

Still blush, as thinking their own kisses sin ;  
But Romeo may not ; he is banished : 40

Fles may do this, but I from this must fly :  
They are free men, but I am banish'd !

And say'st thou yet that exile is not death ?  
Hast thou no poison mix'd, no sharp-ground

knife,  
No sudden mean of death, though ne'er so mean,

But 'banish'd' to kill me ?—'banish'd' !  
O friar, the damned use that word in hell ;

Howlings attend it : how hast thou the heart,  
Being a divine, a ghostly confessor,

A sin-absolver, and my friend profess'd, 50  
To mangle me with that word 'banish'd' !

*Fri. L.* Thou fond mad man, hear me but  
speak a word.

*Rom.* O, thou wilt speak again of banishment.

*Fri. L.* I'll give thee armour to keep off  
that word :

Adversity's sweet milk, philosophy,  
To comfort thee, though thou art banish'd.

*Rom.* Yet 'banish'd' ! Hang up philosophy !  
Unless philosophy can make a Juliet,

Displant a town, reverse a prince's doom,  
It helps not, it prevails not : talk no more. 60

*Fri. L.* O, then I see that madmen have no  
ears.

*Rom.* How should they, when that wise  
men have no eyes ?

*Fri. L.* Let me dispute with thee of thy  
death.

*Rom.* Thou canst not speak of that thou  
dost not feel :

Wert thou as young as I, Juliet thy love,  
An hour but married, Tybalt murdered,

Doting like me and like me banish'd,  
Then mightest thou speak, then mightest thou

tear thy hair,  
And fall upon the ground, as I do now,

Calling the measure of an unmade grave. 70

[*Knocking within.*]

*Fri. L.* Arise ; one knocks ; good Romeo,  
hide thyself.

*Rom.* I ; unless the breath of heart-

Mist-like, infold me from the search of eyes.

[*Knocking.*]

*Fri. L.* Hark, how they knock ! Who's  
there ? Romeo, arise ;

Thou wilt be taken. Stay awhile

Run to my study. By and by !

What simpleness is this ! I

Who knocks so hard ? whence

what's your will ?

*Nurse.* [*Within.*] Let me come in, and you  
shall know my errand ;

I come from Lady Juliet.

*Fri. L.* Welcome, then. 80

*Enter Nurse.*

*Nurse.* O holy friar, O, tell me, holy friar,  
Where is my lady's lord, where's Romeo ?

*Fri. L.* There on the ground, with his own  
tears made drunk.

*Nurse.* O, he is even in my mistress' case,  
Just in her case ! O woful sympathy !

Piteous predicament ! Even so lies she,  
Blubbering and weeping, weeping and blub-

bering.

Stand up, stand up ; stand, an you be a man :

For Juliet's sake, for her sake, rise and stand ;

Why should you fall into so deep an O ?

*Rom.* Nurse !

*Nurse.* Ah sir ! ah sir ! Well, death's the  
end of all.

*Rom.* Spakest thou of Juliet ? how is it with  
her ?

Doth she not think me an old murderer,  
Now I have stain'd the childhood of my joy

With blood removed but little from her own ?  
Where is she ? and how doth she ? and what

says

My conceal'd lady to our cancell'd love ?

*Nurse.* O, she says nothing, sir, but weep  
and weeps ;

And now falls on her bed ; and then starts up,  
And Tybalt calls ; and then on Romeo cries,  
And then down falls again. 90

*Rom.* As if that name,  
Shot from the deadly level of a gun,

Did murder her ; as that name's cursed hand  
Murder'd her kinsman. O, tell me, friar, tell

me,

In what vile part of this anatomy  
Doth my name lodge ? tell me, that I may sack

The hateful mansion. [*Drawing his sword.*]

*Fri. L.* Hold thy desperate hand :

Art thou a man ? thy form cries out thou art :

Thy tears are womanish ; thy wild acts denote  
The unreasonable fury of a beast : 115

Unseemly woman in a seeming man ;  
Or ill-beseeming beast in seeming both !

Thou hast amazed me : by my holy order,  
I thought thy disposition better temper'd.

Hast thou slain Tybalt ? wilt thou slay thyself  
And slay thy lady too that lives in thee,  
By doing damned hate upon thyself ?

Why rail'st thou on thy birth, the heaven, an  
earth ?

Since birth, and heaven, and earth, all three  
do meet

In thee at once; which thou at once wouldst lose.

Fie, fie, thou abamest thy shape, thy love, thy wit;

Which, like a usurer, abound'st in all,  
And usest none in that true use indeed  
Which should bedeck thy shape, thy love, thy wit:

Thy noble shape is but a form of wax,  
Digressing from the valour of a man;  
Thy dear love sworn but hollow perjury,  
Killing that love which thou hast vow'd to cherish;

Thy wit, that ornament to shape and love, 130  
Misshapen in the conduct of them both,  
Like powder in a skillless soldier's flask,  
Is set a-fire by thine own ignorance,  
And thou diamender'd with thine own defence.  
What, rouse thee, man! thy Juliet is alive,  
For whose dear sake thou wast but lately dead;  
There art thou happy: Tybalt would kill thee,  
But thou slew'st Tybalt; there art thou happy too:

The law that threaten'd death becomes thy friend

And turns it to exile; there art thou happy: 140  
A pack of blessings lights upon thy back;  
Happiness courts thee in her best array;  
But, like a misbehaved and sullen wench,  
Thou pout'st upon thy fortune and thy love:

Take heed, take heed, for such die miserable.  
Go, get thee to thy love, as was decreed,  
Ascend her chamber, hence and comfort her:  
But look thou stay not till the watch be set,  
For then thou canst not pass to Mantua;  
Where thou shalt live, till we can find a time: 150  
To blame your marriage, reconcile your friends,  
Beg pardon of the prince, and call thee back  
With twenty hundred thousand times more joy

Than thou went'st forth in lamentation.  
Go before, nurse: commend me to thy lady;  
And bid her hasten all the house to bed,  
Which heavy sorrow makes them apt unto:  
Romeo is coming.

Nurse. O Lord, I could have stay'd here all the night  
To hear good counsel: O, what learning is! 160  
My lord, I'll tell my lady you will come.

Lov. Do so, and bid my sweet prepare to chide.

Nurse. Here, sir, a ring she bid me give you, sir;

Give you, make haste, for it grows very late. *[Exit.]*

Rom. How well my comfort is revived by this!

Fri. L. Go hence; good night; and here stands all your state:

Either be gone before the watch be set,  
Or by the break of day disguised from hence:

Soljour in Mantua; I'll find out your man,  
And he shall signify from time to time 170

Every good hap to you that chances here:  
Give me thy hand; 'tis late: farewell; good night.

Rom. But that a joy past joy calls out on me,

It were a grief, so brief to part with thee:  
Farewell. *[Exeunt.]*

#### SCENE IV. A room in Capulet's house.

Enter CAPULET, LADY CAPULET, and PARIS.

Cap. Things have fall'n out, sir, so unluckily,

That we have had no time to move our daughter:

Look you, she loved her kinsman Tybalt dearly,  
And so did I:—Well, we were born to die.

'Tis very late, she'll not come down to-night:  
I promise you, but for your company,  
I would have been a-bed an hour ago.

Par. These times of woe afford no time to woo.

Madam, good night: commend me to your daughter.

La. Cap. I will, and know her mind early to-morrow;

To-night she is mew'd up to her heaviness. 10

Cap. Sir Paris, I will make a desperate tender

Of my child's love: I think she will be ruled  
In all respects by me; nay, more, I doubt it not.

Wife, go you to her ere you go to bed;  
Acquaint her here of my son Paris' love;

And bid her, mark you me, on Wednesday next—

But, soft! what day is this?

Par. Monday, my lord.

Cap. Monday! ha, ha! Well, Wednesday is too soon,

O' Thursday let it be: o' Thursday, tell her, so  
She shall be married to this noble earl.

Will you be ready? do you like this haste?

We'll keep no great ado,—a friend or two;  
For, hark you, Tybalt being slain so late,

It may be thought we held him carelessly,  
Being our kinsman, if we revel much;

Therefore we'll have some half a dozen friends,  
And there an end. But what say you to Thursday?

Par. My lord, I would that Thursday were to-morrow.

Cap. Well, get you gone: o' Thursday be it, then. 30

Go you to Juliet ere you go to bed,  
Prepare her, wife, against this wedding-day.

Farewell, my lord. Light to my chamber, ho!  
Afore me! it is so very late.

That we may call it early by and by.  
Good night. *[Exeunt.]*

#### SCENE V. Capulet's orchard.

Enter ROMEO and JULIET above, at the window.

Jul. Wilt thou be gone? it is not yet near day:

It was the nightingale, and not the lark,  
That pierc'd the fearful hollow of thine ear;

Nightly she sings on yond pomegranate-tree;  
Believe me, love, it was the nightingale.

Rom. It was the lark, the herald of the morn

No nightingale: look, love, what envious  
stars

Do face the severing clouds in yonder east:  
Night's candles are burnt out, and jocund day  
Stands tip-toe on the misty mountain tops. 10  
I must be gone and live, or stay and die.

Jul. Yond light is not day-light, I know  
it:—

It is some meteor that the sun exhales,  
To be to thee this night a torch-bearer,  
And light thee on thy way to Mantua;  
Therefore stay yet; thou need'st not to be gone.

Rom. Let me be ta'en, let me be put to  
death;

I am content, so thou wilt have it so.  
I'll say yon grey is not the morning's eye,  
Tis but the pale reflex of Cynthia's brow; 20  
Nor that is not the lark, whose notes do beat  
The vaulty heaven so high above our heads:  
I have more care to stay than will to go:  
Come, death, and welcome! Juliet wills it so.  
How is't, my soul? let's talk; it is not day.

Jul. It is, it is; his hence, be gone, away!  
It is the lark that sings so out of tune,  
Straining harsh discords and unpleasing sharps.  
Some say the lark makes sweet division;  
This doth not so, for she divideth us: 30  
Some say the lark and loathed toad change  
eyes;

O, now I would they had changed voices too!  
Since arm from arm that voice doth us asray,  
Hunting thee hence with hunt's-up to the day.  
O, now be gone; more light and light it grows.  
Rom. More light and light; more dark and dark  
our woes!

Enter Nurse, to the chamber.

Nurse, Madam!

Jul. Nurse?

Nurse. Your lady mother is coming to your  
chamber:

The day is broke; be wary, look about. [Exit.]  
Jul. Then, window, let day in, and let life  
out.

Rom. Farewell, farewell! one kiss, and I'll  
descend. [He goeth down.]

Jul. Art thou gone so? love, lord, ay, hus-  
band, friend!

I must hear from thee every day in the hour,  
For in a minute there are many days:  
O, by this count I shall be much in years  
Ere I again behold my Romeo!

Rom. Farewell!

I will omit no opportunity  
That may convey my greetings, love, to thee. 50

Jul. O, think'st thou we shall ever meet  
again?

Rom. I doubt it not; and all these woes  
shall serve

For sweet discourses in our time to come.

Jul. O God, I have an ill-divining soul!  
Methinks I see thee, now thou art below,  
As one dead in the bottom of a tomb;

Either my sight fails, or thou look'st pale.

Rom. And trust me, love, in my eye so  
do you:

But sorrow drinks our blood. Adieu, adieu!  
[Exit.]

Jul. O fortune, fortune! all men call thee  
fickle: 60

If thou art fickle, what dost thou with him  
That is renown'd for faith? Be fickle, fortune;  
For then, I hope, thou wilt not keep him long,  
But send him back.

La. Cap. [Within] Ho, daughter! are you  
up?

Jul. Who is't that calls? is it my lady  
mother?

Is she not down so late, or up so early?  
What unaccustom'd cause procures her hither?

Enter LADY CAPULET.

La. Cap. Why, how now, Juliet!

Jul. Madam, I am not well.

La. Cap. Evermore weeping for your cousin's  
death? 70

What wilt thou wash him from his grave with  
tears?

An if thou couldst, thou couldst not make him  
live;

Therefore, have done: some grief shows much  
of love;

But much of grief shows still some want of wit.  
Jul. Yet let me weep for such a feeling loss.

La. Cap. So shall you feel the loss, but not  
the friend

Which you weep for.

Jul. Feeling so the loss,  
I cannot choose but ever weep the friend.

La. Cap. Well, girl, thou weep'st not so  
much for his death,

As that the villain lives which slaughter'd him.  
Jul. What villain, madam?

La. Cap. That same villain, Romeo. 80

Jul. [Aside] Villain and he is many miles  
asunder.—

God pardon him! I do, with all my heart;  
And yet no man like he doth grieve my heart.

La. Cap. That is, because the traitor mur-  
derer lives.

Jul. Ay, madam, from the reach of these  
my hands:

Would none but I might venge my cousin's  
death!

La. Cap. We will have vengeance for it,  
fear thou not:

Then weep no more. I'll send to one in  
Mantua,

Where that same banish'd runagate doth live,  
Shall give him such an unaccustom'd drub, 90

That he shall soon keep Tybalt company:  
And then, I hope, thou wilt be satisfied.

Jul. Indeed, I never shall be satisfied  
With Romeo, till I behold him—dead—

Is my poor heart so for a kinsman vex'd:  
Madam, if you could find out but a man

To bear a poison, I would temper it;  
That Romeo should, upon receipt thereof, 95

heart above  
me to him,  
To wreak the love I bore my cousin  
Upon his body that hath slaughter'd him!

La. Cap. Find thou the means, and I'll  
find such a man.

But now I'll tell thee joyful tidings, girl.

*Jul.* And joy comes well in such a needy time;

What are they, I beseech your ladyship?

*La. Cap.* Well, well, thou hast a careful father, child;

One who, to put thee from thy heaviness,  
Hath sorted out a sudden day of joy.

What thou expect'st not nor I look'd not for.  
*Jul.* Madam, in happy time, what day is that?

*La. Cap.* Marry, my child, early next Thursday morn,

The gallant, young and noble gentleman,  
The County Paris, at Saint Peter's Church,  
Shall happily make thee there a joyful bride.

*Jul.* Now, by Saint Peter's Church and Peter too,

I shall not make me there a joyful bride.  
I wonder at this haste; that I must wed

Ere he, that should be husband, comes to woo.  
I pray you, tell my lord and father, madam, I

will not marry yet; and, when I do, I swear,  
It shall be Romeo, whom you know I hate,  
Rather than Paris. These are news indeed!

*La. Cap.* Here comes your father; tell him so yourself.

And see how he will take it at your hands.

*Enter CAPULET and Nurse.*

*Cap.* When the sun sets, the air doth drizzle dew;

But for the sunset of my brother's son  
It rains downright.

How now! a conduit, girl! what, still in tears?  
Evermore showering! In one little body

Thou counterfeits't a bark, a sea, a wind;  
For still thy eyes, which I may call the sea,  
Do ebb and flow with tears; the bark thy

body is,  
Sailing in this salt flood; the winds, thy sighs;  
Who, raging with thy tears, and they with

them,  
Without a sudden calm, will overset  
Thy tempest-tossed body. How now, wife!

Have you deliver'd to her our decree?

*La. Cap.* Ay, sir; but she will none, she gives you thanks.

Would the fool were married to her grave!

*Cap.* Soft! take me with you, take me with you, wife.

How! will she none! doth she not give us thanks?

Is she not proud? doth she not count her blest,  
Nworthy as she is, that we have wrought

So worthy a gentleman to be her bridegroom?

*Jul.* Not proud, you have; but thankful,  
that you have;

I could not be of what I hate;  
but thankful even for hate, that is meant love.

*Cap.* How now, how now, chop-logic! What is this?

Proud, and 'I thank you,' and 'I thank you not';

'I yet not proud'; mistress minion, you,  
Thank me no thankings, nor proud me no

prouds,  
but tell your fine joints 'gainst Thursday

next,

To go with Paris to Saint Peter's Church,  
Or I will drag thee on a hurdle thither.

Out, you green-sickness carrion! out, you baggage!

You tallow-face!

*La. Cap.* Fie, fie! what, are you mad!

*Jul.* Good father, I beseech you on my knees,

Hear me with patience but to speak a word.

*Cap.* Hang thee, young baggage! disobedient wretch!

I tell thee what: get thee to church o' Thursday,  
Or never after look me in the face;

Speak not, reply not, do not answer me;  
My fingers itch. Wife, we scarce thought us

blest  
That God had lent us but this only child;  
But now I see this one is one too much,

And that we have a curse in having her:  
Out on her, hilding!

*Nurse.* God in heaven bless her!

You are to blame, my lord, to rate her so.

*Cap.* And why, my lady wisdom! hold your tongue,

Good prudence; smatter with your gossip, go.

*Nurse.* I speak no treason.

*Cap.* O, God ye god-den.

*Nurse.* May not one speak?

*Cap.* Peace, you mazzling fool!

Utter your gravity o'er a gossip's bowl;  
For here we need it not.

*La. Cap.* You are too hot.

*Cap.* 'Tis God's bread! It makes me mad:

† Day, night, hour, tide, time, work, play,  
Alone, in company, still my care hath been

To have her match'd: and having now pro-  
vided

A gentleman of noble parentage,  
Of fair demesnes, youthful, and nobly train'd,  
Stuff'd, as they say, with honourable parts,  
Proportion'd as one's thought would wish a

man;  
And then to have a wretched pining fool,  
A whining manumet, in her fortune's tender,

To answer 'I'll not wed; I cannot love,  
I am too young; I pray you, pardon me.'

But, an you will not wed, I'll pardon you:  
Graze where you will, you shall not house with

me;

Look to't, think on't, I do not use to jest.

Thursday is near; lay hand on heart, advise:  
An you be mine, I'll give you to my friend;

An you be not, hang, beg, starve, die in the streets,

For, by my soul, I'll ne'er acknowledge thee,  
Nor what is mine shall never do thee good.

Trust to't, beshink you; I'll not be forewarn'd.

*Jul.* Is there no pity sitting in the clouds,  
That sees into the bottom of my grief?

O, sweet my mother, cast me not away!

Delay this marriage for a month, a week;  
Or, if you do not, make the bride bed

in that dim monument where Tybalt lies.

*La. Cap.* Talk not to me, for I'll not speak a word.

Do as thou wilt, for I have done with thee.

*Jul.* O God!—O nurse, how shall this be prevented?

My husband is on earth, my faith in heaven;  
How shall that faith return again to earth,  
Unless that husband send it me from heaven  
By leaving earth? comfort me, counsel me.  
Alack, alack, that heaven should practise strata-  
gens!

Upon so soft a subject as myself!  
What say'st thou? hast thou not a word of joy?  
Some comfort, nurse.

*Nurse.* Faith, here it is.  
Romeo is banish'd; and all the world to nothing,  
That he dares ne'er come back to challenge  
you;

Or, if he do, it needs must be by stealth.  
Then, since the case so stands as now it doth,  
I think it best you married with the county.

O, he's a lovely gentleman! <sup>250</sup>  
Romeo's a disclout to him: an eagle, madam,  
Hath not so green, so quick, so fair an eye

As Paris hath. Beshrew my very heart,  
I think you are happy in this second match,  
For it exceeds your first: or if it did not,

Your first is dead; or 'twere as good he were,  
As living here and you no use of him.

*Jul.* Speakest thou from thy heart?  
*Nurse.* And from my soul too;

Or else beshrew them both.  
*Jul.* Amen!

*Nurse.* What?  
*Jul.* Well, thou hast comforted me marvel-  
lous much. <sup>250</sup>

Go in; and tell my lady I am gone,  
Having displeased my father, to Laurence's cell,  
To make confession and to be absolved.

*Nurse.* Marry, I will; and this is wisely  
done. <sup>[Exit.]</sup>

*Jul.* Ancient damnation! O most wicked  
fiend!

Is it more sin to wish me thus forsworn,  
Or to dispraise my lord with that same tongue  
Which she hath praised him with above compare  
So many thousand times? Go, counsellor;

Thou and my bosom henceforth shall be twain.  
I'll to the friar, to know his remedy; <sup>255</sup>  
All else fail, myself have power to die. <sup>[Exit.]</sup>

#### ACT IV.

##### SCENE I. Friar Laurence's cell.

*Enter* FRIAR LAURENCE and PARIS.

*Fri. L.* On Thursday, sir? the time is very  
short.

*Par.* My father Capulet will have it so;  
And I am nothing slow to slack his haste.

*Fri. L.* You say you do not know the lady's  
mind:

Unknown is the course, I like it not.  
*Par.* Immediately she weeps for Tybalt's  
death;

And therefore have I little talk'd of love;  
For Venus smiles not in a house of tears.

Now, sir, her father counts it dangerous  
That she doth give her sorrow so much sway, so  
And in his wisdom hastes our marriage,

And thus he hath begun the  
foundation of her tears;

Which, too much minded by herself alone,  
May be put from her by society:

Now do you know the reason of this haste.

*Fri. L.* <sup>[Aside.]</sup> I would I knew not why it  
should be slow'd.

Look, sir, here comes the lady towards my cell.

*Enter* JULIET.

*Par.* Happily met, my lady and my wife!  
*Jul.* That may be, sir, when I may be a  
wife.

*Par.* That may be must be, love, on Thurs-  
day next.

*Jul.* What must be shall be.  
*Fri. L.* That's a certain text.

*Par.* Come you to make confession to this  
father?

*Jul.* To answer that, I should confess to  
you.

*Par.* Do not deny to him that you love me.  
*Jul.* I will confess to you that I love him.

*Par.* So will ye, I am sure, that you love me.  
*Jul.* If I do so, it will be of more price,  
Being spoke behind your back, than to your  
face.

*Par.* Poor soul, thy face is much abused  
with tears.

*Jul.* The tears have got small victory by  
that;

For it was bad enough before their spite.  
*Par.* Thou wrong'st it, more than tear  
with that report.

*Jul.* That is no slander, sir, which is a truth  
And what I spake, I spake it to my face.

*Par.* Thy face is mine, and thou hast slan-  
der'd it.

*Jul.* It may be so, for it is not mine own.  
Are you at leisure, holy father, now;

Or shall I come to you at evening mass?  
*Fri. L.* My leisure serves me, pensive daugh-  
ter, now.

My lord, we must entreat the time alone.  
*Par.* God shield I should disturb devotion!

Juliet, on Thursday early will I rouse ye;  
Till then, adieu; and keep this holy kiss. <sup>[Exit.]</sup>

*Jul.* O, shut the door! and when thou hast  
done so,

Come weep with me; past hope, past cure, past  
help!

*Fri. L.* Ah, Juliet, I already know thy  
grief;

It strains me past the compass of my wits;  
I hear thou must, and nothing may perjure it,  
On Thursday next be married to this county.

*Jul.* Tell me not, friar, that thou hear'st of  
this.

Unless thou tell me how I may prevent it:  
If, in thy wisdom, thou canst give no help.

Do thou but call my resolution wise,  
And with this knife I'll help it presently.

God join'd my heart and Romeo's, thou our  
hands;

And ere this hand, by thee to Romeo seal'd,  
Shall be the label to another deed.

Or my true heart with treacherous revolt  
Turn to another, this shall slay them both:

Therefore, out of thy long-experienced time,  
Give me present counsel, or, behold,

'Twixt my extremes and me this bloody knife  
Shall play the umpire, arbitrating that  
Which the commission of thy years and art  
Could to no issue of true honour bring.  
Be not so long to speak; I long to die,  
If what thou speak'st speak not of remedy.

*Fri. L.* Hold, daughter: I do spy a kind of hope,

Which craves as desperate an execution  
As that is desperate which we would prevent.  
If, rather than to marry County Paris,  
Thou hast the strength of will to slay thyself,  
Then is it likely thou wilt undertake  
A thing like death to chide away this shame,  
That exspect with death himself to scape from it;  
And, if thou darest, I'll give thee remedy.

*Jul.* O, bid me leap, rather than marry Paris,

From off the battlements of yonder tower;  
Or walk in thievish ways; or bid me lurk  
Where serpents are; chain me with roaring  
bears;

Or shut me nightly in a charnel-house,  
O'er-cover'd quite with dead men's rattling  
bones,

With reeky shanks and yellow chapsless skulls;  
Or bid me go into a new-made grave  
And hide me with a dead man in his shroud;  
Things that, to hear them told, have made me  
tremble;

And I will do it without fear or doubt,  
To live an unstain'd wife to my sweet love.

*Fri. L.* Hold, then; go home, be merry,  
give consent

To marry Paris: Wednesday is to-morrow: go  
To-morrow night look that thou lie alone;  
Let not thy nurse lie with thee in thy chamber:  
Take thou this vial, being then in bed,  
And this distilled liquor drink thou off;

When presently through all thy veins shall run  
A cold and drowsy humour, for no pulse  
Shall keep his native progress, but surcease;  
No warmth, no breath, shall testify thou livest;  
The roses in thy lips and cheeks shall fade  
To pale ashes, thy eyes' windows fall,  
Like death, when he shuts up the day of life;  
Each part, deprived of supple government,  
Shall, stiff and stark and cold, appear like  
death:

And in this borrow'd likeness of shrunk death  
Thou shalt continue two and forty hours,  
And then awake as from a pleasant sleep.  
Now, when the bridegroom in the morning  
comes

To rouse thee from thy bed, there art thou  
dead:

Then, as the manner of our country is,  
In thy best robes uncover'd on the bier,  
Thou shalt be borne to that same ancient vault  
Where all the kindred of the Capulets lie.  
In the mean time, against thou shalt awake,  
Shall Romeo by my letters know our drift,  
And hither shall he come; and he and I  
Will watch thy waking, and that very night  
Shall Romeo bear thee hence to Mantua.

And this shall free thee from this present  
shame;

If no incontinent toy, nor womanish fear,

Abate thy valour in the acting it.

*Jul.* Give me, give me! O, tell not me of  
fear!

*Fri. L.* Hold; get you gone, be strong and  
prosperous

In this resolve: I'll send a friar with speed  
To Mantua, with my letters to thy lord.

*Jul.* Love give me strength! and strength  
shall help afford.

Farewell, dear father!

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. *Hall in Capulet's house.*

*Enter CAPULET, LADY CAPULET, Nurse, and  
two Servingmen.*

*Cap.* So many guests invite as here are writ.

[*Exit First Servant.*]

*Sirrah,* go hire me twenty cunning cooks.  
*Sec. Serv.* You shall have none ill, sir; for  
I'll try if they can lick their fingers.

*Cap.* How canst thou try them so?

*Sec. Serv.* Marry, sir, 'tis an ill cook that  
cannot lick his own fingers: therefore he that  
cannot lick his fingers goes not with me.

*Cap.* Go, be gone. [*Exit Sec. Servant.*]

We shall be much unfurnish'd for this time. *10*  
What is my daughter gone to Friar Laurence?

*Nurse.* Ay, forsooth.

*Cap.* Well, he may chance to do some good  
on her:

A peevish self-will'd harlotry it is.

*Nurse.* See where she comes from shrift  
with merry look.

## *Enter JULIET.*

*Cap.* How now, my headstrong! where have  
you been gadding?

*Jul.* Where I have learn'd me to repent the  
sin

Of disobedient opposition

To you and your behests, and am enjoin'd

By holy Laurence to fall prostrate here, *20*

And beg your pardon: pardon, I beseech you!

Henceforward I am ever ruled by you.

*Cap.* Send for the county; go tell him of  
this:

I'll have this knot knit up to-morrow morning.  
*Jul.* I met the youthful lord at Laurence's  
cell;

And gave him what becometh love I might,

Not stopping o'er the bounds of modesty.

*Cap.* Why, I am glad on't; this is well:  
stand up:

This is as't should be. Let me see the county;  
Ay, marry, go, I say, and fetch him hither. *30*

Now, afore God! this reverend holy friar,  
All our whole city is much bound to him.

*Jul.* Nurse, will you go with me into my  
closet,

To help me put such needful ornaments

As you think fit to furnish me to-morrow?

*La. Cap.* No, not till Thursday; there is  
time enough.

*Cap.* Go, nurse, go with her: we'll to church  
to-morrow. [*Exeunt Juliet and Nurse.*]

*La. Cap.* We shall be short in our  
vision:

'Tis now near night.

*Cap.* Tush, I will stir about,  
And all things shall be well, I warrant thee,  
wife: 40

Go thou to Juliet, help to deck up her;  
I'll not go to bed to-night; let me alone;  
I'll play the housewife for this once. What,  
so!

They are all forth. Well, I will walk myself  
To County Paris, to prepare him up  
Against to-morrow: my heart is wondrous  
light,  
Since this same wayward girl is so reclaim'd.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III. Juliet's chamber.

*Enter JULIET and Nurse.*

*Jul.* Ay, those attires are best: but, gentle  
nurse,  
I pray thee, leave me to myself to-night;  
For I have need of many orisons  
To move the heavens to smile upon my state,  
Which, well thou know'st, is cross and full  
of sin.

*Enter LADY CAPULET.*

*La. Cap.* What, are you busy, ho need  
you my help?

*Jul.* No, madam; we have cull'd such neces-  
saries

As are behoveful for our state to-morrow:  
So please you, let me now be left alone,  
And let the nurse this night sit up with you;  
For, I am sure, you have your hands full all,  
In this so sudden business.

*La. Cap.* Good night:  
Get thee to bed, and rest; for thou hast need.

[*Exeunt Lady Capulet and Nurse.*]

*Jul.* Farewell! God knows when we shall  
meet again.

I have a faint cold fear thrills through my  
veins,

That almost freezes up the heat of life:

I'll call them back again to comfort me:

Nurse! What should she do here?

My dismal scene I needs must act alone.

*Cap.* *Yiel.* 20

What if this mixture do not work at all?

Shall I be married then to-morrow morning?

No, no: this shall forbid it: lie thou there.

[*Laying down her dagger.*]

What if it be a poison, which the friar  
Subtly hath minister'd to have me dead,

Left in this marriage he should be dishonour'd,

Because he married me before to Romeo?

I fear it is: and yet, methinks, it should not,

For he hath still been tried a holy man.

*How if, when I am laid into the tomb,* 30

I wake before the time that Romeo

Come to redeem me? there's a fearful point!

Shall I not, then, be stifled in the vault,

To whose foul mouth no healthsome air breathes

And where the struggling Romeo comes?

Oh, think! 'tis not very like.

But let it be: it is my death; I'll

Take the present of death and night,

To sweeten the terror of the place,—

As in a vault, an ancient receptacle,  
Where, for these many hundred years, the  
bones

Of all my buried ancestors are pack'd:  
Where bloody Tybalt, yet but green in earth,  
Lies festering in his shroud; here, as they

say,  
At some hours in the night spirits resort;—

Alack, alack, is it not like that I,  
So early waking, what with loathsome smells,  
And shrieks like mandrakes' torn out of the

earth,  
That living mortals, hearing them, run mad:—

(1) if I wake, shall I not be distraught,  
Environed with all these hideous fears?

And madly play with my forefathers' joints?  
And pluck the mangled Tybalt from his shroud

And, in this rage, with some great kinsman  
bone,

As with a club, dash out my desperate brains?  
O, look! methinks I see my cousin's ghost

Seeking out Romeo, that did spit his body  
Upon a rapier's point: stay, Tybalt, stay!

Romeo, I come! this do I drink to thee.

[*She falls upon her bed, within the curtains.*]

### SCENE IV. Hall in Capulet's house.

*Enter LADY CAPULET and Nurse.*

*La. Cap.* Hold, take these keys, and fetch  
more spices, nurse.

*Nurse.* They call for dates and quinces in  
the pastry.

*Enter CAPULET.*

*Cap.* Come, stir, stir, stir! the second cock  
hath crow'd.

The curfew-bell hath rung, 'tis three o'clock:  
Look to the baked meats, good Angelica:

Spare not for cost.

*Nurse.* (Go, you cut-queen, go,  
Get you to bed; faith, you'll be sick to-morrow  
For this night's watching.

*Cap.* No, not a whit: what! I have watch'd  
ere now

All night for lesser cause, and ne'er been sick.

*La. Cap.* Ay, you have been a mouse-hunt  
in your time: 21

But I will watch you from such watching now.

[*Exeunt Lady Capulet and Nurse.*]

*Cap.* A jealous-hood, a jealous-hood!

*Enter three or four Servingmen, with spits,  
loaves, and baskets.*

Now, follow,

What's there?

*First Serv.* Things for the cook, sir; but I  
know not what.

*Cap.* Make haste, make haste. [*Exit First  
Serv.*] Hush, fetch drier logs:

Call Peter, he will show thee where they are.

*Sec. Serv.* I have a head, sir, that will find  
out logs,

And never trouble Peter for the matter. [*Exit  
Cap.* Make, and well said: a merry whin-  
son, ha!

Thou shalt be logger-head. Good faith, 'tis day:

The country will be here with speed.



For so he said he would: I hear him near.

Nurse! Wife! What, ho! What, nurse, I say!

*Re-enter Nurse.*

(Go waken Juliet, go and trim her up;  
I'll go and chat with Paris: hie, make haste,  
Make haste; the bridegroom he is come al-  
ready:  
Make haste, I say.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. *Juliet's chamber.*

*Enter Nurse.*

Nurse. Mistress! what, mistress! Juliet!  
fast, I warrant her, she:  
Why, lambs! why, lady! lie, you slug-a-bed!  
Why, love, I say! madam! sweet-heart! why,  
bride!

What, not a word! you take your pennyworths  
now;

Sleep for a week; for the next night, I warrant,  
The County Paris hath set up his rest,  
That you shall rest but little. God forgive me,  
Marry, and amen, how sound is she asleep!  
I must needs wake her. Madam, madam,  
madam!

Ay, let the county take you in your bed; so  
He'll fright you up, I faith. Will it not be!

[*Undraws the curtains.*]

What, dress'd! and in your clothes! and down  
again!

I must needs wake you: Lady! lady! lady!  
Alas, alas! Help, help! my lady's dead!  
O, well-a-day, that ever I was born!  
Souse a-slee, ho! My lord! my lady!

*Enter LADY CAPULET.*

La. Cap. What noise is here?

Nurse. O lamentable day!

La. Cap. What is the matter?

Nurse. Look, look! O heavy day!

La. Cap. O me, O me! My child, my only

life,

Revive, look up, or I will die with thee! so  
Help, help! Call help.

*Enter CAPULET.*

Cap. For shame, bring Juliet forth; her  
lord is come.

Nurse. She's dead, deceased, she's dead;  
sleek the day!

La. Cap. Alack the day, she's dead, she's  
dead, she's dead!

Cap. Ha! let me see her: out, alas! she's  
cold;

Her blood is cold, and her joints are stiff;  
Life and these lips have long been separated:

Death lies on her like an untimely frost  
Upon the sweetest flower of all the field.

Nurse. O lamentable day!

La. Cap. O woful time! so

Cap. Death, that hath taken her hence to  
make me wail,

Ties up my tongue, and will not let me speak.

*Enter FRIAR LAURENCE and PARIS, with  
Musicians.*

Fri. L. Come, is the bride ready to go to  
church?

Cap. Ready to go, but never to return.  
O son! the night before thy wedding day  
Hath Death lain with thy wife. There she lies,  
Flower as she was, deflowered by him.

Death is my son-in-law, Death is my heir;  
My daughter he hath wedded: I will die,  
And leave him all; life, living, all is Death's.

Par. Have I thought long to see this morn-  
ing's face,

And doth it give me such a sight as this! 42

La. Cap. Accursed, unhappy, wretched, hate-  
ful day!

Most miserable hour that e'er time saw  
In lasting labour of his pilgrimage!  
But one, poor one, one poor and loving child,  
But one thing to rejoice and solace in,  
And cruel death hath catch'd it from my sight!

Nurse. O woe! O woful, woful day!  
Most lamentable day, most woful day, 50

That ever, ever, I did yet behold!

O day! O day! O day! O hateful day!

Never was seen so black a day as this:

O woful day, O woful day!

Par. Beguil'd, divorced, wronged, spild,  
slain!

Most detestable death, by thee beguil'd,

By cruel thee quite overthrown!

O love! O life! not life, but here in death!

Cap. Despised, distressed, hated, martyr'd,  
kill'd!

Uncomfortable time, why comest thou now. 60

To murder, murder our solemnity!

O child! O child! my soul, and not my child!

Dead art thou! Alack! my child is dead;

And with my child my joys are buried.

Fri. L. Peace, ho, for shame! confusion's  
cure lives not

In these confusions. Heaven and yourself

Had part in this fair maid; now heaven hath will,

And all the better is it for the maid:

Your part in her you could not keep from  
death,

But heaven keeps his part in eternal life. 70

The most you sought was her promotion;

For 'twas your heaven she should be advanced;

And weep ye now, seeing she is advanced

Above the clouds, as high as heaven itself!

O, in this love, you love your child so ill,

That you run mad, seeing that she is well;

She's not well married that lives married long;

But she's best married that dies married young.

Day up your tears, and stick your remembrance

On this fair corpse; and, as the custom is, 80

In all her best array bear her to church;

For though fond nature bids us all lament,

Yet nature's tears are reason's merriment.

Cap. All things that are ordained together,

Turn from their offices to hunt and wanton!

Our instruments to melancholy bells,

Our wedding cheer to a sad burial feast;

Our solemn hymns to sullen dirges change;

Our bridal flowers serve for a funeral cresset;

And all things change them to the contrary. 90

*Fri. L.* Sir, go you in; and, madam, go with him;

And go, Sir Paris; every one prepare To follow this fair corpse unto her grave: The heavens do lour upon you for some ill; Move them no more by crossing their high will.

[*Exeunt Capulet, Lady Capulet, Paris, and Friar.*]

*First Mus.* Faith, we may put up our pipes, and be gone.

*Nurse.* Honest good fellows, ah, put up, put up;

For, well you know, this is a pitiful case. [*Exit.*]

*First Mus.* Ay, by my troth, the case may be amended. 101

*Enter PETER.*

*Pet.* Musicians, O, musicians, 'Heart's ease, Heart's ease:' O, an you will have me live, play 'Heart's ease,'

*First Mus.* Why 'Heart's ease'?

*Pet.* O, musicians, because my heart itself plays 'My heart is full of woe:' O, play me some merry dump, to comfort me.

*First Mus.* Not a dump we; 'tis no time to play now. 110

*Pet.* You will not, then?

*First Mus.* No.

*Pet.* I will then give it you soundly.

*First Mus.* What will you give us?

*Pet.* No money, on my faith, but the gleek; I will give you the minstrel.

*First Mus.* Then will I give you the serving-creature.

*Pet.* Then will I lay the serving-creature's dagger on your pate. I will carry no crochets: I'll re you, I'll fa you; do you note me? 121

*First Mus.* An you re us and fa us, you note us.

*Sec. Mus.* Pray you, put up your dagger, and put out your wit.

*Pet.* Then have at you with my wit! I will dry-beat you with an iron wit, and put up my iron dagger. Answer me like men:

'When griping grief the heart doth oppress,  
And doleful dumps the mind oppress,

Then music with her silver sound'— 130  
why 'silver sound'? why 'music with her silver sound'? What say you, Simon Catling?

*First Mus.* Marry, sir, because silver hath a sweet sound.

*Pet.* Pretty! What say you, Hugh Rebeck?

*Sec. Mus.* I say 'silver sound,' because musicians sound for silver.

*Pet.* Pretty too! What say you, James Soundpost?

*Third Mus.* Faith, I know not what to say. 139

*Pet.* O, I cry you mercy; you are the singer: I will say for you. It is 'music with her silver sound,' because musicians have no gold for sounding:

'Then sounds with her silver sound  
With speedy help doth lend redress.' [*Exit.*]

*First Mus.* What a penitent knave is this same!

*Sec. Mus.* Hang him, Jack! Come, we'll in here; sorry for the mourners, and stay dinner. [*Exeunt.*]

ACT V.

SCENE I. Mantua. A street.

*Enter ROMEO.*

*Rom.* If I may trust the flattering truth of sleep,

My dreams presage some joyful news at hand: My bosom's lord sits lightly in his throne;

And all this day an unaccustom'd spirit Lifts me above the ground with cheerful thoughts.

I dreamt my lady came and found me dead— Strange! dream, that gives a dead man leave to think!—

And breathed such life with kisses in my lips, That I revived, and was an emperor.

Ah me! how sweet is love itself possess'd, 10  
When but love's shadows are so rich in joy!

*Enter BALTHASAR, bootied.*

News from Verona!—How now, Balthasar! Dost thou not bring me letters from the friar?

How doth my lady? Is my father well? How fares my Juliet? that I ask again;

For nothing can be ill, if she be well.

*Bal.* Then she is well, and nothing can be ill:

Her body sleeps in Capels' monument, And her immortal part with angels lives.

I saw her laid low in her kindred's vault, 20  
And presently took post to tell it you:

O, pardon me for bringing these ill news, Since you did leave it for my office, sir.

*Rom.* Is it even so? then I defy you, stars! Thou know'st my lodging: get me ink and paper,

And hire post-horses; I will hence to-night.

*Bal.* I do beseech you, sir, have patience: Your looks are pale and wild, and do import Some misadventure.

*Rom.* Tush, thou art deceived: Leave me, and do the thing I bid thee do. 30

Hast thou no letters to me from the friar?

*Bal.* No, my good lord.

*Rom.* No matter: get thee gone. And hire those horses; I'll be with thee straight. [*Exit Balthasar.*]

Well, Juliet, I will lie with thee to-night. Let's see for means: O mischief, thou art swift

To enter in the thoughts of desperate men! I do remember an apothecary,—

And hereabouts he dwells,—which late I noted In tatter'd weeds, with o'erwheaving brows,

Culling of simples; meagre were his looks, 40  
Sharp misery had worn him to the bones:

And in his needy shop a tortoise hung, An alligator stuff'd, and other skins

Of ill-shaped fishes; and about his shelves

Were thinly scatter'd, to make up a show. Noting this penury, to myself I said

'An if a man did need a poison now, Whose sale is present death in Mantua,

Here lives a catiff wretch would sell it him; O, this same thought did poison my next;

And this same needy man must sell it me.  
As I remember, this should be the house.  
Being holiday, the beggar's shop is shut.  
What, ho! apothecary!

*Enter Apothecary.*

*Ap.* Who calls so loud?  
*Rom.* Come hither, man. I see that thou art poor:  
Iold, there is forty ducats: let me have  
A dram of poison, such soon-speeding gear 60  
As will dispense itself through all the veins  
That the life-weary taker may fall dead  
And that the trunk may be discharged of breath  
As violently as hasty powder fired  
Doth hurry from the fatal cannon's womb.

*Ap.* Such mortal drugs I have; but Mantua's law  
Is death to any he that utters them.

*Rom.* Art thou so bare and full of wretchedness,  
And fear'st to die? famine is in thy cheeks,  
Need and oppression starveth in thine eyes, 70  
Contempt and beggary hangs upon thy back;  
The world is not thy friend nor the world's law;  
The world affords no law to make thee rich;  
Then be not poor, but break it, and take this.

*Ap.* My poverty, but not my will, consents.

*Rom.* I pay thy poverty, and not thy will.

*Ap.* Put this in any liquid thing you will,  
And drink it off; and, if you had the strength  
Of twenty men, it would dispatch you straight.

*Rom.* There is thy gold, worse poison to men's souls,  
Doing more murders in this loathsome world, 80  
Than these poor compounds that thou mayst not sell.

sell thee poison; thou hast sold me none.  
Farewell: buy food, and get thyself in flesh.  
Come, cordial and not poison, go with me  
To Juliet's grave; for there must I use thee.

*[Exit.]*

SCENE II. *Friar Laurence's cell.*

*Enter FRIAR JOHN.*

*Fri. J.* Holy Franciscan friar! brother, ho!

*Enter FRIAR LAURENCE.*

*Fri. L.* This same should be the voice of  
Friar John.

Welcome from Mantua: what says Romeo?  
If his mind be writ, give me his letter.

*Fri. J.* Going to find a bare-foot brother out,  
me of our order, to associate me,  
here in this city visiting the sick,  
and finding him, the searchers of the town,  
suspecting that we both were in a house  
where the infectious pestilence did reign, 10  
could up the doors, and would not let us forth;  
so that ray speed to Mantua there was stay'd.

*Fri. L.* Who bare my letter, then, to Romeo?

*Fri. J.* I could not send it,—here it is again,—  
for get a messenger to bring it thee,  
so fearful were they of infection.

*Fri. L.* Unhappy fortune! by my brother-  
hood,

thy letter was not nice but full of charge  
dear import, and the neglecting it

May do much danger. Friar John, go hence;  
Get me an iron crow, and bring it straight  
Unto my cell.

*Fri. J.* Brother, I'll go and bring it thee.

*[Exit.]*

*Fri. L.* Now must I to the monument alone;  
Within this three hours will fair Juliet wake:  
She will bestrew me much that Romeo  
Hath had no notice of these accidents;  
But I will write again to Mantua,  
And keep her at my cell till Romeo come; 20  
Poor living corse, closed in a dead man's tomb!

*[Exit.]*

SCENE III. *A churchyard; in it a tomb  
belonging to the Capulets.*

*Enter PARIS, and his Page bearing flowers  
and a torch.*

*Par.* Give me thy torch, boy: hence, and  
stand aloof:

Yet put it out, for I would not be seen.  
Under yond yew-trees lay thee all along,  
Holding thine ear close to the hollow ground;  
So shall no foot upon the churchyard tread,  
Being loose, unfirm, with digging up of graves,  
But thou shalt hear it: whistle then to me,  
As signal that thou hear'st something approach.  
Give me those flowers. Do as I bid thee, go.

*Page.* *[Aside]* I am almost afraid to stand  
alone 10  
Here in the churchyard; yet I will adventure.

*[Retires.]*

*Par.* Sweet flower, with flowers thy bridal  
bed I strew,—

O woe! thy canopy is dust and stones;—  
Which with sweet water nightly I will dew,  
Or, wanting that, with tears distill'd by  
moans:

The obsequies that I for thee will keep  
Nightly shall be to strew thy grave and weep.

*[The Page returns.]*

The boy gives warning something doth ap-  
proach.

What cursed foot wanders this way to-night,  
To cross my obsequies and true love's rite? 20  
What, with a torch! muffle me, night, awhile.

*[Retires.]*

*Enter ROMEO and BALTHAZAR, with a torch,  
mattock, &c.*

*Rom.* Give me that mattock and the wrench-  
ing iron.

Hold, take this letter; early in the morning  
See thou deliver it to my lord and father.  
(Give me the light: upon thy life, I charge thee,  
Whate'er thou hear'st or seest, stand all aloof,  
And do not interrupt me in my course.)

Why I descend into this bed of death,  
Is partly to behold my lady's face;

But chiefly to take thence from her dead finger  
A precious ring, a ring that I must use 30  
In dear employment; therefore hence, be gone:

But if thou, jealous, dost return to pry  
In what I further shall intend to do,  
By heaven, I will tear thee joint by joint  
And strew this hungry churchyard with thy limbs:

The time and my intents are savage-wild,  
More fierce and more inexorable far  
Than empty tigers or the roaring sea.

*Bal.* I will be gone, sir, and not trouble you.

*Rom.* So shalt thou show me friendship.

Take thou that:  
Live, and be prosperous: and farewell, good fellow.

*Bal.* [Aside] For all this same, I'll hide me  
hereabout:

His looks I fear, and his intents I doubt.

*Rom.* Thou detestable maw, thou womb of  
death,

Gorged with the dearest morsel of the earth,  
Thus I enforce thy rotten jaws to open,  
And, in despite, I'll cram thee with more food!

*Par.* This is that banish'd haughty Montague,  
That murder'd my love's cousin, with which

grief,  
It is supposed, the fair creature died;

And here is come to do some villainous shame  
To the dead bodies: I will apprehend him.

Stop thy unhallow'd toil, vile Montague!  
Can vengeance be pursued further than death?  
Condemned villain, I do apprehend thee:

Obey, and go with me; for thou must die.

*Rom.* I must indeed; and therefore came I  
hither.

Good gentle youth, tempt not a desperate man;  
Fly hence, and leave me: think upon these  
gone;

Let them affright thee. I beseech thee, youth,  
Put not another sin upon my head,  
By urging me to fury: O, be gone!

By heaven, I love thee better than myself;  
For I come hither arm'd against myself:

Say not, be gone; live, and hereafter say,  
A madman's mercy bade thee run away.

*Par.* I do defy thy conjurations,  
And apprehend thee for a felon here.

*Rom.* Wilt thou provoke me? then have at  
thee, boy!

*Page.* O Lord, they fight! I will go call the  
watch.

*Par.* O, I am slain! [Falls.] If thou be  
merciful,

Open the tomb, lay me with Juliet. [Dies.]

*Rom.* In faith, I will. Let me peruse this  
face.

Mercutio's kinsman, noble County Paris!  
What said my man, when my betossed soul  
Did not attend him as we rode? I think

He told me Paris should have married Juliet:  
Said he not so? or did I dream it so?

Or am I mad, hearing him talk of Juliet,  
To think it was so? O, give me thy hand,  
One writ with me in sour misfortune's look!

I'll bury thee in a triumphant grave;  
A grave? O, no! a lantern, slaughter'd youth,  
For here lies Juliet, and her beauty makes

This vault a feasting presence full of light.  
Death, lie thou there, by a dead man interr'd.

[Laying Paris in the tomb.]  
Now, when men are at the point of death,

Have they been merry! which their keepers call  
A lightning before death: O, how many I  
Call this a lightning! O my love! my wife!

Death, that hath suck'd the honey of thy  
breath,

Hath had no power yet upon thy beauty:  
Thou art not conquer'd; beauty's ensign yet

Is crimson in thy lips and in thy cheeks,  
And death's pale flag is not advanced there.

Tybalt, liest thou there in thy bloody sheet!  
O, what more favour can I do to thee,  
Than with that hand that cut thy youth in

twain  
To sunder his that was thine enemy?

Forgive me, cousin! Ah, dear Juliet,  
Why art thou yet so fair? shall I believe

That unsubstantial death is amorous,  
And that the lean abhorred monster keeps

Thee here in dark to be his paramour?  
For fear of that, I still will stay with thee;

And never from this palace of dim night  
Depart again: here, here will I remain

With worms that are thy chamber-maids;  
here

Will I set up my everlasting rest,  
And shake the yoke of inauspicious stars

From this world-wearied flesh. Eyes, look you  
last!

Arms, take your last embrace! and, lips, O  
you

The doors of breath, seal with a righteous kiss  
A dateless bargain to engrossing death!

Come, bitter conduct, come, unsavoury guide  
Thou desperate pilot, now at once run on

The dashing rocks thy sea-sick weary bark!  
Here's to my love! [Drinks.] O true apoth-

cary!  
Thy drugs are quick. Thus with a kiss I die.

[Dies.]  
*Enter, at the other end of the churchyard*

*FRIAR LAURENCE, with a lantern, crucifix, and spade.*

*Fri. L.* Saint Francis be my speed! how  
oft to-night

Have my old feet stumbled at graves! Who's  
there?

*Bal.* Here's one, a friend, and one that  
knows you well.

*Fri. L.* Bliss be upon you! Tell me, good  
my friend,

What torch is yond, that vainly lends his light  
To grubs and eyeless skulls? as I discern,

It burneth in the Capels' monument.

*Bal.* It doth so, holy sir; and there's my  
master,

One that you love.

*Fri. L.* Who is it?

*Bal.* Romeo.

*Fri. L.* How long hath he been there?

*Bal.* Full half an hour.

*Fri. L.* Go with me to the vault.

*Bal.* I dare not, sir:  
My master knows not but I am gone hence;  
And he will murther me with death.

*Fri. L.* Come, then, let's

O, much I fear some ill-unlucky thing.

Bal. As I did sleep under this yew-tree here,  
I dreamt my master and another fought,  
And that my master slew him.

Fri. L.

Romeo!

Alack, alack, what blood is this, which stains  
The stony entrance of this sepulchre?  
What mean these masterless and gory swords  
To lie discolour'd by this place of peace?

Romeo! O, pale! Who else? what, Paris too!  
And steep'd in blood! Ah, what an unkind hour  
Is guilty of this lamentable chance!

The lady stirs.

Jul. O comfortable friar! where is my lord?  
I do remember well where I should be,  
And there I am. Where is my Romeo?

Fri. L. I hear some noise. Lady, come  
from that nest

Of death, contagion, and unnatural sleep:  
A greater power than we can contradict  
Hath thwarted our intents. Come, come away.  
Thy husband in thy bosom there lies dead;  
And Paris too. Come, I'll dispose of thee  
Among a sisterhood of holy nuns:  
Stay not to question, for the watch is coming;  
Come, go, good Juliet. [Noise again.] I dare  
no longer stay.

Jul. Go, get thee hence, for I will not away.

What's here? a cup, clos'd in my true love's  
hand!

Poison, I see, hath been his timeless end:  
O churl! drunk all, and left no friendly drop  
To help me after! I will kiss thy lips;  
Haply some poison yet doth hang on them,  
To make me die with a restorative. [Kisses him.]  
Thy lips are warm.

First Watch. [Within] Lead, boy: which  
way!

Jul. Yea, noise! then I'll be brief. O happy  
dagger! [Snatching Romeo's dagger.]  
This is thy sheath [Stabs herself]; there rust,  
and let me die.

[Falls on Romeo's body, and dies.]

Enter Watch, with the Page of PARIS.

Page. This is the place; there, where the  
torch doth burn.

First Watch. The ground is bloody; search  
about the churchyard:

O, some of you, whoever you find attach.  
Punish sight! here lies the county slain;  
And Juliet bleeding, warm, and newly dead,  
Who here hath lain these two days buried.  
Go, tell the prince: run to the Capulets:  
Raise up the Montagues: some others search:  
We see the ground whereon these woes do lie;  
But the true ground of all these piteous woes  
We cannot without circumstance descry.

Re-enter some of the Watch, with BALTHAZAR.

Sec. Watch. Here's a Romeo's man; we found  
him in the churchyard.

First Watch. Hold him in safety, till the  
prince come hither.

Re-enter others of the Watch, with FRIAR  
LAURENCE.

Third Watch. Here is a friar, that trembles,  
sighs, and weeps:  
We took this mattock and this spade from him,  
as he was coming from this churchyard side.

First Watch. A great suspicion: stay the  
friar too.

Enter the PRINCE and Attendants.

Prince. What misadventure is so early up,  
that calls our person from our morning's rest?

Enter CAPULET, LADY CAPULET, and others.

Cap. What should it be, that they so shrill  
abroad!

La. Cap. The people in the street cry Romeo,  
some Juliet, and some Paris; and all run,  
With open outcry, toward our monument.

Prince. What fear is this which startles in  
our ears?

First Watch. Sovereign, here lies the County  
Paris slain;

And Romeo dead; and Juliet, dead before,  
Warm and new kill'd.

Prince. Search, seek, and know how this  
foul murder comes.

First Watch. Here is a friar, and slaughter'd  
Romeo's man;

With instruments upon them, fit to open  
These dead men's tombs.

Cap. O heavens! O wife, look how our  
daughter bleeds!

This dagger hath mista'en,—for, lo, his house  
Is empty on the back of Montague,—

And it mis-sheathed in my daughter's bosom!

La. Cap. O me! this sight of death is as  
a bell,

That warns my old age to a sepulchre.

Enter MONTAGUE and others.

Prince. Come, Montague; for thou art early  
up,

To see thy son and heir more early down.

Mon. Alas, my liege, my wife is dead to-  
night;

Grief of my son's exile hath stopp'd her breath:  
What further we conspire against mine age?

Prince. Look, and thou shalt see.

Mon. O thou untiaught! what manners is  
in this,

To press before thy father to a grave!

Prince. Seal up the mouth of outrage for  
a while,

Till we can clear these ambiguities,  
And know their spring, their head, their true  
descent;

And then will I be general of your woes,  
And lead you even to death: meantime for-  
bear,

And let mischance be slave to patience.  
Bring forth the parties of suspicion.

Fri. L. I am the greatest, able to do least,  
Yet most suspected, as the time and place  
Doth mark against me, of this dreadful murder:

And here I stand, both to impeach and purge  
and myself accused.

*Prince.* Then say at once what thou dost know in this.

*Fri. L.* I will be brief, for my short date of breath

Is not so long as is a tedious tale. <sup>230</sup>  
*Romeo*, there dead, was husband to that *Juliet*;  
 And she, there dead, that *Romeo's* faithful wife:

I married them; and their stol'n marriage-day  
 Was *Tybalt's* dooms-day, whose untimely death  
 Banish'd the new-made bridegroom from this city,

For whom, and not for *Tybalt*, *Juliet* pined.  
 You, to remove that siege of grief from her,  
 Betroth'd and would have married her perforce  
 To *County Paris*: then comes she to me,  
 And, with wild looks, bid me devise some mean  
 To rid her from this second marriage, <sup>241</sup>  
 Or in my cell there would she kill herself.  
 Then gave I her, so tutor'd by my art,  
 A sleeping potion; which so took effect

As I intended, for it wrought on her  
 The form of death: meantime I writ to *Romeo*,  
 That he should hither come as this dire night,  
 To help to take her from her borrow'd grave,  
 Being the time the potion's force should cease.  
 But he which bore my letter, *Friar John*, <sup>250</sup>  
 Was stay'd by accident, and yesternight  
 Return'd my letter back. Then all alone

At the prefixed hour of her waking,  
 Came I to take her from her kindred's vault;  
 Meaning to keep her closely at my cell,  
 Till I conveniently could send to *Romeo*:  
 But when I came, some minute ere the time  
 Of her awaking, here untimely lay  
 The noble *Paris* and true *Romeo* dead.

She wakes; and I entreated her come forth, <sup>260</sup>  
 And bear this work of heaven with patience:  
 But then a noise did scare me from the tomb;  
 And she, too desperate, would not go with me,  
 But, as it seems, did violence on herself.  
 All this I know; and to the marriage  
 Her nurse is privy: and, if aught in this  
 Miscarried by my fault, let my old life  
 Be sacrificed, some hour before his time,  
 Unto the rigour of severest law.

*Prince.* We still have known thee for a holy man. <sup>270</sup>  
 Where's *Romeo's* man? what can he say in this?

*Bal.* I brought my master news of *Juliet's* death;

And then in post he came from Mantua  
 To this same place, to this same monument.  
 This letter he early bid me give his father,  
 And threaten'd me with death, going in the vault,

If I departed not and left him there.

*Prince.* Give me the letter; I will look on it.

Where is the county's page, that raised the watch?

*Sirrah*, what made your master in this place?  
*Page.* He came with flowers to strew his lady's grave: <sup>281</sup>

And bid me stand aloof, and so I did:  
 Anon comes one with light to ope the tomb;  
 And by and by my master drew on him;  
 And then I ran away to call the watch.

*Prince.* This letter doth make good the friar's words,

Their course of love, the tidings of her death:  
 And here he writes that he did buy a poison  
 Of a poor 'pothecary, and therewithal <sup>289</sup>  
 Came to this vault to die, and lie with *Juliet*.  
 Where be these enemies? *Capulet*! *Montague*!  
 See, what a scourge is laid upon your hate,  
 That heaven finds means to kill your joys with love.

And I for winking at your discords too  
 Have lost a brace of kinsmen: all are punish'd.

*Cap.* O brother *Montague*, give me thy hand:  
 This is my daughter's jointure, for no more  
 Can I demand.

*Mon.* But I can give thee more:  
 For I will raise her statue in pure gold;  
 That while Verona by that name is known, <sup>300</sup>  
 There shall no figure at such rate be set  
 As that of true and faithful *Juliet*.

*Cap.* As rich shall *Romeo's* by his lady's lie:  
 Poor sacrifices of our enmity!

*Prince.* A glooming peace this morning with it brings;

The sun, for sorrow, will not show his head;  
 Go hence, to have more talk of these sad things;

For never was a story of more woe  
 Than this of *Juliet* and her *Romeo*. <sup>310</sup>

[*Exeunt.*]

# TIMON OF ATHENS

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

TIMON, of Athens.

LUCIUS,  
LUCULLUS,  
SEMPRONIUS, } flattering lords.

VENTIDIUS, one of Timon's false friends.

ALCIBIADES, an Athenian captain.

APEMANTUS, a churlish philosopher.

FLAVIUS, steward to Timon.

Poet, Painter, Jeweller, and Merchant.

An old Athenian.

FLAMINIUS,  
LUCILIUS,  
SERVILIUS, } servants to Timon.

CAPHIS,  
PHILOTUS,  
TITUS,  
LUCIUS,  
HORTENSIVS, } servants to Timon's  
creditors.

And others,  
A Page. A Fool. Three Strangers.

PHRYNIA,  
TIMANDRA, } mistresses to Alcibiades.

Cupid and Amazons in the mask.

Other Lords, Senators, Officers, Soldiers, Banditti, and Attendants.

SCENE: *Athens, and the neighbouring woods.*

## ACT I

SCENE I. *Athens. A hall in Timon's house.*

*Enter Poet, Painter, Jeweller, Merchant, and others, at several doors.*

Poet. Good day, sir.

Pain. I am glad you're well.

Poet. I have not seen you long: how goes the world?

Pain. It wears, sir, as it grows.

Poet. Ay, that's well known:

But what particular rarity! what strange,  
Which manifold record not matches! See,  
Magic of bounty! all these spirits thy power  
Hath conjured to attend. I know the merchant.

Pain. I know them both; th' other's a jeweller.

Mer. O, 'tis a worthy lord.

Jew. Nay, that's most fix'd.

Mer. A most incomparable man, breathed,  
as it were,

To an untirable and continue goodness: 10  
He passes.

Jew. I have a jewel here—

Mer. O, pray, let's see't: for the Lord  
Timon, sir!

Jew. If he will touch the estimate: but, for  
that—

Poet. [*Rectifying to Aimeris*] 'When we for  
recompence have praised the vile,

It stains the glory in that happy verse  
Which aptly sings the good.

Mer.

'Tis a good form.

[*Looking at the jewel.*

Jew. And rich: here is a water, look ye.

Pain. You are rapt, sir, in some work, some  
dedication

To the great lord.

Poet. A thing slipp'd idly from me. so  
Our poetry is as a gum, which cures  
From whence 'tis nourish'd: the fire of the flint  
Shows not till it be struck; our gentle flames  
Provokes itself and like the current flies  
Each bound it chafes. What have you there?

Pain. A picture, sir. When comes your  
book forth?

Poet. Upon the heels of my presentment, sir.  
Let's see your piece.

Pain. 'Tis a good piece.

Poet. So 'tis: this comes off well and ex-  
cellent.

Pain. Indifferent.

Poet. Admirable: how this grace so  
Speaks his own standing! what a mental power  
This eye shoots forth! how big imagination  
Moves in this lip! to the dumbness of the  
gesture

One might interpret.

Pain. It is a pretty mocking of the life.  
Here is a touch; is't good?

Poet. I will say of it,  
It tutors nature: artificial strife  
Lives in these touches, livelier than life.

*Enter certain Senators, and pass over.*

Pain. How this lord is follow'd!

Poet. The senators of Athens: happy man!

Pain. Look, more!

Poet. You see this confidence, this great  
flood of visitors.

I have, in this rough work, shaped out a man,

Whom this beneath world doth embrace and hug

With amplest entertainment : my free drift  
Halt not particularly, but moves itself  
In a wide sea of wax : no levell'd malice  
Infects one comma in the course I hold ;  
But flies an eagle flight, bold and forth on,  
Leaving no tract behind.

*Post.* How shall I understand you ?  
*Tim.* I will unbolt to you.

You see how all conditions, how all minds,  
As well of glib and slippery creatures as  
Of grave and austere quality, tender down  
Their services to Lord Timon : his large fortune

flatterer  
To Apemantus, that few things loves better  
Than to abhor himself : even he drops down 60  
The knees before him and returns in peace  
Most rich in Timon's nod.

*Pain.* I saw them speak together.  
*Post.* Sir, I have upon a high and pleasant  
hill

Faig'd Fortune to be throned : the base o' the  
mount

Is rank'd with all deserts, all kind of natures,  
That labour on the bosom of this sphere  
To propagate their states : amongst them all,  
Whose eyes are on this sovereign lady fix'd,  
One do I personate of Lord Timon's frame,  
Whom Fortune with her ivory hand wafts to  
her ;

Whose present grace to present slaves and  
servants

Translates his rivals.  
*Pain.* 'Tis conceived to scope.

This throne, this Fortune, and this hill, me-  
thinks,

With one man beckon'd from the rest below,  
Bowing his head against the steepy mount  
To climb his happiness, would be well express'd  
In our condition.

*Post.* Nay, sir, but hear me on.  
All those which were his fellows but of late,  
Some better than his value, on the moment  
Follow his strides, his lobbies fill with tend-  
ances,

sacrificial whisperings in his ear,  
smeared even his stirrup, and through him  
kiss the air.

*Pain.* Ay, marry, what of these ?  
*Post.* When Fortune in her shift and change  
of mood

Spurns down her late beloved, all his dependants  
Which labour'd after him to the mountain's top  
Even on their knees and hands, let him slip  
down,

Not one accompanying his declining foot.  
*Pain.* 'Tis common :

A thousand moral paintings I can show 90  
That shall demonstrate these quick blows of  
Fortune's

More powerfully than words. Yet you do well  
to show Lord Timon that mean eyes have

the power above the head.

*Trumpets sound.* Enter LORD TIMON, ad-  
dressing himself courtiously to every auditor ;  
a Messenger from VENTIDIUS talking with  
him ; LUCILIUS and other servants following.

*Tim.* Imprison'd is he, say you ?  
*Mess.* Ay, my good lord : five talents is his  
debt.

His means most short, his creditors most strait  
Your honourable letter he desires  
To those have shut him up ; which failing,  
Periods his comfort.

*Tim.* Noble Ventidius ! Well  
I am not of that feather to shake of  
My friend when he must need me. I do know  
him

A gentleman that well deserves a help ;  
Which he shall have : I'll pay the debt, and  
free him.

*Mess.* Your lordship ever binds him.  
*Tim.* Commend me to him : I will send his  
ransom ;

And being enfranchis'd, bid him come to me.  
'Tis not enough to help the feeble up,  
But to support him after. Fare you well.

*Mess.* All happiness to your honour ! [Exit.

Enter an old Athenian.

*Old Ath.* Lord Timon, hear me speak.  
*Tim.* Freely, good father. 120

*Old Ath.* Thou hast a servant named Lucilius.  
*Tim.* I have so : what of him ?

*Old Ath.* Most noble Timon, call the man  
before thee.

*Tim.* Attends he here, or no ? Lucilius !  
*Luc.* Here, at your lordship's service.

*Old Ath.* This fellow here, Lord Timon, this  
thy creature,

By night frequents my house. I am a man  
That from my first have been inclined to thrift ;  
And my estate deserves an heir more raised  
Than one which holds a trencher.

*Tim.* Well ; what further ? 120  
*Old Ath.* One only daughter have I, no kin  
else,

On whom I may confer what I have got :  
The maid is fair, o' the youngest for a bride,  
And I have bred her at my dearest cost  
In qualities of the best. This man of thine  
Attempts her love : I prithee, noble lord,  
Join with me to forbid him her resort ;  
Myself have spoke in vain.

*Tim.* The man is honest.  
*Old Ath.* Therefore he will be, Timon : 120  
His honesty rewards him in itself ;  
It must not bear my daughter.

*Tim.* Does she love him ?  
*Old Ath.* She is young and apt :

Our own precedent passions do instruct us  
What levity's in youth.

*Tim.* [To Lucilius] Love you the maid ?  
*Luc.* Ay, my good lord, and she accepts of it

*Old Ath.* If in her marriage my consent be  
missing,

I call the gods to witness, I will choose  
Mine heir from forth the beggars of the world  
And dispossess her all.

*Tim.* How shall she be endow'd



[If she be mated with an equal husband! 190

*Old Ath.* Three talents on the present; in future, all.

*Tim.* This gentleman of mine hath served me long;

To build his fortune I will strain a little, For 'tis a bond in men. Give him thy daughter:

What you bestow, in him I'll counterpoise, And make him weigh with her.

*Old Ath.* Most noble lord, Pawn me to this your honour, she is his.

*Tim.* My hand to thee; mine honour on my promise.

*Luc.* Humbly I thank your lordship: never may

That state or fortune fall into my keeping, 190 Which is not owed to you!

[*Exeunt Lucilius and Old Athenian.*]

*Poet.* Vouchsafe my labour, and long live your lordship!

*Tim.* I thank you; you shall hear from me anon:

Do not away. What have you there, my friend?

*Pain.* A piece of painting, which I do beseech

Your lordship to accept.

*Tim.* Painting is welcome. The painting is almost the natural man;

For since dishonour traffics with man's nature, He is but outside: these pencil'd figures are

Even such as they give out. I like your work; And you shall find I like it: wait attendance 161

Till you hear further from me.

*Pain.* The gods preserve ye!

*Tim.* Well fare you, gentleman: give me your hand;

We must needs dine together. Sir, your jewel hath suffer'd under praise.

*Jew.* What, my lord! dispraise!

*Tim.* A mere satiety of commendations. I should pay you for 't as 'tis extoll'd,

I would unclew me quite.

*Jew.* My lord, 'tis rated

As those which sell would give: but you well know,

Things of like value differing in the owners 170 Are prized by their masters: believe 't, dear lord,

On mend the jewel by the wearing it.

*Tim.* Well mock'd.

*Mer.* No, my good lord; he speaks the common tongue.

Which all men speak with him.

*Tim.* Look, who comes here: will you be child?

Enter APEMANTUS.

*Jew.* We'll bear, with your lordship.

*Mer.* He'll spare none.

*Tim.* Good morrow to thee, gentle Apemantus!

*Apem.* Till I be gentle, stay thou for thy good morrow;

Then thou art Timon's dog, and thou knowest 180 honest.

*Tim.* Why dost thou call them knaves that know not them not.

*Apem.* Are they not Athenians?

*Tim.* Yes.

*Apem.* Then I repent not.

*Jew.* You know me, Apemantus!

*Apem.* Thou knowst I do: I call'd thee by thy name.

*Tim.* Thou art proud, Apemantus.

*Apem.* Of nothing so much as that I am not like Timon.

*Tim.* Whither art going? 190

*Apem.* To knock out an honest Athenian's brains.

*Tim.* That's a deed thou'lt die for.

*Apem.* Right, if doing nothing be death by the law.

*Tim.* How likest thou this picture, Apemantus?

*Apem.* The best, for the innocence.

*Tim.* Wrought he not well that painted it?

*Apem.* He wrought better that made the painter; and yet he's but a filthy piece of work.

*Pain.* You're a dog.

*Apem.* Thy mother's of my generation: what's she, if I be a dog?

*Tim.* Wilt dine with me, Apemantus?

*Apem.* No; I eat not lords.

*Tim.* An thou shouldst, thou'ldst anger ladies.

*Apem.* O, they eat lords; so they come by great bellies.

*Tim.* That's a lascivious apprehension.

*Apem.* So thou apprehendest it: take it for thy labour.

*Tim.* How dost thou like this jewel, Apemantus?

*Apem.* Not so well as plain-dealing, which will not cost a man a doit.

*Tim.* What dost thou think 'tis worth?

*Apem.* Not worth my thinking. How now, poet!

*Poet.* How now, philosopher!

*Apem.* Thou liest.

*Poet.* Art not out?

*Apem.* Yes.

*Poet.* Then I lie not.

*Apem.* Art not a poet?

*Poet.* Yes.

*Apem.* Then thou liest: look in thy last work, where thou hast feigned him a worthy fellow.

*Poet.* That's not feigned; he is so.

*Apem.* Yes, he is worthy of thee, and to pay thee for thy labour: he that loves to be flattered is worthy of the flatterer. Heaven, that I were a lord!

*Tim.* What wouldst do then, Apemantus?

*Apem.* Even as Apemantus does now; hate a lord with my heart.

*Tim.* What, thyself?

*Apem.* Ay.

*Tim.* Wherefore?

*Apem.* That I had no sinner wit to be a lord. Art not thou a merchant?

*Mer.* Ay, Apemantus.

*Apem.* Traitors confound thee, if thou wilt not.

*Mer.* If traffic do it, the gods do it.

*Apem.* Traffic's thy god; and thy god con-  
found thee!

*Trumpet sounds. Enter a Messenger.*

*Tim.* What trumpet's that?

*Mess.* 'Tis Alcibiades, and some twenty horse,  
All of companionship.

*Tim.* Pray, entertain them; give them guide  
to us. *[Exeunt some Attendants.]*

You must needs dine with me: go not you  
hence

Till I have thank'd you: when dinner's done,  
Show me this piece. I am joyful of your sights.

*Enter ALICIBIADES, with the rest.*

Most welcome, sir!

*Apem.* So, so, there!  
Aches contract and starve your supple joints!  
That there should be small love 'mongst these  
sweet knaves,

And all this courtesy! The strain of man's  
bred out

Into baboon and monkey. *also*

*Alci.* Sir, you have saved my longing, and  
I feed

Most hungrily on your sight.

*Tim.* Right welcome, sir!  
Ere we depart, we'll share a bounteous time  
In different pleasures. Pray you, let us in.

*[Exeunt all except Apemantus.]*

*Enter two Lords.*

*First Lord.* What time o' day is't, Ape-  
mantus?

*Apem.* Time to be honest.

*First Lord.* That time serves still.

*Apem.* The more accursed thou, that still  
omit'st it.

*Sec. Lord.* Thou art going to Lord Timon's  
feast?

*Apem.* Ay, to see meat fill knaves and wine  
heat fools.

*Sec. Lord.* Fare thee well, fare thee well.

*Apem.* Thou art a fool to bid me farewell  
twice.

*Sec. Lord.* Why, Apemantus?

*Apem.* Shouldst have kept one to thyself,  
for I mean to give thee none.

*First Lord.* Hang thyself!

*Apem.* No, I will do nothing at thy bidding:  
make thy requests to thy friend.

*Sec. Lord.* Away, unpeaceable dog, or I'll  
spurn thee hence!

*Apem.* I will fly, like a dog, the heels o' the  
men. *[Exit.]*

*First Lord.* He's opposite to humanity.

*Sec. Lord.* Shall we in,  
And taste Lord Timon's bounty? he outgoes  
The very heart of kindness.

*Sec. Lord.* He pours it out; Plutus, the god  
of gold,

Is but his steward: no meed, but he repays  
Sweetness above itself: no gift to him,

But thanks the giver a return exceeding  
All use of civilities.

*First Lord.* The noblest mind he carries  
That ever govern'd man.

*Sec. Lord.* Long may he live in fortunes  
Shall we in?

*First Lord.* I'll keep you company. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE II. A banquetting-house in Timon's  
house.

*Hautboys playing loud music. A banquet  
served in; FLAVIUS and others attending;  
then enter LORD TIMON, ALICIBIADES, Lords,  
Senators, and VENTIDIUS. Then comes, drop-  
ping after all, APEMANTUS, com-  
mending himself.*

*Ven.* Most honour'd Timon,  
It hath pleased the gods to remember my  
father's age,

And call him to long peace.

He is gone happy, and has left me rich:  
Then, as in grateful virtue I am bound

To your free heart, I do return those talents,  
Doubled with thanks and service, from whose  
help

I derived liberty.

*Tim.* O, by no means,  
Honest Ventidius; you mistake my love:

I gave it freely ever; and there's none  
Can truly say he gives, if he receives:

If our betters play at that game, we must not  
dare

To imitate them; faults that are rich are fair.  
*Ven.* A noble spirit!

*Tim.* Nay, my lords,

*[They all stand ceremoniously looking  
on Timon.]*

Ceremony was but devised at first  
To set a gloss on faint deeds, hollow welcomes,

Recanting goodness, sorry ere 'tis shown;  
But where there is true friendship, there needs  
none.

Pray, sit; more welcome are ye to my fortunes  
Than my fortunes to me. *[They sit.]*

*First Lord.* My lord, we always have con-  
fess'd it.

*Apem.* Ho, ho, confess'd it! hang'd it, have  
you not?

*Tim.* O, Apemantus, you are welcome.

*Apem.* No;  
You shall not make me welcome:

I come to have these thrust me out of doors.

*Tim.* Fie, thou'rt a churl; ye've got a  
humour there

Does not become a man; 'tis much to blame.

They say, my lords, 'ira furor brevis est'; but  
yond man is ever angry. (Go, let him have a  
table by himself, for he does neither affect com-  
pany, nor is he fit for't, indeed.)

*Apem.* Let me stay at thine apparel, Timon:  
I come to observe; I give thee warning on't.

*Tim.* I take no heed of thee; thou'rt an  
Athenian, therefore welcome: I myself would  
have no power; prius, let my meat make thee  
silent.

*Apem.* I scorn thy meat; 'twould choke me  
for I should never faster than. O you gods,

what a number of men eat Timon, and he sees  
'em not! It grieves me to see so many slip their

eat in one man's blood; and all the madness  
he cheers them up too.

wonder men dare trust themselves with men:  
[ethinks they should invite them without  
knives;

ood for their meat, and safer for their lives.  
here's much example for't; the fellow that  
ta next him now, parts bread with him,  
ledges the breath of him in a divided draught,  
the readiest man to kill him; 't has been  
roved. If I were a huge map, I should fear  
drink at meals;

est they should spy my windpipe's dangerous  
notes:

reat men should drink with harness on their  
throats.

Tim. My lord, in heart; and let the health  
go round.

Sec. Lord. Let it flow this way, my good  
lord.

Apem. Flow this way! A brave fellow! he  
eeps his tides well. Those healths will make  
hee and thy state look ill, Timon. Here's that  
rich is too weak to be a sinner, honest water,  
which ne'er left man i' the mire:

This and my food are equals; there's no odds:  
casts are too proud to give thanks to the gods.

*Apemantus' grace.*

Immortal gods, I crave no pelf;  
I pray for no man but myself:  
Grant I may never prove so fond,  
To trust man on his oath or bond;  
Or a harlot, for her weeping;  
Or a dog, that seems a-sleeping;  
Or a keeper with my freedom;  
Or my friends, if I should need 'em. 70  
Amen. So fall to't:  
Rich men sin, and I eat root.

*[Eats and drinks.]*

Much good 't dich thy good heart, Apemantus!  
Tim. Captain Alcibiades, your heart's in  
the field now.

Alcib. My heart is ever at your service, my  
lord.

Tim. You had rather be at a breakfast of  
enemies than a dinner of friends.

Alcib. So they were bleeding-new, my lord,  
there's no meat like 'em: I could wish my best  
friend at such a feast.

Apem. Would all those flatterers were thine  
enemies then, that then thou mightest kill 'em  
and bid me to 'em!

First Lord. Might we but have that happi-  
ness, my lord, that you would once use our  
hearts, whereby we might express some part of  
our zeals, we should think ourselves for ever  
perfect.

Tim. O, no doubt, my good friends, but the  
gods themselves have provided that I shall have  
much help from you: how had you been my  
friends else? why have you that charitable title  
from thousands, did not you chiefly belong to  
my heart? I have told more of you to myself  
than I can with modesty speak in your own  
verbal; and thus far I confirm you. O you  
gods, think I, what need we have any friends,  
if we should ne'er have need of 'em? they were

the most needless creatures living, should we  
ne'er have use for 'em, and would most re-  
semble sweet instruments hung up in cases  
that keep their sounds to themselves. Why,  
I have often wished myself poorer, that I might  
come nearer to you. We are born to do bene-  
fits: and what better or properer can we call  
our own than the riches of our friends? O,  
what a precious comfort 'tis, to have so many,  
like brothers, commanding one another's for-  
tunes! O joy, e'en made away ere't can be  
born! Mine eyes cannot hold out water, nee-  
thinks: to forget their faults, I drink to you.

Apem. Thou weepest to make them drink,  
Timon.

Sec. Lord. Joy had the like conception in  
our eyes

And at that instant like a babe sprung up.

Apem. Ho, ho! I laugh to think that babe  
a bastard.

Third Lord. I promise you, my lord, you  
moved me much.

Apem. Much! *[Tucket, within.]*

Tim. What means that trumpet!

*Enter a Servant.*

How now!

Serv. Please you, my lord, there are certain  
ladies most desirous of admittance.

Tim. Ladies! what are their wills?

Serv. There comes with them a forerunner,  
my lord, which bears that office, to signify their  
pleasures.

Tim. I pray, let them be admitted.

*Enter CUPID.*

Cup. Hail to thee, worthy Timon, and to all  
That of his bounties taste! The five best senses  
Acknowledge thee their patron; and come  
freely

To gratulate thy plenteous bosom! *[The cup-  
rise:]*  
Taste, touch and smell, pleased from thy table

They only now come but to feast thine eyes.

Tim. They're welcome all; let 'em have  
kind admittance:

Music, make their welcome! *[Exit Cupid.]*

First Lord. You see, my lord, how ample  
you're beloved.

Music. *Re-enter CUPID, with a mask of  
Ladies as Amazons, with lutes in their  
hands, dancing and playing.*

Apem. Hoy-day, what a sweep of vanity  
comes this way!

They dance! they are mad women.  
Like madness is the glory of this life.

As this pomp shows to a little oil and root.

We make ourselves fools, to disport ourselves;  
And spend our flatteries, to drink those men

Upon whose age we void it up again,  
With poisonous spite and envy.

Who lives that's not depraved or depraved?  
Who dies, that bears not one spear to their  
graves

Of their friends' gift?  
I should fear those that dance before me now.

Would one day stamp upon me: 't has been done;  
Men shut their doors against a setting sun. 150

*The Lords rise from table, with much adorning of TIMON; and to show their loves, each singles out an Amazon, and all dance, men with women, a lofty strain or two to the hautboys, and cease.*

*Tim.* You have done our pleasures much grace, fair ladies,  
Set a fair fashion on our entertainment,  
Which was not half so beautiful and kind;  
You have added worth unto 't and lustre,  
And entertain'd me with mine own device;  
I am to thank you for 't.

*First Lady.* My lord, you take us even at the best.

*Apem.* Faith, for the worst is filthy; and would not hold taking, I doubt me.

*Tim.* Ladies, there is an idle banquet attends you: 160

Please you to dispose yourselves.

*All Ladies.* Most thankfully, my lord.  
[*Exeunt Cupid and Ladies.*]

*Tim.* Flavius.

*Flav.* My lord!

*Tim.* The little casket bring me hither.  
*Flav.* Yes, my lord. More jewels yet! [*Aside.* There is no crossing him in 's humour;  
Else I should tell him,—well, I' faith, I should,  
When all's spent, he'd be cross'd then, an he could.

'Tis pity bounty had not eyes behind,  
That man might ne'er be wretched for his mind.

[*Exit.*]

*First Lord.* Where be our men? 171

*Serv.* Here, my lord, in readiness.

*Sec. Lord.* Our horses!

*Re-enter FLAVIUS, with the casket.*

*Tim.* O my friends,  
I have one word to say to you: look you, my good lord,  
I must entreat you, honour me so much  
As to advance this jewel; accept it and wear it,  
Kind my lord.

*First Lord.* I am so far already in your  
are we all.

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* My lord, there are certain nobles of  
the senate 180

Newly alighted, and come to visit you.

*Tim.* They are fairly welcome.

*Flav.* I beseech your honour,  
Vouchsafe me a word; it does concern you near.

*Tim.* Hear! why then, another time I'll  
hear thee:

I promise, let's be provided to show them enter-  
tainment.

*Flav.* [*Aside.*] I scarce know how.

*Enter a second Servant.*

*Sec. Serv.* May it please your honour, Lord  
Ladies

Out of his own love, hath presented to you

Four milk-white horses, trapp'd in silver.

*Tim.* I shall accept them fairly; let the  
presents 190

Be worthily entertain'd.

*Enter a third!*

How now! what news?

*Third Serv.* Please you, my lord, that honour-  
able gentleman, Lord Lucullus, entreates your  
company to-morrow to hunt with him, and has  
sent your honour two brace of greyhounds.

*Tim.* I'll hunt with him; and let them be  
received,

Not without fair reward.

*Flav.* [*Aside.*] What will this come to?  
He commands us to provide, and give great  
gifts,

And all out of an empty coffer:  
Nor will he know his purse, or yield me this,

To show him what a beggar his heart is, 201  
Being of no power to make his wishes good:

His promises fly so beyond his state  
That what he speaks is all in debt; he owes

For every word: he is so kind that he now  
Pays interest for 't; his land's put to their  
books.

Well, would I were gently put out of office  
Before I were forced out!

Happier is he that has no friend to feed  
Than such that do e'en enemies exceed.

I bleed inwardly for my lord. [*Exit.*]

*Tim.* You do yourselves  
Much wrong, you hate too much of your own  
merits:

Here, my lord, a trifle of our love.

*Sec. Lord.* With more than common thanks  
I will receive it.

*Third Lord.* O, he's the very soul of bounty!  
*Tim.* And now I remember, my lord, you  
gave

Good words the other day of a bay courser  
I rode on: it is yours, because you liked it.

*Sec. Lord.* O, I beseech you, pardon me, my  
lord, in that.

*Tim.* You may take my word, my lord:  
I know, no man 210

Can justly praise but what he does affect:  
I weigh my friend's affection with mine own;

I'll tell you true. I'll call to you.

*All Lords.* O, none so welcome.

*Tim.* I take all and your several visitations  
So kind to heart, 'tis not enough to give;

Methinks, I could deal kingdoms to my friends,  
And ne'er be weary. *Alcibiades.*

Thou art a soldier, therefore seldom rich;  
It comes in charity to thee: for all thy living  
is 'mongst the dead, and all the lands thou hast  
lie in a pitch'd field.

*Alcib.* Ay, daff'd!

*First Lord.* We are so virtuously! 220  
*Tim.*

Am I to you.

*Sec. Lord.* So infinitely undescrib'd—  
*Tim.* All to you. *Lords, more lights!*

*First Lord.* The best of songs  
Honour and fortunes, keep with you,  
Timon!

*Tim.* Ready for his friends.

[*Exeunt all but Apemantus and Timon.*]

*Apem.* What a coil 's here!  
Serving of becks and jutting-out of bums!

I doubt whether their legs be worth the sums  
That are given for 'em. Friendship 's full of  
dregs:

Methinks, false hearts should never have sound  
legs.

Thus honest fools lay out their wealth on  
court'sies.

*Tim.* Now, Apemantus, if thou wert not  
sullen,

I would be good to thee.

*Apem.* No, I'll nothing: for if I should be  
bribed too, there would be none left to rail  
upon thee, and then thou wouldst sin the faster.  
Thou givest so long, Timon, I fear me thou  
wilt give away thyself in paper shortly: what  
need these feasts, pomps and vain-glories? *249*

*Tim.* Nay, an you begin to rail on society  
once, I am sworn not to give regard to you.  
Farewell; and come with better music. [*Exit.*]

*Apem.* So:  
Thou wilt not hear me now; thou shalt not  
then:

I'll lock thy heaven from thee.

O, that men's ears should be  
To counsel deaf, but not to flattery! [*Exit.*]

## ACT II

### SCENE I. A Senator's house.

*Enter Senator, with papers in his hand.*

*Sen.* And late, five thousand: to Varro and  
to Isidore  
He owes nine thousand; besides my former  
sum,

Which makes it five and twenty. Still in  
motion

Of raging waste? It cannot hold; it will not.

If I want gold, steal but a beggar's dog,

And give it Timon, why, the dog coins gold.

If I would sell my horse, and buy twenty more

Better than he, why, give my horse to Timon.

Ask nothing, give it him, it foals me, straight,

And able horses. No porter at his gate, *10*

But rather one that smiles and still invites

All that pass by. It cannot hold; no reason

Can found his state in safety. Caphis, ho!

Caphis, I say!

*Enter CAPHIS.*

*Caph.* Here, sir; what is your pleasure?

*Sen.* Get on your cloak, and haste you to

Lord Timon;

Importune him for my moneys: he not ceased

With alight denial, nor then silenced when—

Commend me to your master—and the cap

Plays in the right hand, thus: but tell him,

My uses cry to me, I must serve my turn *20*

Out of mine own; his days and times are past

And my reliance on his fracted dates

Have smit my credit: I love and honour him,

But must not break my back to heal his finger;

Immediate are my needs, and my relief

Must not be tosed and turn'd to me in words,

But find supply immediate. Get you gone:

Put on a most importunate aspect,

A visage of demand; for, I do fear,

When every feather sticks in his own wing, *30*

Lord Timon will be left a naked gull,

Which flashes now a phoenix. Get you gone.

*Caph.* I go, sir.

*Sen.* 'I go, sir!'—Take the bonds along

with you,

And have the dates in compt.

*Caph.*

*Sen.*

I will, sir.

Go. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. The same. A hall in Timon's  
house.

*Enter FLAVIUS, with many bills in his hand.*

*Flavius.* No care, no stop! so senseless of  
expense,

That he will neither know how to maintain it,

Nor cease his flow of riot: takes no account

How things go from him, nor resumes no care

(Of what is to continue: never mind.

Was to be so unwise, to be so kind.

What shall be done? he will not hear, till feel:

I must be round with him, now he comes from

hunting.

Fie, fie, fie, fie!

*Enter CAPHIS, and the Servants of ISIDORE  
and VARRO.*

*Caph.* Good even, Varro: what,  
You come for money?

*Var. Serv.* Is 't not your business too? *20*

*Caph.* It is: and yours too, Isidore?

*Isid. Serv.* It is so.

*Caph.* Would we were all discharged!

*Var. Serv.* I fear it.

*Caph.* Here comes the lord.

*Enter TIMON, ALICIBIADES, and Lords, &c.*

*Tim.* So soon as dinner's done, we'll forth  
again,

My Alcibiades. With me! what is your will?

*Caph.* My lord, here is a note of certain dues.

*Tim.* Dues! Whence are you?

*Caph.* Of Athens here, my lord.

*Tim.* Go to my steward.

*Caph.* Please it your lordship, he hath put

me off

To the succession of new days this month: so

My master is awaked by great occasion

To call upon his own, and humbly prays you

That with your other noble parts you'll aid

In giving him his right.

*Tim.* Mine honest friend,

I prithee, but repair to me next morning.

*Caph.* Nay, good my lord,—

*Tim.* Contain thyself, good friend.

*Var. Serv.* One Varro's servant, my good

lord,—

*Isid. Serv.* From Isidore;

He humbly prays your speedy payment.

*Caph.* If you did know, my lord, my master's

waste—

*Var. Serv.* 'Twas due on forfeiture, my lord,

six weeks *30*

And meet.

*Isid. Serv.* Your steward puts me off, my lord;

And I am sent expressly to your lordship.

*Tim.* Give me breath.

I do beseech you, good my lords, keep on;

I'll wait upon you instantly.

*[Exeunt Alcibiades and Lords.]*

*[To Flav.]* Come hither: pray you, How goes the world, that I am thus encounter'd With clamorous demands of date-broke bonds, And the detention of long-since-due debts, Against my honour!

*Flav.* Please you, gentlemen, 40

The time is unagreeable to this business:

Your importunity cease till after dinner;

That I may make his lordship understand

Wherefore you are not paid.

*Tim.* Do so, my friends. See them well

entertain'd. *[Exit.]*

*Flav.* Pray, draw near.

*Enter APEMANTUS and Fool.*

*Ceph.* Stay, stay, here comes the fool with Apemantus: let's ha' some sport with 'em.

*Var. Serv.* Hang him, he'll abuse us.

*Isid. Serv.* A plague upon him, dog! 50

*Var. Serv.* How dost, fool!

*Apem.* Dost dialogue with thy shadow?

*Var. Serv.* I speak not to thee.

*Apem.* No, 'tis to thyself. *[To the Fool]* Come away.

*Isid. Serv.* There's the fool hangs on your back already.

*Apem.* No, thou stand'st single, thou'rt not on him yet.

*Ceph.* Where's the fool now? 50

*Apem.* He last asked the question. Poor rogues, and usurers' men! lawds between gold and want!

*All Serv.* What are we, Apemantus?

*Apem.* Asses.

*All Serv.* Why?

*Apem.* That you ask me what you are, and do not know yourselves. Speak to 'em, fool.

*Fool.* How do you, gentlemen?

*All Serv.* Gramercy, good fool: how does your mistress?

*Fool.* She's e'en sitting on water to scald such chickens as you are. Would we could see you of Corinth!

*Apem.* Good! gramercy.

*Enter Page.*

*Fool.* Look you, here comes my mistress' page.

*Page.* *[To the Fool.]* Why, how now, captain! what do you in this wise company? How dost thou, Apemantus?

*Apem.* Would I had a rod in my mouth, that I might answer thee profitably. 80

*Page.* Prithas, Apemantus, read me the subscription of these letters: I know not which is which.

*Apem.* Cannot read!

*Page.* No.

*Apem.* There will little learning do thee, then. *[To the Fool.]* This is to Lord

Timon; this to Alcibiades. Go; thou wast born a bastard, and thou'lt die a bawd. 30

*Page.* Thou wast whelped a dog, and thou shalt furnish a dog's death. Answer not; I am gone. *[Exit.]*

*Apem.* E'en so thou outrunnesst grace. Fool, I will go with you to Lord Timon.

*Fool.* Will you leave me there?

*Apem.* If Timon stay at home, 40 You three serve three usurers!

*All Serv.* Ay; would they served us!

*Apem.* So would I,—as good a trick as ever hangman served thief. 100

*Fool.* Are you three usurers' men?

*All Serv.* Ay, fool.

*Fool.* I think no usurer but has a fool to his servant: my mistress is one, and I am her fool. When men come to borrow of your masters, they approach sadly, and go away merry; but they enter my mistress' house merrily, and go away sadly: the reason of this!

*Var. Serv.* I could render one. 120

*Apem.* Do it then, that we may account thee a whoremaster and a knave; which notwithstanding, thou shalt be no less esteemed.

*Var. Serv.* What is a whoremaster, fool?

*Fool.* A fool in good clothes, and something like thee. 'Tis a spirit: sometime't appears like a lord; sometime like a lawyer; sometime like a philosopher, with two stones more than's artificial one: he is very often like a knight; and, generally, in all shapes that man goes up and down in from fourscore to thirteen, this spirit walks in. 221

*Var. Serv.* Thou art not altogether a fool.

*Fool.* Nor thou altogether a wise man: as much foolery as I have, so much wit thou lackest.

*Apem.* That answer might have become Apemantus.

*All Serv.* Aside, aside; here comes Lord Timon.

*Re-enter TIMON and FLAVIUS.*

*Apem.* Come with me, fool, come.

*Fool.* I do not always follow lover, older brother and woman; sometime the philosopher. *[Exeunt Apemantus and Fool.]*

*Flav.* Pray you, walk near: I'll speak with you anon. *[Exeunt Servants.]*

*Tim.* You make me marvel: wherefore so this time

Had you not fully laid my estate before me, That I might so have rated my expenses, As I had leave of means?

*Flav.* You would not hear me, At many leisure I proposed.

*Tim.* Go to:

Perchance some single vanities you took, When my indisposition put you back; And that unaptness made your minister, 10 Thus to excuse yourself.

*Flav.* O my good lord, At many times I brought in my accounts, Laid them before you; you would throw them off.

And say, you found them to mine honesty.

When, for some trifling present, you have bid  
me  
Return so much, I have shook my head and  
wept;

Yes, against the authority of manners, pray'd  
you

To hold your hand some close: I did endure  
Not seldom, nor no slight checks, when I have  
Prompted you in the ebb of your estate: 390  
And your great flow of debts. My loved lord,  
Though you hear now, too late—yet now's a  
time—

The greatest of your having lacks a half  
To pay your present debts.

Tim. Let all my land be sold.

Flav. 'Tis all engaged, some forfeited and  
gone;

And what remains will hardly stop the mouth  
Of present dues: the future comes space:  
What shall defend the interim? and at length  
How goes our reckoning?

Tim. To Lacedæmon did my land extend.

Flav. O my good lord, the world is but a  
word: 361

Were it all yours to give it in a breath,  
How quickly woe it goes!

Tim. You tell me true.

Flav. If you suspect my husbandry or false-  
hood,

Call me before the exactest auditors  
And set me on the proof. So the gods bless me,  
When all our offices have been oppress'd  
With riotous feeders, when our vaults have  
wept

With drunken spith of wine, when every room  
Hath blaz'd with lights and bray'd with min-  
strelsy, 370

I have refin'd me to a wasteful cock,  
And set mine eyes at flow.

Tim. Prithee, no more.

Flav. Heavena, have I said, the bounty of  
this lord!

How many prodigal hits have slaves and  
peasants

This night engutt'd! Who is not Timon's?  
What heart, head, sword, force, means, but is  
Lord Timon's?

Great Timon, noble, worthy, royal Timon!

Ah, when the means are gone that buy this  
praise,

The breath is gone whereof this praise is made:

Fest-won, fast-lost; one cloud of winter  
showers, 380

These flies are couch'd.

Tim. Come, sermon me no further:  
No villanous bounty yet hath rais'd my heart;

Unwisely, not ignobly, have I given.

Why dost thou weep? Canst thou the con-  
science lack,

To think I shall lack friends? Secure thy heart:  
If I would breach the vessels of my love,

And try the experiment of hearts by borrowing,  
Men and men's fortunes could I frankly use

As I can bid thee speak.

Flav. Assurance bless your thoughts!

Tim. And, in some sort, these words of  
mine are crown'd, 390

That I account them blessings; for by these

Shall I try friends: you shall perceive how you  
Mistake my fortunes; I am wealthy in my  
friends.

Within there! Flaminius! Servilius!

Enter FLAMINIUS, SERVILIUS, and other  
SERVANTS.

Servants. My lord! my lord!

Tim. I will dispatch you severally; you to  
Lord Lucius; to Lord Lucullus you: I hunted  
with his honour to-day: you, to Sempronius:  
commend me to their loves, and, I am proud,  
say, that my occasions have found time to use  
em toward a supply of money: let the request  
be fifty talents.

Flam. As you have said, my lord.

Flav. [Aside] Lord Lucius and Lucullus  
hura!

Tim. Go you, sir, to the senators—

Of whom, even to the state's best health, I have  
Deserv'd this hearing—bid 'em send o' the  
instant

A thousand talents to me.

Flav. I have been hold—

For that I knew it the most general way— 395  
To them to use your signs and your name;  
But they do shake their heads, and I am here  
No richer in return.

Tim. Is't true? can't be!

Flav. They answer, in a joint and corporate  
voice,

That now they are at fall, want treasure, cannot  
Do what they would; are sorry—you are hon-  
ourable,—

But yet they could have wish'd—they know  
not—

Something hath been amiss—a noble nature  
May catch a wrench—would all were well—his  
pity!—

And so, intending other serious matters, 400  
After distasteful looks and these hard frowns,  
With certain half-caps and cold-mooring nods  
They from me into silence.

Tim. You gods, reward them!

Prithee, man, look cheerly. These old fellows  
Have their ingratitude in them hereditary:

Their blood is cold, 'tis cold, it seldom flows;  
'Tis lack of kindly warmth they are not kind;

And nature, as it grows again toward earth,  
Is fashion'd for the journey, dull and hard:

[To a Serv.] Go so. Ventidius. [To Flav.]  
Prithee, be not sad,

Thou art true and honest; ingeniously I speak,  
No blame belongs to thee. [To Serv.] Ventidius

bury'd his father; by whose death he was rais'd  
into a great estate: when he was poor,

Imprison'd and in company of friends,

I clear'd him with five talents: great shall thou  
be;

Sid him a score some good  
Touches his i— which

ber'd

With these five talents [Exit Serv.] [To Flav.]  
That had, give't them fellows.

To whom 'tis instant due. I'll speak, as  
think,

That Timon's fortunes 'mong his friends can sink.

*Flav.* I would I could not think it: that thought is bounty's foe; Being free itself, it thinks all others so. *[Exit.*

## ACT III.

SCENE I. *A room in Lucullus' house.*

FLAMINIUS waiting. Enter a Servant to him.

*Serv.* I have told my lord of you; he is coming down to you.

*Flam.* I thank you, sir.

Enter LUCULLUS.

*Serv.* Here's my lord.

*Lucul.* *[Aside.]* One of Lord Timon's men? a gift, I warrant. Why, this hits right: I dreamt of a silver basin and ewer to-night. Flaminius, honest Flaminius; you are very respectively welcome, sir. Fill me some wine. *[Exit Servant.]* And how does that honourable, complete, free-hearted gentleman of Athens, thy very bountiful good lord and master?

*Flam.* His health is well, sir.

*Lucul.* I am right glad that his health is well, sir; and what hast thou there under thy cloak, pretty Flaminius?

*Flam.* Faith, nothing but an empty box, sir; which, in my lord's behalf, I come to entreat your honour to supply; who, having great and instant occasion to use fifty talents, hath sent to your lordship to furnish him, nothing doubting your present assistance therein.

*Lucul.* Ia, la, la, la! 'nothing doubting,' says he! Alas, good lord! a noble gentleman 'tis, if he would not keep so good a house. Many a time and often I ha' dined with him, and told him on't, and come again to supper to him, of purpose to have him spend less, and yet he would embrace no counsel, take no warning by my coming. Every man has his fault, and honesty is his: I ha' told him on't, but I could ne'er get him from't.

Re-enter Servant, with wine.

*Serv.* Please your lordship, here is the wine.

*Lucul.* Flaminius, I have noted thee always well. Here's to thee.

*Flam.* Your lordship speaks your pleasure.

*Lucul.* I have observed thee always for a towardly prompt spirit—give thee thy due—and one that knows what belongs to reason; and exact use the time well, if the time use thee well: good parts in thee. *[To Serv.]* Get you gone, sirrah. *[Exit Serv.]* Draw nearer, honest Flaminius. Thy lord's a bountiful gentleman; but thou art wise; and thou knowest well enough, although thou comest to me, that this is no time to lend money, especially upon bare friendship, without security. Here's three solid pieces for thee: good boy, wink at me, and say thou sawest me not. Fare thee well.

*Flam.* Is't possible the world should so much differ?

*Lucul.* We often that lived! Fly, damned base-

To him that worships thee!

*Lucul.* Ha! now I see thou art a fool, and fit for thy master. *[Exit.]*

*Flam.* May these add to the number that may scald thee!

Let molten coin be thy damna—  
Thou disease of a friend, and not himself!  
Has friendship such a faint and milky heart,  
It turns in less than two nights? O you gods,  
I feel my master's passion! this slave,  
Unto his honour, has my lord's meat in him:  
Why should it thrive and turn to nutriment,  
When he is turn'd to poison?  
O, may diseases only work upon't!  
And, when he's sick to death, let not that part  
of nature

Which my lord paid for, be of any power  
To expel sickness, but prolong his hour! *[Exit.]*

SCENE II. *A public place.*

Enter LUCIUS, with three Strangers.

*Luc.* Who, the Lord Timon? he is my very good friend, and an honourable gentleman.

*First Stran.* We know him for no less, though we are but strangers to him. But I can tell you one thing, my lord, and which I hear from common rumours: now Lord Timon's happy hours are done and past, and his estate shrinks from him.

*Luc.* Fie, no, do not believe it; he cannot want for money.

*Sec. Stran.* But believe you this, my lord, that, not long ago, one of his men was with the Lord Lucullus to borrow so many talents, nay, urged extremely for't and showed what necessity belonged to't, and yet was denied.

*Luc.* How!

*Sec. Stran.* I tell you, denied, my lord.

*Luc.* What a strange case was that! now, before the gods, I am ashamed on't. Denied that honourable man! there was very little honour showed in't. For my own part, I must needs confess, I have received some small kindnesses from him, as money, plate, jewels and such-like trifles, nothing comparing to his; yet, had he mistook him and sent to me, I should ne'er have denied his occasion so many talents.

Enter SERVILIUS.

*Ser.* See, by good hap, yonder's my lord: I have sweat to see his honour. My honoured lord,—

*Luc.* Servilius! you are kindly met, sir. Fare thee well: commend me to thy honourable virtuous lord, my very exquisite friend.

*Ser.* May it please your honour, my lord hath sent—

*Luc.* Ha! what has he sent? I am so much endeared to that lord; he's ever sending: how shall I thank him, thinkest thou? And what has he sent now?

*Ser.* Has only sent his present occasion now, my lord; requesting your lordship to supply his instant use with so many talents.

*Luc.* I know his lordship is but merry with me;



†He cannot want fifty five hundred talents.

*Ser.* But in the mean time he wants less, my lord.

If his occasion were not virtuous,  
I should not urge it half so faithfully.

*Luc.* Dost thou speak seriously, Servilius?

*Ser.* Upon my soul 'tis true, sir.

*Luc.* What a wicked beast was I to disfigure myself against such a good time, when I might have shown myself honourable! how unluckily it happened, that I should purchase the day before for a little part, and undo a great deal of honour! Servilius, now, before the gods, I am not able to do,—the more beast, I say:—I was sending to use Lord Timon myself, these gentlemen can witness; but I would not, for the wealth of Athens, I had done't now. Commend me bountifully to his good lordship; and I hope his honour will conceive the fairest of me, because I have no power to be kind: and tell him this from me, I count it one of my greatest afflictions, say, that I cannot pleasure such an honourable gentleman. Good Servilius, will you befriend me so far, as to use mine own words to him?

*Ser.* Yes, sir, I shall.

*Luc.* I'll look you out a good turn, Servilius.

[*Exit Servilius.*]

As you said, Timon is shrunk indeed; and he that's once denied will hardly speed.

[*Exit.*]

*First Stran.* Do you observe this, Hostilius?

*Ser. Stran.* Ay, too well. 70

*First Stran.* Why, this is the world's soul; and just of the same piece

every flatterer's spirit. Who can call him his friend that dips in the same dish? for, in

knowing, Timon has been this lord's father, and kept his credit with his purse,

supported his estate; nay, Timon's money has paid his men their wages: he ne'er drinks,

But Timon's silver treads upon his lip; And yet—O, see the monstrousness of man

When he looks out in an ungrateful shape!— He does deny him, in respect of his,

What charitable men afford to beggars. 81

*Third Stran.* Religion groans at it.

*First Stran.* For mine own part, I never tasted Timon in my life,

Nor came any of his bounties over me, To mark me for his friend; yet, I protest,

For his right noble mind, illustrious virtue And honourable carriage,

Had his necessity made use of me, I would have put my wealth into donation, 80

And the best half should have return'd to him, So much I love his heart: but, I perceive,

Men must learn now with pity to dispense; For policy sits above conscience. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. A room in Sempronius' house.

Enter SEMPRONIUS, and a Servant of TIMON'S.

*Sem.* Must he needs trouble me in't,—hum! —bore all others!

He might have tried Lord Lucius or Lucullus; And now Ventidius is wealthy too,

Whom he redeem'd from prison: all these

Owe their estates unto him.

*Serv.*

They have all been touch'd and found base metal, for

They have all denied him.

*Sem.*

How! have they denied him? Has Ventidius and Lucullus denied him?

And does he send to me? Three! hum!

't shows but little love or judgement in him:

Must I be his last refuge? His friends, like physicians,

†Thrive, give him over: must I take the cure upon me?

Has much disgrac'd me in't; I'm angry at him,

That might have known my place: I see no sense for't,

But his occasions might have woo'd me first; For, in my conscience, I was the first man

That e'er received gift from him:

And does he think so backwardly of me now,

That I'll requite it last? No:

So it may prove an argument of laughter 80

To the rest, and amongst lords I be thought a fool.

I'd rather than the worth of thrice the sum, Had sent to me first, but for my mind's sake;

I'd such a courage to do him good. But now return,

And with their faint reply this answer join; Who hates mine honour shall not know my

coin. [*Exit.*]

*Serv.* Excellent! Your lordship's a goodly villain. The devil knew not what he did when

he made man politic; he cross'd himself by't; and I cannot think but, in the end, the villainies

of man will set him clear. How fairly this lord strives to appear foul! takes virtuous copies to

be wicked, like those that under hot ardent zeal would set whole realms on fire:

Of such a nature is his politic love.

This was my lord's best hope; now all are fled, Save only the gods: now his friends are dead,

Doors, that were ne'er acquainted with their wards

Many a bounteous year, must be employ'd Now to guard sure their master.

And this is all a liberal course allows; 80

Who cannot keep his wealth must keep his house. [*Exit.*]

SCENE IV. The same. A hall in Timon's house.

Enter two Servants of VARRO, and the Servant of LUCIUS, meeting TITUS, HORTENSIVS, and other Servants of TIMON'S creditors, waiting his coming out.

*First Var. Serv.* Well met; good morrow, Titus and Hortensius.

*Tit.* The like to you, kind Varro.

*Hor.* Lucius?

What, do we meet together?

*Luc. Serv.* Ay, and I think One business does command us all; for mine is money.

Is theirs and ours.

*Enter PHILOTUS.*

*Luc. Serv.* And Sir Philotas too!

*Phi.* Good day at once.

*Luc. Serv.* Welcome, good brother. What do you think the hour?

*Phi.* Labouring for nine.

*Luc. Serv.* So much!

*Phi.* Is not my lord seen yet?

*Luc. Serv.* Not yet.

*Phi.* I wonder on't; he was wont to stime

at seven.

*Luc. Serv.* Ay, but the days are wax'd

shorter with him:

You must consider that a prodigal course

Is like the sun's; but not, like his, recoverable.

I fear 'tis deepest winter in Lord Timon's purse;

That is, one may reach deep enough, and yet

Find little.

*Phi.* I am of your fear for that.

*Ti.* I'll show you how to observe a strange

event.

Your lord sends now for money.

*Hor.* Most true, he does.

*Ti.* And he wears jewels now of Timon's

gift.

For which I wait for money.

*Hor.* It is against my heart.

*Luc. Serv.* Mark, how strange it shows,

Timon in this should pay more than he owes:

And, ere we if your lord should wear rich

— send for money for 'em.

*Hor.* I'm weary of this charge, the gods can

witness;

I know my lord hath spent of Timon's wealth,

And now ingratitude makes it worse than

starbth.

*First Var. Serv.* Yes, mine's three thousand

crowns: what's yours?

*Luc. Serv.* Five thousand mine.

*First Var. Serv.* 'Tis much deep: and it

should seem by the sun,

Your master's countenance was above mine;

Else, surely, his had equal'd.

*Enter FLAMINIUS.*

*Ti.* One of Lord Timon's men.

*Luc. Serv.* Flaminius! Sir, a word: pray,

is my lord ready to come forth?

*Flam.* No, indeed, he is not.

*Ti.* We attend his lordship: pray, signify

so much.

*Flam.* I need not tell him that; he knows

you are too diligent. *[Exit. 40]*

*Enter FLAVIUS in a cloak, muffled.*

*Luc. Serv.* Ha! is not that his steward

muffled so?

He goes away in a cloud: call him, call him.

*Ti.* Do you hear, sir?

*Flav. Serv.* By your leave, sir—

*Luc.* What do ye ask of me, my friend?

*Flav.* We wait for certain money here, sir.

*Luc.* Money were as certain as your waiting.

Were ours enough. *[41]*

Why then prefer'd you not your suits as

hills.

When your false masters eat of my lord's meat

Then they could smile and fawn upon his debt

And take down the interest into their glisten

our maws.

You do yourselves but wrong to stir me up;

Let me pass quietly:

Believe't, my lord and I have made an end;

I have no more to reckon, he to spend.

*Luc. Serv.* Ay, but this answer will not

serve.

*Flav.* If 'twill not serve, 'tis not so base as

you;

For you serve knives. *[Exit. 42]*

*First Var. Serv.* How! what does his cash-

iered worship mutter!

*Sec. Var. Serv.* No matter what; he's poor,

and that's revenge enough. Who can speak

broader than he that has no house to put his

head in! such may rail against great buildings.

*Enter SERVILIUS.*

*Ti.* O, here's Servilius; now we shall know

some answer.

*Ser.* If I might beseech you, gentlemen, to

repair some other hour, I should derive much

from't; for, take't of my soul, my lord leans

wondrously to discontent: his comfortable tem-

per has forsook him; he's much out of health,

and keeps his chamber.

*Luc. Serv.* Many do keep their chamber

and not sick:

And, if it be so far beyond his health,

Methinks he should the sooner pay his debts,

And make a clear way to the gods.

*Ser.* Good gods!

*Ti.* We cannot take this for an answer, sir.

*Flam.* *[Within]* Servilius, help! My lord!

my lord!

*Enter TIMON, in a rage; FLAMINIUS*

*following.*

*Ti.* What are my debts opposed against

my passage! *[50]*

Have I been ever free, and must my house

Be my retentive enemy, my goal!

The place which I have feasted, does it now,

Like all mankind, show me an iron heart!

*Luc. Serv.* Put in now, Titus.

*Ti.* My lord, here is my bill.

*Luc. Serv.* Here's mine.

*Hor.* And mine, my lord.

*Both Var. Serv.* And ours, my lord.

*Phi.* All our bills.

*Ti.* Knock me down with 'em: chafe me

to the girdle.

*Luc. Serv.* Alas, my lord,—

*Ti.* Cut my heart to suets.

*Ti.* Mine, fifty talents.

*Ti.* Tell out my blood.

*Luc. Serv.* Five thousand crowns, my lord.

*Ti.* Five thousand drops pays that. What

pours!—and pours!

*First Var. Serv.* My lord,—

*Sec. Var. Serv.* My lord,—

*Ti.* Tear me, take me, and the gods fall

upon you! *[Exit. 51]*

*Hor.* Faith, I perceive our masters may throw their caps at their money: these debts may well be called desperate ones, for a mad-man owes 'em. *[Exit.*

*Re-enter TIMON and FLAVIUS.*

*Tim.* They have e'en put my breath from me, the slaves.  
*Creditors! devils!*

*Flav.* My dear lord,—

*Tim.* What if it should be so!

*Flav.* My lord,—

*Tim.* I'll have it so. My steward!

*Flav.* Here, my lord.

*Tim.* So fitly! Go, bid all my friends again, Lucius, Lucullus, and Sempronius;

*Alc. sirrah, all:*

I'll once more feast the rascals.

*Flav.* O my lord,  
You only speak from your distracted soul;  
There is not so much left, to furnish out  
A moderate table.

*Tim.* Be't not in thy care; go,  
I charge thee, invite them all: let in the tide  
Of knives once more; my cook and I'll provide. *[Exit.*

SCENE V. *The same. The senate-house.*

*The Senate sitting.*

*First Sen.* My lord, you have my voice to it;  
the fault's  
Bloody; 'tis necessary he should die:

Nothing emboldens us so much as mercy.

*Sec. Sen.* Most true; the law shall bruise him.

*Enter ALCIMADES, with Attendants.*

*Alcib.* Honour, health, and compassion to the senate!

*First Sen.* Now, captain?

*Alcib.* I am an humble suitor to your virtues;  
For pity is the virtue of the law,

And none but tyrants use it cruelly.

It pleases time and fortune to lie heavy

Upon a friend of mine, who, in hot blood,

Hath stepp'd into the law, which is past depth

To those that, without head, do plunge into't.

He is a man, setting his false aside,

Of comely virtues:

Nor did he soil the fact with cowardice—

An honour in him which buys out his fault—

But with a noble fury and fair spirit,

Being his reputation touch'd to death,

He did oppose his foe:

And with such spleen and unnoted passion

He did behave his anger, ere 'twas spent,

As if he had but provok'd an argument.

*First Sen.* You undergo too strange a paradox,

Striving to make an ugly deed look fair:

Your words have took such pains as if they la-

bour'd

To bring manslaughter into form and set quar-

relling

Upon the head of valour; which indeed

Is valour misbegot and came into the world

When scold and factions were newly born:

He's truly valiant that can wisely suffer  
The worst that man can breathe, and make his  
wrongs

His outides, to wear them like his raiment,  
carelessly,

And ne'er prefer his injuries to his heart,

To bring it into danger.

If wrongs be evils and enforce us kill,

What folly 'tis to hazard life for ill!

*Alcib.* My lord,—

*First Sen.* You cannot make gross

sins look clear:

To revenge is no valour, but to bear.

*Alcib.* My lords, then, under favour, pardon

me,

If I speak like a captain.

Why do fond men expose themselves to battle,

And not endure all threats! sleep upon't,

And let the foes quietly cut their throats,

Without repugnance? If there be

Such valour in the bearing, what make we

Abroad? why then, women are more valiant

That stay at home, if bearing carry it,

And the ass more captain than the lion, the

felon

Loaden with irona wiser than the judge,

If wisdom be in suffering. O my lords,

As you are great, be pitifully good:

Who cannot condemn rashness in cold blood!

To kill, I grant, is sin's extremest gust;

But, in defence, by mercy, 'tis most just.

To be in anger is implicity;

But who is man that is not angry?

Weigh but the crime with this.

*Sec. Sen.* You breathe in vain.

*Alcib.* In vain! his service done

At Lacedaemon and Byzantium

Were a sufficient bribe for his life.

*First Sen.* What's that?

*Alcib.* I say, my lords, he has done fair ser-

vice,

And shun in fight many of your enemies:

How full of valour did he bear himself!

In the last conflict, and made plentiful wounds!

*Sec. Sen.* He has made too much plenty with

'em;

He's a sworn rioter: he has a sin that often

Drowns him, and takes his valour prisoner:

If there were no foes, that were enough

To overcome him: in that beastly fury

He has been known to commit outrages,

And cherish factions: 'tis infer'd to us

His days are foul and his drink dangerous.

*First Sen.* He dies.

*Alcib.* Hard fatal! he might have

died in war.

My lords, if not for any parts in him—

Though his right arm might purchase his own

time

And be in debt to none—yet, more to save

you,

Take my deserts to him, and join 'em both:

And, for I know your severest enemies

Security, I'll pawn my vitals on

My honour to you, upon his good nature.

If by this crime he owes the law his life,

—let the war receive't in valour!

For law is strict, and war is nothing.

*First Sen.* We are for law: he dies; urge it no more.  
On height of our displeasure: friend or brother,  
He forfeits his own blood that spills another.

*Alci.* Must it be so? it must not be. My lords,

I do beseech you, know me. 90

*Sec. Sen.* How!

*Alci.* Call me to your remembrances.

*Third Sen.* What!

*Alci.* I cannot think but your age has forgot me;

It could not else be, I should prove so base,  
To sue, and be denied such common grace:  
My wounds ache at you.

*First Sen.* Do you dare our anger!  
'Tis in few words, but spacious in effect;  
We banish thee for ever.

*Alci.* Banish me!

Banish your dotage; banish usury,  
That makes the senate ugly. 100

*First Sen.* If, after two days' shine, Athens contain thee,

Attend our weightier judgement. And, not to swell our spirit,

He shall be executed presently.

[*Exeunt Senators.*]

*Alci.* Now the gods keep you old enough; that you may live

Only in bone, that none may look on you!

I'm worse than mad: I have kept back their foes,

While they have told their money and let out

Their coin upon large interest, I myself

Rich only in large hurts. All those for this!

Is this the balsam that the usuring senate 110

Pours into captains' wounds? Banishment!

It comes not ill; I hate not to be banish'd;

It is a cause worthy my spleen and fury,

That I may strike at Athens. I'll cheer up

My discontented troops, and lay for hearts.

The honour with most lands to be at odds;

Soldiers should brook as little wrongs as gods. [Exit.]

SCENE VI. The same. A banqueting-room in Timon's house.

*Music.* Tables set out: Servants attending.  
Enter divers Lords, Senators and others, at several doors.

*First Lord.* The good time of day to you, sir.

*Sec. Lord.* I also wish it to you. I think this honourable lord did but try us this other day.

*First Lord.* Upon that were my thoughts tiring, when we encountered: I hope it is not so low with him as he made it seem in the trial of his several friends.

*Sec. Lord.* It should not be, by the persuasion of his new feasting. 9

*First Lord.* I should think so: he hath sent me an earnest inviting, which many my near occasions did urge me to put off; but he hath conjured me beyond them, and I must needs

—*Sec. Lord.* In like manner was I in debt to my importunate business, but he would not

hear my excuse. I am sorry, when he sent to borrow of me, that my provision was out.

*First Lord.* I am sick of that grief too, as I understand how all things go. 20

*Sec. Lord.* Every man here's so. What would he have borrowed of you?

*First Lord.* A thousand pieces.

*Sec. Lord.* A thousand pieces!

*First Lord.* What of you?

*Sec. Lord.* He sent to me, sir. Here he comes.

*Enter TIMON and Attendants.*

*Tim.* With all my heart, gentlemen both; and how fare you?

*First Lord.* Ever at the best, hearing well of your lordship. 30

*Sec. Lord.* The swallow follows not summer more willing than we your lordship.

*Tim.* [Aside] Nor more willingly leaves winter; such summer-birds are men. Gentlemen, our dinner will not recompense this long stay: feast your ears with the music awhile, if they will fare so harshly o' the trumpet's sound; we shall to't presently.

*First Lord.* I hope it remains not unkindly with your lordship that I returned you an empty messenger. 41

*Tim.* O, sir, let it not trouble you.

*Sec. Lord.* My noble lord,—

*Tim.* Ah, my good friend, what cheer?

*Sec. Lord.* My most honourable lord, I am e'en sick of shame, that, when your lordship this other day sent to me, I was so unfortunate a beggar.

*Tim.* Think not on't, sir.

*Sec. Lord.* If you had sent but two hours before,— 51

*Tim.* Let it not cumber your better remembrance. [The banquet brought in.] Come, bring in all together.

*Sec. Lord.* All covered dishes!

*First Lord.* Royal cheer, I warrant you.

*Third Lord.* Doubt not that, if money and the season can yield it.

*First Lord.* How do you? What's the news?

*Third Lord.* Alcibiades is banished: hear you of it! 61

*First and Sec. Lord.* Alcibiades banished!

*Third Lord.* 'Tis so, be sure of it.

*First Lord.* How! how!

*Sec. Lord.* I pray you, upon what?

*Tim.* My worthy friends, will you draw near?

*Third Lord.* I'll tell you more anon. Here's a noble feast toward.

*Sec. Lord.* This is the old man still.

*Third Lord.* Will't hold? will't hold? 70

*Sec. Lord.* It does: but time will—and so—

*Third Lord.* I do conceive.

*Tim.* Each man to his stool, with that spur as he would to the lip of his mistress: your diet shall be in all places alike. Make not a city feast of it, to let the meat cool ere we can agree upon the first place: sit, sit. The gods require our thanks.

You great benefactors, sprinkle our society

with thankfulness. For your own gifts, make yourselves praised: but reserve still to give, lest your duties be despised. Lend to each man enough, that one need not lend to another; for, were your godheads to borrow of men, men would forsake the gods. Make the meat be beloved more than the man that gives it. Let no assembly of twenty be without a score of villains: if there sit twelve women at the table, let a dozen of them be—as they are. † The rest of your fees, O gods—the senators of Athens, together with the common lag of people—what is amiss in them, you gods, make suitable for destruction. For these my present friends, as they are to me nothing, so in nothing bless them, and to nothing are they welcome.

Uncover, dogs, and lap.

*[The dishes are uncovered and seen to be full of warm water.]*

Some speak. What does his lordship mean?  
Some other. I know not.

Tim. May you a better feast never behold,  
You knot of mouth-friends! smoke and luke-warm water

Is your perfection. This is Timon's last; 10  
Who, stuck and spangled with your flatteries,  
Washes it off, and sprinkles in your faces  
Your reeking villany.

*[Throwing the water in their faces.]*

Live loathed and long,  
Most smiling, smooth, detested parasites,  
Courteous destroyers, affable wolves, meek bears,

You fools of fortune, trencher-friends, time's flies,

Cap and knee slaves, vapours, and minute-jacks!

Of man and beast the infinite malady  
Trust you quite o'er! What, dost thou go!  
Soft! take thy physic first—thou too—and thou;— 110

Stay, I will lend thee money, borrow none.

*[Throws the dishes at them, and drives them out.]*

What, all in motion? Henceforth be no feast,  
Whereat a villain's not a welcome guest.

Burn, house! sink, Athens! henceforth hated be

Of Timon man and all humanity! *[Exit.]*

*Re-enter the Lords, Senators, &c.*

First Lord. How now, my lords!

Sec. Lord. Know you the quality of Lord Timon's fury?

Third Lord. Push! did you see my cap!

Fourth Lord. I have lost my gown. 120

First Lord. He's but a mad lord, and nought but humour sways him. He gave me a jewel the other day, and now he has beat it out of my hat: did you see my jewel?

Third Lord. Did you see my cap?

Sec. Lord. Here 'tis.

Fourth Lord. Here lies my gown.

First Lord. Let's make no stay.

Sec. Lord. Lord Timon's mad.

Third Lord. I feel't upon my bones.

Fourth Lord. One day he gives us diamonds, next day stones. *[Exeunt.]*

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. *Without the walls of Athens.*

*Enter TIMON.*

Tim. Let me look back upon thee. O thou wall,

That girdlest in those wolves, dive in the earth,  
And fence not Athens! Matrons, turn incontinent!

Obedience fail in children! slaves and fools,  
Pluck the grave wrinkled senate from the bench,

And minister in their steads! to general filth  
'Convert o' the instant, green virginity,  
Do't in your parents' eyes! bankrupts, hold fast;

Rather than render back, out with your knives,  
And cut your trusters' throats! bound servants, steal! 10

Large-handed robbers your grave masters are,  
And pill by law. Maid, to thy master's bed;  
Thy mistress is o' the brothel! Son of sixteen,  
Pluck the lined crutch from thy old limping sire,

With it beat out his brains! Piety, and fear,  
Religion to the gods, peace, justice, truth,

Domestic awe, night-rest, and neighbourhood,  
Instruction, manners, mysteries, and trades,

Degrees, observances, customs, and laws,  
Decline to your confounding contraries, 20  
And let confusion live! Plagues, incident to men,

Your potent and infectious fevers heap  
On Athens, ripe for stroke! Thou cold scetic,  
Cripple our senators, that their limbs may halt  
As lamely as their manners! Lust and liberty

Creep in the minds and marrows of our youth,  
That 'gainst the stream of virtue they may strive,

And drown themselves in riot! Itches, blains,  
Sow all the Athenian bosoms; and their crop  
Be general leprosy! Breath infect breath, 30  
That their society, as their friendship, may  
Be merely poison! Nothing I'll bear from thee,

But nakedness, thou detestable town!  
Take thou that too, with multiplying bang!  
Timon will to the woods; where he shall find  
The unkindest beast more kinder than man-kind.

The gods confound—hear me, you good gods all—  
The Athenians both within and out that wall!  
And grant, as Timon grows, his hate may grow  
To the whole race of mankind, high and low!  
Amen. *[Exit.]*

SCENE II. *Athens. A room in Timon's house.*

*Enter FLAVIUS, with two or three Servants.*

First Serv. Hear you, master steward,  
where's our master?  
Are we undone? cast off? nothing remaining?

*Flav.* Alack, my fellows, what should I say to you?  
Let me be recorded by the righteous gods,  
I am as poor as you.

*First Serv.* Such a house broke!  
So noble a master fall'n! All gone! and not  
One friend to take his fortune by the arm,  
And go along with him!

*Sec. Serv.* As we do turn our backs  
From our companion thrown into his grave,  
So his familiars to his buried fortunes  
Slink all away, leave their false vows with him,  
Like empty purses pick'd; and his poor self,  
A dedicated beggar to the air,  
With his disease of all-shunn'd poverty,  
Walks, like contempt, alone. More of our  
fellows.

*Enter other Servants.*

*Flav.* All broken implements of a ruin'd house.

*Third Serv.* Yet do our hearts wear Timon's livery;

That see I by our faces; we are fellows still,  
Serving alike in sorrow: leak'd is our bark,  
And we, poor mates, stand on the dying deck,  
Hearing the surges threat: we must all part  
Into this sea of air.

*Flav.* Good fellows all,  
The latest of my wealth I'll share amongst  
you.

Wherever we shall meet, for Timon's sake,  
Let's yet be fellows; let's shake our heads,  
and say,

As 'twere a knell unto our master's fortunes,  
'We have seen better days.' Let each take  
some;

Nay, put out all your hands. Not one word  
more:

Thus part we rich in sorrow, parting poor. *so*  
[*Servants embrace, and part several ways.*]

O, the fierce wretchedness that glory brings us!  
Who would not wish to be from wealth exempt,  
Since riches point to misery and contempt!  
Who would be so mock'd with glory? or to live  
But in a dream of friendship?

To have his pomp and all what state compounds  
But only painted, like his varnish'd friends!  
Poor honest lord, brought low by his own

by goodness! Strange, unusual blood,  
When man's worst sin is, he does too much  
good!

Who, then, dares to be half so kind again?  
For bounty, that makes gods, does still mar  
men.

My dearest lord, bless'd, to be most accursed,  
Rich, only to be wretched, thy great fortunes  
Are made thy chief afflictions. Alas, kind  
lord!

He's flung in rage from this ingrateful seat  
Of monstrous friends, nor has he with him to  
seek his life, or that which can command it.  
and inquire him out:

or give his mind with my best will;  
I have gold, I'll be his steward still. *so*

[*Exit.*]

SCENE III. *Woods and cave, near the sea-shore.*

*Enter TIMON, from the cave.*

*Tim.* O blessed breeding sun, draw fro  
the earth  
Rotten humidity; below thy sister's orb  
Infect the air! Twain'd brothers of one womb  
Whose procreation, residence, and birth,  
Scarcely is dividant, touch *and* with sever  
fortunes;  
The greater scorns the lesser: not nature,  
To whom all sorcs lay siege, can bear gre  
fortune,

But by contempt of nature.  
Raise me this beggar, and deny 't that lord;  
The senator shall bear contempt hereditary,  
The beggar native honour.  
It is the pasture lards the rother's sides,  
The want that makes him lean. Who dar  
who dares,

In purity of manhood stand upright,  
And say 'This man's a flatterer' if one be,  
So are they all; for every grise of fortune  
Is smooch'd by that below: the learned pate  
Ducks to the golden fool: all is oblique;  
There's nothing level in our cursed natures,  
But direct villany. Therefore, be abhorr'd;  
All feasts, societies, and throngs of men!  
His semblable, yea, himself, Timon designs:  
Destruction fang mankind! Earth, yield u  
roots! [*Digging.*]

Who seeks for better of thee, snuffs his palate  
With thy most operant poison! What is here  
Gold! yellow, glittering, precious gold! No  
gods,

I am no idle votariar: roots, you clear heavens  
Thus much of this will make black white, for  
fair,

Wrong right, base noble, old young, coward  
valiant.

Ha, you gods! why this? what this, you gods  
Why, this

Will lug your priests and servants from you  
sides,

Pluck stout men's pillows from below the  
heads:

This yellow slave  
Will knit and break religions, bless the ac  
cursed,

Make the hoar leprosy adored, place thieves  
And give them title, knce and approbation  
With senators on the bench: this is it

That makes the wappen'd widow wed again;  
She, whom the spiral stairs and windows awe  
Would cast the gorge at, this embalms and  
spices

To the April day again. Come, damned earth!  
Thou common whore of mankind, that put'st  
odds

Among the rout of nations, I will make thee  
Do thy right nature. [*March after 40.*] Ha  
a drum? Then 't's quick.

But yet I'll bury thee; thou'lt go, strong ti  
When goodly keepers of thee cannot stand.  
Nay, say thou out for earnest.

[*Knocking some gold*]

*Enter ALCEBIADES, with drum and staff, in warlike manner; PHRYNIA and TIMANDRA.*

*Alcib.* What art thou there? speak.

*Tim.* A beast, as thou art. The canker gnaw thy heart.

For showing me again the eyes of man! 50

*Alcib.* What is thy name? Is man so hateful to thee?

That art thyself a man?

*Tim.* I am Misanthropos, and hate mankind. For thy part, I do wish thou wert a dog, That I might love thee something.

*Alcib.* I know thee well; But in thy fortunes am unlearn'd and strange.

*Tim.* I know thee too; and more than that I know thee.

I not desire to know. Follow thy drum; With man's blood paint the ground, gules, gules:

Religious canons, civil laws are cruel: 60 Then what should war be? This fell whore of thine

Hath in her more destruction than thy sword, For all her cherubin look.

*Phry.* Thy lips rot off!

*Tim.* I will not kiss thee; then the rot returns

To thine own lips again.

*Alcib.* How came the noble Timon to this change?

*Tim.* As the moon does, by wanting light to give:

But then renew I could not, like the moon; There were no suns to borrow of.

*Alcib.* Noble Timon, What friendship may I do thee?

*Tim.* None, but to 70 Maintain my opinion.

*Alcib.* What is it, Timon?

*Tim.* Promise me friendship, but perform none: if thou wilt not promise, the gods plague thee, for thou art a man! if thou dost perform, confound thee, for thou art a man!

*Alcib.* I have heard in some sort of thy miseries.

*Tim.* Thou saw'st them, when I had prosperity.

*Alcib.* I see them now; then was a blessed time.

*Tim.* As thine is now, held with a brace of harlots.

*Timan.* Is this the Athenian ruin, whom the world 80

Voiced so regardfully?

*Tim.* Art thou Timandra?

*Timan.* Yes.

*Tim.* Be a whore still: they love thee not that use thee;

Give them diseases, leaving with thee their lust. Make use of thy suit hours: season the claves

For tubs and baths; bring down reas-checked youth

To the tubs and the diet.

*Timan.* Many thou, monster!

*Alcib.* Pardon him, sweet Timandra; for his wife

Are drown'd and lost in his calamities.

I have but little gold of late, brave Timon, 90 The want whereof doth daily make revolt In my penurious hand: I have heard, and

grieved. How cursed Athens, mindless of thy worth, Forgetting thy great deeds, when neighbour

But for thy sword and fortune, trod upon the Tim.

*Alcib.* I am thy friend, and pity thee, dear Timon.

*Tim.* How dost thou pity him whom thou dost trouble?

I had rather be alone.

*Alcib.* Why, fare thee well: Here is some gold for thee.

*Tim.* Keep it, I cannot eat it. 100

*Alcib.* When I have laid proud Athens on a heap—

*Tim.* War'st thou 'gainst Athens?

*Alcib.* Ay, Timon, and have cause.

*Tim.* The gods confound them all in thy conquest;

And thee after, when thou hast conquer'd!

*Alcib.* Why me, Timon?

*Tim.* That, by killing of villains, Thou wast born to conquer my country.

Put up thy gold: go on,—here's gold,—go on; Be as a planetary plague, when Jove

Will o'er some high-voiced city hang his poison In the sick air: let not thy sword skip one: 110

Pity not honour'd age for his white beard; He is an usurer: strike me the commonest

matron;

It is her habit only that is honest. Himself's a bawd: let not the virgin's cheek

Make soft thy trenchant sword; for those milk-paps,

That through the window-haze bee at men's eyes,

Are not within the leaf of pity writ. But set them down horrible traitors: spare not

the babe. Whose dimpled smiles from teats exhort their

mercy: Think it a bastard, whom the oracle 120

Hath doubtfully pronounced thy threat shall out.

And mince it sans remorse: swear against objects;

Put armour on thine ears and on thine eyes; Whose proof, nor yells of mothers, maids, nor

babe, Nor sight of priests in holy vestments blessing. Shall please a jot. There's gold to pay thy

needless: Make large confusion; and, thy fury spent,

Confounded be thyself! Spent not, be gone.

*Alcib.* Hast thou gold yet? I'll take the gold thou givest me.

Not all thy counsel. 130

*Tim.* Dost thou, or dost thou not, Timon's curse upon thee!

*Phr. and Timan.* Give us some gold, great Timon: hast thou more?

*Tim.* Enough to make a whore forswear her trade,  
And to make whores, a bawd. Hold up, you sluts,  
Your aprons mountant; you are not oathable,—  
Although, I know, you'll swear, terribly swear  
Into strong shudders and to heavenly agues  
The immortal gods that hear you,—spare your oaths,  
I'll trust to your conditions: be whores still;  
And he whose pious breath seeks to convert you,  
Be strong in whore, allure him, burn him up;  
Let your close fire predominate his smoke,  
And be no turncoats: yet may your pains, six months,  
Be quite contrary: and thatch your poor thin roofs  
With burthens of the dead;—some that were hang'd,  
No matter:—wear them, betray with them: whose still;  
Paint till a horse may mire upon your face:  
A pox of wrinkles!

*Phr. and Timan.* Well, more gold: what then?

Believe't, that we'll do any thing for gold. 150

*Tim.* Consumptions sow  
In hollow bones of man; strike their sharp shins,  
And mar men's spurring. Crack the lawyer's voice,  
That he may never more false title plead,  
Nor sound his quilllets shrilly: hear the flamen,  
That scolds against the quality of flesh,  
And not believes himself: down with the nose,  
Down with it flat; take the bridge quite away  
Of him that, his particular to foreace,  
Smells from the general weal: make cur'd-pate ruffians bald; 160  
And let the unscar'd braggarts of the war  
Derive some pain from you: plague all;  
That your activity may defeat and quell  
The source of all erection. There's more gold:  
Do you damn others, and let this damn you,  
And ditches grave you all!

*Phr. and Timan.* More counsel with more money, bounteous Timon.

*Tim.* More whore, more mischief first; I have given you earnest.

*Alci.* Strike up the drum towards Athens!  
Farewell, Timon!

If I thrive well, I'll visit thee again. 170

*Tim.* If I hope well, I'll never see thee more.

*Alci.* I never did thee harm.

*Tim.* Yes, thou spok'st well of me.

*Alci.* Call't thou that harm?

*Tim.* Men daily find it. Get thee away, and take

Thy beggars with thee.

*Alci.* We but offend him. Strike!

[Drum beats. *Exit Alciades, Phrynia, and Timandra.*

*Tim.* That nature, being sick of man's un-

Should not be hungry! Common mother, thou,

[Digging.

Whose womb unmeasurable, and infinite breast,  
Teems, and feeds all; whose self-same mettle,  
Whereof thy proud child, arrogant man, is puff'd, 180

Engenders the black toad and adder blue,  
The gilded newt and eyeless venom'd worm,

With all the abhorred birth below crisp heaven  
Whereon Hyperion's quickening fire doth shine;

Yield him, who all thy human sons doth hate,  
From forth thy plenteous bosom, one poor root:

Ensear thy fertile and concepitious womb,  
Let it no more bring out ingrateful man!

Go great with tigers, dragons, wolves, and bears;

Teem with new monsters, whom thy upward face 190

Hath to the marbled mansion all above  
Never presented!—(I, a root,—dear thanks!—  
Dry up thy marrows, vines, and plough-torn leas;

Whereof ingrateful man, with liquorish draughts  
And morsels unctuous, greases his pure mind,  
That from it all consideration slips!

### Enter APEMANTUS.

More man? plague, plague!

*Apem.* I was directed hither: men report  
Thou dost affect my manners, and dost use them.

*Tim.* 'Tis, then, because thou dost not keep a dog, 200

Whom I would imitate: consumption catch thee!

*Apem.* This is in thee a nature but infected;  
A poor unmanly melancholy sprung  
From change of fortune. Why this spade! this place!

This slave-like habit? and these looks of care?  
Thy flatterers yet wear silk, drink wine, lie soft;

Hug their diseased perfumes, and have forgot  
That ever Timon was: shame not these woods,  
By putting on the cunning of a carper.

Be thou a flatterer now, and seek to thrive 210  
By that which has undone thee: hinge thy knee,

And let his very breath, whom thou'lt observe,  
Blow off thy cap: praise his most vicious strain,  
And call it excellent: thou wast told thus:

Thou gavest thine ears like tapsters that bid welcome

To knaves and all approachers: 'tis most just  
That thou turn rascal; hadst thou wealth again,  
Rascals should have't. Do not assume my likeness.

*Tim.* Were I like thee, I'd throw away myself.

*Apem.* Thou hast cast away thyself, being like thyself; 220

A madman so long, now a fool. What, think'st  
That the bleak air, thy boisterous chamberlain,  
Will put thy shirt on warm? wilt these snow'd trees,

That have outlived the eagle, page thy heat,  
And skip where thou point'st out? wilt the cold brook,

Candled with ice, candle thy morning task.



To cure thy o'er-night's surfeit! Call the creatures

Whose naked natures live in all the spite  
Of wrinkled heaven, whose bare unboused  
trunks,

To the conflicting elements exposed, <sup>230</sup>  
Answer mere nature; bid them flatter thee;  
O, thou shalt find—

*Tim.* A fool of thee: depart.  
*Apem.* I love thee better now than e'er I did.

*Tim.* I hate thee worse.

*Apem.* Why?

*Tim.* Thou flatter'st misery.  
*Apem.* I flatter not; but say thou art a  
cattiff.

*Tim.* Why dost thou seek me out?

*Apem.* To vex thee.

*Tim.* Always a villain's office or a fool's.  
Dost please thyself in't?

*Apem.* Ay.

*Tim.* What! a knave too?  
*Apem.* If thou didst put this sour-cold  
habit on <sup>239</sup>

To castigate thy pride, 'twere well; but thou  
Dost it enforcedly; thou'ldst courtier be again,  
Wert thou not beggar. Willing misery  
Outlives uncertain pomp, is crown'd before:  
The one is killing still, never complete;  
The other, at high wish: best state, contentless,  
Hath a distracted and most wretched being,  
Worse than the worst, content.

Thou shouldst desire to die, being miserable.

*Tim.* Not by his breath that is more miser-  
able.

Thou art a slave, whom Fortune's tender arm  
With favour never clasp'd; but bred a dog, <sup>25</sup>  
Hast thou, like us from our first swath,  
proceeded

The sweet degrees that this brief world affords  
To such as may the passive drugs of it  
Freely command, thou wouldst have plunged  
thyself

In general riot; melted down thy youth  
In different beds of lust; and never learn'd  
The icy precepts of respect, but follow'd  
The sugar'd game before thee. But myself,  
Who had the world as my confectionary, <sup>260</sup>  
The mouths, the tongues, the eyes and hearts of  
men

At duty, more than I could frame employment,  
That numberless upon me stuck as leaves  
Do on the oak, have with one winter's brush  
Fell from their boughs and left me open, bare  
For every storm that blows: I, to bear this,  
That never knew but better, is some burden:  
Thy nature did commence in sufferance, time  
Hath made thee hard in't. Why shouldst thou  
hate men?

They never flatter'd thee: what hast thou  
given? <sup>270</sup>

If thou wilt curse, thy father, that poor rag,  
Must be thy subject, who in spite put stuff  
To some she beggar and compounded thee  
Poor rogue hereditary. Hence, be gone!  
If thou hadst not been born the worst of men,  
Thou hadst been a knave and flatterer.

*Apem.*

*Tim.* Art thou proud yet?

*Apem.* Ay, that I am not thee.

*Apem.* I, that I was

No prodigal.

*Tim.* I, that I am one now:  
Were all the wealth I have shut up in thee,  
I'd give thee leave to hang it. Get thee gone.  
That the whole life of Athens were in this! <sup>285</sup>  
Thus would I eat it. *[Eating a root.]*

*Apem.* Here; I will mend thy feast.  
*[Offering him a root.]*

*Tim.* First mend my company, take away  
thyself.

*Apem.* So I shall mend mine own, by the  
lack of thine.

*Tim.* 'Tis not well mended so, it is but  
botch'd;

If not, I would it were.

*Apem.* What wouldst thou have to Athens?  
*Tim.* These thither in a whirlwind. If thou  
wilt,

Tell them there I have gold; look, so I have.

*Apem.* Here is no use for gold.

*Tim.* The best and truest; <sup>290</sup>  
For here it sleeps, and does no hired harm.

*Apem.* Where liest o' nights, Timon?

*Tim.* Under that's above me.

Where feed'st thou o' days, Apemantus?

*Apem.* Where my stomach finds meat; or,  
rather, where I eat it.

*Tim.* Would poison were obedient and knew  
my mind!

*Apem.* Where wouldst thou send it?

*Tim.* To sauce thy dishes. <sup>299</sup>

*Apem.* The middle of humanity thou never  
knewest, but the extremity of both ends: when  
thou wast in thy gilt and thy perfume, they  
mocked thee for too much curiosity; in thy  
rags thou knowest none, but art despised for  
the contrary. There's a mediator for thee, eat it.

*Tim.* On what I hate I feed not.

*Apem.* Dost hate a mediator?

*Tim.* Ay, though it look like thee.

*Apem.* An thou hadst hated meddlers sooner,  
thou shouldst have loved thyself better now.  
What man didst thou ever know unthrift that  
was beloved after his means?

*Tim.* Who, without those means thou talkest  
of, didst thou ever know beloved?

*Apem.* Myself.

*Tim.* I understand thee; thou hadst some  
means to keep a dog.

*Apem.* What things in the world canst thou  
nearest compare to thy flatterers? <sup>309</sup>

*Tim.* Women nearest; but men, men are  
the things themselves. What wouldst thou do  
with the world, Apemantus, if it lay in thy  
power?

*Apem.* Give it the beasts, to be rid of the  
men.

*Tim.* Wouldst thou have thyself fall in the  
confusion of men, and remain a beast with the  
beasts?

*Apem.* Ay, Timon.

*Tim.* A beastly ambition, which the gods  
grant thee't attain to! If thou wert the lion,  
the fox would beguile thee: if thou wert the  
lamb, the fox would eat thee; if thou wert the  
fox, the lion would suspect thee, and  
adventure thou wert accused by the ass!

were the ass, thy dulness would torment thee, and still thou livest but as a breakfast to the wolf: if thou wert the wolf, thy greediness would afflict thee, and oft thou shouldst hamstring thy life for thy dinner: wert thou the unicorn, pride and wrath would confound thee and make thine own self the conquest of thy fury: wert thou a bear, thou wouldst be killed by the house: wert thou a horse, thou wouldst be seized by the leopard: wert thou a leopard, thou wert german to the lion and the spots of thy kindred were jurors on thy life: all thy safety were remoteness and thy defence absence. What beast couldst thou be, that were not subject to a beast? and what a beast art thou already, that seest not thy loss in transformation!

*Apem.* If thou couldst please me with speaking to me, thou mightst have hit upon it here: the commonwealth of Athens is become a forest of beasts.

*Tim.* How has the ass broke the wall, that thou art out of the city?

*Apem.* Yonder comes a poet and a painter: the plague of company light upon thee! I will fear to catch it and give way: when I know not what else to do, I'll see thee again.

*Tim.* When there is nothing living but thee, thou shalt be welcome. I had rather be a beggar's dog than *Apemantus*.

*Apem.* Thou art the cap of all the fools alive.

*Tim.* Would thou wert clean enough to spit upon!

*Apem.* A plague on thee! thou art too bad to curse.

*Tim.* All villains that do stand by thee are pure.

*Apem.* There is no leprosy but what thou speak'st.

*Tim.* If I name thee.

I'll beat thee, but I should infect my hands.

*Apem.* I would my tongue could rot them off!

*Tim.* Away, thou issue of a mangy dog!

Others does kill me that thou art alive;

I would to see thee.

*Apem.* Would thou wouldst burst!

*Tim.* Away, thou tedious rogue! I am sorry I shall lose a stone by thee.

*Apem.* Beasts!

*Tim.* Slaves!

*Apem.* Tond!

*Tim.* Rogue, rogue, rogue!

I am sick of this false world, and will love

more necessities upon't.  
I'll presently prepare thy grave:  
Eight fennel of the sea may beat  
grave-stone daily: make thine epitaph,  
if death in me at others' lives may laugh.  
[To the gods.] O thou sweet king-killer, and  
son and slave! thou bright defiler  
of sweet bed! thou valiant Mars!  
new young, fresh, loved and delicate

Whom bluish doth thaw the consecrated snow  
That lies on Dian's lap! thou visible god,  
That seld'st close impossibilities  
And makest them kiss! that speak'st with  
every tongue.

To every purpose! O thou touch of hearts!  
Think, thy slave man rebels, and by thy virtue  
Set them into confounding odds, that beasts  
May have the world in empire!

*Apem.* Would 'twere so!  
But not till I am dead. I'll say thou 'st gold-  
Thou wilt be throng'd to shortly.

*Tim.* Throng'd to!

*Apem.* Ay.

*Tim.* Thy back, I prithee.

*Apem.* Live, and love thy misery.

*Tim.* Long live so, and so die. [Exit *Apemantus*.] I am quit.  
More things like men! Eat, Timon, and abhor  
them.

*Enter Bapdittii.*

*First Ban.* Where should he have this gold?  
It is some poor fragment, some slender ort of  
his remainder: the mere want of gold, and the  
falling-from of his friends, drove him into this  
melancholy.

*Sec. Ban.* It is noised he hath a mass of  
treasure.

*Third Ban.* Let us make the assay upon  
him: if he care not for't, he will supply us  
easily; if he covetously reserve it, how shall'st  
get it!

*Sec. Ban.* True; for he bears it not about  
him, 'tis hid.

*First Ban.* Is not this he?

*Bapdittii.* Where?

*Sec. Ban.* 'Tis his description.

*Third Ban.* He; I know him.

*Bapdittii.* Save thee, Timon.

*Tim.* Now thieves?

*Bapdittii.* Soldiers, not thieves.

*Tim.* Both too; and women's sons.

*Bapdittii.* We are not thieves, but men that  
much do want.

*Tim.* Your greatest want is, you want much  
of meat.

Why should you want? Behold, the earth hath  
roots;

Within this mile break forth a hundred springs;  
The oaks bear mast, the briars scarlet hips;

The bounteous housewife, nature, on each bush  
Lays her full acres before you. Want! why  
want?

*First Ban.* We cannot live on grass, on  
berries, water,

As beasts and birds and fishes.

*Tim.* Nor on the beasts themselves, the  
birds, and fishes;

You must eat men. Yet thanks I must you  
That you are thieves profess'd, and yet work not  
in holier shapes: for there is boundless theft  
in limited professions. Smack! thieves!

Here's gold. Go, seek the subtle blood of the  
grape.

Till the high fever poison your blood to death.  
And so escape hanging: trust not the physician;  
His antidotes are poison, and he slays.

Is he than you rob: take wealth and lives to  
 365

no villainy, do, since you protest to do't,  
 like workmen. I'll example you with thievery:  
 the sun's a thief, and with his great attraction  
 jobs the vast sea: the moon's an arrant thief,  
 and her pale fire she snatches from the sun:  
 the sea's a thief, whose liquid surge resolves  
 the moon into salt tears: the earth's a thief,  
 [hat feeds and breeds by a composture stolen  
 from general excrement: each thing's a thief:  
 the laws, your curb and whip, in their rough  
 power

Have uncheck'd theft. Love not yourselves:  
 away,

Rob one another. There's more gold. Cut  
 throats:

All that you meet are thieves: to Athens go,  
 Break open shops; nothing can you steal, 450  
 But thieves do lose it: steal no less for this  
 I give you; and gold confound you howe'er!  
 Amen.

*Third Ban.* Has almost charmed me from  
 my profession, by persuading me to it.

*First Ban.* 'Tis in the malice of mankind  
 that he thus advises us; not to have us thrive in  
 our mystery.

*Sec. Ban.* I'll believe him as an enemy, and  
 give over my trade. 460

*First Ban.* Let us first see peace in Athens:  
 there is no time so miserable but a man may be  
 so. [*Exeunt Banditti.*]

*Enter FLAVIUS.*

*Flav.* O you gods!  
 yond despaired and ravenous man my lord!  
 all of decay and failing! O monument  
 and wonder of good deeds evilly bestow'd!  
 that an alteration of honour 469  
 as desperate want made!

that viler thing upon the earth than friends  
 who can bring noblest minds to basest ends!  
 how rarely does it meet with this time's guile,  
 when man was wish'd to love his enemies!  
 rant I may ever love, and rather woo  
 those that would mischief me than those that  
 do!

has caught me in his eye: I will present  
 my honest grief unto him; and, as my lord,  
 till serve him with my life. My dearest  
 master!

*Tim.* Away! what art thou?

*Flav.* Have you forgot me, sir?

*Tim.* Why dost ask that? I have forgot all  
 men; 480

then, if thou grant'st thou'rt a man, I have  
 forgot thee.

*Flav.* An honest poor servant of yours.

*Tim.* Then I know thee not:  
 never had honest man about me, I; all  
 kept were knaves, to serve in meat to villains.

*Flav.* The gods are witnesses,  
 so'er did poor steward wear a true grief  
 For his undone lord than mine eyes for you.

*Tim.* What, dost thou weep? Come nearer.

Then I love thee.

Because thou set'st a woman, and didn't 490  
 thy mankind; whose eyes do never give

But thorough lust and laughter. Pity's sleeping:  
 Strange times, that weep with laughing, not  
 with weeping!

*Flav.* I beg of you to know me, good my  
 lord,

To accept my grief and whilst this poor wealth

To entertain me as your steward still.

*Tim.* Had I a steward

So true, so just, and now so comfortable!

It almost turns my dangerous nature mild.

Let me behold thy face. Surely, this man 500  
 Was born of woman.

Forgive my general and exceptionless readiness,  
 You perpetual-sober gods! I do proclaim

One honest man—mistake me not—but one;

No more, I pray,—and he's a steward.

How fain would I have hated all mankind!

And thou redeem'st thyself: but all, save thee,  
 I fell with curses.

Methinks thou art more honest now than wise;

For, by oppressing and betraying me, 510

Thou might'st have sooner got another service:

For many so arrive at second masters,

Upon their first lord's neck. But tell me true—

For I must ever doubt, though ne'er so sure—

Is not thy kindness subtle, covetous,

If not a usuring kindness, and, as rich men deal

gifts,

Expecting in return twenty for one?

*Flav.* No, my most worthy master; in whose

breast

Doubt and suspect, alas, are placed too late:

You should have fear'd false friends when you

did feast: 520

Suspect still comes where an estate is lost.

That which I show, heaven knows, is merely

love,

Duty and zeal to your unmatched mind,

Care of your food and living; and, believe it,

My most honour'd lord,

For any benefit that points to me,

Either in hope or present, I'd exchange

For this one wish, that you had power and

wealth

To requite me, by making rich yourself.

*Tim.* Look thee, 'tis so! Thou singly honest 530

man,

Here, take: the gods out of my misery

Have sent thee treasure. Go, live rich and

happy;

But thus condition'd: thou shalt build down

men;

Hate all, curse all, show charity to none,

But let the famish'd flesh slide from the bone,

Ere thou relieve the beggar; give so dogs

What thou deny'st to man; let pious swallows

'em.

Deba willer 'em to nothing: be man like

blasted woods,

And may diseases lick up their false blood!

And so farewell and thrive. 540

*Flav.* O, let me stay,

And comfort you, my master.

*Tim.* If thou hast

Stay not; for, whilst thou art here, and

and so

Timon returns to his cave.

## ACT V.

SCENE I. *The woods. Before Timon's cave.**Enter Poet and Painter; TIMON watching them from his cave.***Pain.** As I took note of the place, it cannot be far where he abides.**Poet.** What's to be thought of him? does the rumour hold for true, that he's so full of gold?**Pain.** Certain: Alcibiades reports it: Phrynia and Timandra had gold of him: he likewise enriched poor straggling soldiers with great quantity: 'tis said he gave unto his steward a mighty sum.**Poet.** Then this breaking of his has been but a try for his friends.**Pain.** Nothing else: you shall see him a palm in Athens again, and flourish with the highest. Therefore 'tis not amiss we tender our loves to him, in this supposed distress of his: it will show honestly in us; and is very likely to load our purposes with what they travail for, if it be a just and true report that goes of his having.**Poet.** What have you now to present unto him?**Pain.** Nothing at this time but my visitation: only I will promise him an excellent piece.**Poet.** I must serve him so too, tell him of an intent that's coming toward him.**Pain.** Good as the best. Promising is the very air o' the time: it opens the eyes of expectation: performance is ever the duller for his act; and, but in the plainer and simpler kind of people, the deed of saying is quite out of use. To promise is most courtly and fashionable: performance is a kind of will or testament which argues a great sickness in his judgement that makes it.*[Timon comes from his cave, behind.]*  
**Tim.** *[Aside]* Excellent workman! thou canst not paint a man so bad as is thyself.**Poet.** I am thinking what I shall say I have provided for him: it must be a personating of himself; a satire against the softness of prosperity, with a discovery of the infinite flatteries that follow youth and opulency.**Tim.** *[Aside]* Must thou needs stand for a villain in thine own work? wilt thou whip thine own faults in other men? Do so, I have gold for thee.**Poet.** Nay, let's seek him:  
Then do we sin against our own estate,  
When we may profit meet, and come too late.**Pain.** True;  
When the day serves, before black-corner'd night,  
Find what thou want'st by free and offer'd light.  
*Come.***Tim.** *[Aside]* I'll meet you at the turn.  
What a god's gold,  
That he is worshipp'd in a baser temple  
Than where swine feed!  
The gods that rig at the bark and plough at the  
plow.Settlest admired reverence in a slave:  
To thee be worship! and thy saints for aye  
Be crown'd with plagues that thee alone obey  
Fit I meet them.*[Counting forswear]*  
**Poet.** Hail, worthy Timon!**Pain.** Our late noble master  
**Tim.** Have I once lived to see two home men?**Poet.** Sir,  
Having often of your open bounty tasted,  
Hearing you were retired, your friends fall'n or  
Whose thankless natures—O abhorred spirits!  
Not all the whips of heaven are large enough  
What! to you,  
Whose star-like nobleness gave life and influenceTo their whole being! I am rapt and cannot cover  
The monstrous bulk of this ingratitude  
With any size of words.**Tim.** Let it go naked, men may see't the better:  
You that are honest, by being what you are,  
Make them best seen and known.**Pain.** He and myself  
Have travail'd in the great shower of your gifts  
And sweetly felt it.**Tim.** Ay, you are honest men.  
**Pain.** We are hither come to offer you our service.**Tim.** Most honest men! Why, how shall requite you?Can you eat roots, and drink cold water? no.  
**Both.** What we can do, we'll do, to do you service.**Tim.** Ye're honest men: ye've heard that I have gold;

I am sure you have: speak truth; ye're honest men.

**Pain.** So it is said, my noble lord; therefore

Came not my friend nor I.

**Tim.** Good honest men! Thou draw'st counterfeits

Best in all Athens: thou'rt, indeed, the best; Thou counterfeit'st at most lively.

**Pain.** So, so, my lord.  
**Tim.** Even so, sir, as I say. And, for thy fiction,

Why, thy verse swells with stuff so fine and smooth

That thou art even natural in thine art.  
But, for all this, my honest-natured friends,I must needs say you have a little fault: <sup>50</sup>  
Marry, 'tis not monstrous in you, neither wish I  
You take much pains to mend.**Both.** Beseech your honour

To make it known to us.

**Tim.** You'll take it ill.  
**Both.** Most thankfully, my lord.**Tim.** Will you, indeed?  
**Both.** Doubt it not, worthy lord.**Tim.** There's never a one of you but trusts a knave.

That mightily deceives you.

**Both.** Do we, my lord!  
**Tim.** Ay, and you hear him cog, see him dissemble,

Know his gross patchery, love him, feed him,  
Keep in your bosom : yet remain assured 100  
That he's a made-up villain.

*Paiz.* I know none such, my lord.

*Poz.*

*Tim.* Look you, I love you well ; I'll give you gold,

Rid me these villains from your companies :  
Hang them or stab them, drown them in a draught,

Confound them by some course, and come to me,

I'll give you gold enough.

*Both.* Name them, my lord, let's know them.

*Tim.* You that way and you this, but two in company :

Each man apart, all single and alone, 110  
Yet an arch-villain keeps him company.

If where thou art two villains shall not be,  
'Come not near him. If thou wouldst not reside

But where one villain is, then him abandon.  
Hence, pack ! there's gold ; you came for gold,

ye slaves :

[*To Painter.*] You have work'd for me ; there's payment for you : hence !

[*To Poet.*] You are an alchemist ; make gold of that.

But, rascal dogs ! [*Beats them out, and then retires to his cave.*]

Enter FLAVIUS and two Senators.

*Flav.* It is in vain that you would speak with Timon :

For he is set so only to himself 120  
That nothing but himself which looks like man is friendly with him.

*First Sen.* Bring us to his cave :  
It is our part and promise to the Athenians

To speak with Timon.

*Sec. Sen.* At all times alike  
Men are not still the same : 'twas time and griefs

That framed him thus : time, with his fairer hand,

Offering the fortunes of his former days,  
The former man may make him. Bring us to him,

And chance it as it may.

*Flav.* Here is his cave.

Peace and content be here ! Lord Timon 130  
Timon !

Look out, and speak to friends : the Athenians,  
By two of their most reverend senate, greet thee :

Speak to them, noble Timon.

TIMON comes from his cave.

*Tim.* Thou sun, that comfort'st, burn ! Speak, and be hang'd :

For each true word, a blister ! and each false  
Be as a cauterizing to the root o' the tongue,

Consuming it with speaking !

*First Sen.* Worthy Timon,—

*Tim.* Of none but such as you, and you of Timon.

*First Sen.* The senators of Athens greet thee, Timon.

*Tim.* I thank them ; and would send them back the plague, 140

Could I but catch it for them.

*First Sen.* O, forget  
What we are sorry for ourselves in thee.

The senators with one consent of love  
Entreat thee back to Athens ; who have thought

On special dignities, which vacant lie  
For thy best use and wearing.

*Sec. Sen.* They confess  
Toward thee forgetfulness too general, gross :

Which now the public body, which doth seldom  
Play the recanter, feeling in itself

A lack of Timon's aid, hath sense withal 150  
(Of it own fail, restraining aid to Timon ;

And send forth us, to make their sorrow'd render,

Together with a recompense more fruitful  
Than their offence can weigh down by the dram ;

Ay, even such heaps and sums of love and wealth

As shall to thee blot out what wrongs were theirs

And write in thee the figures of their love,  
Ever to read them thine.

*Tim.* You witch me in it ;  
Surprise me to the very brink of tears :

Lend me a fool's heart and a woman's eyes,  
And I'll bewep these comforts, worthy senators. 161

*First Sen.* Therefore, so please thee to return with us

And of our Athens, thine and ours, to take  
The captainship, thou shalt be met with thanks,

Allow'd with absolute power and thy good name

Live with authority : so soon we shall drive back

Of Alcibiades the approaches wild,  
Who, like a boar too savage, doth root up

His country's peace.

*Sec. Sen.* And shakes his threatening sword  
Against the walls of Athens.

*First Sen.* Therefore, Timon,—

*Tim.* Well, sir, I will ; therefore, I will, sir : 171  
thus :

If Alcibiades kill my countrymen,  
Let Alcibiades know this of Timon,

That Timon cares not. But if he sack fair Athens,

And take our goodly aged men by the beards,  
Giving our holy virgins to the stain

Of contumelious, beastly, mad-brain'd war  
Then let him know, and tell him Timon speaks it,

In pity of our aged and our youth,  
I cannot choose but tell him, that I care not,

And let him take't at worst ; for their knives care not, 180

While you have throats to answer : for myself,  
There's not a whistle in the unruly camp

But I do prize it at my love before  
The reverend'st throat in Athens. So I leave you

To the protection of the prosperous gods,  
As thieves to keepers.

*Flav.* Stay not, all's in vain.

*Tim.* Why, I was writing of my epitaph;  
It will be seen to-morrow: my long sickness  
Of health and living now begins to mend, so  
And nothing brings me all things. Go, live  
still;

Be Alcibiades your plague, you his,  
And last so long enough!

*First Sen.* We speak in vain.

*Tim.* But yet I love my country, and am  
not

One that rejoices in the common wreck,  
As common bruit doth put it.

*First Sen.* That's well spoke.

*Tim.* Commend me to my loving country-  
men—

*First Sen.* These words become your lips as  
they pass through them.

*Sec. Sen.* And enter in our ears like great  
triumphs 199

In their applauding gates.

*Tim.* Commend me to them,  
And tell them that, to ease them of their griefs,  
Their fears of hostile strokes, their aches,

Their gangs of love, with other incident throes  
That nature's fragile vessel doth sustain  
In life's uncertain voyage, I will some kindness  
do them:

I'll teach them to prevent wild Alcibiades'  
wrath.

*First Sen.* I like this well; he will return  
again.

*Tim.* I have a tree, which grows here in my  
close,

That mine own use invites me to cut down,  
And shortly must I sell it: tell my friends, 210  
Tell Athens, in the sequence of degrees  
From high to low throughout, that whose

please

To stop affliction, let him take his haste,  
Come hither, ere my tree hath felt the axe,

And hang himself. I pray you, do my greeting.

*Flav.* Trouble him no further; thus you  
still shall find him.

*Tim.* Come not to me again: but say to  
Athens,

Timon hath made his everlasting mansion  
Upon the beached verge of the salt flood;

Who once a day with his embossed froth 220  
The turbulent surge shall cover: thither come,  
And let my grave-stone be your oracle.

Let, let our words go by and language end:  
What is aches plague and infection mend!

Graves only be men's works and death their  
goal!

Sun, hide thy beams! Timon hath done his  
reign. [Retires to his cave.]

*First Sen.* His discontent is unmove-  
able

—tended to nature.

*Sec. Sen.* Our hope in him is dead: let us  
return.

And strain what other means is left unto us  
In our dear path.

*First Sen.* It requires swift foot. [Exeunt.]

## SCENE II. Before the walls of Athens.

Enter two Senators and a Messenger.

*First Sen.* Thou hast painfully discover'd:  
are his files

As full as thy report?

*Mess.* I have spoke the best:  
Besides, his expedition promises  
Present approach.

*Sec. Sen.* We stand much hazard, if they  
bring not Timon.

*Mess.* I met a courier, one mine ancient  
friend;

Whom, though in general part we were exposed,  
† Yet our old love made a particular force,

And made us speak like friends: this man was  
riding

From Alcibiades to Timon's cave, 20

With letters of entreaty, which import  
His fellowship in the cause against your city,

In part for his sake moved.

*First Sen.* Here come our brethren.

Enter the Senators from TIMON.

*Third Sen.* No talk of Timon, nothing of  
him expect.

The enemies' drum is heard, and fearful scour-  
ing

Doth choke the air with dust: in, and prepare:  
Ours is the fall, I fear; our foes the snare.

[Exeunt.]

## SCENE III. The woods. Timon's cave, and a rude tomb seen.

Enter a Soldier, seeking TIMON.

*Sold.* By all description this should be the  
place.

Who's here? speak, ho! No answer! What  
is this?

Timon is dead, who hath outstretch'd his span:  
Some beast reap'd this; there does not live a

man.

Dead, sure; and this his grave. What's on  
this tomb

I cannot read: the character I'll take with wax:  
Our captain hath in every figure skill.

An aged interpreter, though young in days:  
Before proud Athens he's set down by this,

Whose fall the mark of his ambition is. [Exit.] 20

## SCENE IV. Before the walls of Athens.

Trumpets sound. Enter ALCEBIADES with  
his powers.

*Alcib.* Sound to this coward and lascivious  
town

Our terrible approach. [A parley sounded.]

Enter Senators on the walls.

Till now you have gone on and ~~seen~~ the time  
With all licentious excess, making your wills

The scope of justice; till now approach and such  
As slept within the shadow of your power

Have wander'd with our travell'd arms and  
breathed

Our suffrance vainly; now the time is such.

When crouching marrow in the bearer strong.  
Cries of itself 'No more : ' now breathless wrong  
Shall sit and pant in your great chains of ease,  
And purvy insolence shall break his wind  
With fear and horrid flight.

*First Sen.* Noble and young,  
When thy first griefs were but a mere conceit,  
I've thou hadst power or we had cause of fear,  
We sent to thee, to give thy rages balm,  
To wipe out our ingratitude with loves  
Above their quantity.

*Sec. Sen.* So did we woo  
Transformed Timon to our city's love  
By humble message and by promised means :  
We were not all unkind, nor all deserve  
The common stroke of war.

*First Sen.* These walls of ours  
Were not erected by their hands from whom  
You have received your griefs ; nor are they  
such

That these great towers, trophies and schools  
should fall

For private faults in them.

*Sec. Sen.* Nor are they living  
Who were the motives that you first went out ;  
Shame that they wanted cunning, in excess  
Hath broke their hearts. March, noble lord,  
Into our city with thy banners spread :  
By declination, and a tithed death—  
If thy revenges hunger for that food  
Which nature loathes—take thou the destined  
tenth.

And by the hazard of the spotted die  
Let die the spotted.

*First Sen.* All have not offended ;  
For those that were, it is not square to take  
On those that are, revenges : crimes, like lands,  
Are not inherited. Then, dear countrymen,  
Bring in thy ranks, but leave without thy rage :  
Spare thy Athenian cradle and those kin  
Which in the bluster of thy wrath must fall  
With those that have offended : like a shepherd,  
Approach the fold and cull the infected forth,  
But kill not all together.

*Sec. Sen.* What thou wilt,  
Thou rather shalt enforce it with thy smile  
Than hew to't with thy sword.

*First Sen.* Set but thy foot  
Against our rampired gates, and they shall open :  
So thou wilt send thy gentle heart before,

To say thou 't enter friendly.

*Sec. Sen.* Throw thy glove,  
Or any token of thine honour else,  
That thou wilt use the wars as thy redress  
And not as our confusion, all thy powers  
Shall make their harbour in our town, till we  
Have seal'd thy full desire.

*Alcib.* Then there's my glove ;  
Descend, and open your uncharged ports :  
Those enemies of Timon's and mine own  
Whom you yourselves shall set out for reproof  
Fall and no more ; and, to atone your fears  
With my more noble meaning, not a man  
Shall pass his quarter, or offend the stream  
Of regular justice in your city's bounds,  
But shall be render'd to your public laws  
At heaviest answer.

*Both.* 'Tis most nobly spoken.

*Alcib.* Descend, and keep your words.  
[The Senators descend, and open the gates.]

*Enter Soldier.*

*Sold.* My noble general, Timon is dead ;  
Entomb'd upon the very hem o' the sea ;  
And on his grave-stone this inscription, which  
With wax I brought away, whose soft im-  
pression

Interprets for my poor ignorance.  
*Alcib.* [Reads the epitaph] 'Here lies a  
wretched corpse, of wretched soul bereft :  
Seek not my name : a plague consume you  
wicked caitiffs left !

Here lie I, Timon ; who, alive, all living men  
did hate ;  
Pass by and curse thy fill, but pass and stay not  
here thy gait.'

These well express in thee thy latter spirits ;  
Though thou abhor'd'st in us our human griefs,  
Scorn'dst our brain's flow and those our droplets  
which

From niggard nature fall, yet rich conceit  
Taught thee to make vast Neptune weep for aye  
On thy low grave, on faults forgiven. Dead  
Is noble Timon : of whose memory  
Hereafter more. Bring me into your city.  
And I will use the olive with my sword,  
Make war breed peace, make peace stint war,  
make each

Prescribe to other as each other's leech.  
Let our drums strike. [Exeunt.]





Made in her concave shores!  
And do you now put on your best attire?  
And do you now cull out a holiday!  
And do you now strew flowers in his way  
That comes in triumph over Pompey's blood!  
Be gone!  
Run to your houses, fall upon your knees,  
Pray to the gods to intermit the plague  
That needs must light on this iniquity. 60  
*Flav.* Go, go, good countrymen, and, for  
this fault,

Assemble all the poor men of your sort;  
Draw them to Tiber banks, and weep your tears  
Into the channel, till the lowest stream  
Do kiss the most exalted shores of all.

[*Exeunt all the Commoners.*]

See, whether their basest metal be not moved;  
They vanish tongue-tied in their guiltiness.  
Go you down that way towards the Capitol;  
This way will I: disrobe the images,  
If you do find them deck'd with ceremonies. 70

*Mar.* May we do so?

You know it is the feast of Lupercal.

*Flav.* It is no matter; let no images  
Be hung with Caesar's trophies. I'll about,  
And drive away the vulgar from the streets:  
So do you too, where you perceive them thick.  
These growing feathers pluck'd from Caesar's  
wing

Will make him fly an ordinary pitch,  
Where else would soar above the view of men 79  
And keep us all in servile fearfulness. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. A public place.

*Flourish.* Enter CAESAR; ANTONY, for the  
course; CALPURNIA, PORTIA, DECIVS, CI-  
CERO, BRUTUS, CASSIUS, and CASCA: a great  
crowd following, among them a Soothsayer.

*Cas.* Calpurnia!

*Casca.* Peace, ho! Caesar speaks.  
*Cas.* Calpurnia!

*Cal.* Here, my lord.

*Cas.* Stand you directly in Antonius' way,  
When he doth run his course. Antonius!

*Ant.* Caesar, my lord!

*Cas.* Forget not, in your speed, Antonius,  
To touch Calpurnia; for our elders say,  
The barren, touched in this holy chase,  
Shake off their sterile curse.

*Ant.* I shall remember:

When Caesar says 'do this,' it is perform'd. 80  
*Cas.* Set on; and leave no ceremony out.

[*Flourish.*]

*Sooth.* Caesar!

*Cas.* Ha! who calls!

*Casca.* Bid every noise be still: peace yet  
again!

*Cas.* Who is it in the press that calls on me?  
I hear a tongue, shriller than all the music,  
Cry 'Caesar!' Speak; Caesar is turn'd to hear.

*Sooth.* Beware the Ides of March.

*Cas.* What man is that?

*Bru.* A soothsayer bids you beware the Ides  
of March.

*Cas.* Set him before me; let me see his  
face.

*Cas.* Fellow, come from the throng; look  
upon Caesar.

*Cas.* What say'st thou to me now? speak  
once again.

*Sooth.* Beware the Ides of March.

*Cas.* He is a dreamer; let us leave him:  
pass.

[*Sennet. Exeunt all except  
Brutus and Cassius.*]

*Cas.* Will you go see the order of the court?

*Bru.* Not I.

*Cas.* I pray you, do.

*Bru.* I am not gamester: I do lack some  
part

Of that quick spirit that is in Antony.  
Let me not hinder, Cassius, your desires; 90  
I'll leave you.

*Cas.* Brutus, I do observe you now of late:  
I have not from your eyes that gentleness  
And show of love as I was wont to have:  
You bear too stubborn and too strange a hand  
Over your friend that loves you.

*Bru.* Cassius,  
Be not deceived: if I have veil'd my look,  
I turn the trouble of my countenance  
Merely upon myself. Vexed I am  
Of late with passions of some difference, 95  
Conceptions only proper to myself,  
Which give some soil perhaps to my behaviours;  
But let not therefore my good friends be  
grieved—

Among which number, Cassius, be you one—  
Nor construe any further my neglect,  
Than that poor Brutus, with himself at war,  
Forgets the shows of love to other men.

*Cas.* Then, Brutus, I have much mistook  
your passion;  
By means whereof this breast of mine hath  
buried

Thoughts of great value, worthy cogitations. 100  
Tell me, good Brutus, can you see your face?

*Bru.* No, Cassius; for the eye sees not  
itself,

But by reflection, by some other thing.

*Cas.* 'Tis just:

And it is very much lamented, Brutus,  
That you have no such mirrors as will turn  
Your hidden worthiness into your eye,  
That you might see your shadow. I have  
heard,

Where many of the best respect in Rome,  
Except immortal Caesar, speaking of Brutus 105  
And groaning underneath this age's yoke,  
Have wish'd that noble Brutus had his eyes.

*Bru.* Into what dangers would you lead me,  
Cassius,

That you would have me seek into myself  
For that which is not in me?

*Cas.* Therefore, good Brutus, be prepared to  
hear:

And since you know you cannot see yourself  
So well as by reflection, I, your glass,  
Will modestly discover to yourself  
That of yourself which you yet know not of. 110

And be not jealous on me, gentle Brutus:

Were I a common laugh, or did use

To stale with ordinary oaths my love

To every new protester; if you know

That I do fawn on men and hug them hard

And afterwards them, or if you know  
That I profess myself in banqueting  
To all the rest, then hold me dangerous.

*Flourish, and shout.*  
*Bru.* What means this shouting? I do fear,  
The people  
Choose Caesar for their king.

*Caes.* Ay, do you fear it? So  
Then must I think you would not have it so.

*Bru.* I would not, Cassius; yet I love him  
well.

But wherefore do you hold me here so long?

What is it that you would impart to me?

If it be sought toward the general good,

Set honour in one eye and death in the other,

And I will look on both indifferently:

For let the gods so speed me as I love

The name of honour more than I fear death.

*Caes.* I know that virtue to be in you,

*Brutus.*

As well as I do know your outward favour.

Well, honour is the subject of my story.

I cannot tell what you and other men

Think of this life; but, for my single self,

I had as lief not be as live to be

In awe of such a thing as I myself.

I was born free as Caesar; so were you:

We both have fed as well, and we can both

Endure the winter's cold as well as he:

For once, upon a raw and gusty day,

The troubled Tiber chafing with his shores,

Caesar said to me 'Darest thou, Cassius, now

Leap in with me into this angry flood,

And swim to yonder point?' Upon the word,

Accented as I was, I plunged in

And bade him follow; so indeed he did.

The current roar'd, and we did buffet it

With lusty sinews, throwing it aside

And stemming it with hearts of controversy;

But ere we could arrive the point propos'd,

Caesar cried 'Help me, Cassius, or I sink!'

I, as Aeneas, our great ancestor,

Did from the flames of Troy upon his shoulder

The old Anchises bear, so from the waves of

Tiber

Did I the tired Caesar. And this man

Is now become a god, and Cassius is

A wretched creature and must bend his body

To Caesar's will; but not on him.

He had a fever when he was in Spain,

And when the fit was on him, I did mark

How he did shake: 'tis true, this god did shake:

His coward lips did from their colour fly,

And that same eye whose bend doth awe the

world

Did lose his lustre: I did hear him groan:

Ay, and that tongue of his that bade the

mark him and write his speeches in their books,

Alexander, 'Gave me some drink, Titinius,'

As a sick girl. Ye gods, ye gods, ye gods, ye gods,

A man of such a feeble temper should

So get the start of the majestic world?

And hear the palm alone. *(Shout. Flourish.)*

*Bru.* Another general shout!

I do believe that these applauses are

For some new honours that are heap'd on

Caesar.

*Caes.* Why, man, he doth bestride the narrow  
world

Like a Colossus, and we petty men

Walk under his huge legs and peep about

To find ourselves dishonourable graves.

Men at some time are masters of their fate:

The fault, dear Brutus, is not in our stars,

But in ourselves, that we are underlings.

Brutus and Caesar: what should be in that

Caesar?

Why should that name be sounded more than

yours?

Write them together, yours is as fair a name;

Sound them, it doth become the mouth as well;

Weigh them, it is as heavy; conjure with 'em,

Brutus will start a spirit as soon as Caesar.

Now, in the names of all the gods at once,

Upon what meat doth this our Caesar feed,

That he is grown so great? Age, thou art

shamed!

Rome, thou hast lost the breed of noble bloods!

When went there by an age, since the great

flood,

But it was famed with more than with one

man?

When could they say till now, that talk'd of

Rome,

That her wide walls encompass'd but one man?

Now is it Rome indeed and room enough,

When there is in it but one only man.

O, you said I have heard our fathers say,

There was a Brutus once that would have

brook'd

The eternal devil to keep his state in Rome

As easily as a king.

*Bru.* That you do love me, I am nothing

jealous;

What you would work me to, I have some aim.

How I have thought of this and of these times,

I shall recount hereafter; for this present,

I would not, so with love I might entreat you,

Be any further moved. What you have said

I will consider; what you have to say

I will with patience hear, and find a time

Both meet to hear and answer such high

things.

Till then, my noble friend, chew upon this:

Brutus had rather be a villager

Than to repute himself a son of Rome

Under these hard conditions as this time

Is like to lay upon us.

*Caes.* I am glad that my weak words

Have struck but thus much show of fire from

Brutus.

*Bru.* The games are done and Caesar is

returning.

*Caes.* As they pass by, pluck Caesar by the

ear;

And he will, after his sour fashion, tell you

What hath proceeded worthy note to-day.

*Re-enter CAESAR and his Friends.*

*Bru.* I will do so. But look you, Cassius,

The angry spot doth glow on Caesar's brow,

And all the rest look like a chafed tun.

Calpurnia's cheek is pale; and Cleopatra

Looks with such sad and sullen eyes

As we have seen him in the Capitol,

Being even'd in conference by some senators.

*Caes.* Caesar will tell us what the matter is.

*Caes.* Antonius!

*Ant.* Caesar!

*Caes.* Let me have men about me that are fat;

Steeled-browed men and such as sleep o' nights;

Yond Cassius has a lean and hungry look;

He thinks too much: such men are dangerous.

*Ant.* Fear him not, Caesar; he's not dangerous;

He is a noble Roman and well given.

*Caes.* Would he were fatter! But I fear him not:

Yet if my name were Noble to fear,

I do not know the man I should avoid

So soon as that spare Cassius. He reads much;

He is a great observer and he looks

Quite through the deeds of men; he loves no

As thou dost, Antony; he hears no music;

Seldom he smiles, and smiles in such a sort

As if he mock'd himself and scorn'd his spirit

That could be moved to smile at any thing.

Such men as he be never at heart's ease

Whilst they behold a greater than themselves,

And therefore are they very dangerous.

I rather tell thee what is to be fear'd

Than what I fear; for always I am Caesar.

Come on my right hand, for this ear is deaf,

And tell me truly what thou think'st of him.

[*Senates. Escort Caesar and all his Train, but Caesar.*]

*Caes.* You pull'd me by the cloak; would you speak with me?

*Bru.* Ay, Caesar; tell us what hath chanced to-day.

That Caesar looks so sad.

*Caes.* Why, you were with him, were you not?

*Bru.* I should not then ask Caesar what had chanced.

*Caes.* Why, there was a crown offer'd him; and being offer'd him, he put it by with the back of his hand, thus; and then the people fell a-shouting.

*Bru.* What was the second noise for?

*Caes.* Why, for that too.

*Bru.* They shouted thrice: what was the last cry for?

*Caes.* Why, for that too.

*Bru.* Was the crown offer'd him thrice?

*Caes.* Ay, marry, was't, and he put it by thrice, every time gentler than other, and at every putting-by mine honest neighbours

shouted.

*Bru.* Who offer'd him the crown?

*Caes.* Why, Antony.

*Bru.* Tell us the manner of it, gentle Caesar.

*Caes.* I can as well be hang'd as tell the manner of it: it was mere foolery; I did not mark it: I saw Mark Antony offer him a crown;—yet 'twas not a crown neither, 'twas one of these coronets;—and, as I told you, he put it by once; but, for all that, to my mind, he would have had it. Then he offer'd it to him again; then he put it by again; but, to my thinking, he was very loath to lay his fingers

off it. And then he offer'd it the third time; he put it the third time by: and still as he refus'd it, the multitude hooted and chapp'd their chopp'd hands and threw up their sweaty night-caps and utter'd such a deal of stinking breath because Caesar refus'd the crown that it had almost choked Caesar; for he swoonded and fell down at it; and for mine own part, I durst not laugh, for fear of opening my lips and receiving the bad air.

*Caes.* But, soft, I pray you: what, did Caesar swoond?

*Caes.* He fell down in the market-place, and foam'd at mouth, and was speechless.

*Bru.* 'Tis very like: he hath the falling sickness.

*Caes.* No, Caesar hath it not; but you and I and honest Caesar, we have the falling sickness.

*Caes.* I know not what you mean by that; but, I am sure, Caesar fell down. If the rag-peddle people did not clap him and hiss him, according as he pleased and displeased them, as they use to do the players in the theatre, I am no true man.

*Bru.* What said he when he came unto himself?

*Caes.* Marry, before he fell down, when he perceived the common herd was glad he refus'd the crown, he pluck'd me ope his doublet and offer'd them his throat to cut. An I had been a man of any occupation, if I would not have taken him at a word, I would I might go to hell among the rogues. And so he fell. When he came to himself again, he said, if he had

good soul! and forgave him with all their hearts: but there's no heed to be taken of them; if Caesar had stabbed their mothers, they would have done no less.

*Bru.* And after that, he came, thus sad, away!

*Caes.* Ay.

*Caes.* Did Cleopatra say any thing?

*Caes.* Ay, he spoke Greek.

*Caes.* To what effect?

*Caes.* Nay, an I tell you that, I'll never look you in the face again: but these that understood him smiled at one another and shook their heads; but, for mine own part, it was Greek to me. I could tell you more news too: Marullus and Flavius, for pulling scarfs off Caesar's images, are put to silence. Here you well. There was more foolery yet, if I could remember it.

*Bru.* Will you sup with me to-night, Caesar?

*Caes.* No, I am promised forth.

*Bru.* Will you dine with me to-morrow?

*Caes.* Ay, if I be alive and your mind bold and your dinner worth the eating.

*Bru.* Good! I will expect you.

*Caes.* Do so. Farewell, both.

*Bru.* What a blunt fellow is this grown to be!

He was quick mettle when he was an officer.

*Caes.* He is now in execution.

Of any bold or noble enterprise,

However he puts on this tardy form.

This rudeness is a sauce to his good wit,  
Which gives men stomach to digest his words  
With better appetite.

*Brut.* And so it is. For this time I will leave you:

To-morrow, if you please to speak with me,  
I will come home to you; or, if you will,  
Come home to me, and I will wait for you. 310

*Cas.* I will do so: till then, think of the world. [*Exit Brutus.*]

Well, Brutus, thou art noble; yet, I see,  
Thy honourable metal may be wrought  
From that it is disposed: therefore it is meet  
That noble minds keep ever with their likes;  
For who so firm that cannot be seduced?  
Cæsar doth bear me hard; but he loves Brutus:  
If I were Brutus now and he were Cassius,  
He should not humour me. I will this night,  
In several hands, in at his windows throw, 320  
As if they came from several citizens,  
Writings all tending to the great opinion  
That Rome holds of his name; wherein obscurely  
Cæsar's ambition shall be glanced at:  
And after this let Cæsar seat him sure;  
For we will shake him, or worse days endure.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE III. *The same. A street.*

*Thunder and lightning. Enter, from opposite sides, CASCIA, with his sword drawn, and CICERO.*

*Cic.* Good even, Casca: brought you Cæsar home?

Why are you breathless? and why stare you so?  
*Casca.* Are not you moved, when all the  
sway of earth

Shakes like a thing unfirm? O Cicero,  
I have seen tempests, when the scolding winds  
Have rived the knotty oak, and I have seen  
The ambitious ocean swell and rage and foam,  
To be exalted with the threatening clouds:  
But never till to-night, never till now,  
Did I go through a tempest dropping fire. 330  
Either there is a civil strife in heaven,  
Or else the world, too saucy with the gods,  
Incenses them to send destruction.

*Cic.* Why, saw you any thing more wonderful?  
*Casca.* A common slave—you know him well  
by sight—

Held up his left hand, which did flame and burn

Like twenty torches join'd, and yet his hand,  
Not sensible of fire, remain'd unscor'd.  
Besides—I ha' not since put up my sword—  
Against the Capitol I met a lion, 340  
Who glared upon me, and went surly by,  
Without annoying me: and there were drawn  
Upon a heap a hundred ghastly women,  
Transformed with their fear; who swore they

*saw*  
Men all in fire walk up and down the streets.  
And yesterday the bird of night did sit  
Even at noon-day upon the market-place,  
Hooting and shrieking. When these prodigies  
Do so conjointly meet, let not men say

'These are their reasons; they are natural;' 350  
For, I believe, they are portentous things  
Unto the climate that they point upon.

*Cic.* Indeed, it is a strange-disposed time;  
But men may construe things after their  
fashion,

Clean from the purpose of the things themselves.

Comes Cæsar to the Capitol to-morrow?

*Casca.* He doth; for he did bid Antonius  
Send word to you he would be there to-morrow.

*Cic.* Good night then, Casca: 360  
is not to walk in.

*Casca.* Farewell, Cicero. [*Exit Cicero.* 40

*Enter CASSIUS.*

*Cas.* Who's there?

*Casca.* A Roman.

*Cas.* Casca, by your voice.

*Casca.* Your ear is good. Cassius, what night  
is this?

*Cas.* A very pleasing night to honest men.

*Casca.* Who ever knew the heavens menace  
so?

*Cas.* Those that have known the earth so  
full of faults.

For my part, I have walk'd about the streets,  
Submitting me unto the perilous night,  
And, thus unbraced, Casca, as you see,  
Have bared my bosom to the thunder-stone;  
And when the cross blue lightning seem'd to  
open 50

The breast of heaven, I did present myself  
Even in the aim and very flash of it.

*Casca.* But wherefore did you so much tempt  
the heavens?

It is the part of men to fear and tremble,  
When the most mighty gods by tokens send  
Such dreadful heralds to astonish us.

*Cas.* You are dull, Casca, and those sparks  
of life

That should be in a Roman you do want,  
Or else you use not. You look pale and gaze

And put on fear and cast yourself in wonder, 60  
To see the strange impatience of the heavens:  
But if you would consider the true cause

Why all these fires, why all these gliding ghosts,  
Why birds and beasts from quality and kind,

Why old men fool and children calculate,  
Why all these things change from their ordi-

nance

Their natures and preformed faculties  
To monstrous quality,—why, you shall find

That heaven hath infused them with these  
spirits,

To make them instruments of fear and warning  
Unto some monstrous state. 71

Now could I, Casca, name to thee a man  
Most like this dreadful night,

That thunders, lightning, opens graves, and roars  
As doth the lion in the Capitol.

A man no mightier than thyself or me  
In personal action, yet prodigious grown

And fearful, as these strange eruptions are.

*Casca.* 'Tis Cæsar that you mean; is it not,  
Cassius?

*Cas.* Let it be who it is: for Romans now 80

Have thews and limbs like to their ancestors;  
But, woe the while! our fathers' minds are dead,  
And we are govern'd with our mothers' spirits;  
Our yoke and sunderance show us womanish.

*Casca.* Indeed, they say the senators to-morrow

Mean to establish Caesar as a king;  
And he shall wear his crown by sea and land,  
In every place, save here in Italy.

*Cas.* I know where I will wear this dagger then;  
Cassius from bondage will deliver Cassius: 90  
Therein, ye gods, you make the weak most strong;

Therein, ye gods, you tyrants do defeat:  
Nor stony tower, nor walls of beaten brass,  
Nor airless dungeon, nor strong links of iron,  
Can be retentive to the strength of spirit;  
But life, being weary of these worldly bars,  
Never lacks power to dismiss itself.  
If I know this, know all the world besides,  
That part of tyranny that I do bear  
I can shake off at pleasure. [Thunder still.

*Casca.* So can I: 100  
So every bondman in his own hand bears  
The power to cancel his captivity.

*Cas.* And why should Caesar be a tyrant then?

Poor man! I know he would not be a wolf,  
But that he sees the Romans are but sheep:  
He were no lion, were not Romans hinds.  
Those that with haste will make a mighty fire  
Begin it with weak straws: what trash is Rome,  
What rubbish and what offal, when it serves  
For the base matter to illuminate 110

So vile a thing as Caesar! But, ———  
Where hast thou led me? I perhaps speak this  
Before a willing bondman; then I know  
My answer must be made. But I am arm'd,  
And dangers are to me indifferent.

*Casca.* You speak to Casca, and to such a man

That is no fltering tell-tale. Hold, my hand:  
Be factious for redress of all these griefs,  
And I will set this foot of mine as far  
As who goes farthest.

*Cas.* There's a bargain made. 120  
Now know you, Casca, I have moved already  
Some certain of the noblest-minded Romans  
To undergo with me an enterprise  
Of honourable-dangerous consequence;  
And I do know, by this, they stay for me  
In Pompey's porch: for now, this fearful night,  
There is no stir or walking in the streets;  
And the complexion of the element  
In favour's like the work we have in hand,  
Most bloody, fiery, and most terrible. 130

*Casca.* Stand close awhile, for here comes one in haste.

*Cas.* 'Tis Cinna; I do know him by his gait;  
He is a friend.

*Enter CINNA.*

*Cin.* Cinna, where haste you so?  
To find out you. Who's that? Me-  
telling Cimber!  
*Cas.* No, it is Casca; one incorporate

To our attempts. Am I not stay'd for, Cinna?  
*Cin.* I am glad on't. What a fearful night is this!

There's two or three of us have seen strange sights.

*Cas.* Am I not stay'd for? tell me.

*Cin.* Yes, you are. 140  
O Cassius, if you could

But win the noble Brutus to our party—

*Cas.* Be you content: good Cinna, take this paper,

And look you lay it in the praetor's chair,  
Where Brutus may but find it; and throw this  
In at his window; set this up with wax  
Upon old Brutus' statue: all this done,  
Repair to Pompey's porch, where you shall find us.

Is Decius Brutus and Trebonius there?

*Cin.* All but Metellus Cimber; and he's gone

To seek you at your house. Well, I will hie, 150  
And so bestow these papers as you bade me.

*Cas.* That done, repair to Pompey's theatre. [Exit Cinna.

Come, Casca, you and I will yet ere day  
See Brutus at his house: three parts of him  
Is ours already, and the man entire  
Upon the next encounter yields him ours.

*Casca.* O, he sits high in all the people's hearts:

And that which would appear offence in us,  
His countenance, like richest alchemy,  
Will change to virtue and to worthiness. 160

*Cas.* Him and his worth and our great need of him

You have right well conceited. Let us go,  
For it is after midnight; and ere day

We will awake him and be sure of him. [Exit.

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. Rome. Brutus's orchard.

*Enter BRUTUS.*

*Bru.* What, Lucius, ho!  
I cannot, by the progress of the stars,  
Give guess how near to day. Lucius, I say!  
I would it were my fault to sleep so soundly.  
When, Lucius, when? awake, I say! what, Lucius!

*Enter LUCIUS.*

*Luc.* Call'd you, my lord?  
*Bru.* Get me a taper in my study, Lucius:  
When it is lighted, come and call me here.

*Luc.* I will, my lord. [Exit.  
*Bru.* It must be by his death; and for my part, 170

I know no personal cause to spurn at him,  
But for the general. He would be crown'd:  
How that might change his nature, there's the question.

It is the bright day that brings forth the adder;  
And that craves wary walking. Crown him, I—  
that;—

And then, I grant, we put a sting in him,  
That at his will he may do danger with.

The abuse of greatness is, when it disjoins  
Honours from power: and, to speak truth of  
Caesar,

I have not known when his affections sway'd so  
More than his reason. But 'tis a common proof,  
That lowliness is young ambition's ladder,  
Whereto the climber-upward turns his face;  
But when he once attains the upmost round,  
He then unto the ladder turns his back,  
Looks in the clouds, scornful the base degrees  
By which he did ascend. So Caesar may.  
Then, lest he may, prevent. And, since the  
quarrel

Will bear no colour for the thing he is,  
Fashion it thus; that what he is, augmented, so  
Would run to these and these extremities:  
And therefore think him as a serpent's egg  
Which, hatch'd, would, as his kind, grow mis-  
chievous,  
And kill him in the shell.

*Re-enter LUCIUS.*

This paper, thus seal'd up; and, I am sure  
It did not lie there when I went to bed.

*[Gives him the letter.]*

*Bru.* Get you to bed again; it is not day.  
Is not to-morrow, boy, the ides of March? 40

*Luc.* I know not, sir.

*Bru.* Look in the calendar, and bring me  
word.

*Luc.* I will, sir.

*[Exit.]*

*Bru.* The exhalations whizzing in the air  
Give so much light that I may read by them.

*[Opens the letter and reads.]*

'Brutus, thou sleep'st: awake, and see thyself.  
Shall Rome, &c. Speak, strike, redress!  
Brutus, thou sleep'st: awake!  
Such instigations have been often dropp'd  
Where I have took them up. 50  
'Shall Rome, &c.' Thus must I piece it out:  
Shall Rome stand under one man's awe? What,  
Rome!

My ancestors did from the streets of Rome  
The Tarquin drive, when he was call'd a king.  
'Speak, strike, redress!' Am I entreated  
To speak and strike? O Rome, I make thee  
promise:

If the redress will follow, thou receivest  
Thy full petition at the hand of Brutus!

*Re-enter LUCIUS.*

*Luc.* Sir, March is wasted fourteen days.

*[Knocking within.]*

*Bru.* 'Tis good. Go to the gate; somebody  
knocks. 60

*[Exit Lucius.]*

Since Cassius first did what me against Caesar,  
I have not slept.

Between the acting of a dreadful thing  
And the first motion, all the interim is  
Like a phantasma, or a hideous dream:  
This Caesar and the mortal instruments  
Are then in council; and the state of man,  
Like to a little kingdom, suffers then  
The nature of an insurrection.

*Re-enter LUCIUS.*

*Luc.* Sir, 'tis your brother Cato at the  
door. 70  
Who doth desire to see you.

*Bru.* Is he alone?

*Luc.* No, sir, there are more with him.

*Bru.* Do you know them?

*Luc.* No, sir; their hats are pluck'd about  
their ears,

And half their faces buried in their cloaks,  
That by no means I may discover them  
By any mark of favour.

*Bru.* Let 'em enter. *[Exit Lucius.]*  
They are the faction. O conspiracy,  
Shamest thou to show thy dangerous brow by  
night,

When evils are most free? O, then by day  
Where wilt thou find a cavern dark enough  
To mask thy monstrous visage? Seek none,  
conspiracy;

Hide it in smiles and affability:  
For if thou path, thy native semblance on,  
Not Erebus itself were dim enough  
To hide thee from prevention.

*Enter the conspirators, CASSIUS, CASCAS,  
DECIUS, CINNA, METELLUS CIMBER, and  
TREBONIUS.*

*Cas.* I think we are too bold upon your rest:  
Good morrow, Brutus; do we trouble you?

*Bru.* I have been up this hour, awake all  
night.

Know I these men that come along with you?

*Cas.* Yes, every man of them, and no man  
here. 90

But honours you; and every one doth wish  
You had but that opinion of yourself  
Which every noble Roman bears of you.  
This is Trebonius.

*Bru.* He is welcome hither.

*Cas.* This, Decius Brutus.

*Bru.* He is welcome too.

*Cas.* This, Cassius; this, Cinna; and this,  
Metellus Cimber.

*Bru.* They are all welcome.

What watchful cares do interpose themselves  
Betwixt your eyes and night?

*Cas.* Shall I entreat a word? 100

*[Brutus and Cassius whisper.]*

*Dec.* Here lies the east: doth not the day  
break here?

*Cas.* No.

*Cin.* O, pardon, sir, it doth; and yon gray  
lines

That fret the clouds are messengers of day.

*Cas.* You shall confess that you are both  
deceived.

Here, as I point my sword, the sun arises,  
Which is a great way growing on the south,  
Weighing the youthful season of the year.  
Some two months hence up higher toward 't  
north

He first presents his fire; and the high east  
Stands, as the Capitol, directly here.

*Bru.* Give me your hands all over, one by  
one.

*Cas.* And let us swear our resolution.

*Bru.* No, not an oath: if not the face of men.

The substance of our souls, the time's abuse,—  
If these be motives weak, break off betimes,  
And every man hence to his idle bed;  
So let high-sighted tyranny range on,  
Till each man drop by lottery. But if these,  
As I am sure they do, bear fire enough 120  
To kindle cowards and to steel with valour  
The melting spirits of women, then, country-

men,  
What need we any spur but our own cause,  
To prick us to redress? what other bond  
Than secret Romans, that have spoke the word,  
And will not palter? and what other oath  
Than honesty to honesty engaged,  
That this shall be, or we will fall for it?  
Swear priests and cowards and men cautelous,  
Old feeble carrions and such suffering souls: 130  
That welcome wrongs; unto bad causes swear  
Such creatures as men doubt; but do not stain  
The even virtue of our enterprise,  
Nor the impressive mettle of our spirits,  
To think that our cause or our performance  
Did need an oath; when every drop of blood  
That every Roman hears, and nobly bears,  
Is guilty of a several bastardy,  
If he do break the smallest particle  
Of any promise that hath pass'd from him. 140

*Caes.* But what of Cicero? shall we sound him?

I think he will stand very strong with us.  
*Caes.* Let us not leave him out.

*Cin.* No, by no means.  
*Met.* O, let us have him, for his silver hairs  
Will purchase us a good opinion  
And buy men's voices to commend our deeds:  
It shall be said, his judgement ruled our hands;  
Our youths and wildness shall no whit appear,  
But all be beset in his gravity.

*Bru.* O, name him not: let us not break  
with him; 150

For he will never follow any thing  
That other men begin.

*Caes.* Then leave him out.  
*Caes.* Indeed he is not fit.

*Dec.* Shall no man else be touch'd but only  
Caesar?

*Caes.* Decius, well urg'd: I think it is not

Mark Antony, so well beloved of Caesar,  
Should entice Caesar: we shall find of him  
A shrewd contriver; and, you know, his means,  
If he improve them, may well stretch so far  
As to annoy us all: which to prevent, 160  
Let Antony and Caesar fall together.

*Bru.* Our course will seem too bloody, Caius  
Cassius,

To cut the head off and then hack the limbs,  
Like wrath in death and envy afterwards;

For Antony is but a limb of Caesar:  
Let us be sacrificers, but not butchers, Caius.

We all stand up against the spirit of Caesar;  
And in the spirit of men there is no blood;

O, that we them could come by Caesar's spirit,  
And not dishonour Caesar! But, alas, 170

Caesar must bleed for it! And, gentle friends,  
Let's kill him boldly, not with poison;

Let's carve him as a dish fit for the gods,  
Not hew him as a carcass fit for hounds:  
And let our hearts, as subtle masters do,  
Seize up their servants to an act of rage,  
And after seem to chide 'em. This shall make  
Our purpose necessary and not envious:  
Which so appearing to the common eyes,  
We shall be call'd purgers, not murderers. 180  
And for Mark Antony, think not of him;  
For he can do no more than Caesar's arm  
When Caesar's head is off.

*Caes.* Yet I fear him;  
For in the ingrafted love he bears to Caesar—

*Bru.* Alas, good Cassius, do not think of  
him:

If he love Caesar, all that he can do  
Is to himself, take thought and die for Caesar;

And that were much he should; for he is  
given

To sports, to wildness and much company.  
*Treb.* There is no fear in him; let him  
not die; 190

For he will live, and laugh at this hereafter.  
[Clock strikes.

*Bru.* Peace! count the clock.  
*Caes.* The clock hath strucken three.

*Treb.* 'Tis time to part.  
*Caes.* But it is doubtful yet,

Whether Caesar will come forth to-day, or no;  
For he is superstitious grown of late,

Quite from the main opinion he held once  
Of fantasy, of dreams and ceremonies:

It may be, these apparent prodigies,  
The unaccustom'd terror of this night,

And the persuasion of his augurers,  
May hold him from the Capitol to-day. 200

*Dec.* Never fear that: if he be so resolved,  
I can o'erway him: for he loves to hear

That unicorns may be betray'd with trees,  
And bears with glances, elephants with holes,

Lions with toils and men with flatterers;  
But when I tell him he hates flatterers,

He says he does, being then most flatter'd.  
Let me work;

For I can give him humour the true bent, 210  
And I will bring him to the Capitol.

*Caes.* Nay, we will all of us be there to fetch  
him.

*Bru.* By the eighth hour: is that the utter-  
most?

*Cin.* Be that the uttermost, and fail not  
then.

*Met.* Caius Ligarius doth hear Caesar dead,  
Who rated him for speaking well of Pompey:

I wonder none of you have thought of him.  
*Bru.* Now, good Metellus, go along by him:

He loves me well, and I have given him reasons;  
Send him but hither, and I'll fashion him. 220

*Caes.* The morning comes upon 's: we'll  
leave you, Brutus.

And, friends, dispose yourselves; but all re-  
member

What you have said, and show yourselves true  
Romans.

*Bru.* Good gentlemen, look fresh and  
merry;

Let not our looks put on our griefs;  
But bear it as our Roman actors do,

With untired spirits and formal constancy:  
And so good-morrow to you every one.

*[Exeunt all but Brutus.]*  
Boy! Lucius! Fast asleep? It is no matter;  
Enjoy the honey-heavy dew of slumber: 230  
Thou hast no figures nor no fantasies,  
Which busy care draws in the brains of men;  
Therefore thou sleepest so sound.

*Enter PORTIA.*

*Por.* Brutus, my lord!  
*Bru.* Portia, what mean you? wherefore rise  
you now?

It is not for your health thus to commit  
Your weak condition to the raw cold morning.

*Por.* Nor for yours neither. You've un-  
gently, Brutus,

Stole from my bed: and yesternight, at supper,  
You suddenly arose, and walk'd about,  
Musing and sighing, with your arms across, 240  
And when I ask'd you what the matter was,  
You stared upon me with ungentle looks;  
I urg'd you further; then you scratch'd your  
head,

And too impatiently stamp'd with your foot;  
Yet I insist'd, yet you answer'd not,  
But, with an angry wafture of your hand,  
Gave sign for me to leave you: so I did;  
Fearing to strengthen that impatience

Which seem'd too much enkindled, and withal  
Hoping it was but an effect of humour, 250  
Which sometime hath his hour with every man.

It will not let you eat, nor talk, nor sleep,  
And could it work so much upon your shape  
As it hath much prevail'd on your condition,  
I should not know you, Brutus. Dear my lord,  
Make me acquainted with your cause of grief.

*Bru.* I am not well in health, and that is all.  
*Por.* Brutus is wise, and, were he not in  
health,

He would embrace the means to come by it.

*Bru.* Why, so I do. Good Portia, go to bed.

*Por.* Is Brutus sick? and is it physical? 261  
To walk unbraced and suck up the humours  
Of the dank morning? What, is Brutus sick,  
And will he steal out of his wholesome bed,  
To dare the vile contagion of the night  
And tempt the rheumy and unpurged air  
To add unto his sickness? No, my Brutus;  
You have some sick offence within your mind,  
Which, by the right and virtue of my place,  
I ought to know of: and, upon my knees, 270  
I charm you, by my once-commended beauty,  
By all your vows of love and that great vow  
Which did incorporate and make us one,  
That you unfold to me, yourself, your half,  
Why you are heavy, and what men to-night  
Have had resort to you: for here have been  
Some six or seven, who did hide their faces  
Even from darkness.

*Bru.* Kneel not, gentle Portia.

*Por.* I should not need, if you were gentle  
Brutus.

Within the bond of marriage, tell me, Brutus,  
If it be hid, I should know no secrets 281  
Pertaining to you! Am I yourself

It were, in sort or limitation,  
With you at meals, comfort your bed,

And talk to you sometimes? Dwell I but in  
the suburbs

Of your good pleasure? If it be no more,  
Portia is Brutus' harlot, not his wife.

*Bru.* You are my true and honourable wife,  
As dear to me as are the ruddy drops  
That visit my sad heart.

*Por.* If this were true, then should I know  
this secret. 290

I grant I am a woman; but withal  
A woman that Lord Brutus took to wife:

I grant I am a woman; but withal  
A woman well-reputed, Cato's daughter.

Think you I am no stronger than my sex,  
Being so father'd and so husbanded?

Tell me your counsels, I will not disclose 'em:  
I have made strong proof of my constancy,

Giving myself a voluntary wound 300  
Here, in the thigh: can I bear that with  
patience,

And not my husband's secrets?

*Bru.* O ye gods,  
Render me worthy of this noble wife!

*[Knocking within.]*  
Hark, hark! one knocks: Portia, go in awhile;

And by and by thy bosom shall partake  
The secrets of my heart.

All my engagements I will construe to thee,  
All the chary of my sad brows:

Leave me with haste. *[Exit Portia.]* Lucius,  
who's that knocks?

*Re-enter LUCIUS with LIGARIUS.*

*Luc.* Here is a sick man that would speak  
with you.

*Bru.* Caius Ligarius, that Metellus spake of? 310  
Boy, stand aside. Caius Ligarius! how?

*Lig.* Vouchsafe good-morrow from a feeble  
tongue.

*Bru.* O, what a time have you chose out,  
brave Caius,

To wear a kerchief! Would you were not sick!

*Lig.* I am not sick, if Brutus have in hand  
Any exploit worthy the name of honour.

*Bru.* Such an exploit have I in hand,  
Ligarius,

Had you a healthful ear to hear of it.

*Lig.* By all the gods that Romans bow  
before, 320

I here discard my sickness! Soul of Rome!  
Brave son, derived from honourable loins!

Thou, like an exorcist, hast conjured up  
My mortified spirit. Now bid me run,

And I will strive with things impossible;  
Yea, get the better of them. What's to do?

*Bru.* A piece of work that will make sick  
men whole.

*Lig.* But are not some whole that we must  
make sick?

*Bru.* That must we also. What it is, my  
Caius,

I shall unfold to thee, as we are going 330  
To whom it must be done.

*Lig.* Set on your foot,  
And with a heart new-fired I follow you:  
To do I know not what: but it sufficeth  
That Brutus leads me on.

*Bru.* Follow me, then. *[Exeunt.]*



SCENE II. *Caesar's house.*

*Thunder and lightning. Enter CAESAR, in his night-gown.*

*Caes.* Nor heaven nor earth have been at peace to-night:  
Thrice hath Calpurnia in her sleep cried out,  
'Help, ho! they murder Caesar!' Who's within?

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* My lord!

*Caes.* Go bid the priests do present sacrifice  
And bring me their opinions of success.

*Serv.* I will, my lord. *[Exit.]*

*Enter CALPURNIA.*

*Cal.* What mean you, Caesar? think you to walk forth!  
You shall not stir out of your house to-day.

*Caes.* Caesar shall forth: the things that threaten'd me  
Ne'er look'd but on my back; when they shall see

The face of Caesar, they are vanished.

*Cal.* Caesar, I never stood on ceremonies,  
Yet now they fright me. There is one within,  
Besides the things that we have heard and seen,  
Recounts most horrid sights seen by the watch.  
A lioness hath whelp'd in the streets;  
And graves have yawn'd, and yielded up their dead;

Fierce fiery warriors fought upon the clouds,  
In ranks and squadrons and right form of war,  
Which drizzled blood upon the Capitol;  
The noise of battle hurl'd in the air,  
Horses did neigh, and dying men did groan,  
And ghosts did shriek and squeal about the streets.

O Caesar! these things are beyond all use,  
And I do fear them.

*Caes.* What can he avoid  
Whose end is purposed by the mighty gods?  
Yet Caesar shall go forth; for these predictions  
Are to the world in general as to Caesar.

*Cal.* When beggars die, there are no comets  
seen;  
The heavens themselves blaze forth the death  
of princes.

*Caes.* Cowards die many times before their  
deaths;

The valiant never taste of death but once.  
Of all the wonders that I yet have heard,  
It seems to me most strange that men should  
fear;

Seeing that death, a necessary end,  
Will come when it will come.

*Re-enter Servant.*

What say the augurers

*Serv.* They would not have you to stir forth  
to-day.

Plucking the entrails of an offering forth,  
They could not find a heart within the beast.

*Caes.* The gods do this in shame of cowardice.  
Caesar should be a beast without a heart,  
If he should stay at home to-day for fear.  
No, Caesar shall not; danger knows full well

That Caesar is more dangerous than he:  
We are two lions litter'd in one day,  
And I the elder and more terrible;  
And Caesar shall go forth.

*Cal.* Alas, my lord,  
Your wisdom is consumed in confidence.  
Do not go forth to-day: call it my fear  
That keeps you in the house, and not your own.  
We'll send Mark Antony to the senate—  
And he shall say you are not well to-day:  
Let me, upon my knee, prevail in this.  
*Caes.* Mark Antony shall say I am not well;  
And, for thy humour, I will stay at home.

*Enter DECURIUS.*

Here's Decius Brutus, he shall tell them so.

*Dec.* Caesar, all hail! good morrow, worthy  
Caesar:

I come to fetch you to the senate-house.

*Caes.* And you are come in very happy time,  
To hear my greeting to the senators  
And tell them that I will not come to-day:  
Cannot, is false, and that I dare not, falser:  
I will not come to-day: tell them so, Decius.

*Cal.* Say he is sick.

*Caes.* Shall Caesar send a lie?  
Have I in conquest stretch'd mine arm so far,  
To be afraid to tell graybeards the truth?  
Decius, go tell them Caesar will not come.

*Dec.* Most mighty Caesar, let me know some  
cause,

Lest I be laugh'd at when I tell them so.

*Caes.* The cause is in my will: I will not  
come;

That is enough to satisfy the senate.

But for your private satisfaction,  
Because I love you, I will let you know:  
Calpurnia here, my wife, stays me at home:  
She dreamt to-night she saw my statue,  
Which, like a fountain with an hundred spouts,  
Did run pure blood; and many lusty Romans  
Came smiling, and did bathe their hands in it;  
And these does she apply for warnings, and  
portents,

And evils imminent; and on her knee  
Hath begg'd that I will stay at home to-day.

*Dec.* This dream is all amiss interpreted;

It was a vision fair and fortunate:

Your statue spouting blood in many pipes,  
In which so many smiling Romans bathed,  
Signifies that from you great Rome shall suck  
Reviving blood; and that great men shall press  
For tinctures, stains, relics and cognizance.  
This by Calpurnia's dream is signified.

*Caes.* And this way have you well expounded  
it.

*Dec.* I have, when you have heard what I  
can say:

And know it now: the senate have concluded  
To give this day a crown to mighty Caesar.  
If you shall send them word you will not come,  
Their minds may change. Besides, it were a  
mock

Apt to be render'd, for some one to say

'Break up the senate till another time,  
When Caesar's wife shall meet with better  
dreams.'

If Caesar hide himself, shall they not whisper

'Lo, Caesar is afraid!'

Pardon me, Caesar; for my dear dear love  
To your proceeding bids me tell you this;  
And reason to my love is liable.

Ces. How foolish do your fears seem now,  
Calpurnia!

I am ashamed I did yield to them.  
Give me my robe, for I will go.

Enter PUBLIUS, BRUTUS, LIGARIUS, METELLUS, CASCA, TREBONIUS, and CINNA.

And look where Publius is come to fetch me.

Pub. Good morrow, Caesar.

Ces. Welcome, Publius.  
What, Brutus, are you stir'd so early too? 110  
Good morrow, Casca. Caius Ligarius,  
Caesar was ne'er so much your enemy  
As that same ague which has made you lean.  
What is't o'clock?

Bras. Caesar, 'tis strucken eight.

Ces. I thank you for your pains and courtesy.

Enter ANTONY.

See! Antony, that revels long o' nights,  
Is notwithstanding up. Good morrow, Antony.

Ant. So to most noble Caesar.

Ces. Bid them prepare within:

I am to blame to be thus waited for.  
Now, Cinna: now, Metellus: what, Trebonius!

I have an hour's talk in store for you; 121

Remember that you call on me to-day:

Be near me, that I may remember you.

Treb. Caesar, I will: [Aside] and so near  
will I be,

That your best friends shall wish I had been  
further.

Ces. Good friends, go in, and taste some  
wine with me;

And we, like friends, will straightway go to  
gether.

Bras. [Aside] That every like is not the  
same, O Caesar,

The heart of Brutus yearns to think upon!  
[Exeunt.]

SCENE III. A street near the Capitol.

Enter ARTEMIDORUS, reading a paper.

Ant. 'Caesar, beware of Brutus; take heed  
of Cassius; come not near Casca; have an eye  
to Cinna; trust not Trebonius; mark well Metellus  
Cicero; Decius Brutus loves thee not;  
thou hast wronged Caius Ligarius. There is  
but one mind in all these men, and it is bent  
on Caesar. If thou beest not immortal, look  
out you; security gives way to conspiracy.  
I mighty gods defend thee! Thy lover,

ARTEMIDORUS.'

How will I stand till Caesar pass along, 11  
And as a suitor will I give him this.

My heart laments that virtues cannot live

Out of the womb of emulation.

If thou wilt, this, O Caesar, thou mayst live;

If not, thy wife with traitors do conspire.  
[Exit.]

SCENE IV. Another part of the same street,  
before the house of Brutus.

Enter POMPEIA and LUCIUS.

Pom. I prithee, boy, run to the senate-house;  
Stay not to answer me, but get thee gone:

Why dost thou stay?

Luc. To know my errand, madam.  
Por. I would have had thee there, and here  
again,

Ere I can tell thee what thou shouldst do there.  
(O constancy, be strong upon my side,  
Set a huge mountain 'tween my heart and  
tongue!)

I have a man's mind, but a woman's might.  
How hard it is for women to keep counsel!

Art thou here yet?

Luc. Madam, what should I do? 10  
Run to the Capitol, and nothing else?

And so return to you, and nothing else?

Por. Yes, bring me word, boy, if thy lord  
look well,

For he went mickly forth: and take good note  
What Caesar doth, what suitors press to him.

Hark, boy! what noise is that?

Luc. I hear none, madam.

Por. Prithce, listen well:  
I heard a bustling rumour, like a fray,

And the wind brings it from the Capitol.

Luc. Sooth, madam, I hear nothing. 11

Enter the Soothsayer.

Por. Come hither, fellow: which way hast  
thou been?

Sooth. At mine own house, good lady.

Por. What is't o'clock?

Sooth. About the ninth hour, lady.

Por. Is Caesar yet gone to the Capitol?

Sooth. Madam, not yet: I go to take my  
stand.

To see him pass on to the Capitol.

Por. Thou hast some suit to Caesar, hast  
thou not?

Sooth. That I have, lady: if it will please  
Caesar

To be so good to Caesar as to hear me,  
I shall beseech him to befriend himself. 32

Por. Why, know'st thou any harm's intended  
towards him?

Sooth. None that I know will be, such that  
I fear may chance.

Good morrow to you. Here the street is  
narrow:

The throng that follows Caesar at the heels,  
(Of senators, of pretors, common suitors,  
Will crowd a feeble man almost to death:.

I'll get me to a place more void, and there  
Spoken to great Caesar as he comes along. [Exit.]

Por. I must go in. Ay me, how weak a  
thing

The heart of woman is! O Brutus,

The heavens speed thee in thine enterprise!  
Sure, the boy heard me: Brutus hath a suit

That Caesar will not grant. O, I grow faint.  
Run, Lucius, and command me to my lord;

Say I am merry: come to me again,  
And bring me word what he doth say to time.  
[Re-enter Soothsayer.]

## ACT III.

SCENE I. *Rome. Before the Capitol; the Senate sitting above.*

*A crowd of people; among them ANTONIUS, BRUTUS, CASSIUS, CASCA, DECIO, METELLUS, TREBONIUS, CINNA, ANTONY, LEPIDUS, POPILIUS, PUBLIUS, and others.*

*Cas.* [To the Soothsayer] The ides of March are come.

*Sooth.* Ay, Caesar; but not gone.

*Ant.* Hail, Caesar! read this schedule.

*Dec.* Trebonius doth desire you to o'er-read, At your best leisure, this his humble suit.

*Ant.* O Caesar, read mine first; for mine's a suit

That touches Caesar nearer: read it, great Caesar.

*Cas.* What touches us ourself shall be last served.

*Ant.* Delay not, Caesar; read it instantly.

*Cas.* What, is the fellow mad?

*Pub.* Sirrah, give place.

*Cas.* What, urge you your petitions in the street?

*Ant.* Come to the Capitol.

*CAESAR goes up to the Senate-House, the rest following.*

*Pop.* I wish your enterprise to-day may thrive.

*Cas.* What enterprise, Popilius?

*Pop.* Fare you well.

[Advances to Caesar.]

*Brus.* What said Popilius Lena?

*Cas.* He wish'd to-day our enterprise might thrive.

*Ant.* Our purpose is discovered.

*Brus.* Look, how he makes to Caesar: mark him.

*Cas.* Casca, be sudden, for we fear prevention.

*Brutus,* what shall be done? If this be known, Cassius or Caesar never shall turn back,

*or I will slay myself.*

*Brus.* Cassius, be constant: Popilius Lena speaks not of our purposes;

*or, look, he smiles, and Caesar doth not change.*

*Cas.* Trebonius knows his time; for, look you, Brutus,

*he draws Mark Antony out of the way.*

[*Antony Antony and Trebonius.*]

*Dec.* Where is Metellus Cimber? Let him go, and presently prefer his suit to Caesar.

*Brus.* He is address'd: press near and second him.

*Cin.* Casca, you are the first that rears your hand.

*Cas.* Are we all ready? What is now afoot? That Caesar and his senate must redress!

*Met.* Most high, most mighty, and most potent Caesar,

Metellus Cimber throws before thy seat An humble heart.

*Cas.* I must prevent thee, Cimber. These conculcings and these low conjurations

Might fire the blood of ordinary men,

And turn pre-ordinance and first decree Into the law of children. Be not fond, To think that Caesar bears such rebel blood That will be thaw'd from the true quality With that which melteth fools; I mean, sweet words,

Low-crooked court'sies and base sycophantic

Thy brother by decree is banished:

If thou dost bend and pray and fawn for him, I spurn thee like a cur out of my way.

Know, Caesar doth not wrong, nor without cause

Will he be satisfied.

*Met.* Is there no voice more worthy than my own,

To sound more sweetly in great Caesar's ear For the repealing of my banish'd brother?

*Brus.* I kiss thy hand, but not in flattery, Caesar;

Desiring thee that Publius Cimber may Have an immediate freedom of repeal.

*Cas.* What, Brutus!

*Cas.* Pardon, Caesar; Caesar, pardon:

As low as to thy foot doth Cassius fall, To beg enfranchisement for Publius Cimber.

*Cas.* I could be well moved, if I were as you; If I could pray to move, prayers would move me:

But I am constant as the northern star, Of whose true-fix'd and resting quality

There is no fellow in the firmament. The skies are painted with unnumber'd sparks,

They are all fire and every one doth shine, But there's but one in all doth hold his place:

So in the world; 'tis furnish'd well with men, And men are flesh and blood, and apprehensive;

Yet in the number I do know but one That unassailable holds on his rank,

Unshak'd of motion: and that I am he, Let me a little show it, even in this:

That I was constant Cimber should be banish'd, And constant do remain to keep him so.

*Cin.* O Caesar,—

*Cas.* Hence! wilt thou lift up Olympus?

*Dec.* Great Caesar,—

*Cas.* Doth not Brutus bootless kneel?

*Casca.* Speak, hands, for me!

[*Casca first, then the other Conspirators and Marcus Brutus stab Caesar.*]

*Cas.* Et tu, Brute! Then fall, Caesar! [*Dec.*]

*Cin.* Liberty! Freedom! Tyranny is dead! Run hence, proclaim, cry it about the streets.

*Cas.* Some to the common pulpit, and cry out

'Liberty, freedom, and enfranchisement!'

*Brus.* People and senators, be not affrighted; Fly not; stand still: ambition's debt is paid.

*Casca.* Go to the pulpit, Brutus.

*Dec.* And Cassius too.

*Brus.* Where's Publius?

*Cin.* Here, quite confounded with this mutiny.

*Met.* Stand fast together, lest some friend of Caesar's

Should change—

*Brus.* Talk not of standing. Publius, good cheer;

There is no harm intended to your person. 90  
Nor to no Roman else: so tell them, Publius.

*Cas.* And leave us, Publius; lest that the

hanging on us, should do your age some mischief.

*Bru.* Do so: and let no man abide this deed,  
But we the doers.

*Re-enter TREBONIUS.*

*Cas.* Where is Antony?

*Tre.* Fled to his house amazed:  
Men, wives and children stare, cry out and run  
As it were doomsday.

*Bru.* Fates, we will know your pleasures:  
That we shall die, we know: 'tis but the time  
And drawing days out, that men stand upon.

*Cas.* Why, he that cuts off twenty years of  
life 101

Cuts off so many years of fearing death.

*Bru.* Grant that, and then is death a benefit:  
So are we Cæsar's friends, that have abridged  
His time of fearing death. Stoop, Romans,  
stoop,

And let us bathe our hands in Cæsar's blood  
Up to the elbows, and besmear our swords:  
Then walk we forth, even to the market-place,  
And, waving our red weapons o'er our heads,  
Let's all cry 'Peace, freedom and liberty!' 110

*Cas.* Stoop, then, and wash. How many  
ages hence

Shall this our lofty scene be acted over  
In states unborn and accents yet unknown!

*Bru.* How many times shall Cæsar bleed in  
sport,

That now on Pompey's basis lies along  
No worthier than the dust!

*Cas.* So oft as that shall be,  
So often shall the knot of us be call'd  
The men that gave their country liberty.

*Dec.* What, shall we forth?

*Cas.* Ay, every man away:  
Brutus shall lead; and we will grace his heels  
With the most boldest and best hearts of Rome.

*Enter a Servant.*

*Bru.* Soft! who comes here! A friend of  
Antony's.

*Serv.* Thus, Brutus, did my master bid me  
kneel:

Thus did Mark Antony bid me fall down;  
And, being prostrate, thus he bade me say:  
Brutus is noble, wise, valiant, and honest;  
Cæsar was mighty, bold, royal, and loving:  
Say I love Brutus, and I honour him;  
Say I fear'd Cæsar, honour'd him and loved  
him.

If Brutus will vouchsafe that Antony  
May safely come to him, and be resolved  
How Cæsar hath deserved to lie in death,  
Mark Antony shall not love Cæsar dead  
So well as Brutus living; but will follow  
fortunes and affairs of noble Brutus  
in the hazards of this untrod state  
and true faith. So says my master Antony.

Thy master is a wise and valiant Roman;  
I thought him so.  
I'll please him come unto this place,

He shall be satisfied; and, by my honour, 141  
Depart untouch'd.

*Serv.*

I'll fetch him presently. [*Exit.*  
*Bru.* I know that we shall have him well to  
friend.

*Cas.* I wish we may: but yet have I a mind  
That fears him much: and my misgiving still  
Falls shrewdly to the purpose.

*Bru.* But here comes Antony.

*Re-enter ANTONY.*

Welcome, Mark Antony.

*Ant.* O mighty Cæsar! dost thou lie so low?  
Are all thy conquests, glories, triumphs, spoils,  
Shrunk to this little measure? Fate thee well,  
I know not, gentlemen, what you intend, 151  
Who else must be let blood, who else is rank:  
If I myself, there is no hour so fit  
As Cæsar's death's hour, nor no instrument  
Of half that worth as those your swords, made  
rich

With the most noble blood of all this world.  
I do beseech ye, if you bear me hard,  
Now, whilst your purpled hands do reek and  
smoke,

Fulfil your pleasure. Live a thousand years,  
I shall not find myself so apt to die: 160  
No place will please me so, no mean of death,  
As here by Cæsar, and by you cut off,  
The choice and master spirits of this age.

*Bru.* O Antony, beg not your death of us.  
Though now we must appear bloody and cruel,  
As, by our hands and this our present act,  
You see we do, yet see you but our hands  
And this the bleeding business they have done:  
Our hearts you see not; they are pitiful;  
And pity to the general wrong of Rome— 170  
As fire drives out fire, so pity pity—  
Hath done this deed on Cæsar. For your  
part,

To you our swords have leaden points, Mark  
Antony:

† Our arms, in strength of malice, and our  
hearts

Of brothers' temper, do receive you in  
With all kind love, good thoughts, and rever-  
ence.

*Cas.* Your voice shall be as strong as any  
man's  
In the disposing of new dignities.

*Bru.* Only be patient till we have appeas'd  
The multitude, beside themselves with fear, 180  
And then we will deliver you the cause,  
Why I, that did love Cæsar when I struck him,  
Have thus proceeded.

*Ant.* I doubt not of your wisdom.  
Let each man render me his bloody hand:  
First, Marcus Brutus, will I shake with you;  
Next, Caius Cassius, do I take your hand;  
Now, Decius Brutus, yours; now yours, Me-  
tellus;

Yours, Cinna; and, my valiant Cæsar, yours;  
Though last, not least in love, yours, good  
Trebanius.

Gentlemen all,—also, what shall I say? 190  
My credit now stands on such slippery ground,  
That one of two bad ways you must consent me,  
Either a coward or a flatterer.

That I did love thee, Cæsar, O, 'tis true :  
 If then thy spirit look upon us now,  
 Shall it not grieve thee dearer than thy death,  
 To see thy Antony making his peace,  
 Shaking the bloody fingers of thy foes,  
 Most noble! in the presence of thy corse?  
 Had I as many eyes as thou hast wounds, <sup>300</sup>  
 Weeping as fast as they stream forth thy blood,  
 It would become me better than to close  
 In terms of friendship with thine enemies.  
 Pardon me, Julius! Here wast thou bay'd,  
 brave hart;  
 Here didst thou fall; and here thy hunters  
 stand,  
 Sign'd in thy spoil, and crimson'd in thy lethe.  
 O world, thou wast the forest to this hart;  
 And this, indeed, O world, the heart of thee.  
 How like a deer, stricken by many princes,  
 Dost thou here lie! <sup>210</sup>

*Cas.* Mark Antony.—

*Ant.* Pardon me, Calus Cassius :  
 The enemies of Cæsar shall say this;  
 Then, in a friend, it is cold modesty.

*Cas.* I blame you not for praising Cæsar so;  
 But what compact mean you to have with us?  
 Will you be prick'd in number of our friends;  
 Or shall we on, and not depend on you?

*Ant.* Therefore I took your hands, but was,  
 indeed,  
 Sway'd from the point, by looking down on  
 Cæsar.

Friends am I with you all and love you all, <sup>220</sup>  
 Upon this hope, that you shall give me reasons  
 Why and wherein Cæsar was dangerous.

*Bru.* Or else were this a savage spectacle :  
 Our reasons are so full of good regard  
 That were you, Antony, the son of Cæsar, <sup>\*</sup>  
 You should be satisfied.

*Ant.* That's all I seek :  
 And am moreover suitor that I may  
 Produce his body to the market-place;  
 And in the pulpit, as becomes a friend,  
 Speak in the order of his funeral. <sup>230</sup>

*Bru.* You shall, Mark Antony.

*Cas.* Brutus, a word with you.  
 [*Aside to Bru.*] You know not what you do  
 do not consent

That Antony speak in his funeral :  
 Know you how much the people may be moved  
 By that which he will utter?

*Bru.* By your pardon ;  
 I will myself into the pulpit first,  
 And show the reason of our Cæsar's death :  
 What Antony shall speak, I will protest  
 He speaks by leave and by permission,  
 And that we are contented Cæsar shall <sup>a</sup>  
 Have all true rites and lawful ceremonies.  
 It shall advantage more than do us wrong,  
 If I know not what may fall; I like it  
 not.

*Cas.* I know not what may fall; I like it  
 not.  
*Bru.* Mark Antony, here, take you Cæsar's  
 body.  
 You shall not in your funeral speech blame us,

And say you do't by our permission;  
 Else shall you not have any hand at all  
 About his funeral; and you shall speak  
 In the same pulpit whereto I am going.

After my speech is ended.

*Ant.* Be it so ;

do desire no more.

*Bru.* Prepare the body then, and follow us.

[*Exeunt all but Antony.*]

*Ant.* O, pardon me, thou bleeding piece of  
 earth,

That I am meek and gentle with these butchers!  
 Thou art the ruins of the noblest man  
 That ever lived in the tide of times.

Ove to the hand that shed this costly blood!  
 Over thy wounds now do I prophesy,— <sup>239</sup>

Which, like dumb mouths, do ope their ruby lips,  
 To beg the voice and utterance of my tongue—

A curse shall light upon the limbs of men;  
 Domestic fury and fierce civil strife

Shall cumber all the parts of Italy;  
 Blood and destruction shall be so in use

And dreadful objects so familiar  
 That mothers shall but smile when they behold

Their infants quarter'd with the hands of war;  
 All pity choked with custom of fell deeds:

And Cæsar's spirit, ranging for revenge, <sup>270</sup>  
 With Ate by his side come hot from hell,

Shall in these confines with a monarch's voice  
 Cry 'Havoc,' and let slip the dogs of war;

That this foul deed shall smell above the earth  
 With carrion men, groaning for burial.

*Enter a Servant.*

You serve Octavius Cæsar, do you not?

*Serv.* I do, Mark Antony.

*Ant.* Cæsar did write for him to come to  
 Rome.

*Serv.* He did receive his letters, and is  
 coming;

And bid me say to you by word of mouth— <sup>280</sup>  
 O Cæsar!— [*Seeing the body.*]

*Ant.* Thy heart is big, get thee apart and  
 weep.

Passion, I see, is catching; for mine eyes,  
 Seeing those beads of sorrow stand in thine,  
 Began to water. Is thy master coming?

*Serv.* He lies to-night within seven leagues  
 of Rome.

*Ant.* Post back with speed, and tell him  
 what hath chanced:

Here is a mourning Rome, a dangerous Rome,  
 No Rome of safety for Octavius yet; <sup>290</sup>  
 Hie hence, and tell him so. Yet, stay awhile;

Thou shalt not back till I have borne this come  
 into the market-place: there shall I try,

In my oration, how the people take  
 The cruel issue of these bloody men;

According to the which, thou shalt discourse  
 To young Octavius of the state of things.

Lend me your hand. [*Exeunt with Cæsar's  
 body.*]

SCENE II. *The Forum.*

*Enter BRUTUS and CASSIUS, and a throng  
 of Citizens.*

*Citizens.* We will be satisfied; let us be  
 satisfied.

*Bru.* Then follow me, and give me audience,  
 friends.

<sup>300</sup> | Cassius, go you into the other street,

And part the numbers.

Those that will hear me speak, let 'em stay here;  
Those that will follow Cassius, go with him;  
And public reasons shall be rendered  
Of Caesar's death.

*First Cit.* I will hear Brutus speak.

*Sec. Cit.* I will hear Cassius; and compare  
their reasons,  
When severally we hear them rendered.

*[Exit Cassius, with some of the Citizens.]*

*Brutus goes into the pulpit.*

*Third Cit.* The noble Brutus is ascended:  
silence!

*Brut.* Be patient till the last.

Romans, countrymen, and lovers! hear me for  
my cause, and be silent, that you may hear:  
believe me for mine honour, and have respect  
to mine honour, that you may believe: venerate  
me in your wisdom, and awake your senses,  
that you may the better judge. If there be any  
in this assembly, any dear friend of Caesar's,  
to him I say, that Brutus' love to Caesar was no  
less than his. If then that friend demand why  
Brutus rose against Caesar, this is my answer:—  
Not that I loved Caesar less, but that I loved  
Rome more. Had you rather Caesar were living,  
and the all slaves, than that Caesar were dead,  
to live all free men? As Caesar loved me, I  
weep for him; as he was fortunate, I rejoice at  
it; as he was valiant, I honour him; but, as he  
was ambitious, I slew him. There is tears for  
his love; joy for his fortune; honour for his  
valour; and death for his ambition. Who is  
here so base that would be a landman? If any,  
speak; for him have I offended. Who is here  
so rude that would not be a Roman? If any,  
speak; for him have I offended. Who is here  
so vile that will not love his country? If any,  
speak; for him have I offended. I pause for a  
reply.

*All.* None, Brutus, none.

*Brut.* Then none have I offended. I have  
done no more to Caesar than you shall do to  
Brutus. The question of his death is enrolled  
in the Capitol; his glory not extenuated, where-  
in he was worthy, nor his offences enforced, for  
which he suffered death.

*Enter ANTONY and others, with CAESAR'S body.*  
Here comes his body, mourned by Mark An-  
tony: who, though he had no hand in his  
death, shall receive the benefit of his dying, a  
place in the commonwealth; as which of you  
shall not? With this I depart.—that, as I slew  
my best lover for the good of Rome, I have the  
same danger for myself, when it shall please my  
country to need my death.

*All.* Live, Brutus! live, live!

*First Cit.* Bring him with triumph home  
unto his house.

*Sec. Cit.* Give him a statue with his  
costors.

*Third Cit.* Let him be Caesar.

*Fourth Cit.* Caesar's better parts  
shall be crown'd in Brutus.

*First Cit.* We'll bring him to his house  
With shouts and clamours.

*Brut.* My countrymen,—

*Sec. Cit.* Peace, silence! Brutus speaks.

*First Cit.* Peace, ho!

*Brut.* Good countrymen, let me depart alone,  
And, for my sake, stay here with Antony: or  
Do grace to Caesar's corpse, and grace his  
speech.

Tending to Caesar's glories; which Mark An-  
tony,

By our permission, is allow'd to

I do entreat you, not a man do  
Save I alone, till Antony have

*First Cit.* Stay, ho! and let

Antony.

*Third Cit.* Let him go up into the public  
chair;

We'll hear him. Noble Antony, I up

*Ant.* For Brutus' sake, I am beholding to  
you.

*Fourth Cit.* What does he say of Brutus?

*Third Cit.* He says, for Brutus' sake,  
He finds himself behold to us all.

*Fourth Cit.* There best he speak no harm  
of Brutus here.

*First Cit.* This Caesar was a tyrant.

*Third Cit.* Nay, that's certain:

We are blest that Rome is rid of him.

*Sec. Cit.* Peace! let us hear what Antony  
can say.

*Ant.* You gentle Romans,—

*Citizens.* Peace, ho! let us hear him.

*Ant.* Friends, Romans, countrymen, lend  
me your ears;

I come to bury Caesar, not to praise him.  
The evil that men do lives after them;

The good is oft interred with their bones;

So let it be with Caesar. The noble Brutus

Hath told you Caesar was ambitious:

If it were so, it was a grievous fault,

And grievously hath Caesar answer'd it.

Here, under leave of Brutus and the rest—

For Brutus is an honourable man;

So are they all, all honourable men—

Come I to speak in Caesar's funeral.

He was my friend, faithful and just to me:

So But Brutus says he was ambitious;

And Brutus is an honourable man.

He hath brought many captives home to Rome,

Whose ransoms did the general coffers fill:

Did this in Caesar seem ambitious?

When that the poor have cried, 'Caesar hath

wept:

Ambition should be made of sterner stuff:

Yet Brutus says he was ambitious;

And Brutus is an honourable man.

You all did see that on the Lupercal

I thrice presented him a kingly crown,

Which he did thrice refuse: was this ambition?

Yet Brutus says he was ambitious;

And, sure, he is an honourable man.

I speak not to disprove what Brutus spoke,

But here I am to speak what I do know.

You all did love him once, not without cause:

What cause withholds you then, to smother it

him?

O judgement! thou art fled to brutish beasts,

And men have lost their reason. Bear with

me!

My heart is in the coffin there with Caesar,

And I must pause till it come back to me.

*First Cit.* Methinks there is much reason  
in his saying.

*Sec. Cit.* If thou consider rightly of the  
matter,  
Caesar has had great wrong.

*Third Cit.* Has he, masters?  
I fear there will a worse come in his place.

*Fourth Cit.* Mark'd ye his words? He would  
not take the crown;

Therefore 'tis certain he was not ambitious.

*First Cit.* If it be found so, some will dear  
abide it.

*Sec. Cit.* Poor soul! his eyes are red as fire  
with weeping. 120

*Third Cit.* There's not a nobler man in  
Rome than Antony.

*Fourth Cit.* Now mark him, he begins  
again to speak.

*Ant.* But yesterday the word of Caesar might  
have stood against the world; now lies he  
there,

And none so poor to do him reverence.

O masters, if I were disposed to stir

Your hearts and minds to mutiny and rage,  
I should do Brutus wrong, and Cassius wrong,

Who, you all know, are honourable men:  
I will not do them wrong; I rather choose 130

To wrong the dead, to wrong myself and you,  
Than I will wrong such honourable men.

But here's a parchment with the seal of Caesar;  
I found it in his closet, 'tis his will:

Let but the commons hear this testament—  
Which, pardon me, I do not mean to read—

And they would go and kiss dead Caesar's  
wounds.

And dip their napkins in his sacred blood,  
Yea, beg a hair of him for memory,

And, dying, mention it within their wills, 140  
Bequeathing it as a rich legacy  
Unto their issue.

*Fourth Cit.* We'll hear the will: read it,  
Mark Antony.

*All.* The will, the will! we will hear Caesar's  
will.

*Ant.* Have patience, gentle friends, I must  
not read it;

It is not meet you know how Caesar loved you.  
You are not wood, you are not stones, but men;

And, being men, hearing the will of Caesar,  
it will inflame you, it will make you mad: 150

'Tis good you know not that you are his heirs;  
For, if you should, O, what would come of it!

*Fourth Cit.* Read the will; we'll hear it,  
Antony;

You shall read us the will, Caesar's will.

*Ant.* Will you be patient? will you stay  
whilst

I have o'erwhelm'd myself to tell you of it:  
I fear it wrong the honourable men

Whose daggers have stab'd Caesar; I do fear it.

*Fourth Cit.* They were traitors: honourable  
men!

*All.* The will! the testament!

*Sec. Cit.* They were villains, murderers: the  
will! read the will. 160

*Ant.* You will compel me, then, to read the  
will!

Then make a ring about the corpse of Caesar,  
And let me show you him that made the will.  
Shall I descend? and will you give me leave?

*Several Cit.* Come down.

*Sec. Cit.* Descend.

*Third Cit.* You shall have leave.

[*Antony comes down.*]

*Fourth Cit.* A ring; stand round.

*First Cit.* Stand from the hearse, stand from  
the body.

*Sec. Cit.* Room for Antony, most noble  
Antony. 170

*Ant.* Nay, press not so upon me; stand far  
off.

*Several Cit.* Stand back; room; hear back.  
*Ant.* If you have tears, prepare to shed them  
now.

You all do know this mantle: I remember  
The first time ever Caesar put it on;

'Twas on a summer's evening, in his tent,

That day he overcame the Nervii.

Look, in this place ran Cassius' dagger through:

See what a rent the envious Caesar made:

Through this the well-beloved Brutus stab'd;

And as he pluck'd his cursed steel away, 181

Mark how the blood of Caesar follow'd it,  
As rushing out of doors, to be resolved

If Brutus so unkindly knock'd, or no;

For Brutus, as you know, was Caesar's angel:

Judge, O you gods, how dearly Caesar loved him!

This was the most unkindest cut of all;

For when the noble Caesar saw him stab,

Ingratitude, more strong than traitors' arms,

Quite vanquish'd him: then burst his mighty  
heart; 190

And, in his mantle muffling up his face,

Even at the base of Pompey's statue,

Which all the while his blood great Caesar fell,

O, what a fall was there, my countrymen!

Then I, and you, and all of us fell down,

Whilst bloody treason flourish'd over us.

O, now you weep; and, I perceive, you feel

the kind souls, what, weep you when you but

behold

Our Caesar's venture wounded? Look upon him,

Here is himself, mark'd, as you saw, with

traitors. 200

*First Cit.* O pitiful spectacle!

*Sec. Cit.* O noble Caesar!

*Third Cit.* O woful day!

*Fourth Cit.* O traitors, villains!

*First Cit.* O most bloody sight!

*Sec. Cit.* We will be revenged.

*All.* Revenge! About! Seek! Burn! Fire!

Kill! Slay! Let not a traitor live!

*Ant.* Stay, countrymen. 210

*First Cit.* Peace there! hear the noble

Antony.

*Sec. Cit.* We'll hear him, we'll follow him,

we'll die with him.

*Ant.* Good friends, sweet friends, let me not

stir you up

To such a sudden flood of mutiny.

They that have done this deed are honourable:

What private griefs they have, alas, I know not,

That made them do as: they are wise and

honourable.

And will, no doubt, with reasons answer you.  
I come not, friends, to steal away your hearts:  
I am no orator, as Brutus is;  
But, as you know me all, a plain blunt man  
That love my friend; and that they know full well

That gave me public leave to speak of him:  
For I have neither wit, nor words, nor worth,  
Action, nor utterance, nor the power of speech,  
To stir men's blood: I only speak right on;  
I tell you that which you yourselves do know;  
Show you sweet Cæsar's wounds, poor poor  
dumb mouths,

And bid them speak for me: but were I Brutus,  
And Brutus Antony, there were an Antony  
Would ruffle up your spirits and put a tongue  
In every wound of Cæsar that should move  
The stones of Rome to rise and mutiny.

*All.* We'll mutiny.

*First Cit.* We'll burn the house of Brutus.

*Third Cit.* Away, then! come, seek the conspirators.

*Ant.* Yet hear me, countrymen; yet hear me speak.

*All.* Peace, ho! Hear Antony. Most noble Antony!

*Ant.* Why, friends, you go to do you know not what:

Wherein hath Cæsar thus deserved your loves?  
Alas, you know not: I must tell you, then:  
You have forgot the will I told you of.

*All.* Most true. The will! Let's stay and hear the will.

*Ant.* Here is the will, and under Cæsar's seal.

To every Roman citizen he gives,  
To every several man, seventy five drachmas.

*Sec. Cit.* Most noble Cæsar! We'll revenge his death.

*Third Cit.* O royal Cæsar!

*Ant.* Hear me with patience.

*All.* Peace, ho!

*Ant.* Moreover, he hath left you all his walks,

His private arbours and new-planted orchards,  
On this side Tiber; he hath left them you,  
And to your heirs for ever, common pleasures,  
To walk abroad, and recreate yourselves.

Here was a Cæsar! when comes such another?

*First Cit.* Never, never. Come, away, away!

We'll burn his body in the holy place,  
And with the brands fire the traitors' houses.

*Sec. Cit.* Go fetch fire.

*Third Cit.* Pluck down benches.

*Fourth Cit.* Pluck down forms, windows, anything. *[Exeunt Citizens with the body.]*

*Ant.* Now let it work. Mischief, thou art swift,

Take thou what course thou wilt!

*Enter a Servant.*

How now, fellow!

*Serv.* Sir, Octavius is already come to Rome.

*Ant.* Where is he?

*Serv.* He and Lepidus are at Cæsar's house.

*Ant.* And thither will I straight to visit him:  
He comes upon a wish. Fortune is merry,  
And in this mood will give us any thing.

*Serv.* I heard him say, Brutus and Cassius  
Are rid like madmen through the gates of Rome.

*Ant.* Belike they had some notice of the people,

How I had moved them. Bring me to Octavius.

*[Exeunt.]*

SCENE III. *A str*

*Enter CINNA the 1*

*Cin.* I dreamt to-night that I did feast with Cæsar,

And things unluckily charge my fantasy:  
I have no will to wander forth of doors,  
Yet something leads me forth.

*Enter Citizens.*

*First Cit.* What is your name?

*Sec. Cit.* Whither are you going?

*Third Cit.* Where do you dwell?

*Fourth Cit.* Are you a married man or a bachelor?

*Sec. Cit.* Answer every man directly.

*First Cit.* Ay, and briefly.

*Fourth Cit.* Ay, and wisely.

*Third Cit.* Ay, and truly, you were best.

*Cin.* What is my name? Whither am I going? Where do I dwell? Am I a married man or a bachelor? Then, to answer every man directly and briefly, wisely and truly: wisely I say, I am a bachelor.

*Sec. Cit.* That's as much as to say, they are fools that marry: you'll bear me a bang for that, I fear. Proceed; directly.

*Cin.* Directly, I am going to Cæsar's funeral.

*First Cit.* As a friend or an enemy?

*Cin.* As a friend.

*Sec. Cit.* That matter is answered directly.

*Fourth Cit.* For your dwelling, briefly.

*Cin.* Briefly, I dwell by the Capitol.

*Third Cit.* Your name, sir, truly.

*Cin.* Truly, my name is Cinna.

*First Cit.* Tear him to pieces; he's a conspirator.

*Cin.* I am Cinna the poet, I am Cinna the poet.

*Fourth Cit.* Tear him for his bad verses, tear him for his bad verses.

*Cin.* I am not Cinna the conspirator.

*Fourth Cit.* It is no matter, his name's Cinna; pluck but his name out of his heart, and turn him going.

*Third Cit.* Tear him, tear him! Come, brands, ho! fire-brands, to Brutus, to Cassius; burn all: some to Decius' house, and some to Casca's; some to Ligarius': away, go!

*[Exeunt.]*

ACT IV.

SCENE I. *A house in Rome.*

ANTONY, OCTAVIUS, and LEPIDUS, seated at a table.

*Ant.* These many, then, shall die; their names are prick'd.



*Oct.* Your brother too must die; consent you, Lepidus!

*Lep.* I do consent.—

*Oct.* Prick him down, Antony.

*Lep.* Upon condition Publius shall not live, Who is your sister's son, Mark Antony.

*Ant.* He shall not live; look, with a spot I damn him.

But, Lepidus, go you to Cæsar's house; Fetch the will hither, and we shall determine How to cut off some charge in legacies.

*Lep.* What, shall I find you here? 10

*Oct.* Or here, or at the Capitol.

[*Exit Lepidus.*]

*Ant.* This is a slight unmeritable man, Meet to be sent on errands: is it fit, The three-fold world divided, he should stand One of the three to share it?

*Oct.* So you thought him; And took his voice who should be prick'd to die, In our black sentence and proscription.

*Ant.* Octavius, I have seen more days than you:

And though we lay these honours on this man, To ease ourselves of divers slanderous loads, 20 He shall but bear them as the ass bears gold, To groan and sweat under the business, Either led or driven, as we point the way; And having brought our treasure where we will, Then take we down his load, and turn him off, Like to the empty ass, to shake his ears, And graze in commons.

*Oct.* You may do your will; But he's a tried and valiant soldier.

*Ant.* So is my horse, Octavius; and for that I do appoint him store of provender: 30

It is a creature that I teach to fight, To wind, to stop, to run directly on, His corporal motion govern'd by my spirit.

And, in some taste, is Lepidus but so; He must be taught and train'd and bid go forth; A barren-spirited fellow; one that feeds On subjects, ors and imitations,

Which, out of use and staled by other men, Begin his fashion: do not talk of him,

But as a property. And now, Octavius, 40 Listen great things:—Brutus and Cassius

Are levying powers: we must straight make head:

Therefore let our alliance be combined, Our best friends made, our means stretch'd;

And let us presently go sit in council, How covert matters may be best disclosed,

And open perils surest answered.

*Oct.* Let us do so: for we are at the stake, And bay'd about with many enemies;

And some that smile have in their hearts, I fear, 50 Millions of mischiefs.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. Camp near Sardis. Before Brutus's tent.

*Drum.* Enter BRUTUS, LUCILIUS, LUCIUS, and Soldiers; TITINIUS and PINDARUS meeting them.

*Bru.* Stand, ho!

*Lucil.* Give the word, ho! and stand.

*Bru.* What now, Lucilius! is Cassius near?

*Lucil.* He is at hand; and Pindarus is come To do you salutation from his master.

*Bru.* He greets me well. Your master, Pindarus,

In his own change, or by ill officers, Hath given me some worthy cause to wish

Things done, undone: but, if he be at hand, I shall be satisfied.

*Pin.* I do not doubt 20 But that my noble master will appear Such as he is, full of regard and honour.

*Bru.* He is not doubted. A word, Lucilius; How he received you, let me be resolved.

*Lucil.* With courtesy and with respect enough;

But not with such familiar instances, Nor with such free and friendly conference,

As he hath used of old.

*Bru.* Thou hast described A hot friend cooling: ever note, Lucilius,

When love begins to sicken and decay, 30 It useth an enforced ceremony.

There are no tricks in plain and simple faith; But hollow men, like horses hot at hand,

Make gallant show and promise of their mettle; But when they should endure the bloody spur,

They fall their crests, and, like deceitful jades, Sink in the trial. Comes his army on?

*Lucil.* They mean this night in Sardis to be quarter'd;

The greater part, the horse in general, Are come with Cassius.

*Bru.* Hark! he is arrived. 30 [*Low march within.*]

March gently on to meet him.

*Enter CASSIUS and his powers.*

*Cas.* Stand, ho! *Bru.* Stand, ho! Speak the word along.

*First Sol.* Stand!

*Sec. Sol.* Stand!

*Third Sol.* Stand!

*Cas.* Most noble brother, you have done me wrong.

*Bru.* Judge me, you gods! wrong I mine enemies!

And, if not so, how should I wrong a brother?

*Cas.* Brutus, this sober form of yours hides wrongs; 40

And when you do them—

*Bru.* Cassius, be content; Speak your griefs softly: I do know you well.

Before the eyes of both our armies here, Which should perceive nothing but love from us,

Let us not wrangle: bid them move away; Then in my tent, Cassius, enlarge your griefs,

And I will give you audience.

*Cas.* Pindarus, Bid our commanders lead their charges off A little from this ground.

*Bru.* Lucilius, do you the like; and let no man

Come to our tent till we have done our conference.

Let Lucius and Titinius guard our door. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. Brutus's tent.

Enter BRUTUS and CASSIUS.

Cas. That you have wrong'd me doth appear in this:

You have condemn'd and noted Lucius Pella For taking bribes here of the Sardians; Wherein my letters, praying on his side, Because I knew the man, were slighted off.

Bru. You wrong'd yourself to write in such a case.

Cas. In such a time as this it is not meet That every nice offence should bear his comment.

Bru. Let me tell you, Cassius, you yourself Are much condemn'd to have an itching palm; To sell and mart your offices for gold To underserve.

Cas. I an itching palm! You know that you are Brutus that speak this, Or, by the gods, this speech were else your last.

Bru. The name of Cassius honours this corruption, And chastisement doth therefore hide his head.

Cas. Chastisement!

Bru. Remember March, the ides of March remember:

Did not great Julius bleed for justice' sake? What villain touch'd his body, that did stab, And not for justice! What, shall one of us, That struck the foremost man of all this world But for supporting robbers, shall we now Contaminate our fingers with base bribes, And sell the mighty space of our large honours For so much trash as may be grasped thus? I had rather be a dog, and bay the moon, Than such a Roman.

Cas. Brutus, bay not me; I'll not endure it; you forget yourself, To hedge me in; I am a soldier, I, Older in practice, abler than yourself To make conditions.

Bru. Go to; you are not, Cassius.

Cas. I am.

Bru. I say you are not.

Cas. Urge me no more, I shall forget myself; Have mind upon your health, tempt me no farther.

Bru. Away, slight man!

Cas. Is't possible!

Bru. Hear me, for I will speak. Must I give way and room to your rash choler? Shall I be fought when a madman stares?

Cas. O ye gods, ye gods! must I endure all this?

Bru. All this? ay, more: fret till your proud heart break;

Go show your slaves how choleric you are, And make your bondmen tremble. Must I to your rage?

Must I observe you? must I stand and crouch Under your testy humour? By the gods, You shall repent the venom of your spleen.

Though it do split you; for, from this day forth, I'll use you for my walking gait, for my laughter, when you are weeping.

Cas. Is it come to this! 30

Bru. You say you are a better soldier: Let it appear so; make your vaunting true; And it shall please me well: for mine own part, I shall be glad to learn of noble men.

Cas. Yes, wrong me every way; you wrong me, Brutus;

I said, an elder soldier, not a better:

Did I say 'better'?

Bru. If you did, I care not.

Cas. When Caesar lived, he durst not thus have moved me.

Bru. Peace, peace! you durst not so have tempted him.

Cas. I durst not!

Bru. No.

Cas. What, durst not tempt him!

Bru. For your life you durst not.

Cas. Do not presume too much upon my love;

I may do that I shall be sorry for.

Bru. You have done that you should be sorry for.

There is no terror, Cassius, in your threats,

For I am arm'd so strong in honesty

That they pass by me as the idle wind,

Which I respect not. I did send to you

For certain sums of gold, which you denied me:

For I can raise no money by vile means: 71

By heaven, I had rather coin my heart,

And drop my blood for drachmas, than to

wring

From the hard hands of peasants their vile

trash

By any indirection: I did send

To you for gold to pay my legions,

Which you denied me: was that done like

Cassius?

Should I have answer'd Caius Cassius so?

When Marcus Brutus grows so covetous,

To lock such rascal counters from his friends,

To be ready, gods, with all your thunderbolts;

Dash him to pieces!

Cas. I denied you not.

Bru. You did.

Cas. I did not: he was but a fool that brought

My answer back. Brutus hath riv'd my heart:

A friend should bear his friend's infirmities,

But Brutus makes mine greater than they are.

Bru. I do not, till you practise them on me.

Cas. You love me not.

Bru. I do not like your faults.

Cas. A friendly eye could never see such faults. 90

Bru. A flatterer's would not, though they do appear

As huge as high Olympus.

Cas. Come, Antony, and young Octavius, come,

Revenge yourselves alone on Cassius,

For Cassius is a enemy of the world;

Hated by one he loves; braved by his brother;

Check'd like a bondman; all his faults ob-

served,

Set in a note-book, learn'd, and cou'd by rote,

To cast into my teeth. O, I could weep

My spirit from mine eyes! There is my danger.

And here my naked breast; within, a heart not  
Dearer than Plutus' mine, richer than gold:  
If that thou be't a Roman, take it forth;  
I, that denied thee gold, will give my heart;  
Strike, as thou didst at Caesar; for, I know,  
When thou didst hate him worst, thou lovedst  
him better.

Than ever thou lovedst Cassius.

*Bru.* Blot out your dagger:  
Be angry when you will, it shall have scope;  
Do what you will, dishonour shall be honour.  
O Cassius, you are yoked with a lamb 120  
That carries anger as the flint bears fire;  
Who, much enforc'd, shows a hasty spark,  
And straight is cold again.

*Cas.* Hath Cassius lived  
To be but mirth and laughter to his Brutus,  
When grief, and blood ill-temper'd, vexeth  
him?

*Bru.* When I spoke that, I was ill-temper'd  
too.

*Cas.* Do you confess so much? Give me  
your hand.

*Bru.* And my heart too.

*Cas.* O Brutus!

*Bru.* What's the matter?  
*Cas.* Have not you love enough to bear  
with mine?

When that rash humour which my mother  
gave me 120  
Makes me forgetful!

*Bru.* Yes, Cassius; and, from henceforth,  
When you are over-came with your Brutus,  
He'll think your mother chidea, and leave  
you so.

*Port.* [Within] Let me go in to see the  
generals:  
There is some grudge between 'em, 'tis not  
meet

They be alone.

*Luc.* [Within] You shall not come to  
them.

*Port.* [Within] Nothing but death shall  
stay me.

*Enter Port.* followed by LUCILIUS, TITINIUS,  
and LUCIUS.

*Cas.* How now! what's the matter?  
*Port.* For shame, you generals! what do you  
mean? 120

Love, and be friends, as two such men should  
be;

For I have seen more years, I'm sure, than ye.  
*Cas.* Ha, ha! how wisely doth this cynic  
rhyme!

*Bru.* Get you hence, sirrah; saucy fellow,  
hence!

*Cas.* Bear with him, Brutus; 'tis his fashion.

*Bru.* I'll know his humour, when he knows  
his time:

What should the wars do with these jingling  
fools?

Companion, hence!  
*Cas.* Away, away, be gone!

*Bru.* Lucilius and Titinius, bid the com-  
manders

Prepare to lodge their companies to-night. 125

*Cas.* And come yourselves, and bring Man-  
sala with you  
Immediately to us.

[*Exeunt Lucilius and Titinius.*  
*Bru.* Lucius, a bowl of wine! *[Mark Lucius.*

*Cas.* I did not think you could have been so  
angry.

*Bru.* O Cassius, I am sick of many griefs.

*Cas.* Of your philosophy you make no use,  
If you give place to accidental evils.

*Bru.* No man bears sorrow better: Portia is  
dead.

*Cas.* Ha! Portia!  
*Bru.* She is dead.

*Cas.* How escap'd I killing when I cross'd  
you so? 130

O insupportable and touching loss!  
Upon what sickness?

*Bru.* Impatient of my absence,  
And grief that young Octavius with Mark  
Antony

Have made themselves so strong;—for with her  
death

That tidings came;—with this she fell dis-  
tract,

And, her attendants absent, swallow'd fire.

*Cas.* And died so?

*Bru.* Even so.

*Cas.* O ye immortal gods!

*Re-enter LUCIUS, with wine and taper.*  
*Bru.* Speak no more of her. Give me a  
bowl of wine.

In this I bury all unkindness, Cassius.

*Cas.* My heart is thirsty for that noble  
pledge. 135

Fill, Lucius, till the wine o'erswell the cup;  
I cannot drink too much of Brutus' love.

*Bru.* Come in, Titinius! [*Exit Lucius.*

*Re-enter TITINIUS, with MESSALA.*  
Welcome, good!

Now sit we close about this taper here,  
And call in question our necessities.

*Cas.* Portia, art thou gone?

*Bru.* No more, I pray you.  
Messala, I have here received letters,  
That young Octavius and Mark Antony

Come down upon us with a mighty power,  
Bending their expedition toward Philippi. 140

*Mes.* Myself have letters of the selfsame  
tenour.

*Bru.* With what addition?

*Mes.* That by prescription and bills of out-  
lawry,

Octavius, Antony, and Lepidus,  
Have put to death an hundred senators.

*Bru.* Therein our letters do not well;  
Mine speak of seventy senators that died  
By their proscriptions, Cicero being one.

*Cas.* Cicero one!

*Mes.* Cicero is dead,  
And by that order of proscription.

*Bru.* No, Messala.

*Mes.* Nor nothing in your letters writ of him?

*Bru.* Nothing, Messala.

*Mes.* That, methinks, is strange.

*Bru.* Why ask you? hear you aught of her in yours?

*Mes.* No, my lord.

*Bru.* Now, as you are a Roman, tell me true.

*Mes.* Then like a Roman bear the truth I tell:

For certain she is dead, and by strange manner.

*Bru.* Why, farewell, Portia. We must die,

*Messala:* 190

With meditating that she must die once,

I have the patience to endure it now.

*Mes.* Even so great men great losses should endure.

*Cas.* I have as much of this in art as you, But yet my nature could not bear it so.

*Bru.* Well, to our work alive. What do you think

Of marching to Philippi presently?

*Cas.* I do not think it good.

*Bru.* Your reason?

*Cas.* This it is:

'Tis better that the enemy seek us: 199

So shall he waste his means, weary his soldiers,

Doing himself offence; whilst we, lying still,

Are full of rest, defence, and nimbleness.

*Bru.* Good reasons must, of force, give place to better.

The people 'twixt Philippi and this ground

Do stand but in a forced affection:

For they have grudged us contribution:

The enemy, marching along by them,

By them shall make a fuller number up,

Come on refresh'd, new-added, and encouraged;

From which advantage shall we cut him off, 210

If at Philippi we do face him there,

These people at our back.

*Cas.* Hear me, good brother.

*Bru.* Under your pardon. You must note

beside,

That we have tried the utmost of our friends,

Our legions are brim-full, our cause is ripe:

The enemy increaseth every day;

We, at the height, are ready to decline.

There is a tide in the affairs of men,

Which, taken at the flood, leads on to fortune;

Omitted, all the voyage of their life 220

Is bound in shallows and in miseries.

On such a full sea are we now afloat;

And we must take the current when it serves,

Or lose our ventures.

*Cas.* Then, with your will, go on;

We'll along ourselves, and meet them at

Philippi.

*Bru.* The deep of night is crept upon our

talk,

And nature must obey necessity;

Which we will niggard with a little rest.

There is no more to say!

*Cas.* No more. Good night:

Early to-morrow will we rise, and hence. 230

*Bru.* Lucius! [Enter Lucius.] My gown.

[Exit Lucius.] Farewell, good Messala:

Good night, Titinius. Noble, noble Cassius,

Good night, and good repose.

*Cas.* O my dear brother!

This was an ill beginning of the night:

Never come such division 'tween our souls!

Let it not, Brutus.

*Bru.* Every thing is well.

*Cas.* Good night, my lord.

*Bru.* Good night, good brother.

*Tit. Mes.* Good night, Lord Brutus.

*Bru.* Farewell, every one.

[Exeunt all but Brutus.]

Re-enter LUCIUS, with the gown.

Give me the gown. Where is thy instrument?

*Luc.* Here in the tent.

*Bru.* What, thou speak'st drowsily? 240

Poor knave, I blame thee not; thou art o'er-

watch'd.

Call Claudius and some other of my men;

I'll have them sleep on cushions in my tent.

*Luc.* Varro and Claudius!

Enter VARRO and CLAUDIUS.

*Var.* Calls my lord?

*Bru.* I pray you, sirs, lie in my tent and

sleep;

It may be I shall raise you by and by.

On business to my brother Cassius.

*Var.* So please you, we will stand and watch

your pleasure.

*Bru.* I will not have it so: lie down, good

sirs; 25

It may be I shall otherwise bethink me.

Look, Lucius, here's the book I sought for so

I put it in the pocket of my gown.

[Var. and Clau. lie down.]

*Luc.* I was sure your lordship did not give

it me.

*Bru.* Bear with me, good boy, I am much

forgetful.

Canst thou hold up thy heavy eyes awhile,

And touch thy instrument a strain or two?

*Luc.* Ay, my lord, an't please you.

*Bru.* It does, my boy

I trouble thee too much, but thou art willing.

*Luc.* It is my duty, sir. 260

*Bru.* I should not urge thy duty past thy

might;

I know young bloods look for a time of rest.

*Luc.* I have slept, my lord, already.

*Bru.* It was well done; and thou shalt sleep

again;

I will not hold thee long: if I do live,

I will be good to thee. [Music, and a song.]

This is a sleepy tune. O murderous slumber,

Lay'st thou thy leaden mace upon my boy,

That plays thee music? Gentle knave, good

night; 265

I will not do thee so much wrong to wake thee:

If thou dost nod, thou break'st thy instrument;

I'll take it from thee; and, good boy, good

night.

Let me see, let me see; is not the leaf turn'd

down

Where I left reading? Here it is, I think.

Enter the Ghost of CÆSAR.

How ill this taper burns! Ha! who comes

here?

I think it is the weakness of mine eyes

That shapes this monstrous apparition.

It comes upon me. Art thou any thing?

Art thou some god, some angel, or some devil?

That maketh my blood cold and my hair to stare!  
Speak to me what thou art. 281

*Ghost.* Thy evil spirit, Brutus.

*Bru.* Why comest thou?

*Ghost.* To tell thee thou shalt see me at Philippi.

*Bru.* Well; then I shall see thee again?

*Ghost.* Ay, at Philippi.

*Bru.* Why, I will see thee at Philippi, then. *[Exit Ghost.]*

Now I have taken heart thou vanishest:

Ill spirit, I would hold more talk with thee.

Boy, Lucius! Varro! Claudius! Sirs, awake! Claudius! 291

*Luc.* The strings, my lord, are false.

*Bru.* He thinks he still is at his instrument.

Lucius, awake!

*Luc.* My lord!

*Bru.* Didst thou dream, Lucius, that thou so criest out?

*Luc.* My lord, I do not know that I did cry.

*Bru.* Yes, that thou didst: didst thou see any thing?

*Luc.* Nothing, my lord.

*Bru.* Sleep again, Lucius. Sirrah Claudius!

*[To Var.]* Fellow thou, awake! 301

*Var.* My lord!

*Claud.* My lord!

*Bru.* Why did you so cry out, sirs, in your sleep?

*Var. Claud.* Did we, my lord?

*Bru.* Ay: saw you any thing?

*Var.* No, my lord, I saw nothing.

*Claud.* Nor I, my lord.

*Bru.* Go and commend me to my brother Cassius;

bid him set on his powers betimes before,

And we will follow. 309  
*Var. Claud.* It shall be done, my lord. *[Exeunt]*

## ACT V.

### SCENE I. *The plains of Philippi.*

*Enter OCTAVIUS, ANTONY, and their army.*

*Oct.* Now, Antony, our hopes are answered  
You said the enemy would not come down,  
But keep the hills and upper regions;  
It proves not so: their battles are at hand;  
They mean to warn us at Philippi here,  
Answering before we do demand of them.

*Ant.* Tut, I am in their bosoms, and I know  
Wherefore they do it: they could be content  
To visit other places; and come down  
With fearful bravery, thinking by this face 30  
To fasten in our thoughts that they have  
courage;  
But 'tis not so.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Prepare you, generals:  
The enemy comes on in gallant show;  
Their bloody sign of battle is hung out,  
And something to be done immediately.

*Ant.* Octavius, lead your battle softly on,  
Upon the left hand of the even field.

*Oct.* Upon the right hand I; keep thou the  
left.

*Ant.* Why do you cross me in this exigent?

*Oct.* I do not cross you; but I will do so. 30  
*[March.]*

*Drum.* Enter BRUTUS, CASSIUS, and their  
Army; LUCILIUS, TITINIUS, MESSEALA, and  
others.

*Bru.* They stand, and would have parley.

*Oct.* Stand fast, Titinius: we must out and  
talk.

*Oct.* Mark Antony, shall we give sign of  
battle?

*Ant.* No, Caesar, we will answer on their  
charge.

Make forth; the generals would have some  
words.

*Oct.* Stir not until the signal.

*Bru.* Words before blows: is it so, country-  
men?

*Oct.* Not that we love words better, as you do.

*Bru.* Good words are better than bad strokes,  
Octavius.

*Ant.* In your bad strokes, Brutus, you give  
good words: 30

Witness the hole you made in Caesar's heart,  
Crying 'Long live! hail, Caesar!'

*Cas.* Antony,

The posture of your blows are yet unknown;  
But for your words, they rob the Hybla bees,

And leave them honeyless.

*Ant.* Not stingless too.

*Bru.* O, yes, and soundless too;

For you have stol'n their buzzing, Antony,  
And very wisely threat before you sting.

*Ant.* Villains, you did not so, when your  
ville daggers

Hack'd one another in the sides of Caesar: 40  
You show'd your teeth like apes, and fawn'd  
like hounds,

And bow'd like bondmen, kissing Caesar's feet;  
Whilst damned Cassa, like a cur, behind

Struck Caesar on the neck. O you flatterers!

*Cas.* Flatterers! Now, Brutus, thank your-  
self:

This tongue had not offended so to-day,

If Cassius might have ruled.

*Oct.* Come, come, the cause: if arguing  
make us sweat.

The proof of it will turn to redder drops.

Look; 50

I draw a sword against conspirators;

When think you that the sword goes up again?

Never, till Caesar's three and thirty wounds

Be well avenged; or till another Caesar

Have added slaughter to the sword of traitors.

*Bru.* Caesar, thou canst not die by traitors' hands,

Unless thou bring'st them with thee.

*Oct.* So I hope;

I was not born to die on Brutus' sword.

*Bru.* O, if thou wert the noblest of thy strain,  
Young man, thou couldst not die more honour-  
able. 60

*Cas.* A peevish schoolboy, worthless of such  
honour.

Join'd with a masker and a reveller!

*Ant.* Old Cassius still!

*Oct.* Come, Antony, away!

Defiance, traitress, hurl we in your teeth;  
If you dare fight to-day, come to the field;  
If not, when you have stomachs.

[*Exeunt Octavius, Antony, and their army.*  
*Cas.* Why, now, blow wind, swell billow and swim back!

The storm is up, and all is on the hazard.

*Bru.* Ha, Lucilius! hark, a word with you.  
*Lucil.* [Standing forth] My lord!

[*Brutus and Lucilius converse apart.*  
*Cas.* Messala!

*Mes.* [Standing forth] What says my general?

*Cas.* Messala, 71  
This is my birth-day; as this very day  
Was Cassius born. Give me thy hand, Messala:  
Be thou my witness that against my will  
As Pompey was, am I compell'd to set  
Upon one battle all our liberties.

You know that I held Epicurus strong  
And his opinion: now I change my mind,  
And partly credit things that do passage.  
Coming from Sardis, on our former ensign 80  
Two mighty eagles fell, and there they perch'd,  
Gorging and feeding from our soldiers' hands;  
Who to Philippi here consorted us:  
This morning are they fled away and gone;  
And in their steads do ravens, crows and kites,  
Fly o'er our heads and downward look on us,  
As we were sickly prey: their shadows seem  
A canopy most fatal, under which  
Our army lies, ready to give up the ghost.

*Mes.* Believe not so.

*Cas.* I but believe it partly; 90  
For I am fresh of spirit and resolved  
To meet all perils very constantly.

*Bru.* Even so, Lucilius.

*Cas.* New, most noble Brutus,  
The gods to-day stand friendly, that we may,  
Lovers in peace, lead on our days to age!  
But since the affairs of men rest still uncertain,  
Let's reason with the worst that may befall.  
If we do lose this battle, then is this  
The very last time we shall speak together:  
What are you then determined to do? 100

*Bru.* Even by the rule of that philosophy  
By which I did blame Cato for the death  
Which he did give himself, I know not how,  
But I do find it cowardly and vile,  
For fear of what might fall, so to prevent  
The time of life: arming myself with patience  
To stay the providence of some high powers  
That govern us below.

*Cas.* Then, if we lose this battle,  
You are contented to be led in triumph  
Through the streets of Rome? 110

*Bru.* No, Cassius, no: think not, thou  
noble Roman,  
That ever Brutus will go bound to Rome;  
He bears too great a mind. But this same day  
Must end that work the idles of Mars begun;  
And whether we shall meet again I know not.  
Therefore our everlasting farewell take:  
For ever, and for ever, farewell, Cassius!  
If we do meet again, why, we shall smile;  
If not, why then, this parting was well made.

*Cas.* For ever, and for ever, farewell, Brutus!  
If we do meet again, we'll smile indeed; 121  
If not, 'tis true this parting was well made.

*Bru.* Why, then, lead on. O, that a  
might know  
The end of this day's business ere it come!  
But it sufficeth that the day will end,  
And then the end is known. Come, ho! away!  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. The same. The field of battle.

*Alarums.* Enter BRUTUS and MESSALA.

*Bru.* Ride, ride, Messala, ride, and give these  
bills  
Unto the legions on the other side.

[*Enter Alarums.*  
Let them set on at once; for I perceive  
But cold demeanour in Octavius' wing.  
And sudden push gives them the overthrow.  
Ride, ride, Messala: let them all come down.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. Another part of the field.

*Alarums.* Enter CASSIUS and TITINIUS.

*Cas.* O, look, Titinius, look, the villains fly!  
Myself have to mine own surp'd enemy:  
This ensign here of mine was turning back;  
I slew the coward, and did take it from him.  
*Tit.* O Cassius, Brutus gave the word too  
early;

Who, having some advantage on Octavius,  
Took it too eagerly: his soldiers fell to spoil,  
Whilst we by Antony are all enclosed.

Enter PINDARUS.

*Pin.* Fly further off, my lord, fly further off;  
Mark Antony is in your tents, my lord: 10  
Fly, therefore, noble Cassius, fly far off.

*Cas.* This hill is far enough. Look, look,  
Titinius;  
Are those my tents where I perceive the fire?

*Tit.* They are, my lord.  
*Cas.* Titinius, if thou lovest me,  
Mount thou my horse, and hide thy spurs in  
him,

Till he have brought thee up to yonder troops,  
And here again; that I may rest assured  
Whether yond troops are friend or enemy.  
*Tit.* I will be here again, even with a shout.  
[*Exit.*]

*Cas.* Go, Pindarus, get higher on that hill;  
My sight was ever thick; regard Titinius, 21  
And tell me what thou notest about the field.

[*Pindarus ascends the hill.*  
This day I breathed first: time is come round,  
And where I did begin, there shall I end;  
My life is run his compass. Sirrah, what news?

*Pin.* [Above] O my lord!  
*Cas.* What news?  
*Pin.* [Above] Titinius is enclosed round  
about

With horsemen, that make to him on the spur:  
Yet he spurs on. Now they are almost on him.  
Now, Titinius! Now some light. O, he lights  
too. 31

He's ta'en. [Shout.] And, hark! they shout  
for joy.

*Cas.* Come down, behold no more.  
O, coward that I am, so live so long,  
To see my best friend ta'en before my face!

*PINDARUS descends.*

Come hither, sirrah;  
In Parthia did I take thee prisoner;  
And then I swore thee, saving of thy life,  
That whatsoever I did bid thee do,  
Thou shouldst attempt it. Come now, keep  
thine oath;  
Now be a freeman: and with this good sword,  
That ran through Caesar's bowels, search this  
bosom.

Stand not to answer: here, take thou the hilts;  
And, when my face is cover'd, as 'tis now,  
Guide thou the sword. [*Pindarus stabs him.*]  
Caesar, thou art revenged,  
Even with the sword that kill'd thee. [*Dies.*]

*Pin.* So, I am free; yet would not so have  
been.  
Durst I have done my will. O Cassius,  
Far from this country Pindarus shall run,  
Where never Roman shall take note of him. 50  
[*Exit.*]

*Re-enter TITINIUS with MESSALA.*

*Mes.* It is but change, Titinius; for Octavius  
is overthrown by noble Brutus' power,  
As Cassius' legions are by Antony.

*Tit.* These tidings will well comfort Cassius.

*Mes.* Where did you leave him?

*Tit.* All disconsolate,  
With Pindarus his bondman, on this hill.

*Mes.* Is not that he that lies upon the  
ground?

*Tit.* He lies not like the living. O my heart!

*Mes.* Is not that he?

*Tit.* No, this was he, Messala.

But Cassius is no more. O setting sun,  
As in thy red rays thou dost sink to night,  
So in his red blood Cassius' day is gone;  
The sun of Rome is set! Our day is set;  
Clouds, dews, and dangers come; our deeds are  
done!

Mistrust of my success hath done this deed.

*Mes.* Mistrust of good success hath done  
this deed.

O hateful error, melancholy's child,  
Why dost thou show to the apt thoughts of  
men

The things that are not? O error, soon con-  
ceived,

Thou never comest unto a happy birth, 70  
But kill'st the mother that engender'd thee!

*Tit.* What, Pindarus! where art thou, Pin-  
darus!

*Mes.* Seek him, Titinius, whilst I go to meet  
The noble Brutus, thrusting this report  
into his ears; I may say, thrusting it;  
For piercing steel and darts envenomed  
Shall be as welcome to the ears of Brutus  
As tidings of this sight.

*Tit.* Hie you, Messala,  
And I will seek for Pindarus the while. 75  
[*Exit Messala.*]

Why didst thou send me forth, brave Cassius?  
Did I not meet thy friends? and did not they  
Put on my brows this wreath of victory,  
And bid me give it thee? Didst thou not hear  
their shouts?

Alas, thou hast misconstrued every thing!

But, hold thee, take this garment on thy brow;  
Thy Brutus bid me give it thee, and I  
Will do his bidding. Brutus, come apace,  
And see how I regarded Calpurnius.  
By your leave, gods:—this is a Roman's part:  
Come, Cassius' sword, and find Titinius' heart.  
[*Kills himself.*]

*Alarum. Re-enter MESSALA, with BRUTUS,  
young CATO, STRATO, VOLUPTIUS, and  
LUCILIUS.*

*Bru.* Where, where, Messala, doth his body  
lie?

*Mes.* Lo, yonder, and Titinius mourning it.

*Bru.* Titinius' face is upward.

*Cato.* He is slain.

*Bru.* O Julius Caesar, thou art mighty yet!  
Thy spirit walks abroad, and turns our swords  
In our own proper entrails. [*Low alarums.*]

*Cato.* Brave Titinius!

Look, whether he have not crown'd dead Cas-  
sius!

*Bru.* Are yet two Romans living such as  
these?

The last of all the Romans, fare thee well!  
It is impossible that ever Rome

Should breed thy fellow. Friends, I owe more  
tears

To this dead man than you shall see me pay.  
I shall find time, Cassius, I shall find time.

Come, therefore, and to Thasos send his body:  
His funeral shall not be in our camp.

Lost it discomfort us. Lucilius, come;  
And come, young Cato; let us to the field.

Laebus and Flavius, set our battles on:  
'Tis three o'clock; and, Romans, yet are night

We shall try fortune in a second fight. [*Exeunt.*]

*SCENE IV. Another part of the field.*

*Alarum. Enter fighting, Soldiers of both  
armies; then BRUTUS, young CATO, LU-  
CILIUS, and others.*

*Bru.* Yet, countrymen, O, yet hold up your  
heads!

*Cato.* What bastard doth not! Who will go  
with me!

I will proclaim my name about the field:  
I am the son of Marcus Cato, ho!

A foe to tyrants, and my country's friend;  
I am the son of Marcus Cato, ho!

*Bru.* And I am Brutus, Marcus Brutus, I;  
Brutus, my country's friend; know me for  
Brutus!

*Lucil.* O young and noble Cato, art thou  
down?

Why, now thou diest as bravely as Titinius; so  
And mayst be honour'd, being Cato's son.

*First Sold.* Yield, or thou diest.

*Lucil.* Only I yield to thee;  
There is so much that thou wilt kill me straight;

[*Offering dagger.*]  
Kill Brutus, and be honour'd in his death.

*First Sold.* We must not. A noble gentleman!

*Sec. Sold.* Room, ho! Tell Antony, Brutus  
is taken.

*First Sold.* I'll tell the news. Here comes  
the general.

*Enter ANTONY.*

Brutus is ta'en, Brutus is ta'en, my lord.

*Ant.* Where is he?

*Lucil.* Safe, Antony; Brutus is safe enough:

I dare assure thee that no enemy

Shall ever take alive the noble Brutus:

The gods defend him from so great a shame!

When you do find him, or alive or dead,

He will be found like Brutus, like himself.

*Ant.* This is not Brutus, friend; but, I assure you,

A prize no less in worth; keep this man safe;

Give him all kindness: I had rather have

Such men my friends than enemies. Go on,

And see whether Brutus be alive or dead;

And bring us word unto Octavius' tent.

How every thing is changed. *[Exit.*

SCENE V. *Another part of the field.*

*Enter BRUTUS, DARDANIUS, CLITUS, STRATO, and VOLUMNIUS.*

*Bru.* Come, poor remains of friends, rest on this rock.

*Cl.* Statilius show'd the torch-light, but, my lord,

He came not back; he is or ta'en or slain.

*Bru.* Sit thee down, Clitus: slaying is the word;

It is a deed in fashion. Hark thee, Clitus.

*Cl.* What, I, my lord? No, not for all the world.

*Bru.* Peace then! no words.

*Cl.* I'll rather kill myself.

*Bru.* Hark thee, Dardanius. *[Whisper.*

*Dar.* Shall I do such a deed?

*Cl.* O Dardanius!

*Dar.* O Clitus!

*Cl.* What ill request did Brutus make to thee?

*Dar.* To kill him, Clitus. Look, he meditates.

*Cl.* Now is that noble vessel full of grief, That it runs over even at his eyes.

*Bru.* Come hither, good Volumnius; list a word.

*Vol.* What says my lord?

*Bru.* Why, this, Volumnius: The ghost of Cæsar hath appear'd to me Two several times by night; at Sardis once, And, this last night, here in Philippi fields: I know my hour is come.

*Vol.* Not so, my lord.

*Bru.* Nay, I am sure it is, Volumnius. Thou seest the world, Volumnius, how it goes; Our enemies have beat us to the pit:

*[Low alarums.]* It is more worthy to leap in ourselves, Than tarry till they push us. Good Volumnius, Thou know'st that we two went to school to

each other: Even for that our love of old, I prithee, Hold thou my sword-hilt, whilst I run on it.

*Vol.* That's not an office for a friend, my lord.

*Cl.* Fly, fly, my lord; there is no tarrying here.

*Bru.* Farewell to you; and you; and you, Volumnius.

Strato, thou hast been all this while asleep;

Farewell to thee too, Strato. Countrymen,

My heart doth joy that yet in all my life

I found no man but he was true to me.

I shall have glory by this losing

More than Octavius and Mark.

By this vile conquest shall attain unto.

So fare you well at once; for Brutus' tongue

Hath almost ended his life's history.

Night hangs upon mine eyes; my

rest,

That have but labour'd to attain this hour.

*[Alarums. Cry within, 'Fly, fly, fly!']*

*Cl.* Fly, my lord, fly.

*Bru.* Hence! I will follow.

*[Exeunt Clitus, Dardanius, and Volumnius.]*

I prithee, Strato, stay thou by thy lord:

Thou art a fellow of a good respect;

Thy life hath had some smatch of honour

in it:

Hold then my sword, and turn away thy face,

While I do run upon it. Wilt thou, Strato?

*Str.* Give me your hand first. Fare you

well, my lord.

*Bru.* Farewell, good Strato. *[Runs on his sword.]*

Cæsar, now be still:

I kill'd not thee with half so good a will. *[Dies.]*

*Alarums. Retreat. Enter OCTAVIUS, ANTONY,*

*MESSALA, LUCILIUS, and the army.*

*Oct.* What man is that?

*Mea.* My master's man. Strato, where is thy master?

*Str.* Free from the bondage you are in, Messala:

The conquerors can but make a fire of him;

For Brutus only overcame himself,

And no man else hath honour by his death.

*Lucil.* So Brutus should be found. I thank thee, Brutus,

That thou hast proved Lucilius' saying true.

*Oct.* All that served Brutus, I will entertain them.

Fellow, wilt thou bestow thy time with me?

*Str.* Ay, if Messala will prefer me to you.

*Oct.* Do so, good Messala.

*Mea.* How died my master, Strato?

*Str.* I held the sword, and he did run on it.

*Mea.* Octavius, then take him to follow thee.

That did the latest service to my master.

*Ant.* This was the noblest Roman of them all:

All the conspirators save only he

Did that they did in envy of great Cæsar;

He only, in a general honest thought

And common good to all, made one of them.

His life was gentle, and the elements

So mix'd in him that Nature might stand up

And say to all the world 'This was a man!'

*Oct.* According to his virtue let us use him,

With all respect and rites of burial.

Within my tent his bones to-night shall lie,

Most like a soldier, order'd honourably.

So call the field to rest; and let's away.

To part the glories of this happy day. *[Exeunt.]*



# MACBETH

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

DUNCAN, king of Scotland.  
 MALCOLM, } his sons.  
 DONALBAIN, }  
 MACBETH, } generals of the king's army.  
 BANQUO, }  
 MACDUFF, }  
 LENNOX, }  
 ROSS, } noblemen of Scotland.  
 MENTEITH, }  
 ANGUS, }  
 CAITHNESS, }  
 FLEANCE, son to Banquo.  
 SIWARD, Earl of Northumberland, general  
 of the English forces.  
 YOUNG SIWARD, his son.  
 SETON, an officer attending on Macbeth.  
 Boy, son to Macduff.

An English Doctor.  
 A Scotch Doctor.  
 A Soldier.  
 A Porter.  
 An Old Man.

LADY MACBETH.  
 LADY MACDUFF.  
 Gentlewoman attending on Lady Macbeth.

HECATE.  
 Three Witches.  
 Apparitions.

Lords, Gentlemen, Officers, Soldiers, Murderers,  
 Attendants, and Messengers.

SCENE : Scotland : England.

### ACT I.

#### SCENE I. A desert place.

Thunder and lightning. Enter three Witches.

First Witch. When shall we three meet again

in thunder, lightning, or in rain?

Sec. Witch. When the hurlyburly's done,  
 When the battle's lost and won.

Third Witch. That will be ere the set of  
 sun.

First Witch. Where the place?

Sec. Witch. Upon the heath.

Third Witch. There to meet with Macbeth.

First Witch. I come, Graymalkin!

Sec. Witch. Paddock calls.

Third Witch. Anon.

All. Fair is foul, and foul is fair:  
 Over through the fog and filthy air. [Exeunt.]

#### SCENE II. A camp near Forres.

Alarm within. Enter DUNCAN, MALCOLM,  
 DONALBAIN, LENNOX, with Attendants,  
 meeting a bleeding Sergeant.

Dun. What bloody man is that? He can  
 report,  
 As seemeth by his plight, of the revolt  
 of the newest state.

Mal. This is the sergeant

Against my captivity. Hail, brave friend!  
 Say to the king the knowledge of the broil  
 As thou didst leave it.

Ser. Doubtful it stood;

As two spent swimmers, that do cling together  
 And choke their art. The merciless Macdon-  
 wald—

Worthy to be a rebel, for to that  
 The multiplying villanies of nature  
 Do swarm upon him—from the western isles  
 Of kerns and gallowglasses is supplied;  
 And fortune, on his damned quarrel smiling,  
 Show'd like a rebel's whore: but all's too weak;  
 For brave Macbeth—well he deserves that  
 name—

Disdaining fortune, with his brandish'd steel,  
 Which smok'd with bloody execution,  
 Like valour's minion carved out his passage  
 Till he faced the slave;  
 † Which ne'er shook hands, nor bade farewell to  
 him,

Till he unseam'd him from the nave to the  
 chaps,

And fix'd his head upon our battlements.

Dun. O valiant cousin! worthy gentleman!

Ser. As whence the sun 'gins his reflection  
 Shipwrecking storms and direful thunders  
 break,

So from that spring whence comfort seem'd to  
 come

Discomfort swells. Mark, king of Scotland,  
 mark:

No sooner justice had with valour arm'd  
 Compell'd these skipping kerns to trust their  
 heels,

But the Norwegian lord surveying vantage,  
 With furbish'd arms and new supplies of men  
 Began a fresh assault.

Dun. Dismay'd not this  
 Our captains, Macbeth and Banquo?

*Ser.* Yes;  
As sparrows eagles, or the hare the lion.  
If I say sooth, I must report they were  
As cannons overcharged with double cracks, so  
they  
Doubly redoubled strokes upon the foe:  
Except they meant to bathe in reeking wounds,  
Or memorize another Golgotha, 40  
I cannot tell.  
But I am faint, my gashes cry for help.  
*Dun.* So well thy words become thee as thy  
wounds;  
They smack of honour both. Go get him sur-  
geons. [*Exit Sergeant, attended.*]  
Who comes here?

*Enter Ross.*

*Mal.* The worthythane of Ross.  
*Len.* What a haste looks through his eyes!  
So should he look  
That seems to speak things strange.  
*Ross.* God save the king!  
*Dun.* Whence camest thou, worthythane?  
*Ross.* From Fife, great king:  
Where the Norweyan banners flout the sky  
And fan our people cold. Norway himself, 50  
With terrible numbers,  
Assisted by that most disloyal traitor  
Thethane of Cawdor, began a dismal conflict;  
Till that Bellona's bridegroom, lapp'd in proof,  
Confronted him with self-comparisons,  
Point against point rebellious, arm 'gainst arm,  
Carving his lavish split: and, to conclude,  
The victory fell on us.  
*Dun.* Great happiness!  
*Ross.* That now  
Sveno, the Norweyan king, craves composition;  
Nor would we deign him burial of his men 60  
Till he disburs'd at Saint Colme's inch  
! thousand dollars to our general use.  
No more thatthane of Cawdor shall  
live  
Our bosom interest: go pronounce his present  
death,  
And with his former title greet Macbeth.  
*Ross.* I'll see it done.  
*Dun.* What he hath lost noble Macbeth  
hath won. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. A heath near Forres.

*Thunder.* Enter the three Witches.

*First Witch.* Where hast thou been, sister?

*Sec. Witch.* Killing swine.

*Third Witch.* Sister, where thou?

*First Witch.* A sallow's wife had chestnuts  
in her lap

And munn'd, and munn'd, and munn'd:—  
Give me, quoth I:

"Assist thee, witch!" the mump-sid ronyon.

My husband's to Aleppo gone, master o' the

travellers.

"Nay, I'll be with thee still,"  
quoth she: and without a tale,

"I'll give thee a wind."

*First Witch.* Thou'rt kind.  
*Third Witch.* And I another.  
*First Witch.* I myself have all the other,  
And the very ports they blow,  
All the quarters that they know  
I' the shipman's card.  
I will dash him dry as hay:  
Sleep shall neither night nor day  
Hang upon his pent-house lid;  
He shall live a man forbid:  
Weary se'nnights nine times nine  
Shall he dwindle, peak and pine:  
Though his bark cannot be lost,  
Yet it shall be tempest-tost.  
Look what I have.  
*Sec. Witch.* Show me, show me.  
*First Witch.* Here I have a pilot's thumb,  
Wreck'd as homeward he did come. [*Drum within.*]

*Third Witch.* A drum, a drum! 30  
Macbeth doth come.

*All.* The weird sisters, hand in hand,  
Posters of the sea and land,  
Thus do go about, about—  
Thrice to thine and thrice to mine  
And thrice again, to make up nine.  
Peace! the charm's wound up.

*Enter MACBETH and BANQUO.*

*Macb.* So foul and fair a day I have not  
seen.

*Ban.* How far is't call'd to Forres? What  
are these

So wither'd and so wild in their attire, 40  
That look not like the inhabitants o' the earth,  
And yet are on't? Live you? or are you aught  
That man may question? You seem to under-  
stand me.

By each at once her choppy finger laying  
Upon her skinny lips: you should be women,  
And yet your beards forbid me to interpret  
That you are so.

*Macb.* Speak, if you can: what are you?  
*First Witch.* All hail, Macbeth! hail to thee,  
thane of Glamis!

*Sec. Witch.* All hail, Macbeth! hail to thee,  
thane of Cawdor!

*Third Witch.* All hail, Macbeth, that shalt  
be king hereafter! 50

*Ban.* Good sir, why do you start; and seem  
to fear

Things that do sound so fair? 'Tis the name of  
truth,

Are ye fantastical, or that indeed  
Which outwardly ye show? My noble partner  
You greet with present grace and great pre-  
diction

Of noble having and of royal hope,  
That he seems rapt withal: to me you speak not.  
If you can look into the seeds of time,  
And say which grain will grow and which will  
not,

Speak then to me, who neither beg nor fear 60  
Your favours nor your hate.

*First Witch.* Hail!

*Sec. Witch.* Hail!

*Third Witch.* Hail!

*First Witch.* Lesser than Macbeth, and greater.

*Sec. Witch.* Not so happy, yet much happier.

*Third Witch.* Thou shalt get kings, though thou be none:

So all hail, Macbeth and Banquo!

*First Witch.* Banquo and Macbeth, all hail!

*Macb.* Stay, you imperfect speakers, tell me more:

By Sinel's death I know I am thane of Glamis; But how of Cawdor? the thane of Cawdor lives,

A prosperous gentleman; and to be king Stands not within the prospect of belief, No more than to be Cawdor. Say from whence You owe this strange intelligence? or why Upon this blasted heath you stop our way With such prophetic greeting? Speak, I charge you.

*Ban.* The earth hath bubbles, as the water has,

And these are of them. Whither are they vanish'd?

*Macb.* Into the air; and what seem'd corporal melted

As breath into the wind. Would they had stay'd!

*Ban.* Were such things here as we do speak about?

Or have we eaten on the insane root That takes the reason prisoner?

*Macb.* Your children shall be kings.

*Ban.* You shall be king.

*Macb.* And thane of Cawdor too: went it not so?

*Ban.* 'Tis to the selfsame tune and words. Who's here?

*Enter ROSS and ANGUS.*

*Ros.* The king hath happily received, Macbeth,

The news of thy success; and when he reads go Thy personal venture in the rebels' fight,

His wonders and his praises do contend Which should be thine or his: silenced with that,

In viewing o'er the rest o' the selfsame day, He finds thee in the stout Norwegian ranks,

Nothing afeard of what thyself didst make, Strange images of death. As thick as hail

Came post with post; and every one did bear Thy praises in his kingdom's great defence,

And pour'd them down before him.

*Ang.* We are sent

To give thee from our royal master thanks; Only to herald thee into his sight,

Not pay thee.

*Ros.* And, for an earnest of a greater honour,

He bade me, from him, call thee thane of Cawdor;

In which addition, hail, most worthy thane! For it is thine.

*Ban.* What can the devil speak true?

*Macb.* The thane of Cawdor lives: why do you dress me in borrow'd robes?

*Ang.* Who was the thane lives yet; But under heavy judgement bears that life

Which he deserves to lose. Whither he was combined

With those of Norway, or did line the rebel With hidden help and vantage, or that with both

He labour'd in this country's wreck, I know not; But treasons capital, confess'd and proved,

Have overthrown him.

*Macb.* [Aside] Glamis, and thane of Cawdor! The greatest is behind. [To Ross and Angus]

Thanks for your pains.

*To Ban.* Do you not hope your children shall be kings,

When these that gave the thane of Cawdor to me

Promised no less to them?

*Ban.* That trusted house

Might yet enkindle you unto the crown, Besides the thane of Cawdor. But 'tis strange:

And oftentimes, to win us to our harm, The instruments of darkness tell us truths,

Win us with honest trifles, to betray's In deepest consequence.

Cousins, a word, I pray you.

*Macb.* [Aside] Two truths are told, As happy prologues to the swelling act

Of the imperial theme.—I thank you, gentlemen. [Aside] This supernatural soliciting

Cannot be ill, cannot be good: if ill, Why hath it given me earnest of success,

Commencing in a truth? I am thane of Cawdor: If good, why do I yield to that suggestion

Whose horrid image doth unfix my hair And make my seated heart knock at my ribs,

Against the use of nature? Present fears Are less than horrible imaginings:

My thought, whose murder yet is but fantastical, Shakes so my single state of man that function

Is smother'd in surmise, and nothing is But what is not.

*Ban.* Look, how our partner's eapt.

*Macb.* [Aside] If chance will, I have meeting, why, chance may crown me,

Without my stir.

*Ban.* New honours come upon him, Like our strange garments, cleave not to their mould

But with the aid of use.

*Macb.* [Aside] Come what come may, Time and the hour runs through the roughest day.

*Ban.* Worthy Macbeth, we stay upon your leisure.

*Macb.* Give me your favour: my dull brain was wrought

With things forgotten. Kind gentlemen, your pains

Are requit'd where every day I turn. The best to send them. Let us toward the king.

Think upon what's yet to come, and, at these times, The interim having weigh'd it, let us speak.

Our free hearts each to other.

*Ban.* Till then, enough. Come. [Exeunt.]

SCENE IV. *Forres. The palace.*

*Flourish. Enter DUNCAN, MALCOLM, DONALBAIN, LENNOX, and Attendants.*

*Dun.* Is execution done on Cawdor? Are not  
Those in commission yet return'd?

*Mal.* My liege,  
They are not yet come back. But I have spoke  
With one that saw him die: who did report  
That very frankly he confess'd his treasons,  
Implored your highness' pardon and set forth  
A deep repentance: nothing in his life  
Became him like the leaving it; he died  
As one that had been studied in his death  
To throw away the dearest thing he owed,  
As 'twere a careless trifle.

*Dun.* There's no art  
To find the mind's construction in the face:  
He was a gentleman on whom I built  
An absolute trust.

*Enter MACBETH, BANQUO, ROSS, and ANGUS.*

O worthiest cousin!

The sin of my ingratitude even now  
Was heavy on me: thou art so far before  
That swiftest wing of recompense is slow  
To overtake thee. Would thou hadst less de-

served,  
That the proportion both of thanks and pay-

ment  
Might have been mine! only I have left to say,  
More is thy due than more than all can pay.

*Macb.* The service and the loyalty I owe,  
In doing it, pays itself. Your highness' part  
Is to receive our duties; and our duties  
Are to your throne and state children and  
servants,  
Which do but what they should, by doing every  
thing

Safe toward your love and honour.

*Dun.* Welcome hither:  
I have begun to plant thee, and will labour  
To make thee full of growing. Noble Banquo,  
That hast no less deserved, nor must be known  
No less to have done so, let me infold thee  
And hold thee to my heart.

*Ban.* There if I grow,  
The harvest is your own.

*Dun.* My plenteous joys,  
Wanton in fulness, seek to hide themselves  
In drops of sorrow. Sons, kinsmen, thanes,  
And you whose places are the nearest, know  
We will establish our estate upon  
Our eldest, Malcolm, whom we name hereafter  
The Prince of Cumberland; which honour

must  
Not unaccompanied invest him only,  
40  
But signs of nobleness, like stars, shall shine  
On all deservers. From hence to Inverness,  
And bind us further to you.

*Macb.* The rest is labour, which is not used  
for you:

I'll go myself to harbingers and make joyful  
The ears of my wife with your approach;  
50  
And then my love's my love.

*Dun.* My worthy Cawdor!

*Macb.* [*Aside*] The Prince of Cumberland!  
that is a step

On which I must fall down, or else o'erleap,  
For in my way it lies. Stars, hide your fires;  
Let not light see my black and deep desires:  
The eye wink at the hand; yet let that be,  
Which the eye fears, when it is to see.

*Dun.* True, worthy Banquo; is full so  
valiant,  
And in his commendations I am  
It is a banquet to me. Let's after it,  
Whose care is gone before to bid us welcome:  
It is a peerless kinsman. [*Flourish*] *Exeunt.*

SCENE V. *Inverness. Macbeth's castle.*

*Enter LADY MACBETH, reading a letter.*

*Lady M.* 'They met me in the day of  
success; and I have learned by the perfectest  
report, they have more in them than mortal  
knowledge. When I burned in desire to question  
them further, they made themselves air,  
into which they vanished. Whiles I stood rapt  
in the wonder of it, came missives from the  
king, who all-hailed me "Thane of Cawdor;"  
by which title, before, these weird sisters saluted  
me, and referred me to the coming on of time,  
with "Hail, king that shalt be!" This have I  
thought good to deliver thee, my dearest partner  
of greatness, that thou mightst not lose the  
dues of rejoicing, by being ignorant of what  
greatness is promised thee. Lay it to thy heart,  
and farewell.'

Glamis thou art, and Cawdor; and shalt be  
What thou art promised: yet do I fear thy  
nature;

It is too full o' the milk of human kindness  
To catch the nearest way: thou wouldst be  
great;

Art not without ambition, but without  
The illness should attend it: what thou wouldst  
highly,

That wouldst thou holily; wouldst not play  
false,

And yet wouldst wrongly win: thou 'dst have,  
great Glamis,

That which cries 'Thus thou must do, if thou  
have it;

And that which rather thou dost fear to do  
Than wishest should be undone.' Hie thee  
hither,

That I may pour my spirits in thine ear;  
And chastise with the valour of my tongue  
All that impedes thee from the golden round,  
Which fate and metaphysical aid doth seem  
To have thee crown'd withal.

30  
To have thee crown'd withal.

*Enter a Messenger.*

What is your tidings?

*Mess.* The king comes here to-night.  
*Lady M.* Thou'rt mad to say it:

Is not thy master with him? who, were't so,  
Would have inform'd for preparation.

*Mess.* So please you, it is true: our thane is  
coming.

One of my fellows had the speed of him,

Who, almost dead for breath, had scarcely more  
Than would make up his message.

*Lady M.* Give him tending;  
He brings great news. *[Exit Messenger.]*

The raven himself is hoarse  
That croaks the fatal entrance of Duncan  
Under my battlements. Come, you spirits  
That tend on mortal thoughts, unsex me here,  
And fill me from the crown to the toe top-full  
Of direst cruelty! make thick my blood;  
Stop up the access and passage to remorse,  
That no compunctious visitings of nature  
Shake my fell purpose, nor keep peace between  
The effect and it! Come to my woman's breasts,  
And take my milk for gall, you murdering  
ministers,

Wherever in your sightless substances  
You wait on nature's mischief! Come, thick  
night,

And pall thee in the dunest smoke of hell,  
That my keen knife see not the wound it makes,  
Nor heaven peep through the blanket of the  
dark,

To cry 'Hold, hold!'

*Enter MACBETH.*

Great Glamis! worthy Cawdor!  
Greater than both, by the all-hail hereafter!  
Thy letters have transported me beyond  
This ignorant present, and I feel now  
The future in the instant.

*Macb.* My dearest love, 55  
Duncan comes here to-night.

*Lady M.* And when goes hence?  
*Macb.* To-morrow, as he purposes.

*Lady M.* O, never  
Shall sun that morrow see!  
Your face, my thane, is as a book where men  
May read strange matters. To beguile the time,  
Look like the time; bear welcome in your eye,  
Your hand, your tongue: look like the innocent  
flower,

But be the serpent under 't. He that's coming  
Must be provided for; and you shall put  
This night's great business into my dispatch;  
Which shall to all our nights and days to come  
Give solely sovereign sway and masterdom. 72

*Macb.* We will speak further.

*Lady M.* Only look up clear;  
To alter favour ever is to fear:

Leave all the rest to me. *[Exit.]*

SCENE VI. *Before Macbeth's castle.*

*Hautboys and torches. Enter DUNCAN, MALCOLM, DONALBAIN, BANQUO, LENNOX, MACDUFF, ROSS, ANGUS, and Attendants.*

*Dun.* This castle hath a pleasant seat; the  
air  
Nimble and sweetly recommends itself  
Unto our gentle senses.

*Ban.* This guest of summer,  
The temple-haunting martlet, does approve,  
By his loved mansionry, that the heaven's  
breath  
Smells wooingly here: no jutting, frieze,

Butress, nor coign of vantage, but this bird  
Hath made his pendent bed and procurant  
cradle:

Where they most breed and haunt, I have  
observed,  
The air is delicate.

*Enter LADY MACBETH.*

*Dun.* See, see, our honour'd hostess! so  
The love that follows us sometimes is our  
trouble,  
Which still we thank as love. Herein I teach you  
How you shall bid God 'ild us for your pains,  
And thank us for your trouble.

*Lady M.* All our service  
In every point twice done and then done  
double

Were poor and single business to contend  
Against those honours deep and broad where-  
with

Your majesty loads our house: for those of old,  
And the late dignities heap'd up to them,  
We rest your hermits.

*Dun.* Where's the thane of Cawdor? so  
We cursed him at the heels, and had a purpose  
To be his purveyor: but he rides well;  
And his great love, sharp as his spur, hath hold  
him

To his home before us. Fair and noble hostess,  
We are your guest to-night.

*Lady M.* Your servants ever  
Have their, themselves and what is theirs, in  
command,

To make their audit at your highness' pleasure,  
Still to return your own.

*Dun.* Give me your hand:  
Conduct me to mine host: we love him highly.  
And shall continue our graces towards him. 30  
By your leave, hostess. *[Exit.]*

SCENE VII. *Macbeth's castle.*

*Hautboys and torches. Enter a Sewer, and  
divers Servants with dishes and service, and  
pass over the stage. Then enter MACBETH.*

*Macb.* If it were done when 'tis done, then  
'twere well

It were done quickly: if the assassination  
Could trammel up the consequence, and catch  
With his surcease success; that but this blow  
Might be the be-all and the end-all here,  
But here, upon this bank and shoal of time,  
We'd jump the life to come. But in time

We still have judgement here; that we but  
teach

Bloody instructions, which, being taught, re-  
turn

To plague the inventor: this even-handed  
justice

Commends the ingredients of our poison'd  
chalice

To our own lips. He's here in double trust:  
First, as I am his kinsman and his subject,

Strong both against the deed; then, as his host,  
Who should against his murderer shut the door,  
Not bear the knife myself. *Enter, with*

*Duncan*

Hath borne his faculties so meek, hath been  
So clear in his great office, that his virtues  
Will plead like angels, trumpet-tongued, against  
The deep damnation of his taking-off;  
And pity, like a naked new-born babe,  
Striding the blast, or heaven's cherubim, horsed  
Upon the sightless couriers of the air,  
Shall blow the horrid deed in every eye,  
That tears shall drown the wind. I have no  
spur  
To prick the sides of my intent, but only  
Vaulting ambition, which o'erleaps itself  
And falls on the other.

*Enter LADY MACBETH.*

*Lady M.* How now! what news!  
*Lady M.* He has almost supp'd: why have  
you left the chamber?

*Macb.* Hath he ask'd for me?

*Lady M.* Know you not he has?

*Macb.* We will proceed no further in this

He hath honour'd me of late; and I have bought  
Golden opinions from all sorts of people,  
Which would be worn now in their newest gloss,  
Not cast aside so soon.

*Lady M.* Was the hope drunk  
Wherein you dress'd yourself? hath it slept  
since?

And wakes it now, to look so green and pale  
At what it did so freely! From this time  
Such I account thy love. Art thou afraid  
To be the same in thine own act and valour  
As thou art in desire? Wouldst thou have that  
Which thou esteem'st the ornament of life,  
And live a coward in thine own esteem,  
Letting 'I dare not' wait upon 'I would,'  
Like the poor cat i' the adage?

*Macb.* Prithee, peace:  
I dare do all that may become a man;  
Who dares do more is none.

*Lady M.* What beast was't, then,  
That made you break this enterprise to me?  
When you durst do it, then you were a man;  
And, to be more than what you were, you  
would

Be so much more the man. Nor time nor  
place

Did then adhere, and yet you would make both:  
They have made themselves, and that their  
names now

Doth unmake you. I have given suck, and  
know

How tender 'tis to love the babe that milks me:  
I would, while it was smiling in my face,  
Have pluck'd my nipple from his boneless  
mouth,

And dash'd the brains out, had I so sworn as  
you

Have done to this.

*Macb.* If we should fail?

*Lady M.* We fail!  
But screw your courage to the sticking-place, and  
I'll go with you. When Duncan is asleep—  
His two chamberlains  
Will watch him—his two chamberlains  
Will watch him—and would so soon place  
The dagger, the warder of the doors,

Shall be a fume, and the receipt of reason  
A limbeck only: when in swinish sleep  
Their drenched natures lie as in a drench,  
What cannot you and I perform upon  
The unguarded Duncan? what not put upon  
His spongy officers, who shall bear the guilt  
Of our great quest?

*Macb.* Bring forth men-children only;  
For thy undaunted mettle should compass  
Nothing but males. Will it not be resolved,  
When we have mark'd with blood those sleepy  
two  
Of his own chamber and used their very daggers,  
That they have done 't?

*Lady M.* Who dares receive it other,  
As we shall make our griefs and clamour roar  
Upon his death?

*Macb.* I am settled, and bend up  
Each corporal agent to this terrible feat.  
Away, and mock the time with fair show:  
False face must hide what the false heart doth  
know.

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. Court of Macbeth's castle.

*Enter BANQUO, and FLEANCE bearing a torch  
before him.*

*Ban.* How goes the night, boy?

*Fle.* The moon is down; I have not heard  
the clock.

*Ban.* And she goes down at twelve.

*Fle.* I take 't, 'tis later, sir.

*Ban.* Hold, take my sword. There's bus-  
bandry in heaven;  
Their candles are all out. Take thee that too.  
A heavy summons lies like lead upon me,  
And yet I would not sleep: merciful powers,  
Restrain in me the cursed thoughts that nature  
Gives way to in repose!

*Enter MACBETH, and a Servant with a torch.*

Give me my sword.

Who's there?

*Macb.* A friend.

*Ban.* What, sir, not yet at rest? The king's  
a-bed?

He hath been in unusual pleasure, and  
Sent forth great largess to your officers.  
This diamond he greets your wife withal,  
By the name of most kind hostess; and shut up  
In measureless content.

*Macb.* Being unprepared,  
Our will became the servant to defect;  
Which else should free have wrought.

*Ban.* All's well.  
I dreamt last night of the three weird sisters:  
To you they have show'd some truth.

*Macb.* I think not of them:  
Yet, when we can entreat an hour to serve,  
We would spend it in some words upon that  
business.

If you would grant the time.

*Ban.* At your kind's leisure.

*Macb.* If you shall cleave to my consent,  
when 'tis,

It shall make honour for you.

*Ban.* So I lose none

In seeking to augment it, but still keep  
My bosom franchis'd and allegiance clear,  
I shall be counsell'd.

*Macb.* Good repose the while!

*Ban.* Thanks, sir: the like to you! <sup>30</sup>  
[*Exeunt Banquo and Fleance.*]

*Macb.* Go bid thy mistress, when my drink  
is ready,

She strike upon the bell. Get thee to bed.

[*Exit Servant.*]

Is this a dagger which I see before me,  
The handle toward my hand? Come, let me  
clutch thee.

I have thee not, and yet I see thee still.  
Art thou not, fatal vision, sensible  
To feeling as to sight? or art thou but  
A dagger of the mind, a false creation,  
Proceeding from the heat-oppressed brain?  
I see thee yet, in form as palpable <sup>40</sup>  
As this which now I draw.  
Thou marshall'st me the way that I was going;  
And such an instrument I was to use.  
Mine eyes are made the fools o' the other  
senses,

Or else worth all the rest; I see thee still,  
And on thy blade and dudgeon gouts of blood,  
Which was not so before. There's no such  
thing:

It is the bloody business which informs  
Thus to mine eyes. Now o'er the one half-  
world

Nature seems dead, and wicked dreams abuse  
The curtain'd sleep; witchcraft celebrates <sup>51</sup>  
Pale Hecate's offerings, and wither'd murder,  
Alarum'd by his sentinel, the wolf,  
Whom howl's his watch, thus with his stealthy  
pace,

With Tarquin's ravishing strides, towards his  
design  
Moves like a ghost. Thou sure and firm-set  
earth,  
Hear not my steps, which way they walk, for  
fear

Thy very stones prate of my whereabouts,  
And take the present horror from the time,  
Which now suits with it. Whiles I threat, he  
lives: <sup>60</sup>

Words to the heat of deeds too cold breath  
gives. [*A bell rings.*]

I go, and it is done; the bell invites me.  
Hear it not, Duncan; for it is a knell  
That summons thee to heaven or to hell. [*Exit.*]

## SCENE II. The same.

*Enter LADY MACBETH.*

*Lady M.* That which hath made them drunk  
hath made me bold;

What hath quench'd them hath given me fire.  
Hark! Peace!

It was the owl that shriek'd, the fatal bellman,  
Which gives the stern'st good-night. He is  
about it;

The doors are open; and the surly-sleeping  
Do mock their charge with snores: I have  
drugg'd their senses,

That death and nature do contend about them;

Whether they live or die.

*Macb.* [*Within.*] Who's there? what, ho!

*Lady M.* Alack, I am afraid they have  
awak'd,

And 'tis not done. The attempt and not the  
deed

Confounds us. Hark! I laid their daggers  
ready;

He could not miss 'em. Had he not resembled  
My father as he slept, I had done 't.

*Enter MACBETH.*

*Macb.* I have done the deed. My husband!  
Didst thou  
not hear a noise?

*Lady M.* I heard the owl scream and the  
crickets cry.

Did not you speak?

*Macb.* When?

*Lady M.* Now.

*Macb.* As I descended?

*Lady M.* Ay.

*Macb.* Hark!

Who lies i' the second chamber? <sup>20</sup>  
*Lady M.* Donalbain.

*Macb.* This is a sorry sight.

*Lady M.* [*Looking on his hands.*]  
A foolish thought, to say a sorry  
sight.

*Macb.* There's one did laugh in's sleep, and  
one cried 'Murder!'

That they did wake each other: I stood and  
heard them;

But they did say their prayers, and address'd  
their

Again to sleep.

*Lady M.* There are two lodged together.

*Macb.* One cried 'God bless us!' and 'A-  
men,' the other;

As they had seen me with these hangman's  
hands.

Listening their fear, I could not say 'Amen,'  
When they did say 'God bless us!'

*Lady M.* Consider it not so deeply. <sup>30</sup>

*Macb.* But wherefore could not I pronounce  
'Amen'?

I had most need of blessing, and 'Amen'  
Stuck in my throat.

*Lady M.* These deeds must not be thought  
After these ways; so, it will make us mad.

*Macb.* Methought I heard a voice cry 'Sleep  
no more!'

Macbeth does murder sleep, the innocent sleep,  
Sleep that knits up the ravell'd sleeve of care,

The death of each day's life, sore labour's bath,  
Balm of hurt minds, great nature's second-  
course,

Chief nourisher in life's feast. —

*Lady M.* What do you mean?

*Macb.* Still it cried 'Sleep no more!' in all  
their ears:

'Glamis hath murder'd sleep, and therefore  
Cawdor

Shall sleep no more; Macbeth shall sleep no  
more.'

*Lady M.* Who was it that thus cried? Why,  
worthy than,

Now do I understand your noble strength, to sleep

So brainlessly of things. Go get some water,  
And wash this filthy witness from your hand.  
Why did you bring these daggers from the  
place?

They must lie there: go carry them; and  
sneak

The sleepy grooms with blood.

*Macb.* I'll go no more: so  
I am afraid to think what I have done;  
Look on't again I dare not.

*Lady M.* Infirm of purpose!  
Give me the daggers: the sleeping and the  
dead

Are but as pictures: 'tis the eye of childhood  
That fears a painted devil. If he do bleed,  
I'll gild the faces of the grooms withal;  
For it must seem their guilt.

*[Exit. Knocking within.]*  
*Macb.* Whence is that knocking?  
How is it with me, when every noise appals me?  
What hands are here? ha! they pluck out mine  
eyes.

Will all great Neptune's ocean wash this blood  
Clean from my hand? No, this my hand will  
rather  
The multitudinous seas incarnadine,  
Making the green one red.

*Re-enter LADY MACBETH.*

*Lady M.* My hands are of your colour; but  
I shame

To wear a heart so white. *[Knocking within.]*  
I hear a knocking

At the south entry: retire we to our chamber:  
A little water clears us of this deed:

How easy is it, then! Your constancy  
Hath left you unattended. *[Knocking within.]*

Hark! more knocking.  
Get on your nightgown, lest occasion call us, so

And show us to be watchers. Be not lost  
So poorly in your thoughts.

*Macb.* To know my deed, 'twere best not  
know myself. *[Knocking within.]*

Wake Duncan with thy knocking! I would  
thou couldst! *[Exit.]*

SCENE III. *The same.*

*Knocking within. Enter a Porter.*

*Porter.* Here's a knocking indeed! If a  
man were porter of hell-gate, he should have  
old turning the key. *[Knocking within.]*

Knock, knock, knock! Who's there, i' the  
name of Beelzebub! Here's a farmer, that  
hanged himself on the expectation of plenty:

comes in time; have napkins enow about you;  
here you'll sweat for't. *[Knocking within.]*

Knock, knock! Who's there, in the other  
devil's name? Faith, here's an equivocator,

that could swear in both the scales against  
either scale; who committed treason enough  
for God's sake, yet could not equivocate to  
heaven: O, come in, equivocator. *[Knocking within.]*

Knock, knock, knock! Who's there?  
Faith, here's an English tailor come hither,

for sundling out of a French hose: come in,  
tailor; here you may roast your goose. *[Knocking within.]*

Knock, knock; never at quiet!

What are you? But this place is too cold for  
hell. I'll devil-porter it no further: I had  
thought to have let in some of all professions  
that go the primrose way to the everlasting  
bonfire. *[Knocking within.]* Anon, anon! I  
pray you, remember the porter. *[Opens the gate.]*

*Enter MACDUFF and LENNOX.*

*Macd.* Was it so late, friend, ere you went  
to bed?

That you do lie so late?

*Port.* Faith, sir, we were carousing till the  
second cock: and drink, sir, is a great provoker  
of three things.

*Macd.* What three things does drink espe-  
cially provoke?

*Port.* Marry, sir, nose-painting, sleep, and  
urine. Lechery, sir, it provokes, and un-  
provokes; it provokes the desire, but it takes  
away the performance: therefore, much drink  
may be said to be an equivocator with lechery:

it makes him, and it mars him; it sets him on,  
and it takes him off; it persuades him, and  
disheartens him; makes him stand too, and  
not stand to; in conclusion, equivocates him in  
a sleep, and, giving him the lie, leaves him.

*Macd.* I believe drink gave thee the lie last  
night.

*Port.* That it did, sir, i' the very throat on  
me: but I requited him for his lie; and, I  
think, being too strong for him, though he  
took up my legs sometime, yet I made a shift  
to cast him.

*Macd.* Is thy master stirring?

*Enter MACBETH.*

Our knocking has awaked him; here he comes.  
*Len.* Good morrow, noble sir.

*Macb.* Good morrow, both.

*Murd.* Is the king stirring, worthy thane?

*Macb.* Not yet.

*Macd.* He did command me to call timely  
on him:

I have almost slipp'd the hour.

*Macb.* I'll bring you to him.

*Macd.* I know this is a joyful trouble to  
you;

But yet 'tis one.

*Macb.* The labour we delight in physics  
pain.

This is the door.

*Macd.* I'll make so bold to call,  
For 'tis my limited service. *[Exit.]*

*Len.* Goes the king hence to-day?

*Macb.* He does: he did appoint so.

*Len.* The night has been unruly: where we  
lay,

Our chimneys were blown down; and, as they  
say,

Lamentings heard i' the air; strange screams  
of death,

And prophesying with accents terrible  
Of dire combustion and confused events

New hatch'd to the woeful time: the obscure  
bird

Claamour'd the livelong night: some say, the  
earth



Was feverous and did shake.

*Macb.* 'Twas a rough night.  
*Len.* My young remembrance cannot parallel  
A fellow to it.

*Re-enter MACDUFF.*

*Macd.* O horror, horror, horror! Tongue  
nor heart

Cannot conceive nor name thee!

*Macb.* } What's the matter!

*Len.* }  
*Macd.* Confusion now hath made his master-  
piece!

Most sacrilegious murder hath broke ope  
The Lord's anointed temple, and stole thence  
The life o' the building!

*Macb.* } What is't you say? the life?  
*Len.* Mean you his majesty?

*Macd.* Approach the chamber, and destroy  
your sight

With a new Gorgon: do not bid me speak;  
See, and then speak yourselves.

[*Exeunt Macbeth and Lennox.*]

Awake, awake!

Ring the alarm-bell. Murder and treason!  
Banquo and Donalbain! Malcolm! awake! So  
Shake off this downy sleep, death's counterfeit,  
And look on death itself! up, up, and see  
The great doom's image! Malcolm! Banquo!  
As from your graves rise up, and walk like  
sprites,

To countenance this horror! Ring the bell.  
[*Bell rings.*]

*Enter LADY MACBETH.*

*Lady M.* What's the business,  
That such a hideous trumpet calls to parley  
The sleepers of the house? speak, speak!

*Macd.* O gentle lady,  
This not for you to hear what I can speak:  
The repetition, in a woman's ear,  
Would murder as it fell.

*Enter BANQUO.*

O Banquo, Banquo,

Our royal master's murder'd!

*Lady M.* Woe, alas!  
What, in our house?

*Ban.* Too cruel any where.  
Dear Duff, I prithee, contradict thyself,  
And say it is not so.

*Re-enter MACBETH and LENNOX, with ROSS.*

*Macb.* Had I but died an hour before this  
chance,  
I had lived a blessed time; for, from this  
instant,

There's nothing serious in mortality:  
All is but toys: renown and grace is dead;  
The wine of life is drawn, and the mere lees  
Is left this vault to brag of.

*Enter MALCOLM and DONALBAIN.*

*Don.* What is amiss?

*Macb.* You are, and do not know't.  
The spring, the head, the fountain of your  
blood  
Is stopp'd; the very source of it is stopp'd.  
*Macd.* Your royal father's murdered.

*Mal.* O, by whom!

*Len.* Those of his chamber, as it seem'd,  
had done't:

Their hands and faces were all badged with  
blood;

So were their daggers, which unwiped we found  
Upon their pillows:

They stared, and were distracted; no man's  
life

Was to be trusted with them.

*Macb.* O, yet I do repent me of my fury,  
That I did kill them.

*Macd.* Wherefore did you so?

*Macb.* Who can be wise, amazed, temperate  
and furious,

Loyal and neutral, in a moment? No man:  
The expedition of my violent love

Outrun the pauser, reason. Here lay Duncan,  
His silver skin laced with his golden blood;

And his ghast'd stabs look'd like a breach in  
nature

For ruin's wasteful entrance: there, the mur-  
derers,

Steep'd in the colours of their trade, their  
daggers

Unmannerly breech'd with gore: who could  
refrain,

That had a heart to love, and in that heart  
Courage to make's love known!

*Lady M.* Help me hence, ho!

*Macd.* Look to the lady.

*Mal.* [*Aside to Don.*] Why do we hold our  
tongues,

That most may claim this argument for ours?  
*Don.* [*Aside to Mal.*] What should be spoken

here, where our fate,  
Hid in an auger-hole, may rush, and seize us!

Let's away;

Our tears are not yet brew'd.

*Mal.* [*Aside to Don.*] Nor our strong sorrow  
Upon the foot of motion.

*Ban.* Look to the lady: 331

[*Lady Macbeth is carried out.*]

And when we have our naked frailties hid,  
That suffer in exposure, let us meet,

And question this most bloody piece of work,  
To know it further. Fears and scruples shake

us:

In the great hand of God I stand; and thence  
Against the undivulged pretence I fight

Of treasonous malice.

*Macd.* And so do I.

*All.* So all.

*Macb.* Let's briefly put on manly readiness,  
And meet i' the hall together.

*All.* Well contented.

[*Exeunt all but Malcolm and Donalbain.*]

*Mal.* What will you do? Let's not consort  
with them: 341

To show an unfeild sorrow is an office  
Which the false man does easy. I'll to England.

*Don.* To Ireland, I; our separated fortunes  
Shall keep us both the safer: where we are,

There's dangers in men's smiles: the near in  
blood,

The nearer bloody.

*Mal.* This murderous shaft that's shot  
Hath not yet lighted, and our safest way

Is to avoid the aim. Therefore, to horse;  
And let us not be dainty of leave-taking. 130  
But shift away: there's warrant in that theft  
Which steals itself, when there's no mercy left.  
[Exeunt.]

## SCENE IV. Outside Macbeth's castle.

Enter ROSS and an old Man.

Old M. Threescore and ten I can remember  
well:  
Within the volume of which time I have seen  
Hours dreadful and things strange; but this  
sore night  
Hath trifled former knowings.

Ross. Ah, good father,  
Thou seest, the heavens, as troubled with man's  
act,  
Threaten his bloody stage: by the clock, 'tis  
day,  
And yet dark night strangles the travelling  
lantern;  
Is't night's predominance, or the day's shame,  
That darkness does the face of earth entomb,  
When living light should kiss it?

Old M. 'Tis unnatural, 10  
Even like the deed that's done. On Tuesday  
last,  
A falcon, towering in her pride of place,  
Was by a mousing owl hawk'd at and kill'd.

Ross. And Duncan's horses—a thing most  
strange and certain—  
Beauteous and swift, the minions of their race,  
Turn'd wild in nature, broke their stalls, flung  
out,

Contending 'gainst obedience, as they would  
make  
War with mankind.

Old M. 'Tis said they eat each other.  
Ross. They did so, to the amazement of  
mine eyes

That look'd upon't. Here comes the good  
Macduff. 20

Enter MACDUFF.

How goes the world, sir, now?

Macd. Why, see you not?  
Ross. Is't known who did this more than  
bloody deed?

Macd. Those that Macbeth hath slain.  
Ross. Alas, the day!

What good could they pretend?  
Macd. They were suborn'd:

Malcolm and Donalbain, the king's two sons,  
Are stol'n away and fled; which puts upon  
them

Suspicion of the deed.

Ross. 'Gainst nature still!  
Trustless ambition, that will ravish up  
The good man's life's means! Then 'tis most like  
The sovereignty will fall upon Macbeth. 30

Macd. He is already named, and gone to  
Dunmoor

Where is Duncan's body?

Macd. Carried to Colmekill,  
Thenceforth to be interred;  
And gentlemen of their houses.

Ross. Will you to Beome?  
Macd. No, cousin, I'll to Fife.

Ross. Well, I will thither.  
Macd. Well, may you see things well done  
there: adieu!

Let our old robes sit easier than our new!

Ross. Farewell, father.

Old M. God's benison go with you; and  
with those  
That would make good of bad, and friends of  
foes! [Exeunt.]

## ACT III

## SCENE I. Forres. The palace

Enter BANQUO.

Ban. Thou hast it now: king, Cawdor,  
(Glamis, all,  
As the weird women promised, and, I fear,  
Thou play'st most foully for't: yet it was  
said

It should not stand in thy posterity,  
But that myself should be the root and father  
Of many kings. If there come truth from  
them—

As upon thee, Macbeth, their speeches shine—  
Why, by the verities on thee made good,  
May they not be my oracles as well,  
And set me up in hope? But hush! no more. 10

Sennet sounded. Enter MACBETH, as king,  
LADY MACBETH, as queen, LENNOX, ROSS,  
Lords, Ladies, and Attendants.

Macb. Here's our chief guest.  
Lady M. If he had been forgotten,

It had been as a gap in our great feast,  
And all thing unbecoming.

Macb. To-night we hold a solemn supper,  
sir,

And I'll request your presence.

Ban. Let your highness  
Command upon me; to the which my duties  
Are with a most indissoluble tie  
For ever knit.

Macb. Bide you this afternoon!

Ban. Ay, my good lord.

Macb. We should have else desired your  
good advice,

Which still hath been both grave and pros-  
perous.

In this day's council; but we'll take to-morrow.  
Is't far you ride?

Ban. As far, my lord, as will fill up the  
time

'Twixt this and supper: go not my horse the  
better,

I must become a borrower of the night  
For a dark hour or twain.

Macb. Fail not our feast.

Ban. My lord, I will not.

Macb. We hear, our bloody cousins are  
bestow'd 30

In England and in Ireland, not confessing  
Their cruel parricide, filling their hearers  
With strange invention: but of that to-morrow.  
When thereunto we shall have cause of talk,  
Craving us jointly. Hie you to horse: adieu,

Till you return at night. Goad Fleance with you!

*Ban.* Ay, my good lord: our time does call upon 's.

*Macb.* I wish your horses swift and sure of foot;

And so I do commend you to their backs. Farewell.

[*Exit Banquo.* 40  
Let every man be master of his time  
Till seven at night: to make society  
The sweeter welcome, we will keep ourself  
Till supper-time alone: while then, God be  
with you!]

[*Exeunt all but Macbeth, and an attendant.*  
Sirrah, a word with you: attend those men  
Our pleasure?

*Atten.* They are, my lord, without the palace gate.

*Macb.* Bring them before us.

[*Exit Attendant.*  
To be thus is nothing;

But to be safely thus.—Our fears in Banquo  
Stick deep; and in his royalty of nature  
Reigns that which would be fear'd: 'tis much  
he dares;

And, to that dauntless temper of his mind,  
He hath a wisdom that doth guide his valour  
To act in safety. There is none but he  
Whose being I do fear: and, under him,  
My Genius is rebuked; as, it is said,  
Mark Antony's was by Cæsar. He chid the  
sisters

When first they put the name of king upon me,  
And loathe them speak to him: then prophet-  
like

They hail'd him father to a line of kings: 60  
Upon my head they placed a fruitless crown,  
And put a barren sceptre in my gripe,  
Thence to be wrench'd with an unlineal hand,  
No son of mine succeeding. If 't be so,  
For Banquo's issue have I filed my mind;  
For them the gracious Duncan have I murder'd;  
Put rancours in the vessel of my peace  
Only for them; and mine eternal jewel  
Given to the common enemy of man,  
To make them kings, the seed of Banquo  
kings! 70

Rather than so, come fate into the list,  
And champion me to the utterance! Who's  
there?

*Re-enter Attendant, with two Murderers.*  
Now go to the door, and stay there till we call.

[*Exit Attendant.*  
Was it not yesterday we spoke together?

*First Mur.* It was, so please your highness.

*Macb.* Well then, now  
Have you consider'd of my speeches? Know  
That it was he in the times past which held you  
So under fortune, which you thought had been  
Your innocent self: this I made good to you  
In our last conference, pass'd in probation with  
you, 80

How you were borne in hand, how cross'd, the  
instruments,

Who wrought with them, and all things else  
That might

To half a soul and to a notion crazed

Say 'Thus did Banquo.'

*First Mur.* You made it known to us.

*Macb.* I did so, and went further, which  
is now

Our point of second meeting. Do you find  
Your patience so predominant in your nature  
That you can let this go? Are you so gospell'd  
To pray for this good man and for his issue,  
Whose heavy hand hath bow'd you to the grave  
And beggar'd yours for ever?

*First Mur.* We are men, my liege. 90

*Macb.* Ay, in the catalogue ye go for men;  
As hounds and greyhounds, mongrels, spaniels,  
cours,

Shoughs, water-rugs and demi-wolves are clept  
All by the name of dogs: the valued file  
Distinguishes the swift, the slow, the subtle,  
The housekeeper, the hunter, every one  
According to the gift which bounteous nature  
Hath in him closed, whereby he does receive  
Particular addition from the hill 100

That writes them all alike; and so of men.  
Now, if you have a station in the file,  
Not I the worst rank of manhood, say 't;

And I will put that business in your bosoms,  
Whose execution takes your enemy off,  
Grapples you to the heart and love of us,  
Who wear our health but sickly in his life,  
Which in his death were perfect.

*Sec. Mur.* I am one, my liege.

Whom the vile blows and buffets of the world  
Have so incensed that I am reckless what 110  
I do to spite the world.

*First Mur.* And I another  
So weary with disasters, tugg'd with fortune,  
That I would set my life on any chance,  
To mend it, or be rid on 't.

*Macb.* Both of you  
Know Banquo was your enemy.

*Both Mur.* True, my lord.

*Macb.* So is he mine; and in such bloody  
distance,

That every minute of his being thrusts  
Against my near'st of life: and though I could  
With barefaced power sweep him from any  
sight

And bid my will avouch it, yet I must not, 120  
For certain friends that are both his and mine,  
Whose loves I may not drop, but wait his fall  
Who I myself struck down; and thence it is,  
That I to your assistance do make love,  
Masking the business from the common eye.  
For sundry weighty reasons.

*Sec. Mur.* We shall, my lord.

Perform what you command us.

*First Mur.* Though our lives—

*Macb.* Your spirits shine through you.

Within this hour at most

I will advise you where to plant yourselves;  
Acquaint you with the perfect spy of the time,  
The moment on 't; for 't must be done to-night.  
And something from the palace; always  
thought

That I require a clearness: and with him—  
To leave no rubs nor botches in the work—  
Fleance his son, that keeps him company,  
Whose absence is no less material to me  
Than in his father's, must embrace the fate

Of that dark hour. Resolve yourselves apart:  
I'll come to you anon.

*Both Mur.* We are resolved, my lord.

*Macb.* I'll call upon you straight: abide  
within. *[Exit Murderers. 140*

It is concluded. Banquo, thy soul's flight,  
If it find heaven, must find it out to-night.

*[Exit.]*

### SCENE II. The palace.

*Enter LADY MACBETH and a Servant.*

*Lady M.* Is Banquo gone from court?

*Serv.* Ay, madam, but returns again to-  
night.

*Lady M.* Say to the king, I would attend  
his leisure

For a few words.

*Serv.* Madam, I will. *[Exit.]*

*Lady M.* Nought's had, all's spent,

Where our desire is got without content:

'Tis safer to be that which we destroy

Than by destruction dwell in doubtful joy.

### *Enter MACBETH.*

How now, my lord! why do you keep alone,  
Of sorriest fancies your companions making,  
Using those thoughts which should indeed  
have died

With them they think on? Things without all  
remedy

Should be without regard: what's done is  
done.

*Macb.* We have scotch'd the snake, not  
kill'd it:

She'll close and be herself, whilst our poor  
malice

Remains in danger of her former tooth.

But let the frame of things disjoint, both the  
worlds suffer,

Ere we will eat our meal in fear and sleep

In the affliction of these terrible dreams

That shake us nightly: better be with the  
dead,

Whom we, to gain our peace, have sent to  
peace.

Than on the torture of the mind to lie  
In restless ecstasy. Duncan is in his grave;

After life's fitful fever he sleeps well;

Treason has done his worst: nor steel, nor  
poison,

Makes domestic foreign levy, nothing,

Can touch him further.

*Lady M.* Come on;  
Gentle my lord, sleek o'er your rugged looks;

Be bright and jovial among your guests to-  
night.

*Macb.* So shall I, love; and so, I pray, be  
you:

Let your remembrance apply to Banquo;

Present him eminence, both with eye and  
tongue:

† Unsafe the while, that we  
Must leave our honours in these flattering  
streams,

I make our faces vizards to our hearts,  
What they are.

*[Exit.]* You must leave this.

*Macb.* O, full of scorpions is my mind,  
dear wife!

Thou know'st that Banquo, and his Fleance,  
lives.

*Lady M.* But in them nature's copy's not  
eternae.

*Macb.* There's comfort yet; they are ansail-  
able;

Then be thou jocund: ere the bad hath flown  
His cloister'd flight, ere to black Necate's sum-  
mons

The shard-borne beetle with his drowy hums

Hath rung night's yawning peal, there shall be  
done

A deed of dreadful note.

*Lady M.* What's to be done?

*Macb.* Be innocent of the knowledge, dearest  
chuck,

Till thou applaud the deed. Come, seeling  
night,

Scarf up the tender eye of pitiful day;

And with thy bloody and invisible hand

Cancel and tear to pieces that great bond

Which keeps me pale! Light thickens; and  
the crow

Makes wing to the rooky wood:

Good things of day begin to droop and drowse;  
Whiles night's black agents to their preys do  
rouse.

Thou marvell'st at my words: but hold thy  
still:

Things bad begun make strong themselves by ill  
So, prithee, go with me. *[Exit.]*

### SCENE III. A park near the palace.

*Enter three Murderers.*

*First Mur.* But who did bid thee join with  
us?

*Third Mur.* Macbeth.

*Sec. Mur.* He needs not our mistrust, since  
he delivers

Our offices and what we have to do

To the direction just.

*First Mur.* Then stand with us.

The west yet glimmers with some streaks of  
day:

Now spurs the late traveller apace

To gain the timely inn; and near approaches

The subject of our watch.

*Third Mur.* Hark! I hear horses.

*Ban.* *[Within.]* Give us a light there, ho!

*Sec. Mur.* Then 'tis he: the rest

That are within the note of expectation

Already are 't the court.

*First Mur.* His horses go about.

*Third Mur.* Almost a mile: but he does  
usually,

So all men do, from hence to the palace gate

Make it their walk.

*Sec. Mur.* A light, a light!

*Enter BANQUO, and FLEANCE with a torch.*

*Third Mur.* 'Tis he.

*Ban.* Stand to 't.

*Ban.* It will be rain to-night.

*First Mur.* Let it come down.  
*[They set upon Banquo.]*

*Ban.* O, treachery! Fly, good Fleance, fly,  
fly, fly!  
Thou mayst revenge. O slave!

[*Dies. Fleance escapes.*]

*Third Mur.* Who did strike out the light?

*First Mur.* Was't not the way!

*Third Mur.* There's but one down; the son  
is fled.

*Sec. Mur.* We have lost so  
Best half of our affair.

*First Mur.* Well, let's away, and say how  
much is done. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *The same. Hall in the palace.*

*A banquet prepared. Enter MACBETH, LADY  
MACBETH, ROSS, LENNOX, Lords, and At-  
tendants.*

*Macb.* You know your own degrees; sit  
down; at first  
And last the hearty welcome.

*Lords.* Thanks to your majesty.

*Macb.* Ourselves will mingle with society,  
And play the humble host.

Our hostess keeps her seat, but in best time  
We will require her welcome.

*Lady M.* Pronounce it for me, sir, to all  
our friends;

For my heart speaks they are welcome.

*First Murderer appears at the door.*

*Macb.* See, they encounter thee with their  
hearts' thanks. 9

Both sides are even: here I'll sit i' the midst:  
Be large in mirth; anon we'll drink a measure

The table round. [*Approaching the door.*]

There's blood upon thy face.

*Mur.* 'Tis Banquo's then.

*Macb.* 'Tis better thee without than he  
within.

Is he dispatch'd?

*Mur.* My lord, his throat is cut; that I did  
for him.

*Macb.* Thou art the best o' the cut-throats  
yet he's good

That did the like for Fleance: if thou didst it,  
Thou art the nonpareil.

*Mur.* Most royal sir,  
Fleance is 'scaped.

*Macb.* Then comes my fit again: I had else  
been perfect,

Whole as the marble, founded as the rock,  
As broad and general as the casing air:

But now I am cabin'd, cribb'd, confined,  
bound in

To saucy doubts and fears. But Banquo's  
safe!

*Mur.* Ay, my good lord: safe in a ditch he  
lives,

With twenty trenched gashes on his head;  
The least a death to nature.

*Macb.* Thanks for that

That the grown serpent lies; the worm that's  
fled

Hath nature that in time will venom breed, 30  
No teeth for the present. Get thee gone: to-  
morrow

We'll hear, ourselves, again. [*Exit Murderer.*]

*Lady M.* My royal lord,  
You do not give the cheer: the feast is sold  
That is not often vouch'd, while 'tis a-making,  
'Tis given with welcome: to feed were best at  
home;

From thence the sauce to meat is ceremony;  
Meeting were bare without it.

*Macb.* Sweet remembrance!  
Now, good digestion wait on appetite,  
And health on both!

*Len.* May't please your highness sit.

[*The Ghost of Banquo enters, and sits in  
Macbeth's place.*]

*Macb.* Here had we now our country's  
honour roof'd,

Were the grac'd person of our Banquo present;  
Who may I rather challenge for unkindness

Than pity for mischance!

*Ross.* His absence, sir,  
Lays blame upon his promise. Please't your  
highness

To grace us with your royal company.

*Macb.* The table's full.

*Len.* Here is a place reserved, sir.

*Macb.* Where?

*Len.* Here, my good lord. What is't that  
moves your highness?

*Macb.* Which of you have done this?

*Lords.* What, my good lord?

*Macb.* Thou canst not say I did it: never  
shake 30

Thy gory locks at me.

*Ross.* Gentlemen rise; his highness is not  
well.

*Lady M.* Sit, worthy friends: my lord is  
often thus,

And hath been from his youth: pray you, keep  
seat;

The fit is momentary; upon a thought  
He will again be well: if much you note him,

You shall offend him and extend his passion: 1  
Feed, and regard him not. Are you a man?

*Macb.* Ay, and a bold one, that dare look on  
that

Which might appal the devil.

*Lady M.* O proper stuff! 60  
This is the very painting of your fear:

This is the air-drawn dagger which, you said,  
Led you to Duncan. O, these flaws and starts,

Impostors to true fear, would well become  
A woman's story at a winter's fire,

Authoriz'd by her grandam. Shame itself!  
Why do you make such faces? When all's  
done,

You look but on a stool.

*Macb.* Prithee, see there! behold! look! lo!  
how say you?

Why, what care I! If thou canst nod, speak  
too. 70

If charnel-houses and our graves must send  
Those that we bury back, our monuments

Shall be the maws of kites. [*Ghost vanishes.*]

*Lady M.* What, quite unmann'd in folly?

*Macb.* If I stand here, I saw him.

*Lady M.* Fie, for shame.

*Macb.* Blood hath been shed ere now, f' the  
olden time,

Ere humane statute purged the gentle weal;

Ay, and since too, murders have been per-  
formed.

Too terrible for the ear: the time has been,  
That, when the brains were out, the man would  
die.

And these are end; but now they rise again, as  
With twenty mortal murders on their crowns,  
And push us from our stools: this is more

Than such a murder is.

*Lady M.* My worthy lord,  
Your noble friends do lack you.

*Macb.* I do forget.  
Do not muse at me, my most worthy friends;  
I have a strange infirmity, which is nothing  
To those that know me. Come, love and health  
to all;

Then I'll sit down. Give me some wine; fill  
full.

I drink to the general joy of the whole table,  
And to our dear friend Banquo, whom we  
miss;

Would he were here! to all, and him, we thirst,  
And all to all.

*Lords.* Our duties, and the pledge.

*Re-enter Ghost.*

*Macb.* Avenge! and quit my sight! let the  
earth hide thee!

Thy bones are marrowless, thy blood is cold;  
Thou hast no speculation in those eyes  
Which thou dost glare with!

*Lady M.* Think of this, good peers,  
But as a thing of custom: 'tis no other;  
Only it spoils the pleasure of the time.

*Macb.* What man dare, I dare: 99  
Approach thou like the rugged Russian bear,  
The arm'd rhinoceros, or the Hyrcan tiger;

Take any shape but that, and my firm nerves  
Shall never tremble; or be alive again,  
And dare me to the desert with thy sword;

† If trembling I inhabit then, protest me  
The baby of a girl. Hence, horrible shadow!  
Unreal mockery, hence! [*Ghost vanishes.*]

Why, so: being gone,  
I am a man again. Pray you, sit still.

*Lady M.* You have displaced the mirth,  
And the good meeting,

With most admired disorder.

*Macb.* Can such things be, 110  
And none aware as like a summer's cloud,  
Without our special wonder? You make me  
strange

Even to the disposition that I owe,  
When now I think you can behold such sights,  
And keep the natural ruby of your cheeks,  
When mine is blanch'd with fear.

*Macb.* What sights, my lord!

*Lady M.* I pray you, speak not; he grows  
weir and worse;

Quenched in flames. At once, good night:  
Stand not upon the order of your going,  
But go at once.

*Macb.* Good night; and better health 120  
Attend his majesty!

*Lady M.* A kind good night to all!

*Macb.* All but Macbeth and Lady M.

*Macb.* It will have blood; they say, blood  
will have blood:

Stones have been known to move and trees to  
speak;

Angars and understood relations have  
By magnet-pies and clogs and rooks brought  
forth.

The secret'st man of blood. What is the night?

*Lady M.* Almost at odds with morning,  
which is which.

*Macb.* How say'st thou, that Macbeth denies  
his person

At our great bidding?

*Lady M.* Did you send to him, sir?

*Macb.* I hear it by the way; but I will send:  
There's not a one of them but in his house 135

I keep a servant feed'd. I will to-morrow,  
And betimes I will, to the weird sisters:  
More shall they speak; for now I am bent to  
know,

By the worst means, the worst. For mine own  
good,

All causes shall give way: I am in blood  
Stepp'd in so far that, should I wade no more,  
Returning were as tedious as go o'er:

Strange things I have in head, that will to  
hand;

Which must be acted ere they may be scan'd.

*Lady M.* You lack the season of all natures,  
sleep. 141

*Macb.* Come, we'll to sleep. My strange  
and self-abuse

Is the initiate fear that wants hard use:  
We are yet but young in deed. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. A Heath.

*Thunder.* Enter the three Witches,  
meeting HECATE.

*First Witch.* Why, how now, Hecate! you  
look angrily.

*Hec.* Have I not reason, heidiens as you are,  
Saucy and overbold? How did you dare

To trade and traffic with Macbeth  
In riddles and affairs of death;

And I, the mistress of your charms,  
The close contriver of all harms,

Was never call'd to bear my part,  
Or show the glory of our art!

And, which is worse, all you have done  
Hath been but for a wayward son,

Spitful and wrathful, who, as others do,  
Loves for his own ends, not for you.

But make amends now: get you gone,  
And at the pit of Acheron

Meet me i' the morning; thither he  
Will come to know his destiny:

Your vessels and your spells provide,  
Your charms and every thing beside.

I am for the air; this night I'll spend  
Unto a dismal and a fatal end:

Great business must be wrought ere noon:  
Upon the corner of the moon

There hangs a vaporous drop profound;  
I'll catch it ere it come to ground:

And that distilled by magic sleights  
Shall raise such artificial sprites  
As by the strength of their illusion

Shall draw him on to his confusion:  
He shall spurn fate, scorn death, and bear  
His hopes 'bove wisdom, grace and fear:  
And you all know, security  
Is mortals' chiefest enemy.

[*Music and a song within: 'Come away, come away,' &c.*]

Hark! I am call'd; my little spirit, see,  
Sits in a foggy cloud, and stays for me. [*Exit.*]  
*First Witch.* Come, let's make haste; she'll  
soon be back again. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI. *Forres. The palace.*

Enter LENNOX and another Lord.

*Len.* My former speeches have but hit your  
thoughts,  
Which can interpret further: only, I say,  
Things have been strangely borne. The gracious  
Duncan

Was piked of Macbeth: marry, he was dead:  
And the right-valiant Banquo walk'd too late;  
Whom, you may say, if 't please you, Fleance  
kill'd.

For Fleance fled: men must not walk too late.  
Who cannot want the thought how monstrous  
It was for Malcolm and for Donalbain  
To kill their gracious father! damned fact! 10  
How it did grieve Macbeth! did he not straight  
In pious rage the two delinquents tear,  
That were the slaves of drink and thralls of  
sleep?

Was not that nobly done? Ay, and wisely too;  
For 'twould have anger'd any heart alive  
To hear the men deny't. So that, I say,  
He has borne all things well: and I do think  
That had he Duncan's sons under his key—  
As, an't please heaven, he shall not—they  
should find

What 'twere to kill a father; so should Fleance.  
But, peace! for from broad words and 'cause he  
fauld 21

His presence at the tyrant's feast, I hear  
Macduff lives in disgrace: sir, can you tell  
Where he bestows himself?

*Lord.* The son of Duncan,  
From whom this tyrant holds the due of birth,  
Lives in the English court, and is received  
Of the most pious Edward with such grace  
That the malevolence of fortune nothing  
Takes from his high respect: thither Macduff  
Is gone to pray the holy king, upon his aid 30  
To wake Northumberland and warlike Siward:  
That, by the help of these—with Him above  
To ratify the work—we may again  
Give to our tables meat, sleep to our nights,  
Free from our feasts and banquets bloody  
knives.

Do faithful homage and receive free honours:  
All which we pine for now: and this report  
Hath so exasperate the king that he  
Prepares for some attempt of war.

*Len.* Sent he to Macduff?  
*Lord.* He did: and with an absolute 'Sir,  
not I.

The cloudy messenger turns me his back,  
And hums, as who should say 'You'll rue the  
time

That clogs me with this answer.'

*Len.* And that well might  
Advise him to a caution, to hold what distance  
His wisdom can provide. Some holy angel  
Fly to the court of England and unfold  
His message ere he come, that a swift blessing  
May soon return to this our suffering country  
Under a hand accus'd!

*Lord.* I'll send my prayers with him.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. *A cavern. In the middle, a boiling  
cauldron.*

*Thunder.* Enter the three Witches.

*First Witch.* Thrice the brinded cat hath  
mew'd.

*Sec. Witch.* Thrice and once the hedge-pig  
whined.

*Third Witch.* Harpier cries 'Tis time, 'tis  
time.

*First Witch.* Round about the cauldron  
go;

In the poison'd entrails throw.

† Toad, that under cold stone

Days and nights has thirty one

Swelter'd venom sleeping got,

Boil thou first! 't the charmed pot.

*All.* Double, double toil and trouble; 10

Fire burn, and cauldron bubble.

*Sec. Witch.* Fillet of a fenny snake,

In the cauldron boil and bake;

Eye of newt and toe of frog,

Wool of bat and tongue of dog,

Adder's fork and blind-worm's sting,

Lizard's leg and howlet's wing,

For a charm of powerful trouble,

Like a hell-broth boil and bubble.

*All.* Double, double toil and trouble; 20

Fire burn and cauldron bubble.

*Third Witch.* Scale of dragon, tooth of

wolf,

Witches' mummy, maw and gulf

Of the ravin'd salt-sea shark,

Root of hemlock digg'd i' the dark,

Liver of blaspheming Jew,

Gall of goat, and slips of yew

Silver'd in the moon's eclipse,

Nose of Turk and Tartar's lips,

Finger of birth-strangled babe

Ditch-deliver'd by a dam, 30

Make the gruel thick and slab:

Add thereto a tiger's chandron,

For the ingredients of our cauldron.

*All.* Double, double toil and trouble;

Fire burn and cauldron bubble.

*Sec. Witch.* Cool it with a baboon's blood,

Then the charm is firm and good.

Enter HECATE to the other three Witches.

*Sec. O,* well done! I conjure you

saies;

And every one shall share 't the gain;

And now about the cauldron stir,

Like elves and fairies in a ring.

Enchanting all that you put in.

[*Music and a song: 'Black spirits,' &c.*

[*Hecate retires.*

*Sec. Witch.* By the pricking of my thumbs,  
Something wicked this way comes.

Open, locks,  
Whoever knocks!

*Enter MACBETH.*

*Macb.* How now, you secret, black, and  
midnight hags!  
What is't you do?

*All.* A deed without a name.

*Macb.* I conjure you, by that which you  
profess, 50  
Howe'er you come to know it, answer me:  
Though you untie the winds and let them fight  
Against the churches; though the yeast waves  
Confound and swallow navigation up;  
Though bladed corn be lodged and trees blown  
down;  
Though castles topple on their warders' heads;  
Though palaces and pyramids do slope  
Their heads to their foundations; though the  
treasure

Of nature's germens tumble all together,  
Even till destruction sicken; answer me 60  
To what I ask you.

*First Witch.* Speak.

*Sec. Witch.* Demand.

*Third Witch.* We'll answer.

*First Witch.* Say, if thou'dst rather hear it  
from our mouths,  
Or from our masters!

*Macb.* Call 'em; let me see 'em.

*First Witch.* Pour in sow's blood, that  
hath eaten

Her nine farrow; grease that's sweaten  
From the murderer's gibbet throw  
Into the flame.

*All.* Come, high or low;  
Thyself and office dost show!

*Thunder. First Apparition: an armed Head.*

*Macb.* Tell me, thou unknown power,—

*First Witch.* He knows thy thought:  
Hear his speech, but say thou nought. 70

*First App.* Macbeth! Macbeth! Macbeth!  
beware Macduff;

Beware the thane of Fife. Dismiss me. Enough.

*Macb.* What'e'r thou art, for thy good  
caution, thanks;

Thou hast harp'd my fear aright: but one word  
more,—

*First Witch.* He will not be commanded:  
here's another,  
More potent than the first.

*Thunder. Second Apparition: a bloody Child.*

*Sec. App.* Macbeth! Macbeth! Macbeth!

*Macb.* Had I three ears, I'd hear thee.

*Sec. App.* Be bloody, bold, and resolute;  
laugh to scorn

The power of man, for none of woman born  
Shall harm Macbeth. [*Descends.*

*Macb.* Then live, Macduff; what need I fear  
of thee!

But yet I'll make assurance double sure,  
And take a bond of fate: thou shalt not live;  
That I may tell pale-hearted fear it lies,  
And sleep in spite of thunder.

*Thunder. Third Apparition: a Child crowned,  
with a tree in his hand.*

What is this  
That rises like the issue of a king,  
And wears upon his baby-brow the round  
And top of sovereignty!

*All.* Listen, but speak not to't.  
*Third App.* Be lion-mettled, proud; and  
take no care 90

Who chafes, who frets, or where conspirers are:  
Macbeth shall never vanquish'd be until  
Great Birnam wood to high Dunsinane hill  
Shall come against him. [*Descends.*

*Macb.* That will never be:  
Who can impress the forest, bid the tree  
Unfix his earth-bound root? Sweet bodements!  
good!

Rebellion's head, rise never till the wood  
Of Birnam rise, and our high-placed Macbeth  
Shall live the lease of nature, pay his breath  
To time and mortal custom. Yet my heart too  
Throbs to know one thing: tell me, if your art  
Can tell so much: shall Banquo's issue ever  
Reign in this kingdom?

*All.* Seek to know no more.

*Macb.* I will be satisfied: deny me this,  
And an eternal curse fall on you! Let me  
know.

Why sinks that cauldron? and what noise is  
this? [*Hautboys.*

*First Witch.* Show!

*Sec. Witch.* Show!

*Third Witch.* Show!

*All.* Show his eyes, and grieve his heart;  
Come like shadows, so depart! 111

*A show of Eight Kings, the last with a glass  
in his hand; Banquo's Ghost following.*

*Macb.* Thou art too like the spirit of Banquo:  
down!

Thy crown does sear mine eye-balls. And thy  
hair,

Thou other gold-bound brow, is like the first.  
A thou is like the former. Filthy hags!

Why do you show me this? A fourth! Start,  
eyes!

What, will the line stretch out to the crack of  
doom?

Another yet! A seventh! I'll see no more:  
And yet the eighth appears, who bears a glass  
Which shows me many more; and some I see  
That two-fold balls and treble sceptres carry:  
Horrible sight! Now, I see, 'tis true:  
For the blood-bolter'd Banquo smiles upon me,  
And points at them for his. [*Apparitions  
vanish.*] What, is this so?

*First Witch.* Ay, sir, all this is so: but why  
Stands Macbeth thus amazedly!

Come, sisters, cheer we up his spites,  
And show the best of our delights:  
I'll charm the air to give a sound,  
While you perform your antic round; 130  
That this great king may kindly say,



Our duties did his welcome pay.

[*Music. The Witches dance, and then vanish, with Hecate.*]

*Macb.* Where are they! Gone! Let this pernicious hour Stand aye accursed in the calendar! Come in, without there!

*Enter LENNOX.*

*Len.* What's your grace's will?

*Macb.* Saw you the weird sisters?

*Len.* No, my lord.

*Macb.* Came they not by you?

*Len.* No, indeed, my lord.

*Macb.* Infected be the air wherupon they ride; And damn'd all those that trust them! I did hear

The galloping of horse: who was't came by?

*Len.* 'Tis two or three, my lord, that bring you word

Macduff is fled to England.

*Macb.* Fled to England!

*Len.* Ay, my good lord.

*Macb.* Time, thou anticipatest my dread exploits:

The flighty purpose never is o'ertook Unless the deed go with it: from this moment The very firstlings of my heart shall be The firstlings of my hand. And even now, To crown my thoughts with acts, be it thought and done:

The castle of Macduff I will surprise; 150 Seize upon Fife; give to the edge o' the sword His wife, his babes, and all unfortunate souls That trace him in his line. No boasting like a fool:

This deed I'll do before this purpose cool. But no more sights!—Where are these gentlemen?

Come, bring me where they are. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *Fife. Macduff's castle.*

*Enter LADY MACDUFF, her Son, and ROSS.*

*L. Macd.* What had he done, to make him fly the land?

*Ross.* You must have patience, madam.

*L. Macd.* He had none:

His flight was madness: when our actions do not,

Our fears do make us traitors.

*Ross.* You know not

Whether it was his wisdom or his fear.

*L. Macd.* Wisdom! to leave his wife, to leave his babes,

His mansion and his titles in a place

From whence himself does fly! He loves us not;

He wants the natural touch: for the poor wren,

The most diminutive of birds, will fight,

Her young ones in her nest, against the owl.

All is the fear and nothing is the love;

As little is the wisdom, where the flight

So runs against all reason.

*Ross.* My dearest coz,

I pray you, school yourself: but for your husband,

He is noble, wise, judicious, and best knows

The fits o' the season. I dare not speak much further;

But cruel are the times, when we are traitors And do not know ourselves, when we hold rumour

From what we fear, yet know not what we fear,

But float upon a wild and violent sea

Each way and move. I take my leave of you:

Shall not be long but I'll be here again:

Things at the worst will cease, or else climb

upward

To what they were before. My pretty cousin,

Blessing upon you!

*L. Macd.* Father'd he is, and yet he's fatherless.

*Ross.* I am so much a fool, should I stay longer.

It would be my disgrace and your discomfort:

I take my leave at once. [*Exit.*]

*L. Macd.* Sirrah, your father's dead: 30

And what will you do now? How will you

live?

*Son.* As birds do, mother.

*L. Macd.* What, with worms and flies?

*Son.* With what I get, I mean; and so do they.

*L. Macd.* Poor bird! thou'ldst never fear

the net nor lime,

The pitfall nor the gin.

*Son.* Why should I, mother? Poor birds

they are not set for.

My father is not dead, for all your saying.

*L. Macd.* Yes, he is dead: how wilt thou do

for a father?

*Son.* Nay, how will you do for a husband?

*L. Macd.* Why, I can buy me twenty at

any market. 40

*Son.* Then you'll buy 'em to sell again.

*L. Macd.* Thou speak'st with all thy wit;

and yet, I' faith,

With wit enough for thee.

*Son.* Was my father a traitor, mother?

*L. Macd.* Ay, that he was.

*Son.* What is a traitor?

*L. Macd.* Why, one that swears and lies.

*Son.* And be all traitors that do so?

*L. Macd.* Every one that does so is a traitor,

and must be hanged. 50

*Son.* And must they all be hanged that swear and lie?

*L. Macd.* Every one.

*Son.* Who must hang them?

*L. Macd.* Why, the honest men.

*Son.* Then the liars and swearers are fools,

for there are liars and swearers enow to beat

the honest men and hang up them.

*L. Macd.* Now, God help thee, poor monkey!

But how wilt thou do for a father? 60

*Son.* If he were dead, you'd weep for him;

if you would not, it were a good sign that I

should quickly have a new father.

*L. Macd.* Poor prattler, how thou talk'st!

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Bless you, fair dame! I am not to

you known,

some danger does approach you nearly;

If you will take a homely man's advice,  
Be not found here; hence, with your little ones.  
To fight you thus, methinks, I am too savage;  
To do worse to you were fell cruelty,  
Which is too nigh your person. Heaven pre-  
serve you!

I dare abide no longer. [Exit.]

*L. Macd.* Whither should I fly?  
I have done no harm. But I remember now  
I am in this earthly world; where to do harm  
Is often laudable, to do good sometime  
Accounted dangerous folly: why then, alas,  
Do I put up that womanly defence,  
To say I have done no harm?

*Enter Murderers.*

What are these faces?

*First Mur.* Where is your husband? So  
*L. Macd.* I hope, in no place so unsanctified  
Where such as thou mayst find him.

*First Mur.* He's a traitor.  
*Son.* Thou liest, thou shag-hair'd villain!

*First Mur.* What, you egg!  
[Stabbing him.]

Young fry of treachery!  
*Son.* He has kill'd me, mother:

Run away, I pray you! [Dies.]

[Exit Lady Macduff, crying 'Murder!']  
*Exeunt Murderers, following her.*

SCENE III. *England. Before the King's palace.*

*Enter MALCOLM and MACDUFF.*

*Mal.* Let us seek out some desolate shade,  
and there

Will  
*Macd.* Let us rather

Hold fast the mortal sword, and like good men  
Bestride our down-fall'n birthdom: each new

born  
New widows howl, new orphans cry, new

sorrows  
Strike heaven on the face, that it resounds  
As if it felt with Scotland and yell'd out

Like syllable of doleour.

*Mal.* What I believe I'll wail,  
What know believe, and what I can redress,

As I shall find the time to friend, I will. So  
What you have spoke, it may be so perchance.

This tyrant, whose sole name blisters our  
tongues,

Was once thought honest: you have loved him  
well;

He hath not touch'd you yet. I am young; but

You may of him through me, and

To offer up a weak poor innocent lamb  
To appease an angry god.

*Macd.* I am not treacherous.

*Mal.* But Macbeth is.  
A good and virtuous nature may recoil  
From imperial charge. But I shall crave your

aid: for such you are my thoughts cannot trans-

Angels are bright still, though the brightest  
fell;

Though all things foul would wear the brows of  
grace,

Yet grace must still look so.  
*Macd.* I have lost my hopes.

*Mal.* Perchance even there will I find  
my doubts.

Why in that rawness left you wife and child,  
These precious natives, those long knots of

love,  
Without leave-taking? I pray you,  
Let not my jealousies be your dishonours,

But mine own safeties. You may be rightlv  
just,

Whatever I shall think.  
*Macd.* Bleed, bleed, poor country!

Great tyranny! lay thou thy basis sure,  
For goodness dare not check thee: wear thou

thy wrongs;  
The title is affeer'd! Fare thee well, lord:

I would not be the villain that thou think'st  
For the whole space that's in the tyrant's grasp,  
And the rich East to boot.

*Mal.* Be not offended:  
I speak not as in absolute fear of you.

I think our country sinks beneath the yoke;  
It weeps, it bleeds; and each new day a gash

is added to her wounds: I think withal  
There would be hands uplifted in my right;

And here from gracious England have I offer  
(if goodly thousands: but, for all this,  
When I shall tread upon the tyrant's head,

Or wear it on my sword, yet my poor country  
shall have more vices than it had before,  
More suffer and more sundry ways than ever,  
By him that shall succeed.

*Macd.* What should he be?

*Mal.* It is myself I mean: in whom I know  
All the particulars of vice so grafted

That, when they shall be open'd, black Macbeth  
Will seem as pure as snow, and the poor state

Esteem him as a lamb, being compared  
With my countless harms.

*Macd.* Not in the legions  
Of horrid hell can come a devil more damn'd  
In evils to top Macbeth.

*Mal.* I grant him bloody,  
Luxurious, avaricious, false, deceitful,

Sudden, malicious, smacking of every sin  
That has a name: but there's no bottom, none.

In my voluptuousness: your wives, your  
daughters,

Your matrons and your maids, could not fill up  
The cistern of my lust, and my desire

All continent impediments would o'erbear  
That did oppose my will: better Macbeth  
Than such an one to reign.

*Macd.* Brav'd him intemperance  
In nature is a tyranny: it hath been

The untimely emptying of the happy throne  
And fall of many kings. But fear not yet

To take upon you what is yours: you may  
Convey your pleasures in a spacious plenty,  
And yet seem cold, the time you may so hood-  
wink.

We have willing dames enough: there cannot

That vulture in you, to devour so many  
As will to greatness dedicate themselves,  
Finding it so inclined.

*Mal.* With this there grows  
In my most ill-composed affection such  
A stanchless avarice that, were I king,  
I should cut off the nobles for their lands;  
Desire his jewels and this other's house: 80  
And my more-having would be as a vase  
To make me hunger more; that I should forge  
Quarrels unjust against the good and loyal,  
Destroying them for wealth.

*Macd.* This avarice  
Sicks deeper, grows with more pernicious root  
Than summer-seeming lust, and it hath been  
The sword of our slain kings: yet do not fear;  
Scotland hath fountains to fill up your will,  
Of your mere own: all these are portable,  
With other graces weigh'd. 90

*Mal.* But I have none: the king-becoming  
graces,

As justice, verity, temperance, stableness,  
Bounty, perseverance, mercy, lowliness,  
Devotion, patience, courage, fortitude,  
I have no relish of them, but abound  
In the division of each several crime,  
Acting in many ways. Nay, had I power, I  
should

Pour the sweet milk of concord into hell,  
Upstart the universal peace, confound  
All unity on earth.

*Macd.* O Scotland, Scotland! 100

*Mal.* If such a one be fit to govern, speak:  
I am as ill have spoken.

*Macd.* Fit to govern!  
No, not to live. O nation miserable,  
With an untitled tyrant bloody-scepter'd,  
When shall thou see thy wholesome days again,  
Since that the truest issue of thy throne  
By his own interdiction stands accursed,  
And does blaspheme his breed? Thy royal father  
Was a most sainted king: the queen that bore

thee,  
Often upon her knees than on her feet, 110  
Died every day she lived. Fare thee well!  
These evils thou repeat'st upon thyself  
Have banish'd me from Scotland. O my breast,  
Thy hope ends here!

*Mal.* Macduff, this noble passion,  
Child of integrity, hath from my soul  
Wiped the black scruples, reconciled my  
thoughts

To thy good truth and honour. Devilish  
Macbeth

By many of these trains hath sought to win me  
Into his power, and modest wisdom plucks me  
From over-credulous haste: but God above 120  
Deal between thee and me! for even now  
I put myself to thy direction, and  
Unspoke mine own detraction, here abjure  
The taints and blames I laid upon myself,  
For strangers to my nature. I am yet  
Unknown to woman, never was between,  
Scarcely have I wept what was mine own,  
At no time broke my faith, would not betray  
The devil to his fellow and delight  
No less in truth than life: my first false 130  
speaking

Was this upon myself: what I am truly,  
Is thine and my poor country's to command:  
Whither indeed, before thy here-approach,  
Old Steward, with ten thousand warlike men,  
Already at a point, was setting forth.  
Now we'll together; and the chance of good-  
ness

Be like our warranted quarrel! Why are you  
silent?

*Macd.* Such welcome and unwelcome things  
at once  
Tis hard to reconcile.

*Enter a Doctor.*

*Mal.* Well; more anon.—Comes the king  
forth, I pray you? 140

*Doct.* Ay, sir; there are a crew of wretched  
souls

That stay his cure: their malady convinces  
The great assay of art; but at his touch—  
Such sanctity hath heaven given his hand—  
They presently amend.

*Mal.* I thank you, doctor. [*Exit Doctor.*]

*Macd.* What's the disease he means?

*Mal.* 'Tis call'd the evil:

A most miraculous work in this good thing;  
Which often, since my here-remain in England,  
I have seen him do. How he solicits heaven,  
Himself best knows: but strangely-visited  
people, 150

All swoll'n and ulcerous, pitted to the eye,  
The mere despair of surgery, he cures,  
Hanging a golden stamp about their necks,  
Put on with holy prayers; and 'tis spoken,  
To the succeeding royalty he leaves  
The healing benediction. With this strange  
virtue,

He hath a heavenly gift of prophecy,  
And sundry blessings hung about his throne,  
That speak him full of grace.

*Enter Ross.*

*Macd.* See, who comes here!

*Mal.* My countryman; but yet I know him  
not. 160

*Macd.* My ever gentle cousin, welcome hither.

*Mal.* I know him now. Good God, 'twixt times  
remove

The means that makes us strangers!

*Ross.* Oh, heaven.

*Macd.* Stands Scotland where it did?

*Ross.* Ah, poor country!

Almost afraid to know itself. It cannot  
Be call'd our mother, but our grave; where  
nothing,

But who knows nothing, is once seen to suffer:  
Where sighs and groans and shrieks that rend  
the air

Are made, not mark'd; where violent sorrow  
seems

A modern outcry: the dead man's knell 170  
Is there scarce ask'd for who; and good men's  
lives

Expire before the flowers in their caps,

Dying or ere they sicken.

*Macd.* O, relation

Too late, and yet too true!

*Mal.* What's the newsworthy grief?

Ross. That of an hour's age doth hiss the speaker:  
Each minute teems a new one.

Macd. How does my wife?

Ross. Why, well.

Macd. And all my children?

Ross. Well too.

Macd. The tyrant has not batter'd at their peace?

Ross. No; they were well at peace when I did leave 'em.

Macd. Be not a niggard of your speech: how goes 't?

Ross. When I came hither to transport the tidings,

Which I have heavily borne, there ran a rumour Of many worthy fellows that were out; Which was to my belief witness'd the rather, For that I saw the tyrant's power a-foot: Now is the time of help; your eye in Scotland Would create soldiers, make our women fight, To doff their dire distresses.

Macd. Be 't their comfort We are coming thither: gracious England hath Lent us good Siward and ten thousand men; An older and a better soldier none That Christendom gives out.

Ross. Would I could answer This comfort with the like! But I have words That would be howl'd out in the desert air, Where hearing should not latch them.

Macd. What concern they? The general cause? or is it a fee-grief Due to some single breast?

Ross. No mind that's honest But in it shares some woe; though the main part Pertains to you alone.

Macd. If it be mine, Keep it not from me, quickly let me have it.

Ross. Let not your ears despise my tongue for ever, Which shall possess them with the heaviest sound That ever yet they heard.

Macd. Hum! I guess at it.

Ross. Your castle is surprised; your wife and babes

Savagely slaughter'd: to relate the manner, Were, on the quarry of these murder'd deer, To add the death of you.

Macd. Merciful heaven! What, man! ne'er pull your hat upon your brows;

Give sorrow words: the grief that does not speak

Whispers the o'er-fraught heart and bids it break.

Macd. My children too?

Ross. Wife, children, servants, all That could be found.

Macd. And I must be from thence! My wife kill'd too?

Ross. I have said.

Macd. Be comforted: Let's make us medicines of our great revenge, To cure this deadly grief.

Macd. He has no children. All my pretty

Did you say all! O hell-kite! All! What, all my pretty chickens and their dam At one fell swoop?

Macd. Dispute it like a man.

Macd. I shall do so; and But I must also feel it as a man: I cannot but remember such things were,

That were most precious to me. Did heaven look on,

And would not take their part? Sinful Macduff, They were all struck for thee! Naught that I

am, Not for their own demerits, but for mine,

Fell slaughter on their souls. Heaven rest them now!

Macd. Be this the whetstone of your sword: let grief

Convert to anger: blunt not the heart, enrage it.

Macd. O, I could play the woman with mine eyes

And braggart with my tongue! But, gentle heavens,

Cut short all intermission; front to front Bring thou this fiend of Scotland and myself;

Within my sword's length set him; if he escape, Heaven forgive him too!

Macd. This tune goes manly. Come, go we to the king; our power is ready;

Our lack is nothing but our leave: Macbeth Is ripe for shaking, and the powers above

Put on their instruments. Receive what cheer you may:

The night is long that never finds the day.

[Exeunt.]

## ACT V.

SCENE I. Dunsinane. Ante-room in the castle.

Enter a Doctor of Physic and a Waiting-Gentlewoman.

Doct. I have two nights watched with you, but can perceive no truth in your report. When was it she last walk'd?

Gent. Since his majesty went into the field, I have seen her rise from her bed, throw her nightgown upon her, unlock her closet, take forth paper, fold it, write upon 't, read it, afterwards seal it, and again return to bed; yet all this while in a most fast sleep.

Doct. A great perturbation in nature, to receive at once the benefit of sleep, and do the effects of watching! In this slumbery agitation, besides her walking and other actual performances, what, at any time, have you heard her say?

Gent. That, sir, which I will not report after her.

Doct. You may to me: and 'tis most meet you should.

Gent. Neither to you nor any one; having no witness to confirm my speech.

Enter LADY MACBETH, with a taper.

Lo you, here she comes! This is her very

grave; and, upon my life, fast asleep. Observe her; stand close.

*Doct.* How came she by that light?

*Gent.* Why, it stood by her: she has light by her continually; 'tis her command.

*Doct.* You see, her eyes are open.

*Gent.* Ay, but their sense is shut.

*Doct.* What is it she does now? Look, how she rubs her hands.

*Gent.* It is an accustomed action with her, to seem thus washing her hands: I have known her continue in this a quarter of an hour.

*Lady M.* Yet here's a spot.

*Doct.* Hark! she speaks: I will set down what comes from her, to satisfy my remembrance the more strongly.

*Lady M.* Out, damned spot! out, I say!—One: two: why, then 'tis time to do't.—Hell is murky!—Fie, my lord, fie! a soldier, and afeard! What need we fear who knows it, when none can call our power to account!—Yet who would have thought the old man to have had so much blood in him.

*Doct.* Do you mark that?

*Lady M.* The thane of Fife had a wife: where is she now?—What, will these hands never be clean?—No more o' that, my lord, no more o' that: you mar all with this starting.

*Doct.* Go to, go to; you have known what you should not.

*Gent.* She has spoke what she should not, I am sure of that: heaven knows what she has known.

*Lady M.* Here's the smell of the blood still: I the perfumes of Arabia will not sweeten this little hand. Oh, oh, oh!

*Doct.* What a sight is there! The heart is very charged.

*Gent.* I would not have such a heart in my own for the dignity of the whole body.

*Doct.* Well, well, well,—

*Gent.* Pray God it be, sir.

*Doct.* This disease is beyond my practice: as I have known those which have walked in their sleep who have died holily in their beds.

*Lady M.* Wash your hands, put on your nightgown; look not so pale.—I tell you yet gain, Banquo's buried; he cannot come out u' his grave.

*Doct.* Even so!

*Lady M.* To bed, to bed! there's knocking at the gate: come, come, come, come, give me your hand. What's done cannot be undone.—

To bed, to bed, to bed! [*Exit.*]

*Doct.* Will she go now to bed?

*Gent.* Directly.

*Doct.* Foul whisperings are abroad: unnatural deeds

do breed unnatural troubles: infected minds so to their deaf pillows will discharge their secrets

more needs she the divine than the physician. God, God forgive us all! Look after her;

remove from her the means of all annoyance, and still keep eyes upon her. So, good night. My mind she has mated, and amazed my sight. I think, but dare not speak.

*Gent.* Good night, good doctor.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. The country near Dunsinane.

*Drum and colours. Enter MENTEITH, CAITHNESS, ANGUS, LENNOX, and Soldiers.*

*Ment.* The English power is near, led on by Malcolm.

His uncle Siward and the good Macduff: Revengeers burn in them; for their dear causes Would to the bleeding and the grim alarm Excite the mortified man.

*Ang.* Near Birnam wood Shall we well meet them; that way are they coming.

*Caith.* Who knows if Donaldbain be with his brother?

*Len.* For certain, sir, he is not: I have a file

Of all the gentry: there is Siward's son, And many unrough youths that even now Protest their first of manhood.

*Ment.* What does the tyrant?

*Caith.* Great Dunsinane he strongly fortifies: Some say he's mad: others that lesser hate him

Do call it valiant fury: but, for certain, He cannot buckle his distemper'd cause Within the belt of rule.

*Ang.* Now does he feel His secret murders sticking on his hands; Now minutely revolts upbraid his faith-breach;

Those he commands move only in command, Nothing in love: now does he feel his title Hang loose about him, like a giant's robe Upon a dwarfish thief.

*Ment.* Who then shall blame His peaster'd senses to recoil and start,

When all that is within him does condemn Itself for being there?

*Caith.* Well, march we on, To give obedience where 'tis truly owed: Meet we the medicine of the sickly weal,

And with him pour we in our country's purge Each drop of us.

*Len.* Or so much as it needs, To dew the sovereign flower and drown the weeds.

Make us our march towards Birnam.

[*Exeunt, marching.*]

## SCENE III. Dunsinane. A room in the castle.

*Enter MACBETH, Doctor, and Attendants.*

*Macb.* Bring me no more reports; let them fly all:

Till Birnam wood remove to Dunsinane,

I cannot taint with fear. What's the boy Malcolm?

Was he not born of woman? The spirits that know

All mortal consequences have pronounced me thus:

'Fear not, Macbeth; no man that's born of woman Shall e'er have power upon thee.' Then 'tis

False truth, And mine with the English—

The mind I sway by and the heart!

Shall never sag with doubt nor shake with fear.

*Enter a Servant.*

The devil damn thee black, thou cream-faced loon!

Where got'st thou that goose look!

*Serv.* There is ten thousand—

*Macb.* Geese, villain!

*Serv.* Soldiers, sir.

*Macb.* Go, prick thy face, and over-red thy

face,

Thou lily-liver'd boy. What soldiers, patch! Death of thy soul! those linen cheeks of thine Are counsellors to fear. What soldiers, whey-face!

*Serv.* The English force, so please you.

*Macb.* Take thy face hence. [*Exit Servant.*]

*Seyton!*—I am sick at heart.

When I behold—*Seyton*, I say!—This push

Will cheer me ever, or discolor me now.

I have lived long enough: my way of life

Is fall'n into the sear, the yellow leaf;

And that which should accompany old age,

As honour, love, obedience, troops of friends,

I must not look to have; but, in their stead,

Curses, not loud but deep, mouth-honour,

breath,

Which the poor heart would fain deny, and

dare not.

*Seyton!*

*Enter SEYTON.*

*Sey.* What is your gracious pleasure?

*Macb.* What news more? so

*Sey.* All is confirm'd, my lord, which was

reported.

*Macb.* I'll fight till from my bones my flesh

be hack'd.

Give me my armour.

*Sey.* 'Tis not needed yet.

*Macb.* I'll put it on.

Send out more horses; skirr the country round;

Hang those that talk of fear. Give me mine

armour.

How does your patient, doctor?

*Doct.* Not so sick, my lord,

As she is troubled with thick-coming fancies,

That keep her from her rest.

*Macb.* Cure her of that.

Canst thou not minister to a mind diseased,

Pluck from the memory a rooted sorrow,

Raze out the written troubles of the brain

And with some sweet oblivious antidote

Cleanse the stuff'd bosom of that perilous stuff

Which weighs upon the heart?

*Doct.* Therein the patient

Must minister to himself.

*Macb.* Throw physic to the dogs; I'll none

of it.

Come, put mine armour on; give me my staff.

*Seyton*, send out. Doctor, the thanes fly from

me.

Come, sir, dispatch. If thou couldst, doctor,

cast

The water of my land, find her disease,

And purge it to a sound and pristine health,

I would applaud thee to the very echo,

That should applaud again.—Full't o' me, I say.—

What rhubarb, senna, or what purgative drug,  
Would scour these English hence? Hear't thou  
of them?

*Doct.* Ay, my good lord; your royal prepara-  
tion

Makes us hear something.

*Macb.* Bring it after me.

I will not be afraid of death and bane,

Till Birnam forest come to Dunsinane.

*Doct.* [*Aside*] Were I from Dunsinane away

and clear,

Profit again should hardly draw me here.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE IV. *Country near Birnam wood.*

*Drum and colours. Enter MALCOLM, old*

*SIWARD and his Son, MACDUFF, MEN-*

*TEITH, CAITHNESS, ANGUS, LENNOX, ROSS,*

*and Soldiers, marching.*

*Mal.* Cousins, I hope the days are near at

hand

That chambers will be safe.

*Ment.* We doubt it nothing.

*Siw.* What wood is this before us?

*Ment.* The wood of Birnam.

*Mal.* Let every soldier hew him down a

bough

And bear't before him: thereby shall we

shadow

The numbers of our host and make discovery

Err in report of us.

*Soldiers.* It shall be done.

*Siw.* We learn no other but the confident

tyrant

Keeps still in Dunsinane, and will endure

Our setting down before't.

*Mal.* 'Tis his main hope: so

For where there is advantage to be given,

Both more and less have given him the revolt,

And none serve with him but constrained

things

Whose hearts are absent too.

*Macd.* Let our just censures

Attend the true event, and put we on

Industrious soldiership.

*Siw.* The time approaches

That will with due decision make us know

What we shall say we have and what we owe.

Thoughts speculative their unsure hopes relate,

But certain issue strokes must arbitrate: so

Towards which advance the war.

[*Exeunt, marching.*]

SCENE V. *Dunsinane. Within the castle.*

*Enter MACBETH, SEYTON, and Soldiers, with*

*drum and colours.*

*Macb.* Hang out our banners on the out-

ward walls;

The cry is still 'They come!': our castle's

strength

Will laugh a siege to scorn: here let them lie

Till famine and the ague eat them up:

Were they not forced with those that should be

have met them daring, beard to

And beat them backward home.

[A cry of women within.

What is that noise?

Sey. It is the cry of women, my good lord.

[Exit.

Macb. I have almost forgot the taste of fears:

The time has been, my senses would have cool'd

To hear a night-shriek; and my fell of hair

Would at a dismal treatise rouse and stir

As life were in't: I have supp'd full with horrors;

Direness, familiar to my slaughterous thoughts,  
Cannot once start me.

Re-enter SETTON.

Wherefore was that cry?

Sey. The queen, my lord, is dead.

Macb. She should have died hereafter;

There would have been a time for such a word.

To-morrow, and to-morrow, and to-morrow,

Creeps in this petty pace from day to day

To the last syllable of recorded time,

And all our yesterdays have lighted fools

The way to dusty death. Out, out, brief candle!

Life's but a walking shadow, a poor player

That struts and frets his hour upon the stage

And then is heard no more: it is a tale

Told by an idiot, full of sound and fury,

Signifying nothing.

Enter a Messenger.

Thou comest to use thy tongue; thy story quickly.

Mess. Gracious my lord,

I should report that which I say I saw,

But know not how to do it.

Macb. Well, say, sir.

Mess. As I did stand my watch upon the hill,

I look'd toward Birnam, and anon, methought,

The wood began to move.

Macb. Liar and slave!

Mess. Let me endure your wrath, if 't be

not so:

Within this three mile may you see it coming;

I say, a moving grove.

Macb. If thou speak'st false,

Upon the next tree shalt thou hang alive,

Till famine cling thee: if thy speech be sooth,

I care not if thou dost for me as much.

I pull in resolution, and begin

To doubt the equivocation of the fiend

That lies like truth: 'Fear not, till Birnam

wood

Do come to Dunsinane:' and now a wood

Comes toward Dunsinane. Arm, arm, and out!

If this which he avouches does appear,

There is nor flying hence nor tarrying here.

I 'gin to be awary of the sun,

And wish the estate o' the world were now un-

done.

Ring the alarum-bell! Blow, wind! come,

wreck!

At least we'll die with harness on our back.

[Exit.

SCENE VI. Dunsinane. Before the castle.

Drum and colours. Enter MALCOLM, old SIWARD, MACDOUFF, and their Army, with boughs.

Mal. Now near enough: your leavy screens throw down,

And show like those you are. You, worthy uncle,

Shall, with my cousin, your right-noble son,

Lead our first battle: worthy Macduff and we

Shall take upon 's what else remains to do,

According to our order.

Siw. Fare you well.

Do we but find the tyrant's power to-night,

Let us be beaten, if we cannot fight.

Macb. Make all our trumpets speak; give

them all breath.

Those clamorous harbingers of blood and death.

[Exit.

SCENE VII. Another part of the field.

Alarums. Enter MACBETH.

Macb. They have tied me to a stake; I

cannot fly,

But, bear-like, I must fight the course. What's

he

That was not born of woman! Such a one

Am I to fear, or none.

Enter young SIWARD.

Yo. Siw. What is thy name?

Macb. Thou 't be afraid to hear it.

Yo. Siw. No; though thou call'st thyself a

hotter name

Than any is in hell.

Macb. My name's Macbeth.

Yo. Siw. The devil himself could not pro-

nounce a title

More hateful to mine ear.

Macb. No, nor more fearful.

Yo. Siw. Thou liest, abhorred tyrant; with

my sword

I'll prove the lie thou speak'st.

[They fight and young Siward is slain.

Macb. Thou wast born of woman.

But swords I smile at, weapons laugh to scorn,

Brandish'd by man that's of a woman born.

[Exit.

Alarums. Enter MACDOUFF.

Macb. That way the noise is. Tyrant, show

thy face!

If thou be'st slain and with no stroke of mine,

My wife and children's ghosts will haunt me

still.

I cannot strike at wretched kerns, whose arms

are hired to bear their staves: either thou,

Macbeth,

Or else my sword with an unbatter'd edge

I sheathe again undeeded. There thou shouldst

be;

By this great clatter, one of greatest note

Seems bruised. Let me find him, fortune!

And more I beg not.

[Exit. Alarums.

*Enter MALCOLM and old SIWARD.*

*Siw.* This way, my lord; the castle's gently rendered:  
The tyrant's people on both sides do fight;  
The noble thanes do bravely in the war;  
The day almost itself professes yours,  
And little is to do.

*Mal.* We have met with foes  
That strike beside us.

*Siw.* *Enter, sir, the castle. 29*  
[*Exeunt. Alarums.*]

SCENE VIII. *Another part of the field.*

*Enter MACBETH.*

*Macb.* Why should I play the Roman fool,  
and die  
On mine own sword? whiles I see lives, the  
gashes  
Do better upon them.

*Enter MACDUFF.*

*Macd.* Turn, hell-hound, turn!  
*Macb.* Of all men else I have avoided thee:  
But get thee back; my soul is too much charged  
With blood of thine already.

*Macd.* I have no words:  
My voice is in my sword; thou bloodier villain  
Than terms can give thee out! [They fight.]

*Macb.* Thou lostest labour:  
As easy mayst thou the intrenchant air  
With thy keen sword impress as make me  
bleed: 10

Let fall thy blade on vulnerable crests;  
I bear a charmed life, which must not yield  
To one of woman born.

*Macd.* Despair thy charm;  
And let the angel whom thou still hast served  
Tell thee, Macduff was from his mother's womb  
Untimely ripp'd.

*Macb.* Accurs'd be that tongue that tells  
me so,

For it hath cow'd my better part of man!  
And be these juggling fiends no more believed,  
That palter with us in a double sense; 20  
That keep the word of promise to our ear,  
And break it to our hope. I'll not fight with  
thee.

*Macd.* Then yield thee, coward,  
And live to be the show and gaze o' the time:  
We'll have thee, as our rarer monsters are,  
Painted upon a pole, and underwrit,  
'Here may you see the tyrant.'

*Macb.* I will not yield,  
To kiss the ground before young Malcolm's  
feet.

And to be baited with the rabble's curse. 29  
Though Birnam wood be come to Dunsinane,  
And thou opposed, being of no woman born,  
Yet I will try the last. Before my body  
I lay my warlike shield. Lay on, Macduff,  
For none can't be him that first cries 'Hold,  
enough!' [Exeunt, fighting. Alarums.]

*Retreat. Flourish. Enter, with drums and  
colours, MALCOLM, old SIWARD, ROSS, the  
other Thanes, and Soldiers.*

*Mal.* I would the friends we miss were safe  
arrived.

*Siw.* Some must go off: and yet, by these

So great a day as this is cheaply bought.

*Mal.* Macduff is missing, and your noble  
son.

*Ross.* Your son, my lord, has paid a soldier's  
debt:

He only lived but till he was a man; 40  
The which no sooner had his prowess confirm'd  
In the unshrinking station where he fought,  
But like a man he died.

*Siw.* Then he is dead!

*Ross.* Ay, and brought off the field: your  
cause of sorrow  
Must not be measured by his worth, for then  
It hath no end.

*Siw.* Had he his hurts before?

*Ross.* Ay, on the front.

*Siw.* Why then, God's soldier be he!  
Had I as many sons as I have hairs,  
I would not wish them to a fairer death:  
And so, his knell is knoll'd.

*Mal.* He's worth more sorrow, 50  
And that I'll spend for him.

*Siw.* He's worth no more:  
They say he parted well, and paid his score:  
And so, God be with him! Here comes newer  
comfort.

*Re-enter MACDUFF, with MACBETH'S head.*

*Macd.* Hail, king! for so thou art: behold,  
where stands  
The usurper's cursed head: the time is free:  
I see thee compass'd with thy kingdom's pearl,  
That speak my salutation in their minds;  
Whose voices I desire aloud with mine:  
Hail, King of Scotland!

*All.* Hail, King of Scotland! [Flourish.]  
*Macd.* We shall not spend a large expense of  
time 60

Before we reckon with your several loves,  
And make us even with you. My thanes and  
kinsmen,

Henceforth be earls, the first that ever Scotland  
In such an honour nam'd. What's more to do,  
Which would be plant'd newly with the time,  
As calling home our exiled friends abroad  
That fled the snares of watchful tyranny;  
Producing forth the cruel ministers

Of this dead butcher and his fiend-like queen,  
Who, as 'tis thought, by self and violent hands  
Took off her life; this, and what needful else  
That calls upon us, by the grace of Grace,  
We will perform in measure, time and place:  
So, thanks to all at once and to each one,  
Whom we invite to see us crown'd at Scone.

[Flourish. Exeunt.]



# HAMLET, PRINCE OF DENMARK

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

CLAUDIUS, king of Denmark.  
 HAMLET, son to the late, and nephew to  
 the present king.  
 POLONIUS, lord chamberlain.  
 HORATIO, friend to Hamlet.  
 LAERTES, son to Polonius.  
 VOLTIMAND,  
 CORNELIUS,  
 ROSENCRANTZ,  
 GUILDENSTERN,  
 OSBIO,  
 A Gentleman,  
 A Priest.  
 MARCELLUS,  
 BERNARDO, } officers.  
 FRANCISCO, a soldier.

REYNALDO, servant to Polonius.  
 Players.  
 Two Clowns, grave-diggers.  
 FORTINBRAS, prince of Norway.  
 A Captain.  
 English Ambassadors.

GERTRUDE, queen of Denmark, and mother  
 to Hamlet.  
 OPHELIA, daughter to Polonius.

Lords, Ladies, Officers, Soldiers, Sailors, Mes-  
 sengers, and other Attendants.

Ghost of Hamlet's Father.

SCENE: Denmark.

## ACT I

SCENE I. *Elsinore. A platform before the  
 castle.*

FRANCISCO at his post. Enter to him  
 BERNARDO.

Ber. Who's there?

Fran. Nay, answer me: stand, and unfold  
 yourself.

Ber. Long live the king!

Fran. Bernardo?

Ber. He.

Fran. You come most carefully upon your  
 hour.

Ber. 'Tis now struck twelve; get thee to  
 bed, Francisco.

Fran. For this relief much thanks: 'tis  
 bitter cold,

And I am sick at heart.

Ber. Have you had quiet guard?

Fran. Not a mouse stirring. To

Ber. Well, good night.

If you do meet Horatio and Marcellus,

The rivals of my watch, bid them make haste.

Fran. I think I hear them. Stand, ho!  
 Who's there?

Enter HORATIO and MARCELLUS.

Hor. Friends to this ground.

Mar. And liegemen to the Dane.

Fran. Give you good night.

Mar. O, farewell, honest soldier:

Who hath relieved you?

Fran. Bernardo has my place.

Give you good night. [Exit.

Mar. Holla! Bernardo! Say,

Ber.

What, is Horatio there?

Hor.

A place of him.

Ber. Welcome, Horatio: welcome, good

Marcellus.

Mar. What, has this thing appear'd again

to-night?

Ber. I have seen nothing.

Mar. Horatio says 'tis but our fantasy,  
 And will not let belief take hold of him

Touching this dreaded sight, twice seen of us:

Therefore I have entreated him along

With us to watch the minutes of this night;

That if again this apparition come,

He may approve our eyes and speak to it.

Hor. Tush, tush, 'twill not appear.

Ber. Sit down awhile; so

And let us once again assail your ears,

That are so fortified against our story

What we have two nights seen.

Hor.

Well, sit we down,

And let us hear Bernardo speak of this.

Ber. Last night of all,

When yond same star that's westward from  
 the pole

Had made his course to illumine that part of  
 heaven

Where now it burns, Marcellus and myself,

The bell then beating one,—

Enter Ghost.

Mar. Peace, break thee off; look, where it  
 comes again!

*Ger.* In the same figure, like the king that's dead.

*Mar.* Thou art a scholar; speak to it, Horatio.

*Ger.* Looks it not like the king? mark it, Horatio.

*Hor.* Most like: it harrows me with fear and wonder.

*Ger.* It would be spoke to.

*Mar.* Question it, Horatio.

*Hor.* What art thou that usurp'st this time of night,

Together with that fair and warlike form  
In which the majesty of buried Denmark  
Did sometimes march? by heaven I charge thee,  
speak!

*Mar.* It is offended.

*Ger.* See, it stalks away! 50

*Hor.* Stay! speak, speak! I charge thee, speak! *[Exit Ghost.]*

*Mar.* 'Tis gone, and will not answer.

*Ger.* How now, Horatio! you tremble and look pale:

Is not this something more than fantasy?

What think you on't?

*Hor.* Before my God, I might not this believe

Without the sensible and true avouch

Of mine own eyes.

*Mar.* Is it not like the king?

*Hor.* As thou art to thyself: 60

Such was the very armour he had on  
When he the ambitious Norway combated;

So frown'd he once, when, in an angry parle,  
He smote the sledded Polacks on the ice.

'Tis strange.

*Mar.* Thus twice before, and jump at this dead hour,

With martial stalk hath he gone by our watch.

*Hor.* In what particular thought to work I know not;

But in the gross and scope of my opinion,  
This bodes some strange eruption to our state.

*Mar.* Good now, sit down, and tell me, he that knows, 70

Why this same strict and most observant watch  
So nightly toils the subject of the land,

And why such daily cast of bruzen cannon,  
And foreign mart for implements of war;

Why such impress of shipwrights, whose sore task

Does not divide the Sunday from the week;  
What might be toward, that this sweaty haste

Doth make the night joint-labourer with the day;

Who is't that can inform me?

*Hor.* That can I; 75

At least, the whisper goes so. Our last king, so  
Whose image even but now appear'd to us,

Was, as you know, by Fortinbras of Norway,  
Thereto prick'd on by a most emulate pride,

Dured to the combat; in which our valiant Hamlet—

For so this side of our known world esteem'd him—

Did slay this Fortinbras; who, by a seal'd compact,

Well ratified by law and heraldry,

Did forfeit, with his life, all those his lands  
Which he stood seized of, to the conqueror:

Against the which, a moiety competent 90

Was gaged by our king; which had return'd  
To the inheritance of Fortinbras,

Had he been vanquisher; as, by the same covenant,

And carriage of the article design'd,  
His fell to Hamlet. Now, sir, young Fortinbras,

Of unimproved mettle hot and full,  
Hath in the skirts of Norway here and there

Shark'd up a list of lawless resolutes  
For food and diet, to some enterprise

That hath a stomach in't; which is no other—  
As it doth well appear unto our state— 101

But to recover of us, by strong hand  
And terms compulsatory, those foresaid lands

So by his father lost: and this, I take it,  
Is the main motive of our preparations,

The source of this our watch and the chief head  
Of this post-haste and romage in the land.

*Ger.* I think it be no other but e'en so:

Well may it sort that this portentous figure  
Comes armed through our watch; so like the king 110

That was and is the question of these wars.

*Hor.* A mote it is to trouble the mind's eye.  
In the most high and palmy state of Rome,

A little ere the mightiest Julius fell,  
The graves stood tenantless and the sheeted

dead

Did squeak and gibber in the Roman streets:

As stars with trains of fire and dews of blood,  
Disasters in the sun; and the moist star

Upon whose influence Neptune's empire stands  
Was sick almost to doomsday with eclipse: 120

And even the like precure of fierce events,  
As harbingers preceding still the fates

And prologue to the omen coming on,  
Have heaven and earth together demonstrated

Unto our climatures and countrymen.—  
But soft, behold! lo, where it comes again!

*Re-enter Ghost.*

I'll cross it, though it blast me. Stay, illusion!

If thou hast any sound, or use of voice,  
Speak to me:

If there be any good thing to be done, 130

That may to thee do ease and grace to me,  
Speak to me: *[Cock crows.]*

If thou art privy to thy country's fate,  
Which, happily, foreknowing may avoid,

O, speak!

Or if thou hast uphoarded in thy life  
Extorted treasure in the womb of earth,

For which, they say, you spirits oft walk in death,

Speak of it: stay, and speak! Stop it, Marcellus.

*Mar.* Shall I strike at it with my partisan?

*Hor.* Do, if it will not stand. 'Tis here! 140

*Ger.* 'Tis here! *[Exit Ghost.]*

*Mar.* 'Tis gone!

We do it wrong, being so majestical,  
To offer it the show of violence;

For it is, as the air, invulnerable,  
And our vain blows malicious mockery.

*Ber.* It was about to speak, when the cock crew.

*Hor.* And then it started like a guilty thing Upon a fearful summons. I have heard, The cock, that is the trumpet to the morn, 150 Dost with his lofty and shrill-sounding throat Awake the god of day; and, at his warning, Whether in sea or fire, in earth or air, The extravagant and erring spirit hies To his confine: and of the truth herein This present object made probation.

*Mar.* It faded on the crowing of the cock. Some say that ever 'gainst that season comes Wherein our Saviour's birth is celebrated, The bird of dawning singeth all night long: 160 And then, they say, no spirit dare stir abroad; The nights are wholesome; then no planets strike.

No fairy takes, nor witch hath power to charm, So hallow'd and so gracious is the time.

*Hor.* So have I heard and do in part believe it.

But, look, the morn, in russet mantle clad, Walks o'er the dew of yon high eastward hill: Break we our watch up; and by my advice, Let us impart what we have seen to-night Unto young Hamlet; for, upon my life, 170 This spirit, dumb to us, will speak to him. Do you consent we shall acquaint him with it, As needful in our loves, fitting our duty?

*Mar.* Let's do't, I pray; and I this morning know

Where we shall find him most conveniently. *[Exit.*

## SCENE II. A room of state in the castle.

*Enter the KING, QUEEN, HAMLET, POLONIUS, LAERTES, VOLTIMAND, CORNELIUS, Lords, and Attendants.*

*King.* Though yet of Hamlet our dear brother's death The memory be green, and that it us befitted To bear our hearts in grief and our whole kingdom

To be contracted in one brow of woe, Yet so far hath discretion fought with nature That we with wisest sorrow think on him, Together with remembrance of ourselves. Therefore our sometime sister, now our queen, The imperial jointress to this warlike state, Have we, as 'twere with a defeated joy,— With an auspicious and a dropping eye, With mirth in funeral and with dirge in marriage,

In equal scale weighing delight and dole,— Taken to wife: nor have we herein barr'd Your better wisdoms, which have freely gone With this affair along. For all, our thanks. Now follows, that you know, young Fortinbras, Holding a weak supposal of our worth, Or thinking by our late dear brother's death Our state to be disjoint and out of frame, Colleague'd with the dream of his advantage, He hath not fail'd to pester us with message, Importing the surrender of those lands Lost by his father, with all bonds of law,

To our most valiant brother. So much for him. Now for ourselves and for this time of meeting: Thus much the business is: we have here writ To Norway, uncle of young Fortinbras,— Who, impotent and bed-ridden, scarcely hears Of this his nephew's purpose,—to suppress 30 His further gait herein; in that the levies, The lists and full proportions, are all made out of his subject: and we here dispatch 'You, good Cornelius, and you, Voltimand, or bearers of this greeting to old Norway; Giving to you no further personal power To business with the king, more than the scope Of these delated articles allow. Farewell, and let your haste commend your duty.

*Cor.* In that and all things will we show  
*Vol.* our duty. 40

*King.* We doubt it nothing: heartily farewell. *[Exit Voltimand and Cornelius.*

And now, Laertes, what's the news with you? You told us of some suit; what is't, Laertes? You cannot speak of reason to the Dane, And lose your voice: what wouldst thou beg,

Laertes, That shall not be my offer, not thy asking? The head is not more native to the heart, The hand more instrumental to the month, Than is the throne of Denmark to thy father. What wouldst thou have, Laertes?

*Laer.* My dread lord, 50 Your leave and favour to return to France; From whence though willingly I came to Denmark,

To show my duty in your coronation, Yet now, I must confess, that duty done, My thoughts and wishes bend again toward France

And bow them to your gracious leave and pardon.

*King.* Have you your father's leave? What says Polonius?

*Pol.* He hath, my lord, wrung from me my slow leave

By laboursome petition, and at last Upon his will I seal'd my hard consent: 60 do beseech you, give him leave to go.

*King.* Take thy fair hour, Laertes; time be thine,

And thy best graces spend it at thy will! But now, my cousin Hamlet, and my son,—

*Ham.* *[Aside]* A little more than kin, and less than kind.

*King.* How is it that the clouds still hang on you?

*Ham.* Not so, my lord; I am too much 't the sun.

*Queen.* Good Hamlet, cast thy nighted colour off,

And let thine eye look like a friend on Denmark. Do not for ever with thy veiled lids 70

Seek for thy noble father in the dust: Thou know'st 'tis common; all that lives must die,

Passing through nature to eternity.

*Ham.* Ay, madam, it is common. *It is he,*

*seems it so particular with thee!*

*Ham.* Seems, madam! nay, it is; I know not 'seems.'

'Tis not alone my ink'd cloak, good mother,  
Nor customary suits of solemn black,  
Nor windy suspiration of forced breath,  
No, nor the fruitful river in the eye, 80  
Nor the dejected 'haviour of the visage,  
Together with all forms, moods, shapes of grief,  
That can denote me truly: these indeed seem,  
For they are actions that a man might play;  
But I have that within which passeth show;  
These but the trappings and the suits of woe.

*King.* 'Tis sweet and commendable in your nature, Hamlet,

To give these mourning duties to your father:  
But, you must know, your father lost a father;  
That father lost, lost his, and the survivor bound  
In filial obligation for some term 91

To do obsequious sorrow: but to persevere  
In obstinate condolement is a course  
Of insipid stubbornness; 'tis unmanly grief;  
It shows a will most incorrect to heaven,  
A heart unfor'd, a mind impatient,  
An understanding simple and unschool'd:

For what we know must be and is as common  
As any the most vulgar thing to sense,  
Why should we in our peevish opposition 100  
Take it to heart? Fie! 'tis a fault to heaven,  
A fault against the dead, a fault to nature,  
To reason most absurd; whose common theme  
Is death of fathers, and who still hath cried,  
From the first corse till he that died to-day,  
'This must be so.' We pray you, throw to earth

This unprevailing woe, and think of us  
As of a father: for let the world take note,  
You are the most immediate to our throne;  
And with no less nobility of love 110  
Than that which dearest father bears his son,  
Do I impart toward you. For your intent  
In going back to school in Wittenberg,  
It is most retrograde to our desire:  
And we beseech you, bend you to remain  
Here, in the cheer and comfort of our eye,  
Our chiefest courtier, cousin, and our son.

*Queen.* Let not thy mother lose her prayers,  
Hamlet:

I pray thee, stay with us; go not to Wittenberg.

*Ham.* I shall in all my best obey you,  
madam. 120

*King.* Why, 'tis a loving and a fair reply:  
Be as yourself in Denmark. Madam, come;  
This gentle and unforced accord of Hamlet  
Sits smiling to my heart: in grace whereof,  
No second health that Denmark drinks to-day,  
But the great cannon to the clouds shall tell,  
And the king's rouse the heavens shall bruit  
again.

Re-speaking earthly thunder. Come away.

*Ham.* O, that this too too solid flesh would  
melt,

And resolve itself into a dew!  
Or that the Everlasting had not fix'd  
His canon 'gainst self-slaughter! O God! God!  
How weary, stale, flat, and unprofitable  
Seem to me all the uses of this world!  
Fie on't! ah fie! 'tis an unweeded garden,

That grows to seed; things rank and gross in  
nature

Possess it merely. That it should come to this!  
But two months dead: nay, not so much, not  
two:

So excellent a king; that was, to this, 130  
Hyperion to a satyr; so loving to my mother  
That he might not beteem the winds of heaven  
Visit her face too roughly. Hi—, a and earth!  
Must I remember? why, she would hang on him,  
As if increase of appetite had grown  
By what it fed on: and yet, within a month—  
Let me not think on't—frailty, thy name is  
woman!—

A little month, or ere those shoes were old  
With which she follow'd my poor father's body,  
Like Niobe, all tears:—why she, even she—  
(O God!) a beast, that wants discourse of reason,  
Would have mourn'd longer—married with my  
uncle, 151

My father's brother, but no more like my father  
Than I to Hercules: within a month:  
Ere yet the salt of most unrighteous tears  
Had left the flushing in her galled eyes,  
She married. O, most wicked speed, to post  
With such dexterity to incestuous sheets!  
It is not nor it cannot come to good:  
But break, my heart; for I must hold my  
tongue.

*Enter HORATIO, MARCELLUS, and BERNARDO.*

*Hor.* Hail to your lordship!

*Ham.* I am glad to see you well: 160  
Horatio,—or I do forget myself.

*Hor.* The same, my lord, and your poor  
servant ever.

*Ham.* Sir, my good friend; I'll change that  
name with you:

And what make you from Wittenberg, Horatio?  
Marcellus?

*Mar.* My good lord—

*Ham.* I am very glad to see you. Good  
even, sir.

But what, in faith, make you from Wittenberg?

*Hor.* A truant disposition, good my lord.

*Ham.* I would not hear your enemy say so,  
Nor shall you do mine ear that violence, 171  
To make it trust of your own report  
Against yourself: I know you are no truant.

But what is your affair in Elsinore?  
We'll teach you to drink deep ere you depart.

*Hor.* My lord, I came to see your father's  
funeral.

*Ham.* I pray thee, do not mock me, fellow-  
student:

I think it was to see my mother's wedding.

*Hor.* Indeed, my lord, it follow'd hard upon.

*Ham.* Thrift, thrift, Horatio! the funeral  
baked meats 180

Did coldly furnish forth the marriage tables.  
Would I had met my dearest foe in heaven  
Or ever I had seen that day, Horatio!

My father!—methinks I see my father.

*Hor.* Where, my lord?

*Ham.* In my mind's eye, Horatio.

*Hor.* I saw him once: he was a goodly king.

*Ham.* He was a man, take him for all in all,  
I shall not look upon his like again.

*Hor.* My lord, I think I saw him yesternight.

*Ham.* Saw? who?

*Hor.* My lord, the king your father.

*Ham.* The king my father?

*Hor.* Season your admiration for a while  
With an attent ear, till I may deliver,  
Upon the witness of these gentlemen,  
This marvel to you.

*Ham.* For God's love, let me hear.

*Hor.* Two nights together had these gentlemen,  
Marcellus and Bernardo, on their watch,  
In the dead vast and middle of the night,  
Been thus encounter'd. A figure like your  
father,

Armed at point exactly, cap-a-pe,  
Appears before them, and with solemn march  
Goes slow and stately by them: thrice he walk'd  
By their oppress'd and fear-surprised eyes,  
Within his truncheon's length; whilst they,  
distill'd

Almost to jelly with the act of fear,  
Stand dumb and speak not to him. This to me  
In dreadful secrecy impart they did;  
And I with them the third night kept the  
watch:

Where, as they had deliver'd, both in time,  
Form of the thing, each word made true and  
good,

The apparition comes: I knew your father;

These hands are not more like.

*Ham.* But where was this?

*Mar.* My lord, upon the platform where we  
watch'd.

*Ham.* Did you not speak to it?

*Hor.* My lord, I did:  
But answer made it none; yet once methought  
It lifted up its head and did address  
Itself to motion, like as it would speak;  
But even then the morning cock crew loud,  
And at the sound it shrunk in haste away,  
And vanish'd from our sight.

*Ham.* 'Tis very strange.

*Hor.* As I do live, my honour'd lord, 'tis  
true;

And we did think it writ down in our duty  
To let you know of it.

*Ham.* Indeed, indeed, sirs, but this troubles  
me.

Hold you the watch to-night?

*Mar.* We do, my lord.

*Ham.* Arm'd, say you?

*Mar.* Arm'd, my lord.

*Ham.* From top to toe?

*Mar.* My lord, from head to foot.

*Ham.* Then saw you not his face?

*Hor.* O, yes, my lord; he wore his beaver up.

*Ham.* What, look'd he frowningly?

*Hor.* A countenance more in sorrow than  
in anger.

*Ham.* Pale or red?

*Hor.* Nay, very pale.

*Ham.* And fix'd his eyes upon you?

*Hor.* Most constantly.

*Ham.* I would I had been there.

*Hor.* It would have ranch amazed you.

*Ham.* Very like, very like. Stay'd it long?

*Hor.* While one with moderate haste might  
tell a hundred.

*Mar.* Longer, longer.

*Hor.* Not when I saw't.

*Ham.* His beard was grizzled—no?

*Hor.* It was, as I have seen it in his life,  
A sable silver'd.

*Ham.* I will watch to-night;

Perchance 'twill walk again.

*Hor.* I warrant it will.

*Ham.* If it assume my noble father's person,

I'll speak to it, though hell itself should gape

And bid me hold my peace. I pray you all,

If you have hitherto conceal'd this sight,

Let it be tenable in your silence still:

And whatsoever else shall hap to-night,

Give it an understanding, but no tongue:

I will requite your loves. So, fare you well:

Upon the platform, 'twixt eleven and twelve,

I'll visit you.

*All.* Our duty to your honour.

*Ham.* Your loves, as mine to you: farewell.

[*Exeunt all but Hamlet.*]

My father's spirit in arms! all is not well;

I doubt some foul play: would the night were  
come!

Till then sit still, my soul: foul deeds will rise,

Though all the earth o'erwhelm them, to men's  
eyes. [*Exit.*]

### SCENE III. A room in Polonius' house.

*Enter LAERTES and OPHELIA.*

*Laer.* My necessities are embark'd: fare-  
well:

And, sister, as the winds give benefit

And convoy is assistant, do not sleep,

But let me hear from you.

*Oph.* Do you doubt that?

*Laer.* For Hamlet and the trifling of his  
favour,

Hold it a fashion and a toy in blood,

A violet in the youth of primy nature,

Forward, not permanent, sweet, not lasting,

The perfume and suppliance of a minute;

No more.

*Oph.* No more but so?

*Laer.* Think it no more: no

For nature, crescent, does not grow alone

In thews and bulk, but, as this temple waxes,

The inward service of the mind and soul

Grows wide withal. Perhaps he loves you now,

And now no soil nor cautel doth besmirch

The virtue of his will; but you must fear,

His greatness weigh'd, his will is not his own;

For he himself is subject to his birth:

He may not, as unvalued persons do,

Carve for himself; for on his choice depends so

The safety and health of this whole state;

And therefore must his choice be circumscrib'd

Unto the voice and yielding of that body

Whereof he is the head. Then if he says he  
loves you,

It fits your wisdom as far to believe it

As he in his particular act and place

# HAMLET

[ACT I

May give his saying deed; which is no further  
Than the main voice of Denmark goes withal.  
Then weigh what loss your honour may sustain,  
If with too credent ear you list his songs,  
Or lose your heart, or your chaste treasure open  
To his unmaster'd importunity.

Fear it, Ophelia, fear it, my dear sister,  
And keep you in the rear of your affection,  
Out of the shot and danger of desire.  
The chariest maid is prodigal enough,  
If she unmask her beauty to the moon:  
Virtue itself 'scapes not calumnious strokes:  
The canker galls the infants of the spring,  
Too oft before their buttons be disclosed,  
And in the morn and liquid dew of youth  
Contagious blastments are most imminent.  
Be wary then: best safety lies in fear:  
Youth to itself rebels, though none else near.

Oph. I shall the effect of this good lesson  
keep.  
As watchman to my heart. But, good my  
brother,

Do not, as some ungracious pastors do,  
Show me the steep and thorny way to heaven;  
Whilst, like a puft'd and reckless libertine,  
Himself the primrose path of dalliance treads,  
And recks not his own rede.

Laer. O, fear me not. 51  
I stay too long: but here my father comes.

## Enter POLONIUS.

A double blessing is a double grace;  
Occasion smiles upon a second leave.

Pol. Yet here, Laertes! aboard, aboard, for  
shame!

The wind sits in the shoulder of your sail,  
And you are stay'd for. There; my blessing  
with thee!

And these few precepts in thy memory  
See thou character. Give thy thoughts no  
tongue,

Nor any unproportion'd thought his act. 60  
Be thou familiar, but by no means vulgar.

Those friends thou hast, and their adoption  
tried,

Grapple them to thy soul with hoops of steel;  
But do not dull thy palm with entertainment  
Of each new-hatch'd, unfledged comrade. Be-  
ware

Of entrance to a quarrel, but being in,  
Bear 't that the opposed may beware of thee.  
Give every man thy ear, but few thy voice;  
Take each man's censure, but reserve thy judge-  
ment.

Costly thy habit as thy purse can buy, 70  
But not express'd in fancy; rich, not gaudy;  
For the apparel oft proclaims the man,  
And they in France of the best rank and station  
Are of a most select and generous chief in that.  
Neither a borrower nor a lender be;

For loan oft loses both itself and friend,  
And borrowing dulls the edge of husbandry.  
This above all: to thine own self be true,  
And it must follow, as the night the day,  
Thou shalt not then be false to any man. 80

Pol. Well: my blessing season this in thee!

Laer. Most humbly do I take my leave, my  
lord.

Pol. The time invites you; go; your servants  
tend.

Laer. Farewell, Ophelia; and remember  
well

What I have said to you.

Oph. 'Tis in my memory look'd,  
And you yourself shall keep the key of it.

Laer. Farewell. [Exit.]

Pol. What is't, Ophelia, he hath said to you?

Oph. So please you, something touching the  
Lord Hamlet.

Pol. Marry, well bethought: 90

'Tis told me, he hath very oft of late  
Given private time to you; and you yourself  
Have of your audience been most free and  
bounteous:

If it be so, as so 'tis put on me,  
And that in way of caution, I must tell you,  
You do not understand yourself so clearly  
As it behoves my daughter and your honour.

What is between you? give me up the truth.

Oph. He hath, my lord, of late made many  
tenders

Of his affection to me. 100

Pol. Affection! pooh! you speak like a green  
girl,

Unsilft in such perilous circumstance.  
Do you believe his tenders, as you call them?

Oph. I do not know, my lord, what I should  
think.

Pol. Marry, I'll teach you: think yourself a  
baby;

That you have ta'en these tenders for true pay,  
Which are not sterling. Tender yourself more  
dearly;

Or—not to crack the wind of the poor phrase,  
Running it thus—you'll tender me a fool.

Oph. My lord, he hath importuned me with  
love 110

In honourable fashion.

Pol. Ay, fashion you may call it; go to,  
go to.

Oph. And hath given countenance to his  
speech, my lord,

With almost all the holy vows of heaven.

Pol. Ay, springes to catch woodcocks. I do  
know,

When the blood burns, how prodigal the soul  
Lends the tongue vows: these blazes, daughter,  
Giving more light than heat, extinct in both,  
Even in their promise, as it is a-making, 119

You must not take for fire. From this time  
Be somewhat scanner of your maiden presence;

Set your entreatments at a higher rate  
Than a command to parley. For Lord Hamlet,

Believe so much in him, that he is young,  
And with a larger tether may he walk  
Than may be given you: in few, Ophelia,

Do not believe his vows; for they are brokers,  
Not of that dye which their investments show,  
But mere impromisors of unholy suits,  
Breathing like sanctified and pious bawds, 130

The better to beguile. This is for all:  
I would not, in plain terms, from this time forth,  
Have you so slander any moment leisure,  
As to give words or talk with the Lord Hamlet.

Look to't, I charge you: come your ways.

Oph. I shall obey, my lord.

SCENE IV. *The platform.**Enter HAMLET, HORATIO, and MARCELLUS.**Ham.* The air bites shrewdly; it is very cold.*Hor.* It is a nipping and an eager air.*Ham.* What hour now?*Hor.* I think it lacks of twelve.*Mar.* No, it is struck.*Hor.* Indeed? I heard it not: then it draws near the season

Wherein the spirit held his wont to walk.

*[A flourish of trumpets, and ordnance shot off, within.]*

What does this mean, my lord?

*Ham.* The king doth wake to-night and takes his rouse, Keeps wassail, and the swaggering up-spring reels;

And, as he drains his draughts of Rhenish down, The kettle-drum and trumpet thus bray out : The triumph of his pledge.

*Hor.* Is it a custom?*Ham.* Ay, marry, is't:

But to my mind, though I am native here And to the manner born, it is a custom More honour'd in the breach than the observance.

This heavy-headed revel east and west Makes us traduced and tax'd of other nations: They clepe us drunkards, and with swinish phrase

Soil our addition; and indeed it takes From our achievements, though perform'd at height,

The pith and marrow of our attribute. So, oft it chances in particular men, That for some vicious mole of nature in them, As, in their birth—wherein they are not guilty,

Since nature cannot choose his origin— By the o'ergrowth of some complexion, Oft breaking down the pales and forts of reason,

Or by some habit that too much o'er-leavens The form of plausive manners, that these men,

Carrying, I say, the stamp of one defect, 31 Being nature's livery, or fortune's star,— Their virtues else—be they as pure as grace,

As infinite as man may undergo— Shall in the general censure take corruption

From that particular fault: the dram of fæle Doth all the noble substance of a doubt

To his own scandal.

*Hor.* Look, my lord, it comes!*Enter Ghost.**Ham.* Angels and ministers of grace defend us!

Be thou a spirit of health or goblin damn'd, 40 Bring with thee airs from heaven or blasts from hell,

Be thy intents wicked or charitable, Thou comest in such a questionable shape

That I will speak to thee: I'll call thee Hamlet, King, father, royal Dane: O, answer me!

Let me not burst in ignorance; but tell Why thy canonized bones, hearsed in death,

Have burst their cerements; why the sepulchre, Wherein we saw thee quietly inurn'd,

Hath oped his ponderous and marble jaws, 30 To cast thee up again. What may this mean,

That thou, dead corpse, again in complete steel Revolt'st at thus the glimpses of the moon,

Making night hideous; and we fools of nature So horribly to shake our disposition

With thoughts beyond the reaches of our souls? Say, why is this? wherefore? what should we

do? *[Ghost beckons Hamlet.]**Hor.* It beckons you to go away with it, As if it some impartment did desireTo you alone. *Mar.* Look, with what courteous action 60 It waves you to a more removed ground:But do not go with it. *Hor.* No, by no means.*Ham.* It will not speak; then I will follow it.*Hor.* Do not, my lord. *Ham.* Why, what should be the fear?

I do not set my life at a pin's fee; And for my soul, what can it do to that,

Being a thing immortal as itself? It waves me forth again: I'll follow it.

*Hor.* What if it tempt you toward the flood, my lord,

Or to the dreadful summit of the cliff 70 That beetles o'er his base into the sea,

And there assume some other horrible form, Which might deprive your sovereignty of reason

And draw you into madness? think of it: The very place puts toys of desperation,

Without more motive, into every brain That looks so many fathoms to the sea

And hears it roar beneath. *Ham.* It waves me still.Go on; I'll follow thee. *Mar.* You shall not go, my lord.*Ham.* Hold off your hands. 80 *Hor.* Be ruled; you shall not go.*Ham.* My fate cries out, And makes each petty artery in this body

As hardy as the Nemean lion's nerve. Still am I call'd. Unhand me, gentlemen.

By heaven, I'll make a ghost of him that lets me!

I say, away! Go on; I'll follow thee. *[Exeunt Ghost and Hamlet.]**Hor.* He waxes desperate with imagination.*Mar.* Let's follow; 'tis not fit thus to obey him.*Hor.* Have after. To what issue will this come?*Mar.* Something is rotten in the state of Denmark. 90*Hor.* Heaven will direct it. *Mar.* Nay, let's follow him. *[Exeunt.]*SCENE V. *Another part of the platform.**Enter GHOST and HAMLET.**Ham.* Where wilt thou lead me? speak; I'll go no further.*Ghost.* Mark me. *Ham.* I will.*Ghost.* My hour is almost come, When I to sulphurous and tormenting flames

Must render up myself.

*Ham.* Alas, poor  
*Ghost.* Pity me not, but *serious*  
hearing  
To what I shall unfold.

*Ham.* Speak; I am bound to hear.  
*Ghost.* So art thou to revenge, when thou shalt hear.

*Ham.* What?  
*Ghost.* I am thy father's spirit,  
Down'd for a certain term to walk the night, 20  
And for the day confined to fast in fires,  
Till the foul crimes done in my days of nature  
Are burnt and purged away. But that I am  
forbid

To tell the secrets of my prison-house,  
I could a tale unfold whose lightest word  
Would harrow up thy soul, freeze thy young  
blood,

Make thy two eyes, like stars, start from their

Thy knotted and combined locks to part  
And each particular hair to stand an end,  
Like quills upon the fretful porpentine: 20  
But this eternal blazon must not be  
To ears of flesh and blood. List, list, O, list!  
If thou didst ever thy dear father love—

*Ham.* O God!  
*Ghost.* Revenge his foul and most unnatural  
murder.

*Ham.* Murder!  
*Ghost.* Murder most foul, as in the best it is;  
But this most foul, strange and unnatural.

*Ham.* Haste me to know't, that I, with  
wings as swift  
As meditation or the thoughts of love, 30  
May sweep to my revenge.

*Ghost.* I find thee apt;  
And duller shouldst thou be than the fat weed  
That roots itself in ease on Lethæan wharf,  
Wouldst thou not stir in this. Now, Hamlet,  
hear:

'Tis given out that, sleeping in my orchard,  
A serpent stung me; so the whole ear of  
Denmark

Is by a forged process of my death  
Rankly abused: but know, thou noble youth,  
The serpent that did sting thy father's life  
Now wears his crown.

*Ham.* O my prophetic soul! 40  
Ile!

*Ghost.* Ay, that incestuous, that adulterate  
beast,  
With witchcraft of his wit, with traitorous  
gifts—

O wicked wit and gifts, that have the power  
So to seduce!—won to his shameful lust  
The will of my most seeming-virtuous queen:  
O Hamlet, what a falling-off was there!  
From me, whose love was of that dignity  
That it went hand in hand even with the vow  
I made to her in marriage, and to decline 50  
Upon a wretch whose natural gifts were poor  
To those of mine!

But virtue, as it never will be moved,  
Though lewdness court it in a shape of heaven,  
So just, though to a radiant angel link'd,  
Will pass itself in a celestial bed,  
And prey on garbage.

But, soft! methinks I scent the morning air;  
Brief let me be. Sleeping within my orchard,  
My custom always of the afternoon, 60  
Upon my secure hour thy uncle stole,  
With juice of cursed hemlock in a vial,  
And in the porches of my ears did pour  
The leperous distilment; whose effect  
Holds such an enmity with blood of man  
That swift as quicksilver it courses through  
The natural gates and alleys of the body,  
And with a sudden vigour it doth posset  
And curd, like eager droppings into milk,  
The thin and wholesome blood: so did it 70  
mine;

And a most instant tetter bark'd about,  
Most Lazar-like, with vile and loathsome crust,  
All my smooth body.

Thus was I, sleeping, by a brother's hand  
Of life, of crown, of queen, at once dispatch'd:  
Cut off even in the blossoms of my sin,  
Unhous'd, disappointed, unanel'd,  
No reckoning made, but sent to my account  
With all my imperfections on my head: 80  
O, horrible! O, horrible! most horrible!

If thou hast nature in thee, bear it not;  
Let not the royal bed of Denmark be  
A couch for luxury and damned incest.  
But, howsoever thou pursuest this act,  
Taint not thy mind, nor let thy soul contrive  
Against thy mother's womb: leave her to heaven  
And to those thorns that in her bosom lodge,  
To prick and sting her. Fare thee well at once!  
The glow-worm shows the matin to be near,  
And 'gins to pale his unfeetual fire: 90  
Adieu, adieu! Hamlet, remember me. [Exit.

*Ham.* O all you host of heaven! O earth!  
what else!

And shall I couple hell! O, fie! Hold, hold,  
my heart;

And you, my sinews, grow not instant old,  
But bear me stiffly up. Remember thee!  
Ay, thou poor ghost, while memory holds a  
seat

In this distracted globe. Remember thee!  
Yea, from the table of my memory  
I'll wipe away all trivial fond records,  
All saws of books, all forms, all pressures past  
That youth and observation copied there: 100  
And thy commandment all alone shall live  
Within the book and volume of my brain,  
Unmix'd with baser matter: yea, by heaven!  
O most pernicious woman!

O villain, villain, smiling, damned villain!  
My tables,—meet it is I set it down,  
That one may smile, and smile, and be a  
villain;

At least I'm sure it may be so in Denmark:

[Writing]  
So, uncle, there you are. Now to my word:  
It is 'Adieu, adieu! remember me.' 111  
I have sworn't.

*Mar.* } [Within] My lord, my lord,—  
*Hor.* } [Within] Lord Hamlet,—

*Hor.* } [Within] Heaven secure him!

*Ham.* So be it!

*Hor.* [Within] Hillo, ho, ho, my lord!

*Ham.* Hillo, ho, ho, boy! come, here, come



*Enter HORATIO and MARCELLUS.*

*Mar.* How is't, my noble lord?

*Hor.* What news, my lord?

*Ham.* O, wonderful!

*Hor.* Good my lord, tell it.

*Ham.* No; you'll reveal it.

*Hor.* Not I, my lord, by heaven.

*Mar.* Nor I, my lord. 120

*Ham.* How say you, then; would heart of man once think it?

But you'll be secret?

*Hor.* } Ay, by heaven, my lord.

*Ham.* There's ne'er a villain dwelling in all Denmark

But he's an arrant knave.

*Hor.* There needs no ghost, my lord, come from the grave

To tell us this.

*Ham.* Why, right; you are i' the right; And so, without more circumstance at all, I hold it fit that we shake hands and part:

You, as your business and desire shall point you;

For every man has business and desire, 130

Such as it is; and for mine own poor part,

Look you, I'll go pray.

*Hor.* These are but wild and whirling words, my lord.

*Ham.* I'm sorry they offend you, heartily;

Yes, faith, heartily.

*Hor.* There's no offence, my lord.

*Ham.* Yes, by Saint Patrick, but there is,

Horatio, And much offence too. Touching this vision

here,

It is an honest ghost, that let me tell you:

For your desire to know what is between us,

O'ermaster't as you may. And now, good

friends, 140

As you are friends, scholars and soldiers,

Give me one poor request.

*Hor.* What is't, my lord? we will.

*Ham.* Never make known what you have seen to-night.

*Hor.* } My lord, we will not.

*Mar.* } Nay, but swear't.

*Hor.* } In faith,

My lord, not I.

*Mar.* } Nor I, my lord, in faith.

*Ham.* Upon my sword.

*Mar.* We have sworn, my lord, already.

*Ham.* Indeed, upon my sword, indeed.

*Ghost.* [Beneath] Swear.

*Ham.* Ah, ha, boy! say't thou so? art thou

there, truepenny! 150

Come on—you hear this fellow in the cellarage—

Consent to swear.

*Hor.* Propose the oath, my lord.

*Ham.* Never to speak of this that you have

seen,

Swear by my sword.

*Ghost.* [Beneath] Swear.

*Ham.* His et ubique! then we'll shift our

ground.

Come hither, gentlemen,

And lay your hands again upon my sword:

Never to speak of this that you have heard,

Swear by my sword. 160

*Ghost.* [Beneath] Swear.

*Ham.* Well said, old mole! canst work i'

the earth so fast?

A worthy pioneer! Once more remove, good

friends.

*Hor.* O day and night, but this is wondrous

strange!

*Ham.* And therefore as a stranger give it

welcome.

There are more things in heaven and earth,

Horatio,

Than are dreamt of in your philosophy.

But come;

Here, as before, never, so help you mercy,

How strange or odd so'er I bear myself, 170

As I perchance hereafter shall think meet

To put an antic disposition on,

That you, at such times seeing me, never shall,

With arms encumber'd thus, or this head-

shake,

Or by pronouncing of some doubtful phrase,

As 'Well, well, we know,' or 'We could, an if

we would,'

Or 'If we list to speak,' or 'There be, an if they

might,'

Or such ambiguous giving out, to note

That you know ought of me: this not to do,

So grace and mercy at your most need help

you, 180

Swear.

*Ghost.* [Beneath] Swear.

*Ham.* Rest, rest, perturbed spirit! [They

swear.] So, gentlemen,

With all my love I do commend me to you:

And what so poor a man as Hamlet is

May do, to express his love and friending to

you,

God willing, shall not lack. Let us go in

together;

And still your fingers on your lips, I pray.

The time is out of joint: O cursed spite,

That ever I was born to set it right! 190

Nay, come, let's go together. [Exeunt.]

## ACT II

### SCENE I. A room in Polonius' house.

*Enter POLONIUS and REYNALDO.*

*Pol.* Give him this money and these notes,

Reynaldo.

*Rey.* I will, my lord.

*Pol.* You shall do marvellous wisely, good

Reynaldo,

Before you visit him, to make inquire

Of his behaviour.

My lord, I did intend it.

*Pol.* Marry, well said; very well said. Look

you, sir,

Inquire me first what Danes are in Paris;

And how, and who, what means, and where

they keep,

What company, at what expense; and finding

By this encampment and drift of question to

That they do know my son, come you more  
nearer

Than your particular demands will touch it :  
Take you, as 'twere, some distant knowledge of  
him ;

As thus, 'I know his father and his friends,  
And in part him : ' do you mark this, Rey-  
naldo !

Rey. Ay, very well, my lord.

Pol. 'And in part him ; but ' you may say  
'not well :

But, if't be he I mean, he's very wild ;  
Addicted so and so : ' and there put on him  
What forgeries you please ; marry, none so  
rank

As may dishonour him ; take heed of that ;  
But, sir, such wanton, wild and usual slips  
As are companions noted and most known  
To youth and liberty.

Rey. As gaming, my lord.

Pol. Ay, or drinking, fencing, swearing,  
quarrelling,

Drabbing : you may go so far.

Rey. My lord, that would dishonour him.

Pol. Faith, no ; as you may season it in the  
charge.

You must not put another scandal on him,  
That he is open to incontinency ;  
That's not my meaning : but breathe his faults  
so quaintly

That they may seem the taints of liberty.  
The flash and outbreak of a fiery mind,  
A savageness in unclaimed blood,  
Of general assault.

But, my good lord,—

Wherefore should you do this ?

Rey. Ay, my lord,

I would know that.

Pol. Marry, sir, here's my drift ;

And, I believe, it is a fetch of wit :

You laying these slight sullies on my son,  
As 'twere a thing a little soil'd i' the working,  
Mark you,

Your party in converse, him you would sound,  
Having ever seen in the prenominate crimes  
The youth you breathe of guilty, be assured  
He closes with you in this consequence ;  
'Good sir, or so, or 'friend, or 'gentleman,'  
According to the phrase or the addition  
Of man and country.

Rey. Very good, my lord.

Pol. And then, sir, does he this—he does—  
what was I about to say ! By the mass, I was  
about to say something : where did I leave ?

Rey. At 'closes in the consequence,' at  
'friend or so,' and 'gentleman.'

Pol. At 'closes in the consequence,' ay,  
marry ;

He closes thus : 'I know the gentleman ;  
I saw him yesterday, or t' other day,  
Or then, or then ; with such, or such ; and, as  
you say,

There was a gaming ; there o'ertook in 's rouse ;  
These falling out at tennis : ' or perchance,  
'I saw him enter such a house of sale,'  
Videlicet, a brothel, or so forth.

See you now ;

Your bait of falsehood takes this carp of truth :

And thus do we of wisdom and of reach,  
With windlasses and with assays of bias,  
By indirections find directions out :  
So by my former lecture and advice,  
Shall you my son. You have me, have you  
not ?

Rey. My lord, I have.

Pol. God be wi' you ; fare you well.

Rey. Good my lord !

Pol. Observe his inclination in yourself.

Rey. I shall, my lord.

Pol. And let him ply his music.

Rey. Well, my lord.

Pol. Farewell ! [Exit Reynaldo.

Enter OPHELIA.

How now, Ophelia ! what's the matter ?

Oph. O, my lord, my lord, I have been so  
affrighted !

Pol. With what, i' the name of God ?

Oph. My lord, as I was sewing in my closet,  
Lord Hamlet, with his doublet all unbraced ;  
No hat upon his head ; his stockings foul'd,  
Ungarter'd, and down-gyved to his ankle ; so  
Pale as his shirt ; his knees knocking each  
other ;

And with a look so piteous in purport  
As if he had been loosed out of hell  
To speak of horrors,—he comes before me.

Pol. Mad for thy love ?

Oph. My lord, I do not know ;  
But truly, I do fear it.

Pol. What said he ?

Oph. He took me by the wrist and held me  
hard ;

Then goes he to the length of all his arm ;  
And, with his other hand thus o'er his brow,  
He falls to such perusal of my face  
As he would draw it. Long stay'd he so ;  
At last, a little shaking of mine arm  
And thrice his head thus waving up and down,  
He raised a sigh so piteous and profound  
As it did seem to shatter all his bulk  
And end his being : that done, he lets me go :  
And, with his head over his shoulder turn'd,  
He seem'd to find his way without his eyes ;  
For out o' doors he went without their help,  
And, to the last, bended their light on me.

Pol. Come, go with me : I will go seek the  
king.

This is the very ecstasy of love,  
Whose violent property fordoes itself  
And leads the will to desperate undertakings  
As oft as any passion under heaven  
That does afflict our natures. I am sorry.  
What, have you given him any hard words of  
late ?

Oph. No, my good lord, but, as you did  
command,

I did repel his letters and denied  
His access to me.

Pol. That hath made him mad.  
I am sorry that with better heed and judg-  
ment

I had not quoted him : I fear'd he did but trifle,  
And meant to wreck thee ; but, bearrew my  
jealousy !

By heaven, it is as proper to our age

To cast beyond ourselves in our opinions  
As it is common for the younger sort  
To lack discretion. Come, go we to the king :  
This must be known ; which, being kept close,  
might move  
More grief to hide than hate to utter love.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *A room in the castle.*

*Enter KING, QUEEN, ROSENCRANTZ, GUILDENSTERN, and Attendants.*

*King.* Welcome, dear Rosencrantz and Guildenstern !

Moreover that we much did long to see you,  
The need we have to use you did provoke  
Our hasty sending. Something have you heard  
Of Hamlet's transformation ; so call it,  
Sith nor the exterior nor the inward man  
Remembers that it was. What it should be,  
More than his father's death, that thus hath  
put him

So much from the understanding of himself,  
I cannot dream of : I entreat you both, 10  
That, being of so young days brought up with  
him,

And sith so neighbour'd to his youth and  
haviour,

That you vouchsafe your rest here in our court  
Some little time : so by your companies  
To draw him on to pleasures, and to gather,  
So much as from occasion you may glean,  
Whether aught, to us unknown, afflicts him  
thus,

That, open'd, lies within our remedy.

*Queen.* Good gentlemen, he hath much  
talk'd of you ;  
And sure I am two men there are not living 20  
To whom he more adheres. If it will please  
you

To show us so much gentry and good will  
As to expend your time with us awhile,  
For the supply and profit of our hope,  
Your visitation shall receive such thanks  
As fits a king's remembrance.

*Ros.* Both your majesties  
Might, by the sovereign power you have of us,  
Put your dread pleasures more into command  
Than to entreaty.

*Guil.* But we both obey,  
And here give up ourselves, in the full bent 30  
To lay our service freely at your feet,  
To be commanded.

*King.* Thanks, Rosencrantz and gentle Guildenstern.

*Queen.* Thanks, Guildenstern and gentle Rosencrantz :

And I beseech you instantly to visit  
My too much changed son. (Go, some of you,  
And bring these gentlemen where Hamlet is.)

*Guil.* Heavens make our presence and our  
practices

Pleasant and helpful to him !

*Queen.* Ay, amen !  
[*Exeunt Rosencrantz, Guildenstern, and some Attendants.*]

*Enter POLONIUS.*

*Pol.* The ambassadors from Norway, my  
good lord,  
Are joyfully return'd.

*King.* Thou still hast been the father of  
good news.

*Pol.* Have I, my lord ! I assure my good  
liege,

I hold my duty, as I hold my soul,  
Both to my God and to my gracious king :  
And I do think, or else this brain of mine  
Hunts not the trail of policy so sure  
As it hath used to do, that I have found  
The very cause of Hamlet's lunacy.

*King.* O, speak of that ; that do I long to  
hear.

*Pol.* Give first admittance to the ambas-  
sadors ;

My news shall be the fruit to that great feast.  
*King.* Thyself do grace to them, and bring  
them in. [Exit Polonius.]

He tells me, my dear Gertrude, he hath found  
The head and source of all your son's dis-  
temper.

*Queen.* I doubt it is no other but the main ;  
His father's death, and our o'erhasty marriage.

*King.* Well, we shall sift him.

*Re-enter POLONIUS, with VOLTIMAND and CORNELIUS.*

Welcome, my good friends !  
Say, Voltimand, what from our brother Norway !  
*Volt.* Most fair return of greetings and  
desires. 60

Upon our first, he sent out to suppress  
His nephew's levies ; which to him appear'd  
To be a preparation 'gainst the Polack ;  
But, better look'd into, he truly found  
It was against your highness : whereat griev'd,  
That so his sickness, age and impotence  
Was falsely borne in hand, sends out arrests  
(On Fortinbras ; which he, in brief, obeys ;  
Receives rebuke from Norway, and in fine  
Makes vow before his uncle never more 70  
To give the assay of arms against your majesty.  
Whereon old Norway, overcome with joy,  
Gives him three thousand crowns in annual fee,  
And his commission to employ those soldiers,  
So levied as before, against the Polack :  
With an entreaty, herein further shown,

[*Giving a paper.*]  
That it might please you to give quiet pass  
Through your dominions for this enterprise,  
On such regards of safety and allowance  
As therein are set down.

*King.* It likes us well ; 80  
And at our more consider'd time we'll read,  
Answer, and think upon this business.  
Meantime we thank you for your well-taught  
labour :

Go to your rest ; at night we'll feast together :  
Most welcome home !

[*Exeunt Voltimand and Cornelius.*]  
*Pol.* This business is well ended.  
My liege, and madam, to expostulate  
What majesty should be, what duty is,

Why day is day, night night, and time is

I but to waste night, day and time.  
since brevity is the soul of wit, 90  
And tediousness the limbs and outward flourishes.

I will be brief: your noble son is mad:  
Mad call I it; for, to define true madness,  
What is't but to be nothing else but mad?  
But let that go.

Queen. More matter, with less art.  
Pol. Madam, I swear I use no art at all.  
That he is mad, 'tis true: 'tis true 'tis pity;  
And pity 'tis 'tis true: a foolish figure;  
But farewell it, for I will use no art.  
Mad let us grant him, then: and now remains  
That we find out the cause of this effect, 101  
Or rather say, the cause of this defect,  
For this effect defective comes by cause:  
Thus it remains, and the remainder thus.  
Perpend.

I have a daughter—have while she is mine—  
Who, in her duty and obedience, mark,  
Hath given me this: now gather, and surmise.

[Reads.]  
"To the celestial and my soul's idol, the most  
beautified Ophelia," 110  
That's an ill phrase, a vile phrase; 'beautified'  
is a vile phrase: but you shall hear. Thus: [Reads.]

"In her excellent white bosom, these, &c."

Queen. Came this from Hamlet to her?  
Pol. Good madam, stay awhile; I will be  
faithful. [Reads.]

"Doubt thou the stars are fire;  
Doubt that the sun doth move;  
Doubts truth to be a liar;  
But never doubt I love." 119

"O dear Ophelia, I am ill at these numbers; I  
have not art to reckon my groans: but that I  
love thee best, O most best, believe it. Adieu.

"Thine evermore, most dear lady, whilst  
this machine is to him, HAMLET."  
This, in obedience, hath my daughter shown  
me,

And more above, hath his solicitings,  
As they fell out by time, by means and place,  
All given to mine ear.

King. But how hath she  
Received his love?

Pol. What do you think of me?

King. As of a man faithful and honourable.

Pol. I would fain prove so. But what might  
you think, 121

When I had seen this hot love on the wing—  
As I perceived it, I must tell you that,  
Before my daughter told me—what might you,  
Or my dear majesty your queen here, think,  
If I had play'd the desk or table-book,  
Or given my heart a winking, mute and dumb,  
Or look'd upon this love with idle sight;  
What might you think? No, I went round to  
work,

And my young mistress thus I did bespeak:  
"Lord Hamlet is a prince, out of thy star: 123  
This must not be:" and then I precepts gave  
her,  
That she should lock herself from his resort,

Admit no messengers, receive no tokens.  
Which done, she took the fruits of my advice;  
And he, repulsed—a short tale to make—  
Fell into a sadness, then into a fast,  
Thence to a watch, thence into a weakness,  
Thence to a lightness, and, by this declension,  
Into the madness wherein now he raves, 19  
And all we mourn for.

King. Do you think 'tis this?

Queen. It may be, very likely.

Pol. Hath there been such a time—I'd fain  
know that—

That I have positively said "Tis so,"  
When it proved otherwise?

King. Not that I know,  
Pol. [Pointing to his head and shoulder] Take this from this, if this be otherwise:

If circumstances lead me, I will find  
Where truth is hid, though it were hid indeed  
Within the centre.

King. How may we try it further?

Pol. You know, sometimes he walks four  
hours together 126

Here in the lobby.

Queen. So he does indeed.

Pol. At such a time I'll loose my daughter  
to him:

Be you and I behind an arras then;  
Mark the encounter: if he love her not  
And be not from his reason fall'n thereon,  
Let me be no assistant for a state,  
But keep a farm and carters.

King. We will try it.

Queen. But, look, where sadly the poor  
wretch comes reading.

Pol. Away, I do beseech you, both away:  
I'll board him presently.

[Exeunt King, Queen, and Attendants.]

Enter HAMLET, reading.

O, give me leave: 130

How does my good Lord Hamlet?

Ham. Well, God-a-mercy.

Pol. Do you know me, my lord?

Ham. Excellent well; you are a fishmonger.

Pol. Not I, my lord.

Ham. Then I would you were so honest a  
man.

Pol. Honest, my lord?

Ham. Ay, sir; to be honest, as this world  
goes, is to be one man picked out of ten  
thousand.

Pol. That's very true, my lord. 136

Ham. For if the sun breed maggots in a  
dead dog, being a god kissing carrion.—Have  
you a daughter?

Pol. I have, my lord.

Ham. Let her not walk i' the sun: con-  
ception is a blessing: but not as your daughter  
may conceive. Friend, look to't.

Pol. [Aside] How say you by that? Still  
harping on my daughter; yet he knew me not at  
first; he said I was a fishmonger; he is far gone,  
far gone: and truly in my youth I suffered much  
extremity for love: very near this. I'll speak to  
him again. What do you read, my lord?

Ham. Words, words, words.

Pol. What is the matter, my lord?

*Ham.* Between who?

*Pol.* I mean, the matter that you read, my lord.

*Ham.* Slanders, sir: for the satirical rogue says here that old men have grey beards, that their faces are wrinkled, their eyes purging thick amber and plum-tree gum and that they have a plentiful lack of wit, together with most weak hams: all which, sir, though I most powerfully and potentially believe, yet I hold it not honesty to have it thus set down, for yourself, sir, should be old as I am, if like a crab you could go backward.

*Pol.* [Aside] Though this be madness, yet there is method in 't. Will you walk out of the air, my lord?

*Ham.* Into my grave.

*Pol.* Indeed, that is out o' the air. [Aside] How pregnant sometimes his replies are! a happiness that often madness hits on, which reason and sanity could not so prosperously be delivered of. I will leave him, and suddenly contrive the means of meeting between him and my daughter.—My honourable lord, I will most humbly take my leave of you.

*Ham.* You cannot, sir, take from me any thing that I will more willingly part withal: except my life, except my life, except my life.

*Pol.* Fare you well, my lord.

*Ham.* These tedious old fools!

Enter ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.

*Pol.* You go to seek the Lord Hamlet; there he is.

*Ros.* [To Polonius] God save you, sir!

[Exit Polonius.]

*Guil.* My honoured lord!

*Ros.* My most dear lord!

*Ham.* My excellent good friends! How dost thou, Guildenstern? Ah, Rosencrantz! Good lads, how do ye both?

*Ros.* As the indifferent children of the earth.

*Guil.* Happy, in that we are not over-happy; On fortune's cap we are not the very button.

*Ham.* Nor the sales of her shoe?

*Ros.* Neither, my lord.

*Ham.* Then you live about her waist, or in the middle of her favours?

*Guil.* Faith, her privates we.

*Ham.* In the secret parts of fortune? O, most true; she is a strumpet. What's the news?

*Ros.* None, my lord, but that the world's grown honest.

*Ham.* There is doomsday near: but your news is not true. Let me question more in particular: what have you, my good friends, deserved at the hands of fortune, that she sends you to prison hither?

*Guil.* Prison, my lord!

*Ham.* Denmark's a prison.

*Ros.* Then is the world one.

*Ham.* A goodly one; in which there are many confines, wards and dungeons, Denmark being one o' the worst.

*Ros.* We think not so, my lord.

*Ham.* Why, then, 'tis none to you; for there is nothing either good or bad, but thinking makes it so: to me it is a prison.

*Ros.* Why then, your ambition makes it one: 'tis too narrow for your mind.

*Ham.* O God, I could be bounded in a nutshell and count myself a king of infinite space, were it not that I have bad dreams.

*Guil.* Which dreams indeed are ambition, for the very substance of the ambitious is merely the shadow of a dream.

*Ham.* A dream itself is but a shadow.

*Ros.* Truly, and I hold ambition of no airy and light a quality that it is but a shadow's shadow.

*Ham.* Then are our beggars bodies, and our monarchs and outstretched heroes the beggars' shadows. Shall we to the court! for, by my fay, I cannot reason.

*Ros.* We'll wait upon you.

*Guil.* No such matter: I will not sort you with the rest of my servants, for, to speak to you like an honest man, I am most dreadfully attended. But, in the beaten way of friendship, what make you at Elsinore?

*Ros.* To visit you, my lord; no other occasion.

*Ham.* Beggar that I am, I am even poor in thanks; but I thank you; and sure, dear friends, my thanks are too dear a halfpenny. Were you not sent for? Is it your own inclining? Is it a free visitation? Come, deal justly with me: come, come; nay, speak.

*Guil.* What should we say, my lord?

*Ham.* Why, any thing, but to the purpose. You were sent for; and there is a kind of confession in your looks which your modesties have not craft enough to colour: I know the good king and queen have sent for you.

*Ros.* To what end, my lord?

*Ham.* That you must teach me. But let me conjure you, by the rights of our fellowship, by the consonancy of our youth, by the obligation of our ever-preserved love, and by what more dear a better proposer could charge you withal, be even and direct with me, whether you were sent for, or no!

*Ros.* [Aside to Guil.] What say you? no.

*Ham.* [Aside] Nay, then, I have an eye of you.—If you love me, hold not off.

*Guil.* My lord, we were sent for.

*Ham.* I will tell you why; so shall my anticipation prevent your discovery, and your secrecy to the king and queen mock no less. I have of late—but wherefore I know not—lost all my mirth, forgone all custom of exercise; and indeed it goes so heavily with my disposition that this goodly frame, the earth, seems to me a sterile promontory, this most excellent canopy, the air, look you, this brave o'erhanging firmament, this majestical roof fretted with golden fire, why, it appears no other thing to me than a foul and pestilent congregation of vapours. What a piece of work is a man! how noble in reason! how infinite in faculties! in form and moving how express and admirable! in action how like an angel! in apprehension how like a god! the beauty of the world! the paragon of animals! And yet to me, what is this quintessence of dust? man delights not

me; no, nor woman neither, though by your smiling you seem to say so.

*Ros.* My lord, there was no such stuff in my thoughts.

*Ham.* Why did you laugh then, when I said 'man delights not me'?

*Ros.* To think, my lord, if you delight not in man, what lenten entertainment the players shall receive from you: we coted them on the way; and hither are they coming, to offer you service.

*Ham.* He that plays the king shall be welcome; his majesty shall have tribute of me; the adventurous knight shall use his foil and target; the lover shall not sigh gratis; the humorous man shall end his part in peace; the clown shall make those laugh whose lungs are tickle o' the sere; and the lady shall say her mind freely, or the blank verse shall halt for't. What players are they? 340

*Ros.* Even those you were wont to take delight in, the tragedians of the city.

*Ham.* How chances it they travel? their residence, both in reputation and profit, was better both ways.

*Ros.* I think their inhibition comes by the means of the late innovation.

*Ham.* Do they hold the same estimation they did when I was in the city? are they so followed? 350

*Ros.* No, indeed, are they not.

*Ham.* How comes it? do they grow rusty?

*Ros.* Nay, their endeavour keeps in the wonted pace: but there is, sir, an airy of children, little eyases, that cry out on the top of question, and are most tyrannically clapped for't: these are now the fashion, and so berattle the common stages—so they call them—that many wearing rapiers are afraid of goose-quills and dare scarce come thither. 360

*Ham.* What, are they children? who maintains 'em? how are they escoted? Will they pursue the quality no longer than they can sing? will they not say afterwards, if they should grow themselves to common players—as it is most like, if their means are no better—their writers do them wrong, to make them exclaim against their own succession?

*Ros.* Faith, there has been much to do on both sides; and the nation holds it no sin to tarre them to controversy: there was, for a while, no money bid for argument, unless the poet and the player went to cuffs in the question.

*Ham.* Is't possible?

*Guil.* O, there has been much throwing about of brains.

*Ham.* Do the boys carry it away?

*Ros.* Ay, that they do, my lord; Hercules and his load too. 370

*Ham.* It is not very strange; for mine uncle is king of Denmark; and those that would make mows at him while my father lived, give twenty, forty, fifty, an hundred ducats a-piece for his picture in little. 'Sblood, there is something in this more than natural, if philosophy could find it out. [Flourish of trumpets within.]

*Guil.* There are the players.

*Ham.* Gentlemen, you are welcome to Elsinore. Your hands, come then: the appurtenance of welcome is fashion and ceremony: let me comply with you in this garb, lest my extent to the players, which, I tell you, must show fairly outward, should more appear like entertainment than yours. You are welcome: but my uncle-father and aunt-mother are deceived.

*Guil.* In what, my dear lord?

*Ham.* I am but mad north-north-west: when the wind is southerly I know a hawk from a handsaw.

*Re-enter POLONIUS.*

*Pol.* Well be with you, gentlemen

*Ham.* Hark you, Guildenstern; and you too: at each ear a hearer: that great baby you see there is not yet out of his swaddling-clouts.

*Ros.* Happily he's the second time come to them; for they say an old man is twice a child.

*Ham.* I will prophesy he comes to tell me of the players; mark it. You say right, sir: o' Monday morning; 'twas so indeed.

*Pol.* My lord, I have news to tell you.

*Ham.* My lord, I have news to tell you. When Boecius was an actor in Rome,— 410

*Pol.* The actors are come hither, my lord.

*Ham.* Buz, buz!

*Pol.* Upon mine honour,—

*Ham.* Then came each actor on his ass,—

*Pol.* The best actors in the world, either for tragedy, comedy, history, pastoral, pastoral-comical, historical-pastoral, tragical-historical, tragical-comical-historical-pastoral, scene indivisible, or poem unlimited: Seneca cannot be too heavy, nor Plautus too light. For the law of writ and the liberty, these are the only men. 421

*Ham.* O Jephthah, judge of Israel, what a treasure hadst thou!

*Pol.* What a treasure had he, my lord?

*Ham.* Why,

'One fair daughter, and no more,  
The which he loved passing well.'

*Pol.* [Aside] Still on my daughter.

*Ham.* Am I not i' the right, old Jephthah?

*Pol.* If you call me Jephthah, my lord, I have a daughter that I love passing well. 431

*Ham.* Nay, that follows not.

*Pol.* What follows, then, my lord?

*Ham.* Why,

'As by lot, God wot,'

and then, you know,

'It came to pass, as most like it was,—  
the first row of the pious chanson will show you more; for look, where my abridgement comes. 439

*Enter four or five Players.*

You are welcome, masters; welcome, all. I am glad to see thee well. Welcome, good friends. O, my old friend! thy face is valanced since I saw thee last: comest thou to hear me in Denmark? What, my young lady and mistress! By'r lady, your ladyship is nearer to heaven than when I saw you last, by the altitude of a chopine. Pray God, your voice, like a piece of

uncurrent gold, be not cracked within the ring.  
Masters, you are all welcome. We'll e'en to't  
like French falconers, fly at any thing we see:  
we'll have a speech straight: come, give us a  
taste of your quality; come, a passionate speech.

*First Play.* What speech, my lord?

*Ham.* I heard thee speak me a speech once,  
but it was never acted; or, if it was, not above  
once; for the play, I remember, pleased not the  
million; 'twas caviare to the general; but it was  
—as I received it, and others, whose judgements  
in such matters cried in the top of mine—an  
excellent play, well digested in the scenes, set  
down with as much modesty as cunning. I  
remember, one said there were noallets in the  
lines to make the matter savoury, nor no matter  
in the phrase that might indict the author of  
affectation; but called it an honest method, as  
wholesome as sweet, and by very much more  
handsome than fine. One speech in it I chiefly  
loved: 'twas *Aeneas'* tale to Dido; and there-  
about of it especially, where he speaks of Priam's  
slaughter: if it live in your memory, begin at  
this line: let me see, let me see— 471

'The rugged Pyrrhus, like the Hyrcanian  
beast,—

it is not so:—it begins with Pyrrhus:—

'The rugged Pyrrhus, he whose sable arms,  
Black as his purpose, did the night resemble  
When he lay couched in the ominous horse,  
Hath now this dread and black complexion  
smeared

With heraldry more dismal; head to foot  
Now is he total gules; horribly trick'd  
With blood of fathers, mothers, daughters,  
sons, 480

Baked and impasted with the parching streets,  
That lend a tyrannous and damned light  
To their lord's murder: roasted in wrath and  
fire,

And thus o'er-sized with coagulate gore,  
With eyes like carbuncles, the hellish Pyrrhus  
Old grandsire Priam seeks.'

So, proceed you.

*Pol.* 'Fore God, my lord, well spoken, with  
good accent and good discretion.

*First Play.* 'Anon he finds him

Striking too short at Greeks; his antique  
sword, 49

Rebellious to his arm, lies where it falls,  
Repugnant to command: unequal match'd,  
Pyrrhus at Priam drives; in rage strikes  
wide;

But with the whiff and wind of his fell sword  
The unnerv'd father falls. Then senseless  
Ilium,

Seeming to feel this blow, with flaming top  
Stoops to his base, and with a hideous crash  
Takes prisoner Pyrrhus' ear: for, lo! his  
sword,

Which was declining on the milky head 500  
Of reverend Priam, seem'd i' the air to stick:  
So, as a painted tyrant, Pyrrhus stood,  
And like a neutral to his will and matter,  
Did nothing.

But, as we often see, against some storm,  
A silence in the heavens, the rack stand still,  
The bold winds speechless and the orb below

As hush as death, anon the dreadful thunder  
Breaks and the world is an ashen plain.

And never did the Cyclops' hammers fall  
On Mars's armour forged for proof eternal  
With less remorse than Pyrrhus' bleeding  
sword

Now falls on Priam.

Out, out, thou strumpet, Fortune! All you  
gods,

In general synod, take away her power;  
Break all the spokes and felloes from her  
wheel,

And bow the round nave down the hill of  
heaven,

As low as to the fiends!'

*Pol.* This is too long. 510

*Ham.* It shall to the barber's, with your  
beard. Prithee, say on: he's for a jig or a  
tale of bawdry, or he sleeps: say on: come to  
Hecuba.

*First Play.* 'But who, O, who had seen the  
mobled queen—'

*Ham.* 'The mobled queen!'

*Pol.* That's good; 'mobled queen' is good.

*First Play.* 'Run barefoot up and down,  
threatening the flames

With bisson rheum; a clout upon that head  
Where late the diadem stood, and for a robe,  
About her lank and all o'er-teamed loins, 521  
A blanket, in the alarm of fear caught up;  
Who this had seen, with tongue in venom

'steep'd,  
'Gainst Fortune's state would treason have  
pronounced;

But if the gods themselves did see her then  
When she saw Pyrrhus make malicious sport  
In mincing with his sword her husband's  
limbs,

The instant burst of clamour that she made,  
Unless things mortal move them not at all,  
Would have made milch the burning eyes  
of heaven, 540

And passion in the gods.'

*Pol.* Look, whether he has not turned his  
colour and has tears in's eyes. Pray you, no  
more.

*Ham.* 'Tis well; I'll have thee speak out  
the rest soon. Good my lord, will you see the  
players well bestowed? Do you hear, let them  
be well used; for they are the abstract and  
brief chronicles of the time: after your death  
you were better have a bad epitaph than their  
ill report while you live. 551

*Pol.* My lord, I will use them according to  
their desert.

*Ham.* God's bodykins, man, much better:  
use every man after his desert, and who should  
'scape whipping? Use them after your own  
honour and dignity: the less they deserve, the  
more merit is in your bounty. Take them in.

*Pol.* Come, sir. 559

*Ham.* Follow him, friends: we'll hear a  
play to-morrow. [Exit Polonius with all the  
Players but the First.] Dost thou hear me,  
old friend; can you play the Murder of Gon-  
sago?

*First Play.* Ay, my lord.

*Ham.* We'll ha't to-morrow night. You could, for a need, study a speech of some dozen or sixteen lines, which I would set down and insert in't, could you not?

*First Player.* Ay, my lord. 560

*Ham.* Very well. Follow that lord; and look you mock him not. [*Exit First Player.*] My good friends, I'll leave you till night: you are welcome to Kishore.

*Ros.* Good my lord!

*Ham.* Ay, so, God be w' yo: [*Exeunt Rosenkrantz and Guildenstern.*] Now I am alone.

O, what a rogue and peasant slave am I! Is it not monstrous that this player here, But in a fiction, in a dream of passion, Could force his soul so to his own conceit That from her working all his visage wann'd, Tears in his eyes, distraction in 's aspect, 581 A broken voice, and his whole function suiting With forms to his conceit? and all for nothing! For Hecuba!

What's Hecuba to him, or he to Hecuba, That he should weep for her? What would he do, Had he the motive and the cue for passion That I have? He would drown the stage with tears

And cleave the general ear with horrid speech, Make mad the guilty and appal the free, 590 Confound the ignorant, and amaze indeed The very faculties of eyes and ears.

Yet I,

A dull and muddy-mettled rascal, peak, Like John-a-dreams, unpregnant of my cause, And can say nothing; no, not for a king, Upon whose property and most dear life A damn'd defeat was made. Am I a coward? Who calls me villain? breaks my pate across? Plucks off my beard, and blows it in my face? Tweaks me by the nose? gives me the lie i' the throat, 601

As deep as to the lungs? who does me this? Ha!

'Swounds, I should take it: for it cannot be But I am pigeon-liver'd and lack gall To make oppression bitter, or ere this I should have fatted all the region kites With this slave's offal: bloody, bawdy villain! Remorseless, treacherous, lecherous, kindless villain!

O, vengeance!

Why, what an ass am I! This is most brave, That I, the son of a dear father murder'd, Prompted to my revenge by heaven and hell, Must, like a whore, unpack my heart with words,

And fall a-cursing, like a very drab, A scullion!

He upon't! foh! About my brain! I have

That guil / creatures sitting at a play Have by a very cunning of the scene 600 Reas / so to the soul that presently They proclaim'd their malefactions; For / though it have no tongue, will

With most miraculous organ. I'll have these players

Play something like the murder of my father: Before mine uncle: I'll observe his looks; I'll tent him to the quick: if he but blench, I know my course. The spirit that I have seen May be the devil: and the devil hath power To assume a pleasing shape; yea, and perhaps Out of my weakness and my melancholy, 630 As he is very potent with such spirits Abuses me to damn me: I'll have More relative than this: the play's the thing, Wherein I'll catch the conscience of the king. [*Exit.*]

### ACT III.

#### SCENE I. A room in the

*Enter KING, QUEEN, POLONIUS, OPHELIA, ROSENKRANTZ, and GUILDENSTERN*

*King.* And can you, by no drift of circumstance, Get from him why he puts on this confusion, Grating so harshly all his days of quiet With turbulent and dangerous lenacy?

*Ros.* He does confess he feels himself distracted;

But from what cause he will by no means speak.

*Guil.* Nor do we find him forward to be sounded,

But, with a crafty madness, keeps aloof,

When we would bring him on to some confession Of his true state.

*Queen.* Did he receive you well? 10

*Ros.* Most like a gentleman.

*Guil.* But with much forcing of his disposition.

*Ros.* Niggard of question; but, of our demands,

Most free in his reply.

*Queen.* Did you assay him To any pastime?

*Ros.* Madam, it so fell out, that certain players

We o'er-raught on the way: of these we told him:

And there did seem in him a kind of joy To hear of it: they are about the court,

And, as I think, they have already order 20 This night to play before him.

*Pol.* 'Tis most true; And he beseech'd me to entreat your majesties To hear and see the matter.

*King.* With all my heart; and it doth much content me

To hear him so inclined.

Good gentlemen, give him a further edge, And drive his purpose on to these delights.

*Ros.* We shall, my lord.

[*Exeunt Rosenkrantz and Guildenstern.*]  
*King.* Sweet Gertrude, leave us too;

For we have closely sent for Hamlet hither, That he, as 'twere by accident, may here 30 Affront Ophelia:

Her father and myself, lawful espials, Will so bestow ourselves that, seeing unseen,

We may of their encounter frankly judge, And gather by him, as he is behav'd,

M't be the affliction of his love or no



That thus he suffers for.

*Queen.* I shall obey you.  
And for your part, Ophelia, I do wish  
That your good beauties be the happy cause  
Of Hamlet's wideness: so shall I hope your  
virtues 40

Will bring him to his wonted way again,  
To both your honours.

*Oph.* Madam, I wish it may. [*Exit Queen.*  
*Pol.* Ophelia, walk you here. Gracious, so  
please you,

We will bestow ourselves. [*To Ophelia*] Read  
on this book;

That show of such an exercise may colour  
Your loneliness. We are oft to blame in this,—  
'Tis too much proved—that with devotion's  
vices

And pious -----  
The devil himself.

*King.* [*Aside*] O, 'tis too true!  
How smart a lash that speech doth give my  
conscience! 50

The harlot's cheek, beautied with plastering art,  
Is not more ugly to the thing that helps it  
Than is my deed to my most painted word:  
O heavy burthen!

*Pol.* I hear him coming: let's withdraw, my  
lord. [*Exit King and Polonius.*

*Enter HAMLET.*

*Ham.* To be, or not to be: that is the ques-  
tion:

Whether 'tis nobler in the mind to suffer  
The slings and arrows of outrageous fortune,  
Or to take arms against a sea of troubles,  
And by opposing end them? To die: to sleep;

No more; and by a sleep to say we end 60  
The heart-ache and the thousand natural shocks  
That flesh is heir to, 'tis a consummation  
Devoutly to be wish'd. To die, to sleep;  
To sleep: perchance to dream: ay, there's the  
rub;

For in that sleep of death what dreams may come  
When we have shuffled off this mortal coil,  
Must give us pause: there's the respect  
That makes calamity of so long life;  
For who would bear the whips and scorns of  
time, 70

The oppressor's wrong, the proud man's con-  
tumely,

The pangs of despised love, the law's delay,  
The insolence of office and the spurns  
That patient merit of the unworthy takes,  
When he himself might his quietus make  
With a bare bodkin? who would fardels bear,

To grunt and sweat under a weary life,  
But that the dread of something after death,  
The undiscover'd country from whose bourn  
No traveller returns, puzzles the will 80

And makes us rather bear those ills we have  
Than fly to others that we know not of?

Thus conscience does make cowards of us all;  
And thus the native hue of resolution  
Is sicklied o'er with the pale cast of thought,  
And enterprises of great pitch and moment

With this regard their currents turn awry,  
And lose the name of action.—Soft you now!  
The fair Ophelia! Nymph, in thy orisons

Be all my sins remember'd.

*Oph.* Good my lord, 90  
How does your honour for this many a day?

*Ham.* A humbly thank you; well, well.

*Oph.* My lord, I have remembrance  
your.

That I have longed long to re-deliver;

I pray you, now receive them.

*Ham.* No, not I;

I never gave you aught.

*Oph.* My honour'd lord, you know right  
well you did;

And, with them, words of so sweet breath  
composed

As made the things more rich: their perfume  
lost,

Take these again; for to the noble mind 100  
Rich gifts wax poor when givers prove unkind.  
There, my lord.

*Ham.* Ha, ha! are you honest?

*Oph.* My lord!

*Ham.* Are you fair?

*Oph.* What means your lordship?

*Ham.* That if you be honest and fair, your  
honesty should admit no discourse to your  
beauty.

*Oph.* Could beauty, my lord, have better  
commerce than with honesty? 110

*Ham.* Ay, truly; for the power of beauty  
will sooner transform honesty from what it is  
to a bawd than the force of honesty can  
translate beauty into his likeness: this was  
sometime a paradox, but now the time gives  
it proof. I did love you once.

*Oph.* Indeed, my lord, you made me believe so.

*Ham.* You should not have believed me; for  
virtue cannot so inoculate our old stock  
but we shall relish of it: I loved you not. 120

*Oph.* I was the more deceived.

*Ham.* Get thee to a nunnery: why wouldst  
thou be a breeder of sinners? I am myself  
indifferent honest; but yet I could accuse me  
of such things that are better my mother  
had not borne me: I am very proud, re-  
vengeful, ambitious, with more offences at my  
beck than I have thoughts to put them in,  
imagination to give them shape, or time to act  
them in. What should such fellows as I do  
crawling between earth and heaven? We are  
arrant knaves, all; believe none of us. Go thy  
ways to a nunnery. Where's your father?

*Oph.* At home, my lord.

*Ham.* Let the doors be shut upon him, that  
he may play the fool no where but in his own  
house. Farewell.

*Oph.* O, help him, you sweet heavens!

*Ham.* If thou dost marry, I'll give thee this  
plague for thy dowry: be thou as chaste as ice,  
as pure as snow, thou shalt not escape calumny.  
Get thee to a nunnery, go: farewell. Or, if  
thou wilt needs marry, marry a fool; for wise  
men know well enough what monsters you  
make of them. To a nunnery, go, and quickly  
too. Farewell.

*Oph.* O heavenly powers, restore him!

*Ham.* I have heard of your paintings too,  
well enough; God has given you one face, and  
you make yourselves another: you jig, you

amble, and you lisp, and nick-nazne God's creatures, and make your wantonness your ignorance. Go to, I'll no more on't; it hath made me mad. I say, we will have no more marriages: those that are married already, all but one, shall live; the rest shall keep as they are. To a nunnery, go. *[Exit.]*

*Opk.* O, what a noble mind is here o'er-thrown!

The courtier's, soldier's, scholar's, eye, tongue, sword;

The expectancy and rose of the fair state, 160

The glass of fashion and the mould of form,

The observed of all observers, quite, quite down!

And I, of ladies most deject and wretched,  
That suck'd the honey of his music vows,

Now see that noble and most sovereign reason,

Like sweet bells jangled, out of tune and harsh;

That unmatch'd form and feature of blown

youth

Blasted with ecstasy: O, woe is me,

To have seen what I have seen, see what I see!

*Re-enter KING and POLONIUS.*

*King.* Love! his affections do not that way tend; 170

Nor what he spake, though it lack'd form a little,

Was not like madness. There's something in his soul,

O'er which his melancholy sits on brood;

And I do doubt the hatch and the disclose

Will be some danger: which for to prevent,

I have in quick determination

Thus set it down: he shall with speed to

England,

For the demand of our neglected tribute:

Haply the seas and countries different 180

With variable objects shall expel

This something-settled matter in his heart,

Whereon his brains still beating puts him thus

From fashion of himself. What think you

on't?

*Pol.* It shall do well: but yet do I believe

The origin and commencement of his grief

Spring from neglected love. How now,

Ophelia!

You need not tell us what Lord Hamlet said;

We heard it all. My lord, do as you please;

But, if you hold it fit, after the play

Let his queen mother all alone entreat him 190

To show his grief: let her be round with him;

And I'll be placed, so please you, in the ear

Of all their conference. If she find him not,

To England send him, or confine him where

Your wisdom best shall think.

*King.* It shall be so:

Madness in great ones must not unwatch'd go. 200

*[Exeunt.]*

SCENE II. A hall in the castle.

*Enter HAMLET and Players.*

*Ham.* Speak the speech, I pray you, as I pronounced it to you, trippingly on the tongue: but if you mouth it, as many of your players do, I had as lief the town-crier spoke my lines.

Nor do not saw the air too much with your hand, thus, but use all gently: for in the very torrent, tempest, and, as I may say, the whirlwind of passion, you must acquire and beget a temperance that may give it smoothness. O, it offends me to the soul to hear a robustious periwig-pated fellow tear a passion to tatters, to very rags, to split the ears of the groundlings, who for the most part are capable of nothing but inexplicable dumb-shows and noise: I would have such a fellow whipped for o'er-doing Termagant; it out-herods Herod: pray you, avoid it.

*First Play.* I warrant your honour.

*Ham.* Be not too tame neither, but let your own discretion be your tutor: suit the action to the word, the word to the action; with this special observance, that you o'erstep not the modesty of nature: for any thing so overdone is from the purpose of playing, whose end, both at the first and now, was and is, to hold, as 'twere, the mirror up to nature; to show virtue her own feature, scorn her own image, and the very age and body of the time his form and pressure. Now this overdone, or come tardy off, though it make the unskilful laugh, cannot but make the judicious grieve: the censure of the which one must in your allowance o'erweigh a whole theatre of others. O, there be players that I have seen play, and heard others praise, and that highly, not to speak it profanely, that, neither having the accent of Christians nor the gait of Christian, pagan, nor man, have so strutted and bellowed that I have thought some of nature's journeymen had made men and not made them well, they imitated humanity so abominably.

*First Play.* I hope we have reformed that indifferently with us, sir. 41

*Ham.* O, reform it altogether. And let those that play your clowns speak no more than is set down for them; for there be of them that will themselves laugh, to set on some quantity of barren spectators to laugh too; though, in the mean time, some necessary question of the play be then to be considered: that's villainous, and shows a most pitiful ambition in the fool that uses it. Go, make you ready.

*[Exeunt Players.]*

*Enter POLONIUS, ROSENCRANTZ, and GUILDENSTERN.*

How now, my lord! will the king hear this piece of work?

*Pol.* And the queen too, and that presently.

*Ham.* Bid the players make haste. *[Exit Polonius.]*

Will you two help to hasten them?

*Ros.* } We will, my lord.

*Guilt.* }

*[Exeunt Rosenrantz and Guildenstern.]*

*Ham.* What ho! Horatio!

*Enter HORATIO.*

*Hor.* Here, sweet lord, at your service.

*Ham.* Horatio, thou art e'en as just a man

As e'er my conversation coped withal. 60

*Hor.* O, my dear lord,—

*Ham.* Nay, do not think I flatter.

... ..ld the poor  
be flatter'd!

No, let the candied tongue lick absurd pomp,  
And crook the pregnant hinges of the knee  
Where thrift may follow fawning. Dost thou  
hear?

Since my dear soul was mistress of her choice  
And could of men distinguish, her election  
Hath seal'd thee for herself; for thou hast been  
As one, in suffering all, that suffers nothing,  
A man that fortune's buffets and rewards  
Hast ta'en with equal thanks: and blest are  
those

Whose blood and judgement are so well com-  
mingled,

That they are not a pipe for fortune's finger  
To sound what stop she please. Give me that  
man

That is not passion's slave, and I will wear him  
In my heart's core, ay, in my heart of heart,  
As I do thee.—Something too much of this—  
There is a play to-night before the king;

So  
One scene of it comes near the circumstance  
Which I have told thee of my father's death  
I prithee, when thou seest that act afoot,  
Even with the very comment of thy soul  
Observe mine uncle: if his occulted guilt  
Do not itself unkennel in one speech,  
It is a damned ghost that we have seen,  
And my imaginations are as foul  
As Vulcan's stithy. Give him heedful note  
For I mine eyes will rivet to his face,  
And after we will both our judgements join  
In censure of his seeming.

Hor. Well, my lord;  
If he steal aught the whilst this play is playing,  
And 'scape detecting, I will pay the theft.

Ham. They are coming to the play; I must  
be idle:

Get you a place.

Danish march. *A flourish. Enter KING,  
QUEEN, POLONIUS, OPHELIA, ROSEN-  
CRANTZ, GUILDENSTERN, and others.*

King. How fares our cousin Hamlet?

Ham. Excellent, i' faith; of the chame-  
leon's dish: I eat the air, promise-crammed  
you cannot feed capons so.

King. I have nothing with this answer,  
Hamlet; these words are not mine.

Ham. No, nor mine now. [*To Polonius*  
My lord, you played once i' the university, you  
say?

Pol. That did I, my lord; and was ac-  
counted a good actor.

Ham. What did you enact?

Pol. I did enact Julius Cæsar: I was killed  
i' the Capitol; Brutus killed me.

Ham. It was a brute part of him to kill so  
capital a calf there. Be the players ready?

Pol. Ay, my lord; they stay upon your  
patience.

Queen. Come hither, my dear Hamlet, sit  
by me.

Ham. No, good mother, here's metal more  
attractive.

Pol. [*To the King*] O, ho! do you mark  
that?

Ham. Lady, shall I lie in your lap?

[*Lying down at Ophelia's feet.*]

Oph. No, my lord.

Ham. I mean, my head upon your lap!

Oph. Ay, my lord.

Ham. Do you think I meant country  
matters?

Oph. I think nothing, my lord.

Ham. That's a fair thought to lie between  
maids' legs.

Oph. What is, my lord?

Ham. Nothing.

Oph. You are merry, my lord.

Ham. Who, I?

Oph. Ay, my lord.

Ham. O God, your only jig-maker. What  
should a man do but be merry? for, look you,  
how cheerfully my mother looks, and my father  
died within these two hours.

Oph. Nay, 'tis twice two months, my lord.

Ham. So long? Nay then, let the devil  
wear black, for I'll have a suit of sables. O  
heavens! die two months ago, and not for-  
gotten yet? Then there's hope a great man's  
memory may outlive his life half a year: but,  
by'r lady, he must build churches, then; or  
else shall he suffer not thinking on, with the  
hobby-horse, whose epitaph is 'For, O, for, O,  
the hobby-horse is forgot.'

*Hautboys play. The dumb-show enters.*

*Enter a King and a Queen very lovingly; the  
Queen embracing him, and he her. She  
kneels, and makes show of protestation unto  
him. He takes her up, and declines his  
head upon her neck: lays him down upon  
a bank of flowers: she, seeing him asleep,  
leaves him. A clown comes in a fellow, takes off  
his crown, kisses it, and pours poison in the  
King's ears, and exit. The Queen returns;  
finds the King dead, and makes passionate  
action. The Poisoner, with some two or  
three Mutes, comes in again, seeming to  
lament with her. The dead body is carried  
away. The Poisoner wooes the Queen with  
gifts: she seems loath and unwilling awhile,  
but in the end accepts his love. [Exeunt.*

Oph. What means this, my lord?

Ham. Marry, this is mitching mallecho; it  
means mischief.

Oph. Belike this show imports the argument  
of the play.

*Enter Prologue.*

Ham. We shall know by this fellow: the  
players cannot keep counsel; they'll tell all.

Oph. Will he tell us what this show meant?

Ham. Ay, or any show that you'll show  
him: be not you ashamed to show, he'll not  
shame to tell you what it means.

Oph. You are naught, you are naught: I'll  
mark the play.

Pro. For us, and for our tragedy,  
Here stooping to your clemency,

We beg your hearing patiently. [Exit.

*Ham.* Is this a prologue, or the pory of a ring?

*Oph.* 'Tis brief, my lord.

*Ham.* As woman's love.

*Enter two Players, King and Queen.*

*P. King.* Full thirty times hath Phoebus' cart gone round

Neptune's salt wash and Tellus' orb'd ground,  
And thirty dozen moons with borrow'd sheen  
About the world have times twelve thirties

been,  
Since love our hearts and Hymen did our

hands

Unite commutual in most sacred bands. 170

*P. Queen.* So many journeys may the sun

and moon

Make us again count o'er ere love be done!

But, woe is me, you are so sick of late,

So far from cheer and from your former state,

That I distrust you. Yet, though I distrust,

Discomfort you, my lord, it nothing must:

For women's fear and love holds quantity;

In neither ought, or in extremity.

Now, what my love is, proof hath made you

know;

And as my love is sized, my fear is so: 180

Where love is great, the littlest doubts are

fear;

Where little fears grow great, great love

grows there.

*P. King.* Faith, I must leave thee, love,

and shortly too;

My operant powers their functions leave to do:

And thou shalt live in this fair world behind,

Honour'd, beloved; and happy one as kind

For husband shalt thou—

*P. Queen.* O, confound the rest!

Such love must needs be treason in my breast:

In second husband let me be accurst! 185

None wed the second but who kill'd the first.

*Ham.* [Aside] Wormwood, wormwood.

*P. Queen.* The instances that second mar-

riage move

Are base respects of thrift, but none of love:

A second time I kill my husband dead,

When second husband kisses me in bed.

*P. King.* I do believe you think what now

you speak;

But what we do determine oft we break.

Purpose is but the slave to memory,

Of violent birth, but poor validity;

Which now, like fruit unripe, sticks on the

tree; 200

But fall, unshaken, when they mellow be.

Most necessary 'tis that we forget

To pay ourselves what to ourselves is debt:

What to ourselves in passion we propose,

The passion ending, doth the purpose lose.

The violence of either grief or joy

Their own enactors with themselves destroy:

Where joy most revels, grief doth most

lament;

Grief joys, joy grieves, on slender accident.

This world is not for aye, nor 'tis not strange

That even our loves should with our fortunes

For 'tis a question left us yet to prove,

Whether love lead fortune, or else fortune

love.

The great man down, you mark his favourite

flies;

The poor advanced makes friends of enemies.

And hitherto doth love on fortune tend:

For who not needs shall never lack a friend,

And who in want a hollow friend doth try,

Directly seasons him his enemy!

But, orderly to end where I began, 220

Our wills and fates do so contrary run

That our devices still are overthrow'n;

Our thoughts are ours, their ends none of our

own:

So think thou wilt no second husband wed;

But die thy thoughts when thy first lord is

dead.

*P. Queen.* Nor earth to me give food, nor

heaven light!

Sport and repose look from me day and night!

To desperation turn my trust and hope!

An anchor's cheer in prison be my scope!

Each opposite that blanks the face of joy 230

Meet what I would have well and it destroy!

Both here and hence pursue me lasting strife,

If, once a widow, ever I be wife!

*Ham.* If she should break it now!

*P. King.* 'Tis deeply sworn. Sweet, leave

me here awhile;

My spirits grow dull, and fain I would be-

guile

The tedious day with sleep. [Sleeps.]

*P. Queen.* Sleep rock thy brain;

And never come mischance between us twain! 240

*Ham.* Madam, how like you this play?

*Queen.* The lady doth protest too much,

methinks. 240

*Ham.* O, but she'll keep her word.

*King.* Have you heard the argument? Is

there no offence in't?

*Ham.* No, no, they do but jest, poison in

jest; no offence in't the world.

*King.* What do you call the play?

*Ham.* The Mouse-trap. Marry, how? Tro-

pically. This play is the image of a murder

done in Vienna: Gonzago is the duke's name;

his wife, Baptista: you shall see anon; 'tis

a knavish piece of work; but what o' that? your

majesty and we that have free souls, it touches

us not: let the galled jade wince, our withers

are unwrung.

*Enter LUCIANUS.*

This is one Lucianus, nephew to the king.

*Oph.* You are as good as a chorus, my lord.

*Ham.* I could interpret between you and

your love, if I could see the puppets dallying.

*Oph.* You are keen, my lord, you are keen.

*Ham.* It would cost you a groaning to take

off my edge. 250

*Oph.* Still better, and worse.

*Ham.* So you must take your husbands.

Begin, murderer; pox, leave thy damnable

faces, and begin. Come: 'the creaking screw

doth bellow for revenge.'

*Luc.* Thoughts black, hands apt, drugs fit,

and time agreeing;

Confederate season, else no creature seeing;  
Those mixture rank, of midnight weeds collected.

With Hecate's ban thrice blasted, thrice infected,

Thy natural magic and dice property, 270  
On wholesome life usurp immediately.

*[Pours the poison into the sleeper's ears.]*

**Ham.** He poisons him i' the garden for's estate. His name's Gonzago; the story is extant, and writ in choice Italian: you shall see anon how the murderer gets the love of Gonzago's wife.

**Oph.** The king rises.

**Ham.** What, frighted with false fire!

**Queen.** How fares my lord?

**Pol.** Give o'er the play.

**King.** Give me some light: away! 280

**All.** Lights, lights, lights!

*[Exeunt all but Hamlet and Horatio.]*

**Ham.** Why, let the stricken deer go weep,  
The hart ungalled play;

For some must watch, while some must sleep;

So runs the world away.

Would not this, sir, and a forest of feathers—if the rest of my fortunes turn Turk with me—with two Provincial roses on my razed shoes, get me a fellowship in a cry of players, sir?

**Hor.** Hail a share. 29

**Ham.** A whole one, I.

For thou dost know, O Damon dear,

This realm dismantled was

Of Jove himself; and now reigns here

A very, very—pajock.

**Hor.** You might have rhymed.

**Ham.** O good Horatio, I'll take the ghost's word for a thousand pound. Didst perceive?

**Hor.** Very well, my lord.

**Ham.** Upon the talk of the poisoning! 300

**Hor.** I did very well note him.

**Ham.** Ah, ha! Come, some music! come, the recorders!

For if the king like not the comedy,

Why then, belike, he likes it not, perdy.

Come, some music!

*Re-enter ROSENCRANZE and GUILDENSTERN.*

**Guil.** Good my lord, vouchsafe me a word with you.

**Ham.** Sir, a whole history.

**Guil.** The king, sir,— 310

**Ham.** Ay, sir, what of him?

**Guil.** Is in his retirement marvellous discontented.

**Ham.** With drink, sir?

**Guil.** No, my lord, rather with choler.

**Ham.** Your wisdom should show itself more richer to signify this to his doctor; for, for me to put him to his purgation would perhaps plunge him into far more choler. 319

**Guil.** Good my lord, put your discourse into some frame and start not so wildly from my affair.

**Ham.** I am tame, sir: pronounce.

**Guil.** The queen, your mother, in most great affliction of spirit, hath sent me to you.

**Ham.** You are welcome.

**Guil.** Nay, good my lord, this courtesy is not of the right breed. If it shall please you to make me a wholesome answer, I will do your mother's commandment: if not, your pardon and my return shall be the end of my business.

**Ham.** Sir, I cannot. 321

**Guil.** What, my lord?

**Ham.** Make you a wholesome answer; my wit's diseased: but, sir, such answer as I can make, you shall command; or, rather, as you say, my mother: therefore no more, but to the matter: my mother, you say,—

**Ros.** Then thus she says; your behaviour hath struck her into amazement and admiration. 329

**Ham.** O wonderful son, that can so astonish a mother! But is there no sequel at the heels of this mother's admiration? Impart.

**Ros.** She desires to speak with you in her closet, ere you go to bed.

**Ham.** We shall obey, were she ten times our mother. Have you any farther trade with us?

**Ros.** My lord, you once did love me.

**Ham.** So I do still, by these pickers and stealers. 349

**Ros.** Good my lord, what is your cause of distemper? you do, surely, bar the door upon your own liberty, if you deny your griefs to your friend.

**Ham.** Sir, I lack advancement.

**Ros.** How can that be, when you have the voice of the king himself for your succession in Denmark?

**Ham.** Ay, sir, but 'While the grass grows,'—the proverb is something musty. 359

*Re-enter Players with recorders.*

O, the recorders! let me see one. To withdraw with you:—why do you go about to recover the wind of me, as if you would drive me into a toll?

**Guil.** O, my lord, if my duty be too bold, my love is too unmannerly.

**Ham.** I do not well understand that. Will you play upon this pipe?

**Guil.** My lord, I cannot.

**Ham.** I pray you.

**Guil.** Believe me, I cannot. 370

**Ham.** I do beseech you.

**Guil.** I know no touch of it, my lord.

**Ham.** 'Tis as easy as lying: govern these ventages with your fingers and thumb, give it breath with your mouth, and it will discourse most eloquent music. Look you, these are the stops.

**Guil.** But these cannot I command to any utterance of harmony; I have not the skill.

**Ham.** Why, look you now, how unworthy a thing you make of me! You would play upon me; you would seem to know my stops; you would pluck out the heart of my mystery; you would sound me from my lowest note to the top of my compass; and there is much music, excellent voice, in this little organ; yet cannot you make it speak. 'Sblood, do you think I am easier to be played on than a pipe? O, God! what instrument you will, though you can find me, yet you cannot play upon me.

*Enter* POLONIUS.

God bless you, sir!

*Pol.* My lord, the queen would speak with you, and presently.

*Ham.* Do you see yonder cloud that's almost in shape of a camel?

*Pol.* By the mass, and 'tis like a camel, indeed.

*Ham.* Methinks it is like a weasel.

*Pol.* It is backed like a weasel.

*Ham.* Or like a whale?

*Pol.* Very like a whale.

*Ham.* Then I will come to my mother by and by. They fool me to the top of my bent. I will come by and by.

*Pol.* I will say so.

*Ham.* By and by is easily said. [*Exit Polonius.*] Leave me, friends.

[*Exit all but Hamlet.*]

'Tis now the very witching time of night, When churchyards yawn and hell itself breathes out

Contagion to this world: now could I drink hot blood,

And do such bitter business as the day Would quake to look on. Soft! now to my mother

O heart, lose not thy nature: let not ever The soul of Nero enter this firm bosom:

Let me be cruel, not unnatural:

I will speak daggers to her, but use none;

My tongue and soul in this be hypocrites;

How in my words sheever she be shent,

To give them seals never, my soul, consent!

[*Exit.*]

SCENE III. A room in the castle.

*Enter* KING, ROSENCRANTZ, and GUILDENSTERN.

*King.* I like him not, nor stands it safe with us

To let his madness range. Therefore prepare you;

I your commission will forthwith dispatch, And be to England shall along with you:

The terms of our estate may not endure

Hazard so near us as doth hourly grow

Out of his lunacies.

*Guild.* We will ourselves provide:

Most holy and religious fear it is

To keep those many bodies safe

That live and feed upon your majesty.

*Ros.* The single and peculiar life is bound,

With all the strength and armour of the mind,

To keep itself from noyance; but much more

That spirit upon whose weal depend and rest

The lives of many. The cease of majesty

Dies not alone; but, like a gulf, doth draw

What's near it with it: it is a massy wheel,

Fixed on the summit of the highest mount,

Whose huge spokes ten thousand lesser

Things

Are mortis'd and adjoin'd; which, when it

falls,

Each small appendment, petty consequence,

Attends the bolisterous ruin. Never alone Did the king sigh, but with a general groan.

*King.* Arm you, I pray you, to this speedy voyage:

For we will fetters put upon this fear,

Which now goes too free-footed.

*Ros.* We will haste us.

*Guild.* [*Exit Rosencrantz and Guildenstern.*]

*Enter* POLONIUS.

*Pol.* My lord, he's going to his mother's closet:

Behind the arras I'll convey myself

To hear the process: I'll warrant she'll tax

him home:

And, as you said, and wisely was it said,

'Tis meet that some more audience than a

mother,

Since nature makes them partial, should o'er-

hear

The speech, of vantage. Fare you well, my

liege:

I'll call upon you ere you go to bed,

And tell you what I know:

*King.* Thanks, dear my lord.

[*Exit Polonius.*]

O, my offence is rank, it smells to heaven;

It hath the primal eldest curse upon't,

A brother's murder. Pray can I not;

Though inclination be as sharp as will:

My stronger guilt defeats my strong intent;

And, like a man to double business bound,

I stand in pause where I shall first begin,

And both neglect. What if this cursed hand

Were thicker than itself with brother's blood,

Is there not rain enough in the sweet heavens

To wash it white as snow? Whereto serves

mercy

But to confront the visage of offence?

And what's in prayer but this two-fold force,

To be forestalled ere we come to fall,

Or pardon'd being down? Then I'll look up;

My fault is past. But, O, what form of prayer

Can serve my turn? Forgive me my foul

murder!

That cannot be; since I am still possess'd

(Of those effects for which I did the murder,

My crown, mine own ambition and my queen.

May one be pardon'd and retain the offence?

In the corrupted currents of this world

(Offence's gilded hand may shove by justice,

And oft 'tis seen the wicked prize itself

Buy out the law: but 'tis not so above;

There is no shuffling, there the action lies

In his true nature; and we ourselves compell'd,

Even to the teeth and forehead of our faults,

To give in evidence. What then? what rests?

Try what repentance can: what can it not?

Yet what can it when one can repent?

O wretched state! O bosom black as death!

O limed soul, that, struggling to be free,

Art more engaged! Help, angels! Make assay!

Bow, stubborn knees; and, heart with strings

of steel,

Be soft as sinews of the new-born babe!

All may be well. [*Retires and kneels.*]

## SCENE III]

## HAMLET

*Enter HAMLET.*

Ham. Now might I do it pat, now he is

And now I'll do't. And so he goes to heaven;  
 And so am I revenged. That would be scann'd:  
 A villain kills my father; and for that,  
 I, his sole son, do this same villain send  
 To heaven.

O, this is hire and salary, not revenge.  
 He took my father grossly, full of bread; 80  
 With all his crimes broad blown, as flush as  
 May;

And how his audit stands who knows save  
 heaven!

But in our circumstance and course of thought,  
 'Tis heavy with him: and am I then revenged,  
 To take him in the purging of his soul,  
 When he is fit and season'd for his passage?  
 No!

Up, sword; and know thou a more horrid hent:  
 When he is drunk asleep, or in his rage,  
 Or in the incestuous pleasure of his bed; 90  
 At gaming, swearing, or about some act  
 That has no relish of salvation in't;  
 Then trip him, that his heels may kick at  
 heaven,

And that his soul may be as damn'd and black  
 As hell, whereto it goes. My mother stays:  
 This physic but prolongs thy sickly days. *Exit.*

*King. [Rising.]* My words fly up, my thoughts  
 remain below:

Words without thoughts never to heaven go.  
*[Exit.]*

SCENE IV. *The Queen's closet.**Enter QUEEN and POLONIUS.*

Pol. He will come straight. Look you lay  
 home to him:

Tell him his pranks have been too broad to  
 bear with,

And that your grace hath screen'd and stood  
 between

Much heat and him. I'll sounce me even here.  
 Pray you, be round with him.

Ham. *[Within.]* Mother, mother, mother!

Queen. I'll warrant you,  
 Fear me not; withdraw, I hear him coming.

*[Polonius hides behind the arras.]*

*Enter HAMLET.*

Ham. Now, mother, what's the matter?

Queen. Hamlet, thou hast thy father much  
 offended.

Ham. Mother, you have my father much  
 offended. 10

Queen. Come, come, you answer with an  
 idle tongue.

Ham. Go, go, you question with a wicked  
 tongue.

Queen. Why, how now, Hamlet!

Ham. What's the matter now?

Queen. Have you forgot me?

Ham. No, by the rood, not so  
 You are the queen, your husband's brother's  
 wife;

And—would it were not so!—you are my  
 mother.

Queen. Nay, then, I'll set those to you that  
 can speak.

Ham. Come, come, and sit you down; you  
 shall not budge;

You go not till I set you up a glass  
 Where you may see the inmost part of you. 20

Queen. What wilt thou do? thou wilt not  
 murder me!

Help, help, ho!

Pol. *[Behind.]* What, ho! help, help, help!

Ham. *[Drawing.]* How now! a rat! Dead,  
 for a ducat, dead!

*[Makes a pass through the arras.]*  
 Pol. *[Behind.]* O, I am slain!

Queen. O me, what hast thou done?  
 Nay, I know not:

Is it the king?

Queen. O, what a rash and bloody deed is  
 this!

Ham. A bloody deed! almost as bad, good  
 mother,

As kill a king, and marry with his brother.  
 Queen. As kill a king!

Ham. Ay, lady, 'twas my word. 30  
*[Lifts up the arras and discovers Polonius.]*

Thou wretched, rash, intruding fool, farewell!  
 I took thee for thy better: take thy fortune;

Thou find'st it to be too busy is some danger.  
 Leave wringing of your hands: peace! sit you  
 down,

And let me wring your heart; for so I shall,  
 If it be made of penetrable stuff,

If damned custom have not brass'd it so  
 That it be proof and bulwark against sense.

Queen. What have I done, that thou dar'st  
 wag thy tongue

In noise so rude against me?

Ham. Such an act 40  
 That blurs the grace and blush of modesty,  
 Calls virtue hypocrite, takes off the rose  
 From the fair forehead of an innocent love

And sets a blister there, makes marriage-vows  
 As false as dicers' oaths: O, such a deed

As from the body of contraction plucks  
 The very soul, and sweet religion makes

A rhapsody of words: heaven's face doth glow;  
 Yea, this solidity and compound mass,

With tristful visage, as against the doom, 50  
 Is thought-sick at the act.

Queen. Ay me, what act,  
 That roars so loud, and thunders in the index!

Ham. Look here, upon this picture, and on  
 this,

The counterfeit presentment of two brothers.  
 See, what a grace was seated on this brow;

Hyperion's curls; the front of Jove himself;  
 An eye like Mars, to threaten and command;

A station like the herald Mercury  
 New-lighted on a heaven-kissing hill;

A combination and a form indeed, 60  
 Where every god did seem to set his seal,

To give the world assurance of a man:  
 This was your husband. Look you now, what  
 follows:

Here is your husband; like a mildew'd ear,

Blasting his wholesome brother. Have you eyes?

Could you on this fair mountain leave to feed,  
And batten on this moor? Ha! have you eyes?  
You cannot call it love; for at your age  
The hey-day in the blood is tame, it's humble,  
And waits upon the judgement: and what  
judgement

Would step from this to this? Sense, sure, you have,

Else could you not have motion; but sure, that sense

Is apoplex'd; for madness would not err,  
Nor sense to ecstasy was ne'er so thrall'd  
But is reserved some quantity of choice,  
To serve in such a difference. What devil  
was't

That thus hath cozen'd you at hoodman-blind?  
Eyes without feeling, feeling without sight,  
Ears without hands or eyes, smelling sans all,  
Or but a sickly part of one true sense

Could not so mope.  
O shame! where is thy blush? Rebellious hell,  
If thou canst mutine in a matron's bones,  
To flaming youth let virtue be as wax,  
And melt in her own fire: proclaim no shame  
When the compulsive ardour gives the charge,  
Since frost itself as actively doth burn  
And reason pandars will.

Queen. O Hamlet, speak no more:  
Thou turn'st mine eyes into my very soul;  
And there I see such black and grain'd spots

As will not leave their tinct.  
Ham. Nay, but to live  
In the rank sweat of an enseamed bed,  
Stew'd in corruption, honeying and making  
love

Over the nasty sty,—  
Queen. O, speak to me no more;  
These words, like daggers, enter in mine ears;  
No more, sweet Hamlet!

Ham. A murderer and a villain;  
A slave that is not twentieth part the tithe  
Of your precedent lord; a vice of kings;  
A cutpurse of the empire and the rule,  
That from a shelf the precious diadem stole,  
And put it in his pocket!

Queen. No more!  
Ham. A king of shreds and patches,—

Enter Ghost.

Save me, and hover o'er me with your wings,  
You heavenly guards! What would your  
gracious figure?

Queen. Alas, he's mad!  
Ham. Do you not come your tardy son to  
chide,

That, lap'd in time and passion, lets go by  
The important acting of your dread command?  
O, say!

Ghost. Do not forget: this visitation  
Is but to what thy almost blunted purpose.  
But, look, amazement on thy mother sits:  
O, step between her and her fighting soul:  
Concent in weakest bodies strongest works:  
Speak to her, Hamlet.

Ham. How is it with you, lady?  
Queen. Alas, how is't with you,

That you do bend your eye on vacancy  
And with the incorporal air do hold discourse?  
Forth at your eyes your spirits wildly peep;  
And, as the sleeping soldiers in the alarm,  
Your bedded hairs, like life in excrements,  
Start up, and stand an end. O gentle son,  
Upon the heat and flame of thy distemper  
Sprinkle cool patience. Whereon do you look?

Ham. On him, on him! Look you, how  
pale he glares!

His form and cause conjoin'd, preaching to  
stones,

Would make them capable. Do not look upon  
me;

Lest with this piteous action you convert  
My stern effects: then what I have to do  
Will want true colour; tears perchance for  
blood.

Queen. To whom do you speak this?

Ham. Do you see nothing there?

Queen. Nothing at all; yet all that I see.

Ham. Nor did you nothing hear?

Queen. No, nothing but ourselves.

Ham. Why, look you there! look, how it  
steals away!

My father, in his habit as he lived!

Look, where he goes, even now, out at the  
portal!

Queen. This is the very coinage of your  
brain:

This bodiless creation ecstasy  
Is very cunning in.

Ham. Ecstasy!

My pulse, as yours, doth temperately keep  
time,

And makes as healthful music: it is not mad-  
ness

That I have utter'd: bring me to the test,  
And I the matter will re-word; which madness  
Would gambol from. Mother, for love of  
grace,

Lay not that flattering unction to your soul,  
That not your trespass, but my madness speaks!  
It will but skin and film the ulcerous place,  
Whiles rank corruption, mining all within,  
Infects unseen. Confess yourself to heaven;  
Repent what's past; avoid what is to come;  
And do not spread the compost on the weeds,  
To make them ranker. Forgive me this my  
virtue;

For in the fatness of these purvey times  
Virtue itself of vice must pardon beg,  
Yea, curb and woo for leave to do him good.

Queen. O Hamlet, thou hast cleft my heart  
in twain.

Ham. O, throw away the worser part of it,  
And live the purer with the other half.

Good night: but go not to mine uncle's bed;  
Assume a virtue, if you have it not.

That monster, custom, who all senses doth eat,  
Of habits devil, is angel yet in this,

That to the use of actions fair and good  
He likewise gives a frook or livery,

That honesty is put on. Refrain to-night,  
And that shall lend a kind of assent

To the next abstinence: the next more easy;  
For use almost can change the stamp of nature,

† And either . . . the devil, or throw him out



With wondrous potency. Once more, good night;

And when you are desirous to be bless'd, I'll blessing beg of you. For this same lord,

[Pointing to Polonius.]

I do repent; but heaven hath pleased it so,

To punish me with this and this with me,

That I must be their scourge and minister.

I will bestow him, and will answer well

The death I gave him. So, again, good night.

I must be cruel, only to be kind:

Thus bad begins and worse remains behind.

One word more, good lady.

Queen. What shall I do?

Ham. Not this, by no means, that I bid

you do:

Let the blasphemous tempt you again to bed;

Pinch wanton on your cheek; call you his

mouse;

And let him, for a pair of reechy kisses,

Or paddling in your neck with his damn'd

fingers,

Make you to ravel all this matter out,

That I essentially am not in madness,

But mad in craft. 'Twere good you let him

know;

For who, that's but a queen, fair, sober, wise,

Would from a paddock, from a bat, a gib,

Such dear concerns hide? who would do so?

So, in despite of sense and secrecy,

Unpeg the basket on the house's top,

Let the birds fly, and, like the famous ape,

To try conclusions, in the basket creep,

And break your own neck down.

Queen. Be thou assured, if words be made

of breath,

And breath of life, I have no life to breathe

What thou hast said to me.

Ham. I must to England; you know that?

Queen. Alack,

I had forgot: 'tis so concluded on.

Ham. There's letters seal'd; and my two

schoolfellows,

Whom I will trust as I will adders fang'd,

They bear the mandate; they must sweep my

way,

And marshal me to knavery. Let it work;

For 'tis the sport to have the engineer

Holst with his own petar; and 't shall go hard

But I will delve one yard below their mines,

And blow them at the moon: O, 'tis most sweet,

When in one line two crafts directly meet.

This man shall set me packing:

I'll lug the guts into the neighbour room.

Mother, good night. Indeed this counsellor

Is now most still, most secret and most grave,

Who was in life a foolish prating knave.

Come, sir, to draw toward an end with you.

Good night, mother.

[Exeunt severally; Hamlet dragging in Polonius.]

#### ACT IV.

#### SCENE I. A room in the castle.

Enter KING, QUEEN, ROSENCRANTZ, and GUILDENSTERN.

King. There's matter in these sighs, these profound heaves:

You must translate: 'tis fit we understand them.

Where is your son?

Queen. Bestow this place on us a little while.

[Exeunt ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.]

Ah, mine own lord, what have I seen to-night!

King. What, Gertrude? How does Hamlet?

Queen. Mad as the sea and wind, when

both contend

Which is the mightier: in his lawless fit,

Behind the arras hearing something stir,

Whips out his rapier, cries, 'A rat, a rat!'

And, in this brainish apprehension, kills

The unseen good old man.

King. O heavy deed!

't had been so with us, had we been there:

'His liberty is full of threats to all;

To you yourself, to us, to every one.

Alas, how shall this bloody deed be answer'd!

It will be laid to us, whose providence

Should have kept short, restrain'd and out of

haunt,

This mad young man; but so much was our love,

We would not understand what was most fit;

But, like the owner of a foul disease,

To keep it from divulging, let it feed

Even on the pith of life. Where is he gone?

Queen. To draw apart the body he hath

kill'd:

O'er whom his very madness, like some ore

Among a mineral of metals base,

Shows itself pure; he weeps for what is done.

King. O Gertrude, come away!

The sun no sooner shall the mountains touch

But we will ship him hence: and this vile

deed

We must, with all our majesty and skill,

Both countenance and excuse. Ho, Guilden-

stern!

Re-enter ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.

Friends both, go join you with some farther

aid:

Hamlet in madness hath Polonius slain,

And from his mother's closet hath he dragg'd

him:

Go seek him out; speak fair, and bring the

body

Into the chapel. I pray you, haste in this.

[Exeunt ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.]

Come, Gertrude, we'll call up our wisest friends;

And let them know, both what we mean to do,

And what's untimely done.

Whose whisper o'er the world's diameter,

As level as the cannon to his blank,

Transports his poison'd shot, may miss our

name,

And hit the woundless air. O, come away!

My soul is full of discord and dismay. [Exeunt.]

#### SCENE II. Another room in the castle.

Enter HAMLET.

Ham. Safely stowed.

Ros. [Within] Hamlet! Lord Hamlet!

Guild. [Within] Hamlet!

Ham. But soft, what noise? who calls on

Hamlet? O, here they come.

*Enter ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.*

*Ros.* What have you done, my lord, with the dead body?

*Ham.* Compounded it with dust, whereto 'tis kin.

*Ros.* Tell us where 'tis, that we may take it thence  
And bear it to the chapel.

*Ham.* Do not believe it.

*Ros.* Believe what?

*Ham.* That I can keep your counsel and not mine own. Besides, to be demanded of a sponge! what replication should be made by the son of a king!

*Ros.* Take you me for a sponge, my lord?

*Ham.* Ay, sir, that soaks up the king's countenance, his rewards, his authorities. But such officers do the king best service in the end: he keeps them, like an ape, in the corner of his jaw; first mouthed, to be last swallowed: when he needs what you have gleaned, it is but squeezing you, and, sponge, you shall be dry again.

*Ros.* I understand you not, my lord.

*Ham.* I am glad of it: a knavish speech sleeps in a foolish ear.

*Ros.* My lord, you must tell us where the body is, and go with us to the king.

*Ham.* The body is with the king, but the king is not with the body. The king is a thing—

*GUILD.* A thing, my lord!

*Ham.* Of nothing: bring me to him. Hide fox, and all after. *[Exit.]*

SCENE III. *Another room in the castle.*

*Enter KING, attended.*

*King.* I have sent to seek him, and to find the body.

How dangerous is it that this man goes loose! Yet must not we put the strong law on him: He's loved of the distracted multitude, Who like not in their judgement, but their eyes;

And where 'tis so, the offender's scourge is weigh'd,

But never the offence. To bear all smooth and even,

This sudden sending him away must seem Deliberate pause: diseases desperate grown By desperate appliance are relieved, 10 Or not at all.

*Enter ROSENCRANTZ.*

How now! what hath befall'n?

*Ros.* Where the dead body is bestow'd, my lord,

We cannot get from him.

*King.* But where is he?

*Ros.* Without, my lord; guarded, to know your pleasure.

*King.* Bring him before us.

*Ros.* Ho, Guildenstern! bring in my lord.

*Enter HAMLET and GUILDENSTERN.*

*King.* Now, Hamlet, where's Polonius?

*Ham.* At supper.

*King.* At supper! where?

*Ham.* Not where he eats, but where he is eaten: a certain convocation of politic worms are e'en at him. Your worm is your only emperor for diet: we eat all creatures else to fat us, and we fat ourselves for maggots: your fat king and your lean beggar is but variable service, two dishes, but to one table: that's the end.

*King.* Alas, alas!

*Ham.* A man may fish with the worm that hath eat of a king, and eat of the 10 that hath fed of that worm.

*King.* What dost thou mean by this?

*Ham.* Nothing but to show you how a king may go a progress through the guts of a beggar.

*King.* Where is Polonius?

*Ham.* In heaven; send thither to see: if your messenger find him not there, seek him i' the other place yourself. But indeed, if you find him not within this month, you shall nose him as you go up the stairs into the lobby.

*King.* Go seek him there. 40

*Ham.* He will stay till you come. *[To some Attendants.]*

*King.* Hamlet, this deed, for thine especial safety,—

Which we do tender, as we dearly grieve For that which thou hast done,—must send thee hence

With fiery quickness: therefore prepare thyself;

The bark is ready, and the wind at help, The associates tend, and every thing is bent For England.

*Ham.* For England!

*King.* Ay, Hamlet.

*Ham.* Good.

*King.* So is it, if thou knew'st our purposes.

*Ham.* I see a cherub that sees them. But, come; for England! Farewell, dear mother.

*King.* Thy loving father, Hamlet.

*Ham.* My mother: father and mother is man and wife; man and wife is one flesh; and so, my mother. Come, for England! *[Exit.]*

*King.* Follow him at foot; tempt him with speed aboard;

Delay it not; I'll have him hence to-night: Away! for every thing is seal'd and done That else leans on the affair: pray you, make haste.

*[Exit ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.]*

And, England, if my love thou hold'st at 60 aught—

As my great power thereof may give thee sense,

Since yet thy cicatrice looks raw and red After the Danish sword, and thy free awe Pays homage to us—thou may'st not coldly set

Our sovereign process; which imports at full, By letters congruing to that effect,

The present death of Hamlet. Do it, England: For like the hettle in my blood he rages,

And thou must cure me: till I know 70 'tis done, 80

And thou must cure me: till I know 'tis done, 80

SCENE IV. *A plain in Denmark.**Enter FORTINBRAS, a Captain, and Soldiers, marching.*

*For.* Go, captain, from me greet the Danish king;  
Tell him that, by his license, Fortinbras  
Craves the conveyance of a promised march  
Over his kingdom. You know the rendezvous.  
If that his majesty would aught with us,  
We shall express our duty in his eye;  
And let him know so.

*Cap.* I will do 't, my lord.*For.* Go softly on.*[Exeunt Fortinbras and Soldiers.]**Enter HAMLET, ROSENCRANTZ, GUILDENSTERN, and others.**Ham.* Good sir, whose powers are these?*Cap.* They are of Norway, sir. 10*Ham.* How purposed, sir, I pray you?*Cap.* Against some part of Poland.*Ham.* Who commands them, sir?*Cap.* The nephew to old Norway, Fortinbras.*Ham.* Goes it against the main of Poland, sir,

Or for some frontier?

*Cap.* Truly to speak, and with no addition,  
We go to gain a little patch of ground  
That hath in it no profit but the name.To pay five ducats, five, I would not farm it; 20  
Nor will it yield to Norway or the Pole  
A ranker rate, should it be sold in fee.*Ham.* Why, then the Polack never will  
defend it.*Cap.* Yes, it is already garrison'd.*Ham.* Two thousand souls and twenty  
thousand ducatsWill not debate the question of this straw:  
This is the imposthume of much wealth and  
peace,That inward breaks, and shows no cause with-  
out

Why the man dies. I humbly thank you, sir.

*Cap.* God be wi' you, sir. *[Exit.]**Ros.* Will't please you go, my lord? 30*Ham.* I'll be with you straight. Go a little  
before. *[Exeunt all except Hamlet.]*How all occasions do inform against me,  
And spur my dull revenge! What is a man,If his chief good and market of his time  
Be but to sleep and feed? a beast, no more.Sure, he that made us with such large discourse,  
Looking before and after, gave us notThat capability and god-like reason  
To fust in us unused. Now, whether it beBestial oblivion, or some craven scruple 40  
Of thinking too precisely on the event,  
A thought which, quarter'd, hath but one part  
wisdomAnd ever three parts coward, I do not know  
Why yet I live to say 'This thing's to do;'Sith I have cause and will and strength a  
means

To do't. Examples gross as earth exhort me:

Witness this army of such mass and charge  
Led by a delicate and tender prince,

Whose spirit with divine ambition puff'd

Makes mouths at the invisible event,  
Exposing what is mortal and unsure  
To all that fortune, death and danger dare,  
Even for an egg-shell. Rightly to be great  
Is not to stir without great argument,  
But greatly to find quarrel in a straw  
When honour's at the stake. How stand I then,  
That have a father kill'd, a mother stain'd,  
Excitements of my reason and my blood,  
And let all sleep? while, to my shame, I see  
The imminent death of twenty thousand men,  
That, for a fantasy and trick of fame, 60  
Go to their graves like beds, fight for a plot  
Whereon the numbers cannot try the cause,  
Which is not tomb enough and continent  
To hide the slain! O, from this time forth,  
My thoughts be bloody, or be nothing worth!

*[Exit.]*SCENE V. *Elsinore. A room in the castle.**Enter QUEEN, HORATIO, and a Gentleman.**Queen.* I will not speak with her.*Gent.* She is importunate, indeed distract:

Her mood will needs be pitied.

*Queen.* What would she have?*Gent.* She speaks much of her father; says  
she hearsThere's tricks i' the world; and hems, and  
beats her heart;Spurns enviously at straws; speaks things in  
doubt,That carry but half sense; her speech is  
nothing,Yet the unshaped use of it doth move  
The hearers to collection; they aim at it,And botch the words up fit to their own  
thoughts; 20Which, as her winks, and nods, and gestures  
yield them,Indeed would make one think there might be  
thought.

Though nothing sure, yet much unhappily.

*Hor.* 'Twere good she were spoken with:  
for she may strew

Dangerous conjectures in ill-breeding minds.

*Queen.* Let her come in. *[Exit Horatio.]*To my sick soul, as sin's true nature is,  
Each toy seems prologue to some great amiss:So full of artless jealousy is guilt,  
It spills itself in fearing to be split. 30*Re-enter HORATIO, with OPHELIA.**Oph.* Where is the beauteous majesty of  
Denmark?*Queen.* How now, Ophelia!*Oph.* *[Sings]* How should I your true love  
knowFrom another one?  
By his cockle hat and staff,

And his sandal shoon.

*Queen.* Alas, sweet lady, what imports this  
song?*Oph.* Say you? nay, pray you, mark.*[Sings]* He is dead and gone, lady,  
He is dead and gone;At his head a grass-green turf,  
At his heels a stone.

May, but, Ophelia,—

*Oph.* Pray you, mark.  
[*Sings*] While his shroud as the mountain  
snow,—

*Enter King.*

*Queen.* Alas, look here, my lord.

*Oph.* [Sings] Larded with sweet flowers;  
Which beset to the grave did go  
With true-love showers.

*King.* How do you, pretty lady? 40

*Oph.* Well, God 'ild you! They say the  
owl was a baker's daughter. Lord, we know  
what we are, but know not what we may be.  
God be at your table!

*King.* Conceit upon her father.

*Oph.* Pray you, let's have no words of this;  
but when they ask you what it means, say you  
this:

[*Sings*] To-morrow is Saint Valentine's day,  
All in the morning betime,  
And I a maid at your window, 50  
To be your Valentine.  
Then up he rose, and down'd his clothes,  
And dupp'd the chamber door;  
Let in the maid, that out a maid  
Never departed more.

*King.* Pretty Ophelia!

*Oph.* Indeed, la, without an oath, I'll make  
an end on't:

[*Sings*] By Gis and by Saint Charity,  
Alack, and fie for shame! 60  
Young men will do't, if they come to't;  
By cock, they are to blame.  
Quoth she, before you tumbled me,  
You promised me to wed.

So would I ha' done, by yonder sun,  
An thou hadst not come to my bed.

*King.* How long hath she been thus?

*Oph.* I hope all will be well. We must be  
patient: but I cannot choose but weep, to think  
they should lay him i' the cold ground. My  
brother shall know of it: and so I thank you  
for your good-counsel. Come, my coach! Good  
night, ladies; good night, sweet ladies; good  
night, good night. [Exit.]

*King.* Follow her close; give her good  
watch, I pray you. [Exit Horatio.]

O, this is the poison of deep grief; it springs  
All from her father's death. O Gertrude,  
Gertrude,

When sorrows come, they come not single spies,  
But in battalions. First, her father slain;  
Next, your son gone; and he most violent  
author. 80

Of his own just remove: the people muddled,  
Thick and saw-wholesome in their thoughts and  
whispers.

For good Polonius' death; and we have done  
but greenly,

In hanger-muzzers to inter him: poor Ophelia  
Divided from herself and her fair judgement,  
Without the which we are pictures, or mere  
shows:

I look and see much containing as all these,  
But her father is in secret come from France;  
Her mother's words, he keeps himself in clouds,  
And will not answer to intent his ear 90

With pensive speeches of his father's death;  
Wherein necessity, of matter beggar'd,  
Will nothing stick our person to arraign  
In ear and ear. O my dear Gertrude, this,  
Like to a murdering-piece, in many places  
Gives me superfluous death. [A noise within.]

*Queen.* Alack, what noise is this?

*King.* Where are my Switzers? Let them  
guard the door.

*Enter another Gentleman.*

What is the matter?

*Gent.* Save yourself, my lord:

The ocean, overpeering of his list,  
Kats not the flats with more impetuous haste  
Than young Laertes, in a riotous head, 101  
O'erbears your officers. The rabble call him  
lord;

And, as the world were now but to begin,  
Antiquity forgot, custom not known,  
The raddlers and props of every word,  
They cry 'Choose we: Laertes shall be king:'  
Caps, hands, and tongues, applaud it to the  
clouds:

'Laertes shall be king, Laertes king!'

*Queen.* How cheerfully on the false trail  
they cry!

O, this is counter, you false Danish dogs! 110

*King.* The doors are broke. [Noise within.]

*Enter LAERTES, armed; Danes following.*

*Laer.* Where is this king? Sirs, stand you  
all without.

*Danes.* No, let's come in.

*Laer.* I pray you, give me leave.

*Danes.* We will, we will.

[They retire without the door.]  
*Laer.* I thank you: keep the door. O thou  
vile king,

Give me my father!

*Queen.* Calmly, good Laertes.

*Laer.* That drop of blood that's calm pro-  
claims me bastard,  
Cries cuckold to my father, brands the harlot  
Even here, between the chaste unsmirched brow  
Of my true mother.

*King.* What is the cause, Laertes, 120  
That thy rebellion looks so giant-like?  
Let him go, Gertrude; do not fear our person:  
There's a such divinity doth hedge a king,  
That treason can but peep to what it would,  
Acts little of his will. Tell me, Laertes,  
Why thou art thus incensed. Let him go,  
Gertrude.

Speak, man.

*Laer.* Where is my father?

*King.* Dead.

*Queen.* But not by him.

*King.* Let him demand his fill.

*Laer.* How came he dead? I'll not be jus-  
gled with:

To hell, allegiance! vows, to the blackest devil!  
Conscience and grace, to the profoundest pit!  
I dare damnation. To this point I stand,  
That both the worlds I give to negligence:  
Let come what comes; only I'll be revenged  
Most thoroughly for my father.

*King.* Who shall stay you?

*Laer.* My will, not all the world:  
And for my means, I'll husband them so well,  
They shall go far with little.

*King.* Good Laertes,  
If you desire to know the certainty  
Of your dear father's death, is't writ in your  
revenge,

That, swoonstake, you will draw both friend  
and foe,  
Winner and loser?

*Laer.* None but his enemies.

*King.* Will you know them then?

*Laer.* To his good friends thus wide I'll open  
my arms;  
And like the kind life-rendering pelican,  
Feed them with my blood.

*King.* Why, now you speak  
Like a good child and a true gentleman.  
That I am guiltless of your father's death,  
And am most sensibly in grief for it,  
It shall as level to your judgement pierce  
As day does to your eye.

*Danes.* [Within] Let her come in.

*Laer.* How now! what noise is that!

*Re-enter OPHELIA.*

O heat, dry up my brains! tears seven times  
salt,

Burn out the sense and virtue of mine eye!  
By heaven, thy madness shall be paid with  
weight,

Till our scale turn the beam. O rose of May!  
Dear maid, kind sister, sweet Ophelia!  
O heavens! is't possible, a young maid's wits  
Should be as mortal as an old man's life? No  
Nature is fine in love, and where's his fine,  
It sends some precious instance of itself  
After the thing it loves.

*Ophe. [Sings]*

They bore him barefaced on the bier;  
Hey non ponny, nonny, hey nonny;  
And in his grave rain'd many a tear—  
Fare you well, my dove!

*Laer.* Hadst thou thy wits, and didst per-  
suade revenge,

It could not move thus.

*Ophe. [Sings]* You must sing a-down a-down,  
An you call him a-down-a.

O, how the wheel becomes it! It is the false  
steward, that stole his master's daughter.

*Laer.* This nothing's more than matter.

*Ophe.* There's rosemary, that's for remem-  
brance; pray, love, remember: and there is  
pansies, that's for thoughts.

*Laer.* A document in madness, thoughts  
and remembrance fitted.

*Ophe.* There's fennel for you, and colum-  
bines: there's rue for you; and here's some  
for me: we may call it herb-grace o' Sundays:  
O, you must wear your rue with a difference.  
There's a daisy: I would give you some violets,  
but they withered all when my father died  
they say, he made a good

swart Robin is all my joy  
affliction, passion, hell

*Laer.* She turns to favour and to prettiness.

*Ophe. [Sings]* And will he not come again? And will he not come again?

No, no, he is dead:

Go to thy death-bed:

He never will come again.

His beard was as white as snow,

All fix'd was his poll:

He is gone, he is gone,

And we cast away moan:

God ha' mercy on his soul!

And of all Christian souls, I pray God. God  
be wi' ye. [Exit.]

*Laer.* Do you see this, O God?

*King.* Laertes, I must commune with your  
grief.

Or you deny me right. Go but apart,

Make choice of whom your wisest friends you  
will,

And they shall hear and judge 'twixt you and  
me;

If by direct or by collateral hand

They find us touch'd, we will our kingdom give,

Our crown, our life, and all that we call ours,

To you in satisfaction; but if not,

Be you content to lend your patience to us,

And we shall jointly labour with your soul

To give it due content.

*Laer.* Let this be so;

His means of death, his obscure funeral—

No trophy, sword, nor hatchment o'er his bones,

No noble rite nor formal ostentation—

Cry to be heard, as 'twere from heaven to earth,

That I must call't in question.

*King.* So you shall;

And where the offence is let the great axe fall.

I pray you, go with me. [Exit.]

SCENE VI. Another room in the castle.

*Enter HORATIO and a Servant.*

*Hor.* What are they that would speak with  
me?

*Serv.* Sailors, sir: they say they have letters  
for you.

*Hor.* Let them come in. [Exit Servant.]

I do not know from what part of the world

I should be greeted, if not from lord Hamlet.

*Enter Sailors.*

*First Sail.* God bless you, sir.

*Hor.* Let him bless thee too.

*First Sail.* He shall, sir, an't please him.  
There's a letter for you, sir: it comes from the  
ambassador that was bound for England; if  
your name be Hamlet, as I am set to know it is.

*Hor. [Reads]* 'Horatio, when thou shalt  
have overlooked this, give these fellows, some  
means to the king: they have letters for him.  
Ere we were two days old at sea, a picture of  
very warlike appointment gave us them. Finding  
ourselves too slow of sail, we put on a  
compell'd valour, and in the grapple I boarded  
them: on the instant they got clear of our ship;  
so I alone became their prisoner. They have  
dealt with me like thieves of mercy: but they  
knew what they did: I am to do a good turn  
for them. Let the king have the letters I have

sent; and repair thou to me with as much speed as thou wouldst fly death. I have words to speak in thine ear will make thee dumb; yet are they much too light for the bore of the matter. These good fellows will bring thee where I am. Rosencrantz and Guildenstern hold their courses for England: of them I have much to tell thee. Farewell.

He that thou knowest thine, HAMLET.  
Come, I will make you way for these your letters;

And do't the speedier, that you may direct me To him from whom you brought them.

[Exit.

SCENE VII. Another room in the castle.

Enter KING and LAERTES.

King. Now must your conscience my acquittance seal,

And you must put me in your heart for friend, Sith you have heard, and with a knowing ear, That he which hath your noble father slain Pursued his life.

Laer. It well appears: but tell me Why you proceeded not against these feats, So criminal and so capital in nature, As by your safety, wisdom, all things else, You mainly were stirr'd up.

King. O, for two special reasons; Which may to you, perhaps, seem much un-

sinew'd,  
But yet to me they are strong. The queen his

mother Lives almost by his looks; and for myself— My virtue or my plague, be it either which— She's so conjunctive to my life and soul, That, as the star moves not but in his sphere, I could not but by her. The other motive, Why to a public count I might not go, Is the great love the general gender bear him; Who, dipping all his faults in their affection, Would, like the spring that turneth wood to stone,

Convert his gyves to graces; so that my arrows, Too slightly timber'd for so loud a wind, Would have reverted to my bow again, And not where I had aim'd them.

Laer. And so have I a noble father lost; A sister driven into desperate terms, Whose worth, if praises may go back again, Stood challenger on mount of all the age For her perfections: but my revenge will come.

King. Break not your sleeps for that: you must not think

That we are made of stuff so flat and dull That we can let our beard be shook with

danger  
And think it pastime. You shortly shall hear more:

I loved your father, and we love ourself; And that, I hope, will teach you to imagine—

Enter a Messenger.

How now! what news!

Mess. Letters, my lord, from Hamlet: That he your majesty; this to the queen.

King. From Hamlet! who brought them?

Mess. Sailors, my lord, they say; I saw them not:

They were given me by Claudio; he received them

Of him that brought them.

King. Laertes, you shall hear them.

Leave us. [Exit Messenger.]

[Reads] 'High and mighty, You shall know I am set naked on your kingdom. To-morrow shall I beg leave to see your kingly eyes: when I shall, first asking your pardon thereunto, recount the occasion of my sudden and more strange return.'

'HAMLET.'

What should this mean? Are all the rest come back?

Or is it some abuse, and no such thing?

Laer. Know you the hand?

King. 'Tis Hamlet's character. 'Naked!' And in a postscript here, he says 'alone.'

Can you advise me?

Laer. I'm lost in it, my lord. But let him come;

It warms the very sickness in my heart, That I shall live and tell him to his teeth, 'Thus didest thou.'

King. If it be so, Laertes— As how should it be so? how otherwise?— Will you be ruled by me?

Laer. Ay, my lord;

So you will not o'errule me to a peace.

King. To thine own peace. If he be now return'd,

As checking at his voyage, and that he means No more to undertake it, I will work him To an exploit, now ripe in my device, Under the which he shall not choose but fall: And for his death no wind of blame shall breathe.

But even his mother shall uncharge the practice And call it accident.

Laer. My lord, I will be ruled;

The rather, if you could devise it so That I might be the organ.

King. It falls right. You have been talk'd of since your travel much, And that in Hamlet's hearing, for a quality Wherein, they say, you shine: your sum of

parts Did not together pluck such envy from him As did that one, and that, in my regard, Of the unworthiest.

Laer. What part is that, my lord?

King. A very riband in the cap of youth, Yet needful too; for youth no less becomes The light and careless livery that it wears Than settled age his sables and his weeds, Importing health and graveness. Two months

since, Here was a gentleman of Normandy:— I've seen myself, and served against the French, And they can well on horseback: but this

gallant Had witchcraft in't; he grew unto his seat; And to such wondrous doing brought his horse, As had he been incorporated and demi-natured With the brave beast: so far he topp'd my thought,

That I, in forgery of shapes and tricks,  
Come short of what he did.

*Laer.* A Norman was't!

*King.* A Norman.

*Laer.* Upon my life, Lamond.

*King.* The very same.

*Laer.* I know him well: he is the brooch  
Indeed  
And gem of all the nation.

*King.* He made confession of you,  
And gave you such a masterly report  
For art and exercise in your defence  
And for your rapier most especial,  
That he cried out, 'twould be a sight indeed,  
If one could match you: the scrimers of their  
nation,

He swore, had neither motion, guard, nor eye,  
If you opposed them. Sir, this report of his  
Did Hamlet so envenom with his envy  
That he could nothing do but wish and beg  
Your sudden coming o'er, to play with him.  
Now, out of this,—

*Laer.* What out of this, my lord?

*King.* Laertes, was your father dear to you?  
Or are you like the painting of a sorrow,  
A face without a heart?

*Laer.* Why ask you this? 110

*King.* Not that I think you did not love  
your father;

But that I know love is begun by time;  
And that I see, in passages of proof,  
Time qualifies the spark and fire of it.  
There lives within the very flame of love  
A kind of wick or snuff that will abate it;  
And nothing is at a like goodness still;  
For goodness, growing to a pluriy,  
Dies in his own too much: that we would do,  
We should do when we would; for this 'would'  
changes 120

And hath abatements and delays as many  
As there are tongues, are hands, are accidents;  
And then this 'should' is like a spendthrift sigh,  
That hurts by easing. But, to the quick o' the  
ulcer:—

Hamlet comes back: what would you undertake,  
To show yourself your father's son in deed  
More than in words?

*Laer.* To cut his throat i' the church.

*King.* No place, indeed, should murder sanctu-  
arize;

Revenge should have no bounds. But, good

*Laertes,*

Will you do this, keep close within your

chamber. 130

Hamlet return'd shall know you are come

home;

We'll put on those shall praise your excellence

And set a double varnish on the fame

The Frenchman gave you, bring you in fine to-  
gether

And wager on your heads: he, being remiss,  
Most generous and free from all contriving,  
Will not peruse the foil; so that, with ease,  
Or with a little shuffling, you may choose  
A sword unbated, and in a pass of practice  
Require him for your father.

*Laer.* I will do't: 140

And, for that purpose, I'll anoint my sword.

bought an unction of a mountebank,  
So mortal that, but dip a knife in it,  
Where it draws blood no cataplasm so rare,  
Collected from all simples that have virtue  
Under the moon, can save the thing from  
death.

That is but scratch'd withal: I'll touch my  
point  
With this contagion, that, if I gall him  
slightly,  
It may be death.

*King.* Let's further think of this;  
Weigh what convenience both of time and  
means 150

May fit us to our shape: if this should fail,  
And that our drift look through our bad per-  
formance,

'Twere better not assay'd: therefore this project  
Should have a back or second, that might hold,  
If this should blast in proof. Soft! let me see:  
We'll make a solemn wager on your cunning:  
I ha't:

When in your motion you are hot and dry—  
As make your bouts more violent to that end—  
And that he calls for drink, I'll have prepared  
him 160  
A chalice for the nonce, whereon but sipping,  
If he by chance escape your venom'd stuck,  
Our purpose may hold there.

*Enter QUEEN.*

How now, sweet queen!

*Queen.* One woe doth tread upon another's  
heel,

So fast they follow: your sister's drown'd,  
*Laertes.*

*Laer.* Drown'd! O, where!

*Queen.* There is a willow grows salant a  
brook,

That shows his hoar leaves in the glassy stream;  
There with fantastic garlands did she come

Of crow-flowers, nettles, daisies, and long  
purples 170

That liberal shepherds give a grosser name,  
But our cold maids do dead men's fingers call  
them:

There, on the pendent boughs her coronet weeds  
Clambering to hang, an envious silver broke;

When down her weedy trophies and herself  
Fell in the weeping brook. Her clothes spread  
wide;

And, mermaid-like, awhile they bore her up;  
Which time she chanted snatches of old tunes;

As one incapable of her own distress,  
Or like a creature native and indued 180

Unto that element: but long it could not be  
Till that her garments, heavy with their drink,  
Pul'd the poor wretch from her melodious lay  
To muddy death.

*Laer.* Alas, then, she is drown'd!

*Queen.* Drown'd, drown'd.

*Laer.* Too much of water hast thou, poor

And therefore I forbid my tears: but yet  
It is our trick; nature her custom holds.

Let shame say what it will: when these are  
gone,

The woman will be out. Adieu, my lord: <sup>39</sup>  
I have a speech of fire, that slain would blame,  
But that this folly doubts it. [Exit.]

*Ham.* Let's follow, Gertrude:  
How much I had to do to calm his rage!  
Now fear I this will give it start again;  
Therefore let's follow.

## ACT V.

## SCENE I. A churchyard.

*Enter two Clowns, with spades, &c.*

*First Clo.* Is she to be buried in Christian burial that wiffully weeds her own salvation?

*Sec. Clo.* I tell thee she is; and therefore make her grave straight: the crowner hath sat on her, and finds it Christian burial.

*First Clo.* How can that be, unless she drowned herself in her own defence?

*Sec. Clo.* Why, tis found so.

*First Clo.* It must be 'se offendendo': it cannot be else. For here lies the point: if I drown myself wittingly, it argues an act: and an act hath three branches; is it, to act, to do, and to perform: argal, she drowned herself wittingly.

*Sec. Clo.* Nay, but hear you, Goodman deliver—

*First Clo.* Give me leave. Here lies the water; good: here stands the man; good: if the man go to this water, and drown himself, it is, will he, nill he, he goes,—mark you that; but if the water come to him and drown him, he drowns not himself: argal, he that is not guilty of his own death shortens not his own life.

*Sec. Clo.* But is this law?

*First Clo.* Ay, marry, is't; crowner's quest law.

*Sec. Clo.* Will you ha' the truth on't? If this had not been a gentlewoman, she should have been buried out o' Christian burial.

*First Clo.* Why, there thou say'st: and the more pity that great folk should have countenance in this world to drown or hang themselves, more than their even Christian. Come, my spade. There is no ancient gentlemen but gardeners, ditchers, and grave-makers: they hold up Adam's profession.

*Sec. Clo.* Was he a gentleman?

*First Clo.* A' was the first that ever bore arms.

*Sec. Clo.* Why, he had none.

*First Clo.* What, art a heathen? How dost thou understand the Scripture? The Scripture says 'Adam digged': could he dig without arms? I'll put another question to thee: if thou answer'st not to the purpose, confess thyself.

*Sec. Clo.* Go to.

*First Clo.* What is he that builds stronger than either the mason, the shipwright, or the carpenter?

*Sec. Clo.* The gallows-maker: for that frame supports him now.

*First Clo.* A' like thy wit well, in good faith: the gallows does well; but how does it well? it does well to those that do ill: now thou dost ill

to say the gallows is built stronger than the church: argal, the gallows may do well to thee. To't again, come.

*Sec. Clo.* 'Who builds stronger than a mason, a shipwright, or a carpenter?'

*First Clo.* Ay, tell me that, and unyoke.

*Sec. Clo.* Marry, now I can tell.

*First Clo.* To't.

*Sec. Clo.* Mass, I cannot tell.

*Enter HAMLET and HORATIO, at a distance.*

*First Clo.* Oudgel thy brains no more about it, for your dull ass will not mend his pace with beating; and, when you are asked this question next, say 'a grave-maker': the houses that he makes last till doomsday. Go, get thee to 'Yangham: fetch me a stoup of liquor.

[Exit *Sec. Clo.*, singing.]

In youth, when I did love, did love,  
Methought it was very sweet,

To contract, O, the time, for, ah, my behave,  
O, methought, there was nothing meet.

*Ham.* Has this fellow no feeling of his business, that he sings at grave-making?

*Hor.* Custom hath made it in him a property of easiness.

*Ham.* 'Tis even so: the hand of little employment hath the daintier sense.

*First Clo.* [Sings]

But age, with his stealing steps,  
Hath claw'd me in his clutch,

And hath shipped me into the land,  
As if I had never been such.

[Throws up a skull.]

*Ham.* That skull had a tongue in it, and could sing once: how the knave jowls it to the ground, as if it were Cain's jaw-bone, that did the first murder! It might be the pate of a politician, which this ass now o'er-reaches; one that would circumvent God, might it not?

*Hor.* It might, my lord.

*Ham.* Or of a courtier; which could say 'Good morrow, sweet lord! How dost thou, good lord?' This might be my lord such-a-one, that praised my lord such-a-one's horse, when he meant to beg it; might it not?

*Hor.* Ay, my lord.

*Ham.* Why, even so: and now my Lady Worm's; chapless, and knocked about the mazard with a sexton's spade: here's fine revulsion, as we had the trick to see't. Did these bones cost no more the breeding, but to play at leggats with 'em? mine ache to think on't. <sup>302</sup>

*First Clo.* [Sings]

A pick-axe, and a spade, a spade,  
For and a shroud-bone:

O, a pit of clay for to be made  
For such a guest is meet.

[Throws up another skull.]

*Ham.* There's another: why may not that be the skull of a lawyer? Where be his quidities now, his quillets, his cases, his tenures, and his tricks? why does he utter this rude knave now to mock him about the bones with a dirty shovel, and will not tell him of his action of battery? Ham! This fellow might be in a time a great lawyer of his land, while he



statutes, his recognizances, his fines, his double vouchers, his recoveries: is this the fine of his fines, and the recovery of his recoveries, to have his fine pass full of fine dirt? will his vouchers vouch him no more of his purchases, and double ones too, than the length and breadth of a pair of indentures? The very conveyances of his lands will hardly lie in this box; and must the inheritor himself have no more, ha?

*Hor.* Not a jot more, my lord.

*Ham.* Is not parchment made of sheep-skins?

*Hor.* Ay, my lord, and of calf-skins too.

*Ham.* They are sheep and calves which seek out assurance in that. I will speak to this fellow. Whose grave's this, sirrah?

*First Clo.* Mine, sir.

[*Sings*] O, a pit of clay for to be made

For such a guest is meet.

*Ham.* I think it be thine, indeed; for thou liest in't.

*First Clo.* You lie out on't, sir, and therefore it is not yours: for my part, I do not lie in't, and yet it is mine.

*Ham.* Thou dost lie in't, to be in't and say it is thine: 'tis for the dead, not for the quick; therefore thou liest.

*First Clo.* 'Tis a quick lie, sir; 'twill away again, from me to you.

*Ham.* What man dost thou dig it for?

*First Clo.* For no man, sir.

*Ham.* What woman, then?

*First Clo.* For none, neither.

*Ham.* Who is to be buried in't?

*First Clo.* One that was a woman, sir; but, rest her soul, she's dead.

*Ham.* How absolute the knave is! we must speak by the card, or equivocation will undo us. By the Lord, Horatio, these three years I have taken note of it; the age is grown so picked that the toe of the peasant comes so near the heel of the courtier, he galls his kibe. How long hast thou been a grave-maker?

*First Clo.* Of all the days i' the year, I came to't that day that our last king Hamlet overcame Fortinbras.

*Ham.* How long is that since?

*First Clo.* Cannot you tell that? every fool can tell that: it was the very day that young Hamlet was born; he that is mad, and sent into England.

*Ham.* Ay, marry, why was he sent into England?

*First Clo.* Why, because he was mad: he shall recover his wits there; or, if he do not, it's no great matter there.

*Ham.* Why?

*First Clo.* 'Twill not be seen in him there: there the men are as mad as he.

*Ham.* How came he mad?

*First Clo.* Very strangely, they say.

*Ham.* How strangely?

*First Clo.* Faith, e'en with losing his wits.

*Ham.* Upon what ground?

*First Clo.* Why, here in Denmark: I have seen sexton here, man and boy, thirty years.

*Ham.* How long will a man lie i' the earth ere he rot?

*First Clo.* I faith, if he be not rotten before he die—as we have many pocky courses now—a-days, that will scarce hold the laying-in—he will last you some eight year or nine year: a tanner will last you nine year.

*Ham.* Why he more than another?

*First Clo.* Why, sir, his hide is so tanned with his trade, that he will keep out water a great while; and your water is a sure decayer of your whorson dead body. Here's a skull now; this skull has lain in the earth three and twenty years.

*Ham.* Whose was it?

*First Clo.* A whorson mad fellow's it was: whose do you think it was?

*Ham.* Nay, I know not.

*First Clo.* A pestilence on him for a mad rogue! a' poured a flagon of Rhenish on my head once. This same skull, sir, was Yorick's skull, the king's jester.

*Ham.* This!

*First Clo.* Een that.

*Ham.* Let me see. [*Takes the skull.*] Alas, poor Yorick! I knew him, Horatio: a fellow of infinite jest, of most excellent fancy: he hath borne me on his back a thousand times; and now, how abhorred in my imagination it is! my gorge rises at it. Here hung those lips that I have kissed I know not how oft. Where be your gibes now? your gambols? your songs? your flashes of merriment, that were wont to set the table on a roar? Not one now, to mock your own grinning? quite chap-fallen? Now get you to my lady's chamber, and tell her, let her paint an inch thick, to this favour she must come; make her laugh at that. Faithless, Horatio, tell me one thing.

*Hor.* What's that, my lord?

*Ham.* Dost thou think Alexander looked o' this fashion i' the earth?

*Hor.* Een so.

*Ham.* And smelt so? pah!

[*Puts down the skull.*]

*Hor.* Een so, my lord.

*Ham.* To what base uses we may return, Horatio! Why may not imagination trace the noble dust of Alexander, till he find it stopping a bung-hole?

*Hor.* 'Twere to consider too curiously, to consider so.

*Ham.* No, faith, not a jot; but to follow him thither with modesty enough, and modesty to lead it; as thus: Alexander died, Alexander was buried, Alexander returneth into dust; the dust is earth; of earth we make loam; and why of that loam, whence he was converted, might they not stop a beer-barrel?

Impetuous Caesar, dead and turn'd to clay,

Might stop a hole to keep the wind away:

O, that that earth, which kept the world in awe,

Should patch a wall to expel the winter's flaw!

But soft! but soft! aside: here comes the king.

*Enter Priests, &c. in procession; the Ghosts of OPHELIA, LAERTES and MOURNING FOLLOWERS; KING, QUEEN, their friends, &c.*

The queen, the courtiers: who is this they follow?



My sea-gown scarf'd about me, in the dark  
 Gropp'd it to find out them; had my desire,  
 Finger'd their pocket, and in fine withdrew  
 To mine own room again; making so bold,  
 My fears forgetting manners, to unseal  
 Their grand commission; where I found,

Horatio,—

O royal knavery!—an exact command,  
 Larded with many several sorts of reasons  
 Importing Denmark's health and England's  
 too,

With, ho! such bugs and goblins in my life,  
 That, on the supervise, no leisure bated,  
 No, not to stay the grinding of the axe,  
 My head should be struck off.

Hor. Is't possible?

Ham. Here's the commission: read it at  
 more leisure.

But wilt thou hear me how I did proceed?

Hor. I beseech you.

Ham. Being thus be-netted round with  
 villainies,—

Ever I could make a prologue to my brains, 30  
 They had begun the play—I sat me down,  
 Devis'd a new commission, wrote it fair:  
 I once did hold it, as our statists do,  
 A baseness to write fair and labour'd much  
 How to forget that learning, but, sir, now  
 It did me yeoman's service: wilt thou know  
 The effect of what I wrote?

Hor. Ay, good my lord.

Ham. An earnest conjuration from the king,  
 As England was his faithful tributary,  
 As love between them like the palm might  
 flourish, 40

As peace should still her wheaten garland wear  
 And stand a comma 'tween their amities,  
 And many such-like 'As'es of great charge,  
 That, on the view and knowing of these  
 contents,

Without debatement further, more or less,  
 He should the bearers put to sudden death,  
 Not shriving-time allow'd.

Hor. How was this seal'd?

Ham. Why, even in that was heaven or-  
 dinant.

I had my father's signet in my purse,  
 Which was the model of that Danish seal; 50  
 I fold'd the writ up in form of the other,  
 Subscribed it, gave't the impression, plac'd it  
 safely,  
 The chanceling never known. Now, the next  
 day

Was our sea-fight; and what to this was  
 sequent

Thou know'st already.

Hor. So Guildenstern and Rosencrantz go  
 to't.

Ham. Why, man, they did make love to  
 this employment;

They are not near my conscience; their defeat  
 Does by their own inaction grow:

'Tis dangerous when the baser nature comes so  
 Between the paw and fell incensed points  
 Of mighty opposites.

Hor. Why, what a king is this!

Ham. Does it not, think'st thou, stand me  
 now upon—

He that hath kill'd my king and whored my  
 mother,

Popp'd in between the election and my hopes,  
 Thrown out his angle for my proper life,

And with such cozenage—is't not perfect con-  
 science,

To quit him with this arm? and is't not to be  
 damn'd,

To let this canker of our nature come

In further evil?

Hor. It must be shortly known to him from  
 England 70

What is the issue of the business there.

Ham. It will be short: the interim is mine;  
 And a man's life's no more than to say 'One.'

But I am very sorry, good Horatio,

That to Laertes I forgot myself;

For, by the image of my cause, I see

The portraiture of his: I'll court his favours:

But, sure, the bravery of his grief did put me  
 Into a towering passion.

Hor. Peace! who comes here? 80

Enter OSRIC.

Os. Your lordship is right welcome back  
 to Denmark.

Ham. I humbly thank you, sir. Dost know  
 this water-fly?

Hor. No, my good lord.

Ham. Thy state is the more gracious; for  
 'tis a vice to know him. He hath much land,  
 and fertile: let a beast be lord of beasts, and  
 his crib shall stand at the king's mess: 'tis a  
 chough; but, as I say, spacious in the posses-  
 sion of dirt. 90

Os. Sweet lord, if your lordship were at  
 leisure, I should impart a thing to you from  
 his majesty.

Ham. I will receive it, sir, with all diligence  
 of spirit. Put your bonnet to his right use: 'tis  
 for the head.

Os. I thank your lordship, it is very hot.

Ham. No, believe me, 'tis very cold; the  
 wind is northerly. 99

Os. It is indifferent cold, my lord, indeed.

Ham. But yet methinks it is very sultry  
 and hot for my complexion.

Os. Exceedingly, my lord; it is very sultry,—  
 as'twere,—I cannot tell how. But, my lord, his  
 majesty bade me signify to you that he has laid  
 a great wager on your head: sir, this is the  
 matter,—

Ham. I beseech you, remember—

[Hamlet moves him to put on his hat.

Os. Nay, good my lord; for mine ease, in  
 good faith. Sir, here is newly come to court  
 Laertes; believe me, an absolute gentleman,  
 full of most excellent differences, of very soft  
 society and great showing; indeed, to speak  
 feelingly of him, he is the card or calendar of  
 gentry, for you shall find in him the continuance  
 of what part a gentleman would see.

Ham. Sir, his deficiency suffers me to pos-  
 sition in you; though, I know, to divide him  
 inventorially would dish the arithmetic of  
 memory, and yet but yaw neither in respect  
 of his quick sail. But, in the vanity of ap-  
 pointment, I take him to be a seal of great articles;

and his infusion of such death and remorse, as, to make true eliction of him, his semblable is his subject; and who else would trace him, his unchange, nothing more.

*Ger.* Your lordship speaks most infallibly of him.

*Ham.* The concernancy, sir! why do we wrap the gentleman in our more raver breath?

*Ger.* Sir!

*Hor.* Is 't not possible to understand in another tongue? You will do't, sir, really.

*Ham.* What imports the nomination of this gentleman?

*Ger.* Of Laertes?

*Hor.* His purse is empty already; all's golden words are spent.

*Ham.* Of him, sir.

*Ger.* I know you are not ignorant—

*Ham.* I would you did, sir; yet, in faith, if you did, it would not much approve me. Well, sir!

*Ger.* You are not ignorant of what excellence Laertes is—

*Ham.* I dare not confess that, lest I should compare with him in excellence; but, to know a man well, were to know himself.

*Ger.* I mean, sir, for his weapon; but in the imputation laid on him by them, in his meed he's unfellowed.

*Ham.* What's his weapon?

*Ger.* Rapier and dagger.

*Ham.* That's two of his weapons; but, well.

*Ger.* The king, sir, hath wagered with him six Barbary horses; against the which he has imposed, as I take it, six French rapiers and poniards, with their assigns, as girdle, hangers, and so; three of the carriages, in faith, are very dear to fancy, very responsive to the hilts, most delicate carriages, and of very liberal conceit.

*Ham.* What call you the carriages?

*Ger.* I knew you must be edified by the margent as you had done.

*Ger.* The carriages, sir, are the hangers.

*Ham.* The phrase would be more german to the matter, if we could carry cannon by our sides: I would it might be hangers till then. But, on: six Barbary horses against six French swords, their assigns, and three liberal-conceited carriages; that's the French bet against the Danish. Why is this 'imposed,' as you call it?

*Ger.* The king, sir, hath laid, that in a dozen passes between yourself and him, he shall not exceed you three hits: he hath laid on twelve for nine; and it would come to immediate trial, if your lordship would vouchsafe the answer.

*Ham.* How if I answer 'no'?

*Ger.* I mean, my lord, the opposition of your person in trial.

*Ham.* Sir, I will walk here in the hall: if it please his majesty, 'tis the breathing time of day with me; let the foils be brought, the gentleman willing, and the king hold his purpose, I will win for him an I can; if not, I will quit nothing but my shame and the odd hits.

*Ger.* Shall I deliver you o'en so?

*Ham.* Tush, tush, sir; after what flourish your nature will.

*Ger.* I commend my duty to your lordship.

*Ham.* Yours, yours. [*Exit Ger.*] He does well to commend it himself; there are no tongues else for's turn.

*Hor.* This lapwing runs away with the shell on his head.

*Ham.* He did comply with his dug, before he sucked it. Thus has he—and many more of the same breed that I know the daisy age dotes on—only got the tune of the time and outward habit of encounter; a kind of yeasty collection, which carries them through and through the most fiond and winnowed opinions; and do but blow them to their trial, the bubbles are out.

*Enter a Lord.*

*Lord.* My lord, his majesty commended him to you by young Osric, who brings back to him, that you attend him in the hall: he sends to know if your pleasure hold to play with Laertes, or that you will take longer time.

*Ham.* I am constant to my purposes; they follow the king's pleasure: if his fitness speaks, mine is ready; now or whensoever, provided I be so able as now.

*Lord.* The king and queen and all are coming down.

*Ham.* In happy time.

*Lord.* The queen desires you to use some gentle entertainment to Laertes before you fall to play.

*Ham.* She well instructs me. [*Exit Lord.*]

*Hor.* You will lose this wager, my lord.

*Ham.* I do not think so; since he went into France, I have been in continual practice; I shall win at the odds. But thou wouldst not think how ill all's here about my heart: but it is no matter.

*Hor.* Nay, good my lord,—

*Ham.* It is but foolery; but it is such a kind of gain-giving, as would perhaps trouble a woman.

*Hor.* If your mind dislike any thing, obey it: I will forestall their repair hither, and say you are not fit.

*Ham.* Not a whit, we defy augury: there's a special providence in the fall of a sparrow. If it be now, 'tis not to come; if it be not to come, it will be now; if it be not now, yet it will come: the readiness is all: since no man has aught of what he leaves, what is't to leave betimes? Let be.

*Enter KING, QUEEN, LAERTES, LORDS, OSRIC, and Attendants with foils, &c.*

*King.* Come, Hamlet, come, and take this hand from me.

[*The King puts Laertes' hand into Hamlet's.*]

*Ham.* Give me your pardon, sir: I've done you wrong;

But pardon't, as you are a gentleman.

This presence knows, And you must needs have heard, how I am punished

With sore distraction. What I have done, That might your nature, honesty and emotion

Roughly awake, I here proclaim was murder. Was't Hamlet wrong'd Laertes? Never!

If Hamlet from himself be taken away,

And when he's not himself does wrong Laertes,  
Then Hamlet does it not, Hamlet denies it.  
Who does it, then? His madness: if't be so,  
Hamlet is of the faction that is wrong'd;  
His madness is poor Hamlet's enemy. 250

Sir, in this audience,  
Let my disclaiming from a purposed evil  
Free me so far in your most generous thoughts,  
That I have shot mine arrow o'er the house,  
And hurt my brother.

Laer. I am satisfied in nature,  
Whose motive, in this case, should stir me  
most

To my revenge: but in my terms of honour  
I stand aloof; and will no reconciliation,  
Till by some elder masters, of known honour,  
I have a voice and precedent of peace, 260  
To keep my name unpured. But till that time,  
I do receive your offer'd love like love,  
And will not wrong it.

Ham. I embrace it freely;  
And will this brother's wager frankly play.  
Give us the foils. Come on.

Laer. Come, one for me.  
Ham. I'll be your foil, Laertes: in mine  
ignorance

Your skill shall, like a star i' the darkest night,  
Stick fiery off indeed.

Laer. You mock me, sir.

Ham. No, by this hand.  
King. Give them the foils, young Osric.  
Cousin Hamlet, 270

You know the wager!  
Ham. Very well, my lord;

Your grace hath laid the odds o' the weaker  
side.

King. I do not fear it; I have seen you  
both:

But since he is better'd, we have therefore  
odds.

Laer. This is too heavy, let me see another.  
Ham. This likes me well. These foils have  
all a length! [They prepare to play.]

Os. Ay, my good lord.  
King. Set me the stoups of wine upon that  
table.

If Hamlet give the first or second hit,  
Or quit in answer of the third exchange, 280

Let all the battlements their ordnance fire;  
The king shall drink to Hamlet's better breath;

And in the cup an union shall he throw,  
Richer than that which four successive kings  
In Denmark's crown have worn. Give me the  
cups;

And let the kettle to the trumpet speak,  
The trumpet to the cannoneer without,  
The cannons to the heavens, the heavens to  
earth.

'Now the king drinks to Hamlet.' Come,  
begin:

And you, the judges, bear a wary eye. 290

Ham. Come on, sir.

Laer. Come, my lord. [They play.]

Ham. One.

Laer. No.

Ham. Judgement.

Os. A hit, a very palpable hit.

Well; again.

King. Stay; give me drink. Hamlet, this  
pearl is mine;  
Here's to thy health.

[Trumpets sound, and cannon shot off  
within.]

Give him the cup.  
Ham. I'll play this bout first; set it by  
awhile.

Come. [They play.] Another hit; what say  
you?

Laer. A touch, a touch, I do confess.  
King. Our son shall win.

Queen. He's fat, and scant of breath.  
Here, Hamlet, take my napkin, rub thy brows:  
The queen carouses to thy fortune, Hamlet.

Ham. Good madam!

King. Gertrude, do not drink.

Queen. I will, my lord; I pray you, pardon  
me.

King. [Aside] It is the poison'd cup: it is  
too late.

Ham. I dare not drink yet, madam; by  
and by.

Queen. Come, let me wipe thy face.

Laer. My lord, I'll hit him now.

King. I do not think't.

Laer. [Aside] And yet 'tis almost 'gainst  
my conscience.

Ham. Come, for the third, Laertes: you but  
dally;

I pray you, pass with your best violence;  
I am afraid you make a wanton of me. 320

Laer. Say you so! come on. [They play.]

Os. Nothing, neither way.

Laer. Have at you now!

[Laertes wounds Hamlet; then, in scuf-  
fing, they change rapiers, and Hamlet  
wounds Laertes.]

King. Part them; they are incensed.

Ham. Nay, come, again. [The Queen falls.]

Os. Look to the queen there, ho!

Hor. They bleed on both sides. How is it,  
my lord?

Os. How is't, Laertes?

Laer. Why, as a woodcock to mine own  
springe, Osric;

I am justly kill'd with mine own treachery.

Ham. How does the queen?

King. She swoonds to see them bleed.

Queen. No, no, the drink, the drink.—O my  
dear Hamlet,— 330

The drink, the drink! I am poison'd. [Dies.]

Ham. O villainy! Ho! let the door be lock'd:  
Treachery! Seek it out.

Laer. It is here, Hamlet: Hamlet, thou art  
slain;

No medicine in the world can do thee good;  
In thee there is not half an hour of life:  
The treacherous instrument is in thy hand,  
Unbated and evenenm'd: the foul practice  
Hath turn'd itself on me; lo, here I lie, 340  
Never to rise again: thy mother's poison'd!  
I can no more: the king, the king's to blame.

Ham. The point envenom'd too!

Then, venom, to thy work. [Seats the King.]

All. Treason! treason!

King. O, yet defend me, friends; I am but  
hurt.

*Ham.* Here, thou incestuous, murderous, damned Dane,  
Drink off this potion. Is thy union here?  
Follow my mother. *[King dies.]*

*Laer.* He is justly served;  
It is a poison temper'd by himself.  
Exchange forgiveness with me, noble Hamlet:  
Mine and my father's death come not upon thee,  
Nor thine on me! *[Dies.]*

*Ham.* Heaven make thee free of it! I follow thee.

I am dead, Horatio. Wretched queen, adieu!  
You that look pale and tremble at this chance,  
That are but mutes or audience to this act,  
Had I but time—as this fell sergeant, death,  
Is strict in his arrest—O, I could tell you—  
But let it be. Horatio, I am dead;  
Thou livest; report me and my cause aright  
To the unsatisfied.

*Hor.* Never believe it: 351  
I am more an antique Roman than a Dane:  
Here's yet some liquor left.

*Ham.* As thou'rt a man,  
Give me the cup: let go; by heaven, I'll have't.  
O good Horatio, what a wounded name,  
Things standing thus unknown, shall live be-  
hind me!

If thou didst ever hold me in thy heart,  
Absent thee from felicity awhile,  
And in this harsh world draw thy breath in  
pain,  
To tell my story.

*[March afar off, and shot within.]*  
What warlike noise is this?

*Or.* Young Fortinbras, with conquest come  
from Poland, 361  
To the ambassadors of England gives  
This warlike volley.

*Ham.* O, I die, Horatio;  
The potent poison quite o'er-crows my spirit:  
I cannot live to hear the news from England;  
But I do prophesy the election lights  
On Fortinbras: he has my dying voice;  
So tell him, with the occurrents, more and less,  
Which have solicited. The rest is silence. *[Dies.]*

*Hor.* Now cracks a noble heart. Good night,  
sweet prince; 370  
And lights of angels sing thee to thy rest!  
Why does the drum come hither?

*[March within.]*

*Enter FORTINBRAS, the English Ambassadors,  
and others.*

*Fort.* Where is this sight?

*Hor.* What is it ye would see?

If aught of woe or wonder, cease your search.  
*Fort.* This quarry cries on havoc. O proud  
death,

What feast is toward in thine eternal cell,  
That thou so many princes at a shot  
So bloodily hast struck!

*First Amb.* The sight is {  
And our affairs from England come {  
The ears are senseless that sho  
hearing,

To tell him his commandment is full  
That Rosencrantz and Guildenstern:  
Where should we have our thanks?

*Hor.* Not from his mouth,  
Had it the ability of life to thank you:  
He never gave commandment for their death.  
But since, so jump upon this bloody question,  
You from the Polack wars, and you from Eng-  
land,

Are here arrived, give order that these bodies  
High on a stage be placed to the view; 389  
And let me speak to the yet unknowing world  
How these things came about: so shall you hear  
Of carnal, bloody, and unnatural acts,  
Of accidental judgements, casual slaughters,  
Of deaths put on by cunning and forced cause,  
And, in this upshot, purposes mistook  
Fall'n on the inventors' heads: all this can I  
Truly deliver.

*Fort.* Let us haste to hear it,  
And call the noblest to the audience.  
For me, with sorrow I embrace my fortune:  
I have some rights of memory in this kingdom,  
Which now to claim my vantage doth invite  
me. 401

*Hor.* Of that I shall have also cause to  
speak,  
And from his mouth whose voice will draw on  
more:  
But let this same be presently perform'd,  
Even while men's minds are wild; lest more  
mischance,  
On plots and errors, happen.

*Fort.* Let four captains  
Bear Hamlet, like a soldier, to the stage;  
For he was likely, had he been put on,  
To have proved most royally: and, for his pas-  
sage,

The soldiers' music and the rites of war 410  
Speak loudly for him.

Take up the bodies: such a sight as this  
Becomes the field, but here shows much amiss.  
Go, bid the soldiers shoot.

*[A dead march. Ezeunt, bearing off the  
dead bodies; after which a peal of ord-  
nance is shot off.]*

# KING LEAR

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

LEAR, king of Britain.  
KING OF FRANCE.  
DUKE OF BURGUNDY.  
DUKE OF CORNWALL.  
DUKE OF ALBANY.  
EARL OF KENT.  
EARL OF GLOUCESTER.  
EDGAR, son to Gloucester.  
EDMUND, bastard son to Gloucester.  
CURAN, a courtier.  
Old Man, tenant to Gloucester.  
Doctor.  
Fool.

OSWALD, steward to Goneril.  
A Captain employed by Edmund.  
Gentleman attendant on Cordelia.  
A Herald.  
Servants to Cornwall.

GONERIL,  
REGAN,  
CORDELIA, } daughters to Lear.

Knights of Lear's train, Captains, Messengers,  
Soldiers, and Attendants.

SCENE: Britain.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I. *King Lear's palace.*

*Enter KENT, GLOUCESTER, and EDMUND.*

*Kent.* I thought the king had more affected the Duke of Albany than Cornwall.

*Glou.* It did always seem so to us: but now, in the division of the kingdom, it appears not which of the dukes he values most; for equalities are so weighed, that curiosity in neither can make choice of either's moiety.

*Kent.* Is not this your son, my lord?

*Glou.* His breeding, sir, hath been at my charge: I have so often blushed to acknowledge him, that now I am brazed to it.

*Kent.* I cannot conceive you.

*Glou.* Sir, this young fellow's mother could: whereupon she grew round-wombed, and had, indeed, sir, a son for her cradle ere she had a husband for her bed. Do you smell a fault?

*Kent.* I cannot wish the fault undone, the issue of it being so proper.

*Glou.* But I have, sir, a son by order of law, some year older than this, who yet is no dearer in my account: though this knave came something saucily into the world before he was sent for, yet was his mother fair; there was good sport at his making, and the whoreson must be acknowledged. Do you know this noble gentleman, Edmund?

*Edm.* No, my lord.

*Glou.* My lord of Kent: remember him hereafter as my honourable friend.

*Edm.* My services to your lordship.

*Kent.* I must love you, and sue to know you better.

*Edm.* Sir, I shall stand deserving.

*Glou.* He hath been out nine years, and away he shall again. The king is coming.

*Sennet. Enter KING LEAR, CORNWALL, ALBANY, GONERIL, REGAN, CORDELIA, and Attendants.*

*Lear.* Attend the lords of France and Burgundy, Gloucester.

*Glou.* I shall, my liege.

[*Exit Gloucester and Edmund.*]

*Lear.* Meantime we shall express our darker purpose.

Give me the map there. Know that we have divided

In three our kingdom: and 'tis our fast intent To shake all cares and business from our age; Conferring them on younger strengths, while

we <sup>41</sup> Unburthen'd crawl toward death. Our son of Cornwall,

And you, our no less loving son of Albany, We have this hour a constant will to publish Our daughters' several dowers, that future strife May be prevented now. The princes, France and Burgundy,

Great rivals in our youngest daughter's love, Long in our court have made their amorous sojourn,

And here are to be answer'd. Tell me, my daughters,—

Since now we will divest us, both of rule, <sup>50</sup> Interest of territory, cares of state,—

Which of you shall we say doth love us most? That we our largest bounty may extend

Where nature doth with merit challenge. Goneril,

Our eldest-born, speak first.

*Gon.* Sir, I love you more than words can wield the matter;

Dearer than eye-sight, space, and liberty: Beyond what can be valued, rich or rare;

No less than life, with grace, health, beauty,  
honour;  
As much as child's'er loved, or father found;  
A love that makes breath poor, and speech  
unable;

Beyond all manner of so much I love you.  
*Cor.* [*Aside*] What shall Cordelia do? Love,  
and be silent.

*Lear.* Of all these bounds, even from this  
line to this,  
With shadowy forests and with champains  
rich'd,

With plenteous rivers and wide-skirted meads,  
Warmate thee lady: to thine and Albany's issue  
Be this perpetual. What says our second  
daughter?

Our dearest Regan, wife to Cornwall? Speak.

*Reg.* Sir, I am made 70  
Of the self-same metal that my sister is,  
And prize me at her worth. In my true heart  
I find she names my very deed of love;  
Only she comes too short; that I profess  
Myself an enemy to all other joys,  
Which the most precious square of sense

possesses;  
And find I am alone felicitate  
In your dear highness' love.

*Cor.* [*Aside*] Then poor Cordelia!  
And yet not so; since, I am sure, my love's  
More richer than my tongue. 80

*Lear.* To thee and thine hereditary ever  
Remain this ample third of our fair kingdom;  
No less in space, validity, and pleasure,  
Than that conferr'd on Goneril. Now, our joy,  
Although the last, not least; to whose young  
love

The vines of France and milk of Burgundy  
Strive to be interest'd; what can you say to  
draw

A third more opulent than your sisters? Speak.

*Cor.* Nothing, my lord.

*Lear.* Nothing! 90

*Cor.* Nothing.

*Lear.* Nothing will come of nothing: speak  
again.

*Cor.* Unhappy that I am, I cannot heave  
My heart into my mouth: I love your majesty  
According to my bond; nor more nor less.

*Lear.* How, how, Cordelia! mend your  
speech a little.

Let it may mark your fortunes.

*Cor.* Good my lord,  
You have begot me, bred me, loved me: I  
Return these duties back as are right fit.

Obey you, love you, and most honour you. 100

Why have my sisters husbands, if they say  
They love you all? Haply, when I shall wed,  
That hand whose hand must take my plight  
shall carry

Half my love with him, half my care and duty:  
Sure, I shall never marry like my sisters,  
To love my father all.

*Lear.* But goes thy heart with this?

*Cor.* Ay, good my lord.

*Lear.* So young, and so untraded?

*Cor.* So young, my lord, and true.

*Lear.* Let it be so; thy truth, then, be thy  
dower. 110

For, by the sacred radiance of the sun,  
The mysteries of Hecate, and the night;  
By all the operation of the orbs  
From whom we do exist, and cease to be;  
Here I disclaim all my paternal care,  
Propinquity and property of blood,  
And as a stranger to my heart and m—  
Hold thee, from this, for ever. The barbarous  
Scythian,

Or he that makes his generation mope  
To gorge his appetite, shall to my bosom  
Be as well neighbour'd, pitied, and relieved,  
As thou my sometime daughter.

*Kent.* Good my liege,—  
*Lear.* Peace, Kent!

Come not between the dragon and his wrath.  
I loved her most, and thought to set my rest  
On her kind nursery. Hence, and avoid my  
sight!

So be my grave my peace, as here I give  
Her father's heart from her! Call France; who  
stirs!

Call Burgundy. Cornwall and Albany,  
With my two daughters' dowers digest this  
third: 120

Let pride, which she calls plainness, marry her.  
I do invest you jointly with my power,  
Pre-eminence, and all the large effects  
That troop with majesty. Ourself, by monthly  
course,

With reservation of an hundred knights,  
By you to be sustain'd, shall our abode  
Make with you by due turns. Only we still  
retain

The name, and all the additions to a king;  
The sway, revenue, execution of the rest,  
Beloved sons, be yours: which to confirm, 130  
This coronet part betwixt you.

[*Giving the crown.*  
*Kent.* Royal Lear,

Whom I have ever honour'd as my king,  
Loved as my father, as my master follow'd,  
As my great patron thought on in my prayers,—

*Lear.* The bow is bent and drawn, make  
from the shaft.

*Kent.* Let it fall rather, though the fork  
invade

The region of my heart: be Kent unmannerly,  
When Lear is mad. What wilt thou do, old  
man?

Think'st thou that duty shall have dread to  
speak,

When power to flattery bows? To plainness  
honour's bound, 140

When majesty stoops to folly. Reverse thy  
doom!

And, in thy best consideration, check  
This hideous rashness: answer my life my  
judgement,

Thy youngest daughter does not love thee  
least;

Nor are those empty-hearted whose low sound  
Reverbs her hollowness.

*Lear.* Kent, on thy life, no more.

*Kent.* My life I never held but as a pawn.

To wage against thy enemies; nor fear to lose it,  
Thy safety being the motive.

*Lear.* Out of my sight!



*Kent.* Has better; Lear; and let me still  
remain 280  
The true blank of thine eye.

*Lear.* Now, by Apollo, —  
*Kent.* Now, by Apollo, king,  
Thou swear'st thy gods in vain.

*Lear.* O, vassal! miscreant!  
[Laying his hand on his sword.

*Alb.* } Dear sir, forbear.  
*Cor.* }

*Kent.* Do;  
Kill thy physician, and the fee bestow  
Upon thy foul disease. Revoke thy doom;  
Or, whilst I can vent clamour from my throat,  
I'll tell thee thou dost evil.

*Lear.* Hear me, recreant!  
On thine allegiance, hear me! 270  
Since thou hast sought to make us break our  
vow,

Which we durst never yet, and with strain'd  
pride

To come between our sentence and our power,  
Which nor our nature nor our place can bear,  
(Our potency made good, take thy reward.

Five days we do allot thee, for provision  
To shield thee from diseases of the world;

And on the sixth to turn thy hated back  
Upon our kingdom: if, on the tenth day  
following, 275

Thy banish'd trunk be found in our dominions,  
The moment is thy death. Away! by Jupiter,  
This shall not be revok'd.

*Kent.* Fare thee well, king: with thus thou  
wilt appear,

Freedom lives hence, and banishment is here.  
[To Cordelia] The gods to their dear shelter

take thee, maid,  
That justly think'st, and hast most rightly  
said!

[To Regan and Goneril] And your large  
speeches may your deeds approve,

That good effects may spring from words of  
love.

Thus Kent, O princes, bids you all adieu;  
He'll shape his old course in a country new.

[Exit.

*Flourish. Re-enter GLOUCESTER, with  
FRANCE, BURGUNDY, and Attendants.*

*Glou.* Here's France and Burgundy, my  
noble lord. 290

*Lear.* My lord of Burgundy,  
We first address towards you, who with this  
king

hath swail'd for our daughter: what, in the  
least,

Will you require in present dower with her,  
Or cease your quest of love?

*Bur.* Most royal majesty,  
I crave no more than what your highness offer'd,  
Nor will you tender less.

*Lear.* Right noble Burgundy,  
When she was dear to us, we did hold her so;  
But now her price is fall'n. Sir, these sh  
stands 295

If aught within that little seeming substance,  
Or all of it, with one dissembling peace,  
And nothing more, may: this like your games,

She's there, and she is yours,  
*Bur.* I know no answer.

*Lear.* Will you, with those infusions she  
owes,  
Unfriended, new-adapted to our hate,  
Dower'd with our curse, and stranger'd with  
our oath,

Take her, or leave her!  
*Bur.* Pardon me, royal sir;  
Election makes not up on such conditions.

*Lear.* Then leave her, sir; for, by the  
power that made me, 290  
tell you all her wealth. [To France] For  
you, great king,  
would not from your love make such a stray,  
To match you where I hate; therefore beseech  
you

To avert your liking a more worthier way  
Than on a wretch whom nature is ashamed  
Almost to acknowledge hers.

*France.* This is most strange,  
That she, that even but now was your best  
object,  
The argument of your praise, balm of your age,  
Most best, most dearest, should in this trice of  
time 295  
Commit a thing so monstrous, to dismantle  
So many folds of favour. Sure, her offense  
Must be of such unnatural degree,  
That monsters it, or your fore-vouch'd affection  
Fall'n into taint; which to believe of her,  
Must be a faith that reason without miracle  
Could never plant in me.

*Cor.* I yet beseech your majesty, —  
If for I want that glib and oily art,  
To speak and purpose not; since what I will  
intend,

I'll do't before I speak, — that you make known  
It is no vicious blot, murder, or foulness, 299  
No unchaste action, or dishonour'd step,  
That hath deprived me of your grace and  
favour;

But even for want of that for which I am  
richer,  
A still-soliciting eye, and such a tongue,  
As I am glad I have not, though not to have it  
hath lost me in your liking.

*Lear.* Better thou  
hast not been born than not to have pleas'd  
me better.

*France.* Is it but this, — a hardness in nature  
Which often leaves the history unpeaks 300  
That it intends to do? My lord of I —  
What say you to the lady? Love's not love,  
When it is mingled with regards that stand  
Aloof from the entire point. Will you have  
her?

She is herself a dowry.  
*Bur.* Royal Lear,  
Give but that portion which you call'd promised,  
And here I take Cordelia by the hand,  
Duchess of Burgundy.

*Lear.* Nothing: I have sworn: I am firm.  
*Bur.* I am sorry, then, you have so lost a  
daughter.

That you must lose a husband.  
*Cor.* Pardon me with Burgundy;  
Since that suggests of better matches than

I shall not be his wife.

France. Fairest Cordelia, that art most rich, being poor; Most choice, forsaken; and most loved, despised!

These and thy virtues here I seize upon: Be it lawful I take up what's cast away. Gods, gods! 'tis strange that from their cold'st neglect

My love should kindle to inflamed respect. Thy dowerless daughter, king, thrown to my chance,

Is queen of us, of ours, and our fair France: Not all the dukes of wat'rish Burgundy 261 Can buy this unprized precious maid of me. Bid them farewell, Cordelia, though unkind. Thou lovest here, a better where to find.

Lear. Thou hast her, France: let her be thine; for we

Have no such daughter, nor shall ever see That face of hers again. Therefore be gone Without our grace, our love, our benison. Come, noble Burgundy.

[Flourish. *Exeunt all but France, Goneril, Regan, and Cordelia.*]

France. Bid farewell to your sisters. 270

Cor. The jewels of our father, with wash'd eyes

Cordelia leaves you: I know you what you are; And like a sister am most loath to call Your faults as they are named. Use well our father:

To your professed bosoms I commit him: But yet, alas, stood I within his grace, I would prefer him to a better place. So, farewell to you both.

Reg. Prescribe not us our duties.

Gon. Let your study 279 Be to content your lord, who hath received you At fortune's alms. You have obedience scanted, And well are worth the want that you have wanted.

Cor. Time shall unfold what plaited cunning hides:

Who cover faults, at last shame them derides. Well may you prosper!

France. Come, my fair Cordelia.

[*Exeunt France and Cordelia.*]

Gon. Sister, it is not a little I have to say of what most nearly appertains to us both. I think our father will hence to-night.

Reg. That's most certain, and with you; next morn'g with us. 290

Gon. You see how full of changes his age is; the observation we have made of it hath not been little: he always loved our sister most; and with what poor judgement he hath now cast her off appears too grossly.

Reg. 'Tis the infirmity of his age: yet he hath ever but slenderly known himself.

Gon. The best and soundest of his time hath been but mad; then must we look to receive from his age, not alone the imperfections of long-engraded condition, but therewithal the unwearied waywardness that infirm and choleric years bring with them.

Reg. Such unconstant starts are we like to have from him as this of Kent's banishment.

Gon. There is further compliment of leave-taking between France and him. Pray you, let's hit together: if our father carry authority with such dispositions as he bears, this last surrender of his will but offend us. 310

Reg. We shall further think on't.

Gon. We must do something, and i' the heat. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. *The Earl of Gloucester's castle.*

*Enter EDMUND, with a letter.*

Edm. Thou, nature, art my goddess; to thy law

My services are bound. Wherefore should I Stand in the plague of custom, and permit The curiosity of nations to deprive me, For that I am some twelve or fourteen moon-shines

Lag of a brother? Why bastard! wherefore base!

When my dimensions are as well compact, My mind as generous, and my shape as true, As honest madam's issue! Why brand they us With base! with baseness? bastardy! base, base! 10

Who, in the lusty stealth of nature, take More composition and fierce quality Than doth, within a dull, stale, tired bed, Go to the creating a whole tribe of fops, 'Got 'tween asleep and wake! Well, then, Legitimate Edgar, I must have your land: Our father's love is to the bastard Edmund As to the legitimate: fine word,—legitimate! Well, my legitimate, if this letter speed, And my invention thrive, Edmund the base 20 Shall top the legitimate. I grow; I prosper! Now, gods, stand up for bastards!

## *Enter GLOUCESTER.*

Glou. Kent banish'd thus! and France in choler parted!

And the king gone to-night! subscribed his power!

Confined to exhibition! All this done Upon the gad! Edmund, how now! what news?

Edm. So please your lordship, none.

[*Putting up the letter.*]

Glou. Why so earnestly seek you to put up that letter?

Edm. I know no news, my lord.

Glou. What paper were you reading? 30

Edm. Nothing, my lord.

Glou. No! What needed, then, that terrible dispatch of it into your pocket? the quality of nothing hath not such need to hide itself. Let's see: come, if it be nothing, I shall not need spectacles.

Edm. I beseech you, sir, pardon me: it is a letter from my brother, that I have not all o'er-read; and for so much as I have perused, I find it not fit for your o'er-looking. 40

Glou. Give me the letter, sir.

Edm. I shall offend, either to detain or give it. The contents, as in part I understand them, are to blame.

Glou. Let's see, let's see.

Edm. I hope, for my brother's justification,

he wrote this but as an essay or taste of my virtue.

*Glos.* [Reads] 'This policy and reverence of age makes the world bitter to the best of our times; keeps our fortunes from us till our oldness cannot relish them. I begin to find an idle and fond bondage in the oppression of aged tyranny; who sways, not as it hath power, but as it is suffered. Come to me, that of this I may speak more. If our father would sleep till I waked him, you should enjoy half his revenue for ever, and live the beloved of your brother,'

EDGAR.

Hum—conspiracy!—'Sleep till I waked him,—you should enjoy half his revenue.'—My son Edgar! Had he a hand to write this! a heart and brain to breed it in!—When came this to you! who brought it!

*Edm.* It was not brought me, my lord; there's the cunning of it; I found it thrown in at the casement of my closet.

*Glos.* You know the character to be your brother's?

*Edm.* If the matter were good, my lord, I durst swear it were his; but, in respect of that, I would fain think it were not. 70

*Glos.* It is his.

*Edm.* It is his hand, my lord; but I hope his heart is not in the contents.

*Glos.* Hath he never heretofore sounded you in this business?

*Edm.* Never, my lord; but I have heard him oft maintain it to be fit, that, sons at perfect age, and fathers declining, the father should be as ward to the son, and the son manage his revenue. 79

*Glos.* O villain, villain! His very opinion in the letter! Abhorred villain! Unnatural, detested, brutish villain! worse than brutish! Ho, sirrah, seek him; I'll apprehend him; abominable villain! Where is he?

*Edm.* I do not well know, my lord. If it shall please you to suspend your indignation against my brother till you can derive from him better testimony of his intent, you shall run a certain course; where, if you violently proceed against him, mistaking his purpose, it would make a great gap in your own honour, and shake in pieces the heart of his obedience. I dare pawn down my life for him, that he hath wrote this to feel my affection to your honour, and to no further pretence of danger.

*Glos.* Think you so?

*Edm.* If your honour judge it meet, I will place you where you shall hear us confer of this, and by an auricular assurance have your satisfaction; and that without any further delay than this very evening. 101

*Glos.* He cannot be such a monster—

*Edm.* Nor is not, sure.

*Glos.* To his father, that so tenderly and entirely loves him. Heaven and earth! Edmund, seek him out; wind me into him, I pray you: frame the business after your own wisdom. I would unstate myself, to be in a due resolution.

*Edm.* I will seek him, sir, presently; convey the business as I shall find means, and acquaint you withal. 111

*Glos.* These late eclipses in the sun and moon portend no good to us; though the wisdom of nature can reason it thus and thus, yet nature finds itself scourged by the sequent effects: love cools, friendship falls off, brothers divide; in cities, mutinies; in countries, discord; in palaces, treason; and the bond cracked 'twixt son and father. This villain of mine comes under the prediction; there's son against father: the king falls from the bias of nature; there's father against child. We have seen the best of our time: machinations, hollownness, treachery, and all ruinous disorders, follow us disquietly to our graves. Find out this villain, Edmund; it shall lose thee nothing; do it carefully. And the noble and true-hearted Kent banished! his offence, honesty! 'Tis strange. [Exit.]

*Edm.* This is the excellent foppery of the world, that, when we are sick in fortune,—often the surfeit of our own behaviour,—we make guilty of our disasters the sun, the moon, and the stars: as if we were villains by necessity; fools by heavenly compulsion; knaves, thieves, and treachers, by spherical predominance; drunkards, liars, and adulterers, by an enforced obedience of planetary influence; and all that we are evil in, by a divine thrusting on: an admirable evasion of whoremaster man, to lay his goatish disposition to the charge of a star! My father compounded with my mother under the dragon's tail; and my nativity was under Ursa major; so that it follows, I am rough and lecherous. Tut, I should have been that I am, had the maidenliest star in the firmament twinkled on my bastardizing. Edgar—

Enter EDGAR.

and pat he comes like the catastrophe of the old comedy; my cue is villainous melancholy, with a sigh like Tom o' Bedlam. O, these eclipses do portend these divisions! fa, sol, la, mi.

*Edg.* How now, brother Edmund! what serious contemplation are you in? 121

*Edm.* I am thinking, brother, of a prediction I read this other day, what should follow these eclipses.

*Edg.* Do you busy yourself about that?

*Edm.* I promise you, the effects he writes of succeed unhappily; as of unnaturalness between the child and the parent; death, dearth, dissolutions of ancient amities; divisions in state, menaces and maledictions against king and nobles; needless diffidences, banishment of friends, dissipation of cohorts, nuptial breaches, and I know not what.

*Edg.* How long have you been a sectary astronomical?

*Edm.* Come, come; when saw you my father last?

*Edg.* Why, the night gone by.

*Edm.* Spake you with him?

*Edg.* Ay, two hours together. 130

*Edm.* Parted you in good terms? Found you no displeasure in him by word or countenance?

None at all.

Think yourself wherein you may

have offended him: and as my entreaty forbear his presence till some little time hath qualified the heat of his displeasure; which at this instant so rageth in him, that with the mischief of your person it would scarcely allay.

*Edg.* Some villain hath done me wrong.

*Kent.* That's my fear. I pray you, have a continent forbearance till the speed of his rage goes slower; and, as I say, retire with me to my lodging, from whence I will fitly bring you to hear my lord speak: pray ye, go; there's my key: if you do stir abroad, go armed.

*Edg.* Armed, brother!

*Kent.* Brother, I advise you to the best; go armed: I am no honest man if there be any good meaning towards you: I have told you what I have seen and heard; but faintly, nothing like the image and horror of it: pray you, sway.

*Edg.* Shall I hear from you anon?

*Kent.* I do serve you in this business.

[*Exit Edgar.*]

A credulous father! and a brother noble,  
Whose nature is so far from doing harms,  
That he suspects none; on whose foolish honesty

My practices ride easy! I see the business.  
Let me, if not by birth, have lands by wit: 299  
All with me's meet that I can fashion fit. [*Exit.*]

### SCENE III. The Duke of Albany's palace.

*Enter GONERIL, and OSWALD, her steward.*

*Gon.* Did my father strike my gentleman for chiding of his fool?

*Osw.* Yes, madam.

*Gon.* By day and night he wrongs me; every hour

He flashes into one gross crime or other,  
That sets us all at odds: I'll not endure it:  
His knights grow riotous, and himself upbraids us

On every trifle. When he returns from hunting,  
I will not speak with him; say I am sick:  
If you come slack of former services,  
You shall do well; the fault of it I'll answer. 30

*Osw.* He's coming, madam; I hear him.

*Gon.* Put on what weary negligence you please,  
You and your fellows; I'd have it come to question:

If he dislike it, let him to our sister,  
Whose mind and mine, I know, in that are one,  
Not to be over-ruled. Idle old man,  
That still would manage those authorities  
That he hath given away! Now, by my life,  
Old fools are babes again; and must be used  
With checks as flatteries,—when they are seen abused. 20

Remember what I tell you.

*Osw.* Well, madam.

*Gon.* And let his knights have colder looks among you;  
What grows of it, no matter; advise your fellows so:  
I would breed from hence occasions, and I shall

That I may speak: I'll write straight to my sister,  
To hold my very course. Prepare for dinner. [*Exit.*]

### SCENE IV. A hall in the same.

*Enter KENT, disguised.*

*Kent.* If but as well I other accents borrow,  
In  
I'll  
banish'd

*Kent.* If thou canst serve where thou dost stand condemn'd,  
So may it come, thy master, whom thou lovest,  
Shall find thee full of labour.

*Horns within.* *Enter LEAR, Knights, and Attendants.*

*Lear.* Let me not stay a jot for dinner; go get it ready. [*Exit an Attendant.*] How now! what art thou?

*Kent.* A man, sir.

*Lear.* What dost thou profess? what wouldst thou with us?

*Kent.* I do profess to be no less than I seem; to serve him truly that will put me in trust; to love him that is honest; to converse with him that is wise, and says little; to fear judgement; to fight when I cannot choose; and to eat no fish.

*Lear.* What art thou?

*Kent.* A very honest-hearted fellow, and as poor as the king. 21

*Lear.* If thou be as poor for a subject as he is for a king, thou art poor enough. What wouldst thou?

*Kent.* Service.

*Lear.* Who wouldst thou serve?

*Kent.* You.

*Lear.* Dost thou know me, fellow?

*Kent.* No, sir; but you have that in your countenance which I would fain call master. 30

*Lear.* What's that?

*Kent.* Authority.

*Lear.* What services canst thou do?

*Kent.* I can keep honest counsel, ride, run, mow a curious tale in telling it, and deliver a plain message bluntly: that which ordinary men are fit for, I am qualified in; and the best of me is diligence.

*Lear.* How old art thou?

*Kent.* Not so young, sir, to love a woman for singing, nor so old to dote on her for any thing: I have years on my back forty eight.

*Lear.* Follow me; thou shalt serve me: if I like thee no worse after dinner, I will not part from thee yet. Dinner, ho, dinner! Where's my knave! my fool! Go you, and call my fool hither. [*Exit an Attendant.*]

*Enter OSWALD.*

You, you, sirrah, where's my daughter?  
*Osw.* So please you,—  
*Lear.* What says the fellow there? Call the clotpole back. [*Exit a Knight.*] Where's my fool, ho! I think the world's asleep.

*Re-enter Knight.*

How now! where's that mongrel!

*Knight.* He says, my lord, your daughter is not well.

*Lear.* Why came not the slave back to me when I called him.

*Knight.* Sir, he answered me in the roundest manner, he would not!

*Lear.* He would not!

*Knight.* My lord, I know not what the matter is; but, to my judgement, your highness is not entertained with that ceremonious affection as you were wont; there's a great abatement of kindness appears as well in the general dependants as in the duke himself also and your daughter.

*Lear.* Ha! sayest thou so?

*Knight.* I beseech you, pardon me, my lord, if I be mistaken; for my duty cannot be silent when I think your highness wronged.

*Lear.* Thou but rememberest me of mine own conception: I have perceived a most faint neglect of late; which I have rather blamed as mine own jealous curiosity than as a very pretence and purpose of unkindness: I will look further into't. But where's my fool? I have not seen him this two days.

*Knight.* Since my young lady's going into France, sir, the fool hath much pined away.

*Lear.* No more of that; I have noted it well. Go you, and tell my daughter I would speak with her. [*Exit an Attendant.*] Go you, call hither my fool.

*Re-enter OSWALD.*

O, you sir, you, come you hither, sir: who am I, sir?

*Osw.* My lady's father.

*Lear.* 'My lady's father!' my lord's knave you whoreson dog! you slave! you cur!

*Osw.* I am none of these, my lord; I beseech your pardon.

*Lear.* Do you bandy looks with me, you rascal!

*Osw.* I'll not be struck, my lord.

*Kent.* Nor tripped neither, you base foot ball player.

*Lear.* I thank thee, fellow; thou servest me, and I'll love thee.

*Kent.* Come, sir, arise, away! I'll teach you differences: away, away! If you will measure your lubber's length again, tarry: but away go so; have you wisdom! so.

*Lear.* Now, my friendly knave, I thank thee: there's earnest of thy service.

[*Giving Kent money.*]

*Enter Fool.*

*Fool.* Let me hire him too: here's my Coxcomb.

*Lear.* How now, my pretty knave! how dost thou?

*Fool.* Sirrah, you were best take my Coxcomb.

*Kent.* Why, fool?

*Fool.* Why, for taking one's part that's out

of favour: nay, an thou canst not smile as the wind sits, thou'lt catch cold shortly: there, take my Coxcomb: why, this fellow has banished two on's daughters, and did the third a blessing against his will; if thou follow him, thou must needs wear my Coxcomb. How now, nuncle! Would I had two Coxcombs and two daughters!

*Lear.* Why, my boy!

*Fool.* If I gave them all my living, I'd keep my Coxcombs myself. There's mine; beg another of thy daughters.

*Lear.* Take heed, sirrah; the whip.

*Fool.* Truth's a dog must to kennel; he must be whipped out, when Lady the brach may stand by the fire and stink.

*Lear.* A pestilent gall to me!

*Fool.* Sirrah, I'll teach thee a speech.

*Lear.* Do.

*Fool.* Mark it, nuncle:

Have more than thou showest,

Speak less than thou knowest,

Lend less than thou owest,

Bide more than thou goest,

Learn more than thou trowest,

Set less than thou throwest;

Leave thy drink and thy whore,

And keep in a door,

And thou shalt have more

Than thou tens to a score.

*Kent.* This is nothing, fool.

*Fool.* Then 'tis like the breath of an unfeeling lawyer; you gave me nothing for't. Can you make no use of nothing, nuncle?

*Lear.* Why, no, boy; nothing can be made out of nothing.

*Fool.* [*To Kent*] Prithee, tell him, so much the rent of his land comes to: he will not believe a fool.

*Lear.* A bitter fool!

*Fool.* Dost thou know the difference, my boy, between a bitter fool and a sweet fool?

*Lear.* No, lad; teach me.

*Fool.* That lord that counsell'd thee

To give away thy land,

Come place him here by me,

Do thou for him stand:

The sweet and bitter fool

Will presently appear;

The one in motley here,

The other found out there.

*Lear.* Dost thou call me fool, boy?

*Fool.* All thy other titles thou hast given away; that thou wast born with.

*Kent.* This is not altogether fool, my lord.

*Fool.* No, faith, lords and great men will not let me; if I had a monopoly out, they would have part on't; and ladies too, they will not let me have all fool to myself; they'll be snatching. Give me an egg, nuncle, and I'll give thee two crowns.

*Lear.* What two crowns shall they be?

*Fool.* Why, after I have cut the egg 't the middle, and eat up the meat, the two crowns of the egg. When thou dost give the crown 't the middle, and givest away both parts, thou dost thy ass on thy back over the dirt; thou hast little wit in thy bald crown, when thou givest thy golden one away. If I speak like myself

in this, let him be whipped that first finds it so. 280

[Singing] Fools had ne'er less wit in a year;

For wise men are grown foolish,  
They know not how their wits to wear,  
Their manners are so apish.

Lear. When were you wont to be so full of songs, sirrah?

Fool. I have used it, nuncle, ever since thou madest thy daughters thy mother: for when thou gavest them the rod, and put'st down thine own breeches, 290

[Singing] Then they for sudden joy did weep,

And I for sorrow sung,

That such a king should play bo-peep,

And go the fools among.

Prithee, nuncle, keep a schoolmaster that can teach thy fool to lie: I would fain learn to lie.

Lear. An you lie, sirrah, we'll have you whipped.

Fool. I marvel what kin thou and thy daughters are: they'll have me whipped for speaking true, thou'll have me whipped for lying; and sometimes I am whipped for holding my peace. I had rather be any kind o' thing than a fool: and yet I would not be thee, nuncle; thou hast pared thy wit o' both sides, and left nothing i' the middle: here comes one o' the parings.

Enter GONERIL.

Lear. How now, daughter! what makes that frontlet on? Methinks you are too much of late i' the frown. 309

Fool. Thou wast a pretty fellow when thou hadst no need to care for her frowning; now thou art an O without a figure: I am better than thou art now: I am a fool, thou art nothing. [To Gon.] Yes, forsooth, I will hold my tongue; so your face bids me, though you say nothing. Mum, mum,

He that keeps nor crust nor crum,

Weary of all, shall want some.

[Pointing to Lear] That's a shealed peascod.

Gon. Not only, sir, this your all-licensed fool, But other of your insolent retinue 327

Do hourly carp and quarrel; breaking forth In rank and not-to-be-endured riots. Sir,

I had thought, by making this well known unto you,

To have found a safe redress; but now grow fearful,

By what yourself too late have spoke and done, That you protect this course, and put it on

By your allowance; which if you should, the fault

Would not scape censure, nor the redresses sleep,

Which, in the tender of a wholesome weal, 330

Might in their working do you that offence. Which else were shame, that then necessity

Will almost direct proceeding.

Fool. For you know, nuncle, The hedge-sparrow fed the cuckoo so long,

As it had it head bit off by it young. So, out went the candle, and we were left

Darkling.

Lear. Are you our daughter?

Gon. Come, sir, I would you would make use of that good

wisdom, 340

Whereof I know you are fraught; and put away

These dispositions, that of late transform you From what you rightly are.

Fool. May not an ass know when the cart draws the horse? Whoop, Jug! I love thee.

Lear. Doth any here know me? This is not Lear:

Doth Lear walk thus? speak thus? Where are his eyes?

Either his notion weakens, his discernings Are lethargied—Ha! waking! 'tis not so.

Who is it that can tell me who I am? 350

Fool. Lear's shadow.

Lear. I would learn that; for, by the marks of sovereignty, knowledge, and reason, I should be false persuaded I had daughters.

Fool. Which they will make an obedient father.

Lear. Your name, fair gentlewoman?

Gon. This admiration, sir, is much o' the savour

Of other your new pranks. I do beseech you To understand my purposes aright: 360

As you are old and reverend, you should be wise.

Here do you keep a hundred knights and squires;

Men so disorder'd, so debosh'd and bold, That this our court, infected with their manners,

Shows like a riotous inn: epicurism and lust Make it more like a tavern or a brothel

Than a graced palace. The shame itself doth speak

For instant remedy: be then desired By her, that else will take the thing she begs,

A little to disquantity your train: 370

And the remainder, that shall still depend, To be such men as may besort your age,

And know themselves and you.

Lear. Darkness and devils!

Saddle my horses; call my train together. Degenerate bastard! I'll not trouble thee:

Yet have I left a daughter.

Gon. You strike my people; and your disorder'd rabble

Make servants of their betters.

Enter ALBANY.

Lear. Woe, that too late repents,—[To Alb.] O, sir, are you come?

Is it your will? Speak, sir. Prepare my horses. Ingratitude, thou marble-hearted fiend, 381

More hideous when thou show'st thee in a child Than the sea-monster!

Alb. Pray, sir, be patient.

Lear. [To Gon.] Detested kite! thou hast: My train are men of choice and rarest parts,

That all particulars of duty know, And in the most exact regard support

The worship of their name. O most small fault,

How ugly didst thou in Cordelia show! That, like an engine, wrench'd my frame of 390

From the fix'd place; drew from my heart all love.

And added to the gall. O Lear, Lear, Lear!  
Beat at this gate, that let thy folly in.

[Striking his head.  
And thy dear judgement out! Go, go, my people.

Alb. My lord, I am guiltless, as I am ignorant  
Of what hath moved you.

Lear. It may be so, my lord.  
Hear, nature, hear; dear goddess, hear!  
Suspend thy purpose, if thou didst intend  
To make this creature fruitful!

Into her womb convey sterility! 300  
Dry up in her the organs of increase;  
And from her derogate body never spring  
A babe to honour her! If she must teem,  
Create her child of spleen; that it may live,  
And be a thwart disnatur'd torment to her!  
Let it stamp wrinkles in her brow of youth;  
With cadent tears fret channels in her cheeks;  
Turn all her mother's pains and benefits  
To laughter and contempt; that she may feel  
How sharper than a serpent's tooth it is 310  
To have a thankless child! Away, away!

[Exit.  
Alb. Now, gods that we adore, whereof comes this!

Gon. Never afflict yourself to know the cause;  
But let his disposition have that scope  
That dotage gives it.

## Re-enter LEAR.

Lear. What, fifty of my followers at a clap!  
Within a fortnight!

Alb. What's the matter, sir?  
Lear. I'll tell thee: [To Gon.] Life and death! I am ashamed

That thou hast power to shake my manhood thus;  
That these hot tears, which break from me  
perforce, 320  
Should make thee worth them. Blasts and fogs upon thee!

The untented woundings of a father's curse  
Pierces every sense about thee! Old fond eyes,  
Bweep this cause again, I'll pluck ye out,  
And cast you, with the waters that you lose,  
To temper clay. Yes, is it come to this!  
Let it be so: yet have I left a daughter,  
Who, I am sure, is kind and comfortable:  
When she shall hear this of thee, with her nails  
She'll flay thy wolfish visage. Thou shalt find  
That I'll resume the shape which thou dost think 331

I have cast off for ever: thou shalt, I warrant thee.

[Exit Lear, Kent, and Attendants.  
Gon. Do you mark that, my lord?

Alb. I cannot be so partial, Goneril,  
To the great love I bear you,—

Gon. Pray you, content. What, Oswald, ho!  
[To the Fool.] You, sir, more knave than fool,  
after your master.

Fool. Nuncie Lear, nuncie Lear, tarry and  
take the fool with thee.

A fox, when one has caught her, 340  
And such a daughter,  
Should sure to the slaughter,  
If my cap would buy a halter:  
So the fool follows after. [Exit.

Gon. This man hath had good counsel:—a  
hundred knights!

'Tis politic and safe to let him keep  
At point a hundred knights: yea, that, on every  
dream,

Each buzz, each fancy, each complaint, dislike,  
He may enguard his dotage with their powers,  
And hold our lives in mercy. Oswald, I say!

Alb. Well, you may fear too far.

Gon. Safer than trust too far:  
Let me still take away the harms I fear,  
Not fear still to be taken: I know his heart.  
What he hath utter'd I have writ my sister:  
If she sustain him and his hundred knights,  
When I have show'd the unfitness,—

## Re-enter OSWALD

How now, Oswald!  
What, have you writ that letter to my sister?

Osw. Yes, madam.

Gon. Take you some company, and away to  
horse:

Inform her full of my particular fear; 360  
And thereto add such reasons of your own  
As may compact it more. Get you gone;  
And hasten your return. [Exit Oswald.] No,  
no, my lord,

This milky gentleness and course of yours  
Though I condemn not, yet, under pardon,  
You are much more attack'd for want of wisdom  
Than praised for harmful mildness.

Alb. How far your eyes may pierce I cannot  
tell:

Striving to better, oft we mar what's well.

Gon. Nay, then—

Alb. Well, well; the event. [Exit.

## SCENE V. Court before the same.

## Enter LEAR, KENT, and Fool.

Lear. Go you before to Gloucester with these  
letters. Acquaint my daughter no further with  
any thing you know than comes from her demand  
out of the letter. If your diligence be not  
speedy, I shall be there afore you.

Kent. I will not sleep, my lord, till I have  
delivered your letter. [Exit.

Fool. If a man's brains were in's heels,  
were't not in danger of kibes?

Lear. Ay, boy.

Fool. Then, I prithce, be merry; thy wit  
shall ne'er go slipshod.

Lear. Ha, ha, ha!

Fool. Shall see thy other daughter will use  
thee kindly; for though she's as like this as a  
crab's like an apple, yet I can tell what's o'n  
tail.

Lear. Why, what cannot thou tell, my boy?

Fool. She will taste as like this as a crab  
does to a crab. Thou cannot tell why one's nose  
stands f' the middle on's face?

Lear. No.

Fool. Why, to keep one's eyes of other

side's nose; that what a man cannot smell out, he may spy into.

*Lear.* I did her wrong—

*Fool.* Ought tell how an oyster makes his shell.

*Lear.* No.

*Fool.* Nor I neither; but I can tell why a snail has a house.

*Lear.* Why?

*Fool.* Why, to put his head in; not to give it away to his daughters, and leave his horns without a case.

*Lear.* I will forget my nature. So kind a father! Be my horses ready?

*Fool.* Thy asses are gone about 'em. The reason why the seven stars are no more than seven is a pretty reason.

*Lear.* Because they are not eight?

*Fool.* Yes, indeed: thou wouldst make a good fool.

*Lear.* To take 't again perforce! Monster ingratitude!

*Fool.* If thou wert my fool, nuncle, I 'ld have thee beaten for being old before thy time.

*Lear.* How's that?

*Fool.* Thou shouldst not have been old till thou hadst been wise.

*Lear.* O, let me not be mad, not mad, sweet heaven!

Keep me in temper: I would not be mad!

*Enter Gentleman.*

How now! are the horses ready?

*Gent.* Ready, my lord.

*Lear.* Come, boy.

*Fool.* She that's a maid now, and laughs at my departure,

Shall not be a maid long, unless things be cut shorter.

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. *The Earl of Gloucester's castle.*

*Enter EDMUND, and CURAN meets him.*

*Edm.* Save thee, Curan.

*Cur.* And you, sir. I have been with your father; and given him notice that the Duke of Cornwall and Regan his duchess will be here with him this night.

*Edm.* How comes that?

*Cur.* Nay, I know not. You have heard of the news abroad; I mean the whispered ones, for they are yet but ear-kissing arguments!

*Edm.* Not I: pray you, what are they?

*Cur.* Have you heard of no likely wars to ward 'twixt the Dukes of Cornwall and Albany?

*Edm.* Not a word.

*Cur.* You may do, then, in time. Fare you well.

*Edm.* The dukes be here to-night? The better! best!

This conventional perforce into my business. My father hath set guard to take my brother; and I have one thing, of a quary question, which I must ask: briefness and fortune, what?

*Edm.* As you would; demands brother, I say!

*Enter EDGAR.*

My father watches: O sir, fly this place; Intelligence is given where you are hid; You have now the good advantage of the night: Have you not spoken 'gainst the Duke of Cornwall?

He's coming hither; now, 't the night, 't the haste,

And Regan with him: have you nothing said Upon his party 'gainst the Duke of Albany? Advise yourself.

*Edg.* I am sure on 't, not a word.

*Edm.* I hear my father coming: pardon me; In cunning I must draw my sword upon you: Draw; seem to defend yourself; now quit you well.

Yield: come before my father. Light, ho, here!

Fly, brother. Torches, torches! So, farewell.

Some blood drawn on me would beset opinion

Of my more fierce endeavour: I have seen

Do more than this in sport. Father, father! Stop, stop! No help!

*Enter GLOUCESTER, and Servants with torches.*

*Glou.* Now, Edmund, where's the villain?

*Edm.* Here stood he in the dark, his sharp sword out,

Mumbling of wicked charms, conjuring the moon

To stand auspicious mistress,—

*Glou.* But where is he?

*Edm.* Look, sir, I bleed.

*Glou.* Where is the villain, Edmund?

*Edm.* Fled this way, sir. When by no means he could—

*Glou.* Pursue him, ho! Go after. *[Exeunt some Servants.]* By no means what?

*Edm.* Persuade me to the murder of your lordship.

But that I told him, the revenging gods 'Gainst parricides did all their thunders bend;

Spoke, with how manifold and strong a bond The child was bound to the father; sir, in fine,

Seeing how loathly opposite I stood To his unnatural purpose, in fell motion,

With his prepared sword, he charges home My unprovided body, lanced mine arm;

But when he saw my best alarm's spirits, Bold in the quarrel's right, roused to the

encounter. Or whether gasted by the noise I made, Fell suddenly he fled.

*Glou.* Let him fly far:

Not in this land shall he remain uncought; And found—dispatch. The noble duke my

master,

My worthy arch and patron, comes to-night: By his authority I will proclaim it.

That he which feeds him shall deserve our thanks; Bringing the murderers even to the stake;

He that conceals him, death.



*Edm.* When I dissuaded him from his intent,  
And found him pight to do it, with curst speech  
I threaten'd to discover him: he replied,  
'Thou unpossessing bastard! dost thou think,  
If I would stand against thee, would the reposal  
(Of any trust, virtue, or worth in thee  
'Make thy words faith'd! No: what I should

as this I would: ay, though thou didst produce  
A very character,—I'd turn it all  
To thy suggestion, plot, and damned practice:  
And thou must make a dullard of the world,  
'They not thought the profits of my death  
'Were very pregnant and potential spurs  
To make thee seek it.'

*Glow.* Strong and fasten'd villain!  
Would he deny his letter? I never got him. So  
[*Trumpets within.*]  
Hark, the duke's trumpets! I know not why he

comes  
All ports I'll bar; the villain shall not 'scape;  
'He must grant me that: besides, his  
pictures  
Will send far and near, that all the kingdom  
May have due note of him; and of my land,  
Loyal and natural boy, I'll work the means  
To make thee capable.

*Enter CORNWALL, REGAN, and Attendants.*

*Corn.* How now, my noble friend! since I  
came hither,  
Which I can call but now, I have heard strange  
news.

*Reg.* If it be true, all vengeance comes too  
short  
Which can pursue the offender. How dost, my  
lord?

*Glow.* O, madam, my old heart is crack'd, is  
crack'd!

*Reg.* What, did my father's godson seek  
your life?

He whom my father named! your Edgar?

*Glow.* O, lady, lady, shame would have it  
hid!

*Reg.* Was he not companion with the riotous  
knights

That tend upon my father?

*Glow.* I know not, madam: 'tis too bad, too  
bad.

*Edm.* Yes, madam, he was of that consort.

*Reg.* No marvel, then, though he were ill  
affected:

'Tis they have put him on the old man's death,  
To have the expense and waste of his revenues.  
I have this present evening from my sister  
Been well inform'd of them; and with such  
cautions,

That if they come to sojourn at my house,  
I'll not be there.

*Corn.* Nor I, assure thee, Regan.

*Edmund.* I hear that you have shown your  
father  
A child-like office.

*Edm.* 'Twas my duty, sir.

*Glow.* He did betray his practice; and re-  
ceived  
This hurt you see, waiting to apprehend him.

*Corn.* Is he pursued?

*Glow.* Ay, my lord.

*Corn.* If he be taken, he — never more  
Be fear'd of doing harm: make your own  
purpose,

How in my strength you please. For you,  
Edmund,

Whose virtue and obedience doth this instant  
So much commend itself, you shall be ours:  
Natures of such deep trust we shall much need;  
You we first seize on.

*Edm.* I shall serve you, sir,  
Truly, however else.

*Glow.* For him I thank your grace.

*Corn.* You know not why we came to visit  
you,

*Reg.* Thus out of season, threading dark-  
ey'd night:

Occasions, noble Gloucester, of some poise,  
Wherein we must have use of your advice:

Our father he hath writ, so hath our sister,  
Of differences, which I least thought it fit

To answer from our home; the several messen-  
gers

From hence attend dispatch. Our good old  
friend,

Lay comforts to your bosom; and bestow  
Your needful counsel to our business,

Which craves the instant use.

*Glow.* I serve you, madam: 120  
Your graces are right welcome. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. Before Gloucester's castle.

*Enter KENT and OSWALD, severally.*

*Osw.* Good dawning to thee, friend: art of  
this house?

*Kent.* Ay.

*Osw.* Where may we set our horses?

*Kent.* I the mire.

*Osw.* Prithoe, if thou lovest me, tell me.

*Kent.* I love thee not.

*Osw.* Why, then, I care not for thee.

*Kent.* If I had thee in Lipsbury pinfold, I  
would make thee care for me.

*Osw.* Why dost thou use me thus? I know  
thee not.

*Kent.* Fellow, I know thee.

*Osw.* What dost thou know me for?

*Kent.* A knave; a rascal; an eater of broken  
meats; a base, proud, shallow, beguiling, street-  
suited, hundred-pound, filthy, worsted-stocking  
knave; a lily-livered, action-taking knave;  
whoreson, glass-gazing, superstitious, filthy  
rogue; one-trunk-inheriting slave; one  
wouldst be a bard, in way of good service, and  
art nothing but the composition of a knave,  
beggars, cowards, pander, and the son and heir  
of a mongrel bitch: one whom I will beat into  
clamorous whining. If thou dost me the least  
syllable of thy addition.

*Osw.* Why, what a monstrous fellow art  
thou, thus to rail on one that is milder than  
thou nor knows thee!

*Kent.* What a beast-like vengeance art thou,  
to deny thou knowest me! In two days ago  
since I tripp'd up thy heels, and beat thee  
before the king! Draw, you rogues! for, though

It be night, yet the moon shines; I'll make a sop of the moonshine of you: draw, you whore-son cunningly barber-monger, draw.

*[Drawing his sword.]*

*Corn.* Away! I have nothing to do with thee.  
*Kent.* Draw, you rascal: you come with letters against the king; and take vanity the puppet's part against the royalty of her father: draw, you rogue, or I'll so carbonado your shanks: draw, you rascal; come your ways.

*Osw.* Help, ho! murder! help!

*Kent.* Strike, you slave; stand, rogue, stand; you neat slave, strike.

*Osw.* Help, ho! murder! murder! *[Beating him.]*

*Enter EDMUND, with his rapier drawn, CORNWALL, REGAN, GLOUCESTER, and Servants.*

*Edm.* How now! What's the matter?

*Kent.* With you, Goodman boy, an you please: come, I'll flesh ye: come on, young master.

*Glow.* Weapons! arms! What's the matter here!

*Corn.* Keep peace, upon your lives; He dies that strikes again. What is the matter?

*Reg.* The messengers from our sister and the king.

*Corn.* What is your difference? speak.

*Osw.* I am scarce in breath, my lord.

*Kent.* No marvel, you have so bestirred your valour. You cowardly rascal, nature disclaims in thee: a tailor made thee.

*Corn.* Thou art a strange fellow: a tailor make a man?

*Kent.* Ay, a tailor, sir: a stone-cutter or a painter could not have made him so ill, though he had been but two hours at the trade.

*Corn.* Speak yet, how grew your quarrel?

*Osw.* This ancient ruffian, sir, whose life I have spared at suit of his gray beard.

*Kent.* Thou whoreson zed! thou unnecessary letter! My lord, if you will give me leave, I will tread this unbolted villain into mortar, and daub the walls of a jakes with him. Spare my

Peace, sirrah!

You beastly knave, know you no reverence?

*Kent.* Yes, sir; but anger hath a privilege.

*Corn.* Why art thou angry?

*Kent.* That such a slave as this should wear a sword,  
 Who wears no honesty. Such smiling rogues as these,

Like rats, off bite the holy cords a-twain  
 Which are too intricate 't unloose; smooth every passion

That in the natures of their lords rebel;  
 To oil to fire, snow to their colder moods;  
 To add, and turn their halcyon beaks  
 To every gale and vary of their masters,

Knowing nought, like dogs, but following.  
 A plague upon your epileptic visage!  
 Smile you my speeches, as I were a fool!  
 Down, if I had you upon Summ'rs plain,  
 I'd drive ye cackling home to Camelot.

*Corn.* What art thou mad, old fellow?

*Kent.* How fell you out? say that.

*Reg.* No contraries hold more antipathy

Than I and such a knave.

*Corn.* Why dost thou call him knave?

What's his offence?

*Kent.* His countenance likes me not.

*Corn.* No more, perchance, does mine, nor his, nor hers.

*Kent.* Sir, 'tis my occupation to be plain: I have seen better faces in my time

Than stands on any shoulder that I see  
 Before me at this instant.

*Corn.*

This is some fellow,  
 Who, having been praised for bluntness, doth affect

A saucy roughness, and constrains the garb  
 Quite from his nature: he cannot flatter, he,  
 An honest mind and plain, he must speak truth!

An they will take it, so; if not, he's plain.  
 These kind of knaves I know, which in this plainness

Harbour more craft and more corrupter ends  
 Than twenty silly ducking observants  
 That stretch their duties nicely.

*Kent.* Sir, in good sooth, in sincere verity,  
 Under the allowance of your great aspect,  
 Whose influence, like the wreath of radiant fire  
 On flickering Phœbus' front,—

*Corn.* What mean'st by this!

*Kent.* To go out of my dialect, which you discommend so much. I know, sir, I am no flatterer: he that beguiled you in a plain accent was a plain knave; which for my part I will not be, though I should win your displeasure to entreat me to't.

*Corn.* What was the offence you gave him?

*Osw.* I never gave him any:  
 It pleased the king his master very late  
 To strike at me, upon his misconstruction;  
 When he, conjunct, and flattering his dis-

pleasure,  
 Tripp'd me behind; being down, insulted, rail'd,  
 And put upon him such a deal of man,  
 That worthied him, got praises of the king  
 For him attempting who was self-subdued;  
 And, in the fleshment of this dread exploit,  
 DREW ON ME HERE AGAIN.

*Kent.* None of these rogues and cowards  
 But Ajax is their fool.

*Corn.*

Fetch forth the stocks!  
 You stubborn ancient knave, you reverend  
 braggart,  
 We'll teach you—

*Kent.*

Sir, I am too old to learn:  
 Call not your stocks for me: I serve the king;  
 On whose employment I was sent to you:  
 You shall do small respect, show too bold

malice  
 Against the grace and person of my master,  
 Stocking his messenger.

*Corn.* Fetch forth the stocks! As I have

life and honour,  
 There shall he sit till noon.  
*Reg.* Till noon! till night, my lord; and all night too.

*Kent.* Why, madam, if I were your father's dog,

You should not use me so.

*Reg.* Sir, being his knave, I will

*Corn.* This is a fellow of the self-same colour  
as sister speaks of. Come, bring away the  
stocks! [*Stocks brought out.*]

*Glow.* Let me beseech your grace not to do  
so:

His fault is much, and the good king his  
master

Will check him for't: your purposed low cor-  
rection

as such as basest and contemned'st wretches  
for pilferings and most common trespasses  
Are punish'd with: the king must take it ill,  
that he's so slightly valued in his messenger,  
should have him thus restrain'd.

*Corn.* I'll answer that.

*Reg.* My sister may receive it much more  
worse,

To have her gentleman abused, assaulted,  
for following her affairs. Put in his legs.

[*Lear is put in the stocks.*]

Come, my good lord, away.

[*Exeunt all but Gloucester and Kent.*]

*Glow.* I am sorry for thee, friend; 'tis the  
duke's pleasure,

Whose disposition, all the world well knows,  
Will not be rubb'd nor stopp'd: I'll entreat for  
thee.

*Kent.* Pray, do not, sir: I have watched and  
travell'd hard;

Some time I shall sleep out, the rest I'll whistle.  
A good man's fortune may grow out at heels:  
Give you good morning!

*Glow.* The duke's to blame in this; 'twill be  
ill taken. [*Exit.*]

*Kent.* Good king, that must approve the  
common saw,

Thou out of heaven's benediction comest  
To the warm sun!

Approach, thou beacon to this under globe,  
That by thy comfortable beams I may

Peruse this letter! Nothing almost sees miracles  
But misery: I know 'tis from Cordelia,

Who hath most fortunately been inform'd  
Of my obscured course; and shall find time

From this enormous state, seeking to give  
Lanes their remedies. All weary and o'er-

watch'd,  
like vantage, heavy eyes, not to behold  
This shameful lodging.

Fortune, good night: smile once more; turn  
thy wheel!

[*Sleeps.*]

SCENE III. A wood.

*Enter EDGAR.*

*Edg.* I heard myself proclaim'd;  
And by the happy hollow of a tree

Escaped the hunt. No port is free; no place,  
That guard, and most unusual vigilance,

Does not attend my taking. Whiles I may  
escape,

I will preserve myself; and am bethought  
To take the basest and most poorest shape

That ever penury, in contempt of man,  
Bring near to beast: my face I'll grime with  
filth;

And bet my limbs; all my hair in knots; so  
I with presented nakedness out-face

The winds and persecutions of the sky;  
The country gives me proof and precedent

Of Bedlam beggars, who, with roaring voices,  
Strike in their numb'd and mortified bare arms

Pins, wooden pricks, nails, sprigs of rosemary;  
And with this horrible object, from low farms,

Poor pining villages, sheep-cotes, and mills,  
Sometime with lunatic bans, sometime with

prayers,  
Enforce their charity. Poor Turligod! poor

Tom!

That's something yet: Edgar I nothing am. [*Exit.*]

SCENE IV. Before Gloucester's castle. *Kent*  
in the stocks.

*Enter LEAR, Fool, and Gentleman.*

*Lear.* 'Tis strange that they should so depart  
from home,

And not send back my messenger.

*Gent.* As I learn'd,  
The night before there was no purpose in them  
Of this remove.

*Kent.* Hail to thee, noble master!

*Lear.* Ha!

Makest thou this shame thy pastime?

*Kent.* No, my lord.

*Fool.* Ha, ha! he wears cruel garters. Horses  
are tied by the heads, dogs and bears by the  
neck, monkeys by the loins, and men by the  
legs: when a man's over-lucky at legs, then he  
wears wooden nether-stocks.

*Lear.* What's he that hath so much thy  
place mistook

To set thee here?

*Kent.* It is both he and she;  
Your son and daughter.

*Lear.* No.

*Kent.* Yes.

*Lear.* No, I say.

*Kent.* I say, yes.

*Lear.* No, no, they would not.

*Kent.* Yes, they have.

*Lear.* By Jupiter, I swear, no.

*Kent.* By Juno, I swear, ay.

*Lear.* They durst not do't;

They could not, would not do't; 'tis worse  
than murder,

To do upon respect such violent outrage:  
Resolve me, with all modest haste, which way

Thou mightst deserve, or they impose, this  
usage,

Coming from us.

*Kent.* My lord, when at their home  
I did commend your highness' letters to them,

Ere I was risen from the place that shov'd  
My duty kneeling, came there a rooking post,

Stew'd in his haste, half-breathless, panting  
forth

From Goneril his mistress salutations;  
Deliver'd letters, spits of intermission,

Which presently they read: on whose contents,  
They summon'd up their mainy, straight took  
horse;

Commanded me to follow, and attend  
The leisure of their answer; gave the cold  
looks:

And meeting here the other messenger,  
Whom welcome, I perceived, had poison'd

Being the very fellow that of late  
Display'd so manfully against your highness,—<sup>40</sup>  
Having more man than wit about me, drew:  
He rais'd the house with loud and coward cries.  
Your son and daughter found this trespass  
worth

The shame which here it suffers.

*Fool.* Winter's not gone yet, if the wild-  
geese fly that way.

Fathers that wear rags

Do make their children blind;

But fathers that bear bags

Shall see their children kind.

Fortune, that arrant whore,

Ne'er turns the key to the poor.

But, for all this, thou shalt have as many  
dolorous for thy daughters as thou canst tell in  
a year.

*Lear.* O, how this mother swells up toward  
my heart!

*Hysterica passio*, down, thou climbing sorrow,  
Thy element's below! Where is this daughter?

*Kent.* With the earl, sir, here within.

*Lear.* Follow me not;  
Stay here. [*Exit* 60]

*Kent.* Made you no more offence but what  
you speak of?

*Kent.* None.

How chance the king comes with so small a  
train?

*Fool.* An thou hadst been set i' the stocks  
for that question, thou hadst well deserved it.

*Kent.* Why, fool?

*Fool.* We'll set thee to school to an ant, to  
teach thee there's no labouring i' the winter.  
All that follow their noses are led by their eyes  
but blind men; and there's not a nose among  
twenty but can smell him that's stinking. Let  
go thy hold when a great wheel runs down a  
hill, lest it break thy neck with following it;  
but the great one that goes up the hill, let him  
draw thee after. When a wise man gives thee  
better counsel, give me mine again: I would  
have none but knaves follow it, since a fool  
gives it.

That sir which serves and seeks for gain,

And follows but for form,

Will pack when it begins to rain,

And leave thee in the storm.

But I will tarry; the fool will stay,

And let the wise man fly;

The knave turns fool that runs away;

The fool no knave, perdy.

*Kent.* Where learned you this, fool?

*Fool.* Not i' the stocks, fool.

*Re-enter LEAR, with GLOUCESTER.*

*Lear.* Dost thou speak with me! They are  
sick! They are weary!

all'd all the night! Mere fetches;

revols and flying off.

I see a better answer.

*Glow.* My dear lord,  
You know the fiery quality of the duke;  
How unamiable and fix'd he is

In his own course.

*Lear.* Vengeance! plague! death! confusion!  
Fiery! what quality? Why, Gloucester, Glou-

I'd speak with the Duke of Cornwall and his  
wife.

*Glow.* Well, my good lord, I have inform'd  
them so.

*Lear.* Inform'd them! Dost thou understand  
me, man? <sup>100</sup>

*Glow.* Ay, my good lord.

*Lear.* The king would speak with Cornwall;  
the dear father

Would with his daughter speak, commands her  
service:

Are they inform'd of this! My breath and  
blood!

Fiery! the fiery duke! Tell the hot duke  
that—

No, but not yet: may be he is not well;

Infirmary doth still neglect all office

Whereto our health is bound; we are not our-  
selves

When nature, being oppress'd, commands the  
mind

To suffer with the body: I'll forbear; <sup>110</sup>

And am fall'n out with my more headier will,

To take the indisposed and sickly fit

For the sound man. Death on my state!  
wherefore [*Looking on Kent.*

Should he sit here! This act persuades me  
That this remotion of the duke and her

Is practice only. Give me my servant forth.

Go tell the duke and's wife I'd speak with  
them,

Now, presently: bid them come forth and hear  
me.

Or at their chamber-door I'll beat the drum

Till it cry sleep to death.

*Glow.* I would have all well betwixt you. <sup>120</sup>

*Lear.* O me, my heart, my rising heart!  
but, down! [*Exit.*

*Fool.* Cry to it, nuncle, as the cockney did  
to the oels when she put 'em i' the paste alive;  
she knapped 'em o' the ooxcombe with a stick,  
and cried 'Down, wantons, down!' 'Twas her  
brother that, in pure kindness to his horse,  
battered his hay.

*Enter CORNWALL, REGAN, GLOUCESTER, and  
Servants.*

*Lear.* Good morrow to you both.

*Cor.* Hail to your grace!  
[*Kent is set at liberty.*

*Reg.* I am glad to see your highness. <sup>130</sup>

*Lear.* Regan, I think you are; I know what  
reason

I have to think so: if thou shouldst not be glad,  
I would divorce me from thy mother's tomb,

Sepulchring an adulteress. [*To Kent*] O, are  
you free!

Some other time for that.

Thy sister's naught: O Regan, she

Sharp-tooth'd unkindness, like a vulture, has:  
[*Points to his heart.*

I can seeance speak to thee; thou'lt not believe  
With how degenerated a quality—O Regan!

*Reg.* I pray you, sir, take patience: I have hope  
You less know how to value her desert  
Than she to scant her duty.

*Lear.* Say, how is that?  
*Reg.* I cannot think my sister in the least  
Would fall her obligation: if, sir, perchance  
She have restrain'd the riots of your followers,  
'Tis on such ground, and to such wholesome  
end,

As clears her from all blame.

*Lear.* My curses on her!

*Reg.* O, sir, you are old;  
Nature in you stands on the very verge  
Of her confine: you should be ruled and led  
By some discretion, that discerns your state  
Better than you yourself. Therefore, I pray you,  
That to our sister you do make return;  
Say you have wrong'd her, sir.

*Lear.* Ask her forgiveness!  
Do you but mark how this becomes the house:  
'Dear daughter, I confess that I am old;

*[Kneeling.]*  
Age is unnecessary: on my knees I beg  
That you'll vouchsafe me raiment, bed, and  
food.'

*Reg.* Good sir, no more; these are unlighty  
tricks:

Return you to my sister.

*Lear.* *[Rising.]* Never, Regan: 160  
She hath abated me of half my train;  
Look'd black upon me; struck me with her  
tongue,

Most serpent-like, upon the very heart:  
All the stored vengeance of heaven fall  
On her ingrateful top! Strike her young bones,  
You taking airs, with lameness!

*Corn.* Pity, sir, pity!

*Lear.* You nimble lightnings, dart your  
blinding flames  
Into her scornful eyes! Infect her beauty,  
You fen-suck'd fogs, drawn by this powerful  
sun,

To fall and blast her pride! 170

*Reg.* O the blast gods! so will you wish on  
me.

When the rash mood is on.

*Lear.* No, Regan, thou shalt never have my  
curse:

Thy tender-hefted nature shall not give  
These o'er to harshness: her eyes are fierce; but  
thine

Do comfort and not burn. 'Tis not in thee  
To grudge my pleasures, to cut off my train,  
To bandy hasty words, to scant my sizes,  
And in conclusion to oppose the bolt  
Against my coming in: thou better know'st  
The offices of nature, bond of childhood, 18  
Effects of courtesy, dues of gratitude;  
Thy half of the kingdom I must not forget,  
Wherein I thee endow'd.

*Reg.* Good sir, to the purpose.  
*Lear.* Who put my man in the stocks?

*Corn.* What trumpet's that?

*Reg.* I know't, my sister's: this approves  
her letter,  
That she would soon be here.

*Enter OSWALD.*

*Lear.* Is your lady come?  
This is a slave, whose easy-borrow'd  
pride  
wells in the fickle grace of her he follows.  
Out, varlet, from my sight!

*Corn.* What means your grace?  
*Lear.* Who stock'd my servant? Regan, I  
have good hope 191  
Thou didst not know on't. Who comes here!  
O heavens,

*Enter GONERIL.*

If you do love old men, if your sweet sway  
Allow obedience, if yourselves are old,  
Make it your cause; send down, and take my  
part!

To *Gon.* Art not ashamed to look upon this  
beard?

O Regan, wilt thou take her by the hand?

*Gon.* Why not by the hand, sir? How have  
I offended?

It's not offence that indiscretion finds  
And dotage terms so.

*Lear.* O sides, you are too tough;  
Will you yet hold? How came my man in the  
stocks? 201

*Corn.* I set him there, sir: but his own dis-  
orders  
Deserv'd much less advancement.

*Lear.* You! did you?

*Reg.* I pray you, father, being weak, seem so.  
If, till the expiration of your month,  
You will return and sojourn with my sister,  
Dismissing half your train, come then to me:  
I am now from home, and out of that provision  
Which shall be needful for your entertainment.

*Lear.* Return to her, and fifty men dis-  
miss'd! 210

No, rather I abjure all roofs, and choose  
To wage against the enmity o' the air;  
To be a comrade with the wolf and owl,  
Necessity's sharp pinch! Return with her!  
Why, the hot-blooded France, that doth burn  
took

Our youngest born, I could as well be brought  
To kneel his throne, and, snuff-like, pass my beg  
To keep base life afoot. Return with her!  
Persuade me rather to be slave and sumpter  
To this detested groom. *[Pointing at Oswald.]*

*Gon.* At your choice, sir.  
*Lear.* I prithee, daughter, do not make me  
mad: 221

I will not trouble thee, my child; farewell!  
We'll no more meet, no more see one another:  
But yet thou art my flesh, my blood, my  
daughter;

Or rather a disease that's in my flesh,  
Which I must needs call mine; thou art a boil,  
A plague-sore, an embossed carbuncle,  
In my corrupted blood. But I will not curse thee;

Let shame come when it will, I do not care for't:  
I do not bid the thunder-bearer shoot, 230  
Nor tell tales of thee to high palaces:  
Mend when thou canst; be patient when thou canst  
I can be patient; I can stay with sorrow,  
I and my hundred knights.

*Reg.* Not altogether so:  
I look'd not for you yet, nor am provided  
For your fit welcome. Give ear, sir, to my  
sister;

For those that mingle reason with your passion  
Must be content to think you old, and so—  
But she knows what she does.

*Lear.* Is this well spoken?  
*Reg.* I dare avouch it, sir: what, fifty fol-  
lowers! 240

Is it not well? What should you need of more?  
Yes, or so many, with that both charge and  
danger

Speak 'gainst so great a number? How, in one  
house,

Should many people, under two commands,  
Hold amity? 'Tis hard; almost impossible.

*Gon.* Why might not you, my lord, receive  
attendance

From those that she calls servants or from  
mine!

*Reg.* Why not, my lord? If then they  
chanced to slack you,

We could control them. If you will come to  
me,—

For now I spy a danger,—I entreat you 250  
To bring but five and twenty: to no more

Will I give place or notice.

*Lear.* I gave you all—  
*Reg.* And in good time you gave it.

*Lear.* Made you my guardians, my deposi-  
taries;

But kept a reservation to be follow'd  
With such a number. What, must I come to  
you?

With five and twenty, Regan? said you so?  
*Reg.* And speak 't again, my lord; no more  
with me.

*Lear.* Those wicked creatures yet do look  
well-favour'd,

When others are more wicked; not being the  
worse 260

Stands in some rank of praise. [To *Gon.*]  
I'll go with thee:

Thy fifty yet doth double five-and-twenty,  
And thou art twice her love.

*Gon.* Hear me, my lord:  
What need you five and twenty, ten, or five,

To follow in a house where twice so many  
Have a command to tend you?

*Reg.* What need one?  
*Lear.* O, reason not the need: our basest

Are in the poorest thing superfluous:  
Allow not nature more than nature needs,

Man's life's as cheap as beast's: thou art a  
lady; 270

If only to go warm were gorgeous,  
Why, nature needs not what thou gorgeous

wear'st.

Which scarcely keeps thee warm. But, for  
true need,—

You heavens, give me that patience, patience I  
need!

You and your sons, you gods, a poor old man,  
As full of grief as age; wretched in both!

If it be you that stir these daughters' hearts  
Against their father, fool me not so much

To bear it tamely; touch me with noble anger,  
And let not women's weapons, water-drops,  
Stain my man's cheeks! No, you unnatural  
hags, 281

I will have such revenges on you both,  
That all the world shall—I will do such things,—

What they are, yet I know not; but they  
shall be

The terrors of the earth. You think I'll weep;  
No, I'll not weep:

I have full cause of weeping; but this heart  
Shall break into a hundred thousand flaws,

Or ere I'll weep. O fool, I shall go mad!  
[*Exeunt Lear, Gloucester, Kent, and Fool.*

*Storm and tempest.*  
*Corn.* Let us withdraw: 'twill be a storm.

*Reg.* This house is little: the old man and  
his people 291

Cannot be well bestow'd.

*Gon.* 'Tis his own blame; hath put himself  
from rest.

And must needs taste his folly.  
*Reg.* For his particular, I'll receive him  
gladly,

But not one follower.  
*Gon.* So am I purposed.

Where is my lord of Gloucester?  
*Corn.* Follow'd the old man forth: he is  
return'd.

#### Re-enter GLOUCESTER.

*Glou.* The king is in high rage.  
*Corn.* Whither is he going?

*Glou.* He calls to horse; but will I know  
not whither. 300

*Corn.* 'Tis best to give him way; he leads  
himself.

*Gon.* My lord, entreat him by no means to  
stay.

*Glou.* Alack, the night comes on, and the  
bleak winds

Do sorely ruffle; for many miles about  
There's scarce a bush.

*Reg.* O, sir, to wilful men,  
The injuries that they themselves procure

Must be their schoolmasters. Shut up your  
doors:

He is attended with a desperate train;  
And what they may incense him to, being apt

To have his ear abused, wisdom bids fear. 310  
*Corn.* Shut up your doors, my lord; 'tis a  
wild night:

My Regan counsels well: come out o' the  
storm. [*Exeunt.*

#### ACT III

##### SCENE I. A Heath.

*Storm still.* Enter KENT and a Gentleman,  
meeting.

*Kent.* Who's there, besides foul weather?  
*Gent.* One minded like the weather, most  
unquietly.

*Kent.* I know you. Where's the king?

*Gent.* Contending with the fretful element;  
Bids the wind blow the earth into the sea,  
Or swell the curled waters 'bove the main,  
That things might change or cease; tears his  
white hair,

Which the impetuous blasts, with eyeless rage,  
Catch in their fury, and make nothing of;  
Strives in his little world of man to out-scorn  
The to-and-fro-conflicting wind and rain. <sup>21</sup>  
This night, wherein the cub-drawn bear would  
couch,

The lion and the belly-pinched wolf  
Keep their fur dry, unbattered he runs,  
And bids what will take all.

*Kent.* But who is with him?

*Gent.* None but the fool; who labours to  
out-jest  
His heart-struck injuries.

*Kent.* Sir, I do know you;  
And dare, upon the warrant of my note,  
Commend a dear thing to you. There is  
division,

Although as yet the face of it be cover'd <sup>20</sup>  
With mutual cunning, 'twixt Albany and Corn-  
wall;

Who have—as who have not, that their great  
stars  
Throned and set high!—servants, who seem no  
less,

Which are to France the spies and speculations  
Intelligent of our state; what hath been seen,  
Either in snuffs and packings of the dukes,  
Or the hard rein which both of them have  
borne

Against the old kind king; or something  
deeper,

Whereof perchance these are but furnishings;  
But, true it is, from France there comes a  
power <sup>30</sup>

Into this scatter'd kingdom; who already,  
Wise in their negligence, have secret feet  
In some of our best ports, and are at point  
To show their open banner. Now to you:

If on my credit you dare build so far  
To make your speed to Dover, you shall find  
Some that will thank you, making just report  
Of how unnatural and bemadding sorrow  
The king hath cause to plain.

I am a gentleman of blood and breeding; <sup>40</sup>  
And, from some knowledge and assurance, offer  
This office to you.

*Gent.* I will talk further with you.

*Kent.* No, do not.  
For confirmation that I am much more  
Than my out-wall, open this purse, and take  
What it contains. If you shall see Cordelia,—  
As fear not but you shall,—show her this ring;  
And she will tell you who your fellow is  
That yet you do not know. *Fie on this storm!*  
I will go seek the king. <sup>50</sup>

*Gent.* Give me your hand: have you no  
more to say?

*Kent.* Few words, but, to effect, more than  
all yet;

That, when we have found the king,—in which

—way, I ——— on him  
Holla the other. [Exeunt severally.

SCENE II. *Another part of the heath. Storm  
still.*

*Enter LEAR and Fool.*

*Lear.* Blow, winds, and crack your cheeks!  
rage! blow!

You cataracts and hurricanoes, spout  
Till you have drench'd our steeples, drown'd  
the cocks!

You sulphurous and thought-executing fires,  
Vaunt-couriers to oak-cleaving thunderbolts,  
Singe my white head! And thou, all-shaking  
thunder,

Smite flat the thick rotundity o' the world!  
Crack nature's moulds, all germens spill at  
once,

That make ingrateful man!

*Fool.* O nuncle, court holy-water in a dry  
house is better than this rain-water out o' door.  
Good nuncle, in, and ask thy daughters' blessing:  
here's a night pities neither wise man nor fool.

*Lear.* Rumble thy bellyful! Spit, fire!  
spout, rain!

Nor rain, wind, thunder, fire, are my daughters:  
I tax not you, you elements, with unkindness;  
I never gave you kingdom, call'd you children,  
You owe me no subscription: then let fall  
Your horrible pleasure; here I stand, your  
slave,

A poor, infirm, weak, and despised old man:  
But yet I call you servile ministers, <sup>27</sup>  
That have with two pernicious daughters join'd  
Your high engender'd battles 'gainst a head  
So old and white as this. O! O! 'tis foul!

*Fool.* He that has a house to put's head in  
has a good head-piece.

The cod-piece that will house

Before the head has any,

The head and he shall lounge;

So beggars marry many. <sup>30</sup>

The man that makes his toe

What he his heart should make

Shall of a corn cry woe,

And turn his sleep to wake.

For there was never yet fair woman but she  
made mouths in a glass.

*Lear.* No, I will be the pattern of all  
patience;

I will say nothing.

*Enter KENT.*

*Kent.* Who's there?

*Fool.* Marry, here's grace and a cod-piece;  
that's a wise man and a fool. <sup>41</sup>

*Kent.* Alas, sir, are you here! things that  
love night

Love not such nights as these; the wrathful  
skies

Gallow the very wanderers of the dark,  
And make them keep their caves: since I was  
man,

Such sheets of fire, such bursts of horrid  
thunder,

Such groans of roaring wind and rain; I never  
Remember to have heard: man's nature cannot  
carry

The affliction nor the fear.

*Lear.* Let the great gods,

That keep this dreadful pother o'er our heads;  
Find out their enemies now. Tremble, thou  
wretch,

That hast within thee undivulged crimes,  
Unwhipp'd of justice: hide thee, thou bloody  
hand;

Thou perfur'd, and thou simular man of virtue  
That art incestuous: caitiff, to pieces shake,  
That under covert and convenient seeming  
Hast practis'd on man's life: close pent-up  
guilt,

Give your concealing continents, and cry  
These dreadful summoners grace. I am a man  
More stunn'd against than sinning.

*Kent.* Alack, bare-headed! 60  
Gracious my lord, hard by here is a hovel;  
Some friendship will it lead you 'gainst the  
tempest:

Repose you there; while I to this hard house—  
More harder than the stones whereof 'tis raised;  
Which even but now, demanding after you,  
Denied me to come in—return, and force  
Their scanty courtesy.

*Lear.* My wits begin to turn.  
Come on, my boy: how dost, my boy! art  
cold?

I am cold myself. Where is this straw, my  
fellow!

The art of our necessities is strange, 70  
That can make vile things precious. Come,  
your hovel.

Poor fool and knave, I have one part in my  
heart  
That's sorry yet for thee.

*Fool.* [Singing] He that has and a little tiny  
wit—

With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,—  
Must make content with his fortunes fit,  
For the rain it raineth every day.

*Lear.* True, my good boy. Come, bring us  
to this hovel. [Exeunt *Lear* and *Kent*.]

*Fool.* This is a brave night to cool a  
courtisan.

I'll speak a prophecy ere I go: 80

When priests are more in word than matter;  
When brewers mar their malt with water;  
When nobles are their tailors' tators;  
No heretics burn'd, but wenches' suitors;  
When every case in law is right;  
No squire in debt, nor no poor knight;  
When slanders do not live in tongues;  
Nor cutpurses come not to throngs;  
When usurers tell their gold i' the field;  
And bawds and whores do churches build;  
Then shall the realm of Albion 91

Come to great confusion:  
Then comes the time, who lives to see 't,  
That going shall be used with feet.

This prophecy Merlin shall make; for I live  
before his time. [Exit.]

SCENE III. Gloucester's castle.

Enter Gloucester and Edmund.

*Glouc.* Alack, alack, Edmund, I like not this  
business of banishing. When I desired their leave  
that I might play him, they took from me the  
word of mine honour; charged me, on pain

of their perpetual displeasure, neither to speak  
of him, entreat for him, nor any way sustain  
him.

*Edm.* Most savage and unnatural!  
*Glouc.* Go to; say you nothing. There's a  
division betwixt the dukes; and a worse master  
than that: I have received a letter this night;  
'tis dangerous to be spoken: I have locked the  
letter in my closet: these injuries the king now  
bears will be revenged home; there's part of a  
power already footed: we must incline to the  
king. I will seek him, and privately relieve him:  
go you and maintain talk with the duke, that  
my charity be not of him perceived: if he ask  
for me, I am ill, and gone to bed. Though I  
die for it, as no less is threatened me, the king  
my old master must be relieved. There is  
some strange thing toward, Edmund; pray  
you, be careful. [Exit.]

*Edm.* This courtesy, forbid thee, shall the  
duke

Instantly know; and of that letter too:  
This seems a fair deserving, and must draw me  
That which my father loses; no less than all:  
The younger rises when the old doth fall. [Exit.]

SCENE IV. The heath. Before a hovel.

Enter LEAR, KENT, and Fool.

*Kent.* Here is the place, my lord; good my  
lord, enter:

The tyranny of the open night's too rough  
For nature to endure. [Storm still.]

*Lear.* Let me alone.

*Kent.* Good my lord, enter here.

*Lear.* Will break my heart!

*Kent.* I had rather break mine own. Good  
my lord, enter.

*Lear.* Thou think'st 'tis much that this con-  
tentious storm

InvaDES us to the skin: so 'tis to thee;  
But where the greater malady is fix'd,  
The lesser is scarce felt. Thou 'dst shun a  
bear;

But if thy flight lay toward the raging sea, 10  
Thou 'dst meet the bear i' the mouth. When  
the mind's free,

The body's delicate: the tempest in my mind  
Doth from my senses take all feeling else  
Save what beats there. Filial ingratitude!  
Is it not as this mouth should tear this hand

For lifting food to't? But I will punish home:  
No, I will weep no more. In such a night  
To shut me out! Pour on; I will endure.

In such a night as this! O Regan, Goneril!  
Your old kind father, whose frank heart gave  
all— 20

O, that way madness lies; let me shun that;  
No more of that.

*Kent.* Good my lord, enter here.

*Lear.* Prithas, go in thyself; seek thine own  
case:

This tempest will not give me leave to ponder  
On things would hurt me more. But I'll go in.  
[To the Fool] In, boy; go first. You know  
poverty,—  
Nay, get thee in. I'll stay, and then I'll sleep.  
[Fool goes on.]



Poor naked wretches, wheresoe'er you are,  
That hide the pining of this pitiless storm,  
How shall your houseless heads and unfed  
sides,

Your toup'd and window'd raggedness, defend  
you

From seasons such as these? O, I have ta'en  
Too little care of this! Take physic, pomp;  
Expose thyself to feel what wretches feel,  
That thou mayst shake the superflux to them,  
And show the heavens more just.

Edg. [Within] Fathom and half, fathom  
and half! Poor Tom!

[The Fool runs out from the hotel.]

Fool. Come not in here, nuncle, here's a  
spirit. Help me, help me!

Kent. Give me thy hand. Who's there?

Fool. A spirit, a spirit: he says his name's  
poor Tom.

Kent. What art thou that dost grumble there  
i' the straw? Come forth.

Enter EDGAR disguised as a madman.

Edg. Away! the foul fiend follows me!  
Through the sharp hawthorn blows the cold  
wind.

Hum! go to thy cold bed, and warm thee.

Lear. Hast thou given all to thy two  
daughters?

And art thou come to this?

Edg. Who gives any thing to poor Tom?  
whom the foul fiend hath led through fire and  
through flame, through ford and whirlpool,  
o'er bog and quagmire; that hath laid knives  
under his pillow, and halters in his pew; set  
ratsbane by his porridge; made him proud of  
heart, to ride on a bay trotting-horse over four-  
inched bridges, to course his own shadow for a  
traior. Bless thy five wits! Tom's a-cold,—  
O, do da, do da, do da. Bless thee from whirl-  
winds, star-blasting, and taking! Do poor Tom  
some charity, whom the foul fiend vexes: there  
could I have him now,—and there,—and there  
again, and there.

Lear. What, have his daughters brought  
him to this pass?

Couldst thou save nothing? Didst thou give  
them all?

Fool. Nay, he reserved a blanket, else we  
had been all shamed.

Lear. Now, all the plagues that in the pen-  
dulous air

Hang fated o'er men's faults light on thy  
daughters!

Kent. He hath no daughters, sir.

Lear. Death, traitor! nothing could have  
subdued nature

To such a lowness but his unkind daughters.  
Is it the fashion, that discarded fathers  
Should have thus little mercy on their flesh?  
Judicious punishment! 'twas this that begot  
Those pelican daughters.

Edg. Fillicock sit on Paddock-hill!

Halloo, halloo, Joe! Joe!

Fool. This cold night will turn us all to  
fools and madmen.

Edg. Take heed o' the foul fiend: obey thy  
parents; keep thy word justly; sweeten me;

commit not with man's sworn spouse; set not  
thy sweet heart on proud array. Tom's a-cold.

Lear. What hast thou been?

Edg. A serving-man, proud in heart and  
mind; that carried my hair: wore gloves in my  
cap; served the lust of my mistress' heart, and  
did the act of darkness with her; swore as  
many oaths as I spake words, and broke them  
in the sweet face of heaven: one that slept in  
the contriving of lust, and waked to do it;  
wine loved I deeply, dice dearly; and in  
woman out-paramoured the Turk; false of  
heart, light of ear, bloody of hand; hog in  
sloth, fox in stealth, wolf in greediness, dog in  
madness, lion in prey. Let not the creaking of  
shoes nor the rustling of silks betray thy poor  
heart to woman: keep thy foot out of brothels,  
thy hand out of plackets, thy pen from lenders'  
books, and defy the foul fiend.

Still through the hawthorn blows the cold  
wind:

Says suum, mum, ha, no, nonny.

Dolphin my boy, my boy, sense! let him trot by.

[Storm still.]

Lear. Why, thou wert better in thy grave  
than to answer with thy uncovered body this  
extremity of the skies. Is man no more than  
this? Consider him well. Thou sweet the  
worm no silk, the beast no hide, the sheep no  
wool, the cat no perfume. Ha! here's three  
on's are sophisticated! Thou art the thing  
itself: unaccommodated man is no more but  
such a poor, bare, forked animal as thou art.  
Off, off, you lendings! come, unbutton here.

[Tearing off his clothes.]  
Fool. Prithee, nuncle, be contented: 'tis a  
naughty night to swim in. Now a little fire in  
a wild field were like an old lecher's heart: a  
small spark, all the rest on's body cold. Look,  
here comes a walking fire.

Enter GLOUCESTER, with a torch.

Edg. This is the foul fiend Flibbertigibbet;  
he begins at curfew, and walks till the first  
cock; he gives the web and the pin, squints the  
eye, and makes the hare-lip; mews the white  
wheat, and hurts the poor creatures of earth.

S. Withold footed thrice the old  
He met the night-mare, and her nine-fold.

Bid her alight,  
And her troth plight,

And, aroint thee, witch, aroint thee!

Kent. How fares your grace?

Lear. What's he?

Kent. Who's there? What is't you seek?

Glow. What are you there? Your names?

Edg. Poor Tom; that eats the swimming  
frog, the toad, the badpole, the wall-newt, and  
the water; that in the fury of his heart, when  
the foul fiend rages, eats raw dung for pelican;  
swallows the old rat and the ditch-slug; drinks  
the green mantle of the standing pool; who is  
whipped from tithing to tithing, and stock-  
punished and harracooned; who hath and three  
suits to his back, six shirts to his body, horse  
to ride, and weapon to wear;

that misused mine, and made mine deaf;  
Have been Tom's food for seven long years.

Beware my follower. Peace, Smulkin; peace, thou fiend!

*Glow.* What, hath your grace no better company!

*Edg.* The prince of darkness is a gentleman: Modo he's call'd, and Mahu.

*Glow.* Our flesh and blood is grown so vile, my lord, 150

That it doth hate what gets it.

*Edg.* Poor Tom's a-cold.

*Glow.* Go in with me; my duty cannot suffer To obey in all your daughters' hard commands: Though their injunction be to bar my doors, And let this tyrannous night take hold upon you,

Yet have I ventured to come seek you out, And bring you where both fire and food is ready.

*Lear.* First let me talk with this philosopher. What is the cause of thunder? 160

*Kent.* Good my lord, take his offer; go into the house.

*Lear.* I'll talk a word with this same learned Theban.

What is your study?

*Edg.* How to prevent the fiend, and to kill vermin.

*Lear.* Let me ask you one word in private.

*Kent.* Importune him once more to go, my lord;

His wits begin to unsettle.

*Glow.* Canst thou blame him? [*Storm still.* His daughters seek his death; ah, that good Kent!

He said it would be thus, poor banish'd man! Thou say'st the king grows mad; I'll tell thee, friend, 170

I am almost mad myself: I had a son, Now outlaw'd from my blood; he sought my life, But lately, very late: I loved him, friend: No father his son dearer: truth to tell thee, The grief hath crazed my wits. What a night's this!

I do beseech your grace,—

*Lear.* O, cry you mercy, sir. Noble philosopher, your company.

*Edg.* Tom's a-cold.

*Glow.* In, fellow, there, into the hovel: keep thee warm.

*Lear.* Come, let's in all.

*Kent.* This way, my lord. With him;

I will keep still with my philosopher. 181

*Kent.* Good my lord, soothe him; let him take the fellow.

*Glow.* Take him you on.

*Kent.* Sirrah, come on; go along with us.

*Lear.* Come, good Athenian.

*Glow.* No words, no words: hush.

*Edg.* Child Rowland to the dark tower came, His word was still,—Fie, foh, and fum, I smell the blood of a British man.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. Gloucester's castle.

Enter CORNWALL and EDMUND.

*Corn.* I will have my revenge ere I depart this house.

*Edm.* How, my lord, I may be censured, that nature thus gives way to loyalty, something fears me to think of.

*Corn.* I now perceive, it was not altogether your brother's evil disposition made him seek his death; but a provoking merit, set a-work by a reprovable badness in him.

*Edm.* How malicious is fortune, that I must repent to be just! This is the letter he spoke of, which approves him an intelligent party to the advantages of France. O heavens! that this treason were not, or not I the detector!

*Corn.* Go with me to the duchess.

*Edm.* If the matter of this paper be certain, you have mighty business in hand.

*Corn.* True or false, it hath made the earl of Gloucester. Seek out where thy father is, that he may be ready for our apprehension. 20

*Edm.* [*Aside*] If I find him comforting the king, it will stuff his suspicion more fully.—I will persevere in my course of loyalty, though the conflict be sore between that and my blood.

*Corn.* I will lay trust upon thee; and thou shalt find a dearer father in my love. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI. A chamber in a farmhouse adjoining the castle.

Enter GLOUCESTER, LEAR, KENT, Fool, and EDGAR.

*Glow.* Here is better than the open air; take it thankfully. I will piece out the comfort with what addition I can: I will not be long from you.

*Kent.* All the power of his wits have given way to his impatience: the gods reward your kindness!

*Edg.* Frateretto calls me; and tells me Nero is an angler in the lake of darkness. Pray, innocent, and beware the foul fiend.

*Fool.* Prithee, nuncle, tell me whether a madman be a gentleman or a yeoman? 21

*Lear.* A king, a king!

*Fool.* No, he's a yeoman that has a gentleman to his son; for he's a mad yeoman that sees his son a gentleman before him.

*Lear.* To have a thousand with red burning spits

Come hissing in upon 'em.—

*Edg.* The foul fiend bites my back.

*Fool.* He's mad that trusts in the tameness of a wolf, a horse's health, a boy's love, or a whore's oath. 22

*Lear.* It shall be done; I will arraign them straight.

[*To Edgar*] Come, sit thou here, most learned justice:

[*To the Fool*] Thou, sapient sir, sit here. Now, you are loosed!

*Edg.* Look, where he stands and glares! Wantest thou eyes at trial, madam?

*Lear.* Come o'er the bourn, Bemy, to me,—

*Fool.* Her boat hath a leak, And she must not speak. 23

Why she dares not come over to thee.

*Edg.* The foul fiend haunts poor Tom in the voice of a nightingale. Hopdance cries in Tom's

belly for two white herring. Croak not, black angel; I have no food for thee.

*Kent.* How do you, sir? Stand you not so amazed:

Will you lie down and rest upon the cushions? *Lear.* I'll see their trial first. Bring in the evidence.

[*To Edgar*] Thou robed man of justice, take thy place;

[*To the Fool*] And thou, his yoke-fellow of equity,

Bench by his side: [*To Kent*] you are o' the commission, 40

Sit you too.

*Edg.* Let us deal justly.

Sleepest or wakest thou, jolly shepherd?

Thy sheep be in the corn;

And for one blast of thy minikin mouth,

Thy sheep shall take no harm.

Pur! the cat is gray.

*Lear.* Arraign her first; 'tis Goneril. I here take my oath before this honourable assembly, she kicked the poor king her father. 50

*Fool.* Come hither, mistress. Is your name Goneril?

*Lear.* She cannot deny it.

*Fool.* Cry you mercy, I took you for a joint-stool.

*Lear.* And here's another, whose warp'd looks proclaim

What store her heart is made on. Stop her there!

Arms, arms, sword, fire! Corruption in the place!

False justicer, why hast thou let her 'scape?

*Edg.* Bless thy five wits! 60

*Kent.* O pity! Sir, where is the patience now,

That you so oft have boasted to retain?

*Edg.* [*Aside*] My tears begin to take his part so much,

They'll mar my counterfeiting.

*Lear.* The little dogs and all,

Tray, Blanch, and Sweet-heart, see, they bark at me.

*Edg.* Tom will throw his head at them. Avaunt, you curs!

Be thy mouth or black or white,

Tooth that poisons if it bite;

Mastiff, greyhound, mongrel grim,

Blound or spaniel, brach or lyn,

Or bobtail tike or trundle-tail,

Tom will make them weep and wail:

For, with throwing thus my head,

Dogs leap the hatch, and all are fled.

Do, do, do, do, do. Sessu! Come, march to wakes and fairs and market-towns. Poor Tom, thy horn is dry. 70

*Lear.* Then let them anatomise Regan; see what breeds about her heart. Is there any cause in nature that makes these hard hearts?

[*To Edgar*] You, sir, I entertain for one of my hundred; only I do not like the fashion of your garments; you will say they are Persian attire; but let them be changed.

*Kent.* Now, good my lord, lie here and rest awhile.

*Lear.* Make no noise, make no noise; draw

the curtains; so, so, so. We'll go to supper for the morning. So, so, so. 91

*Fool.* And I'll go to bed at noon.

*Re-enter GLOUCESTER.*

*Glou.* Come hither, friend: where is the king my master?

*Kent.* Here, sir; but trouble him not, his wits are gone.

*Glou.* Good friend, I prithee, take him in thy arms;

I have o'erheard a plot of death upon him:

There is a litter ready; lay him in't, And drive towards Dover, friend, where thou shalt meet

Both welcome and protection. Take up thy master: 99

If thou shouldst dally half an hour, his life,

With thine, and all that offer to defend him,

Stand in assured loss: take up, take up;

And follow me, that will to some provision

Give thee quick conduct.

*Kent.* Oppressed nature sleeps: This rest might yet have balm'd thy broken

sinews,

Which, if convenience will not allow,

Stand in hard cure. [*To the Fool*] Come, help to bear thy master;

Thou must not stay behind.

*Glou.* Come, come, away. [*Exeunt all but Edgar.*

*Edg.* When we our betters see bearing our woes,

We scarcely think our miseries our foes. 100

Who alone suffers suffers most I the mind,

Leaving free thine and happy shows behind:

But then the mind much sufferance doth o'er-

skip,

When grief hath mates, and bearing fellowship.

How light and portable my pain seems now,

When that which makes me bend makes the

king bow,

He childed as I father'd! Tom, away!

Mark the high noises; and thyself bewray,

When false opinion, whose wrong thought

defiles thee,

In thy just proof, repeals and reconciles thee.

What will hap more to-night, aside 'scape the

king! 101

Lurk, lurk. [*Exit.*

## SCENE VII. Gloucester's castle.

*Enter CORNWALL, REGAN, GONERIL, EDMUND, and Servants.*

*Corn.* Post speedily to my lord your husband; show him this letter: the army of France is landed. Seek out the villain Gloucester.

[*Exeunt some of the Servants.*

*Reg.* Hang him instantly.

*Gon.* Pluck out his eyes.

*Corn.* Leave him to my displeasure. Edmund, keep you our sister company: the ravens we are bound to take upon your traitorous father are not fit for your beholding. Advise the duke, where you are going, to a more fortunate progeny: you are bound to the like. Our guests shall

he swift and intelligent betwixt us. Farewell, dear sister: farewell, my lord of Gloucester.

*Enter OSWALD.*

How now! where's the king?

*Osw.* My lord of Gloucester hath convey'd him hence:

Some five or six and thirty of his knights,  
Hot quartrasters after him, met him at gate;  
Who, with some other of the lords dependants,  
Are gone with him towards Dover; where they  
boast

To have well-armed friends.

*Corn.* Get horses for your mistress. 30

*Gon.* Farewell, sweet lord, and sister.

*Corn.* Edmund, farewell.

*[Exeunt Goneril, Edmund, and Oswald.]*

Go seek the traitor Gloucester,  
Pinch him like a thief, bring him before us.

*[Exeunt other Servants.]*

Though well we may not pass upon his life  
Without the form of justice, yet our power  
Shall do a courtesy to our wrath, which men  
May blame, but not control. Who's there? the  
traitor!

*Enter GLOUCESTER, brought in by two or three.*

*Reg.* Ingrateful fox! 'tis he.

*Corn.* Bind fast his corky arms.

*Glow.* What mean your graces? Good my  
friends, consider

You are my guests: do me no foul play, friends. 30

*Corn.* Bind him, I say. *[Servants bind him.]*

*Reg.* Hard, hard. O sikhly traitor!

*Glow.* Unmerciful lady as you are, I'm none.

*Corn.* To this chair bind him. Villain, thou  
shalt find—

*[Regen. plucks his beard.]*

*Glow.* By the kind gods, 'tis most ignobly  
done

To pinch me by the beard.

*Reg.* So white, and such a traitor!

*Glow.* Naughty lady,

These hairs, which thou dost ravish from my  
chin,

Will quicken, and accuse thee: I am your host:  
With robbers' hands my hospitable favours 40

You should not ruffle thus. What will you do?

*Corn.* Come, sir, what letters had you late  
from France?

*Reg.* Be simple answerer, for we know the  
truth.

*Corn.* And what confederacy have you with  
the traitors

Late feasted in the kingdom?

*Reg.* To whose hands have you sent the  
humiliating king?

*Speak.*

*Glow.* I have a letter guessingly set down,  
Which came from one that's of a neutral heart,  
And not from one opposed.

*Corn.* Cunning.

*Reg.* And false.

*Corn.* Where hast thou sent the king? 50

*Glow.* To Dover.

*Reg.* Whence to Dover? What thou not  
durst at such—

*Corn.* Whence to Dover? Let him find  
out.

*Glow.* I am tied to the stake, and I must  
stand the course.

*Reg.* Whence to Dover, sir?

*Glow.* Because I would not see my cruel  
nails

Pluck out his poor old eyes; nor thy fierce sister  
In his anointed flesh stick boarish fangs.

The sea, with such a storm as his bare head  
In hell-black night endured, would have buoy'd 60

up,  
And quench'd the stelled fires—

Yet, poor old heart, he holp the heavens to rain.  
If wolves had at thy gate howl'd that stern

time,  
Thou shouldst have said 'Good porter, turn the

key,  
All cruels else subscribed: but I shall see

The winged vengeance overtake such children.

*Corn.* See't shalt thou never. Follows, hold  
the chair.

Upon these eyes of thine I'll set my foot.

*Glow.* He that will think to live till he  
be old,

Give me some help! O cruel! O you gods! 70  
*Reg.* One side will mock another; the other  
too.

*Corn.* If you see vengeance,—

*First Serv.* Hold your hand, my lord:  
I have served you ever since I was a child;

But better service have I never done you  
Than now to bid you hold.

*Reg.* How now, you dog!

*First Serv.* If you did wear a band upon  
your chin,

I'd shake it on this quarrel. What do you  
mean!

*Corn.* My villain! *[They draw and fight.]*

*First Serv.* Nay, then, come on, and take  
the chance of anger.

*Reg.* Give me thy sword. A peasant stand  
up thus! 80

*[Takes a sword, and runs at him behind.]*

*First Serv.* O, I am slain! My lord, you  
have one eye left

To see some mischief on him. O! *[Dies.]*

*Corn.* Lest it see more, prevent it. Out,  
vile jelly!

Where is thy lustre now?

*Glow.* All dark and comfortless. Where's

my son Edmund?

Edmund, enkindle all the sparks of nature,  
To quit this horrid act.

*Reg.* Out, treacherous villain!

Thou call'st on him that hates thee: it was he  
That made the overture of thy treason to us;

'he is too good to pity thee. 90

*Glow.* O my follies! then Edgar was abused.  
Kind gods, forgive me that, and prosper him!

*Reg.* Go turn him out at gates, and let  
him smell

His way to Dover.

*How is't, my lord!*

*Corn.* I have received a hurt; follow me,  
lady.

Turn out that cruel villain; throw this slave  
Upon the daughter. *[Edgar, I almost weep.]*

Intimely comes this hurt: give me your arm.

*[Exit Cornwall, led by Edgar.]*

*Sec. Serv.* I'll never care what wickedness  
I do,  
If this man come to good.

*Third Serv.* If she live long, 100  
And in the end meet the old course of death,  
Women will all turn monsters.

*Sec. Serv.* Let's follow the old earl, and get  
the Bedlam

To lead him where he would: his roguish mad-  
ness

Allows itself to any thing.

*Third Serv.* Go thou: I'll fetch some flax  
and whites of eggs

To apply to his bleeding face. Now, heaven  
help him! *[Exeunt severally.]*

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I. The heath.

*Enter EDGAR.*

*Edg.* Yet better thus, and known to be con-  
temn'd,  
Than still contain'd and flatter'd. To be worst,  
The lowest and most dejected thing of fortune,  
Stands still in esperance, lives not in fear:

The lamentable change is from the best;  
The worst returns to laughter. Welcome, then,  
Thou unsubstantial air that I embrace!  
The wretch that thou hast blown unto the  
worst

Owes nothing to thy blasts. But who comes  
here!

*Enter GLOUCESTER, led by an Old Man.*

My father, poorly led! World, world, O world!  
But that thy strange mutations make us hate  
thee, 11

Life would not yield to age.

*Old Man.* O, my good lord, I have been  
your tenant, and your father's tenant, these  
four score years.

*Glow.* Away, get thee away; good friend, be  
gone;

Thy comforts can do me no good at all;  
Thee they may hurt.

*Old Man.* Alack, sir, you cannot see your  
way.

*Glow.* I have no way, and therefore want no  
eyes; 12

I stumbled when I saw: full oft 'tis seen,  
Our means secure us, and our mere defects  
Prove our commodities. O dear son Edgar,  
The food of thy abused father's wrath!  
Might I but live to see thee in my touch,  
I'd say I had eyes again!

*Old Man.* How now! Who's there?  
*Edg.* *[Aside]* O gods! Who is't can say 'I  
am at the worst'!

I am worse than e'er I was.

*Old Man.* 'Tis poor mad Tom.

*Edg.* *[Aside]* And worse I may be yet: the  
worst is not

So long as we can say 'This is the worst.' 13

*Old Man.* Fellow, where goest?

*Glow.* Is it a beggar-man

*Old Man.* Madman and beggar too.

*Glow.* He has some reason, else he could not  
beg.

the last night's storm I such a fellow saw;  
Which made me think a man a worm: my son  
Came then into my mind; and yet my mind  
Was then scarce friends with him: I have  
heard more since.

As flies to wanton boys, are we to the gods,  
They kill us for their sport.

*Edg.* *[Aside]* How should this be! 14  
Bad is the trade that must play fool to sorrow,  
Angering itself and others.—Bless thee, master!

*Glow.* Is that the naked fellow?

*Old Man.* Ay, my lord.

*Glow.* Then, prithee, get thee gone: if, for  
my sake,

Thou wilt o'ertake us, hence a mile or twain,  
I'll the way toward Dover, do it for ancient love;  
And bring some covering for this naked soul,  
Who I'll entreat to lead me.

*Old Man.* Alack, sir, he is mad.

*Glow.* 'Tis the times' plague, when madmen  
lead the blind.

Do as I bid thee, or rather do thy pleasure; 15

Above the rest, be gone.

*Old Man.* I'll bring him the best 'parel  
that I have, *[Exit.]*

Come on't what will.

*Glow.* Sirrah, naked fellow,—  
*Edg.* Poor Tom's a-cold. *[Aside]* I cannot  
daub it further.

*Glow.* Come hither, fellow.

*Edg.* *[Aside]* And yet I must.—Bless thy  
sweet eyes, they bleed.

*Glow.* Know'st thou the way to Dover?

*Edg.* Both stile and gate, horse-way and  
foot-path. Poor Tom hath been scared out of  
his good wits; bless thee, good man's son, from  
the foul fiend! five fiends have been in poor  
Tom at once; of lust, as Obdicut; Hobelid-  
dance, prince of dumbness; Mahu, of stealing;  
Modo, of murder; Flibbertigibbet, of mopping  
and mowing, who since possesses chamber-  
maids and waiting-women. So; bless thee,  
master!

*Glow.* Here, take this purse, thou whom the  
heavens plague

Have humbled to all strokes: that I am  
wretched

Makes thee the happier: heavens, deal so still!

Let the superfluous and lust-dieted man, 16

That slaves your ordinance, that will not see

Because he doth not feel, feel your power

quickly;

So distribution should undo excess,

And each man have enough. Dost thou know  
Dover?

*Edg.* Ay, master.

*Glow.* There is a cliff, whose high and bend-  
ing head

Looks fearfully in the confined deep;

Bring me but to the very brink of it.

And I'll repair the misery thou dost bear

With something rich about me; from that place

I shall no leading need.

*Edg.* Give me thy arm; 17

Poor Tom shall lead thee. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE II. *Before the Duke of Albany's palace.*

*Enter GONERIL and EDMUND.*

Gon. Welcome, my lord: I marvel our mild husband  
Not met us on the way.

*Enter OSWALD.*

Osw. Now, where's your master?  
Osw. Madam, within; but never man so changed.

I told him of the army that was landed;  
He smiled at it: I told him you were coming;  
His answer was 'The worse:' of Gloucester's treachery.

And of the loyal service of his son,  
When I inform'd him, then he call'd me sot,  
And told me I had turn'd the wrong side out:  
What most he should dislike seems pleasant to him;

What like, offensive.  
Gon. [To Edm.] Then shall you go no further.

It is the cowish terror of his spirit,  
That dares not undertake: he'll not feel wrongs  
Which tie him to an answer. Our wishes on the way

May prove effects. Back, Edmund, to my brother;

Hasten his musters and conduct his powers:  
I must change arms at home, and give the distaff

Into my husband's hands. This trusty servant  
Shall pass between us: ere long you are like to hear,

If you dare venture in your own behalf,  
As a mistress's command. Wear this; spare speech;

Decline your head: this kiss, if it durst speak,  
Would stretch thy spirits up into the air:  
Conceive, and fare thee well.

Edm. Yours in the ranks of death.  
Gon. My most dear Gloucester!

O, the difference of man and man!  
To thee a woman's services are due:  
My fool usurps my body.

Osw. Madam, here comes my lord.

*Enter ALBANY.*

Gon. I have been worth the whistle.  
Alb. O Goneril!

You are not worth the dust which the rude wind

Blows in your face. I fear your disposition:  
That nature, which contemns its origin,  
Cannot be leader'd certain in itself;

She that herself will sliver and disbranch  
From her material sap, perforce must wither  
And come to friendly use.

Gon. Where's the text is foolish.  
Alb. And goodness to the vile seem

What have you

Tigers, not daughters, what have you perform'd?  
A father, and a gracious aged man,

Whose reverence even the head-lugg'd bear  
would lick,

Most barbarous, most degenerate! have you  
maddened.

Could my good brother suffer you to do it!  
A man, a prince, by him so benighted!  
If that the heavens do not their visible spirits

Send quickly down to tame these vile offences,  
It will come,

Humanity must perforce prey on itself,  
Like monsters of the deep.

Gon. Milk-liver'd man!  
That bear'st a cheek for blows, a head for wrongs:

Who hast not in thy brows an eye discerning  
Thine honour from thy suffering: that not know'st

Fools do those villains pity who are punish'd  
Ere they have done their mischief. Where's  
thy drum?

France spreads his banners in our noiseless  
land,

With plumed helm thy state begins to threaten;  
Whiles thou, a moral fool, sit'st still, and criest

'Alack, why does he so?'

Alb. See thyself, devil!  
Proper deformity seems not in the hand

So horrid as in woman.

Gon. O vain fool!  
Alb. Thou chang'd and self-cover'd thing,  
for shame,

Be-monster not thy feature. Were't my fitness  
To let these hands obey my blood,

They are apt enough to dislocate and tear  
Thy flesh and bones: how'er thou art a fiend;

A woman's shape doth shield thee.  
Gon. Marry, your manhood now—

*Enter a Messenger.*

Alb. What news?  
Mess. O, my good lord, the Duke of Corn-

wall's dead;  
Slain by his servant, going to put out

The other eye of Gloucester.

Alb. Gloucester's eyes!  
Mess. A servant that he had, thrill'd with

remorse,  
Opposed against the act, bending his sword

To his great master; who, thereat enraged,  
Flew on him, and amongst them fell'd him

dead;  
But not without that harmful stroke, which

since  
Hath pluck'd him after.

Alb. This shows you are above,  
You justicers, that these our nether crimes

So speedily can venge! But, O poor Gloucester!  
Lost he his other eye?

Mess. Both, both, my lord.  
This letter, madam, craves a speedy answer;

Tis from your sister.

Gon. [Aside] One way I like this well:  
But being widow, and my Gloucester with her,  
May all the building in my fancy pluck  
Upon my hateful life: another way,

The news is not so tart.—I'll read, and answer.

[Exit.]

Alb. Where was his son when they did take his eyes?

Mess. Come with my lady hither.

Alb. He is not here.

Mess. No, my good lord; I met him back again.

Alb. Knows he the wickedness?

Mess. Ay, my good lord; 'twas he inform'd against him;

And quit the house on purpose, that their punishment Might have the freer course.

Alb. Gloucester, I live To thank thee for the love thou show'st the king.

And to revenge thine eyes. Come hither, friend!

Tell me what more thou know'st. [Exeunt.]

SCENE III. The French camp near Dover.

Enter KENT and a Gentleman.

Kent. Why the King of France is so suddenly gone back know you the reason?

Gent. Something he left imperfect in the state, which since his coming forth is thought of; which imports to the kingdom so much fear and danger, that his personal return was most required and necessary.

Kent. Who hath he left behind him general?

Gent. The Marshal of France, Monsieur La Far.

Kent. Did your letters pierce the queen to any demonstration of grief?

Gent. Ay, sir; she took them, read them in my presence;

And now and then an ample tear trill'd down Her delicate cheek: it seem'd she was a queen Over her passion; who, most rebel-like, Bought to be king o'er her.

Kent. O, then it moved her.

Gent. Not to a rage: patience and sorrow strove

Who should express her goodliest. You have seen

Sunshine and rain at once: her smiles and tears

† Were like a better way: those happy smiles, That play'd on her ripe lip, seem'd not to know

What guests were in her eyes; which parted thence,

As pearls from diamonds dropp'd. In brief, Sorrow would be a rarity most beloved,

If all could so become it.

Kent. Mad, she no verbal question?

Gent. Faith, once or twice she heaved the name of 'father'

Pantingly forth, as if it press'd her heart;

Cried 'Sisters! sisters! Shame on ladies' sisters!

Kent! father! sisters! What, if the storm? I the night!

Let pity not be believed! There she shook The holy water from her heavenly eyes,

And clamour'd 'Sisters! then away she started

To deal with grief alone.

Kent. It is the stars, he stars above us, govern our conditions; Else one self mate and mate could not begot Such different issues. You spoke not with her since!

Gent. No.

Kent. Was this before the king return'd?

Gent. No, since.

Kent. Well, sir, the poor distressed Lear's in the town;

Who sometime, in his better tune, remembers What we are come about, and by no means Will yield to see his daughter.

Gent. Why, good sir!

Kent. A sovereign shame so elbows him: his own unkindness,

That stripp'd her from his benediction, turn'd her To foreign casualties, gave her dear rights To his dog-hearted daughters, these things sting

His mind so venomously, that burning shame Detains him from Cordelia.

Gent. Alack, poor gentleman!

Kent. Of Albany's and Cornwall's powers you heard not?

Gent. 'Tis so, they are afoot.

Kent. Well, sir, I'll bring you to our master Lear,

And leave you to attend him: some dear cause Will in concealment wrap me up awhile;

When I am known aright, you shall not grieve Lending me this acquaintance. I pray you, go Along with me. [Exeunt.]

SCENE IV. The same. A tent.

Enter, with drum and colours, CORNELIUS, Doctor, and Soldiers.

Cor. Alack, 'tis he: why, he was met even now

As mad as the wild sea; singing aloud; Crown'd with rank fumiter and furrow-weeds,

With bur-docks, hemlock, nettles, cuckoo-flowers,

Darnel, and all the idle weeds that grow In our sustaining corn. A century and forth;

Search every acre in the high-grown field, And bring him to our eye. [Exit an Officer.]

What can man's wisdom In the restoring his bereaved sense?

He that helps him take all my outward worth.

Doc. There is means, madam:

Our foster-nurse of nature is repose, The which he lacks; that to provoke in him,

Are many simples operative, whose power Will close the eye of anguish.

Cor. All that's best, All you unpublished virtues of the earth,

Spring with my tears! be silent and unfeeling In the good man's distress! Seek, seek for him;

Lost his ungodly rage dissolve the life That wants the means to lead it!

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. News, madam; The British power are seeking him.

*Cor.* 'Tis known before; our preparation stands  
In expectation of them. O dear father,  
It is thy business that I go about;  
Therefore great France  
My mourning and important tears hath pitied.  
No blown ambition doth our arms incite,  
But love, dear love, and our aged father's right:  
Soon may I hear and see him! [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE V. Gloucester's castle.

*Enter REGAN and OSWALD.*

*Reg.* But are my brother's powers set forth?  
*Osw.* Ay, madam.  
*Reg.* Himself in person there?  
*Osw.* Madam, with much ado:  
Your sister is the better soldier.  
*Reg.* Lord Edmund spake not with your  
lord at home?  
*Osw.* No, madam.  
*Reg.* What might import my sister's letter  
to him?  
*Osw.* I know not, lady.  
*Reg.* Faith, he is posted hence on serious  
matter.

It was great ignorance, Gloucester's eyes being  
out.

To let him live: where he arrives he moves 10  
All hearts against us: Edmund, I think, is

In pity of his misery, to dispatch  
His nighted life; moreover, to decry  
The strength of the enemy.

*Osw.* I must needs after him, madam, with  
my letter.

*Reg.* Our troops set forth to-morrow: stay  
with us;

The ways are dangerous.

*Osw.* I may not, madam:  
I charged my duty in this business.  
Why should she write to Edmund?  
—I might not you

Transport her purposes by word! Belike, 20  
Something—I know not what: I'll love thee  
much,

Let me unseal the letter.

*Osw.* Madam, I had rather—  
*Reg.* I know your lady does not love her  
husband;

I am sure of that: and at her late being here  
She gave strange cellades and most speaking  
looks

To noble Edmund. I know you are of her  
bosom.

*Osw.* I, madam!

*Reg.* I speak in understanding; you are, I  
know't;

Therefore I do advise you, take this note:  
My lord is dead; Edmund and I have talk'd;  
And more convenient is he for my hand 30  
Than for your lady's: you may gather more.  
If you do find him, pray you, give him this:  
And when your mistress hears thus much from  
you,

I pray, desire her call her wisdom to her.

So; fare you well.

If you do chance to hear of that blind traitor,

Preferment falls on him that cuts him off.

*Osw.* Would I could meet him, madam! I  
should show

What party I do follow.

*Reg.* Fare thee well. [*Exeunt.* 40

## SCENE VI. Fields near Dover.

*Enter GLOUCESTER, and EDGAR dressed like  
a peasant.*

*Glow.* When shall we come to the top of  
that same hill?

*Edg.* You do climb up it now: look, how  
we labour.

*Glow.* Methinks the ground is even.

*Edg.* Horrible steep.

Hark, do you hear the sea?

*Glow.* No, truly.

*Edg.* Why, then, your other senses grow  
imperfect

By your eyes' anguish.

*Glow.* So may it be, indeed:  
Methinks thy voice is alter'd; and thou speak'st  
in better phrase and matter than thou didst.

*Edg.* You're much deceived: in nothing am  
I changed

But in my garments.

*Glow.* Methinks you're better spoken. 10

*Edg.* Come on, sir; here's the place: stand  
still. How fearful

And dizzy 'tis, to cast one's eyes so low!  
The crows and choughs that wing the midway  
air

Show scarce so gross as beetles: half way down  
Hangs one that gathers samphire, dreadful  
trade!

Methinks he seems no bigger than his head:

The fishermen, that walk upon the beach,  
Appear like mice; and yond tall anchoring  
bark,

Diminish'd to her cock; her cock, a buoy  
Almost too small for sight: the murmuring  
surge,

That on the unnumber'd idle pebbles chafes, 20  
Cannot be heard so high. I'll look no more;  
Lest my brain turn, and the deficient sight  
Topple down headlong.

*Glow.* Set me where you stand.

*Edg.* Give me your hand: you are now  
within a foot

Of the extreme verge: for all beneath the moon  
Would I not leap upright.

*Glow.* Let go my hand.

Here, friend, 's another purse: in it a jewel  
Well worth a poor man's taking: fairies and  
gods

Prosper it with thee! Go thou farther off; 30  
Bid me farewell, and let me hear thee going.

*Edg.* Now fare you well, good sir.

*Glow.* With all my heart.

*Edg.* Why I do trifle thus with his despair  
Is done to cure it.

*Glow.* [*Knocking*] O you mighty gods!

This world I do renounce, and, in your sights,  
Shake patiently my great affliction off:

If I could bear it longer, and not fall

To quarrel with your great oppos'd wills,

My snuff and loathed part of nature should 35



Burn itself out. If Edgar live, O, bless him!  
Now, fellow, fare thee well. [*He falls forward.*]

*Edg.* Gone, sir: farewell.  
And yet I know not how conceit may rob  
The treasury of life, when life itself  
Yields to the theft: had he been where he  
thought,

By this, had thought been past. Alive or dead!  
Ho, you sir! friend! Hear you, sir! speak!  
Thus might he pass indeed: yet he revives.  
What are you, sir?

*Glou.* Away, and let me die.  
*Edg.* Hadst thou been aught but gossamer,  
feathers, air,

So many fathom down precipitating,  
Thou 'dst shiver'd like an egg: but thou dost  
breathe;

Hast heavy substance; bleed'st not; speak'st;  
art sound.

Ten masts at each make not the altitude  
Which thou hast perpendicularly fell:  
Thy life's a miracle. Speak yet again.

*Glou.* But have I fall'n, or no?

*Edg.* From the dread summit of this chalky  
bourn.

Look up a-height; the shrill-gorged lark so far  
Cannot be seen or heard: do but look up.

*Glou.* Alack, I have no eyes. 60  
Is wretchedness deprived that benefit,  
To end itself by death? 'Twas yet some com-  
fort,

When misery could beguile the tyrant's rage,  
And frustrate his proud will.

*Edg.* Give me your arm:  
Up: so. How is 't? Feel you your legs? You  
stand.

*Glou.* Too well, too well.

*Edg.* This is above all strangeness.  
Upon the crown o' the cliff, what thing was  
that  
Which parted from you?

*Glou.* A poor unfortunate beggar.

*Edg.* As I stood here below, methought his  
eyes

Were two full moons; he had a thousand  
noes, 70  
Horns whelk'd and waved like the enridged  
sea:

It was some fiend; therefore, thou happy father,  
Think that the clearest gods, who make them  
honours

Of men's impossibilities, have preserved thee.

*Glou.* I do remember now: henceforth I'll  
bear

Affliction till it do cry out itself  
'Enough, enough, and die. That thing you  
speak of,

I took it for a man; often 'twould say  
'The fiend, the fiend!': he led me to that place.

*Edg.* Bear free and patient thoughts. But  
who comes here! 80

*Enter LEAR, fantastically dressed with wild  
flowers.*

The safer sense will ne'er accommodate  
His master thus.

*Lear.* No, they cannot touch me for coining  
I am the king himself.

Nature's above art in that respect.  
There's your press-money. That fellow handles  
his bow like a crow-keeper: draw me a clothier's  
yard. Look, look, a mouse! Peace, peace;  
this piece of toasted cheese will do 't. There's  
my gauntlet; I'll prove it on a giant. Bring  
up the brown bills. O, well flown, bird! 't the  
clout, 't the clout: hewh! Give the word.

*Edg.* Sweet marjoram.

*Lear.* Pass.

*Glou.* I know that voice.

*Lear.* Ha! Goneril, with a white beard!  
They flattered me like a dog; and told me I  
had white hairs in my beard ere the black ones  
were there. To say 'ay' and 'no' to every  
thing that I said!—'Ay' and 'no' too was no  
good divinity. When the rain came to wet me  
once, and the wind to make me chatter; when  
the thunder would not peace at my bidding;  
there I found 'em, there I smelt 'em out. Go  
to, they are not men o' their words: they told  
me I was every thing; 'tis a lie, I am not ague-  
proof.

*Glou.* The trick of that voice I do well re-  
member:

Is 't not the king?

*Lear.* Ay, every inch a king: 90  
When I do stare, see how the subject quakes.  
I pardon that man's life. What was thy cause?  
Adultery!

Thou shalt not die: die for adultery! No:  
The wren goes to 't, and the small gilded fly  
Does lecher in my sight.

Let copulation thrive; for Gloucester's bastard  
son

Was kinder to his father than my daughters  
Got 'twixen the lawful sheets.

To 't, luxury, pell-mell! for I lack soldiers.  
Behold yond simpering dame, 100

Whose face between her forks prestiges snow;  
That minces virtue, and does shake the head  
To hear of pleasure's name;

The fitchew, nor the soiled horse, goes to 't  
With a more riotous appetite.

Down from the waist they are Centaurs,  
Though women all above:

But to the girdle do the gods inherit,  
Beneath is all the fiends';

There's hell, there's darkness, there's the sul-  
phurous pit, 110

Burning, scalding, stench, consumption; fie,  
fie, fie! pah, pah! Give me an ounce of civet,  
good apothecary, to sweeten my imagination:

there's money for thee.

*Glou.* O, let me kiss that hand!

*Lear.* Let me wipe it first; it smells of  
mortality.

*Glou.* O ruin'd piece of nature! This great  
world

Shall so wear out to nought. Dost thou know  
me?

*Lear.* I remember thine eyes well enough.  
Dost thou squiny at me? No, do thy worst,  
blind Cupid; I'll not love. Read thus this  
challenge; mark but the penning of it.

*Glou.* Were all the letters wrens, I could not  
see one.

*Edg.* I would not take this from report;  
it is,  
And my heart breaks at it.

*Lear.* Read.

*Glou.* What, with the case of eyes?

*Lear.* O, ho, are you there with me? No  
eyes in your head, nor no money in your purse!  
Your eyes are in a heavy case, your purse in a  
light: yet you see how this world goes.

*Glou.* I see it feelingly.

*Lear.* What, art mad? A man may see  
how this world goes with no eyes. Look with  
thine ears: see how yond justice rails upon  
yond simple thief. Hark, in thine ear: change  
places; and, handy-dandy, which is the justice,  
which is the thief! Thou hast seen a farmer's  
dog bark at a beggar!

*Glou.* Ay, sir.

*Lear.* And the creature run from the cur!  
There thou mightst behold the great image of  
authority: a dog's obeyed in office.  
Thou rascal beadle, hold thy bloody hand!  
Why dost thou lash that whore? Strip thine  
own back;

Thou hotly lust'st to use her in that kind  
For which thou whipp'st her. The usurer hangs  
the cozener.

Through tatter'd clothes small vices do appear;  
Robes and furr'd gowns hide all. Plate sin  
with gold,

And the strong lance of justice hurtless breaks;  
Arm it in rags, a pigmy's straw does pierce it.  
None does offend, none, I say, none; I'll able  
'em:

Take that of me, my friend, who have the  
power

To seal the accuser's lips. Get thee glass eyes;  
And, like a scurvy politician, seem  
To see the things thou dost not. Now, now,  
now, now:

Pull off my boots: harder, harder: so.

*Edg.* O, matter and impertinency mix'd!  
Reason in madness!

*Lear.* If thou wilt weep my fortunes, take  
my eyes.

I know thee well enough; thy name is Glou-  
cester:

Thou must be patient; we came crying hither:  
Thou know'st, the first time that we smell the  
air,

We wawl and cry. I will preach to thee: mark.  
*Glou.* Alack, alack the day!

*Lear.* When we are born, we cry that we  
are come

To this great stage of fools: this's a good block;  
It were a delicate stratagem, to shoe  
A troop of horses with felt: I'll put 't in proof;  
And when I have stol'n upon these sons-in-law,  
Then, kill, kill, kill, kill, kill, kill!

*Enter a Gentleman, with Attendants.*

*Genl.* O, here he is: lay hand upon him. Sir,  
Your most dear daughter—

*Lear.* No rescue! What, a prisoner! I am

The natural fool of fortune. Use me well;  
I shall have surgeons:  
I am out to the quick.

*Genl.* You shall have any thing.

*Lear.* No seconds! all myself!

Why, this would make a man a man of salt,  
To use his eyes for garden water-pots,  
Ay, and laying autumn's dust.

*Genl.* Good sir,—  
*Lear.* I will die bravely, like a bridegroom.

What!  
I will be jovial: come, come; I am a king,  
My masters, know you that.

*Genl.* You are a royal one, and we obey  
you.

*Lear.* Then there's life in 't. Way, if you get  
it, you shall get it with running. *Sa, sa, sa, sa.*

*Exit running; Attendants follow.*  
*Genl.* A sight most pitiful in the meanest

wretch,  
Past speaking of in a king! Thou hast one  
daughter,

Who redeems nature from the general curse  
Which twain have brought her to.

*Edg.* Hail, gentle sir.

*Genl.* Sir, speed you: what's your will?

*Edg.* Do you hear aught, sir, of a battle  
toward?

*Genl.* Most sure and vulgar: every one hears  
that,

Which can distinguish sound.

*Edg.* But, by your favour,  
How near's the other army?

*Genl.* Near and on speedy foot; the main  
descri

Stands on the hourly thought.

*Edg.* I thank you, sir: that's all.

*Genl.* Though that the queen on special  
cause is here,

Her army is moved on.  
*Edg.* I thank you, sir.

*Glou.* You ever-gentle gods, take my breath  
from me;

Let not my worse spirit tempt me again  
To die before you please!

*Edg.* Well pray you, father.

*Glou.* Now, good sir, what are you?

*Edg.* A most poor man, made tame to for-  
tune's blows;

Who, by the art of known and feeling sorrows,  
Am pregnant to good pity. Give me your  
hand,

I'll lead you to some biding.

*Glou.* Hearty thanks:

The bounty and the benison of heaven  
To boot, and boot!

*Enter OSWALD.*

*Osw.* A proclaim'd prize! Most happy!  
That eyeless head of thine was first framed  
flesh

To raise my fortunes. Thou old unhappy  
traitor,

Briefly thyself remember: the sword is out  
That must destroy thee.

*Glou.* Now let thy friendly hand  
Put strength enough to 't. *[Music interposes.]*

*Osw.* Wherefore, hold peasant,  
Darest thou support a叛国's traitor? Hence;  
Lest that the infection of his fortune take

Lies hold on thee. Let go his arm.

Edg. Chill not let go, sir, without further  
'cession. 240

Cor. Let go, slave, or thou diest!

Edg. Good gentleman, go your gait, and let  
poor folk pass. An chad ha' bin swaggered  
out of my life, 'twould not ha' bin so long as  
'tis by a fortnight. Nay, come not near th'  
old man; keep out, che vor ye, or ise try  
whether your oostard or my ballow be the  
harder: chill be plain with you.

Cor. Out, dunghill!

Edg. Chill pick your teeth, sir: come; no  
matter vor your foina. 251

[They fight, and Edgar knocks him down.]

Cor. Slave, thou hast slain me: villain,  
take my purse:

If ever thou wilt thrive, bury my body;  
And give the letters which thou find'st about  
me

To Edmund earl of Gloucester: seek him out  
Upon the British party: O, untimely death!

[Dies.]

Edg. I know thee well: a serviceable villain;  
As dutious to the vices of thy mistress  
As badness would desire.

Glow. What, is he dead?

Edg. Sit you down, father; rest you. 260  
Let's see these pockets: the letters that he  
speaks of

May be my friends. He's dead; I am only  
sorry

He had no other death's-man. Let us see:  
Leave, gentle wax; and, manners, blame us  
not:

To know our enemies' minds, we'd rip their  
hearts;

Their papers, is more lawful.

[Reads.] Let our reciprocal vows be remem-  
bered. You have many opportunities to cut  
him off: if your will want not, time and place  
will be fruitfully offered. There is nothing  
done, if he return the conqueror: then am I  
the prisoner, and his head my goal; from the  
loathed warmth whereof deliver me, and supply  
the place for your labour.

'Your-wife, so I would say—

Affectionate servant,

'GONERIL'

O undistinguish'd space of woman's will!  
A plot upon her virtuous husband's life;  
And the exchange my brother! Here, in the  
sands,

Thee I'll rake up, the post unsanctified 281  
Of murderous lechers: and in the mature time  
With this ungracious paper strike the sight  
Of the death-practised duke: for him 'tis well  
That of thy death and business I can tell.

Glow. The king is mad: how stiff is my  
vile sense.

That I stand up, and have ingenious feeling  
Of my huge sorrows! Better I were distract:  
So should my thoughts be sever'd from my  
griefs,

And woe by wrong imaginations lose 290  
The knowledge of themselves.

Edg.

Give me your hand.

[Draws sword.]

Far off, methinks, I hear the beaten drum:  
Come, father, I'll bestow you with a friend.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE VII. A tent in the French camp.  
LEAR on a bed asleep, soft music playing;  
Gentleman, and others attending.

Enter CORDELLIA, KENT, and Doctor.

Cor. O thou good Kent, how shall I live and  
work,  
To match thy goodness! My life will be too  
short,

And every measure fall me.

Kent. To be acknowledged, madam, is over-  
paid.

All my reports go with the modest truth;  
Nor more nor clipp'd, but so.

Cor. Be better suited:  
These weeds are memories of those woe-  
hours:

I prithee, put them off.

Kent. Pardon me, dear madam;  
Yet to be known shortens my made intent:

My boon I make it, that you know me not 30  
Till time and I think meet.

Cor. Then be't so, my good lord. [To the  
Doctor] How does the king?

Doct. Madam, sleeps still.

Cor. O you kind gods,

Cure this great breach in his abused nature!  
The untuned and jarring senses, O, wind up  
Of this child-changed father!

Doct. So please your 31

That we may wake the king: he hath slept!

Cor. Be govern'd by your knowledge, 32  
proceed

I the away of your own will. Is he arm'd? so

Gent. Ay, madam; in the heaviness of his  
sleep

We put fresh garments on him.

Doct. Be by, good madam, when we do  
awake him;

I doubt not of his temperance.

Cor. Very well.

Doct. Please you, draw near. Louder the  
music there!

Cor. O my dear father! Restoration hang  
Thy medicine on my lips; and let this kiss  
Repair those violent harms that my two sisters  
Have in thy reverence made!

Kent. Kind and dear princess!

Cor. Had you not been their father, these  
white flakes 33

Had challenged pity of them. Was this a flap  
To be opposed against the warring winds?

To stand against the deep dread-bolted thunder?  
In the most terrible and nimble stroke

Of quick, cross lightning? to weather that  
peril!

With this thin helm? Mine enemy's dog,  
Though he had bit me, should have stood that  
night

Against my fire; and wast thou fast, poor  
father,

To howl thee with swine, and vagrant flocks,  
In short and nasty shrews? Alack, alack! 34

'Tis wonder that thy life and wits are

Had not concluded all. He wakes; speak to him.

*Doct.* Madam, do you; 'tis fittest.

*Cor.* How does my royal lord? How fares your majesty?

*Lear.* You do me wrong to take me out o' the grave:

Thou art a soul in bliss; but I am bound Upon a wheel of fire, that mine own tears Do scald like molten lead.

*Cor.* Sir, do you know me?  
*Lear.* You are a spirit, I know: when did you die?

*Cor.* Still, still, far wide!

*Doct.* He's scarce awake: let him alone awhile.

*Lear.* Where have I been? Where am I? Fair daylight?

I am mightily abused. I should e'en die with pity,

To see another thus. I know not what to say. I will not swear these are my hands: let's see; I feel this pin prick. Would I were assured Of my condition!

*Cor.* O, look upon me, sir, And hold your hands in benediction o'er me: No, sir, you must not kneel.

*Lear.* Pray, do not mock me: I am a very foolish fond old man, 60 Fourscore and upward, not an hour more nor less;

And, to deal plainly, I fear I am not in my perfect mind. Methinks I should know you, and know this man;

Yet I am doubtful: for I am mainly ignorant What place this is; and all the skill I have Remembers not these garments; nor I know not Where I did lodge last night. Do not laugh at me;

For, as I am a man, I think this lady To be my child Cordelia.

*Cor.* And so I am, I am. 70

*Lear.* Be your tears wet! yes, 'faith. I pray, weep not:

If you have poison for me, I will drink it. I know you do not love me; for your sisters Have, as I do remember, done me wrong: You have some cause, they have not.

*Cor.* No cause, no cause.

*Lear.* Am I in France?

*Kent.* In your own kingdom, sir.

*Lear.* Do not abuse me.

*Doct.* Be comforted, good madam: the great rage,

You see, is kill'd in him; and yet it is danger To make him even o'er the time he has lost. So Desire him to go in; trouble him no more Till further settling.

*Cor.* Will't please your highness walk?

*Lear.* You must bear with me;

Pray you now, forget and forgive: I am old and foolish.

[*Exeunt all but Kent and Gentleman.*  
*Gent.* Holds it true, sir, that the Duke of Cornwall was so slain?

*Kent.* Most certain, sir.

*Gent.* 'Tis the conductor of his people!

*Kent.* As 'tis said, the bastard son of Gloucester.

*Gent.* They say Edgar, his banished son, is with the Earl of Kent in Germany.

*Kent.* Report is changeable. 'Tis time to look about; the powers of the kingdom approach apace.

*Gent.* The arbitrement is like to be bloody. Fare you well, sir.

*Kent.* My point and period will be thoroughly wrought,

Or well or ill, as this day's battle's fought. 90  
[*Exit.*]

## ACT V.

SCENE I. *The British camp, near Dover.*

*Enter, with drum and colours, EDMUND, REGAN, Gentlemen, and Soldiers.*

*Edm.* Know of the duke if his last purpose hold,

Or whether since he is advised by aught To change the course: he's full of alteration And self-reproving: bring his constant pleasure.

[*To a Gentleman, who goes out.*]

*Reg.* Our sister's man is certainly miscarried.

*Edm.* 'Tis to be doubted, madam.

*Reg.* Now, sweet lord, You know the goodness I intend upon you: Tell me—but truly—but then speak the truth, Do you not love my sister?

*Edm.* In honour'd love.

*Reg.* But have you never found my brother's way 10

To the forfended place?

*Edm.* That thought abuses you.

*Reg.* I am doubtful that you have been conjunct

And bosom'd with her, as far as we call hers.

*Edm.* No, by mine honour, madam.

*Reg.* I never shall endure her: dear my lord, Be not familiar with her.

*Edm.* Fear me not:

She and the duke her husband!

*Enter, with drum and colours, ALBANY, GONERIL, and Soldiers.*

*Gon.* [*Aside*] I had rather lose the battle than that sister

Should loosen him and me.

*Alb.* Our very loving sister, well be-met. 20 Sir, this I hear; the king is come to his daughter,

With others whom the rigour of our state Forced to cry out. Where I could not be honest,

I never yet was valiant: for this business, It toucheth us, as France invades our land, Not holds the king, with others, whom, I fear, Most just and heavy causes make oppose.

*Edm.* Sir, you speak nobly.

*Reg.* Why is this reason'd?

*Gon.* Combine together 'gainst the enemy: For these domestic and particular broils 30 Are not the question here.

*Alb.* Let's then determine

With the ancient of war on our proceedings.

*Edm.* I shall attend you presently at your tent.

*Reg.* Sister, you'll go with us!

*Gon.* No.

*Reg.* 'Tis most convenient; pray you, go with us.

*Gon.* [*Aside*] O, ho, I know the riddle.— I will go.

*As they are going out, enter EDGAR disguised.*

*Edg.* If e'er your grace had speech with man so poor,

Hear me one word.

*Alb.* I'll overtake you. Speak.

[*Exeunt all but Albany and Edgar.*

*Edg.* Before you fight the battle, ope this letter.

If you have victory, let the trumpet sound For him that brought it: wretched though I seem,

I can produce a champion that will prove What is avouched there. If you miscarry, Your business of the world hath so an end, And machination ceases. Fortune love you!

*Alb.* Stay till I have read the letter.

*Edg.* I was forbid it. When time shall serve, let but the herald cry, And I'll appear again.

*Alb.* Why, fare thee well: I will o'erlook thy paper.

[*Exit Edgar.* 50

*Re-enter EDMUND.*

*Edm.* The enemy's in view; draw up your powers.

Here is the guess of their true strength and forces

By diligent discovery; but your haste Is now urged on you.

*Alb.* We will greet the time. [*Exit.*

*Edm.* To both these sisters have I sworn my love;

Each jealous of the other, as the stung Are of the adder. Which of them shall I take!

Both! one! or neither! Neither can be enjoy'd, If both remain alive: to take the widow

Exasperates, makes mad her sister Goneril; 60 And hardly shall I carry out my side, Her husband being alive. Now then we'll use His countenance for the battle; which being done,

Let her who would be rid of him devise His speedy taking off. As for the mercy

Which he intends to Lear and to Cordelia, The battle done, and they within our power,

Shall never see his pardon; for my state Stands on me to defend, not to debate.

[*Exit.* 65

*SCENE II. A field between the two camps.*

*Alarum within. Enter, with drum and colours, LEAR, CORDELIA, and Soldiers, over the stage; and exeunt.*

*Enter EDGAR and GLOUCESTER.*

*Edg.* Here, father, take the shadow of this tree

For your good host; pray that the right may thrive:

If ever I return to you again, I'll bring you comfort.

*Glon.* Grace go with you, sir!

[*Exit Edgar.*

*Alarum and retreat within. Re-enter EDGAR.*

*Edg.* Away, old man; give me thy hand; away!

King Lear hath lost, he and his daughter ta'en: give me thy hand; come on.

*Glon.* No farther, sir; a man may rot even here.

*Edg.* What, in ill thoughts again! Men must endure

Their going hence, even as their coming hither: Ripeness is all: come on.

*Glon.* And that's true too. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE III. The British camp near Dover.*

*Enter, in conquest, with drum and colours, EDMUND; LEAR and CORDELIA, prisoners; Captain, Soldiers, &c.*

*Edm.* Some officers take them away: good guard,

Until their greater pleasures first be known That are to censure them.

*Cor.* We are not the first Who, with best meaning, have incur'd the worst.

For thee, oppressed king, am I cast down; Myself could else out-frown false fortune's frown.

Shall we not see these daughters and these sisters!

*Lear.* No, no, no, no! Come, let's away to prison:

We two alone will sing like birds i' the tree: When thou dost ask me blessing, I'll

down, And ask of thee forgiveness: so we'll live, And pray, and sing, and tell old tales, and laugh

At gilded butterflies, and hear poor rogues Talk of court news; and we'll talk with them too,

Who loses and who wins; who's in, who's out; And take upon's the mystery of things, As if we were God's spies: and we'll wear out, In a wall'd prison, packs and sects of great ones,

That ebb and flow by the moon.

*Edm.* Take them away.

*Lear.* Upon such sacrifices, my Cordelia, as The gods themselves throw incense. Have I caught thee?

He that parts us shall bring a brand from heaven,

And fire us hence like foxes. Wipe thine eyes; The good-years shall devour them, flesh and fall,

Ere they shall make us weep: we'll not starve first.

*Comps.* [*Exeunt Lear and Cordelia, guarded.*

*Edm.* Come hither, captain; hasten. Take thou this note [*giving a paper*]; go follow them to prison:

One step I have advanced thee; if thou dost

As this instructs thee, thou dost make thy way  
To noble fortunes: know thou this, that men  
Are as the time is: to be tender-minded  
Does not become a sword: thy great employ-  
ment

Will not bear question; either say thou 't do't,  
Or thrive by other means.

*Capt.* I'll do't, my lord.

*Edm.* About it; and write happy when thou  
hast done.

*Mark.* I say, instantly; and carry it so

As I have set it down.

*Capt.* I cannot draw a cart, nor eat dried  
oats;

If it be man's work, I'll do it. [Exit.

*Flourish.* Enter ALBANY, GONERIL, REGAN,  
another Captain, and Soldiers.

*Alb.* Sir, you have shown to-day your valiant  
strain,

And fortune led you well: you have the captives  
That were the opposites of this day's strife:  
We do require them of you, so to use them  
As we shall find their merits and our safety  
May equally determine.

*Edm.* Sir, I thought it fit  
To send the old and miserable king  
To some retention and appointed guard;  
Whose age has charms in it, whose title more,  
To pluck the common bosom on his side,  
And turn our impress'd lances in our eyes  
Which do command them. With him I sent  
the queen;

My reason all the same; and they are ready  
To-morrow, or at further space, to appear  
Where you shall hold your session. At this  
time

We sweat and bleed: the friend hath lost his  
friend;

And the best quarrels, in the heat, are cursed  
By those that feel their sharpness:

The question of Cordelia and her father  
Requires a fitter place.

*Alb.* Sir, by your patience,  
I hold you but a subject of this war,  
Not as a brother.

*Reg.* That's as we list to grace him.  
Methinks our pleasure might have been de-  
manded.

See you had spoke so far. He led our powers;  
Bore the commission of my place and person;  
The which immediacy may well stand up,  
And call itself your brother.

*Gon.* Not so hot:  
In his own grace he doth exalt himself,  
More than in your addition.

*Reg.* In my rights,  
By me invested, he compeers the best.

*Gon.* What were the most, if he should hus-  
band you.

*Reg.* Others do oft prove prophets.

*Gon.* Holla, holla!

What told you so look'd but a-squint.  
Look, I am not well; else I should  
answer.

From a sickening stomach. General,  
I have a few soldiers, prisoners, patrimony.

Do not be so proud of me; the walls are thine:

Witness the world, that I create thee here  
My lord and master.

*Gon.* Mean you to enjoy him?  
*Alb.* The let-alone lies not in your good will.

*Edm.* Nor in thine, lord.

*Alb.* Half-blooded fellow, yes, so  
*Reg.* [To Edmund] Let the drum strike,  
and prove my title thine.

*Alb.* Stay yet; hear reason. Edmund, I  
arrest thee

On capital treason; and, in thine attain-  
This gilded serpent [pointing to Gon.] For  
your claim, fair sister,

I bar it in the interest of my wife;  
'Tis she is sub-contracted to this lord.

And I, her husband, contradict your bans.  
If you will marry, make your loves to me,

My lady is bespoke.

*Gon.* An interlude!  
*Alb.* Thou art arm'd, Gloucester: let the  
trumpet sound:

If none appear to prove upon thy head  
Thy heinous, manifest, and many treasons,

There is my pledge [throwing down a glove];  
I'll prove it on thy heart.

Ere I taste bread, thou art in nothing less  
Than I have here proclaim'd thee.

*Reg.* Sick, O, sick!  
*Gon.* [Aside] If not, I'll ne'er trust medicine.

*Edm.* There's my exchange [throwing down  
a glove]: what in the world he is

That names me traitor, villain-like he lies:  
Call by thy trumpet: he that dares approach,

On him, on you, who not? I will maintain  
My truth and honour firmly.

*Alb.* A herald, ho!  
*Edm.* A herald, ho, a herald!

*Alb.* Trust to thy single virtue; for thy  
soldiers,

All levied in my name, have in my name  
Took their discharge.

*Reg.* My sickness grows upon me.  
*Alb.* She is not well; convey her to my tent.

[Exit Regan, led.

Enter a Herald.

Come hither, herald.—Let the trumpet sound,—  
And read out this.

*Capt.* Sound, trumpet! [A trumpet sounds.

*Her.* [Reads] 'If any man of quality or  
degree within the lists of the army will main-  
tain upon Edmund, supposed Earl of Gloucester,

that he is a manifold traitor, let him appear by  
the third sound of the trumpet: he is bold in  
his defence.

*Edm.* Sound! [First trumpet.

*Her.* Again! [Second trumpet.

*Her.* Again! [Third trumpet.

[Trumpet answers within.

Enter EDGAR, at the third sound, armed,  
with a trumpet before him.

*Alb.* Ask him his purposes, why he appears  
Upon this call of the trumpet.

*Her.* What are you? 119  
Your name, your quality! and why you answer  
This present summons?

*Edg.* Know, my name is lost:

By treason's tooth bare-gnawn and canker-bit;  
Yet am I noble as the adversary  
I come to cope.

*Alb.* Which is that adversary?

*Edm.* What's he that speaks for Edmund  
Earl of Gloucester?

*Edm.* Himself: what say'st thou to him?

*Edg.* Draw thy sword,  
That, if my speech offend a noble heart,  
Thy arm may do thee justice: here is mine.  
Behold, it is the privilege of mine honours,  
My oath, and my profession: I protest,  
Mangle thy strength, youth, place, and emi-  
nence,

Despite thy victor sword and fire-new fortune,  
Thy valour and thy heart, thou art a traitor;  
False to thy gods, thy brother, and thy father;  
Conspirant 'gainst this high-illustrious prince;  
And, from the extremest upward of thy head  
To the descent and dust below thy foot,  
A most toad-spotted traitor. Say thou 'No,'  
This sword, this arm, and my best spirits, are  
bent

To prove upon thy heart, whereto I speak, 140  
Thou liest.

*Edm.* In wisdom I should ask thy name;  
But, since thy outside looks so fair and warlike,  
And that thy tongue some say of breeding  
brothers,

What safe and nicely I might well delay  
By rule of knighthood, I disdain and spurn:  
Back do I toss these treasons to thy head;  
With the hell-hated lie o'erwhelm thy heart;  
Which, for they yet glance by and scarcely  
bruise,

This sword of mine shall give them instant way,  
Where they shall rest for ever. Trumpets,  
speak! 150

[*Alarums. They fight. Edmund falls.*]

*Alb.* Save him, save him!

*Gon.* This is practice, Gloucester:  
By the law of arms thou wast not bound to  
answer

An unknown opposite; thou art not vanquish'd,  
But cosen'd and beguiled.

*Alb.* Shut your mouth, dame,  
Or with this paper shall I stop it. Hold, sir;  
Thou worse than any name, read thine own  
evil:

No tearing, lady; I perceive you know it.

[*Gives the letter to Edmund.*]  
*Gon.* Say, if I do, the laws are mine, not  
thine:

Who can arraign me for't?

*Alb.* Most monstrous! oh  
Know'st thou this paper?

*Gon.* Ask me not what I know. [*Exit.*]

*Alb.* Go after her: she's desperate; govern  
her. 161

*Edm.* What you have charged me with,  
that have I done;  
And more, much more; the time will bring it  
out:

'Tis past, and so am I. But what art thou  
That hast this fortune on me? If thou art noble,  
I do forgive thee.

*Edg.* Let's exchange charities.  
I am no less in blood than thou art, Edmund;

If more, the more thou hast wrong'd me.  
My name is Edgar, and thy father's son.  
The gods are just, and of our pleasant vices  
Make instruments to plague us:  
The dark and vicious place where thee he got  
Cost him his eyes.

*Edm.* Thou hast spoken right, 'tis true;  
The wheel is come full circle; I am here.

*Alb.* Methought thy very gait did prophesy  
A royal nobleness: I must embrace thee:  
Let sorrow split my heart, if ever I  
Did hate thee or thy father!

*Edg.* Worthy prince, I know't.  
*Alb.* Where have you hid yourself?

How have you known the miseries of your  
father?

*Edg.* By nursing them, my lord. List a  
brief tale;

And when 'tis told, O, that my heart would  
burst!

The bloody proclamation to escape,  
That follow'd me so near,—O, our lives' sweet-  
ness!

That we the pain of death would hourly die  
Rather than die at once!—taught me to shift  
Into a madman's rags; to assume a semblance  
That very dogs disdain'd; and in this habit  
Met I my father with his bleeding rings,  
Their precious stones new lost; became his  
guide, 170

Led him, begg'd for him, saved him from de-  
spair;

Never,—O fault!—reveal'd myself unto him,  
Until some half-hour past, when I was arm'd:  
Not sure, though hoping, of this good success,  
I ask'd his blessing, and from first to last  
Told him my pilgrimage: but his flaw'd heart,  
Alack, too weak the conflict to support,  
'Twixt two extremes of passion, joy and grief,  
Burst smilingly.

*Edm.* This speech of yours hath moved me,  
And shall perchance do good: but speak you  
on; 180

You look as you had something more to say.  
*Alb.* If there be more, more woeful, hold it  
in;

For I am almost ready to dissolve,  
Hearing of this.

*Edg.* This would have seem'd a period  
To such as love not sorrow; but another,  
To amplify too much, would make much more,  
And top extremity.

Whilst I was big in clamour came there in a  
man,

Who, having seen me in my worst estate,  
Shunn'd my abhor'd society; but then, finding  
Who 'twas that so endured, with his strong  
arms 181

He fasten'd on my neck, and bellow'd out:  
As he'd burst heaven; threw him on my  
father;

Told the most piteous tale of Lear and him:  
That ever ear received; which in recounting  
His grief grew piteous, and the strokes of fate  
Began to crack: twice then the trumpets  
sounded.

And there I left him tending.  
*Alb.* But who was this?

*Edg.* Kent, sir, the banish'd Kent; who in disguise Follow'd his enemy king, and did him service Improper for a slave. 221

*Enter a Gentleman, with a bloody knife.*

*Gent.* Help, help, O, help!

*Edg.* What kind of help? 222

*Alb.* Speak, man.

*Edg.* What means that bloody knife?

*Gent.* 'Tis hot, it smokes; It came even from the heart of—O, she's dead!

*Alb.* Who dead? speak, man.

*Gent.* Your lady, sir, your lady; and her sister By her is poisoned; she hath confess'd it.

*Edm.* I was contracted to them both: all three

Now marry in an instant.

*Edg.* Here comes Kent.

*Alb.* Produce their bodies, be they alive or dead: 230

This judgement of the heavens, that makes us tremble,

Touches us not with pity. [*Exit Gentleman.*]

*Enter KENT.*

O, is this he?

The time will not allow the compliment

Which very manners urge.

*Kent.* I am come

To bid my king and master aye good night:

Is he not here?

*Alb.* Great thing of us forgot!

Speak, Edmund, where's the king? and where's

Cordelia?

See'st thou this object, Kent?

[*The bodies of Goneril and Regan are brought in.*]

*Kent.* Alack, why thus!

*Edm.* Yet Edmund was beloved:

The one the other poison'd for my sake, 240

And after slew herself.

*Alb.* Even so. Cover their faces.

*Edm.* I pant for life: some good I mean

to do,

Despite of mine own nature. Quickly send,

Be brief in it, to the castle; for my writ

Is on the life of Lear and on Cordelia:

Way, send in time.

*Alb.* Run, run, O, run!

*Edg.* To who, my lord? Who hath the

office? send

Thy token of reprieve.

*Edm.* Well thought on: take my sword, 250

Give it the captain.

*Alb.* Haste thee, for thy life. [*Exit Edgar.*]

*Edm.* He hath commission from thy wife

and me

To hang Cordelia in the prison, and

To lay the blame upon her own despair,

That she fordid herself.

*Alb.* The gods defend her! Bear him hence

awhile.

[*Edmund is borne off.*]

*Re-enter LEAR, with CORDNELIA dead in his arms; EDGAR, Captain, and others following.*

*Lear.* Howl, howl, howl! O, you are

men of stones:

Had I your tongues and eyes, I'd use them so  
That heaven's vault should crack. She's gone

for ever! 259

I know when one is dead, and when one lives;

She's dead as earth. Lend me a looking-glass;

If that her breath will mist or stain the stone,

Why, then she lives.

*Kent.* Is this the promised end?

*Edg.* Or image of that horror? 260

*Alb.* Fall, and cease!

*Lear.* This feather stirs; she lives! if it

be so,

It is a chance which does redeem all sorrows

That ever I have felt.

*Kent.* [*Kneeling*] O my good master!

*Lear.* Prithee, away.

*Edg.* 'Tis noble Kent, your friend.

*Lear.* A plague upon you, murderers, traitors

all!

I might have saved her; now she's gone for

ever! 270

Cordelia, Cordelia! stay a little. Ha!

What is't thou say'st? Her voice was ever

soft,

Gentle, and low, an excellent thing in woman.

I kill'd the slave that was a-hanging thee.

*Capt.* 'Tis true, my lords, he did.

*Lear.* Did I not, fellow?

I have seen the day, with my good biting

falchion

I would have made them skip: I am old now,

And these same crosses spoil me. Who are

you?

Mine eyes are not o' the best: I'll tell you

straight.

*Kent.* If fortune brag of two she loved and

hated, 280

One of them we behold.

*Lear.* This is a dull sight. Are you not Kent?

*Kent.* The same.

Your servant Kent. Where is your servant

Calus?

*Lear.* He's a good fellow, I can tell you

that;

He'll strike, and quickly too: he's dead and

rotten.

*Kent.* No, my good lord; I am the very

man.—

*Lear.* I'll see that straight.

*Kent.* That, from your first of difference and

decay,

Have follow'd your sad steps.

*Lear.* You are welcome hither.

*Kent.* Nor no man else: all's cheerless, dark,

and deadly. 290

Your eldest daughters have fordone themselves,

And desperately are dead.

*Lear.* Ay, so I think.

*Alb.* He knows not what he says: and vain

it is

That we present us to him.

*Edg.* Very bootless.

*Enter a Captain.*

*Capt.* Edmund is dead, my lord.

*Alb.* That's but a trifle here.

You lords and noble friends, know our intent.

What comfort to this great decay may come



Shall be applied : for us, we will resign,  
 During the life of this old majesty,  
 To him our absolute power : [To *Edgar and*  
*Kent*] you, to your rights ; 300

With boot, and such addition as your honours  
 Have more than merited. All friends shall  
 taste

The wages of their virtue, and all foes  
 The cup of their deservings. O, see, see !

*Lear.* And my poor fool is hang'd ! No,  
 no, no life !

Why should a dog, a horse, a rat, have life,  
 And thou no breath at all ! Thou 'lt come no  
 more,

Never, never, never, never !  
 Pray you, undo this button : thank you, sir.

Do you see this ? Look on her, look, her lips,  
 Look there, look there ! [Dies.]

*Edg.* He faints ! My lord, my lord !

*Kent.* Break, heart ; I prithee, break !

*Edg.* Look up, my lord.

*Kent.* Vex not his ghost : O, let him pass !  
 he hates him much

That would upon the rack of this tough world  
 Stretch him out longer.

*Edg.* He is gone, indeed.

*Kent.* The wonder is, he hath endured so  
 long :

He but usurp'd his life.

*Alb.* Bear them from hence. Our present  
 business

Is general woe. [To *Kent and Edgar*] Friends  
 of my soul, you twain 319

Rule in this realm, and the gored state sustain.

*Kent.* I have a journey, sir, shortly to go ;

My master calls me, I must not say no.

*Alb.* The weight of this sad time we must  
 obey ;

Speak what we feel, not what we ought to say.

The oldest hath borne most : we that are young

Shall never see so much, nor live so long.

[*Exeunt, with a dead march.*]

# OTHELLO, THE MOOR OF VENICE

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

DUKE OF VENICE.  
BRABANTIO, a senator.  
Other Senators.  
GRATIANO, brother to Brabantio.  
LODGVICO, kinsman to Brabantio.  
OTHELLO, a noble Moor in the service of  
the Venetian state.  
CASSIO, his lieutenant.  
IAGO, his ancient.  
RODERIGO, a Venetian gentleman.  
MONTANO, Othello's predecessor in the  
government of Cyprus.

Clown, servant to Othello.

DESDEMONA, daughter to Brabantio and  
wife to Othello.

EMILIA, wife to Iago.

BIANCA, mistress to Cassio.

Sailor, Messenger, Herald, Officers, Gentlemen,  
Musicians, and Attendants.

SCENE: *Venice: a Sea-port in Cyprus.*

### ACT I.

SCENE I. *Venice. A street.*

*Enter RODERIGO and IAGO.*

*Rod.* Trash! never tell me; I take it much  
unkindly  
That thou, Iago, who hast had my purse  
As if the strings were thine, shouldst know of  
this.

*Iago.* 'Sblood, but you will not hear me:  
If ever I did dream of such a matter,  
Abhor me.

*Rod.* Thou told'st me thou didst hold him  
in thy hate.

*Iago.* Despair me, if I do not. Three great  
ones of the city,

In personal suit to make me his lieutenant,  
Off-capp'd to him: and, by the faith of man, so  
I know my price. I am worth no worse a place:  
But he, as loving his own pride and purposes,  
Evades them, with a bombast circumstance  
Horribly stuff'd with epithets of war;

And, in conclusion,  
Nonsuits my mediators; for, 'Certes,' says he,  
'I have already chose my officer.'

And what was he?

Forsooth, a great arithmetician,  
One Michael Cassio, a Florentine, so  
A fellow almost damn'd in a fair wife;  
That never set a squadron in the field,  
Nor the division of a battle knows  
More than a spinster; unless the bookish

toysed counsils can propose  
As he: mere prattle, without

Is all his soldiership. But he, sir, had the  
election:

And I, of whom his eyes had seen the proof  
At Rhodes, at Cyprus and on other grounds  
Christian and heathen, must be be-lee'd and  
calm'd  
By debtor and creditor: this counter-caster,  
He, in good time, must his lieutenant be,  
And I—God bless the mark!—his Moorship's  
ancient.

*Rod.* By heaven, I rather would have been  
his hangman.

*Iago.* Why, there's no remedy; 'tis the curse  
of service,

Preferment goes by letter and affection,  
And not by old gradation, where each second  
Stood heir to the first. Now, sir, be judge your-  
self,

Whether I in any just term am affined  
To love the Moor.

*Rod.* I would not follow him then. so

*Iago.* O, sir, content you;  
I follow him to serve my turn upon him;  
We cannot all be masters, nor all masters  
Cannot be truly follow'd. You shall mark  
Many a duteous and knee-crooking knave,  
That, doting on his own obsequious bondage,  
Wears out his time, much like his master's ass,  
For nought but provender, and when he's old,  
casher'd:

Whip me such honest knaves. Others there are  
Who, trimm'd in forms and visages of duty, so  
Keep yet their hearts attending on themselves,  
And, throwing but shows of service on their  
lords,

Do well thrive by them and when they have  
lined their coats

Do themselves homage : these fellows have some soul ;

And such a one do I profess myself. For, sir, it is as sure as you are Roderigo, Were I the Moor, I would not be Iago : In following him, I follow but myself ; Heaven is my judge, not I for love and duty, But seeming so, for my peculiar end : For when my outward action doth demonstrate The native act and figure of my heart In compliment extern, 'tis not long after But I will wear my heart upon my sleeve For daws to peck at : I am not what I am.

*Rod.* What a full fortune does the thick-lips owe,

If he can carry 't thus !

*Iago.* Call up her father, Rouse him : make after him, poison his delight, Proclaim him in the streets ; incense her kinsmen,

And, though he in a fertile climate dwell, Plague him with flies : though that his joy be joy,

Yet throw such changes of vexation on 't, As it may lose some colour.

*Rod.* Here is her father's house ; I'll call aloud.

*Iago.* Do, with like timorous accent and dire yell

As when, by night and negligence, the fire Is spied in populous cities.

*Rod.* What, ho, Brabantio ! Signior Brabantio, ho !

*Iago.* Awake ! what, ho, Brabantio ! thieves ! thieves ! thieves !

Look to your house, your daughter and your bags !

Thieves ! thieves !

*BRABANTIO appears above, at a window.*

*Bra.* What is the reason of this terrible summons ?

What is the matter there ?

*Rod.* Signior, is all your family within ?

*Iago.* Are your doors lock'd ?

*Bra.* Why, wherefore ask you this ?

*Iago.* 'Zounds, sir, you're robb'd ; for shame, put on your gown ;

Your heart is burst, you have lost half your soul ;

Even now, now, very now, an old black ram Is tupping your white ewe. Arise, arise ;

Awake the snoring citizens with the bell, Or else the devil will make a grandsire of you : Arise, I say.

*Bra.* What, have you lost your wits ?

*Rod.* Most reverend signior, do you know my voice ?

*Bra.* Not I : what are you ?

*Rod.* My name is Roderigo.

*Bra.* The worse welcome : I have charged thee not to haunt about my doors :

In honest plainness thou hast heard me say My daughter is not for thee ; and now, in madness,

Being full of supper and distempering draughts, Upon malicious bravery, dost thou come

To start my quiet.

*Rod.* Sir, sir, sir,--

*Bra.* But thou must needs be sure My spirit and my place have in them power To make this bitter to thee.

*Rod.* Patience, good sir.

*Bra.* What tell'st thou me of robbing ? this is Venice ;

My house is not a grange.

*Rod.* Most grave Brabantio, In simple and pure soul I come to you.

*Iago.* 'Zounds, sir, you are one of those that will not serve God, if the devil bid you. Because we come to do you service and you think we are ruffians, you'll have your daughter covered with a Barbary horse ; you'll have your nephews neigh to you ; you'll have coursers for cousins and gennets for germans.

*Bra.* What profane wretch art thou ?

*Iago.* I am one, sir, that comes to tell you your daughter and the Moor are now making the beast with two backs.

*Bra.* Thou art a villain.

*Iago.* You are—a senator.

*Bra.* This thou shalt answer ; I know thee.

*Roderigo.*

*Rod.* Sir, I will answer any thing. But, I beseech you,

If 't be your pleasure and meet wise consent, As partly I find it is, that your fair daughter, At this odd-even and dull watch o' the night,

Transported, with no worse nor better guard But with a knave of common hire, a gondolier,

To the gross clasps of a lascivious Moor,—

If this be known to you and your allowance, We then have done you bold and manly wrongs ;

But if you know not this, my manners tell me We have your wrong rebuke. Do not believe

That, from the sense of all civility, I thus would play and trifle with your reverence ;

Your daughter, if you have not given her leave, I say again, hath made a gross revolt ;

Tying her duty, beauty, wit and fortunes In an extravagant and wheeling stranger

Of here and every where. Straight satisfy yourself :

If she be in her chamber or your house, Let loose on me the justice of the state For thus debauching you.

*Bra.* Strike on the tinder, ho !

Give me a taper ! call up all my people ! This accident is not unlike my dream :

Belief of it oppresses me already.

Light, I say ! light !

*Iago.* Farewell ; for I must leave you :

It seems not meet, nor wholesome to my shame, To be produced—sa, if I stay, I shall—

Against the Moor : for, I do know, the state, However this may gall him with some chance,

Cannot with safety cast him, for he's so much to be feared, that he's our very remedy for him. With such loud roars to the Cyrenas water,

Which even now stand in act, that, for their souls,

Another of his fathers they have sent, To lead their business : in which regard,

Though I do hate him as I do hell-incarnate, Yet, for necessity of present life,

I must show out a flag and sign of love,

Which is indeed but sign. That you shall surely find him.

Lead to the Sagittary the raised search;  
And there will I be with him. So, farewell. 160  
[Exit.

Enter, below, BRABANTIO, and Servants with torches.

Bra. It is too true an evil: gone she is;  
And what's to come of my despaired time  
Is nought but bitterness. Now, Roderigo,  
Where didst thou see her? O unhappy girl!  
With the Moor, say'st thou? Who would be a  
father!

How didst thou know 'twas she? O, she deceives  
me

Past thought! What said she to you? Get more  
tapers:

Raise all my kindred. Are they married, think  
you?

Rod. Truly, I think they are.

Bra. O heaven! How got she out? O treason  
of the blood! 170

Fathers, from hence trust not your daughters'  
minds

By what you see them act. Is there not charms  
By which the property of youth and maidhood  
May be abused? Have you not read, Roderigo,  
Of some such thing?

Rod. Yes, sir, I have indeed.

Bra. Call up my brother. O, would you  
had had her!

Some one way, some another. Do you know  
Where we may apprehend her and the Moor?

Rod. I think I can discover him, if you

To get good guard and go along with me. 180

Bra. Pray you, lead on. At every house  
I'll call;

I may command at most. Get weapons, ho!  
And raise some special officers of night.

On, good Roderigo: I'll deserve your pains.  
[Exit.

## SCENE II. Another street.

Enter OTHELLO, IAGO, and Attendants  
with torches.

Iago. Though in the trade of war I have  
slain men.

Yet do I hold it very stuff o' the conscience  
To do no contrived murder: I lack iniquity  
Sometimes to do me service: nine or ten times  
I had thought to have yer'ed him here under  
the ribs.

Oth. 'Tis better as it is.

Iago. Nay, but he prated,  
And spoke such scurvy and provoking terms  
Against your honour.

That, with the little godliness I have,  
I did full hard forbear him. But, I pray you,  
sir,

Are you fast married? Be assured of this,  
That the magnifico is much beloved,  
And hath in his effect a voice potential  
As double as the duke's: he will divorce you;  
Or put upon you what restraint and grievances  
The law, with all his might to enforce it on,

Will give him cable.

Oth. Let him do his spite;  
My services which I have done the signior  
Shall out-tongue his complaints. 'Tis yet to  
know,—

Which, when I know that boasting is an  
honour,

I shall promulgate—I fetch my life and being  
From men of royal siege, and my demerits  
May speak unbonneted to as proud a fortune  
As this that I have reach'd: for know, Iago,  
But that I love the gentle Desdemona,  
I would not my unhoused free condition  
Put into circumscription and confine  
For the sea's worth. But, look! what lights  
come yond?

Iago. Those are the raised father and his  
friends:

You were best go in.

Oth. Not I; I must be found: 30  
My parts, my title and my perfect soul  
Shall manifest me rightly. Is it they?

Iago. By Janus, I think no.

Enter CASSIO, and certain Officers with  
torches.

Oth. The servants of the duke, and my lieu-  
tenant.

The goodness of the night upon you, friends!  
What is the news?

Cas. The duke does greet you, general,  
And he requires your haste-post-haste appear-  
ance,

Even on the instant.

Oth. What is the matter, think you?

Cas. Something from Cyprus, as I may  
divine:

It is a business of some heat: the galleys 40  
Have sent a dozen sequent messengers  
This very night at one another's heels,  
And many of the consuls, raised and met,

Are at the duke's already: you have been hotly  
call'd for;

When, being not at your lodging to be found,  
The senate hath sent about three several quests  
To search you out.

Oth. 'Tis well I am found by you.  
I will but spend a word here in the house.

And go with you. [Exit.

Cas. Ancient, what makes he here?

Iago. 'Faith, he to-night hath boarded a  
land carack:

If it prove lawful prize, he's made for ever. 50

Cas. I do not understand.

Iago. He's married.

Cas. To who?

Re-enter OTHELLO.

Iago. Marry, to—Come, captain, will you go?

Oth. Have with you.

Cas. Here comes another troop to seek for  
you.

Iago. It is Brabantio. General, be advised;  
He comes to bad intent.

Enter BRABANTIO, RODERIGO, and Officers  
with torches and weapons.

Oth. Holla! stand there!

*Rod.* Signior, it is the Moor.

*Bra.* Down with him, thief!

[*They draw on both sides.*]

*Iago.* You, Roderigo! come, sir, I am for you.

*Oth.* Keep up your bright swords, for the dew will rust them.

Good signior, you shall more command with years 60

Than with your weapons.

*Bra.* O thou foul thief, where hast thou stow'd my daughter!

Damn'd as thou art, thou hast enchanted her;

For I'll refer me to all things of sense,

If she in chains of magic were not bound,

Whether a maid so tender, fair and happy,

So opposite to marriage that she shunn'd

The wealthy curled darlings of our nation,

Would ever have, to incur a general mock,

I, un from her guardage to the sooty bosom 70

Of such a thing as thou, to fear, not to delight.

Judge me the world, if 'tis not gross in sense

That thou hast practis'd on her with foul

charms,

Abused her delicate youth with drugs or

minerals

That weaken motion: I'll have't disputed on;

'Tis probable and palpable to thinking.

I therefore apprehend and do attach thee

For an abuser of the world, a practisier

Of arts inhibited and out of warrant.

Lay hold upon him: if he do resist, 80

Subdue him at his peril.

*Oth.* Hold your hands,

Both you of my inclining, and the rest:

Were it my cue to fight, I should have known it

Without a prompter. Where will you that I go

To answer this your charge?

*Bra.* To prison, till fit time

Of law and course of direct session

Call thee to answer.

*Oth.* What if I do obey?

How may the duke be therewith satisfied,

Whose messengers are here about my side,

Upon some present business of the state 90

To bring me to him?

*First Off.* 'Tis true, most worthy signior;

The duke's in council, and your noble self,

I am sure, is sent for.

*Bra.* How! the duke in council!

In this time of the night! Bring him away:

Mine's not an idle cause: the duke himself,

Or any of my brothers of the state,

Cannot but feel this wrong as 'twere their own;

For if such actions may have passage free,

Bond-slaves and pagans shall our statesmen be.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III. A council-chamber.

*The DUKE and Senators sitting at a table;*

*Officers attending.*

*Duke.* There is no composition in these news

That gives them credit.

*First Sen.* My letters say a hundred and seven galleys.

*Duke.* And mine, a hundred and forty.

*Sec. Sen.* And mine, two hundred

But though they jump not on a just account,—

As in these cases, where the aim reports,

'Tis oft with difference—yet do they all confirm

A Turkish fleet, and bearing up to Cyprus.

*Duke.* Nay, it is possible enough to judge-

ment:

I do not so secure me in the error, 10

But the main article I do approve

In fearful sense.

*Sailor.* [*Within*] What, ho! what, ho!

*First Off.* A messenger from the galleys.

*Enter a Sailor.*

*Duke.* Now, what's the business!

*Sail.* The Turkish preparation makes for

Rhodes;

So was I bid report here to the state

By Signior Angelo.

*Duke.* How say you by this change!

*First Sen.* This cannot be,

By no assay of reason: 'tis a pageant,

To keep us in false gaze. When we consider

The importance of Cyprus to the Turk, 20

And let ourselves again but understand,

That as it more concerns the Turk than Rhodes,

So may he with more facile question bear it,

For that it stands not in such warlike brace,

But altogether lacks the abilities

That Rhodes is dress'd in: if we make thought

of this,

We must not think the Turk is so unskilful

To leave that latest which concerns him first,

Neglecting an attempt of ease and gain,

To wake and wage a danger profitless, 30

*Duke.* Nay, in all confidence, he's not for

Rhodes.

*First Off.* Here is more news.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* The Ottomites, reverend and gracious,

Steering with due course towards the isle of

Rhodes,

Have there injointed them with an after fleet.

*First Sen.* Ay, so I thought. How many,

as you guess?

*Mess.* Of thirty sail: and now they do re-

stem

Their backward course, bearing with frank ap-

pearance

Their purposes toward Cyprus. Signior Mon-

tano,

Your trusty and most valiant servitor, 40

With his free duty recommends you thus,

And prays you to believe him.

*Duke.* 'Tis certain, then, for Cyprus.

*Mess.* Marcus Lucios, is not he in town?

*First Sen.* He's now in Florence.

*Duke.* Write from us to him; post-post-

haste dispatch.

*First Sen.* Here comes Brabantio and the

valiant Moor.

*Enter BRABANTIO, OTHELLO, IAGO,*

*RODERIGO, and Officers.*

*Duke.* Valiant Othello, we must straight

employ you

! the general enemy Ottomans.

[To *Brabantio*] I did not see you; welcome,  
gentle signior;

We lack'd your counsel and your help to-night.  
*Bra.* So did I yours. Good your grace,  
pardon me;

Neither my place nor aught I heard of business  
Hath rais'd me from my bed, nor doth the  
general care

Take hold on me, for my particular grief  
Is of so flood-gate and o'erbearing nature  
That it engulfs and swallows other sorrows  
And it is still itself.

*Duke.* Why, what's the matter?

*Bra.* My daughter! O, my daughter!

*Duke and Sen.* Dead!

*Bra.* Ay, to me;  
She is abus'd, stol'n from me, and corrupted  
By spells and medicines bought of mount-  
banks;

For nature so preposterously to err,  
Being not deficient, blind, or lame of sense,  
Sans witchcraft could not.

*Duke.* Whoe'er he be that in this foul pro-  
ceeding

Hath thus beguiled your daughter of herself  
And you of her, the bloody book of law  
You shall yourself read in the bitter letter  
After your own sense, yea, though our proper  
son

Stood in your action.

*Bra.* Humbly I thank your grace. 70  
Here is the man, this Moor, whom now, it  
seems,

Your special mandate for the state-affairs  
Hath hither brought.

*Duke and Sen.* We are very sorry for't.

*Duke.* [To *Othello*] What, in your own part,  
can you say to this?

*Bra.* Nothing, but this is so.

*Oth.* Most potent, grave, and reverend  
signiors,

My very noble and approved good masters,  
That I have ta'en away this old man's daughter,  
It is most true; true, I have married her:  
The very head and front of my offending 80  
Hath this extent, no more. Rude am I in my

And little bless'd with the soft phrase of peace;  
For since these arms of mine had seven years'  
pith,

Till now some nine moons wasted, they have  
us'd

Their dearest action in the tented field,  
And little of this great world can I speak,  
More than pertains to feats of broil and battle,  
And therefore little shall I grace my cause  
In speaking for myself. Yet, by your gracious  
patience,

I will a round unvarnish'd tale deliver 90  
Of my whole course of love; what drugs, what  
charms,

What conjuration and what mighty magic,  
For such proceeding I am charged withal,  
I won his daughter.

*Bra.* A maiden never bold;  
Of spirit so still and quiet, that her motion  
Bare'd at herself; and she, in spite of nature,  
Of years, of country, credit, every thing,

To fall in love with what she fear'd to look on!  
It is a judgement maim'd and most imperfect  
That will confess perfection so could err 100  
Against all rules of nature, and must be driven  
To find out practices of cunning hell.  
Why this should be. I therefore vouch again  
That with some mixtures powerful o'er the  
blood,

Or with some dram conjured to this effect,  
He wrought upon her.

*Duke.* To vouch this, is no proof,  
Without more wider and more overt test  
Than these thin habits and poor likelihoods  
Of modern seeming do prefer against him.

*First Sen.* But, *Othello*, speak: 110  
Did you by indirect and forced courses  
Subdue and poison this young maid's affec-  
tions?

Or came it by request and such fair question  
As soul to soul affordeth?

*Oth.* I do beseech you,  
Send for the lady to the Sagittary,  
And let her speak of me before her father:  
If you do find me foul in her report,  
The trust, the office I do hold of you,  
Not only take away, but let your sentence  
Even fall upon my life.

*Duke.* Fetch *Desdemona* hither. 120  
*Oth.* Ancient, conduct them; you best know  
the place. [*Exeunt Iago and Attendants.*]

And, till she come, as truly as to heaven  
I do confess the vices of my blood,  
So justly to your grave ears I'll present  
How I did thrive in this fair lady's love,  
And she in mine.

*Duke.* Say it, *Othello*.

*Oth.* Her father loved me; oft invited me;  
Still question'd me the story of my life,  
From year to year, the battles, sieges, fortunes,  
That I have pass'd. 131  
I ran it through, even from my boyish days,  
To the very moment that he bade me tell it;  
Wherein I spake of most disastrous chances,  
Of moving accidents by flood and field,  
Of hair-breadth scapes I the imminent deadly  
breach,

Of being taken by the insolent foe  
And sold to slavery, of my redemption thence  
And portance in my travels' history;  
Wherein of antres vast and deserts idle, 140  
Rough quarries, rocks and hills whose heads  
touch heaven,

It was my hint to speak,—such was the process;  
And of the Cannibals that each other eat,  
The Anthropophagi and men whose heads  
Do grow beneath their shoulders. This to hear  
Would *Desdemona* seriously incline:  
But still the house-affairs would draw her  
thence:

Which ever as she could with haste dispatch,  
She'd come again, and with a greedy ear  
Devour up my discourse: which I observing, 150  
Took once a pleasant hour, and found good means  
To draw from her a prayer of earnest heart  
That I would all my pilgrimage dilate,  
Whereof by parcels she had something heard,  
But not intensively: I did consent,  
And often did beguile her of her tears,

When I did speak of some distressful strokes  
That my youth suffer'd. My story being done.  
She gave me for my pains a world of sighs:  
She swore, in faith, 'twas strange, 'twas passing  
strange.

'Twas pitiful, 'twas wondrous pitiful:  
She wish'd she had not heard it, yet she wish'd  
That heaven had made her such a man: she  
thank'd me.

And bade me, if I had a friend that loved her,  
I should but teach him how to tell my story,  
And that would woo her. Upon this hint I  
spoke:

She loved me for the dangers I had pass'd,  
And I loved her that she did pity them.  
This only is the witchcraft I have used:  
Here comes the lady; let her witness it.

*Enter DESDEMONA, IAGO, and Attendants.*

*Duke.* I think this tale would win my  
daughter too.

Good Brabantio,  
Take up this mangled matter at the best:  
Men do their broken weapons rather use  
Than their bare hands.

*Bra.* I pray you, hear her speak:  
If she confess that she was half the wooer,  
Destruction on my head, if my bad blame  
Light on the man! Come hither, gentle mis-  
tress:

Do you perceive in all this noble company  
Where most you owe obedience?

*Duke.* My noble father, 180  
I do perceive here a divided duty:

To you I am bound for life and education;  
My life and education both do learn me  
How to respect you; you are the lord of duty;  
I am hitherto your daughter: but here's my  
husband.

And so much duty as my mother show'd  
To you, preferring you before her father,  
So much I challenge that I may profess  
Due to the Moor my lord.

*Bra.* God be wi' you! I have done.  
Please it your grace, on to the state-affairs: 190  
I had rather to adopt a child than get it.  
Come hither, Moor:

I here do give thee that with all my heart  
Which, but thou hast already, with all my  
heart

I would keep from thee. For your sake, jewel,  
I am glad at soul I have no other child;  
For thy escape would teach me tyranny,  
To hang clove on them. I have done, my lord.

*Duke.* Let me speak like yourself, and lay a  
sentence,

Which, as a guise or step, may help these lovers  
Into your favour.

When remedies are past, the griefs are ended  
By seeing the worst, which late on hopes de-  
pend.

To mourn a mischief that is past and gone  
Is the next way to draw new mischief on.

What cannot be preserved when fortune takes  
Patience her injury a mockery makes.  
The robb'd that smiles steals something from  
the thief;

He robs himself that spends a bootless grief.

*Bra.* So let the Turk of Cyprus as beguile;  
We lose it not, so long as we can smile.  
He hears the sentence well that nothing bears  
But the free comfort which from thence he  
hears.

But he hears both the sentence and the sorrow  
That, to pay grief, must of poor patience borrow.  
These sentences, to savor, or to gall,  
Being strong on both sides, are equivocal:  
But words are words; I never yet did hear  
That the bruised heart was pleased through the  
ear.

I humbly beseech you, proceed to the affairs  
of state.

*Duke.* The Turk with a most mighty  
preparation makes for Cyprus. Othello, the  
fortitude of the place is best known to you;  
and though we have there a substitute of most  
allowed sufficiency, yet opinion, a sovereign  
mistress of effects, throws a more safer voice  
on you: you must therefore be content to  
stubber the gloss of your new fortunes with  
this more stubborn and boisterous expedition.

*Oth.* The tyrant custom, most grave senators,  
Hath made the flinty and steel couch of war 231  
My thrice-driven bed of down: I do agnize

A natural and prompt alacrity  
I find in hardness, and do undertake

These present wars against the Ottomites.  
Most humbly therefore bending to your state,

I crave fit disposition for my wife,  
Due reverence of place and exhibition,

With such accommodation and besort  
As levels with her breeding.

*Duke.* If you please, 240  
Be't at her father's.

*Bra.* I'll not have it so.  
*Oth.* Nor I.

*Des.* Nor I; I would not there reside.  
To put my father in impatient thoughts  
By being in his eye. Most gracious duke,

To my unfolding lend your prosperous ear;  
And let me find a charter in your voice,  
To assist my simpleness.

*Duke.* What would you, Desdemona?

*Des.* That I did love the Moor to live with  
him,

My downright violence and storm of fortunes  
May trumpet to the world: my heart's subdued  
Even to the very quality of my lord:

I saw Othello's visage in his mind,  
And to his honours and his valiant parts

Did I my soul and fortunes consecrate.  
So that, dear lords, if I be left behind,  
A moth of peace, and he go to the war,

The rites for which I love him are束縛 me,  
And I a heavy interim shall support  
By his dear absence. Let me go with him.

*Oth.* Let her have your voice.

Vouch with me, heaven, I therefore beg it not,  
To please the palate of my appetite;

Nor to comply with heat—the young affects  
In me defunct—and proper satisfaction.

But to be free and bounteous to her mind.  
And heaven defend your good objects, that you  
think

I will your a

For she is wi

Of feather'd Cupid seal with wanton dullness  
My speculative and officed instruments, 271  
That my disports corrupt and taint my business,  
Let housewives make a skillet of my helm,  
And all indign and base adversities  
Make head against my estimation!

*Duke.* Be it as you shall privately determine,  
Either for her stay or going: the affair cries  
haste,  
And speed must answer it.

*First Sen.* You must away to-night.

*Oth.* With all my heart.

*Duke.* At nine of the morning here we'll  
meet again. 280

Othello, leave some officer behind,  
And he shall our commission bring to you;  
With such things else of quality and respect  
As doth import you.

*Oth.* So please your grace, my ancient;  
A man he is of honesty and trust:  
To his conveyance I assign my wife,  
With what else needful your good grace shall  
think

To be sent after me.

*Duke.* Let it be so.  
Good night to every one. [To Brab.] And,  
noble signior,  
If virtue no delighted beauty lack, 290  
Your son-in-law is far more fair than black.

*First Sen.* Adieu, brave Moor; use Desde-  
mona well.

*Brab.* Look to her, Moor, if thou hast eyes  
to see:

She has deceived her father, and may thee.

[*Exeunt Duke, Senators, Officers, &c.*]

*Oth.* My life upon her faith! Honest Iago,  
My Desdemona must I leave to thee:

I prithee, let thy wife attend on her;  
And bring them after in the best advantage.

Come, Desdemona; I have but an hour  
Of love, of worldly matters and direction, 300

To spend with thee: we must obey the time.

[*Exeunt Othello and Desdemona.*]

*Rod. Iago.*—

*Iago.* What say'st thou, noble heart?

*Rod.* What will I do, thinkest thou?

*Iago.* Why, go to bed, and sleep.

*Rod.* I will incontinently drown myself.

*Iago.* If thou dost, I shall never love thee  
after. Why, thou silly gentleman!

*Rod.* It is silliness to live when to live is  
torment; and then have we a prescription to  
die when death is our physician. 311

*Iago.* O villainous! I have looked upon the  
world for four times seven years; and since I  
could distinguish betwixt a benefit and an  
injury, I never found man that knew how to  
love himself. Ere I would say, I would drown  
myself for the love of a guinea-hen, I would  
change my humanity with a baboon.

*Rod.* What should I do? I confess it is my  
shame to be so fond; but it is not in my virtue  
to amend it. 321

*Iago.* Virtue! a fig! 'tis in ourselves that  
we are thus or thus. Our bodies are our gardens,  
to the which our wills are gardeners; so that if  
we will plant nettles, or sow lettuce, set hyacinth  
and weed up thyme, supply it with one gender

of herbs, or distract it with many, either to  
have it sterile with idleness, or manured with  
industry, why, the power and corrigible au-  
thority of this lies in our wills. If the balance  
of our lives had not one scale of reason to poise  
another of sensuality, the blood and baseness  
of our natures would conduct us to most pro-  
posterous conclusions: but we have reason to  
cool our raging motions, our carnal stings, our  
unbitted lusts, whereof I take this that you call  
love to be a sect or scion.

*Rod.* It cannot be.

*Iago.* It is merely a lust of the blood and a  
permission of the will. Come, be a man. Drown  
thyself! drown cats and blind puppies. I have  
professed me thy friend and I confess me knit  
to thy deserving with cables of perdurable tough-  
ness; I could never better stead thee than now.  
Put money in thy purse; follow thou the wars;  
defeat thy favour with an usurped beard; I say,  
put money in thy purse. It cannot be that  
Desdemona should long continue her love to  
the Moor,—put money in thy purse,—nor he  
his to her: it was a violent commencement, and  
thou shalt see an answerable sequestration:—  
put but money in thy purse. These Moors are  
changeable in their wills:—fill thy purse with  
money:—the food that to him now is as luscious  
as locusts, shall be to him shortly as bitter as  
coloquintida. She must change for youth:  
when she is sated with his body, she will find  
the error of her choice: she must have change,  
she must: therefore put money in thy purse.  
If thou wilt needs damn thyself, do it a more  
delicate way than drowning. Make all the  
money thou canst: if sanctimony and a frail  
vow betwixt an erring barbarian and a super-  
subtle Venetian be not too hard for my wits  
and all the tribe of hell, thou shalt enjoy her;  
therefore make money. A pox of drowning  
thyself! it is clean out of the way: seek thou  
rather to be hanged in compassing thy joy than  
to be drowned and go without her.

*Rod.* Wilt thou be fast to my hopes, if I  
depend on the issue? 320

*Iago.* Thou art sure of me:—go, make  
money:—I have told thee often, and I re-tell  
thee again and again, I hate the Moor: my  
cause is hearted; thine hath no less reason.  
Let us be conjunctive in our revenge against  
him; if thou canst cuckold him, thou dost  
thyself a pleasure, me a sport. There are many  
events in the womb of time which will be  
delivered. Traverse! go, provide thy money.  
We will have more of this to-morrow. Adieu.

*Rod.* Where shall we meet? the morning!

*Iago.* At my lodging.

*Rod.* I'll be with thee betimes.

*Iago.* Go to; farewell. Do you hear,  
Roderigo?

*Rod.* What say you?

*Iago.* No more of drowning, do you hear?

*Rod.* I am changed: I'll go sell all my land.

[*Exit.*]

*Iago.* Thus do I ever make my fool my  
purse;

For I mine own gain'd knowledge should  
profane, 320



If I would time expend with such a snipe,  
But for my sport and profit. I hate the Moor;  
And it is thought abroad, that 'twixt my sheets  
He has done my office: I know not if 't be true;  
But I, for mere suspicion in that kind,  
Will do as if for surety. He holds me well;  
The better shall my purpose work on him.  
Cassio's a proper man: let me see now:  
To get his place and to plume up my will  
In double knavery—How, how!—Let's see:—  
After some time, to abuse Othello's ear 401  
That he is too familiar with his wife.  
He hath a person and a smooth dispose  
To be suspected, framed to make women false.  
The Moor is of a free and open nature,  
That thinks men honest that but seem to be so,  
And will as tenderly be led by the nose  
As asses are.  
I have't. It is engender'd. Hell and night  
Must bring this monstrous birth to the world's  
light. [Exit. 410

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *A Sea-port in Cyprus. An open  
place near the quay.*

*Enter MONTANO and two Gentlemen.*

*Mon.* What from the cape can you discern  
at sea?

*First Gent.* Nothing at all: it is a high-  
wrought flood;  
I cannot, 'twixt the heaven and the main,  
Descry a sail.

*Mon.* Methinks the wind hath spoke aloud  
at land;  
A fuller blast ne'er shook our battlements:  
If it hath ruffian'd so upon the sea,  
What ribs of oak, when mountains melt on  
them,

Can hold the mortise? What shall we hear of  
this!

*Sec. Gent.* A segregation of the Turkish  
fleet: 10

For do but stand upon the foaming shore,  
The chidden billow seems to pelt the clouds;  
The wind-shaken surge, with high and mon-  
strous mane,

Seems to cast water on the burning bear,  
And quench the guards of the ever-fixed pole:  
I never did like molestation view  
On the enshafed flood.

*Mon.* If that the Turkish fleet  
Be not ensheather'd and embay'd, they are  
drown'd;

It is impossible they bear it out. 19

*Enter a third Gentleman.*

*Third Gent.* News, lads! our wars are done.  
The desperate tempest hath so bang'd the Turks  
That their designment halts: a noble ship o'  
Venice

Hath seen a grievous wreck and sufferance  
On most part of their fleet.

*Mon.* How! is this true?

*Third Gent.* The ship is here put in,  
A Venetian; Michael Cassio,  
Lieutenant to the warlike Moor Othello,  
Is come on shore: the Moor himself at sea,

And is in full commission here for Cyprus.

*Mon.* I am glad on't: 'tis a worthy governor.

*Third Gent.* But this same Cassio, though  
he speak of comfort 51

Touching the Turkish loss, yet he looks sadly,  
And prays the Moor be safe; for they were  
parted

With foul and violent tempest.

*Mon.* Pray heavens he be;

For I have served him, and the man commands

Like a full soldier. Let's to the seaside, ho!

As well to see the vessel that's come in

As to throw out our eyes for brave Othello,

Even till we make the main and the aerial blue

An indistinct regard.

*Third Gent.* Come, let's do so; 40

For every minute is expectancy

Of more arrivance.

*Enter CASSIO.*

*Cas.* Thanks, you the valiant of this warlike  
isle,

That so approve the Moor! O, let the heavens  
Give him defence against the elements,

For I have lost him on a dangerous sea.

*Mon.* Is he well shipp'd?

*Cas.* His bark is stoutly timber'd, and his  
pilot

Of very expert and approved allowance;

Therefore my hopes, not surfeited to death, 30

Stand in bold cure.

[*A cry within 'A sail, a sail, a sail!'*]

*Enter a fourth Gentleman.*

*Cas.* What noise!

*Fourth Gent.* The town is empty; on the  
brow o' the sea

Stand ranks of people, and they cry 'A sail!'

*Cas.* My hopes do shape him for the governor.

[*Guns heard.*]

*Sec. Gent.* They do discharge their shot of  
courtesy:

Our friends at least.

*Cas.* I pray you, sir, go forth,

And give us truth who 'tis that is arrived.

*Sec. Gent.* I shall. [Exit.]

*Mon.* But, good lieutenant, is your general  
wived? 60

*Cas.* Most fortunately: he hath achieved a  
maid

That paragons description and wild fame;

One that excels the quirks of blazoning pens,

And in the essential vesture of creation

Does tire the ingener.

*Re-enter second Gentleman.*

How now! who has put in?

*Sec. Gent.* 'Tis one Iago, ancient to the  
general.

*Cas.* Has had most favourable and happy  
speed:

Tempests themselves, high seas and howling  
winds,

The gutter'd rocks and congregated sands,—  
Traficants enshew'd to clog the gulphous heel,—

As having sense of beauty, do omit 75

Their mortal natures, letting go safely by

The divine Desdemona.

*Mon.* What is she!

*Cas.* She that I spake of, our great captain's captain,

Left in the conduct of the bold Iago.

Whose footing here anticipates our thoughts  
As midnight's speed. Great Jove, Othello guard,  
And swell his sail with thine own powerful  
breath,

That he may bless this bay with his tall ship,  
Make love's quick pants in Desdemona's arms,  
Give renew'd fire to our extincted spirits,  
And bring all Cyprus comfort!

*Enter DESDEMONA, EMILIA, IAGO, RODERIGO,  
and Attendants.*

O, behold,

The riches of the ship is come on shore!  
Ye men of Cyprus, let her have your knees.  
Hail to thee, lady! and the grace of heaven,  
Before, behind thee and on every hand,  
Knawed thee round!

*Des.* I thank you, valiant Cassio.  
What tidings can you tell me of my lord?

*Cas.* He is not yet arrived: nor know I  
aught

But that he's well and will be shortly here. 90

*Des.* O, but I fear—How lost you company?

*Cas.* The great contention of the sea and  
skies

Parted our fellowship—But, hark! a sail.

*[Within 'A sail, a sail!'] Guns heard.*

*Sec. Gent.* They give their greeting to the  
citadel:

This likewise is a friend.

*Cas.* See for the news. *[Exit Gentleman.]*  
Good ancient, you are welcome. *[To Emilia]*

Welcome, mistress:

Let it not gall your patience, good Iago,  
That I extend my manners; 'tis my breeding  
That gives me this bold show of courtesy. 100

*[Kissing her.]*

*Iago.* Sir, would she give you so much of  
her lips

As of her tongue she oft bestows on me,  
You'd have enough.

*Des.* Alas, she has no speech.

*Iago.* In faith, too much:

I find it still, when I have list to sleep:

Marry, before your ladyship, I grant,

She puts her tongue a little in her heart,

And chides with thinking.

*Emil.* You have little cause to say so.

*Iago.* Come on, come on; you are pictures  
out of doors, 110

Bells in your parlours, wild-cats in your kitchens,

Saints in your injuries, devils being offended,

Players in your housewifery, and housewives  
in your beds.

*Des.* O, be upon these, slanderer!

*Iago.* Nay, it is true, or else I am a Turk:

You rise to play and go to bed to work.

*Emil.* You shall not write my praise.

*Iago.* No, let me not.

*Des.* What wouldst thou write of me, if thou  
shouldst praise me?

*Iago.* O gentle lady, do not put me to't;

For I am nothing, if not critical. 120

*Des.* Come on, away. There's one gone to  
the harbour!

*Iago.* Ay, madam.

*Des.* I am not merry; but I do beguile

The thing I am, by seeming otherwise.

Come, how wouldst thou praise me?

*Iago.* I am about it; but indeed my in-  
vention

Comes from my pate as birdlime does from  
frize;

It plucks out brains and all: but my Muse  
labours,

And thus she is deliver'd.

If she be fair and wise, fairness and wit, 130  
The one's for use, the other useth it.

*Des.* Well praised! How if she be black  
and witty?

*Iago.* If she be black, and thereto have a  
wit,

She'll find a white that shall her blackness fit.

*Des.* Worse and worse.

*Emil.* How if fair and foolish?

*Iago.* She never yet was foolish that was  
fair;

For even her folly help'd her to an heir.

*Des.* These are old fond paradoxes to make  
fools laugh i' the alehouse. What miserable

praise hast thou for her that's foul and foolish?

*Iago.* There's none so foul and foolish there-  
unto,

But does foul pranks which fair and wise ones  
do.

*Des.* O heavy ignorance! thou praisest the  
worst best. But what praise couldst thou bestow  
on a deserving woman indeed, one that,  
in the authority of her merit, did justly put  
on the vouch of very malice itself?

*Iago.* She that was ever fair and never  
proud,

Had tongue at will and yet was never loud,

Never lack'd gold and yet went never gay, 140

Pled from her wish and yet said 'Now I may,'

She that being anger'd, her revenge being high,

Bade her wrong stay and her displeasure fly,

She that in wisdom never was so frail

To change the cod's head for the salmon's tail,

She that could think and ne'er disclose her  
mind,

See suitors following and not look behind,

She was a wight, if ever such wight were,— 150

*Des.* To do what?

*Iago.* To suckle fools and chronicle small  
beer.

*Des.* O most lame and impotent conclusion!

Do not learn of him, Emilia, though he be thy  
husband. How say you, Cassio? is he not a  
most profane and liberal counsellor?

*Cas.* He speaks home, madam; you may  
relish him more in the soldier than in the  
scholar.

*Iago.* *[Aside]* He takes her by the palm:  
ay, well said, whisper: with as little a web as  
this will I ensnare as great a fly as Cassio. 160

AY, smile upon her, do; I will gyve thee in thine  
own courtesy. You say true; 'tis so, indeed:

If such tricks as these strip you out of your  
lieutenantry, it had been better you had not  
kissed your three fingers so oft, which now

again you are most apt to play the air in.  
Very good; well kissed! an excellent courtesy!  
'tis so, indeed. Yet again your fingers to your  
lips! would they were clyster-pipes for your  
sake! [*Trumpet within.*] The Moor! I know  
his trumpet. 180

*Cas.* 'Tis truly so.

*Des.* Let's meet him and receive him.

*Cas.* Lo, where he comes!

*Enter OTHELLO and Attendants.*

*Oth.* O my fair warrior!

*Des.* My dear Othello!

*Oth.* It gives me wonder great as my content  
To see you here before me. O my soul's joy!  
If after every tempest come such calms,  
May the winds blow till they have waken'd  
death!

And let the labouring bark climb hills of seas  
Olympus-high and duck again as low 190  
As hell's from heaven! If it were now to die,

'Twere now to be most happy; for, I fear,  
My soul hath her content so absolute  
That not another comfort like to this  
Succeeds in unknown fate.

*Des.* The heavens forbid  
But that our loves and comforts should increase,  
Even as our days do grow!

*Oth.* Amen to that, sweet powers!  
I cannot speak enough of this content;  
It stops me here; it is too much of joy: 199  
And this, and this, the greatest discord be

[*Kissing her.*]

That e'er our hearts shall make!

*Iago.* [*Aside.*] O, you are well tuned now!  
But I'll set down the pegs that make this  
music,

As honest as I am.

*Oth.* Come, let us to the castle.  
News, friends; our wars are done, the Turks  
are drown'd.

How does my old acquaintance of this isle?  
Honey, you shall be well desired in Cyprus;  
I have found great love amongst them. O my  
sweet,

I prattle out of fashion, and I dote  
In mine own comforts. I prithee, good Iago,  
Go to the bay and disembark my coffers: 21  
Bring thou the master to the citadel;  
He is a good one, and his worthiness  
Does challenge much respect. Come, Desde-  
mona,

Once more, well met at Cyprus.

*Exeunt Othello, Desdemona, and Attendants.*

*Iago.* Do thou meet me presently at the  
harbour. Come hither. If thou be'st valiant,  
—as, they say, base men being in love have  
then a nobility in their natures more than is  
native to them,—list me. The lieutenant to-  
night watches on the court of guard:—first, I  
must tell thee this—Desdemona is directly in  
love with him. 22

*Rod.* With him! why, 'tis not possible.

*Iago.* Lay thy finger thus, and let thy soul  
be instructed. Mark me with what violence  
she first loved the Moor, but for bragging and  
telling her fantastical lies; and will she love  
him still for prating! let not thy discreet heart

think it. Her eye must be fed; and what  
delight shall she have to look on the devil!  
When the blood is made dull with the act of  
sport, there should be, again to inflame it and  
to give satiety a fresh appetite, loveliness in  
'amour, sympathy in years, manners and beauties;  
all which the Moor is defective in: now,  
for want of these required conveniences, her  
delicate tenderness will find itself abused, begin  
to heave the gorge, disrelish and abhor the  
Moor; very nature will instruct her in it and  
compel her to some second choice. Now, sir,  
this granted,—as it is a most pregnant and un-  
forced position—who stands so eminent in the  
degree of this fortune as Cassio does! a knave  
very voluble; no further conscionable than in  
putting on the mere form of civil and humane  
seeming, for the better compassing of his suit  
and most hidden loose affection! why, none;  
why, none: a slipper and subtle knave, a finder  
of occasions, that has an eye can stamp and  
counterfeit advantages, though true advantage  
never present itself; a devilish knave. Besides,  
the knave is handsome, young, and hath all  
those requisites in him that folly and green  
minds look after: a pestilent complete knave;  
and the woman hath found him already.

*Rod.* I cannot believe that in her; she's full  
of most blessed condition.

*Iago.* Blessed fig's-end! the wine she drinks  
is made of grapes: if she had been blessed, she  
would never have loved the Moor. Blessed  
pudding! Didst thou not see her paddle with  
the palm of his hand! didst not mark that!

*Rod.* Yes, that I did; but that was but  
courtesy.

*Iago.* Lechery, by this hand; an index and  
obscure prologue to the history of lust and foul  
thoughts. They met so near with their lips that  
their breaths embraced together. Villanous  
thoughts, Rodorigo! when these mutualities so  
marshal the way, hard at hand comes the master  
and main exercise, the incorporate conclusion.  
Fish! But, sir, be you ruled by me: I have  
brought you from Venice. Watch you to-night;  
for the command, I'll lay't upon you. Cassio  
knows you not. I'll not be far from you: do  
you find some occasion to anger Cassio, either  
by speaking too loud, or tainting his discipline;  
or from what other course you please, which the  
time shall more favourably minister.

*Rod.* Well.

*Iago.* Sir, he is rash and very sudden in  
choler, and haply may stalk at you; provoke  
him, that he may; for even out of that will I  
cause these of Cyprus to mutiny: whose quali-  
fication shall come into no true taste again but  
by the displanting of Cassio. So shall you have  
a shorter journey to your desires by the means  
I shall then have to prefer them; and the im-  
pediment most profitably removed, without  
the which there were no expectation of near  
prosperity.

*Rod.* I will do this, if I can, being it is my  
opportunity. 23

*Iago.* I warrant thee. Meet me by and by  
at the citadel: I must fetch his  
anchors. Farewell.

*Rod. Adieu.*

[*Exit.*

*Iago.* That Cassio loves her, I do well believe it;

That she loves him, 'tis apt and of great credit  
The Moor, howbeit that I endure him not,  
Is of a constant, loving, noble nature,  
And I dare think he'll prove to Desdemona  
A most dear husband. Now, I do love her too  
Not out of absolute lust, though peradventure  
I stand accountant for as great a sin,  
But partly led to diet my revenge,  
For that I do suspect the lusty Moor  
Hath leap'd into my seat; the thought whereof  
Doth, like a poisonous mineral, gnaw my in-  
wards;

And nothing can or shall content my soul  
Till I am even'd with him, wife for wife,  
Or falling so, yet that I put the Moor  
At least into a jealousy so strong  
That judgement cannot cure. Which thing to  
do,

If this poor trash of Venice, whom I trash  
For his quick hunting, stand the putting on,  
I'll have our Michael Cassio on the hip,  
Abuse him to the Moor in the rank garb—  
For I fear Cassio with my night-cap too—  
Make the Moor thank me, love me and reward  
me.

For making him egregiously an ass  
And practising upon his peace and quiet  
Even to madness. 'Tis here, but yet confused:  
Knavery's plain face is never seen till used.

[*Exit.*

### SCENE II. *A street.*

*Enter a Herald with a proclamation; People following.*

*Her.* It is Othello's pleasure, our noble and  
valiant general, that, upon certain tidings now  
arrived, importing the mere perdition of the  
Turkish fleet, every man put himself into  
triumph; some to dance, some to make bon-  
fires, each man to what sport and revels his  
addiction leads him: for, besides these benefi-  
cial news, it is the celebration of his nuptial.  
So much was his pleasure should be proclaimed.  
All offices are open, and there is full liberty of  
feasting from this present hour of five till the  
bell have told eleven. Heaven bless the isle of  
Cyprus and our noble general Othello! [*Exeunt.*

### SCENE III. *A hall in the castle.*

*Enter OTHELLO, DESDEMONA, CASSIO, and Attendants.*

*Oth.* Good Michael, look you to the guard  
to-night:

Let's teach ourselves that honourable stop,  
Not to outport discretion.

*Cas.* Iago hath direction what to do;  
But notwithstanding, with my personal eye  
Will I look to't.

*Oth.* Iago is most honest.  
*Michael,* good night: to-morrow with your  
cousins

Let me have speech with you. [*To Desdemona*]

Come, my dear love,  
The purchase made, the fruits are to ensue;  
That profit's yet to come 'twixt me and you. 10  
Good night.

[*Exeunt Othello, Desdemona, and Attendants.*

*Enter IAGO.*

*Cas.* Welcome, Iago; we must to the watch.  
*Iago.* Not this hour, lieutenant; 'tis not yet  
ten o' the clock. Our general cast us thus early  
for the love of his Desdemona; who let us not  
therefore blame: he hath not yet made wanton  
the night with her; and she is apt for Jove.

*Cas.* She's a most exquisite lady.  
*Iago.* And, I'll warrant her, full of game.  
*Cas.* Indeed, she's a most fresh and delicate  
creature. 21

*Iago.* What an eye she has! methinks it  
sounds a parley of provocation.

*Cas.* An inviting eye; and yet methinks  
right modest.

*Iago.* And when she speaks, is it not an  
alarum to love?

*Cas.* She is indeed perfection.  
*Iago.* Well, happiness to their sheets! Come,  
lieutenant, I have a stoup of wine; and here  
without are a brace of Cyprus gallants that  
would fain have a measure to the health of  
black Othello.

*Cas.* Not to-night, good Iago: I have very  
poor and unhappy brains for drinking: I could  
well wish courtesy would invent some other  
custom of entertainment.

*Iago.* O, they are our friends; but one cup:  
I'll drink for you. 39

*Cas.* I have drunk but one cup to-night, and  
that was craftily qualified too, and, behold, what  
innovation it makes here: I am unfortunate in  
the infirmity, and dare not task my weakness  
with any more.

*Iago.* What, man! 'tis a night of revels: the  
gallants desire it.

*Cas.* Where are they?

*Iago.* Here at the door; I pray you, call  
them in.

*Cas.* I'll do't; but it dislikes me. [*Exit.*

*Iago.* If I can fasten but one cup upon him,  
With that which he hath drunk to-night al-  
ready, 51

He'll be as full of quarrel and offence  
As my young mistress' dog. Now, my sick  
fool Roderigo,  
Whom love hath turn'd almost the wrong side  
out,

To Desdemona hath to-night caroused  
Potations pottle-deep; and he's to watch:  
Three lads of Cyprus, noble swelling spirits,  
That hold their honour in a wary distance,  
The very elements of this warlike isle,  
Have I to-night fluster'd with flowing cups. 60  
And they watch too. Now, amongst this flock  
of drunkards,

Am I to put our Cassio in some action  
That may offend the isle.—But here they come:  
If consequence do but approve my dream,  
My boat sails freely, both with wind and stream.

*Re-enter CASSIO; with him MONTANO and Gentlemen; Servants following with wine.*

*Cas.* 'Fore God, they have given me a rouse already.

*Mon.* Good faith, a little one; not past a pint, as I am a soldier.

*Iago.* Some wine, ho! 70

*[Sings]* And let me the canakin clink, clink;  
And let me the canakin clink:

A soldier's a man;  
A life's but a span;

Why, then, let a soldier drink.  
Some wine, boys!

*Cas.* 'Fore God, an excellent song.

*Iago.* I learned it in England, where, indeed, they are most potent in pottin': your Dane, your German, and your swag-bellied Hollander—

Drink, ho!—are nothing to your English. 81

*Cas.* Is your Englishman so expert in his drinking?

*Iago.* Why, he drinks you, with facility, your Dane dead drunk; he sweats not to overthrow your Almain; he gives your Hollander a vomit, ere the next pottle can be filled.

*Cas.* To the health of our general!

*Mon.* I am for it, lieutenant; and I'll do you justice. 90

*Iago.* O sweet England!  
King Stephen was a worthy peer,

His breeches cost him but a crown;  
He held them sixpence all too dear,

With that he call'd the tailor lown.  
He was a wight of high renown,

And thou art but of low degree:  
'Tis pride that pulls the country down;

Then take thine auld cloak about thee.  
Some wine, ho! 100

*Cas.* Why, this is a more exquisite song than the other.

*Iago.* Will you hear't again?

*Cas.* No; for I hold him to be unworthy of his place that does those things. Well, God's above all; and there be souls must be saved, and there be souls must not be saved.

*Iago.* It's true, good lieutenant.

*Cas.* For mine own part,—no offence to the general, nor any man of quality,—I hope to be saved. 111

*Iago.* And so do I too, lieutenant.

*Cas.* Ay, but, by your leave, not before me; the lieutenant is to be saved before the ancient.

Let's have no more of this; let's to our affairs.—  
Forgive us our sins!—Gentlemen, let's look to our business. Do not think, gentlemen, I am drunk: this is my ancient; this is my right hand, and this is my left: I am not drunk now; I can stand well enough, and speak well enough. 120

*All.* Excellent well.

*Cas.* Why, very well then; you must not think then that I am drunk. *[Exit.]*

*Mon.* To the platform, masters; come, let's set the watch.

*Iago.* You see this fellow that is gone before;

He is a soldier fit to stand by Caesar  
And give direction: and do but see his vice;

'Tis to his virtue a just equinox,  
The one as long as the other: 'tis pity of him.

I fear the trust Othello puts him in,  
On some odd time of his infirmity,

Will shake this island. 131

*Mon.* But is he often thus?

*Iago.* 'Tis evermore the prologue to his sleep:  
He'll watch the horologe a double set,  
If drink rock not his cradle.

*Mon.* It were well  
The general were put in mind of it.

Perhaps he sees it not; or his good nature  
Prizes the virtue that appears in Cassio,

And looks not on his evils: is not this true? 139

*Enter RODERIGO.*

*Iago.* *[Aside to him]* How now, Roderigo!  
I pray you, after the lieutenant; go.

*Mon.* And 'tis great pity that the noble Moor  
Should hazard such a place as his own second  
With one of an ingraft infirmity:

It were an honest action to say  
So to the Moor.

*Iago.* Not I, for this fair island;  
I do love Cassio well; and would do much  
To cure him of this evil.—But, hark! what  
noise! *[Cry within: 'Help! help!']*

*Re-enter CASSIO, driving in RODERIGO.*

*Cas.* You rogue! you rascal!

*Mon.* What's the matter, lieutenant?

*Cas.* A knave teach me my duty! 151

I'll beat the knave into a twiggen bottle.

*Rod.* Beat me!

*Cas.* Dost thou prate, rogue!

*[Striking Roderigo.]*  
*Mon.* Nay, good lieutenant;  
*[Straying him.]*

I pray you, sir, hold your hand.

*Cas.* Let me go, sir.

Or I'll knock you o'er the mazzard.

*Mon.* Come, come, you're drunk.

*Cas.* Drunk! *[They fight.]*

*Iago.* *[Aside to Roderigo]* Away, I say; go  
out, and cry a mutiny. *[Exit Roderigo.]*

Nay, good lieutenant,—alas, gentlemen!—  
Help, ho!—Lieutenant,—sir,—Montano,—  
sir!— 159

Help, masters!—Here's a goodly watch indeed!

*[Bell rings.]*

Who's that which rings the bell!—Diablo, ho!  
The town will rise: God's will, lieutenant,  
hold!

You will be shamed for ever.

*Re-enter OTHELLO and Attendants.*

*Oth.* What is the matter here?

*Mon.* 'Zounds, I bleed still; I am hurt to  
the death. *[Faints.]*

*Oth.* Hold, for your lives!

*Iago.* Hold, ho! Lieutenant,—sir,—Montano,—gentlemen,—  
Have you forgot all sense of place and duty?  
Hold! the general speaks to you; hold, hold,  
for shame!

Oth. Why, how now, ho! from whence  
arise this?

Are we turn'd Turks, and to ourselves do that  
Which heaven hath forbid the Ottomites? <sup>177</sup>  
For Christian shame, put by this barbarous  
brawl!

He that sits next to carve for his own rage  
Holds his soul light; he dies upon his motion.  
Silence that dreadful bell: it frights the isle  
From her propriety. What is the matter,  
masters?

Honest Iago, that look'st dead with grieving,  
Speak, who began this! on thy love, I charge  
thee.

Iago. I do not know: friends all but now,  
even now, <sup>179</sup>

In quarter, and in terms like bride and groom  
Dressing them for bed; and then, but now—  
As if some planet had unwitted men—  
Swords out, and tilting one at other's breast,  
In opposition bloody. I cannot speak  
Any beginning to this peevish odds:  
And would in action glorious I had lost  
Those legs that brought me to a part of it!

Oth. How comes it, Michael, you are thus  
forget?

Cas. I pray you, pardon me; I cannot speak.

Oth. Worthy Montano, you were wont to  
be civil; <sup>180</sup>

The gravity and stillness of your youth  
The world hath noted, and your name is great  
In mouths of wisest censure: what's the matter,  
That you unlance your reputation thus  
And spend your rich opinion for the name  
Of a night-brawler? I give me answer to it.

Mon. Worthy Othello, I am hurt to danger:  
Your officer, Iago, can inform you,—  
While I spare speech, which something now  
offends me,—

Of all that I do know: nor know I aught <sup>180</sup>  
By me that's said or done amiss this night;  
Unless self-charity be sometimes a vice,  
And to defend ourselves it be a sin  
When violence assails us.

Oth. Now, by heaven,  
My blood begins my safer guides to rule;  
And passion, having my best judgement collied,  
Aways to lead the way: if I once stir,  
Or do but lift this arm, the best of you  
Shall sink in my rebuke. Give me to know  
How this foul rout began, who set it on; <sup>180</sup>  
That is approved in this offence,  
He had twinn'd with me, both at a

shall lose me. What! in a town of war,  
Yet wild, the people's hearts brimful of fear,  
To manage private and domestic quarrel,  
In night, and on the court and guard of safety!  
This monstrous Iago, who began 't?

Mon. If partially affined, or leagu'd in office,  
Then dost deliver more or less than truth,  
Then art no soldier.

Iago. Touch me not so near: <sup>180</sup>  
I had rather have this tongue cut from my  
mouth.

It should do offence to Michael Cassio;  
I persuade myself, to speak the truth  
I nothing wrong him. Thus it is, general.

Montano and myself being in speech,  
There comes a fellow crying out for help;  
And Cassio following him with determined  
sword,

To execute upon him. Sir, this gentleman  
Steps in to Cassio, and entreats his pause—  
Myself the crying fellow did pursue, <sup>180</sup>  
Lest by his clamour—as it fell out—  
The town might fall in fright: he, swift of foot,  
Outran my purpose; and I return'd the rather  
For that I heard the clink and fall of swords,  
And Cassio high in oath; which till to-night  
I ne'er might say before. When I came back—  
For this was brief—I found them close together,  
At blow and thrust; even as again they were  
When you yourself did part them.

More of this matter cannot I report: <sup>180</sup>  
But men are men; the best sometimes forget;  
Though Cassio did some little wrong to him,  
As men in rage strike those that wish them  
best,

Yet surely Cassio, I believe, received  
From him that fled some strange indignity,  
Which patience could not pass.

Oth. I know, Iago,  
Thy honesty and love doth mince this matter,  
Making it light to Cassio. Cassio, I love thee;  
But never more be officer of mine.

Re-enter DESDEMONA, attended.

Look, if my gentle love be not raised up! <sup>180</sup>  
I'll make thee an example.

Des. What's the matter?  
Oth. All's well now, sweeting; come away  
to bed.

Sir, for your hurts, myself will be your surgeon:  
Lead him off. [To Montano, who is led off.]  
Iago, look with care about the town,  
And silence those whom this vile brawl dis-  
tracted.

Come, Desdemona: 'tis the soldiers' life  
To have their balmy slumbers waked with  
strife. [Exeunt all but Iago and Cassio.]

Iago. What are you hurt, lieutenant?

Cas. Ay, past all surgery. <sup>180</sup>

Iago. Marry, heaven forbid!

Cas. Reputation, reputation, reputation! O,  
I have lost my reputation! I have lost the  
immortal part of myself, and what remains is  
bestial. My reputation, Iago, my reputation!

Iago. As I am an honest man, I thought  
you had received some bodily wound; there is  
more sense in that than in reputation. Repu-  
tation is an idle and most false imposition; oft  
got without merit, and lost without deserving:  
you have lost no reputation at all, unless you  
repute yourself such a loser. What, man! there  
are ways to recover the general again: you are  
but now cast in his mood, a punishment more  
in policy than in malice; even so as one would  
beat his offenceless dog to frighten an impudent  
lion: sue to him again, and he's yours.

Cas. I will rather sue to be despised than  
to deceive so good a commander with so slight,  
so drunken, and so indiscreet an officer. Drunk!  
and speak parrot! and squabble! swagger!  
swear! and discourse fustian with one's own  
shadow! O thou invisible spirit of wine, if

thou hast no name to be known by, let us call thee devil!

*Iago.* What was he that you followed with your sword? What had he done to you?

*Cas.* I know not.

*Iago.* Is't possible?

*Cas.* I remember a mass of things, but nothing distinctly; a quarrel, but nothing wherefore. O God, that man should put an enemy in their mouths to steal away their brains! that we should, with joy, pleasance, revel and applause, transform ourselves into beasts!

*Iago.* Why, but you are now well enough: how came you thus recovered?

*Cas.* Is hath pleased the devil drunkenness to give place to the devil wrath: one unperfectness shows me another, to make me frankly despise myself.

*Iago.* Come, you are too severe a moralist: as the time, the place, and the condition of this country stands, I could heartily wish this had not befallen; but, since it is as it is, mend it for your own good.

*Cas.* I will ask him for my place again; he shall tell me I am a drunkard! Had I as many mouths as Hydra, such an answer would stop them all. To be now a sensible man, by and by a fool, and presently a beast! O strange! Every inordinate cup is unblessed and the ingredient is a devil.

*Iago.* Come, come, good wine is a good familiar creature, if it be well used: exclaim no more against it. And, good lieutenant, I think you think I love you.

*Cas.* I have well approved it, sir. I drunk!

*Iago.* You or any man living may be drunk at a time, man. I'll tell you what you shall do. Our general's wife is now the general: I may say so in this respect, for that he hath devoted and given up himself to the contemplation, mark, and denotement of her parts and graces: confess yourself freely to her; importune her help to put you in your place again: she is of so free, so kind, so apt, so blessed a disposition, she holds it a vice in her goodness not to do more than she is requested: this broken joint between you and her husband entreat her to splinter; and, my fortunes against any lay worth naming, this crack of your love shall grow stronger than it was before.

*Cas.* You advise me well.

*Iago.* I protest, in the sincerity of love and honest kindness.

*Cas.* I think it freely; and betimes in the morning I will beseech the virtuous Desdemona to undertake for me: I am desperate of my fortunes if they check me here.

*Iago.* You are in the right. Good night, lieutenant; I must to the watch.

*Cas.* Good night, honest Iago.

*Iago.* And what's he then that says I play the villain?

When this advice is free I give and honest, Probal to thinking and indeed the course To win the Moor again! For his most easy The kneeling Desdemona to subdue

In any honest suit: she's framed as fruitful As the free elements. And then for her To win the Moor—was't to renounce his baptism.

All seals and symbols of redeemed sin,  
His soul is so enfeiter'd to her love,  
That she may make, unmake, do what she list,  
Even as her appetite shall play the god  
With his weak function. How am I then a villain

To counsel Cassio to this parallel course,  
Directly to his good? Divinity of hell!  
When devils will the blackest sins put on,  
They do suggest at first with heavenly shows,  
As I do now: for whiles this honest fool  
Plies Desdemona to repair his fortunes  
And she for him pleads strongly to the Moor,  
I'll pour this pestilence into his ear,  
That she repels him for her body's lust;  
And by how much she strives to do him good,  
She shall undo her credit with the Moor.  
So will I turn her virtue into pitch,  
And out of her own goodness make the net  
That shall enmesh them all.

#### Re-enter RODERIGO.

How now, Roderigo!

*Rod.* I do follow here in the chase, not like a hound that hunts, but one that fills up the cry. My money is almost spent; I have been to-night exceedingly well gulled; and I think the issue will be, I shall have so much experience for my pains, and so, with no money at all and a little more wit, return again to Venice.

*Iago.* How poor are they that have not patience!

What wound did ever heal but by degrees?  
Thou know'st we work by wit, and not by witchcraft;

And wit depends on dilatory time.  
Does't not go well? Cassio hath beaten thee,  
And thou, by that small hurt, hast cashier'd Cassio.

Though other things grow fair against the sun,  
Yet fruits that blossom first will first be ripe;  
Content thyself awhile. By the mass, tis morning;

Pleasure and action make the hours seem short.  
Retire thee; go where thou art billeted:  
Away, I say; thou shalt know more hereafter:  
Nay, get thee gone. [Exit Roderigo.] Two things are to be done:

My wife must move for Cassio to her mistress;  
I'll set her on;

Myself the while to draw the Moor apart,  
Cassio shall

#### ACT III.

##### SCENE I. Before the castle.

Enter CASSIO and some Musicians.

*Cas.* Masters, play here; I will content your pains;  
Something that's brief; and bid 'Good morning, general.'

*Enter Clown.*

*Clo.* Why, masters, have your instruments been in Naples, that they speak i' the nose thus?

*First Mus.* How, sir, how!

*Clo.* Are these, I pray you, wind-instruments?

*First Mus.* Ay, marry, are they, sir.

*Clo.* O, thereby hangs a tale.

*First Mus.* Whereby hangs a tale, sir?

*Clo.* Marry, sir, by many a wind-instrument that I know. But, masters, here's money for you; and the general so likes your music, that he desires you, for love's sake, to make no more noise with it.

*First Mus.* Well, sir, we will not.

*Clo.* If you have any music that may not be heard, to't again; but, as they say, to hear music the general does not greatly care.

*First Mus.* We have none such, sir.

*Clo.* Then put up your pipes in your bag, for I'll away; go; vanish into air; away!

*[Exit Musicians.]*

*Cas.* Dost thou hear, my honest friend?

*Clo.* No, I hear not your honest friend; I hear you.

*Cas.* Prithee, keep up thy quillets. There's a poor piece of gold for thee: if the gentleman that attends the general's wife be stirring, tell her there's one Cassio entreats her a little favour of speech: wilt thou do this?

*Clo.* She is stirring, sir; if she will stir hither, I shall seem to notify unto her.

*Cas.* Do, good my friend. *[Exit Clown.]*

*Enter IAGO.*

In happy time, Iago.

*Iago.* You have not been a-bed, then?

*Cas.* Why, no; the day had broke before we parted. I have made bold, Iago, to send in to your wife: my suit to her is, that she will to virtuous Desdemona procure me some access.

*Iago.* I'll send her to you presently; And I'll devise a mean to draw the Moor Out of the way, that your converse and business may be more free.

*Cas.* I humbly thank you for't. *[Exit Iago.]*

I never knew

A Florentine more kind and honest.

*Enter EMILIA.*

*Emil.* Good morrow, good lieutenant: I am sorry

For your displeasure; but all will sure be well. The general and his wife are talking of it; And she speaks for you stoutly: the Moor

That he you hurt is of great fame in Cyprus And great affinity and that in wholesome wisdom

He might not but refuse you, but he protests

he loves you

And sends no other suitor but his likings To seek the safest occasion by the front To suit you in again.

*Cas.* Yet, I beseech you,

It were not fit, or that it may be done,

Give me advantage of some brief discourse With Desdemona alone.

*Emil.*

Pray you, come in: I will bestow you where you shall have time To speak your bosom freely.

*Cas.* I am much bound to you. *[Exit.]*

SCENE II. A room in the castle.

*Enter OTHELLO, IAGO, and Gentlemen.*

*Oth.* These letters give, Iago, to the pilot; And by him do my duties to the senate: That done, I will be walking on the works; Repair there to me.

*Iago.* Well, my good lord, I'll do't.

*Oth.* This fortification, gentlemen, shall we see?

*Gent.* We'll wait upon your lordship. *[Exit.]*

SCENE III. The garden of the castle.

*Enter DESDEMONA, CASSIO, and EMILIA.*

*Des.* Be thou assured, good Cassio, I will do All my abilities in thy behalf.

*Emil.* Good madam, do: I warrant it grieves my husband, As if the case were his.

*Des.* O, that's an honest fellow. Do not doubt, Cassio, But I will have my lord and you again As friendly as you were.

*Cas.* Bounteous madam, Whatever shall become of Michael Cassio, He's never any thing but your true servant.

*Des.* I know't; I thank you. You do love my lord: You have known him long; and be you well assured

He shall in strangeness stand no further off Than in a politic distance.

*Cas.* Ay, but, lady, That policy may either last so long, Or feed upon such nice and waterish diet, Or breed itself so out of circumstance, That, I being absent and my place supplied, My general will forget my love and service.

*Des.* Do not doubt that; before Emilia here I give thee warrant of thy place: assure thee, so If I do vow a friendship, I'll perform it To the last article: my lord shall never rest; I'll watch him tame and talk him out of patience;

His I shall seem a school, his board a shrift; I'll intermingle every thing he does With Cassio's suit: therefore be merry, Cassio; For thy solicitor shall rather die Than give thy cause away.

*Emil.* Madam, here comes my lord.

*Cas.* Madam, I'll take my leave.

*Des.* Why, stay, and hear me speak.

*Cas.* Madam, not now: I am very ill at ease, Unfit for mine own purposes.

*Des.* Well, do your discretion. *[Exit Cassio.]*

*Enter OTHELLO and IAGO.*

Ha! I like not that.

What dost thou say?



*Iago.* Nothing, my lord: or if—I know not what.  
*Oth.* Was not that Cassio parted from my wife?  
*Iago.* Cassio, my lord! No, sure, I cannot think it.  
 That he would steal away so guilty-like, Seeing you coming.  
*Oth.* I do believe 'twas he.  
*Des.* How now, my lord!  
 I have been talking with a suitor here, A man that languishes in your displeasure.  
*Oth.* Who is't you mean?  
*Des.* Why, your lieutenant, Cassio. Good my lord,  
 If I have any grace or power to move you, His present reconciliation take;  
 For if he be not one that truly loves you, That errs in ignorance and not in cunning, I have no judgement in an honest face:  
*I prithee, call him back.*  
*Oth.* Went he hence now?  
*Des.* Ay, sooth; so humbled  
 That he hath left part of his grief with me, To suffer with him. Good love, call him back.  
*Oth.* Not now, sweet Desdemona; some other time.  
*Des.* But shall 't be shortly?  
*Oth.* The sooner, sweet, for you.  
*Des.* Shall 't be to-night at supper?  
*Oth.* No, not to-night.  
*Des.* To-morrow dinner, then?  
*Oth.* I shall not dine at home;  
 I meet the captains at the citadel.  
*Des.* Why, then, to-morrow night; or Tuesday morn;  
 On Tuesday noon, or night; on Wednesday morn:  
 I prithee, name the time, but let it not Exceed three days: in faith, he's penitent;  
 And yet his trespass, in our common reason—Save that, they say, the wars must make examples—  
 Out of their best—is not almost a fault  
 To incur a private check. When shall he come?  
 Tell me, Othello: I wonder in my soul,  
 What you would ask me, that I should deny,  
 Or stand so mammering on. What! Michael Cassio,  
 That came a-wooing with you, and so many a time,  
 When I have spoke of you dispraisingly,  
 Hath ta'en your part; to have so much to do  
 To bring him in! Trust me, I could do much,—  
*Oth.* Prithee, no more: let him come when he will;  
 I will deny thee nothing.  
*Des.* Why, this is not a boon  
 'Tis as I should entreat you wear your gloves, Or feed on nourishing dishes, or keep you warm,  
 Or sue to you to do a peculiar profit  
 To your own person: nay, when I have a suit  
 Wherein I mean to touch your love indeed, as  
 It shall be full of poins and difficult weight  
 And fearful to be granted.  
*Oth.* I will deny thee nothing  
 Whereon, I do beseech thee, grant me this,  
 To leave me but a little to myself.  
*Des.* Shall I deny you? no: farewell, my lord.  
*Oth.* Farewell, my Desdemona: I'll come to thee straight.  
*Des.* Emilia, come. Be as your fancies teach you;  
 Whate'er you be, I am obedient.  
*[Exit Desdemona and Emilia.]*  
*Oth.* Excellent wretch! Perdition catch my soul,  
 But I do love thee! and when I love thee not,  
 Chaos is come again.  
*Iago.* My noble lord,—  
*Oth.* What dost thou say, Iago?  
*Iago.* Did Michael Cassio, when you woo'd my lady,  
 Know of your love?  
*Oth.* He did, from first to last: why dost thou ask?  
*Iago.* But for a satisfaction of my thought;  
 No further harm.  
*Oth.* Why of thy thought, Iago?  
*Iago.* I did not think he had been acquainted with her.  
*Oth.* O, yes; and went between us very oft.  
*Iago.* Indeed!  
*Oth.* Indeed! ay, indeed: discern'st thou aught in that?  
 Is he not honest?  
*Iago.* Honest, my lord!  
*Oth.* Honest! ay, honest.  
*Iago.* My lord, for aught I know.  
*Oth.* What dost thou think?  
*Iago.* Think, my lord!  
*Oth.* Think, my lord!  
 By heaven, he echoes me,  
 As if there were some monster in his thought  
 Too hideous to be shown. Thou dost mean something:  
 I heard thee say even now, thou liked'st not that.  
 When Cassio left my wife: what didst not like?  
 And when I told thee he was of my counsel  
 In my whole course of wooing, thou cried'st 'Indeed!'  
 And didst contract and purse thy brow together,  
 As if thou then hadst shut up in thy brain  
 Some horrible conceit: if thou dost love me,  
 Show me thy thought.  
*Iago.* My lord, you know I love you.  
*Oth.* I think thou dost;  
 And, for I know thou'rt full of love and  
 And weigh'st thy words before thou givest them  
 breath,  
 Therefore these stops of thine fright me the more:  
 For such things in a false disloyal knave  
 Are tricks of custom, but in a man that's just  
 They are close delations, working from the heart  
 That passion cannot rule.  
*Iago.* For Michael Cassio,  
 I dare be sworn I think that he is honest.  
*Oth.* I think so too.  
*Iago.* Men should be what they seem;  
 Or those that be not, would they might seem none!

*Oth.* Certain, men should be what they seem.

*Iago.* Why, then, I think Cassio's an honest man.

*Oth.* Nay, yet there's more in this; I prithee, speak to me as to thy thinkings.

As thou dost ruminate, and give thy worst of thoughts

The worst of words.

*Iago.* Good my lord, pardon me: Though I am bound to every act of duty,

I am not bound to that all slaves are free to. Utter my thoughts? Why, say they are vile

and false;

As where's that palace whereinto foul things Sometimes intrude not? who has a breast so

pure,

But some uncleanly apprehensions Keep leets and law-days and in session sit

With meditations lawful?

*Oth.* Thou dost conspire against thy friend,

*Iago.* If thou but think'st him wrong'd and makest his ear

A stranger to thy thoughts.

*Iago.* I do beseech you— Though I perchance am vicious in my guess,

As, I confess, it is my nature's plague To spy into abuses, and oft my jealousy

Shapes faults that are not—that your wisdom yet,

From one that so imperfectly conceits, Would take no notice, nor build yourself a

trouble

Out of his scattering and unsure observance. It were not for your quiet nor your good,

Nor for my manhood, honesty, or wisdom, To let you know my thoughts.

*Oth.* What dost thou mean?

*Iago.* Good name in man and woman, dear my lord,

Is the immediate jewel of their souls: Who steals my purse steals trash; 'tis some-

thing, nothing;

'Twas mine, 'tis his, and has been slave to thousands;

But he that filches from me my good name Robs me of that which not enriches him

And makes me poor indeed.

*Oth.* By heaven, I'll know thy thoughts.

*Iago.* You cannot, if my heart were in your hand;

Nor shall not, whilst 'tis in my custody.

*Oth.* Ha!

*Iago.* O, beware, my lord, of jealousy; It is the green-eyed monster which doth mock

The meat it feeds on: that cuckold lives in bliss

Who, certain of his fate, loves not his wronger; But, O, what damned minutes tells he o'er

Who dotes, yet doubts, suspects, yet strongly loves!

*Oth.* O misery!

*Iago.* Poor and content is rich and rich enough.

But richer than all else is as poor as winter

For he that dies ever fears he shall be poor.

Good heaven, the souls of all my tribe defend

From jealousy!

*Oth.* Why, why is this? Think'st thou I'd make a life of jealousy,

To follow still the changes of the moon With fresh suspicions? No; to be once in

doubt

Is once to be resolved: exchange me for a goat. When I shall turn the business of my soul

To such exaustrate and blown surmises, Matching thy inference. 'Tis not to make me

jealous

To say my wife is fair, feeds well, loves company,

Is free of speech, sings, plays and dances well; Where virtue is, these are more virtuous:

Nor from mine own weak merits will I draw The smallest fear or doubt of her revolt;

For she had eyes, and chose me. No, Iago; I'll see before I doubt; when I doubt, prove;

And on the proof, there is no more but this,— Away at once with love or jealousy!

*Iago.* I am glad of it; for now I shall have reason

To show the love and duty that I bear you With franker spirit: therefore, as I am bound,

Receive it from me. I speak not yet of proof. Look to your wife; observe her well with Cassio;

Wear your eye thus, not jealous nor secure: I would not have your free and noble nature,

Out of self-bounty, be abused; look to't: I know our country disposition well;

In Venice they do let heaven see the pranks They dare not show their husbands; their best

conscience

Is not to leave't undone, but keep't unknown.

*Oth.* Dost thou say so?

*Iago.* She did deceive her father, marrying you;

And when she seem'd to shake and fear your looks, She loved them most.

*Oth.* And so she did.

*Iago.* Why, go to then; She that, so young, could give out such a

seeming,

To seal her father's eyes up close as oak— He thought 'twas witchcraft—but I am much

to blame;

He humbly do beseech you of your pardon For too much loving you.

*Oth.* I am bound to thee for ever.

*Iago.* I see this hath a little dash'd your spirits.

*Oth.* Not a jot, not a jot.

*Iago.* I faith, I fear it has.

I hope you will consider what is spoke Comes from my love. But I do see you're

moved:

I am to pray you not to strain my speech In grosser issues nor to larger reach

Than to suspicion.

*Oth.* I will not.

*Iago.* Should you do so, my lord, My speech should fall into such vile success

As my thoughts aim not at. Cassio's my worthy friend—

My lord, I see you're moved.

*Oth.* No, not much moved:

I do not think but Desdemona's honest.

*Iago.* Long live she so! and long live you to think so!

*Oth.* And yet, how nature erring from itself,—

*Iago.* Ay, there's the point: as—to be bold with you—

Not to adact many proposed matches  
Of her own climate, complexion, and degree, 230

Whereto we see in all things nature tends—  
Foh! one may smell in such a will most rank,

Foul disproportion, thoughts unnatural.  
But pardon me; I do not in position

Distinctly speak of her; though I may fear  
Her will, recoiling to her better judgement,

May fall to match you with her country forms  
And happily repent.

*Oth.* Farewell, farewell:  
If more thou dost perceive, let me know more;

Set on thy wife to observe: leave me, *Iago.* 240  
*Iago.* [Going] My lord, I take my leave.

*Oth.* Why did I marry? This honest creature  
doubtless

Sees and knows more, much more, than he  
unfolds.

*Iago.* [Returning] My lord, I would I might  
entreat your honour

To scan this thing no further; leave it to time:  
Though it be fit that Cassio have his place,

For, sure, he fills it up with great ability,  
Yet, if you please to hold him off awhile,

You shall by that perceive him and his means:  
Note, if your lady strain his entertainment; 250

With any strong or vehement importunity;  
Much will be seen in that. In the mean time,

Let me be thought too busy in my fears—  
As worthy cause I have to fear I am—

And hold her free, I do beseech your honour.  
*Oth.* Fear not my government.

*Iago.* I once more take my leave. [Exit.]  
*Oth.* This fellow's of exceeding honesty,

And knows all qualities, with a learned spirit,  
Of human dealings. If I do prove her haggard,

Though that her jesses were my dear heart-  
strings, 261

I'd whistle her off and let her down the wind,  
To prey at fortune. Haply, for I am black

And have not those soft parts of conversation  
That chamberers have, or for I am declined

Into the vale of years,—yet that's not much—  
She's gone. I am abused; and my relief

Must be to loathe her. O curse of marriage,  
That we can call these delicate creatures ours,

And not their appetites! I had rather be a  
toad, 270

And live upon the vapour of a dungeon,  
Than keep a corner in the thing I love

For others' uses. Yet, 'tis the plague of great  
ones;

Prerogative are they less than the base;  
'Tis destiny unchangeable, like death:

Even then this forked plague is fated to us  
When we do quicken. Desdemona comes:

*Re-enter DESDEMONA and EMILIA.*

If she be false, O, then heaven mocks itself!  
I'll not believe 't.

*Des.* How now, my dear Othello!

Your dinner, and the generous islanders 280  
By you invited, do attend your presence.

*Oth.* I am to blame.

*Des.* Why do you speak so faintly?  
Are you not well?

*Oth.* I have a pain upon my forehead here.

*Des.* Faith, that's with watching; 'twill  
away again:

Let me but bind it hard, within this hour  
It will be well.

*Oth.* Your napkin is too little:  
[He puts the handkerchief from him; and it drops.]

Let it alone. Come, I'll go in with you.  
*Des.* I am very sorry that you are not well.

[Exit Othello and Desdemona.]  
*Emil.* I am glad I have found this napkin:

This was her first remembrance from the Moor:  
My wayward husband hath a hundred times

Wo'd me to steal it; but she so loves the token,  
For he conjured her she should ever keep it,

That she reserves it evermore about her  
To kiss and talk to. I'll have the work t'en

out,  
And give 't Iago: what he will do with it  
Heaven knows, not I;

I nothing but to please his fantasy.

*Re-enter IAGO.*

*Iago.* How now! what do you here alone?

*Emil.* Do not you chide; I have a thing for  
you. 301

*Iago.* A thing for me! it is a common  
thing—

*Emil.* Ha!

*Iago.* To have a foolish wife.

*Emil.* O, is that all? What will you give  
me now

For that same handkerchief?

*Iago.* What handkerchief?

*Emil.* What handkerchief?

Why, that the Moor first gave to Desdemona;  
That which so often you did bid me steal.

*Iago.* Hast stol'n it from her?

*Emil.* No, 'faith; she let it drop by neglig-  
gence, 310

nd, to the advantage, I, being here, took 't up.  
Look, here it is.

*Iago.* A good wench; give it me.

*Emil.* What will you do with 't, that you  
have been so earnest

To have me fetch it?

*Iago.* [Snatching it.] Why, what's that to  
you?

*Emil.* If it be not for some purpose of im-  
port,

Give 't me again: poor lady, she'll run mad  
When she shall lack it.

*Iago.* Be not acknown on 't; I have use  
for it.

Go, leave me. [Exit Emilia.]  
I will in Cassio's lodging lose this napkin,  
And let him find it. Trifles light as air

Are to the jealous confirmations strong  
As proofs of holy writ: this may do mischief.  
The Moor already changes with my poison:  
Dangerous conceits are, in their natures,

Which at the first are scarce found to distaste,  
But with a little act upon the blood,  
Burn like the mines of sulphur. I did say so:  
Look, where he comes!

*Re-enter OTHELLO.*

Nor poppy, nor mandragora, 350  
Nor all the drowsy syrups of the world,  
Shall ever medicine thee to that sweet sleep  
Which thou owedst yesterday.

*Oth.* Ha! ha! false to me?

*Iago.* Why, how now, general! no more of that.

*Oth.* Avaunt! be gone! thou hast set me on the rack:

I swear 'tis better to be much abused  
Than to know 't a little.

*Iago.* How now, my lord!

*Oth.* What sense had I of her stol'n hours of lust?

I saw 't not, thought it not, it harm'd not me:  
I slept the next night well, was free and merry;  
I found not Cassio's kisses on her lips: 342

He that is robb'd, not wanting what is stol'n,  
Let him not know 't, and he's not robb'd at all.

*Iago.* I am sorry to hear this.

*Oth.* I had been happy, if the general camp,  
Pioneers and all, had tasted her sweet body,  
So I had nothing known. O, now, for ever  
Farewell the tranquil mind! farewell content!  
Farewell the plumed troop, and the big wars,  
That make ambition virtue! O, farewell! 350  
Farewell the neighing steed, and the shrill trump,

The spirit-stirring drum, the ear-piercing fife,  
The royal banner, and all quality,  
Pride, pomp and circumstance of glorious war!  
And, O you mortal engines, whose rude throats  
The immortal Jove's dread clamours counterfeit,

Farewell! Othello's occupation's gone!

*Iago.* Is 't possible, my lord?

*Oth.* Villain, be sure thou prove my love a whore,

Be sure of it; give me the ocular proof; 360  
Or, by the worth of man's eternal soul,  
Thou hadst been better have been born a dog  
Than answer my waked wrath!

*Iago.* Is 't come to this?

*Oth.* Make me to see 't; or, at the least, so prove it,

That the probat'ion bear no hinge nor loop  
To hang a doubt on; or we upon thy life!

*Iago.* My noble lord,—

*Oth.* If thou dost slander her and torture me,  
Never pray more; abandon all remorse;  
On horror's head horrors accumulate; 370  
Do deeds to make heaven weep, all earth amazed;

For nothing canst thou to damnation add  
Greater than that.

*Iago.* O grace! O heaven forgive me!

Are you a man! have you a soul or sense?  
God be wi' you; take mine office. O wretched fool,

That livest to make things honesty a vice!  
O monstrous world! Take note, take note, O world,

To be direct and honest is not safe.  
I thank you for this profit; and from hence  
I'll love no friend, with love breeds such offence.

*Oth.* Nay, stay; thou shouldst be honest.

*Iago.* I should be wise, for honesty's a fool  
And loses that it works for.

*Oth.* By the world,  
I think my wife be honest and think she is not;  
I think that thou art just and think thou art not.

I'll have some proof. Her name, that was as fresh

As Dian's visage, is now begrimed and black  
As mine own face. If there be cords, or knives,  
Poison, or fire, or suffocating steams,

I'll not endure it. Would I were satisfied! 390

*Iago.* I see, sir, you are eaten up with passion:  
I do repent me that I put it to you.

You would be satisfied?

*Oth.* Would I nay, I will.

*Iago.* And may: but, how! how satisfied, my lord?

Would you, the supervisor, grossly gape on—  
Behold her topp'd!

*Oth.* Death and damnation! O!

*Iago.* It were a tedious difficulty, I think,  
To bring them to that prospect: damn them

then,  
If ever mortal eyes do see them bolster  
More than their own! What then? how then?

What shall I say? Where's satisfaction? 402

It is impossible you should see this,  
Were they as prime as goats, as hot as monkeys,

As salt as wolves in pride, and fools as gross  
As ignorance made drunk. But yet, I say,

If imputation and strong circumstances,  
Which lead directly to the door of truth,

Will give you satisfaction, you may have 't.

*Oth.* Give me a living reason she's disloyal.

*Iago.* I do not like the office: 410

But, with I am enter'd in this cause so far,  
Prick'd to 't by foolish honesty and love,

I will go on. I lay with Cassio lately;  
And, being troubled with a raging tooth,

I could not sleep.

There are a kind of men so loose of soul,  
That in their sleeps will mutter their affairs:

One of this kind is Cassio:  
In sleep I heard him say 'Sweet Desdemona,

Let us be wary, let us hide our loves'; 420

And then, sir, would he gripe and wring my hand,

Cry 'O sweet creature!' and then kiss me  
—hard,

As if he pluck'd up kisses by the roots  
That grew upon my lips: then laid his leg

Over my thigh, and sigh'd, and kiss'd; and then  
Cried 'Curst fate that gave thee to the Moor!'

*Oth.* O monstrous! monstrous!

*Iago.* Nay, this was but his dream.

*Oth.* But this denoted a foregone conclusion:  
'Tis a shrewd doubt, though it be but a dream.

*Iago.* And this may help to thicken other  
proofs 430

That do demonstrate thinly.  
*Oth.* I'll tear her all to pieces.

*Iago.* Nay, but be wise; yet we see nothing done;

She may be honest yet. Tell me but this,  
Have you not sometimes seen a handkerchief  
Spotted with strawberries in your wife's hand?

Oth. I gave her such a one; 'twas my first  
gift.

Iago. I know not that; but such a hand-  
kerchief—

I am sure it was your wife's—did I to-day  
See Cassio wipe his beard with.

Oth. If it be that, or any that was hers, 440

It speaks against her with the other proofs.

Oth. O, that the slave had forty thousand  
lives!

One is too poor, too weak for my revenge.

Now do I see 'tis true. Look here, Iago;

All my fond love thus do I blow to heaven.

'Tis gone.

Arise, black vengeance, from thy hollow cell!  
Yield up, O love, thy crown and hearted throne  
To tyrannous hate! Swell, bosom, with thy  
fraught,

For 'tis of aspics' tongues!

Iago. Yet be content. 450

Oth. O, blood, blood, blood!

Iago. Patience, I say; your mind perhaps  
may change.

Oth. Never, Iago. Like to the Pontic sea,  
Whose icy current and compulsive course  
Ne'er feels retiring ebb, but keeps due on  
To the Propontic and the Hellespont,  
Even so my bloody thoughts, with violent pace,  
Shall ne'er look back, ne'er ebb to humble love,  
Till that a capable and wide revenge  
Swallow them up. Now, by yond marble  
heaven, 460

[Kneels] In the due reverence of a sacred vow  
I here engage my words.

Iago. Do not rise yet.

[Kneels] Witness, you ever-burning lights  
above,

You elements that clip us round about,

Witness that here Iago doth give up

The execution of his wit, hands, heart,

To wrong'd Othello's service! Let him com-  
mand,

And to obey shall be in me remorse.

What bloody business ever. [They rise.]

Oth. I greet thy love,

Not with vain thanks, but with acceptance  
bounteous, 470

And will upon the instant put thee to 't:

Within these three days let me hear thee say

That Cassio's not alive.

Iago. My friend is dead; 'tis done at your  
request;

But let her live.

Oth. Damn her, lewd minx! O, damn her!

Come, go with me apart; I will withdraw.

To furnish me with some swift means of death

For the fair devil. Now art thou my lieutenant.

Iago. I am your own for ever. [Exeunt.]

#### SCENE IV. Before the castle.

Enter DEADMONA, EMILIA, and Clown.

Des. Do you know, sirrah, where Lieutenant  
Cassio lies?

Oth. I dare not say he lies any where.

Des. Why, man?

Oth. He's a soldier, and for one to say a  
soldier lies, is stabbing.

Des. Go to; where lodges he?

Oth. To tell you where he lodges, is to tell  
you where I lie.

Des. Can any thing be made of this?

Oth. I know not where he lodges, and for  
me to devise a lodging and say he lies here or  
he lies there, were to lie in mine own throat.

Des. Can you inquire him out, and be  
edified by report?

Oth. I will catechize the world for him; that  
is, make questions, and by them answer.

Des. Seek him, bid him come hither; tell  
him I have moved my lord on his behalf, and  
hope all will be well.

Oth. To do this is within the compass of  
man's wit; and therefore I will attempt the  
doing it. [Exit.]

Des. Where should I lose that handkerchief,  
Emilia?

Emil. I know not, madam.

Des. Believe me, I had rather have lost my  
purse

Full of crusadoes: and, but my noble Moor  
is true of mind and made of no such baseness  
As jealous creatures are, it were enough  
To put him to ill thinking.

Emil. Is he not jealous?

Des. Who, he? I think the sun where he  
was born 50

Drew all such humours from him.

Emil. Look, where he comes.

Des. I will not leave him now till Cassio  
Be call'd to him.

#### Enter OTHELLO.

How is't with you, my lord?

Oth. Well, my good lady. [Aside] O, hard-  
ness to dissemble!—

How do you, Deadmona?

Des. Well, my good lord.

Oth. Give me your hand: this hand is moist,  
my lady.

Des. It yet hath felt no age nor known no  
sorrow.

Oth. This argues fruitfulness and liberal  
heart:

Hot, hot, and moist: this hand of yours requires

A sequester from liberty, fasting and prayer, 50

Much castigation, exercise devout;

For here's a young and sweating devil here,

That commonly rebels. 'Tis a good hand,

A frank one.

Des. You may, indeed, say so;

For 'twas that hand that gave away my heart.

Oth. A liberal hand: the hearts of old gave  
hands;

But our new heraldry is hands, not hearts.

Des. I cannot speak of this. Come now,  
your gronies.

Oth. What promise, cheek?

Des. I have sent to bid Cassio come speak  
with you.

Oth. I have a salt and sorry reason to speak  
me;

Lead me thy handkerchief.

*Des.* Here, my lord.

*Oth.* That which I gave you.

*Des.* I have it not about me.

*Oth.* Not?

*Des.* No, indeed, my lord.

*Oth.* That is a fault.

That handkerchief

Did an Egyptian to my mother give;

She was a charmer, and could almost read

The thoughts of people: she told her, while she

kept it,

'Twould make her amiable and subdue my

father

Entirely to her love, but if she lost it

Or made a gift of it, my father's eye

Should hold her leashed and his spirits should

hunt

After new fancies: she, dying, gave it me;

And bid me, when my fate would have me wive,

To give it her: I did so: and take heed on't;

Make it a darling like your precious eye;

To lose't or give't away were such perdition

As nothing else could match.

*Des.* Is't possible?

*Oth.* 'Tis true: there's magic in the web

of it:

A sibyl, that had number'd in the world

The sun to course two hundred compasses,

In her prophetic fury sew'd the work;

The worms were hallow'd that did breed the

silk;

And it was dyed in mummy which the skilful

Conserved of maidens' hearts.

*Des.* Indeed! is't true?

*Oth.* Most veritable; therefore look to't well.

*Des.* Then would to God that I had never

seen't!

*Oth.* Ha! wherefore?

*Des.* Why do you speak so startlingly and

rash!

*Oth.* Is't lost? is't gone? speak, is it out o'

the way?

*Des.* Heaven bless us!

*Oth.* Say you?

*Des.* It is not lost; but what an if it were?

*Oth.* How!

*Des.* I say, it is not lost.

*Oth.* Fetch't, let me see't.

*Des.* Why, so I can, sir, but I will not now.

This is a trick to put me from my suit:

Pray you, let Cassio be received again.

*Oth.* Fetch me the handkerchief: my mind

misgives.

*Des.* Come, come;

You'll never meet a more sufficient man.

*Oth.* The handkerchief!

*Des.* I pray, talk me of Cassio.

*Oth.* The handkerchief!

*Des.* A man that all his time

Hath founded his good fortunes on your love,

Shared dangers with you,—

*Oth.* The handkerchief!

*Des.* In sooth, you are to blame.

*Oth.* A way!

*Des.* Is not this man jealous?

*Oth.* A way, say this before.

*Des.* There's some wonder in this handkerchief:

I am most unhappy in the loss of it.

*Emil.* 'Tis not a year or two shows us a man:

They eat all but stomachs, and we all but food;

They eat us hungry, and when they are full,

They belch us. Look you, Cassio and my

husband!

*Enter CASSIO and IAGO.*

There is no other way; 'tis she must

And, lo, the happiness! go, and importune her.

*Des.* How now, good Cassio! what's the

news with you?

*Cas.* Madam, my former suit: I do beseech

you

That by your virtuous means I may again

Exist, and be a member of his love

Whom I with all the office of my heart

Entirely honour: I would not be delay'd.

If my offence be of such mortal kind

That nor my service past, nor present sorrows,

Nor purposed merit in futurity,

Can ransom me into his love again,

But to know so must be my benefit;

So shall I clothe me in a forced content,

And shut myself up in some other course,

To fortune's aims.

*Des.* Alas, thrice-gentle Cassio!

My advocacy is not now in tune:

My lord is not my lord; nor should I know him,

Were he in favour as in humour alter'd.

So help me every spirit sanctified,

As I have spoken for you all my best

And stood within the blank of his displeasure

For my free speech! you must awhile be

patient:

What I can do I will; and more I will

Than for myself I dare: let that suffice you.

*Iago.* Is my lord angry?

*Emil.*

He went hence but now,

And certainly in strange unquietness.

*Iago.* Can he be angry? I have seen the

cannon,

When it hath blown his ranks into the air,

And, like the devil, from his very arm

Puff'd his own brother:—and can he be angry?

Something of moment then: I will go meet him:

There's matter in't indeed, if he be angry.

*Des.* I prithee, do so.

*[Exit Iago.]* Something, sure, of state,

Either from Venice, or some unwatch'd practice

Made demonstrable here in Cyprus to him,

Hath puddled his clear spirit; and in such cases

Men's natures wrangle with inferior things,

Though great ones are their object.

'Tis even

so;

For let our finger ache, and it induceth

Our other healthful members even to that sense

Of pain: nay, we must think men are not gods,

Nor of them look for such observances

As fit the bridal. Beshrew me much, Emilia,

I was, unhandsome warrior as I am,

Arraigning his unkindness with my soul:

But now I find I had abused the witness,

And he's indicted falsely.

*Emil.* Pray heaven it be state-matters, as

you think,

And no conception nor no jealous fear.

Observing you.

*Des.* Alas the day! I never gave him cause.

*Emil.* But jealous souls will not be answered so;

They are not ever jealous for the cause,  
But jealous for they are jealous: 'tis a monster  
Begot upon itself, born on itself.

*Des.* Heaven keep that monster from Othello's mind!

*Emil.* Lady, amen.

*Des.* I will go seek him. Cassio, walk here about:

If I do find him fit, I'll move your suit  
And seek to effect it to my uttermost.

*Cas.* I humbly thank your ladyship.

[*Exeunt Desdemona and Emilia.*]

*Enter BIANCA.*

*Bian.* Save you, friend Cassio!

*Cas.* What make you from home!  
How is it with you, my most fair Bianca? 170  
I faith, sweet love, I was coming to your house.

*Bian.* And I was going to your lodging,  
Cassio.

What, keep a week away! seven days and  
nights!

Eight score eight hours! and lovers' absent  
hours,

More tedious than the dial eight score times!  
O weary reckoning!

*Cas.* Pardon me, Bianca:

I have this while with leaden thoughts been  
press'd:

But I shall, in a more continuant time,  
Strike off this score of absence. Sweet Bianca,

[*Giving her Desdemona's handkerchief.*]  
Take this work out.

*Bian.* (O Cassio, whence came this! 180

This is some token from a newer friend:

To the felt absence now I feel a cause:

Is't come to this! Well, well.

*Cas.* Go to, woman!

Throw your vile guesses in the devil's teeth,  
From whence you have them. You are jealous

now  
That this is from some mistress, some remem-  
brance:

No, in good troth, Bianca.

*Bian.* Why, whose is it!

*Cas.* I know not, sweet: I found it in my  
chamber.

I like the work well: ere it be demanded—  
As like enough it will—I'd have it copied: 190

Take it, and do't; and leave me for this time.

*Bian.* Leave you! wherefore!

*Cas.* I do attend here on the general;  
And think it no addition, nor my wish,  
To have him see the woman'd.

*Bian.* Why, I pray you!

*Cas.* Not that I love you not.

*Bian.* But that you do not love me.  
I pray you, bring me on the way a little,

And say if I shall see you soon at night.

*Cas.* 'Tis but a little way that I can bring  
you.

For I cannot leave; but I'll see you soon.

*Bian.* The very good; I must be dis-  
tanced.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. Cyprus. Before the castle.

*Enter OTHELLO and IAGO.*

*Iago.* Will you think so?

*Oth.* Think so, Iago!

*Iago.* What,

To kiss in private?

*Oth.* An unauthorized kiss.

*Iago.* Or to be naked with her friend in bed

An hour or more, not meaning any harm?

*Oth.* Naked in bed, Iago, and not mean

harm!

'T is hypocrisy against the devil:

They that mean virtuously, and yet do so;

The devil their virtue tempts, and they tempt

heaven.

*Iago.* So they do nothing, 'tis a ventral slip:

But if I give my wife a handkerchief,— 10

*Oth.* What then?

*Iago.* Why, then, 'tis here, my lord; and,

being here,

She may, I think, bestow't on any man.

*Oth.* She is protectress of her honour too:

May she give that?

*Iago.* Her honour is an essence that's not

seen;

They have it very oft that have it not:

But, for the handkerchief,—

*Oth.* By heaven, I would most gladly have

forgot it.

Thou said'st—O, it comes o'er my memory, 20

As doth the raven o'er the infected palms,

Boding to all—he had my handkerchief.

*Iago.* Ay, what of that?

*Oth.* That's not so good now.

*Iago.* What,

If I had said I had seen him do you wrong?

Or heard him say,—as knaves be such abroad,

Who having, by their own importunate suit,

Or voluntary dotage of some mistress,

Convinced or supplied them, cannot choose

But they must blab—

*Oth.* Hath he said any thing?

*Iago.* He hath, my lord; but he you well

assured,

No more than he'll unsware.

*Oth.* What hath he said?

*Iago.* Faith, that he did—I know not what

he did.

*Oth.* What! what?

*Iago.* Lie—

*Oth.* With her!

*Iago.* With her, on her; what you will.

*Oth.* Lie with her! lie on her! We say lie

on her, when they belie her. Lie with her,

that's falsehood.—Handkerchief—handkerchief—

handkerchief!—To confess, and to begin

his labour!—first, to be hanged, and

confess—A tremble at it. Nature

invest herself in such downright

out some instruction. It is

strange to me thus. Pish! Nonsense!

Is't possible!—Confess—

*Iago.* Work on,

My medicine, work! Thus credulous fools are caught;  
And many worthy and chaste dames even thus,  
All guiltless, meet reproach. What, ho! my lord!  
My lord, I say! Othello!

*Enter CASSIO.*

How now, Cassio!

*Cas.* What's the matter?

*Iago.* My lord is fall'n into an epilepsy:  
This is his second fit; he had one yesterday.

*Cas.* Rub him about the temples.

*Iago.* No, forbear;  
The lethargy must have his quiet course;  
If not, he foams at mouth and by and by  
Breaks out to savage madness. Look, he stirs:  
Do you withdraw yourself a little while,  
He will recover straight: when he is gone,  
I would on great occasion speak with you.

*[Exit Cassio.]*

How is it, general? have you not hurt your head?

*Oth.* Dost thou mock me?

*Iago.* I mock you! no, by heaven.  
Would you would bear your fortune like a man!

*Oth.* A horned man's a monster and a beast.

*Iago.* There's many a beast then in a populous city,  
And many a civil monster.

*Oth.* Did he confess it?

*Iago.* Good sir, be a man;  
Think every bearded fellow that's but yoked  
May draw with you: there's millions now alive  
That nightly lie in those unproper beds  
Which they dare swear peculiar: your case is better.

*O.* 'Tis the spite of hell, the fiend's arch-mock,  
To lip a wanton in a secure couch,  
And to suppose her chaste! No, let me know;  
And knowing what I am, I know what she  
shall be.

*Oth.* O, thou art wise; 'tis certain.

*Iago.* Stand up awhile apart;  
Confine yourself but in a patient list.  
Whilst you were here o'erwhelmed with your  
grief—

A passion most unsuited such a man—  
Cassio came hither: I shifted him away,  
And laid good 'scuse upon your ecstasy,  
Bade him anon return and here speak with me;  
The which he promised. Do but encave your-  
self.

And mark the fleers, the gibes, and notable  
scorns.

That dwell in every region of his face;  
For I will make him tell the tale anew,  
Where, how, how oft, how long ago, and when  
He hath, and is again to cope your wife:  
I say, but mark his gesture. Marry, patience;  
Or I shall say you are all in all in spleen,  
And nothing of a man.

Dost thou hear, Iago? go  
I shall be found most cunning in my patience;  
Dost thou hear?—most bloody.

That's not amiss;

But yet keep time in all. Will you withdraw?  
*[Othello retires.]*

Now will I question Cassio of Bianca,  
A housewife that by selling her desires  
Buys herself bread and clothes: 'tis a creature  
That dotes on Cassio; as 'tis the strumpet's  
plague.

To beguile many and be beguiled by one:  
He, when he hears of her, cannot refrain  
From the excess of laughter. Here he comes:

*Re-enter CASSIO.*

As he shall smile, Othello shall go mad;  
And his unbookish jealousy must construe  
Poor Cassio's smiles, gestures and light be-  
haviour,  
Quite in the wrong. How do you now, lieu-  
tenant?

*Cas.* The worse that you give me the addi-  
tion  
Whose want even kills me.

*Iago.* Ply Desdemona well, and you are  
sure on't.

*[Speaking lower.]* Now, if this suit lay in  
Bianca's power

How quickly should you speed!

*Cas.* Alas, poor caitiff!

*Oth.* Look, how he laughs already!

*Iago.* I never knew woman love man so.

*Cas.* Alas, poor rogue! I think, I' faith, she  
loves me.

*Oth.* Now he denies it faintly, and laughs it  
out.

*Iago.* Do you hear, Cassio?

*Oth.* Now he importunes him  
To tell it o'er: go to; well said, well said.

*Iago.* She gives it out that you shall marry  
her:

Do you intend it?

*Cas.* Ha, ha, ha!

*Oth.* Do you triumph, Roman? do you  
triumph?

*Cas.* I marry her! what? a customer! Pri-  
thee, bear some charity to my wit; do not think  
it so unwholesome. Ha, ha, ha!

*Oth.* So, so, so, so: they laugh that win.

*Iago.* 'Faith, the cry goes that you shall  
marry her.

*Cas.* Prithee, say true.

*Iago.* I am a very villain else.

*Oth.* Have you scored me? Well.

*Cas.* This is the monkey's own giving out:  
she is persuaded I will marry her, out of her  
own love and flattery, not out of my promise.

*Oth.* Iago beckons me; now he begins the  
story.

*Cas.* She was here even now; she haunts  
me in every place. I was the other day talking  
on the sea-bank with certain Venetians; and  
thither comes the bauble, and, by this hand,  
she falls me thus about my neck—

*Oth.* Crying 'O dear Cassio!' as it were:  
his gesture imports it.

*Cas.* So hangs, and lolls, and weeps upon  
me; so haies, and pulls me: ha, ha, ha!

*Oth.* Now he tells how she plucked him to  
my chamber. O, I see that nose of yours, but  
not that dog I shall throw it to.



*Cas.* Well, I must leave her company.

*Iago.* Before me! look, where she comes.

*Cas.* 'Tis such another fitchew! marry, a perfumed one. 152

*Enter BIANCA.*

What do you mean by this haunting of me?

*Bian.* Let the devil and his dam haunt you! What did you mean by that same handkerchief you gave me even now? I was a fine fool to take it. I must take out the work!—A likely piece of work, that you should find it in your chamber, and not know who left it there! This is some minx's token, and I must take out the work! There; give it your hobby-horse: whosoever you had it, I'll take out no work on't. 161

*Cas.* How now, my sweet Bianca! how now! how now!

*Oth.* By heaven, that should be my handkerchief!

*Bian.* An you'll come to supper to-night, you may; an you will not, come when you are next prepared for. *[Exit.*

*Iago.* After her, after her.

*Cas.* Faith, I must; she'll rail in the street else. 171

*Iago.* Will you sup there?

*Cas.* Faith, I intend so.

*Iago.* Well, I may chance to see you; for I would very fain speak with you.

*Cas.* Prithee, come; will you?

*Iago.* Go to; say no more. *[Exit Cassio.]*  
*Oth.* *[Advancing.]* How shall I murder him, Iago?

*Iago.* Did you perceive how he laughed at his vice? 181

*Oth.* O Iago!

*Iago.* And did you see the handkerchief?

*Oth.* Was that mine?

*Iago.* Yours, by this hand: and to see how he prizes the foolish woman your wife! she gave it him, and he hath given it his whore.

*Oth.* I would have him nine years a-killing. A fine woman! a fair woman! a sweet woman!

*Iago.* Nay, you must forget that. 190

*Oth.* Ay, let her rot, and perish, and be damned to-night; for she shall not live: no, my heart is turned to stone; I strike it, and it hurts my hand. O, the world hath not a sweeter creature: she might lie by an emperor's side and command him tasks.

*Iago.* Nay, that's not your way.

*Oth.* Hang her! I do but say what she is: so delicate with her needle: an admirable musician: O! she will sing the savageness out of a bear: of so high and plenteous wit and invention:—

*Iago.* She's the worse for all this.

*Oth.* O, a thousand thousand times: and then, of so gentle a condition!

*Iago.* Ay, too gentle.

*Oth.* Nay, that's certain: but yet the pity of it, Iago! O Iago, the pity of it, Iago!

*Iago.* If you are so fond over her iniquity, give her patent to offend; for, if it touch not you, it comes near nobody.

*Oth.* I will chop her into messes: smother me!

*Iago.* O, 'tis foul in her.

*Oth.* With mine officer!

*Iago.* That's fouler.

*Oth.* Get me some poison, Iago: this night; I'll not expostulate with her, lest her body and beauty unprovide my mind again: this night, Iago. 219

*Iago.* Do it not with poison, strangle her in her bed, even the bed she hath contaminated.

*Oth.* Good, good: the justice of it pleases: very good.

*Iago.* And for Cassio, let me be his undertaker: you shall hear more by midnight.

*Oth.* Excellent good. *[A trumpet within.]*

What trumpet is that same?

*Iago.* Something from Venice, sure. 'Tis Lodovico.  
Come from the duke: and, see, your wife is with him.

*Enter LODOVICO, DESDEMONA, and Attendants.*

*Lod.* Save you, worthy general!

*Oth.* With all my heart, sir.

*Lod.* The duke and senators of Venice greet you. *[Gives him a letter.]*

*Oth.* I kiss the instrument of their pleasures. *[Opens the letter, and reads.]*

*Des.* And what's the news, good cousin Lodovico?

*Iago.* I am very glad to see you, signior;

Welcome to Cyprus.

*Lod.* I thank you. How does Lieutenant Cassio?

*Iago.* Lives, sir.

*Des.* Cousin, there's fall'n between him and my lord.  
An unkind breach: but you shall make all well.

*Oth.* Are you sure of that?

*Des.* My lord!

*Oth.* *[Reads.]* 'This fall you not to do, as you will—' 240

*Lod.* He did not call; he's busy in the paper.

Is there division 'twixt my lord and Cassio?

*Des.* A most unhappy one: I would do much to atone them, for the love I bear to Cassio.

*Oth.* Fire and brimstone!

*Des.* My lord!

*Oth.* Are you wise?

*Des.* What, is he angry?

*Lod.* May be the letter moved him;

For, as I think, they do command him home, Deputing Cassio in his government.

*Des.* Trust me, I am glad on't. *[Indeed!]*

*Oth.* My lord!

*Des.* I am glad to see you mad.

*Oth.* Why, sweet Othello,—

*Oth.* *[Striking her.]* Devil!

*Des.* I have not deserved this.

*Lod.* My lord, this would not be believed in Venice.  
Though I should swear I saw't: 'tis very much: Make her amends; she weeps.

*Oth.* O devil, devil! If that the earth could teem with woman's tears,  
Each drop she falls would prove a crocodile.  
Out of my sight!

*Des.* I will not stay to offend you. [*Going.*]

*Lod.* Truly, an obedient lady:  
I do beseech your lordship, call her back. 250

*Oth.* Mistress?

*Des.* My lord!

*Oth.* What would you with her, sir?

*Lod.* Who, I, my lord?

*Oth.* Ay; you did wish that I would make her turn:

Sir, she can turn, and turn, and yet go on,  
And turn again; and she can weep, sir, weep;

And she's obedient, as you say, obedient,  
Very obedient. Proceed you in your tears.

Concerning this, sir,—O well-painted passion!—  
I am commanded home. (let you away;

I'll send for you anon. Sir, I obey the mandate, 270

And will return to Venice. Hence, avaunt!

[*Exit Desdemona.*]  
Cassio shall have my place. And, sir, to-night,

I do entreat that we may sup together:  
You are welcome, sir, to Cyprus.—Goats and monkeys! [*Exit.*]

*Lod.* Is this the noble Moor whom our full senate

Call all in all sufficient? Is this the nature  
Whom passion could not shake? whose solid

virtue  
The shot of accident, nor dart of chance,  
Could neither graze nor pierce!

*Iago.* He is much changed.  
*Lod.* Are his wits safe? is he not light of

brain? 280

*Iago.* He's that he is: I may not breathe  
say censure

What he might be; if what he might be is not,  
I would to heaven he were!

*Lod.* What, strike his wife!

*Iago.* 'Faith, that was not so well; yet  
would I knew

That stroke would prove the worst!

*Lod.* Is it his use?  
Or did the letters work upon his blood,

And new-create this fault?

*Iago.* Alas, alas!  
It is not honesty in me to speak

What I have seen and known. You shall ob-  
serve him,

And his own courses will denote him so 290  
That I may save my speech: do but go after,  
And speak how he continues.

*Lod.* I am sorry that I am deceived in him.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. A room in the castle.

*Enter OTHELLO and EMILIA.*

*Oth.* You have seen nothing then?

*Emil.* Nor ever heard, nor ever did suspect.

*Oth.* Yes, you have seen Cassio and she  
together.

*Emil.* But then I saw no harm, and then  
I heard

Each syllable that breath made up between  
them.

*Oth.* What, did they never whisper?

*Emil.* Never, my lord.

*Oth.* Nor send you out o' the way?

*Emil.* Never.

*Oth.* To fetch her fan, her gloves, her mask,  
nor nothing?

*Emil.* Never, my lord. 30

*Oth.* That's strange.

*Emil.* I durst, my lord, to wager she is  
honest,

Lay down my soul at stake: if you think other,  
Remove your thought; it doth abuse your  
bosom.

If any wretch have put this in your head,  
Let heaven requite it with the serpent's curse!

For, if she be not honest, chaste, and true,  
There's no man happy; the purest of their  
wives

Is foul as slander.

*Oth.* Bid her come hither: go.

[*Exit Emilia.*]  
She says enough; yet she's a simple bawd. 30

That cannot say as much. This is a subtle  
whore.

A closet lock and key of villanous secrets:  
And yet she'll kneel and pray; I have seen  
her do't.

## *Enter DESDEMONA with EMILIA.*

*Des.* My lord, what is your will?

*Oth.* Pray, chuck, come hither.

*Des.* What is your pleasure?

*Oth.* Let me see your eyes;

Look in my face.

*Des.* What horrible fancy's this?

*Oth.* [*To Emilia*] Some of your function,  
mistress;

Leave procreants alone and shut the door;  
Cough, or cry 'hem,' if any body come:

Your mystery, your mystery: nay, dispatch. 30

[*Exit Emilia.*]

*Des.* Upon my knees, what doth your speech  
import?

I understand a fury in your words,  
But not the words.

*Oth.* Why, what art thou?

*Des.* Your wife, my lord; your true  
And loyal wife.

*Oth.* Come, swear it, damn thyself;  
Best, being like one of heaven, the devils them-  
selves

Should fear to seize thee: therefore be double  
damnd;

Swear thou art honest.

*Des.* Heaven doth truly know it.

*Oth.* Heaven truly knows that thou art false  
as hell.

*Des.* To whom, my lord? with whom? how  
am I false?

*Oth.* O Desdemona! away! away! away! 40

*Des.* Alas the heavy day! Why do you  
weep!

Am I the motive of these tears, my lord?  
If haply you my father do suspect  
An instrument of this your calling back,

Lay not your blame on me: if you have lost  
him,

Why, I have lost him too.

*Oth.* Had it pleased heaven  
To try me with affliction; had they rain'd  
All kinds of sores and shames on my bare head,  
Steep'd me in poverty to the very lips,  
Given to captivity me and my unborn hopes,  
I should have found in some place of my soul  
A drop of patience: but, alas, to make me  
A fixed figure for the time of scorn  
To point his slow unmoving finger at!  
Yet could I bear that too; well, very well:

But there, where I have garner'd up my heart,  
Where either I must live, or bear no life;  
The fountain from the which my current runs,  
Or else dries up; to be discarded thence! 60  
Or keep it as a cistern for foul toads  
To knot and gender in! Turn thy complexion

there,  
Patience, thou young and rose-lipp'd cherubin,—  
Ay, there, look grim as hell!

*Des.* I hope my noble lord esteems me honest.

*Oth.* O, ay; as summer flies are in the  
shambles,

That quicken even with blowing. O thou weed,  
Who art so lovely fair and smell'st so sweet  
That the sense aches at thee, would thou hadst  
ne'er been born!

*Des.* Alas, what ignorant sin have I com-  
mitted?

*Oth.* Was this fair paper, this most goodly  
book,

Made to write 'whore' upon! What com-  
mitted!

Committed! O thou public commoner!  
I should make very forges of my cheeks,  
That would to cinders burn up modesty,  
Did I but speak thy deeds. What committed!  
Heaven stops the nose at it and the moon  
winks,

The bawdy wind that kisses all it meets  
Is hush'd within the hollow mine of earth,  
And will not hear it. What committed! 80  
Impudent strumpet!

*Des.* By heaven, you do me wrong.  
*Oth.* Are not you a strumpet?

*Des.* No, as I am a Christian:  
If to preserve this vessel for my lord  
From any other foul unlawful touch  
Be not to be a strumpet, I am none.

*Oth.* What, not a whore?

*Des.* No, as I shall be saved.

*Oth.* Is't possible?

*Des.* O, heaven forgive us!

*Oth.* I cry you mercy, then:  
I took you for that cunning whore of Venice  
That married with Othello. [*Raising his voice*]  
You, mistress, 90  
That have the office opposite to Saint Peter,  
And keep the gate of hell!

*Re-enter EMILIA.*

You, you, ay, you!  
We have done our course; there's money for  
your pains:

I pray you, turn the key and keep our counsel.  
{*Exit*}

*Emil.* Alas, what does this gentleman con-  
ceive!

How do you, madam! how do you, my good

*Des.* Faith, half asleep.

*Emil.* Good madam, what's the matter with  
my lord?

*Des.* With who?

*Emil.* Why, with my lord, madam. 100

*Des.* Who is thy lord?

*Emil.* He that is yours, sweet lady.

*Des.* I have none: do not talk to me,  
*Emilia*;

I cannot weep; nor answer have I none.  
But what should go by water. Prishee, to-night  
Lay on my bed my wedding sheets: remember;  
And call thy husband hither.

*Emil.* Here's a change indeed! [*Exit*].

*Des.* 'Tis meet I should be used so, very  
meet.

How have I been behav'd, that he might stick  
The small'st opinion on my least excuse!

*Re-enter EMILIA with IAGO.*

*Iago.* What is your pleasure, madam! How  
is't with you? 110

*Des.* I cannot tell. Those that do teach  
young babes

Do it with gentle means and easy tasks:  
He might have chid me so; for, in good faith,  
I am a child to chiding.

*Iago.* What's the matter, lady?

*Emil.* Alas, Iago, my lord hath so bewhor'd  
her,

Thrown such despite and heavy terms upon her,  
As true hearts cannot bear.

*Des.* Am I that name, Iago?

*Iago.* What name, fair lady?

*Des.* Such as she says my lord did say I was.

*Emil.* He call'd her whore: a beggar in his  
drink 120

Could not have laid such terms upon his callow.

*Iago.* Why did he so?

*Des.* I do not know; I am sure I am none  
such.

*Iago.* Do not weep, do not weep. Alas the  
day!

*Emil.* Hath she foresook so many noble  
matches,

Her father and her country and her friends,  
To be call'd whore! would it not make one  
weep!

*Des.* It is my wretched fortune.

*Iago.* Beware him for't!

How comes this trick upon him?

*Des.* Nay, heaven doth know.

*Emil.* I will be hang'd, if some clerical  
villain, 130

Some busy and insinuating rogue,  
Some cogging, cozening slave, to get some  
office,

Have not devis'd this slander; I'll be hang'd  
else.

*Iago.* No, there is no such man; it is im-  
possible.

*Des.* If any such there be, heaven pardon  
him!

*Emil.* A halter pardon him! and hell gnaw his bones!  
 Why should he call her whore? who keeps her company!

What place! what time! what form! what likelihood!

The Moor's abused by some most villanous knave.

Some base notorious knave, some scurvy fellow.  
 O heaven, that such companions thou 'dst unfold.

And put in every honest hand a whip  
 To lash the rascals naked through the world  
 Even from the east to the west!

*Iago.* Speak within door.  
*Emil.* O, fie upon them! Some such squire he was

That turn'd your wit the seamy side without.  
 And made you to suspect me with the Moor.

*Iago.* You are a fool; go to.

*Des.* O good Iago,  
 What shall I do to win my lord again?  
 Good friend, go to him; for, by this light of heaven,

I know not how I lost him. Here I kneel:  
 If e'er my will did trespass 'gainst his love,  
 Either in discourse of thought or actual deed,

And ever will—though he do shake me off  
 To beggary divorcement—love him dearly,  
 Comfort forswear me! Unkindness may do much;

And his unkindness may defeat my life,  
 But never taint my love. I cannot say 'whore':  
 It doth abhor me now I speak the word;  
 To do the act that might the addition earn  
 Not the world's mass of vanity could make me.

*Iago.* I pray you, be content; 'tis but his humour:

The business of the state does him offence,  
 And he does chide with you.

*Des.* If 'twere no other,—

*Iago.* 'Tis but so, I warrant.  
*[Trumpets within.]*

Hark, how these instruments summon to supper!

The messengers of Venice stay the meat: 170  
 Go in, and weep not; all things shall be well.

*[Exeunt Desdemona and Emilia.]*

Enter RODERIGO.

How now, Roderigo!

*Rod.* I do not find that thou dealest justly with me.

*Iago.* What in the contrary?

*Rod.* Every day thou dost me with some device, Iago; and rather, as it seems to me now, keep'st from me all conveniency than suppliest me with the least advantage of hope. I will indeed no longer endure it, nor am I yet ready to put up in peace what already I most justly suffered.

*Iago.* Will you hear me, Roderigo?

*Rod.* Faith, I have heard too much, for my own and performances are no kin to-

*Iago.* You charge me most unjustly.

*Rod.* With nought but truth. I have wasted myself out of my means. The jewels you have had from me to deliver to Desdemona would half have corrupted a votarist: you have told me she hath received them and returned me expectations and comforts of sudden respect and acquaintance; but I find none.

*Iago.* Well; go to; very well.

*Rod.* Very well! go to! I cannot go to, man; nor 'tis not very well; nay, I think it is scurvy, and begin to find myself fopp'd in it.

*Iago.* Very well.

*Rod.* I tell you 'tis not very well. I will make myself known to Desdemona: if she will return me my jewels, I will give over my suit and repent my unlawful solicitation; if not, assure yourself I will seek satisfaction of you.

*Iago.* You have said now.

*Rod.* Ay, and said nothing but what I protest intendment of doing.

*Iago.* Why, now I see there's mettle in thee, and even from this instant do build on thee a better opinion than ever before. Give me thy hand, Roderigo: thou hast taken against me a most just exception; but yet, I protest, I have dealt most directly in thy affair.

*Rod.* It hath not appeared.

*Iago.* I grant indeed it hath not appeared, and your suspicion is not without wit and judgement. But, Roderigo, if thou hast that in thee indeed, which I have greater reason to believe now than ever, I mean purpose, courage and valour, this night show it: if thou the next night following enjoy not Desdemona, take me from this world with treachery and device engines for my life.

*Rod.* Well, what is it? is it within reason and compass?

*Iago.* Sir, there is especial commission come from Venice to depute Cassio in Othello's place.

*Rod.* Is that true? why, then Othello and Desdemona return again to Venice.

*Iago.* O, no; he goes into Mauritania and takes away with him the fair Desdemona, unless his abode be lingered here by some accident: wherein none can be so determinate as the removing of Cassio.

*Rod.* How do you mean, removing of him?  
*Iago.* Why, by making him incapable of Othello's place; knocking out his brains.

*Rod.* And that you would have me to do!

*Iago.* Ay, if you dare do yourself a profit and a right. He sups to-night with a harlot, and thither will I go to him: he knows not yet of his honourable fortune. If you will watch his going thence, which I will fashion to fall out between twelve and one, you may take him at your pleasure: I will be near to second your attempt, and he shall fall between us. Come, stand not amaz'd at it, but go along with me; I will show you such a necessity in his death that you shall think yourself bound to put it on him. It is now high supper-time, and the night grows to waste: about it.

*Rod.* I will hear further reason for this.

*Iago.* And you shall be satisfied. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE III. *Another room in the castle.*

*Enter OTHELLO, LODOVICO, DESDEMONA, EMILIA, and Attendants.*

*Lod.* I do beseech you, sir, trouble yourself no further.

*Oth.* O, pardon me; 'twill dome good to walk.

*Lod.* Madam, good night; I humbly thank your ladyship.

*Des.* Your honour is most welcome.

*Oth.* Will you walk, sir?

O,—Desdemona,—

*Des.* My lord?

*Oth.* Get you to bed on the instant; I will be returned forthwith: dismiss your attendant there: look it be done.

*Des.* I will, my lord.

[*Exit Othello, Lodovico, and Attendants.*  
*Emil.* How goes it now? he looks gentler than he did.

*Des.* He says he will return incontinent:

He hath commanded me to go to bed,

And bade me to dismiss you.

*Emil.* Dismiss me!

*Des.* It was his bidding; therefore, good

*Emilia,* Give me my nightly wearing, and adieu:

We must not now displease him.

*Emil.* I would you had never seen him!

*Des.* So would not I: my love doth so approve him,

That even his stubbornness, his checks, his frowns,—

Prithee, unpun me,—have grace and favour in them.

*Emil.* I have laid those sheets you bade me on the bed.

*Des.* All's one. Good faith, how foolish are our minds!

If I do die before thee, prithee, shroud me in one of those same sheets.

*Emil.* Come, come, you talk.

*Des.* My mother had a maid call'd Barbara: She was in love, and he she loved proved mad And did forsake her: she had a song of 'willow':

An old thing 'twas, but it express'd her fortune, And she died singing it: that song to-night

Will not go from my mind; I have much to do, But to go hang my head all at one side,

And sing it like poor Barbara. Prithee, dispatch.

*Emil.* Shall I go fetch your night-gown?

*Des.* No, unpun me here.

This Lodovico is a proper man.

*Emil.* A very handsome man.

*Des.* He speaks well.

*Emil.* I know a lady in Venice would have walk'd barefoot to Palestine for a touch of his nether lip.

*Des.* [Singing] The poor soul sat sighing by a sycamore tree,

Sing all a green willow;

Her hand on her bosom, her head on her knee,

Sing willow, willow, willow;

The fresh streams ran by her, and murmured her moans;

Sing willow, willow, willow;

Her salt tears fell from her, and soften'd the stones:—

Lay by these:—

[Singing] Sing willow, willow, willow;

Prithee, hie thee: he'll come anon:—

[Singing] Sing all a green willow must be my garland.

Let nobody blame him; his scorn I approve,—

Nay, that's not next.—Hark! who is't that knocks?

*Emil.* It's the wind.

*Des.* [Singing] I call'd my love false love; but what said he then?

Sing willow, willow, willow:

If I court more women, you'll couch with more men.—

So, get thee gone; good night. Mine eyes do itch;

Doth that bode weeping?

*Emil.* 'Tis neither here nor there.

*Des.* I have heard it said so. O, these men, these men!

Doth thou in conscience think,—tell me,

*Emilia,*—That there be women do abuse their husbands

In such gross kind?

*Emil.* There be some such, no question.

*Des.* Wouldst thou do such a deed for all the world?

*Emil.* Why, would not you?

*Des.* No, by this heavenly light!

*Emil.* Nor I neither by this heavenly light; I might do't as well i' the dark.

*Des.* Wouldst thou do such a deed for all the world?

*Emil.* The world's a huge thing: it is a great price

For a small vice.

*Des.* In troth, I think thou wouldst not.

*Emil.* In troth, I think I should; and undo't when I had done. Marry, I would not do such a thing for a joint-ring, nor for measures of lawn, nor for gowns, petticoats, nor caps, nor any petty exhibition; but, for the whole world,—why, who would not make her husband a cuckold to make him a monarch? I should venture purgatory for't.

*Des.* Beahrew me, if I would do such a wrong

For the whole world.

*Emil.* Why, the wrong is but a wrong i' the world; and having the world for your labour, 'tis a wrong in your own world, and you might quickly make it right.

*Des.* I do not think there is any such woman.

*Emil.* Yes, a dozen; and as many to the vantage as would store the world they sold her.

But I do think it is their husbands' fault. If wives do fall: say that they slack their duties.

And pour our treasures into foreign laps.

Or else break out in peevish jealousies, throwing restraints upon us: or say they strike us.

Or scant our former having in despite;

Why, we have galls, and though we have eyes,

Yet have we some revenge. Let husbands know

Their wives have sense like them : they see and smell

And have their palates both for sweet and sour,  
As husbands have. What is it that they do  
When they change us for others? Is it sport?  
I think it is : and doth affection breed it?  
I think it doth : is't frailty that thus errs?  
It is so too : and have not we affections,  
Desires for sport and frailty, as men have?  
Then let them use us well : else let them know,  
The ill we do, their ill instruct us so.

*Des.* Good night, good night : heaven me  
such uses send,

Not to pick bad from bad, but by bad mend!  
[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

SCENE I. *Cyprus. A street.*

*Enter IAGO and RODERIGO.*

*Iago.* Here, stand behind this bulk ; straight  
will he come :

Wear thy good rapier bare, and put it home :  
Quick, quick ; fear nothing ; I'll be at thy  
elbow :

It makes us, or it mars us ; think on that,  
And fix most firm thy resolution.

*Rod.* Be near at hand ; I may miscarry in't.  
*Iago.* Here, at thy hand : be bold, and take  
thy stand. [*Retires.*]

*Rod.* I have no great devotion to the deed ;  
And yet he hath given me satisfying reasons :  
'Tis but a man gone. Forth, my sword : he  
dies. 10

*Iago.* I have rubb'd this young quat almost  
to the sense,

And he grows angry. Now, whether he kill  
Cassio,

Or Cassio him, or each do kill the other,  
Every way makes my gain : live Roderigo,

He calls me to a restitution large  
Of gold and jewels that I bobb'd from him,

As gifts to Desdemona ;  
It must not be : if Cassio do remain,

He hath a daily beauty in his life  
That makes me ugly ; and, besides, the Moor

May unfold me to him ; there stand I in much  
peril : 27

No, he must die. But so : I hear him coming.

*Enter CASSIO.*

*Rod.* I know his gait, 'tis he.—Villain, thou  
dies! [*Makes a pass at Cassio.*]

*Cas.* That thrust had been mine enemy in-  
deed.

But that my coat is better than thou know'st :  
I will make proof of thine.

[*Draws, and wounds Roderigo.*]  
*Rod.* O, I am slain!

[*Iago from behind wounds Cassio in the  
leg, and exits.*]

*Cas.* I am maim'd for ever. Help, ho!  
murder! murder! [*Falls.*]

*Enter OTHELLO.*

*Oth.* The voice of Cassio : Iago keeps his

O, villain that I am!

*Oth.*

*Cas.* O, help, ho! light! a surgeon!

*Oth.* 'Tis he :—O brave Iago, honest and just  
That hast such noble sense of thy friend's  
wrong!

Thou teachest me. Minion, your dear lie  
dead,

And your unblest fate hies : strumpet, I come  
Forth of my heart those charms, thine eyes, are  
blotted ;

Thy bed, lust-stain'd, shall with lust's blood be  
spotted. [*Exit*]

*Enter LODOVICO and GRATIANO.*

*Cas.* What, ho! no watch! no passage  
murder! murder!

*Gra.* 'Tis some mischance ; the cry is very  
dreadful.

*Cas.* O, help!

*Lod.* Hark!

*Rod.* O wretched villain!

*Lod.* Two or three groan : it is a heavy  
night :

These may be counterfeits : let's think't unsafe  
To come in to the cry without more help.

*Rod.* Nobody come! then shall I bleed to  
death.

*Lod.* Hark!

*Re-enter IAGO, with a light.*

*Gra.* Here's one comes in his shirt, with  
light and weapons.

*Iago.* Who's there! whose noise is this that  
cries on murder!

*Lod.* We do not know.

*Iago.* Did not you hear a cry  
*Cas.* Here, here! for heaven's sake, help me

*Iago.* What's the matter?

*Gra.* This is Othello's ancient, as I take it.

*Lod.* The same indeed ; a very valiant fellow

*Iago.* What are you here that cry so griev-  
ously!

*Cas.* Iago! O, I am spoil'd, undone by  
villains!

Give me some help.

*Iago.* O me, lieutenant! what villains have  
done this!

*Cas.* I think that one of them is hereabout  
And cannot make away.

*Iago.* O treacherous villains  
What are you there? come in, and give some  
help. [*To Lodovico and Gratiano.*]

*Rod.* O, help me here!

*Cas.* That's one of them.

*Iago.* O murderous slave! O villain  
[*Stabs Roderigo.*]

*Rod.* O damn'd Iago! O inhuman dog!

*Iago.* Kill men! the dark!—Where be  
these bloody thieves!

How silent is this town!—Ho! murder! mur-  
der!

What may you be? are you of good or evil?

*Lod.* As you shall prove us, praise us.

*Iago.* Signior Lodovico!

*Lod.* He, sir.

*Iago.* I cry you mercy. Here's Cassio hurt  
by villains.

*Gra.* Cassio!

*Iago.* How is't, brother!

*Cas.* My leg is cut in two.

*Iago.* Marry, heaven forbid!  
Light, gentlemen! I'll bind it with my shirt.

*Enter BIANCA.*

*Bian.* What is the matter, ho! who is't  
that cried!

*Iago.* Who is't that cried!

*Bian.* O my dear Cassio! my sweet Cassio!  
O Cassio, Cassio, Cassio!

*Iago.* O notable strumpet! Cassio, may  
you suspect  
Who they should be that have thus mangled  
your!

*Cas.* No.

*Gra.* I am sorry to find you thus: I have  
been to seek you.

*Iago.* Lend me a garter. So. O, for a chair,  
To bear him easily hence!

*Bian.* Alas, he faints! O Cassio, Cassio,  
Cassio!

*Iago.* Gentlemen all, I do suspect this trash  
To be a party in this injury.

Patience awhile, good Cassio. Come, come;  
Lend me a light. Know we this face or no!

Alas, my friend and my dear countryman  
Roderigo! no:—yes, sure!—O heaven! Roderigo.

*Gra.* What, of Venice?

*Iago.* Even he, sir: did you know him?

*Gra.* Know him! ay.

*Iago.* Signior Gratiano! I cry you gentle  
pardon;

These bloody accidents must excuse my man-  
ners,

That so neglected you.

*Gra.* I am glad to see you.

*Iago.* How do you, Cassio! O, a chair, a  
chair!

*Gra.* Roderigo!

*Iago.* He, he, 'tis he. [*A chair brought in.*]  
O, that's well said; the chair.

Some good man bear him carefully from hence  
I'll fetch the general's surgeon. [*To Bianca*

For you, mistress,

Save you your labour. He that lies slain here,

Was my dear friend: what malice was between  
you?

*Cas.* None in the world; nor do I know the  
man.

*Iago.* [*To Bian.*] What, look you pale! O,  
bear him out o' the air.

[*Cassio and Roderigo are borne off.*]  
Stay you, good gentlemen. Look you pale,

mistress!

Do you perceive the greatness of her eye?

Nay, if you stare, we shall hear more anon.

Behold her well; I pray you, look upon her:

Do you see, gentlemen! nay, guiltiness will  
speak,

Though tongues were out of use.

*Enter EMILIA.*

*Emil.* 'Las, what's the matter! what's the  
matter, husband!

*Iago.* Cassio hath here been set on in the  
dark

By Roderigo and fellows that are scaped:

He's almost slain, and Roderigo dead.

*Emil.* Alas, good gentlemen! alas, good  
Cassio!

*Iago.* This is the fruit of whoring. Prishas,  
Emilia,

Go know of Cassio where he supped to-night.  
[*To Bianca*] What, do you shake at that?

*Bian.* He supped at my house; but I there-  
fore shake not.

*Iago.* O, did he so! I charge you, go with  
me.

*Emil.* Fle, fle upon thee, strumpet!

*Bian.* I am no strumpet; but of life as  
honest

As you that thus abuse me.

*Emil.* As I! foh! fle upon thee!

*Iago.* Kind gentlemen, let's go see poor  
Cassio dress'd.

Come, mistress, you must tell's another tale.  
Emilia, run you to the citadel.

And tell my lord and lady what hath happ'd.  
Will you go on! I pray. [*Aside*] This is the  
night

That either makes me or fordoes me quite.

SCENE II. *A bedchamber in the castle; Des-  
demona in bed asleep; a light burning.*

*Enter OTHELLO.*

*Oth.* It is the cause, it is the cause, my  
soul,—

Let me not name it to you, you chaste stars!—  
It is the cause. Yet I'll not shed her blood;

Nor scar that whiter skin of hers than snow,  
And smooth as monumental alabaster.

Yet she must die, else she'll betray more men.  
Put out the light, and then put out the lights!

If I quench thee, thou flaming minister,  
I can again thy former light restore.

Should I repent me: but once put out thy light,  
Thou cunning'st pattern of excelling nature, as

I know not where is that Promethean heat  
That can thy light relume. When I have

pluck'd the rose,  
I cannot give it vital growth again,

It must needs wither: I'll smell it on the tree.

Ah, balmy breath, that dost almost persuade  
Justice to break her sword! One more, one

more.

Be thus when thou art dead, and I will kiss  
thee,

And love thee after. One more, and this the  
last:

So sweet was ne'er so fatal. I must weep.  
But they are cruel tears: this sorrow's heavenly;

It strikes where it doth love. She wakes.

*Des.* Who's there! Othello!

*Oth.* Ay, Desdemona.

*Des.* Will you come to bed, my lord!

*Oth.* Have you pray'd to-night, Desdemona?

*Des.* Ay, my lord.

*Oth.* If you befall yourself of any sickness,  
Unprophesied as yet to heaven and grace,  
Solicit for it straight.

*Des.* Alas, my lord, what do you mean by that?

*Oth.* Well, do it, and be brief; I will walk by: 30

I would not kill thy unprepared spirit; No; heaven forbid! I would not kill thy soul.

*Des.* Talk you of killing!

*Oth.* Ay, I do.

*Des.* Then heaven Have mercy on me!

*Oth.* Amen, with all my heart!

*Des.* If you say so, I hope you will not kill me.

*Oth.* Hum!

*Des.* And yet I fear you; for you are fatal then

When your eyes roll so: why I should fear

I know not,

Since guiltiness I know not; but yet I feel I fear.

*Oth.* Think on thy sins.

*Des.* They are loves I bear to you. 40

*Oth.* Ay, and for that thou diest.

*Des.* That death's unnatural that kills for loving.

Alas, why gnaw you so your nether lip?

Some bloody passion shakes your very frame:

These are portents; but yet I hope, I hope,

They do not point on me.

*Oth.* Peace, and be still!

*Des.* I will so. What's the matter?

*Oth.* That handkerchief which I so loved and gave thee

Thou gavest to Cassio.

*Des.* No, by my life and soul!

Send for the man, and ask him.

*Oth.* Sweet soul, take heed, 50

Take heed of perjury: thou art on thy death-bed.

*Des.* Ay, but not yet to die.

*Oth.* Yes, presently:

Therefore confess these freely of thy sin;

For to deny each article with oath

Cannot remove nor choke the strong conception

That I do groan withal. Thou art to die.

*Des.* Then Lord have mercy on me!

*Oth.* I say, amen.

*Des.* And have you mercy too! I never did

Offend you in my life; never loved Cassio

But with such general warranty of heaven 60

As I might love; I never gave him token.

*Oth.* By heaven, I saw my handkerchief in's hand.

O perjured woman! thou dost stone my heart,

And makest me call what I intend to do

A murder, which I thought a sacrifice:

I saw the handkerchief.

*Des.* He found it then;

I never gave it him: send for him hither;

Let him confess a truth.

*Oth.* He hath confess'd.

*Des.* What, my lord?

*Oth.* That he hath used thee.

*Des.* How! unlawfully?

*Oth.* Ay. 70

*Des.* He will not say so.

No, his mouth is stopp'd;

Honest Iago hath ta'en order for't.

*Des.* O! my fear interprets: what, is he

dead?

*Oth.* Had all his hairs been lives, my great revenge

Had stomach for them all.

*Des.* Alas! he is betray'd and I undone.

*Oth.* Out, strumpet! weep'st thou for him to my face?

*Des.* O, banish me, my lord, but kill me not!

*Oth.* Down, strumpet!

*Des.* Kill me to-morrow: let me live to-night! 80

*Oth.* Nay, if you strive,—

*Des.* But half an hour!

*Oth.* Being done, there is no pause.

*Des.* But while I say one prayer!

*Oth.* It is too late.

*Emil.* [Within] My lord, my lord! what,

ho! my lord, my lord!

*Oth.* What noise is this! Not dead! not yet quite dead?

I that am cruel am yet merciful;

I would not have thee linger in thy pain:

So, so.

*Emil.* [Within] What, ho! my lord, my lord!

*Oth.* Who's there?

*Emil.* [Within] O, good my lord, I would

speak a word with you! 90

*Oth.* Yes: 'tis Emilia. By and by. She's dead.

'Tis like she comes to speak of Cassio's death.—

The noise was here. Ha! no more moving!

Still as the grave. Shall she come in? were't

good!—

I think she stirs again:—no. What's best to do!

If she come in, she'll sure speak to my wife;

My wife! my wife! what wife! I have no wife.

O, insupportable! O heavy hour!

Methinks it should be now a huge eclipse

Of sun and moon, and that the affrighted globe

Should yawn at alteration.

*Emil.* [Within] I do beseech you 100

That I may speak with you, O, good my lord!

*Oth.* I had forgot thee: O, come in, Emilia:

Soft; by and by. Let me the curtains draw.

Where art thou? [Unlocks the door.]

Enter EMILIA.

What's the matter with thee now!

*Emil.* O, my good lord, yonder's foul murderers done!

*Oth.* What, now?

*Emil.* But now, my lord.

*Oth.* It is the very error of the moon;

She comes more nearer earth than she was wont.

And makes men mad. 110

*Emil.* Cassio, my lord, hath kill'd a young

Venetian

Call'd Roderigo.

*Oth.* Roderigo kill'd!

And Cassio kill'd!

*Emil.* No, Cassio is not kill'd.

*Oth.* Not Cassio kill'd! then murder's out

of tune,

And sweet revenge grows harsh.

*Des.* O, falsely, falsely murder'd!

*Emil.* Alas, what cry is that!



*Oth.* That! what!

*Emil.* Out, and alas! that was my lady's voice.

Help! help, ho! help! O lady, speak again! Sweet Desdemona! O sweet mistress, speak!

*Des.* A guiltless death I die.

*Emil.* O, who hath done this deed?

*Des.* Nobody; I myself. Farewell:

Commend me to my kind lord: O, farewell!

*[Dies.]*

*Oth.* Why, how should she be murder'd?

*Emil.* Alas, who knows?

*Oth.* You heard her say herself, it was not I.

*Emil.* She said so: I must needs report the truth.

*Oth.* She's a liar, gone to burning hell: 'Twas I that kill'd her.

*Emil.* O, the more angel she, 130 And you the blacker devil!

*Oth.* She turn'd to folly, and she was a whore.

*Emil.* Thou dost belie her, and thou art a devil.

*Oth.* She was false as water.

*Emil.* Thou art rash as fire, to say That she was false: O, she was heavenly true!

*Oth.* Cassio did top her; ask thy husband else.

O, I were damn'd beneath all depth in hell, But that I did proceed upon just grounds To this extremity. Thy husband knew it all.

*Emil.* My husband! 140

*Oth.* Thy husband.

*Emil.* That she was false to wedlock?

*Oth.* Ay, with Cassio. Nay, had she been true,

If heaven would make me such another world Of one entire and perfect chrysolite,

I'd not have sold her for it.

*Emil.* My husband!

*Oth.* Ay, 'twas he that told me first: An honest man he is, and hates the slime That sticks on filthy deeds.

*Emil.* My husband!

*Oth.* What needs this iteration, woman? I say thy husband. 150

*Emil.* O mistress, villany hath made mocks with love!

My husband say that she was false!

*Oth.* He, woman: I say thy husband: dost understand the word?

My friend, thy husband, honest, honest Iago.

*Emil.* If he say so, may his pernicious soul Rot half a grain a day! he lies to the heart:

She was too fond of her most filthy bargain.

*Oth.* Ha!

*Emil.* Do thy worst:

This deed of thine is no more worthy heaven 160 Than thou wast worthy her.

*Oth.* Peace, you were best.

*Emil.* Thou hast not half that power to do me harm

As I have to be hurt. O gull! O dolt!

As ignorant as dirt! thou hast done a deed—

I care not for thy sword; I'll make thee known,

Though I lost twenty lives.—Help! help, ho! help!

The Moor hath kill'd my mistress! Murder! murder!

*Enter MONTANO, GRATIANO, IAGO, and others.*

*Mon.* What is the matter? How now, general!

*Emil.* O, are you come, Iago! you have done well,

That men must lay their murders on your neck.

*Gra.* What is the matter? 171

*Emil.* Disprove this villain, if thou be'st a man:

He says thou told'st him that his wife was false: I know thou didst not, thou'rt not such a villain:

Speak, for my heart is full.

*Iago.* I told him what I thought, and told no more

Than what he found himself was apt and true.

*Emil.* But did you ever tell him she was false?

*Iago.* I did.

*Emil.* You told a lie; an odious, damned lie; 180

Upon my soul, a lie, a wicked lie.

She false with Cassio!—did you say with Cassio?

*Iago.* With Cassio, mistress. Go to, charm your tongue.

*Emil.* I will not charm my tongue; I am bound to speak:

My mistress here lies murder'd in her bed,—

*All.* O heavens forfend!

*Emil.* And your reports have set the murder on.

*Oth.* Nay, stare not, masters: it is true, indeed.

*Gra.* 'Tis a strange truth.

*Mon.* O monstrous act!

*Emil.* Villany, villany, villany! 190

I think upon't, I think: I smell't: O villany!

I thought so then:—I'll kill myself for grief:—

O villany, villany!

*Iago.* What, are you mad? I charge you, get you home.

*Emil.* Good gentlemen, let me have leave to speak:

'Tis proper I obey him, but not now.

Purchance, Iago, I will ne'er go home.

*Oth.* O! O! O! *[He falls on the deck.]*

*Emil.* Nay, lay thee down and rest:

For thou hast kill'd the sweetest innocent

That e'er did lift up eyes.

*Oth.* *[Rising.]* O, she was foul! 200

I scarce did know you, uncle: there lies your niece,

Whose breath, indeed, those hands have newly stopp'd:

I know this act shows horrible and grim.

*Gra.* Poor Desdemona! I am glad thy father's dead:

Thy match was mortal to him, and pure grief

Shore his old thread in twain: did he live now,

This sight would make him do a desperate turn,

Yea, curse his better angel from his side,

And fall to reprobation.

*Oth.* 'Tis pitiful; but yet Iago knows

That she with Cassio hath the act of shame

A thousand times committed; Cassio confess'd it;

And she did gratify his amorous works  
With that recognisance and pledge of love  
Which I first gave her; I saw it in his hand:  
It was a handkerchief, an antique token  
My father gave my mother.

*Emil.* O heaven! O heavenly powers!

*Iago.* Come, hold your peace.

*Emil.* 'Twill out, 'twill out; I peace!  
No, I will speak as liberal as the north:  
Let heaven and men and devils, let them all,  
All, all, cry shame against me, yet I'll speak.

*Iago.* Be wise, and get you home.

*Emil.*

I will not.

[*Iago offers to stab Emilia.*  
Fie!

*Gra.*  
Your sword upon a woman!

*Emil.* O thou dull Moor! that handkerchief  
thou speak'st of

I found by fortune and did give my husband;  
For often, with a solemn earnestness,  
More than indeed belong'd to such a trifle,  
He begg'd of me to steal it.

*Iago.* Villanous whore!

*Emil.* She give it Cassio! no, alas! I found  
it

And I did give 't my husband.

*Iago.* Filth, thou liest!

*Emil.* By heaven, I do not, I do not, gentle-  
men.

O murderous coxcomb! what should such a  
fool

Do with so good a woman!

*Oth.* Are there no stones in heaven  
But what serve for the thunder?—Precious  
villain!

[*He runs at Iago: Iago, from behind, stabs Emilia, and exit.*

*Gra.* The woman falls; sure, he hath kill'd  
his wife.

*Emil.* Ay, ay: O, lay me by my mistress'  
side.

*Gra.* He's gone, but his wife's kill'd.

*Mon.* 'Tis a notorious villain. Take you this  
weapon,

Which I have here recover'd from the Moor:  
Come, guard the door without; let him not  
pass.

But kill him rather. I'll after that same  
villain.

For 'tis a damned slave.

[*Exeunt Montano and Gratiano.*  
*Oth.* I am not valiant neither.

But every puny whipster gets my sword:  
But why should honour outlive honesty?  
Let it go all.

*Emil.* What did thy song bode, lady?  
Hark, 'canst thou hear me? I will play the swan,  
And die in music. [*Singing*] Willow, willow,  
willow—

Moor, she was chaste; she loved thee, cruel  
Moor!

So come my soul to blis, as I speak true:  
So come to blis, as I speak true, I die. [*Exit.*

*Oth.* I am another weapon in this chamber;  
I am another weapon in this chamber;—  
O, heaven! O, heaven! I must come forth.

*Gra.* [*Within*] If thou attempt it, it will  
cost thee dear:

Thou hast no weapon, and perforce must suffer.

*Oth.* Look in upon me then and speak with  
me,

Or, naked as I am, I will assault thee.

*Re-enter GRATIANO.*

*Gra.* What is the matter?

*Oth.* Behold! I have a weapon;  
A better never did itself sustain

Upon a soldier's thigh: I have seen the day,  
That, with this little arm and this good sword,  
I have made my way through more impediments

Than twenty times your stop: but, O vain  
boast!

Who can control his fate! 'tis not so now.  
Be not afraid, though you do see me weapon'd;

Here is my journey's end, here is my butt,  
And very sea-mark of my utmost sail.

Do you go back dismay'd? 'tis a lost fear;  
Man but a rush against Othello's breast,

And he retires. Where should Othello go?  
Now, how dost thou look now? O ill-star'd  
wench!

Pale as thy smock! when we shall meet at  
compt,

This look of thine will hurl my soul from  
heaven,

And fiends will snatch at it. Cold, cold, my  
girl!

Even like thy chastity. O cursed slave!  
Whip me, ye devils,

From the possession of this heavenly sight!  
Blow me about in winds! roast me in sulphur!

Wash me in steep-down gulfs of liquid fire! O  
Desdemona! Desdemona! dead!

Oh! Oh! Oh!

*Enter LOPOVICO, MONTANO, CASSIO carried  
in a chair, and Officers with IAGO, prisoner.*

*Lod.* Where is this rash and most un-  
fortunate man?

*Oth.* That's he that was Othello: here I am.

*Lod.* Where is that viper? bring the villain  
forth.

*Oth.* I look down towards his feet; but  
that's a fable.

If that thou be'st a devil, I cannot kill thee.

[*Wounds Iago.*  
*Lod.* Wrench his sword from him.

*Iago.* I bleed, sir; but not kill'd.

*Oth.* I am not sorry neither: I'd have thee  
live;

For, in my sense, 'tis happiness to die.

*Lod.* O thou Othello, that wast once so  
good,

Fall'n in the practice of a damned slave.  
What shall be said to thee?

*Oth.* Why, any thing:  
An honourable murderer, if you will;

For nought I did in hate, but all in honour.

*Lod.* This wretch hath part confessed his  
villany:

Did you and he consent in Cassio's death?

*Oth.* Ay.

*Cas.* Dear general, I never gave you cause.

Oth. I do believe it, and I ask you pardon. |  
Will you, I pray, demand that demi-devil 301  
Why he hath thus ensnared my soul and body?  
Iago. Demand me nothing: what you know,  
you know:

From this time forth I never will speak word.

Lod. What, not to pray?

Gra. Torments will ope your lips.

Oth. Well, thou dost best.

Lod. Sir, you shall understand what hath  
befallen.

Which, as I think, you know not. Here is a  
letter

Found in the pocket of the slain Roderigo;  
And here another: the one of them imports 310  
The death of Cassio to be undertook  
By Roderigo.

Oth. O villain!

Cas. Most heathenish and most gross!

Lod. Now here's another discontented paper,  
Found in his pocket too; and this, it seems,  
Roderigo meant to have sent this damned  
villain:

But that belike Iago in the interim  
Came in and satisfied him.

Oth. O the pernicious caltiff!  
How came you, Cassio, by that handkerchief  
That was my wife's?

Cas. I found it in my chamber: 320  
And he himself confess'd but even now  
That there he dropp'd it for a special purpose  
Which wrought to his desire.

Oth. O fool! fool! fool!

Cas. There is besides in Roderigo's letter,  
How he upbraids Iago, that he made him  
Brave me upon the watch; whereon it came  
That I was cast: and even but now he spake,  
After long seeming dead, Iago hurt him,  
Iago set him on.

Lod. You must forsake this room, and go  
with us: 330

Your power and your command is taken off,  
And Cassio rules in Cyprus. For this slave,  
If there be any cunning cruelty  
That can torment him much and hold him long,  
It shall be his. You shall close prisoner rest,

Till that the nature of your fault be known  
To the Venetian state. Come, bring him away.

Oth. Soft you; a word or two before you go.  
I have done the state some service, and they  
know't. 339

No more of that. I pray you, in your letters,  
When you shall these unlucky deeds relate,  
Speak of me as I am; nothing extenuate,  
Nor set down aught in malice: then must you  
speak

Of one that loved not wisely but too well;  
Of one not easily jealous, but being wrought  
Perplex'd in the extreme; of one whose hand,  
Like the base Indian, threw a pearl away  
Richer than all his tribe; of one whose subdued  
eyes,

Albeit unused to the melting mood,  
Drop tears as fast as the Arabian trees 350  
Their medicinal gum. Set you down this;

And say besides, that in Aleppo once,  
Where a malignant and a turban'd Turk  
Beat a Venetian and traduced the state,  
I took by the throat the circumcised dog,  
And smote him, thus. [Stabs himself.]

Lod. O bloody period!

Gra. All that's spoke is marr'd.

Oth. I kiss'd thee ere I kill'd thee: no way  
but this;  
Killing myself, to die upon a kiss.

[Falls on the bed, and dies.]

Cas. This did I fear, but thought he had no  
weapon; 360

For he was great of heart.

Lod. [To Iago] O Spartan dog,  
More fell than anguish, hunger, or the sea!  
Look on the tragic loading of this bed;  
This is thy work: the object poisons sight;  
Let it be hid. Gratiano, keep the house,  
And seize upon the fortunes of the Moor,  
For they succeed on you. To you, lord governor,  
Remains the censure of this hellish villain;  
The time, the place, the torture: O, enforce  
it!

Myself will straight aboard; and to the state  
This heavy act with heavy heart relate. 375

[Exeunt.]

# ANTONY AND CLEOPATRA

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

MARK ANTONY,  
OCTAVIUS CÆSAR, } triumviri.  
M. ÆMILIUS LEPIDUS,  
SEXTUS POMPEIUS.

DOMITIUS ENOBARBUS,  
VENTIDIUS,  
EROS,  
SCARUS, } friends to An-  
DECEETAS, } tony.  
DEMETRIUS,  
PHILO,

MECENAS,  
AGRIPPA,  
DOLABELLA, } friends to Cæsar.  
PROCULEIUS,  
THYREUS,  
GALLUS,

MENAS,  
MENECRATES, } friends to Pompey.  
VARRIUS,

TAURUS, Lieutenant-general to Cæsar.  
CANIDIUS, Lieutenant-general to Antony.  
SILIUS, an officer in Ventidius's army.  
EUPHRONIUS, an ambassador from Antony to Cæsar.

ALEXAS,  
MARDIAN, a Eunuch, } attendants on  
SELEUCUS, } Cleopatra.  
DIONIDES,  
A Soothsayer.  
A Clown.

CLEOPATRA, queen of Egypt.  
OCTAVIA, sister to Cæsar and wife to Antony.

CHARMIAN, } attendants on Cleopatra.  
IRAS,

Officers, Soldiers, Messengers, and other Attendants.

SCENE: In several parts of the Roman empire.

## ACT I.

SCENE I. *Alexandria. A room in Cleopatra's palace.*

*Enter DEMETRIUS and PHILLO.*

*Phi.* Nay, but this dotage of our general's  
O'erflows the measure: those his goodly eyes,  
That o'er the files and musters of the war  
Have glow'd like plated Mars, now bend, now turn,

The office and devotion of their view  
Upon a tawny front: his captain's heart,  
Which in the scuffles of great fights hath burst  
The buckles on his breast, reneges all temper,  
And is become the bellows and the fan  
To cool a gipsy's lust.

*Flourish. Enter ANTONY, CLEOPATRA, her Ladies, the Train, with Eunuchs fanning her.*

Look, where they come: so  
Take but good note, and you shall see in him  
The triple pillar of the world transform'd  
Into a strumpet's fool: behold and see.

*Cleo.* If it be love indeed, tell me how much.  
*Ant.* There's beggary in the love that can be reckon'd.

*Cleo.* I'll set a bourn how far to be beloved.

*Ant.* Then must thou needs find out new heaven, new earth.

*Enter an Attendant.*

*Att.* News, my good lord, from Rome.

*Ant.* Grates me: the sum.

*Cleo.* Nay, hear them, Antony:  
Fulvia perchance is angry; or, who knows so  
If the scarce-bearded Cæsar have not sent  
His powerful mandate to you, 'Do this, or this;  
Take in that kingdom, and enfranchise that;  
Perform't, or else we damn thee.'

*Ant.* How, my love!

*Cleo.* Perchance! nay, and most like:  
You must not stay here longer, your diemission  
Is come from Cæsar; therefore hear it, Antony.  
Where's Fulvia's process? Cæsar's I would say!  
both!

Call in the messengers. As I am Egypt's queen,  
Thou bluest, Antony; and that blood of thine

Is Cæsar's homager: else so thy cheek pays  
shame

When shrill-tongued Fulvia scolds. The mes-  
sengers!

*Ant.* Let Rome in Tiber melt, and the wide  
arch

Of the ranged empire fall! Here is my space.  
Kingdoms are clay: our dungy earth alike  
Feeds beast as man: the nobleness of life  
Is to do thus; when such a mutual pair

And such a twain can do't, in which I bind,  
*Embracing.*

On pain of punishment, the world to weep  
We stand up peerless.

*Cleo.* Excellent falsehood! 40  
Why did he marry Fulvia, and not love her?  
I'll seem the fool I am not; Antony  
Will be himself.

*Ant.* But stir'd by Cleopatra.  
Now, for the love of Love and her soft hours,  
Let's not confound the time with conference  
harsh:

There's not a minute of our lives should stretch  
Without some pleasure now. What sport to-  
night!

*Cleo.* Hear the ambassadors.

*Ant.* Fie, wrangling queen!  
Whom every thing becomes, to chide, to laugh,  
To weep; whose every passion fully strives 50  
To make itself, in thee, fair and admired!  
No messenger, but thine; and all alone  
To-night we'll wander through the streets and  
note

The qualities of people. Come, my queen;  
Last night you did desire it: speak not to us.

[*Exeunt Ant. and Cleo. with their train.*]

*Dem.* Is Caesar with Antonius prized so  
slight?

*Phl.* Sir, sometimes, when he is not Antony,  
He comes too short of that great property  
Which still should go with Antony.

*Dem.* I am full sorry  
That he approves the common liar, who 60  
Thus speaks of him at Rome: but I will hope  
Of better deeds to-morrow. Rest you happy!

[*Exeunt.*]

# SCENE II. The same. Another room.

*Enter CHARMIAN, IRAS, ALEXAS, and a  
Soothsayer.*

*Char.* Lord Alexas, sweet Alexas, most any  
thing Alexas, almost most absolute Alexas,  
where's the soothsayer that you praised so to  
the queen? O, that I knew this husband,  
which, you say, must charge his horns with  
garlands!

*Alex.* Soothsayer!

*Sooth.* Your will!

*Char.* Is this the man? Is't you, sir, that  
know things?

*Sooth.* In nature's infinite book of secrecy  
A little I can read.

*Alex.* Show him your hand.

*Enter ENOBARBUS.*

*Eno.* Bring in the banquet quickly; wine  
enough

Cleopatra's health to drink.

*Char.* Good sir, give me good fortune.

*Sooth.* I make not, but foresee.

*Char.* Pray, then, foresee me one.

*Sooth.* You shall be yet far fairer than you  
are.

*Char.* He means in flesh.

*Ir.* No, you shall paint when you are old.

*Char.* Wrinkles forbid!

*Alex.* Vex not his prescience; be attentive.

*Char.* Hush!

*Sooth.* You shall be more beloved than  
beloved.

*Char.* I had rather heat my liver with  
drinking.

*Alex.* Nay, hear him.

*Char.* Good now, some excellent fortune!  
Let me be married to three kings in a forenoon,  
and widow them all: let me have a child at  
fifty, to whom Herod of Jewry may do homage;  
find me to marry me with Octavius Caesar, and  
companion me with my mistress. 30

*Sooth.* You shall outlive the lady whom you  
serve.

*Char.* O excellent! I love long life better  
than figs.

*Sooth.* You have seen and proved a false  
former fortune  
Than that which is to approach.

*Char.* Then belike my children shall have no  
names: prithee, how many boys and wenches  
must I have!

*Sooth.* If every of your wishes had a womb,  
And fertile every wish, a million. 30

*Char.* Out, fool! I forgive thee for a witch.  
*Alex.* You think none but your sheets are  
pry to your wishes.

*Char.* Nay, come, tell Iras here.

*Alex.* We'll know all our fortunes.

*Eno.* Mine, and most of our fortunes, to-  
night, shall be—drunk to bed.

*Ir.* There's a palm presages chastity, if  
nothing else.

*Char.* 'E'en as the o'erflowing Nile pre-  
sageth famine. 30

*Ir.* Go, you wild bedfellow, you cannot  
soothsay.

*Char.* Nay, if an oily palm be not a fruitful  
prognostication, I cannot scratch mine ear.  
Prithee, tell her but a worky-day fortune.

*Sooth.* Your fortunes are alike.

*Ir.* But how, but how! give me particu-  
lars.

*Sooth.* I have said.

*Ir.* Am I not an inch of fortune better  
than she? 40

*Char.* Well, if you were but an inch of for-  
tune better than I, where would you choose it?

*Ir.* Not in my husband's nose.

*Char.* Our worse thoughts heavens mend!  
Alexas,—come, his fortune, his fortune! O, let  
him marry a woman that cannot go, sweet Isis,  
I beseech thee! and let her die too, and give  
him a worse! and let worse follow worse, till  
the worst of all follow him laughing to his  
grave, fifty-fold a cuckold! Good Isis, hear me  
this prayer, though thou deny me a matter of  
more weight; good Isis, I beseech thee!

*Ir.* Amen. Dear goddess, hear that prayer  
of the people! for, as it is a heart-breaking  
to see a handsome man loose-wived, so it is  
a deadly sorrow to behold a foul knave un-  
cuckolded; therefore, dear Isis, keep decorum,  
and fortune him accordingly!

*Char.* Amen. 70

*Alex.* Lo, now, if it lay in their hands to  
make me a cuckold, they would make them-  
selves wretched, but they'll do't!

*Eno.* Hush! here comes Antony.

Char.

Not he; the queen.

Enter CLEOPATRA.

Cleo. Saw you my lord?

Eno. No, lady.

Cleo. Was he not here?

Char. No, madam.

Cleo. He was disposed to mirth; but on the sudden  
A Roman thought hath struck him. Enobarbus!

Eno. Madam?

Cleo. Seek him, and bring him hither.

Where's Alexas?

Alex. Here, at your service. My lord approaches.

Cleo. We will not look upon him: go with us. [Exit]

Enter ANTONY with a Messenger and Attendants.

Mess. Fulvia thy wife first came into the field.

Ant. Against my brother Lucius?

Mess. Ay:

But soon that war had end, and the time's state  
Made friends of them, joining their force 'gainst

Whose better issue in the war, from Italy,  
Upon the first encounter, drave them.

Ant. Well, what worst?

Mess. The nature of bad news infects the teller.

Ant. When it concerns the fool or coward.

On:  
Things that are past are done with me. 'Tis thus;

Who tells me true, though in his tale lie death,  
I hear him as he flatter'd.

Mess. Labienus—

This is stiff news—hath, with his Parthian force,  
Extended Asia from Euphrates;  
His conquering banner shook from Syria  
To Lydia and to Ionia;

Whilst—

Ant. Antony, thou wouldst say,—

Mess. O, my lord!

Ant. Speak to me home, mince not the general tongue:

Name Cleopatra as she is call'd in Rome; 110  
Bait thou in Fulvia's phrase; and taunt my family

With such full license as both truth and malice  
Have power to utter. O, then we bring forth

wounds;  
When our quick minds lie still; and our lips

told us  
Is an earring. Fare thee well awhile.

Mess. At your noble pleasure. [Exit]

Ant. From Sicily, ho, the news! Speak

there!

First Att. The man from Sicily,—is there  
such an one?

Sec. Att. He stays upon your will.

Ant. Let him appear.

These strong Egyptian fetters I must break; 120  
Or lose myself in dotage.

Enter another Messenger.

What are you?

Sec. Mess. Fulvia thy wife is dead.

Ant. Where died she?

Sec. Mess. In Sicily:

Her length of sickness, with what else more  
serious

Importeth thee to know, this bears.

Ant. [Gives a letter.]  
Forbear me.

[Exit Sec. Messenger.]

There's a great spirit gone! Thus did I  
sire it:

What our contempt doth often hurl from us,  
We wish it ours again; the present pleasure,

By revolution lowering, does become

The opposite of itself: she's good, being gone;  
The hand could pluck her back that shov'd

her on. 131

I must from this enchanting queen break off:

Ten thousand harms, more than the ill I

know,

My idleness doth hatch. How now! Enobarbus!

Re-enter ENOBARBUS.

Eno. What's your pleasure, sir?

Ant. I must with haste from hence.

Eno. Why, then, we kill all our women: we  
see how mortal an unkindness is to them; if  
they suffer our departure, death 's the word.

Ant. I must be gone. 140

Eno. Under a compelling occasion, let women  
die: it were pity to cast them away for nothing;  
though, between them and a great cause, they  
should be esteem'd nothing. Cleopatra, catch-  
ing but the least noise of this, dies instantly;  
I have seen her die twenty times upon far poorer  
moment: I do think there is mettle in death,  
which commits some loving act upon her; she  
hath such a celerity in dying.

Ant. She is cunning past man's thought. 150

Eno. Alack, sir, no; her passions are made  
of nothing but the finest part of pure love: we  
cannot call her winds and waters sighs and  
tears; they are greater storms and tempests  
than almanacs can report: this cannot be  
cunning in her; if it be, she makes a shower  
of rain as well as Jove.

Ant. Would I had never seen her!

Eno. O, sir, you had then left unseen a  
wonderful piece of work; which not to have been  
blest withal would have discredited your travel.

Ant. Fulvia is dead.

Eno. Sir!

Ant. Fulvia is dead.

Eno. Fulvia!

Ant. Dead.

Eno. Why, sir, give the gods a thankful  
sacrifice. When it pleaseth their deities to take  
the wife of a man from him, it shows to man  
the tailors of the earth; comforting therein,  
that when old robes are worn out, there are  
members to make new. If there were no more  
women but Fulvia, then had you indeed a cut,  
and the case to be lamented; this grief is  
crowned with consolation; your old smock

brings forth a new petition: and indeed the tears live in an onion that should water this sorrow.

*Ant.* The business she hath broached in the state  
Cannot endure my absence. 170

*Eno.* And the business you have broached here cannot be without you; especially that of which wholly depends on your

*Ant.* No more light answers. Let our officers

Have notice what we purpose. I shall break The cause of our expedience to the queen, And get her leave to part. For not alone The death of Fulvia, with more urgent touches, Do strongly speak to us; but the letters too of many our contriving friends in Rome Petition us at home: Sextus Pompeius 190 Hath given the dare to Caesar, and commands The empire of the sea: our slippery people, Whose love is never link'd to the deserver Till his deserts are past, begin to throw Pompey the Great and all his dignities Upon his son; who, high in name and power, Higher than both in blood and life, stands up For the main soldier: whose quality, going on, The sides o' the world may danger: much is breeding, 199

Which, like the courser's hair, hath yet but life, And not a serpent's poison. Say, our pleasure, To such whose place is under us, requires Our quick remove from hence.

*Eno.* I shall do't. [Exit.

SCENE III. *The same. Another room.*

*Enter CLEOPATRA, CHARMIAN, IRAS, and ALEXAS.*

*Cleo.* Where is he?

*Char.* I did not see him since.

*Cleo.* See where he is, who's with him, what he does:

I did not send you: if you find him sad, Say I am dancing; if in mirth, report That I am sudden sick: quick, and return. [Exit Alexas.

*Char.* Madam, methinks, if you did love him dearly,  
You do not hold the method to enforce The like from him.

*Cleo.* What should I do, I do not?

*Char.* In each thing give him way, cross him in nothing.

*Cleo.* Thou teachest like a fool; the way to lose him.

*Char.* Tempt him not so too far; I wish, forbear:

In time we hate that which we often fear.  
But here comes Antony.

*Enter ANTONY.*

*Cleo.* I am sick and sullen.

*Ant.* I am sorry to give breathing to my purpose.

*Cleo.* Help me away, dear Charmian; I shall fall:  
It cannot be thus long, the sides of nature

Will not sustain it.

*Ant.* Now, my dearest queen,

*Cleo.* Pray you, stand farther from me.

*Ant.* What's the matter?

*Cleo.* I know, by that same eye, there's some good news. 20

What says the married woman? You may go: Would she had never given you leave to come! Let her not say 'tis I that keep you here: I have no power upon you; here you are.

*Ant.* The gods best know,—

*Cleo.* O, never was there queen So mightily betray'd! yet at the first I saw the treasons planted.

*Ant.* Cleopatra,—

*Cleo.* Why should I think you can be mine and true,

Though you in swearing shake the throned gods,

Who have been false to Fulvia! Riotous madness,

To be entangled with those mouth-made vows, Which break themselves in swearing!

*Ant.* Most sweet queen,— 31

*Cleo.* Nay, pray you, seek no colour for your going,

But bid farewell, and go: when you stand staying,

Then was the time for words: no going then; Eternity was in our lips and eyes,

Bliss in our brows' bent; none our parts so poor,

But was a race of heaven: they are so still, Or thou, the greatest soldier of the world, Art turn'd the greatest liar.

*Ant.* How now, lady?

*Cleo.* I would I had thy inches; thou shouldst know

There were a heart in Egypt.

*Ant.* Hear me, queen:

The strong necessity of time commands Our services awhile; but my full heart Remains in use with you. Our Italy

Shines o'er with civil swords: Sextus Pompeius Makes his approaches to the port of Rome:

Equality of two domestic powers Breed scrupulous faction: the hated, grown to strength,

Are newly grown to love: the condoned Pompey,

Rich in his father's honour, creeps again Into the hearts of such as have not liv'd Upon the present state, whose numbers threaten;

And quietness, grown sick of rest, would purge By any desperate change: my more particular, And that which most with you should stay, my going,

Is Fulvia's death.

*Cleo.* Though age from Italy could not give me freedom,

It does from childlessness: can Fulvia die?

*Ant.* She's dead, my queen:

Look here, and at thy sovereign's tomb read: The garb she swam'd; at the last, here: See when and where she died.

*Cleo.* O must I to bed!

Where to the sacred wish thou shouldst bid me With sorrowful water! Now I see, I see,

In Fulvia's death, how mine received shall be.

*Ant.* Quarrel no more, but be prepared to know

The purposes I bear; which are, or cease,  
As you shall give the advice. By the fire  
That quickens Nilus' alime, I go from hence  
Thy soldier, servant; making peace or war 70  
As thou affect'st.

*Cleo.* Out my lace, Charmian, come;  
But let it be: I am quickly ill, and well,  
So Antony loves.

*Ant.* My precious queen, forbear;  
And give true evidence to his love, which stands  
An honourable trial.

*Cleo.* So Fulvia told me.  
I prithee, turn aside and weep for her;  
Then bid adieu to me, and say the tears  
Belong to Egypt: good now, play one scene  
Of excellent dissembling; and let it look  
Like perfect honour.

*Ant.* You'll heat my blood: no more. So  
*Cleo.* You can do better yet; but this is  
meetly.

*Ant.* Now, by my sword,—  
*Cleo.* And target. Still he mends;  
But this is not the best. Look, prithee, Char-  
mian,

How this Herculean Roman does become  
The carriage of his chafe.

*Ant.* I'll leave you, lady.  
*Cleo.* Courteous lord, one word.

Sir, you and I must part, but that's not it;  
Sir, you and I have loved, but there's not it;  
That you know well: something it is I would,—  
O, my oblivion is a very Antony, 90  
And I am all forgotten.

*Ant.* But that your royalty  
Holds idleness your subject, I should take you  
For idleness itself.

*Cleo.* 'Tis sweating labour  
To bear such idleness so near the heart  
As Cleopatra this. But, sir, forgive me;  
Since my becoming kill me, when they do not  
Eye well to you: your honour calls you hence;  
Therefore be deaf to my unpitied folly,  
And all the gods go with you! upon your sword  
Sit laurel victory! and smooth success 100  
Be strew'd before your feet!

*Ant.* Let us go. Come;  
Our separation so abides, and flies,  
That thou, residing here, go'st yet with me,  
And I, hence fleeting, here remain with thee.  
Away! [Exeunt.]

SCENE IV. *Rome. Caesar's house.*

Enter OCTAVIUS CESAR, reading a letter,  
LEPIDUS, and their Train.

*Ces.* You may see, Lepidus, and henceforth  
know  
It is not Caesar's natural vice to hate  
Our great competitor: from Alexandria  
This is the news: he fishes, drinks, and wastes  
The hours of night in revel; is not more man-  
like

Than Cleopatra; nor the queen of Ptolemy  
More womanly than he; hardly gave audience,  
or

Vouchsafed to think he had partners: you shall  
find these

A man who is the abstract of all faults  
That all men follow.

*Lep.* I must not think there are 20  
Evils enow to darken all his goodness;  
His faults in him seem as the spots of heaven,  
More fiery by night's blackness; hereditary,  
Rather than purchased; while he cannot change,  
Than what he chooses.

*Ces.* You are too indulgent. Let us grant,  
it is not

Amiss to tumble on the bed of Ptolemy;  
To give a kingdom for a mirth; to sit  
And keep the turn of tippling with a slave;  
To reel the streets at noon, and stand the buffet  
With knaves that smell of sweat: say this  
becomes him,— 31

As his composure must be rare indeed  
Whom these things cannot blemish,—yet must  
Antony

No way excuse his soils, when we do bear  
So great weight in his lightness. If he fill'd  
His vacancy with his voluptuousness,  
Full surfeits, and the dryness of his bones,  
Call on him for't; but to confound such time,  
That drums him from his sport, and speaks as  
loud  
As his own state and ours,—'tis to be chid 30  
As we rate boys, who, being mature in know-  
ledge,  
Pawn their experience to their present pleasure,  
And so rebel to judgement.

Enter a Messenger.

*Lep.* Here's more news.  
*Mes.* Thy biddings have been done; and  
every hour,

Most noble Caesar, shalt thou have report  
How 'tis abroad. Pompey is strong at sea;  
And it appears he is beloved of those  
That only have fear'd Caesar: to the ports  
The discontents repair, and men's reports  
Give him much wrong'd.

*Ces.* I should have known no less.  
It hath been taught us from the primal state, 41  
That he which is was wish'd until he were;  
And the ebb'd man, ne'er loved till ne'er worth  
love,

Comes dear'd by being lack'd. This common  
body,  
Like to a vagabond flag upon the stream,  
Goes to and back, lackeying the varying tide,  
To rot itself with motion.

*Mes.* Caesar, I bring thee word,  
Menecrates and Menas, famous pirates,  
Make the sea serve them, which they ear and  
wound

With keels of every kind: many hot taroards 50  
They make in Italy; the borders maritime  
Jack blood to think on't, and flush youth  
revolt:

No vessel can peep forth, but 'tis as soon  
Taken as seen; for Pompey's name strikes  
more

Than could his war resisted.

*Ces.* Antony,  
Leave thy lascivious wassails. When thou once



Wast beaten from Modena, where thou slew'st  
Hirtius and Pansa, consuls, at thy heel  
Did famine follow; whom thou fought'st  
against,

Though daintily brought up, with patience more  
Than savages could suffer: thou didst drink  
The stale of horses, and the gilded puddle  
Which beasts would cough at: thy palate then  
did delyn

The roughest berry on the rudest hedge;  
Yes, like the stag, when snow the pasture  
sheets,

The barks of trees thou browsed'st; on the  
Alps

It is reported thou didst eat strange flesh,  
Which some did die to look on: and all this—  
It wounds thine honour that I speak it now—  
Was borne so like a soldier, that thy cheek  
So much as lank'd not.

*Lep.* 'Tis pity of him.

*Cas.* Let his shames quickly  
Drive him to Rome: 'tis time we twain  
Did show ourselves 't the field; and to that end  
Assemble we immediate council: Pompey  
Thrives in our idleness.

*Lep.* To-morrow, Cæsar,  
I shall be furnish'd to inform you rightly  
Both what by sea and land I can be able  
To front this present time.

*Cas.* Till which encounter,  
It is my business too. Farewell.

*Lep.* Farewell, my lord: what you shall  
know meantime  
Of suits abroad, I shall beseech you, sir,  
To let me be partaker.

*Cas.* Doubt not, sir;  
I knew it for my bond. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. *Alexandria. Cleopatra's palace.*

*Enter CLEOPATRA, CHARMIAN, IRAS, and  
MARDIAN.*

*Cleo.* Charmian!

*Char.* Madam!

*Cleo.* Ha, ha!

Give me to drink mandragora.

*Char.* Why, madam!

*Cleo.* That I might sleep out this great gap  
of time

My Antony is away.

*Char.* You think of him too much.

*Cleo.* O, 'tis treason!

*Char.* Madam, I trust, not so.

*Cleo.* Thou, eunuch Mardian!

*Mar.* What's your highness' pleasure!

*Cleo.* Not now to hear thee sing; I take no  
pleasure

In sight an eunuch has: 'tis well for thee,  
That, being unseminar'd, thy freer thoughts  
May not fly forth of Egypt. Hast thou affec-  
tions!

*Mar.* Yes, gracious madam.

*Cleo.* Indeed!

*Mar.* Not in deed, madam; for I can do  
nothing

But what indeed is honest to be done:  
Yet have I fierce affections, and think  
What Venus did with Mars.

*Cleo.* O Charmian,  
Where think'st thou he is now! Stands he,  
or sits he!

Or does he walk? or is he on his horse? so  
Jolly horse, to bear the weight of Antony!  
Do bravely, horse! for wot'st thou whom thou  
movest?

The demi-Atlas of this earth, the arm  
And burgonet of men. He's speaking now,  
Or murmuring 'Where's my serpent of old  
Nile!'

For so he calls me: now I feed myself  
With most delicious poison. Think on me,  
That am with Phœbus' amorous pinches black  
And wrinkled deep in time! Broad-fronted

Cæsar,

When thou wast here above the ground, I was  
A morsel for a monarch: and great Pompey  
Would stand and make his eyes grow in my

brow;

There would he anchor his aspect and die  
With looking on his life.

*Enter ALEXAS.*

*Alex.*

*Cleo.* How much unlike art  
Antony!

Yet, coming from him, that great medicine  
hath  
With his tinct gilded thee.

How goes it with my brave Mark Antony!

*Alex.* Last thing he did, dear queen,  
He kiss'd,—the last of many doubled kisses,—  
This orient pearl. His speech sticks in my  
heart.

*Cleo.* Mine ear must pluck it thence.

*Alex.* 'Good friend,' quoth he,  
'Say, the firm Roman to great Egypt sends

This treasure of an oyster; at whose foot,  
To mend the petty present, I will place  
Her opulent throne with kingdoms; all the

east.

Say thou, shall call her mistress.' So he nodded,  
And soberly did mount an arm-gaunt steed.  
Who neigh'd so high, that what I would have  
spoke

Was beastly dumb'd by him.

*Cleo.* What was he sad or merry?

*Alex.* Like to the time of the year between  
the extremes

Of hot and cold, he was nor sad nor merry.

*Cleo.* O well-divided disposition! Note him,  
Note him, good Charmian, 'tis the man; but

note him:

He was not sad, for he would shine on those  
That make their looks by his; he was not

merry,

Which seem'd to tell them his remembrance  
lay

In Egypt with his joy; but between both:  
O heavenly mingle! Be't thou sad or merry,

The violence of either thee becomes,  
So does it no man else. Met'st thou my guest?

*Alex.* Ay, madam, twenty several mes-  
sengers:

Why do you send so thick?

*Cleo.* Who's been that day  
When I forgot to send to Antony,

Shall die a beggar. Ink and paper, Charmian.  
Welcome, my good Alconna. Did I, Charmian,  
Ever love Caesar so?

Char. O that I have Caesar!

Cleo. Be checked with such another emphasis!  
Say, the brave Antony.

Char. The valiant Caesar!

Cleo. By Isis, I will give thee bloody teeth,  
If thou with Caesar paragon again 71  
My man of men.

Char. By your most gracious pardon,  
I sing but after you.

Cleo. My salad days,  
When I was green in judgement: cold in blood,  
To say as I said then! But, come, away;  
Get me ink and paper:  
He shall have every day a several greeting.  
Or I'll unpeople Egypt. [Exeunt.]

## ACT II

## SCENE I. Messina. Pompey's house.

Enter POMPEY, MENEKRATES, and MENAS,  
in warlike manner.

Pom. If the great gods be just, they shall  
assist  
The deeds of justest men.

Mene. Know, worthy Pompey,  
That what they do delay, they not deny.

Pom. Whiles we are suitors to their throne,  
deceys  
The thing we sue for.

Mene. We, ignorant of ourselves,  
Beg often our own harms, which the wise  
powers  
Deny us for our good; so find we profit  
By losing of our prayers.

Pom. I shall do well:  
The people love me, and the sea is mine;  
My powers are crescent, and my auguring hope  
Says it will come to the full. Mark Antony:  
In Egypt sits at dinner, and will make  
No wars without doors: Caesar gets money  
whereas

He loses hearts: Lepidus flatters both,  
Of both is flatter'd; but he neither loves,  
Nor either cares for him.

Mene. Caesar and Lepidus  
Are in the field: a mighty strength they carry.

Pom. Where have you this? 'tis false.

Mene. From Silvius, sir.

Pom. He dreams: I know they are in Rome.

Antony. But all the charms of  
love,  
Soft Cleopatra, soften thy waned lip!  
Let witchcraft join with beauty, lust with

modesty!  
Tie up the libertine in a field of feasts,  
Keep his brain fuming; Epicurean cooks  
Shout with oily sauces his appetite;  
And sleep and feeding may prorogue his honour  
Even till a lustre's dimness!

Enter VARIUS.

Now, Varius!  
This is more certain that I shall de-

Mark Antony is  
Expected: since he went from  
A space for farther travel.

Pom. I could have given less matter  
A better ear. Menas, I did not think  
This amorous surfeiter would have down'd his  
helm

For such a petty war: his goldsmithship  
Is twice the other twain; but let us rear  
The higher our opinion, that our stirring  
Can from the lap of Egypt draw a pluck  
The ne'er-lust-wearied Antony.

Mene. I cannot hope  
Caesar and Antony shall well greet together:  
His wife that's dead did trespass to Caesar;  
His brother war'd upon him; although, I think,  
Not moved by Antony.

Pom. I know not, Menas.  
How lesser enmities may give way to greater.  
Were't not that we stand up against them all,  
'Twere pregnant they should square between  
themselves;

For they have entertained cause enough  
To draw their swords: but how the fear of us  
May cement their divisions and bind up  
The petty difference, we yet not know.  
Be't as our gods will have't! It only stands 30  
(Our lives upon to use our strongest hands.  
Come, Menas. [Exeunt.]

## SCENE II. Roma. The house of Lepidus.

Enter ENOBARBUS and LEPIDUS.

Lep. Good Enobarbus, 'tis a worthy deed,  
And shall become you well, to entreat your  
captain  
To soft and gentle speech.

Eno. I shall entreat him  
To answer like himself: if Caesar move him,  
Let Antony look over Caesar's head  
And speak as loud as Mars. By Jupiter,  
Were I the wearer of Antonius' beard,  
I would not shave't to-day.

Lep. 'Tis not a time  
For private stomaching.

Eno. Every time  
Serves for the matter that is then born in't. 10

Lep. But small to greater matters must give  
way.

Eno. Not if the small come first.

Lep. Your speech is passion:  
But, pray you, stir no embers up. Here comes  
The noble Antony.

Enter ANTONY AND VENTIDIUS.

Eno. And yonder, Caesar.

Enter CAESAR, MENEKRATES, and AGRIPPA.

Ant. If we compose well here, to Partbia:  
Mark, Ventidius.

Ces. I do not know,  
Mecenas; ask Agrippa.

Lep. Noble friends,  
That which combined us was most great, and  
let not

A lesser action send us. What's the cause,  
May it be gently heard: when we debate  
Our trivial differences loud, we do consult

Murder in healing wounds; then, noble partners,  
The rather, for I earnestly beseech  
Touch you the sorest points with sweetest  
terms,  
Nor curtness grow to the matter.

*Ant.* *This spoken well.*  
Were we before our armies, and to fight,  
I should do thus. *[Flourish.]*

*Ces.* Welcome to Rome.

*Ant.* Thank you.

*Ces.* Sit.

*Ant.* Sit, sir.

*Ces.* Nay, then.

*Ant.* I learn, you take things ill which are  
not so,  
Or being, concern you not.

*Ces.* I must be laugh'd at, 30  
If, or for nothing or a little, I  
Should say myself offended, and with you  
Chiefly I the world; more laugh'd at, that I  
should

Once name you derogately, when to sound your  
name  
It not concern'd me.

*Ant.* My being in Egypt, Caesar,  
What was't to you?

*Ces.* No more than my residing here at  
Rome

Might be to you in Egypt: yet, if you there  
Did practise on my state, your being in Egypt  
Might be my question.

*Ant.* How intend you, practis'd? 40  
*Ces.* You may be pleased to catch at mine  
intent

By what did here befall me. Your wife and  
brother

Made wars upon me; and their contestation  
Was theme for you, you were the word of war.

*Ant.* You do mistake your business; my  
brother never

Did urge me in his act: I did inquire it;  
And have my learning from some true reports,  
That drew their swords with you. Did he not  
rather

Discredit my authority with yours; 49  
And make the wars alike against my stomach,  
Having alike your cause? Of this my letters  
Before did satisfy you. If you'll patch a  
quarrel,

As matter whole you have not to make it with,  
It must not be with this.

*Ces.* You praise yourself  
By laying defects of judgement to me; but  
You patch'd up your excuses.

*Ant.* Not so, not so;  
I know you could not lack, I am certain on't,  
Very necessity of this thought, that I,  
Your partner in the cause 'gainst which he  
fought,

Could not with graceful eyes attend those wars  
Which fronted mine own peace. As for my  
wife, 52

I would you had her spirit in such another:  
The third o' the world is yours; which with a  
maule

You may pace easy, but not such a wife.  
*Ces.* Would we had all such wives, that the  
men might go to wars with the women!

*Ant.* So much unsuitable, her garbells.

*Ces.*

Made out of her impatience, which not wanted  
Shrewdness of policy too, I grieving grant  
Did you too much disquiet: for that you must  
But say, I could not help it.

*Ces.* I wrote to you 71

When rioting in Alexandria; you  
Did pocket up my letters, and with taunts  
Did gibe my missive out of audience.

*Ant.* Sir,

He fell upon me ere admitted; then  
Three kings I had newly feasted, and did  
want

Of what I was i' the morning: but next day  
I told him of myself; which was as much  
As to have ask'd him pardon. Let this follow  
Be nothing of our strife; if we contend, 80  
Out of our question wipe him.

*Ces.* You have broken  
The article of your oath; which you shall  
never

Have tongue to charge me with.

*Lep.* Soft, Caesar!

*Ant.* No,

Lepidus, let him speak:

The honour is sacred which he talks on now,  
Supposing that I lack'd it. But, on, Caesar;  
The article of my oath.

*Ces.* To lend me arms and aid when I  
required them;

The which you both denied.

*Ant.* Neglected, rather;

And then when poison'd hours had bound me

up 82

From mine own knowledge. As nearly as I

may,

I'll play the penitent to you: but mine honesty

Shall not make poor my greatness, nor my

power

Work without it. Truth is, that Fulvia,

To have me out of Egypt, made wars here;

For which myself, the ignorant motive, 85

So far ask pardon as befits mine honour

To stoop in such a case.

*Lep.* 'Tis noble spoken.

*Mec.* If it might please you, to enforce us

further

The griefs between ye: to forget them quite

Were to remember that the present need 88

Speaks to stone you.

*Lep.* Worthily spoken, Messieurs.

*Eno.* Or, if you borrow one another's love

for the instant, you may, when you hear me

more words of Pompey, return it again: you

shall have time to wrangle in when you have

nothing else to do.

*Ant.* Thou art a soldier only: speak me

more.

*Eno.* That truth should be silent I had

almost forgot.

*Ant.* You wrong this presence; therefore

speak no more.

*Eno.* Go to, then; your constantness shews.

*Ces.* I do not much dislike the matter; but

The manner of his speech; for I cannot be

We shall remain in friendship, my condition

So differing in their sets. I do, I do have

What hoop should hold us stanch, from edge  
to edge  
O' the world I would pursue it.

*Agg.* Give me leave, Caesar,—

*Ces.* Speak, Agrippa.

*Agg.* Thou hast a sister by the mother's  
side.

Admired Octavia: great Mark Antony  
is now a widower.

*Ces.* Say not so, Agrippa:

If Cleopatra heard you, your reproof

Were well deserved of rashness.

*Ant.* I am not married, Caesar: let me hear  
Agrippa further speak.

*Agg.* To hold you in perpetual amity,  
To make you brothers, and to knit your hearts

With an unslipping knot, take Antony

Octavia to his wife: whose beauty claims

No worse a husband than the best of men;

Whose virtue and whose general graces speak

That which none else can utter. By this  
marriage,

All little jealousies, which now seem great,

And all great fears, which now import their

Would then be nothing: truths would be tales,  
Where now half tales be truths: her love to  
both

Would, each to other and all loves to both,

Draw after her. Pardon what I have spoke;

For 'tis a studied, not a present thought,

By duty ruminated.

*Ant.* Will Caesar speak?

*Ces.* Not till he hears how Antony is  
touch'd

With what is spoke already.

*Ant.* What power is in Agrippa,

If I would say, 'Agrippa, be it so,'

To make this good?

*Ces.* The power of Caesar, and

His power unto Octavia.

*Ant.* May I never

To this good purpose, that so fairly shows,

Dream of impediment! Let me have thy

hand:

Further this act of grace; and from this hour

The heart of brothers govern in our loves

And sway our great designs!

*Ces.* There is my hand.

A sister I bequeath you, whom no brother

Did ever love so dearly: let her live

To join our kingdoms and our hearts; and

never

Fly off our loves again!

*Lea.* Happily, amen!

*Ant.* I did not think to draw my sword

'gainst Pompey;

For he hath laid strange courtesies and great

Of late upon me: I must thank him only,

Let my remembrance suffer ill report;

At least of that, defy him.

*Lea.* Time calls upon 's:

Of us must Pompey presently be sought,

Or else he seeks out us.

*Ant.* Where lies he?

*Ces.* About the mount Misenum.

*Ant.* What is his strength by land?

*Ces.* Good and increasing: but by sea

He is an absolute master.

*Ant.* So is the fame.

Would we had spoke together! Haste we for

it:

Yet, ere we put ourselves in arms, dispatch we

The business we have talk'd of.

*Ces.* With most gladness;

And do invite you to my sister's view,

Whither straight I'll lead you.

*Ant.* Let us, Lepidus,

Not lack your company.

*Lea.* Noble Antony,

Not sickness should detain me.

[Flourish. *Exeunt Caesar, Antony,*

*and Lepidus.*

*Mec.* Welcome from Egypt, sir.

*Eno.* Half the heart of Caesar, worthy

Mecenas! My honourable friend, Agrippa!

*Agg.* Good Enobarbus!

*Mec.* We have cause to be glad that matters

are so well digested. You stayed well by 't in

Egypt.

*Eno.* Ay, sir: we did sleep day out of counte-

nance, and made the night light with drinking.

*Mec.* Eight wild-boars roasted whole at a

breakfast, and but twelve persons there; is this

true?

*Eno.* This was but as a fly by an eagle: we

had much more monstrous matter of feast,

which worthily deserved noting.

*Mec.* She's a most triumphant lady, if report

be square to her.

*Eno.* When she first met Mark Antony, she

pursed up his heart, upon the river of Cydnus.

*Agg.* There she appeared indeed; or my re-

porter devised well for her.

*Eno.* I will tell you.

The barge she sat in, like a burnish'd throne,

Burn'd on the water: the poop was beaten

gold;

Purple the sails, and so perfumed that

The winds were love-sick with them; the oars

were silver,

Which to the tune of flutes kept stroke, and

made

The water which they beat to follow faster,

As amorous of their strokes. For her own

person,

It beggar'd all description: she did lie

In her pavilion—cloth-of-gold of tissue—

O'er-picturing that Venus where we see

The fancy outwork nature: on each side her

Stood pretty dimpled boys, like smiling Cupids,

With divers-colour'd fans, whose wind did seem

To glow the delicate cheeks which they did

cool,

And what they undid did.

*Agg.* O, rare for Antony!

*Eno.* Her gentlewomen, like the Nereides,

So many mermaids, tended her i' the eyes.

And made their bends adornings: at the helm

A seeming mermaid steers: the silken tackle

Swell with the touches of those flower-soft

hands.

That rarely frame the office. From the barge

A strange invisable perfume hits the sense

Of the adjacent winds. The city cast

Her people out upon her; and Antony,

Enthroned I' the market-place, did sit alone,  
Whistling to the air; which, but for vacancy,  
Had gone to gaze on Cleopatra too  
And made a gap in nature.

*Ant.* Rare Egyptian!

*Eno.* Upon her landing, Antony sent to her,  
Invited her to supper: she replied,  
It should be better he became her guest;  
Which she entreated: our courtesous Antony,  
Whom ne'er the word of 'No' woman heard

Being harber'd ten times o'er, goes to the feast,  
And for his ordinary pays his heart 230  
For what his eyes eat only.

*Ant.* Royal wench!

She made great Caesar lay his sword to bed:  
He plough'd her, and she cropp'd.

*Eno.* I saw her once  
Hop forty paces through the public street;  
And having lost her breath, she spoke, and  
panted,

That she did make defect perfection,  
And, breathless, power breathe forth.

*Mec.* Now Antony must leave her utterly.

*Eno.* Never; he will not:

Age cannot wither her, nor custom stale 240  
Her infinite variety: other women cloy  
The appetites they feed; but she makes hungry  
Where most she satisfies: for vilest things  
Become themselves in her; that the holy priests  
Bless her when she is riggish.

*Mec.* If beauty, wisdom, modesty, can settle  
The heart of Antony, Octavia is  
A blessed lottery to him.

*Ant.* Let us go.

Good Enobarbus, make yourself my guest 249  
Whilst you abide here.

*Eno.* Humbly, sir, I thank you. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE III. The same. Caesar's house.

*Enter* ANTONY, CESAR, OCTAVIA between  
them, and Attendants.

*Ant.* The world and my great office will  
sometimes  
Divide me from your bosom.

*Octa.* All which time  
Before the gods my knee shall bow my prayers  
To them for you.

*Ant.* Good night, sir. My Octavia,  
Read not my blemishes in the world's report:  
I have not kept my square; but that to come  
Shall all be done by the rule. Good night, dear  
lady.

Good night, sir.

*Ces.* Good night.  
*[Exeunt Cesar and Octavia.]*

*Enter* Soothsayer.

*Ant.* Now, sirrah; you do wish yourself in  
me!

Would I had never come from thence,  
nor you  
Thither!

*Ant.* If you can, your reason!

*Sooth.* I see it in  
My motion, have it not in my tongue: but yet  
Hie you to Egypt again.

*Ant.* Say!  
Whose fortunes shall rise?  
mine?

Cesar's or

*Sooth.*

Therefore, O Antony, stay not by his side:  
Thy demon, that's thy spirit which keeps thee, is  
Noble, courageous, high, unmatchable, 20  
Where Caesar's is not; but, near him, thy angel  
Becomes a fear, as being o'erpower'd: therefore  
Make space enough between you.

*Ant.* Speak this no more.  
*Sooth.* To none but thee; no more, but  
when to thee.

If thou dost play with him at any game,  
Thou art sure to lose; and, of that natural  
luck,

He beats thee 'gainst the odds: thy lustre  
thickens,

When he shines by: I say again, thy spirit  
Is all afraid to govern thee near him;  
But, he away, 'tis noble.

*Ant.* Get thee gone: 30  
Say to Ventidius I would speak with him:

*[Exit Soothsayer.]*

He shall to Parthia. Be it art or hap,  
He hath spoken true: the very dice obey him;  
And in our sports my better cunning faints  
Under his chance: if we draw lots, he speeds;  
His cocks do win the battle still of mine,  
When it is all to nought; and his quails ever  
Beat mine, inhoop'd, at odds. I will to Egypt:  
And though I make this marriage for my peace,  
I' the east my pleasure lies.

*Enter* VENTIDIUS.

O, come, Ventidius, 40

You must to Parthia: your commission's ready;  
Follow me, and receive 't. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE IV. The same. A street.

*Enter* LEPIDUS, MECENAS, and AGRIPPA.

*Lep.* Trouble yourselves no further: pray  
you, hasten  
Your generals after.

*Ant.* Sir, Mark Antony  
Will e'en but kiss Octavia, and we'll follow.  
*Lep.* Till I shall see you in your soldier's

Which will become you both, farewell.

*Mec.* We shall,  
As I conceive the journey, be at the Mount  
Before you, Lepidus.

*Lep.* Your way is shorter;  
My purposes do draw me much about:  
You'll win two days upon me.

*Mec.* Sir, good success!

*Ant.* Farewell. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE V. Alexandria. Cleopatra's palace.

*Enter* CLEOPATRA, CHARMIAS, IRAS, and  
ALEXAS.

*Cleo.* Give me some music; music, sweetly  
food

Of us that trade in love.  
*Attendants.* The music, ho!

*Enter MARDIAN the Eunuch.*

*Cleo.* Let it alone; let's to billiards: come, Charmian.

*Char.* My arm is sore; best play with Mardian.

*Cleo.* As well a woman with an eunuch play'd

As with a woman. Come, you'll play with me, sir!

*Mard.* As well as I can, madam.

*Cleo.* And when good will is show'd, though't come too short.

The actor may plead pardon. I'll none now: Give me mine angle; we'll to the river: there,

My music playing far off, I will betray Tawny-fin'd fishes; my bended hook shall pierce

Their slimy jaws; and, as I draw them up, I'll think them every one an Antony.

And say 'Ah, ha! you're caught.'

*Char.* 'Twas merry when You wagger'd on your angling; when your diver

Did hang a salt-fish on his hook, which he With fervency drew up.

*Cleo.* That time,—O times!—I laugh'd him out of patience; and that night

I laugh'd him into patience: and next morn, Ere the ninth hour, I drunk him to his bed;

Then put my tires and mantles on him, whilst I wore his sword Philippan.

*Enter a Messenger.*

O, from Italy!

Ram thou thy fruitful tidings in mine ears, That long time have been barren.

*Mess.* Madam, madam,—*Cleo.* Antonius dead!—If thou say so, villain,

Thou kill'st thy mistress: but well and free, If thou so yield him, there is gold, and here

My blindest veins to kiss; a hand that kings Have lip'd, and trembled kissing.

*Mess.* First, madam, he is well.

*Cleo.* Why, there's more gold. But, sirrah, mark, we use

To say the dead are well: bring it to that, The gold I give thee will I melt and pour

Down thy ill-uttering throat.

*Mess.* Good madam, hear me.

*Cleo.* Well, go to, I will: But there's no goodness in thy face: if

*Antony* Be free and healthful,—so tart a favour

To trumpet such good tidings! If not well, Thou shouldst come like a Fury crown'd with snakes.

*Mess.* Will't please you hear me?

*Cleo.* I have a mind to strike thee ere thou speak'st.

Yet, if thou say Antony lives, is well, Or if thou say he's dead, or not captive to him,

I'll reward thee with a shower of gold, and hail thee down upon thee.

*Mess.* Madam, he's well.

*Cleo.* Well said. And friends with Caesar.

*Mess.* Thou'rt an honest man.

*Mess.* Caesar and he are greater friends than ever.

*Cleo.* Make thee a fortune from me.

*Mess.* But yet, madam,—

*Cleo.* I do not like 'But yet'; it does allay The good precedence; sit upon 'But yet'!

*Mess.* 'But yet' is as a gaoler to bring forth Some monstrous malefactor. Prithas, friend,

Pour out the pack of matters to mine ear. The good and bad together; he's friends with Caesar;

In state of health thou say'st; and thou say'st free.

*Mess.* Free, madam! no; I made no such report:

He's bound unto Octavia.

*Cleo.* For what good turn?

*Mess.* For the best turn i' the bed.

*Cleo.* I am pale, Charmian.

*Mess.* Madam, he's married to Octavia.

*Cleo.* The most infectious pestilence upon thee! *[Strikes him down.]*

*Mess.* Good madam, patience.

*Cleo.* What say you? Hence, *[Strikes him again.]*

Horrible villain! or I'll spurn thine eyes Like balls before me; I'll unhair thy head:

*[She halts him up and down.]* Thou shalt be whipp'd with wire, and stew'd in brine,

Smarting in lingering pickle.

*Mess.* Gracious madam, I that do bring the news made not the match.

*Cleo.* Say tis not so, a province I will give thee

And make thy fortunes proud: the blow thou hadst

Shall make thy peace for moving me to rage; And I will boot thee with what gift beside:

Thy modesty can beg.

*Mess.* He's married, madam.

*Cleo.* Rogue, thou hast lived too long. *[Draws a knife.]*

*Mess.* Nay, then I'll run.

What mean you, madam! I have made no fault. *[Exit.]*

*Char.* Good madam, keep yourself within yourself:

The man is innocent.

*Cleo.* Some innocents 'scape not the thunder-bolt.

Melt Egypt into Nile! and kindly creatures Turn all to serpents! Call the slave again: 79

Though I am mad, I will not bite him: call.

*Char.* He is afraid to come.

*Cleo.* I will not hurt him. *[Exit Charmian.]*

These hands do lack nobility, that they strike A meaner than myself; since I myself Have given myself the cause.

*Re-enter CHARMIAN and Messenger.*

Come hither, sir. Though it be honest, it is never good To bring bad news: give to a gracious message An host of tongues; but let ill tidings tell Themselves when they be told.

*Mess.* I have done my duty.

*Cleo.* Is he married?

I cannot hate thee worse than I do,  
If thou again say 'Yes.' 90

*Mess.* He's married, madam.

*Cleo.* The gods confound thee! dost thou  
hold there still?

*Mess.* Should I lie, madam?

*Cleo.* O, I would thou didst,  
So half my Egypt were submerged and made  
A cistern for scaled snakes! Go, get thee  
hence:

Hast thou Narcissus in thy face, to me  
Thou wouldst appear most ugly. He is married!

*Mess.* I crave your highness' pardon.

*Cleo.* He is married!

*Mess.* Take no offence that I would not  
offend you:

To punish me for what you make me do 100  
Seems much unequal: he's married to Octavia.

*Cleo.* O, that his fault should make a knave  
of thee,

That art not what thou'rt sure of! Get thee  
hence:

The merchandise which thou hast brought  
from Rome

Are all too dear for me: lie they upon thy  
hand,

And be undone by 'em! [*Exit Messenger.*]

*Char.* Good your highness, patience.

*Cleo.* In praising Antony, I have dispraised  
Caesar.

*Char.* Many times, madam.

*Cleo.* I am paid for't now.  
Lead me from hence;

I faint: O Iras, Charmian! 'tis no matter. 110  
Go to the fellow, good Alexas; bid him

Report the feature of Octavia, her years,  
Her inclination, let him not leave out  
The colour of her hair: bring me word quickly.

[*Exit Alexas.*]  
Let him for ever go:—let him not—Charmian,  
Though he be painted one way like a Gorgon,  
The other way 's a Mars. Bid you Alexas

[*To Mardian.*]  
Bring me word how tall she is. Pity me,  
Charmian,

But do not speak to me. Lead me to my  
chamber. [*Exit.*]

# SCENE VI. Near Misenum.

*Flourish.* Enter POMPEY and MENAS at one  
side, with drum and trumpet: at another,  
CESAR, ANTONY, LEPIDUS, ENOBARBUS,  
MECENAS, with Soldiers marching.

*Pom.* Your hostages I have, so have you  
mine;

And we shall talk before we fight.

*Ces.* Most meet  
That first we come to words; and therefore  
have we

Our written purposes before us sent;

Which, if thou hast consider'd, let us know  
If 'twill tie up thy discontented sword,

And carry back to Sicily much tall youth  
That else must perish here.

*Pom.* To you all three,  
The senators alone of this great world,  
Chief factors for the gods, I do not know

Wherefore my father should revengers want,  
Having a son and friends: since Julius Caesar,  
Who at Philippi the good Brutus ghosted,  
There saw you labouring for him. What was't  
That moved pale Cassius to conspire; and what  
Made the all-honour'd, honest Roman, Brutus,  
With the arm'd rest, couriers of beautiful  
freedom,

To drench the Capitol; but that they would  
Have one man but a man? And that is it 120  
Hath made me rig my navy; at whose burthen  
The anger'd ocean foams; with which I meant  
To scourge the ingratitude that spiteful Rome  
Cast on my noble father.

*Ces.* Take your time.

*Ant.* Thou canst not fear us, Pompey, with  
thy sails;

We'll speak with thee at sea: at land, thou  
know'st

How much we do o'er-count thee.

*Pom.* At land, indeed,  
Thou dost o'er-count me of my father's house:

But, since the cuckoo builds not for himself,  
Remain in't as thou mayst.

*Lep.* Be pleased to tell us—  
For this is from the present—how you take 130  
The offers we have sent you.

*Ces.* There's the point.

*Ant.* Which do not be entreated to, but  
weigh

What it is worth embraced.

*Ces.* And what may follow,  
To try a larger fortune.

*Pom.* You have made me offer  
Of Sicily, Sardinia; and I must  
Bid all the sea of pirates; then, to send  
Measures of wheat to Rome; this 'greed upon,  
To part with unback'd edges, and bear back  
Our targes undented.

*Ces. Ant. Lep.* That's our offer.

*Pom.* Knew, then, 140  
I came before you here a man prepared  
To take this offer: but Mark Antony  
Put me to some impatience; though I love  
The praises of it by telling, you must know  
When Caesar and your brother were at blows,  
Your mother came to Sicily and did find  
Her welcome friendly.

*Ant.* I have heard it, Pompey;  
And am well studied for a liberal thanks  
Which I do owe you.

*Pom.* Let me have your hand:

I did not think, sir, to have met you here. 150  
*Ant.* The beds 't' the east are soft; and  
thanks to you,

That call'd me timelier than my purpose hither;  
For I have gain'd by't.

*Ces.* Since I saw your last  
There is a change upon you.

*Pom.* Well, I know it  
What counts harsh fortune casts upon my fate;  
But in my bosom shall she never come.  
To make my heart her vessel.

*Lep.* Well met, here.

*Pom.* I hope so, Lepidus. What we are  
agreed:

I crave our  
sails between us.

*Ces.* That's the next to do. 60  
*Pom.* We'll feast each other ere we part;  
 and let's

Draw lots who shall begin.

*Ant.* That will I, Pompey.

*Pom.* No, Antony, take the lot: but, first  
 Or last, your fine Egyptian cookery  
 Shall have the fame. I have heard that Julius

*Cesar*  
 Grew fat with feasting there.

*Ant.* You have heard much.

*Pom.* I have fair meanings, sir.

*Ant.* And fair words to them.

*Pom.* Then so much have I heard:

And I have heard, Apollodorus carried—

*Eno.* No more of that: he did so.

*Pom.* What, I pray you? 70

*Eno.* A certain queen to Caesar in a mat-

*Pom.* I know thee now: how farest thou,  
 soldier?

*Eno.* Well;

And well am like to do; for, I perceive,  
 Four feasts are toward.

*Pom.* Let me shake thy hand;  
 I never hated thee: I have seen thee fight,  
 When I have envied thy behaviour.

*Eno.* Sir,  
 I never loved you much; but I ha' praised ye,  
 When you have well deserved ten times as  
 much

As I have said you did.

*Pom.* Enjoy thy plainness, so  
 It nothing ill becomes thee.

Aboard my galley I invite you all:

Will you lead, lords?

*Ces. Ant. Lep.* Show us the way, sir.

*Pom.* Come.

[*Exeunt all but Menas and Enobarbus.*  
*Men.* [*Aside*] Thy father, Pompey, would  
 ne'er have made this treaty.—You and I have  
 known, sir.

*Eno.* At sea, I think.

*Men.* We have, sir.

*Eno.* You have done well by water.

*Men.* And you by land. 80

*Eno.* I will praise any man that will praise  
 me; though it cannot be denied what I have  
 done by land.

*Men.* Nor what I have done by water.

*Eno.* Yes, something you can deny for your  
 own safety: you have been a great thief by sea.

*Men.* And you by land.

*Eno.* There I deny my land service. But  
 my hand, Menas; if our eyes had  
 here they might take two thieves 80

*Men.* All men's faces are true, whate'er  
 their hands are.

*Eno.* But there is never a fair woman has a  
 true face.

*Men.* No slander: they steal hearts.

*Eno.* We came hither to fight with you.

*Men.* For my part, I am sorry it is turned  
 to a drinking. Pompey doth this day laugh  
 away his fortune. 110

*Eno.* If he do, sure, he cannot weep 't back

*Men.* You've said, sir. We looked not for  
 Mark Antony here: pray you, is he married to  
 Cleopatra?

*Eno.* Caesar's sister is called Octavia.

*Men.* True, sir; she was the wife of Caius

Marcellus.

*Eno.* But she is now the wife of Marcus  
 Antonius.

*Men.* Pray ye, sir!

*Eno.* 'Tis true.

*Men.* Then is Caesar and he for ever knit  
 together.

*Eno.* If I were bound to divine of this unity,  
 I would not prophesy so.

*Men.* I think the policy of that purpose  
 made more in the marriage than the love of  
 the parties.

*Eno.* I think so too. But you shall find,  
 the band that seems to tie their friendship  
 together will be the very strangler of their  
 amity: Octavia is of a holy, cold, and still  
 conversation. 131

*Men.* Who would not have his wife so!

*Eno.* Not he that himself is not so; which  
 is Mark Antony. He will to his Egyptian dish  
 again: then shall the sighs of Octavia blow the  
 fire up in Caesar; and, as I said before, that  
 which is the strength of their amity shall prove  
 the immediate author of their variance. Antony  
 will use his affection where it is: he married  
 but his occasion here. 140

*Men.* And thus it may be. Come, sir, will  
 you aboard? I have a health for you.

*Eno.* I shall take it, sir: we have used our  
 throats in Egypt.

*Men.* Come, let's away.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VII. On board Pompey's galley, off  
 Misenum.

*Music plays.* Enter two or three Servants  
 with a banquet.

*First Serv.* Here they'll be, man. Some o'  
 their plants are ill-rooted already; the least  
 wind'll the world will blow them down.

*Sec. Serv.* Lepidus is high-coloured.

*First Serv.* They have made him drink  
 alms-drink.

*Sec. Serv.* As they pinch one another by the  
 disposition, he cries out 'No more;' reconciles  
 them to his entreaty, and himself to the drink.

*First Serv.* But it raises the greater war  
 between him and his discretion. 11

*Sec. Serv.* Why, this it is to have a name in  
 great men's fellowship: I had as lief have a  
 reed that will do me no service as a partisan  
 I could not heave.

*First Serv.* To be called into a huge sphere,  
 and not to be seen to move in't, are the holes  
 where eyes should be, which pitifully disaster  
 the cheeks.

A sennet sounded. Enter CESAR, ANTONY,  
 LEPIDUS, POMPEY, AGRIPPA, MENENAS,  
 ENOBARBUS, MENAS, with other captains.

*Ant.* [*To Cesar*] Thus do they, sir: they  
 take the flow of the Nile  
 By certain scales of the pyramid; they know,



By the height, the lowness, or the mean, if  
dearth

Or foison follow: the higher Nilus swells,  
The more it promises: as it ebbs, the seedman  
Upon the slime and ooze scatters his grain,  
And shortly comes to harvest.

*Lep.* You've strange serpents there.

*Ant.* Ay, Lepidus.

*Lep.* Your serpent of Egypt is bred now of  
your mud by the operation of your sun: so is  
your crocodile.

*Ant.* They are so.

*Pom.* Sit,—and some wine! A health to  
Lepidus!

*Lep.* I am not so well as I should be, but  
I'll ne'er out.

*Eno.* Not till you have slept; I fear me  
you'll be in till then.

*Lep.* Nay, certainly, I have heard the Ptole-  
my's pyramids are very goodly things; without  
contradiction, I have heard that.

*Men.* [*Aside to Pom.*] Pompey, a word.

*Pom.* [*Aside to Men.*] Say in  
mine ear: what is't?

*Men.* [*Aside to Pom.*] Forsake thy seat, I  
do beseech thee, captain.

And hear me speak a word.

*Pom.* [*Aside to Men.*] Forbear me till anon.  
This wine for Lepidus!

*Lep.* What manner o' thing is your crocodile?

*Ant.* It is shaped, sir, like itself; and it is  
as broad as it hath breadth: it is just so high as  
it is, and moves with it own organs: it lives by  
that which nourisheth it; and the elements  
once out of it, it transmutates.

*Lep.* What colour is it of?

*Ant.* Of it own colour too.

*Lep.* 'Tis a strange serpent.

*Ant.* 'Tis so. And the tears of it are wet.

*Ces.* Will this description satisfy him?

*Ant.* With the health that Pompey gives  
him, else he is a very epicure.

*Pom.* [*Aside to Men.*] Go hang, sir, hang!  
Tell me of that! away!

Do as I bid you. Where's this cup I call'd for?

*Men.* [*Aside to Pom.*] If for the sake of  
merit thou wilt hear me,

Rise from thy stool.

*Pom.* [*Aside to Men.*] I think thou'rt mad.  
The matter? [*Rises, and walks aside.*]

*Men.* I have ever held my cap off to thy  
fortunes.

*Pom.* Thou hast served me with much faith.  
What's else to say?

Be jolly, lords.

*Ant.* These quick-sands, Lepidus,  
Keep off them, for you sink.

*Men.* Wilt thou be lord of all the world?

*Pom.* What say'st thou?

*Men.* Wilt thou be lord of the whole world?

That's twice.

*Pom.* How should that be?

*Men.* But entertain it,  
And though thou think me poor, I am the man  
Will give thee all the world.

*Pom.* Hast thou drunk well?

*Men.* No, Pompey, I have kept me from  
the cup.

Thou art, if thou darest be, the earthly Jove:  
Whate'er the ocean pales, or sky inclips,  
Thine, if thou wilt ha't.

*Pom.* Show me which way.  
These three world-shares, these com-  
petitors,

Are in thy vessel: let me cut the cable;  
And, when we are put off, fall to their throats:  
All there is thine.

*Pom.* Ah, this thou shouldst have done,  
And not have spoke on't! In me 'tis villany;  
In thee 't had been good service. Thou must  
know,

'Tis not my profit that does lead mine honour;  
Mine honour, it. Repent that e'er thy tongue  
Hath so betray'd thine act: being done un-  
known,

I should have found it afterwards well done;  
But must condemn it now. Desist, and drink.

*Men.* [*Aside*] For this,  
I'll never follow thy pall'd fortunes more.

Who seeks, and will not take when once 'tis  
offer'd,

Shall never find it more.

*Pom.* This health to Lepidus! go  
*Ant.* Bear him ashore. I'll pledge it for  
him, Pompey.

*Eno.* Here's to thee, Menas!

*Men.* Enobarbus, welcome!

*Pom.* Fill till the cup be hid.

*Eno.* There's a strong fellow, Menas.  
[*Pointing to the Attendant who carries  
of Lepidus.*]

*Men.* Why!

*Eno.* A' bears the third part of the world,  
man; see't not!

*Men.* The third part, then, is drunk: would  
it were all.

That it might go on wheels!

*Eno.* Drink thou; increase the reels.

*Men.* Come.

*Pom.* This is not yet an Alexandrian feast.

*Ant.* It ripens towards it. Strike the vessels,  
ho!

Here is to Caesar!

*Ces.* I could well forbear't.

It's monstrous labour, when I wash my brain,  
And it grows fouler.

*Ant.* Be a child o' the time.

*Ces.* Possess it, I'll make answer:  
But I had rather fast from all four days  
Than drink so much in one.

*Eno.* Ha, my brave emperor! [*To Antony.*]  
Shall we dance now the Egyptian Bacchanals,  
And celebrate our drink?

*Pom.* Let's ha't, good soldiers.

*Ant.* Come, let's all take hands,  
Till that the conquering wine hath steep'd our  
senses

In soft and delicate Letha.

*Eno.* All take hands.  
Make battery to our ears with the loud music:  
The while I'll place you: then the boy shall  
sing;

The holding every man shall bear as loud  
As his strong sides can volley.

[*Music plays. Enobarbus places them  
round the table.*]

## THE SONG.

Come, thou monarch of the vine,  
Plump Bacchus with pink eye!  
In thy haze our cares be drown'd,  
With thy grapes our hairs be crown'd  
Oup us, till the world go round,  
Oup us, till the world go round!

*Eno.* What would you more! Pompey, good night. Good brother,  
Let me request you off: our graver business  
Frowns at this levity. Gentle lords, let's part;  
You see we have burnt our cheeks: strong

*Enobarbus*  
Is weaker than the wine; and mine own tongue  
Splits what it speaks: the wild disguise hath  
almost  
Antick'd us all. What needs more words?  
Good night.

Good Antony, your hand.

*Pom.* I'll try you on the shore.

*Ant.* And shall, sir: give's your hand.

*Pom.* O Antony,  
You have my father's house,—But, what! we  
are friends.

Come, down into the boat.

*Eno.* Take heed you fall not.

[*Exeunt all but Enobarbus and Menas.*]

*Menas.* I'll not on shore.

*Men.* No, to my cabin.

These drums! these trumpets, flutes! what!

Let Neptune hear we bid a loud farewell!

To these great fellows: sound and be hang'd,  
sound out! [*Sound a flourish with drums.*]

*Eno.* Ho! says a'. There's my cap. <sup>141</sup>

*Men.* Ho! Noble captain, come. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT III.

## SCENE I. A plain in Syria.

*Enter VENTIDIUS as it were in triumph, with  
SILIUS, and other Romans, Officers, and  
Soldiers; the dead body of PACCORUS borne  
before him.*

*Ven.* Now, darling Parthia, art thou struck;  
and now

Pleas'd fortune does of Marcus Crassus' death  
Make me revenger. Bear the king's son's body  
Before our army. Thy Pacorus, Ordes,  
Pays this for Marcus Crassus.

*Sil.* Noble Ventidius,  
Whilst yet with Parthian blood thy sword is  
warm,

The fugitive Parthians follow; spur through  
Media,

Mesopotamia, and the shewers whither  
The scented fly: so thy grand captain Antony  
Shall set thee on triumphant chariots and  
Put garlands on thy head.

*Ven.* O Silius, Silius,  
I have done enough; a lower place, note well,  
May make too great an act: for learn this,  
Silius:

Better by these undings, than by our deed  
Antony has gain'd a fame what him we serve's

Antony have ever won

More in their officer than person: So much  
One of my place in Syria, his lieutenant,  
For quick accumulation of renown,  
Which he achieved by the minute, lost his  
favour.

Who does? the wate more than his captain can  
Becomes his captain's captain: and ambition,  
The soldier's virtue, rather makes choice of loss,  
Than gain which darkens him.  
I could do more to do Antonius good,  
But 'twould offend him; and in his offence  
Should my performance perish.

*Sil.* Thou hast, Ventidius, that  
Without the which a soldier, and his sword,  
Grants scarce distinction. Thou wilt write to  
Antony!

*Ven.* I'll humbly signify what in his name,  
That magical word of war, we have effected; <sup>32</sup>  
How, with his banners and his well-paid ranks,  
The ne'er-yet-beaten horse of Parthia  
We have jaded out o' the field.

*Sil.* Where is he now?  
*Ven.* He purposeth to Athens: whither,  
with what haste

The weight we must convey with's will permit,  
We shall appear before him. On, there; pass  
along! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. Rome. An ante-chamber in  
Caesar's house.

*Enter AGRIPPA at one door, ENOBARBUS  
at another.*

*Agr.* What, are the brothers parted?

*Eno.* They have dispatch'd with Pompey,  
he is gone;

The other three are sealing. Octavia weeps  
To part from Rome; Caesar is sad; and Lepidus  
Since Pompey's feast, as Menas says, is troubled  
With the green sickness.

*Agr.* 'Tis a noble Lepidus.

*Eno.* A very fine one: O, how he loves  
Caesar!

*Agr.* Nay, but how dearly he adores Mark  
Antony!

*Eno.* Caesar! Why, he's the Jupiter of men.

*Agr.* What's Antony? The god of Jupiter.

*Eno.* Speaks you of Caesar! How! the non-  
pareil!

*Agr.* O Antony! O thou Arabian bird! <sup>11</sup>

*Eno.* Would you praise Caesar, say 'Caesar':  
go no further.

*Agr.* Indeed, he plied them both with excel-  
lent praises.

*Eno.* But he loves Caesar best; yet he loves  
Antony:

Ho! hearts, tongues, figures, scribbles, hands,  
poets, cannot

Think, speak, cast, write, sing, number, he!  
His love to Antony. But as for Caesar,

Kneel down, kneel down, and wonder.

*Agr.* Both he loves  
*Eno.* They are his shadows, and he their  
beetle. [*Trumpets within.*] So:

This is to bury. Adieu, noble A.  
*Agr.* Good fortune, worthy  
farewell.

## SCENE II]

## ANTONY AND CLEOPATRA

*Enter CESAR, ANTONY, LEPIDUS, and OCTAVIA.*

*Ant.* No further, sir.

*Ces.* You take from me a great part of myself;

Use me well in't. Sister, prove such a wife  
As my thoughts make thee, and as my farthest  
band

Shall pass on thy approval. Most noble Antony,  
Let not the piece of virtue, which is set  
Betwixt us as the cement of our love,  
To keep it builded, be the ram to batter 30  
The fortress of it; for better might we  
Have loved without this mean, if on both parts  
This be not cherish'd.

*Ant.* Make me not offended

In your distrust.

*Ces.* I have said.

*Ant.* You shall not find,  
Though you be therein curious, the least cause  
For what you seem to fear: so, the gods keep  
you,

And make the hearts of Romans serve your  
ends!

We will here part.

*Ces.* Farewell, my dearest sister, fare thee  
well:

The elements be kind to thee, and make 40  
Thy spirits all of comfort! fare thee well.

*Oct.* My noble brother!

*Ant.* The April's in her eyes: it is love's  
spring,

And these the showers to bring it on. Be  
cheerful.

*Oct.* Sir, look well to my husband's house;  
and—

*Ces.* What,

Octavia!

*Oct.* I'll tell you in your ear.

*Ant.* Her tongue will not obey her heart,  
nor can

Her heart inform her tongue,—the swan's down-  
feather,

That stands upon the swell at full of tide,

And neither way inclines. 50

*Eno.* [*Aside to Agr.*] Will Caesar weep?

*Agr.* [*Aside to Eno.*] He has a cloud  
in's face.

*Eno.* [*Aside to Agr.*] He were the worse  
for that were he a home;

So is he, being a man.

*Agr.* [*Aside to Eno.*] Why, Enocharbus,  
When Antony found Julius Caesar dead,

He cried almost to roaring; and he wept  
When at Philippi he found Brutus slain.

*Eno.* [*Aside to Agr.*] That year, indeed, he  
was troubled with a rheum;

What will he do he did confound his wall'd,  
Believe't, till I wept too.

*Ces.* No, sweet Octavia,  
You shall hear from me still; the time shall  
not

Out-go my thinking on you. 60

*Ant.* Come, sir, come;  
I'll wrattle with you in my strength of love:

Look, here I have you; thus I let you go,  
And give you to the gods.

*Ces.* Adieu; be happy!  
*Lep.* Let all the number of the stars give  
light

To thy fair way!

*Ces.* Farewell, farewell! [*Kisses Octavia.*

*Ant.* Farewell!

[*Trumpets sound. Exeunt.*]

## SCENE III. Alexandria. Cleopatra's palace.

*Enter CLEOPATRA, CHARMIAN, IRAS, and ALEXAS.*

*Cleo.* Where is the fellow?

*Alex.* Half afraid to come.

*Cleo.* Go to, go to.

*Enter the Messenger as before.*

Come hither, sir.

*Alex.* Good majesty,  
Herod of Jewry dare not look upon you  
But when you are well pleased.

*Cleo.* That Herod's head

I'll have: but how, when Antony is gone  
Through whom I might command it! Come  
thou near.

*Mess.* Most gracious majesty,—

*Cleo.* Didst thou behold Octavia?

*Mess.* Ay, dread queen.

*Cleo.* Where? 10

*Mess.* Madam, in Rome;

I look'd her in the face, and saw her led  
Between her brother and Mark Antony.

*Cleo.* Is she as tall as me?

*Mess.* She is not, madam.

*Cleo.* Didst hear her speak? is she skilful-  
tongued or low?

*Mess.* Madam, I heard her speak; she is  
low-voiced.

*Cleo.* That's not so good: he cannot like her  
long.

*Char.* Like her! O Isis! 'tis impossible.

*Cleo.* I think so, Charmian: dull of tongue,  
and dwarfish!

What majesty is in her gait? Remember, so  
If e'er thou look'dst on majesty.

*Mess.* She creeps:

Her motion and her station are as one;

She shows a body rather than a life,  
A statue than a breather.

*Cleo.* Is this certain?

*Mess.* Or I have no observance.

*Char.* Three in Egypt

Cannot make better note.

*Cleo.* He's very knowing:

I do perceive't: there's nothing in her yet.

The fellow has good judgement.

*Char.* Know'st thou

*Cleo.* Guess at her years, I prithee.

*Mess.* She was a widow,—

*Cleo.* Widow! Charmian, hark!

*Mess.* And I do think she's thirty.

*Cleo.* Bear'st thou her face in mind? is't

long or round?

*Mess.* Round even to fullness.

*Cleo.* For the most part, too, they are foolish  
that are so.

Her hair, what colour?

*Mess.* Brown, madam: and her forehead  
As low as she would wish it.

*Cleo.* There's gold for thee.  
Thou must not take my former sharpness ill:  
I will employ thee back again; I find thee  
Most fit for business: go make thee ready; 40  
Our letters are prepared. [*Exit Messenger.*]

*Char.* A proper man.

*Cleo.* Indeed, he is so: I repent me much  
That so I harried him. Why, methinks, by  
him,  
This creature's no such thing.

*Char.* Nothing, madam.

*Cleo.* The man hath seen some majesty, and  
should know.

*Char.* Hath he seen majesty? Isis else  
defend,  
And serving you so long!

*Cleo.* I have one thing more to ask him yet,  
good Charmian:

But 'tis no matter; thou shalt bring him to me  
Where I will write. All may be well enough. 50

*Char.* I warrant you, madam. [*Exit.*]

SCENE IV. *Athens. A room in Antony's house.*

*Enter ANTONY AND OCTAVIA.*

*Ant.* Nay, nay, Octavia, not only that.—  
That were excusable, that, and thousands more  
Of semblable import,—but he hath waged  
New wars 'gainst Pompey; made his will, and  
read it

To public ear:  
Spoke scantly of me: when perforce he could  
not

But pay me terms of honour, cold and sickly  
He vented them; most narrow measure lent  
me:

When the best hint was given him, he not  
took't,  
Or did it from his teeth.

*Oct.* O my good lord, 10  
Believe not all; or, if you must believe,  
Stomach not all. A more unhappy lady,  
If this division chance, ne'er stood between,  
Praying for both parts:

The good gods will mock me presently,  
When I shall pray, 'O, bless my lord and  
husband!'

Undo that prayer, by crying out as loud,  
'O, bless my brother!' Husband win, win  
brother.

Prays, and destroys the prayer; no midway  
'Twixt these extremes at all.

*Ant.* Gentle Octavia, 20  
Let your best love draw to that point, which  
needs

Best to preserve it: if I lose mine honour,  
I lose myself: better I were not yours  
Than yours so branchless. But, as you re-  
quested,

Yourself shall go between's: the mean time,  
I'll make preparation of a war

Shall show your brother: make your soonest  
leave.

So your desires are yours.

*Oct.* Thanks to my lord.  
The Jove of power make me most weak, most  
weak.

Your reconciler! Wars 'twixt you twain would  
be 30

As if the world should cleave, and that slain  
men

Should solder up the rift.

*Ant.* When it appears to you where this  
begins,

Turn your displeasure that way; for our faults  
Can never be so equal, that your love

Can equally move with them. (Provide your  
going;

Choose your own company, and command what  
cost

Your heart has mind to. [*Exit.*]

SCENE V. *The same. Another room.*

*Enter ENOBARBUS AND ERAS, meeting.*

*Eros.* How now, friend Eros!

*Eros.* There's strange news come, sir.

*Eros.* What, man!

*Eros.* Caesar and Lepidus have made wars  
upon Pompey.

*Eros.* This is old; what is the success?

*Eros.* Caesar, having made use of him in the  
wars 'gainst Pompey, presently denied him  
rivalry; would not let him partake in the  
glory of the action: and not resting here,  
accuses him of letters he had formerly wrote to  
Pompey; upon his own appeal, seizes him:  
so the poor third is up, till death enlarge his  
confine.

*Eros.* Then, world, thou hast a pair of chaps,  
no more;  
And throw between them all the food thou hast,  
They'll grind the one the other. Where's  
Antony!

*Eros.* He's walking in the garden—thus;  
and spurns

The rush that lies before him; cries, 'Fool  
Lepidus!'

And threats the throat of that his officer 10  
That murder'd Pompey.

*Eros.* Our great navy's rigg'd.

*Eros.* For Italy and Caesar. More, Domitius;  
My lord desires you presently: my news  
I might have told hereafter.

*Eros.* 'Twill be naught:  
But let it be. Bring me to Antony.

*Eros.* Come, sir. [*Exit.*]

SCENE VI. *Rome. Caesar's house.*

*Enter CAESAR, AGRIPPA, and MEOBENAS.*

*Ca.* Contemning Rome, he has done all  
this, and more,

In Alexandria: here's the manner of't:  
I the market-place, on a tribunal silver'd,  
Cleopatra and herself in chairs of gold  
Were publicly enthroned: at the feet sat  
Caesar, whom they call my father's son,  
And all the unlawful issues that their lust  
Since then hath made between them. Up to her  
He gave the establishment of Egypt; made her

Of lower Syria, Cyprus, Lydia,

Absolute queen.

*Mec.* This in the public eye!

*Ces.* 'Tis the common show-place, where they exercise.

His sons he there proclaim'd the kings of kings :  
Great Media, Parthia, and Armenia,  
He gave to Alexander; to Ptolemy he assign'd  
Syria, Cilicia, and Phenicia; she  
In the habitments of the goddess Isis  
That day appear'd; and oft before gave audience,  
As 'tis reported, so.

*Mec.* Let Rome be thus  
Inform'd.

*Ag.* Who, queasy with his insolence so  
Already, will their good thoughts call from him.

*Ces.* The people know it; and have now  
received  
His accusations.

*Ag.* Who does he accuse?

*Ces.* Caesar: and that, having in Sicily  
Sextus Pompeius spoil'd, we had not rated him  
His part o' the Isle: then does he say, he lent  
me

Some shipping unrestored: lastly, he frets  
That Lepidus of the triumvirate  
Should be deposed; and, being, that we detain  
All his revenue.

*Ag.* Sir, this should be answer'd. 30  
*Ces.* 'Tis done already, and the messenger  
gone.

I have told him, Lepidus was grown too cruel;  
That he his high authority abused,  
And did deserve his change: for what I have  
conquer'd,

I grant him part; but then, in his Armenia,  
And other of his conquer'd kingdoms, I  
Demand the like.

*Mec.* He'll never yield to that.

*Ces.* Nor must not then be yielded to in  
this.

*Enter OCTAVIA with her train.*

*Oct.* Hail, Caesar, and my lord! hail, most  
dear Caesar!

*Ces.* That ever I should call thee castaway!

*Oct.* You have not call'd me so, nor have  
you cause. 40

*Ces.* Why have you sto'n upon us thus?  
You come not

Like Caesar's sister: the wife of Antony  
Should have an army for an usher, and  
The neighs of horse to tell of her approach  
Long ere she did appear; the trees by the way  
Should have borne men; and expectation  
fainted,

Longing for what it had not; nay, the dust  
Should have ascended to the roof of heaven,  
Rais'd by your populous troops: but you are  
come 50

A market-maid to Rome; and have prevented  
The ostentation of our love, which, left un-  
shown,

Is often left unloved: we should have met you  
By sea and land; supplying every stage  
With an augmented greeting.

*Oct.* Good sir—  
To come thus was I not constrain'd,

On my free will. My lost, Mark Antony,  
Hearing that you prepared for war, acquainted  
My griev'd ear withal; whereon, I beg'd  
His pardon for return.

*Ces.* Which soon he granted, so  
Being an obstruct 'tween his lust and him.

*Oct.* Do not say so, my lord.

*Ces.* I have eyes upon him,  
And his affairs come to me on the wind.  
Where is he now?

*Oct.* My lord, in Athens.

*Ces.* No, my most wronged sister; Cleopatra  
Hath nodded him to her. He hath given his  
empire

Up to a whore; who now are levying  
The kings o' the earth for war: he hath as-  
sembled

Bocchus, the king of Libya; Archelaus,  
Of Cappadocia; Philadelphus, king  
Of Paphlagonia; the Thracian king, Adallas; 70  
King Malchus of Arabia; King of Pont;  
Herod of Jewry; Mithridates, king  
Of Comagene; Polemon and Amyntas,  
The kings of Mede and Lycaonia,  
With a more larger list of sceptres.

*Oct.* Ay me, most wretched,  
That have my heart parted betwixt two friends  
That do afflict each other!

*Ces.* Welcome hither:  
Your letters did withhold our breaking forth;  
Till we perceived, both how you were wrong  
led, 80

And we in negligent danger. Cheer your  
heart:

Be you not troubled with the time, which drives  
O'er your content these strong necessities;  
But let determined things to destiny  
Hold unbewail'd their way. Welcome to  
Rome;

Nothing more dear to me. You are abused  
Beyond the mark of thought; and the high  
gods,

To do you justice, make them ministers  
Of us and those that love you. Best of  
comfort;

And ever welcome to us.

*Ag.* Welcome, lady. 90  
*Mec.* Welcome, dear madam.

Each heart in Rome does love and pity you:  
Only the adulterous Antony, most large  
In his abominations, turns you off;  
And gives his potent regiment to a trull,  
That noises it against us.

*Oct.* Is it so, sir?

*Ces.* Most certain. Sister, welcome; grieve

Be ever to patience: my dear sister!

SCENE VII. *Near Actium. Antony's camp.*

*Enter CLEOPATRA and ENOBARBUS.*

*Cleo.* I will be even with thee, doubt it not.

*Eno.* Why, why, why?

*Cleo.* Hast thou seen my being in them  
war,

And say 'tis it not fit.

*Eno.* Well, is it, is it?

*Cleo.* If not denounced against us, why should not we be there in person?

*Eno.* [Aside] Well, I could reply: If we should serve with horse and mares to—

The horse were merely lost; the mares would bear  
A soldier and his horse.

*Cleo.* What is't you say? 10

*Eno.* Your presence needs must puzzle Antony;

Take from his heart, take from his brain, from 's time,

What should not then be spared. He is already  
Traduced for levity; and 'tis said in Rome  
That Photinus an eunuch and your maids  
Manage this war.

*Cleo.* Sink Rome, and their tongues rot  
That speak against us! A charge we bear i'  
the war,

And, as the president of my kingdom, will  
Appear there for a man. Speak not against it;  
I will not stay behind.

*Eno.* Nay, I have done. 20  
Here comes the emperor.

*Enter ANTONY and CANIDIUS.*

*Ant.* Is it not strange, Canidius,  
That from Tarentum and Brundisium  
He could so quickly cut the Ionian sea,  
And take in Tomyne? You have heard on 't,  
sweet!

*Cleo.* Celerity is never more admired  
Than by the negligent.

*Ant.* A good rebuke,  
Which might have well become the best of  
men.

To taunt at slackness. Canidius, we  
Will fight with him by sea.

*Cleo.* By sea! what else?

*Can.* Why will my lord do so?

*Ant.* For that he dares us to 't.

*Eno.* So hath my lord dared him to single  
fight. 31

*Can.* Ay, and to wage this battle at Phar-  
salis.

Where Caesar fought with Pompey: but these  
offices,

Which serve not for his vantage, he shakes off;  
And so should you.

*Eno.* Your ships are not well mann'd;  
Your mariners are muleteers, reapers, people  
Ingras'd by swift impress; in Caesar's fleet  
Are those that often have gainst Pompey  
fought:

Their ships are yare; yours, heavy: no disgrace  
Shall fall you for refusing him at sea, 40  
Being prepared for land.

*Ant.* By sea, by sea.

*Eno.* Most worthy sir, you therein throw  
away

The absolute soldieriahip you have by land;  
Distract your army, which doth most consist  
Of your mark'd footmen; leave unexecuted  
Your own renowned knowledge; quite forego  
The way which promises assurance; and  
Give up yourself merely to chance and hazard,

From firm security.

*Ant.* I'll fight at sea. 49

*Cleo.* I have sixty sails, Caesar none better.

*Ant.* Our overplus of shipping will we burn;  
And, with the rest full-mann'd, from the head  
of Actium

Beat the approaching Caesar. But if we fall,  
We then can do't at land.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Thy business?  
The news is true, my lord; he is  
descried;

Caesar has taken Tomyne.

*Ant.* Can he be there in person? 'tis impos-  
sible;

Strange that his power should be. Canidius,  
Our nineteen legions thou shalt hold by land,  
And our twelve thousand horse. We'll to our  
ship:

Away, my Thetis!

*Enter a Soldier.*

How now, worthy soldier! 61  
*Sold.* O noble emperor, do not fight by sea;  
Trust not to rotten planks; do you misdoubt  
This sword and these my wounds! Let the  
Egyptians

And the Phenicians go a-ducking; we  
Have used to conquer, standing on the earth,  
And fighting foot to foot.

*Ant.* Well, well; away!  
[Exeunt Antony, Cleopatra, and Enocharbus.]

*Sold.* By Hercules, I think I am i' the right.

*Can.* Soldier, thou art; but his whole action  
grows  
Not in the power on 't: so our leader's led, 70  
And we are women's men.

*Sold.* You keep by land  
The legions and the horse whole, do you not?

*Can.* Marcus Octavius, Marcus Junellus,  
Publicola, and Caelius, are for sea;  
But we keep whole by land. This speed of  
Caesar's

Carries beyond belief.

*Sold.* While he was yet in Rome,  
His power went out in such distractions as  
Beguiled all spies.

*Can.* Who's his lieutenant, hear you?

*Sold.* They say, one Taurus.

*Can.* Well I know the man.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* The emperor calls Canidius. 80

*Can.* With news the time's with labour,  
and throes forth,  
Each minute, some. [Exeunt.]

SCENE VIII. A plain near Actium.

*Enter CESAR, and TAURUS, with his army,  
marching.*

*Ces.* Taurus!

*Taur.* My lord!

*Ces.* Strike not by land; keep whole; pro-  
voke not battle,

Till we have done at sea. Do not exceed  
The prescript of this scroll: our fortune lies  
Upon this jump. [Exeunt.]

SCENE IX. *Another part of the plain.**Enter ANTONY and ENOBARBUS.*

*Ant.* Set we our squadrons on yond side o' the hill,  
In eye of Cæsar's battle; from which place  
We may the number of the ships behold,  
And so proceed accordingly. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE X. *Another part of the plain.*

*CANIDIUS marcheth with his land army one way over the stage; and TAURUS, the lieutenant of CÆSAR, the other way. After their going in, is heard the noise of a sea-fight.*

*Alarum. Enter ENOBARBUS.*

*Eno.* Naught, naught, all naught! I can behold no longer:  
The Antoniad, the Egyptian admiral,  
With all their sixty, fly and turn the rudder:  
To see't mine eyes are blasted.

*Enter SCARUS.*

*Scar.* Gods and goddesses,  
All the whole synod of them!

*Eno.* What's thy passion?

*Scar.* The greater cantle of the world is lost  
With very ignorance; we have kiss'd away  
Kingdoms and provinces.

*Eno.* How appears the fight?

*Scar.* On our side like the token'd pestilence,  
Where death is sure. Yon ribaudred nag of

Whom leprosy o'ertake!—I' the midst o' the  
fight,

When vantage like a pair of twins appear'd,  
Both as the same, or rather ours the elder,  
The breeze upon her, like a cow in June,  
Hoists sails and flies.

*Eno.* That I beheld:

Mine eyes did sicken at the sight, and could not  
Endure a further view.

*Scar.* She once being loof'd,

The noble ruin of her magic, Antony,  
Claps on his sea-wing, and, like a doting  
mallard,

Leaving the fight in height, flies after her:  
I never saw an action of such shame;  
Experience, manhood, honour, ne'er before  
Did violate so itself.

*Eno.* Alack, alack!*Enter CANIDIUS.*

*Can.* Our fortune on the sea is out of breath,  
And sinks most lamentably. Had our general  
Deen what he knew himself, it had gone well:  
O, he has given example for our flight,  
Most grossly, by his own!

*Eno.* Ay, are you thereabouts?  
Why, then, good night indeed.

*Can.* Toward Peloponnesus are they fled.

*Scar.* 'Tis easy to't; and there I will attend  
What further comes.

*Can.* To Cæsar will I render  
My legions and my horse: six kings already  
Show me the way of yielding.

*Eno.*

I'll yet follow  
The wounded chance of Antony, though my  
reason  
Sits in the wind against me. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE XI. *Alexandria. Cleopatra's palace.**Enter ANTONY with Attendants.*

*Ant.* Hark! the land bids me tread no more  
upon't;  
It is ashamed to hear me! Friends, come  
hither:

I am so lated in the world, that I  
Have lost my way for ever: I have a ship  
Laden with gold; take that, divide it; fly,  
And make your peace with Cæsar.

*All.*

*Ant.* I have fled myself; and have instructed  
cowards

To run and show their shoulders. Friends, be  
gone;

I have myself resolved upon a course  
Which has no need of you; be gone:

My treasure's in the harbour, take it. O,

I follow'd that I blush to look upon:

My very hairs do mutiny; for the white

Reprove the brown for rashness, and they them  
For fear and doting. Friends, be gone: you  
shall

Have letters from me to some friends that will  
Sweep your way for you. Pray you, look not  
sad,

Nor make replies of loathness: take the hint  
Which my despair proclaims; let that be left

Which leaves itself: to the sea-side straightway:  
I will possess you of that ship and treasure: as

Leave me, I pray, a little: pray you now:  
Nay, do so; for, indeed, I have lost command,

Therefore I pray you: I'll see you by and by.

*[Sits down.]**Enter CLEOPATRA led by CHARMIAN and IRAS; EOS following.*

*Eros.* Nay, gentle madam, to him, comfort  
him.

*Iras.* Do, most dear queen.*Char.* Do! why: what else!*Cleo.* Let me sit down. O June!*Ant.* No, no, no, no, no.*Eros.* See you here, sir!*Ant.* O fie, fie, fie!*Char.* Madam!*Iras.* Madam, O good empress!*Eros.* Sir, sir,—

*Ant.* Yes, my lord, yes; he at Philippi kept  
His sword o'en like a dancer: while I struck

The lean and wrinkled Cæsius; and 'twas I

That the mad Brutus ended: he alone

Dealt on lieutenantry, and no practice had

In the brave squares of war: yet now—No  
matter.

*Cleo.* Ah, stand by.*Eros.* The queen, my lord, the queen.*Iras.* Go to him, madam, speak to him:

He is unacquainted with very shame.

*Cleo.* Well then, sustain me: O!

*Eros.* Most noble sir, arise; the queen approaches;  
Her head's declined, and death will seize her,  
but

Your comfort makes the rescue.

*Ant.* I have offended reputation,  
A most unmovable swerving.

*Eros.* Sir, the queen. 50  
*Ant.* O, whither hast thou led me, Egypt?  
See,

How I convey my shame out of thine eyes  
By looking back what I have left behind  
Stor'd in dishonour.

*Cleo.* O my lord, my lord,  
Forgive my fearful sails! I little thought  
You would have follow'd.

*Ant.* Egypt, thou knew'st too well  
My heart was to thy rudder tied by the strings,  
And thou shouldst tow me after: o'er my  
spirit

Thy full supremacy thou knew'st, and that  
Thy beck might from the bidding of the gods  
Command me.

*Cleo.* O, my pardon!  
*Ant.* Now I must 61  
To the young man send humble treaties, dodge  
And palter in the shifts of lowness; who  
With half the bulk o' the world play'd as I  
pleased,

Making and marring fortunes. You did know  
How much you were my conqueror; and that  
My sword, made weak by my affection, would  
Obey it on all cause.

*Cleo.* Pardon, pardon!  
*Ant.* Fall not a tear, I say; one of them  
rates

All that is won and lost: give me a kiss; 70  
Even this repays me. We sent our school-  
master:

Is he come back? Love, I am full of lead.  
Some wine, within there, and our viands!  
Fortune knows

We scorn her most when most she offers blows.  
[*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE XII. *Egypt. Caesar's camp.*

*Enter* CAESAR, DOLABELLA, THYREUS, with  
others.

*Caes.* Let him appear that's come from  
Antony.  
Know you him?

*Dol.* Caesar, 'tis his schoolmaster:  
An argument that he is pluck'd, when hither  
He sends so poor a pinnion of his wing,  
Which had superfluous kings for messengers  
Not many moons gone by.

*Enter* EUPHROBIUS, ambassador from  
Antony.

*Caes.* Approach, and speak.  
*Euph.* Such as I am, I come from Antony:  
I was of late as petty to his ends

As is the mown-dew on the mystic leaf  
To his greatness.

*Caes.* Be't so; declare thine office. 10  
*Euph.* Of his fortunes he salutes thee,  
and

Requires to live in Egypt; which not granted,  
He lessens his requests; and to thee sues  
To let him breathe between the heavens and  
earth,

A private man in Athens: this for him.  
Next, Cleopatra does confess thy greatness;  
Submits her to thy might; and of thee craves  
The circle of the Ptolemies for her heirs,  
Now hazarded to thy grace.

*Caes.* For Antony,  
I have no ears to his request. The queen 20  
Of audience nor desire shall fail; so she  
From Egypt drive her all-disgraced friend,  
Or take his life there: this if she perform,  
She shall not sue unheard. So to them both.

*Euph.* Fortune pursue thee!  
*Caes.* Bring him through the bands.  
[*Exit Euphronius.*]

[*To Thyreus*] To try thy eloquence, now 'tis  
time: dispatch;

From Antony win Cleopatra: promise  
And in our name, what she requires; add more,  
From thine invention, offers: women are not  
In their best fortunes strong; but want will  
perjure

The ne'er-touch'd vestal: try thy cunning,  
Thyreus;

Make thine own edict for thy pains, which we  
Will answer as a law.

*Thyr.* Caesar, I go.  
*Caes.* Observe how Antony becomes his slave,  
And what thou think'st his very action speaks  
In every power that moves.

*Thyr.* Caesar, I shall. [*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE XIII. *Alexandria. Cleopatra's palace.*

*Enter* CLEOPATRA, ENOBARBUS, CHARMIAN,  
and IRAS.

*Cleo.* What shall we do, Enobarbus?

*Eno.* Think, and die.

*Cleo.* Is Antony or we in fault for this?

*Eno.* Antony only, that would make his  
will

Lord of his reason. What though you fled  
From that great face of war, whose several  
ranges

Frighted each other? why should he follow?  
The itch of his affection should not then  
Have nick'd his captainship; at such a point,  
When half to half the world opposed, he being  
The meered question: 'twas a shame no less  
Than was his loss, to course your flying flags,  
And leave his navy gazing.

*Cleo.* Prithce, peace.

*Enter* ANTONY with EUPHROBIUS, the  
Ambassador.

*Ant.* Is that his answer?

*Euph.* Ay, my lord.

*Ant.* The queen shall then have courtesy  
so she  
Will yield us up.

*Euph.* He says so.

*Ant.* Let her know  
To the boy Caesar send this grizzled bear,  
And he will fill thy wishes to the brim.



With principalities.

*Cleo.* That head, my lord?

*Ant.* To him again: tell him he wears the

rose  
Of youth upon him; from which the world  
should note

Something particular: his coin, ships, legions,  
May be a coward's; whose ministers would  
prevail

Under the service of a child as soon  
As I the command of Caesar: I dare him  
therefore

To lay his gay comparisons apart,  
And answer me declined, sword against sword,  
Ourselves alone. I'll write it: follow me.

[*Exeunt Antony and Euphrontus.*]

*Eno.* [*Aside*] Yea, like enough, high-battled  
Caesar will

Unstate his happiness, and be staged to the  
show,

Against a sworder! I see men's judgements  
are

A parcel of their fortunes; and things outward  
Do draw the inward quality after them,

To suffer all alike. That he should dream,  
Knowing all measures, the full Caesar will

Answer his emptiness! Caesar, thou hast sub-  
dued

His judgement too.

*Enter an Attendant.*

*Att.* A messenger from Caesar.

*Cleo.* What, no more ceremony? See, my  
women!

Against the blown rose may they stop their nose  
That kneel'd unto the buda. Admit him, sir.

[*Exit Attendant.*]

*Eno.* [*Aside*] Mine honesty and I begin to  
square.

The loyalty well held to fools does make  
Our faith mere folly: yet he that can endure

To follow with allegiance a fall'n lord  
Does conquer him that did his master conquer,

And earns a place i' the story.

*Enter THYREUS.*

*Cleo.* Caesar's will?

*Thyr.* Hear it apart.

*Cleo.* None but friends: say boldly.

*Thyr.* So, haply, are they friends to Antony.

*Eno.* He needs as many, sir, as Caesar has;  
Or needs not us. If Caesar please, our master

Will leap to be his friend: for us, you know  
Whose he is we are, and that is, Caesar's.

*Thyr.* So.

Thus then, thou most renown'd: Caesar en-  
treates,

Not to consider in what case thou stand'st,  
Further than he is Caesar.

*Cleo.* Go on: right royal.

*Thyr.* He knows that you embrace not  
Antony

As you did love, but as you fear'd him.

*Cleo.* O!

*Thyr.* The scars upon your honour, there-  
fore, he

Does pierce, as constrained blemishes,  
Not as deserved.

*Cleo.* He is a god, and knows  
What is most right: mine honour was not

yielded,  
But conquer'd merely.

*Eno.* [*Aside*] To be sure of that,  
I will ask Antony. Sir, sir, thou art so leaky,

That we must leave thee to thy sinking, for  
Thy dearest quit thee. [*Exit.*]

*Thyr.* Shall I say to Caesar  
What you require of him? for he partly begs

To be desired to give. It much would please  
him,

That of his fortunes you should make a staff  
To lean upon: but it would warm his spirits,

To hear from me you had left Antony,  
† And put yourself under his shroud,

The universal landlord.

*Cleo.* What's your name?

*Thyr.* My name is Thyreus.

*Cleo.* Most kind messenger,

Say to great Caesar this: in deputation

I kiss his conquering hand: tell him, I am

prompt

To lay my crown at's feet, and there to kneel:

Tell him, from his all-obeying breath I hear

The doom of Egypt.

*Thyr.* 'Tis your noblest course.

Wisdom and fortune combating together,

If that the former dare but what it can,

No chance may shake it. Give me grace to lay

My duty on your hand.

*Cleo.* Your Caesar's father oft,

When he hath mused of taking kingdoms in,

Bestow'd his lips on that unworthy place,

As it rain'd kisses.

*Re-enter ANTONY and EROSARBUS.*

*Ant.* Favours, by Jove that thunders!

What art thou, fellow?

*Thyr.* One that but performs

The bidding of the fullest man, and worthiest

To have command obey'd.

*Eno.* [*Aside*] You will be whipp'd.

*Ant.* Approach, there! Ah, you kite! Now,

gods and devils!

Authority melts from me: of late, when I cried

'Ho!'

Like boys unto a muss, kings would start forth,

And cry 'Your will!' Have you no ears? I am

Antony yet.

*Enter Attendants.*

Take hence this Jack, and whip him.

*Eno.* [*Aside*] 'Tis better playing with a lion's

whelp

Than with an old one dying.

*Ant.* Moon and stars!

Whip him. Were't twenty of the greatest

tributaries

That do acknowledge Caesar, should I find them

So saucy with the hand of the here,—what's

her name,

Since she was Cleopatra! Whip him, fellows,

Till, like a boy, you see him cringe his face, too

And whine aloud for mercy: take him hence.

*Thyr.* Mark Antony!

*Ant.* Tug him away!

Bring him again: this Jack of Ours

Bear us an errand to him.

*[Exeunt Attendants with Thyreus.]*  
 You were half blasted ere I knew you: ha!  
 Have I my pillow left unpress'd in Rome,  
 Forbear the getting of a lawful race,  
 And by a gem of women, to be abused  
 By one that looks on feeders?

*Cleo.* Good my lord,—  
*Ant.* You have been a boggler ever: 110  
 But when we in our viciousness grow hard—  
 O misery on't!—the wise gods seal our eyes;  
 In our own filth drop our clear judgements;  
 make us

Adore our errors; laugh at's, while we strut  
 To our confusion.

*Cleo.* O, is't come to this?  
*Ant.* I found you as a morsel cold upon  
 Dead Caesar's trencher; nay, you were a frag-  
 ment  
 Of Cneius Pompey's; besides what hotter hours,  
 Unregister'd in vulgar fame, you have  
 Luxuriously pick'd out: for, I am sure, 120  
 Though you can guess what temperance should  
 be,  
 You know not what it is.

*Cleo.* Wherefore is this?  
*Ant.* To let a fellow that will take rewards  
 And say 'God quit you!' be familiar with  
 My playfellow, your hand; this kingly seal  
 And plighter of high hearts! O, that I were  
 Upon the hill of Basan, to outroar  
 The horned herd! for I have savage cause;  
 And to proclaim it civilly, were like  
 A halter'd neck which does the hangman thank  
 For being yare about him.

*Re-enter Attendants with THYREUS.*

*First Att.* Soundly, my lord. 131  
*Ant.* Cried he? and begg'd a' pardon?

*First Att.* He did ask favour.

*Ant.* If that thy father live, let him repent  
 Thou wast not made his daughter; and be thou  
 sorry

To follow Caesar in his triumph, since  
 Thou hast been whipp'd for following him:  
 henceforth

The white hand of a lady fever thee,  
 Shake thou to look on't. Get thee back to Caesar,  
 Tell him thy entertainment: look, thou say 140  
 He makes me angry with him; for he seems  
 Proud and disdainful, harping on what I am,  
 Not what he knew I was: he makes me angry;  
 And at this time most easy 'tis to do't,  
 When my good stars, that were my former  
 guides,

Have empty left their orbs, and shot their fires  
 Into the abyss of hell. If he mislike  
 My speech and what is done, tell him he has  
 Hippaschus, my enfranchised bondman, whom  
 He may at pleasure whip, or hang, or torture,  
 As he shall like, to quit me: urge it thou: 151  
 Hence with thy stripes, begone! *[Exit Thyreus.]*

*Cleo.* Have you done yet?  
*Ant.* Alack, our terrene moon  
 Is now eclipsed; and it portends alone  
 The fall of Antony!

*Cleo.* I must stay his time.

*Ant.* To flatter Caesar, would you mingle  
 eyes

With one that ties his points?

*Cleo.* Not know me yet?

*Ant.* Cold-hearted toward me?

*Cleo.* Ah, dear, if I be so,  
 From my cold heart let heaven engender hail,  
 And poison it in the source; and the first stone  
 Drop in my neck: as it determines, so 161  
 Dissolve my life! The next Caesarion smite!  
 Till by degrees the memory of my womb,  
 Together with my brave Egyptians all,  
 By the discarding of this pelleted storm,  
 Lie graveless, till the flies and gnats of Nile  
 Have buried them for prey!

*Ant.* I am satisfied.  
 Caesar sits down in Alexandria; where  
 I will oppose his fate. Our force by land  
 Hath nobly held; our sever'd navy too 170  
 Have knit again, and fleet, threatening most  
 sea-like.

Where hast thou been, my heart? Dost thou  
 hear, lady?

If from the field I shall return once more  
 To kiss these lips, I will appear in blood;  
 I and my sword will earn our chronicle:  
 There's hope in't yet.

*Cleo.* That's my brave lord!  
*Ant.* I will be treble-sinew'd, hearted,  
 breathed,

And fight maliciously: for when mine hours  
 Were nice and lucky, men did ransom lives: so  
 Of me for jests; but now I'll set my teeth,  
 And send to darkness all that stop me. Come,  
 Let's have one other gaudy night: call to me  
 All my sad captains; fill our bowls once more;  
 Let's mock the midnight bell.

*Cleo.* It is my birth-day:  
 I had thought to have held it poor; but, since  
 my lord

Is Antony again, I will be Cleopatra.

*Ant.* We will yet do well.

*Cleo.* Call all his noble captains to my lord.

*Ant.* Do so, we'll speak to them; and to-  
 night I'll force 190  
 The wine peep through their scars. Come on,  
 my queen;

There's sap in't yet. The next time I do fight,  
 I'll make death love me; for I will contend  
 Even with his pestilent scythe.

*[Exeunt all but Enobarbus.]*  
*Eno.* Now he'll outstate the lightning. To  
 be furious,

Is to be frightened out of fear; and in that mood  
 The dove will peck the estridge; and I see still,  
 A diminution in our captain's brain  
 Restores his heart: when valour preys on  
 reason,

It eats the sword it fights with. I will seek 200  
 Some way to leave him. *[Exit.]*

#### ACT IV.

SCENE I. Before Alexandria. Caesar's camp.  
*Enter CESAR, AGRIPPA, and MENENAS, with  
 his army; CESAR reading a letter.*

*Ces.* He calls me boy and child; as he  
 had power

To beat me out of Egypt; my messenger  
He hath whipp'd with rods; dares me to  
personal combat,

Cæsar to Antony: let the old ruffian know  
I have many other ways to die; meantime  
Laugh at his challenge.

*Mec.* Cæsar must think,  
When one so great begins to rage, he's hunted  
Even to falling. Give him no breath, but now  
Make boot of his distraction: never anger  
Made good guard for itself.

*Clea.* Let our best heads  
Know, that to-morrow the last of many battles  
We mean to fight: within our files there are,  
Of those that served Mark Antony but late,  
Enough to fetch him in. See it done:  
And feast the army; we have store to do't,  
And they have earn'd the waste. Poor Antony!  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *Alexandria. Cleopatra's palace.*

*Enter* ANTONY, CLEOPATRA, ENOBARBUS,  
CHARMIAN, IRAS, ALEXAS, *with others.*

*Ant.* He will not fight with me, Domitius.

*Eno.* No.

*Ant.* Why should he not?

*Eno.* He thinks, being twenty times of  
better fortune,  
He is twenty men to one.

*Ant.* To-morrow, soldier,  
By sea and land I'll fight: or I will live,  
Or bathe my dying honour in the blood  
Shall make it live again. Woo't thou fight  
well?

*Eno.* I'll strike, and cry 'Take all.'

*Ant.* Well said; come on.  
Call forth my household servants: let's to-night  
Be bounteous at our meal.

*Enter three or four Servitors.*

Give me thy hand, so  
Thou hast been rightly honest;—so hast thou;—  
Thou,—and thou,—and thou;—you have served  
me well,

And kings have been your fellows.

*Cleo.* [*Aside to Eno.*] What means this?

*Eno.* [*Aside to Cleo.*] 'Tis one of those odd  
tricks which sorrow shoots  
Out of the mind.

*Ant.* And thou art honest too.  
I wish I could be made so many men,  
And all of you clapp'd up together in  
An Antony, that I might do you service  
So good as you have done.

*All.* The gods forbid!

*Ant.* Well, my good fellows, wait on me to-  
night:  
Scant not my cups; and make as much of me  
As when mine empire was your fellow too,  
And suffer'd my command.

*Cleo.* [*Aside to Eno.*] What does he mean?

*Eno.* [*Aside to Cleo.*] To make his followers  
weep.

*Ant.* Tend me to-night;  
May be it is the period of your duty:  
Haply you shall not see me more; or if,  
A mangled shadow: perchance to-morrow

'ou'll serve another master. I look on you  
As one that takes his leave. Mine honest  
friends,

turn you not away; but, like a master  
Married to your good service, stay till death:  
Tend me to-night two hours, I ask no more,  
And the gods yield you for't!

*Eno.* What mean you, sir,  
To give them this discomfort? Look, they  
weep;

And I, an ass, am onion-eyed: for shame,  
Transform us not to women.

*Ant.* Ho, ho, ho!  
Now the witch take me, if I meant it thus!  
Grace grow where those drops fall! My hearty  
friends,

You take me in too dolorous a sense;  
For I spake to you for your comfort; did desire  
you

To burn this night with torches: know, my  
hearts,

I hope well of to-morrow; and will lead you  
Where rather I'll expect victorious life  
Than death and honour. Let's to supper,  
come,

And drown consideration. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *The same. Before the palace.*

*Enter two Soldiers to their guard.*

*First Sold.* Brother, good night: to-morrow  
is the day.

*Sec. Sold.* It will determine one way: fare  
you well.

Heard you of nothing strange about the streets?

*First Sold.* Nothing. What news!

*Sec. Sold.* Belike 'tis but a rumour. Good  
night to you.

*First Sold.* Well, sir, good night.

*Enter two other Soldiers.*

*Sec. Sold.* Soldiers, have careful watch.

*Third Sold.* And you. Good night, good  
night.

[*They place themselves in every corner of  
the stage.*]

*Fourth Sold.* Here we: and if to-morrow  
Our navy thrive, I have an absolute hope  
Our landmen will stand up.

*Third Sold.* 'Tis a brave army,  
And full of purpose.

[*Music of the hautboys as under the stage.*]

*Fourth Sold.* Peace! what noise!

*First Sold.* List, list!

*Sec. Sold.* Hark!

*First Sold.* Music! the air.

*Third Sold.* Under the earth.

*Fourth Sold.* It signs well, does it not?

*Third Sold.* No.

*First Sold.* Peace, I say!

What should this mean?

*Sec. Sold.* 'Tis the god Hercules, whom

Antony loved,

Now leaves him.

*First Sold.* Walk; let's see if other watch-

men

Do hear what we do.

[*They advance to another post.*]

*Sec. Sold.* How now, masters!  
*All.* *[Speaking together]* How now!  
 How now! do you hear this!

*First Sold.* Ay; is't not strange! so  
*Third Sold.* Do you hear, masters! do you hear!

*First Sold.* Follow the noise so far as we have quarter;  
 Let's see how it will give off.

*All.* Content. 'Tis strange. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE IV. *The same. A room in the palace.*  
*Enter ANTONY and CLEOPATRA, CHARMIAN, and others attending.*

*Ant.* Eros! mine armour, Eros!  
*Cleo.* Sleep a little.

*Ant.* No, my chuck. Eros, come; mine armour, Eros!

*Enter EROS with armour.*

Come, good fellow, put mine iron on:  
 If fortune be not ours to-day, it is  
 Because we brave her: come.

*Cleo.* Nay, I'll help too.  
 What's this for?

*Ant.* Ah, let be, let be! thou art  
 The armourer of my heart: false, false; this,

*Cleo.* Sooth, la, I'll help: thus it must be.  
*Ant.* Well, well;

We shall thrive now. Seest thou, my good fellow!

Go put on thy defences.

*Eros.* Briefly, sir.  
*Cleo.* Is not this buckled well?

*Ant.* Rarely, rarely:  
 He that unbuckles this, till we do please

To daff't for our repose, shall hear a storm.  
 Thou fumblest, Eros; and my queen's a squire

More tight at this than thou: dispatch. O love,

That thou couldst see my wars to-day, and knew'st

The royal occupation! thou shouldst see  
 A workman in't.

*Enter an armed Soldier.*

Good morrow to thee; welcome:  
 Thou look'st like him that knows a warlike

charge:  
 To business that we love we rise betime,

And go to't with delight.  
*Sold.* A thousand, sir,

Early though't be, have on their riveted trim,  
 And at the port expect you.

*[Shout. Trumpets flourish.]*

*Enter Captains and Soldiers.*

*Capt.* The morn is fair. Good morrow,  
*general.*

*Ant.* Good morrow, general.  
*Ant.* 'Tis well blown, lads:

This morning, like the spirit of a youth  
 That meant to be of note, begins betimes.

So, then, give me that: this way; well

fare thee well, dame, whatever becomes of me:

This is a soldier's kiss: rebutable *[Kisses her.]*  
 And worthy shameful check it were to stand  
 On more mechanic compliment: I'll leave thee  
 Now, like a man of steel. You that will fight,  
 Follow me close; I'll bring you to't. Adieu.

*[Exeunt Antony, Eros, Captains, and Soldiers.]*

*Char.* Please you, retire to your chamber.  
*Cleo.* Lead me.

He goes forth gallantly. That he and Caesar

might  
 Determine this great war in single fight!

Then, Antony,—but now—Well, on. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE V. *Alexandria. Antony's camp.*  
*Trumpets sound. Enter ANTONY and EROS; a Soldier meeting them.*

*Sold.* The gods make this a happy day to  
 Antony!

*Ant.* Would thou and those thy scars had  
 once prevail'd

To make me fight at land!

*Sold.* Hadst thou done so,  
 The kings that have revolted, and the soldier

That has this morning left thee, would have  
 still

Follow'd thy heels.  
*Ant.* Who's gone this morning?

*Sold.* Who! One ever near thee: call for Enobarbus.

He shall not hear thee; or from Caesar's camp  
 Say 'I am none of thine.'

*Ant.* What say'st thou?  
*Sold.* Sir,

He is with Caesar.  
*Eros.* Sir, his chests and treasure

He has not with him.  
*Ant.* Is he gone?

*Sold.* Most certain.  
*Ant.* Go, Eros, send his treasure after; do it;

Detain no jot, I charge thee: write to him—  
 I will subscribe—gentle adieus and greetings;

Say that I wish he never find more cause  
 To change a master. O, my fortunes have

Corrupted honest men! Dispatch.—Enobarbus!  
*[Exeunt.]*

SCENE VI. *Alexandria. Caesar's camp.*  
*Flourish. Enter CAESAR, AGRIPPA, with ENOBARBUS, and others.*

*Caes.* Go forth, Agrippa, and begin the fight:  
 Our will is Antony be took alive;

Make it so known.  
*Agg.* Caesar, I shall.

*Caes.* The time of universal peace is near;  
 Prove this a prosperous day, the three-mook'd

world  
 Shall hear the olive freely.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Antony  
 Is come into the field.

*Caes.* Go charge Agrippa  
 Plant those that have revolted in the van,  
 That Antony may seem to spend his fury

Upon himself. *[Exeunt all but Enobarbus.]*

*Eno.* Alexas did revolt; and went to Jewry  
*on*  
 Affairs of Antony; there did persuade  
 Great Herod to incline himself to Caesar,  
 And leave his master Antony; for this pains  
 Caesar hath hang'd him. Canidius and the rest  
 That fell away have entertainment, but  
 No honourable trust. I have done ill;  
 Of which I do accuse myself so sorely,  
 That I will joy no more.

*Enter a Soldier of CÆSAR'S.*

*Sold.* Enobarbus, Antony so  
 Hath after thee sent all thy treasure, with  
 His bounty overplus: the messenger  
 Came on my guard; and at thy tent is now  
 Unloading of his mules.

*Eno.* I give it you.

*Sold.* Mock not, Enobarbus.  
 I tell you true: best you as the bringer  
 Out of the host; I must attend mine office,  
 Or would have done't myself. Your emperor  
 Continues still a Jove. *[Exit.]*

*Eno.* I am alone the villain of the earth, so  
 And feel I am so most. O Antony,  
 Thou mine of bounty, how wouldst thou have  
 paid  
 My better service, when my turpitude  
 Thou dost so crown with gold! This blows my  
 heart:

If swift thought break it not, a swifter mean  
 Shall outstrike thought: but thought will do't,  
 I feel.

I fight against thee! No: I will go seek  
 Some ditch wherein to die; the foul't best fits  
 My latter part of life. *[Exit.]* 39

SCENE VII. *Field of battle between the  
 camps.*

*Alarum. Drums and trumpets. Enter  
 AGRIPPA and others.*

*Ag.* Retire, we have engaged ourselves too  
 far:  
 Cæsar himself has work, and our oppression  
 Exceeds what we expected. *[Exit.]*

*Alarum. Enter ANTONY, and SCARUS  
 wounded.*

*Scar.* O my brave emperor: this is fought  
 indeed!  
 Had we done so at first, we had droven them  
 home  
 With clouts about their heads.

*Ant.* Thou bleed'st apace.

*Scar.* I had a wound here that was like a T,  
 But now 'tis made an H.

*Ant.* They do retire.

*Scar.* We'll beat 'em into bench-holes: I  
 have yet  
 Room for six scotches more.

*Enter ENO.*

*Eno.* They are beaten, sir; and our ad-  
 vantage serves  
 For a fair victory.

*Scar.* Let us score their backs,  
 And smother 'em up, as we take hares, behind:

'Tis sport to maul a runner.

*Ant.* I will reward thee  
 Once for thy sprightly comfort, and ten-fold  
 For thy good valour. Come thee on.

*Scar.* I'll halt after. *[Exit.]*

SCENE VIII. *Under the walls of Alexandria.*

*Alarum. Enter ANTONY, in a march;  
 SCARUS, with others.*

*Ant.* We have beat him to his camp: run  
 ons before,  
 And let the queen know of our gesta. To-  
 morrow,  
 Before the sun shall see 's, we'll spill the blood  
 That has to-day escaped. I thank you all;  
 For doughty-handed are you, and have fought  
 Not as you served the cause, but as 't had been  
 Each man's like mine; you have shown all  
 Hectors.

*Enter the city, clip your wives, your friends,  
 Tell them your feats; whilst they with joyful  
 tears  
 Wash the congealment from your wounds, and  
 kiss  
 The honour'd gashes whole. [To SCARUS] Give  
 me thy hand;*

*Enter CLEOPATRA, attended.*

To this great fairy I'll commend thy acts,  
 Make her thanks bless thee. *[To Cleo.]* O thou  
 day o' the world,  
 Chain mine arm'd neck; leap thou, attire and  
 all,  
 Through proof of harness to my heart, and  
 there  
 Ride on the pants triumphing!

*Cleo.* Lord of lords!  
 O infinite virtue, comest thou smiling from  
 The world's great snare uncaught!

*Ant.* My nightingale,  
 We have beat them to their beds. What, girl!  
 though grey  
 Do something mingle with our younger browns,  
 yet ha' we

A brain that nourishes our nerves, and can  
 Get goal for goal of youth. Behold this man;  
 Commend unto his lips thy favouring hand:  
 Kiss it, my warrior: he hath fought to-day  
 As if a god, in hate of mankind, had  
 Death'd in such a shape.

*Cleo.* I'll give thee, friend,  
 An armour all of gold; it was a king's.

*Ant.* He has deserved it, were it encased  
 Like holy Phœbus' car. Give me thy hand:

Through Alexandria make a jolly march; so  
 Bear our back'd targets like the men that own  
 them:

Had our great palace the capacity  
 To camp this host, we all would sup together,  
 And drink carouses to the next day's fate,  
 Which promises royal peril. Trumpeters,  
 With reason die: blast you the city's ear;  
 Make mingle with our rattling tabernacles;  
 That heaven and earth may strike their sounds

our approach. *[Exit.]* 39

SCENE IX. *Cæsar's camp.*

Sentinels at their post.

*First Sold.* If we be not relieved within this hour,  
We must return to the court of guard: the night  
Is shily; and they say we shall embattle  
By the second hour i' the morn.

*Sec. Sold.* This last day was  
A shrewd one to 's.

*Enter ENOBARBUS.*

*Eno.* O, bear me witness, night,—

*Third Sold.* What man is this?

*Sec. Sold.* Stand close, and list him.

*Eno.* Be witness to me, O thou blessed moon,

When men revolted shall upon record  
Bear hateful memory, poor Enobarbus did  
Before thy face repent!

*First Sold.* Enobarbus!

*Third Sold.* Peace! 10  
Hark further.

*Eno.* O sovereign mistress of true melan-  
choly,  
The poisonous damp of night disponge upon  
me,  
That life, a very rebel to my will,  
May hang no longer on me: throw my heart  
Against the flint and hardness of my fault;  
Which, being dried with grief, will break to  
powder,

And finish all foul thoughts. O Antony,  
Nobler than my revolt is infamous,  
Forgive me in thine own particular; 20  
But let the world rank me in register  
A master-leaver and a fugitive:  
O Antony! O Antony! [*Dies.*]

*Sec. Sold.* Let's speak  
To him.

*First Sold.* Let's hear him, for the things  
he speaks  
May concern Cæsar.

*Third Sold.* Let's do so. But he sleeps.

*First Sold.* Swoons rather; for so bad a  
prayer as his  
Was never yet for sleep.

*Sec. Sold.* Go we to him.

*Third Sold.* Awake, sir, awake: speak to us.

*Sec. Sold.* Hear you, sir!

*First Sold.* The hand of death hath raught  
him, [*Drums afar off.*] Hark! the drums  
Demurely wake the sleepers. Let us bear him  
To the court of guard; he is of note: our hour  
Is fully out.

*Third Sold.* Come on, then;  
He may recover yet. [*Exeunt with the body.*]

SCENE X. *Between the two camps.*

*Enter ANTONY and SCARUS, with their Army.*

*Ant.* Their preparation is to-day by sea;  
We please them not by land.

*Scar.* For both, my lord.

*Ant.* I would they 'ld fight i' the fire or i' the  
air;

We 'ld fight there too. But this it is; our foot  
Upon the hills adjoining to the city  
Shall stay with us: order for sea is given;  
† They have put forth the haven...  
Where their appointment we may best discover,  
And look on their endeavour. [*Exeunt.* 9

SCENE XI. *Another part of the same.*

*Enter CÆSAR, and his Army.*

*Cæs.* But being charged, we will be still by  
land,  
Which, as I take 't, we shall: for his best force  
Is forth to man his galleys. To the vessels,  
And hold our best advantage. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE XII. *Another part of the same.*

*Enter ANTONY and SCARUS.*

*Ant.* Yet they are not join'd: where yond  
pine does stand,  
I shall discover all: I'll bring thee word  
Straight, how 'tis like to go. [*Exit.*

*Scar.* Swallows have built  
In Cleopatra's sails their nests: the augurers  
Say they know not, they cannot tell; look  
grimly,  
And dare not speak their knowledge. Antony  
Is valiant, and dejected; and, by starts,  
His fretted fortunes give him hope, and fear,  
Of what he has, and has not.

[*Alarum afar off, as at a sea-fight.*]

*Re-enter ANTONY.*

*Ant.* All is lost;  
This foul Egyptian hath betrayed me: 10  
My fleet hath yielded to the foe; and yonder  
They cast their caps up and carouse together  
Like friends long lost. Triple-turn'd whore!  
'tis thou

Hast sold me to this novice: and my heart  
Makes only wars on thee. Bid them all fly;  
For when I am revenged upon my charm,  
I have done all. Bid them all fly; begone.

[*Exit Scarus.*]

O sun, thy uprise shall I see no more:  
Fortune and Antony part here; even here  
Do we shake hands. All come to this! The  
hearts. 20

That spaniel'd me at heels, to whom I gave  
Their wishes, do discandy, melt their sweets  
On blossoming Cæsar; and this pine is bark'd,  
That overtopp'd them all. Betray'd I am:  
O this false soul of Egypt! this grave charm,—  
Whose eye beck'd forth my wars, and call'd  
them home;

Whose bosom was my crownet, my chief end,—  
Like a right gipsy, hath, at fast and loose,  
Bequiled me to the very heart of loss.  
What, Eros, Eros!

*Enter CLEOPATRA.*

Ah, thou spell! Avaunt! 30  
Clea. Why is my lord enraged against his  
love?

*Ant.* Vanish, or I shall give thee thy  
deserving.

And blemish Cæsar's triumph. Let him take thee.

And hoist thee up to the shouting plebeians:  
Follow his chariot, like the greatest spot  
Of all thy sex; most monster-like, be shown  
For poor diminutives, for doits; and let  
Patient Octavia plough thy visage up  
With her prepared nails. [*Exit Cleopatra.*]

'Tis well thou'rt gone, 40

Thou fell'st into my fury, for one death  
Might have prevented many. Eros, ho!  
The shirt of Nessus is upon me: teach me,  
Alcides, thou mine ancestor, thy rage:  
Let me lodge Lichas on the horns o' the moon;  
And with those hands, that grasp'd the heaviest

club,  
Subdue my worsted self. The witch shall die:  
To the young Roman boy she hath sold me,  
and I fall

Under this plot; she dies for't. Eros, ho! 49  
[*Exit.*]

SCENE XIII. *Alexandria. Cleopatra's palace.*

*Enter CLEOPATRA, CHARMIAN, IRAS, and MARDIAN.*

*Cleo.* Help me, my women! O, he is more  
mad  
Than Telamon for his shield; the boar of  
Thessaly

Was never so embosom'd.

*Char.* To the monument!  
There lock yourself, and send him word you are  
dead.

The soul and body rive not more in parting  
Than greatness going off.

*Cleo.* To the monument!  
Mardian, go tell him I have slain myself;  
Say, that the last I spoke was 'Antony.'  
And word it, prithee, piteously: hence, Mardian,  
And bring me how he takes my death. To the  
monument! [*Exeunt.* 50

SCENE XIV. *The same. Another room.*

*Enter ANTONY and EROS.*

*Ant.* Eros, thou yet behold'st me?

*Eros.* Ay, noble lord.

*Ant.* Sometime we see a cloud that's dragonish;

A vapour sometime like a bear or lion,

A tower'd citadel, a pendent rock,

A forked mountain, or blue promontory

With trees upon't, that nod unto the world,

And mock our eyes with air: thou hast seen

these signs;

They are black vespers' pageants.

*Eros.* Ay, my lord.

*Ant.* That which is now a horse, even with

a thought

The rack dissolves, and makes it indistinct,

As water is in water.

*Eros.* It does, my lord.

*Ant.* My good knave Eros, now thy captain is

Even such a body: here I am Antony;

Yet cannot hold this visible shape, my knave.

I made these wars for Egypt; and the queen,—  
Whose heart I thought I had, for she had mine;  
Which whilst it was mine had annex'd unto't  
A million more, now lost,—she, Eros, has  
Pack'd cards with Cæsar, and false-play'd my  
glory

Unto an enemy's triumph. 50

Nay, weep not, gentle Eros; there is left us  
Ourselves to end ourselves.

*Enter MARDIAN.*

O, thy vile lady!

She has robb'd me of my sword.

*Mar.* No, Antony;

My mistress loved thee, and her fortunes

mingled

With thine entirely.

*Ant.* Hence, saucy eunuch; peace!

She hath betray'd me and shall die the death.

*Mar.* Death of one person can be paid but

once,

And that she has discharged: what thou

wouldst do

Is done unto thy hand: the last she spake

Was 'Antony! most noble Antony! 50

Then in the midst a tearing groan did break

The name of Antony; it was divided

Between her heart and lips: she render'd life,

Thy name so buried in her.

*Ant.* Dead, then?

*Mar.* Dead.

*Ant.* Unarm, Eros; the long day's task is

done,

And we must sleep. [*To Mar.*] That thou

depart'st hence safe,

Does pay thy labour richly; go.

[*Exit Mardian.*]

Off, pluck off:

The seven-fold shield of Ajax cannot keep

The battery from my heart. O, cleave, my

sides!

Heart, once be stronger than thy continent, 50

Crack thy frail case! Apace, Eros, apace.

No more a soldier: bruised pieces, go;

You have been nobly borne. From me awhile.

[*Exit Eros.*]

I will o'ertake thee, Cleopatra, and

Weep for my pardon. So it must be, for now

All length is torture: since the torch is out,

Lie down, and stray no farther: now all labour

Mars what it does; yea, very force entangles

Itself with strength: seal then, and all is done.

Eros!—I come, my queen!—Eros!—Stay for

me: 50

Where souls do couch on flowers, we'll hand

in hand,

And with our sprightly port make the ghosts

gaze:

Dido and her Æneas shall want troops,

And all the haunt be ours. Come, Eros, Eros!

*Re-enter EROS.*

*Eros.* What would my lord?

*Ant.* Since C

I have lived in such dishonour, that ~~has gone~~

Detest my baseness. I, that with my sword

Quarter'd the world, and o'er great Neptune's

back

With ships made cities, condemn myself to lack  
The courage of a woman; less noble mind  
Than she which by her death our Caesar tells  
'I am conqueror of myself.' Thou art sworn,

*Eros.*  
That, when the exigent should come, which  
now

Is come indeed, when I should see behind me  
The inevitable prosecution of  
Disgrace and horror; that, on my command,  
Thou shouldst kill me: do't; the time is

come:  
Thou strik'st not me, 'tis Caesar thou defeat'st.  
Put colour in thy cheek.

*Eros.* The gods withhold me!  
Shall I do that which all the Parthian darts,  
Though enemy, lost aim, and could not?

*Ant.* *Eros.* 71  
Wouldst thou be window'd in great Rome and  
see

Thy master thus with pleas'd arms, bending  
down

His corrigible neck, his face subdued  
To penetrative shame, whilst the wheel'd seat  
Of fortunate Caesar, drawn before him, branded  
His baseness that ensu'd?

*Eros.* I would not see't.  
*Ant.* Come, then; for with a wound I must  
be cured.

Draw that thy honest sword, which thou hast  
worn  
Most useful for thy country.

*Eros.* O, sir, pardon me! so  
*Ant.* When I did make thee free, swear'st  
thou not then

To do this when I bade thee? Do it at once;  
Or thy precedent services are all  
But accidents unpurposed. Draw, and come.

*Eros.* Turn from me, then, that noble  
countenance.

Wherein the worship of the whole world lies.  
*Ant.* Lo thee! [*Turning from him.*]

*Eros.* My sword is drawn.

*Ant.* Then let it do at once  
The thing why thou hast drawn it.

*Eros.* My dear master,  
My captain, and my emperor, let me say, 90  
Before I strike this bloody stroke, farewell.

*Ant.* 'Tis said, man; and farewell.

*Eros.* Farewell, great chief. Shall I strike  
now?

*Ant.* Now, Eros.

*Eros.* Why, there then: thus I do escape  
the sorrow

Of Antony's death. [*Kills himself.*]

*Ant.* Thrice-nobler than myself!  
Thou teachest me, O valiant Eros, what  
I should, and thou couldst not. My queen and

*Eros.*  
Have by their brave instruction got upon  
me

A nobleness in record; but I will be  
A bridegroom in my death, and run into't 100  
As to a lover's bed. Come, then; and, Eros,

My master dies thy scholar: so do thou  
[*Putting on his sword.*]

I would of this. How! not dead? not dead?  
How! not dead? O, dispatch me!

*Enter DERCETAS and Guard.*

*First Guard.* What's the noise?

*Ant.* I have done my work ill, friends: O,  
make an end  
Of what I have begun.

*Sec. Guard.* The star is fall'n.

*First Guard.* And time is at his period.

*All.* Alas, and woe!

*Ant.* Let him that loves me strike me dead.

*First Guard.* Not I.

*Sec. Guard.* Nor I.

*Third Guard.* Nor any one. 120

*Der.* Thy death and fortunes bid thy fol-  
lowers fly.

This sword but shewn to Caesar, with this  
tidings,  
Shall enter me with him.

*Enter DIOMEDES.*

*Dio.* Where's Antony?

*Der.* There, Diomed, there.

*Dio.* Lives he?

Will thou not answer, man? [*Exit Dercetas.*]

*Ant.* Art thou there, Diomed? Draw thy  
sword, and give me

Sufficing strokes for death.

*Dio.* Most absolute lord,

My mistress Cleopatra sent me to thee.

*Ant.* When did she send thee?

*Dio.* Now, my lord.

*Ant.* Where is she?

*Dio.* Lock'd in her monument. She had a  
prophesying fear 130

Of what hath come to pass: for when she saw—

Which never shall be found—you did suspect

She had disposed with Caesar, and that your  
rage

Would not be purged, she sent you word she  
was dead;

But, fearing since how it might work, hath sent  
Me to proclaim the truth; and I am come,

I dread, too late.

*Ant.* Too late, good Diomed: call my guard,

I prithee.

*Dio.* What, ho, the emperor's guard! The  
guard, what, ho!

Come, your lord calls! 130

*Enter four or five of the Guard of ANTONY.*

*Ant.* Bear me, good friends, where Cleopatra  
bides;

'Tis the last service that I shall command you.

*First Guard.* Woe, woe are we, sir, you  
may not live to wear

All your true followers out.

*All.* Most heavy day!

*Ant.* Nay, good my fellows, do not please  
sharp fate

To grace it with your sorrows: bid that wel-  
come!

Which comes to punish us, and we punish it  
Seeming to bear it lightly. Take me up:

I have led you off: carry me now, good friends.

And have my thanks for all. 140

[*Exeunt, bearing Antony.*]



SCENE XV. *The same. A monument.*

*Enter CLEOPATRA, and her maids aloft, with CHARMIAN and IRAS.*

*Cleo.* O Charmian, I will never go from hence.

*Char.* Be comforted, dear madam.

*Cleo.* No, I will not: All strange and terrible events are welcome, But comforts we despise; our size of sorrow, Proportion'd to our cause, must be as great As that which makes it.

*Enter, below, DIOMEDES.*

*Dio.* How now! is he dead? His death's upon him, but not dead. Look out o' the other side your monument; His guard have brought him thither.

*Enter, below, ANTONY, borne by the Guard.*

*Cleo.* O sun, Burn the great sphere thou movest in! darkling stand The varying shore o' the world. O Antony, Antony, Antony! Help, Charmian, help, Iras, help; Help, friends below; let's draw him hither.

*Ant.* Peace! Not Caesar's valour hath o'erthrown Antony, But Antony's hath triumph'd on itself.

*Cleo.* So it should be, that none but Antony Should conquer Antony; but woe 'tis so!

*Ant.* I am dying, Egypt, dying; only I here importune death awhile, until (If many thousand kisses the poor last I lay upon thy lips.

*Cleo.* I dare not, dear,— Dear my lord, pardon,—I dare not, Lest I be taken: not the imperious show Of the full-fortuned Caesar ever shall Be broach'd with me; if knife, drugs, serpents, have

Edge, sting, or operation, I am safe: Your wife Octavia, with her modest eyes And still conclusion, shall acquire no honour Daming upon me. But come, come, Antony,—

Help me, my women,—we must draw thee up: Assist, good friends.

*Ant.* O, quick, or I am gone. *Cleo.* Here's sport indeed! How heavy weighs my lord!

Our strength is all gone into heaviness, That makes the weight: had I great Juno's power,

The strong-wing'd Mercury should fetch thee up, And set thee by Jove's side. Yet come a little,— Wishes were ever fools.—O, come, come, come;

*[They leave Antony aloft to Cleopatra.]* And welcome, welcome! die where thou hast liv'd:

Quicken with kissing: had my lips that power, Thus would I wear them out.

*Ant.* A heavy night! *Ant.* I am dying, Egypt, dying:

Give me some wine, and let me speak a little. *Cleo.* No, let me speak; and let me seal so high,

That the false housewife Fortune break her wheel, Provoked by my offences.

*Ant.* One word, sweet queen: Of Caesar seek your honour, with your safety. O!

*Cleo.* They do not go together. *Ant.* Gentle, hear me:

None about Caesar trust but Proculeius. *Cleo.* My resolution and my hands I'll trust;

None about Caesar. *Ant.* The miserable change now at my end Lament not sorrow at; but please your thoughts

In feeding them with those my former fortunes Wherein I liv'd, the greatest prince o' the world, The noblest; and do now not basely die,

Not cowardly put off my helmet to My countryman,—a Roman by a Roman Valiantly vanquish'd. Now my spirit is going; I can no more.

*Cleo.* Noblest of men, woo't die! Hast thou no care of me? shall I abide In this dull world, which in thy absence is No better than a sty! O, see, my women,

The crown o' the earth doth melt. *Antony dies.* My lord! O, wither'd is the garland of the war,

The soldier's pole is fall'n: young boys and girls Are level now with men; the odds is gone, And there is nothing left remarkable

Beneath the visiting moon. *[Faints.]* *Char.* O, quietness, lady!

*Irás.* She is dead too, our sovereign. *Char.* Lady!

*Irás.* Madam! *Char.* O madam, madam, madam!

*Irás.* Royal Egypt, to Empress!

*Char.* Peace, peace, Iras! *Cleo.* No more, but e'en a woman, and commanded

By such poor passion as the maid that milks And does the meanest chares. It were for me To throw my sceptre at the injurious gods;

To tell them that this world did equal them Till they had sto'n our jewel. All's but naught;

Patience is scottish, and impatience does Become a dog that's mad: then is it sin To rush into the secret house of death,

Ere death dare come to us! How do you, women?

What, what! good cheer! Why, how now, Charmian?

My noble girls! Ah, women, women, look! Our lamp is spent, it's out! Good girls, take heart:

We'll bury him; and then, what's brave, what's

Let's do it after the high Roman fashion, And make death proud to take us. Come, away:

This case of that huge spirit now is cold: Ah, women, women! come; we have no friend But resolution, and the bristled end.

*[Exeunt; those above bury him at Antony's tomb.]*

## ACT V.

SCENE I. *Alexandria. Caesar's camp.*

*Enter* CESAR, AGRIPPA, DOLABELLA, PROCULEIUS, GALLUS, PROCOLEIUS, and others, *his council of war.*

*Ces.* Go to him, Dolabella, bid him yield; Being so frustrate, tell him he mocks The pauses that he makes.

*Dol.* Caesar, I shall. [*Exit.*]

*Enter* DERCETAS, *with the sword of* ANTONY.

*Ces.* Wherefore is that? and what art thou that darest

Appear thus to us?

*Der.* I am call'd Dercetas; Mark Antony I served, who best was worthy Best to be served: whilst he stood up and spoke, He was my master; and I wore my life To spend upon his haters. If thou please To take me to thee, as I was to him, I'll be to Caesar; if thou pleasest not, I yield thee up my life.

*Ces.* What is't thou say'st?

*Der.* I say, O Caesar, Antony is dead.

*Ces.* The breaking of so great a thing should make

A greater crack: †the round world Should have shook lions into civil streets, And citizens to their dens: the death of Antony

Is not a single doom; in the name lay A moiety of the world.

*Der.* He is dead, Caesar; Not by a public minister of justice, Nor by a hired knife; but that self hand, Which writ his honour in the acts it did, Hath, with the courage which the heart did lend it, Splitt'd the heart. This is his sword; I robb'd his wound of it; behold it stain'd With his most noble blood.

*Ces.* Look you sad, friends? The gods rebuke me, but it is tidings To wash the eyes of kings.

*Agr.* And strange it is, That nature must compel us to lament Our most persisted deeds.

*Mec.* His taints and honours go Waged equal with him.

*Agr.* A rarer spirit never Did steer humanity: but you, gods, will give us Some faults to make us men. Caesar is touch'd.

*Mec.* When such a spacious mirror's set before him, He sees must see himself.

*Ces.* O Antony! I have follow'd thee to this; but we do lance Diseases in our bodies: I must perforce Have shown to thee such a declining day, Or look on thine; we could not stall together In the whole world: but yet let me lament, With tears as sovereign as the blood of hearts, What thou, my brother, my competitor In love, not design, my mate in empire, My partner in companion in the front of war, Myself in mine own body, and the heart

Where mine his thoughts did kindle,—that our

stars, Unreconcilable, should divide Our equalness to this. Hear me, good friends,— But I will tell you at some meetest season:

*Enter an Egyptian.*

The business of this man looks out of him; so We'll hear him what he says. Whence are you?

*Egypt.* A poor Egyptian yet. The queen my mistress,

Confined in all she has, her monument, Of thy intents desires instruction, That she preparedly may frame herself To the way she's forced to.

*Ces.* Bid her have good heart: She soon shall know of us, by some of ours, How honourable and how kindly we Determine for her; for Caesar cannot live To be ungentle.

*Egypt.* So the gods preserve thee! [*Exit.*]

*Ces.* Come hither, Proculeius. Go and say, We purpose her no shame: give her what comforts

The quality of her passion shall require, Lest, in her greatness, by some mortal stroke She do defeat us; for her life in Rome Would be eternal in our triumph: go, And with your speediest bring us what she says,

And how you find of her.

*Pro.* Caesar, I shall. [*Exit.*]

*Ces.* Gallus, go you along. [*Exit Gallus.*]

Where's Dolabella?

To second Proculeius?

*All.* Dolabella!

*Ces.* Let him alone, for I remember now How he's employ'd: he shall in time be ready. Go with me to my tent; where you shall see How hardly I was drawn into this war; How calm and gentle I proceeded still In all my writings: go with me, and see What I can show in this. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *Alexandria. A room in the monument.*

*Enter* CLEOPATRA, CHARMIAN, and IRAS.

*Cleo.* My desolation does begin to make A better life. 'Tis paltry to be Caesar; Not being Fortune, he's but Fortune's knave, A minister of her will: and it is great To do that thing that ends all other deeds; Which shackles accidents and bolts up change; Which sleeps, and never palates more the dug, The beggar's nurse and Caesar's.

*Enter, to the gates of the monument, PROCULEIUS, GALLUS, and Soldiers.*

*Pro.* Caesar sends greeting to the Queen of

And bids thee study on what fair demands Thou mean'st to have him grant thee.

*Cleo.* What's thy name?

*Pro.* My name is Proculeius.

*Cleo.* Antony Did tell me of you, bade me trust you; but

I do not greatly care to be deceived,  
That have no use for trusting. If your master  
Would have a queen his beggar, you must tell  
him.

That majesty, to keep decorum, must  
No less beg than a kingdom: if he please  
To give me conquer'd Egypt for my son,  
He gives me so much of mine own, as I 20  
Will kneel to him with thanks.

*Pro.* Be of good cheer;  
You're fall'n into a princely hand, fear nothing:  
Make your full reference freely to my lord,  
Who is so full of grace, that it flows over  
On all that need: let me report to him  
Your sweet dependency; and you shall find  
A conqueror that will pray in aid for kindness,  
Where he for grace is kneel'd to.

*Cleo.* Pray you, tell him  
I am his fortune's vassal, and I send him  
The greatness he has got. I hourly learn 30  
A doctrine of obedience; and would gladly  
Look him i' the face.

*Pro.* This I'll report, dear lady.  
Have comfort, for I know your plight is pitied  
Of him that caused it.

*Gal.* You see how easily she may be surprised:  
[*Here Proculeius and two of the Guard  
ascend the monument by a ladder placed  
against a window, and, having descend-  
ed, come behind Cleopatra. Some of the  
Guard unbar and open the gates.*]  
[*To Proculeius and the Guard*] Guard her till  
Caesar come. [Exit.

*Iras.* Royal queen!

*Char.* O Cleopatra! thou art taken, queen.

*Cleo.* Quick, quick, good hands.

[*Drawing a dagger.*  
*Pro.* Hold, worthy lady, hold:  
[*Seizes and disarms her.*

Do not yourself such wrong, who are in this 40  
Relieved, but not betray'd.

*Cleo.* What, of death too,  
That rides our dogs of languish!

*Pro.* Cleopatra,  
Do not abuse my master's bounty by  
The undoing of yourself: let the world see  
His nobleness well acted, which your death  
Will never let come forth.

*Cleo.* Where art thou, death?  
Come hither, come! come, come, and take a

Worth many babes and beggars!

*Pro.* O, temperance, lady!

*Cleo.* Sir, I will eat no meat, I'll not drink,  
sir;

If idle talk will once be necessary, 50  
I'll not sleep neither: this mortal house I'll  
ruin,

Do Caesar what he can. Know, sir, that I  
Will not wait pinion'd at your master's court;

Nor once be chastised with the sober eye  
Of dull Octavia. Shall they hoist me up

And show me to the shouting variety  
Of censuring Rome? Rather a ditch in Egypt

Be gentle grave unto me! rather on Nilus' mud  
Lay me stark naked, and let the water-flies

Blow me into abhorring! rather make 60  
My country's high pyramids my gibbet,

And hang me up in chains!

*Pro.* You do extend  
These thoughts of horror further than you shall  
Find cause in Caesar.

*Enter DOLABELLA.*

*Dol.* Proculeius,  
What thou hast done thy master Caesar knows,  
And he hath sent for thee: for the queen,  
I'll take her to my guard.

*Pro.* So, Dolabella,  
It shall content me best: be gentle to her.  
[*To Cleo.*] To Caesar I will speak what you shall  
please,

If you'll employ me to him.

*Cleo.* Say, I would die. 70  
[*Exeunt Proculeius and Soldiers.*

*Dol.* Most noble empress, you have heard  
of me?

*Cleo.* I cannot tell.

*Dol.* Assuredly you know me.

*Cleo.* No matter, sir, what I have heard or  
known.

You laugh when boys or women tell their  
dreams;

Is't not your trick?

*Dol.* I understand not, madam.

*Cleo.* I dream'd there was an Emperor  
Antony:

O, such another sleep, that I might see  
But such another man!

*Dol.* If it might please ye,—

*Cleo.* His face was as the heavens; and  
therein stuck

A sun and moon, which kept their course, and 80  
lighted

The little O, the earth.

*Dol.* Most sovereign creature,—

*Cleo.* His legs bestrid the ocean: his rear'd  
arm

Crested the world: his voice was property'd  
As all the tuned spheres, and that to friends;

But when he meant to quail and shake the orb,  
He was as rattling thunder. For his bounty,

There was no winter in't; an autumn 'twas  
That grew the more by reaping: his delights

Were dolphin-like; they show'd his back above  
The element they lived in: in his livery 90  
Walk'd crows and crownets; realms and  
islands were

As plates dropp'd from his pocket.

*Dol.* Cleopatra!

*Cleo.* Think you there was, or might be, such  
a man

As this I dream'd of?

*Dol.* Gentle madam, no.

*Cleo.* You lie, up to the hearing of the gods.  
But, if there be, or ever were, one such,

It's past the size of dreaming: nature wants  
stuff

To vie strange forms with fancy; yet, to  
imagine

An Antony, were nature's piece 'gainst fancy,  
Condemning shadows quite.

*Dol.* Hear me, good madam. 100  
Your loss is as yourself, great; and you bear it  
As answering to the weight: would I might  
never

O'ertake pursued success, but I do feel,  
By the rebound of yours, a grief that smites  
My very heart at root.

*Cleo.* I thank you, sir.  
Know you what Caesar means to do with me?

*Dol.* I am loath to tell you what I would  
you knew.

*Cleo.* Nay, pray you, sir,—  
*Dol.* Though he be honourable,—

*Cleo.* He'll lead me, then, in triumph?

*Dol.* Madam, he will; I know't. 110  
[*Flourish, and shout within.* 'Make way  
there: Caesar!']

*Enter* **CAESAR, GALLUS, PROCULEIUS, MECENAS, SELEUCUS, and others of his train.**

*Ca.* Which is the Queen of Egypt?

*Dol.* It is the emperor, madam. [*Cleopatra kneels.*]

*Ca.* Arise, you shall not kneel:

I pray you, rise; rise, Egypt.

*Cleo.* Sir, the gods  
Will have it thus; my master and my lord  
I must obey.

*Ca.* Take to you no hard thoughts:  
The record of what injuries you did us,  
Though written in our flesh, we shall remember  
As things but done by chance.

*Cleo.* Sole sir o' the world,  
I cannot project mine own cause so well 121  
To make it clear; but do confess I have  
Been laden with like frailties which before  
Have often shamed our sex.

*Ca.* Cleopatra, know,  
We will extenuate rather than enforce:  
If you apply yourself to our intents,  
Which towards you are most gentle, you shall  
find

A benefit in this change; but if you seek  
To lay on me a cruelty, by taking  
Antony's course, you shall bereave yourself 130  
Of my good purposes, and put your children  
To that destruction which I'll guard them from,  
If thereon you rely. I'll take my leave.

*Cleo.* And may, through all the world: 'tis  
yours; and we,  
Your scutcheons and your signs of conquest,  
shall

Hang in what place you please. Here, my good  
lord.

*Ca.* You shall advise me in all for Cleopatra.

*Cleo.* This is the brief of money, plate, and  
jewels.

I am possess'd of: 'tis exactly valued;  
Not petty things admitted. Where's Seleucus?

*Se.* Here, madam. 141

*Cleo.* This is my treasurer: let him speak,

What his peril, that I have reserved

As myself nothing. Speak the truth, Seleucus.

*Se.* Madam,

I had rather seal my lips, than, to my peril,

Speak what which is not.

*Cleo.* What have I kept back?

*Se.* Enough to purchase what you have  
made known.

*Ca.* Nay, which not, Cleopatra; I approve

Your wisdom in the deed.

*Cleo.* See, Caesar! O, L—  
How pomp is fellow'd! mine will now be yours,  
And, should we shift estates, yours would be  
mine.

The ingratitude of this Seleucus does  
Even make me wild: O slave, of no more trust  
Than love that's hired! What, goest thou  
back! thou shalt

Go back, I warrant thee; but I'll catch thine  
eyes

Though they had wings: slave, soulless villain,  
dog!

O rarely base!

*Ca.* Good queen, let us entreat you.

*Cleo.* O Caesar, what a wounding shame is  
this,

That thou, vouchsafing here to visit me, 150  
Doing the honour of thy lordliness

To one so meek, that mine own servant should  
Parcel the sum of my disgraces by

Addition of his envy! Say, good Caesar,  
That I some lady trifles have reserved,

Immortal toys, things of such dignity  
As we greet modern friends withal; and say,

Some nobler token I have kept apart  
For Livia and Octavia, to induce

Their mediation; must I be unfolded 170  
With one that I have bred! The gods! it  
smites me

Beneath the fall I have. [*To Seleucus*] Prithce,  
go hence;

Or I shall show the cinders of my spirits  
Through the ashes of my chance: wert thou

a man,  
Thou wouldest have mercy on me.

*Ca.* Forbear, Seleucus.

[*Exit Seleucus.*]

*Cleo.* Be it known, that we, the greatest, are  
misthought

For things that others do; and, when we fall,  
We answer others' merits in our name,

Are therefore to be pitied.

*Ca.* Cleopatra,

Not what you have reserved, nor what acknow-  
ledged, 180

Put we! the roll of conquest: still he's yours,  
Bestow it at your pleasure; and believe,

Caesar's no merchant, to make prize with you  
Of things that merchants sold. Therefore be

cheer'd;  
Make not your thoughts your prisons: no, dear  
queen;

For we intend so to dispose you as  
Yourself shall give us counsel. Feed, and sleep:

Our care and pity is so much upon you,  
That we remain your friend; and so, adieu.

*Cleo.* My master, and my lord!

*Ca.* Not so, Adieu.

[*Flourish. Exit Caesar and his train.*]

*Cleo.* He words me, girls, he words me, that  
I should not

Be noble to myself: but, hark thee, Charmian.  
[*Whisper Charmian.*]

*Ira.* Finish, good lady; the bright day is  
done,

And we are for the dark.

*Cleo.* His thee again:

I have spoke already, and it is provided;

Go put it to the hasts.

*Char.* Madam, I will.

*Re-enter DOLABELLA.*

*Dol.* Where is the queen?

*Char.* Behold, sir. [*Exit Dolabella.*]

*Dol.* Madam, as thereto sworn by your command,

Which my love makes religion to obey,  
I tell you this: Caesar through Syria  
Intends his journey; and within three days  
You with your children will he send before:  
Make your best use of this: I have perform'd  
Your pleasure and my promise.

*Cleo.* Dolabella,  
I shall remain your debtor.

*Dol.* I your servant.  
Adieu, good queen: I must attend on Caesar.

*Cleo.* Farewell, and thanks. [*Exit Dolabella.*]  
Now, Iras, what think'st thou?  
Thou, an Egyptian puppet, shalt be shown  
In Rome, as well as I: mechanic slaves  
With greasy aprons, rules, and hammers, shall  
Uplift us to the view; in their thick breaths,  
Rank of gross diet, shall we be enclouded,  
And forced to drink their vapour.

*Iras.* The gods forbid!  
*Cleo.* Nay, 'tis most certain, Iras: saucy  
lictors

Will catch at us, like strumpets; and scald  
rhymers

Ballad us out o' tune: the quick comedians,  
Extemporally will stage us, and present  
Our Alexandrian revels; Antony  
Shall be brought drunken forth, and I shall see  
Some squeaking Cleopatra boy my greatness  
I' the posture of a whore.

*Iras.* O the good gods! :

*Cleo.* Nay, that's certain.  
*Iras.* I'll never see't; for, I am sure, my  
nails

Are stronger than mine eyes.

*Cleo.* Why, that's the way  
To fool their preparation, and to conquer  
Their most absurd intents.

*Re-enter CHARMIAN.*

Now, Charmian!  
Show me, my women, like a queen: go fetch  
My best attires: I am again for Cydnus,  
To meet Mark Antony: sirrah Iras, go.  
Now, noble Charmian, we'll dispatch indeed;  
And, when thou hast done this chare, I'll give  
thee leave  
To play till doomsday. Bring our crown and all.  
Wherefore's this noise?

[*Exit Iras. A noise within.*]

*Enter a Guardsman.*

*Guard.* Here is a rural fellow  
That will not be denied your highness' presence  
He brings you figs.

*Cleo.* Let him come in. [*Exit Guardsman.*]  
What poor an instrument  
May do a noble deed! he brings me liberty.  
My resolution's plac'd, and I have nothing  
Of woman in me: now from head to foot

am marble-constant; now the fleeting moon  
No planet is of mine.

*Re-enter Guardsman, with Crown bringing in  
a basket.*

*Guard.* This is the man. 241  
*Cleo.* Avoid, and leave him.

[*Exit Guardsman.*]  
Hast thou the pretty worm of Nilus there,  
That kills and pains not?

*Crown.* Truly, I have him; but I would not  
be the party that should desire you to touch  
him, for his biting is immortal; those that do  
die of it do seldom or never recover.

*Cleo.* Rememberest thou any that have died  
on't?

*Crown.* Very many, men and women too. I  
heard of one of them no longer than yesterday:  
a very honest woman, but something given to  
lie; as a woman should not do, but in the way  
of honesty: how she died of the biting of it,  
what pain she felt: truly, she makes a very  
good report o' the worm; but she that will  
believe all that they say, shall never be saved  
by half that they do: but this is most fallible,  
the worm's an odd worm.

*Cleo.* Get thee hence; farewell. 260

*Crown.* I wish you all joy of the worm.  
[*Setting down his basket.*]

*Cleo.* Farewell.  
*Crown.* You must think this, look you, that  
the worm will do his kind.

*Cleo.* Ay, ay; farewell.

*Crown.* Look you, the worm is not to be  
trusted but in the keeping of wise people; for,  
indeed, there is no goodness in the worm.

*Cleo.* Take thou no care; it shall be heeded.

*Crown.* Very good. Give it nothing, I pray  
you, for it is not worth the feeding. 271

*Cleo.* Will it eat me?

*Crown.* You must not think I am so simple  
but I know the devil himself will not eat a  
woman: I know that a woman is a dish for the  
gods, if the devil dress her not. But, truly,  
these same whorison devils do the gods great  
harm in their women; for in every ten that  
they make, the devils mar five.

*Cleo.* Well, get thee gone; farewell. 280

*Crown.* Yes, forsooth: I wish you joy o'  
the worm. [*Exit.*]

*Re-enter IRAS with a robe, crown, &c.*

*Cleo.* Give me my robe, put on my crown;  
I have

Immortal longings in me: now no more  
The juice of Egypt's grape shall moist this lip:  
Yare, yare, good Iras; quick. Methinks I hear  
Antony call; I see him rouse himself

To praise my noble act; I hear him mock  
The luck of Caesar, which the gods give men

To excuse their after wrath: husband, I come;  
Now to that name my courage prove my title!

I am fire and air; my other elements  
I give to bear life. So; have you done?

Come then, and take the last warmth of my lip.  
Farewell, kind Charmian; Iras, long farewell.

[*Kisses them. Iras falls and dies.*]  
Have I the apple in my lips? Don't fall!

If thou and nature can so gently part,  
The stroke of death is as a lover's pinch,  
Which hurts, and is desired. Dost thou lie still!

If thus thou vanishest, thou tell'st the world  
It is not worth leave-taking.

*Char.* Dissolve, thick cloud, and rain; that  
I may say,  
The gods themselves do weep!

*Cleo.* This proves me base:  
If she first meet the curled Antony,  
He'll make demand of her, and spend that kiss  
Which is my heaven to have. Come, thou mortal wretch,

[To an asp, which she applies to her breast.  
With thy sharp teeth this knot intrinsicate  
Of life at once untie: poor venomous fool,  
Be angry, and dispatch. O, couldst thou speak,  
That I might hear thee call great Caesar ass  
Unpolitic!

*Char.* O eastern star!  
*Cleo.* Peace, peace! 311

Dost thou not see my baby at my breast,  
That sucks the nurse asleep!

*Char.* O, break! O, break!  
*Cleo.* As sweet as balm, as soft as air, as gentle—

O Antony!—Nay, I will take thee too:  
[Applying another asp to her arm.

What should I stay— [Dies.  
*Char.* In this vile world? So, fare thee well.  
Now boast thee, death, in thy possession lies  
A lass unparallel'd. Downy windows, close;  
And golden Phœbus never be beheld 320  
Of eyes again so royal! Your crown's awry;  
I'll mend it, and then play.

*Enter the Guard, rushing in.*

*First Guard.* Where is the queen!  
*Char.* Speak softly, wake her not.

*First Guard.* Caesar hath sent—  
*Char.* Too slow a messenger.

[Applies an asp.  
O, come apace, dispatch! I partly feel thee.

*First Guard.* Approach, ho! All's not well: Caesar's beguiled.

*Sec. Guard.* There's Dolabella sent from Caesar; call him.

*First Guard.* What work is here! Charmian, is this well done!

*Char.* It is well done, and fitting for a princess

Descended of so many royal kings. 330  
Ah, soldier!

[Dies.

*Re-enter DOLABELLA.*

*Dol.* How goes it here?

*Sec. Guard.* All dead.  
*Dol.* Caesar, thy thoughts

Touch their effects in this: thyself art coming  
To see perform'd the dreaded act which thou  
So sought'st to hinder.

[Within 'A way there, a way for Caesar!'  
*Re-enter CÆSAR and all his train, marching.*

*Dol.* O sir, you are too sure an augurer;  
That you did fear is done.

*Cæs.* Bravest at the last,  
She levell'd at our purposes, and, being royal,  
Took her own way. The manner of their deaths 340

I do not see them bleed.

*Dol.* Who was last with them?  
*First Guard.* A simple countryman, that

brought her figs:  
This was his basket.

*Cæs.* Poison'd, then.  
*First Guard.* O Caesar,

This Charmian lived but now; she stood and spake:

I found her trimming up the diadem  
On her dead mistress; tremblingly she stood  
And on the sudden dropp'd.

*Cæs.* O noble weakness!  
If they had swallow'd poison, 'twould appear

By external swelling: but she looks like sleep,  
As she would catch another Antony 350  
In her strong toil of grace.

*Dol.* Here, on her breast,  
There is a vent of blood and something blown:  
The like is on her arm.

*First Guard.* This is an asp's trail: and these fig-leaves

Have slime upon them, such as the asp leaves  
Upon the caves of Nile.

*Cæs.* Most probable  
That so she died: for her physician tells me

She hath pursued conclusions infinite  
Of easy ways to die. Take up her bed;

And bear her women from the monument:  
She shall be buried by her Antony; 360

No grave upon the earth shall clip in it  
A pair so famous. High events as these

Strike those that make them; and their story is  
No less in pity than his glory which

Brought them to be lamented. Our army shall  
In solemn show attend this funeral;

And then to Rome. Come, Dolabella, see  
High order in this great solemnity. [Exeunt.

# CYMBELINE

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

CYMBELINE, king of Britain.

CLOTEN, son to the Queen by a former husband.

POSTHUMUS LEONATUS, a gentleman, husband to Imogen.

BELARIUS, a banished lord, disguised under the name of Morgan.

GUIDERIUS, { sons to Cymbeline, disguised  
under the names of Polydore  
ARVIRAGUS, } and Cadwal, supposed sons  
to Morgan.

PHILARIO, friend to Posthumus, } Italians.  
IACHIMO, friend to Philario, }

CAIUS LUCIUS, general of the Roman forces.

PRISANIO, servant to Posthumus.

CORNELIUS, a physician.

A Roman Captain.

Two British Captains.

A Frenchman, friend to Philario.

Two Lords of Cymbeline's court.

Two Gentlemen of the same.

Two Gaolers.

Queen, wife to Cymbeline.

IMOGEN, daughter to Cymbeline by a former queen.

HELEN, a lady attending on Imogen.

Lords, Ladies, Roman Senators, Tribunes,  
a Soothsayer, a Dutchman, a Spaniard,  
Musicians, Officers, Captains, Soldiers, Mes-  
sengers, and other attendants.

Apparitions.

SCENE: *Britain; Rome.*

## ACT I.

SCENE I. *Britain. The garden of  
Cymbeline's palace.*

*Enter two Gentlemen.*

*First Gent.* You do not meet a man but  
frowns: our bloods  
No more obey the heavens than our courtiers  
Still seem as does the king.

*Sec. Gent.* But what's the matter?

*First Gent.* His daughter, and the heir of 's  
kingdom, whom

He purposed to his wife's sole son—a widow  
That late he married—hath referr'd herself  
Unto a poor but worthy gentleman: she's  
wedded;

Her husband banish'd; she imprison'd: all  
is outward sorrow; though I think the king  
Be touch'd at very heart.

*Sec. Gent.* None but the king? so

*First Gent.* He that hath lost her too; so is  
the queen,

That most desired the match; but not a  
courtier,

Although they wear their faces to the bent  
Of the king's looks, hath a heart that is not  
Glad at the thing they scowl at.

*Sec. Gent.* And why so?

*First Gent.* He that hath mis'd the princess  
is a thing

Too bad for bad report: and he that hath her—  
I mean, that married her, slack, good man!  
And therefore banish'd—'s a creature such

As, to seek through the regions of the earth, so  
For one his like, there would be something  
failing

In him that should compare. I do not think  
So fair an outward and such stuff within  
Endows a man but he.

*Sec. Gent.* You speak him far.

*First Gent.* I do extend him, sir, within  
himself,

Crush him together rather than unfold  
His measure duly.

*Sec. Gent.* What's his name and birth?

*First Gent.* I cannot delve him to the root:  
his father

Was called Sicilius, who did join his honour  
Against the Romans with Cassibelan,

But had his titles by Tenantism whom  
He served with glory and admired success,

So gain'd the sur-addition Leonatus;  
And had, besides this gentleman in question,

Two other sons, who in the wars o' the time  
Died with their swords in hand; for which their

father,

Then old and fond of issue, took such sorrow  
That he quit being, and his gentle lady,

Big of this gentleman our theme, deceased  
As he was born. The king he takes the babe

To his protection, calls him Posthumus Leo-  
natus,

Breeds him and makes him of his bed-chamber,  
Puts to him all the learnings that his time

Could make him the receiver of; which he took,  
As we do sir, fast as 'twas minister'd,

And in 's spring became a harvest, lived in  
court—

Which rare it is to do—most praised, most loved,

A sample to the youngest, to the more mature  
A glass that fated them, and to the graver 49  
A child that guided dotards; to his mistress,  
For whom he now is banish'd, her own price  
Proclaims how she esteem'd him and his virtue;  
By her election may be truly read  
What kind of man he is.

*Sec. Gent.* I honour him  
Even out of your report. But, pray you, tell me,  
Is she sole child to the king?

*First Gent.* His only child.  
He had two sons: if this be worth your hearing,  
Mark it: the eldest of them at three years old,  
I' the swathing-clothes the other, from their  
nursery

Were stol'n, and to this hour no guess in  
knowledge 60

Which way they went.

*Sec. Gent.* How long is this age?

*First Gent.* Some twenty years.

*Sec. Gent.* That a king's children should be  
so convey'd,

So slackly guarded, and the search so slow,  
That could not trace them!

*First Gent.* Howsoe'er 'tis strange,  
Or that the negligence may well be laugh'd at,  
Yet is it true, sir.

*Sec. Gent.* I do well believe you.

*First Gent.* We must forbear: here comes  
the gentleman,

The queen, and princess. [*Exeunt.*

*Enter the QUEEN, POSTHUMUS, and IMOGEN.*

*Queen.* No, be assured you shall not find  
me, daughter, 70

After the slander of most stepmothers,  
Evil-eyed unto you: you're my prisoner, but  
Your gaoler shall deliver you the keys  
That lock up your restraint. For you, Post-  
humus,

as I can win the offended king,  
I will be known your advocate: marry, yet  
The fire of rage is in him, and 'twere good  
You lean'd unto his sentence with what patience  
Your wisdom may inform you.

*Post.* Please your highness,  
I will from hence to-day.

*Queen.* You know the peril. So  
I'll fetch a turn about the garden, plying  
The pangs of barr'd affections, though the king  
Hath charged you should not speak together.

[*Exit.*

*Imo.* O  
Dissembling courtesy! How fine this tyrant  
Can tickle where she wounds! My dearest  
husband,  
I something fear my father's wrath; but no-  
thing—

Always reserved my holy duty—what  
His ray can do on me: you must be gone;  
And I must here abide the hourly shot  
Of angry eyes, not comforted to live,  
But that there is this jewel in the world  
That I may see again.

*Post.* My queen! my mistress!  
O lady, weep no more, lest I give cause

To be suspected of more tenderness  
Than doth become a man. I will remain  
The loyal'st husband that did e'er plight troth:  
My residence in Rome at one Philario's,  
Who to my father was a friend, to me  
Known but by letter: thither write, my queen,  
And with mine eyes I'll drink the words you  
Though ink be made of gall.]

*Re-enter QUEEN*

*Queen.* Be brief, I pray you:  
If the king come, I shall incur I know not  
How much of his displeasure. [*Aside.* Yet  
I'll move him

To walk this way: I never do him wrong,  
But he does buy my injuries, to be friends:  
Pays dear for my offences. [*Exit.*

*Post.* Should we be taking leave  
As long a term as yet we have to live,  
The loathsomeness to depart would grow. Adieu!

*Imo.* May, stay a little:

Were you but riding forth to air yourself, 70  
Such parting were too petty. Look here, love;  
This diamond was my mother's: take it, heart;  
But keep it till you woo another wife,  
When Imogen is dead.

*Post.* How, how: I have?  
You gentle gods, give me but this I have,  
And scar up my embracements from a next  
With bonds of death! [*Putting on the ring.*

Remain, remain thou here  
While sense can keep it on. And, sweetest,  
fairest,

As I my poor self did exchange for you,  
To your so infinite loss, so in our trifles 70  
I still win of you: for my sake wear this;  
It is a manacle of love; I'll place it  
Upon this fairest prisoner.

[*Putting a bracelet upon her arm.*  
*Imo.* O the gods!

When shall we see again?

*Enter CYMBELINE and Lords.*

*Post.* Alack, the king!  
*Cym.* Thou basest thing, avoid! hence, from  
my sight!

If after this command thou fraught the court  
With thy unworthiness, thou diest: a way!  
Thou'rt poison to my blood.

*Post.* The gods protect you!  
And bless the good remainders of the court!  
I am gone. [*Exit.*

*Imo.* There cannot be a pinch in death 70  
More sharp than this is.

*Cym.* O diabolical thing,  
That shouldst repair my youth, thou hast  
A year's age on me.

*Imo.* I beseech you, sir,  
Harm not yourself with your vexation:  
I am senseless of your wrath; a touch more  
rare

Subdues all pangs, all fears.

*Cym.* Fast grace! obedience!  
*Imo.* Past hope, and in despair; that way,  
past grace.

*Cym.* That mightst have had the sole son of  
my queen!



*Imo.* O blest, that I might not! I chose an

[*Id avoid a puttock.*]

*Cym.* Thou took'st a beggar; wouldst have made my throne

A seat for baseness.

*Imo.* No; I rather added

A lustre to it.

*Cym.* O thou vile one!

*Imo.* Sir,

It is your fault that I have loved Posthumus:

You bred him as my playfellow, and he is

A man worth any woman, overbuys me

Almost the sum he pays.

*Cym.* What, art thou mad?

*Imo.* Almost, sir: heaven restore me!

Would I were

A neat-herd's daughter, and my Leonatus

Our neighbour shepherd's son!

*Cym.* Thou foolish thing! *Exeunt*

*Re-enter QUEEN.*

They were again together: you have done

Not after our command. Away with her,

And pen her up.

*Queen.* Desecch your patience. Peace,

Dear lady daughter, peace! Sweet sovereign,

Leave us to ourselves; and make yourself some

comfort

Out of your best advice.

*Cym.* Nay, let her languish

A drop of blood a day; and, being aged,

Die of this folly!

[*Exeunt Cymbeline and Lords.*]

*Queen.* Phe! you must give way.

*Enter PISANTO.*

Here is your servant. How now, sir! What

*news!*

*Pis.* My lord your son drew on my master.

*Queen.* His! *Exeunt*

No harm, I trust, is done!

*Pis.* There might have been,

But that my master rather play'd than fought

And had no help of anger: they were parted

By gentlemen at hand.

*Queen.* I am very glad on't.

*Imo.* Your son's my father's friend; he

takes his part.

To draw upon an exile! O brave sir!

I would they were in Afric both together;

Myself by with a needle, that I might prick

The goer-back. Why came you from your

master?

*Pis.* On his command: he would not suffer

me

To bring him to the haven; left these notes

Of what commands I should be subject to,

When't pleased you to employ me.

*Queen.* This hath been

Your faithful servant: I dare lay mine honour

He will remain so.

*Pis.* I humbly thank your highness.

*Queen.* Pray, walk awhile.

*Imo.* About some half-hour hence,

I pray you, speak with me: you shall at least

Go see my lord aboard: for this time leave me.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *The same. A public place.*

*Enter CLOTEN and two Lords.*

*First Lord.* Sir, I would advise you to shift a shirt; the violence of action hath made you reek as a sacrifice: where air comes out, air comes in: there's none abroad so wholesome as that you vent.

*Clo.* If my shirt were bloody, then to shift it. Have I hurt him!

*Sec. Lord.* [*Aside*] No, faith; not so much as his patience.

*First Lord.* Hurt him! his body's a passable carcass, if he be not hurt: it is a throughfare for steel, if it be not hurt.

*Sec. Lord.* [*Aside*] His steel was in debt; it went o' the backside the town.

*Clo.* The villain would not stand me.

*Sec. Lord.* [*Aside*] No; but he fled forward still, toward your face.

*First Lord.* Stand you! You have land enough of your own: but he added to your having; gave you some ground.

*Sec. Lord.* [*Aside*] As many inches as you have oceans. Puppies!

*Clo.* I would they had not come between us.

*Sec. Lord.* [*Aside*] So would I, till you had measured how long a fool you were upon the ground.

*Clo.* And that she should love this fellow and refuse me!

*Sec. Lord.* [*Aside*] If it be a sin to make a true election, she is damned.

*First Lord.* Sir, as I told you always, her beauty and her brain go not together: she's a good sign, but I have seen small reflection of her wit.

*Sec. Lord.* [*Aside*] She shines not upon fools, lest the reflection should hurt her.

*Clo.* Come, I'll to my chamber. Would there had been some hurt done!

*Sec. Lord.* [*Aside*] I wish not so; unless it had been the fall of an ass, which is no great hurt.

*Clo.* You'll go with us!

*First Lord.* I'll attend your lordship.

*Clo.* Nay, come, let's go together.

*Sec. Lord.* Well, my lord. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *A room in Cymbeline's palace.*

*Enter IMOGEN and PISANTO.*

*Imo.* I would thou grew'st unto the shadow of the haven,

And question'd every sail: if he should write, And I not have it, 'twere a paper lost,

As offer'd mercy is. What was the last

That he spake to thee?

*Pis.* It was his queen, his queen!

*Imo.* Then waved his handshakes!

*Pis.* And kiss'd it, madam.

*Imo.* Senseless linen! happier than man that

And that was all!

*Pis.* No, madam; for so long as he could make me with this eye-glass

Distinguish him from others, he did keep

The deck, with glove, or hat, or handkerchief,

Still waving, as the fits and starts of his mind  
Could best express how slow his soul sail'd on,  
How swift his ship.

*Imo.* Thou shouldst have made him  
As little as a crow, or less, ere left  
To after-eye him.

*Pis.* Madam, so I did.  
*Imo.* I would have broke mine eye-strings;  
crack'd them, but  
To look upon him, till the diminution  
Of space had pointed him sharp as my needle,  
Nay, follow'd him, till he had melted from  
The smallness of a gnat to air, and then  
Have turn'd mine eye and wept. But, good  
*Pisanio,*

When shall we hear from him?

*Pis.* Be assured, madam,  
With his next vantage.

*Imo.* I did not take my leave of him, but  
had

Most pretty things to say: ere I could tell him  
How I would think on him at certain hours  
Such thoughts and such, or I could make him  
swear

The ashes of Italy should not betray  
Mine interest and his honour, or have charged  
him.

At the sixth hour of morn, at noon, at mid-  
night,

To encounter me with orisons, for then  
I am in heaven for him; or ere I could  
Give him that parting kiss which I had set  
Betwixt two charming words, comes in my  
father

And like the tyrannous breathing of the north  
Shakes all our buds from growing.

*Enter a Lady.*

*Lady.* The queen, madam,  
Desires your highness' company.

*Imo.* Those things I bid you do, get them  
dispatch'd.

I will attend the queen.

*Pis.* Madam, I shall. [*Exeunt.* 40]

SCENE IV. *Rome. Philario's house.*

*Enter* PHILARIO, IACHIMO, a Frenchman,  
a Dutchman, and a Spaniard.

*Iach.* Believe it, sir, I have seen him in  
Britain: he was then of a crescent note, ex-  
pected to prove so worthy as since he hath been  
allowed the name of; but I could then have  
looked on him without the help of admiration,  
though the catalogue of his endowments had  
been tabled by his side and I to peruse him by  
itself.

*Phi.* You speak of him when he was less  
furnished than now he is with that which makes  
him both without and within.

*French.* I have seen him in France: we had  
very many there could behold the sun with as  
firm eyes as he.

*Iach.* This matter of marrying his king's  
daughter, wherein he must be weighed rather  
by her value than his own, words him, I doubt  
not, a great deal from the matter.

*French.* And then his banishment.

*Iach.* Ay, and the approbation of those that  
weep this lamentable divorce under her colours  
are wonderfully to extend him; be it but to  
fortify her judgement, which else an easy  
battery might lay flat, for taking a beggar with-  
out less quality. But how comes it he is to  
sojourn with you? How sleeps acquaintance?

*Phi.* His father and I were soldiers together;  
to whom I have been often bound for no less  
than my life. Here comes the Briton: let him  
be so entertained amongst you as suits, with  
gentlemen of your knowing, to a stranger of  
his quality. 30

*Enter* POSTHUMUS.

I beseech you all, be better known to this  
gentleman, whom I commend to you as a  
noble friend of mine: how worthy he is I will  
leave to appear hereafter, rather than story him  
in his own hearing.

*French.* Sir, we have known together in  
Orleans.

*Post.* Since when I have been debtor to you  
for courtesies, which I will be ever to pay and  
yet pay still. 40

*French.* Sir, you o'er-rate my poor kindness:  
I was glad I did atone my countryman and  
you; it had been pity you should have been  
put together with so mortal a purpose as then  
each bore, upon importance of so slight and  
trivial a nature.

*Post.* By your pardon, sir, I was then a  
young traveller; rather shunned to go even  
with what I heard than in my every action to  
be guided by others' experiences: but upon my  
mended judgement—if I offend not to say it is  
mended—my quarrel was not altogether slight.

*French.* Faith, yes, to be put to the arbitre-  
ment of swords, and by such two that would by  
all likelihood have confounded one the other,  
or have fallen both.

*Iach.* Can we, with manners, ask what was  
the difference?

*French.* Safely, I think: 'twas a contention  
in public, which may, without contradiction,  
suffer the report. It was much like an argu-  
ment that fell out last night, where each of us  
fell in praise of our country mistresses; this  
gentleman at that time vouching—and upon  
warrant of bloody affirmation—his to be more  
fair, virtuous, wise, chaste, constant-qualified  
and less attemptable than any the rarest of our  
ladies in France.

*Iach.* That lady is not now living, or this  
gentleman's opinion by this worn out.

*Post.* She holds her virtue still and I my  
mind.

*Iach.* You must not so far prefer her 'fore  
ours of Italy. 71

*Post.* Being so far provoked as I was in  
France, I would abate her nothing, though I  
profess myself her adorer, not her friend.

*Iach.* As fair and as good—a kind of hand-  
in-hand comparison—had been something too  
fair and too good for any lady in Britain. If  
she went before others I have seen, as that  
diamond of yours outlustrs many I have be-  
held, I could not but believe she excels many:

but I have not seen the most precious diamond that is, nor you the lady.

*Post.* I praised her as I rated her: so do I my stone.

*Iach.* What do you esteem it at?

*Post.* More than the world enjoys.

*Iach.* Either your unparagoned mistress is dead, or she's outprized by a trifle.

*Post.* You are mistaken: the one may be sold, or given, if there were wealth enough for the purchase, or merit for the gift: the other is not a thing for sale, and only the gift of the gods.

*Iach.* Which the gods have given you?

*Post.* Which, by their graces, I will keep.

*Iach.* You may wear her in title yours: but, you know, strange fowl light upon neighbouring ponds. Your ring may be stolen too: so your brace of unprizable estimations; the one is but frail and the other casual; a cunning thief, or a that way accomplished courtier, would hazard the winning both of first and last.

*Post.* Your Italy contains none so accomplished a courtier to convince the honour of my mistress, if, in the holding or loss of that, you term her frail. I do nothing doubt you have store of thieves; notwithstanding, I fear not my ring.

*Phi.* Let us leave here, gentlemen. 109

*Post.* Sir, with all my heart. This worthy signior, I thank him, makes no stranger of me; we are familiar at first.

*Iach.* With five times so much conversation, I should get ground of your fair mistress, make her go back, even to the yielding, had I admittance and opportunity to friend.

*Post.* No, no.

*Iach.* I dare thereupon pawn the moiety of my estate to your ring; which, in my opinion, o'ervalues it something: but I make my wager rather against your confidence than her reputation: and, to bar your offence herein too, I durst attempt it against any lady in the world.

*Post.* You are a great deal abused in too bold a persuasion; and I doubt not you sustain what you're worthy of by your attempt.

*Iach.* What's that?

*Post.* A repulse: though your attempt, as you call it, deserve more; a punishment too.

*Phi.* Gentlemen, enough of this: it came in too suddenly; let it die as it was born, and, I pray you, be better acquainted.

*Iach.* Would I had put my estate and my neighbour's on the approbation of what I have spoke!

*Post.* What lady would you choose to assail?

*Iach.* Yours; whom in constancy you think stands so safe. I will lay you ten thousand ducats to your ring, that commend me to the court where your lady is, with no more advantage than the opportunity of a second conference, and I will bring from thence that honour of hers which you imagine so reserved.

*Post.* I will wage against your gold, gold to it: my ring I hold dear as my finger; 'tis part of it.

*Iach.* You are afraid, and therein the wiser. If you buy ladies' flesh at a million a dram, you cannot preserve it from tainting: but I see you have some religion in you, that you fear.

*Post.* This is but a custom in your tongue; you bear a graver purpose, I hope. 111

*Iach.* I am the master of my speeches, and would undergo what's spoken, I swear.

*Post.* Will you? I shall but lend my diamond till your return: let there be covenants drawn between's: my mistress exceeds in goodness the hugeness of your unworthy thinking: I dare you to this match: here's my ring.

*Phi.* I will have it no day. 119

*Iach.* By the gods, it is one. If I bring you no sufficient testimony that I have enjoyed the dearest bodily part of your mistress, my ten thousand ducats are yours; so is your diamond too: if I come off, and leave her in such honour as you have trust in, she your jewel, this your jewel, and my gold are yours: provided I have your commendation for my more free entertainment.

*Post.* I embrace these conditions; let us have articles betwixt us. Only, thus far you shall answer: if you make your voyage upon her and give me directly to understand you have prevailed, I am no further your enemy; she is not worth our debate: if she remain un-seduced, you not making it appear otherwise, for your ill opinion and the assault you have made to her chastity you shall answer me with your sword.

*Iach.* Your hand; a covenant: we will have these things set down by lawful counsel, and straight away for Britain, lest the bargain should catch cold and starve: I will fetch my gold and have our two wagers recorded. 121

*Post.* Agreed.

[*Exeunt Posthumus and Iachimo.*]

*French.* Will this hold, think you?

*Phi.* Signior Iachimo will not from it. Pray, let us follow 'em. [*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE V. Britain. A room in Cymbeline's palace.

*Enter QUEEN, Ladies, and CORNELIUS.*

*Queen.* Whiles yet the dew's on ground, gather those flowers; Make haste: who has the note of them?

*First Lady.* I, madam.

*Queen.* Dispatch. [*Exeunt Ladies.*]  
Now, master doctor, have you brought those drugs?

*Cor.* Pleaseth your highness, ay: here they are, madam. [*Presenting a small box.*]  
But I beseech your grace, without offence,—My conscience bids me ask—wherefore you have Commanded of me these most poisonous compounds, Which are the movers of a languishing death; But though slow, deadly!

*Queen.* I wonder, doctor, 10  
Thou ask'st me such a question. Have I not been  
Thy pupil long? Hast thou not learn'd me how  
To make perfumes? distill? preserve? yea, so  
That our great king himself doth woo me oft  
For my confections! Having thus far pro-  
ceeded,—

Unless thou think'st me devilish—is't not meet  
That I did simplify my judgement in  
Other conclusions? I will try the forces  
Of these thy compounds on such creatures as  
We count not worth the hanging, but none  
human.

To try the vigour of them and apply  
Allayments to their act, and by them gather  
Their several virtues and effects.

*Cor.* Your highness  
Shall from this practice but make hard your  
heart:

Besides, the seeing these effects will be  
Both noisome and infectious.

*Queen.* O, content thee.

*Enter PISANIO.*

*[Aside]* Here comes a flattering rascal; upon  
him

Will I first work: he's for his master.  
And enemy to my son. How now, Pisanio!  
Doctor, your service for this time is ended; so  
Take your own way.

*Cor.* *[Aside]* I do suspect you, madam;  
But you shall do no harm.

*Queen.* *[To Pisanio]* Hark thee, a word.  
*Cor.* *[Aside]* I do not like her. She doth  
think she has

Strange lingering poisons: I do know her spirit,  
And will not trust one of her malice with  
A drug of such damn'd nature. Those she has  
Will stupefy and dull the sense awhile;  
Which first, perchance, she'll prove on cats and

Then afterward up higher: but there is  
No danger in what show of death it makes, so  
More than the locking-up the spirits a time,  
To be more fresh, reviving. She is fool'd  
With a most false effect; and I the truer,  
So to be false with her.

*Queen.* No further service, doctor,  
Until I send for thee.

*Cor.* I humbly take my leave. *[Exit.]*

*Queen.* Weeps she still, say'st thou? Dost  
thou think in time

She will not quench and let instructions enter  
Where folly now possesses? Do thou work:  
When thou shalt bring me word she loves my  
son.

I'll tell thee on the instant thou art then so  
As great as is thy master, greater, for  
His fortunes all lie speechless and his name  
Is at last gasp: return he cannot, nor  
Continue where he is: to shift his being  
Is to exchange one misery with another,  
And every day that comes comes to decay  
A day's work in him. What shalt thou expect,  
To be depend on a thing that leans,  
Who cannot be new built, nor has no friends,  
So much as but to prop him? *[The Queen drops  
the box: Pisanio takes it up.]* Thou takest up  
Thou know'st not what; but take it for thy  
labour:

It is a thing I made, which hath the king  
Five times redeem'd from death: I do not know  
What is more cordial. Nay, I prithce, take it;  
It is no earnest of a further good  
Than I speak to thee. Tell thy mistress how

The case stands with her; do't as from thyself.  
Think what a chance thou changest on, but  
think

Thou hast thy mistress still, to boot, my son.  
Who shall take notice of thee: I'll move thee  
king

To any shape of thy preferment such  
As thou'lt desire; and then myself, I chiefly;  
That set thee on to this desert, am bound  
To load thy merit richly. Call my women:  
Think on my words. *[Exit Pisanio.]*

A sly and constant knave,  
Not to be shaken: the agent for his master  
And the remembrancer of her, to hold  
The hand-fast to her lord. I have given him  
that

Which, if he take, shall quite unpeople her  
Of liegers for her sweet, and which she after, so  
Except she bend her humour, shall be assured  
To taste of too.

*Re-enter PISANIO and Ladies.*

So, so: well done, well done:  
The violets, cowslips, and the primroses,  
Bear to my closet. Fare thee well, Pisanio;  
Think on my words.

*[Exit Queen and Ladies.]*  
*Pis.* And shall do:  
But when to my good lord I prove untrue,  
I'll choke myself: there's all I'll do for you.  
*[Exit.]*

SCENE VI. *The same. Another room in the  
palace.*

*Enter IMOGEN.*

*Imo.* A father cruel, and a step-dame false;  
A foolish sutor to a wedded lady,  
That hath her husband banish'd;—O, that hus-  
band!

My supreme crown of grief! and those repeated  
Vexations of it! Had I been thief-stol'n,  
As my two brothers, happy! but most miser-  
able

Is the desire that's glorious: blest be those,  
How mean so'er, that have their honest wills,  
Which seasons comfort. Who may this be?  
Fie!

*Enter PISANIO and LACHIMO.*

*Pis.* Madam, a noble gentleman of Rome,  
Comes from my lord with letters.

*Lach.* Change you, madam! so  
The worthy Leonatus is in safety  
And greets your highness dearly.

*[Presents a letter.]*  
*Imo.* Thanks, good sir:  
You're kindly welcome.

*Lach.* *[Aside]* All of her that is out of door  
most rich!

If she be furnish'd with a mind so rare,  
She is alone the Arabian bird, and I  
Have lost the wager. Boldness be my friend!  
Arm me, audacity, from head to foot!  
Or, like the Parthian, I shall fly right; so  
Rather, directly fly.

*Imo.* *[Reads]* 'He is one of the noblest  
note, to whose kindnesses I am most infinitely

tied. Reflect upon him accordingly, as you  
 value your trust—  
 So far I read aloud :  
 But even the very middle of my heart  
 Is warm'd by the rest, and takes it thankfully.  
 You are as welcome, worthy sir, as I  
 Have words to bid you, and shall find it so  
 In all that I can do.

*Jack.* Thanks, fairest lady.  
 What, are men mad? Hath nature given them  
 eyes

To see this vaulted arch, and the rich crop  
 Of sea and land, which can distinguish 'twixt  
 The fiery orbs above and the twinn'd stones  
 Upon the number'd beach? and can we not  
 Partition make with spectacles so precious  
 'Twixt fair and foul?

*Imo.* What makes your admiration?  
*Jack.* It cannot be i' the eye, for apes and  
 monkeys

'Twixt two such shes would chatter this way  
 and  
 Contemn with mows the other; nor i' the  
 judgement,

For idiots in this case of favour would  
 Be wisely definite; nor i' the appetite;  
 Sluttish to such neat excellence opposed  
 Should make desire vomit emptiness,  
 Not so allured to feed.

*Imo.* What is the matter, trow?

*Jack.* The cloyed will,  
 That satiate yet unsatisfied desire, that tub  
 Both fill'd and running, ravening first the lamb  
 Longs after for the garbage.

*Imo.* What, dear sir, so  
 Thus raps you? Are you well?

*Jack.* Thanks, madam; well. [*To Pisano*]  
 Beseech you, sir, desire  
 My man's abode where I did leave him: he  
 Is strange and peevish.

*Pis.* I was going, sir,  
 To give him welcome. [*Exit.*]

*Imo.* Continues well my lord? His health,  
 beseech you?

*Jack.* Well, madam.

*Imo.* Is he disposed to mirth? I hope he is.  
*Jack.* Exceeding pleasant; none a stranger there

So merry and so gamesome: he is call'd  
 The Briton reveller.

*Imo.* When he was here,  
 He did incline to sadness, and oft-times  
 of knowing why.

*Jack.* I never saw him sad.  
 Here's a Frenchman his companion, one  
 't eminent monsieur, that, it seems, much  
 loves

Gallian girl at home; he fumes  
 as thick sighs from him, whiles the jolly  
 Briton—

our lord, I mean—laughs from 's free lungs,  
 cries 'O,

my sides hold, to think that man, who  
 knows

history, report, or his own proof,  
 at woman is, yea, what she cannot choose  
 it must be, will his free hours languish for  
 bondage?

*Imo.* Will my lord say so?

*Jack.* Ay, madam, with his eyes in flood  
 with laughter:

It is a recreation to be by  
 And hear him mock the Frenchman. But,  
 heavens know,

Some men are much to blame.  
*Imo.* Not he, I hope.

*Jack.* Not he; but yet heaven's bounty to-  
 wards him might  
 Be used more thankfully. In himself, 'tis much;  
 In you, which I account his beyond all talents,  
 Whilst I am bound to wonder, I am bound  
 To pity too.

*Imo.* What do you pity, sir?

*Jack.* Two creatures heartily.

*Imo.* Am I one, sir?

You look on me: what wreck discern you in me  
 Deserves your pity?

*Jack.* Lamentable! What  
 To hide me from the radiant sun and solace  
 I the dungeon by a snuff!

*Imo.* I pray you, sir,  
 Deliver with more openness your answers

To my demands. Why do you pity me?

*Jack.* That others do—

I was about to say—enjoy your—But

It is an office of the gods to venge it,  
 Not mine to speak on't.

*Imo.* You do seem to know  
 Something of me, or what concerns me: pray

you,—  
 Since doubting things go ill often hurts more

Than to be sure they do; for certainties

Either are past remedies, or, timely knowing,

The remedy then born—discover to me

What both you spur and stop.

*Jack.* Had I this cheek so

To bathe my lips upon; this hand, whose touch,

Whose every touch, would force the feeder's soul

To the oath of loyalty; this object, which

Takes prisoner the wild motion of mine eye,

Fixing it only here; should I, damn'd then,

Slave with lips as common as the stairs

That mount the Capitol; join gripe with hands

Made hard with hourly falsehood—falsehood, as

With labour; then by-peeping in an eye

Base and unlistrous as the smoky light

That's fed with stinking tallow; it were fit too

That all the plagues of hell should at one time

Encounter such revolt.

*Imo.* My lord, I fear,

Has forgot Britain.

*Jack.* And himself. Not I,

Inclined to this intelligence, pronounce

The beggary of his change; but 'tis your graces

That from my inmost conscience to my tongue

Charms this report out.

*Imo.* Let me hear no more.

*Jack.* O dearest soul! your cause strikes

my heart

With pity, that doth make me sick. A lady

So fair, and fasten'd to an empery,

Would make the great-est king death's—

partner'd

With tomboys hired with that self inclination

Which your own codgers yield! with dammed

ventures

That play with all infirmities for gold  
Which rottenness can lend nature! such bold'd  
stuff

As well might poison poison! Be revenged;  
Or she that bore you was no queen, and you  
Recoil from your great stock.

*Imo.* Revenged!  
How should I be revenged? If this be true,—  
As I have such a heart that both mine ears <sup>130</sup>  
Must not in haste abuse—if it be true,  
How should I be revenged?

*Jack.* Should he make me  
Live, like Diana's priest, betwixt cold sheets,  
While he is vaulting variable ramps,  
In your despite, upon your purse? Revenge it.  
I dedicate myself to your sweet pleasure,  
More noble than that runagate to your bed,  
And will continue fast to your affection,  
Still close as sure.

*Imo.* What, ho, Pisanio!  
*Jack.* Let me my service tender on your lips.  
*Imo.* Away! I do condemn mine ears that  
have <sup>141</sup>

So long attended thee. If thou wert honourable,  
Thou wouldst have told this tale for virtue, not  
For such an end thou seek'st,—as base as  
strange.

Thou wrong'st a gentleman, who is as far  
From thy report as thou from honour, and  
Solicit'st here a lady that disdains  
Thee and the devil alike. What ho, Pisanio!  
The king my father shall be made acquainted  
Of thy assault: if he shall think it fit, <sup>150</sup>  
A saucy stranger in his court to mart  
As in a Romish stew and to expound  
His beastly mind to us, he hath a court  
He little cares for and a daughter who  
He not respects at all. What, ho, Pisanio!

*Jack.* O happy Leonatus! I may say:  
The credit that thy lady hath of thee  
Deserves thy trust, and thy most perfect good-  
ness

Her assured credit. Blessed live you long!  
A lady to the worthiest sir that ever <sup>160</sup>  
Country call'd his! and you his mistress, only  
For the most worthiest fit! Give me your  
pardon.

I have spoke this, to know if your affiance  
Were deeply rooted; and shall make your lord,  
That which he is, new o'er: and he is one  
The truest manner'd; such a holy witch  
That he enchants societies into him;  
Half all men's hearts are his.

*Imo.* You make amends,  
*Jack.* He sits 'mongst men like a descended

He hath a kind of honour sets him off, <sup>170</sup>  
More than a mortal seeming. Be not angry,  
Most mighty princes, that I have adventured  
To try your taking of a false report; which  
hath

Honour'd with confirmation your great judge-  
ment

In the election of a sir so rare,  
Which you know cannot err: the love I bear  
hath

Made me to fan you thus, but the gods made  
you.

Unlike all others, chaffless. Pray, your pardon  
*Imo.* All's well, sir: take my power I the  
court for yours.

*Jack.* My humble thanks. I had almost  
forgot

To entreat your grace but in a small request,  
And yet of moment too, for it concerns  
Your lord; myself and other noble friends  
Are partners in the business.

*Imo.* Pray, what is't?  
*Jack.* Some dozen Romans of us and you  
lord—

The best feather of our wing—have mingled  
sums

To buy a present for the emperor;  
Which I, the factor for the rest, have done  
In France: 'tis plate of rare device, and jewels  
Of rich and exquisite form; their values great  
And I am something curious, being strange,  
To have them in safe stowage: may it please  
you

To take them in protection?

*Imo.* Willingly.  
And pawn mine honour for their safety: since  
My lord hath interest in them, I will keep them  
In my bedchamber.

*Jack.* They are in a trunk,  
Attended by my men: I will make bold  
To send them to you, only for this night;  
I must aboard to-morrow.

*Imo.* O, no, no.  
*Jack.* Yes, I beseech; or I shall short my  
word <sup>200</sup>

By lengthening my return. From Gallia  
I cross'd the seas on purpose and on promise  
To see your grace.

*Imo.* I thank you for your pains:  
But not away to-morrow!

*Jack.* O, I must, madam:  
Therefore I shall beseech you, if you please  
To greet your lord with writing, do't to-night:  
I have outstaid my time; which is material  
To the tender of our present.

*Imo.* I will write.  
Send your trunk to me; it shall safe be kept,  
And truly yielded you. You're very welcome.  
[Exeunt.]

## ACT II.

## SCENE I. Britain. Before Cymbeline's palace.

Enter CLOTEN and two Lords.

*Clo.* Was there ever man had such luck!  
when I kissed the Jack, upon an up-cast to be  
hit away! I had a hundred pound on't: and  
then a whoreson jackanapes must take me up  
for swearing; as if I borrowed mine oaths  
of him and might not spend them at my pleasure.

*First Lord.* What got he by that? You  
have broke his pate with your bowl.

*Sec. Lord.* [Aside] If his wit had been like  
him that broke it, it would have run all out. <sup>10</sup>

*Clo.* When a gentleman is disposed to swear,  
it is not for any standers-by to curtail his oaths  
ha!

*Sec. Lord.* No, my lord; [Aside] nor crop  
the ears of them.

*Cla.* Whoreson dog! I give him satisfaction! Would he had been one of my rank!

*Sec. Lord.* [Aside] To have smelt like a fool.

*Cla.* I am not vexed more at any thing in the earth; a pox on't! I had rather not be so noble as I am; they dare not fight with me, because of the queen my mother: every Jack-slave hath his bellyful of fighting, and I must go up and down like a cock that nobody can

*Sec. Lord.* [Aside] You are cock and capon too; and you crow, cock, with your comb on.

*Cla.* Sayest thou!

*Sec. Lord.* It is not fit your lordship should undertake every companion that you give offence to.

*Cla.* No, I know that; but it is fit I should commit offence to my inferiors.

*Sec. Lord.* Ay, it is fit for your lordship only.

*Cla.* Why, so I say.

*First Lord.* Did you hear of a stranger that's come to court to-night!

*Cla.* A stranger, and I not know on't!

*Sec. Lord.* [Aside] He's a strange fellow himself, and knows it not.

*First Lord.* There's an Italian come; and, 'tis thought, one of Leonatus' friends.

*Cla.* Leonatus! a banished rascal; and he's another, whatsoever he be. Who told you of this stranger!

*First Lord.* One of your lordship's pages.

*Cla.* Is it fit I went to look upon him? is there no derogation in't!

*Sec. Lord.* You cannot derogate, my lord.

*Cla.* Not easily, I think.

*Sec. Lord.* [Aside] You are a fool granted; therefore your issues, being foolish, do not derogate.

*Cla.* Come, I'll go see this Italian: what I have lost to-day at bowls I'll win to-night of him. Come, go.

*Sec. Lord.* I'll attend your lordship.

[Exeunt *Cloten* and *First Lord*.]

That such a crafty devil as is his mother Should yield the world this ass! a woman that Bears all down with her brain; and this her son

Cannot take two from twenty, for his heart, 60  
And leave eighteen. Alas, poor prince,  
Thou divine Imogen, what thou endurest,  
Betwixt a father by thy step-dame govern'd,  
A mother hourly coining plots, a wooer  
More hateful than the foul expulsion is  
Of thy dear husband, than that horrid act  
Of the divorce he'd make! The heavens hold  
firm

The walls of thy dear honour, keep unshak'd  
That temple, thy fair mind, that thou mayst  
stand,

To enjoy thy banish'd lord and this great land. 69  
[Exit.]

SCENE II. *Imogen's bedchamber in Cymbeline's palace: a trunk in one corner of it.*

IMOGEN in bed, reading; a Lady attending.

*Imo.* Who's there! my woman Helen!

*Lady.* Please you, madam.

*Imo.* What hour is it?

*Lady.* Almost midnight, madam.

*Imo.* I have read three hours then: mine eyes are weak:

Fold down the leaf where I have left: to bed:  
Take not away she taper, leave it burning:  
And if thou canst awake by four o' the clock,  
I prithee, call me. Sleep hath seized me wholly.

[Exit *Lady*.]  
To your protection I commend me, gods.  
From fairies and the tempters of the night  
Guard me, beseech ye.

[Sleeps. *Iachimo comes from the trunk*.]  
*Iach.* The crickets sing, and man's o'er-  
labour'd sense

Repairs itself by rest. Our Tarquin thus  
Did softly press the rushes, ere he waken'd  
The chastity he wounded. Cytherea,  
How bravely thou becomest thy bed, fresh lily,  
And whiter than the sheets! That I might  
touch!

But kiss; one kiss! Rubies unparagon'd,  
How dearly they do't! 'Tis her breathing that  
Perfumes the chamber thus: the flame o' the  
taper

Bows toward her, and would under-peep her lids,  
To see the enclosed lights, now capped.  
Under these windows, white and azure laced  
With blue of heaven's own tinct. But my  
design,

To note the chamber: I will write all down:  
Such and such pictures; there the window;  
such

The adornment of her bed; the arras; figures,  
Why, such and such; and the contents o' the  
story.

Ah, but some natural notes about her body,  
Above ten thousand meaner moveables  
Would testify, to enrich mine inventory.  
O sleep, thou ape of death, lie dull upon her!  
And be her sense but as a monument,  
Thus in a chapel lying! Come off, come off:

[Taking off her bracelet.]  
As slippery as the Gordian knot was hard!

'Tis mine; and this will witness outwardly,  
As strongly as the conscience does within,  
To the madding of her lord. On her left breast  
A mole cinque-spotted, like the crimson drops  
I the bottom of a cowslip: here's a voucher,  
Stronger than ever law could make: this secret  
Will force him think I have pick'd the lock and  
ta'en

The treasure of her honour. No more. To  
what end?

Why should I write this down, that's riveted,  
Screw'd to my memory! She hath been read-  
ing late

The tale of Tereus; here the leaf's turn'd down  
Where Philomel gave up. I have enough.

To the trunk again, and shut the spring of it.  
Swift, swift, you dragons of the night, that  
dawning

May bare the raven's eye! I lodge in fear;  
Though this a heavenly angel, hell is here.

[Clock strikes three.]  
One, two, three: time, time!

[Closes the trunk. The scene closes.]

SCENE III. *An ante-chamber adjoining Imogen's apartments.*

*Enter CLOTEN and Lords,*

*First Lord.* Your lordship is the most patient man in loss, the most coldest that ever turned up ace.

*Clo.* It would make any man cold to lose.

*First Lord.* But not every man patient after the noble temper of your lordship. You are most hot and furious when you win.

*Clo.* Winning will put any man into courage. If I could get this foolish Imogen, I should have gold enough. It's almost morning, is't not?

*First Lord.* Day, my lord.

*Clo.* I would this music would come: I am advised to give her music o' mornings; they say it will penetrate.

*Enter Musicians.*

Come on; tune: if you can penetrate her with your fingering, so; we'll try with tongue too: if none will do, let her remain; but I'll never give o'er. First, a very excellent good-conceited thing; after, a wonderful sweet air, with admirable rich words to it: and then let her consider.

SONG.

Hark, hark! the lark at heaven's gate sings,  
And Phoebus 'gins arise,  
His steeds to water at those springs  
On chaliced flowers that lies;  
And winking Mary-buds begin  
To ope their golden eyes:  
With every thing that's pretty is,  
My lady sweet, arise:  
Arise, arise.

*Clo.* So, get you gone. If this penetrate, I will consider your music the better: if it do not, it is a vice in her ears, which horse-hairs and calves-guts, nor the voice of unpaved cunuch to boot, can never amend.

*[Exit Musicians.]*

*Sec. Lord.* Here comes the king.

*Clo.* I am glad I was up so late; for that's the reason I was up so early: he cannot choose but take this service I have done fatherly.

*Enter CYMBELINE and QUEEN.*

Good morrow to your majesty and to my gracious mother.

*Cym.* Attend you here the door of our stern daughter?

Will she not forth?

*Clo.* I have assailed her with music, but she wenchas no notice.

*Cym.* The exile of her minion is too new; she hath not yet forgot him: some more time must wear the print of his remembrance out, and then she's yours.

*Queen.* You are most bound to the king, who lets go by no vantages that may

Press you to his daughter. Frame yourself to comply soliciting, and befriend

With softness of the season; make denials of your services; so seem as if

you were loath to do those duties which

You tender to her; that you in all obey her, Save when command to your dismissal tends, And therein you are senseless.

*Clo.* Senseless! not so.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* So like you, sir, ambassadors from Rome;

The one is Caius Lucius.

*Cym.* A worthy fellow,

Albeit he comes on angry purpose now;

But that's no fault of his; we must receive him

According to the honour of his sender;

And towards himself, his godpiness forespent

on us,

We must extend our notice. Our dear son,

When you have given good morning to your

mistress,

Attend the queen and us; we shall have need

To employ you towards this Roman. Go, our

queens. *[Exit all but CLOTEN.]*

*Clo.* If she be up, I'll speak with her; if

not,

Let her lie still and dream. *[Knocks]* By your

leave, ho!

I know her women are about her: what

if I do line one of their hands? 'Tis gold

Which buys admittance; oft it doth; yes, and

makes

Diana's rangers false themselves, yield up

Their deer to the stand o' the stealer; and 'tis

gold

Which makes the true man kill'd and saves the

thief;

Nay, sometime hangs both thief and true man:

what

Can it not do and undo? I will make

One of her women lawyer to me, for

I yet not understand the case myself.

*[Knocks]* By your leave.

*Enter a Lady.*

*Lady.* Who's there that knocks?

*Clo.* A gentleman.

*Lady.* No more!

*Clo.* Yes, and a gentlewoman's son.

*Lady.* That's more

Than some, whose tailors are as dear as you, can

Justly boast of. What's your lordship's

pleasure?

*Clo.* Your lady's person: is she ready?

*Lady.* Ay,

To keep her chamber.

*Clo.* There is gold for you;

Sell me your good report.

*Lady.* How! my good name! or to report

of you

What I shall think is good!—The princess!

*Enter IMOGEN.*

*Clo.* Good morrow, fairest: sister, your sweet

hand.

*Imo.* Good morrow, sir. You lay out too

much pains

For purchasing but trouble: the thanks I give

Is telling you that I am poor of thanks

And scarce can spare them.



*Cl.* Still, I swear I love you.  
*Imo.* If you but said so, 'twere as deep  
 with me:  
 If you swear still, your recompense is still  
 That I regard it not.

*Cl.* This is no answer.  
*Imo.* But that you shall not say I yield  
 being silent,  
 I would not speak. I pray you, spare me:  
 'Faith, 100  
 I shall unfold equal discourtesy  
 To your best kindness: one of your great  
 knowing  
 Should learn, being taught, forbearance.

*Cl.* To leave you in your madness, 'twere  
 my sin:  
 I will not.

*Imo.* Fools are not mad folks.  
*Cl.* Do you call me fool?  
*Imo.* As I am mad, I do:  
 If you'll be patient, I'll no more be mad;  
 That cures us both. I am much sorry, sir,  
 You put me to forget a lady's manners, 110  
 By being so verbal: and learn now, for all,  
 That I, which know my heart, do here pro-  
 nounce.

By the very truth of it, I care not for you,  
 And am so near the lack of charity—  
 To accuse myself—I hate you; which I had  
 rather

You felt than make 't my boast.  
*Cl.* You sin against  
 Obedience, which you owe your father. For  
 The contract you pretend with that base wretch,  
 One bred of alms and foster'd with cold dishes,  
 With scraps o' the court, it is no contract, none;  
 And though it be allow'd in meaner parties—  
 Yet who than he more mean!—to knit their  
 souls,

In whom there is no more dependency  
 But brats and beggary, in self-figured knot;  
 Yet you are curb'd from that enlargement by  
 The consequence o' the crown, and must not  
 soil

The precious note of it with a base slave,  
 A holding for a livery, a squire's cloth,  
 A pantler, not so eminent.

*Imo.* Profane fellow!  
 Wert thou the son of Jupiter and no more 130  
 'ut what thou art besides, thou wert too base  
 o be his groom: thou wert dignified enough,  
 Even to the point of envy, if 'twere made  
 Comparative for your virtues, to be styled  
 The under-hangman of his kingdom, and hated  
 For being preferr'd so well.

*Cl.* The south-fog rot him!  
*Imo.* He never can meet more mischance  
 than come  
 o be but named of thee. His meanest garment,  
 That ever hath but clipp'd his body, is dearer  
 In my respect than all the hairs above thee, 140  
 Were they all made such men. How now,  
 Pisanio!

Enter PIRANIO.

*Cl.* 'His garment!' Now the devil—  
*Imo.* To Dorothy my woman his thee pre-  
 sently—

*Cl.* 'His garment!'  
*Imo.* I am sprited with a fool,  
 Frighted, and anger'd worse: go bid my woman  
 Search for a jewel that too usually  
 Hath left mine arm: it was thy master's:  
 'shrew me,  
 If I would lose it for a revenue  
 Of any king's in Europe. I do think  
 I saw 't this morning: confident I am, 150  
 Last night 'twas on mine arm; I kiss'd it:  
 I hope it be not gone to tell my lord  
 That I kiss aught but he.

*Pis.* 'Twill not be lost.  
*Imo.* I hope so: go and search.  
 [Exit Pisanio.]

*Cl.* You have abused me:  
 His meanest garment!

*Imo.* Ay, I said so, sir:  
 If you will make 't an action, call witnesses to 't.  
*Cl.* I will inform your father.

*Imo.* Your mother too:  
 She's my good lady, and will conceive, I hope,  
 But the worst of me. So, I leave you, sir,  
 To the worst of discontent. [Exit.]

*Cl.* I'll be revenged; 160  
 'His meanest garment!' Well. [Exit.]

SCENE IV. Rome. Philario's house.

Enter POSTHUMUS and PHILARIO.

*Post.* Fear it not, sir: I would I were so sure  
 To win the king as I am bold her honour  
 Will remain here.

*Ph.* What means do you make to him;  
*Post.* Not any, but abide the change of  
 time,

Quake in the present winter's state and wish  
 That warmer days would come: in these scard  
 hopes,

I barely gratify your love; they failing,  
 I must die much your debtor.

*Ph.* Your very goodness and your company  
 O'erpay all I can do. By this, your king 20  
 Hath heard of great Augustus; Caius Linius  
 Will do's commission thoroughly: and I think  
 He'll grant the tribute, send the arranges;  
 Or look upon our Romans, whose remem-  
 brance

Is yet fresh in their grief.  
*Post.* I do believe,

Statist though I am none, nor like to be,  
 That this will prove a war; and you shall hear  
 The legions now in Gallia sooner landed  
 In our not-fearing Britain than have tidings

Of any penny tribute paid. Our countrymen as  
 Are men more order'd than when Julius Cæsar  
 Smiled at their lack of skill, but found their  
 courage

Worthy his frowning at: their discipline,  
 Now mingled with their courage, will make  
 known

To their appeares they are people such  
 That mend upon the world.

Enter IACHIMO.

*Ph.* See  
*Post.* The swiftest harts have  
 land; you by

And winds of all the corners kiss'd your sails,  
To make your vessel nimble.

*Phi.* Welcome, sir.

*Post.* I hope the briefness of your answer  
made  
The speediness of your return.

*Jack.* Your lady  
Is one of the fairest that I have look'd upon.

*Post.* And therewithal the best; or let her  
beauty

Look through a casement to allure false hearts  
And be false with them.

*Jack.* Here are letters for you.

*Post.* Their tenour good, I trust.

*Jack.* 'Tis very like.

*Phi.* Was Caius Lucius in the Britain court  
When you were there?

*Jack.* He was expected then,  
But not approach'd.

*Post.* All is well yet. 39  
Sparkles this stone as it was wont? or is't not  
Too dull for your good wearing?

*Jack.* If I had lost it,  
I should have lost the worth of it in gold.

I'll make a journey twice as far, to enjoy  
A second night of such sweet shortness which  
Was mine in Britain, for the ring is won.

*Post.* The stone's too hard to come by.

*Jack.* Not a whit,  
Your lady being so easy.

*Post.* Make not, sir,  
Your loss your sport: I hope you know that we  
Must not continue friends.

*Jack.* Good sir, we must,  
If you keep covenant. Had I not brought 50  
The knowledge of your mistress home, I grant  
We were to question further: but I now  
Profess myself the winner of her honour,  
Together with your ring; and not the wronger  
Of her or you, having proceeded but  
By both your wills.

*Post.* If you can make't apparent  
That you have tasted her in bed, my hand  
And ring is yours; if not, the foul opinion  
You had of her pure honour gains or loses 59  
Your sword or mine, or masterless leaves both  
To who shall find them.

*Jack.* Sir, my circumstances,  
Being so near the truth as I will make them,  
Must first induce you to believe: whose strength  
I will confirm with oath; which, I doubt not,  
You'll give me leave to spare, when you shall  
find

You need it not.

*Post.* Proceed.

*Jack.* First, her bedchamber,—  
Where, I confess, I slept not, but profess  
Had that was well worth watching—it was  
hang'd

With tapestry of silk and silver; the story  
Froud Cleopatra, when she met her Roman, 70  
And Cydnus swell'd above the banks, or for  
The press of boats or pride: a piece of work  
So heavenly done, so rich, that it did strive  
In admiration; and value; which I wonder'd  
Could be so richly and exactly wrought,  
Since the truest on't was—

*Post.* This is true;

And this you might have heard of here, by me,  
Or by some other.

*Jack.* More particulars  
Must justify my knowledge.

*Post.* So they must,  
Or do your honour injury;

*Jack.* chimney 80  
Is south the chamber; and the chimney-piece  
Chaste Dian bathing; never saw I figures  
So likely to report themselves the cutter  
Was as another nature, dumb; outwent her,  
Motion and breath left out.

*Post.* This is a thing  
Which you might from relation likewise reap,  
Being, as it is, much spoke of.

*Jack.* The roof o' the chamber  
With golden cherubins is fretted: her an-  
drons—

I had forgot them—were two winking Cupids  
Of silver, each on one foot standing, nicely 90  
Depending on their brands.

*Post.* This is her honour!  
Let it be granted you have seen all this—and  
praise

Be given to your remembrance—the description  
Of what is in her chamber nothing saves  
The wager you have laid.

*Jack.* Then, if you can,  
[Showing the bracelet,

Be pale: I beg but leave to air this jewel; see!  
And now 'tis up again: it must be married  
To that your diamond; I'll keep them.

*Post.* Jove!

Once more let me behold it: is it that  
Which I left with her?

*Jack.* Sir—I thank her—that: 100  
She stripp'd it from her arm; I see her yet;  
Her pretty action did outsell her gift,  
And yet enrich'd it too: she gave it me, and

said  
She priz'd it once.

*Post.* May be she pluck'd it off  
To send it me.

*Jack.* She writes so to you, doth she!  
*Post.* O, no, no, no! 'tis true. Here, take  
this too; [Gives the ring.

It is a basilisk unto mine eye,  
Kills me to look on't. Let there be no honour  
Where there is beauty; truth, where semblance;  
love.

Where there's another man: the vows of  
women 110

Of no more bondage be, to where they are made,  
Than they are to their virtues; which is nothing.  
O, above measure false!

*Phi.* Have patience, sir,  
And take your ring again; 'tis not yet won:  
It may be probable she lost it; or  
Who knows if one of her women, being cor-  
rupted,

Hath stol'n it from her?

*Post.* Very true;  
And so, I hope, he came by't. Back my ring:  
Render to me some corporal sign about her,  
More evident than this; for this was stolen.

*Jack.* By Jupiter, I had it from her arm.

*Post.* Hark you, he swears; by Jupiter he  
swears.

'tis true:—nay, keep the ring—'tis true: I am sure  
 she would not lose it: her attendants are  
 all sworn and honourable:—they induced to  
 steal it!

And by a stranger!—No, he hath enjoy'd her:  
 the cognizance of her incontinency  
 is this: she hath bought the name of whore  
 thus dearly.

Here, take thy hire; and all the fiends of hell  
 divide themselves between you!

*Phi.* Sir, be patient: '30  
 [This is not strong enough to be believed  
 if one persuaded well of—

*Post.* Never talk on't;  
 she hath been colted by him.

*Iach.* If you seek  
 for further satisfying, under her breast—  
 Worthy the pressing—lies a mole, right proud  
 of that most delicate lodging: by my life,  
 I kiss'd it; and it gave me present hunger  
 to feed again, though full. You do remember  
 this stain upon her?

*Post.* Ay, and it doth confirm  
 another stain, as big as hell can hold, 140  
 Were there no more but it.

*Iach.* Will you hear more?

*Post.* Spare your arithmetic: never count  
 the turns;

see, and a million!

*Iach.* I'll be sworn—  
*Post.* No swearing.

If you will swear you have not done't, you lie;  
 And I will kill thee, if thou dost deny  
 Thou'st made me cuckold.

*Iach.* I'll deny nothing.

*Post.* O, that I had her here, to tear her  
 limb-meal!

Will go there and do't, if the court, before  
 her father. I'll do something.— [Exit.

*Phi.* Quite besides 149  
 the government of patience! You have won:  
 let's follow him, and pervert the present wrath  
 he hath against himself.

*Iach.* With all my heart. [Exeunt.

SCENE V. Another room in Philario's house.

Enter POSTHUMUS.

*Post.* Is there no way for men to be but  
 women

Must be half-workers! We are all bastards;  
 and that most venerable man which I  
 did call my father, was I know not where  
 When I was stamp'd; some coiner with his  
 tools

Made me a counterfeit: yet my mother seem'd  
 't was Dian of that time: so doth my wife  
 nonpareil of this. O, vengeance, ven-

geance!  
 As if my lawful pleasure she restrain'd  
 And pray'd me oft forbearance; did it with  
 't pudency so rosy the sweet view on't  
 Might well have warm'd old Saturn; that I  
 thought her

As chaste as unsunn'd snow. O, all the devils,  
 My yellow Iachimo, in an hour—was't not!—  
 Or less,—at first!—perchance he spoke not, but,

Like a full-acorn'd bear, a German one,  
 Oried 'O!' and mounted; found no opposition  
 But what he look'd for should oppose and she  
 Should from encounter guard. Could I find

out  
 The woman's part in me! For there's no  
 motion

That tends to vice in man, but I affirm  
 It is the woman's part: be it lying, note it,  
 The woman's; flattering, hers; deceiving, hers;

Lust and rank thoughts, hers, hers; revenges,  
 hers;

Ambitions, covetings, change of prides, dis-

dain,  
 Nice longing, slanders, mutability,  
 All faults that may be named, nay, that hell

knows,  
 Why, hers, in part or all; but rather, all;  
 For even to vice

They are not constant, but are changing still  
 One vice, but of a minute old, for one 31  
 Not half so old as that. I'll write against

them,  
 Detest them, curse them: yet 'tis greater skill  
 In a true hate, to pray they have their will:

The very devils cannot plague them better.

[Exit.

### ACT III.

SCENE I. Britain. A hall in Cymbeline's  
 palace.

Enter in state, CYMBELINE, QUEEN, CLOTEN,  
 and Lords at one door, and at another,  
 CAIUS LUCIUS and Attendants.

*Cym.* Now say, what would Augustus Caesar  
 with us?

*Luc.* When Julius Caesar, whose remem-  
 brance yet

Lives in men's eyes and will to ears and tongues  
 Be theme and hearing ever, was in this Britain  
 And conquer'd it, Cassibelan, thine uncle,—

Famous in Caesar's praises, no whit less  
 Than in his feats deserving it—for him

And his succession granted Rome a tribute,  
 Yearly three thousand pounds, which by thee

late  
 Is left untender'd.

*Queen.* And, to kill the marvel, 30  
 Shall be so ever.

*Clo.* There be many Caesars,  
 Ere such another Julius. Britain is

A world by itself; and we will nothing pay  
 For wearing our own noses.

*Queen.* That opportunity  
 Which then they had to take from us, to resume

We have again. Remember, sir, my liege,  
 The kings your ancestors, together with

The natural bravery of your isle, which stands  
 As Neptune's park, ribbed and paled in

With rocks unscalable and roaring waters, so  
 With sands that will not bear your enemies'

boats,  
 But suck them up to the topmast. A kind of

conquest  
 Caesar made here; but made not here his brag  
 Of 'Came' and 'saw' and 'overcame'; with

shame—

The first that ever touch'd him—he was carried from off our coast, twice beaten; and his shipping—

Poor ignorant bables!—on our terrible seas, Like egg-shells moved upon their surges, crack'd As easily 'gainst our rocks: for joy whereof The famed Cymbeline, who was once at point— O giddy fortune!—to master Caesar's sword, 31 Made Lond's town with rejoicing fires bright And Britons strut with courage.

*Clo.* Come, there's no more tribute to be paid: our kingdom is stronger than it was at that time; and, as I said, there is no more such Caesars: other of them may have crook'd noses, but to owe such straight arms, none.

*Cym.* Son, let your mother end. 39  
*Clo.* We have yet many among us who gripe as hard as Cassibela: I do not say I am one; but I have a hand. Why tribute? why should we pay tribute? If Caesar can hide the sun from us with a blanket, or put the moon in his pocket, we will pay him tribute for light; else, sir, no more tribute, pray you now.

*Cym.* You must know, Till the injurious Romans did extort This tribute from us, we were free: Caesar's ambition, Which swell'd so much that it did almost stretch 50

The sides o' the world, against all colour here Did put the yoke upon 's; which to shake off Becomes a warlike people, whom we reckon Ourselves to be.

*Clo. and Lords.* We do.

*Cym.* Say, then, to Caesar, Our ancestor was that Mulmutius which Ordain'd our laws, whose use the sword of

Hath too much mangled; whose repair and franchise

Shall, by the power we hold, be our good deed, Though Rome be therefore angry: Mulmutius made our laws,

Who was the first of Britain which did put 60 His brows within a golden crown and call'd Himself a king.

*Luc.* I am sorry, Cymbeline, That I am to pronounce Augustus Caesar— Caesar, that hath more kings his servants than Thyself domestic officers—thine enemy: Receive it from me, then: war and confusion In Caesar's name pronounce I 'gainst thee: look For thy not to be resisted. Thus defied, I thank thee for myself.

*Cym.* Thou art welcome, Caius. Thy Caesar knighted me; my youth I spent 70 Much under him; of him I gather'd honour; Which he to seek of me again, perforce, Behoves me keep at utterance. I am perfect That the Pannonians and Dalmatians for Their liberties are now in arms; a precedent Which not to read would show the Britons

So they shall not find them.

Let proof speak, As I have justly bids you welcome. Make good this day or two, or longer; if you see us afterwards in other terms, you shall

find us in our salt-water girdle: if you beat us out of it, it is yours; if you fall in the adventure, our crowns shall fare the better for you; and there's an end.

*Luc.* So, sir.

*Cym.* I know your master's pleasure and his mine:

All the remain is 'Welcome!' [Exit

SCENE II. Another room in the palace.

Enter PISANIO, with a letter.

*Pis.* How! of adultery? Wherefore writ you not

What monster's her accuser? \ Leonatus! O master! what a strange infection Is fall'n into thy ear! What false Italian, As poisonous-tongued as handed, hath prevail'd On thy too ready hearing? Disloyal! No: She's punish'd for her truth, and undergoes, More goddess-like than wife-like, such assault As would take in some virtue. O my master, Thy mind to her is now as low as were Thy fortunes. How! that I should murder her!

Upon the love and truth and vows which I Have made to thy command? I, her! In blood!

If it be so to do good service, never Let me be counted serviceable. How look I, That I should seem to lack humanity So much as this fact comes to! [Reading, 'Do't: the letter

That I have sent her, by her own command Shall give thee opportunity.' O damn'd paper! Black as the ink that's on thee! Senseless bauble,

Art thou a feodary for this act, and look'st So virgin-like without! Lo, here she comes. I am ignorant in what I am commanded.

Enter IMOGEN.

*Imo.* How now, Pisanio!

*Pis.* Madam, here is a letter from my lord  
*Imo.* Who? thy lord? that is my lord Leonatus!

O, learn'd indeed were that astronomer That knew the stars as I his characters; He'd lay the future open. You good gods, Let what is here contain'd relish of love, 3 Of my lord's health, of his content, yet not That we two are asunder; let that grieve him Some griefs are medicinal; that is one of them.

For it doth physic love; of his content, All but in that! Good wax, thy leave. Hie be

You bees that make these looks of counsel Lovers

And men in dangerous bonds pray not alike: Though forfeiters you cast in prison, yet You clasp young Cupid's tables. Good new gods!

[Heads. 'Justice, and your father's wrath should he take me in his dominion, could not be so cruel to me, as you, O the dearest of creatures, would even now me with your eye! Take notice that I am in Cymbeline, sir!']

Haven: what your own love will out of this advise you, follow. So he wishes you all happiness, that remains loyal to his vow, and your, increasing in love.

LEONATUS POSTHUMUS.  
O, for a horse with wings! Hearst thou, Pisanio!

He is at Milford-Haven: read, and tell me  
How far 'tis thither. If one of mean affairs  
May plod it in a week, why may not I  
Glide thither in a day! Then, true Pisanio,—  
Who long'st, like me, to see thy lord; who  
long'st,—

O, let me bate,—but not like me,—yet long'st,  
But in a fainter kind:—O, not like me;  
For mine's beyond beyond—say, and speak  
thick;

Love's counsellor should fill the pores of hearing,  
To the smothering of the sense—how far it is  
To this same blessed Milford: and by the way  
Tell me how Wales was made so happy as  
To inherit such a haven: but first of all,  
How we may steal from hence, and for the gap  
That we shall make in time, from our hence-  
going

And our return, to excuse: but first, how get  
hence:

Why should excuse be born or e'er begot!  
We'll talk of that hereafter. Prithce, speak,  
How many score of miles may we well ride  
Twixt hour and hour!

Pis. One score 'twixt sun and sun,  
Madam, 's enough for you: [Aside] and too  
much too.

Imo. Why, one that rode to 's execution,  
man.

Could never go so slow: I have heard of riding  
wagers,  
Where horses have been nimbler than the  
sands

That run f' the clock's behalf. But this is  
foolery:

Go bid my woman feign a sickness; say  
She'll home to her father: and provide me  
n'tly

A ri\_\_ suit, no costlier than would fit  
A franklin's housewife.

Pis. Madam, you're best consider.

Imo. I see before me, man: nor here, nor  
here.

Nor what ensues, but have a fog in them,  
That I cannot look through. Away, I prithce;  
Do as I bid thee: there's no more to say;  
Accessible is none but Milford way. [Exeunt.

SCENE III. *Wales: a mountainous country  
with a cave.*

*Enter, from the cave, BELARIUS; GUIDERIUS,  
and ANIRAGUS following.*

Bel. A goodly day not to keep house, with  
such

Whose roof's as low as ours! Steep, boys  
this gate

Instructs you how to adore the heavens and  
bows you

To a mountain's holy office: the gates of

Are arch'd so high that giants may jet through  
And keep their impious turbans on, without  
Good Morrow to the sun. Hail, thou fair  
heaven!

We house f' the rock, yet use thee not so hardly  
As prouder livers do.

Gwi. Hail, heaven!  
Arv. Hail, heaven!

Bel. Now for our mountain sport: up to  
yond hill;

Your legs are young; I'll tread these flats.  
Consider,

When you above perceive me like a crow,  
That it is place which lessens and sets off:  
And you may then revolve what tales I have  
told you

Of courts, of princes, of the tricks in war:  
This service is not service, so being done,

But being so allow'd: to apprehend thus,  
Draws us a profit from all things we see;

And often, to our comfort, shall we find  
The sharded beetle in a safer hold

Than is the full-wing'd eagle. O, this life  
Is nobler than attending for a check,

Richer than doing nothing for a hauble,  
Prouder than rustling in unpaid-for silk:

Such gain the cap of him that makes 'em fine,  
Yet keeps his book uncross'd: no life to ours.

Gwi. Out of your proof you speak: we, poor

Have never wing'd from view o' the nest, nor  
know not

What air's from home. Haply this life is best,  
If quiet life be best; sweeter to you

That have a sharper known; well corresponding  
With your stiff age: but unto us it is

A cell of ignorance; travelling a-bed;  
A prison for a debtor, that not dares

To stride a limit.

Arv. What should we speak of  
When we are old as you? when we shall hear  
The rain and wind beat dark December, how,

In this our pinching cave, shall we discourse  
The freezing hours away! We have seen so-  
thing;

We are beastly, subtle as the fox for prey,

Like warlike as the wolf for what we eat;  
Our valour is to chase what flies: our rage

We make a quire, as doth the prison'd bird,  
And sing our bondage freely.

Bel. How you speak!  
Did you but know the city's noises,

And felt them knowingly; the art o' the court,  
As hard to leave as keep; whose top to climb

Is certain falling, or so slippery that  
The fear's as bad as falling; the toll o' the way,

A pain that only seems to seek out danger: so  
I the name of fame and honour; which dies f'  
the search.

And hath as oft a slanderous epithet  
As record of fair act: nay, many times,

Doth it deserve by doing well; what's worse,  
Must courtesy at the command—O, how, this  
story

The world may read in me; my body's marked  
With Roman oaths, and my speech is witness

That with the best of soldiers I have been tried  
and

And when a soldier was the theme, my name  
Was not far off: then was I as a tree 60  
Whose boughs did bend with fruit: but in one  
night,

A storm or robbery, call it what you will,  
Shook down my mellow hangings, nay, my  
leaves,  
And left me bare to weather.

*Gui.* Uncertain favour!  
*Bel.* My fault being nothing—as I have told  
you oft—

But that two villains, whose false oaths pre-  
vail'd

Before my perfect honour, swore to Cymbeline  
I was confederate with the Romans: so  
Follow'd my banishment, and this twenty years  
This rock and these demesnes have been my  
world; 70

Where I have lived at honest freedom, paid  
More pious debts to heaven than in all  
The fore-end of my time. But up to the moun-  
tains!

This is not hunters' language: he that strikes  
The venison first shall be the lord o' the feast;  
To him the other two shall minister;  
And we will fear no poison, which attends  
In place of greater state. I'll meet you in the  
valleys.

[*Exeunt Guiderius and Arviragus.*  
How hard it is to hide the sparks of nature!  
These boys know little they are sons to the  
king; 80

Nor Cymbeline dreams that they are alive.  
They think they are mine; and though train'd  
up thus meanly  
I' the cave wherein they bow, their thoughts  
do hit

The roofs of palaces, and nature prompts them  
In simple and low things to pringe it much  
Beyond the trick of others. This Polydore,  
The heir of Cymbeline and Britain, who  
The king his father call'd Guiderius,—Jove!  
When on my three-foot stool I sit and tell  
The warlike feats I have done, his spirits fly out  
Into my story: say 'Thus mine enemy fell, 90  
And thus I set my foot on's neck;' even then  
The princely blood flows in his cheek, he sweats,  
Strains his young nerves and puts himself in  
posture

That acts my words. The younger brother,  
*Cadwal,*

Once Arviragus, in as like a figure,  
Strikes life into my speech and shows much  
more

His own conceiving.—Hark, the game is  
rounded!—

O Cymbeline! heaven and my conscience  
knows

Thou didst unjustly banish me: whereon, 100  
At three and two years old, I stole these babes;  
Thinking to bar thee of succession, as  
Thou hast me of my lands. Euriphile,  
Thou wast their nurse; they took thee for their  
mother.

And every day do honour to her grave:  
york, *Bel.* that am Morgan call'd,  
her long-lost father. The game is up.  
[*Exit.*

#### SCENE IV. Country near Milford-Haven.

*Enter PISANIO and IMOGEN.*

*Imo.* Thou told'st me, when we came from  
home, the place

Was near at hand: ne'er long'd my mother so  
To see me first, as I have now. Pisanio! man  
Where is Posthumus? What is in thy mind,  
That makes thee stare thus? Wherefore break  
that sigh

From the inward of thee? One, but painted  
thus,

Would be interpreted a thing perplex'd  
Beyond self-explication: put thyself  
Into a humour of less fear, ere wildness  
Vanquish my staid sense. What's th'  
matter!

Why tender'st thou that paper to me, with  
A look untender? If't be summer news,  
Smile to't before; if winterly, thou need'st  
But keep that countenance still. My husband's  
hand!

That drug-damn'd Italy hath out-craftied him,  
And he's at some hard point. Speak, man  
thy tongue

May take off some extremity, which to read  
Would be even mortal to me.

*Pis.* Please you, read;  
And you shall find me, wretched man, a thing  
The most disdain'd of fortune.

*Imo.* [Reads] 'Thy mistress, Pisanio, hath  
played the trumpet in my bed; the testimonies  
whereof lie bleeding in me. I speak not out of  
weak surmises, but from proof as strong as my  
grief and as certain as I expect my revenge.  
That part thou, Pisanio, must act for me, if thy  
faith be not tainted with the breach of hers.  
Let thine own hands take away her life: I shall  
give thee opportunity at Milford-Haven. She  
hath my letter for the purpose: where, if thou  
fear to strike and to make me certain it is  
done, thou art the pandar to her dishonour and  
equally to me disloyal.'

*Pis.* What shall I need to draw my sword!  
the paper

Hath cut her throat already. No, 'tis slander,  
Whose edge is sharper than the sword, whose  
tongue

Outvenoms all the worms of Nile, whose breath  
Rides on the posting winds and doth belie  
All corners of the world: kings, queens and  
states,

Majds, matrons, nay, the secrets of the grave  
This viperous slander enters. What cheer,  
madam?

*Imo.* False to his bed! What is it to be  
false?

To lie in watch there and to think on him!  
To weep 'twixt clock and clock! if sleep charge  
nature,

To break it with a fearful dream of him!  
And cry myself awake! that's false to's bed,  
is it!

*Pis.* Alas, good lady!  
*Imo.* I false! Thy conscience

laching,  
Thou didst accuse him of incontinency; 120  
Thou then look'st as like a villain; now methinks

Thy favour's good enough. Some jay of Italy  
 † Whose mother was her painting, hath betray'd  
 him :

Poor I am stale, a garment out of fashion ;  
 And, for I am richer than to hang by the walls,  
 I must be ripp'd :- to pieces with me ! - O,  
 Men's vows are women's traitors ! All good  
 seeming.

By thy revolt, O husband, shall be thought  
 Put on for villany ; not born where 't grows,  
 But worn a bait for ladies.

*Pis.* Good madam, hear me.

*Imo.* True honest men being heard, like  
 false *Aeneas*,  
 Were in his time thought false, and *Sinon's*  
 weeping

Did scandal many a holy tear, took pity  
 From most true wretchedness : so thou, *Post-*  
*humus*,

Wilt lay the heaven on all proper men ;  
 Goodly and gallant shall be false and perjured  
 From thy great fail. Come, fellow, be thou  
 honest :

Do thou thy master's bidding : when thou see'st  
 him,

A little witness my obedience : look !  
 I draw the sword myself : take it, and hit  
 The innocent mansion of my love, my heart : 70  
 Fear not ; 'tis empty of all things but grief :  
 Thy master is not there, who was indeed  
 The riches of it : do his bidding ; strike.  
 Thou may'st be valiant in a better cause ;  
 But now thou seem'st a coward.

*Pis.* Hence, vile instrument !  
 Thou shalt not damn my hand.

*Imo.* Why, I must die ;  
 And if I do not by thy hand, thou art  
 No servant of thy master's. Against self-  
 slaughter

There is a prohibition so divine  
 That craves my weak hand. Come, here's my  
 heart. 80

Something's afore't. Soft, soft ! we'll no de-  
 fence ;

Obedient as the scabbard. What is here !  
 The scriptures of the loyal *Leonatus*,  
 All turn'd to heresy ! Away, away,  
 Corrupters of my faith ! you shall no more  
 Be stomachers to my heart. Thus may poor  
 fools

Believe false teachers : though those that are  
 betray'd

Do feel the treason sharply, yet the traitor  
 Stands in worse case of woe.

And thou, *Posthumus*, thou that didst set up 90  
 My disobedience 'gainst the king my father  
 And make me put into contempt the suits  
 Of princely fellows, shalt hereafter find

It is no act of common passage, but  
 A strain of rareness : and I grieve myself

To think, when thou shalt be dislodged by her  
 That now thou threat'st on, how thy memory

Will then be pang'd by me. *Prithus*, dispatch.  
 The lamb entreats the butcher : where's thy  
 knife !

Thou art too slow to do thy master's bidding,  
 When I desire it too.

*Pis.* O gracious lady, 100

Since I received command to do this business  
 I have not slept one wink.

*Imo.* Do 't, and to bed then.  
*Pis.* I'll wake mine eye-balls blind first.

*Imo.* Wherefore then  
 Didst undertake it ? Why hast thou abused

So many miles with a pretence ! this place !  
 Mine action and thine own ! our horses' labour !

The time inviting thee ! the perturbed court,  
 For my being absent ! whereunto I never

Purpose return. Why hast thou gone so far, 110  
 To be unbent when thou hast ta'en thy stand,  
 The elected deer before thee ?

*Pis.* But to win time  
 To lose so bad employment ; in the which  
 I have consider'd of a course. Good lady,

Hear me with patience.

*Imo.* Talk thy tongue weary ; speak :  
 I have heard I am a strumpet ; and mine ear,  
 Therein false struck, can take no greater wound,

Nor tent to bottom that. But speak.

*Pis.* Then, madam,  
 I thought you would not back again.

*Imo.* Most like ;  
 Bringing me here to kill me.

*Pis.* Not so, neither : 120  
 But if I were as wise as honest, then

My purpose would prove well. It cannot be  
 But that my master is abused :

Some villain, ay, and singular in his art,  
 Hath done you both this cursed injury.

*Imo.* Some Roman courtesan.

*Pis.* No, on my life.  
 I'll give but notices you are dead and send him

Some bloody sign of it ; for 'tis commanded  
 I should do so : you shall be mis'd at court,

And that will well confirm it.

*Imo.* Why, good fellow, 130  
 What shall I do the while ! where bide ! how  
 live !

Or in my life what comfort, when I am  
 Dead to my husband !

*Pis.* If you'll back to the court—  
*Imo.* No court, no father ; nor no more ado

† With that harsh, noble, simple nothing,  
 That Cloten, whose love-suit hath been to me  
 As fearful as a siege.

*Pis.* If not at court,  
 Then not in Britain must you bide.

*Imo.* Where then ?  
 Hath Britain all the sun that shines ? Day,

night,  
 Are they not but in Britain ! I the world's  
 volume 140

Our Britain seems as of it, but not in 't ;  
 In a great pool a swan's nest : prithus, think

There's livers out of Britain.

*Pis.* I am most glad  
 You think of other place. The ambassadors,

*Lucius* the Roman, comes to *Milford-Haven*  
 To-morrow : now, if you could wear a mind  
 Dark as your fortune is, and but disguise

That which, to appear itself, must not yet be  
 But by self-danger, you should tread a course

† Pretty and full of view ; yea, happy near 150  
 The rashness of *Posthumus* ; so high at least  
 That though his actions were not visible, yet

Report should render him hourly to your ear

As truly as he moves.

*Iso.* O, for such means!  
Though peril to my modesty, not death on't,  
I would adventure.

*Pis.* Well, then, here's the point:  
You must forget to be a woman; change  
Command into obedience: fear and niceness—  
The handmaids of all women, or, more truly,  
Woman is pretty self—into a wagish courage;  
Ready in gibes, quick-answer'd, saucy and  
As quarrelous as the weasel; nay, you must  
Forget that rarest treasure of your cheek,  
Exposing it—but, O, the harder heart!  
Alack, no remedy!—to the greedy touch  
Of common-kissing Titan, and forget  
Your laboursome and dainty trims, wherein  
You made great Juno angry.

*Iso.* Nay, be brief:  
I see into thy end, and am almost  
A man already.

*Pis.* First, make yourself but like one. 170  
Fore-thinking this, I have already fit—  
Tis in my cloak-bag—doublet, hat, hose, all  
That answer to them: would you in their  
serving,

And with what imitation you can borrow  
From youth of such a season, 'fore noble Lucius  
Present yourself, desire his service, tell him  
Wherein you're happy,—which you'll make  
him know.

If that his head have ear in music,—doubtless  
With joy he will embrace you, for he's honour-  
able

And doubling that, most holy. Your means  
abroad. 180

You have me, rich; and I will never fail  
Beginning nor supplement.

*Iso.* Thou art all the comfort  
The gods will dist me with. Prithce, away:  
There's more to be consider'd; but we'll even  
All that good time will give us; this attempt  
I am soldier to, and will abide it with  
A prince's courage. Away, I prithee.

*Pis.* Well, madam, we must take a short  
farewell.

Least, being mis'd, I be suspected of  
Your carriage from the court. My noble mis-  
tress. 190

Here is a box; I had it from the queen:  
What's in 't is precious; if you are sick at sea,  
Or stomach-quind'd at land, a dram of this  
Will drive away distemper. To some shade  
And sit you to your manhood. May the gods  
Direct you to the best!

*Iso.* Amen: I thank thee.

[*Exeunt, severally.*]

SCENE V. A room in Cymbeline's palace.

Enter CYMBELINE, QUEEN, CLOTAK, LUCIUS,  
Lords, and Attendants.

*Queen.* Thus far, and so farewell.  
*Lord.* Thanks, royal sir.

My daughter hath wrote, I must from hence;  
And am right sorry that I must report ye.

My subjects, sir.

Will not endure his yoke; and for himself  
To show less sovereignty than they, must need  
Appear unkinglike.

*Luc.* So, sir: I desire of you  
A conduct over-land to Milford-Haven.  
Madam, all joy befall your grace!

*Queen.* And you!  
*Cym.* My lords, you are appointed for the  
office:

The due of honour in no point omit.

So farewell, noble Lucius.

*Luc.* Your hand, my lord

*Clo.* Receive it friendly; but from this tin-  
forth

I wear it as your enemy.

*Luc.* Sir, the event

Is yet to name the winner: fare you well.

*Cym.* Leave not the worthy Lucius, goe  
my lords,

Till he have cross'd the Severn. Happiness!

[*Exeunt Lucius and Lord*  
*Queen.* He goes hence frowning: but  
honours us

That we have given him cause.

*Clo.* 'Tis all the better

Your valiant Britons have their wishes in it.

*Cym.* Lucius hath wrote already to the  
emperor

How it goes here. It fits us therefore ripely  
Our chariots and our horsemen be in readiness

The powers that he already hath in Gallia

Will soon be drawn to head, from whence he  
moves

His war for Britain.

*Queen.* 'Tis not sleepy business;  
But must be look'd to speedily and strongly.

*Cym.* Our expectation that it would be thus  
Hath made us forward. But, my gentle queen

Where is our daughter? She hath not ap-  
pear'd

Before the Roman, nor to us hath tender'd

The duty of the day: she looks us like

A thing more made of malice than of duty:

We have noted it. Call her before us; for

We have been too slight in sufferance.

[*Exit an Attendant*]

*Queen.* Royal sir

Since the exile of Posthumus, most retired

Hath her life been; the cure whereof, my lord

'Tis time must do. Beseech your majesty,

Forbear sharp speeches to her: she's a lady

So tender of rebukes that words are strokes

And strokes death to her.

*Re-enter Attendant.*

*Cym.* Where is she, sir? How  
Can her contempt be answer'd?

*Atten.* Please you, sir,  
Her chamber is all lock'd; and there's no  
answer

That will be given to the loudst noise we  
make.

*Queen.* My lord, when last I went to visit  
her,

She pray'd me to excuse her keeping close;  
Whence constrained by her husband,

She should that duty leave unpaid to you.

Which daily she was bound to perform.



She wish'd me to make known; but our great

court

Made me to blame in memory.

Cym.

Her doors lock'd!  
Not seen of late! Grant, heavens, that which

I fear

Prove false!

[Exit.

Queen. Son, I say, follow the king.

Clo. That man of hers, Pisanio, her old

servant,

I have not seen these two days.

Queen.

Go, look after. [Exit Cloten.

Pisanio, thou that stand'st so for Posthumus!

He hath a drug of mine; I pray his absence

Proceed by swallowing that, for he believes

It is a thing most precious. But for her,

Where is she gone? Haply, despair hath seized

her.

Or, wing'd with fervour of her love, she's flown

To her desired Posthumus; gone she is

To death or to dishonour; and my end

Can make good use of either: she being down,

I have the placing of the British crown.

Re-enter CLOTEN.

How now, my son!

Clo.

'Tis certain she is fled.

Go in and cheer the king: he rages; none

Dare come about him.

Queen.

[Aside] All the better: may

This night forestall him of the coming day!

[Exit.

Clo. I love and hate her: for she's fair and

royal,

And that she hath all courtly parts more ex-

quisite

Than lady, ladies, woman; from every one

The best she hath, and she, of all compounded,

Outsells them all; I love her therefore: but

Disdaining me and throwing favours on

The low Posthumus slanders so her judgement

That what's else rare is choked; and in that

point

I will conclude to hate her, nay, indeed,

To be revenged upon her. For when fools

Shall—

Enter PISANIO.

Who is here? What are you packing, sirrah!

Come hither: ah, you precious pander! Villain,

Where is thy lady? In a word; or else

Thou art straightway with the fends.

Pis.

O, good my lord!

Clo. Where is thy lady! or, by Jupiter,—

I will not ask again. Close villain,

I'll have this secret from thy heart, or rip

Thy heart to find it. Is she with Posthumus?

From whose so many weights of baseness

cannot

A dram of worth be drawn.

Pis.

Alas, my lord,

How can she be with him? When was she

mis'd!

He is in Rome.

Clo.

Where is she, sir? Come nearer;

No further hallooing! satisfy me home

What is become of her.

Pis.

O, my all-worthy lord!

Clo.

All-worthy villain!

Discover where thy mistress is at once.

At the next word: no more of 'worthy lord'!

Or thy silence on the instant is

condemnation and thy death.

Then, sir,

This paper is the history of my knowledge; so

Touching her flight. [Presenting a letter.

Clo. Let's see it. I will pursue her

Even to Augustus' throne.

Pis. [Aside] Or this, or perish.

She's far enough; and what she learns by this

May prove his travel, not her danger.

Clo. Hum!

Pis. [Aside] I'll write to my lord she's dead.

O Imogen,

Safe mayst thou wander, safe return again!

Clo. Sirrah, is this letter true?

Pis. Sir, as I think.

Clo. It is Posthumus' hand; I know't. Sirrah,

If thou wouldst not be a villain, but do me true

service, undergo those employments wherein

I should have cause to use thee with a serious

industry, that is, what villainy soe'er I bid thee

do, to perform it directly and truly, I would

think thee an honest man: thou shouldst

neither want my means for thy relief nor my

voice for thy preferment.

Pis. Well, my good lord.

Clo. Wilt thou serve me! for since patiently

and constantly thou hast stuck to the bare fe-  
ture of that beggar Posthumus, thou canst not,

in the course of gratitude, but be a diligent

follower of mine: wilt thou serve me!

Pis. Sir, I will.

Clo. Give me thy hand; here's my purse.

Hast any of thy late master's garments in thy

possession?

Pis. I have, my lord, at my lodging, the

same suit he wore when he took leave of my

lady and mistress.

Clo. The first service thou doest me, fetch that

suit hither: let it be thy first service; go.

Pis. I shall, my lord.

Clo. Meet thee at Milford-Haven.—I forgot

to ask him one thing: I'll remember't soon:—

even there, thou villain Posthumus, wilt I kill

thee. I would these garments were none. She

said upon a time—the bitterness of it I now

beach from my heart—that she had the very

garment of Posthumus in more respect than

my noble and natural person, together with the

adornment of my qualities. With that suit

upon my back, will I ravish her: first kill him,

and in her eyes; there shall she see my wounds,

which will then be a torment to her eyesight.

He on the ground, my speech of insultation

ended on his dead body, and when my suit

hath died,—which, as I say, to vex her I will

execute in the clothes that she so prized,—so

the court I'll knock her back, spit her home

again. She hath despised me scornfully, and

I'll be marry in my revenge.

Re-enter PISANIO, with the clothes.

Be those the garments?

Pis. Ay, my noble lord.

*Clo.* How long 's't since she went to Milford-Haven?

*Pis.* She can scarce be there yet.

*Clo.* Bring this apparel to my chamber; that is the second thing that I have commanded thee: the third is, that thou wilt be a voluntary mute to my design. Be but dutious, and true proferment shall tender itself to thee. My revenge is now at Milford: would I had wings to follow it! Come, and be true. *[Exit.]*

*Pis.* Thou bid'st me to my loss: for true to thee

Were to prove false, which I will never be, To him that is most true. To Milford go, And find not her whom thou pursuest. Flow,

You heavenly blessings, on her! This fool's speed

Be cross'd with slowness; labour be his need! *[Exit.]*

SCENE VI. *Wales. Before the cave of Belarius.*

*Enter IMOGEN, in boy's clothes.*

*Imo.* I see a man's life is a tedious one: I have tired myself, and for two nights together

Have made the ground my bed. I should be sick,

But that my resolution helps me. Milford, When from the mountain-top Pisanio show'd thee,

Thou wast within a ken: O Jove! I think Foundations fly the wretched; such, I mean, Where they should be relieved. Two beggars told me

I could not miss my way: will poor folks lie, That have afflictions on them, knowing 'tis a punishment or trial? Yes; no wonder, When rich ones scarce tell true. To lapse in fulness

Is sorer than to lie for need, and falsehood Is worse in kings than beggars. My dear lord! Thou art one o' the false ones. Now I think on thee,

My hunger's gone; but even before, I was At point to sink for food. But what is this? Here is a path to't: 'tis some savage hold: I were best not call: I dare not call: yet famine,

Ere clean if o'erthrow nature, makes it valiant. Plenty and peace breeds cowards: hardness

Of hardness is mother. Ho! who's here? If any thing that's civil speak; if savage, Take or lend. Ho! No answer! Then I'll enter.

Best draw my sword; and if mine enemy But fear the sword like me, he'll scarcely look on't.

Such a see, good heavens! *[Exit, to the cave.]*

*Enter BELARIUS, GUIDERIUS, and ARVIRAGUS.*

*Bel.* You, Polydore, have proved best wood-meat and Are minister of the feast: Cadwal and I

Will play the cook and servant; 'tis our match: The sweat of industry would dry and die, But for the end it works to. Come; our stomachs

Will make what's homely & weary; weariness Can snore upon the flint, when resty cloth Finds the down pillow hard. Now peace be here,

Poor house, that keep'st thyself.

*Gui.* I am thoroughly weary.

*Arv.* I am weak with toil, yet strong in appetite.

*Gui.* There is cold meat & the cave; we'll browse on that.

Whilst what we have kill'd be cook'd.

*Bel.* *[Looking into the cave.]* Stay; come not in.

But that it eats our victuals, I should think Here were a fairy.

*Gui.* What's the matter, sir?

*Bel.* By Jupiter, an angel! or, if not, An earthly paragon! Behold divineness No elder than a boy!

*Re-enter IMOGEN.*

*Imo.* Good masters, harm me not: Before I enter'd here, I call'd; and thought To have begg'd or bought what I have took: good troth,

I have stol'n nought, nor would not, though I had found Gold strew'd i' the floor. Here's money for my meat:

I would have left it on the board so soon As I had made my meal, and parted With prayers for the provider.

*Gui.* Money, youth!

*Arv.* All gold and silver rather turn to dirt! As 'tis no better reckon'd, but of those Who worship dirty gods.

*Imo.* I see you're angry: Know, if you kill me for my fault, I should Have died had I not made it.

*Bel.* Whither bound?

*Imo.* To Milford-Haven.

*Bel.* What's your name?

*Imo.* Fidele, sir. I have a kinsman who Is bound for Italy; he embark'd at Milford; To whom being going, almost spent with hunger,

I am fall'n in this offence.

*Bel.* Prithee, fair youth, Think us no churls, nor measure our good minds

By this rude place we live in. Well encounter'd!

'Tis almost night: you shall have better cheer Ere you depart; and thanks to stay and eat it. Boys, bid him welcome.

*Gui.* Were you a woman, youth, I should woo hard but be your groom. In honesty,

I bid for you as I'd buy.

*Arv.* I'll make't my comfort He is a man; I'll love him as my brother: And such a welcome as I'd give to him After long absence, such is yours: most welcome!

Be sprightly, for you fall 'mongst friends.

*Imo.*  
If brothers. [*Aside*] Would it  
that they

Had been my father's sons! then had my prize  
Been less, and so more equal ballasting  
To thee, Posthumus.

*Bel.* He wrings at some distress.

*Gut.* Would I could free 't!

*Arv.* Or I, whate'er it be, so  
What pain it cost, what danger. Gods!

*Bel.* Hark, boys.  
[*Whispering.*]

*Imo.* Great men,  
That had a court no bigger than this cave,  
That did attend themselves and had the virtue  
Which their own conscience seal'd them—laying  
by  
That nothing-gift of differing multitudes—  
Could not out-peer these twain. Pardon me,  
gods!

I'd change my sex to be companion with them,  
Since Leonatus's false.

*Bel.* It shall be so.

Boys, we'll go dress our hunt. Fair youth,  
come in:

Discourse is heavy, fasting; when we have  
supp'd,

We'll mannerly demand thee of thy story,  
So far as thou wilt speak it.

*Gut.* Pray, draw near.

*Arv.* The night to the owl and morn to the  
lark less welcome.

*Imo.* Thanks, sir.

*Arv.* I pray, draw near. [*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE VII. Rome. A public place.

*Enter two Senators and Tribunes.*

*First Sen.* This is the tenour of the emperor's  
writ:

That since the common men are now in action  
'Gainst the Pannonians and Dalmatians,  
And that the legions now in Gallia are  
Full weak to undertake our wars against  
The fall'n-off Britons, that we do incite  
The gentry to this business. He creates  
Lucius proconsul: and to you the tribunes,  
For this immediate levy, he commends  
His absolute commission. Long live Caesar! so

*First Tri.* Is Lucius general of the forces?

*Sec. Sen.* AY.

*First Tri.* Remaining now in Gallia?

*First Sen.* With those legions

Which I have spoke of, whereunto your levy  
Must be supplicate: the words of your com-  
mission

Will tie you to the numbers and the time  
Of their dispatch.

*First Tri.* We will discharge our duty.  
[*Exeunt.*]

#### ACT IV.

SCENE I. Wales: near the cave of Belarius.

*Enter CLOTEN.*

*Olo.* I am near to the place where they should  
meet, if Pleasio have mapped it truly. How fit

his garments serve me! Why should his mis-  
tress, who was made by him that made the  
tailor, not be fit too! the rather—saving rever-  
ence of the word—for 'tis said a woman's  
finess comes by fita. Therein I must play the  
workman. I dare speak it to myself—for it is  
not vain-glory for a man and his glam to confer  
in his own chamber—I mean, the lines of my  
body are as well drawn as his; no less young,  
more strong, not beneath him in fortunes,  
beyond him in the advantage of the time,  
above him in birth, alike conversant in general  
services, and more remarkable in single oppo-  
sitions: yet this imperceivable thing loves him  
in my despite. What mortality is! Posthumus,  
thy head, which now is growing upon thy  
shoulders, shall within this hour be off; thy  
mistress enforced; thy garments cut to pieces  
before thy face: and all this done, spurn her  
home to her father; who may haply be a little  
angry for my so rough usage; but my mother,  
having power of his testiness, shall turn all into  
my commendations. My horse is tied up safe:  
out, sword, and to a sore purpose! Fortune,  
put them into my hand! This is the very  
description of their meeting-place; and the  
fellow dares not deceive me. [*Exit.*]

#### SCENE II. Before the cave of Belarius.

*Enter, from the cave, BELARIUS, GUIDERIUS,  
ARVIRAGUS, and IMOGEN.*

*Bel.* [*To Imogen*] You are not well: remain  
here in the cave;

We'll come to you after hunting.

*Arv.* [*To Imogen*] Brother, stay here:  
Are we not brothers?

*Imo.* So man and man should be:  
But clay and clay differs in dignity,  
Whose dust is both alike. I am very sick.

*Gut.* Go you to hunting; I'll abide with him.

*Imo.* So sick I am not, yet I am not well—  
But not so citizen a wanton as

To seem to die ere sick; so please you, leave me;  
Stick to your journal course: the breach of  
custom

Is breach of all. I am ill, but your being by me  
Cannot amend me; society is no comfort

To one not sociable: I am not very sick,  
Since I can reason of it. Pray you, trust me  
here:

I'll rob none but myself; and let me die,  
Stealing so poorly.

*Gut.* I love thee; I have spoke it:  
How much the quantity, the weight as much,  
As I do love my father.

*Bel.* What! how! how!  
*Arv.* If it be sin to say so, sir, I yoke me  
In my good brother's fault: I know not why as  
I love this youth; and I have heard you say,  
Love's reason's without reason: the less a door,  
And a demand who is't shall die, I'd say  
'My father, not this youth.'

*Bel.* [*Aside*] O noble strain!  
O worthiness of nature! breed of greatness!  
Towards father cowards and base things shew  
base:  
Nature hath meal and bean, contempt and grace.

I'm not their father; yet who this should be,  
Death miracle itself, loved before me.  
Tis the ninth hour o' the morn.

*Arv.* Brother, farewell. 30

*Imo.* I wish ye sport.

*Arv.* You health. So please you, sir.

*Imo.* [Aside.] These are kind creatures.

Gods, what lies I have heard!

Our courtiers say all's savage but at court:

Experience, O, thou disprovest report!

The imperious seas breed monsters, for the dish

Poor tributary rivers as sweet fish.

I am sick still; heart-sick. Pisanio,

I'll now taste of thy drug. [Swallows some.]

*Gui.* I could not stir him:

He said he was gentle, but unfortunate;

Dishonestly afflicted, but yet honest. 40

*Arv.* Thus did he answer me: yet said,  
hereafter

I might know more.

*Bel.* To the field, to the field!

We'll leave you for this time: go in and rest.

*Arv.* We'll not be long away.

*Bel.* Pray, be not sick,

For you must be our housewife.

*Imo.* Well or ill, I

I am bound to you.

*Bel.* And shalt be ever.

[Exit Imogen, to the cave.]

This youth, how'er distress'd, appears he hath

had

Good ancestors.

*Arv.* How angel-like he sings!

*Gui.* But his neat cookery! he cut our roots

In characters,

And sanced our broth, as Juno had been sick

And he her dieter. 51

*Arv.* Nobly he yokes

A smiling with a sigh, as if the sigh

Was that it was, for not being such a smile;

The smile mocking the sigh, that it would fly

From so divine a temple, to commix

With winds that sailors rail at.

*Gui.* I do note

That grief and patience, rooted in him both,

Mingle their spurs together.

*Arv.* Grow, patience!

And let the stinking elder, grief, untwine

His perishing root with the increasing vine! 60

*Bel.* It is great morning. Come, away!—

Who's there?

Enter CLOTEN.

*Clot.* I cannot find those runagates; that

villain

Hath mock'd me. I am faint.

*Bel.* 'Those runagates!'

Means he not us? I partly know him: 'tis

Cloten, the son o' the queen. I fear some

accident.

I saw him not these many years, and yet

I know 'tis he. We are held as outlaws; hence!

*Gui.* He is but one: you and my brother

search

What companies are near: pray you, away;

Let us alone with him.

[Re-enter Belarius and Arviragus.]

*Clot.* Soft! What are you?  
That fly me thus? some villain mountaineers!  
I have heard of such. What slave art thou?

*Gui.* A thief

More slavish did I ne'er than answering

A slave without a knock.

*Clot.* art a robber,

A law-breaker, a villain: Ield thee, thief.

*Gui.* To who? to What art thou

Have not I

An arm as big as thine? a as big!

Thy words, I grant, are big, for I wear not

My dagger in my mouth. S what thou art,

Why I should yield to thee?

*Clot.* Thou villain base, 8

Know'st me not by my clothes!

*Gui.* No, nor thy tailor, rascal

Who is thy grandfather: he made those clothes

Which, as it seems, make thee.

*Clot.* Thou precious varlet

My tailor made them not.

*Gui.* Hence, then, and thence!

The man that gave them thee. Thou art some

fool;

I am loath to beat thee.

*Clot.* Thou injurious thief,

Hear but my name, and tremble.

*Gui.* What's thy name

*Clot.* Cloten, thou villain.

*Gui.* Cloten, thou double villain, be thy

name,

I cannot tremble at it: were it Toad, or Adder

Spider, 9

'Twould move me sooner.

*Clot.* To thy further fear,

Nay, to thy mere confusion, thou shalt know

I am son to the queen.

*Gui.* I am sorry for't; not seeming

So worthy as thy birth.

*Clot.* Art not afraid?

*Gui.* Those that I reverence those I fear

the wise:

At fools I laugh, not fear them.

*Clot.* Die the death.

When I have slain thee with my proper hand,

I'll follow those that even now fled hence,

And on the gates of Lud's-town set your heads:

Yield, rustic mountaineer. 100

[Exeunt, fighting.]

Re-enter BELARIUS and ARVIRAGUS.

*Bel.* No companies abroad?

*Arv.* None in the world: you did mistake

him, sure.

*Bel.* I cannot tell: long is it since I saw him.

But time hath nothing blurr'd those lines of

favour

Which then he wore; the smatches in his voice

And burst of speaking, were as his: I am

absolute

'Twas very Cloten.

*Arv.* In this place we left him:

I wish my brother make good time with him.

You say he is so fell.

*Bel.* Being scarce made up,

I mean, to man, he had not apprehension 110

Of roaring terrors; for the effect of judgment

Is oft the cause of fear. But, see,

*Re-enter GUIDERIUS, with CLOTEN's head.*

*Gui.* This Cloten was a fool, an empty puny;

There was no money in't; not Hercules  
Could have knock'd out his brains, for he had none:

Yet I not doing this, the fool had borne  
My head as I do his.

*Bel.* What hast thou done?

*Gui.* I am perfect what: cut off one Cloten's head.

Son to the queen, after his own report;  
Who call'd me traitor, mountaineer, and swore  
With his own single hand he'd take us in: <sup>121</sup>  
Displace our heads where—thank the gods!—

And set them on Lod's-town.

*Bel.* We are all undone.  
*Gui.* Why, worthy father, what have we to lose,

But that he swore to take, our lives? The law  
Protects not us: then why should we be tender  
To let an arrogant piece of flesh threaten us,  
Play judge and executioner all himself,  
For we do fear the law? What company  
Discover you abroad?

*Bel.* No single soul <sup>130</sup>  
Can we set eye on; but in all safe reason  
He must have some attendants. Though his  
humour

Was nothing but mutation, ay, and that  
From one bad thing to worse; not frenzy, not  
Absolute madness could so far have raved  
To bring him here alone; although perhaps  
It may be heard at court that such as we  
Came here, hunt here, are outlaws, and in time  
May make some stronger head; the which he  
hearing—

As it is like him—might break out, and swear  
He'd fetch us in; yet is't not probable <sup>141</sup>  
To come alone, either he so undertaking,  
Or they so suffering: then on good ground we  
fear.

If we do fear this body hath a tail  
More perilous than the head.

*Arv.* Let ordinance  
Come as the gods foresee it: howsoever,  
My brother hath done well.

*Bel.* I had no mind  
To hunt this day: the boy Fidele's sickness  
Did make my way long forth.

*Gui.* With his own sword,  
Which he did wave against my throat, I have <sup>150</sup>  
His head from him: I'll throw't into the creek  
Behind our rock; and let it to the sea,  
And tell the fishes he's the queen's son, Cloten:  
That's all I reck. *[Exit.]*

*Bel.* I fear 'twill be revenged;  
Would, Polydore, thou hadst not done't: though  
valour  
Becomes thee well enough.

*Arv.* Would I had done't,  
So the revenge alone pursued me! Polydore,  
I love thee brotherly, but envy much  
Thou hast robb'd me of this deed: I would re-  
venge.

That possible strength might meet, would seek  
us through <sup>160</sup>  
And put us to our answer.

*Bel.* Well, 'tis done:  
We'll hunt no more to-day, nor seek for danger  
Where there's no profit. I prithee, to our rock;  
You and Fidele play the cooks: I'll stay  
Till hasty Polydore return, and bring him  
To dinner presently.

*Arv.* Poor sick Fidele!  
I'll willingly to him: to gain his colour  
I'd let a parish of such Clotens bleed,  
And praise myself for charity. *[Exit.]*

*Bel.* O thou goddess, <sup>169</sup>  
Thou divine Nature, how thyself thou blazon'st  
In these two princely boys! They are as gentle  
As zephyrs blowing below the violet,  
Not wagging his sweet head; and yet as rough,  
Their royal blood enchain'd, as the rudest wind,  
That by the top doth take the mountain pine,  
And make him stoop to the vale. 'Tis wonder  
That an invisible instinct should frame them  
To royalty unlearn'd, honour untaught,  
Civility not seen from other, valour  
That wildly grows in them, but yields a crop also  
As if it had been sow'd. Yet still it's strange  
What Cloten's being here to us portends,  
Or what his death will bring us.

*Re-enter GUIDERIUS,*

*Gui.* Where's my brother?  
I have sent Cloten's clotpoll down the stream,  
In embassy to his mother: his body's hostage  
For his return. *[Solomon's voice.]*

*Bel.* My ingenious instrument!  
Hark, Polydore, it sounds! But what occasion  
Hath Cadwal now to give it motion? Hark!  
*Gui.* Is he at home?

*Bel.* He went hence even now.  
*Gui.* What does he mean? since death of  
my dear'st mother <sup>190</sup>  
It did not speak before. All solemn things  
Should answer solemn accidents. The matter?  
Triumphs for nothing and lamenting toys  
Is jollity for apes and grief for boys.  
Is Cadwal mad?

*Bel.* Look, here he comes,  
And brings the dire occasion in his arms.  
Of what we blame him for.

*Re-enter ARVIRAGUS, with INOCH, as dead,  
bearing her in his arms.*

*Arv.* The bird is dead  
That we have made so much on. I had rather  
Have skip'd from sixteen years of age toasting,  
To have turn'd my sleeping-time into a watch,  
Than have seen this.

*Gui.* O sweetest, farewell! <sup>200</sup>  
My brother wears thee not the one half so well  
As when thou grew'st thyself.

*Bel.* O melancholy!  
Who ever yet could sound thy bottom? And  
The ocean, to show what coast thy depths cover  
Might easiest harbour: but thou'st chosen  
thing!

Just knows what man thou'st chosen: have  
made; but I,  
Then didst, a most rare boy, of melancholy.

How found you him?

*Arv.* Stark, as you see:  
Thus smiling, as some fly had tickled slumber,  
Not as death's dart, being laugh'd at; his right  
cheek

Reposing on a cushion.

*Gui.* Where?

*Arv.* O' the floor;  
His arms thus leagued: I thought he slept, and  
My clouted brogues from off my feet, whose  
rudeness

Answer'd my steps too loud.

*Gui.* Why, he but sleeps:  
If he be gone, he'll make his grave a bed;  
With female fairies will his tomb be haunted,  
And worms will not come to thee.

*Arv.* With fairest flowers  
Whilst summer lasts and I live here, Fidele,  
I'll sweeten thy sad grave: thou shalt not lack  
The flower that's like thy face, pale primrose,  
nor

The assured harebell, like thy veins, no, nor  
The leaf of eglantine, whom not to slander,  
Out-sweeten'd not thy breath: the ruddock  
would,

With charitable bill,—O bill, sore-shaming  
Those rich-left heirs that let their fathers lie  
Without a monument!—bring thee all this;  
Yea, and furr'd moss besides, when flowers are  
none,

To winter-ground thy come.

*Gui.* Prithce, have done;  
And do not play in wench-like words with that  
Which is so serious. Let us bury him,  
And not protract with admiration what  
Is now due debt. To the grave!

*Arv.* Say, where shall I lay him?

*Gui.* By good Euriphile, our mother.

*Arv.* Be't so:  
And let us, Polydore, though now our voices  
Have got the mannish crack, sing him to the  
ground,

As once our mother; use like note and words,  
Save that Euriphile must be Fidele.

*Gui.* Cadwal,  
I cannot sing: I'll weep, and word it with thee;  
For notes of sorrow out of tune are worse  
Than priests and fanes that lie.

*Arv.* We'll speak it, then.

*Bel.* Great griefs, I see, medicine the less;  
for Cloten

Is quite forgot. He was a queen's son, boys;  
And though he came our enemy, remember  
He was paid for that: though mean and mighty,  
rotting

Together, have one dust, yet reverence,  
That angel of the world, doth make distinction  
Of place 'twixt high and low. Our foe was  
princely;

And though you took his life, as being our foe,  
Yet bury him as a prince.

*Gui.* Pray you, fetch him hither.  
The dead's body is as good as Ajax',  
When neither are alive.

*Arv.* If you'll go fetch him,  
We'll sing our song the whilst. Brother, begin.

[Exit Belarius.]

*Gui.* Nay, Cadwal, we must lay his head to  
the east;

My father hath a reason for't.

*Arv.* 'Tis true.

*Gui.* Come on then, and remove him.

*Arv.* So. Begin.

SONG.

*Gui.* Fear no more the heat o' the sun,  
Nor the furious winter's rages;  
Thou thy worldly task hast done, so  
Home art gone, and to'en thy wages:  
Golden lads and girls all must,  
As chimney-sweepers, come to dust.

*Arv.* Fear no more the frown o' the great;  
Thou art past the tyrant's stroke;  
Care no more to clothe and eat;  
To thee the reed is as the oak:  
The sceptre, learning, physic, must  
All follow this, and come to dust.

*Gui.* Fear no more the lightning-flash, 270

*Arv.* Nor the all-dreaded thunder-stone;

*Gui.* Fear not alander, censure rash;

*Arv.* Thou hast finish'd joy and moan:

*Both.* All lovers young, all lovers must  
Consign to thee, and come to dust.

*Gui.* No excoriser harm thee!

*Arv.* Nor no witchcraft charm thee!

*Gui.* Ghost unlaid forbear thee!

*Arv.* Nothing ill come near thee!

*Both.* Quiet consummation have; 280

And renowned be thy grave!

Re-enter BELARIUS, with the body of CLOTEN.

*Gui.* We have done our obsequies: come,  
lay him down.

*Bel.* Here's a few flowers; but 'bout mid-  
night, more:

The herbs that have on them cold dew o' the  
night

Are strewings fitt'at for graves. Upon their  
faces.

You were as flowers, now wither'd: even so  
These herbets shall, which we upon you strew.

Come on, away: apart upon our knees.  
The ground that gave them first has them again:

Their pleasures here are past, no is their pain. 290  
[Exeunt Belarius, Guiderius, and  
Arviragus.]

*Imo.* [Awaking] Yes, sir, to Milford-  
Haven; which is the way!

I thank you.—By yond bush!—Pray, how far  
thither?

'Ods pittikins! can it be six mile yet?—  
I have gone all night. 'Faith, I'll lie down and

But, soft! no bedfellow!—O gods and god-  
desses!

[Seeing the body of Cloten.]  
These flowers are like the pleasures of the  
world;

This bloody man, the care on't. I hope I  
dream;

For so I thought I was a cave-keeper,  
And took to honest creatures: but 'tis not so;

'Twas but a bolt of nothing, shot at nothing, 300

Which the brain makes of fumes: our very  
eyes  
Are sometimes like our judgements, blind.  
Good faith,

I tremble still with fear: but if there be  
Yet left in heaven as small a drop of pity  
As a wren's eye, fear'd gods, a part of it!  
The dream's here still: even when I wake, it is  
Without me, as within me; not imagined, felt.  
A headless man! The garments of Posthumus!  
I know the shape of 's leg: this is his hand;  
His foot Mercurial; his Martial thigh; 310  
The brawns of Hercules: but his Jovial face—  
Murder in heaven!—How!—'Tis gone. Pisanio,  
All curses madd'd Hecuba gave the Greeks,  
And mine to boot, be darted on thee! Thou,  
Conspired with that irregular devil, Cloten,  
Hast here cut off my lord. To write and read  
Be henceforth treacherous! Damn'd Pisanio  
Hath with his forged letters,—damn'd Pisanio—  
From this most bravest vessel of the world  
Struck the main-top! O Posthumus! alas, 320  
Where is thy head! where's that! Ay me!  
where's that!

Pisanio might have kill'd thee at the heart,  
And left this head on. How should this be!

Pisanio!  
'Tis he and Cloten: malice and lucre in them  
Have laid this woe here. O, 'tis pregnant,  
pregnant!

The drug he gave me, which he said was  
precious  
And cordial to me, have I not found it  
Murderous to the senses! That confirms it  
home:

This is Pisanio's deed, and Cloten's: O!  
Give colour to my pale cheek with thy blood,  
That we the horrid may seem to those 331  
Which chance to find us: O, my lord, my lord!  
[Falls on the body.]

Enter LUCIUS, a Captain and other Officers,  
and a Soothsayer.

Cap. To them the legions garrison'd in  
Gallia,

After your will, have cross'd the sea, attending  
You here at Milford-Haven with your ships:  
They are in readiness.

Luc. But what from Rome?  
Cap. The senate hath stirr'd up the confiners  
And gentlemen of Italy, most willing spirits,  
That promise noble service: and they come  
Under the conduct of bold Iachimo, 340  
Syenna's brother.

Luc. When expect you them?  
Cap. With the next benefit o' the wind.

Luc. This forwardness  
Makes our hopes fair. Command our present  
numbers

Be must'r'd; bid the captains look to 't. Now,  
sir,

What have you dream'd of late of this war's  
purpose?

Sooth. Last night the very gods show'd me  
a vision—

I fast and pray'd for their

These vanish'd in the sunbeams: which por-  
tends— 350  
Unless my sins abuse my divination—  
Success to the Roman host.

Luc. Dream often so,  
And never false. Soft, ho! what trunk is here  
Without his top! The ruin speaks that some-  
time  
It was a worthy building. How! a page!  
Or dead, or sleeping on him! But dead rather;  
For nature doth abhor to make his bed  
With the defunct, or sleep upon the dead.  
Let's see the boy's face.

Cap. He's alive, my lord.  
Luc. He'll then instruct us of this body. 360  
Young one,

Inform us of thy fortunes, for it seems  
They crave to be demanded. Who is this  
Thou makest thy bloody pillow! Or who was  
he

That, otherwise than noble nature did,  
Hath alter'd that good picture! What's thy  
interest

In this sad wreck! How came it! Who is it!  
What art thou!

Imo. I am nothing: or if not,  
Nothing to be were better. This was my master,  
A very valiant Briton and a good,  
That here by mountaineers lies slain. Alas! 370  
There is no more such masters: I may wander  
From east to occident, cry out for service,  
Try many, all good, serve truly, never  
Find such another master.

Luc. Lack, good youth!  
Thou movest no less with thy complaining than  
Thy master in bleeding: say his name, good  
friend.

Imo. Richard du Champ. [Aside] If I do  
lie and do

No harm by it, though the gods hear, I hope  
They'll pardon it.—Say you, sir!

Luc. Thy name?  
Imo. Fidele, sir.  
Luc. Thou dost approve thyself the very

Thy name well fits thy faith, thy faith thy  
name.

Wilt take thy chance with me? I will not say  
Thou shalt be so well master'd, but, be sure,  
No less beloved. The Roman emperor's letters,  
Sent by a consul to me, should not sooner  
Than thine own worth prefer thee: go with me.

Imo. I'll follow, sir. But first, an't please  
the gods,

I'll hide my master from the flies, as deep  
As these poor pickaxes can dig; and when  
With wild wood-leaves and weeds I have strew'd  
his grave, 380

And on it said a century of prayers,  
Such as I can, twice o'er, I'll weep and sigh;  
And leaving so his service, follow you;  
So please you entertain me.

Luc. Ay, good youth;  
And rather father thee than master thee.  
My friends,

The boy hath taught us manly duties: let us  
Find out the prettiest daisied plot we can,  
And make him with our plows and partisans

A grave: come, arm him. Boy, he is protect'd  
By thee to us, and he shall be interr'd. 402  
As soldiers use. Be cheerful; wipe thine eyes:  
Some falls are means the happier to arise.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE III. A room in Cymbeline's palace.

*Enter CYMBELINE, Lords, PIRANIO, and Attendants.*

*Cym.* Again; and bring me word how 'tis  
with her. [*Exit an Attendant.*]  
A fever with the absence of her son,  
A madness, of which her life's in danger.  
Heavens,

How deeply you at once do touch me! Imogen,  
The great part of my comfort, gone; my queen  
Upon a desperate bed, and in a time  
When fearful wars point at me; her son gone,  
So needful for this present: it strikes me, past  
The hope of comfort. But for thee, fellow,  
Who needs must know of her departure and so  
Dost seem so ignorant, we'll enforce it from  
thee  
By a sharp torture.

*Pis.* Sir, my life is yours;  
I humbly set it at your will; but, for my  
mistress,  
I nothing know where she remains, why gone,  
Nor when she purposes return. Beseech your  
highness,

Hold me your loyal servant.

*First Lord.* Good my liege,  
The day that she was missing he was here:  
I dare be bound he's true and shall perform  
All parts of his subjection loyally. For Cloten,  
There wants no diligence in seeking him, 20  
And will, no doubt, be found.

*Cym.* The time is troublesome.  
[*To Pisanio*] We'll slip you for a season; but  
our jealousy  
Does yet depend.

*First Lord.* So please your majesty,  
The Roman legions, all from Gallia drawn,  
Are landed on your coast, with a supply  
Of Roman gentlemen, by the senate sent.

*Cym.* Now for the counsel of my son and  
queen!

I am amazed with matter.

*First Lord.* Good my liege,  
Your preparation can affront no less  
Than what you hear of: come more, for more  
you're ready: 30  
The want is but to put those powers in motion  
That long to move.

*Cym.* I thank you. Let's withdraw;  
And meet the time as it seeks us. We fear not  
What can from Italy annoy us; but  
We grieve at chances here. Away!

[*Exeunt all but Pisanio.*]

*Pis.* I heard no letter from my master since  
I wrote him Imogen was slain: 'tis strange:  
Nor hear I from my mistress, who did promise  
To visit me often: neither know I  
What's said to Cloten; but remain 40  
Faint with all. The heavens still must work.  
What I can take I am honest; not true, to  
myself.

These present wars shall find I love my country  
Even to the note of the king, or I'll fall in them.  
All other doubts, by time let them be clear'd:  
Fortune brings in some boats that are no  
steer'd. [*Exit.*]

## SCENE IV. Wales: before the cave of Belarius.

*Enter BELARIUS, GUIDERIUS, and ARVIRAGUS.*

*Gui.* The noise is round about us.

*Bel.* Let us from it.  
*Arv.* What pleasure, sir, find we in life, to  
lock it

From action and adventure?

*Gui.* Nay, what hope  
Have we in hiding us! This way, the Roman  
Must or for Britons slay us, or receive us  
For barbarous and unnatural revolts  
During their use, and slay us after.

*Bel.* Sons,  
We'll higher to the mountains; there secure us  
To the king's party there's no going: newness  
Of Cloten's death—we being not known, not  
muster'd

Among the bands—may drive us to a render.  
Where we have lived, and so extort from 's that  
Which we have done, whose answer would be  
death

Drawn on with torture.

*Gui.* This is, sir, a doubt  
In such a time nothing becoming you,  
Nor satisfying us.

*Arv.* It is not likely  
That when they hear the Roman horses neigh,  
Behold their quarter'd sires, have both their  
eyes

And ears so cloy'd importantly as now,  
That they will waste their time upon our note.  
To know from whence we are.

*Bel.* O, I am known 21  
Of many in the army; many years,  
Though Cloten then but young, you see, not  
wore him

From my remembrance. And, besides, the  
king  
Hath not deserved my service nor your loves;

But to be still hot summer's tankings and  
The shrinking slaves of winter.

*Gui.* Than be so  
Better to cease to be. Pray, sir, to the army:  
I and my brother are not known; yourself  
So out of thought, and thereto so o'ergrown,  
Cannot be question'd.

*Arv.* By this sun that shines,  
I'll thither: what thing is it that I never  
Did see man die! scarce ever look'd on blood,  
But that of coward hares, hot goats, and  
venison!

Never bestid a horse, save one that had  
A rider like myself, who ne'er wore rowl  
Nor iron on his heel! I am ashamed  
To look upon the holy sun, to have  
The benefit of his blast beams, remaining 40



So long a poor unknown.

*God.* By heavens, I'll go:  
If you will bless me, sir, and give me leave,  
I'll take the better care, but if you will not,  
The hazard therefore does fall on me by  
The hands of Romans!

*Arv.* So say I: amen.  
*Bel.* No reason I, since of your lives you set  
So slight a valuation, should reserve  
My crack'd one to more care. Have with you,  
boys! 50

If in your country wars you chance to die,  
That is my bed too, lads, and there I'll lie:  
Lead, lead. *(Aside)* The time seems long;  
their blood thinks scorn,  
Till it fly out and show them princes born.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

SCENE I. Britain. The Roman camp.

*Enter POSTHUMUS, with a bloody handkerchief.*

*Post.* Yes, bloody cloth, I'll keep thee, for I  
wish'd  
Thou shouldst be colour'd thus. You married  
ones,  
If each of you should take this course, how  
many  
Must murder wives much better than them-

For wrying but a little! O Pisanio!  
Every good servant does not all commands:  
No bond but to do just ones. Gods! if you  
Should have taken vengeance on my faults, I  
never

Had lived to put on this: so had you saved  
The noble Imogen to repent, and struck 50  
Me, wretch more worth your vengeance. But,  
alack,

You snatch some hence for little faults; that's  
love,

To have them fall no more: you some permit  
To second ills with ills, each elder worse,  
And make them dread it, to the doer's thrift.  
But Imogen is your own: do your best wills,  
And make me blest to obey! I am brought  
hither

Among the Italian gentry, and to fight  
Against my lady's kingdom: 'tis enough  
That, Britain, I have kill'd thy mistress; peace!  
I'll give no wound to thee. Therefore, good  
heavens,

Hear patiently my purpose: I'll disrobe me  
Of these Italian weeds and suit myself  
As does a Briton peasant: so I'll fight  
Against the part I come with; so I'll die  
For thee, O Imogen, even for whom my life  
Is every breath a death; and thus, unknown,  
Pitied nor hated, to the face of perils  
Myself I'll dedicate. Let me make men know  
More valour in me than my habits show. 50  
Gods, put the strength of the Leonati in me!  
To shame the guise of the world, I will begin  
The fashion, less without and more within.

SCENE II. Field of battle between the  
British and Roman camps.

*Enter, from one side, LUCIUS, IACHIMO, and  
the Roman Army; from the other side,  
the British Army; LEONATUS POSTHUMUS  
following, like a poor soldier. They march  
over and go out. Then enter again, in  
skirmish, IACHIMO and POSTHUMUS: he  
vanquisheth and disarmeth IACHIMO, and  
then leaves him.*

*Iach.* The heaviness and guilt within my  
bosom  
Takes off my manhood: I have belied a lady,  
The princess of this country, and the air on't  
Revengingly enfeebles me; or could this oath,  
A very drudge of nature's, have subdued me  
In my profession! Knighthoods and honours,

borne  
As I wear mine, are titles but of scorn.  
If that thy gentry, Britain, go before  
This lout as he exceeds our lords, the odds  
Is that we scarce are men and you are gods. 50  
[*Exit.*]

*The battle continues; the Britons fly; CYMBELINE  
is taken; then enter, to his rescue,  
BELARIUS, GUIDERIUS, and ARVIRAGUS.*

*Bel.* Stand, stand! We have the advantage  
of the ground;  
The lane is guarded: nothing routs us but  
The villany of our fears.

*Gui.* Stand, stand, and fight!  
*Arv.* }

*Re-enter POSTHUMUS, and seconds the Britons:  
they rescue CYMBELINE, and exeunt. Then  
re-enter LUCIUS, and IACHIMO, with IROEN.*

*Luc.* Away, boy, from the troops, and save  
thyself;  
For friends kill friends, and the disorder's such  
As war were hoodwink'd.

*Iach.* 'Tis their fresh supplies.  
*Luc.* It is a day turn'd strangely: or betimes  
Let's re-inforce, or fly. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. Another part of the field.

*Enter POSTHUMUS and a British Lord.*

*Lord.* Camest thou from where they made  
the stand!

*Post.* I did:

*Lord.* I did.  
*Post.* No blame be to you, sir; for all was  
lost.

But that the heavens fought: the king himself  
Of his wings destitute, the army broken,  
And but the backs of Britons seen, all flying  
Through a strait lane; the enemy full-voiced,  
Lolling the tongue with slaughtering, leaving  
work  
More plentiful than tools to do't, struck down  
Some mortally, some slightly wounded, some  
falling  
Mere through fear; that the stout part was  
scant.

With dead men hurt behind, and cowards living  
To die with lengthen'd shame.

*Lord.* Where was this lane?

*Post.* Close by the battle, ditch'd, and wall'd  
with turf;

Which gave advantage to an ancient soldier,  
An honest one, I warrant; who deserved  
So long a breeding as his white beard came to,  
In doing this for's country; ahward the lane,  
He, with two striplings—lads more like to run  
The country base than to commit such  
slaughter;

With faces fit for masks, or rather fairer  
Than those for preservation eased, or shame,—  
Made good the passage; cried to those that  
fled.

'Our Britain's hearts die flying, not our men:  
To darkness fleet souls that fly backwards.  
Stand:

Or we are Romans and will give you that  
Like beasts which you shun beastly, and may  
save,

But to look back in frown: staid, stand.'  
These three,

Three thousand confident, in act as many—  
For three performers are the file when all  
The rest do nothing—with this word 'Stand,  
stand.'

Accommodated by the place, more charming  
With their own nobleness, which could have  
turn'd

A distaff to a lance, gilded pale looks,  
Part shame, part spirit renew'd; that some,  
turn'd

But by example—O, a sin in war,  
Damn'd in the first beginners!—gan to look  
The way that they did, and to grin like lions  
Upon the pikes o' the hunters. Then began  
A stop i' the chaser, a retire, anon

A rout, confusion thick; forthwith they fly  
Chickens, the way which they stoop'd eagles;  
slaves,

The strides they victors made: and now our  
cowards,

Like fragments in hard voyages, became  
The life o' the need: having found the back-  
door open

Of the unguarded hearts, heavens, how they  
wound!

Some slain before; some dying; some their  
friends

O'er-borne i' the former wave: ten, chased by  
one,

Are now each one the slaughter-man of twenty:  
Those that would die or ere resist are grown  
The mortal bugs o' the field.

*Lord.* This was strange chance:  
A narrow lane, an old man, and two boys.

*Post.* Nay, do not wonder at it: you are  
made

Better to wonder at the things you hear  
Than to work any. Will you rhyme upon't,

And vent it for a mockery? Here is one:  
'Two boys, an old man twice a boy, a lane,

Preserved the Britons, was the Romans' bane.'  
*Lord.* Nay, be not angry, sir.

*Post.* Lack, to what end?  
Who does not stand his foe, I'll be his friend;

For if he'll do as he is made to do,  
I know he'll quickly fly my friendship too.  
You have put me into rhyme.

*Lord.* Farewell; you're angry  
*Post.* Still going! [*Exit Lord.*] This is a

lord! O noble misery,  
To be i' the field, and ask 'what news' of me  
To-day how many would have given their  
honours

To have saved their carcasses! took heel to do't  
And yet died too! I, in mine own woe charm'd  
Could not find death where I did hear him  
groan.

Nor feel him where he struck: being an ugly  
monster,

'Tis strange he hides him in fresh cups, soft  
beds,

Sweet words; or hath more ministers than we  
That draw his knives i' the war. Well, I will  
find him:

For being now a favourer to the Briton,  
No more a Briton, I have resumed again  
The part I came in: fight I will no more,  
But yield me to the veriest hind that shall  
Once touch my shoulder. Great the slaughter is  
Here made by the Roman; great the answer be  
Britons must take. For me, my ransom's  
death;

On either side I come to spend my breath;  
Which neither here I'll keep nor bear again,  
But end it by some means for Imogen.

*Enter two British Captains and Soldiers.*

*First Cap.* Great Jupiter be praised! Lucius  
is taken.

'Tis thought the old man and his sons were  
angels.

*Sec. Cap.* There was a fourth man, in a silly  
habit,

That gave the affront with them.  
*First Cap.* So 'tis reported:

But none of 'em can be found. Stand! who's  
there!

*Post.* A Roman,  
Who had not now been drooping here, if  
seconds

Had answer'd him.

*Sec. Cap.* Lay hands on him; a dog!  
A leg of Rome shall not return to tell

What crows have peck'd them here. He brags  
his service

As if he were of note: bring him to the king.

*Enter CYMBELINE, BELARIUS, GUIDERIUS,  
ARVIRAGUS, PISANIO, Soldiers, Attendants,  
and Roman Captives. The Captains present  
POSTHUMUS to CYMBELINE, who delivers  
him over to a Gauler: then exeunt omnes.*

#### SCENE IV. A British prison.

*Enter POSTHUMUS and two Gaulers.*

*First Gaul.* You shall not now be stol'n,  
you have locks upon you;  
So grass as you find pasture.

*Sec. Gaul.* Ay, or a stomach.  
[*Exeunt Gaulers.*]

*Post.* Most welcome, bondage! for thou art  
a way,  
I think, to liberty; yet am I better  
Than one that's sick o' the gout; since he had  
rather

Groan so in perpetuity than be cured  
By the sure physician, death, who is the key  
To unbar these locks. My conscience, thou art  
fetter'd

More than my shanks and wrists: you good  
gods, give me

The penitent instrument to pick that bolt, 20  
Then, free for ever! Is't enough I am sorry!  
So children temporal fathers do appease;  
Gods are more full of mercy. Must I repent!  
I cannot do it better than in gyves,  
Desired more than constrain'd: to satisfy,  
If of my freedom 'tis the main part, take  
No stricter render of me than my all.

I know you are more clement than vile men,  
Who of their broken debtors take a third,  
A sixth, a tenth, letting them thrive again 30  
On their abatement: that's not my desire:  
For Imogen's dear life take mine; and though  
'Tis not so dear, yet 'tis a life; you coin'd it:  
'Tween man and man they weigh not every  
stamp;

Though light, take pieces for the figure's sake:  
You rather mine, being yours: and so, great  
powers,

If you will take this audit, take this life,  
And cancel these cold bonds. O Imogen!  
I'll speak to thee in silence. [*Sleeps.*]

*Solemn music. Enter, as in an apparition,  
SICILIUS LEONATUS, father to Posthumus,  
an old man, attired like a warrior; leading  
in his hand an ancient matron, his wife,  
and mother to Posthumus, with music before  
them; then, after other music, follow the two  
young LEONATI, brothers to Posthumus,  
with wounds as they died in the wars. They  
circle POSTHUMUS round, as he lies sleeping.*

*Sici.* No more, thou thunder-master, show 30  
Thy spite on mortal flies:  
With Mars fall out, with Juno chide,  
That thy adulteries

Rates and revenges.

Hath my poor boy done aught but well,

Whose face I never saw!

I died whilst in the womb he stay'd

Attending nature's law:

Whose father then, as men report

Thou orphan's father art, 40

Thou shouldst have been, and shielded  
him

From this earth-revexing smart.

*Moth.* Lucina lent not me her aid,  
But took me in my throes;  
That from me was Posthumus ript,  
Came crying 'mongst his foes,  
A thing of pity!

*Sici.* Great nature, like his ancestry,  
Moulded the stuff so fair,  
That he deserved the praise o' the world,  
As great Sicilius' heir.

*First Bro.* When once he was mature for man,  
In Britain where was he  
That could stand up his parallel;  
Or fruitful object be  
In eye of Imogen, that best  
Could deem his dignity!

*Moth.* With marriage wherefore was he mock'd,  
To be exiled, and thrown  
From Leonati seat, and cast 60  
From her his dearest one,  
Sweet Imogen!

Why did you suffer Iachimo,  
Slight thing of Italy,  
To taint his nobler heart and brain  
With needless jealousy;  
And to become the geck and scorn  
O' th' other's villany!

*Sec. Bro.* For this from stiller seats we came,  
Our parents and us twain, 70  
That striking in our country's cause  
Fell bravely and were slain.  
Our fealty and Tenants' right  
With honour to maintain.

*First Bro.* Like hardiment Posthumus hath  
To Cymbeline perform'd;  
Then, Jupiter, thou king of gods,  
Why hast thou thus adjourn'd  
The graces for his merits due,  
Being all to dolours turn'd? 80

*Sici.* Thy crystal window ope: look out;  
No longer exercise  
Upon a valiant race thy harsh  
And potent injuries.

*Moth.* Since, Jupiter, our son is good,  
Take off his miseries.

*Sici.* Peep through thy marble mansion; help:  
Or we poor ghosts will cry  
To the shining synod of the rest  
Against thy deity. 90

*Both Bro.* Help, Jupiter: or we appeal,  
And from thy justice fly.

*JUPITER descends in thunder and lightning,  
sitting upon an eagle: he throws a thunder-  
bolt. The Ghosts fall on their knees.*

*Jup.* No more, you petty spirits of region  
low,  
Offend our hearing; hush! How dare you

Accuse the thunderer, whose bolt, you know,  
Sky-planted batters all rebelling coasts!  
Poor shadows of Elysium, hence, and rest  
Upon your never-withering banks of flowers:  
Be not with mortal accidents oppress; 99

No care of yours it is: you know 'tis ours.  
Whom best I love I cross; to make my gift,  
The more delay'd, delighted. Be content;  
Your low-laid son our goodness will uplift:  
His comforts thrive, his trials well are spent.  
Our Jovial star reign'd at his birth; and in  
Our temple was he married. Since, and then,

He shall be lord of lady Imogen,  
And happier much by his affliction made.  
This tablet lay upon his breast, wherein  
Our pleasure his full fortune doth contain:

And so, away : no further with your din  
Express impatience, lest you stir up mine.  
Mount, eagle, to my palace crystalline.

[*Ascends.*]

*Sic.* He came in thunder; his celestial  
breath  
Was sulphurous to smell : the holy eagle  
Stoop'd, as to foot us : his ascension is  
More sweet than our blest fields : his royal  
bird  
Prunes the immortal wing and cloyes his beak,  
As when his god is pleased.

*All.* Thanks, Jupiter !

*Sic.* The marble pavement closes, he is  
enter'd  
His radiant roof. Away ! and, to be blest,  
Let us with care perform his great behest.

[*The Ghosts vanish.*]

*Post.* [*Waking*] Sleep, thou hast been a  
grandaira, and begot  
A father to me ; and thou hast created  
A mother and two brothers ; but, O scorn !  
Gone ! they went hence so soon as they were  
born :

And so I am awake. Poor wretches that depend  
On greatness' favour dream as I have done,  
Wake and find nothing. But, alas, I swerve :  
Many dream not to find, neither deserve,  
And yet are steep'd in favours ; so am I,  
That have this golden chance and know not  
why.

What fairies haunt this ground ! A book ! O  
rare one !

Be not, as is our fangled world, a garment  
Nobler than that it covers : let thy effects  
So follow, to be most unlike our courtiers,  
As good as promises.

[*Exeunt*] As when a lion's whelp shall, to  
himself unknown, without seeking find, and  
be embraced by a piece of tender air ; and  
when from a stately cedar shall be lopped  
branches, which, being dead many years, shall  
after revive, be jointed to the old stock and  
freshly grow ; then shall Posthumus end his  
miseries, Britain be fortunate and flourish in  
peace and plenty.

'Tis still a dream, or else such stuff as madmen  
Tongue and brain not ; either both or nothing ;  
Or senseless speaking or a speaking such  
As sense cannot untie. Be what it is,  
The action of my life is like it, which  
I'll keep, if but for sympathy.

*Re-enter Gaoler.*

*First Gaol.* Come, sir, are you ready for  
death !

*Post.* Over-roasted rather ; ready long ago.  
*First Gaol.* Hanging is the word, sir : if you  
be ready for that, you are well cooked.

*Post.* So, if I prove a good repast to the  
spectators, the dish pays the debt.

*First Gaol.* A heavy reckoning for you, sir.  
But the custom is, you shall be called to no  
more payments ; for tomorrow tavern-bills ; which  
are often the sickness of parting, as the procuring  
of a drink ; you come in faint for want of  
meat, and yet making with too much drink ;  
some say you have paid too much, and sorry

that you are paid too much ; purse and brain  
both empty ; the brain the heavier for being  
too light, the purse too light, being drawn of  
heaviness : of this contradiction you shall now  
be quit. O, the charity of a penny cord ! it  
sums up thousands in a trice : you have no true  
debtor and creditor but it ; of what's past, is,  
and to come, the discharge ; your neck, sir, is  
pen, book and counters ; so the acquittance  
follows.

*Post.* I am merrier to die than thou art  
to live.

*First Gaol.* Indeed, sir, he that sleeps feels  
not the tooth-ache : but a man that were to  
sleep your sleep, and a hangman to help him  
to bed, I think he would change places with  
his officer ; for, look you, sir, you know not  
which way you shall go.

*Post.* Yes, indeed do I, fellow.

*First Gaol.* Your death has eyes in 's head  
then ; I have not seen him so pictured : you  
must either be directed by some that take upon  
them to know, or to take upon yourself that  
which I am sure you do not know, or jump the  
after inquiry on your own peril ; and how you  
shall speed in your journey's end, I think you'll  
never return to tell one.

*Post.* I tell thee, fellow, there are none want  
eyes to direct them the way I am going, but  
such as wink and will not use them.

*First Gaol.* What an infinite mock is this,  
that a man should have the best use of eyes to  
see the way of blindness ! I am sure hanging's  
the way of winking.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Knock off his manacles ; bring your  
prisoner to the king.

*Post.* Thou bring'st good news ; I am called  
to be made free.

*First Gaol.* I'll be hang'd then.

*Post.* Thou shalt be then freer than a gaoler ;  
no bolts for the dead.

[*Exeunt all but the First Gaoler.*]

*First Gaol.* Unless a man would marry a  
gallows and begot young gibbets, I never saw  
one so prone. Yet, on my conscience, there are  
verier knaves desire to live, for all he be a  
Roman ; and there be some of them too that  
die against their wills ; so should I, if I were  
one. I would we were all of one mind, and  
one mind good ; O, there were desolation of  
gaolers and gallowses ! I speak against my  
present profit, but my wish hath a preferment  
in't.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE V. *Cymbeline's tent.*

*Enter CYMBELINE, BELARIUS, GUIDERIUS,  
ARVIRAGUS, PISANIO, Lords, Officers, and  
Attendants.*

*Cym.* Stand by my side, you whom the gods  
have made

Preservers of my throne. Woe is my heart  
That the poor soldier that so richly fought,  
Whose rage shamed gilded arms, whose naked  
breast

Stepp'd before targes of proof, cannot be found :

He shall be happy that can find him, if  
Our grace can make him so.

*Bel.* I never saw  
Such noble fury in so poor a thing;  
Such precious deeds in one that promised  
nought  
But beggary and poor looks.

*Cym.* No tidings of him? *ro*  
*Pis.* He hath been search'd among the dead  
and living,  
But no trace of him.

*Cym.* To my grief, I am  
The heir of his reward; [*To Belarius, Guide-  
rius, and Arrivagus*] which I will add  
To you, the liver, heart and brain of Britain.  
By whom I grant she lives. 'Tis now the time  
To ask of whence you are. Report it.

*Bel.* Sir,  
In Cambria are we born, and gentlemen:  
Further to boast were neither true nor modest,  
Unless I add, we are honest.

*Cym.* Bow your knees.  
Arise my knights o' the battle: I create you *20*  
Companions to our person and will fit you  
With dignities becoming your estates.

*Enter CORNELIUS and Ladies.*

There's business in these faces. Why so sadly  
Greet you our victory? you look like Romans,  
And not o' the court of Britain.

*Cor.* Hail, great king!  
To sour your happiness, I must report  
The queen is dead.

*Cym.* Who worse than a physician

*Cor.* With horror, madly dying, like her *30*  
life,  
Which, being cruel to the world, concluded  
Most cruel to herself. What she confess'd  
I will report, so please you: these her women  
Can trip me, if I err; who with wet cheeks  
Were present when she finish'd.

*Cym.* Prithee, say.  
*Cor.* First, she confess'd she never loved  
you, only

Affected greatness got by you, not you:  
Married your royalty, was wife to your place;  
Abhor'd your person.

*Cym.* She alone knew this; *40*  
And, but she spoke it dying, I would not  
Believe her lips in opening it. Proceed.

*Cor.* Your daughter, whom she bore in hand  
to love

With such integrity, she did confess  
Was as a scorpion to her sight; whose life,  
But that her flight prevented it, she had  
T'en off by poison.

*Cym.* O most delicate fiend!  
Who is't can read a woman? Is there more?

*Cor.* More, sir, and worse. She did confess  
she had

For you a mortal mineral; which, being took,  
Should by the minute feed on life and lingering.  
By inches waste you: in which time she put

By watching, weeping, tending

O'ercome you with her show, and in time  
When she had sited you with her craft, to  
work

Her son into the adoption of the crown:  
But, failing of her end by his strange absence,  
Grew shameless-desperate; open'd, in despite  
Of heaven and men, her purposes; repented  
The evils she hatch'd were not effected; so  
Despairing died.

*Cym.* Heard you all this, her women?  
*First Lady.* We did, so please your high-  
ness.

*Cym.* Mine eyes  
Were not in fault, for she was beautiful;  
Mine ears, that heard her flattery; nor my  
heart,  
That thought her like her seeming; it had been  
vicious

To have mistrusted her: yet, O my daughter!  
That it was folly in me, thou mayst say,  
And prove it in thy feeling. Heaven mend all!

*Enter LUCIUS, LACHIMO, the Soothsayer, and  
other Roman Prisoners, guarded; POSTHUMUS  
behind, and IMOGEN.*

Thou comest not, Caius, now for tribute; that  
The Britons have razed out, though with the

loss *ro*  
Of many a bold one; whose kinsmen have made  
suit

That their good souls may be appeased with  
slaughter  
Of you their captives, which ourself have  
granted:

So think of your estate.

*Luc.* Consider, sir, the chance of war: the

Was yours by accident; had it gone with us,  
We should not, when the blood was cool, have  
threaten'd

Our prisoners with the sword. But since the  
gods

Will have it thus, that nothing but our lives  
May be call'd ransom, let it come: sufficient so

A Roman with a Roman's heart can suffer:  
Augustus lives to think on't: and so much

For my peculiar care. This one thing only  
I will entreat; my boy, a Briton born,

Let him be ransom'd: never master had  
A page so kind, so dutiful, diligent,

So tender over his occasions, true,  
So fast, so sure-like: let him virtue join

With my request, which I'll make bold your  
highness

Cannot deny; he hath done us Briton harm, so  
Though he have served a Roman: save him,

And spare no blood beside.

*Cym.* I have surely seen him:  
His favour is familiar to me. Boy,

Thou hast look'd thyself into my glass,  
And art mine own. I know not who, where-

fore,  
To say 'live, boy:' ne'er thank thy master:

live:  
And ask of Cymbeline what boon thou wilt  
Shew my beauty and thy state: I'll give it;

Yes, though thou do demand a prisoner.

The noblest is 'em.

*Imo.* I humbly thank your highness. 100

*Luc.* I do not bid thee beg my life, good lad; And yet I know thou wilt.

*Imo.* No, no: a lack,  
There's other work in hand: I see a thing  
Bitter to me as death: your life, good master,  
Must shuffle for itself.

*Luc.* The boy disdain me.  
He leaves me, scorns me: briefly die their joys  
That place them on the truth of girls and boys.  
Why stands he so perplex'd?

*Cym.* What wouldst thou, boy?  
I love thee more and more: think more and  
more

What's best to ask. Know'st him thou look'st  
on? I speak, 110

Will have him live? Is he thy kin? thy friend?

*Imo.* He is a Roman; no more kin to me  
Than I to your highness; who, being born your  
vassal,

Am something nearer.

*Cym.* Wherefore eyest him so?

*Imo.* I'll tell you, sir, in private, if you  
please  
To give me hearing.

*Cym.* Ay, with all my heart,  
And lend my best attention. What's thy  
name?

*Imo.* Fidele, sir.

*Cym.* Thou'rt my good youth, my page;  
I'll be thy master: walk with me; speak freely.

[*Cymbeline and Imogen converse apart.*]

*Bel.* Is not this boy revived from death?

*Arv.* One and another 120  
Not more resembles that sweet rosy lad  
Who died, and was Fidele. What think you?

*Gus.* The same dead thing alive.

*Bel.* Peace, peace! see further; he eyes us  
not; forbear;  
Creatures may be alike: were't he, I am sure  
He would have spoke to us.

*Gus.* But we saw him dead.

*Bel.* Be silent; let's see further.

*Pis.* [*Aside*] It is my mistress:  
Since she is living, let the time run on  
To good or bad.

[*Cymbeline and Imogen come forward.*]

*Imo.* Come, stand thou by our side;

He thy demand aloud. [*To Iachimo*] Sir,  
step you forth; 130

Give answer to this boy, and do it freely;  
Or, by our greatness and the grace of it,

Which is our honour, bitter torture shall  
Winnow the truth from falsehood. On, speak  
to him.

*Imo.* My boon is, that this gentleman may  
render

Of whom he had this ring.

*Post.* [*Aside*] What's that to him?

*Cym.* That diamond upon your finger, say  
How came it yours?

*Iach.* Thou'lt torture me to leave unspoken  
that

Which, to be spoke, would torture thee.

*Cym.* How! me? 140

*Iach.* I am glad to be constrain'd to utter  
that

Which torments me to conceal. By villainy  
I got this ring: 'twas Leonatus' jewel;

Whom thou didst banish; and—which men  
may grieve thee,

As it doth me—a nobler sir ne'er lived  
'Twixt sky and ground. Wilt thou hear more  
my lord?

*Cym.* All that belongs to this.

*Iach.* That paragon, thy daughter—  
For whom my heart drops blood, and my fails  
spirits

Quail to remember— Give me leave; I faint.

*Cym.* My daughter! what of her? Renew  
thy strength: 15

I had rather thou shouldst live while nature  
will

Than die ere I hear more: strive, man, and  
speak.

*Iach.* Upon a time,—unhappy was the clock  
That struck the hour!—it was in Rome,—ac-  
cursed

The mansion where!—'twas at a feast,—O  
would

Our vials had been poison'd, or at least  
Those which I heaved to head!—the good Post  
humus—

at should I say! he was too good to be  
Where ill men were; and was the best of all

Amongst the rarest of good ones,—sitting sadly.  
Hearing us praise our loves of Italy 16

For beauty that made barren the swell'd boast  
Of him that best could speak, for feature  
laming

The shrine of Venus, or straight-pight Minerva  
Postures beyond brief nature, for condition,

A shop of all the qualities that man  
Loves woman for, besides that hook of wiving

Fairness which strikes the eye—

*Cym.* I stand on fire  
Come to the matter.

*Iach.* All too soon I shall,  
Unless thou wouldst grieve quickly. This Post  
humus,

Most like a noble lord in love and one  
That had a royal lover, took his hint;

And, not disparaging whom we praised,—therein  
He was as calm as virtue—he began

His mistress' picture; which by his tongue  
being made

And then a mind put in't, either our brags  
Were crack'd of kitchen-trulls, or his descrip-  
tion

Proved us unspeaking poets.

*Cym.* Nay, nay, to the purpose

*Iach.* Your daughter's chastity—there it be-  
gins.

He spake of her, as Dian had hot dreams, 18  
And she alone were cold: whereas I, wretch,

Made scruple of his praise; and wags'd with  
him

Pieces of gold 'gainst this which then he wore  
Upon his honour'd finger, to attain

In suit the place of's bed and win this ring  
By hers and mine adultery. He, true knight,

No less of her honour confident  
Than I did truly find her; stakes this ring;

And would so, had it been a carbuncle  
Of Phoebus' wheel, and might so safely, had it

Been all the worth of 's car. Away to Britain  
Post I in this design: well may you, sir,  
Remember me at court; where I was taught  
Of your chaste daughter the wide difference  
Twixt amorous and villanous. Being thus  
quenched

Of hope, not longing, mine Italian brain  
'Gan in your duller Britain operate  
Most vilely: for my vantage, excellent:  
And, to be brief, my practice so prevail'd,  
That I return'd with simular proof enough  
To make the noble Leonatus mad,  
By wounding his belief in her renown  
With tokens thus, and thus; averring notes  
Of chamber-hanging, pictures, this her brace-  
let,—

O cunning, how I got it!—nay, some marks  
Of secret on her person, that he could not  
But think her bond of chastity quite crack'd,  
I having ta'en the forfeit. Whereupon—  
Methinks, I see him now—

Post. [Advancing] Ay, so thou dost,  
Italian fiend! Ay me, most credulous fool, 220  
Egregious murderer, thief, any thing  
That's due to all the villains past, in being,  
To come! O, give me cord, or knife, or poison,  
Some upright justice! Thou, king, send out  
For torturers ingenious: it is I  
That all the abhorred things o' the earth amend  
By being worse than they. I am Posthumus,  
That kill'd thy daughter:—villain-like, I lie—  
That caused a lesser villain than myself,  
A sacrilegious thief, to do 't: the temple 230  
Of virtue was she; yea, and she herself.  
Spit, and throw stones, cast mire upon me, set  
The dogs o' the street to bay me: every villain  
Be call'd Posthumus Leonatus; and  
Be villany less than 'twas! O Imogen!  
My queen, my life, my wife! O Imogen,  
Imogen, Imogen!

Imo. Peace, my lord; hear, hear—  
Post. Shall's have a play of this! Thou  
scornful page,

There lie thy park. [Striking her: she falls.]

Pis. O, gentlemen, help!

Mine and your mistress! O, my lord Post-  
humus!

You ne'er kill'd Imogen till now. Help, help! 230  
Mine honour'd lady!

Cym. Does the world go round?

Post. How come these staggers on me?

Pis. Wake, my mistress!

Cym. If this be so, the gods do mean to  
strike me

To death with mortal joy.

Pis. How fares my mistress?

Imo. O, get thee from my sight;

Thou gavest me poison: dangerous fellow,  
hence!

Breathes not where princes are.

Cym. The tune of Imogen!

Pis. Lady,

The gods throw stones of sulphur on me, if 240  
That box I gave you was not thought by me  
A precious thing: I had it from the queen.

Cym. New matter still!

Imo. It poison'd me.

Cor. O gods!

I left out one thing which the queen confess'd,  
Which must approve thee honest: 'If Planius  
Have' said she 'given his mistress that con-  
fection

Which I gave him for cordial, she is served  
As I would serve a rat.'

Cym. What's this, Cornelius?

Cor. The queen, sir, very oft importuned  
me

To temper poisons for her, still pretending 250  
The satisfaction of her knowledge only  
In killing creatures vile, as cats and dogs,

Of no esteem: I, dreading that her purpose  
Was of more danger, did compound for her  
A certain stuff, which, being ta'en, would cease

The present power of life, but in short time  
All offices of nature should again

Do their due functions. Have you ta'en of it?

Imo. Most like I did, for I was dead.

Bel. My boys,

There was our error.

Gut. This is, sure, Fidele. 260

Imo. Why did you throw your wedded lady  
from you?

Think that you are upon a rock; and now

Throw me again. [Embracing him.]

Post. Hang there like fruit, my soul,

Till the tree die!

Cym. How now, my flesh, my child!

What, makest thou me a dullard in this act?

Wilt thou not speak to me?

Imo. [Kneeling] Your blessing, sir,

Bel. [To Guiderius and Arviragus] Though

you did love this youth, I blame ye not;

You had a motive for 't.

Cym. My tears that fall

Prove holy water on thee! Imogen,

Thy mother's dead.

Imo. I am sorry for t, my lord. 270

Cym. O, she was naught; and long of her  
it was

That we meet here so strangely: but her son

Is gone, we know not how nor where.

Pis. My lord,

Now fear is from me, I'll speak truth. Lord

Cloten,

Upon my lady's missing, came to me

With his sword drawn; foam'd at the mouth,

and swore,

If I discover'd not which way she was gone,

It was my instant death. By accident,

I had a feigned letter of my master's

Then in my pocket; which directed him 280

To seek her on the mountains near to Milford;

Where, in a frenzy, in my master's garments,

Which he enforced from me, away he posts

With unchaste purpose and with oath to violate

My lady's honour: what became of him

I further know not.

Gut. Let me end the story:

I slew him there.

Cym. Marry, the gods forbid!

I would not thy good deeds should from any  
lips

Flick a hard sentence: prithee, valiant youth,

Deny't again.

Gut. I have spoke it, and I did it. 290

Cym. He was a prince.

*Gen.* A most incivil one: the wrongs he did me  
Were nothing prince-like; for he did provoke me  
With language that would make me spurn the

*See.*  
If it could so roar to me: I cut off's head;  
And am right glad he is not standing here  
To tell this tale of mine.

*Cym.* I am sorry for thee:  
By thine own tongue thou art condemn'd, and must  
Endure our law: thou'rt dead.

*Imo.* That headless man  
I thought had been my lord.

*Cym.* Bind the offender, 300  
And take him from our presence.

*Bel.* Stay, sir king:  
This man is better than the man he slew,  
As well descended as thyself; and hath  
More of thee merited than a band of Clotens  
Had ever scar for. [*To the Guard*] Let his  
arms alone;

They were not born for bondage.

*Cym.* Why, old soldier,  
Wilt thou unde the worth thou art unpaid for,  
By tasting of our wrath? How of descent  
As good as we?

*Arr.* In that he spake too far.

*Cym.* And thou shalt die for't.

*Bel.* We will die all three 310  
But I will prove that two on's are as good  
As I have given out him. My sons, I must,  
For mine own part, unfold a dangerous speech,  
Though, haply, well for you.

*Arr.* Your danger's ours.

*Gui.* And our good his.

*Bel.* Have at it then, by leave.  
Thou hadst great king, a subject who  
Was call'd Belarius.

*Cym.* What of him? he is  
A banish'd traitor.

*Bel.* He it is that hath  
Assumed this age; indeed a banish'd man;  
I know not how a traitor.

*Cym.* Take him hence: 320  
The whole world shall not save him.

*Bel.* Not too hot  
First pay me for the nursing of thy sons;  
And let it be confiscate all, so soon  
As I have received it.

*Cym.* Nursing of my sons!  
*Bel.* I am too blunt and saucy: here's my  
knee:

Ere I arise, I will prefer my sons;  
Then spare not the old father. Mighty sir,  
These two young gentlemen, that call me father  
And think they are my sons, are none of mine;  
They are the issue of your loins, my liege, 330  
And blood of your begetting.

*Cym.* How! my issue!  
*Bel.* No sure as you your father's. I, old

Am ~~that~~ whom you sometime

Your ~~father~~ was my more offence, my punish-

ment, and all my torment; that I suffer'd  
Was all the harm I did. These gentle princes—

For such and so the  
Have I train'd up;  
Could put into them; my breeding was, sir,

*See.* nurse, Euriphile, 339  
Whom for the theft I wedded, stole these  
children

Upon my banishment: I moved her to't,  
Having received the punishment before,  
For that which I did then: beaten for loyalty  
Excited me to treason: their dear loss  
The more of you 'twas felt, the more it shaped  
Unto my end of stealing them. But, gracious  
sir,

Here are your sons again; and I must lose  
Two of the sweet'st companions in the world.  
The benediction of these covering heavens 350  
Fall on their heads like dew! for they are  
worthy  
To inlay heaven with stars.

*Cym.* Thou weep'st, and speak'st.  
The service that you three have done is more  
Unlike than this thou tell'st. I lost my children:  
If these be they, I know not how to wish  
A pair of worthier sons.

*Bel.* Be pleased awhile.  
This gentleman, whom I call Polydore,  
Most worthy prince, as yours, is true Guiderius:  
This gentleman, my Cadwal, Arviragus, 355  
Your younger princely son; he, sir, was lapp'd  
In a most curious mantle, wrought by the hand  
Of his queen mother, which for more probation  
I can with ease produce.

*Cym.* Guiderius had  
Upon his neck a mole, a sanguine star;  
It was a mark of wonder.

*Bel.* This is he;  
Who hath upon him still that natural stamp:  
It was wise nature's end in the donation,  
To be his evidence now.

*Cym.* O, what, am I  
A mother to the birth of three? Ne'er mother  
Rejoiced deliverance more. Bless pray you be,  
That, after this strange starting from your orbs,  
You may reign in them now! O Imogen,  
Thou hast lost by this a kingdom.

*Imo.* No, my lord!  
I have got two worlds by't. O my gentle  
brothers,

Have we thus met! O, never say hereafter  
But I am truest speaker: you call'd me brother,  
When I was but your sister; I you brothers,  
When ye were so indeed.

*Cym.* Did you e'er meet?

*Arr.* Ay, my good lord.

*Gui.* And at first meeting loved:  
Continued so, until we thought he died. 360

*Cor.* By the queen's dream she swallow'd.  
*Cym.* O rare instinct!

When shall I hear all thought! This hesse  
abridgement  
Hath to it circumstantial branches which  
Distinction should be rich in. Where! how  
lived you?

And when came you to serve our Roman  
captive?  
How parted with your brothers! how first met  
them?



Why fled you from the court! and whither!

These,  
And your three motives to the battle, with  
I know not how much more, should be de-  
manded;

And all the other by-dependencies, 300  
From chance to chance: but nor the time nor  
place

Will serve our long inter'gatories. See,  
Posthumus anchors upon Imogen,  
And she, like harmless lightning, throws her  
eye

On him, her brothers, me, her master, hitting  
Each object with a joy: the counterchange  
is severally in all. Let's quit this ground,  
And smoke the temple with our sacrifices.

[To *Belarius*] Thou art my brother; so we'll  
hold thee ever.

*Ima.* You are my father too, and did relieve  
me, 400

To see this gracious season.

*Cym.* All o'erjoy'd,  
Save these in bonds: let them be joyful too,  
For they shall taste our comfort.

*Ima.* My good master,  
I will yet do you service.

*Luc.* Happy be you!  
*Cym.* The forlorn soldier, that so nobly  
fought,

He would have well become this place, and  
graced

The thankings of a king.

*Post.* I am, sir,  
The soldier that did company these three  
In poor beseeching: 'twas a fitment for 400  
The purpose I then follow'd. That I was he,  
Speak, *Imogen*: I had you down and might  
Have made you finish.

*Ima.* [Kneeling] I am down again:  
But now my heavy conscience sinks my knee.  
As then your force did. Take that life, beseech

Which I so often owe: but your ring first;  
And here the bracelet of the truest princess  
That ever swore her faith.

*Post.* Kneel not to me:  
The power that I have on you is to spare you;  
The malice towards you to forgive you: live,  
And deal with others better.

*Cym.* Nobly doom'd! 420  
We'll learn our freeness of a son-in-law;  
*Post.* 's the word to all.

*Arr.* You help us, sir,  
As you did mean indeed to be our brother;  
Joy'd are we that you are.

*Post.* Your servant, princes. Good my lord  
of Rome,

Call forth your soothsayer: as I slept, me-  
thought

Great *Jupiter*, upon his eagle back'd,  
Appear'd to me, with other spritely shows  
Of mine own kindred: when I waked, I found  
This label on my bosom: whose containing  
is so from sense in hardness, that I can  
Make no collection of it: let him show  
His skill in the construction. 430

*Luc.* Philomonus!

*Sooth.* Here, my good lord.

*Luc.* Read, and declare the meaning.

*Sooth.* [Reads] 'When as a lion's whelp  
shall, to himself unknown, without seeking  
find, and be embraced by a piece of tender  
air; and when from a stately cedar shall be  
lopped branches, which, being dead many  
years, shall after revive, be jointed to the old  
stock, and freshly grow; then shall *Posthu-  
mus* end his miseries, Britain be fortunate and  
flourish in peace and plenty.'

Thou, *Leonatus*, art the lion's whelp;  
The fit and apt construction of thy name,  
Being *Leo-natus*, doth import so much.

[To *Cymbeline*] The piece of tender air, thy  
virtuous daughter,

Which we call 'mollis aer;' and 'mollis aer'  
We term it 'muller;' which 'muller' I divine  
Is this most constant wife; who, even now,  
Answering the letter of the oracle, 450  
Unknown to you, unsought, were clipp'd about  
With this most tender air.

*Cym.* This hath some meaning.  
*Sooth.* The lofty cedar, royal *Cymbeline*,  
Personates thee: and thy lop'd branches point  
Thy two sons forth; who, by *Belarius* stol'n,  
For many years thought dead, are now revived,  
To the majestic cedar join'd, whose issue  
Promises Britain peace and plenty.

*Cym.* Well;  
My peace we will begin. And, *Calus Lucius*,  
Although the victor, we submit to *Cesar*, 460  
And to the Roman empire; promising  
To pay our wonted tribute, from the which  
We were dissuaded by our wicked queen;  
Whom heavens, in justice, both on her and  
here,

Have laid most heavy hand.  
*Sooth.* The fingers of the powers above do  
tune

The harmony of this peace. The vision  
Which I made known to *Lucius*, ere the  
stroke

Of this yet scarce-cold battle, at this instant  
Is full accomplish'd; for the Roman eagle, 470  
From south to west on wing soaring aloft,  
Lessen'd herself, and in the beams of the sun  
So vanish'd: which foreshow'd our princely

The imperial *Cesar*, should again unite  
His favour with the radiant *Cymbeline*,  
Which shines here in the west.

*Cym.* Laud we the gods;  
And let our crooked snakes climb to their  
nostrils

From our blest altars. Publish we this peace  
To all our subjects. Set we forward: let  
A Roman and a British ensign wave, 480  
Friendly together; so through *Italy's* down  
march:

And in the temple of great *Jupiter*  
Our peace we'll ratify: seal it with oaths  
Set on there! Never was a war so soon  
See bloody hands were wash'd with a  
peace. 490

# PERICLES

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

ANTIOCHUS, king of Antioch.  
 PERICLES, prince of Tyre.  
 HELICANUS, } two lords of Tyre.  
 ESCANES, }  
 SIMONIDES, king of Pentapolis.  
 CLEON, governor of Tarsus.  
 LYRIMACHUS, governor of Mytilene.  
 CERIMON, a lord of Ephesus.  
 THALIARD, a lord of Antioch.  
 PHILEMON, servant to Cerimon.  
 LEONINE, servant to Dionyza.  
 Marahal.  
 A Pandar.  
 BOULT, his servant.

The Daughter of Antiochus.  
 DIONYZA, wife to Cleon.  
 THAISA, daughter to Simonides.  
 MARINA, daughter to Pericles and Thaisa.  
 LYCHORIDA, nurse to Marina.  
 A Bawd.

Lords, Knights, Gentlemen, Sailors, Pirates,  
 Fishermen, and Messengers.

DJANA.

GOWER, as Chorus.

SCENE: *Dispersedly in various countries.*

### ACT I

*Enter GOWER.*

*Before the palace of Antioch.*

To sing a song that old was sung,  
 From ashes ancient Gower is come;  
 Assuming man's infirmities,  
 To glad your ear, and please your eyes.  
 It hath been sung at festivals,  
 On ember-eyes and holy-ales;  
 And lords and ladies in their lives  
 Have read it for restoratives:  
 The purchase is to make men glorious;  
 Et bonum quo antiquius, eo melius.  
 If you, born in these latter times,  
 When wit's more ripe, accept my rhymes,  
 And that to hear an old man sing  
 May to your wishes pleasure bring,  
 I life would wish, and that I might  
 Waste it for you, like taper-light.  
 This Antioch, then, Antiochus the Great  
 Built up, this city, for his chiefest seat;  
 The fairest in all Syria.  
 I tell you what mine authors say:  
 This king unto him took a fere,  
 Who died and left a female heir,  
 So bounteous, blithe, and full of face,  
 As heaven had lent her all his grace;  
 With whom the father liking took,  
 And her to incest did provoke:  
 Bad child; worse father! to entice his own  
 To evil should be done by none:  
 But enquire what they did begin.  
 Was with long use account no sin.  
 The beauty of this sinful dame  
 Made many princes thither frame,  
 To seek her as a bed-fellow,  
 In marriage-pleasures play-fellow:

Which to prevent he made a law,  
 To keep her still, and men in awe,  
 That whoso ask'd her for his wife,  
 His riddle told not, lost his life:  
 So for her many a wight did die,  
 As you grim looks do testify,  
 What now ensues, to the judgement of your  
 eye  
 I give, my cause who best can justify. [*Exit.*]

SCENE I. *Antioch. A room in the palace.*

*Enter ANTIOCHUS, PRINCE PERICLES,  
 and followers.*

*Ant.* Young prince of Tyre, you have at  
 large received

The danger of the task you undertake.

*Per.* I have, Antiochus, and, with a soul  
 Embolden'd with the glory of her praise,  
 Think death no hazard in this enterprise.

*Ant.* Bring in our daughter, clothed like a  
 bride,

For the embracements even of Jove himself;

At whose conception, till Lucina reign'd,  
 Nature this dowry gave, to glad her presence,  
 The senate-house of planets all did sit,  
 To knit in her their best perfections.

*Music. Enter the Daughter of Antiochus.*

*Per.* See where she comes, apparel'd like  
 the spring.

Graces her subjects, and her thoughts the king  
 Of every virtue gives renown to man!

Her face the book of praises, where is read  
 Nothing but curious pleasures, as from thence  
 Sorrow was ever raised, and teary wrath  
 Could never be her mild companion.  
 You gods that made me man, and sway in love,

That have inflamed desire in my breast 20  
To taste the fruit of yon celestial tree,  
Or die in the adventure, be my help.  
As I am son and servant to your will,  
To compass such a boundless happiness!

*Ant.* Prince Pericles,—

*Per.* That would be son to great Antiochus.  
*Ant.* Before thee stands this fair Hesperides,  
With golden fruit, but dangerous to be touch'd;  
For death-like dragons here affright thee hard;  
Her face, like heaven, enticeth thee to view 30  
Her countless glory, which desert must gain;  
And which, without desert, because thine eye  
Presumes to reach, all thy whole heap must die.

Yon sometimes famous princes, like thyself,  
Drawn by report, adventurous by desire,  
Tell thee, with speechless tongues and semblance pale,

That without covering, save yon field of stars,  
Here they stand martyrs, slain in Cupid's wars;  
And with dead cheeks advise thee to desist  
For going on death's net, whom none resist. 40

*Per.* Antiochus, I thank thee, who hath taught

My frail mortality to know itself,  
And by those fearful objects to prepare  
This body, like to them, to what I must;  
For death remember'd should be like a mirror,  
Who tells us life's but breath, to trust it error.  
I'll make my will then, and, as sick men do  
Who know the world, see heaven, but, feeling  
woe,

Gripe not at earthly joys as erst they did;  
So I bequeath a happy peace to you 50  
And all good men, as every prince should do;  
My riches to the earth from whence they came;  
But my unspotted fire of love to you.

[*To the daughter of Antiochus.*  
Thus ready for the way of life or death,  
I wait the sharpest blow, Antiochus.

*Ant.* Scorning advice, read the conclusion,  
then :

Which read and not expounded, 'tis decreed,  
As these before thee thou thyself shalt bleed.

*Daugh.* Of all say'd yet, mayst thou prove  
prosperous!

Of all say'd yet, I wish thee happiness! 60

*Per.* Like a bold champion, I assume the  
risk,

Nor ask advice of any other thought  
but faithfulness and courage.

*He reads the riddle.*

I am no viper, yet I feed  
On mother's flesh which did me breed.  
I sought a husband, in which labour  
I found that kindness in a father:  
He's father, son, and husband mild;  
I mother, wife, and yet his child.

How they may be, and yet in two,  
As you will live, resolve it you.

Sharp physic is the last: but, O you powers  
That give heaven countless eyes to view men's  
acts,

Why cloud they not their sights perpetually,  
If this be true, which makes me pale to read it  
Fair glass of light, I loved you, and could still,  
[*of the hand of the Princess.*

Were not this glorious casket: with ill;  
But I must tell you, now my! revolt;  
For he's no man on whom I wait 70  
That, knowing sin within, will touch the gate.  
You are a fair viol, and your sense the strings;  
Who, finger'd to make man his lawful music,  
Would draw heaven down, and all the gods, to  
hearken;

Hell only danceth at so harsh a chime.

Good sooth, I care not for you.

*Ant.* Prince Pericles, touch not, upon thy  
life,

For that's an article within our law,  
As dangerous as the rest. Your time's expired:  
Either expound now, or receive your sentence.

*Per.* Great king,

Few love to hear the sins they love to act: 80

'Twould braid yourself too near for me to tell it.

Who has a book of all that monarchs do,  
He's more secure to keep it shut than shown:

For vice repeated is like the wandering wind,  
Blows dust in others' eyes, to spread itself;

And yet the end of all is bought thus dear,  
The breath is gone, and the sore eyes see clear

To stop the air would hurt them. The blind  
mole casts

Copp'd hills towards heaven, to tell the earth is  
throng'd

man's oppression; and the poor worm doth  
die for't.

Kings are earth's gods; in vice their law's their  
will;

And if Jove stray, who dares say Jove doth ill?

It is enough you know; and it is fit,

What being more known grows worse, to  
smother it.

All love the womb that their first being bred,  
Then give my tongue like leave to love my  
head.

*Ant.* [*Aside*] Heaven, that I had thy head!

he has found the meaning:

But I will gloss with him.—Young prince of  
Tyre, 100

Though by the tenour of our strict edict,  
Your exposition misinterpreting,

We might proceed to cancel of your days;  
Yet hope, succeeding from so fair a tree

As your fair self, doth tune us otherwise:  
Forty days longer we do reside you;

If by which time our secret be undone,  
This mercy shows we'll joy in such a son:

And until then your entertain shall be  
As doth befit our honour and your worth. 110

[*Exeunt all but Pericles.*

*Per.* How courtesy would seem to cover sin,  
When what is done is like an hypocrite,

The which is good in nothing but in sight!

If it be true that I interpret false,  
Then were it certain you were not so bad

As with foul incest to abuse your soul;

Where now you're both a father and a  
By your untimely clasping with your

Which pleasure fits an husband, not a  
And she an eater of her mother's flesh;

By the defiling of her parent's bed;

And both like serpents are, who though they  
feed

On sweetest flowers, yet they poison breed.  
 Antioch, farewell! for wisdom sees, those men  
 Blush not in actions blacker than the night,  
 Will shun no course to keep them from the

One sin, I know, another doth provoke;  
 Murder's as near to lust as flame to smoke:  
 Poison and treason are the hands of sin,  
 Ay, and the targets, to put off the shame: 140  
 Then, lest my life be cropp'd to keep you clear,  
 By flight I'll shun the danger which I fear.  
 [Exit.]

Re-enter ANTIOCHUS.

Ant. He hath found the meaning, for which  
 we mean  
 To have his head.  
 He must not live to trumpet forth my infamy,  
 Nor tell the world Antiochus doth sin  
 In such a loathed manner;  
 And therefore instantly this prince must die;  
 For by his fall my honour must keep high.  
 Who attends us there!

Enter THALIARD.

Thal. Doth your highness call? 150  
 Ant. Thaliard,  
 You are of our chamber, and our mind partakes  
 Her private actions to your secrecy;  
 And for your faithfulness we will advance you.  
 Thaliard, behold, here's poison, and here's  
 gold;  
 We hate the prince of Tyre, and thou must kill  
 him:  
 It fits thee not to ask the reason why,  
 Because we bid it. Say, is it done?  
 Thal. My lord,  
 'Tis done.  
 Ant. Enough. 160

Enter a Messenger.

Let your breath cool yourself, telling your haste.  
 Mess. My lord, prince Pericles is fled. [Exit.]  
 Ant. As thou  
 Wilt live, fly after; and like an arrow shot  
 From a well-experienced archer hits the mark  
 His eye doth level at, so thou ne'er return  
 Unless thou say 'Prince Pericles is dead.'  
 Thal. My lord,  
 If I can get him within my pistol's length,  
 I'll make him sure enough: so, farewell to  
 your highness.  
 Ant. Thaliard, adieu! [Exit Thal.] Till  
 Pericles be dead, 170  
 My heart can lend no succour to my head.  
 [Exit.]

SCENE II. Tyre. A room in the palace.

Enter PERICLES.

Per. [To Lords without] Let none disturb  
 me. Why should this change of thoughts,  
 The sad remembrance, dull-ear'd melancholy,  
 Tempt me to stand a guest at not an  
 In the day's glorious walk, or pe-  
 That my poor grief should sleep, can  
 tempt me!

Here pleasures court mine eyes, and mine eyes  
 shun them.

And danger, which I fear'd, is at Antioch,  
 Whose arm seems far too short to hit me here:  
 Yet neither pleasure's art can joy my spirits,  
 Nor yet the other's distance comfort me. 10  
 Then it is thus: the passions of the mind,  
 That have their first conception by mis-dread,  
 Have after-nourishment and life by care;  
 And what was first but fear what might be done,  
 Grows elder now and cares it be not done.  
 And so with me: the great Antiochus,  
 'Gainst whom I am too little to contend,  
 Since he's so great can make his will his act,  
 Will think me speaking, though I swear to  
 silence;

Nor boots it me to say I honour him,  
 If he suspect I may dishonour him:  
 And what may make him in being  
 known,  
 He'll stop the course by which it might be  
 known:  
 With hostile forces he'll o'erspread the land,  
 And with the ostent of war will look so huge,  
 Amazement shall drive courage from the state;  
 Our men be vanquish'd ere they do resist,  
 And subjects punish'd that ne'er thought  
 offence:  
 Which care of them, not pity of myself,  
 Who am no more but as the tops of trees, 30  
 Which fence the roots they grow by and defend  
 them,  
 Makes both my body pine and soul to languish,  
 And punish that before that he would punish.

Enter HELICANUS, with other Lords.

First Lord. Joy and all comfort to your  
 sacred breast!  
 Sec. Lord. And keep your mind, till you  
 return to us,  
 Peaceful and comfortable!  
 Hel. Peace, peace, and give experience  
 tongue.  
 They do abuse the king that flatter him:  
 For flattery is the bellows blows up sin;  
 The thing the which is flatter'd, but a spark, 40  
 To which that blast gives heat and stronger  
 glowing:  
 Whereas reproof, obedient and in order,  
 Fits kings, as they are men, for they may err.  
 When Signior Sooth here does proclaim a peace,  
 He flatters you, makes war upon your life.  
 Prince, pardon me, or strike me, if you please;  
 I cannot be much lower than my knees.  
 Per. All leave us else; but let your cares  
 o'clock  
 What shipping and what lading's in our haven,  
 And then return to us. [Exeunt Lords.] Hel-  
 canus, thou 50  
 Hast moved us: what seest thou in our looks?  
 Hel. An angry brow, dread lord.  
 Per. If there be such a dart in prince's  
 brows,  
 How durst thy tongue move anger to our face?  
 Hel. How dare the plants look up to heaven,  
 from whence  
 They have their nourishment?  
 Per. Thou know'st I have power

To take thy life from thee.

*Hel.* [Kneeling] I have ground the axe myself;

Do you but strike the blow.

*Per.* Rise, prithee, rise.  
Sit down: thou art no faster:  
I thank thee for it; and heaven forbid  
That kings should let their ears hear their  
faults hid!

Fit councillor and servant for a prince,  
Who by thy wisdom makest a prince thy  
servant.

What wouldst thou have me do?

*Hel.* To bear with patience  
Such griefs as you yourself do lay upon yourself.

*Per.* Thou speak'st like a physician, Helicanus.

That minister'st a potion unto me  
That thou wouldst tremble to receive thyself.  
Attend me, then: I went to Antioch,  
Where as thou know'st, against the face of  
death,

I sought the purchase of a glorious beauty,  
From whence an issue I might propagate,  
† Are arms to princes, and bring joys to subjects.  
Her face was to mine eye beyond all wonder;  
The rest—hark in thine ear—as black as incest:  
Which by my knowledge found, the sinful  
father

Seem'd not to strike, but smooth: but thou  
know'st this,

'Tis time to fear when tyrants seem to kiss.

Which fear so grew in me, I hither fled,

Under the covering of a careful night,

Who seem'd my good protector; and, being  
here,

Bethought me what was past, what might  
succeed.

I knew him tyrannous; and tyrants' fears

Decrease not, but grow faster than the years:

And should he doubt it, as no doubt he doth,

That I should open to the listening air

How many worthy princes' bloods were shed,

To keep his bed of blackness unslaid ope,

To lop that doubt, he'll fill this land with arms,

And make pretence of wrong that I have done  
him;

When all, for mine, if I may call offence,

Must feel war's blow, who spares not innocence:

Which love to all, of which thyself art one,

Who now repentest me for it,—

*Hel.* Alas, sir!

*Per.* Draw sleep out of mine eyes, blood  
from my cheeks,

Musings into my mind, with thousand doubts

How I might stop this tempest ere it came;

And finding little comfort to relieve them,

I thought it princely charity to grieve them.

*Hel.* Well, my lord, since you have given  
me leave to speak,

Freshly will I speak. Antiochus you fear,

And justly too, I think, you fear the tyrant,

Who either by public war or private treason

Will take away your life.

Therefore, my lord, go travel for a while;

Till that his rage and anger be forgot,

Or till the Destinies do cut his thread of life,

Your rule direct us any; if so me,

Day serves not night more faithful than I'll be.

*Per.* I do not doubt thy faith;

But should he wrong my liberties in my  
absence?

*Hel.* We'll mingle our bloods together in  
the earth,

From whence we had our being and our birth.

*Per.* Tyre, I now look from thee then, and  
to Tarsus

Intend my travel, where I'll hear from thee;

And by whose letters I'll dispose myself.

The care I had and have of subjects' good

On thee I lay, whose wisdom's strength can  
bear it.

I'll take thy word for faith, not ask thine oath:

Who shuns not to break one will sure crack  
both;

But in our orbs we'll live so round and safe,

That time of both this truth shall never con-  
vince,

Thou show'd'st a subject's shine, I a true  
prince.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE III. Tyre. An ante-chamber in the  
palace.

Enter THALIAUD.

*Thal.* So, this is Tyre, and this the court.

Here must I kill King Pericles; and if I do it  
not, I am sure to be hanged at home: 'tis  
dangerous. Well, I perceive he was a wise  
fellow, and had good discretion, that, being  
bid to ask what he would of the king, desired  
he might know none of his secrets: now do  
I see he had some reason for't; for if a king  
bid a man be a villain, he's bound by the in-  
denture of his oath to be one. Hush! here  
come the lords of Tyre.

Enter HELICANUS and ESCANES, with other  
Lords of Tyre.

*Hel.* You shall not need, my fellow peers of  
Tyre,

Further to question me of your king's de-  
parture:

His seal'd commission, left in trust with me,  
Doth speak sufficiently he's gone to travel.

*Thal.* [Aside] How! the king gone!

*Hel.* If further yet you will be satisfied,

Why, as it were unseasonable of your loves,

He would depart, I'll give some light unto you.

Being at Antioch—

*Thal.* [Aside] What from Antioch?

*Hel.* Royal Antiochus—on what cause I  
know not—

Took some displeasure at him; at least he  
judged so;

And doubting lest that he had err'd or slurr'd,

To show his sorrow, he did correct himself;

So sent himself unto the shipmen's hall,

With whom each minute threatens life or death.

*Thal.* [Aside] Well, I perceive—

I shall not be hang'd now, although I would;

But since he's gone, 'tis king's business  
please:

He soaped the land, to push at the sea:

I'll present myself. Fare ye the lords of  
Tyre!

*Hel.* Lord Thaliard from Antiochus is welcome.

*Thal.* From him I come  
With message unto princely Pericles;  
But since my landing I have understood  
Your lord has betook himself to unknown  
travels.

My message must return from whence it came.

*Hel.* We have no reason to desire it,  
Commended to our master, not to us:  
Yet, ere you shall depart, this we desire. 39  
As friends to Antioch, we may feast in Tyre.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *Tarsus. A room in the  
Governor's house.*

*Enter CLEON, the governor of Tarsus, with  
DIONYZA, and others.*

*Cle.* My Dionyza, shall we rest us here,  
And by relating tales of others' griefs,  
See if 'twill teach us to forget our own?

*Dio.* That were to blow at fire in hope to  
quench it;

For who digs hills because they do aspire  
Throws down one mountain to cast up a higher.  
O my distressed lord, even such our griefs are;  
Here they're but felt, and seen with mischief's  
eyes,

But like to groves, being topp'd, they higher  
rise.

*Cle.* O Dionyza, 40  
Who wanteth food, and will not say he wants it,  
Or can conceal his hunger till he famish?  
Our tongues and sorrows do sound deep  
Our woes into the air; our eyes do weep,  
Till tongues fetch breath that may proclaim  
them louder;

That, if heaven slumber while their creatures  
want,

They may awake their helps to comfort them.  
I'll then discourse our woes, felt several years,  
And wanting breath to speak help me with  
tears.

*Dio.* I'll do my best, sir. 20

*Cle.* This Tarsus, o'er which I have the  
government,  
A city on whom plenty held full hand,  
For riches strew'd herself even in the streets;  
Whose towers bore heads so high they kiss'd  
the clouds,

And strangers ne'er beheld but wonder'd at;  
Whose men and dames so jettied and adorn'd,  
Like one another's glass to trim them by:  
Their tables were stored full, to glad the sight,  
And not so much to feed on as delight;  
All poverty was scorn'd, and pride so great, 30  
The name of help grew odious to repeat.

*Dio.* O, 'tis too true.

*Cle.* But see what heaven can do! By this  
our change,

Those mouths, who but of late, earth, sea, and  
air,

Were all too little to content and please,  
Although they gave their creatures in abun-  
dances,

As horses are defiled for want of use,  
They are now starved for want of exercise:

Those palates who, not yet two summers  
younger,

Must have inventions to delight the taste, 40  
Would now be glad of bread, and beg for it:

Those mothers who, to nurse up their babes,  
Thought nought too curious, are ready now  
To eat those little darlings whom they loved.

So sharp are hunger's teeth, at man and wife  
Draw lots who first shall die; lengthen life:

Here stands a lord, and a lady weeping;  
Here many sink, yet those which see them fall  
Have scarce strength left to give them burial.

Is not this true?

*Dio.* Our cheeks and ho eyes do wit-  
ness it.

*Cle.* O, let those cities that of plenty's cup  
And her prosperities so largely taste,  
With their superfluous riots, hear these tears!  
The misery of Tarsus may be theirs.

*Enter a Lord.*

*Lord.* Where's the lord governor?

*Cle.* Here.  
Speak out thy sorrows which thou bring'st in  
haste,

For comfort is too far for us to expect.

*Lord.* We have descried, upon our neighbour-  
ing shore, 60

A portly sail of ships make hitherward.

*Cle.* I thought as much.  
One sorrow never comes but brings an heir,

That may succeed as his inheritor;  
And so in ours: some neighbouring nation,  
Taking advantage of our misery,

Hath stuff'd these hollow vessels with their  
power,

To beat us down, the which are down already;  
And make a conquest of unhappy me,

Whereas no glory's got to overcome. 70

*Lord.* That's the least fear; for, by the  
semblance

Of their white flags display'd, they bring us  
peace,

And come to us as favourers, not as foes.

*Cle.* Thou speak'st like him's tutor to do  
to repeat:

Who makes the fairest show means most deceit.  
But bring they what they will and what they  
can,

What need we fear?  
The ground's the lowest, and we are half way  
there.

Go tell their general we attend him here,  
To know for what he comes, and whence he  
comes. 80

And what he craves.

*Lord.* I go, my lord. [Exit.]

*Cle.* Welcome is peace, if he on peace  
consist;

If wars, we are unable to resist.

*Enter PERICLES with Attendants.*

*Per.* Lord governor, for so we hear you are,  
Let not our ships and number of our men  
Be like a beacon fired to amaze your eyes.

We have heard your miseries as far as Tyre,  
And seen the desolation of your streets:

Nor come we to add sorrow to your tears, 90

But to relieve them of their heavy load ;  
And these our ships, you happily may think  
Are like the Trojan horse was stuff'd within  
With bloody veins, expecting overthrow,  
Are stored with corn to make your needy bread,  
And give them life whom hunger starved half  
dead.

*All.* The gods of Greece protect you !  
And we'll pray for you.

*Per.* Arise, I pray you, rise :  
We do not look for reverence, but for love, 99  
And harbourage for ourself, our ships, and men.

*Cle.* The which when any shall not gratify,  
Or pay you with unthankfulness in thought,  
Be it our wives, our children, or ourselves,  
The curse of heaven and men succeed their  
evils !

Till when,—the which I hope shall ne'er be  
seen,—

Your grace is welcome to our town and us.

*Per.* Which welcome we'll accept ; feast  
here awhile,

Until our stars that frown lend us a smile.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

*Enter GOWER.*

*Gow.* Here have you seen a mighty king  
His child, I wis, to incest bring ;  
A better prince and benign lord,  
That will prove awful both in deed and word.  
Be quiet then as men should be,  
Till he hath pass'd necessity,  
I'll show you those in troubles reign,  
Losing a mite, a mountain gain.  
The good in conversation,  
To whom I give my benison, 10  
Is still at Tarsus, where each man  
Thinks all is writ he spoken can ;  
And, to remember what he does,  
Build his statue to make him glorious :  
But tidings to the contrary  
Are brought your eyes ; what need speak I !

## DUMB SHOW.

*Enter at one door PERICLES talking with  
CLEON ; all the brain with them. Enter at  
another door a Gentleman, with a letter to  
PERICLES ; PERICLES shows the letter to  
CLEON ; gives the Messenger a reward, and  
knight's him. Exit PERICLES at one door,  
and CLEON at another.*

Good Helicane, that stay'd at home.  
Not to eat honey like a drone  
From others' labours ; for though he strive  
To killen bad, keep good alive ;  
And to fulfil his prince's desire,  
Sends word of all that haps in Tyre ;  
How Thaliard came full bent with sin  
And had intent to murder him ;  
And that in Tarsus was not best  
Longer for him to make his rest.  
He, doing so, put forth to sea,  
Where when men hear, there's soldiers sent  
For now the wind begins to blow ;

Thunder above and deeps below 30  
Make such unquiet, that the ship  
Should house him safe is wreck'd and split ;  
And he, good prince, having all lost,  
By waves from coast to coast is tost :  
All perished of man, of poll,  
Ne aught escapen but himself ;  
Till fortune, tired with doing bad,  
Threw him ashore, to give him glad :  
And here he comes. What shall be next,  
Pardon old Gower,—this longs the text. 40  
[*Exit.*]

SCENE I. *Pentapolis. An open place by the  
sea-side.*

*Enter PERICLES, wet.*

*Per.* Yet cease your ire, you angry stars of  
heaven !  
Wind, rain, and thunder, remember, earthly  
man  
Is but a substance that must yield to you ;  
And I, as fits my nature, do obey you :  
Alas, the sea hath cast me on the rocks,  
Wash'd me from shore to shore, and left me  
breath  
Nothing to think on but ensuing death :  
Let it suffice the greatness of your powers  
To have bereft a prince of all his fortunes ;  
And having thrown him from your watery  
grave, 20  
Here to have death in peace is all he'll crave.

*Enter three Fishermen.*

*First Fish.* What, ho, Pilch !

*Sec. Fish.* Ha, come and bring away the  
nets !

*First Fish.* What, Patch-breech, I say !

*Third Fish.* What say you, master !

*First Fish.* Look how thou stirrest now !  
come away, or I'll fetch thee with a wanton.

*Third Fish.* Faith, master, I am thinking  
of the poor men that were cast away before us  
even now. 30

*First Fish.* Alas, poor souls, it grieved my  
heart to hear what pitiful cries they made to us  
to help them, when, well-a-day, we could scarce  
help ourselves.

*Third Fish.* Nay, master, said not I as much  
when I saw the porpus how he bounc'd and  
tumbled ! they say they're half fish, half flesh ;  
a plague on them, they ne'er come but I look  
to be washed. Master, I marvel how the fishes  
live in the sea. 40

*First Fish.* Why, as men do a-land ; the  
great ones eat up the little ones : I can compare  
our rich misers to nothing so fit as to a  
whale ; a plays and tumbles, driving the poor  
fry before him, and at last devours them all at  
a mouthful ; such whales have I heard on o' the  
land, who never leave gaping till they've swal-  
lowed the whole parish, church, steeple, belfry,  
and all.

*Per.* [*Aside.*] A pretty moral.

*Third Fish.* But, master, if I had been the  
surgeon, I would have been that day in the  
belly. 45

*Sec. Fish.* Why, man!

*Third Fish.* Because he should have swallowed me too: and when I had been in his belly, I would have kept such a jangling of the bells, that he should never have left, till he cast bells, steeple, church, and parish, up again. But if the good King Simonides were of my mind,—

*Per.* [Aside] Simonides!

*Third Fish.* We would purge the land of these drones, that rob the bee of her honey.

*Per.* [Aside] How from the finny subject of the sea

These fishers tell the infirmities of men;  
And from their watery empire recollect  
All that may men approve or men detect!  
Peace be at your labour, honest fishermen.

*Sec. Fish.* Honest! good fellow, what's that?  
If it be a day fits you, I search out of the calendar, and nobody look after it.

*Per.* May see the sea hath cast upon your coast.

*Sec. Fish.* What a drunken knave was the sea to cast thee in our way!

*Per.* A man whom both the waters and the wind,

In that vast tennis-court, have made the ball  
For them to play upon, entreats you pity him;  
He asks of you, that never used to beg.

*First Fish.* No, friend, cannot you beg!  
Here's them in our country of Greece gets more  
With begging than we can do with working.

*Sec. Fish.* Canst thou catch any fishes, then?

*Per.* I never practised it.

*Sec. Fish.* Nay, then thou wilt starve, sure;  
for here's nothing to be got now-a-days, unless  
thou canst fish for't.

*Per.* What I have been I have forgot to know;

But what I am, want teaches me to think on:  
A man throng'd up with cold: my veins are  
chill,

And have no more of life than may suffice  
To give my tongue that heat to ask your help;  
Which if you shall refuse, when I am dead, so  
For that I am a man, pray see me buried.

*First Fish.* Dis quoth-a! Now gods forbid!  
I have a gown here: come, put it on; keep thee  
warm. Now, afore me, a handsome fellow!  
Come, thou shalt go home, and we'll have flesh  
for holidays, fish for fasting-days, and more or  
puddings and flap-jacks, and thou shalt be wel-  
come.

*Per.* I thank you, sir.

*Sec. Fish.* Hark you, my friend; you said  
you could not beg.

*Per.* I did but grave.

*Sec. Fish.* But grave! Then I'll turn craver  
too, and so I shall escape whipping.

*Per.* Why, are all your beggars whipped,  
then?

*Sec. Fish.* O, not all, my friend, not all; for  
if all your beggars were whipped, I would wish  
no better office than to be beadle. But, master,  
I'll go draw up the net.

*Exit with Third Fishermen.*

*Per.* [Alone] How well this honest mirth  
discreets my labour!

*First Fish.* Hark you, sir, do you know  
where ye are?

*Per.* Not well.

*First Fish.* Why, I'll tell you: this is called  
Pentapolis, and our—the good Simonides

*Per.* The good King Simonides, do you call  
him!

*First Fish.* Ay, sir; and he deserves so to  
be called for his peaceable reign and good  
government.

*Per.* He is a happy king, since he gains  
from his subjects the name of good by his  
government. How far is his court distant  
from this shore?

*First Fish.* Marry, sir, half a day's journey;  
and I'll tell you, he hath a fair daughter, and  
to-morrow is her birth-day; and there are  
princes and knights come from all parts of  
the world to just and tourney for her love.

*Per.* Were my fortunes equal to my desires,  
I could wish to make one there.

*First Fish.* O, sir, things must be as they  
may; and what a man cannot get, he may  
lawfully deal for—his wife's soul.

*Re-enter Second and Third Fishermen,  
drawing up a net.*

*Sec. Fish.* Help, master, help! here's a fish  
hangs in the net, like a poor man's right in  
the law; 'twill hardly come out. Ha! boys  
on't, 'tis come at last, and 'tis turned to a  
rusty armour.

*Per.* An armour, friends! I pray you, let  
me see it.

Thanks, fortune, yet, that, after all my crosses,  
Thou givest me somewhat to repair myself;

And though it was mine own, part of my  
heritage.

Which my dead father did bequeath to me,  
With this strict charge, even as he left his life,

'Keep it, my Pericles; it hath been a shield  
'Twixt me and death;'—and pointed to this

brace:—

'For that it saved me, keep it; in like  
necessity—

The which the gods protect thee from!—may  
defend thee.

It kept where I kept, I so dearly loved it;  
Till the rough seas, that spare not any man,

Took it in rage, though calm'd have given't  
again:

I thank thee for't: my shipwreck now's no ill,  
Since I have here my father's gift in's will.

*First Fish.* What mean you, sir?

*Per.* To beg of you, kind friends, this coat  
of worth,

For it was sometime target to a king;  
I know it by this mark. He loved me dearly.

And for his sake I wish the having of it;  
And that you'd guide me to your sovereign's

court.

Where with it I may appear a gentleman;  
And if that ever my low fortune's better,

I'll pay your bounties; till then rest your  
debtor.

*First Fish.* Why, wilt thou tourney for the  
lady?



*Per.* I'll show the virtue I have borne in arms.

*First Fish.* Why, do 'e take it, and the gods give thee good on't!

*Sec. Fish.* Ay, but hark you, my friend; 'twas we that made up this garment through the rough seams of the waters; there are certain condolements, certain vails. I hope, sir, if you thrive, you'll remember from whence you had it.

*Per.* Believe 't, I will.

By your furtherance I am clothed in steel; 160  
And, spite of all the rapture of the sea,  
This jewel holds his building on my arm:  
Unto thy vaine I will mount myself  
Upon a courser, whose delightful steps  
Shall make the gazer joy to see him tread.  
Only, my friend, I yet am unprovided  
Of a pair of breeches.

*Sec. Fish.* We'll sure provide: thou shalt have my best gown to make thee a pair; and I'll bring thee to the court myself. 170

*Per.* Then honour be but a goal to my will,  
This day I'll rise, or else add ill to ill. [Exit.

SCENE II. *The same.* A public way or platform leading to the lists. A pavilion by the side of it for the reception of the King, Princess, Lords, &c.

*Enter SIMONIDES, THAISIA, Lords, and Attendants.*

*Sim.* Are the knights ready to begin the triumph?

*First Lord.* They are, my liege; And stay your coming to present themselves.

*Sim.* Return them, we are ready; and our daughter.

In honour of whose birth these triumphs are,  
Sits here, like beauty's child, whom nature gat  
For men to see, and seeing wonder at.

[Exit a Lord.  
*Thai.* It pleaseth you, my royal father, to express

My commendations great, whose merit's less.

*Sim.* It's fitt should be so: for princes are A model, which heaven makes like to itself: 11  
As jewels lose their glory if neglected,  
So princes their renowns if not respected.

*Thai.* Now your honour, daughter, to explain  
The labour of each knight in his device.

*Thai.* Which, to preserve mine honour, I'll perform.

*Enter a Knight; he passes over, and his Squire presents his shield to the Princess.*

*Sim.* Who is the first that doth prefer himself?

*Thai.* A knight of Sparta, my renowned father;

And the device he bears upon his shield  
Is a black Ethiopian reaching at the sun: 20

The word, 'Lux tua vita mihi.'

*Sim.* He loves you well that holds his life of you.

[The second knight enters.  
Who is the second that presents himself?

*Thai.* A prince of Macedon, my royal father; And the device he bears upon his shield  
Is an arm'd knight that's conquer'd by a lady;  
The motto thus, in Spanish, 'Fin por defensa que por fuerza.'

[The third knight passes over.

*Sim.* And what's the third?  
*Thai.* The third of Antioch;

And his device, a wreath of chivalry;  
The word, 'Me pompas proverti spes.' 30

[The fourth knight passes over.

*Sim.* What is the fourth?  
*Thai.* A burning torch that's turned upside down;

The word, 'Quod me alit, me extinguit.'

*Sim.* Which shows that beauty hath his power and will,  
Which can as well inflame as it can kill.

[The fifth knight passes over.

*Thai.* The fifth, an hand environed with clouds,  
Holding out gold that's by the touchstone tried;

The motto thus, 'Sic spectanda fides.'

[The sixth knight, Pericles, passes over.  
*Sim.* And what's

The sixth and last, the which the knight himself 40

With such a graceful courtesy deliver'd?

*Thai.* He seems to be a stranger; but his present is

A wither'd branch, that's only green at top;  
The motto, 'In hac spe vivo.'

*Sim.* A pretty moral;  
From the dejected state wherein he is,  
He hopes by you his fortunes yet may flourish.

*First Lord.* He had need mean better than his outward show

Can any way speak in his just commend;  
For by his rusty outside he appears 50

To have practised more the whipsnook than the lance.

*Sec. Lord.* He well may be a stranger, for he comes

To an honour'd triumph strangely.

*Third Lord.* And on set purpose let amour rust

Until this day, to scour it in the dust.

*Sim.* Opinion's but a fool, that unless it scan

The outward habit by the inward man,  
But stay, the knights are coming: we will withdraw

Into the gallery. [Exit.  
[Great shouts within, and all cry, 'The mean knight!']

SCENE III. *The same.* A hall of state; a banquet prepared.

*Enter SIMONIDES, THAISIA, Lords, Attendants, and Knights, from within.*

*Sim.* Knights,

To say you're welcome were superfluous;  
Tapers upon the velvet of your seats

As in a title-page, your names are set;  
We're more than you stand on, and more than you sit in at.

Prepare for mirth, for mirth becomes a feast :  
You are princess and my guests.

*Thai.* But you, my knight and guest ;  
To whom this wreath of victory I give, 10  
And crown you king of this day's happiness.

*Per.* 'Tis more by fortune, lady, than by merit.

*Sim.* Call it by what you will, the day is yours ;

And here, I hope, is none that envies it.  
In framing an artist, art hath thus decreed,  
To make some good, but others to exceed ;  
And you are her labour'd scholar. Come,  
queen o' the feast,—

For, daughter, so you are,—here take your place :

Marshal the rest, as they deserve their grace.

*Knight.* We are honour'd much by good Simonides. 20

*Sim.* Your presence glads our days : honour we love ;

For who hates honour hates the gods above.

*Marshall.* Sir, yonder is your place.

*Per.* Some other is more fit.

*First Knight.* Contend not, sir ; for we are gentlemen

That neither in our hearts nor outward eyes

Envy the great nor do the low despise.

*Per.* You are right courteous knights.

*Sim.* Sit, sir, sit. 30

*Per.* By Jove, I wonder, that is king of thoughts,

These cates resist me, she but thought upon.

*Thai.* By Juno, that is queen of marriage,  
All viands that I eat do seem unsavoury, 35  
Wishing him my meat. Sure, he's a gallant gentleman.

*Sim.* He's but a country gentleman ;  
Has done no more than other knights have done ;

Has broken a staff or so ; so let it pass.

*Thai.* To me he seems like diamond to

*Per.* You king's to me like to my father's picture,  
Which tells me in that glory once he was ;

Had princes sit, like stars, about his throne,  
And he the sun, for them to reverence ; 40

None that beheld him, but, like lesser lights,  
Did veil their crowns to his supremacy ;

Where now his son's like a glow-worm in the night,

The which hath fire in darkness, none in light :

Whereby I see that Time's the king of men,

He's both their parent, and he is their grave,

And gives them what he will, not what they crave.

*Sim.* What are you merry, knights ?

*Knight.* Who can be other in this royal presence !

*Sim.* Here, with a cup that's stored unto the brim,—

As you do love, fill to your mistress' lips,— 50  
We drink this health to you.

*Knight.* We thank your grace.

*Sim.* Yet pause awhile :

You knights do sit too melancholy.

As kings' entertainment in our court

Had not a show might countervail his worth.  
Note it not you, Thaisa !

*Thai.* What is it

To me, my father ?

*Sim.* O attend, my daughter :  
Princes in this should live like gods above, 60  
Who freely give to every one that comes

To honour them :

And princes not doing so are like to gnats,  
Which make a sound, but kill'd are wonder'd at.

Therefore to make his entrance more sweet,  
Here, say we drink this standing-bowl of wine

to him.

*Thai.* Alas, my father, it befits not me  
Unto a stranger knight to be so bold :

He may my proffer take for an offence,  
Since men take women's gifts for impudence.

*Sim.* How ! 70

Do as I bid you, or you'll move me else.

*Thai.* [Aside] Now, by the gods, he could  
not please me better.

*Sim.* And furthermore tell him, we desire  
to know of him,

Of whence he is, his name and parentage.

*Thai.* The king my father, sir, has drunk to you.

*Per.* I thank him.

*Thai.* Wishing it so much blood unto your life.

*Per.* I thank both him and you, and pledge him freely.

*Thai.* And further he desires to know of you,

Of whence you are, your name and parentage.

*Per.* A gentleman of Tyre ; my name, Pericles ; 80

My education been in arts and arms ;  
Who, looking for adventures in the world,

Was by the rough seas raft of ships and men,  
And after shipwreck driven upon this shore.

*Thai.* He thanks your grace ; names himself Pericles,

A gentleman of Tyre,  
Who only by misfortune of the seas

Bereft of ships and men, cast on this shore.

*Sim.* Now, by the gods, I pity his misfortune, 90

And will awake him from his melancholy.

Come, gentlemen, we sit too long on trifles,  
And waste the time, which looks for other revels.

Even in your armour, as you are address'd,  
Will very well become a soldier's dance.

I will not have excuse, with saying this  
Loud music is too harsh for ladies' heads,

Since they love men in arms as well as beds.

[The Knights dance.]

So, this was well ask'd, 'twas so well perform'd. 100

Come, sir ;  
Here is a lady that wants breathing too :

And I have heard, you knights of Tyre  
Are excellent in making ladies trip :

And that their measures are as excellent.

*Per.* In those that practice them, they are my lord.

*Sim.* O, that's as much as you would be desired

Of your fair courtesy.

[*The Knights and Ladies dance.*

Unclasp, unclasp :

Thanks, gentlemen, to all ; all have done well,  
[*To Per.*] But you the best. Pages and lights,  
to conduct

These knights unto their several lodgings ! [

*Per.*] Yours, sir, 110

We have given order to be next our own.

*Per.* I am at your grace's pleasure.

*Sis.* Princes, it is too late to talk of love ;

And that's the mark I know you level at :

Therefore each one betake him to his rest ;

To-morrow all for speeding do their best.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV. *Tyre. A room in the Governor's house.*

*Enter HELICANUS and ESCANES.*

*Hel.* No, Escanes, know this of me,  
Antiochus from incest lived not free :  
For which, the most high gods not minding  
longer

To withhold the vengeance that they had in store,  
Due to this heinous capital offence.

Even in the height and pride of all his glory,  
When he was seated in a chariot

Of an inestimable value, and his daughter with  
him,

A fire from heaven came and shrivell'd up  
Their bodies, even to loathing ; for they so  
stunk,

That all those eyes adored them ere their fall.  
Scorn now their hand should give them burial.

*Escan.* 'Twas very strange.

*Hel.* And yet but justice ; for though  
This king were great, his greatness was no  
guard

To bar heaven's shaft, but sin had his reward.

*Escan.* 'Tis very true.

*Enter two or three Lords.*

*First Lord.* See, not a man in private  
conference

Or council has respect with him but he.

*Sec. Lord.* It shall no longer grieve without  
reproof.

*Third Lord.* And cursed be he that will not  
second it.

*First Lord.* Follow me, then. Lord Helicane, a word.

*Hel.* With me ! and welcome : happy day,  
my lords.

*First Lord.* Know that our griefs are risen  
to the top.

And now at length they overflow their banks.

*Hel.* Your griefs ! for what ? wrong not your  
prince you love.

*First Lord.* Wrong not yourself, then,  
noble Helicane ;

But if the prince do live, let us salute him,  
Or know what ground's made happy by his  
breath.

If in the world he live, we'll seek him out ;  
If in his grave he rest, we'll find him there ; so

And he resolved he lives to govern us,  
Or dead, give's cause to mourn his funeral,

And leave us to our free election.

*Sec. Lord.* Whose death indeed 's the  
strongest in our censure :

And knowing this kingdom is without a head,—  
Like goodly buildings left without a roof

Soon fall to ruin,—your noble self,  
That best know how to rule and how to reign,

We thus submit unto,—our sovereign.

*All.* Live, noble Helicane !

*Hel.* For honour's cause, forbear your suf-  
frages :

If that you love Prince Pericles, forbear.  
Take I your wish, I leap into the seas,

Where's hourly trouble for a minute's ease.  
A twelvemonth longer, let me entreat you to

Forbear the absence of your king ;  
If in which time expired, he not return,

I shall with aged patience bear your yoke.  
But if I cannot win you to this love,

Go search like nobles, like noble subjects, 50  
And in your search spend your adventurous  
worth ;

Whom if you find, and win unto return,  
You shall like diamonds sit about his crown.

*First Lord.* To wisdom he's a fool that will  
not yield ;

And since Lord Helicane enjoineth us,  
We with our travels will endeavour us.

*Hel.* Then you love us, we you, and we'll  
clasp hands :

When peers thus knit, a kingdom ever stands.  
[*Exeunt.*

SCENE V. *Pentapolis. A room in the palace.*

*Enter SIMONIDES, reading a letter, at one  
door : the Knights meet him.*

*First Knight.* Good morrow to the good  
Simonides.

*Sis.* Knights, from my daughter this I let  
you know,

That for this twelvemonth she'll not undertake  
A married life.

Her reason to herself is only known,  
Which yet from her by no means can I get.

*Sec. Knight.* May we not get access to her,  
my lord !

*Sis.* Faith, by no means ; she hath so  
strictly tied

Her to her chamber, that 'tis impossible.  
One twelve moons more she'll wear Diana's

livery ; 10

This by the eye of Cynthia hath she vow'd.  
And on her virgin honour will not break it.

*Third Knight.* Loath to bid farewell,  
we take our leave. [

*Sis.* So,  
They are well dispatch'd ; now to my daughter's  
letter :

She tells me here, she'll wed the stranger  
knight,

Or never more to view nor day nor night.  
'Tis well, mistress ; your choice agrees with  
mine :

I like that well ; nay, how absolute she's in't,  
Not minding whether I dislike or no 20

Well, I do commend her choice ;  
And will no longer have it be delay'd.

Soft! here he comes: I must dissemble it.

*Enter PERICLES.*

*Per.* All fortune to the good Simonides!

*Sim.* To you as much, sir! I am beholding to you

For your sweet music this last night: I do

Protest my ears were never better fed

With such delightful pleasing harmony.

*Per.* It is your grace's pleasure to commend;

Not my desert.

*Sim.* Sir, you are music's master.

*Per.* The worst of all her scholars, my good lord.

*Sim.* Let me ask you one thing:

What do you think of my daughter, sir?

*Per.* A most virtuous princess.

*Sim.* And she is fair too, is she not?

*Per.* As a fair day in summer, wondrous fair.

*Sim.* Sir, my daughter thinks very well of you;

Ay, so well, that you must be her master, And she will be your scholar: therefore look to it.

*Per.* I am unworthy for her schoolmaster.

*Sim.* She thinks not so; peruse this writing else.

*Per.* *[Aside]* What's here?

A letter, that she loves the knight of Tyre!

'Tis the king's subtlety to have my life.

O, seek not to entrap me, gracious lord,

A stranger and distressed gentleman,

That never aim'd so high to love your daughter,

But bent all offices to honour her.

*Sim.* Thou hast bewitch'd my daughter, and thou art

A villain.

*Per.* By the gods, I have not:

Never did thought of mine levy offence;

Nor never did my actions yet commence

A deed might gain her love or your displeasure.

*Sim.* Traitor, thou liest.

*Per.* Traitor!

*Sim.* Ay, traitor.

*Per.* Even in his throat—unless it be the king—

That calls me traitor, I return the lie.

*Sim.* *[Aside]* Now, by the gods, I do applaud his courage.

*Per.* My actions are as noble as my thoughts,

That never relish'd of a base descent.

I came unto your court for honour's cause,

And not to be a rebel to her state;

And he that otherwise accounts of me,

This sword shall prove he's honour's enemy.

*Sim.* No!

How comes my daughter, she can witness it.

*Enter THAISIA.*

*Per.* Then, as you are as virtuous as fair,

Rebuke our angry father, if my tongue

Did e'er sollicit, or my hand subscribe

To any article that might love to you.

*Per.* Yes, sir, say if you had, who takes offence at that would make me glad!

*Sim.* Yes, mistress, are you so peremptory?

*[Aside]* I am glad on't with all my heart.—

I'll tame you; I'll bring you in subjection.

Will you, not having my consent,

Bestow your love and your affections

Upon a stranger? *[Aside]* who, for aught I

know,

May be, nor can I think the contrary,

As great in blood as I myself.—

Therefore hear you, mistress; either frame

Your will to mine,—and you, sir, hear you,

Either be ruled by me, or I will make you—

Man and wife:

Nay, come, your hands and lips must seal it

too;

And being join'd, I'll thus your hopes destroy;

And for a further grief,—God give you joy!—

What, are you both pleased?

*Thai.* Yes, if you love me, sir.

*Per.* Even as my life my blood that fosters it.

*Sim.* What, are you both agreed?

*Both.* Yes, if it please your majesty.

*Sim.* It pleaseth me so well, that I will

you wed;

And then with what haste you can get you to bed.

*[Exit.]*

### ACT III.

#### Enter GOWER.

*Gow.* Now sleep yelaked hath the rout;

No din but anores the house about,

Made louder by the o'er-fed breast

Of this most pompous marriage-feast.

The cat, with cyne of burning coal,

Now couches for the mouse's hole;

And crickets sing at the oven's mouth,

E'er the blither for their drouth.

Hymen hath brought the bride to bed,

Where, by the loss of maidenhead,

A babe is moulded. Be attent,

And time that is so briefly spent

With your fine fancies quaintly eche:

What's dumb in show I'll plain with a

#### DUMB SHOW.

*Enter, PERICLES and SIMONIDES, at*

*door, with Attendants; a Messenger*

*them, kneels, and gives PERICLES a*

*PERICLES shows it SIMONIDES; the*

*kneel to him. Then enter THAISIA*

*child, with LYCHORIDA a nurse. The*

*shows her the letter; she rejoices; she*

*PERICLES takes leave of her father, and*

*depart with LYCHORIDA and their*

*attendants. Then exeunt SIMONIDES and*

*rest.*

*By*

*Of Pericles the careful search,*

*By the four opposing coigns*

*Which the world together joins,*

*Is made with all due diligence*

*That home and ail and sigh express*

*Can stand the quest. At last from Tyre,*

*Fame answering the quest*

*To the court of*

Are letters brought, the tenour these:  
 Antiochus and his daughter dead;  
 The men of Tyros on the head  
 Of Helioanus would set on  
 The crown of Tyre, but he will none:  
 The mutiny he there hastes t' oppress;  
 Says to 'em, if King Pericles  
 Come not home in twice six moons,  
 He, obedient to their dooms,  
 Will take the crown. The sum of this,  
 Brought hither to Pentapolis,  
 Y-ravished the regions round,  
 And every one with claps can sound,  
 'Our heir-apparent is a king!  
 Who dream'd, who thought of such a thing?'  
 Brief, he must hence depart to Tyre:  
 His queen with child makes her desire—  
 Which who shall cross!—along to go:  
 Omit we all their dole and woe:  
 Lychorida, her nurse, she takes,  
 And so to sea. Their vessel shakes  
 On Neptune's billow; half the flood  
 Hath their keel cut: but fortune's mood  
 Varies again; the grieved north  
 Disgorges such a tempest forth,  
 That, as a duck for life that dives,  
 So up and down the poor ship drives:  
 The lady shrieks, and well-a-woe  
 Boes fall in travail with her fear:  
 And what ensues in this fell storm  
 Shall for itself itself perform.  
 I will relate, action may  
 Conveniently the rest convey;  
 Which might not what by me is told.  
 In your imagination hold  
 His stage the ship, upon whose deck  
 The sea-tost Pericles appears to speak. [Exit.]

## SCENE I.

Enter PERICLES, on shipboard.

Per. Thou god of this great vast, rebuke  
 these surges,  
 Which wash both heaven and hell; and thou,  
 that hast  
 on the winds command, bind them in brass,  
 v'ing call'd them from the deep! O, still  
 y deafening, dreadful thunders; gently  
 quench  
 y nimble, sulphurous flashes! O, how,  
 Lychorida,  
 w does my queen! Thou stormest venom-  
 ously;  
 It thou spit all thyself! The seaman's  
 whistle  
 as a whisper in the ears of death,  
 heard. Lychorida!—Lucina, O  
 vine-st patroness, and midwife gentle  
 those that cry by night, convey thy deity  
 board our dancing boat; make swift the  
 pangs  
 my queen's travails!

Enter LYCHORIDA, with an Infant.

Now, Lychorida!  
 Here is a thing too young for such a  
 place.  
 If it had conceit, would die, as I

Am like to do: take in your arms this piece  
 Of your dead queen.

Per. How, how, Lychorida!

Lyc. Patience, good sir; do not assist the  
 storm.

Here's all that is left living of your queen,  
 A little daughter; for the sake of it,  
 Be manly, and take comfort.

Per. O you gods!

Why do you make us love your goodly gifts,  
 And snatch them straight away! We have  
 below

Recall not what we give, and therein may  
 Use honour with you.

Lyc. Patience, good sir,  
 Even for this charge.

Per. Now, mild may be thy life!  
 For a more blustrous birth had never babe:  
 Quiet and gentle thy conditions! for  
 Thou art the rudest welcome to this world  
 That ever was prince's child. Happy what  
 follows!

Thou hast as chiding a nativity  
 As fire, air, water, earth, and heaven can make,  
 To herald thee from the womb: even at the first  
 Thy loss is more than can thy portage quit,  
 With all thou canst find here. Now, the good  
 gods

Throw their best eyes upon't!

Enter two Sailors.

First Sail. What courage, sir! God save  
 you!

Per. Courage enough: I do not fear the  
 flaw;

It hath done to me the worst. Yet, for the  
 love

Of this poor infant, this fresh-new sea-farer,  
 I would it would be quiet.

First Sail. Slack the bolins there! Thou  
 wilt not, wilt thou! Blow, and split thyself.

Sec. Sail. But sea-room, an the brine and  
 cloudy billow kiss the moon, I care not.

First Sail. Sir, your queen must overboard:  
 the sea works high, the wind is loud, and will  
 not lie till the ship be cleared of the dead.

Per. That's your superstition.

First Sail. Pardon us, sir; with us at sea it  
 hath been still observed; and we are strong in  
 custom. Therefore briefly yield her; for she  
 must overboard straight.

Per. As you think meet. Most wretched  
 queen!

Lyc. Here she lies, sir.

Per. A terrible childbed hast thou had, my  
 dear;

No light, no fire: the unfriendly elements  
 Forgot thee utterly; nor have I time

To give thee bellow'd to thy grave, but straight  
 Must cast thee, scarcely coffin'd, in the oars;

Where, for a monument upon thy bones,  
 And o'er-remaining lamps, the belching whale

And humming water must o'erwhelm thy  
 corpse.

Lying with simple shells. O Lychorida,  
 Bid Nestor bring me spices, ink and paper.

My casket and my jewels; and bid Alexander  
 Bring me the main officer: lay the babe

Upon the pillow : his thee, whiles I say 60  
A priestly farewell to her : suddenly, woman.

[Exit *Lychorida*.]

*Sec. Sail.* Sir, we have a chest beneath the  
hatches, caulked and bitumed ready.

*Per.* I thank thee. Mariner, say what coast  
is this!

*Sec. Sail.* We are near Tarsus.

*Per.* Thither, gentle mariner.

Alter thy course for Tyre. When canst thou  
reach it?

*Sec. Sail.* By break of day, if the wind cease.

*Per.* O, make for Tarsus!

There will I visit Cleon, for the babe 70

Cannot hold out to Tyros : there I'll leave it

At careful nursing. Go thy ways, good mariner :

I'll bring the body presently. [Exit.

SCENE II. *Ephesus. A room in  
Cerimon's house.*

Enter CERIMON, with a Servant, and some  
Persons who have been shipwrecked.

*Cer.* Philemon, ho!

Enter PHILEMON.

*Phil.* Doth my lord call?

*Cer.* Get fire and meat for these poor men :  
'T has been a turbulent and stormy night.

*Serv.* I have been in many ; but such a  
night as this,

Till now, I ne'er endured.

*Cer.* Your master will be dead ere you  
return ;

There's nothing can be minister'd to nature  
That can recover him. [To *Philemon*] Give

this to the 'pothecary,  
And tell me how it works.

[Exit all but *Cerimon*.]

Enter two Gentlemen.

*First Gent.* Good morrow. 10

*Sec. Gent.* Good morrow to your lordship.

*Cer.* Gentlemen,

Why do you stir so early?

*First Gent.* Sir,

Our lodgings, standing bleak upon the sea,

Shook as the earth did quake ;

The very principals did seem to rend.

And all-to topple : pure surprise and fear

Made me to quit the house.

*Sec. Gent.* That is the cause we trouble you  
so early :

'Tis not our husbandry.

*Cer.* O, you say well. 20

*First Gent.* But I much marvel that your  
lordship, having

Rich fire about you, should at these early hours

Shake off the golden slumber of repose.

'Tis most strange,

Nature should be so conversant with pain,

Being thereto not compell'd.

*Cer.* I hold it ever,

Virtue and cunning were endowments greater

Than wealth and riches : careless heirs

May the two latter darken and expend ;

But *industry* attends the former.

30 Making a god. The known, I ever

Have studied physic, through which secret art,  
By turning o'er authorities, I have.

Together with my practice, made familiar

To me and to my aid the blest infusions

That dwell in vegetables, in metals, stones ;

And I can speak of the disturbance

That nature works, and of her cures ; which

doth give me

A more content in course of true delight

Than to be thirsty after t...ing honour, 40

Or tie my treasure up in silken bags

To please the fool and death.

*Sec. Gent.* Your honour has through Ephesus

pour'd forth

Your charity, and hundreds call themselves

Your creatures, who by you have been restored :

And not your knowledge, your personal pain,

but even

Your purse, still open, hath built Lord Cerimon

Such strong renown as time shall ne'er decay.

Enter two or three Servants with a chest.

*First Serv.* So ; lift there.

*Cer.* What is that?

*First Serv.* Sir, even now

Did the sea toss upon our shore this chest : 50

'Tis of some wreck.

*Cer.* Set't down, let's look upon't.

*Sec. Gent.* 'Tis like a coffin, sir.

*Cer.* Whate'er it be,

'Tis wondrous heavy. Wrench it open straight :

If the sea's stomach be o'ercharged with gold,

'Tis a good constraint of fortune it belches

upon us.

*Sec. Gent.* 'Tis so, my lord.

*Cer.* How close 'tis caulk'd and bitumed!

Did the sea cast it up?

*First Serv.* I never saw so huge a billow, sir,

As toss'd it upon shore.

*Cer.* Wrench it open ;

Soft! it smells most sweetly in my sense. 60

*Sec. Gent.* A delicate odour.

*Cer.* As ever hit my nostril. So, up with it.

O you most potent gods! what's here! a corpse!

*First Gent.* Most strange!

*Cer.* Shrouded in cloth of state ; balm'd and

entreasured

With full bags of spices! A passport too!

Apollo, perfect me in the characters!

[Reads from a scroll.]

'Here I give to understand,

If e'er this coffin drive a-land,

I, King Pericles, have lost 70

This queen, worth all our mundane cost.

Who finds her, give her burying ;

She was the daughter of a king ;

Besides this treasure for a fee,

The gods requite his charity!

If thou livest, Pericles, thou hast a heart

That even cracks for woe! This chanced to-

night.

*Sec. Gent.* Most likely, sir.

*Cer.* Nay, certainly to-night ;

For look how fresh she looks! They were too

rough

That threw her in the sea. Make a fire within

Fetch hither all my boxes in my closet. 80

[Exit all Servants.]

Death may usurp on nature many hours,  
And yet the fire of life kindle again  
The oppress'd spirits. 'Tis heard of an Egyptian  
That had nine hours lien dead,  
Who was by good appliance recovered.

*Re-enter a Servant, with boxes, napkins,  
and fire.*

Well said, well said; the fire and cloths.  
The rough and woeful music that we have,  
(cause it to sound, beseech you.  
The viol once more: how thou stir'st, thou  
block!

The music there!—I pray you, give her air.  
Gentlemen,  
This queen will live: nature awakes; a warmth  
Breathes out of her: she hath not been en-  
tranced.

Above five hours: see how she gins to blow  
Into life's flower again!

*First Gent.* The heavens,  
Through you, increase our wonder and set up  
Your fame for ever.

*Cer.* She is alive; behold,  
Her eyelids, cases to those heavenly jewels  
Which Pericles hath lost, 100  
Begin to part their fringes of bright gold;  
The diamonds of a most praised water  
Do appear, to make the world twice rich. Live,  
And make us weep to hear your fate, fair  
creature,  
Rare as you seem to be. [*She moves.*

*That.* O dear Diann,  
Where am I? Where's my lord! What world  
is this!

*Sec. Gent.* Is not this strange?  
*First Gent.* Most rare.

*Cer.* Hush, my gentle neighbours!  
Lend me your hands; to the next chamber  
bear her.

(Get linen; now this matter must be look'd to,  
For her relapse is mortal. Come, come; 110  
And Æsculapius guide us!

... [*Exeunt, carrying her away.*

SCENE III. *Tarsus. A room in Cleon's  
house.*

*Enter PERICLES, CLEON, DIONYZA, and  
LYCHORIDA with MARINA in her arms.*

*Per.* Most honour'd Cleon, I must needs be  
gone;

My twelve months are expired, and Tyrus  
stands

In a litigious peace. You, and your lady,  
Take from my heart all thankfulness! The  
gods

Make up the rest upon you!

*Cle.* Your shafts of fortune, though they  
hurt you mortally,

Yet glance full wanderingly on us.  
*Dion.* O your sweet queen!

That the strict fates had pleased you had  
brought her hither,

To have blest mine eyes with her!  
*Per.* We cannot but obey

The powers above us: Could I rage and roar  
As doth the sea she lies in, yet the end 11

Must be as 'tis. My gentle babe Marina, whom,  
For she was born at sea, I have named so, here  
I charge your charity withal, leaving her  
The infant of your care; beseeching you  
To give her princely training, that she may be  
Manner'd as she is born.

*Cle.* Fear not, my lord, but think  
Your grace, that fed my country with your  
corn,

For which the people's prayers still fall upon  
you,

Must in your child be thought on. If neg-  
lection 120

Should therein make me vile, the common body,  
By you relieved, would force me to my duty:

But if to that my nature need a spur,  
The gods revenge it upon me and mine,  
To the end of generation!

*Per.* I believe you;  
Your honour and your goodness teach me to 't,

Without your vows. Till she be married,  
madam,

So I take my leave. 30  
Good madam, make me blessed in your care  
In bringing up my child.

*Dion.* I have one myself,  
Who shall not be more dear to my respect  
Than yours, my lord.

*Per.* Madam, my thanks and prayers.  
*Cle.* We'll bring your grace e'en to the edge  
o' the shore,

Then give you up to the mask'd Neptune and  
The gentlest winds of heaven.

*Per.* I will embrace  
Your offer. Come, dearest madam. O, no  
tears,

Lychorida, no tears:  
Look to your little mistress, on whose grace 40  
You may depend hereafter. Come, my lord.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV. *Ephesus. A room in Cerimon's  
house.*

*Enter CERIMON and THAIRA.*

*Cer.* Madam, this letter, and some certain  
jewels,

Lay with you in your coffer: which are now  
At your command. Know you the character?

*That.* It is my lord's.

That I was shipp'd at sea, I well remember,  
Even on my eaning time; but whether there  
Deliver'd, by the holy gods,

I cannot rightly say. But since King Pericles,  
My wedded lord, I ne'er shall see again,

A vestal livery will I take me to, 10  
And never more have joy.

*Cer.* Madam, if this you purpose as ye speak,  
Diana's temple is not distant far.

Where you may abide till your date expires.  
Moreover, if you please, a niece of mine  
Shall there attend you.

*That.* My recompense is thanks, that's all.  
Yet my good will is great, though the gift  
small.

[*Exeunt.*

## ACT IV.

*Enter GOWER.*

*Gow.* Imagine Pericles arrived at Tyre,  
 Welcomed and settled to his own desire.  
 His woful queen we leave at Ephesus,  
 Unto Diana there a votaress.  
 Now to Marina bend your mind,  
 Whom our fast-growing scene must find  
 At Tarsus, and by Cleon train'd  
 In music, letters; who hath gain'd  
 Of education all the graces,  
 Which makes her both the heart and place :  
 Of general wonder. But, alack,  
 That monster envy, oft the wrack  
 Of earned praise, Marina's life  
 Seeks to take off by treason's knife.  
 And in this kind hath our Cleon  
 One daughter, and a wench full grown,  
 Even ripe for marriage-rite; this maid  
 Hight Philoten : and it is said  
 For certain in our story, she  
 Would ever with Marina be :  
 Be't when she weaved the sleided silk  
 With fingers long, small, white as milk ;  
 Or when she would with sharp needle wound  
 The cambric, which she made more sound  
 By hurting it ; or when to the lute  
 She sung, and made the night-bird mute,  
 That still records with moan ; or when  
 She would with rich and constant pen  
 Vail to her mistress Dian ; still  
 This Philoten contends in skill  
 With absolute Marina : so  
 With the dove of Paphos might the crow  
 Vie feathers white. Marina gets  
 All praises, which are paid as debts,  
 And not as given. This so darks  
 In Philoten all graceful marks,  
 That Cleon's wife, with envy rare,  
 A present murderer does prepare  
 For good Marina, that her daughter  
 Might stand peerless by this slaughter.  
 The sooner her vile thoughts to stead,  
 Lychorida, our nurse, is dead :  
 And cursed Dionyza hath  
 The pregnant instrument of wrath  
 Frest for this blow. The unborn event  
 I do commend to your content :  
 Only I carry winged time  
 Post on the lame feet of my rhyme ;  
 Which never could I so convey,  
 Unless your thoughts went on my way.  
 Dionyza does appear.  
 With Leonine, a murderer.

*[Exit.]*

SCENE I. *Tarsus. An open place near the sea-shore.*

*Enter DIONYZA and LEONINE.*

*Dion.* Thy oath remember ; thou hast sworn to do't ;  
 'Tis but a blow, which never shall be known.  
 Thou canst not do a thing in the world so soon,  
 To yield thee so much profit. Let not con-

Which is but cold, inflaming love ! thy bosom,  
 Inflame too nicely ; nor let pity, which  
 Even women have cast off, melt thee, but be  
 A soldier to thy purpose.

*Leon.* I will do it ; but yet she is a goodly creature.

*Dion.* The fitter, then, the gods should have her. Here she comes weeping for her only mistress' death. Thou art resolved !

*Leon.* I am resolved.

*Enter MARINA, with a basket of flowers.*

*Mar.* No, I will rob Tellus of her weed,  
 To strew thy green with flowers : the yellow,  
 blues,  
 The purple violets, and marigolds,  
 Shall as a carpet hang upon thy grave,  
 While summer-days do last. Ay me ! poor  
 maid,  
 Born in a tempest, when my mother died,  
 This world to me is like a lasting storm,  
 Whirring me from my friends.

*Dion.* How now, Marina ! why do you keep alone !

How chance my daughter is not with you ? Do not  
 Consume your blood with sorrowing : you have  
 A nurse of me. Lord, how your favour's  
 changed

With this unprofitable woe !  
 Come, give me your flowers, ere the sea mar it.  
 Walk with Leonine ; the air is quick there,  
 And it pierces and sharpens the stomach.

*Leonine.* take her by the arm, walk with her.  
*Mar.* No, I pray you ;  
 I'll not bereave you of your servant.

*Dion.* Come, come ;  
 I love the king your father, and yourself,  
 With more than foreign heart. We every day  
 Expect him here : when he shall come and find  
 Our paragon to all reports thus blasted,  
 He will repent the breadth of his great voyage ;  
 Blame both my lord and me, that we have  
 taken

No care to your best courses. Go, I pray you,  
 Walk, and be cheerful once again ; reserve  
 That excellent complexion, which did steal  
 The eyes of young and old. Care not for me ;  
 I can go home alone.

*Mar.* Well, I will go ;  
 But yet I have no desire to it.

*Dion.* Come, come, I know 'tis good for you.

Walk half an hour, Leonine, at the least :  
 Remember what I have said.

*Leon.* I warrant you, madam.  
*Dion.* I'll leave you, my sweet lady, for a  
 while :

Pray, walk softly, do not heat your blood :  
 What ! I must have a care of you.

*Mar.* My thanks, sweet madam.  
*[Exit Dionyza.]*

Is this wind westerly that blows !

*Leon.* South-west.  
*Mar.* When I was born, the wind was north.  
*Leon.* Was't so !



*Mar.* My father, as nurse said, did never fear.

But cried 'Good seamen!' to the sailors, galling  
His kingly hands, haling ropes;  
And, clapping to the mast, endured a sea  
That almost burst the deck.

*Leon.* When was this?

*Mar.* When I was born:

Never was waves nor wind more violent; 60  
And from the ladder-tackle washes off  
A canvas-climber. 'Ha!' says one, 'wilt out!'  
And with a dropping industry they skip  
From stern to stern: the boatswain whistles, and  
The master calls, and trebles their confusion.

*Leon.* Come, say your prayers.

*Mar.* What mean you?

*Leon.* If you require a little space for prayer,  
I grant it: pray; but be not tedious, 69  
For the gods are quick of ear, and I am sworn  
To do my work with haste.

*Mar.* Why will you kill me?

*Leon.* To satisfy my lady.

*Mar.* Why would she have me kill'd?  
Now, as I can remember, by my troth,  
I never did her hurt in all my life:  
I never spake bad word, nor did ill turn  
To any living creature: believe me, la,  
I never kill'd a mouse, nor hurt a fly:  
I trod upon a worm against my will,  
But I wept for it. How have I offended, 80  
Wherein my death might yield her any profit,  
Or my life imply her any danger?

*Leon.* My commission

Is not to reason of the deed, but do it.

*Mar.* You will not do't for all the world, I hope.

You are well favour'd, and your looks foreshow  
You have a gentle heart. I saw you lately,  
When you caught hurt in parting two that  
fought:

Good sooth, it show'd well in you: do so now:  
Your lady seeks my life: come you between, 90  
And save poor me, the weaker.

*Leon.* I am sworn,  
And will dispatch. [He seizes her.]

*Enter Pirates.*

*First Pirate.* Hold, villain!  
[*Leonine runs away.*]

*Sec. Pirate.* A prize! a prize!

*Third Pirate.* Half-part, mates, half-part.  
Come, let's have her aboard suddenly.  
[*Exit Pirates with Marina.*]

*Re-enter LEONINE.*

*Leon.* These roguing thieves serve the great  
pirate Valdes;  
And they have seized Marina. Let her go:  
There's no hope she will return. I'll swear  
she's dead.

And thrown into the sea. But I'll see further:  
Perhaps they will but please themselves upon  
her, 101

Not carry her aboard. If she remain,  
Whom they have ravish'd must by me be slain.  
[*Exit.*]

SCENE II. *Mytilene. A room in a brothel.*

*Enter PANDAR, Bawd, and BOULT.*

*Pand.* Boul!

*Boul.* Sir!

*Pand.* Search the market narrowly; Mytilene is full of gallants. We lost too much money this morn by being too wenchless.

*Bawd.* We were never so much out of creatures. We have but poor throe, and they can do no more than they can do; and they with continual action are even as good as rotten. 9

*Pand.* Therefore let's have fresh ones, whate'er we pay for them. If there be not a conscience to be used in every trade, we shall never prosper.

*Bawd.* Thou sayest true: 'tis not our bringing up of poor bastards,—as, I think, I have brought up some eleven—

*Boul.* Ay, to eleven; and brought them down again. But shall I search the market?

*Bawd.* What else, man! The stuff we have, a strong wind will blow it to pieces, they are so pitifully sodden. 12

*Pand.* Thou sayest true; they're too unwholesome, o' conscience. The poor Transylvanian is dead, that lay with the little haggage.

*Boul.* Ay, she quickly pooped him; she made him roast-meat for worms. But I'll go search the market. [*Exit.*]

*Pand.* Three or four thousand chequins were as pretty a proportion to live quietly, and so give over. 30

*Bawd.* Why to give over, I pray you! is it a shame to get when we are old?

*Pand.* O, our credit comes not in like the commodity, nor the commodity wages not with the danger: therefore, if in our youths we could pick up some pretty estate, 'twere not amiss to keep our door hatch'd. Besides, the sore terms we stand upon with the gods will be strong with us for giving over. 39

*Bawd.* Come, other sorts offend as well as we.

*Pand.* As well as we! ay, and better too; we offend worse. Neither is our profession any trade; it's no calling. But here comes Boul.

*Re-enter BOULT, with the Pirates and MARINA.*

*Boul.* [To Marina] Come your ways. My masters, you say she's a virgin!

*First Pirate.* O, sir, we doubt it not.

*Boul.* Master, I have gone through for this piece, you see: if you like her, so; if not, I have lost my earnest.

*Bawd.* Boul, has she any qualities? 50

*Boul.* She has a good face, speaks well, and has excellent good clothes: there's no further necessity of qualities can make her be refused.

*Bawd.* What's her price, Boul?

*Boul.* I cannot be bated one doit of a thousand pieces.

*Pand.* Well, follow me, my masters, you shall have your money presently. Wife, take her in; instruct her what she has to do; that she may not be raw in her entertainment. 60

[*Exit Pandar and Pirates.*]  
*Bawd.* Boul, take you the marks of her, the colour of her hair, complexion, height, age, with

warrant of her virginity; and cry 'He that will give most shall have her first.' Such a maiden-head were no cheap thing, if men were as they have been. Get this done as I command you.

*Boult.* Performance shall follow. *[Exit.]*

*Mar.* Alack that Leonine was so slack, so slow! He should have struck, not spoke; or that these pirates,

Not enough barbarous, had not o'erboard thrown me 70

For to seek my mother!

*Bawd.* Why lament you, pretty one?

*Mar.* That I am pretty.

*Bawd.* Come, the gods have done their part in you.

*Mar.* I accuse them not.

*Bawd.* You are light into my hands, where you are like to live.

*Mar.* The more my fault

To scape his hands where I was like to die. 80

*Bawd.* Ay, and you shall live in pleasure.

*Mar.* No.

*Bawd.* Yes, indeed shall you, and taste gentlemen of all fashions: you shall fare well; you shall have the difference of all complexions. What! do you stop your ears?

*Mar.* Are you a woman?

*Bawd.* What would you have me be, an I be not a woman! 85

*Mar.* An honest woman, or not a woman.

*Bawd.* Marry, whip thee, goading: I think I shall have something to do with you. Come, you're a young foolish sapling, and must be bowed as I would have you.

*Mar.* The gods defend me!

*Bawd.* If it please the gods to defend you by men, then men must comfort you, men must feed you, men must stir you up. *Boult's* returned.

*Re-enter BOULT.*

Now, sir, hast thou cried her through the market? 90

*Boult.* I have cried her almost to the number of her hairs; I have drawn her picture with my voice.

*Bawd.* And I prithee tell me, how dost thou find the inclination of the people, especially of the younger sort?

*Boult.* Faith, they listened to me as they would have hearkened to their father's testament. There was a Spaniard's mouth so watered, that he went to bed to her very description. 100

*Bawd.* We shall have him here to-morrow with his best ruff on.

*Boult.* To-night, to-night. But, mistress, do you know the French knight that cowers in the house?

*Bawd.* Who, Monsieur Veroles?

*Boult.* Ay, he: he offered to cut a caper at the entertainment; but he made a groan at it, and said he would see her to-morrow.

Vell, well; as for him, he brought hither: here he does but repair it. He will come in our shadow, to scatter the weeds.

*Boult.* Well, if we had of every nation a traveller, we should lodge them with this sign.

*Bawd.* *[To Mar.]* Pray you, come hither awhile. You have fortunes coming upon you. Mark me: you must seem to do that fearfully which you commit willingly, despise profits where you have most gain. To weep that you live as ye do makes pity in your lovers; seldom but that pity begets you a good opinion, and that opinion a mere profit.

*Mar.* I understand you.

*Boult.* O, take her home; mistress, take her home: these blushes of hers must be quenched with some present practice.

*Bawd.* Thou sayest true, 't' faith so they must; for your bride goes to that with shame which is her way to go with warrant. 110

*Boult.* Faith, some do, and some do not. But, mistress, if I have bargained for the joint,—

*Bawd.* Thou mayest cut a morsel off the spit.

*Boult.* I may so.

*Bawd.* Who should deny it? Come, young one, I like the manner of your garments well.

*Boult.* Ay, by my faith, they shall not be changed yet.

*Bawd.* *Boult,* spend thou that in the town: report what a sojourner we have; you'll lose nothing by custom. When nature framed this piece, she meant thee a good turn; therefore say what a paragon she is, and thou hast the harvest out of thine own report.

*Boult.* I warrant you, mistress, thunder shall not so awake the beds of eels as my giving out her beauty stir up the lewdly-inclined. I'll bring home some to-night.

*Bawd.* Come your ways; follow me.

*Mar.* If fires be hot, knives sharp, or waters deep.

Untied I still my virgin knot will keep. 120

Diana, aid my purpose!

*Bawd.* What have we to do with Diana?

Pray you, will you go with us? *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE III. *Tarnus. A room in Olen's house.*

*Enter OLEON and DIONYZA.*

*Dion.* Why, are you foolish! Can it be undone?

*Cle.* O Dionyza, such a piece of slaughter The sun and moon ne'er look'd upon!

*Dion.* I think

You'll turn a child again.

*Cle.* Were I chief lord of all this spacious world,

I'd give it to undo the deed. O lady, Much less in blood than virtue, yet a princess To equal any single crown of the earth If the justice of compare! O villain Leonine! Whom thou hast poison'd too; 130

If thou hadst drunk to him, 't had been a kindness

Becoming well thy fact: what canst thou say When noble Pericles shall demand his child?

*Dion.* That she is dead. Nurses are not the fates.

To foster it, nor ever to preserve.

She died at night; I'll say so. Who can cross it?

Unless you play the pious innocent,  
And for an honest attribute cry out  
'She died by foul play.'

*Cle.* O, go to. Well, well,  
Of all the faults beneath the heavens, the gods  
Do like this worst.

*Dion.* Be one of those that think:  
The petty wrens of Tarsus will fly hence,  
And open this to Pericles. I do shame  
To think of what a noble strain you are,  
And of how coward a spirit.

*Cle.* To such proceeding  
Who ever but his approbation added.  
Though not his prime consent, he did not flow  
From honourable sources.

*Dion.* Be it so, then:  
Yet none does know, but you, how she came  
dead,

Nor none can know, Leonine being gone.  
She did disdain my child, and stood between  
Her and her fortunes: none would look on her,  
But cast their gazes on Marina's face;  
Whilst ours was blurted at and held a malkin  
Not worth the time of day. It pierced me  
thorough;

And though you call my course unnatural,  
You not your child well loving, yet I find  
It greets me as an enterprise of kindness  
Perform'd to your sole daughter.

*Cle.* Heavens forgive it!

*Dion.* And as for Pericles,  
What should he say! We wept after her hearse,  
And yet we mourn: her monument  
Is almost finish'd, and her epitaphs  
In glittering golden characters express  
A general praise to her, and care in us  
At whose expense 'tis done.

*Cle.* Thou art like the harpy,  
Which, to betray, doest, with thine angel's face,  
Seize with thine eagle's talons.

*Dion.* You are like one that superstitiously  
Doth swear to the gods that winter kills the  
flies:

But yet I know you'll do as I advise. [Exit.

## SCENE IV.

*Enter GOWER, before the monument of  
MARINA at Tarsus.*

*Gow.* Thus time we waste, and longest  
leagues make short;

Sail seas in cockles, have an wish but for't;  
Making, to take your imagination,  
From bourn to bourn, region to region.  
By you being pardon'd, we commit no crime  
To use one language in each several clime  
Where our scenes seem to live. I do beseech  
you

To listen of me, who stand 't the gaps to teach  
you,

The stages of our story. Pericles  
Is now again thwarting the wayward seas,  
Attended on by many a lord and knight,  
To see his daughter, all his life's delight.  
Old Escapes, whom Helicanus late  
Advanced in time to great and high estate,

Is left to govern. Bear you it in mind,  
Old Helicanus goes along behind.  
Well-sailing ships and bounteous winds have  
brought

This king to Tarsus,—think his pilot thought;  
So with his steerage shall your thoughts grow  
on,—

To fetch his daughter home, who first is gone.  
Like moles and shadows see them move  
awhile;

Your ears unto your eyes I'll reconcile.

## DUMB SHOW.

*Enter PERICLES, at one door, with all his  
train; CLEON and DIONYZA, at the other.  
CLEON shows PERICLES the tomb; whereat  
PERICLES makes lamentation, puts on sack-  
cloth, and in a mighty passion departs.  
Then exeunt CLEON and DIONYZA.*

See how belief may suffer by foul show!  
This borrow'd passion stands for true old woe;  
And Pericles, in sorrow all devour'd,  
With sighs shot through, and biggest tears  
o'er-shower'd,  
Leaves Tarsus and again embarks. He swears  
Never to wash his face, nor cut his hairs:  
He puts on sackcloth, and to sea. He bears  
A tempest, which his mortal vessel tears,  
And yet he rides it out. Now please you wit  
The epitaph is for Marina writ  
By wick'd Dionyzia.

[Reads the inscription on Marina's  
monument.

'The fairest, sweetest, and best lies here,  
Who wither'd in her spring of year,  
She was of Tyros the king's daughter,  
On whom foul death hath made this slaughter;  
Marina was she call'd; and at her birth,  
Thetis, being proud, swallow'd some part o'  
the earth:

Therefore the earth, fearing to be o'erflow'd,  
Hath Thetis' birth-child on the heavens be-  
stow'd:

Wherefore she does, and swears she'll never  
stint,

Make raging battery upon shores of flint.'

No visor does become black villany  
So well as soft and tender flattery.  
Let Pericles believe his daughter's dead,  
And bear his courses to be ordered  
By Lady Fortune; while our scene must play  
His daughter's woe and heavy well-a-day  
In her unholy service. Patience, then,  
And think you now are all in Mytilene.

[Exit.

SCENE V. Mytilene. A street before the  
brothel.

*Enter, from the brothel, two Gentlemen.*

*First Gent.* Did you ever hear the like?  
*Sec. Gent.* No, nor never shall do in such a  
place as this, she being once gone.

*First Gent.* But to have divinity preached  
there I did you ever dream of such a thing!

*Sec. Gent.* No, no. Come, I did see her

more bawdy-houses: shall's go hear the vestals sing!

*First Gent.* I'll do any thing now that is virtuous; but I am out of the road of rutting for ever. [Exeunt. 10

SCENE VI. *The same. A room in the brothel.*

*Enter Pandar, Bawd, and BOULT.*

*Pand.* Well, I had rather than twice the worth of her she had ne'er come here.

*Bawd.* Fie, fie upon her! she's able to freeze the god Priapus, and undo a whole generation. We must either get her ravished, or be rid of her. When she should do for clients her fitment, and do me the kindness of our profession, she has me her quirks, her reasons, her master reasons, her prayers, her knees; that she would make a puritan of the devil, if he should cheapen a kiss of her. 10

*Boult.* Faith, I must ravish her, or she'll disfigure us of all our cavaliers, and make our swearers priests.

*Pand.* Now, the pox upon her green-sickness for me!

*Bawd.* Faith, there's no way to be rid on't but by the way to the pox. Here comes the Lord Lysimachus disguised.

*Boult.* We should have both lord and lown, if the peevish baggage would but give way to customers. 25

*Enter LYSIMACHUS.*

*Lys.* How now! How a dozen of virginities!

*Bawd.* Now, the gods to bless your honour!

*Boult.* I am glad to see your honour in good health.

*Lys.* You may so; 'tis the better for you that your resorters stand upon sound legs. How now! wholesome iniquity have you that a man may deal withal, and defy the surgeon?

*Bawd.* We have here one, sir, if she would—but there never came her like in Mytilene. 31

*Lys.* If she'd do the deed of darkness, thou wouldst say.

*Bawd.* Your honour knows what 'tis to say well enough.

*Lys.* Well, call forth, call forth.

*Boult.* For flesh and blood, sir, white and red, you shall see a rose; and she were a rose indeed, if she had but—

*Lys.* What, prithee? 40

*Boult.* O, sir, I can be modest.

*Lys.* That dignifies the renown of a bawd, no less than it gives a good report to a number to be chaste. [Exit Boult.]

*Bawd.* Here comes that which grows to the stalk; never plucked yet, I can assure you.

*Re-enter BOULT with MARINA.*

Is she not a fair creature?

*Lys.* Faith, she would serve after a long voyage at sea. Well, there's for you: leave us.

*Bawd.* I beseech your honour, give me leave: a word, and I'll have done presently. 51

*Lys.* I beseech you, do.

*Bawd.* [To Marina] First, I would have you note, this is an honourable man.

*Mar.* I desire to find him so, that I may worthily note him.

*Bawd.* Next, he's the governor of this country, and a man whom I am bound to.

*Mar.* If he govern the country, you are bound to him indeed; but how honourable he is in that, I know not. 61

*Bawd.* Pray you, without any more virginal fencing, will you use him kindly? He will line your apron with gold.

*Mar.* What he will do graciously, I will thankfully receive.

*Lys.* Ha! you done?

*Bawd.* My lord, she's not paced yet: you must take some pains to work her to your manage. Come, we will leave his honour and her together. Go thy ways.

[Exeunt Bawd, Pandar, and Boult.]

*Lys.* Now, pretty one, how long have you been at this trade?

*Mar.* What trade, sir?

*Lys.* Why, I cannot name't but I shall offend.

*Mar.* I cannot be offended with my trade. Please you to name it.

*Lys.* How long have you been of this profession?

*Mar.* Ever since I can remember.

*Lys.* Did you go to't so young? Were you a gamester at five or at seven? 81

*Mar.* Earlier too, sir, if now I be one.

*Lys.* Why, the house you dwell in proclaims you to be a creature of sale.

*Mar.* Do you know this house to be a place of such resort, and will come into't? I hear say you are of honourable parts, and are the governor of this place.

*Lys.* Why, hath your principal made known unto you who I am? 90

*Mar.* Who is my principal?

*Lys.* Why, your herb-woman; she that sets seeds and roots of shame and iniquity. O, you have heard something of my power, and so stand aloof for more serious wooing. But I protest to thee, pretty one, my authority shall not see thee, or else look friendly upon thee. Come, bring me to some private place: come, come.

*Mar.* If you were born to honour, show it now;

If put upon you, make the judgement good 100

That thought you worthy of it.

*Lys.* How's this! how's this! Some more: be sage.

*Mar.* For me, That am a maid, though most ungente fortune

Have placed me in this sty, where, since I

came,

Diseases have been sold dearer than physic,

O, that the gods

Would set me free from this unhallow'd place,

Though they did change me to the meanest

bird

That flies i' the purer air!

*Lys.* I did not think

Thou couldst have spoke so well; ne'er dream'd

thou couldst. 110

Had I thought hither a corrupted mind,

Thy speech had alter'd it. Hold, here's gold for thee:

Persever in that clear way thou goest,  
And the gods strengthen thee!

*Mar.* The good gods preserve you!

*Lys.* For me, be you thoughten  
That I came with no ill intent; for to me  
The very doors and windows savour vilely.  
Fare thee well. Thou art a piece of virtue, and  
I doubt not but thy training hath been noble.  
Hold, here's more gold for thee. 120

A curse upon him, die he like a thief,  
That robs thee of thy goodness! If thou dost  
Hear from me, it shall be for thy good.

*Re-enter BOULT.*

*Boult.* I beseech your honour, one piece for me.

*Lys.* Avaunt, thou damned door-keeper!  
Your house, but for this virgin that doth propit,  
Would sink and overwhelm you. Away! [*Exit.*]

*Boult.* How's this? We must take another  
course with you. If your peevish chastity,  
which is not worth a breakfast in the cheapest  
country under the cope, shall undo a whole  
household, let me be gelded like a spaniel.  
Come your ways.

*Mar.* Whither would you have me?

*Boult.* I must have your maidenhead taken  
off, or the common hangman shall execute it.  
Come your ways. We'll have no more gentle-  
men driven away. Come your ways, I say.

*Re-enter Bawd.*

*Bawd.* How now! what's the matter? 140

*Boult.* Worse and worse, mistress; she has  
here spoken holy words to the Lord Lysimachus.

*Bawd.* O abominable!

*Boult.* She makes our profession as it were  
to stink afore the face of the gods.

*Bawd.* Marry, hang her up for ever!

*Boult.* The nobleman would have dealt with  
her like a nobleman, and she sent him away as  
cold as a snowball; saying his prayers too. 149

*Bawd.* Boult, take her away; use her at thy  
pleasure: crack the glass of her virginity, and  
make the rest malleable.

*Boult.* An if she were a thornier piece of  
ground than she is, she shall be ploughed.

*Mar.* Hark, hark, you gods!

*Bawd.* She conjures away with her! Would  
she had never come within my doors! Marry,  
hang you! She's born to undo us. Will you  
not go the way of women-kind? Marry, come  
up, my dish of chastity with rosemary and  
bays! [*Exit.*]

*Boult.* Come, mistress; come your ways  
with me.

*Mar.* Whither wilt thou have me?

*Boult.* To take from you the jewel you  
hold so dear.

*Mar.* Frithee, tell me one thing first.

*Boult.* Come now, your one thing.

*Mar.* What canst thou wish thine enemy  
to be?

*Boult.* Why, I could wish him to be my  
master, or rather, my mistress. 170

*Mar.* Neither of these are so bad as thou  
art.

Since they do better thee in their command,  
Thou hold'st a place, for which the pains't  
fiend

Of hell would not in reputation change:

Thou art the damned doorkeeper to every

Colstrael that comes inquiring for his Tib;

To the choleric fisting of every rogue

Thy ear is liable; thy food is such

As hath been belch'd on by infected lungs. 179

*Boult.* What would you have me do? go to  
the wars, would you? where a man may serve  
seven years for the loss of a leg, and have not  
money enough in the end to buy him a wooden  
one!

*Mar.* Do any thing but this thou dost.

Empty

Old receptacles, or common shores, of filth;

Serve by indenture to the common hangman:

Any of these ways are yet better than this;

For what thou professes, a haboon, could he  
speak,

Would own a name too dear. O, that the gods

Would safely deliver me from this place! 181

Here, here's gold for thee.

If that thy master would gain by me,

Proclaim that I can sing, weave, sew, and

dance,

With other virtues, which I'll keep from boast;

And I will undertake all these to teach.

I doubt not but this populous city will

Yield many scholars.

*Boult.* But can you teach all this you speak

of?

*Mar.* Prove that I cannot, take me home

again. 182

And prostitute me to the basest groom

That doth frequent your house.

*Boult.* Well, I will see what I can do for

thee: if I can place thee, I will.

*Mar.* But amongst honest women.

*Boult.* Faith, my acquaintance lies little

amongst them. But since my master and mis-

tress have bought you, there's no going but by

their consent: therefore I will make them ac-

quainted with your purpose, and I doubt not

but I shall find them tractable enough. Come,

I'll do for thee what I can; come your ways. [*Exeunt.*]

ACT V.

*Enter GOWER.*

*Gow.* Marina thus the brothel 'scopes, and  
chances

Into an honest house, our story says.

She sings like one immortal, and she dances

As goddess-like to her admired lays;

Deep clerks she dumbs; and with her needle

composes

Nature's own shape, of bud, bird, branch, or

berry,

That even her art sisters the natural roses;

Her inkle, silk, twin with the rubied cherry:

That pupils lacks she none of noble-mens, 9

Who pour their bounty on her; and her gain:

She gives the cursed bawd. Here we her place:

And to her father turn our thoughts again,  
Where we left him, on the sea. We there him  
lost;

Whence, driven before the winds, he is arrived  
Here where his daughter dwells; and on this  
coast.

Suppose him now at anchor. The city strived  
God Neptune's annual feast to keep: from  
whence

Lysimachus our Tyrian ship espies,  
His banners sable, trimm'd with rich expense;  
And to him in his barge with fervour hies. 20  
In your supposing once more put your sight  
Of heavy Pericles; think this his bark:  
Where what is done in action, more, if might,  
Shall be discover'd; please you, sit and hark.

[Exit.

SCENE I. On board Pericles ship, off Mytilene.  
A close pavilion on deck, with a curtain  
before it; Pericles within it, reclined on  
a couch. A barge lying beside the Tyrian  
vessel.

Enter two Sailors, one belonging to the Tyrian  
vessel, the other to the barge; to them HELI-  
CANUS.

Tyr. Sail. [To the Sailor of Mytilene]  
Where is lord Helicanus? he can resolve  
you.

O, here he is.  
Sir, there's a barge put off from Mytilene,  
And in it is Lysimachus the governor,  
Who craves to come aboard. What is your  
will?

Hel. That he have his. Call up some gentle-  
men.

Tyr. Sail. Ho, gentlemen! my lord calls.

Enter two or three Gentlemen.

First Gent. Doth your lordship call?  
Hel. Gentlemen, there's some of worth  
would come aboard;

I pray ye, greet them fairly. 10  
[The Gentlemen and the two Sailors descend,  
and go on board the barge.]

Enter, from thence, LYSIMACHUS and Lords;  
with the Gentlemen and the two Sailors.

Tyr. Sail. Sir,  
This is the man that can, in aught you would,  
Resolve you.

Lys. Hail, reverend sir! the gods preserve  
you!

Hel. And you, sir, to outlive the age I am,  
And die as I would do.

Lys. You wish me well.  
Being, on shore, honouring of Neptune's

I made to it, to know of whence you are.

Hel. First, what is your place? 20

Lys. I am the governor of this place you lie  
before.

Hel. Sir,  
Our vessel is of Tyre, in it she king;  
A man, who for this three months hath not

seen any one, nor taken sustenance

But to prorogue his grief.

Lys. Upon what ground is his distempera-  
ture?

Hel. 'Twould be too tedious to repeat;  
But the main grief springs from the loss  
Of a beloved daughter and a wife. 3

Lys. May we not see 'him?

Hel. You may;  
But bootless is your sight: he will not speak  
To any.

Lys. Yet let me obtain my wish.

Hel. Behold him. [Pericles discovered.]

This was a goodly person,  
Till the disaster that, one mortal night,  
Drove him to this.

Lys. Sir king, all hail! the gods preserv-  
you!

Hail, royal sir!

Hel. It is in vain; he will not speak to you.

First Lord. Sir,  
We have a maid in Mytilene, I durst wager,  
Would win some words of him.

Lys. 'Tis well bethought

She questionless with her sweet harmony  
And other choson attractions, would allure,  
And make a battery through his deafen'd parts  
Which now are midway stopp'd;  
She is all happy as the fairest of all,  
And, with her fellow maids, is now upon 5  
The leafy shelter that abuts against  
The island's side.

[Whispers a Lord, who goes off in the  
barge of Lysimachus.]

Hel. Sure, all's effectless; yet nothing we'll  
omit

That bears recovery's name. But, since you  
kindness

We have stretch'd thus far, let us beseech you  
That for our gold we may provision have,  
Wherein we are not destitute for want,  
But weary for the staleness.

Lys. O, sir, a courtesy  
Which if we should deny, the most just gods  
For every graft would send a caterpillar, 6  
And so afflict our province. Yet once more  
Let me entreat to know at large the cause  
Of your king's sorrow.

Hel. Sit, sir, I will recount it to you  
But, see, I am prevented.

Re-enter, from the barge, Lord, with MARINA  
and a young Lady.

Lys. O, here is  
The lady that I sent for. Welcome, fair one!  
Is't not a goodly presence?

Hel. She's a gallant lady

Lys. She's such a one, that, were I well  
assured

Came of a gentle kind and noble stock,  
I'd wish no better choice, and think me rare! 6  
wed.

Fair one, all goodness that consists in bounty  
Expect even here, where is a kindly patient:  
If that thy prosperous and artificial feat  
Can draw him but to answer thee in sight,  
Thy sacred physic shall receive such pay  
As thy desires can wish.

Mar. Sir, I will see

My utmost skill in his recovery,

Provided  
That none but I and my companion maid  
Be suffer'd to come near him.

*Lys.* Come, let us leave her;  
And the gods make her prosperous! 80

*[Marina sings.]*

*Lys.* Mark'd he your music!

*Mar.* No, nor look'd on us.

*Lys.* See, she will speak to him.

*Mar.* Hail, sir! my lord, lend ear.

*Per.* Hum, ha!

*Mar.* I am a maid.

My lord, that ne'er before invited eyes,  
But have been gaz'd on like a comet: she

speaks,  
My lord, that, may be, hath endured a grief  
Might equal yours, if both were justly weigh'd.  
Though wayward fortune did malign my state,  
My derivation was from ancestors 92

Bound me in servitude. *[Aside]* I will desist;  
But there is something glows upon my cheek,  
And whispers in mine ear 'Go not till he speak.'

*Per.* My fortunes—parentage—good parent-  
age—  
To equal mine!—was it not thus? what say  
you?

*Mar.* I said, my lord, if you did know my  
parentage, 100

You would not do me violence.

*Per.* I do think so. Pray you, turn your  
eyes upon me.

You are like something that—What country-  
woman?

Here of these shores?

*Mar.* No, nor of any shores:  
Yet I was mortally brought forth, and am  
No other than I appear.

*Per.* I am great with woe, and shall deliver  
weeping.

My dearest wife was like this maid, and such  
a one

My daughter might have been: my queen's  
square brows;

Her stature to an inch; as wand-like straight;  
As silver-voiced; her eyes as jewel-like 111

And aged as richly; in pace another Juno;  
Who starves the ears she feeds, and makes them  
hungry,

The more she gives them speech. Where do  
you live?

*Mar.* Where I am but a stranger: from the  
deck

You may discern the place.

*Per.* Where were you bred?  
And how achieved you these endowments,  
which

You make more rich to owe?

*Mar.* If I should tell my history, it would  
seem

Like lies disdain'd in the reporting.

*Per.* Princes, speak: 120  
Falseness cannot come from thee; for thou  
look'st

Modest as Justice, and thou seem'st a palace

For the crown'd Truth to dwell in: I will  
believe thee,

And make my senses credit thy relation  
To points that seem impossible; for thou look'st  
Like one I loved indeed. What were thy  
friends?

Didst thou not say, when I did push thee  
back—

Which was when I perceived thee—that thou  
camest

From good descending?

*Mar.* So indeed I did.

*Per.* Report thy parentage. I think thou  
said'st 130

Thou hadst been toss'd from wrong to injury,  
And that thou thought'st thy griefs might

equal mine,

If both were open'd.

*Mar.* Some such thing  
I said, and said no more but what my thoughts  
Did warrant me was likely,

*Per.* Tell thy story;  
If thine consider'd prove the thousandth part  
Of my endurance, thou art a man, and I

Have suffer'd like a girl: yet thou dost look  
Like Patience gazing on kings' graves, and  
smiling

Extremity out of act. What were thy friends?  
How lost thou them? Thy name, my most  
kind virgin! 142

Recount, I do beseech thee: come, sit by me.

*Mar.* My name is Marina.

*Per.* O, I am mock'd,  
And thou by some incensed god sent hither  
To make the world to laugh at me.

*Mar.* Patience, good sir,  
Or here I'll cease.

*Per.* Nay, I'll be patient.  
Thou little know'st how thou dost startle me,  
To call thyself Marina.

*Mar.* The name  
Was given me by one that had some power,  
My father, and a king.

*Per.* How! a king's daughter? 155  
And call'd Marina?

*Mar.* You said you would believe me—  
But, not to be a troubler of your peace,  
I will end here.

*Per.* But are you flesh and blood?  
Have you a working pulse? and are no fairy?  
Motion! Well; speak on. Where were you  
born?

And wherefore call'd Marina?

*Mar.* Call'd Marina  
For I was born at sea.

*Per.* At sea! what mother?  
*Mar.* My mother was the daughter of a  
king;

Who died the minute I was born, 160  
As my good nurse Lychorida hark'd off  
Deliver'd weeping.

*Per.* O, stop there a little!  
*[Aside]* This is the rarest dream that e'er did  
fall

Did mock and fool withal; this cannot be:  
My daughter's buried. Well: where was you  
bred?

I'll hear you more, to the bottom of your story,

And never interrupt you.

*Mar.* You scorn: believe me, 'twere best I did give o'er.

*Per.* I will believe you by the syllable  
Of what you shall deliver. Yet, give me leave:  
How came you in these parts? where were you  
bred?

*Mar.* The king my father did in Tarsus  
leave me;

Till cruel Cleon, with his wicked wife,  
Did seek to murder me: and having woo'd  
A villain to attempt it, who having drawn to  
do't,

A crew of pirates came and rescued me;  
Brought me to Mytilene. But, good sir,  
Whither will you have me? Why do you weep?

It may be,  
You think me an impostor: no, good faith;  
I am the daughter to King Pericles, 180  
If good King Pericles be.

*Per.* Ho, Helicanus!

*Hel.* Calls my lord?

*Per.* Thou art a grave and noble counsellor,  
Most wise in general: tell me, if thou canst,  
What this maid is, or what is like to be,  
That thus hath made me weep!

*Hel.* I know not; but  
Here is the regent, sir, of Mytilene  
Speaks nobly of her.

*Lys.* She would never tell  
Her parentage; being demanded that, 190  
She would sit still and weep.

*Per.* O Helicanus, strike me, honour'd sir;  
Give me a gash, put me to present pain;  
Lest this great sea of joys rushing upon me  
O'erbear the shores of my mortality,  
And drown me with their sweetness. O, come  
hither,

Thou that beget'st him that did thee beget;  
Thou that wast born at sea, buried at Tarsus,  
And found at sea again! O Helicanus,  
Down on thy knees, thank the holy gods as  
loud 200

As thunder threatens us: this is Marina.  
What was thy mother's name? tell me but that,  
For truth can never be confirm'd enough,  
Though doubts did ever sleep.

*Mar.* First, sir, I pray,

What is your title?  
*Per.* I am Pericles of Tyre: but tell me now  
My drown'd queen's name, as in the rest you  
said

Thou hast been godlike perfect,  
† The heir of kingdoms and another like  
To Pericles thy father. 210

*Mar.* Is it no more to be your daughter than  
To say my mother's name was Thaisa?  
Thaisa was my mother, who did end  
The minute I began.

*Per.* Now, blessing on thee! rise; thou art  
my child.

Give me fresh garments. Mine own, Helicanus;  
She is not dead at Tarsus, as she should have  
been,

By savage Cleon: she shall tell thee all;  
When thou shalt kneel, and justify in know-

She is thy very princess. Who is this? 220

*Hel.* Sir, 'tis the governor of Mytilene,  
Who, hearing of your melancholy state,  
Did come to see you.

*Per.* I embrace you.  
Give me my robes. I am wild in my be-  
holding.

O heavens bless my girl! But, hark, what  
music!

Tell Helicanus, my Marina, tell him  
O'er, point by point, for yet he seems to doubt,  
How sure you are my daughter. But, what  
music!

*Hel.* My lord, I hear none.

*Per.* None! 230

The music of the spheres! List, my Marina.

*Lys.* It is not good to cross him; give him  
way.

*Per.* Rarest sounds! Do ye not hear?

*Lys.* My lord, I hear. [Music.]

*Per.* Most heavenly music!

It nips me unto listening, and thick slumber

Hangs upon mine eyes; let me rest. [Sleeps.]

*Lys.* A pillow for his head:

So, leave him all. Well, my companion friends,

If this but answer to my just belief,

I'll well remember you. 240

[Exeunt all but Pericles.]

DIANA appears to PERICLES as in a vision.

*Dia.* My temple stands in Ephesus: hie  
thence thither,

And do upon mine altar sacrifice.

There, when my maiden priests are met to-  
gether,

Before the people all,

Reveal how thou at sea didst lose thy wife:

To mourn thy crosses, with thy daughter's, call

And give them repetition to the life.

Or perform my bidding, or thou livest in woe;

Do it, and happy; by my silver bow!

Awake, and tell thy dream. [Disappears.] 250

*Per.* Celestial Dian, goddess argentine,  
I will obey thee. Helicanus!

Re-enter HELICANUS, LYSIMACHUS, and  
MARINA.

*Hel.* Sir!

*Per.* My purpose was for Tarsus, there to  
strike

The inhospitable Cleon; but I am

For other service first: toward Ephesus

Turn our blown sails; erelong I'll tell thee  
why.

[To Lysimachus] Shall we refresh us, sir, upon  
your shore,

And give you gold for such provision

As our intents will need?

*Lys.* Sir, 260

With all my heart; and, when you come  
ashore,

I have another suit.

*Per.* You shall prevail,

Were it to woo my daughter: for it seems

You have been noble towards her.

*Lys.* Sir, lend me your arm.

*Per.* Come, my Marina. [Exeunt.]



SCENE II. *Enter GOWER, before the temple of DIANA at Ephesus.*

*Gow.* Now our sands are almost run;  
More a little, and then dumb.  
This, my last boon, give me,  
For such kindness must relieve me,  
That you aptly will suppose  
What pageantry, what feats, what shows,  
What minstrelsy, and pretty din,  
The regent made in Mytilene  
To greet the king. So he thrived,  
That he is promised to be wived  
To fair Marina; but in no wise  
Till he had done his sacrifice,  
As Dian bade: whereto being bound,  
The interim, pray you, all confound.  
In feather'd briefness sails are fill'd,  
And wishes fall out as they're will'd.  
At Ephesus, the temple see,  
Our king and all his company.  
That he can hither come so soon,  
Is by your fancy's thankful doom. [*Exit.* 20]

SCENE III. *The temple of Diana at Ephesus; THAISIA standing near the altar, as high priestess; a number of Virgins on each side; CERIMON and other Inhabitants of Ephesus attending.*

*Enter PERICLES, with his train; LYSIMACHUS, HELICANUS, MARINA, and a Lady.*

*Per.* Hail, Dian! to perform thy just command,

I here confess myself the king of Tyre;  
Who, frighted from my country, did wed  
At Pentapolis the fair Thaisia.  
At sea in childhood died she, but brought forth  
A maid-child call'd Marina; who, O goddess,  
Wears yet thy silver livery. She at Tarsus  
Was nursed with Cleon; who at fourteen years  
He sought to murder: but her better stars  
Brought her to Mytilene; 'gainst whose shore  
Riding, her fortunes brought the maid aboard  
us, 11

Where, by her own most clear remembrance,  
she

Made known herself my daughter.

*Thai.* Voice and favour!  
You are, you are—O royal Pericles! [*Faints.*]

*Per.* What means the nun! she dies! help,  
gentlemen!

*Cer.* Noble sir,  
If you have told Diana's altar true,  
This is your wife.

*Per.* Reverend appearer, no;  
I throw her overboard with these very arms.

*Cer.* Upon this coast, I warrant you.

*Per.* 'Tis most certain. 20  
*Cer.* Look to the lady; O, she's but o'er-  
joy'd.

Early in blustering morn this lady was  
Thrown upon this shore. I oped the coffin,  
Found there rich jewels; recover'd her, and  
placed her

Here in Diana's temple.

*Per.* May we see them!

*Cer.* Great sir, they shall be brought to you  
my house,  
Whither I invite you. Look, Thaisia is  
Recovered.

*Thai.* O, let me look!  
If he be none of mine, my sanctity  
Will to my sense bend no licentious ear, 30  
But curb it, spite of seeing. O, my lord,  
Are you not Pericles? Like him you speak,  
Like him you are: did you not name a tempest,  
A birth, and death!

*Per.* The voice of dead Thaisia!

*Thai.* That Thaisia am I, supposed dead  
And drown'd.

*Per.* Immortal Dian!

*Thai.* Now I know you better.  
When we with tears parted Pentapolis,  
The king my father gave you such a ring.

[*Shows a ring.*]

*Per.* This, this: no more, you gods! your  
present kindness  
Makes my past miseries sports: you shall do  
well, 40

That on the touching of her lips I may  
Melt and no more be seen. O, come, be buried  
A second time within these arms.

*Mar.* My heart  
Leaps to be gone into my mother's bosom.

[*Kneels to Thaisia.*]

*Per.* Look, who kneels here! Flesh of thy  
flesh Thaisia;  
Thy burden at the sea, and call'd Marina  
For she was yielded there.

*Thai.* Blest, and mine own!

*Hel.* Hail, madam, and my queen!

*Thai.* I know you not.  
*Per.* You have heard me say, when I did fly  
from Tyre, 50

I left behind an ancient substitute:  
Can you remember what I call'd the man?  
I have named him oft.

*Thai.* 'Twas Helicanus then.

*Per.* Still confirmation:  
Embrace him, dear Thaisia; this is he.  
Now do I long to hear how you were found;  
How possibly preserved; and who to thank,  
Besides the gods, for this great miracle.

*Thai.* Lord Cerimon, my lord; this man,  
Through whom the gods have shown their  
power; that can 60

From first to last resolve you.

*Per.* Reverend sir,  
The gods can have no mortal officer  
More like a god than you. Will you deliver  
How this dead queen re-lives!

*Cer.* I will, my lord.  
Beseech you, first go with me to my house,  
Where shall be shown you all was found with  
her;

How she came placed here in the temple;  
No needless thing omitted.

*Per.* Pure Dian, bless thee for thy vision! I  
Will offer night-oblations to thee. Thaisia, 70  
This prince, the fair-betroth'd of your daughter,  
Shall marry her at Pentapolis. And now,  
This ornament

Makes me look diurnal will I clip to fast;  
And what this fourteen years no man touch'd,

To grace thy marriage-day, I'll heartily.

That, Lord Cerimon hath letters of good credit, sir,

My father's dead.

Per. Heavens make a star of him! Yet there, my queen,

We'll celebrate their nuptials, and ourselves so Will in that kingdom spend our following days:

Our son and daughter shall in Tyre reign.

Lord Cerimon, we do our loving stay

To hear the rest untold: sir, lead's the way.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter Gowen.*

Gow. In Antiochus and his daughter you have heard

Of monstrous lust the due and just reward:

In Pericles, his queen and daughter, seen.

Although assail'd with fortune fierce and keen,

Virtue preserved from fell destruction's blast, Led on by heaven, and crown'd with joy at last: 50

In Helicanus may you well descry

A figure of truth, of faith, of loyalty:

In reverend Cerimon there well appears

The worth that learned charity eyes wear:

For wicked Cleon and his wife, when fame

Had spread their cursed deed, and honour'd name

Of Pericles, to rage the city turn,

That him and his they in his palace burn;

The gods for murder seemed so content

To punish them; although not done, but meant. 20

So, on your patience evermore attending,

New joy wait on you! Here our play has ending.

# VENUS AND ADONIS

'Vilia miretur vulgus; mihi flavus Apollo  
Pocula Castalia plena ministret aqua.'

TO THE

RIGHT HONOURABLE HENRY WRIOTHESLY,

EARL OF SOUTHAMPTON, AND BARON OF TICHFIELD.

RIGHT HONOURABLE

I KNOW not how I shall offend in dedicating my unpolished lines to your lordship, nor how the world will censure me for choosing so strong a prop to support so weak a burden: only if your honour seem but pleased, I account myself highly praised, and vow to take advantage of all idle hours, till I have honoured you with some graver labour. But if the first heir of my invention prove deformed, I shall be sorry it had so noble a god-father, and never after ear so barren a land, for fear it yield me still so bad a harvest. I leave it to your honourable survey, and your honour to your heart's content; which I wish may always answer your own wish and the world's hopeful expectation.

Your honour's in all duty,

WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE

EVEN as the sun with purple-colour'd face  
Had ta'en his last leave of the weeping morn,  
Rose-cheek'd Adonis hid him to the chase;  
Hunting he loved, but love he laugh'd to scorn;  
Sick-thoughted Venus makes amain unto  
him,  
And like a bold-faced suitor 'gins to woo him.

'Thrice-fairer than myself,' thus she began,  
'The field's chief flower, sweet above compare,  
Stain to all nymphs, more lovely than a man,  
More white and red than doves or roses are;  
Nature that made thee, with herself at strife,  
Saith that the world hath ending with thy  
life.

'Vouchsafe, thou wonder, to alight thy steed,  
And rein his proud head to the saddle-bow;  
If thou wilt dign this favour, for thy meed  
A thousand honey secrets shalt thou know:  
Here come and sit, where never serpent hisses,  
And being set, I'll smother thee with kisses;

'And yet not cloy thy lips with loathed satiety,  
But rather furnish them amid their plenty, so  
Making them red and pale with fresh variety.  
Ten kisses short as one, one long as twenty:  
A summer's day will seem an hour but short,  
Being wasted in such time-begulling sport.'

With this she seizeth on  
The precedent of pity and

And trembling in her passion, calls it balm,  
Earth's sovereign salve to do a goddess good:  
Being so enraged, desire doth lend her force  
Courageously to pluck him from his horse.

Over one arm the lusty coursers' reins, 32  
Under her other was the tender boy,  
Who blush'd and pouted in a dull disdain,  
With leaden appetite, unapt to toy;  
She red and hot as coals of glowing fire,  
He red for shame, but frosty in desire.

The studded bridle on a ragged bough  
Numbly she fastens:—O, how quick in love!—  
The steed is stalled up, and even now  
To tie the rider she begins to prove:  
Backward she push'd him, as she would be  
thrust,  
And govern'd him in strength, though not in  
lust.

So soon was she along as he was down,  
Each leaning on their elbows and their hips:  
Now doth she stroke his cheek, now doth he  
frown,  
And 'gins to chide, but soon she stops his lips:  
And kissing speaks, with hoarse forbidden  
broken.

'If thou wilt chide, thy lips shall never open.'

He burns with bashful shame: she with her  
tears  
Doth quench the maiden burning of his cheeks;

Then with her windy sighs and golden hairs 51  
To fan and blow them dry again she seeks :  
He saith she is immodest, blames her 'miss ;  
What follows more she murders with a kiss

Even as an empty eagle, sharp by fast,  
Tires with her beak on feathers, flesh and bone,  
Shaking her wings, devouring all in haste,  
Till either gorge be stuff'd or prey be gone ;  
Even so she kissed his brow, his cheek, his  
chin.

And where she ends she doth anew begin. 60

Forced to content, but never to obey,  
Fanning he lies and breatheth in her face ;  
She feedeth on the steam as on a prey,  
And calls it heavenly moisture, air of grace ;  
Wishing her cheeks were gardens full of  
flowers,  
So they were dew'd with such distilling  
showers.

Look, how a bird lies tangled in a net,  
So fasten'd in her arms Adonis lies ;  
Pure shame and awed resistance made him fret,  
Which bred more beauty in his angry eyes : 70  
Rain added to a river that is rank  
Perforce will force it overflow the bank.

Still she entreats, and prettily entreats,  
For to a pretty ear she tunes her tale ;  
Still is he sullen, still he lours and frets,  
Twixt crimson shame and anger ashy-pale :  
Being red, she loves him best ; and being  
white,  
Her best is better'd with a more delight.

Look how he can, she cannot choose but love ;  
And by her fair immortal hand she swears, 80  
From his soft bosom never to remove,  
Till he take truce with her contending tears,  
Which long have rain'd, making her cheeks  
all wet ;  
And one sweet kiss shall pay this countless  
debt.

As the spring rain'd on, quick as quickly  
So offers he to give what she did crave ;  
But when her lips were ready for his pay,  
He winks, and turns his lips another way. 90

Never did passenger in summer's heat  
More thirst for drink than she for this good  
turn.

Her help she sees, but help she cannot get ;  
She bathes in water, yet her fire must burn :  
'O, pity,' can she cry, 'flint-hearted boy !  
'Tis but a kiss I beg ; why art thou coy !

'I have been woo'd, as I entreat thee now,  
Even by the stern and direful god of war,  
Whose sinewy neck in battle ne'er did bow,  
Who conquers where he comes in every jar ; 100  
Yet hath he been my captive and my slave,  
And begg'd for that which thou unask'd

'Over my altars hath he hung his lance,  
His batter'd shield, his uncontrolled crest,  
And for my sake hath learn'd to sport and  
dance,

To toy, to wanton, dally, smile and jest,  
Scorning his churlish drum and ensign red,  
Making my arms his field, his tent my bed.

'Thus he that overruled I o' y'd,  
Leading him prisoner in a r chain : 110  
Strong-temper'd steel his r strength  
obey'd,

Yet was he servile to my coy disdain.  
O, be not proud, nor brag not of thy might,  
For mastering her that foil'd the god of fight :

'Touch but my lips with those fair lips of  
thine,—  
Though mine be not so fair, yet are they red—  
The kiss shall be thine own as well as mine.  
What seest thou in the ground ? hold up thy  
head :  
Look in mine eye-balls, there thy beauty lies ;  
Then why not lips on lips, since eyes in eyes !

'Art thou ashamed to kiss ? then wink again,  
And I will wink ; so shall the day seem night ;  
Love keeps his revels where there are but twain ;  
Be bold to play, our sport is not in sight :  
These blue-vein'd violets wherewith we lean  
Never can blab, nor know not what we  
mean.

'The tender spring upon thy tempting lip  
Shows thee unripe ; yet mayst thou well be  
tasted :  
Make use of time, let not advantage slip ;  
Beauty within itself should not be wasted : 130  
Fair flowers that are not gather'd in their  
prime  
Rot and consume themselves in little time.

'Were I hard-favour'd, foul, or wrinkled-old,  
Ill-nurtured, crooked, churlish, harsh in voice,  
O'erworm, despised, rheumatic and cold,  
Thick-sighted, barren, lean and lacking juice,  
Then mightst thou pause, for then I were not  
for thee ;  
But having no defects, why dost abhor me !

'Thou canst not see one wrinkle in my brow ;  
Mine eyes are gray and bright and quick in  
turning ; 140  
My beauty as the spring doth yearly grow,  
My flesh is soft and plump, my marrow burning ;  
My smooth moist hand, were it with thy hand  
felt,  
Would in thy palm dissolve, or seem to melt.

'Bid me discourse, I will enchant thine ear,  
Or, like a fairy, trip upon the green,  
Or, like a nymph, with long dishevell'd hair,  
Dance on the sands, and yet no footing seen :  
Love is a spirit all compact of fire,  
Not gross to sink, but light, and will aspire.

'Witness this primrose bank wherewith I lie ; 151  
These forceless flowers like sturdy trees support  
me ;

Two strengthless doves will draw me through  
the sky,  
From morn till night, even where I list to sport  
me:

Is love so light, sweet boy, and may it be  
That thou shouldst think it heavy unto thee!

'Is thine own heart to thine own face affected?  
Can thy right hand seize love upon thy left?  
Then woo thyself, be of thyself rejected,  
Steal thine own freedom and complain on theft.  
Narcissus so himself himself forsook, 161  
And died to kiss his shadow in the brook.

'Torches are made to light, jewels to wear,  
Dainties to taste, fresh beauty for the use,  
Herbs for their smell, and sappy plants to bear;  
Things growing to themselves are growth's  
abuse:

Seeds spring from seeds and beauty breedeth  
beauty;  
Thou wast begot; to get it is thy duty.

'Upon the earth's increase why shouldst thou  
feed,  
Unless the earth with thy increase be fed? 170  
By law of nature thou art bound to breed,  
That thine may live when thou thyself art  
dead;  
And so, in spite of death, thou dost survive,  
In that thy likeness still is left alive.'

By this the love-sick queen began to sweat,  
For where they lay the shadow had forsook  
them,  
And Titan, tired in the mid-day heat,  
With burning eye did hotly overlook them;  
Wishing Adonis had his team to guide,  
So he were like him and by Venus side. 180

And now Adonis, with a lazy spright,  
And with a heavy, dark, disliking eye,  
His lowering brows o'erwhelming his fair sight,  
Like misty vapours when they blot the sky,  
Souring his cheeks cries 'Fie, no more of  
love!  
The sun doth burn my face; I must remove.'

'Ay me,' quoth Venus, 'young, and so unkind!  
What bare excuses makest thou to be gone!  
I'll sigh celestial breath, whose gentle wind  
Shall cool the heat of this descending sun: 190  
I'll make a shadow for thee of my hairs;  
If they burn too, I'll quench them with my  
tears.

'The sun that shines from heaven shines but  
warm,  
And, lo, I lie between that sun and thee:  
The heat I have from thence doth little harm,  
Thine eye darts forth the fire that burneth me;  
And were I not immortal, life were done  
Between this heavenly and earthly sun.

'Art thou obscure, flinty, hard as steel,  
Nay, more than flint, for stone at rain relenteth?  
Art thou a woman's son, and canst not feel so?  
What 'tis to love! how want of love tormenteth!

O, had thy mother borne so hard a mind,  
She had not brought forth thee, but died  
unkind.

'What am I, that thou shouldst condemn me  
this!

Or what great danger dwells upon my suit?  
What were thy lips the worse for one poor kiss?  
Speak, fair; but speak fair words, or else be  
mute:

Give me one kiss, I'll give it thee again, 200  
And one for interest, if thou wilt have twain.

'Fie, lifeless picture, cold and senseless stone,  
Well-painted idol, image dull and dead,  
Statue contenting but the eye alone,  
Thing like a man, but of no woman bred!  
Thou art no man, though of a man's com-  
plexion,  
For men will kiss even by their own direction.'

This said, impatience chokes her pleading  
tongue,

And swelling passion doth provoke a pause;  
Red cheeks and fiery eyes blaze forth her wrong;  
Being judge in love, she cannot right her cause:  
And now she weeps, and now she fain would  
speak, 210  
And now her sobs do her intendments break.

Sometimes she shakes her head and then his  
hand,

Now gazeth she on him, now on the ground;  
Sometimes her arms infold him like a band;  
She would, he will not in her arms be bound;  
And when from thence he struggles to be  
gone, 220  
"ly fingers one in one.

'Fondling,' she saith, 'since I have hemm'd  
thee here

Within the circuit of this ivory pale, 230  
I'll be a park, and thou shalt be my deer;  
Feed where thou wilt, on mountain or in dale;  
Graze on my lips; and if those hills be dry,  
Stray lower, where the pleasant fountains lie.

'Within this limit is relief enough,  
Sweet bottom-grass and high delightful plain,  
Round rising hillocks, brakes obscure and  
rough,  
To shelter thee from tempest and from rain:  
Then be my deer, since I am such a park;  
No dog shall rouse thee, though a thousand  
bark. 240

At this Adonis smiles as in disdain,  
That in each cheek appears a pretty dimple;  
Love made those hollows, if himself were slain,  
He might be buried in a tomb so simple;  
Foreknowing well, if there he came to lie,  
Why, there Love lived and there he could  
not die.

These lovely caves, these round enchanting pits,  
Open'd their mouths to swallow Venus' liking,  
Being mad before, how doth she now for wits?  
Struck dead at first, what needs a second  
striking! 250

Poor queen of love, in thine own law forlorn,  
To love a cheek that smiles at thee in scorn!

Now which way shall she turn? what shall she  
say?

Her words are done, her woes the more increasing;  
The time is spent, her object will away,  
And from her twining arms doth urge releasing.  
'Pity,' she cries, 'some favour, some remorse!  
Away he springs and hasteth to his horse.

But, lo, from forth a copse that neighbours by,  
A breeding jennet, lusty, young and proud, 260  
Adonis' trampling courser doth espy,  
And forth she rushes, snorts and neighs aloud:  
The strong-neck'd steed, being tied unto a tree,  
Breaketh his rein, and to her straight goes he.

Imperiously he leaps, he neighs, he bounds,  
And now his woven girths he breaks asunder;  
The bearing earth with his hard hoof he  
wounds,

Whose hollow womb resounds like heaven's  
thunder;

The iron bit he crusheth 'tween his teeth,  
Controlling what he was controlled with. 270

His ears up-prick'd; his braided hanging mane  
Upon his compass'd crest now stand on end;  
His nostrils drink the air, and forth again,  
As from a furnace, vapours doth he send:  
His eye, which scornfully glisters like fire,  
Shows his hot courage and his high desire.

Sometimes he trots, as if he told the steps,  
With gentle majesty and modest pride;  
Anon he rears upright, currets and leaps,  
As who should say 'Lo, thus my strength is  
tried, 280

And this I do to captivate the eye  
Of the fair breeder that is standing by.'

What reckoneth he his rider's angry stir,  
His flattering 'Holla,' or his 'Stand, I say'!  
What cares he now for curb or pricking spur?  
For rich caparisons or trapping gay?  
He sees his love, and nothing else he sees,  
For nothing else with his proud sight agrees.

Look, when a painter would surpass the life,  
In limning out a well-proportion'd steed, 290  
His art with nature's workmanship at strife,  
As if the dead the living should exceed;  
So did this horse excel a common one  
In shape, in courage, colour, pace and bone.

Round-hoof'd, short-jointed, fetlocks shag and  
long,

Broad breast, full eye, small head and nostril  
wide,

High crest, short ears, straight legs and passing  
strong,

This mane, thick tail, broad buttock, tender  
neck!

What a horse should have he did not  
lack,

Here a pated rider on so proud a back. 300

Sometimes he scuds far off and there he stares;  
Anon he starts at stirring of a feather;  
To bid the wind a base he now prepares,  
And whether he run or fly they know not  
whether;

For through his mane and tail the high wind  
sings,

Fanning the hairs, who wave like feather'd  
wings.

He looks upon his love and neighs unto her;  
She answers him as if she knew his mind:  
Being proud, as females are, to see him woo her,  
She puts on outward strangeness, seems unkind,  
Spurns at his love and scorning the heat he  
feels, 310  
Beating his kind embracements with her  
heels.

Then, like a melancholy malcontent,  
He vails his tail that, like a falling plume,  
Cool shadow to his melting buttock lent:  
He stamps and bites the poor flies in his fume.  
His love, perceiving how he is enraged,  
Grew kinder, and his fury was assuaged.

His testy master goeth about to take him;  
When, lo, the unback'd breeder, full of fear, 320  
Jealous of catching, swiftly doth forsake him,  
With her the horse, and left Adonis there:  
As they were mad, unto the wood they hide  
them,  
Out-stripping crows that strive to over-fly  
them.

All swoln with chafing, down Adonis sits,  
Banning his bolsterous and unruly beast:  
And now the happy season once more fits,  
That love-sick Love by pleading may be blest;  
For lovers say, the heart hath treble wrong  
When it is barr'd the aidance of the tongue.

An oven that is stopp'd, or river stay'd, 330  
Burneth more hotly, swelleth with more rage:  
So of concealed sorrow may be said;  
Free vent of words love's fire doth assuage;  
But when the heart's attorney once is mute,  
The client breaks, as desperate in his suit.

He sees her coming, and begins to glow,  
Even as a dying coal revives with wind,  
And with his bonnet hides his angry brow;  
Looks on the dull earth with disturbed mind,  
Taking no notice that she is so nigh, 340  
For all askance he holds her in his eye.

O, what a sight it was, wistly to view  
How she came stealing to the wayward boy!  
To note the fighting conflict of her hue,  
How white and red each other did destroy!  
But now her cheek was pale, and by and by  
It flash'd forth fire, as lightning from the sky.

Now was she just before him as he sat,  
And like a lowly lover down she kneels; 350  
With one fair hand she heaveth up his hat,  
Her other tender hand his fair cheek feels:  
His tenderer cheek receives her soft hand's  
print,  
As apt as new-fall'n snow takes any dint.

O, what a war of looks was then between them!  
Her eyes petitioners to his eyes suing;  
His eyes saw her eyes as they had not seen  
them;

Her eyes woo'd still, his eyes disdain'd the  
wooing;

And all this dumb play had his acts made  
plain

With tears, which, chorus-like, her eyes did  
rain. 360

Full gently now she takes him by the hand,  
A life prison'd in a gaol of snow,  
Or ivory in an alabaster band;

So white a friend engirts so white a foe:  
This beauteous combat, wilful and unwilling,  
Show'd like two silver doves that sit a-billing.

Once more the engine of her thoughts began:  
'O fairest mover on this mortal round,  
Would thou wert as I am, and I a man,  
My heart all whole as thine, thy heart my  
wound; 370

For one sweet look thy help I would assure thee,  
Though nothing but my body's bane would  
cure thee.'

'Give me my hand,' saith he, 'why dost thou  
feel it?'

'Give me my heart,' saith she, 'and thou shalt  
have it;

O, give it me, lest thy hard heart do steel it,  
And being steel'd, soft sighs can never grave it:  
Then love's deep groans I never shall regard,  
Because Adonis' heart hath made mine hard.'

'For shame,' he cries, 'let go, and let me go;  
My day's delight is past, my horse is gone, 380  
And 'tis your fault I am bereft him so:  
I pray you hence, and leave me here alone;  
For all my mind, my thought, my busy care,  
Is how to get my palfrey from the mare.'

Thus she replies: 'Thy palfrey, as he should,  
Welcomes the warm approach of sweet desire:  
Affection is a coal that must be cool'd;  
Else, suffer'd, it will set the heart on fire:

The sea hath bounds, but deep desire hath  
none;

Therefore no marvel though thy horse be  
gone. 390

'How like a jade he stood, tied to the tree,  
Servilely master'd with a leathern rein!  
But when he saw his love, his youth's fair fee,  
He held such petty bondage in disdain;

Throwing the bridle from his bending  
crest,

Enfranchising his mouth, his back, his breast.

'Who sees his true-love in her naked bed,  
Teaching the sheets a whiter hue than white,  
But, when his glutton eye so full hath fed,  
His other agents aim at like delight! 400

Who is so faint, that dares not be so bold  
To touch the fire, the weather being cold!

'Let me excuse thy course, I  
And learn of him, I heartily

To take advantage on \_\_\_\_\_  
Though I were dumb, yet \_\_\_\_\_ ing teach  
thee:

O, learn to love; the lesson is but plain,  
And once made perfect, never lost again.'

'I know not love,' quoth he, 'nor will not  
know it,

Unless it be a boar, and then I chase it; 420  
'Tis much to borrow, and I will not owe it;  
My love to love is love but to disgrace it;

For I have heard it is a life in death,  
That laughs and weeps, and all but with a  
breath.

'Who wears a garment shapeless and unfinish'd?  
Who plucks the bud before one leaf put forth?  
If springing things be any jot diminish'd,  
They wither in their prime, prove nothing  
worth:

The colt that's back'd and burden'd being  
young

Loseth his pride and never waxeth strong. 430

'You hurt my hand with wringing; let us part,  
And leave this idle theme, this bootless chat;  
Remove your siege from my unyielding heart;  
To love's alarms it will not ope the gate'

Dismiss your vows, your feigned tears, your  
flattery;

For where a heart is hard they make no  
battery.'

'What! canst thou talk?' quoth she, 'hast thou  
a tongue?

O, would thou hadst not, or I had no hearing!  
Thy mermaid's voice hath done me double  
wrong;

I had my load before, now press'd with bearing;  
Melodious discord, heavenly tune harsh-  
sounding, 435

Ear's deep-sweet music, and heart's deep-  
sore wounding.

'Had I no eyes but ears, my ears would love  
That inward beauty and invisible;

Or were I deaf, thy outward parts would move  
Each part in me that were but sensible;

Though neither eyes nor ears, to hear nor see,  
Yet should I be in love by touching thee.

'Say, that the sense of feeling were bareft me,  
And that I could not see, nor hear, nor touch,

And nothing but the very smell were left me,  
Yet would my love to thee be still as much;

For from the stillitory of thy face exceeding  
Comes breath perfum'd that breedeth love  
by smelling.

'But, O, what banquet wert thou to the taste,  
Being nurse and feeder of the other four!

Would they not wish the feast might ever last,  
And bid Suspicion double-lock the door,

Lest Jealousy that sour unwelcome guest  
Should, by his stealing in, disturb the feast?

Once more the \_\_\_\_\_  
Which to his \_\_\_\_\_ did honey passages yield:

Like a red morn, that ever yet betoken'd  
Wreck to the seaman, tempest to the field,  
Sorrow to shepherds, woe unto the birds,  
Gusta and foul flaws to herdmen and to herds.

This ill presage advisodly she marketh :  
Even as the wind is hush'd before it raineth,  
Or as the wolf doth grin before he barketh,  
Or as the berry breaks before it staineth, 460  
Or like the deadly bullet of a gun,  
His meaning struck her ere his words begun.

And at his look she flatly falleth down,  
For looks kill love and love by looks reviveth ;  
A smile recures the wounding of a frown ;  
But blessed bankrupt, that by love so thriveth !  
The silly boy, believing she is dead,  
Claps her pale cheek, till clapping makes it red ;

And all amazed brake off his late intent,  
For sharply he did think to reprehend her, 470  
Which cunning love did wittily prevent :  
Fair fall the wit that can so well defend her !  
For on the grass she lies as she were slain,  
Till his breath breatheth life in her again.

He wrings her nose, he strikes her on the cheeks,  
He bends her fingers, holds her pulses hard,  
He chafes her lips ; a thousand ways he seeks  
To mend the hurt that his unkindness marr'd :  
He kisses her ; and she, by her good will,  
Will never rise, so he will kiss her still. 480

The night of sorrow now is turn'd to day :  
Her two blue windows faintly she up-heaveth,  
Like the fair sun, when in his fresh array  
He cheers the morn and all the earth reliveth ;  
And as the bright sun glorifies the sky,  
So is her face illumined with her eye ;

Whose beams upon his hairless face are fix'd,  
As if from thence they borrow'd all their shine.  
Were never four such lamps together mix'd,  
Had not his clouded with his brow's repine ; 490  
But hers, which through the crystal tears  
gave light,  
Shone like the moon in water seen by night.

'O, where am I ?' quoth she, 'in earth or heaven,  
Or in the ocean drench'd, or in the fire !  
What hour is this ? or morn or weary even ?  
Do I delight to die, or life desire ?  
But now I lived, and life was death's annoy ;  
But now I died, and death was lively joy.

'O, thou didst kill me : kill me once again :  
Thy eyes shrewd tutor, that hard heart of thine, 500  
Hath taught them scornful tricks and such disdain  
That they have murder'd this poor heart of mine ;  
And these mine eyes, true leaders to their But  
leeches lips no more had seen.

'Long may they kiss each other, for this cure !  
O, never let their crimson liveries wear !  
And as they last, their verdure still endure,  
To drive infection from the dangerous year !  
That the star-gazers, having writ on death,  
May say, the plague is banish'd by thy breath. 510

lips, sweet seals in my soft lips im-  
printed,  
What bargains may I make, still to be sealing !  
To sell myself I can be well contented,  
So thou wilt buy and pay and use good dealing :  
Which purchase if thou make, for fear of slips  
Set thy seal-manual on my wax-red lips.

'A thousand kisses buys my heart from me ;  
And pay them at thy leisure, one by one.  
What is ten hundred touches unto thee ?  
Are they not quickly told and quickly gone ?  
Say, for non-payment that the debt should double,  
Is twenty hundred kisses such a trouble ?' 521

'Fair queen,' quoth he, 'if any love you owe me,  
Measure my strangeness with my unripe years :  
Before I know myself, seek not to know me ;  
No fisher but the ungrown fry forbears !  
The mellow plum doth fall, the green sticks fast,  
Or being early pluck'd is sour to taste.

'Look, the world's comforter, with weary gait,  
His day's hot task hath ended in the west ; 530  
The owl, night's herald, shrieks, "This very late."  
The sheep are gone to fold, birds to their nest,  
And coal-black clouds that shadow heaven's light  
Do summon us to part and bid good night.

'Now let me say "Good night," and so say you ;  
If you will say so, you shall have a kiss.'  
'Good night,' quoth she, and, ere he says  
'Adieu,

The honey fee of parting tender'd is :  
Her arms do lend his neck a sweet embrace ;  
Incorporate then they seem ; face grows to face. 540

Till, breathless, he disjoin'd, and backward drew  
The heavenly moisture, that sweet coral mouth,  
Whose precious taste her thirsty lips well knew,  
Whereon they surfeit, yet complain on drouth :  
He with her plenty press'd, she faint with dearth,  
Their lips together glued, fall to the earth.

Now quick desire hath caught the yielding prey,  
And glutton-like she feeds, yet never filleth ;  
Her lips are conquerors, his lips obey,  
Paying what ransom the insular willeth ; 550  
Whose vulture thought doth pitch the price so high,  
That she will draw his lips' rich treasure dry'



And having felt the sweetness of the spoil,  
With blindfold fury she begins to forage;  
Her face doth reek and smoke, her blood doth  
boil,  
And careless lust stirs up a desperate courage;  
Planting oblivion, healing reason back,  
Forgetting shame's pure blush and honour's  
wrack.

Hot, faint, and weary, with her hard embracing,  
Like a wild bird being tamed with too much  
handling, <sup>560</sup>  
Or as the fleet-foot roe that's tired with chasing,  
Or like the froward infant still'd with dandling,  
He now obeys, and now no more resisteth,  
While she takes all she can, not all she  
listeth.

What wax so frozen but dissolves with tem-  
pering,  
And yields at last to very light impression?  
Things out of hope are compass'd oft with  
venturing,  
Chiefly in love, whose leave exceeds commis-  
sion:  
Affection faints not like a pale-faced coward,  
But then woos best when most his choice is  
froward. <sup>570</sup>

When he did frown, O, had she then gave over,  
Such nectar from his lips she had not suck'd.  
Foul words and frowns must not repel a lover;  
What though the rose have prickles, yet 'tis  
pluck'd:  
Were beauty under twenty locks kept fast,  
Yet love breaks through and picks them all  
at last.

For pity now she can no more detain him;  
The poor fool prays her that he may depart:  
She is resolved no longer to restrain him; <sup>570</sup>  
Bids him farewell, and look well to her heart,  
The which, by Cupid's bow she doth protest,  
He carries thence incaged in his breast.

'Sweet boy,' she says, 'this night I'll waste in  
sorrow,  
For my sick heart commands mine eyes to  
watch.  
Tell me, Love's master, shall we meet to-  
morrow!  
Say, shall we? shall we? wilt thou make the  
match?'  
He tells her, no; to-morrow he intends  
To hunt the boar with certain of his friends.

'The boar!' quoth she; whereto a sudden pale,  
Like lawn being spread upon the blushing  
rose, <sup>580</sup>  
Usurps her cheek; she trembles at his tale,  
And on his neck her yoking arms she throws:  
She sinketh down, still hanging by his neck,  
He on her belly falls, she on her back.

Now is she in the very lists of love,  
Her champion mounted for the hot encounter:  
All is imaginary she doth prove,  
He will not manage her, although he mount her;

That worse than Tantalus' is her army,  
To clip Elysium and to lack her joy. <sup>600</sup>

Even as poor birds, deceived with painted  
grapes,  
Do surfeit by the eye and pine the maw,  
Even so she languisheth in her mishaps,  
As those poor birds that helpless berries saw.  
The warm effects which she in him finds  
missing  
She seeks to kindle with continual kissing.

But all in vain; good queen, it will not be;  
She hath assay'd as much as may be proved;  
Her pleading hath deserved a greater fee; <sup>600</sup>  
She's Love, she loves, and yet she is not loved.  
'Fie, fie,' he says, 'you crush me; let me go;  
You have no reason to withhold me so.'

'Thou hadst been gone,' quoth she, 'sweet boy,  
ere this,  
But that thou told'st me thou wouldst hunt  
the boar.  
O, be advis'd! thou know'st not what it is  
With javelin's point a churlish swine to gore,  
Whose tusks never sheathed he whetted  
still,  
Like to a mortal butcher bent to kill.

On his bow-back he hath a battle set  
Of bristly pikes, that ever threat his foes; <sup>600</sup>  
His eyes, like glow-worms, shine when he doth  
fret;  
His snout digs sepulchres where'er he goes;  
Being moved, he strikes whate'er is in his  
way,  
And whom he strikes his crooked tusks  
slay.

'His brawny sides, with hairy bristles arm'd,  
Are better proof than thy spear's point can  
enter;  
His short thick neck cannot be easily harm'd;  
Being ireful, on the lion he will venture:  
The thorny brambles and embracing bushes,  
As fearful of him, part, through whom he  
rushes. <sup>630</sup>

'Alas, he nought esteems that face of thine,  
To which Love's eyes pay tributary graces;  
Nor thy soft hands, sweet lips and crystal cyne,  
Whose full perfection all the world amazes;  
But having thee at vantage,—wondrous  
dread!—  
Would root these beauties as he roots the  
mead.

'O, let him keep his loathsome cabin still;  
Beauty hath nought to do with such foul  
friends.  
Come not within his danger by thy will;  
They that thrive well take counsel of their  
friends. <sup>640</sup>  
When thou didst name the boar, not to dis-  
semble,  
I fear'd thy fortune, and my joints did  
tremble.

'Didst thou not mark my face? was it not  
white!  
Saw'st thou not signs of fear lurk in mine eye?  
Grew I not faint? and fell I not downright?  
Within my bosom, whereon thou dost lie,  
My boiling heart pants, beats, and takes no  
rest,  
But, like an earthquake, shakes thee on my  
breast.

'For where Love reigns, disturbing Jealousy  
Doth call himself Affection's sentinel; 650  
Gives false alarms, suggesteth mutiny;  
And in a peaceful hour doth cry "Kill, kill!"  
Distemp'ring gentle Love in his desire,  
As air and water do abate the fire.

'This sour informer, this bate-breeding spy,  
This canker that eats up Love's tender spring,  
This carry-tale, disemulous Jealousy,  
That sometime true news, sometime false doth  
bring,  
Knocks at my heart and whispers in mine  
ear 659  
That if I love thee, I thy death should fear:

'And more than so, presenteth to mine eye  
The picture of an angry-chafing boar,  
Under whose sharp fangs on his back doth lie  
An image like thyself, all stain'd with gore;  
Whose blood upon the fresh flowers being  
shed  
Doth make them droop with grief and hang  
the head.

'What should I do, seeing thee so indeed,  
That tremble at the imagination?  
The thought of it doth make my faint heart  
bleed,

And fear doth teach it divination: 670  
I prophesy thy death, my living sorrow,  
If thou encounter with the boar to-morrow.

'But if thou needs wilt hunt, be ruled by me;  
Uncouple at the timorous flying hare,  
Or at the fox which lives by subtlety,  
Or at the roe which no encounter dare:  
Pursue these fearful creatures o'er the downs,  
And on thy well-breath'd horse keep with thy  
hounds.

'And when thou hast on foot the purblind  
hare, 679  
Mark the poor wretch, to overthrow his troubles  
How he outruns the wind and with what care  
He cranks and crosses with a thousand doubles:  
The many mazes through the which he goes  
Are like a labyrinth to amaze his foes.

'Sometime he runs among a flock of sheep,  
To make the cunning hounds mistake their  
smell,  
And sometime where earth-delving conies keep,  
To stop the loud pursuers in their yell,  
And sometime scotch with a herd of deer:  
Danger deviseth shifts; wit waits on fear: 690

'For there his smell with others being mingled,  
The hot scent-snuffing hounds are driven to  
doubt,  
Ceasing their clamorous cry till they have singled  
With much ado the cold fault cleanly out;  
Then do they spend air mouths: Echo  
replies,  
As if another chase were: the skies.

'By this, poor Wat, far off upon a hill,  
Stands on his hinder legs with listening ear,  
To hearken if his foes pursue him still:  
Among their loud alarms he doth hear; 700  
And now his grief may be compar'd well  
To one sore sick that hears the passing-bell.

'Then shalt thou see the dew-bedabbled wretch  
Turn, and return, indenting with the way;  
Each envious brier his weary legs doth scratch,  
Each shadow makes him stop, each murmur  
stay:  
For misery is trodden on by many,  
And being low never relieved by any.

'Lie quietly, and hear a little more; 709  
Nay, do not struggle, for thou shalt not rise:  
To make thee hate the hunting of the boar,  
Unlike myself thou hear'st me moralise,  
Applying this to that, and so to so;  
For love can comment upon every woe.

'Where did I leave?' 'No matter where;' 719  
quoth he,  
'Leave me, and then the story aptly ends:  
The night is spent.' 'Why, what of that?'  
quoth she.  
'I am,' quoth he, 'expected of my friends;  
And now 'tis dark, and going I shall fall.'  
'In night,' quoth she, 'dearest sees best of all.

'But if thou fall, O, then imagine this, 721  
The earth, in love with thee, thy footing trips,  
And all is but to rob thee of a kiss.  
Rich preys make true men thieves; so do thy lips  
Make modest Dian cloudy and forlorn,  
Lest she should steal a kiss and die forsworn.

'Now of this dark night I perceive the reason:  
Cynthia for shame obscures her silver shine,  
Till forging Nature be condemn'd of treason,  
For stealing moulds from heaven that were  
divine: 730  
Wherein she framed thee in high heaven's  
despita,  
To shame the sun by day and her by night.

'And therefore hath she bribed the Destinies  
To cross the curious workmanship of nature,  
To mingle beauty with infirmities,  
And pure perfection with impure defecture,  
Making it subject to the tyranny  
Of mad mischances and much misery;

'As burning fevers, agues pale and faint,  
Life-poisoning penitence and frenzied wood,  
The marrow-eating sickness, whose attain'd 741  
Disorder breeds by hunting of the blood:

Surfeits, imposthumes, grief, and damn'd  
despair,  
Swear Nature's death for framing thee so  
fair.

'And not the least of all these maladies  
But in one minute's light brings beauty under:  
Both favour, savour, hue and qualities,  
Whereat the impartial gazer late did wonder,  
Are on the sudden wasted, thaw'd and done,  
As mountain-snow melts with the midday  
sun. 750

'Therefore, despite of fruitless chastity,  
Love-lacking vestals and self-loving nuns,  
That on the earth would breed a scarcity  
And barren dearth of daughters and of sons,  
Be prodigal: the lamp that burns by night  
Dries up his oil to lend the world his light.

'What is thy body but a swallowing grave,  
Seeming to bury that posterity  
Which by the rights of time thou needs must  
have, 759  
If thou destroy them not in dark obscurity?  
If so, the world will hold thee in disdain,  
Sith in thy pride so fair a hope is slain.

'So in thyself thyself art made away;  
A mischief worse than civil home-bred strife,  
Or theirs whose desperate hands themselves do  
slay,  
Or butcher-sire that reaves his son of life.  
Foul-cankering rust the hidden treasure frets,  
But gold that's put to use more gold begets.

'Nay, then,' quoth Adon, 'you will fall again  
Into your idle over-handled theme: 770  
The kiss I gave you is bestow'd in vain,  
And all in vain you strive against the stream;  
For, by this black-faced night, desire's foul  
nurse,  
Your treatise makes me like you worse and  
worse.

'If love have lent you twenty thousand tongues,  
And every tongue more moving than your own,  
Bewitching like the wanton mermaid's songs,  
Yet from mine ear the tempting tune is blown;  
For know, my heart stands armed in mine  
ear,  
And will not let a false sound enter there;

'Lest the deceiving harmony should run 781  
Into the quiet closure of my breast;  
And then my little heart were quite undone,  
In his bedchamber to be barr'd of rest.  
No, lady, no; my heart longs not to groan,  
But soundly sleeps, while now it sleeps alone.

'What have you urged that I cannot reprove?  
The path is smooth that leadeth on to danger:  
I hate not love, but your device in love, 789  
That lends embracements unto every stranger.  
You do it for increase: O strange courses,  
When reason in the bow to lust's arrow!

'Call it not love, for Love to heaven is fled,  
Since sweating Lust on earth usurp'd his name;  
Under whose simple semblance he hath fed  
Upon fresh beauty, blotting it with blame;  
Which the hot tyrant stains and soon  
bereaves,  
As caterpillars do the tender leaves.

'Love comforteth like sunshine after rain,  
But Lust's effect is tempest after sun: 800  
Love's gentle spring doth always fresh remain,  
Lust's winter comes ere summer half be done:  
Love surfeits not, Lust like a glutton dies;  
Love is all truth, Lust full of forged lies.

'More I could tell, but more I dare not say;  
The text is old, the orator too green.  
Therefore, in sadness, now I will away:  
My face is full of shame, my heart of teen:  
Mine ears, that to your wanton talk attended,  
Do burn themselves for having so offended.'

With this, he breaketh from the sweet embrace  
Of those fair arms which bound him to her  
breast,  
And homeward through the dark laund runs  
space:  
Leaves Love upon her back deeply distressed.  
Look, how a bright star shooteth from the  
sky,  
So glides he in the night from Venus' eye;

Which after him she darts, as one on shore  
Gazing upon a late-embarked friend,  
Till the wild waves will have him seen no more,  
Whose ridges with the meeting clouds contend:  
So did the merciless and pitchy night 822  
Fold in the object that did feed her sight.

Whereat amazed, as one that unaware  
Hath dropp'd a precious jewel in the flood,  
Or stonish'd as night-wanderers often are,  
Their light blown out in some mistrustful  
wood,  
Even so confounded in the dark she lay,  
Having lost the fair discovery of her way.

And now she beats her heart, whereat it groans,  
That all the neighbour caves, as seeming  
troubled, 830  
Make verbal repetition of her moans:  
Passion on passion deeply is redoubled:  
'Ay me!' she cries, and twenty times 'Woe,  
woe!  
And twenty echoes twenty times cry so.

She marking them begins a wailing note  
And sings extemporally a woeful  
How love makes young men thrall as  
dote;  
How love is wise in folly, foolish-witty:  
Her heavy anthem still concludes in woe,  
And still the choir of echoes answer so. 840

Her song was tedious and outwore the night,  
For lovers' hours are long, though seeming  
short:  
If pleased themselves, others they think  
delight  
In such-like circumstances, with such-like sport

Their copious stories oftentimes begun  
And without audience and are never done.

For who hath she to spend the night withal  
But idle sounds resembling parasites,  
Like shrill-tongued tapsters answering every  
call.

Soothing the humour of fantastic wits? 850  
She says 'Tis so:' they answer all 'Tis so';  
And would say after her, if she said 'No.'

Lo, here the gentle lark, weary of rest,  
From his moist cabinet mounts up on high,  
And wakes the morning, from whose silver  
breast

The sun ariseth in his majesty;  
Who doth the world so gloriously behold  
That cedar-tops and hills seem burnish'd  
gold.

Venus salutes him with this fair good-morrow:  
'O thou clear god, and patron of all light, 860  
From whom each lamp and shining star doth  
borrow

The beauteous influence that makes him bright,  
There lives a son that suck'd an earthly  
mother.

May lend thee light, as thou dost lend to  
other.

This said, she hasteth to a myrtle grove,  
Musing the morning is so much o'erworn,  
And yet she hears no tidings of her love:  
She hearkens for his hounds and for his horn:  
Anon she hears them chant it lustily,  
And all in haste she coasteth to the cry. 870

And as she runs, the bushes in the way  
Some catch her by the neck, some kiss her face,  
Some twine about her thigh to make her stay:  
She wildly breaketh from their strict embrace,  
Like a milch doe, whose swelling dugs do  
ache,  
Hasting to feed her fawn hid in some brake.

By this, she hears the hounds are at a bay;  
Whereat she starts, like one that spies an adder  
Wreathed up in fatal folds just in his way,  
The fear whereof doth make him shake and  
shudder; 880

Even so the timorous yelping of the hounds  
Appeals her senses and her spirit confounds.

For now she knows it is no gentle chase,  
But the blunt boar, rough bear, or lion proud,  
Because the cry remaineth in one place,  
Where fearfully the dogs exclaim aloud:  
Finding their enemy to be so curst,  
They all strain courtesy who shall cope him  
first.

This dismal cry rings sadly in her ear, 889  
Through which it enters to surprise her heart;  
Who, overcome by doubt and bloodless fear,  
With cold-pale weakness numbs each feeling

yield,  
They hastily fly and dare not stay the field.

Thus stands she in a trembling ecstasy;  
Till, cheering up her senses all dismay'd,  
She tells them 'tis a causeless fantasy,  
And childish error, that they are afraid;  
Bids them leave quaking; bids them fear no  
more:—  
And with that word she spies the hunted  
boar, 900

Whose frothy mouth, bepaint'd all with red,  
Like milk and blood being mingled both to-  
gether,  
A second fear through all her sinews spread,  
Which madly hurries her she knows not  
whither:  
This way she runs, and now she will no  
further,  
But back retires to rate the boar for murder.

A thousand spleens bear her a thousand ways;  
She treads the path that she untreads again;  
Her more than haste is mated with delays,  
Like the proceedings of a drunken brain, 910  
Full of respects, yet nought at all respecting;  
In hand with all things, nought at all  
effecting.

Here kennell'd in a brake she finds a hound,  
And asks the weary catiff for his master,  
And there another licking of his wound,  
'Gainst venom'd sores the only sovereign  
plaster;  
And here she meets another sadly cowering,  
To whom she speaks, and he replies with  
howling.

When he hath ceased his ill-resounding noise,  
Another flap-mouth'd mourner, black and grim,  
Against the welkin volleys out his voice; 920  
Another and another answer him,  
Clapping their proud tails to the ground  
below,  
Shaking their scratch'd ears, bleeding as they  
go.

Look, how the world's poor people are amas'd  
At apparitions, signs and prodigies,  
Whereon with fearful eyes they long have  
gazed,  
Infusing them with dreadful prophecies;  
So she at these sad signs draws up her breath  
And sighing it again, exclaims on Death. 930

'Hard-favour'd tyrant, ugly, meagre, lean,  
Hateful divorce of love,—thus chides she  
Death,—  
'Grim-grinning ghost, earth's worm, what dost  
thou mean  
To stifle beauty and to steal his breath,  
Who when he lived, his breath and beauty  
set  
Gloss on the rose, smell to the violet?

'If he be dead,—O no, it cannot be,  
Seeing his beauty, thou shouldst strike at it:—  
O yes, it may; thou hast no eyes to see,  
But hastily at random dost thou hit. 940

Thy mark is feeble age, but thy false dart  
Mistakes that aim and cleaves an infant's  
heart.

Hadst thou but bid beware, then he had spoke,  
And, hearing him, thy power had lost his  
power.

The Destinies will curse thee for this stroke;  
They bid thee crop a weed, thou pluck'st a  
flower:

Love's golden arrow at him should have fled,  
And not Death's ebony dart, to strike him  
dead.

'Dost thou drink tears, that thou provokest  
such weeping?

What may a heavy groan advantage thee? 950

Why hast thou cast into eternal sleeping

Those eyes that taught all other eyes to see?

Now Nature cares not for thy mortal vigour,  
Since her best work is ruin'd with thy rigour.

Here overcome, as one full of despair,  
She vall'd her eyelids, who, like sluices, stopt  
The crystal tide that from her two cheeks fair  
In the sweet channel of her bosom dropt;

But through the flood-gates breaks the silver  
rain, 959

And with his strong course opens them again.

O, how her eyes and tears did lend and borrow!  
Her eyes seen in the tears, tears in her eye;  
Both crystals, where they view'd each other's  
sorrow,

Sorrow that friendly sighs sought still to dry;  
But like a stormy day, now wind, now rain,  
Sighs dry her cheeks, tears make them wet  
again.

Variable passions throng her constant woe,  
As striving who should best become her grief;  
All entertain'd, each passion labours so,  
That every present sorrow seemeth chief, 970

But none is best: then join they all together,  
Like many clouds consulting for foul weather.

By this, far off she hears some huntman holla  
A nuns's song ne'er pleased her babe so well:  
The dire imagination she did follow

This sound of hope doth labour to expel;

For now reviving joy bids her rejoice,  
And flatters her it is Adonis' voice.

Whereat her tears began to turn their tide,  
Being prison'd in her eye like pearls in glass;  
Yet sometimes falls an orient drop beside, 98  
Which her cheek melts, as scorning it should  
pass,

To wash the foul face of the sluttish ground,  
Who is but drunken when she seemeth  
drown'd.

O hard-believing love, how strange it seems  
Not to believe, and yet too credulous!  
Thy weal and woe are both of them extremes;  
Despair and hope makes thee ridiculous:

The one doth flatter thee in thoughts un-  
likely,

In likely thoughts the other kills thee quickly.

Now she unweaves the web that she hath  
wrought; 992

Adonis lives, and Death is not to blame;  
It was not she that call'd him all-to naught:

Now she adds honours to his hateful name;  
She cleaves him king of graves and grave for  
kings,

Imperious supreme of all mortal things.

No, no,' quoth she, 'sweet Death, I did but  
jest;

Yet pardon me I felt a kind of fear  
When as I met the boar, that bloody beast,  
Which knows no pity, but is still severe; 1000  
Then, gentle shadow,—truth I must confess,—  
I rail'd on thee, fearing my love's decease.

'Tis not my fault: the boar provoked my  
tongue;

Be wreak'd on him, invincible commander;

'Tis he, foul creature, that hath done thee  
wrong;

I did but act, be's author of thy slander:

Grief hath two tongues, and never woman  
yet

Could rule them both without ten women's  
wit.

Thus hoping that Adonis is alive,  
Her rash suspect she doth extenuate; 1020

And that his beauty may the better thrive,  
With Death she humbly doth insinuate;

Tells him of trophies, statues, tombs, and  
stories

His victories, his triumphs and his glories.

'O Jove,' quoth she, 'how much a fool was I  
To be of such a weak and silly mind  
To wail his death who lives and must not die  
Till mutual overthrow of mortal kind!

For he being dead, with him is beauty slain,  
And, beauty dead, black chaos comes again.

Fie, fie, fond love, thou art so full of fear 1022  
As one with treasure laden, hemm'd with  
thieves;

Trifles, unwatched with eye or ear,  
Thy coward heart with false bethinking grieves.'

Even at this word she hears a merry horn,  
Whereat she leaps that was but late forlorn.

As falcon to the lure, away she flies;  
The grass stoops not, she treads on it so light;

And in her haste unfortunately spies  
The foul boar's conquest on her fair delight;

Which seen, her eyes, as murder'd with the  
view, 1031

Like stars ashamed of day, themselves with-  
drew;

Or, as the snail, whose tender horns being hit,  
Shrinks backward in his shelly cave with pain,

And there, all smother'd up, in shade doth sit,  
Long after fearing to creep forth again;

So, at his bloody view, her eyes are fled  
Into the deep dark cabins of her head:

Where they resign their office and their light  
To the disposing of her troubled brain? 1032

Who bids them still consort with ugly night,  
And never wound the heart with looks again;  
Who, like a king perplexed in his throne,  
By their suggestion gives a deadly groan.

Whereat each tributary subject quakes;  
As when the wind, imprison'd in the ground,  
Struggling for passage, earth's foundation  
shakes,  
Which with cold terror doth men's minds  
confound.

This mutiny each part doth so surprise  
That from their dark beds once more leap her  
eyes; 1050

And, being open'd, threw unwilling light  
Upon the wide wound that the boar had  
trench'd  
In his soft flank; whose wonted lily white  
With purple tears, that his wound wept, was  
drench'd:

No flower was nigh, no grass, herb, leaf, or  
weed,  
But stole his blood and seem'd with him to  
bleed.

This solemn sympathy poor Venus noteth;  
Over one shoulder doth she hang her head;  
Dumbly she passions, frantically she doteth; 1050  
She thinks he could not die, he is not dead:  
Her voice is stopt, her joints forget to bow;  
Her eyes are mad that they have wept till  
now.

Upon his hurt she looks so steadfastly,  
That her sight dazzling makes the wound seem  
thrice;  
And then she reprehends her mangling eye,  
That makes more gashes where no breach  
should be:

His face seems twain, each several limb is  
doubled;  
For oft the eye mistakes, the brain being  
troubled.

'My tongue cannot express my grief for one,  
And yet, quoth she, 'behold two Adons dead!  
My eyes are blown away, my salt tears gone,  
Mine eyes are turn'd to fire, my heart to lead:  
Heavy heart's lead, melt at mine eyes' red  
fire!  
So shall I die by drops of hot desire.

'Alas, poor world, what treasure hast thou lost!  
What face remains alive that's worth the  
viewing!  
Whose tongue is music now! what canst thou  
best  
Of things long since, or any thing ensuing!  
The flowers are sweet, their colours fresh and  
trim;  
But true-sweet beauty lived and died with  
him. 1060

'Bonnet nor veil henceforth no creature wear!  
Nor sun nor wind will ever strive to kiss you:  
Having no hair to lose, you need not fear;  
The sun doth scorn you and the wind doth him  
you.

But when Adonis lived, sun and sharp air  
Lark'd him like two thieves, to rob him of his  
fair:

'And therefore would he put his bonnet on,  
Under whose brim the gaudy sun would peep;  
The wind would blow it off and, being gone,  
Play with his locks: then would Adonis weep;  
And straight, in pity of his tender years, 1070  
They both would strive who first should dry  
his tears.

'To see his face the lion walked along  
Behind some hedge, because he would not fear  
him;  
To recreate himself when he hath sung,  
The tiger would be tame and gently hear him;  
If he had spoke, the wolf would leave his  
prey  
And never fright the silly lamb that day.

'When he beheld his shadow in the brook,  
The fishes spread on it their golden gills; 1100  
When he was by, the birds such pleasure took,  
That some would sing, some other in their bills  
Would bring him mulberries and ripe-red  
cherries;  
He fed them with his sight, they him with  
berries.

'But this foul, grim, and urchin-mouted boar,  
Whose downward eye still looketh for a grave,  
Ne'er saw the beauteous livery that he wore:  
Witness the entertainment that he gave:  
If he did see his face, why then I know  
He thought to kiss him, and hath kill'd him  
so. 1110

'Tis true, 'tis true: thus was Adonis slain:  
He ran upon the boar with his sharp spear,  
Who did not whet his teeth at him again,  
But by a kiss thought to persuade him there;  
And nuzzling in his flank, the loving swine  
Sheathed unaware the tuak in his soft groin.

'Had I been tooth'd like him, I must confess,  
With kissing him I should have kill'd him first:  
But he is dead, and never did he bless 1120  
My youth with his: the more am I accurst.  
With this, she falleth in the place she stood,  
And stains her face with his congealed blood.

She looks upon his lips, and they are pale;  
She takes him by the hand, and that is cold;  
She whispers in his ears a heavy tale,  
As if they heard the woeful words she told;  
She lifts the coffer-lids that close his eyes,  
Where, lo, two lamps, burnt out, in darkness  
lies;

Two glasses, where herself herself beheld 1130  
A thousand times, and now no more reflect;  
Their virtue lost, wherein they late excell'd,  
And every beauty robb'd of his effect:  
'Wonder of time,' quoth she, 'this is my  
spite,  
That, though being dead, the day should yet be  
light.

'Since thou art dead, lo, here I prophesy :  
Sorrow on love hereafter shall attend :  
It shall be waited on with jealousy,

wos.

match his  
1140

'It shall be fickle, false and full of fraud,  
Bud and be blasted in a breathing-while ;  
The bottom poison, and the top o'erstraw'd  
With sweets that shall the truest sight beguile :  
The strongest body shall it make most weak,  
Strikes the wise dumb and teach the fool to  
speak.

'It shall be sparing and too full of riot,  
Teaching decrepit age to tread the measures ;  
The staring ruffian shall it keep in quiet,  
Pluck down the rich, enrich the poor with  
treasures ;  
It shall be raging-mad and silly-mild,  
Make the young old, the old become a child.

'It shall suspect where is no cause of fear ;  
It shall not fear where it should most mistrust ;  
It shall be merciful and too severe,  
And most deceiving when it seems most just ;  
Pervcræ it shall be where it shows most  
toward,  
Put fear to valour, courage to the coward.

'It shall be cause of war and dire events,  
And set dimension 'twixt the son and sire ; 1160  
Subject and servile to all discontents,  
As dry combustious matter is to fire :  
Sith in his prime Death doth my love destroy,  
They that love best their loves shall not  
enjoy.'

By this, the boy that by her side lay kill'd  
Was melted like a vapour from her sight,

And in his blood that on the ground lay spill'd,  
A purple flower sprung up, chequer'd with  
white,  
Resembling well his pale cheeks and the  
blood  
Which in round drops upon their whiteness  
stood. 1170

She bows her head, the new-sprung flower to  
smell,  
Comparing it to her Adonis' breath,  
And says, within her bosom it shall dwell,  
Since he himself is reft from her by death :  
She crops the stalk, and in the breach  
appears  
Green dropping sap, which she compares to  
tears.

'Poor flower,' quoth she, 'this was thy father's  
guise—  
Sweet issue of a more sweet-smelling sire—  
For every little grief to wet his eyes :  
To grow unto himself was his desire, 1180  
And so 'tis thine ; but know, it is as good  
To wither in my breast as in his blood.

'Here was thy father's bed, here in my breast ;  
Thou art the next of blood, and 'tis thy right :  
Lo, in this hollow cradle take thy rest,  
My throbbing heart shall rock thee day and  
night :  
There shall not be one minute in an hour  
Wherein I will not kiss my sweet love's  
flower.'

Thus weary of the world, away she hies,  
And yokes her silver doves : by whose swift aid  
Their mistress mounted through the empty  
skies 1191  
In her light chariot quickly is convey'd ;  
Holding their course to Paphos, where their  
queen  
Means to immure herself and not be seen.

# THE RAPE OF LUCRECE

TO THE

RIGHT HONOURABLE HENRY WRIOTHESLY,

EARL OF SOUTHAMPTON, AND BARON OF TICHFIELD.

THE love I dedicate to your lordship is without end ; whereof this pamphlet, without beginning, is but a superfluous moiety. The warrant I have of your honourable disposition, not the worth of my untutored lines, makes it assured of acceptance. What I have done is yours ; what I have to do is yours ; being part in all I have, devoted yours. Were my worth greater, my duty would show greater ; meantime, as it is, it is bound to your lordship, to whom I wish long life, still lengthened with all happiness.

Your lordship's in all duty,

WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE.

## THE ARGUMENT

LUCIUS TARQUINIUS, for his excessive pride surnamed Superbus, after he had caused his own father-in-law Servius Tullius to be cruelly murdered, and, contrary to the Roman laws and customs, not requiring or staying for the people's suffrages, had possessed himself of the kingdom, went, accompanied with his sons and other noblemen of Rome, to besiege Ardea. During which siege the principal men of the army meeting one evening at the tent of Sextus Tarquinius,

his own  
In that sudden arrival,  
to make trial of that which every one had before avouched, only Collatinus finds his wife, though it were late in the night, spinning amongst her maids : the other ladies were all found dancing and revelling, or in several disports. Whereupon the noblemen yielded Collatinus the victory, and his wife the fame. At that time Sextus Tarquinius being inflamed with Lucrece's beauty, yet smothering his passions for the present, departed with the rest back to the camp ; from whence he shortly after privily withdrew himself, and was, according to his estate, royally entertained and lodged by Lucrece at Collatium. The same night he treacherously stealth into her chamber, violently ravished her, and early in the morning speedeth away. Lucrece, in this lamentable plight, hastily dispatcheth messengers, one to Rome for her father, another to the camp for Collatine. They came, the one accompanied with Junius Brutus, the other with Publius Valerius ; and finding Lucrece attired in mourning habit, demanded the cause of her sorrow. She, first taking an oath of them for her revenge, revealed the actor, and whole manner of his dealing, and withal suddenly stabbed herself. Which done, with one consent they all vowed to root out the whole hated family of the Tarquins ; and bearing the dead body to Rome, Brutus acquainted the people with the doer and manner of the vile deed, with a bitter invective against the tyranny of the king : wherewith the people were so moved, that with one consent and a general acclamation the Tarquins were all exiled, and the state government changed from kings to consuls.

From the besieged Ardea all in post,  
Borne by the trustless wings of false desire,  
Last-brooded Tarquin leaves the Roman  
host,  
And to Collatine bears the lightless fire  
Which, in his embraces hid, lurks to aspire  
And gapes with embracing flames the waist  
Of Collatine's fair love, Lucrece the chaste.

Haply that name of 'chaste' unhappily set  
This hateful edge on his keen appetite ;  
When Collatine unwisely did not let  
To praise the clear unmatched red and white  
Which triumph'd in that sky of his delight,  
Where mortal stars, as bright as heaven's  
beauties,  
With pure aspects did him peculiar duties.



For he the night before, in Tarquin's tent,  
Unlock'd the treasure of his happy state;  
What priceless wealth the heavens had him lent  
In the possession of his beauteous mate;  
Reckoning his fortune at such high-proud rate,  
That kings might be espoused to more fame,  
But king nor peer to such a peerless dame. 21

O happiness enjoy'd but of a few!  
And, if possess'd, as soon decay'd and done  
As is the morning's silver-melting dew  
Against the golden splendour of the sun!  
An expired date, cancell'd ere well begun:  
Honour and beauty, in the owner's arms,  
Are weakly fortress'd from a world of harms.

Beauty itself doth of itself persuade  
The eyes of men without an orator;  
What needeth then apologies be made,  
To set forth that which is so singular?  
Or why is Collatine the publisher  
Of that rich jewel he should keep unknown  
From thievish ears, because it is his own!

Perchance his boast of Lucrece' sovereignty  
Suggested this proud issue of a king;  
For by our ears our hearts oft tainted be:  
Perchance that envy of so rich a thing,  
Braving compare, disdainfully did sting 40  
His high-pitch'd thoughts, that meaner men  
should vaunt  
That golden hap which their superiors want.

But some untimely thought did instigate  
His all-too-timeless speed, if none of those:  
His honour, his affairs, his friends, his state,  
Neglected all, with swift intent he goes  
To quench the coal which in his liver glows.  
O rash false heat, wrapp'd in repentant cold,  
Thy hasty spring still blasts, and ne'er grows  
old!

When at Collatium this false lord arrived, 50  
Well was he welcomed by the Roman dame,  
Within whose face beauty and virtue strived  
Which of them both should underprop her  
fame:  
When virtue bragg'd, beauty would blush for  
shame;  
When beauty boasted blushes, in despite  
Virtue would stain that o'er with silver white.

But beauty, in that white intitled,  
From Venus' doves doth challenge that fair  
field:  
Then virtue claims from beauty beauty's red,  
Which virtue gave the golden age to gild 60  
Their silver cheeks, and call'd it then their  
shield:  
Teaching them thus to use it in the fight,  
When shame assail'd, the red should fence  
the white.

This heraldry in Lucrece's face was seen,  
Argued by beauty's red and virtue's white:  
Of either's colour was the other's sign;  
Proving from world's minority 70  
Yet their ambition makes them still to

The sovereignty of either being so great,  
That oft they interchange each other's seat.

Their silent war of lilies and of roses, 71  
Which Tarquin view'd in her fair face's field,  
In their pure ranks his traitor eye encloses;  
Where, lest between them both it should be  
kill'd,

The coward captive vanquish'd doth yield  
To those two armies that would let him go,  
Rather than triumph in so false a foe.

Now thinks he that her husband's shallow  
tongue,—  
The niggard prodigal that praised her so,—  
In that high task hath done her beauty wrong,  
Which far exceeds his barren skill to show: 81  
Therefore that praise which Collatine doth owe  
Enchanted Tarquin answers with surmise,  
In silent wonder of still-gazing eyes.

This earthly saint, adored by this devil,  
Little suspecteth the false worshipper;  
For unstain'd thoughts do seldom dream on  
evil;  
Birds never limed no secret bushes fear:  
So guiltless she securely gives good cheer 89  
And reverend welcome to her princely guest,  
Whose inward ill no outward harm express'd:

For that he colour'd with his high estate,  
Hiding base sin in plaits of majesty;  
That nothing in him seem'd inordinate,  
Save sometime too much wonder of his eye,  
Which, having all, all could not satisfy;  
But, poorly rich, so wanteth in his store,  
That, cloy'd with much, he pineth still for  
more.

But she, that never coped with stranger eyes,  
Could pick no meaning from their prating  
looks, 100  
Nor read the subtle-shining secrecies  
Writ in the glassy margents of such books:  
She touch'd no unknown baits, nor fear'd no  
books;  
Nor could she moralize his wanton sight,  
More than his eyes were open'd to the light.

He stories to her ears her husband's fame,  
Won in the fields of fruitful Italy;  
And decks with praises Collatine's high name,  
Made glorious by his manly chivalry  
With bruised arms and wreaths of victory: 110  
Her joy with heaved-up hand she doth ex-

wordless, so greets heaven for his  
success.

Far from the purpose of his coming hither,  
He makes excuses for his being there:  
No cloudy show of stormy blustering weather  
Doth yet in his fair welkin once appear;  
Till sable Night, mother of Dread and Fear,  
Upon the world dim darkness doth display,  
And in her vaulty prison stows the Day.

For then is Tarquin brought unto his bed, 120  
Intending weakness with heavy sleep;

Huge rocks, high winds, strong pirates,  
shelves and sands,  
The merchant fears, are rich at home he  
lands.

Now is he come unto the chamber door,  
That shuts him from the heaven of his thought,  
Which with a yielding latch, and with no more,  
Hath barr'd him from the blessed thing he  
sought. 340

So from himself impiety hath wrought,  
That for his prey to pray he doth begin,  
As if the heavens should countenance his sin.

But in the midst of his unfruitful prayer,  
Having solicited th' eternal power  
That his foul thoughts might compass his fair  
fair,

And they would stand auspicious to the hour,  
Even there he starts: quoth he, 'I must de-  
flower:

The powers to whom I pray abhor this fact,  
How can they then assist me in the act! 350

'Then Love and Fortune be my gods, my  
guide!

My will is back'd with resolution:  
Thoughts are but dreams till their effects be  
tried:

The blackest sin is clear'd with absolution;  
Against love's fire fear's frost hath dissolution.  
The eye of heaven is out, and misty night  
Covers the shame that follows sweet delight.'

This said, his guilty hand pluck'd up the latch,  
And with his knee the door he opens wide.  
The dove sleeps fast that this night-owl will  
catch: 360

Thus treason works ere traitors be espied.  
Who sees the lurking serpent steps aside;  
But she, sound sleeping, fearing no such

Lies at the mercy of his mortal sting.

Into the chamber wickedly he stalks,  
And gazeth on her yet unstained bed.  
The curtains being close, about he walks,  
Rolling his greedy eyeballs in his head:  
By their high treason is his heart misled;

Which gives the watch-word to his hand full  
soon 370  
To draw the cloud that hides the silver moon.

Look, as the fair and fiery-pointed sun,  
Rushing from forth a cloud, bereaves our

Even so, the curtain drawn, his eyes begun  
To wink, being blinded with a greater light:  
Whether it is that she reflects so bright,  
That dazzleth them, or else some shame sup-

But ~~that~~ they are, and keep themselves en-  
closed.

G. had they in that darkness prison died!  
Then had they seen the period of their ill; 380

Then Collatine again, by Lucrece's side,  
In his clear bed might have reposed still:  
But they must ope, this blessed league to kill;  
And holy-thoughted Lucrece to their sight  
Must sell her joy, her life, her world's de-  
light.

Her lily hand her rosy cheek lies under,  
Cozening the pillow of a lawful kiss;  
Who, therefore angry, seems to part in sunder,  
Swelling on either side to want his bliss:  
Between whose hills her head entombed is: 390  
Where, like a virtuous monument, she lies,  
To be admired of lewd unhallo'd eyes.

Without the bed her other fair hand was,  
On the green coverlet; whose perfect white  
Show'd like an April daisy on the grass,  
With pearly sweat, resembling dew of night.  
Her eyes, like marigolds, had aweath'rd their  
light,  
And canopied in darkness sweetly lay,  
Till they might open to adorn the day.

Her hair, like golden threads, play'd with her  
breath; 400  
O modest wantons! wanton modesty!  
Showing life's triumph in the map of death,  
And death's dim look in life's mortality:  
Each in her sleep themselves so beauty,  
As if between them twain there were no  
strife,  
But that life lived in death, and death in life.

Her breasts, like ivory globes circled with blue,  
A pair of maiden worlds unconquered,  
Save of their lord no bearing yoke they knew,  
And him by oath they truly honoured. 410  
These worlds in Tarquin new ambition bred;  
Who, like a foul usurper, went about  
From this fair throne to heave the owner out.

What could he see but mightily he noted?  
What did he note but strongly he desired?  
What he beheld, on that he firmly doted,  
And in his will his wilful eye he tired.  
With more than admiration he admired  
Her azure veins, her alabaster skin,  
Her coral lips, her snow-white dimpled chin.

As the grim lion fawneth o'er his prey, 420  
Sharp hunger by the conquest satisfied,  
So o'er this sleeping soul doth Tarquin stay,  
His rage of lust by gazing qualified;  
Slack'd, not suppress'd; for standing by her  
side,

His eye, which late this mutiny restrains,  
Unto a greater uproar tempts his veins:

And they, like straggling slaves for pillage  
fighting,  
Obdurate vassals fell exploits effecting,  
In bloody death and ravishment delighting,  
Nor children's tears nor mothers' groans respect-  
ing. 430

Swell in their pride, the onset still expecting:  
Anon his beating heart, alarm striking,  
Gives the hot charge and bids them go their  
making.

His drumming heart cheers up his burning  
eye,  
His eye commends the leading to his hand ;  
His hand, as proud of such a dignity,  
Smoking with pride, march'd on to make his  
stand  
On her bare breast, the heart of all her land ;  
Whose ranks of blue veins, as his hand did  
scale,  
Left their round turrets destitute and pale. 440

They, mustering to the quiet cabinet  
Where their dear governess and lady lies,  
Do tell her she is dreadfully beset,  
And fright her with confusion of their cries :  
She, much amazed, breaks ope her lock'd-up  
eyes,  
Who, peeping forth this tumult to behold,  
Are by his flaming torch dimm'd and con-  
troll'd.

Imagine her as one in dead of night  
From forth dull sleep by dreadful fancy waking,  
That thinks she hath beheld some ghastly  
sprite, 451  
Whose grim aspect sets every joint a-shaking :  
What terror 'tis ! but she, in worse taking,  
From sleep disturbed, heedfully doth view  
The sight which makes supposed terror true.

Wrapp'd and confounded in a thousand fears,  
Like to a new-kill'd bird she trembling lies ;  
She dares not look ; yet, winking, there appears  
Quick-shifting antics, ugly in her eyes :  
Such shadows are the weak brain's forgeries ;  
Who, angry that the eyes fly from their  
lights, 461  
In darkness daunts them with more dreadful  
sights.

His hand, that yet remains upon her breast,—  
Rude ram, to batter such an ivory wall !—  
May feel her heart—poor citizen !—distress'd,  
Wounding itself to death, rise up and fall,  
Beating her bulk, that his hand shakes withal.  
This moves in him more rage and lesser pity,  
To make the breach and enter this sweet  
city.

First, like a trumpet, doth his tongue begin 470  
To sound a parley to his heartless foe ;  
Who o'er the white sheet peers her whiter  
chin,  
The reason of this rash alarm to know,  
Which he by dumb demeanour seeks to show ;  
But she with vehement prayers urgeth still  
Under what colour he commits this ill.

Thus he replies : " The colour in thy face,  
That even for anger makes the lily pale,  
And the red seen black at her own disgrace,  
Shall plead for me and tell my loving tale : 480  
Under that colour am I come to scale  
Thy never-conquer'd fort : the fault is thine,  
For those three eyes betray thee unto mine.

" Thus I forecast all thee, if thou mean to chide :  
Thy beauty hath ensnared thee to this night,

Where thou with patience must my will abide ;  
My will that marks thee for my earth's de-  
light,  
Which I to conquer sought with all my might ;  
But as reproof and reason beat it dead,  
By thy bright beauty was it newly bred. 490

I see what crosses my attempt will bring ;  
I know what thorns the growing rose defends ;  
I think the honey guarded with a sting ;  
All this beforehand counsel comprehends :  
But will is deaf and hears no heedful friends ;  
Only he hath an eye to gaze on beauty,  
And dotes on what he looks, 'gainst law or  
duty.

I have debated, even in my soul,  
What wrong, what shame, what sorrow I shall  
breed ;  
But nothing can affection's course control, 500  
Or stop the headlong fury of his speed.  
I know repentant tears ensue the deed,  
Reproach, disdain, and deadly enmity ;  
Yet strive I to embrace mine infancy.

This said, he shakes aloft his Roman blade,  
Which, like a falcon towering in the skies,  
Coucheth the fowl below with his wings' shade,  
Whose crooked beak threatens if he mount he  
dies :  
So under his insulting falchion lies  
Harmless Lucretia, marking what he tells  
With trembling fear, as fowl hear falcon's  
bells. 511

'Lucrece,' quoth he, 'this night I must enjoy  
thee ;  
If thou deny, then force must work my way.  
For in thy bed I purpose to destroy thee :  
That done, some worthless slave of thine I'll  
slay,  
To kill thine honour with thy life's decay ;  
And in thy dead arms do I mean to place  
him,  
Swearing I slew him, seeing thee embrace  
him.

'So thy surviving husband shall remain  
The scornful mark of every open eye ; 520  
Thy kinsmen hang their heads at this disdain,  
Thy issue blurr'd with nameless bastardy :  
And thou, the author of thy obloquy,  
Shalt have thy trespass cited up in rhymes,  
And sung by children in succeeding times.

'But if thou yield, I rest thy secret friend :  
The fault unknown is as a thought unacted ;  
A little harm done to a great good end  
For lawful policy remains enacted.  
The poisonous apple sometimes is compacted  
In a pure compound, being so applied. 531  
His venom in effect is purified.

'Then, for thy husband and thy children's sake,  
Tender my suit ; bequeath not to their loss  
The shame that from them no device can take,  
The blemish that will never be forgot ;  
Worse than a slavish wife or birth-born's blot :

For marks designed in man's nativity  
Are nature's faults, not their own infamy.'

Here with a cockatrice' dead-killing eye 540  
He rouseth up himself and makes a pause;  
While she, the picture of pure piety,  
Like a white hind under the gripe's sharp  
claws,

Pleads, in a wilderness where are no laws,  
To the rough beast that knows no gentle  
right,  
Nor ought obeys but his foul appetite.

But when a black-faced cloud the world doth  
threat,

In his dim mist the aspiring mountains hiding,  
From earth's dark womb some gentle gust doth  
get,

Which blows these pitchy vapours from their  
hiding. 550

Hindering their present fall by this dividing;  
So his unhallo'd haste her words delays,  
And moody Pluto winks while Orpheus  
plays.

Yet, foul night-waking cat, he doth but dally,  
While in his hold-fast foot the weak mouse  
penteth:

Her sad behaviour feeds his vulture folly,  
A swallowing gulf that even in plenty wanteth:  
His ear her prayers admits, but his heart  
granteth

No penetrable entrance to her pining:  
Tears harden lust, though marble wear with  
raining. 560

Her pity-pleading eyes are sadly fixed  
In the remorseless wrinkles of his face;  
Her modest eloquence with sighs is mixed,  
Which to her oratory adds more grace.

She puts the period often from his place;  
And midst the sentences so her accent breaks,  
That twice she doth begin ere once she  
speaks.

She conjures him by high almighty Jove,  
By knighthood, gentry, and sweet friendship's  
oath,

By her untimely tears, her husband's love, 570  
By holy human law, and common troth,  
By heaven and earth, and all the power of  
both,

That to his borrow'd bed he make retire,  
And steep to honour, not to foul desire.

Quoth she, 'Beware! not hospitality  
With such black payment as thou hast pro-  
tended;

Mud not the fountain that gave drink to thee;  
Nay, not the thing that cannot be amended;  
Nay, try its aim before thy shoot be ended;  
He is no woodman that doth bend his bow  
To smite a poor unseasonable doe. 581

'My husband is thy friend; for his sake spare

thyself; for thine own sake leave

Myself a weakling; do not then ensnare me.  
Thou look'st not like deceit; do not deceive me.  
My sighs, like whirlwinds, labour hence to  
heave thee:

If ever man were moved with woman's  
moans,  
Be moved with my tears, my sighs, my  
groans:

'All which together, like a troubled ocean,  
Beat at thy rocky and wreck-threatening heart,  
To soften it with their continual motion; 591  
For stones dissolved to water do convert.  
O, if no harder than a stone thou art,  
Melt at my tears, and be compassionate!  
Soft pity enters at an iron gate.

'In Tarquin's likeness I did entertain thee:  
Hast thou put on his shape to do him shame?  
To all the host of heaven I complain me,  
Thou wrong'st his honour, wound'st his princely  
name.

'Thou art not what thou seem'st; and if the  
same, 600  
Thou seem'st not what thou art, a god, a  
king;  
For kings like gods should govern every  
thing.

'How will thy shame be seeded in thine age,  
When thus thy vices bud before thy spring!  
If in thy hope thou darest do such outrage,  
What darest thou not when once thou art a  
king?  
O, be remember'd, no outrageous thing  
From vassal actors can be wiped away;  
Then kings' misdeeds cannot be hid in clay.

'This deed will make thee only loved for  
fear; 610  
But happy monarchs still are fear'd for love:  
With foul offenders thou perforce must bear,  
When they in thee the like offences prove:  
If but for fear of this, thy will remove;  
For princes are the glass, the school, the  
book,  
Where subjects' eyes do learn, do read, do  
look.

'And wilt thou be the school where Lust shall  
learn?  
Must he in thee read lectures of such shame?  
Wilt thou be glass wherein it shall discern  
Authority for sin, warrant for blame, 620  
To privilege dishonour in thy name?  
Thou back'st reproach against long-living  
land,  
And makest fair reputation but a bawd.

'Hast thou command? by him that gave it  
thee,  
From a pure heart command thy rebel will:  
Draw not thy sword to guard iniquity,  
For it was lent thee all that brood to kill.  
Thy princely office how canst thou fulfil,  
When, pattern'd by thy fault, foul sin may  
say,  
He learn'd to sin, and thou dost teach the  
way! 630

Think but how vile a spectacle it were,  
To view thy present trespass in another.  
Men's faults do seldom to themselves appear;  
Their own transgressions partially they smother:  
This guilt would seem death-worthy in thy brother.

O, how are they wrapp'd in with infamies  
That from their own misdeeds advance their eyes!

To thee, to thee, my heaved-up hands appeal,  
Not to seducing lust, thy rash rellier:  
I sue for exiled majesty's repeal: 640  
Let him return, and flattering thoughts retire:  
His true respect will prison false desire,  
And wipe the dim mist from thy dotting eye.

That thou shalt see thy state and pity mine.'

'Have done,' quoth he: 'my uncontrolled tide  
Turns not, but swells the higher by this let.  
Small lights are soon blown out, huge fires  
abide.

And with the wind in greater fury fret:  
The petty streams that pay a daily debt  
To their salt sovereign, with their fresh falls  
haste 650  
Add to his flow, but alter not his taste.'

'Thou art,' quoth she, 'a sea, a sovereign king;  
And, lo, there falls into thy boundless flood  
Black lust, diabolous, shame, misgoverning,  
Who seek to stain the ocean of thy blood.  
If all these petty hills shall change thy good,  
Thy sea within a puddle's womb is hearsed,  
And not the puddle in thy sea dispersed.

'So shall these slaves be king, and thou their  
slave;  
Thou nobly base, they basely dignified; 660  
Thou their fair life, and they thy fouler grave:  
Thou leashed in their shame, they in thy  
pride:

The lesser thing should not the greater hide:  
The cedar stoops not to the base shrub's foot,  
But low shrubs wither at the cedar's root.

'So let thy thoughts, low vassals to thy  
state—

'No more,' quoth he; 'by heaven, I will not  
hear thee:  
Yield to my love; if not, enforced hate,  
Instead of love's coy touch, shall rudely tear  
thee;

That done, despitefully I mean to hear thee 670  
Unto the base bed of some rascal groom,  
To be thy partner in this shameful doom.'

This said, he sets his foot upon the light,  
For light and lust are deadly enemies:  
Shame folded up in blind concealing night,  
When most unseen, then most doth tyrannize.  
The wolf hath seized his prey, the poor lamb  
cries;

Till with her own white fleece her voice  
contrail'd  
Extends her outcry in her life's sweet fold:

or with the mighty than that she wears 680  
He pens her piteous clamours in her head;  
Cooling his hot face in the chastest tears  
That ever modest eyes with sorrow shed.  
That prone lust should stain so pure a bed!  
The spots whereof could weeping purify,  
Her tears should drop on them perpetually.

But she hath lost a dearer thing than life,  
And he hath won what he would lose again:  
This forced league doth force a fruitless strife;  
This momentary joy breeds months of pain;  
This hot desire converts to cold disdain: 690  
Pure Chastity is rifled of her store,  
And Lust, the thief, far poorer than before.

Look, as the full-fed hound or gorged hawk,  
Unapt for tender smell or speedy flight,  
Make slow pursuit, or altogether balk  
The prey wherein by nature they delight:  
So surfeit-taking Tarquin fares this night:  
His taste delicious, in digestion searing,  
Devours his will, that lived by foul devouring.

O, deeper sin than bottomless conceit 700  
Can comprehend in still imagination!  
Drunken Desire must vomit his receipt,  
Ere he can see his own abomination.  
While Lust is in his pride, no exclamation  
Can curb his heat or rein his rash desire,  
Till like a jade Self-will himself doth tie.

And then with lank and lean discolour'd  
cheek,  
With heavy eye, knit brow, and strengthless  
pace,  
Feebly Desire, all recreant, poor, and meek, 710  
Like to a bankrupt beggar walls his case:  
The flesh being proud, Desire doth fight with  
Grace,  
For there it revels; and when that decays,  
The guilty rebel for remission prays.

So fares it with this fawful lord of Rome,  
Who this accomplishment so hotly chased;  
For now against himself he sounds this doom,  
That through the length of times he stands  
disgraced:  
Besides, his soul's fair temple is defaced; 720  
To whose weak ruins musters troops of cares,  
To ask the spotted princess how she fares.

She says, her subjects with foul insurrection  
Have batter'd down her consecrated wall,  
And by their mortal fault brought in sub-  
jection  
Her immortality, and made her thrall  
To living death and pain perpetual:  
Which in her presence she controlled with,  
But her foresight could not forestall their  
will.

Even in this thought through the dark night he  
stealth,  
A captive victor that hath lost in;  
Bearing away the wound that not  
The scar that will, despite of cure, remain;  
Leaving his spoil perpetually in greater gain.

She bears the load of lust he left behind,  
And he the burthen of a guilty mind.

He like a thievish dog creeps sadly thence;  
She like a wearied lamb lies panting there;  
He scowls and hates himself for his offence;  
She, desperate, with her nails her flesh doth  
tear.

He faintly flies, sweating with guilty fear; 740  
She stays, exclaiming on the direful night;  
He runs, and chides his vanish'd, loathed  
delight.

He thence departs a heavy convertite;  
She there remains a hopeless castaway;  
He in his speed looks for the morning light;  
She prays she never may behold the day.  
'For day,' quoth she, 'night's scapes doth open  
lay,

And my true eyes have never practised how  
To cloak offences with a cunning brow.

'They think not but that every eye can see 750  
The same disgrace which they themselves be-  
hold;

And therefore would they still in darkness be,  
To have their unseen sin remain untold;  
For they their guilt with weeping will unfold,  
And grave, like water that doth eat in steel,  
Upon my cheeks what helpless shame I feel.'

Here she exclaims against repose and rest,  
And bids her eyes hereafter still be blind.  
She wakes her heart by beating on her breast,  
And bids it leap from thence, where it may find  
Some purer chest to close so pure a mind. 761  
Frantic with grief thus breathes she forth her  
spite

Against the unseen secrecy of night:

'O comfort-killing Night, image of hell!  
Dim register and notary of shame!  
Black stage for tragedies and murders fell!  
Vast sin-concealing chaos! nurse of blame!  
Blind muffled bawd! dark harbour for defame!  
Grim cave of death! whispering conspirator  
With close-tongued treason and the raviager!

'O hateful, vaporous, and foggy Night! 771  
Since thou art guilty of my cureless crime,  
Muster thy mists to meet the eastern light,  
Make war against proportion'd course of time;  
Or if thou wilt permit the sun to climb  
His wonted height, yet ere he go to bed,  
Knit poisonous clouds about his golden  
head.

'With rotten damps ravish the morning air;  
Let their exhaled unwholesome breaths make  
sick

The life of purity, the supreme fair, 780  
Ere he arrive his weary noon-tide prick;  
And let thy misty vapours march so thick,  
That in their smoky ranks his smother'd  
light

May set at noon and make perpetual night.

'Were Tarquin Night, as he is but Night's  
The green he would detain;

Her twinkling handmaids too, by him defiled,  
Through Night's black bosom should not peer  
again:

So should I have co-partners in my pain;  
And fellowship in woe doth woe assuage, 790  
As palmers' chat makes short their pilgrim  
age.

'Where now I have no one to blush with me,  
To cross their arms and hang their heads with  
mine,

To mask their brows and hide their infamy;  
But I alone alone must sit and pine,  
Seasoning the earth with showers of silver  
brine.

Mingling my talk with tears, my grief with  
groans,  
Poor wasting monuments of lasting moans.

'O Night, thou furnace of foul-reeking smoke,  
Let not the jealous Day behold that face 800  
Which underneath thy black all-hiding cloak  
Immediately lies martyr'd with disgrace!  
Keep still possession of thy gloomy place,  
That all the faults which in thy reign are  
made  
May likewise be sepulchred in thy shade!

'Make me not object to the tell-tale Day!  
The light will show, character'd in my brow,  
The story of sweet chastity's decay,  
The impious breach of holy wedlock vow:  
Yea, the illiterate, that know not how 810  
To cipher what is writ in learned books,  
Will quote my loathsome trespass in my  
looks.

'The nurse, to still her child, will tell my story,  
And fright her crying babe with Tarquin's  
name;

The orator, to deck his oratory,  
Will couple my reproach to Tarquin's shame;  
Feast-finding minstrels, tuning my defame,  
Will tie the hearers to attend each line,  
How Tarquin wronged me, I Collatine.

'Let my good name, that senseless reputation,  
For Collatine's dear love be kept unspotted: 820  
If that be made a theme for disputation,  
The branches of another root are rotted,  
And undeserved reproach to him allotted  
That is as clear from this attain of mine  
As I, ere this, was pure to Collatine.

'O unseen shame! invisible disgrace!  
O unfelt sore! crest-wounding, private scar!  
Reproach is stamp'd in Collatinus' face,  
And Tarquin's eye may read the mot afar, 830  
How he in peace is wounded, not in war.  
Alas, how many bear such shameful blows,  
Which not themselves, but he that gives  
them knows!

'H, Collatine, thine honour lay in me,  
From me by strong assault it is bereft.  
My honey lost, and I, a drone-like bee,  
Have no perfection of my summer left,  
But robb'd and mangled by injurious theft:

In thy weak hive a wandering wasp hath  
 crept,  
 And suck'd the honey which thy chaste bee  
 kept. 840

'Yet am I guilty of thy honour's wrack;  
 Yet for thy honour did I entertain him;  
 Coming from thee, I could not put him back,  
 For it had been dishonour to disdain him:  
 Besides, of weariness he did complain him,  
 And talk'd of virtue: O unlook'd-for evil,  
 When virtue is profaned in such a devil!

'Why should the worm intrude the maiden  
 bud?  
 Or hateful cuckoos hatch in sparrows' nests?  
 Or toads infect fair founts with venom mud?  
 Or tyrant folly lurk in gentle breasts?  
 Or kings be breakers of their own behests? 851  
 But no perfection is so absolute,  
 That some impurity doth not pollute.

'The aged man that coffers-up his gold  
 Is plagued with cramps and gout and painful  
 fits;  
 And scarce hath eyes his treasure to behold,  
 But like still-pining Tantalus he sits,  
 And useless burns the harvest of his wits;  
 Having no other pleasure of his gain 860  
 But torment that it cannot cure his pain.

'So then he hath it when he cannot use it,

they too strong,  
 To hold their cursed-blessed fortune long.  
 The sweets we wish for turn to loathed sour  
 Even in the moment that we call them ours.

'Unruly blasts wait on the tender spring;  
 Unwholesome weeds take root with precious  
 flowers; 870  
 The adder biases where the sweet birds sing;  
 What virtue breeds iniquity devours:  
 We have no good that we can say is ours,  
 But ill-annexed Opportunity  
 Or kills his life or else his quality.

'O Opportunity, thy guilt is great!  
 'Tis thou that executest the traitor's treason:  
 Thou set'st at the wolf where he the lamb may get,  
 Whoever plots the sin, thou point'st the  
 season;  
 'Tis thou that spurn'st at right, at law, 880  
 reason;  
 And in thy shady cell, where none may spy  
 him,  
 Sits Sin, to seize the souls that wander by  
 him.

'Thou makest the vestal violate her oath;  
 Thou blow'st the fire when temperance  
 thaw'd;  
 Thou smother'st honesty, thou murder'st truth  
 Thou foul abettor! thou notorious bawd!  
 Thou plantest scandal and displacest laud;  
 Thou ravisher, thou traitor, thou false thief,  
 Thy honey turns to gall, thy joy to grief!

Thy secret pleasure turns to open shame, 890  
 Thy private feasting to a public fast,  
 Thy smoothing titles to a ragged name,  
 Thy sugar'd tongue to bitter wormwood taste:  
 Thy violent vanities can never last.

How comes it then, vile Opportunity,  
 Being so bad, such numbers seek for thee?

When wilt thou be the humble suppliant's  
 friend,  
 And bring him where his suit may be obtain'd?  
 When wilt thou sort an hour great strifes to  
 end?

Or free that soul which wretchedness hath  
 chain'd? 900  
 Give physic to the sick, ease to the pain'd?  
 The poor, lame, blind, halt, creep, cry out for  
 thee;  
 But they ne'er meet with Opportunity.

The patient dies while the physician sleeps;  
 The orphan pines while the oppressor feeds;  
 Justice is feasting while the widow weeps;  
 Advice is sporting while infection breeds:  
 Thou grant'st no time for charitable deeds:  
 Wrath, envy, treason, rape, and murder's  
 rages,  
 Thy heinous hours wait on them as their  
 pages. 910

When Truth and Virtue have to do with thee,  
 A thousand crosses keep them from thy aid:  
 They buy thy help; but Sin ne'er gives a fee,  
 He gratis comes; and thou art well appeal'd  
 As well to hear as grant what he hath said.  
 My Collatine would else have come to me  
 When Tarquin did, but he was stay'd by  
 thee.

'Guilty thou art of murder and of theft,  
 Guilty of perjury and subornation,  
 Guilty of treason, forgery, and shift, 920  
 Guilty of incest, that abomination;  
 An accessory by thine inclination  
 To all sins past, and all that are to come.  
 From the creation to the general doom.

'Mis-shapen Time, copesmate of ugly Night,  
 Swift subtle post, carrier of grisly care,  
 Eater of youth, false slave to false delight,  
 Base watch of woes, sin's pack-horse, virtue's  
 snare;  
 Thou nurrest all and murder'st all that are:  
 O, hear me then, injurious, shifting Time!  
 Be guilty of my death, since of my crime. 931

'Why hath thy servant, Opportunity,  
 Betray'd the hours thou gavest me to repose,  
 Cancell'd my fortunes, and enchain'd me  
 To endless date of never-ending woes?  
 Time's office is to fine the hate of foes;  
 To eat up errors by opinion bred,  
 Not spend the dowry of a lawful bed.

'Time's glory is to calm contending kings,  
 To unmask falsehood and bring truth to light,  
 To stamp the seal of time in aged things, 941  
 To wake the morn and sentinel the night,  
 To wrong the wronger till he render right.

To ruinate proud buildings with thy hour,  
And smear with dust their glittering golden  
towers;

'To fill with worm-holes stately monuments,  
To feed oblivion with decay of things,  
To blot old books and alter their contents,  
To pluck the quills from ancient ravens' wings,  
To dry the old oak's sap and cherish springs,  
To spoil antiquities of hammer'd steel, 95  
And turn the giddy round of Fortune's  
wheel;

'To show the beldam daughters of her daughter,  
To make the child a man, the man a child,  
To slay the tiger that doth live by slaughter,  
To tame the unicorn and lion wild,  
To mock the subtle in themselves beguiled,  
To cheer the ploughman with increaseful  
crops,  
And waste huge stones with little water-drops.

'Why work'st thou mischief in thy pilgrimage,  
Unless thou couldst return to make amends?  
One poor retiring minute in an age  
Would purchase thee a thousand thousand  
friends,  
Lending him wit that to bad debtors lends:  
O, this dread night, wouldst thou one hour  
come back,  
I could prevent this storm and shun thy  
wrack!

Thou ceaseless lackey to eternity,  
With some mischance cross Tarquin in his  
fight:

Devise extremes beyond extremity,  
To make him curse this cursed criminal night:  
Let ghastly shadows his lewd eyes affright; 97  
And the dire thought of his committed evil  
Shape every bush a hideous shapeless devil.

'Disturb his hours of rest with restless trances,  
Afflict him in his bed with bedrid groans;  
Let there bechance him pitiful mischance,  
To make him moan; but pity not his moans:  
Steele him with harden'd hearts, harder than  
stones;

And let mild women to him lose their mild-  
ness,  
Wildier to him than tigers in their wildness.

'Let him have time to tear his curled hair, 98  
Let him have time against himself to rave,  
Let him have time of Time's help to despair,  
Let him have time to live a loathed slave,  
Let him have time a beggar's orts to crave,  
And time to see one that by aims doth live  
Disdain to him disdained scraps to give.

'Let him have time to see his friends his foes,  
And merry fools to mock at him resort;  
Let him have time to mark how slow time goes  
In time of sorrow, and how swift and short 99  
His time of folly and his time of sport;  
And ever let his unrepelling crime  
Have time to wait for closing of his time.

'O Time, thou tutor both to good and bad,  
Teach me to curse him that thou taught'st this  
ill!

At his own shadow let the  
Himself himself seek every h...  
Such wretched hands such wretched blood  
should spill;  
For who so base would such office have 999  
As slanderous deathman to base a slave!

'The baser is he, coming from a }  
To shame his hope with deeds de...  
The mightier man, the mightier is the thing  
That makes him honour'd, or begets him hate;  
For greatest scandal waits on greatest state.  
The moon being clouded presently is mis'd,  
But little stars may hide them when they  
list.

'The crow may bathe his coal-black wings in  
mire,  
And unperceived fly with the filth away; 1000  
But if the like the snow-white swan desire,  
The stain upon his silver down will stay.  
Poor grooms are sightless night, kings glorious  
day:  
Gnats are unnoted whereoe'er they fly,  
But eagles gazed upon with every eye.

'Out, idle words, servants to shallow fools!  
Unprofitable sounds, weak arbitrators!  
Busy yourselves in skill-contenting schools;  
Debate where leisure serves with dull debaters;  
To trembling clients be you mediators: 1000  
For me, I force not argument a straw,  
Since that my case is past the help of law.

'In vain I rail at Opportunity,  
At Time, at Tarquin, and uncheerful Night;  
In vain I cavil with mine infamy,  
In vain I spurn at my confirm'd despite:  
This helpless smoke of words doth me no right.  
The remedy indeed to do me good  
Is to let forth my foul-defiled blood.

'Poor hand, why quiver'st thou at this decree?  
Honour thyself to rid me of this shame; 1001  
For if I die, my honour lives in thee;  
But if I live, thou livest in my defame:  
Since thou couldst not defend thy loyal dame,  
And wast afraid to scratch her wicked foe,  
Kill both thyself and her for yielding so.'

This affidavit, from her be-tumbled couch she  
starteth,  
To find some desperate instrument of death:  
But this no slaughterhouse no tool imparteth  
To make more vent for passage of her breath;  
Which, thronging through her lips, so vanishest  
As smoke from Aetna, that in air consumes,  
Or that which from discharged cannon fumes.

'In vain,' quoth she, 'I live, and seek in vain  
Some happy mean to end a hapless life.  
I fear'd by Tarquin's falcon to be slain.  
Yet for the self-same purpose seek a knife:  
But when I fear'd I was a loyal wife:  
So am I now: O poe, that cannot be; 1002  
Of that true type hath Tarquin smit me.'



O, that is gone for which I sought to live,  
And therefore now I need not fear to die.  
To clear this spot by death, at least I give  
A badge of fame to slander's livery;  
A dying life to living infamy:

Poor helpless help, the treasure stol'n away,  
To burn the guiltless casket where it lay!

Well, well, dear Collatine, thou shalt not  
know

The stained taste of violated troth;  
[I will not wrong thy true affection so, 1066  
To flatter thee with an infringed oath;  
This bastard graft shall never come to growth:  
He shall not boast who did thy stock pollute  
That thou art dotting father of his fruit.

'Nor shall he smile at thee in secret thought,  
Nor laugh with his companions at thy state;  
But thou shalt know thy interest was not  
bought  
Basely with gold, but stol'n from forth thy gate.  
For me, I am the mistress of my fate, 1069  
And with my trespass never will dispense,  
Till life to death acquit my forced offence.

'I will not poison thee with my attaint,  
Nor fold my fault in cleanly-coin'd excuses;  
My sable ground of sin I will not paint,  
To hide the truth of this false night's abuses  
My tongue shall utter all; mine eyes, like  
sunbeams,  
As from a mountain-spring that feeds a dale,  
Shall gush pure streams to purge my impure  
tale.'

By this lamenting Philomel had ended 1079  
The well-tuned warble of her nightly sorrow,  
And solemn night with slow sad gait descended  
To ugly hell; when, lo, the blushing morrow  
Lends light to all fair eyes that light will  
borrow:  
But cloudy Lucrece shames herself to see,  
And therefore still in night would cloister'd  
be.

Revealing day through every cranny spies,  
And seems to point her out where she sits  
weepin'  
To wail; sobbing speaks: 'O eye of  
Why pry'st thou through my window?  
thy peeping:  
Mock with thy tickling beams eyes that are  
sleeping: 1080  
Brand not my forehead with thy piercing  
light,  
For day hath nought to do what's done by  
night.'

Thus cavils she with every thing she sees:  
True grief is fond and tasty as a child,  
Who wayward once, his moodish nought  
agrees:  
Old woes, not infant sorrows, bear them mild  
Contentance tames the one: the other wild.  
Like an unpractised swimmer plunging still,  
While too much labour drowns for want of  
skill.

So she, deep-drenched in a sea of care, 1100  
Holds disputation with each thing she views,  
And to herself all sorrow doth compare;  
No object but her passion's strength renews;  
And as one shifts, another straight ensues:  
Sometimes her grief is dumb and hath no  
words;

Sometimes 'tis mad and too much talk affords.

The little birds that tune their morning's joy  
Make her moans mad with their sweet melody:  
For mirth doth search the bottom of annoy;  
Sad souls are slain in merry company; 1110  
Grief best is pleased with grief's society:  
True sorrow then is feelingly sufficed  
When with like semblance it is sympathized.

'Tis double death to drown in ken of shore;  
He ten times pines that pines beholding food;  
To see the salve doth make the wound ache  
more;  
Great grief grieves most at that would do it  
good;  
Deep woes roll forward like a gentle flood,  
Who, being stopp'd, the bounding banks  
overflow;  
Grief dallied with nor law nor limit knows.

You mocking birds,' quoth she, 'your tunes  
entomb 1122  
Within your hollow-swellings feather'd breaths,  
And in my hearing be you mute and dumb:  
My restless discord loves no stops nor rests;  
My restless hostess brooks not merry guests:  
A woeless hostess brooks not merry guests:  
Relish your nimble notes to pleasing ears;  
Distress likes dumps when time is kept with  
tears.

'Come, Philomel, that sing'st of ravishment,  
Make thy sad grove in my dishevel'd hair:  
As the dank earth weeps at thy languishment,  
So I at each sad strain will strain a tear, 1131  
And with deep groans the dissonance bear;  
For burden-wise I'll hum on Targuin still,  
While thou on Tereus descant'st better skill.

'And whiles against a thorn thou hear'st thy  
part,  
To keep thy sharp woes waking, wretched I,  
To imitate thee well, against my heart  
Will fix a sharp knife to affright mine eye;  
Who, if it wink, shall thereon fall and die.  
These means, as frets upon an instrument,  
Shall tune our heart-strings to true languish-  
ment. 1141

'And for, poor bird, thou sing'st not in the day,  
As shaming any eye should thee behold,  
Some dark deep desert, seated from the way,  
That knows not parching heat nor freezing  
cold.  
Will we find out; and there we will unfold  
To creatures stern and tunes, to change their  
kinds:  
Since men prove beasts; let beasts bear  
gentle minds.'

As the poor frightened deer, that stands at gaze,  
Wildly determining which way to fly, 1150

Or one encompass'd with a winding mase,  
That cannot tread the way out readily;  
So with herself is she in mutiny,  
To live or die which of the twain were better,  
When life is shamed, and death reproach's  
debtor.

'To kill myself,' quoth she, 'alack, what were it,  
But with my body my poor soul's pollution?  
They that lose half with greater patience bear it  
Than they whose whole is swallow'd in confusion.  
That mother tries a merciless conclusion 1160  
Who, having two sweet babes, when death  
takes one,  
Will slay the other and be nurse to none.

'My body or my soul, which was the dearer,  
When the one pure, the other made divine?  
Whose love of either to myself was nearer,  
When both were kept for heaven and Collatine?  
Ay me! the bark peel'd from the lofty pine,  
His leaves will wither and his sap decay;  
So must my soul, her bark being peel'd away.

'Her house is sack'd, her quiet interrupted,  
Her mansion batter'd by the enemy; 1171  
Her sacred temple spotted, spoil'd, corrupted,  
Grossly engirt with daring intamy:  
Then let it not be call'd impiety,  
If in this blemish'd fort I make some hole  
Through which I may convey this troubled  
soul.

'Yet die I will not till my Collatine  
Have heard the cause of my untimely death;  
That he may vow, in that sad hour of mine,  
Revenge on him that made me stop my breath.  
My stained blood to Tarquin I'll bequeath,  
Which by him tainted shall for him be spent,  
And as his due writ in my testament.

'My honour I'll bequeath unto the knife  
That wounds my body so dishonoured.  
'Tis honour to deprive dishonour'd life;  
The one will live, the other being dead:  
So of shame's ashes shall my fame be bred;  
For in my death I murder shameful scorn:  
My shame so dead, mine honour is new-born.

'Dear lord of that dear jewel I have lost, 1191  
What legacy shall I bequeath to thee?  
My resolution, love, shall be thy boast,  
By whose example thou revenged mayst be.  
How Tarquin must be used, read it in me:  
Myself, thy friend, will kill myself, thy foe.  
And for my sake serve thou false Tarquin so.

'This brief abridgement of my will I make:  
My soul and body to the skies and ground;  
My resolution, husband, do thou take; 1200  
Mine honour be the knife's that makes my  
wound;

My shame be his that did my fame confound;  
And all my fame that lives disburied be  
To those that live, and think no shame of me.

'Thou, Collatine, shalt oversee this will;  
How was I overseen that thou shalt see it!

My blood shall wash the slander of mine ill;  
My life's foul doel, my life's fair end shall  
free it.

Faint not, faint heart, but stoutly say "So be  
it:"

Yield to my hand; my hand shall conquer  
thee: 1210  
Thou dead, both die, and both shall victors  
be.

This plot of death when sadly she had laid,  
And wiped the brinish pearl from her bright  
eyes,  
With untuned tongue she hoarsely calls her  
maid,

Whose swift obedience to her mistress hies;  
For fleet-wing'd duty with thought's feathers  
flies.

Poor Lucrece' cheeks unto her maid seem so  
As winter meads when sun doth melt their  
snow.

Her mistress she doth give demure good-  
morrow,  
With soft-alow tongue, true mark of modesty,  
And sorts a sad look to her lady's sorrow, 1221  
For why her face wore sorrow's livery;  
But durst not ask of her audaciously  
Why her two suns were cloud-eclipsed so,  
Nor why her fair cheeks over-wash'd with  
woe.

But as the earth doth weep, the sun being set,  
Each flower moisten'd like a melting eye;  
Even so the maid with swelling drops can wet  
Her circled eye, enforced by sympathy  
Of those fair suns set in her mistress' sky, 1230  
Who in a salt-waved ocean quench their light,  
Which makes the maid weep like the dewy  
night.

A pretty while these pretty creatures stand,  
Like ivory conduits coral cisterns filling:  
One justly weeps; the other takes in hand  
No cause, but company, of her drops spilling:  
Their gentle sex to weep are often willing;  
Grieving themselves to guess at others'  
smarts,  
And then they drown their eyes or break  
their hearts. 1239

For men have marble, women waxen, minds,  
And therefore are they form'd as marble will:  
The weak oppress'd, the impression of strange  
kinds

Is form'd in them by force, by fraud, or skill:  
Then call them not the authors of their ill.  
No more than wax shall be accounted evil  
Wherein is stamp'd the semblance of a devil.

Their smoothness, like a goodly champaign  
plain,

Lays open all the little worms that creep;  
In men, as in a rough-grown grove, remain  
Cave-keeping evils that obscurely sleep: 1250  
Through crystal walls each little mote will peep;  
Though men can cover crimes with bold  
stern looks,

Poor women's faces are their own faults'  
books.

No man inveigh against the wither'd flower,  
But chide rough winter that the flower hath  
kill'd;

Not that devour'd, but that which doth devour,  
Is worthy blame. O, let it not be hid  
Poor women's faults, that they are so fulfill'd

With men's abuses: those proud lords, to  
blame,  
Make weak-made women tenants to their  
shame. 1260

The precedent whereof in Lucrece view,  
Assail'd by night with circumstances strong  
Of present death, and shame that might ensue  
By that her death, to do her husband wrong:  
Such danger to resistance did belong,

That dying fear through all her body spread;  
And who cannot abuse a body dead?

By this, mild patience bid fair Lucrece speak  
To the poor counterfeit of her complaining:  
'My girl,' quoth she, 'on what occasion break  
Those tears from thee, that down thy cheeks  
are raining? 1271

If thou dost weep for grief of my sustaining,  
Know gentle wench, it small avails my  
mood:

If tears could help, mine own would do me  
good.

'But tell me, girl, when went'—and there she  
stay'd

Till after a deep groan—'Tarquin from hence!'

'Madam, ere I was up,' replied the maid,

'The more to blame my sluggish negligence:

Yet with the fault I thus far can dispense;

Myself was stirring ere the break of day, 1280

And, ere I rose, was Tarquin gone away.

'But, lady, if your maid may be so bold,

She would request to know your heaviness.'

'O, peace!' quoth Lucrece: 'if it should be  
told,

The repetition cannot make it less;

For more it is than I can well express:

And that deep torture may be call'd a hell

When more is felt than one hath power to  
tell.

'Go, get me hither paper, ink, and pen:

I'll save that labour, for I have them here. 1300

What should I say? One of my husband's men

Bid thou be ready, by and by, to hear

A letter to my lord, my love, my dear:

Bid him with speed prepare to carry it;

The cause craves haste, and it will soon be  
writ.'

Her maid is gone, and she prepares to write,

First hovering o'er the paper with her quill:

Conceit and grief an eager combat fight;

What wit sets down is blotted straight with  
will;

This is too curious-good, this blunt and ill:

Much like a press of people at a door, 1320

Through her inventions, which shall go before.

At last she thus begins: 'Thou worthy lord

Of that unworthy wife that greeteth thee,

Health to thy person! next vouchsafe to afford—

If ever, love, thy Lucrece thou wilt see—

Some present speed to come and visit me.

So, I commend me from our house in grief:

My woes are tedious, though my words are  
brief.'

Here folds she up the tenour of her wee, 1310

Her certain sorrow writ uncertainly.

By this short schedule Collatine may know

Her grief, but not her grief's true quality:

She dares not thereof make discovery,

Lest he should hold it her own gross abuse,

Ere she with blood had stain'd her stain'd

Besides, the life and feeling of her passion

She hoards, to spend when he is by to hear her:

When sighs and groans and tears may grace

the fashion

Of her disgrace, the better so to clear her 1320

From that suspicion which the world might

bear her.

To shun this blot, she would not blot the  
letter

With words, till action might become them  
better.

To see sad sights moves more than hear them  
told:

For then the eye interprets to the ear

The heavy motion that it doth behold,

When every part a part of woe doth bear.

'Tis but a part of sorrow that we hear:

Deep sounds make lesser noise than shallow

fords,

And sorrow ebbes, being blown with wind of  
words. 1330

Her letter now is seal'd, and on it writ

'At Ardea to my lord with more than haste.'

The post attends, and she delivers it,

Changing the sour-faced groom to his as fast

As lagging fowls before the northern blast:

Speed more than speed but dull and slow she  
deems:

Extremity still urgeth such extremes.

The homely villain court'ies to her low;

And, blushing on her, with a steadfast eye

Receives the scroll without or yea or no, 1340

And forth with bashful innocence doth hide

But they whose guilt within their bosoms lie

Imagine every eye beholds their blame;

For Lucrece thought he blush'd to see her  
shame:

When, silly groom! God wot, it was defect

Of spirit, life, and bold audacity.

Such harmless creatures have a true respect

To talk in deeds, while others naively

Promise more speed, but do it leisurely:

Even so this pattern of the worn-out age 1350

Fawn'd honest looks, but laid no words to  
gaze.

His kindled duty kindled her mistrust,

That two red fires in both their faces blazed;

She thought he blush'd, as knowing Tarquin's  
lust,

And, blushing with him, wistly on him gazed;  
Her earnest eye did make him more amazed:

The more she saw the blood his cheeks re-  
plenish,

The more she thought he spied in her some  
blush.

But long she thinks till he return again,  
And yet the duteous vassal scarce is gone. 1360  
The weary time she cannot entertain,  
For now 'tis stale to sigh, to weep, and groan:  
So woe hath wearied woe, moan tired moan,

That she her plaints a little while doth stay,  
Pausing for means to mourn some newer  
way.

At last she calls to mind where hangs a piece  
Of skilful painting, made for Priam's Troy;  
Before the which is drawn the power of Greece,  
For Helen's rape the city to destroy. 1369

Threatening cloud-kissing Ilion with annoy;  
Which the conceited painter drew so proud,  
As heaven, it seem'd, to kiss the turrets  
bow'd.

A thousand lamentable objects there,  
In scorn of nature, art gave lifeless life:  
Many a dry drop seem'd a weeping tear,  
Shed for the slaughter'd husband by the wife:  
The red blood reek'd, to show the painter's  
strife;

And dying eyes gleam'd forth their ashy  
lights,

Like dying coals burnt out in tedious nights.

There might you see the labouring pioneer 1380  
Begrimed with sweat, and smeared all with  
dust;

And from the towers of Troy there would  
appear

The very eyes of men through loop-holes thrust,  
Gazing upon the Greeks with little lust:

Such sweet observance in this work was had,  
That one might see those far-off eyes look sad.

In great commanders grace and majesty  
You might behold, triumphing in their faces;  
In youth, quick bearing and dexterity;

And here and there the painter interlaces 1390  
Pale cowards, marching on with trembling  
paces;

Which heartless peasants did so well re-  
semble,

That one would swear he saw them quake  
and tremble.

In Ajax and Ulysses, O, what art  
Of physiognomy might one behold!  
The face of either cipher'd either's heart;  
Their face their manners most expressly told:

In Ajax' eyes blunt rage and rigour roll'd;  
But the mild glance that ay Ulysses lent  
Show'd a deep regard and smiling government.

There pleading might you see grave Nestor  
stand, 1402

As 'twere encouraging the Greeks to fight;  
Making such other action with his hand,

That it beguiled attention, charm'd the sight:  
In speech, it seem'd, his beard, all silver white,  
Wagg'd up and down, and from his lips did fly  
Thin winding breath, which pur'd up to the  
sky.

About him were a press  
Which seem'd to swallow up his sound advice;  
All jointly listening, but with several grace,  
As if some mermaid did their ears entice. 1411  
Some high, some low, the painter was so nice;  
The scalps of many, almost hid behind,  
To jump up higher seem'd, to mock the  
mind.

Here one man's hand lean'd on another's head  
His nose being shadow'd by his neighbour's  
ear;

Here one being throug'd bears back, all boll'  
and red;

Another another'd seems to pelt and swear;  
And in their rage such signs of rage they bear

As, but for loss of Nestor's golden words, 142  
It seem'd they would debate with angry  
swords.

For much imaginary work was there;  
Conceit deceitful, so compact, so kind,  
That for Achilles' image stood his spear,  
Griped in an armed hand; himself, behind,  
Was left unseen, save to the eye of mind:  
A hand, a foot, a face, a leg, a head,  
Stood for the whole to be imagined.

And from the walls of strong-besieged Troy  
When their brave hope, bold Hector, march'  
to field, 143

Stood many Trojan mothers, sharing joy  
To see their youthful sons bright weapon  
wield;

And to their hope they such odd action yield,  
That through their light joy seem'd to  
appear,

Like bright things stain'd, a kind of heav'  
fear.

And from the strand of Dardan, where the  
fought,

To Simois' reedy banks the red blood ran,  
Whose waves to imitate the battle sought  
With swelling ridges; and their ranks began  
To break upon the galled shore, and then 144

Retire again, till, meeting greater ranks,  
They join and shoot their foam at Simois  
banks.

To this well-painted piece is Lucrece come,  
To find a face where all distress is stoll'd.  
Many she sees where cares have carved some,  
But none where all distress and colour dwell'd  
Till she despairing Hebe beheld.  
Staring on Priam's wounds with her old eyes  
Which bleeding under Pyrrhus' sword fool  
lied.

In her the painter had anatomiz'd 145  
Time's ruin, beauty's wreck, and grim  
reign:

Her cheeks with chops and wrinkles were disguised;  
Of what she was no semblance did remain:  
Her blue blood changed to black in every vein,  
Wanting the spring that those shrunk pipes  
    had fed,  
Show'd life imprison'd in a body dead.

On this sad shadow Luorece spends her eyes,  
And shapes her sorrow to the beldam's woes,  
Who nothing wants to answer her but cries,  
And bitter words to ban her cruel foes: 1460  
The painter was no god to lend her those;  
And therefore Luorece swears he did her  
    wrong,  
To give her so much grief and not a tongue.

'Poor instrument,' quoth she, 'without a sound,  
I'll tune thy woes with my lamenting tongue;  
And drop sweet balm in Priam's painted wound,  
And rail on Pyrrhus that hath done him wrong;  
And with my tears quench Troy that burns so  
    long;

And with my knife scratch out the angry  
    1469  
Of all the Greeks that are thine enemies.

Show me the trumpet that began this stir,  
That with my nails her beauty I may tear.  
By heat of lust, fond Paris, did incur  
his load of wrath that burning Troy doth  
    bear;

By eye kindled the fire that burneth here;  
And here in Troy, for trespass of thine eye,  
The sire, the son, the dame, and daughter die.

Why should the private pleasure of some one  
become the public plague of many moe?  
et sin, alone committed, light alone 1480  
Upon his head that hath transgressed so;  
Yet guiltless souls be freed from guilty woe;  
For one's offence why should so many fall,  
To plague a private sin in general!

'Lo, here weeps Hecuba, here Priam dies,  
Here manly Hector faints, here Troilus wounds,  
Here friend by friend in bloody channel lies,  
And friend to friend gives unadvised wounds;  
And one man's lust these many lives confounds:  
Had dotting Priam check'd his son's desire,  
Troy had been bright with fame and not with  
    fire.' 1491

Here feelingly she weeps Troy's painted woes:  
For sorrow, like a heavy-hanging bell,  
Once set on ringing, with his own weight goes  
When little strength rings out the doleful knell:  
    set a-work, and tales doth tell  
    of pensiveness and colour'd sorrow  
    between words, and she their looks  
doth borrow.

She throws her eyes about the painting round,  
And whom she finds forlorn she doth lament.  
At last she sees a wretched image bound, 1500  
That piteous looks to Phrygian shepherds sent  
His face, though full of cares, yet show'd  
    content;

Onward to Troy with the blunt swains he  
    goes,  
So mild, that Patience seem'd to scorn his  
    woes.

In him the painter labour'd with his skill  
To hide deceit, and give the harmless show  
An humble gait, calm looks, eyes waiting still,  
A brow unbent, that seem'd to welcome woe;  
Cheeks neither red nor pale, but mingled so  
That blushing red no guilty instance gave,  
Nor ashy pale the fear that false hearts have.

But, like a constant and confirmed devil,  
He entertain'd a show so seeming just,  
And therein so ensconced his secret evil,  
That jealousy itself could not mistrust  
False-creeping craft and perjury should thrust  
Into so bright a day such black-faced storms,  
Or blot with hell-born sin such saint-like  
    forms. 1519

'he well-skill'd workman this mild image drew  
For perjured Sinon, whose enchanting story  
The credulous old Priam after slew;  
Whose words like wildfire burnt the shining  
    glory  
Of rich-built Ilion, that the skies were sorry,  
And little stars shot from their fixed places,  
When their glass fell wherein they view'd  
    their faces.

This picture she advisedly perused,  
And chid the painter for his wondrous skill,  
Saying, some shape in Sinon's was abused;  
So fair a form lodged not a mind so ill: 1530  
And still on him she gazed; and gazing still,  
Such signs of truth in his plain face she  
    spied,  
That she concludes the picture was belied.

It cannot be,' quoth she, 'that so much  
guile'—  
She would have said 'can lurk in such a look';  
But Tarquin's shape came in her mind the  
    while,  
And from her tongue 'can lurk' from 'cannot'  
    took:  
It cannot be' she in that sense forsook.  
And turn'd it thus, 'It cannot be, I find,  
But such a face should bear a wicked mind:

'For even as subtle Sinon here is painted, 1541  
So sober-sad, so weary, and so mild,  
As if with grief or travail he had faint'd,  
To me came Tarquin armed; so beguiled  
With outward honesty, but yet deadly  
With inward vice: as Priam him did cherish,  
So did I Tarquin; so my Troy did perish.

'Look, look, how listening Priam wets his  
    eyes,  
To see those borrow'd tears that Sinon sheds!  
Priam, why art thou old and yet not wise? 1550  
For every tear he falls a Trojan bleeds:  
His eye drops fire, no water thence proceeds;  
Those round clear pearls of his, that move  
    And  
    speechless flies to burn thy city.

'Such devils steal effects from lightless hell;  
 For Sinon in his fire doth quake with cold,  
 And in that cold hot-burning fire doth dwell;  
 These contraries such unity do hold,  
 Only to flatter fools and make them bold:  
 So Priam's trust false Sinon's tears doth  
 flatter, 1560  
 That he finds means to burn his Troy with  
 water.'

Here, all enraged, such passion her assails,  
 That patience is quite beaten from her breast.  
 She tears the senseless Sinon with her nails,  
 Comparing him to that unhappy guest  
 Whose deed hath made herself herself detest:  
 At last she smilingly with this gives o'er;  
 'Fool, fool!' quoth she, 'his wounds will not  
 be sore.'

Thus ebbs and flows the current of her sorrow,  
 And time doth weary time with her complain-  
 ing. 1570  
 She looks for night, and then she longs for  
 morrow,  
 And both she thinks too long with her re-  
 maining:  
 Short time seems long in sorrow's sharp sus-  
 taining:  
 Though woe be heavy, yet it seldom sleeps;  
 And they that watch see time how slow it  
 creeps.

Which all this time hath overslipp'd her thought,  
 That she with painted images hath spent;  
 Being from the feeling of her own grief brought  
 By deep surmise of others' detriment;  
 Losing her woes in shows of discontent. 1580  
 It easeth some, though none it ever cures,  
 To think their dolour others have endured.

But now the mindful messenger, come back,  
 Brings home his lord and other company;  
 Who finds his Lucrece clad in mourning black:  
 And round about her tear-dained eye  
 Blue circles stream'd, like rainbows in the  
 sky:

These water-galls in her dim element  
 Foretell new storms to those already spent.

Which when her sad-beholding husband saw,  
 Amazed in her sad face he stares: 1591  
 Her eyes, though sad in tears, look'd red and  
 raw,  
 Her lively colour kill'd with deadly cares.  
 He hath no power to ask her how she fares:  
 Both stood, like old acquaintance in a trance,  
 Met far from home, wondering each other's  
 chance.

At last he takes her by the bloodless hand,  
 And thus begins: 'What uncouth ill event  
 Hath thee befall'n, that thou dost trembling  
 stand!

Sweet love, what spite hath thy fair colour  
 spent! 1600

Why art thou thus attired in discontent  
 Unsmak, dear dear, this moody heaviness,  
 And tell thy grief, that we may give redress.'

Three times with sighs she gives her sorrow  
 fire,  
 Ere once she can discharge one word of woe:  
 At length address'd to answer his desire,  
 She modestly prepares to let them know  
 Her honour is ta'en prisoner by the foe;  
 While Collatine and his consorted lords 1609  
 With sad attention long to hear her words.

And now this pale swan in her watery nest  
 Begins the sad dirge of her certain ending;  
 'Few words,' quoth she, 'shall fit the trespass  
 best,  
 Where no excuse can give the fault amending:  
 In me moe woes than words are now de-  
 pending;  
 And my laments would be drawn out too  
 long,  
 To tell them all with one poor tired tongue.

'Then be this all the task it hath to say:  
 Dear husband, in the interest of thy bed  
 A stranger came, and on that pillow lay 1620  
 Where thou wast wont to rest thy weary head;  
 And what wrong else may be imagined  
 By foul enforcement might be done to me,  
 From that, alas, thy Lucrece is not free.

'For in the dreadful dead of dark midnight,  
 With shining falchion in my chamber came  
 A creeping creature, with a flaming light,  
 And softly cried "Awake, thou Roman dame,  
 And entertain my love; else lasting shame  
 On thee and thine this night I will inflict,  
 If thou my love's desire do contradict. 1631

"For some hard-favour'd groom of thine,"  
 quoth he,  
 "Unless thou yoke thy liking to my will,  
 I'll murder straight, and then I'll slaughter  
 thee  
 And swear I found you where you did fulfil  
 The loathsome act of lust, and so did kill  
 The lechers in their deed: this act will be  
 My fame and thy perpetual infamy."

'With this, I did begin to start and cry;  
 And then against my heart he sets his sword,  
 Swearing, unless I took all patiently, 1641  
 I should not live to speak another word;  
 So should my shame still rest upon record,  
 And never be forgot in mighty Rome  
 Th' adulterate death of Lucrece and her  
 groom.

'Mine enemy was strong, my poor self weak,  
 And far the weaker with so strong a fear: 1650

That my poor beauty had purloin'd his eyes;  
 And when the judge is robb'd the prisoner  
 dies.

'O, teach me how to make mine own excuse!  
 Or at the least this refuge let me find:  
 Though my gross blood be stain'd with this  
 abuse,

Immaculate and spotless is my mind ;  
That was not forced ; that never was inclined  
To accessory yieldings, but still pure  
Doth in her poison'd closet yet endure.'

Lo, here, the hopeless merchant of this loss,  
With head declined, and voice damm'd up with  
woe, 1661  
With sad set eyes, and wretched arms across,  
From lips new-waxen pale begins to blow  
The grief away that stops his answer so :  
But, wretched as he is, he strives in vain ;  
What he breathes out his breath drinks up  
again.

As through an arch the violent roaring tide  
Outruns the eye that doth behold his haste,  
Yet in the eddy boundeth in his pride 1669  
Back to the strait that forced him on so fast ;  
In rage sent out, recall'd in rage, being past :  
Even so his sighs, his sorrows, make a saw,  
To push grief on, and back the same grief  
draw.

Which speechless woe of his poor she attendeth,  
And his untimely frenzy thus awaketh :  
'Dear lord, thy sorrow to my sorrow lendeth  
Another power ; no flood by raining slaketh.  
My woe too sensible thy passion maketh  
More feeling-painful : let it then suffice  
To drown one woe, one pair of weeping  
eyes. 1680

'And for my sake, when I might charm thee so  
For she that was thy Lucrece, now attend me :  
Be suddenly revenged on my foe,  
Thine, mine, his own : suppose thou dost de-  
fend me  
From what is past : the help that thou shalt  
lend me  
Comes all too late, yet let the traitor die ;  
For sparing justice feeds iniquity.

'But ere I name him, you fair lords,' quoth  
she,  
Speaking to those that came with Collatine,  
'Shall plight your honourable faiths to me, 1690  
With swift pursuit to venge this wrong of  
mine ;  
For 'tis a meritorious fair design  
To chase injustice with revengeful arms :  
Knights, by their oaths, should right poor  
ladies' harms.'

At this request, with noble disposition  
Each present lord began to promise aid,  
As bound in knighthood to her imposition,  
Longing to hear the hateful foe bewray'd.  
But she, that yet her sad task hath not said,  
The protestation stops. 'O, speak,' quoth  
she, 1700  
'How may this forced stain be wiped from  
me !

'What is the quality of mine offence,  
Being constrain'd with dreadful circumstance !  
May my pure mind with the foul act dispense,  
My low-declined honour to advance !

May any terms acquit me from this chance !  
The poison'd fountain clears itself again ;  
And why not I from this compelled stain !'

With this, they all at once began to say. 1709  
Her body's stain her mind untainted clears ;  
While with a joyless smile she turns away  
The face, that map which deep impression  
bears  
Of hard misfortune, carved in it with tears.  
'No, no,' quoth she, 'no dame, hereafter  
living,  
By my excuse shall claim excuse's giving.'

Here with a sigh, as if her heart would break,  
She throws forth Tarquin's name : 'He, he,'  
she says,  
But more than 'he' her poor tongue could not  
speak ;  
Till after many accents and delays,  
Untimely breathing, sick and short assays, 1730  
She utters this, 'He, he, fair lords, 'tis he,  
That guides this hand to give this wound to  
me.'

Even here she sheathed in her harmless breast  
A harmful knife, that thence her soul un-  
sheathed :  
That blow did bail it from the deep unrest  
Of that polluted prison where it breathed :  
Her contrite sighs unto the clouds bequeathed  
Her winged sprite, and through her wounds  
doth fly  
Life's lasting date from cancell'd destiny.

Stone-still, astonish'd with this deadly deed,  
Stood Collatine and all his lordly crew ; 1731  
Till Lucrece's father, that beholds her bleed,  
Himself on her self-slaughter'd body threw ;  
And from the purple fountain Brutus drew  
The murderous knife, and, as it left the  
place,  
Her blood, in poor revenge, held it in  
chase ;

And bubbling from her breast, it doth divide  
In two slow rivers, that the crimson blood  
Circles her body in on every side,  
Who, like a late-sack'd island, vastly stood 1740  
Bare and unpeopled in this fearful flood.  
Some of her blood still pure and red  
remain'd,  
And some look'd black, and that false Tarquin  
stain'd.

About the mourning and congealed face  
Of that black blood a watery rigol goes,  
Which seems to weep upon the tainted place :  
And ever since, as pitying Lucrece' woe,  
red blood some watery token shows ;  
blood untainted still doth red abide,  
flushing at that which is so putrified. 1750

'Daughter, dear daughter,' old Lucretius cries,  
'That life was mine which thou hast here  
deprived.  
If in the child the father's image lies,  
Where shall I live now Lucrece is unliv'd !

Thou wast not to this end from me derived.  
If children yet descend progenitors,  
We are their offspring, and they none of ours.

'Poor broken glass, I often did behold  
In thy sweet semblance my old age new born;  
But now that fair fresh mirror, dim and old,  
Shows me a hare-boned death by time outworn  
O, from thy cheeks my image thou hast torn,  
And shiver'd all the beauty of my glass,  
That I no more can see what once I was!

'O time, cease show thy course and last no longer,  
If they surcease to be that should survive.  
Shall rotten death make conquest of the stronger  
And leave the faltering feeble souls alive?  
The old bees die, the young possess their hive:  
Then live, sweet Lucrece, live again and see  
Thy father die, and not thy father thee!' 1771

By this, starts Collatine as from a dream,  
And bids Lucretius give his sorrow place;  
And then in key-cold Lucrece' bleeding stream  
He falls, and bathes the pale fear in his face,  
And counterfeit to die with her a space;  
Till manly shame bids him possess his breath  
And live to be revenged on her death.

The deep vexation of his inward soul 1775  
Hath served a dumb arrest upon his tongue;  
Who, mad that sorrow should his use control,  
Or keep him from heart-easing words so long,  
Begins to talk; but through his lips do throng  
Weak words, so thick come in his poor  
heart's aid,  
That no man could distinguish what he said.

Yet sometime 'Tarquin' was pronounced plain,  
But through his teeth, as if the name he tore.  
This windy tempest, till it blow up rain,  
Held back his sorrow's tide, to make it more;  
At last it rains, and busy winds give o'er: 1790  
Then son and father weep with equal strife  
Who should weep most, for daughter or for wife.

The one doth call her his, the other his,  
Yet neither may possess the claim they lay.  
The father says 'She's mine.' 'O, mine she is,'  
Replies her husband: 'do not take away  
My sorrow's interest; let no mourner say  
He weeps for her, for she was only mine,  
And only must be wail'd by Collatine.'

'O' quoth Lucretius, 'I did give that life 1800  
Which she too early and too late hath spill'd.'  
'Woe, woe,' quoth Collatine, 'she was my wife,  
I loved her, and 'tis mine that she hath kill'd.'  
'My daughter' and 'my wife' with clamours  
fill'd.

The disparted air, who, holding Lucrece' life,  
Answer'd their cries, 'my daughter' and 'my  
wife.'

Brutus, who pluck'd the knife from Lucrece'  
side,  
Seeing such animation in their woe,  
Began to clothe his wit in state and poise,  
Burying in Lucrece' wound his folly's show.  
He with the Romans was esteem'd so: 1811  
As silly-jeering idiots are with kings,  
For sportive words and uttering foolish  
things:

But now he throws that shallow habit by,  
Wherein deep policy did him;  
And arm'd his long-hid wits with solemnity,  
To check the tears in Collatine's eyes.  
'Thou wronged lord of Rome,' quoth he, 'arise:  
Let my unsounded self, supposed a fool,  
Now set thy long-experienced wit to school.

'Why, Collatine, is woe the cure for woe? 1821  
Do wounds help wounds, or grief help grievous  
deeds!

Is it revenge to give thyself a blow  
For his foul act by whom thy fair wife bleeds?  
Such childish humour from weak minds pro-  
ceeds:  
Thy wretched wife mistook the matter so,  
To slay herself, that should have slain her  
foe.

'Courageous Roman, do not steep thy heart  
In such relenting dew of lamentations; 1829  
But kneel with me and help to bear thy part,  
To rouse our Roman gods with invocations,  
That they will suffer these abominations,  
Since Rome herself in them doth stand  
digraded,  
By our strong arms from forth her fair streets  
chased.

'Now, by the Capitol that we adore,  
And by this chaste blood so unjustly stain'd,  
By heaven's fair sun that breeds the fat earth's  
store,  
By all our country rights in Rome maintain'd,  
And by chaste Lucrece' soul that late complain'd  
Her wrongs to us, and by this bloody knife,  
We will revenge the death of this true wife.

His said, he struck his hand upon his breast,  
And kiss'd the fatal knife, to end his vow;  
And to his protestation urged the rest,  
Who, wondering at him, did his words allow:  
Then jointly to the ground their knees they  
bow;  
And that deep vow, which Brutus made  
before,  
He doth again repeat, and that they swore.

When they had sworn to this advised doom,  
They did conclude to bear dead Lucrece thence;  
To show her bleeding body thorough Rome,  
And so to publish Tarquin's foul offence:  
Which being done with speedy diligence,  
The Romans plausibly did give consent  
To Tarquin's everlasting banishment.



# SONNETS

TO THE ONLIE BEGETTER OF  
THESE INSUING SONNETS  
MR. W. H. ALL HAPPINESSE  
AND THAT ETERNITIE  
PROMISED BY  
OUR EVER-LIVING POET  
WISHETH  
THE WELL-WISHING  
ADVENTURER IN  
SETTING  
FORTH

T. T.

I.

FROM fairest creatures we desire increase,  
That thereby beauty's rose might never die,  
But as the ripen should by time decaie,  
His tender heir might bear his memory;  
But thou, contracted to thine own bright eyes,  
Feed'st thy light's flame with self-substantial  
fuel,  
Making a famine where abundance lies,  
Thyself thy foe, to thy sweet self too cruel.  
Thou that art now the world's fresh ornament  
And only herald to the gaudy spring,  
Within thine own bud buriest thy content  
And, tender churl, makest waste in niggarding.  
Pity the world, or else this glutton be,  
To eat the world's due, by the grave and thee.

III.

Look in thy glass, and tell the face thou viewest  
Now is the time that face should forms another;  
Whose fresh repair if now thou not renewest,  
Thou dost beguile the world, unbless some  
mother.  
For where is she so fair whose uncar'd womb  
Disdains the tillage of thy husbandry?  
Or who is he so fond will be the tomb  
Of his self-love, to stop posterity?  
Thou art thy mother's glass, and she in thee  
Calls back the lovely April of her prime:  
So thou through windows of thine age shalt  
see  
respite of wrinkles this thy golden time.  
But if thou live, remember'd not to be,  
Die single, and thine image dies with thee.

IV.

When forty winters shall besiege thy brow,  
And dig deep trenches in thy beauty's field,  
Thy youth's proud livery, so gazed on now,  
Will be a tatter'd weed, of small worth held:  
Then being ask'd where all thy beauty lies,  
Where all the treasure of thy lusty days,  
To say, within thine own deep-sunken eyes,  
Were an all-eating shame and thriftless praise.  
How much more praise deserved thy beauty's  
use,  
If thou couldst answer 'This fair child of mine  
Shall sum my count and make my old excuse,'  
Proving his beauty by succession thine!  
This were to be new made when thou art old,  
And see thy blood warm when thou feel'st it  
cold.

Unthrifty loveliness, why dost thou spend  
Upon thyself thy beauty's legacy?  
Nature's bequest gives nothing but doth lend,  
And being frank she lends to those are free.  
Then, bounteous niggard, why dost thou abuse  
The bounteous largess given thee to give?  
Profitless usurer, why dost thou use  
So great a sum of sums, yet canst not live?  
For having traffic with thyself alone,  
Thou of thyself thy sweet self dost deplete.  
Then how, when nature calls thee to be gone,  
What acceptable audit canst thou leave?  
Thy unaged beauty must be carved with  
Which, used, lives th' ancestor to thee.

## V.

Those hours, that with gentle work did frame  
The lovely gaze where every eye doth dwell,  
Will play the tyrants to the very same  
And that unfair which fairly doth excel;  
For never-resting time leads summer on  
To hideous winter and confounds him there;  
Sap check'd with frost and lusty leaves quite  
gone,

Beauty o'er-snow'd and bareness every where:  
Then, were not summer's distillation left,  
A liquid prisoner pent in walls of glass,  
Beauty's effect with beauty were bereft,  
Nor it nor no remembrance what it was:  
But flowers distill'd, though they with winter  
meet,  
Leese but their show; their substance still  
lives sweet.

## VI.

Then let not winter's ragged hand deface  
In thee thy summer, ere thou be distill'd:  
Make sweet some vial; treasure thou some  
place  
With beauty's treasure, ere it be self-kill'd.  
That use is not forbidden usury  
Which happies those that pay the willing loan;  
That's for thyself to breed another thee,  
Or ten times happier, be it ten for one;  
Ten times thyself were happier than thou art,  
If ten of thine ten times refigured thee:  
Then what could death do, if thou shouldst  
depart,  
Leaving thee living in posterity?  
Be not self-will'd, for thou art much too fair  
To be death's conquest and make worms  
thine heir.

Lo! in the orient when the gracious light  
Lifts up his burning head, each under eye  
Doth homage to his new-appearing sight,  
Serving with looks his sacred majesty;  
And having clim'd the steep-up heavenly hill,  
Resembling strong youth in his middle age,  
Yet mortal looks adore his beauty still,  
Attending on his golden pilgrimage;  
But when from highest pitch, with weary  
car,  
Like feeble age, he reeleth from the day,  
The eyes, fore duteous, now converted are  
From his low tract and look another way:  
So thou, thyself out-going in thy noon,  
Unlook'd on diest, unless thou get a son.

## VIII.

Mute to hear, why hear'st thou music sadly?  
Sweets with sweets war not, joy delights in  
Why thou that which thou receivest not

Or else receivest with pleasure thine annoy!  
If the true concord of well-tuned sounds,  
By unions married, do offend thine ear,  
They do but sweetly chide thee, who con-  
founde

In singleness the parts that thou shouldst  
bear.

Mark how one string, sweet husband to another,  
Strikes each in each by mutual ordering,  
Resembling sire and child and happy mother  
Who all in one, one pleasing note do sing:  
Whose speechless song, being many, seeming  
one,  
Sings this to thee: 'thou single wilt prove  
none.'

## IX.

Is it for fear to wet a widow's eye  
That thou consumest thyself in single life?  
Ah! if thou issueless shalt hap to die,  
The world will wall thee, like a makeless wife;  
The world will be thy widow and still weep  
That thou no form of thee hast left behind,  
When every private widow well may keep  
By children's eyes her husband's shape in  
mind.  
Look, what an unthrif in the world doth  
spend  
Shifts but his place, for still the world enjoys  
it;  
But beauty's waste hath in the world an end,  
And kept unused, the user so destroys it.  
No love toward others in that bosom sits  
That on himself such murderous shame  
commits.

For shame! deny that thou bear'st love to  
any.  
Who for thyself art so unprovident,  
Grant, if thou wilt, thou art beloved of many,  
But that thou none lovest is most evident;  
For thou art so possess'd with murderous hate  
That 'gainst thyself thou stick'st not to con-  
spire,  
Seeking that beauteous roof to ruinate  
Which to repair should be thy chief desire.  
O, change thy thought, that I may change my  
mind!  
Shall hate be fairer lodged than gentle love?  
Be, as thy presence is, gracious and kind,  
Or to thyself at least kind-hearted prove:  
Make thee another self, for love of me,  
That beauty still may live in thine or thee.

## XI.

As fast as thou shalt wane, so fast thou  
growest  
In one of thine, from that which thou de-  
stest  
that fresh blood which youngly thou  
bestowest  
Thou may'st call thine when thou from youth  
convertest.  
Herein lives wisdom, beauty and increase;  
Without this, folly, age and cold decay;  
If all were minded so, the times should cease  
And threescore year would make the world  
away.  
Let those whom Nature hath not made for  
store,  
Harsh, featureless and rude, barrenly perish:

Look, whom she best endow'd she gave the  
more;  
Which bounteous gift thou shouldst in bounty  
cherish:  
She carved thee for her seal, and meant  
thereby  
Thou shouldst print more, not let that copy  
die.

## XII.

When I do count the clock that tells the time,  
And see the brave day sunk in hideous night;  
When I behold the violet past prime,  
And sable curls all silver'd o'er with white;  
When lofty trees I see barren of leaves  
Which erst from heat did canopy the herd,  
And summer's green all girded up in sheaves  
Borne on the bier with white and bristly beard,  
Then of thy beauty do I question make,  
That thou among the wastes of time must go,  
Since sweets and beauties do themselves for-  
sake

And die as fast as they see others grow;  
And nothing 'gainst Time's scythe can make  
defence  
Save breed, to brave him when he takes thee  
hence.

## XIII.

O, that you were yourself! but, love, you are  
No longer yours than you yourself here live:  
Against this coming end you should prepare,  
And your sweet semblance to some other give.  
So should that beauty which you hold in lease  
Find no determination; then you were  
Yourself again after yourself's decease,  
When your sweet issue your sweet form should  
bear.

Who lets so fair a house fall to decay,  
Which husbundry in honour might uphold  
Against the stormy gusts of winter's day  
And barren rage of death's eternal cold?  
O, none but unthrifs! Dear my love, you  
know

You had a father: let your son say so.

## XIV.

Not from the stars do I my judgement pluck;  
And yet methinks I have astronomy,  
But not to tell of good or evil luck,  
Of plagues, of dearths, or seasons' quality;  
Nor can I fortune to brief minutes tell,  
Pointing to each his thunder, rain and wind,  
Or say with princes if it shall go well,  
By oft predict that I in heaven find:  
But from thine eyes my knowledge I derive,  
And, constant stars, in them I read such art  
As truth and beauty shall together thrive,  
If from thyself to store thou wouldst convert;  
Or else of thee this I prognosticate:  
Thy end is truth's and beauty's doom and  
data.

## XV.

When I consider every thing that grows  
Holds in perfection but a little moment,  
That this huge stage presenteth nought but  
shows  
Whereon the stars in secret influence com-  
ment;

When I perceive that men as plants increase,  
Cheered and check'd even by the self-same  
sky,  
Sunt in their youthful sap, at height decrease,  
And wear their brave state out of memory;  
Then the conceit of this inconstant stay  
Sets you most rich in youth before my sight,  
Where wasteful Time debateth with Decay,  
To change your day of youth to sullied night;  
And all in war with Time for love of you,  
As he takes from you, I engraft you new.

## XVI.

But wherefore do not you a mightier way  
Make war upon this bloody tyrant, Time?  
And fortify yourself in your decay  
With means more blessed than my barren  
rhyme?  
Now stand you on the top of happy hours,  
And many maiden gardens yet unset  
With virtuous wish would bear your living  
flowers.

Much liker than your painted counterfeit:  
So should the lines of life that life repair,  
Which this, Time's pencil, or my pupil pen,  
Neither in inward worth nor outward fair,  
Can make you live yourself in eyes of men.  
To give away yourself keeps yourself still,  
And you must live, drawn by your own  
sweet skill.

## XVII.

Who will believe my verse in time to come,  
If it were fill'd with your most high deserts?  
Though yet, heaven knows, it is but as a tomb  
Which hides your life and shows not half your  
parts,

If I could write the beauty of your eyes  
And in fresh numbers number all your graces,  
The age to come would say 'This poet lies;  
Such heavenly touches ne'er touch'd earthly

So should my papers yellow'd with their age  
Be scorn'd like old men of less truth than  
tongue,

And your true rights be term'd a poet's rage  
And stretched metre of an antique song:  
But were some child of yours alive that time,  
You should live twice; in it and in my  
rhyme.

## XVIII.

Shall I compare thee to a summer's day?  
Thou art more lovely and more temperate:  
Rough winds do shake the darling buds of  
May,  
And summer's lease hath all too short a date:  
Sometime too hot the eye of heaven shines,  
And often is his gold complexion dimm'd;  
And every fair from fair sometime declines,  
By chance or nature's changing course un-  
trimm'd;  
But thy eternal summer shall not fade  
Nor lose possession of that fair thou owest;  
Nor shall Death brag thou wander'st in his  
shade,  
When in eternal lines to time thou growest:

So long as men can breathe or eyes can see,  
So long lives this and this gives life to thee.

## XX.

Devouring Time, blunt thou the lion's paw,  
And make the earth devour her own sweet  
brood;  
Pluck the keen teeth from the fierce tiger's  
jaws,  
And burn the long-lived phoenix in her blood;  
Make glad and sorry seasons as thou fleets,  
And do whate'er thou wilt, swift-footed Time,  
To the wide world and all her fading sweets;  
But I forbid thee one most heinous crime:  
O, carve not with thy hours my love's fair  
brow,  
Nor draw no lines there with thine antique  
pen;  
Him in thy course untainted do allow  
For beauty's pattern to succeeding men.  
Yet, do thy worst, old Time: despite thy  
wrong,  
My love shall in my verse ever live young.

## XXI.

A woman's face with Nature's own hand  
painted  
Hast thou, the master-mistress of my passion;  
A woman's gentle heart, but not acquainted  
With shifting change, as is false women's  
fashion;  
An eye more bright than theirs, less false in  
rolling,  
Cliking the object whereupon it gazeth;  
A man in hue, all 'hues' in his contrivelling,  
Which steals men's eyes and women's souls  
amazeth.  
And for a woman wert thou first created;  
Till Nature, as she wrought thee, fell a-doting,  
And by addition me of thee defeated,  
By adding one thing to my purpose nothing.  
But since she prick'd thee out for women's  
pleasure,  
Mine be thy love and thy love's use their  
treasure.

## XXII.

So is it not with me as with that Muse  
Sibyl's by a painted beauty to his verse,  
Who heaven itself for ornament doth use  
And every fair with his fair doth rehearse;  
Making a complement of proud compare,  
With sun and moon, with earth and sea's rich  
gems,  
With April's first-born flowers, and all things  
rare  
That heaven's air in this huge roundure hems.  
O, let me true in love, but truly write,  
And then my lovers see, my love is as fair  
As any mother's child, though not so bright  
As yonder golden candle fix'd in heaven's air:  
Let them say more that like of heavenly well;  
I will not say that purpose not to sell.

## XXIII.

My name shall not persuade me I am old;  
And youth and thou are of one date;

But when in thee time's furrows I behold,  
Then look I death my days should expiate.  
For all that beauty that doth cover thee  
Is but the seemly raiment of my heart,  
Which in thy breast doth live, as thine in me:  
How can I then be elder than thou art!  
O, therefore, love, be of thyself so wary  
As I, not for myself, but for thee will;  
Bearing thy heart, which I will keep so chary  
As tender nurse her babe from faring ill.  
Presume not on thy heart when mine is slain;  
Thou gavest me thine, not to give back again.

## XXIII.

As an imperfect actor on the stage  
Who with his fear is put besides his part,  
Or some fierce thing replete with too much rage,  
Whose strength's abundance weakens his own  
heart,  
So I, for fear of trust, forget to say  
The perfect ceremony of love's rite,  
And in mine own love's strength seem to decay,  
O'ercharged with burden of mine own love's  
might.  
O, let my books be then the eloquence  
And dumb presagers of my speaking breast,  
Who plead for love and look for recompense  
More than that tongue that more hath more  
express'd.  
O, learn to read what silent love hath writ:  
To hear with eyes belongs to love's fine wit.

## XXIV.

Mine eye hath play'd the painter and hath  
stell'd  
Thy beauty's form in table of my heart;  
My body is the frame wherein 'tis held,  
And perspective it is best painter's art.  
For through the painter must you see his skill,  
To find where your true image pictured lies;  
Which in my bosom's shop is hanging still,  
That hath his windows glazed with thine eyes.  
Now see what good turns eyes for eyes have  
done:  
Mine eyes have drawn thy shape, and thine  
for me  
Are windows to my breast, where-through the  
sun  
Delights to peep, to gaze therein on thee;  
Yet eyes this cunning want to grace their art;  
They draw but what they see, know not the  
heart.

## XXV.

Let those who are in favour with their stars  
Of public honour and proud titles boast  
Whilst I, whom fortune of such triumph bars,  
Unlook'd for joy in that I honour most.  
Great princes' favourites their fair leaves spread  
But as the marigold at the sun's eye,  
And in themselves their pride lies buried,  
For at a frown they in their glory die.  
The painful warrior famoused for  
After a thousand victories once foiled,  
Is from the book of honour rased quite,  
And all the rest forgot for which he toiled;  
Then happy I, that love and am beloved,  
Where I may not remove nor be removed.

## XXVI.

Lord of my love, to whom in vanities  
Thy mark hath my duty strongly knit,  
To thee I send this written emassage,  
To witness duty, not to show my wit:  
Duty so great, which wit as poor as mine  
May make seem bare, in wanting words to  
show it.

But that I hope some good conceit of thine  
In thy soul's thought, all naked, will bestow it;  
Till whatsoever star that guides my moving  
Points on me graciously with fair aspect  
And puts apparel on my tatter'd loving,  
To show me worthy of thy sweet respect:

Then may I dare to boast how I do love thee;  
Till then not show my head where thou  
mayst prove me.

## XXVII.

Wearied with toil, I hate me to my bed,  
The dear repose for limbs with travel tired;  
But then begins a journey in my head,  
To work my mind, when body's work's ex-  
pired:

For then my thoughts, from far where I abide,  
Intend a zealous pilgrimage to thee,  
And keep my drooping eyelids open wide,  
Looking on darkness which the blind do see:  
Save that my soul's imaginary sight  
Presents thy shadow to my sightless view,  
Which, like a jewel hung in ghastly night,  
Makes black night beautiful and her old  
new.

Lo! thus, by day my limbs, by night my  
mind,  
For thee and for myself no quiet find.

## XXVIII.

How can I then return in happy plight,  
That am debarr'd the benefit of rest?  
When day's oppression is not eased by night,  
But day by night, and night by day, oppress'd?  
And each, though enemies to either's reign,  
Do in consent shake hands to torture me;  
The one by toil, the other to complain  
How far I toil, still further off from thee.  
I tell the day, to please him thou art bright  
And dost him grace when clouds do blot the  
heaven:

So flatter I the swart-complexion'd night,  
When sparkling stars twine not thou gild'st the  
even.

But day doth daily draw my sorrows longer  
And night doth nightly make grief's strength  
seem stronger.

## XXIX.

When, in disgrace with fortune and men's eyes,  
I all alone beweep my outcast state  
And trouble deaf heaven with my bootless  
cries

And look upon myself and curse my fate,  
Wishing me like to one more rich in hope,  
Featured like him, like him with friends  
possess'd,

Desiring this man's art and that man's scope,  
With what I most enjoy contented least;

Yet in these thoughts myself almost despising,  
Happy I think on thee, and then my state,  
Like to the lark at break of day arising  
From sullen earth, sings hymns at heaven's  
gate;

For thy sweet love remember'd such wealth  
That then I scorn to change my state with

## XXX.

When to the sessions of sweet silent thought  
I summon up remembrance of things past,  
I sigh the lack of many a thing I sought,  
And with old woes new wail my dear time's  
waste:

Then can I drown an eye, unused to flow,  
For precious friends hid in death's dateless  
night,  
And weep a fresh love's long since cancell'd woe,  
And moan the expense of many a vanish'd  
sight:

Then can I grieve at grievances foregone,  
And heavily from woe to woe tell o'er  
The sad account of fore-bemoaned moan,  
Which I new pay as if not paid before.  
But if the while I think on thee, dear friend,  
All losses are restored and sorrows end.

## XXXI.

Thy bosom is endeared with all hearts,  
Which I by lacking have supposed dead,  
And there reigns love and all love's loving parts,  
And all those friends which I thought buried.  
How many a holy and obsequious tear  
Hath dear religious love stol'n from mine eye  
As interest of the dead, which now appear  
But things removed that hidden in thee lie!  
Thou art the grave where buried love doth live,  
Hung with the trophies of my lovers gone,  
Who all their parts of me to thee did give;  
That due of many now is thine alone:  
Their images I loved I view in thee,  
And thou, all they, hast all the all of me.

## XXXII.

If thou survive my well-contented day,  
When that eternal Death my bones with dust  
shall cover,  
And shalt by fortune once more re-survey  
These poor rude lines of thy deceased lover,  
Compare them with the bettering of the time,  
And though they be outstripp'd by every pen,  
Reserve them for my love, not for their rhyme,  
Exceeded by the height of happier men,  
O, then vouchsafe me but this loving thought:  
Had my friend's Muse grown with this growing  
age,

A dearer birth than this his love had brought,  
To march in ranks of better equinox;  
But since he died, and poets better prove  
Themselves for their style I'll read his for his  
love.

## XXXIII.

Fall many a glorious morning have I seen  
Flatter the mountain-tops with sovereign eye,

Kissing with golden face the meadows green,  
Gilding pale streams with heavenly alchemy;  
Anon permit the basest cloud to hide  
With ugly rack on his celestial face,  
And from the forlorn world his visage hide,  
Stealing unseen to west with this disgrace:  
Even so my sun one early morn did shine  
With all-triumphant splendour on my brow;  
But out, alack! he was but one hour mine;  
The region cloud hath mask'd him from me  
now.

Yet him for this my love no whit disdaineth;  
Suns of the world may stain when heaven's  
sun staineth.

## XXXIV.

Why didst thou promise such a beauteous day  
And make me travel forth without my cloak,  
To let base clouds o'ertake me in my way,  
Hiding thy bravery in their rotten smoke?  
'Tis not enough that through the cloud thou  
break,  
To dry the rain on my storm-beaten face,  
For no man well of such a salve can speak  
That heals the wound and cures not the dis-  
grace;  
Nor can thy shame give physic to my grief;  
Though thou repent, yet I have still the loss:  
The offender's sorrow lends but weak relief  
To him that bears the strong offence's cross.  
Ah! but those tears are pearl which thy love

And they are rich and ransom all ill deeds.

No more be grieved at that which thou hast  
done:

Roses have thorns, and silver fountains mud;  
Clouds and eclipses stain both moon and sun,  
And loathsome canker lives in sweetest bud.  
All men make faults, and even I in this,  
Authorizing thy trespass with compare,  
Myself corrupting, salving thy amiss,  
Excusing thy sins more than thy sins are;  
For to thy sensual fault I bring in sense—  
Thy adverse party is thy advocate—  
And 'gainst myself a lawful plea commence:  
Such civil war is in my love and hate  
That I an accessory needs must be  
To that sweet thief which sourly robs from  
me.

## XXXV.

Let me confess that we two must be twain,  
Although our undivided loves are one;  
So shall those blots that do with me remain  
Without thy help by me be borne alone.  
In our two loves there is but one respect,  
Though in our lives a separable spite,  
Which though it alter not love's sole effect,  
Yet doth it steal sweet hours from love's delight.  
I must not evermore acknowledge thee,  
Lest my bewailed guilt should do thee shame,  
Nor thou with public kindness honour me;  
Unless thou take that honour from my name:  
But do not so; I love thee in such sort  
As, though being mine, mine is thy good re-  
spect.

## XXXVII.

As a decrepit father takes delight  
To see his active child do deeds of youth,  
So I, made lame by fortune's dearest spite,  
Take all my comfort of thy worth and truth.  
For whether beauty, birth, or wealth, or wit,  
Or any of these all, or all, or more,  
Entitled in thy parts do crowned sit,  
I make my love engrafted to this store:  
So then I am not lame, poor, nor despised,  
Whilst that this shadow doth such substance  
give  
That I in thy abundance am  
And by a part of all thy glory live.

Look, what is best, that best I wish in thee:  
This wish I have; then ten times happy me!

## XXXVIII.

How can my Muse want subject to invent,  
While thou dost breathe, that pour'st into my  
verse  
Thine own sweet argument, too excellent  
For every vulgar paper to rehearse?  
O, give thyself the thanks, if aught in me  
Worthy perusal stand against thy sight;  
For who's so dumb that cannot write to thee,  
When thou thyself dost give invention light?  
Be thou the tenth Muse, ten times more in  
worth

Than those old nine which rhymers invoke;  
And he that calls on thee, let him bring forth  
Eternal numbers to outlive long date.

If my slight Muse do please these curious  
days,  
The pain be mine, but thine shall be the  
praise.

## XXXIX.

O, how thy worth with manners may I sing,  
When thou art all the better part of me!  
What can mine own praise to mine own self  
bring?  
And what is't but mine own when I praise  
thee?

Even for this let us divided live,  
And our dear love lose name of single one,  
That by this separation I may give  
That due to thee which thou deservest alone.  
O absence, what a torment wouldst thou prove,  
Were it not thy sour leisure gave sweet leave  
To entertain the time with thoughts of love,  
Which time and thoughts so sweetly doth

deceive,  
And that thou teachest how to make one  
twain,  
By praising him here who doth hence re-  
main!

## XL.

Take all my loves, my love, yea, take them all:  
What hast thou then more than thou hadst  
before?

No love, my love, that thou mayst true love  
call;

All mine was thine before thou hadst this more.  
Then if for my love thou my love movest,  
I cannot blame thee for my love thou ushest;

But yet be blamed, if thou thyself deceivest  
By wilful taste of what thyself refusest.  
I do forgive thy robbery, gentle thief,  
Although thou steal thee all my poverty;  
And yet, love knows, it is a greater grief  
To bear love's wrong than hate's known injury.  
Lascivious grace, in whom all ill well shows,  
Kill me with spites; yet we must not be foes.

## XLI.

Those pretty wrongs that liberty commits,  
When I am sometime absent from thy heart,  
Thy beauty and thy years full well befits,  
For still temptation follows where thou art.  
Gentle thou art and therefore to be won,  
Beauteous thou art, therefore to be assailed;  
And when a woman woos, what woman's son  
Will sourly leave her till she have prevailed?  
Ay me! but yet thou might'st my seat forbear,  
And chide thy beauty and thy straying youth,  
Who lead thee in their riot even there  
Where thou art forced to break a twofold truth,  
Here, by thy beauty tempting her to thee,  
Thine, by thy beauty being false to me.

## XLII.

That thou hast her, it is not all my grief,  
And yet it may be said I loved her dearly;  
That she hath thee, is of my wailing chief,  
A loss in love that touches me more nearly.  
Loving offenders, thus I will excuse ye:  
Thou dost love her, because thou know'st I love  
her;  
And for my sake even so doth she abuse me,  
Suffering my friend for my sake to approve  
her.  
If I lose thee, my loss is my love's gain,  
And losing her, my friend hath found that  
loss;  
Both find each other, and I lose both twain,  
And both for my sake lay on me this cross:  
But here's the joy; my friend and I are one;  
Sweet flattery! then she loves but me alone.

## XLIII.

When most I wink, then do mine eyes best see,  
For all the day they view things unrespected;  
But when I sleep, in dreams they look on thee,  
And darkly bright are bright in dark directed.  
Then thou, whose shadow shadows doth make  
bright,  
How would thy shadow's form form happy  
show  
To the clear day with thy much clearer light,  
When to unseeing eyes thy shade shines so!  
How would, I say, mine eyes be blessed made  
By looking on thee in the living day,  
When in dead night thy fair imperfect shade  
Through heavy sleep on sightless eyes doth  
stay!  
All days are nights to see till I see thee,  
And nights bright days when dreams do show  
thee me.

## XLIV.

If the dull soul of mine were thought,  
If the dull soul of mine were thought,  
not stop my way;

For then despite of space I would be brought,  
From limits far remote, where thou dost stay.  
No matter then although my foot did stand  
Upon the farthest earth removed from thee;  
For nimble thought can jump both sea and  
land

As soon as think the place where he would be.  
But, ah! thought kills me that I am not  
thought,  
To leap large lengths of miles when thou art  
gone,  
But that so much of earth and water wrought  
I must attend time's leisure with my moan,  
Receiving nought by elements so slow  
But heavy tears, badges of either's woe.

## XLV.

The other two, slight air and purging fire,  
Are both with thee, wherever I abide;  
The first my thought, the other my desire,  
These present-absent with swift motion slide.  
For when these quicker elements are gone  
In tender embassy of love to thee,  
My life, being made of four, with two alone  
Sinks down to death, oppress'd with melan-  
choly;  
Until life's composition be recur'd  
By those swift messengers return'd from thee,  
Who even but now come back again, assured  
Of thy fair health, recounting it to me:  
This told, I joy; but then no longer glad,  
I send them back again and straight grow sad.

## XLVI.

Mine eye and heart are at a mortal war  
To divide the conquest of thy sight;  
Mine eye my heart thy picture's sight would  
bar,  
My heart mine eye the freedom of that right.  
My heart doth plead that thou in him dost  
lie,—  
A closet never pierced with crystal eyes—  
But the defendant doth that plea deny  
And says in him thy fair appearance lies.  
To 'cide this title is impaneled  
A quest of thoughts, all tenants to the heart,  
And by their verdict is determined  
The clear eye's moiety and the dear heart's  
part:  
As thus; mine eye's due is thy outward part,  
And my heart's right thy inward love of  
heart.

## XLVII.

Between mine eye and heart a league is took,  
And each doth good turns now unto the other:  
When that mine eye is famish'd for a look,  
Or heart in love with sighs himself doth  
smother,  
With my love's picture then my eye doth feast  
And to the painted banquet bids my heart;  
Another time mine eye is my heart's guest  
And in his thoughts of love doth share a part:  
So, either by thy picture or my love,  
Thyself away art present still with me;  
For thou not farther than my thoughts canst  
move,  
And I am still with them and they with thee;

Awakes my heart to  
 In my sight  
 It and eye's delight.

## XLVIII.

How careful was I, when I took my way,  
 Each trifle under truest bars to thrust,  
 That to my use it might unused stay  
 From hands of falsehood, in sure wards of  
 trust!

But thou, to whom my jewels trifles are,  
 Most worthy comfort, now my greatest grief,  
 Thou, best of dearest and mine only care,  
 Art left the prey of every vulgar thief.  
 Thee have I not lock'd up in any chest,  
 Save where thou art not, though I feel thou art,  
 Within the gentle closure of my breast,  
 From whence at pleasure thou mayst come and  
 part;

And even thence thou wilt be stol'n, I fear,  
 For truth proves thievish for a prize so dear.

## XLIX.

Against that time, if ever that time come,  
 When I shall see thee frown on my defects,  
 When as thy love hath cast his utmost sum,  
 Call'd to that audit by advised respects;  
 Against that time when thou shalt strangely

And scarcely greet me with that sun, thine eye,  
 When love, converted from the thing it was,  
 Shall reason find of settled gravity,—  
 Against that time do I ensconce me here  
 Within the knowledge of mine own desert,  
 And this my hand against myself uprear,  
 To guard the lawful reasons on thy part:

To leave poor me thou hast the strength of  
 laws,

Since why to love I can allege no cause.

How heavy do I journey on the way,  
 When what I seek, my weary travel's end,  
 Doth teach that ease and that repose to say  
 "Thus far the miles are measured from thy  
 friend!"

The beast that bears me, tired with my woe,  
 Pines dully on, to bear that weight in me,  
 As if by some instinct the wretch did know  
 His rider loved not speed, being made from  
 thee;

The bloody spur cannot provoke him on  
 That sometimes anger thrusts into his hide;  
 Which heavily he answers with a groan,  
 More sharp to me than spurrying to his side;  
 For that same groan doth put this in my  
 mind;

My grief has onward and my joy behind.

## L.

There can my love excuse the slow offence  
 Of my dull bearer when from thee I speed:  
 From whom thou art why should I haste me  
 thence?

Still it excuses, if getting is no need.  
 O, what excuse will my poor beast then find,  
 When such excuse can excuse his slow?

Then should I spur, though mounted on the  
 wind;

In winged speed no motion shall I know:  
 Then can no horse with any desire keep pace;  
 Therefore desire, of perfect love being made,  
 Shall neigh—no dull flesh—in his fiery race;  
 But love, for love, thus shall excuse my haste;  
 Since from thee going he went wilful-slow,  
 Towards thee I'll run, and give him leave to  
 go.

## LII.

So am I as the rich, whose key  
 Can bring him to his sweet upland treasure,  
 The which he will not every hour survey,  
 For blunting the fine point of seldom pleasure.  
 Therefore are feasts so solemn and so rare,  
 Since, seldom coming, in the long year set,  
 Like stones of worth they thinly placed are,  
 Or captain jewels in the carcanet.  
 So is the time that keeps you as my chest,  
 Or as the wardrobe which the robe doth hide,  
 To make some special instant special blest,  
 By new unfolding his imprison'd pride.

Blessed are you, whose worthiness gives  
 scope,

Being had, to triumph, being lack'd, to hope.

## LIII.

What is your substance, whereof are you made,  
 That millions of strange shadows on you tend?  
 Since every one hath, every one, one shade,  
 And you, but one, can every shadow lend.  
 Describe Adonis, and the counterfeit  
 Is poorly imitated after you;  
 On Helen's cheek all art of beauty set,  
 And you in Grecian tires are painted new:  
 Speak of the spring and foison of the year;  
 The one doth shadow of your beauty show;  
 The other as your bounty doth appear;  
 And you in every blessed shape we know.  
 In all external grace you have some part,  
 But you like none, none you, for constant  
 heart.

## LIV.

O, how much more doth beauty beauteous  
 seem  
 By that sweet ornament which truth doth give!  
 The rose looks fair, but fairer we it deem  
 For that sweet odour which doth in it live.  
 The canker-blossom have full as deep a dye  
 As the perfumed tincture of the rose,  
 Hang on such thorns and play as wantonly  
 When summer's breath their masked beds  
 discloses:

But, for their virtue only is their show,  
 They live unwoo'd and unexspect'd fade,  
 Die to themselves. Sweet roses do not so;  
 Of their sweet deaths are sweetest odours made:  
 And so of you, beauteous and lovely youth,  
 When that shall fade, my verse distills your  
 truth.

## LV.

Not marble, nor the gilded monuments  
 Of princes, shall outlive this powerful rhyme;



But you shall shine more bright in these contents

Than unswept stone besmeared with sluttish time.

When wasteful war shall statues overturn,  
And broils root out the work of masonry,  
Nor Mars his sword nor war's quick fire shall burn

The living record of your memory.  
'Gainst death and all-oblivious enmity  
Shall you pace forth; your praise shall still find room

Even in the eyes of all posterity  
That wear this world out to the ending doom.

So, till the judgement that yourself arise,  
You live in this, and dwell in lovers' eyes.

## LVI.

Sweet love, renew thy force; be it not said  
Thy edge should blunter be than appetite,  
Which but to-day by feeding is allay'd,  
To-morrow sharpen'd in his former might;  
So, love, be thou; although to-day thou fill  
Thy hungry eyes even till they wink with fullness,

To-morrow see again, and do not kill  
The spirit of love with a perpetual dullness.  
Let this sad interim like the ocean be  
Which parts the shore, where two contracted new  
Come daily to the banks, that, when they see  
Return of love, more blest may be the view;  
Else call it winter, which being full of care  
Makes summer's welcome thrice more wish'd,  
more rare.

## LVII.

Being your slave, what should I do but tend  
Upon the hours and times of your desire?  
I have no precious time at all to spend,  
Nor services to do, till you require.  
Nor dare I chide the world-without-end hour  
Whilst I, my sovereign, watch the clock for you,  
Nor think the bitterness of absence sour  
When you have bid your servant once adieu;  
Nor dare I question with my jealous thought  
Where you may be, or your affairs suppose,  
But, like a sad slave, stay and think of nought  
Save, where you are, how happy you make those.  
So true a fool is love that in your will,  
Though you do any thing, he thinks no ill.

## LVIII.

That god forbid that made me first your slave,  
I should in thought control your times of pleasure,

Or as your hand the account of hours to crave,  
Being your vassal, bound to stay your leisure!

d patience, tame to sufferance, bids each  
check,  
Without accusing you of injury,  
Be where you list, your charter is so strong  
That you yourself may privilege your time  
To what you will; to you it doth belong  
Yourself to pardon of self-doing crime.  
I am to wait, though waiting so be hell;  
Not blame your pleasure, be it ill or well.

## LIX.

If there be nothing new, but that which is  
Hath been before, how are our brains beguiled,  
Which, labouring for invention, bear amiss  
The second burden of a former child!  
O, that record could with a backward look,  
Even of five hundred courses of the sun,  
Show me your image in some antique book,  
Since mind at first in character was done!  
That I might see what the old world could say  
To this composed wonder of your frame;  
Whether we are manded, or whether better  
they,  
Or whether revolution be the same.  
O, sure I am, the wits of former days  
To subjects worse have given admiring praise.

Like as the waves make towards the pebbled shore,

So do our minutes hasten to their end;  
Each changing place with that which goes before,

In sequent toil all forwards do contend.  
Nativity, once in the main of light,  
Crawls to maturity, wherewith being crown'd,  
Crook'd eclipses 'gainst his glory fight,  
And Time that gave doth now his gift confound.

Time doth transfix the flourish set on youth  
And delves the parallels in beauty's brow,  
Feeds on the rarities of nature's truth,  
And nothing stands but for his scythe to mow;  
† And yet to times in hope my verse shall stand,

Praising thy worth, despite his cruel hand.

## LXI.

Is it thy will thy image should keep open  
My heavy eyelids to the weary night?  
Dost thou desire my slumbers should be broken,  
While shadows like to thee do mock my sight?  
Is it thy spirit that thou send'st from thee  
So far from home into my deeds to pry,  
To find out shames and idle hours in me,  
The scope and tenure of thy jealousy?  
O, no! thy love, though much, is not so great:  
It is my love that keeps mine eye awake:  
Mine own true love that doth my rest defeat,  
To play the watchman ever for thy sake:

For thee watch I whilst thou dost wake elsewhere,

From me far off, with others all too near.

## LXII.

Sin of self-love possesseth all mine eyes  
And all my soul and all my every part;  
And for this sin there is no remedy,  
It is so grounded inward in my heart.  
Methinks no face so gracious is as mine,  
No shape so true, no truth of such account,  
And for myself mine own worth do extol,  
As I all other in all worths do out.  
But when my glass shows me myself indeed,  
Beated and chopp'd with time's envenomed hand,  
Mine own self-love quite contrary I find;  
Self so self-loving was in vain.

'Tis thee, myself, that for myself I praise,  
Painting my age with beauty of thy days.

## LXIII.

Against my love shall be, as I am now,  
With Time's injurious hand crush'd and o'er-  
worn;  
When hours have drain'd his blood and fill'd  
his brow  
With lines and wrinkles; when his youthful  
morn  
Hath travell'd on to age's steepy night,  
And all those beauties whereof now he's king  
Are vanishing or vanish'd out of sight,  
Stealing away the treasure of his spring;  
For such a time do I now fortify  
Against confounding age's cruel knife,  
That he shall never cut from memory  
My sweet love's beauty, though my lover's  
life:

His beauty shall in these black lines be seen,  
And they shall live, and he in them still  
green.

## LXIV.

When I have seen by Time's fell hand defaced  
The rich proud coat of outworn buried age;  
When sometime lofty towers I see down-raised  
And brass eternal slave to mortal rage;  
When I have seen the hungry ocean gain  
Advantage on the kingdom of the shore,  
And the firm soil win of the watery main,  
Increasing store with loss and loss with store;  
When I have seen such interchange of state,  
Or state itself confounded to decay;  
Ruin hath taught me thus to ruminat,  
That Time will come and take my love away.

This thought is as a death, which cannot  
chose

But weep to have that which it fears to lose.

## LXV.

Since brass, nor stone, nor earth, nor boundless  
sea,

But sad mortality o'er-ways their power,  
How with this rage shall beauty hold a plea,  
Whose action is no stronger than a flower?  
O, how shall summer's honey breath hold out  
Against the wreckful siege of battering days,  
When rocks impregnable are not so stout,  
Nor gates of steel so strong, but Time decays?  
O fearful meditation! where, alack,  
Shall Time's best jewel from Time's chest  
be hid?

Or what strong hand can hold his swift foot  
back?

Or who his spoil of beauty can forbid?  
O, none, unless this miracle have might,  
That in black ink my love may still shine  
bright.

## LXVI.

Time will all these, for rental death I cry,  
As, to the latest, a beggar born,  
And needy, nothing trimm'd in jollity,  
And more than unsuppl'd and unsupplied,  
And still the poorer, shamefully misplaced,  
I virtue rudely strumpeted,

And right perfection wrongfully disgraced,  
And strength by limping away disabled,  
And art made tongue-tied by authority,  
And folly doctor-like controlling skill,  
And simple truth miscall'd simplicity,  
And captive good attending captain ill:

Tired with all these, from these would I be  
gone,

Save that, to die, I leave my love alone.

## LXVII.

Ah! wherefore with infection should he live,  
And with his presence grace impiety,  
That sin by him advantage should achieve  
And lace itself with his society?  
Why should false painting imitate his cheek  
And steal dead seeming of his living hue?  
Why should poor beauty indirectly seek  
Roses of shadow, since his rose is true?  
Why should he live, now Nature bankrupt is,  
Beggard of blood-to blush through lively  
veins?

For she hath no exchequer now but his,  
And, proud of many, lives upon his gains,  
O, him she stores, to show what wealth she  
had

In days long since, before these last so bad.

Thus is his cheek the map of days outworn,  
When beauty lived and died as flowers do now,  
Before these bastard signs of fair were born,  
Or durst inhabit on a living brow;  
Before the golden tresses of the dead,  
The right of sepulchres, were shorn away,  
To live a second life on second head;  
Ere beauty's dead fleece made another gay:  
In him those holy antique hours are seen,  
Without all ornament, itself and true,  
Making no summer of another's green,  
Robbing no old to dress his beauty new;  
And him as for a map doth Nature store,  
To show false Art what beauty was of yore.

## LXIX.

Those parts of thee that the world's eye doth  
view

Want nothing that the thought of hearts can  
mend;

All tongues, the voice of souls, give thee that  
due,

Uttering bare truth, even so as foes commend.

Thy outward thus with outward praise is  
crown'd;

But those same tongues that give thee so much  
thine  
own

In other accents do this praise confound  
By seeing farther than the eye hath shown.

They look into the beauty of thy mind,  
And that, in guess, they measure by thy deeds;

Then, churls, their thoughts, although their eyes  
were kind,

To thy fair flower add the rank smell of weeds:  
But why thy odour matcheth not thy show,

The solve is this, that thou dost common  
grow.

## LXX.

That thou art blamed shall not be thy defect,  
 For slander's mark was ever yet the fair;  
 The ornament of beauty is suspect,  
 A crow that flies in heaven's sweetest air.  
 So thou be good, slander doth but approve  
 Thy worth the greater, being woo'd of time;  
 For canker vice the sweetest buds doth love,  
 And thou present'st a pure unstained prime.  
 Thou hast pass'd by the ambush of young days,  
 Either not assail'd or victor being charged;  
 Yet this thy praise cannot be so thy praise,  
 To tie up envy evermore enlarged:  
 If some suspect of ill mask'd not thy show,  
 Then thou alone kingdoms of hearts shouldst  
 owe.

## LXXI.

No longer mourn for me when I am dead  
 Than you shall hear the surly sullen bell  
 Give warning to the world that I am fled  
 From this vile world, with vilest worms to  
 dwell:  
 Nay, if you read this line, remember not  
 The hand that writ it; for I love you so  
 That I in your sweet thoughts would be forgot  
 If thinking on me then should make you woe.  
 O, if, I say, you look upon this verse  
 When I perhaps compounded am with clay,  
 Do not so much as my poor name rehearse,  
 But let your love even with my life decay,  
 Lest the wise world should look into your  
 moan  
 And mock you with me after I am gone.

## LXXII.

O, lest the world should task you to recite  
 What merit lived in me, that you should love  
 After my death, dear love, forget me quite,  
 For you in me can nothing worthy prove;  
 Unless you would devise some virtuous lie,  
 To do more for me than mine own desert,  
 And hang more praise upon deceased I  
 Than niggard truth would willingly impart:  
 O, lest your true love may seem false in this,  
 That you for love speak well of me untrue,  
 My name be buried where my body is,  
 And live no more to shame nor me nor you.  
 For I am shamed by that which I bring forth,  
 And so should you, to love things nothing  
 worth.

## LXXIII.

That time of year thou may'st in me behold  
 When yellow leaves, or none, or few, do hang  
 Upon those boughs which shake against the  
 cold,  
 Bare ruin'd choirs, where late the sweet bird  
 sang.  
 In me thou see'st the twilight of such day  
 As after sunset fadeth in the west,  
 Which by and by black night doth take away,  
 Death's second self, that seals up all in rest.  
 In me thou see'st the glowing of such fire  
 That on the ashes of his youth doth lie,  
 As the death-bed whereon it must expire,  
 Consumed with that which it was nourish'd by.

This thou <sup>more</sup> <sup>lovest</sup>, which makes thy love  
 To love that <sup>all</sup> which thou must leave ere  
 long.

But be contented: when that fall arrest  
 Without all hail shall carry me away,  
 My life hath in this line some interest,  
 Which for memorial still with thee shall stay.  
 When thou reviewest this, thou dost review  
 The very part was consecrate to thee:  
 The earth can have but earth, which is his due;  
 My spirit is thine, the better part of me:  
 So then thou hast but lost the dregs of life,  
 The prey of worms, my body being dead,  
 The coward conquest of a wretch's knife,  
 Too base of thee to be remembered.  
 The worth of that is that which it contains,  
 And that is this, and this with thee remains.

## LXXV.

So are you to my thoughts as food to life,  
 Or as sweet-season'd showers are to the ground;  
 And for the peace of you I hold such strife  
 As 'twixt a miser and his wealth is found;  
 Now proud as an enjoyer and anon  
 Doubting the filching age will steal his treasure,  
 Now counting best to be with you alone,  
 Then better'd that the world may see my  
 pleasure:  
 Sometime all full with feasting on your sight  
 And by and by clean starved for a look;  
 Possessing or pursuing no delight,  
 Sate what is had or must from you be took.  
 Thus do I pine and surfeit day by day,  
 Or gluttoning on all, or all away.

## LXXVI.

Why is my verse so barren of new pride,  
 So far from variation or quick change?  
 Why with the time do I not glance aside  
 To new-found methods and to compounds  
 strange?  
 Why write I still all one, ever the same,  
 And keep invention in a noted weed,  
 That every word doth almost tell my name,  
 Showing their birth and where they did pro-  
 ceed?  
 O, know, sweet love, I always write of you,  
 And you and love are still my argument;  
 So all my best is dressing old words new,  
 Spending again what is already spent:  
 For as the sun is daily new and old,  
 So is my love still telling what is told.

## LXXVII.

Thy glass will show thee how thy beauties  
 wear,  
 Thy dial how thy precious minutes waste;  
 The vacant leaves thy mind's imprint will bear,  
 And of this book this learning may'st thou taste.  
 The wrinkles which thy glass will truly show  
 Of mouthed graves will give thee memory:  
 Thou by thy dial's shady stealth may'st know  
 Time's thievish progress to eternity.  
 Look, what thy memory can not contain  
 Commit to these waste blanks, and thou shalt find

Those children nursed, deliver'd from thy brain,  
To take a new acquaintance of thy mind.  
These offices, so oft as thou wilt look,  
Shall profit thee and much enrich thy book.

## LXXVIII.

So oft have I invoked thee for my Muse  
And found such fair assistance in my verse  
As every alien pen hath got my use  
And under thee their poesy disperse.  
Thine eyes that taught the dumb on high to sing  
And heavy ignorance aloft to fly  
Have added feathers to the learned's wing  
And given grace a double majesty.  
Yet be most proud of that which I compile,  
Whose influence is thine and born of thee:  
In others' works thou dost but mend the style,  
And arts with thy sweet graces graced be;  
But thou art all my art and dost advance  
As high as learning my rude ignorance.

## LXXIX.

Whilst I alone did call upon thy aid,  
My verse alone had all thy gentle grace,  
But now my gracious numbers are decay'd  
And my sick Muse doth give another place.  
I grant, sweet love, thy lovely argument  
Deserves the travail of a worthier pen,  
Yet what of thee thy poet doth invent  
He robs thee of and pays it thee again.  
He lends thee virtue and he stole that word  
From thy behaviour; beauty doth he give  
And found it in thy cheek; he can afford  
No praise to thee but what in thee doth live.  
Then thank him not for that which he doth say,  
Since what he owes thee thou thyself dost pay.

## LXXX.

O, how I faint when I of you do write,  
Knowing a better spirit doth use your name,  
And in the praise thereof spends all his might,  
To make me tongue-tied, speaking of your fame!  
But since your worth, wide as the ocean is,  
The humble as the proudest sail doth bear,  
My saucy bark in farthest part doth lie,  
On your broad main doth wilfully appear.  
Your shallowest help will hold me up afloat,  
Whilst he upon your soundless deep doth ride;  
Or, being wreck'd, I am a worthless boat,  
He of tall building and of goodly pride:  
Then if he thrive and I be cast away,  
The worst was this; my love was my decay.

## LXXXI.

Or I shall live your epitaph to make,  
Or you survive when I in earth am rotten;  
From hence your memory death cannot take,  
Although in me each part will be forgotten.  
Yours name from hence immortal life shall have,  
Though I, once gone, to all the world must die:  
The earth can yield me but a common grave,  
Where you are remembered in men's eyes shall lie.  
Your constant praise shall my great charge express,  
And death shall not prevent me from my quest,  
When I have scribbled that which shall express  
How uncreated shall my verse be read,

And tongues to be your being shall rehearse  
When all the breathers of this world are dead;  
You still shall live—such virtue hath my  
pen—  
Where breath most breathes, even in the  
mouths of men.

## LXXXII.

I grant thou wert not married to my Muse  
And therefore mayst without attaint o'erlook  
The dedicated words which writers use  
Of their fair subject, blessing every book.  
Thou art as fair in knowledge as in hue,  
Finding thy worth a limit past my praise,  
And therefore art enforced to seek anew  
Some fresher stamp of the time-bettering days.  
And do so, love; yet when they have devised  
What strained touches rhetoric can lend,  
Thou truly fair wert truly sympathized  
In true plain words by thy true-telling friend;  
And their gross painting might be better used  
Where cheeks need blood; in thee it is  
abused.

## LXXXIII.

I never saw that you did painting need  
And therefore to your fair no painting set;  
I found, or thought I found, you did exceed  
The barren tender of a poet's debt;  
And therefore have I slept in your report,  
That you yourself being extant well might show  
How far a modern quill doth come too short,  
Speaking of worth, what worth in you doth  
grow.  
This silence for my sin you did impute,  
Which shall be most my glory, being dumb;  
For I impair not beauty being mute,  
Where others would give life and bring a tomb.  
There lives more life in one of your fair eyes  
Than both your poets can in praise devise.

## LXXXIV.

Who is it that says most? which can say more  
Than this rich praise, that you alone are you!  
In whose confine immured is the store  
Which should example where your equal grew.  
Lean penury within that pen doth dwell  
That to his subject lends not some small glory;  
But he that writes of you, if he can tell  
That you are you, so dignifies his story,  
Let him but copy what in you is writ,  
Not making worse what nature made so clear,  
And such a counterpart shall fame his wit,  
Making his style admired every where.  
You to your beauties blessings add a curse,  
Being fond on praise, which makes your  
praises worse.

## LXXXV.

My tongue-tied Muse in manners holds her  
still,  
While comments of your praise, richly com-  
mend—  
Reserve their character with golden quill  
And precious phrases by all the Muses filed.  
I think good thoughts whilst other write good  
words,  
And like unletter'd clerk still cry 'Amen'

To every hymn that able spirit affords  
In polish'd form of well-refined pen.  
Hearing you praised, I say 'Tis so, 'tis true,  
And to the most of praise add something more;  
But that is in my thought, whose love to you,  
Though words come hindmost, holds his rank  
before.

Then others for the breath of words respect,  
Me for my dumb thoughts, speaking in effect.

## LXXXVI.

Was it the proud full sail of his great verse,  
Bound for the prize of all too precious you,  
That did my ripe thoughts in my brain in-  
hearse,

Making their tomb the womb wherein they  
grew?

Was it his spirit, by spirits taught to write  
Above a mortal pitch, that struck me dead?  
No, neither he, nor his compeers by night  
Giving him aid, my verse astonished.

He, nor that affable familiar ghost  
Which nightly gulls him with intelligence,  
As victors of my silence cannot boast;  
I was not sick of any fear from thence;

But when your countenance fill'd up his line,  
Then lack'd I matter; that enfeebled mine.

## LXXXVII.

Farewell! thou art too dear for my possessing.  
And like enough thou know'st thy estimate:  
The charter of thy worth gives thee releasing;  
My bonds in thee are all determinate.

For how do I hold thee but by thy granting?  
And for that riches where is my deserving?  
The cause of this fair gift in me is wanting,  
And so my patent back again is swerving.  
Thyself then gavest, thy own worth then not  
knowing,

Or me, to whom thou gavest it, else mistaking  
So thy great gift, upon mispision growing,  
Comes home again, on better judgement  
making.

Thus have I had thee, as a dream doth flatter,  
In sleep a king, but waking no such matter.

## LXXXVIII.

When thou shalt be disposed to set me light  
And place my merit in the eye of scorn,  
Upon thy side against myself I'll fight  
And prove thee virtuous, though thou art for-  
sworn.

With mine own weakness being best acquainted  
Upon thy part I can set down a story  
Of faults conceal'd, wherein I am attainted,  
That thou in losing me shalt win much glory  
And I by this will be a gainer too;  
For bending all my loving thoughts on thee,  
The injuries that to myself I do,  
Doing thee wrong, double-vantage me.  
Such is my love, to thee I so belong,  
That for thy right myself will bear all wrong.

## LXXXIX.

Say that thou didst forsake me for some fault,  
And I will comment upon that offence;  
Speak of my lameness, and I straight will halt  
Against thy reasons making no defence.

Thou canst not, love, disgrace me half so ill,  
To set a form upon desired change,  
As I'll myself disgrace: knowing thy will,  
I will acquaintance strangle and look strange,  
Be absent from thy walks, and in my tongue  
Thy sweet beloved name no more shall dwell,  
Lest I, too much profane, should do it wrong  
And haply of our old acquaintance tell.  
For thee against myself I'll vow debate,  
For I must ne'er love him whom thou dost  
hate.

## XC.

Then hate me when thou wilt; if ever, now;  
Now, while the world is beat my deeds to  
cross,

Join with the spite of fortune, make me bow,  
And do not drop in for an after-loss:  
Ah, do not, when my heart hath scaped this  
sorrow,

Come in the rearward of a conquer'd woe;  
Give not a windy night a rainy morrow,  
To linger out a purposed overthrow.  
If thou wilt leave me, do not leave me last,  
When other petty griefs have done their spite,  
But in the onset come; so shall I taste  
At first the very worst of fortune's might,  
And other strains of woe, which now seem  
woe,

Compared with loss of thee will not seem so.

Some glory in their birth, some in their skill,  
Some in their wealth, some in their bodies'  
force,  
Some in their garments, though new-fangled  
ill,  
Some in their hawks and hounds, some in their  
horses;

And every humour hath his adjunct pleasure,  
Wherein it finds a joy above the rest;  
But these particulars are not my measure;  
All these I better in one general best.  
Thy love is better than high birth to me,  
Richer than wealth, prouder than garments'  
cost,

Of more delight than hawks or horses be;  
And having thee, of all men's pride I boast:  
Wretched in this alone, that thou may'st  
take  
All this away and me most wretched make.

## XCII.

But do thy worst to steal thyself away,  
For term of life thou art assured mine,  
And life no longer than thy love will stay,  
For it depends upon that love of thine.  
Then need I not to fear the worst of wrongs,  
When in the least of them my life-hath end.  
I see a better state to me belongs  
Than that which on thy humour doth depend:  
Thou canst not vex me with transmuting mind,  
Since that my life on thy revolt doth lie.  
What a happy title do I find,  
To have thy love, happy to die!  
What's so blessed but that cannot be lost?  
Mayst be false, and yet I know it not.

So shall I live, supposing thou art true,  
Like a deceived husband; so love's face  
May still seem love to me, though alter'd new;  
Thy looks with me, thy heart in other place:  
For there can live no hatred in thine eye,  
Therefore in that I cannot know thy change.  
In many's looks the false heart's history  
Is writ in moods and frowns and wrinkles  
strange,  
But heaven in thy creation did decree  
That in thy face sweet love should ever dwell;  
Whate'er thy thoughts or thy heart's workings  
be,  
Thy looks should nothing thence but sweetness  
tell.

How like Eve's apple doth thy beauty grow,  
If thy sweet virtue answer not thy show!

## XCIV.

They that have power to hurt and will do  
none,  
That do not do the thing they most do show,  
Who, moving others, are themselves as stone,  
Unmoved, cold, and to temptation slow,  
They rightly do inherit heaven's graces  
And husband nature's riches from expense;  
They are the lords and owners of their faces,  
Others but stewards of their excellence.  
The summer's flower is to the summer sweet,  
Though to itself it only live and die,  
But if that flower with base infection meet,  
The basest weed outbraves his dignity:  
For sweetest things turn sourest by their  
decays;  
Lilies that fester smell far worse than weeds.

## XCV.

How sweet and lovely dost thou make the  
shame  
Which, like a canker in the fragrant rose,  
Doth spot the beauty of thy budding name!  
O, in what sweets dost thou thy sins enclose!  
That tongue that tells the story of thy days,  
Making lascivious comments on thy sport,  
Cannot dispraise but in a kind of praise;  
Naming thy name blesses an ill report.  
O, what a mansion have those vices got  
Which for their habitation chose out thee,  
Where beauty's veil doth cover every blot,  
And all things turn to fair that eyes can see!  
Take heed, dear heart, of this large privilege;  
The hardest knife ill-used doth lose his edge.

## XCVI.

Some say thy fault is youth, some wantonness;  
Some say thy grace is youth and gentle sport;  
Both grace and faults are loved of more and  
less;  
Thou makest faults graces that to thee resort.  
As on the finger of a throned queen  
The basest jewel will be well esteem'd,  
So are those errors that in thee are seen  
To truths translated and for true things deem'd.  
For many lambs might the stern wolf betray,  
For many lambs he could his looks translate!

How many gazers mightst thou lead away,  
If thou wouldst use the strength of all thy  
state!  
But do not so; I love thee in such sort  
As, thou being mine, mine is thy good  
report.

## XCVII.

How like a winter hath my absence been  
From thee, the pleasure of the fleeting year!  
What freezings have I felt, what dark days  
seen!  
What old December's bareness every where!  
And yet this time removed was summer's  
time,  
The teeming autumn, big with rich increase,  
Bearing the wanton burthen of the prime,  
Like widow'd womb after their lords' decease  
Yet this abundant issue seem'd to me  
But hope of orphans and unfather'd fruit;  
For summer and his pleasures wait on thee,  
And, thou away, the very birds are mute;  
Or, if they sing, 'tis with so dull a cheer  
That leaves look pale, dreading the winter's  
near.

## XCVIII.

From you have I been absent in the spring,  
When proud-pied April dress'd in all his trim  
Hath put a spirit of youth in every thing,  
That heavy Saturn laugh'd and leap'd with  
him.  
Yet nor the lays of birds nor the sweet smell  
Of different flowers in odour and in hue  
Could make me any summer's story tell,  
Or from their proud lap pluck them where they  
grew;  
Nor did I wonder at the lily's white,  
Nor praise the deep vermilion in the rose;  
They were but sweet, but figures of delight,  
Drawn after you, you pattern of all those.  
Yet seem'd it winter still, and, you away,  
As with your shadow I with these did play:

## XCIX.

The forward violet thus did I chide:  
Sweet thief, whence didst thou steal thy sweet  
that smells,  
If not from my love's breath? The purple  
pride  
Which on thy soft cheek for complexion dwells  
In my love's veins thou hast too grossly dyed.  
The lily I condemned for thy hand,  
And buds of marjoram had stol'n thy hair:  
The roses fearfully on thorns did stand,  
One blushing shame, another white despair;  
A third, nor red nor white, had stol'n of both  
And to his robbery had annex'd thy breath;  
But, for his theft, in pride of all his growth  
A vengeful canker eat him up to death.  
More flowers I noted, yet I none could see  
But sweet or colour it had stol'n from thee.

## C.

Where art thou, Muse, that thou forget'st so  
long  
To speak of that which gives thee all thy  
might;

Spend'st thou thy fury on some worthless song,  
Darkening thy power to lend base subjects  
light!

Return, forgetful Muse, and straight redeem  
In gentle numbers time so idly spent;  
Sing to the ear that doth thy lays esteem  
And gives thy pen both skill and argument.  
Rise, resty Muse, my love's sweet face survey,  
If Time have any wrinkle graven there;  
If any, be a satire to decay,  
And make Time's spoils despised every where.  
Give my love fame faster than Time wastes  
life;  
So thou prevent'st his scythe and crooked  
knife.

## OL

O truant Muse, what shall be thy amends  
For thy neglect of truth in beauty dyed?  
Both truth and beauty on my love depends;  
So dost thou too, and therein dignified.  
Make answer, Muse: wilt thou not haply say  
'Truth needs no colour, with his colour fix'd;  
Beauty no pencil, beauty's truth to lay;  
But best is best, if never intermix'd'?

Because he needs no praise, wilt thou be  
dumb?  
Excuse not silence so: for 't lies in thee  
To make him much outlive a gilded tomb,  
And to be praised of ages yet to be.  
Then do thy office, Muse: I teach thee how  
To make him seem long hence as he shows  
now.

## CL

My love is strengthen'd, though more weak in  
seeming;  
I love not less, though less the show appear:  
That love is merchandized whose rich esteem-  
ing  
The owner's tongue doth publish every where.  
Our love was new and then but in the spring  
When I was wont to greet it with my lays,  
As Philomel in summer's front doth sing  
And stops her pipe in growth of ripper days:  
Not that the summer is less pleasant now  
Than when her mournful hymns did hush the  
night,  
But that wild music burthens every bough  
And sweets grown common lose their dear  
delight.  
Therefore like her I sometime hold my  
tongue,  
Because I would not dull you with my song.

## CLII

Alack, what poverty my Muse brings forth,  
That having such a scope to show her pride,  
The argument all bare is of more worth  
Than when it hath my added praise beside!  
O, blame me not, if I no more can write!  
Look in your glass, and there appears a face  
That over-goes my blunt invention quite,  
Dulling my lines and doing me disgrace.  
Were it not sinful then, striving to mend,  
To mar the subject that before was well?  
For to no other past my verses tend  
Than of your graces and your gifts to tell;

And more, much more, than in my verse can  
sit  
Your own glass shows you when you look  
in it.

## CLIV

To me, fair friend, you never can be old,  
For as you were when first your eye I eyed,  
Such seems your beauty still. Three winters  
cold  
Have from the forests shook three summers'  
pride,  
Three beauteous springs to yellow autumn  
turn'd  
In process of the seasons have I seen,  
Three April perfumes in three hot Junes  
burn'd,  
Since first I saw you fresh, which yet are  
green.  
Ah! yet doth beauty, like a dial-hand,  
Steal from his figure and no pace perceived;  
So your sweet hue, which methinks still doth  
stand,  
Hath motion and mine eye may be deceived:  
For fear of which, hear this, thou age un-  
bred;  
Ere you were born was beauty's summer  
dead.

## CLV

Let not my love be call'd idolatry,  
Nor my beloved as an idol show,  
Since all alike my songs and praises be  
To one, of one, still such, and ever so.  
Kind is my love to-day, to-morrow kind,  
Still constant in a wondrous excellence;  
Therefore my verse to constancy confined,  
One thing expressing, leaves out difference.  
'Fair, kind, and true' is all my argument,  
'Fair, kind, and true' varying to other words;  
And in this change is my invention spent,  
Three themes in one, which wondrous scope  
affords.  
'Fair, kind, and true,' have often lived alone,  
Which three till now never kept seat in one.

## CLVI

When in the chronicle of wasted time  
I see descriptions of the fairest wights,  
And beauty making beautiful old rhyme  
In praise of ladies dead and lovely knights,  
Then, in the blazon of sweet beauty's best,  
Of hand, of foot, of lip, of eye, of brow,  
I see their antique pen would have express'd  
Even such a beauty as you master now.  
So all their praises are but prophecies  
Of this our time, all you prefiguring;  
And, for they look'd but with divining eyes,  
They had not skill enough  
For us, which now  
days,  
Have eyes to wonder, but lack tongues to  
praise.

## CLVII

Not mine own fears, nor the prophetic soul  
Of the wide world dreaming on things to come,

Can yet the lease of my true love controul,  
Supposed as forfeit to a confined doom.  
The mortal moon hath her eclipse endured  
And the sad augurs mock their own presage;  
Uncertainities now crown themselves assured  
And peace proclaims olives of endless age.  
Now with the drops of this most balmy time  
My love looks fresh, and Death to me sub-  
scribes,  
Since, spite of him, I'll live in this poor rhyme,  
While he insults o'er dull and speechless tribes;  
And thou in this shalt find thy monument,  
When tyrants' crests and tombs of brass are  
spent.

CVIII.

What's in the brain that ink may character  
Which hath not figured to thee my true spirit?  
What's new to speak, what new to register,  
That may express my love or thy dear merit?  
Nothing, sweet boy; but yet, like prayers  
divine,  
I must each day say o'er the very same,  
Counting no old thing odd, thou mine, I thine,  
Even as when first I hallow'd thy fair name.  
So that eternal love in love's fresh case  
Weighs not the dust and injury of age,  
Nor gives to necessary wrinkles place,  
But makes antiquity for aye his page,  
Finding the first conceit of love there bred  
Where time and outward form would show it  
dead.

CIX.

O, never say that I was false of heart,  
Though absence seem'd my flame to qualify.  
As easy might I from myself depart  
As from my soul, which in thy breast doth lie:  
That in my home of love: if I have ranged,  
Like him that travels I return again,  
Just to the time, not with the time exchanged,  
So that myself bring water for my stain.  
Never believe, though in my nature reign'd  
Ait falsities that besege all kinds of blood,  
That it could so preposterously be stain'd,  
To leave for nothing all thy sum of good;  
For nothing this wide universe I call,  
Save thou, my rose; in it thou art my all.

CX.

Alas, 'tis true I have gone here and there  
And made myself a motley to the view,  
Gored mine own thoughts, sold cheap what is  
most dear;  
Made old offences of affections new;  
Most true 'tis that I have look'd on truth  
Akin and strangely: but, by all above,  
These blazes have given my heart another youth,  
And worse ways have proved thee my best of love.  
Now all is done, have what shall have no end:  
Mine appetite I never more will grind  
On new sweet, to try an older friend,  
A god in love, to whom I am confined.  
Then give me welcome, next my heaven the  
face,  
Shine to thy pure and sweet most loving

CXI.

O, for my sake do you with Fortune chide,  
The guilty goddess of my harmful deeds,  
That did not better for my life provide  
Than public means which public manners  
breeds.  
Thence comes it that my name receives  
brand,  
And almost thence my nature is subdued  
To what it works in, like the dyer's hand:  
Pity me then and wish I were renew'd;  
Whilst, like a willing patient, I will drink  
Potions of ease 'gainst my shape's infection;  
No bitterness that I will bitter think,  
Nor double penance, to correct correction.  
Pity me then, dear friend, and I assure ye  
Even that your pity is enough to cure me.

CXII.

Your love and pity doth the impression fill  
Which vulgar scandal stamp'd upon my brow  
For what care I who calls me well or ill,  
So you o'er-green my bad, my good allow?  
You are my all the world, and I must strive  
To know my shames and praises from your  
tongue;  
None else to me, nor I to none alive,  
That my steel'd sense or changes right or  
wrong.  
In so profound abyss I throw all care  
Of others' voices, that my adder's senses  
To critic and to flatterer stopped are.  
Mark how with my neglect I do dispense:  
You are so strongly in my purpose bred  
That all the world besides methinks are dead.

CXIII.

Since I left you, mine eye is in my mind;  
And that which governs me to go about  
Doth part his function and is partly blind,  
Seems seeing, but effectually is out;  
For it no form delivers to the heart  
Of bird, or flower, or shape, which it doth  
hatch:  
Of his quick objects hath the mind no part,  
Nor his own vision holds what it doth catch;  
For if it see the rudest or gentlest sight,  
The most sweet favour or deformed creature  
The mountain or the sea, the day or night,  
The crow or dove, it shapes them to your  
feature:  
Incapable of more, replets with you,  
My most true mind thus makes mine eye  
untrue.

CXIV.

Or whether doth my mind, being crown'd with  
you,  
Drink up the monarch's plague, this flattery!  
Or whether shall I say, mine eye saith true,  
And that your love taught it this alchemy,  
To make of monsters and things indigest  
Such cherubins as your sweet self resemble,  
Creating every bad a perfect best,  
As fast as objects to his beams assemble?  
O, 'tis the first; 'tis flattery in my seeing.  
And my great mind's most kingly sense is up



Mine eye well knows what with his gust is  
greeting,  
And to his palate doth prepare the cup :  
If it be poison'd, 'tis the lesser sin  
That mine eye loves it and doth first begin.

## CXV.

Those lines that I before have writ do lie,  
Even those that said I could not love you  
dearer :  
Yet then my judgement knew no reason why  
My most full flame should afterwards burn  
clearer.  
But reckoning time, whose million'd accidents  
Creep in 'twixt vows and change decrees of  
kings,  
Tan sacred beauty, blunt the sharp'st intents,  
Divert strong minds to the course of altering  
things ;  
Alas, why, fearing of time's tyranny,  
Might I not then say 'Now I love you best,'  
When I was certain o'er uncertainty,  
Crowning the present, doubting of the rest ?  
Love is a babe ; then might I not say so,  
To give full growth to that which still doth  
grow !

## CXVI.

Let me not to the marriage of true minds  
Admit impedimenta. Love is not love  
Which alters when it alteration finds,  
(Or bends with the remover to remove :  
(O, no ! it is an ever-fixed mark  
That looks on tempests and is never shaken ;  
It is the star to every wandering bark,  
Whose worth's unknown, although his height  
be taken.  
Love's not Time's fool, though rosy lips and  
cheeks  
Within his bending sickle's compass come ;  
Love alters not with his brief hours and weeks,  
But bears it out even to the edge of doom.  
If this be error and upon me proved,  
I never writ, nor no man ever loved.

## CXVII.

Accuse me thus : that I have scanted all  
Wherein I should your great deserts repay.  
Forgot upon your dearest love to call,  
Where to all bonds do tie me day by day ;  
That I have frequent been with unknown  
maids  
And given to time your own dear-purchased  
right ;  
That I have hoisted sail to all the winds  
Which should transport me farthest from your  
sight,  
Book both my witness and errors down  
And on just proof surmise accumulate ;  
Bring me within the level of your frown,  
But shoot not at me in your waken'd hate ;  
Since my appeal says I did strive to prove  
The constancy and virtue of your love.

## CXVIII.

Like as, to make our appetites more keen,  
With eager compounds we our palate urge,  
As, to prevent our maidens' nausea,  
We sicken to their sickness when we purge,

Even so, being full of your new-cloying ; weat-  
ness,  
To bitter sauces did I frame my feeding  
And, sick of welfare, found a kind of meetness  
To be diseased ere that there was true needing.

to faults assured  
healthful state  
Which, rank of goodness, would by ill be  
cured :  
But thence I learn, and find the lesson true,  
Drugs poison him that so fell sick of you.

What potions have I drunk of Siren tears,  
Distill'd from limbeckes foul as hell within,  
Applying fears to hopes and hopes to fears,  
Still losing when I saw myself to win !  
What wretched errors hath my heart com-  
mitted,  
Whilst it hath thought itself so blessed never !  
How have mine eyes out of their spheres been  
fitted  
In the distraction of this madding fever !  
O benefit of ill ! now I find true  
That better is by evil still made better ;  
And ruin'd love, when it is built anew,  
Grows fairer than at first, more strong, far  
greater.  
So I return rebuked to my content  
And gain by ill thrice more than I have  
spent.

## CXX.

That you were once unkind befriends me now,  
And for that sorrow which I then did feel  
Needs must I under my transgression bow,  
Unless my nerves were brass or hammer'd  
steel.  
For if you were by my unkindness shaken  
As I by yours, you've pass'd a hell of time,  
And I, a tyrant, have no leisure taken  
To weigh how once I suffer'd in your crime.  
O, that our night of wee might have re-  
member'd  
My deepest sense, how hard true sorrow hits,  
And soon to you, as you to me, then tender'd  
The humble salve which wounded bosoms fits !  
But that your trespass now becomes a fee ;  
Mine ransoms yours, and yours must ransom  
me.

## CXXI.

'Tis better to be vile than vile esteem'd,  
When not to be receives reproach of being,  
And the just pleasure lost which is so deem'd  
Not by our feeling but by others' seeing :  
For why should others' false adulterate eyes  
Give salutation to my sportive blood ?  
Or on my frailties why are frailer spies,  
Which in their walls count but what I think  
good !  
No, I am that I am, and they that level  
At my abuses reckon up their own :  
I may be straight, though they themselves be  
bevel ;  
By their mark thoughts my cheek must not be  
shown ;

Unless this general evil they maintain,  
All men are bad, and in their badness reign.

## CXXII.

Thy gift, thy tables, are within my brain  
Full character'd with lasting memory,  
Which shall above that idle rank remain  
Beyond all date, even to eternity;  
Or at the least, so long as brain and heart  
Have faculty by nature to subsist;  
Till each to razed oblivion yield his part  
Of thee, thy record never can be miss'd.  
That poor retention could not so much hold,  
Nor need I tallies thy dear love to score;  
Therefore to give them from me was I bold,  
To trust those tables that receive thee more:  
To keep an adjunct to remember thee  
Were to import forgetfulness in me.

## CXXIII.

No, Time, thou shalt not boast that I do  
change:

Thy pyramids built up with newer might  
To me are nothing novel, nothing strange;  
They are but dressings of a former sight.  
Our dates are brief, and therefore we admire  
What thou dost foist upon us that is old,  
And rather make them born to our desire  
Than think that we before have heard them  
told.

Thy registers and thee I both defy,  
Not wondering at the present nor the past,  
For thy records and what we see doth lie,  
Made more or less by thy continual haste.

This I do vow and this shall ever be;  
I will be true, despite thy scythe and thee.

If my dear love were but the child of state,  
It might for Fortune's bastard be unfather'd,  
As subject to Time's love or to Time's hate,  
Weeds among weeds, or flowers with flowers  
gather'd.

No, it was builded far from accident;  
It suffers not in smiling pomp, nor falls  
Under the blow of thralled discontent,  
Whereto the inviting time our fashion calls:  
It fears not policy, that heretic,  
Which works on leases of short-number'd hours,  
But all alone stands hugely politic,  
That it nor grows with heat nor drowns with  
showers.

To this I witness call the fools of time,  
Which die for goodness, who have lived for  
crime.

## CXXV.

Were't aught to me I bore the canopy,  
With my extern the outward honouring,  
Or laid great bases for eternity,  
Which prove more short than waste or ruining?  
Have I not seen dwellers on form and favour  
Love all, and more, by paying too much rent,  
For compound sweet foregoing simple savour,  
Pitiful shears, in their gazing spent!  
No, let me be obsequious in thy heart,  
And take that which thou oblation, poor but free,

Which is not mix'd with seconds, knows no art,  
But mutual render, only me for thee.  
Hence, thou suborn'd informer! a true soul  
When most impeach'd stands least in thy  
control.

## CXXVI.

O thou, my lovely boy, who hast thy power  
Dost hold Time's fickle glass, his sickle, hour;  
Who hast by waning grown and therein  
show'st

Thy lovers withering as thy self grow'st;  
If Nature, sovereign mistress o'er ev'ry wrack,  
As thou goest onwards, still will pluck thee  
back,

She keeps thee to this purpose, that her skill  
May time disgrace and wretched minutes kill.  
Yet fear her, O thou minion of her pleasure!  
She may detain, but not still keep, her treasure:  
Her audit, though delay'd, answer'd must be,  
And her quietus is to render thee.

## CXXVII.

In the old age black was not counted fair,  
Or if it were, it bore not beauty's name;  
But now is black beauty's successive heir,  
And beauty slander'd with a bastard shame:  
For since each hand hath put on nature's  
power,

Fairing the foul with art's false borrow'd face,  
Sweet beauty hath no name, no holy bower,  
But is profaned, if not lives in disgrace.

Therefore my mistress' brows are raven black,  
Her eyes so suited, and they mourners seem  
At such who, not born fair, no beauty lack,  
Slandering creation with a false esteem:

Yet so they mourn, becoming of their woe,  
That every tongue says beauty should look  
so.

## CXXVIII.

How oft, when thou, my music, music play'st,  
Upon that blessed wood whose motion sounds  
With thy sweet fingers, when thou gently  
sway'st

The wiry concord that mine ear confounds,  
Do I envy those jacks that nimble leap  
To kiss the tender inward of thy hand,  
Whilst my poor lips, which should that harvest  
reap,

At the wood's boldness by thee blushing stand!  
To be so tickled, they would change their state  
And situation with those dancing chips,  
O'er whom thy fingers walk with gentle gait,  
Making dead wood more blest than living lips.  
Since saucy jacks so happy are in this,  
Give them thy fingers, me thy lips to kiss.

## CXXIX.

The expense of spirit in a waste of shame  
Is lust in action; and till action, lust

Is perjured, murderous, bloody, full of blame,  
Savage, extreme, rude, cruel, not to trust,  
Enjoy'd no sooner but despised straight,  
Past reason hunted, and no sooner had  
Past reason hated, as a swallow'd bait  
On purpose laid to make the taker mad;  
Mad in pursuit and in possession so;  
Had, having, and in quest to have, extreme;  
A bliss in proof, and proved, a very woe;  
Before, a joy proposed; behind, a dream.

All this the world well knows; yet none  
knows well

To shun the heaven that leads men to this  
hell.

## OXXX.

My mistress' eyes are nothing like the sun;  
Coral is far more red than her lips' red;  
If snow be white, why then her breasts are  
dun;

If hairs be wires, black wires grow on her head.  
I have seen roses damask'd, red and white,  
But no such roses see I in her cheeks;  
And in some perfumes is there more delight  
Than in the breath that from my mistress  
recks.

I love to hear her speak, yet well I know  
That music hath a far more pleasing sound;  
I grant I never saw a goddess go;  
My mistress, when she walks, treads on the  
ground:

And yet, by heaven, I think my love as rare  
As any she belied with false compare.

## OXXXI.

Thou art as tyrannous, so as thou art,  
As these whose beauties proudly make them  
cruel;

For well thou know'st to my dear dotting heart  
Thou art the fairest and most precious jewel.  
Yet, in good faith, some say that thee behold  
Thy face hath not the power to make love  
groan:

To say they err I dare not be so bold,  
Although I swear it to myself alone.  
And, to be sure that is not false I swear,  
A thousand groans, but thinking on thy face,  
One on another's neck, do witness bear  
Thy black is fairest in my judgement's place.  
In nothing art thou black save in thy deeds,  
And thence this slander, as I think, proceeds.

## OXXXII.

Thine eyes I love, and they, as pitying me,  
Knowing thy heart torments me with disdain,  
Have put on black and loving mourners be,  
Looking with pretty ruth upon my pain.  
And truly not the morning sun of heaven  
Reter becomes the grey cheeks of the east,  
Nor that full star that ushers in the even  
Doth half that glory to the sober west.  
As these two mourning eyes become thy face;  
O, let it then as well become thy heart  
To mourn for me, since mourning doth thee  
grace,

And suit thy pity like in every part.  
Then will I swear my beauty hath not  
And all they foul that thy complexion lack.

## OXXXIII.

Beshrew that heart that makes my heart to  
groan

For that deep wound it gives my friend and  
me!

Is't not enough to torture me alone,  
But slave to slavery my sweetest friend must be!  
Me from myself thy cruel eye hath taken,  
And my next self thou harder hast engross'd:  
Of him, myself, and thee, I am forsaken;  
A torment thrice threefold thus to be cross'd.  
Prison my heart in thy steel bosom's ward,  
But then my friend's heart let my poor heart  
bail;

Whose'er keeps me, let my heart be his guard;  
Thou canst not then use rigour in my gaol:  
And yet thou wilt; for I, being pent in thee,  
Perforce am thine, and all that is in me.

## OXXXIV.

So, now I have confess'd that he is thine,  
And I myself am mortgag'd to thy will,  
Myself I'll forfeit, so that other mine  
Thou wilt restore, to be my comfort still:  
But thou wilt not, nor he will not be free,  
For thou art covetous and he is kind;  
He learn'd but surety-like to write for me  
Under that bond that him as fast doth bind.  
The statute of thy beauty thou wilt take,  
Thou usurper, that put'st forth all to use,  
And sue a friend came debtor for my sake;  
So him I lose through my unkind abuse.

Him have I lost; thou hast both him and me;  
He pays the whole, and yet am I not free.

## OXXXV.

Whoever hath her wish, thou hast thy 'Will';  
And 'Will' to boot, and 'Will' in overplus;  
More than enough am I that vex thee still,  
To thy sweet will making addition thus.  
Wilt thou, whose will is large and spacious,  
Not once vouchsafe to hide my will in thine?  
Shall will in others seem right gracious,  
And in my will no fair acceptance shine?  
The sea, all water, yet receives rain still  
And in abundance addeth to his store;  
So thou, being rich in 'Will', add to thy 'Will';  
One will of mine, to make thy laws 'Will'  
more.

Let no unkind, no fair beseechers kill;  
Think all but one, and me in that one 'Will'.

## OXXXVI.

If thy soul check thee that I come so near,  
Swear to thy blind soul that I was thy 'Will';  
And will, thy soul knows, is admitted there;  
Thus far for love my love-suit, sweet, will  
'Will' will fulfil the treasure of thy love.  
Ay, all is full with will, and my will's one.  
In things of great receipt with ease we prove  
Among a number one is reckon'd none;  
Then in the number let me pass untold,  
Though in thy stores' account I one must be;  
For nothing hold me, so it please thee hold  
That nothing me, a something sweet for thee:

Make but my name thy love, and love that  
still,  
And then thou lovest me, for my name is  
'Will.'

## OXXXVII.

Thou blind fool, Love, what dost thou to mine  
eyes,  
That they behold, and see not what they see!  
They know what beauty is, see where it lies,  
Yet what the best is take the worst to be.  
If eyes corrupt by over-partial looks  
Be anchor'd in the bay where all men ride,  
Why of eyes' falsehood hast thou forged hooks,  
Whereto the judgement of my heart is tied!  
Why should my heart think that a several plot  
Which my heart knows the wide world's com-  
mon place?  
Or mine eyes seeing this, say this is not,  
To put fair truth upon so foul a face!  
In things right true my heart and eyes have  
err'd,  
And to this false plague are they now trans-  
ferr'd.

## OXXXVIII.

When my love swears that she is made of truth  
I do believe her, though I know she lies,  
That she might think me some untutor'd  
youth,  
Unlearned in the world's false subtleties,  
Thus vainly thinking that she thinks me  
young,  
Although she knows my days are past the  
best,  
Simply I credit her false-speaking tongue:  
On both sides thus is simple truth suppress'd.  
But wherefore says she not she is unjust?  
And wherefore say not I that I am old?  
O, love's best habit is in seeming trust,  
And age in love loves not to have years told:  
Therefore I lie with her and she with me,  
And in our faults by lies we flatter'd be.

## OXXXIX.

O, call not me to justify the wrong  
That thy unkindness lays upon my heart;  
Wound me not with thine eye but with thy  
tongue;  
Use power with power and slay me not by art.  
Tell me thou lovest elsewhere, but in my sight,  
Dear heart, forbear to glance thine eye aside:  
What need'st thou wound with cunning when  
thy might  
Is more than my o'er-press'd defence can bide?  
Let me excuse thee: ah! my love well knows  
Her pretty looks have been mine enemies,  
And therefore from my face she turns my foes,  
That they elsewhere might dart their injuries:  
Yet do not so; but since I am near slain,  
Kill me outright with looks and rid my  
pain.

## OXL.

Be wise as thou art cruel; do not press  
My tender patience with too much dis-  
dain;

Least sorrow lend me words and words express  
The manner of my pity-wanting pain.  
If I might teach thee wit, better it were,  
Though not to love, yet, love, to tell me so;  
As testy sick men, when their deaths be near,  
No news but health from their physicians  
know;

For if I should despair, I should grow mad,  
And in my madness might speak ill of thee:  
Now this ill-wresting world is grown so bad,  
Mad slanderers by mad ears believed be,  
That I may not be so, nor thou believ'd,  
Bear thine eyes straight, though thy proud  
heart go wide.

## OXXI.

In faith, I do not love thee with mine eyes,  
For they in thee a thousand errors note;  
But 'tis my heart that loves what they despise,  
Who in despite of view is pleased to dote;  
Nor are mine ears with thy tongue's tune  
delighted,  
Nor tender feeling, to base touches prone,  
Nor taste, nor smell, desire to be invited  
To any sensual feast with thee alone:  
But my five wits nor my five senses can  
Dissuade one foolish heart from serving thee,  
Who leaves unwary'd the likeness of a man,  
Thy proud heart's slave and vassal wretch to  
be:  
Only my plague thus far I count my gain,  
That she that makes me sin awards me  
pain.

## OXXII.

Love is my sin and thy dear virtue hate,  
Hate of my sin, groundless on sinful lovers:  
O, but with mine compare thou thine own  
state,  
And thou shalt find it merits not reproving;  
Or, if it do, not from those lips of thine,  
That have profaned their scarlet ornaments  
And seal'd false bonds of love as oft as mine,  
Robb'd others' beds' revenues of their rents.  
Be it lawful I love thee, as thou lovest those  
Whom thine eyes woo as mine importune  
thee:  
Root pity in thy heart, that when it grows  
Thy pity may deserve to pitied be.  
If thou dost seek to have what thou dost  
hide,  
By self-example mayst thou be denied!

## OXXIII.

Lo! as a careful housewife runs to catch  
One of her feather'd creatures broke away,  
Sets down her babe and makes all swift dis-  
patch  
In pursuit of the thing she would have stay,  
Whilst her neglected child holds her in chase,  
Cries to catch her whose busy care is bent  
To follow that which flies before her face,  
Not prizing her poor infant's discontent;  
So runn'st thou after that which flies from  
thee,  
Whilst I thy babe chase thee afar behind!

So will I pray that thou mayst have thy Will,  
If thou turn back, and my loud crying still.

## CXLIV

Two loves I have of comfort and despair,  
Which like two spirits do suggest me still:  
The better angel is a man right fair,  
The worser spirit a woman colour'd ill.  
To win me soon to hell, my female evil  
Tempteth my better angel from my side,  
And would corrupt my saint to be a devil,  
Wooing his purity with her foul pride.  
And whether that my angel be turn'd fiend  
Suspect I may, yet not directly tell;  
But being both from me, both to each friend,  
I guess one angel in another's hell:  
Yet this shall I ne'er know, but live in doubt,  
Till my bad angel fire my good one out.

## CXLV

Those lips that Love's own hand did make  
Breathed forth the sound that said 'I hate'  
To me that languish'd for her sake;  
But when she saw my woeful state,  
Straight in her heart did mercy come,  
'Hiding that tongue that ever sweet  
Was used in giving gentle doom,  
And taught it thus anew to greet;  
'I hate' she alter'd with an end,  
That follow'd it as gentle day  
Doth follow night, who like a fiend  
From heaven to hell is flown away;  
'I hate' from hate away she threw,  
And saved my life, saying 'not you.'

## CXLVI

Poor soul, the centre of my sinful earth,  
T..... these rebel powers that thee array,  
Why dost thou pine within and suffer dearth,  
Painting thy outward walls so costly gay?  
Why so large cost, having so short a lease,  
Dost thou pay out?  
Shall worms, inheritors of this excess,  
Eat up thy charge? is this thy body's end?  
Then, soul, live thou upon thy servant's loss,  
And let that pine to aggravate thy store;  
Buy terms divine in selling hours of dross;  
Within be fed, without be rich no more:  
So shalt thou feed on Death, that feeds on men,  
And Death once dead, there's no more dying then.

## CXLVII

My love is as a fever, longing still  
For that which longer nurseth the disease,  
Feeding on that which doth preserve the ill,  
The uncertain sickly appetite to please.  
My reason, the physician to my love,  
Angry that his prescriptions are not kept,  
Hath left me, and I desperate now approve  
Desire in death, which physic did except.  
Past cure I am, now reason is past care,  
And frantic-mad with evermore unrest;

are,  
I random from the truth vainly express'd;  
For I have sworn thee fair and thought thee  
bright,  
Who art as black as hell, as dark as night.

## CXLVIII

I me, what eyes hath Love put in my head,  
Which have no correspondence with true sight!  
Or, if they have, where is my judgement fled,  
That censures falsely what they see aright?  
If that be fair whereon my false eyes dote,  
What means the world to say it is not so?  
If it be not, then love doth well denote  
Love's eye is not so true as all men's 'No.'  
How can it? O, how can Love's eye be true,  
That is so vex'd with watching and with tears?  
No marvel then, though I mistake my view:  
The sun itself sees not till heaven clears.  
O cunning Love! with tears thou keep'st me  
blind,  
Lest eyes well-seeing thy foul faults should  
find.

## CXLIX

'anst thou, O cruel! say I love thee not,  
When I against myself with these partake!  
Do I not think on thee, when I forget  
Am of myself, all tyrant, for thy sake?  
Who hateth thee that I do call my friend?  
On whom frown'st thou that I do fawn upon?  
Nay, if thou lour'st on me, do I not spend  
Revenge upon myself with present moan?  
What merit do I in myself respect,  
That is so proud thy service to despise,  
When all my best doth worship thy defect,  
Commanded by the motion of thine eyes?  
But, love, hate on, for now I know thy  
mind;  
Those that can see thou lovest, and I am  
blind.

## CL

O, from what power hast thou this powerful  
might  
With insufficiency my heart to sway?  
To make me give the lie to my true sight,  
And swear that brightness doth not grace the  
day?  
Whence hast thou this becoming of things ill,  
That in the very refuse of thy deeds  
There is such strength and warrantise of skill  
That, in my mind, thy worst art best exceeds?  
Who taught thee this how to make me love thee  
more  
The more I hear and see just cause of hate?  
O, though I love what others do abhor,  
With others thou should'st not abhor my state:  
If thy unworthiness raised love in me,  
More worthy I to be beloved of thee.

## CLI

Love is too young to know what conscience is;  
Yet who knows not conscience is born of love!  
Then, gentle cheater, urge not my amies,  
Lest guilty of my faults thy sweet self prove:  
For, thou betraying me, it doth betray  
My nobler part to my gross body's treason;

My soul doth tell my body that he may  
 Triumph in love; flesh stays no farther reason;  
 But, rising at thy name, doth point out thee  
 As his triumphant prize. Proud of this pride,  
 He is contented thy poor drudge to be,  
 To stand in thy affairs, fall by thy side.  
 No want of conscience hold it that I call  
 Her 'love' for whose dear love I rise and fall.

## CLII.

In loving thee thou know'st I am forsworn,  
 But thou art twice forsworn, to me love  
 swearing,

In act thy bed-row broke and new faith torn  
 In vowing new hate after new love bearing.  
 But wily of two oaths' breach do I accuse thee,  
 When I break twenty! I am perjured most;  
 For all my vows are oaths but to misuse thee  
 And all my honest faith in thee is lost,  
 For I have sworn deep oaths of thy deep kind-  
 ness,

Oaths of thy love, thy truth, thy constancy,  
 And, to enlighten thee, gave eyes to blindness,  
 Or made them swear against the thing they  
 see;

For I have sworn thee fair; more perjured I,  
 To swear against the truth so foul a lie!

## CLIII.

Cupid laid by his brand, and fell asleep:  
 A maid of Dian's this advantage found,

In a cold valley-fountain of that ground;  
 Which borrow'd from this holy fire of Love  
 A dateless lively heat, still to endure,  
 And grew a seething bath, which yet men  
 prove  
 Against strange maladies a sovereign cure.  
 But at my mistress' eye Love's brand new-  
 fired,

The boy for trial needs would touch my breast;  
 I, sick withal, the help of bath desired,  
 And thither fled, a sad distemper'd guest,

But found no cure: the bath for my help  
 lies  
 Where Cupid got new fire—my mistress'  
 eyes.

## CLIV.

The little Love-god lying once ask  
 Laid by his side his heart-inflaming  
 Whilst many nymphs that vow'd chaste  
 keep

Came tripping by; but in her maiden hand  
 The fairest votary took up that fire  
 Which many legions of true hearts had warm'd;  
 And so the general of hot desire  
 Was sleeping by a virgin hand disarm'd.  
 This brand she quenched in a cool well by,  
 Which from Love's fire took heat perpetual,  
 Growing a bath and healthful remedy  
 For men diseased; but I, my mistress' thrall,  
 Came there for cure, and this by that I prove,  
 Love's fire heats water, water cools not love.

# A LOVER'S COMPLAINT

FROM off a hill whose concave womb re-worded  
A plaintful story from a sistering vale,  
My spirits to attend this double voice accorded,  
And down I laid to list the sad-tuned tale;  
Ere long espied a fleckle maid full pale,  
Tearing of papers, breaking rings a-twain,  
Storming her world with sorrow's wind and  
sain.

Upon her head a platted hive of straw,  
Which fortified her visage from the sun,  
Whereon the thought might think sometime it  
saw  
The carcass of a beauty spent and done:  
Time had not scythed all that youth begun,  
Nor youth all quit; but, spite of heaven's fell  
rage,  
Some beauty peep'd through lattice of sear'd  
age.

(Of did she heave her naspkin to her cyne,  
Which on it had conceited characters,  
Laundering the sliken figures in the brine  
That season'd woe had pelleted in tears,  
And often reading what contents it bears;  
As often shrieking undistinguish'd woe,  
In clamorous of all size, both high and low.

Sometimes her level'd eyes their carriage ride,  
As they did battery to the spheres intend;  
Sometime directed their poor balls are tied  
To the orb'd earth; sometimes they do extend  
Their view right on; anon their gazes lend  
To every place at once, and, nowhere fix'd.  
The mind and sight distractedly commix'd.

Her hair, nor loose nor tied in formal plat,  
I proclaim'd in her a careless hand of pride  
For some, untuck'd, descended her sheaved hat,  
Hanging her pale and pined cheek beside;  
Some in her threaden fillet still did bide,  
And true to bondage would not break from  
thence.  
Though slackly braided in loose negligence.

A thousand favours from a maund she drew  
Of amber, crystal, and of beaded jet,  
Which one by one she in a river threw,  
Upon whose weeping margin she was set;  
Like usury, applying wet to wet.  
Or monarch's ransom that let not bounty fall  
Where want cries some, but where excess begs  
all.

Of folded schedules had she many a one,  
Which she perused, sigh'd, tore, and gave the  
food;  
Crack'd many a ring of posied gold and bone,  
Bidding them find their sepulchre in mud;  
Found yet more letters sadly pawn'd in blood,  
With scolded silk torn and affectedly  
Enwashed, and sent'd to curious scrutiny.

These often bathed she in her fluxive eyes,  
And often kiss'd, and often 'gan to tear;  
Cried 'O false blood, thou register of lies,  
What unapproved witness dost thou bear!  
Ink would have seem'd more black and dammed  
here!'

This said, in top of rage the lines she rents,  
Big discontent so breaking their contents.

A reverend man that grazed his cattle night—  
Sometime a blusterer, that the ruffie knew  
Of court, of city, and had let go by  
The swiftest hours, observed as they flew—  
Towards this afflicted fancy fastly drew,  
And, privileged by age, desires to know  
In brief the grounds and motives of her woe.

So slides he down upon his grained bat,  
And comely-distant sits he by her side;  
When he again desires her, being sat,  
Her grievance with his hearing to divide:  
If that from him there may be sought applied  
Which may her suffering censure assuage,  
'Tis promised in the charity of age.

'Father,' she says, 'though in me you behold  
The injury of many a blasting hour,  
Let it not tell your judgement I am old;  
Not age, but sorrow, over me hath power;  
I might as yet have been a spreading flower,  
Fresh to myself, if I had self-applied  
Love to myself and to no love beside.

'But, woe is me! too early I attended  
A youthful suit—it was to gain my grace—  
Of one by nature's outwards so commended, so  
That maidens' eyes stuck over all his face:  
Love lack'd a dwelling, and made him her  
when in his fair parts she did abide,  
She was new lodged and newly deified.

'His browny locks did hang in crooked curls;  
And every light occasion of the wind  
Upon his lips their silken parcels hurle.  
What's sweet to do, to do will spite find:  
Each eye that saw him did enchant the mind.  
For on his visage was in little drawn  
What largeness thinks in Paradise was worn.

'Small show of man was yet upon his skin;  
His phoenix down began but to appear  
Like unhorn velvet on that termless skin  
Whose bare out-brag'd the web it seem'd to  
wear;  
Yet show'd his visage by that coat some dear;  
And nice affections wavering stood in doubt  
If best were as it was, or best without.

'His qualities were heinous as  
For maiden-tinged his was, and

Yet, if men moved him, was he such a storm  
As oft 'twixt May and April is to see,  
When winds breathe sweet, unruly though they  
be.

His rudeness so with his authorized youth  
Did lively falshness in a pride of truth.

'Well could he ride, and often men would say  
'That horse his mettle from his rider takes:  
Proud of subjection, noble by the way,  
What rounds, what bounds, what course, what  
stop he makes!'

And controversy hence a question takes, 120  
Whether the horse by him became his deed,  
Or he his manage by the well-doing steed.

'But quickly on this side the verdict went:  
His real habitude gave life and grace  
To appertainings and to ornament,  
Accomplish'd in himself, not in his case:  
All aids, themselves made fairer by their place,  
Came for additions; yet their purposed trim  
Pieced not his grace, but were all graced by  
him.

'So on the tip of his subduing tongue 120  
All kind of arguments and question deep,  
All replication prompt, and reason strong,  
For his advantage still did wake and sleep:  
To make the weeper laugh, the laughter weep,  
He had the dialect and different skill,  
Catching all passions in his craft of will:

'That he did in the general bosom reign  
Of young, of old; and sexes both enchanted,  
To dwell with him in thoughts, or to remain  
In personal duty, following where he haunted:  
Consents bewitch'd, ere he desire, have granted;  
And dialogued for him what he would say,  
Ask'd their own wills, and made their wills  
obey.

'Many there were that did his picture get,  
To serve their eyes, and in it put their mind;  
Like fools that in th' imagination set  
The goodly objects which abroad they find  
Of lands and mansions, theirs in thought as-  
sign'd;  
And labouring in mee pleasures to bestow them  
Than the true gouty landlord which doth owe  
them: 140

'So many have, that never touch'd his hand,  
Sweetly supposed them mistresses of his heart.  
My woeful self, that did in freedom stand,  
And was my own fee-simple, not in part,  
What with his art in youth, and youth in art,  
Threw my affections in his charmed power,  
Reserved the stalk and gave him all my flower.

'Yet did I not, as some my equals did,  
Demand of him, nor being desired yielded;  
Finding myself in honour so forbid, 150  
With sweetest distance I mine honour shielded:  
Experience for me many bulwarks builded  
Of proofs new-bleeding, which remain'd the  
fall  
Of this false jewel, and his amorous spoil.

But, ah, who ever shrunk'd by precedent  
The destined ill she must herself assay!  
Or forced examples, 'gainst her own content,  
To put the by-past perils in her way!  
Counsel may stop awhile what will not stay;  
For when we rage, advice is often seen 160  
By blunting us to make our wits more keen.

'Nor gives it satisfaction to our blood,  
That we must curb it upon others' proof:  
To be forbid the sweets that seem so good,  
For fear of harms that preach in our behalf.  
O appetite, from judgement stand aloof!  
The one a palate hath that needs will taste,  
Though Reason weep, and cry "It is thy last."

'For further I could say "This man's untrue,"  
And knew the patterns of his foul beguiling;  
Heard where his plants in others' orchards  
grew, 171  
Saw how deceits were gilded in his smiling;  
Knew vows were ever brokers to defiling;  
Thought characters and words merely but art,  
And bastards of his foul adulterate heart.

'And long upon these terms I held my city,  
Till thus he gan besiege me: "Gentle maid,  
Have of my suffering youth some feeling pity,  
And be not of my holy vows afraid:  
That's to ye sworn to none was ever said; 180  
For feasts of love I have been call'd unto,  
Till now did ne'er invite, nor never woo.

"All my offences that abroad you see  
Are errors of the blood, none of the mind;  
Love made them not; with acture they may be,  
Where neither party is nor true nor kind:  
They sought their shame that so their shame  
did find;  
And so much less of shame in me remains,  
By how much of me their reproach contains.

"Among the many that mine eyes have seen,  
Not one whose flame my heart so much as  
warm'd, 191  
Or my affection put to the smallest teen,  
Or any of my pleasures ever charm'd:  
Harm have I done to them, but ne'er was  
harm'd;  
Kept hearts in liveries, but mine own was free,  
And reign'd, commanding in my monarchy.

"Look here, what tributes wounded fancies  
sent me,  
Of paled pearls and rubies red as blood;  
Figuring that they their passions likewise lent  
me  
Of grief and blushes, aptly understood 200  
In bloodless white and the encrimson'd mood;  
Effects of terror and dear modesty,  
Encamp'd in hearts, but fighting outwardly.

"And, lo, behold these talents of their hair,  
With twisted metal amorously impleach'd,  
I have received from many a several fair,  
Their kind acceptance weepingly beseech'd,  
With the annexions of fair gems enrich'd,  
And deep-brain'd sonnets that did simplify  
Each stone's dear nature, worth, and quality.



"The diamond,—why, 'twas beautiful and hard,

Whereto his invised properties did tend;  
The deep-green emerald, in whose fresh regard  
Weak sights their sickly radiance do amend;  
The heaven-hued sapphire and the opal blend  
With objects manifold: each several stone,  
With wit well blazon'd, smiled or made some  
moan.

"Lo, all these trophies of affections hot,  
Of pensived and subdued desires the tender,  
Nature hath charged me that I heard them not,  
But yield them up where I myself must render,  
That is, to you, my origin and end;  
For these, of force, must your oblations be,  
Since I their altar, you enpatron me.

"O, then, advance of yours that phraseless  
hand,  
Whose white weighs down the airy scale of  
praise;  
Take all these smiles to your own command,  
Hallow'd with sighs that burning lungs did  
raise;  
What me your minister, for you obeys,  
Works under you; and to your audit comes  
Their distract parcels in combined sums.

"Lo, this device was sent me from a nun,  
Or sister sanctified, of holiest note;  
Which late her noble suit in court did shun,  
Whose rarest havings made the blossoms dote  
For she was sought by spirits of richest coat,  
But kept cold distance, and did thence remove,  
To spend her living in eternal love.

"But, O my sweet, what labour is't to leave  
The thing we have not, mastering what noi  
strives,  
† Playing the place which did no form receive,  
Playing patient sports in unconstrained gyves;  
She that her fame so to herself contrives,  
The scars of battle scapeth by the flight,  
And makes her absence valiant, not her might.

"O, pardon me, in that my boast is true:  
The accident which brought me to her eye  
Upon the moment did her force subdue,  
And now she would the caged cloister fly:  
Religious love put out Religion's eye:  
Not to be tempted, would she be immured,  
And now, to tempt, all liberty procured.

"How mighty then you are, O, hear me tell  
The broken bosoms that to me belong  
Have emptied all their fountains in my well,  
And mine I pour your ocean all among:  
I strong o'er them, and you o'er me being  
strong,  
Must for your victory us all congest,  
As compound love to physis your cold breast.

"My parts had power to charm a sacred nun,  
Who, disciplined, ay, dieted in grace,  
All vows and consecrations giving place:  
O most potential love! vow, bond, nor space,

in thee hath neither sti knot, nor confine,  
or thou art all, and all else are thine.

"When thou impresses, what are precepts  
worth  
Yf stale example? When thou wilt inflame,  
How coldly those impediments stand forth  
Yf wealth, of filial fear, law, kindred, fame! 270  
Love's arms are peace, 'gainst rule, 'gainst  
sense, 'gainst shame,  
And sweetens, in the suffering pangs it bears,  
The aloes of all forces, shocks, and fears.

"Now all these hearts that do on mine de-  
pend,  
Feeling it break, with bleeding groans they  
pine;  
And supplicant their sighs to you extend,  
To leave the battery that you make 'gainst  
mine,  
Lending soft audience to my sweet design,  
And credent soul to that strong-bonded oath  
That shall prefer and undertake my troth." 280

This said, his watery eyes he did dismount,  
Whose sights till then were level'd on my face;  
Each cheek a river running from a fount  
With brinish current downward flow'd apace:  
O, how the channel to the stream gave grace!  
Who glazed with crystal gate the glowing roses  
That flame through water which their hues  
encloses.

"O father, what a hell of witchcraft lies  
In the small orb of one particular tear!  
But with the inundation of the eyes 290  
What rocky heart to water will not wear?  
What breast so cold that is not warmed here!  
O cleft effect! cold modesty, hot wrath,  
Both fire from hence and chill extincture hath.

"For, lo, his passion, but an art of craft,  
Even there resolved my reason into tears;  
There my white stole of chastity I daff'd,  
Shook off my sober guards and civil fears;  
Appear to him, as he to me appears,  
All melting; though our drops this difference  
bore,  
His poison'd me, and mine did him restore. 300

"In him a plenitude of subtle matter,  
Applied to cautels, all strange forms receives,  
Of burning blushes, or of weeping water,  
Or swooning paleness; and he takes and leaves,  
In either's aptness, as it best deceives,  
To blush at speeches rank, to weep at woes,  
Or to turn white and swoon at tragic shows:

"That not a heart which in his level came  
Could 'scape the hail of his all-hurling aim, 310  
Showing fair nature is both kind and tame;  
And, val'd in them, did win whom he would  
maim:  
Against the thing he sought he would exclaim;  
When he most burn'd in heart-whet'd luxury,  
He preach'd pure mind, and punish'd cold  
chastity.

'Thus merely with the garment of a Goose  
The naked and concealed find his cover'd  
That th' unexperient gave the tempter place,  
Which, like a cherubin above them hover'd.

Who, young and simple, would not be so  
lover'd!

Ay me! I fell; and yet do question make  
What I should do again for such a sake.

'O, that infected moisture of his eye,  
O, that false fire which in his cheek so glow'd,  
O, that fester'd thunder from his heart did  
fly,

O, that sad breath his sorry lungs bestow'd

O, all that borrow'd motion seeming owed,  
Would yet again betray the false betray'd,  
And new pervert a reconcil'd maid!

# THE PASSIONATE PILGRIM

WHEN my love swears that she is made of truth,

I do believe her, though I know she lies,  
That she might think me some untutor'd youth,  
Unskilful in the world's false forgeries.  
Thus vainly thinking that she thinks me young,  
Although I know my years be past the best,  
I smiling credit her false-speaking tongue,  
Outfacing faults in love with love's ill rest.  
But wherefore says my love that she is young?  
And wherefore says not I that I am old?  
(O, love's best habit is a soothing tongue,  
And age, in love, loves not to have years told.  
Therefore I'll lie with love, and love with me,  
Since that our faults in love thus smother'd be.

## II.

Two loves I have, of comfort and despair,  
That like two spirits do suggest me still;  
My better angel is a man right fair,  
My worser spirit a woman colour'd ill.  
To win me soon to hell, my female evil  
Tempteth my better angel from my side,  
And would corrupt my saint to be a devil,  
Wooing his purity with her fair pride,  
And whether that my angel be turn'd fiend,  
Suspect I may, yet not directly tell:  
For being both to me, both to each friend,  
I guess one angel in another's hell:  
The truth I shall not know, but live in  
doubt,  
Till my bad angel fire my good one out.

## III.

Did not the heavenly rhetoric of thine eye,  
Gainst whom the world could not hold argu-  
ment,  
Persuade my heart to this false perjury  
Vows for thee broke deserve not punishment.  
A woman I forswore; but I will prove,  
Thou being a goddess, I forswore not thee:  
My vow was earthly, thou a heavenly love;  
Thy grace being gain'd cures all diagrae in me.  
My vow was breath, and breath a vapour is;  
Then, thou fair sun, that on this earth doth  
shine,  
Exhale this vapour vow; in thee it is:  
If broken, then it is no fault of mine.  
If by me broke, what fool is not so wise  
To break an oath, to win a paradise?

## IV.

Sweet Cytherea, sitting by a brook  
With young Adonis, lovely, fresh, and green,  
Did count the lily with many a lovely look.  
Such looks as none could look but heavenly  
queens.

he told him stories to delight his ear;  
he show'd him favours to allure his eye;  
to win his heart, she touch'd him here and  
there,—

'ouches so soft still conquer chastity.  
But whether unripe years did want amendment,  
Or he refused to take her figured profits,  
The tender nibbler would not touch the bait,  
But smile and jest at every gentle offer;  
Then fell she on her back, fair queen, and  
toward;

He rose and ran away; ah, fool the froward!

## V.

f love make me forsworn, how shall I swear  
to love?  
O never faith could hold, if not to beauty vow'd:  
Though to myself forsworn, to thee I'll con-  
stant prove;  
Those thoughts, to me like oaks, to thee like  
osiers bow'd.  
Study his bias leaves, and makes his book thine  
eyes,  
Where all those pleasures live that art can com-  
prehend.  
If knowledge be the mark, to know thee shall  
suffice;  
Well learned is that tongue that well can thee  
commend;  
All ignorant that soul that sees thee without  
wonder;  
Which is to me some praise, that I thy parts  
admire:  
Thine eye Jove's lightning seems, thy voice his  
dreadful thunder,  
Which, not to anger bent, is music and sweet  
fire.  
Celestial as thou art, O do not love that  
wrong,  
To sing heaven's praise with such an earthly  
tongue.

Scarce had the sun dried up the dewy morn,  
And scarce the herd gone to the stable, the  
shade,

When Cytherea, all in love forlorn,  
A longing tarrance for Adonis made.  
Under an oler growing by a brook  
A brook where Adon used to cool  
Hot was the day; she better than  
For his approach, that often there  
Ancient he comes, and throws his  
And stood stark naked on the  
brim;

The sun look'd on the world with  
Yet not so wisely as the queen on  
He seeing her, broke out in words  
O Jove, quench this, why was I

Fair is my love, but not so fair as fickle;  
Mild as a dove, but neither true nor trusty;  
Brighter than glass, and yet, as glass is, brittle;  
Softer than wax, and yet, as iron, rusty:  
A lily pale, with damask dye to grace her,  
None fairer, nor none fairer to deface her. 90

Her lips to mine how often hath she joined,  
Between each kiss her oaths of true love  
swearing!

How many tales to please me hath she coined,  
Dreading my love, the loss thereof still fearing!  
Yet in the midst of all her pure protestings,  
Her faith, her oaths, her tears, and all were  
jestings.

She burn'd with love, as straw with fire  
sameth;  
She burn'd out love, as soon as straw out-  
burneth;  
She framed the love, and yet she foil'd the  
framing;  
She bade love last, and yet she fell a-turning.  
Was this a lover, or a lecher whether? 101  
Bad in the best, though excellent in neither.

If music and sweet poetry agree,  
As they must needs, the sister and the brother,  
Then must the love be great 'twixt thee and  
me,  
Because thou lovest the one, and I the other.  
Dowland to thee is dear, whose heavenly touch  
Upon the lute doth ravish human sense;  
Sponsor to me, whose deep conceit is such  
As, passing all conceit, needs no defence. 110  
Thou lovest to hear the sweet melodious sound  
That Phoebus' lute, the queen of music, makes;  
And I in deep delight am chiefly drown'd  
Wheneas himself to singing he betakes.  
One god is god of both, as poets feign;  
One knight loves both, and both in thee  
remain.

Fair was the morn when the fair queen of love,  
Paler for sorrow than her milk-white dove,  
For Adon's sake, a youngster proud and wild;  
Her stand she takes upon a steep-up hill: 121  
anon Adonis comes with horn and hounds;  
She, silly queen, with more than love's good  
will,

Forbade the boy he should not pass those  
grounds:  
'Once,' quoth she, 'did I see a fair sweet youth  
— in these brakes deep-wounded with a

Deep in the thigh, a spectacle of ruth!  
See, in my thigh,' quoth she, 'here was the  
sore.'  
She showed him: he saw more wounds than  
one.  
And, blushing fled, and left her all alone. 130

Sweet rose, fair flower, untimely pluck'd, soon  
vaded,  
Pluck'd in the bud, and 1 in the spring!  
Bright orient pearl, alack, 1 timely shaded!  
Fair creature, kill'd too 1 by death's sharp  
sting!

Like a green plum that hangs upon a tree,  
And falls, through wit's store the fall  
should be.

I weep for thee, and yet no cause I have;  
For why thou left'st me nothing in thy will:  
And yet thou left'st me more than I did crave;  
For why I craved nothing of thee still: 140  
O yes, dear friend, I pardon crave of thee,  
Thy discontent thou didst bequeath to me.

## XI.

Venus, with young Adonis sitting by her  
Under a myrtle shade, began to woo him:  
She told the youngling how god Mars did try  
her,  
And as he fell to her, so fell she to him.  
'Even thus,' quoth she, 'the warlike god em-  
braced me,  
And then she clipp'd Adonis in her arms;  
'Even thus,' quoth she, 'the warlike god un-  
laced me,' 149  
As if the boy should use like loving charms;  
'Even thus,' quoth she, 'he seized on my lips,  
And with her lips on his did act the seizure;  
And as she fetched breath, away he skips,  
And would not take her meaning nor her  
pleasure.  
Ah, that I had my lady at this bay,  
To kiss and clip me till I run away!

## XII.

Crabbed age and youth cannot live together:  
Youth is full of pleasance, age is full of care;  
Youth like summer morn, age like winter  
weather;  
Youth like summer brave, age like winter bare.  
Youth is full of sport, age's breath is short; 161  
Youth is nimble, age is lame;  
Youth is hot and bold, age is weak and cold;  
Youth is wild, and age is tame.  
Age, I do abhor thee; youth, I do adore thee;  
O, my love, my love is young!  
Age, I do defy thee: O, sweet shepherd, his  
thee,  
For methinks thou stay'st too long.

## XIII.

Beauty is but a vain and doubtful good;  
A shining glass that vadeth suddenly; 170  
A flower that dies when first it gins to bud;  
A brittle glass that's broken presently:  
A doubtful good, a glass, a glass, a flower,  
Lost, vaded, broken, dead within an hour.

And as goods lost are sold or never found,  
As vaded glass no rubbing will refresh,  
As flowers dead lie wither'd on the ground,  
As broken glass no cement can redress,  
So beauty blamish'd once's for ever lost, 179  
In spite of physic, painting, pain and cost.

## XIV.

Good night, good rest. Ah, neither be my share :  
 She bade good night that kept my rest away ;  
 And daff'd me to a cabin hang'd with care,  
 To descant on the doubts of my decay.  
 'Farewell,' quoth she, 'and come again to-morrow ;'  
 Fare well I could not, for I suppd with sorrow.

Yet at my parting sweetly did she smile,  
 In scorn or friendship, nill I construe whether :  
 'T may be, she joy'd to jest at my exile. 189  
 'T may be, again to make me wander thither :  
 'Wander,' a word for shadows like myself,  
 As take the pain, but cannot pluck the pelf.

## XV.

Lord, how mine eyes throw gazes to the east !  
 My heart doth charge the watch ; the morning  
 rise  
 Doth cite each moving sense from idle rest.  
 Not daring trust the office of mine eyes,

While Philomela sits and sings, I sit and  
 mark,  
 And wish her lays were tuned like the lark ;

For she doth welcome daylight with her ditty,  
 And drives away dark diurnal-dreaming night :  
 The night so pack'd, I post unto my pretty ; 201  
 Heart hath his hope, and eyes their wished  
 sight ;

Sorrow changed to solace, solace mix'd with  
 sorrow ;  
 For why, she sigh'd and bade me come to-morrow.

Were I with her, the night would post too  
 soon ;  
 But now are minutes added to the hours ;  
 To spite me now, each minute seems a moon ;  
 Yet not for me, shine sun to succour flowers !  
 Pack night, peep day ; good day, of night  
 now borrow :  
 Short, night, to-night, and length thyself to-morrow. 220

## SONNETS TO SUNDRY NOTES OF MUSIC

## [XVI.]

It was a lording's daughter, the fairest one of  
 three,  
 That liked of her master as well as well might  
 be,  
 Till looking on an Englishman, the fair'st that  
 eye could see,  
 Her fancy fell a-turning.  
 Long was the combat doubtful that love with  
 love did fight,  
 To leave the master loveless, or kill the gallant  
 knight :  
 To put in practice either, alas, it was a spite  
 Unto the silly damsel !  
 But one must be refused ; more mickle was the  
 pain  
 That nothing could be used to turn them both  
 to gain. 220  
 For of the two the trusty knight was wounded  
 with disdain :  
 Alas, she could not help it !  
 Thus art with arms contending was victor of  
 the day,  
 Which by a gift of learning did bear the maid  
 away :  
 Then, lullaby, the learned man hath got the  
 lady gay :  
 For now my song is ended.

## XVII.

On a day, alack the day !  
 Love, whose month was ever May,  
 Spied a blossom passing fair,  
 Playing in the wanton air :  
 Through the velvet leaves the wind,  
 All unseen, gave passage find ;

That the lover, sick to death,  
 Wish'd himself the heaven's breath,  
 'Air,' quoth he, 'thy cheeks may blow ;  
 Air, would I might triumph so !  
 But, alas ! my hand hath sworn  
 Ne'er to pluck thee from thy thorn :  
 Vow, alack ! for youth unmeet :  
 Youth, so apt to pluck a sweet. 240  
 Thou for whom Jove would swear  
 Juno but an Ethiopie were ;  
 And deny himself for Jove,  
 Turning mortal for thy love.'

## [XVIII.]

My flocks feed not,  
 My ewes breed not,  
 My rams speed not,  
 All is amiss :  
 Love's denying,  
 Faith's defying, 250  
 Heart's renying,  
 Causers of this.  
 All my merry jigs are quite forgot,  
 All my lady's love is lost, God wot :  
 Where her faith was firmly fix'd in love,  
 There a nay is placed without remove.  
 One silly cross  
 Wrought all my loss ;  
 O frowning Fortune, cursed, fickle dame !  
 For now I see 255  
 Inconstancy  
 More in women than in men remain.

In black mourn I,  
 All fears scorn I,  
 Love hath forlorn me,  
 Living in thrall :

Heart is bleeding,  
 All help needing,  
 O cruel speeding,  
 Fraughted with gall. 270  
 My shepherd's pipe can sound no deal;  
 My wether's bell rings doleful knell;  
 My curtail dog, that wont to have play'd,  
 Flays not at all, but seems afraid;  
 My sighs so deep  
 Procure to weep,  
 In howling wise, to see my doleful plight.  
 How sighs resound  
 Through heartless ground,  
 Like a thousand vanquish'd men in 280  
 bloody fight!

Clear wells spring not,  
 Sweet birds sing not,  
 Green plants bring not  
 Forth their dye;  
 Herds stand weeping,  
 Flocks all sleeping,  
 Nymphs back peeping  
 Fearfully:  
 All our pleasure known to us poor swains,  
 All our merry meetings on the plains, 290  
 All our evening sport from us is fled,  
 All our love is lost, for Love is dead.  
 Farewell, sweet lass,  
 Thy like ne'er was  
 For a sweet content, the cause of all my  
 moan:

Poor Corydon  
 Must live alone;  
 Other help for him I see that there is  
 none.

## XIX.

When as thine eye hath chose the dame,  
 And stalf'd the deer that thou shouldst strike,  
 Let reason rule things worthy blame, 301  
 † As well as fancy partial might:  
 Take counsel of some wiser head,  
 Neither too young nor yet unwed.

And when thou comest thy tale to tell,  
 Smooth not thy tongue with filed talk,  
 Lest she some subtle practice blame,—  
 A cripple soon can find a halt;—  
 But plainly say thou lovest her well,  
 And set thy person forth to sell. 310

What though her frowning brows be bent,  
 Her cloudy looks will calm ere night:  
 And then too late she will repent  
 That thus dissembled her delight;  
 And twice desire, ere it be day,  
 That which with scorn she put away.

What though she strive to try her strength,  
 And ban and brawl, and say thee nay,  
 Her feeble force will yield at length,  
 When craft hath taught her thus to say, 320  
 'Had women been so strong as men,  
 In faith, you had not had it then.'

And to her will frame all thy ways;  
 Spare not to applaud, and chiefly there

Where thy desert may merit praise,  
 By ringing in thy lady's ear:  
 The strongest castle, tower, and town,  
 The golden bullet beats it down.

Serve always with assured trust,  
 And in thy suit be humble true; 330  
 Unless thy lady prove unjust:  
 Press never thou to choose anew:  
 When time shall serve, be thou not slack  
 To proffer, though she put thee back.

The wiles and guiles that women work,  
 Dissembled with an outward show,  
 The tricks and toys that in them lurk,  
 The cock that treads them shall not know.  
 Have you not heard it said fall oft,  
 A woman's nay doth stand for nought? 340

† Think women still to strive with men,  
 To sin and never for to saint:  
 There is no heaven, by holy then,  
 When time with age doth them attain.  
 Were kisses all the joys in bed,  
 One woman would another wed.

But, soft! enough, too much, I fear;  
 Lest that my mistress hear my song,  
 She will not stick to round me i' the ear,  
 To teach my tongue to be so long; 350  
 Yet will she blush, here be it said,  
 To hear her secrets so bewray'd.

## [XX.]

Live with me, and be my love,  
 And we will all the pleasures prove  
 That hills and valleys, dales and fields,  
 And all the craggy mountains yield.

There will we sit upon the rocks,  
 And see the shepherds feed their flocks,  
 By shallow rivers, by whose falls  
 Melodious birds sing madrigals. 360

There will I make thee a bed of roses,  
 With a thousand fragrant posies,  
 A cap of flowers, and a kirtle  
 Embroider'd all with leaves of myrtle.

A belt of straw and ivy buds,  
 With coral clasps and amber studs;  
 And if these pleasures may thee move,  
 Then live with me and be my love.

## LOVE'S ANSWER.

If that the world and love were young,  
 And truth in every shepherd's tongue, 370  
 These pretty pleasures might me move  
 To live with thee and be thy love.

## [XXI.]

As it fell upon a day  
 In the merry month of May,  
 Sitting in a pleasant shade,  
 Which a grove of myrtles made,  
 Beasts did leap, and birds did sing,  
 Trees did grow, and plants did spring;

Every thing did banish moan,  
 Save the nightingale alone : 380  
 She, poor bird, as all forlorn,  
 Lean'd her breast up-hill a thorn,  
 And there sung the dolefull'st ditty,  
 That to hear it was great pity :  
 'Fie, fie, fie,' now would she cry ;  
 'Tereu, tereu !' by and by ;  
 That to hear her so complain,  
 Scarce I could from tears refrain ;  
 For her griefs, so lively shown,  
 Made me think upon mine own. 390  
 Ah, thought I, thou mourn'st in vain !  
 None takes pity on thy pain :  
 Senseless trees they cannot hear thee ;  
 Ruthless beasts they will not cheer thee :  
 King Pandion he is dead ;  
 All thy friends are lapp'd in lead ;  
 All thy fellow birds do sing,  
 Careless of thy sorrowing.  
 Even so, poor bird, like thee,  
 None alive will pity me. 400  
 Whilst as fickle Fortune smiled,  
 Thou and I were both beguiled.  
 Every one that flatters thee  
 Is no friend in misery.

Words are easy, like the wind ;  
 Faithful friends are hard to find :  
 Every man will be thy friend  
 Whilst thou hast wherewith to spend ;  
 But if store of crowns be scant,  
 No man will supply thy want. 410  
 If that one be prodigal,  
 Bountiful they will him call,  
 And with such-like flattering,  
 'Pity but he were a king ;'  
 If he be addict to vice,  
 Quickly him they will entice ;  
 If to women he be bent,  
 They have at commandment :  
 But if Fortune once do frown,  
 Then farewell his great renown ;  
 They that fawn'd on him before  
 Use his company no more.  
 He that is thy friend indeed,  
 He will help thee in thy need :  
 If thou sorrow, he will weep ;  
 If thou wake, he cannot sleep ;  
 Thus of every grief in heart  
 He with thee doth bear a part.  
 These are certain signs to know  
 Faithful friend from flattering foe.

# THE PHOENIX AND THE TURTLE

Let the bird of loudest lay,  
On the sole Arabian tree,  
Herald sad and trumpet be,  
To whose sound chaste wings obey.

But thou shrieking harbinger,  
Foul precursor of the fiend,  
Augur of the fever's end,  
To this troop come thou not near!

From this session interdict  
Every fowl of tyrant wing,  
Save the eagle, feather'd king:  
Keep the obsequy so strict.

Let the priest in surplice white,  
That defunctive music can,  
Be the death-divining swan,  
Lest the requiem lack his right.

And thou treble-dated crow,  
That thy sable gender makest  
With the breath thou givest and takest,  
'Mongst our mourners shalt thou go.

Here the anthem doth commence:  
Love and constancy is dead;  
Phoenix and the turtle fled  
In a mutual flame from hence.

So they loved, as love in twain  
Had the essence but in one;  
Two distincts, division none:  
Number there in love was slain.

Hearts remote, yet not asunder;  
Distance, and no space was seen  
'Twixt the turtle and his queen:  
But in them it were a wonder.

So between them love did shine,  
That the turtle saw his right  
Flaming in the phoenix' sight  
Either was the other's mine.

Property was thus appall'd,  
That the self was not the same;  
Single nature's double name  
Neither two nor one was call'd.

Reason, in itself confounded,  
Saw division grow together,  
To themselves yet either neither,  
Simple were so well compounded,

That it cried, How true a twain  
Seemeth this concordant one!  
Love hath reason, reason none,  
If what parts can so remain.

Whereupon it made this threne  
To the phoenix and the dove,  
Co-supremes and stars of love,  
As chorus to their tragic scene.

Beauty, truth, and rarity,  
Grace in all simplicity,  
Here enclosed in cinders lie.

Death is now the phoenix' nest;  
And the turtle's loyal breast  
To eternity doth rest,

Leaving no posterity:  
'Twas not their infirmity,  
It was married chastity.

Truth may seem, but cannot be:  
Beauty brag, but 'tis not she;  
Truth and beauty buried be.

To this urn let those repair  
That are either true or fair;  
For these dead birds sigh a prayer.

10

20

30

60



# GLOSSARY TO SHAKESPEARE'S WORKS

Abandoned, *p.p.* banished. *T. of S. Ind. II. 127.*  
 Abate, *v.t.* to weaken, diminish. *M. N's Dr. III. a. 432.* To cast down. *Cor. III. 3. 132.*  
 To blunt. *E. 3. V. 5. 35.*  
 Abatement, *sb.* diminution. *Lear. I. 4. 64.*  
 Depreciation. *Tw. N. I. 1. 13.*  
 Abhor, *v.t.* to refuse, reject. *H. 8. II. 4. 81.*  
 Abide, *v.t.* to sojourn, stay for a time. *W. T. IV. 3. 99.* *v.t.* to take the consequences of, answer for. *J. C. III. 2. 94.* A corruption of 'Aby.'  
 Abjects, *sb.* outcasts. *E. 3. I. 1. 106.*  
 Abie, *v.t.* to uphold, warrant. *Lear. IV. 6. 172.*  
 Abode, *v.t.* to forebode. *3 H. 6. V. 6. 45; H. 8. I. 1. 93.* *sb.* stay, delay. *M. of V. II. 6. 21.*  
 Abodements, *sb.* forebodings. *3 H. 6. IV. 7. 13.*  
 Abominable, *sb.* monstrous births. *John. III. 4. 158.*  
 Abridgement, *sb.* a short entertainment, for pastime. *M. N's Dr. V. 1. 99; Ham. II. 2. 439.*  
 Abrook, *v.t.* to brook, endure. *2 H. 6. II. 4. 10.*  
 Abrupt, *sb.* breaking off. *T. & C. III. 2. 70.*  
 Absey book, *sb.* an ABO book or primer. *John. I. 1. 196.*  
 Absolute, *adj.* positive, certain. *Cym. IV. 2. 106.* Resolved. *M. for M. III. 1. 5.* Complete. *Lucr. 833; Tp. I. 2. 109.*  
 Abuse, *v.t.* to deceive. *Lear. IV. 7. 77.* To misuse, corrupt. *Oth. I. 1. 174.* To disfigure. *E. & J. IV. 1. 20.*  
 Abuse, *sb.* deception. *M. for M. V. 1. 205.*  
 Abuser, *sb.* corrupter. *Oth. I. 2. 78.*  
 Aby, *v.t.* to atone for, expiate. *M. N's Dr. III. 2. 175. 335.*  
 Abyss, *sb.* abyss. *TP. I. 2. 30.*  
 Accept, *sb.* acceptance. *H. 5. V. 2. 82.*  
 Accite, *v.t.* to cite, summon. *2 H. 4. V. 2. 147; T. A. I. 1. 27.*  
 Accommodate, *v.t.* to furnish, equip with what is suitable. *Lear. IV. 6. 81.*  
 Accommodated, *p.p.* suited, favoured. *Cym. V. 3. 32.*  
 Accomplish, *v.t.* to get. *3 H. 6. III. 2. 152; T. A. II. 1. 107.*  
 Accomplished, *p.p.* fully equipped, furnished. *R. 2. II. 1. 177.*  
 Account, *sb.* account, reckoning. *M. for M. II. 4. 58.*  
 Accordant, *adj.* agreeable. *M. A. I. 2. 14.*  
 According, *adv.* accordingly. *M. for M. V. 1. 487.*  
 Accordingly, *adv.* correspondingly. *A. W. II. 5. 9.*  
 Account, *v.t.* followed by 'of,' to reckon, esteem. *Two G. II. 1. 65.*  
 Accountant, *adj.* liable. *M. for M. II. 4. 86; Oth. II. 1. 302.*  
 Accuse, *sb.* accusation. *2 H. 6. III. 1. 160.*  
 Aches, a disyllable in *TP. I. 2. 370; Tim. I. 1. 257; V. 1. 202.*

Achieve, *v.t.* to win. *H. 5. IV. 3. 91.*  
 Achilles' spear, the rust of which cured Telephus, who was wounded by it. *2 H. 6. V. 2. 202.*  
 Acknowledged, cognisant. *Oth. III. 3. 359.*  
 A-cold, cold. *Lear. III. 4. 93. 85. 152.*  
 Aconitum, aconite, monk's-hood, or wolf's-bane. *2 H. 4. IV. 4. 48.*  
 Acquit, *p.p.* acquitted. *R. 3. V. 5. 3.* Delivered, quit. *M. W. I. 3. 57.*  
 Acquittance, *v.t.* to acquit. *R. 3. III. 7. 233.*  
 Acquittance, *sb.* acquittal, discharge. *Ham. IV. 7. 2.*  
 Acre, *sb.* a measure of length, equivalent to a furlong. *W. T. I. 2. 95.*  
 Action-taking, *adj.* litigious. *Lear. II. 2. 12.*  
 Acture, *sb.* performance. *Comp. 185.*  
 Adam, Adam Bell, the famous archer. *M. A. 2. 1. 261.*  
 Adamant, *sb.* the loadstone. *M. N's Dr. II. 2. 195; T. & C. III. 2. 186.*  
 Addict, *p.p.* addicted. *Pam. 1712. 415.*  
 Addition, *sb.* inclination. *H. 5. I. 1. 54; Oth. II. 2. 6.*  
 Addition, *sb.* title, attribute. *A. W. II. 3. 134; T. & C. I. 2. 20.*  
 Address, *v.t.* to prepare oneself. *2 H. 6. V. 2. 27; Ham. I. 2. 216.* *v.t.* to address oneself, prepare. *Lear. I. 2. 193; T. & C. IV. 4. 128.*  
 Addressed, *p.p.* prepared. *L. L. L. II. 1. 85.*  
 Adjunct, *adj.* attendant, consequent. *Lucr. 133; Sonn. XCI. 5; John. III. 3. 57.* *sb.* attendant. *L. L. L. IV. 3. 314; Sonn. XXXII. 13.*  
 Admiral, *sb.* the chief ship of a fleet. *2 H. 4. III. 3. 28; A. & C. III. 10. 2.*  
 Admiration, *sb.* astonishment. *H. 5. II. 2. 108; Ham. I. 2. 192.*  
 Admire, *v.t.* to wonder. *Tw. N. III. 4. 185; TP. V. 1. 154.*  
 Admired, *adj.* astonishing. *Mac. III. 4. 122.*  
 Admirable, *TP. III. 1. 37; A. & C. II. 1. 122.*  
 Admittance, *sb.* fashion. *M. W. III. 3. 62.* Of great admittance = received in the best society. *M. W. II. 2. 335.*  
 Adoptious, *adj.* given in adoption. *A. W. I. 2. 188.*  
 Adulterate, *adj.* adulterous. *Ham. I. 5. 22.*  
 Advance, *v.t.* to raise. *TP. I. 2. 208; TP. V. 1. 177; H. 5. V. 2. 322.* To promote. *Tim. I. 2. 178.*  
 Advancement, *sb.* promotion. *Ham. III. 2. 62. 354.*  
 Advantage, *v.t.* & *i.* to benefit, profit. *TP. I. 2. 34; Tw. N. IV. 2. 119.* To increase by interest. *E. 3. IV. 4. 323.*  
 Adversaries, *sb.* opposing counsel in a law-suit. *T. of S. I. 2. 278.*  
 Adverse, *adj.* opposing, hostile. *C. of H. I. 2. 25; R. 2. I. 3. 62; Tw. N. V. 2. 27.*  
 Advise, *v.t.* to inform, instruct, admonish, counsel. *M. for M. I. 2. 22.*  
 Advertisement, *sb.* admonition. *M. A. V. 1. 202.*  
 Intelligence. *2 H. 4. III. 2. 172.*

- Advertising, *prep.* admonishing, giving counsel. M. for M. V. 1. 388.
- Advice, *sb.* consideration. Two G. II. 4. 206; M. for M. V. 1. 469.
- Advise, *v.t.* to select, consider. Tw. N. IV. 2. 102; H. 3. II. 1. 768.
- Advised, *adj.* considerate, deliberate. M. of V. I. 2. 124; John. IV. 2. 214. *p.p.* informed, well aware. T. of S. I. 2. 191; H. 4. I. 2. 172. 'Are ye advised?' = Do you understand? H. 4. II. 1. 47.
- Advocation, *sb.* pleading, advocacy. Oth. III. 4. 123.
- Aery, *sb.* the nest or brood of an eagle. John. V. 2. 149; R. 3. I. 3. 264, 270. Hence, a brood, generally. Ham. II. 2. 354.
- Afraid, *adj.* afraid. Tp. II. 2. 106; M. W. III. 1. 28, 80.
- Affect, *v.t.* to love. M. W. II. 2. 115.
- Affectedly, *adv.* fancifully. Comp. 48.
- Affection, *sb.* natural disposition, inclination. M. of V. IV. 1. 50; W. T. I. 2. 138. Affection. L. L. L. V. 1. 4.
- Affected, *p.p.* affected. Tw. N. II. 3. 160.
- Affecta, *sb.* inclinations. L. L. L. I. 2. 152; Oth. I. 3. 264.
- Affirmed, *p.p.* sanctioned, confirmed. Mac. IV. 3. 34.
- Affiance, *sb.* confidence. H. 3. II. 2. 127; Cym. I. 6. 165.
- Affined, *p.p.* related by ties of affinity. T. & C. I. 3. 25. Bound. Oth. I. 2. 39.
- Affinity, *sb.* relationship by marriage. Oth. III. 1. 49.
- Afraid, *v.t.* to frighten. R. & J. III. 5. 33.
- Afront, *v.t.* to confront, meet. W. T. V. 1. 75; Ham. III. 1. 31.
- Afront, *sb.* a face to face encounter. Cym. V. 3. 87.
- Afy, *v.t.* to trust. T. A. I. 1. 47. *v.t.* to be-troth. H. 6. IV. 1. 80.
- Afore, *prep.* H. 4. II. 4. 152. *adv.* Tp. II. 2. 78. *conj.* H. 4. II. 4. 220.
- Aforehand, *adv.* beforehand. L. L. L. V. 4. 461.
- A-front, *adv.* in front. H. 4. II. 4. 222.
- After-eye, *v.t.* to look after. Cym. I. 3. 18.
- After-supper, *sb.* a banquet after supper. M. W. Dr. V. 1. 34.
- Against, *adj.* looking in amusement. H. 6. I. 2. 120.
- Aggravate, *v.t.* to increase, intensify. Sonn. CXI. 10; M. W. II. 2. 206; R. 2. I. 1. 43.
- Aglet-baby, *sb.* the small figure cut on the tag or point of a lace. T. of S. I. 2. 79.
- Aguise, *v.t.* to acknowledge, confess. Oth. I. 3. 232.
- Agone, *adj.* ago. Two G. III. 1. 85; Tw. N. V. 1. 224.
- Agood, *adv.* plentifully, heartily. Two G. IV. 1. 250.
- A-high, *adv.* on high. Lear. IV. 6. 58. *idea* on high. R. 3. IV. 4. 86. *adv.* To lay a ship a-hold was to keep it to the wind. Tw. I. 2. 52. *v.t.* *adj.* hungry. M. W. I. 2. 280; Tw. I. 2. 120. *idea* assistance. H. 4. III. 2. 262; V. 2. 132.
- Aidant, *adj.* assistant. Lear. IV. 4. 17.
- Aids, *sb.* reinforcements. H. 4. I. 3. 24.
- Aim, *sb.* a guess. Two G. III. 1. 28; J. C. I. 2. 109.
- Aim, to cry. To encourage, a term from 'archery. John. II. 2. 106.
- Aim, to give. To direct the aim of the archer. Two G. V. 4. 101.
- Aim, *v.t.* to guess. R. & J. I. 2. 211; Ham. IV. 1. 28.
- A-land, *adv.* on shore. Per. 1. 31; III. 2. 69.
- Albeit, *conj.* although. M. III. 4. 13; C. of E. V. 1. 217, 80.
- Alice, Alice. T. of S. Ind. II.
- Alder-liest, *adj.* most loved [all. H. 6. 1. 28.
- Ale, *sb.* alehouse. Two G. II. 5. 61.
- Ale-wife, *sb.* a woman who keeps an alehouse. T. of S. Ind. II. 23; H. 4. II. 2. 69.
- Alight, *v.t.* to descend from. V. & A. 12.
- All, used of two. H. 4. III. 1. 35; H. 6. II. 2. 26.
- All amorn, *adj.* utterly dejected. T. of S. IV. 3. 36; H. 6. III. 2. 124. Probably a corruption of the Fr. & la mort.
- Allay, *sb.* alleviation. -W. T. IV. 2. 9.
- Allayment, *sb.* alleviation. T. & C. IV. 4. 8.
- All-building, *adj.* that on which everything is built. M. for M. II. 4. 94. Comp. All-obeying.
- Allegiant, *adj.* loyal. H. 3. III. 2. 156.
- All-hallow eve. The eve of All Saints' Day. M. for M. II. 1. 130.
- All-hallowmas, All Saints' Day. M. W. I. 2. 211.
- All-hallown. 'All-hallown summer' is a late summer which comes at All hallow or All Saints' Day, Nov. 1. H. 4. I. 2. 178.
- All hid, the game of hide and seek. L. L. L. IV. 3. 78.
- Allicholy, *sb.* melancholy. M. W. I. 4. 164.
- Alligant, *adj.* elegant, in Mrs. Quickly's mouth. M. W. II. 2. 69.
- All-obeying, *adj.* which all obey. A. & C. III. 13. 77.
- Allottery, *sb.* portion. Ag. I. 1. 77.
- Allow, *v.t.* to approve. Tw. N. I. 2. 59; H. 4. IV. 2. 54. Allow the wine = allow the wind to pass, stand aside. A. W. V. 2. 10. Allowing = approving, conniving. W. T. I. 2. 185.
- Allowance, *sb.* acknowledgement, approval. T. & C. I. 3. 277; II. 3. 146; Cor. III. 2. 57.
- Allowed, *p.p.* permitted, licensed. L. L. L. I. 2. 236; Tw. N. I. 2. 101.
- All-Souls' Day, November 2. R. 3. V. 1. 10, 12, 18.
- All-thing, in every way. Mac. III. 1. 13.
- All-to, utterly, altogether. All-to naught = utterly bad. V. & A. 93. All-to topple = topple down entirely. Per. III. 2. 17.
- Allycholy, *adj.* melancholy. Two G. IV. 2. 27.
- Alma, *sb.* (singular). M. A. II. 3. 164; T. of S. IV. 3. 5; Cor. III. 2. 120.
- Alma-deed, *sb.* act of charity. H. 6. V. 5. 79.
- Alma-drink, *sb.* such poor liquor as is given in charity. A. & C. II. 7. 5.
- Alter, *v.t.* to exchange. Tw. N. II. 5. 172.
- Alway, *adv.* always. H. 4. I. 2. 240; H. 6. V. 6. 64.
- Amain, *adv.* violently, aloud. H. 6. 1. 2. 202; T. & C. V. 2. 13. At full speed. Tp. IV. 2. 54.
- Amaze, *v.t.* to confound. H. 4. V. 4. 61; C. of III. 1. 26; Ham. II. 2. 392.

- Amazement, *adv.* confusion. M. N's Dr. IV. 1. 251.  
 Amazement, *sb.* confusion. M. W. IV. 4. 55;  
 W. T. V. 2. 5.  
 Amazement, *sb.* confusion, terror. John. V. 1.  
 35; Pet. I. 2. 25.  
 Amaze, *v.t.* to flun. R. & J. III. 1. 395.  
 Amaze-ace, *sb.* two aces, the lowest throw of the  
 dice. A. W. II. 3. 85.  
 Amaze, *sb.* wrong, mischief. Sonn. XXXV. 7;  
 Ham. IV. 5. 18.  
 An, *conj.* if. M. A. I. 1. 80, &c. An if—if. Tp.  
 II. 2. 120; V. 1. 117, &c.  
 Anatomy, *sb.* a skeleton. C. of E. V. 1. 238;  
 John. III. 4. 40.  
 Anchor, *sb.* anchorite, hermit. Ham. III. 2. 229.  
 Anchorage, *sb.* the anchor with its gear. T. A.  
 I. 2. 72.  
 Ancient, *sb.* ensign, standard. H. 4. IV. 2. 34.  
 Ensign-bearer, ensign. H. 4. IV. 2. 26.  
 Ancientry, *sb.* antiquity. Used of old people,  
 W. T. III. 3. 63, and of the gravity which  
 belongs to antiquity, M. A. II. 2. 80.  
 And, redundant in popular songs. Tw. N. V.  
 1. 307; Lear. III. 2. 74.  
 Andirons, *sb.* standards at either end of a  
 hearth or fireplace to support the logs of  
 wood as they burned. Cym. II. 4. 82.  
 Andrew, the name of a ship, so called after the  
 apostle. M. of V. I. 1. 27.  
 Angel, *sb.* an English gold coin, worth about  
 10s., so called because it bore the figure of  
 the Archangel Michael piercing the dragon.  
 M. of V. II. 7. 56.  
 Angerly, *adv.* angrily. John. IV. 1. 82; Mac.  
 III. 3. 1.  
 Angle, *sb.* fishing rod and line. A. & C. II. 5. 10.  
 An-hedres, a corruption, perhaps of "mynders",  
 but this is uncertain. M. W. II. 1. 228.  
 An-hungry, *adj.* hungry. Cor. I. 1. 209.  
 A-night, *adv.* by night. As. II. 4. 48.  
 Annexion, *sb.* addition. Comp. 208.  
 Annexment, *sb.* addition, appendage. Ham.  
 III. 3. 21.  
 Annotanize=anatomize. L. I. L. IV. 1. 69.  
 Annoy, *sb.* annoyance, pain, injury. R. 3. V. 3.  
 156; V. & A. 599.  
 Anon, *adv.* immediately, presently. Tp. II.  
 2. 83; 247, &c.  
 Answer, *sb.* reply to a challenge. Ham. V. 2.  
 176. Retaliation. Cym. V. 3. 79. In fencing,  
 a thrust after a parry. Tw. N. III. 4. 305.  
 Answer, *v.t.* to encounter. John. V. 7. 60;  
 Cor. I. 2. 18. *v.t.* to meet an attack. T. & C.  
 I. 3. 171.  
 Answerable, *adj.* corresponding. T. of S. II. 1.  
 361; Oth. I. 3. 351.  
 Anthropophagian, *sb.* a man-eater. M. W.  
 IV. 5. 10. A word coined for the occasion by  
 mine Host of the Garter.  
 Antic, *adj.* fantastic. Ham. I. 5. 172. *v.t.* to  
 make a buffoon of. A. & C. II. 7. 132.  
 Antic, *sb.* the buffoon of the old plays. R. 2.  
 III. 2. 164; H. 3. III. 2. 32.  
 Anticly, *adv.* fantastically. M. A. V. 1. 96.  
 Antiquary, *adj.* ancient, full of old learning.  
 T. & C. II. 3. 266.  
 Antique, *sb.* a grotesque representation. L. I. E.  
 V. 1. 119, 154.  
 Antre, *sb.* a cave. Oth. 2. 3. 140.  
 Ape, & term of endearment. H. 4. II. 2. 226;  
 R. & J. II. 1. 15. To lead apes in hell was  
 supposed to be the punishment of old maids.  
 M. A. II. 2. 43. 49; T. of S. II. 4. 34.  
 Apoplezied, *p.p.* struck with apoplexy. Ham.  
 III. 4. 73.  
 Appaid, *p.p.* paid, rewarded. Lucr. 924.  
 Appalled, *p.p.* enfeebled. Phoen. 37. Made  
 pale. H. 6. I. 2. 48.  
 Apparent, *sb.* heir apparent. W. T. I. 2. 177;  
 3 H. 6. II. 2. 64.  
 Apparent, *adj.* evident, manifest. Two G. III.  
 1. 116; John. IV. 2. 93.  
 Apparently, *adv.* manifestly. C. of E. IV. 1. 78.  
 Appeach, *v.t.* to impeach, accuse. R. 2. V. 2. 4.  
 79, 102.  
 Appeal, *v.t.* to impeach. R. 2. I. 1. 9, 27; L. 3. 21.  
 Appeal, *sb.* impeachment. R. 2. I. 2. 4; IV. 2.  
 45, 79.  
 Appeared, *p.p.* made apparent. Cor. IV. 3. 6.  
 Appellant, *sb.* accuser, challenger. R. 2. I. 2. 34;  
 I. 3. 4, 52.  
 Apperil, *sb.* peril. Tim. I. 2. 32.  
 Apple-john, *sb.* a kind of winter apple, shrivelled  
 from long keeping. H. 4. III. 3. 3; H. 4. II.  
 4. 2.  
 Apply, *v.t.* to put in practice, ply. T. of S. I.  
 1. 19.  
 Appointed, *p.p.* equipped, furnished. W. T.  
 IV. 4. 603.  
 Appointment, *sb.* equipment. John. II. 2. 296.  
 Apprehension, *sb.* the faculty of perception;  
 hence, wit. H. 5. III. 7. 143; M. A. III. 4.  
 68.  
 Apprehensive, *adj.* capable of perception. J. G.  
 III. 1. 67.  
 Approbation, *sb.* probation, M. for M. I. 2. 183.  
 Proof, confirmation. Cym. I. 4. 134; H. 5. I.  
 2. 19.  
 Approof, *sb.* approval. M. for M. II. 4. 174.  
 Proof. A. W. I. 2. 30. Of valiant approof=  
 proved to be valiant. A. W. II. 5. 3.  
 Appropriation, *sb.* peculiar recommendation.  
 M. of V. I. 2. 46.  
 Approve, *v.t.* to prove, justify, make good.  
 M. of V. III. 2. 79; R. 2. I. 3. 125; Lear. II.  
 186.  
 Approver, *sb.* one who proves or tries. Cym. II.  
 4. 25.  
 Appurtenance, *sb.* that which appertains or  
 belongs to. Ham. II. 2. 128.  
 Apricock, *sb.* apricot. M. N's Dr. III. 2. 269;  
 R. 2. III. 4. 29.  
 Aquilon, *sb.* the north wind. T. & C. IV. 5. 9.  
 Arabian bird, the phoenix. A. & C. III. 2. 18;  
 Cym. I. 6. 17.  
 Araise, *v.t.* to raise. A. W. II. 1. 79.  
 Arbitrement, *sb.* decision. Tw. N. III. 4. 206;  
 H. 5. IV. 1. 108.  
 Arch, *adj.* chief; hence, notorious. R. 3. IV. 3.  
 1; John. III. 1. 192.  
 Arch, *sb.* chief. Lear. II. 1. 61.  
 Argal, a corruption of the Lat. *erga*, therefore.  
 Ham. V. 1. 23.  
 Argo, a corruption of the Lat. *ergo*. H. 6. IV.  
 2. 31.  
 Argentine, *adj.* silvery. Tw. N. V. 2. 251.

- Argier, Algiers.** *Tp.* I. a. 261, 263.  
**Argosy, sb.** a large merchantman. *M.* of V. I. 1. 9, &c. Originally perhaps a Ragusine or ship of Ragusa.  
**Argument, sb.** theme, cause of controversy. *M. A.* II. 3. 11; *H. 5.* III. 1. 21; *IV.* 1. 150.  
*Proof.* I. L. I. 1. 2. 175.  
**Arachne, a mistake for Arachna.** *T. & C.* V. 1. 152.  
**Arm, v.t.** to take in the arms. *Cym.* IV. 2. 400.  
**Armado, sb.** a fleet of men-of-war. *C.* of E. III. 2. 140; *John.* III. 4. 2.  
**Arm-gaunt, a word of doubtful meaning.** Possibly, gaunt with armour, or with bearing armour. *A. & C.* I. 5. 48.  
**Armigero, a blunder for 'Armiger,' an esquire, one who was entitled to bear arms.** *M. W.* I. 1. 10.  
**Armipotent, adj.** powerful in arms. *L. L. L.* V. 2. 630; *A. W.* IV. 3. 265.  
**Armour, sb.** a suit of armour. *M. A.* II. 3. 17; *H. 4.* IV. 5. 30.  
**Aroint thee!** be gone, get thee gone. *Mac.* I. 3. 6; *Lear.* III. 4. 120.  
**A-row, adv.** in a row, one after the other. *C.* of E. V. 1. 170.  
**Arras, sb.** tapestry; so called from being first made at Arras. *M. A.* I. 3. 63; *Ham.* II. 2. 163.  
**Arrears, sb.** arrears. *Cym.* II. 4. 13.  
**Arrivance, sb.** persons arriving. *Oth.* II. 1. 42.  
**Arrive, v.t.** to reach, attain to. *J. C.* I. 2. 110; *Cor.* II. 3. 180.  
**Arrogancy, sb.** arrogance. *H. 8.* II. 4. 110.  
**Art, sb.** practice, skill acquired by practice; opposed to theory. *J. C.* IV. 3. 194.  
**Arthur's show, an exhibition by a company of archers who gave themselves the names of the Knights of the Round Table.** *H. 4.* III. 2. 300.  
**Article, sb.** 'a soul of great article,' which would require a large inventory to describe its qualities. *Ham.* V. 2. 122.  
**Articulate, v.t.** to make articles or conditions of peace. *Cor.* I. 9. 77. *v.t.* to set forth in detail. *H. 4.* V. 1. 72.  
**Artificer, sb.** artisan. *John.* IV. 2. 201.  
**Artificial, adj.** working by art. *M. N's Dr.* III. 2. 203. 'Artificial strife,' the effort of art to imitate nature. *Tim.* I. 1. 37.  
**Artist, sb.** a scholar, man of letters. *A. W.* II. 3. 10; *T. & C.* I. 3. 24.  
**Arms-man, sb.** a scholar. *L. L. L.* V. 1. 85.  
**Ask, v.t.** to require. *M. N's Dr.* I. 2. 27; *H. 6.* I. 2. 90.  
**Askance, adv.** looking sideways. *V. & A.* 342; *Scot.* CX. 6.  
**Askance, v.t.** to cause to look sideways. *Lucr.* 637.  
**Assant, prep.** across. *Ham.* IV. 7. 167.  
**Aspect, sb.** look, regard. *A. & C.* I. 5. 33.  
**Asperion, sb.** sprinkling. *TP.* IV. 1. 18. The sprinkling of holy water accompanied the act of benediction. See *Cym.* V. 5. 350, 351.  
**Aspic, sb.** asp. *Oth.* III. 3. 430; *A. & C.* V. 2. 296.  
**Aspicuous, blunder for 'suspicious.'** *M. A.* III. 2. 20.  
**Aspis, v.t.** to mount, ascend. *B. & J.* III. 1. 122.  
**A-squint, adv.** squintingly. *Lear.* V. 2. 72.  
**Assay, sb.** attempt, experiment. *M.* for *M.* III. 1. 164; *Mac.* IV. 3. 243.  
**Assay, v.t.** to attempt, try, put to the test. *A. W.* III. 7. 44; *M. W.* II. 1. 26.  
**Assemblance, sb.** semblance, appearance. *H. 4.* III. 2. 277.  
**Assigns, sb.** appendages.  
**Assinego, sb.** an ass. *T. & C.* .....  
**Assistance, sb.** persons assisting, assistants. *Cor.* IV. 6. 33. Compare *Arrivance*.  
**Assistant, adj.** assisting. *Ham.* I. 3. 3.  
**Associate, v.t.** to accompany. *B. & J.* V. 2. 6.  
**Associates, sb.** comrades. *Ham.* IV. 3. 47.  
**Assubjugate, v.t.** to subjugate. *T. & C.* II. 3. 202.  
**Assurance, sb.** legal security. *T.* of S. II. 1. 389, 398; *IV.* 2. 117.  
**Assured, p.p.** betrothed. *C.* of E. III. 2. 145; *John.* II. 1. 535.  
**At friend, friendly.** *W. T.* V. 1. 140.  
**At help, helping, favouring.** *Ham.* IV. 3. 46.  
**Atomy, sb.** atom. *As.* III. 2. 245; *III.* 5. 13; *B. & J.* I. 4. 57. **Anatomy, skeleton.** *H. 4.* V. 4. 33.  
**Atone, v.t.** to set at one, reconcile. *R. a.* I. 1. 202; *Oth.* IV. 1. 244. **To agree.** *As.* V. 4. 116; *Cor.* IV. 6. 72.  
**Atonement, sb.** reconciliation. *H. 4.* IV. 1. 221; *R. 3.* I. 3. 36.  
**Attach, v.t.** to seize, lay hold of. *TP.* III. 3. 5; *H. 4.* II. 2. 3. **To arrest.** *C.* of E. IV. 1. 6, 73.  
**Attachment, sb.** arrest. *T. & C.* IV. 2. 5.  
**Attainder, sb.** stain, taint, disgrace. *B.* IV. 1. 24; *R. 3.* III. 5. 32.  
**Attaint, sb.** conviction. *Lear.* V. 3. 83. **Stain, disgrace.** *T. & C.* I. 2. 26; *Lucr.* 825. *p.p.* attainted. *L. L. L.* V. 2. 829.  
**Attainture, sb.** conviction, disgrace. *H. 6.* I. 2. 106.  
**Attasked, p.p.** taken to task, blamed. *Lear.* I. 4. 366.  
**Attemptable, adj.** liable to be tempted. *Cym.* I. 4. 65.  
**Attend, v.t.** to listen to. *TP.* I. 2. 78, 453; *M.* of V. V. 1. 103. **To wait for.** *M. W.* I. 2. 279; *Tw. N.* III. 4. 243.  
**Attent, adj.** attentive. *Ham.* I. 2. 193; *Per.* III. prol. 11.  
**Attest, sb.** attestation. *T. & C.* V. 2. 122.  
**Attorney, sb.** a proxy, agent. *As.* IV. 1. 94; *R. 3.* V. 3. 83.  
**Attorneyed, p.p.** performed by proxy. *W. T.* I. 1. 30. **Engaged as an attorney.** *M.* for *M.* V. 1. 390.  
**Attorneyship, sb.** the office of a proxy. *H. 6.* 5. 56.  
**Attribute, sb.** reputation. *T. & C.* II. 3. 125; *Ham.* I. 4. 22.  
**Attribution, sb.** praise. *H. 4.* IV. 1. 2.  
**Audacious, adj.** daring, bold, but without any note of blame. *L. L. L.* V. 1. 5.  
**Audaciously, adv.** boldly. *L. L. L.* V. 2. 104; *Lucr.* 1223.  
**Audible, adj.** quick of hearing. *Cor.* IV. 5. 238.  
**Augur, sb.** augury. *Mac.* III. 4. 122.  
**Aunt, sb.** an old gossip. *M. N's Dr.* II. 2. 51. **Used in a bad sense.** *W. T.* IV. 3. 11.  
**Auricular, adj.** received through the ears. *Lear.* I. 2. 59.

- Authentic, adj.** authoritative. *M. W.* II. 2. 235. Authorized, *p. p.* authenticated, vouched for. *Mac.* III. 4. 64.
- Avail, sb.** profit. *A. W.* I. 3. 190; *III.* 1. 22.
- Avant, inf.** begone! *M. W.* I. 3. 90; *C. of E.* IV. 3. 80. Used as a substantive. *H. 8.* II. 3. 10.
- Ave, sb.** from *lat. ave*, hail! Hence, an acclamation. *M.* for *M.* I. 1. 71.
- Avo-Mary, sb.** a prayer in the Roman Catholic church, so called from the angel's salutation to the Virgin, Hail, Mary! *H. 6.* I. 3. 59; *3 H. 6.* II. 1. 166.
- Aver, v. t.** to allege. *Cym.* V. 4. 203.
- Advised, p. p.** advised. *M. W.* I. 1. 169. Informed. 'Are you advised?' = 'Do you know?' *M. W.* I. 4. 106; *M.* for *M.* II. 2. 132.
- Avoid, v. t.** to leave, quit. *H. 8.* V. 1. 86; *Cor.* IV. 3. 25.
- Avouch, sb.** assertion, testimony. *Ham.* I. 1. 57.
- Away with, p. p.** 'Could never away with' = could never endure. *H. 4.* III. 2. 213.
- Aweless, adj.** fearless. *John.* I. 1. 266. Inspiring no fear or reverence. *R. 3.* II. 4. 52.
- Awful, adj.** filled with regard for authority. *Two G.* IV. 1. 46.
- Awkward, adj.** contrary. *H. 6.* III. 2. 83.
- A-work, to set.** To set to work, set working. *H. 4.* IV. 3. 124; *Ham.* II. 2. 510.
- Ayme! inf.** alas! *M. W.* I. 4. 68; *John.* V. 3. 14.
- Azured, adj.** azure. *TP.* V. 1. 43; *Cym.* IV. 2.
- Banbury cheese, which was proverbially poor and thin, nothing but paring.** *M. W.* I. 2. 130.
- Band, sb.** a bond. *R. 2.* I. 1. 2; *C. of E.* IV. 2. 49.
- Ban-dogs, sb.** fierce dogs which were kept in a band or chain. *H. 6.* I. 4. 22.
- Bandy, v. i.** to contend. *T. A.* I. 2. 312; *As.* V. 1. 61.
- Bane, sb.** poison. *M.* for *M.* I. 2. 133.
- Baned, p. p.** poisoned. *M.* of *V.* IV. 1. 46.
- Bank, v. t.** to sail along the banks. *John.* V. 2. 204.
- Banquet, sb.** dessert. *T.* of *S.* V. 2. 9; *R. & J.* I. 5. 124.
- Barbed, adj.** armed; used only of a horse. *R. 2.* III. 3. 117; *R. 3.* I. 1. 10.
- Barber-monger, sb.** one who deals much with barbers. *Lear.* II. 2. 36.
- Bare, v. t.** to shave. *M.* for *M.* IV. 2. 289; *A. W.* IV. 1. 54.
- Barful, adj.** full of hindrances. *Tw.* N. I. 4. 41.
- Barked, p. p.** covered as with a bark. *Ham.* I. 5. 71.
- Barn, sb.** yeast. *M. N's Dr.* II. 1. 32.
- Barn, or Barne, sb.** a child, bairn. *M. A.* III. 4. 49; *A. W.* I. 3. 28.
- Barn, v. t.** to store up in a barn. *Lucr.* 899.
- Barnacle, sb.** a shell-fish supposed to grow on trees and to turn into the barnacle-geese. *TP.* IV. 1. 249.
- Barrabas, M.** of *V.* IV. 1. 296. See *Matthew* xxvii. 16.
- Barren, adj.** dull, witless. *Tw.* N. I. 5. 90; *Ham.* III. 2. 46.
- Barricado, sb.** a barricade, barrier. *Tw.* N. IV. 2. 41; *W. T.* I. 2. 204. *v. t.* to barricade. *A. W.* I. 1. 124.
- Barson, probably Barston in Warwickshire.** *H. 4.* V. 3. 94.
- Bartholomew boar-pig.** Roast-pig was one of the dainties at Bartholomew Fair, which was held in Smithfield on 24 August. *H. 4.* II. 4. 250.
- Bartholomew-tide, the feast of St Bartholomew, August 24.** *H. 5.* V. 2. 336.
- Basan, Bashan.** *A. & C.* III. 13. 107. See *Ps.* xxii. 12.
- Base, sb.** a rustic game, perhaps the same as that now called prisoner's base. *Cym.* V. 3. 20. To bid a base is to challenge to a race. *V. & A.* 303.
- Base court, sb.** the lower court. *R. 2.* III. 3. 176, 180.
- Baseness, sb.** low rank. *W. T.* IV. 4. 754.
- Illegitimacy.** *Lear.* I. 2. 10; *W. T.* II. 3. 78.
- Mean employment.** *TP.* III. 2. 2, 12; *Ham.* V. 2. 34.
- Bases, sb.** embroidered skirts, worn by knights on horseback, and reaching from the middle to below the knees. *For.* II. 1. 116.
- Basilisco-like.** Basilisco was a character in Soliman and Perseda, and the reference is to a passage in that play. *John.* I. 1. 244.
- Basiliak, sb.** a fabulous serpent. *W. T.* I. 2. 388.
- H. 5.** V. 2. 17. A large cannon. *H. 4.* II. 3. 56.
- Bas, v. t.** to proclaim in a deep bass note. *TP.* III. 3. 99.
- Basta, inf.** (Italian) enough! *T.* of *S.* I. 1. 202.
- Bastard, sb.** a sweet Spanish wine. *M.* for *M.* III. 2. 4; *H. 4.* II. 4. 30, 82.
- Baby, sb.** a doll. *Mac.* III. 4. 106.
- Baccare, inf.** go back! a spurious Latin word. *T.* of *S.* II. 1. 73.
- Backed, having a back.** *Ham.* III. 2. 397.
- Backsword man, a player at single-stick.** *H. 4.* III. 2. 70.
- Back-trick, sb.** a caper backwards in dancing. *Tw.* N. I. 3. 131.
- Backward, sb.** the retrospect. *TP.* I. 2. 30.
- Badged, p. p.** marked as with a badge. *Mac.* II. 3. 107.
- Baffle, v. t.** to punish with infamy, as recreant knights: part of the punishment being to hang them up by the heels. *H. 4.* I. 2. 113; *R. 2.* I. 1. 170.
- Baked-meats, sb.** pastry. *R. & J.* IV. 4. 5.
- Ham.* I. 2. 180.
- Bald, adj.** bareheaded. *Cor.* IV. 5. 206. Senseless. *C. of E.* II. 2. 110; *H. 4.* I. 3. 65.
- Baldrick, sb.** a belt or girdle. *M. A.* I. 1. 244.
- Bale, sb.** evil, mischief. *Cor.* I. 1. 166.
- Balk, v. t.** to wrangle, dispute. To balk logic to chop logic. *T.* of *S.* I. 1. 34.
- Balked, p. p.** passed over, omitted. *Tw.* N. III. 2. 25. Heaped up, as in ridges. *H. 4.* I. 1. 69.
- Ballad, v. t.** to sing ballads about. *A. & C.* V. 216.
- Ballast, p. p.** ballasted. *C. of E.* III. 2. 141.
- Ballow, sb.** a cudgel. *Lear.* IV. 6. 247.
- Balm, sb.** the oil of consecration. *R. 2.* III. 2. 53; *IV.* 1. 209.
- Ban, sb.** a curse. *Ham.* III. 2. 269; *Lear.* II. 3. 19.
- Ban, v. t.** to curse. *H. 6.* II. 4. 25; *V. & A.* 306; *Lucr.* 1460.

- Bat**, *sb.* a cudgel. *Cor.* I. c. 39, 45; *Comp.* 54.  
**Bate**, *sb.* strife. *s.* H. 4. III. 4. 37.  
**Bate**, *v.t.* to fluster, as a hawk. *s.* H. 4. IV. 1. 99;  
*H. 5. III. 2. 122.* To diminish. *s.* H. 4. III. 3. 2.  
**Bate**, *v.t.* to except, abate. *TP.* I. a. 330; I. 1. 1.  
*102.* To beat down, washen. *M.* of V. III. 3.  
**Bate-breeding**, *adj.* causing strife. *V.* & A. 655.  
**Bateless**, *adj.* that cannot be blunted. *Luce.* 9.  
**Bat-fowling**, *sb.* a mode of catching birds at  
 night by means of torches and poles and  
 sometimes of nets. *TP.* II. 1. 185.  
**Batlet**, *sb.* a small bat or club used for beating  
 linen at the wash. *As.* II. 4. 40.  
**Batten**, *v.i.* to grow fat. *Cor.* IV. 5. 35; *Ham.*  
 III. 4. 67.  
**Battle**, *sb.* an army or division of an army in  
 order of battle. *John.* IV. 2. 78; *s.* H. 4. IV. 1.  
 120; *J. C. V. 1. 4; Mac.* V. 6. 4.  
**Battle**, *sb.* a trifle, plaything. *T.* of S. IV. 3.  
 82. The fool's baton. *A. W.* IV. 5. 32; *R. & J.*  
 II. 4. 99. A small boat. *Cym.* III. 1. 27;  
*T. & C. I. 3. 35.*  
**Bavin**, *adj.* made of bavin or brushwood. *s.* H. 4.  
 III. 2. 61.  
**Bawling**, *adj.* trifling, insignificant. *Tw.* N. V.  
 1. 57.  
**Bawcock**, *sb.* a fine fellow. *Fr. beau soq.* *Tw.*  
 N. III. 4. 125; *H. 5. III. 2. 26.*  
**Bay**, *sb.* in a building, the space between the  
 main timbers of the roof. *M.* for *M.* II. 1.  
*adj.* formed by the beach. *M. N's Dr.*  
 II. 2. 85; *Tim.* V. 1. 219.  
**Beachy** = beached. *s.* H. 4. III. 1. 50.  
**Beads**, *sb.* originally, prayers; hence, a rosary  
 on which prayers were counted by beads.  
*R. 2. III. 2. 147; R. 3. III. 7. 92.*  
**Beadsman**, *sb.* one who is hired to offer prayers  
 for another. *R. 2. III. 2. 146.*  
**Beak**, *sb.* the bows of a ship. *TP.* I. 2. 196.  
**Beard**. To bear a beard = to have some sense.  
*R. & J. I. 3. 29.* To bear hard = to be hard  
 upon, have a grudge against. *J. C. I. 2. 317;*  
*II. 1. 215; III. 1. 157.* To bear in hand = to  
 deceive with false hopes. *s.* H. 4. I. 2. 42;  
*Mac.* III. 1. 81; *Ham.* II. 2. 67.  
**Bearing-cloth**, *sb.* the cloth in which a child  
 was carried to be christened. *W. T.* III. 3.  
 119; *s.* H. 4. I. 3. 42.  
**Bear-ward**, *sb.* a keeper of bears. *M. A.* II. 1. 43.  
**Beat**, *v.t.* to hammer, meditate. *TP.* V. 1. 246;  
*Ham.* III. 2. 122. To throb. *TP.* I. 2. 176;  
*Lear.* III. 4. 14.  
**Beautied**, *p.p.* adorned. *Ham.* III. 1. 51.  
**Beautified**, *adj.* endowed with beauty, beauti-  
 ful. *Ham.* II. a. 110.  
**Beaver**, *sb.* the front part or face-guard of the  
 helmet. *Ham.* I. 2. 339; *s.* H. 4. IV. 1. 120.  
*Used for the helmet itself. R. 3. V. 3. 30.*  
**Because**, *conj.* in order that. *s.* H. 6. III. a. 90.  
**Beck**, *sb.* a signal. *Ham.* III. 2. 127; *A. & C.*  
 III. 1. 60. *v.t.* to beckon. *John.* III. 3. 13.  
**Beckon**, *v.t.* to get to, betake oneself. *s.* H. 6.  
 III. 2. 20; *IV.* 4. 25.  
**Beckoned**, *p.p.* beckoned. *A. & C.* III. 7. 66;  
*Cym.* V. 5. 246. *adj.* beckoning. *R. & J.*  
 IV. 2. 26.  
**Becoming**, *sb.* grace. *A. & C.* I. 3. 96; *Senn.* O. 3.  
**Bedded**, *adj.* lying flat. *Ham.* III. 4. 72.  
**Bedlam**, *sb.* a madhouse. *s.* H. 6. V. 2. 131;  
*Lear.* 2. a. 128. *A madman.* *Lear.* III. 7. 103.  
*adj.* mad. *s.* H. 6. III. 1. 51; *V.* 1. 132.  
**Bed-swarver**, *sb.* an adulterer. *W. T.* II. 1. 93.  
**Beetle**, *sb.* a heavy mallet. *s.* H. 4. I. a. 255.  
 Hence beetle-headed = very stupid. *T.* of  
 IV. 1. 161.  
**Beetle**, *v.t.* to jut, project. *Ham.* I. 4. 71.  
**Before-time**, *adv.* in time past. *Cor.* I. 6. 24.  
**Beforetime**, *v.t.* to betide. *Two G.* IV. 3. 41.  
**Beg**, *v.t.* You cannot beg us as you cannot ap-  
 ply for the guardianship of us as if we were  
 fools. *L. L. L.* V. 2. 490.  
**Begnaw**, *v.t.* to gnaw. *R. 3. I. 3. 222.*  
**Beguiled**, *p.p.* made capable of deception.  
*Luce.* 1544.  
**Behave**, *v.t.* to manage, control. *Tim.* III. 5. 22.  
**Behest**, *sb.* commandment. *R. & J.* IV. 2. 19;  
*Cym.* V. 4. 122.  
**Beholding**, *adj.* obliged, indebted. *Two G.* IV.  
 4. 178; *M.* of V. I. 3. 106.  
**Behoof**, *sb.* advantage, profit. *s.* H. 6. IV. 7. 83.  
**Behove**, *sb.* behoof, profit. *Ham.* V. 1. 71.  
**Behoveful**, *adj.* becoming, suitable. *R. & J.*  
 IV. 3. 8.  
**Being**, *sb.* life, existence; and so, habit of life.  
*A. & C.* II. a. 35; *Cym.* I. 5. 54.  
**Being**, *conj.* since, inasmuch as. *M. A.* IV. 1.  
 251; *s.* H. 4. II. 1. 199.  
**Beidam**, *sb.* originally, a grandmother; applied  
 contemptuously to an old woman, a hag.  
*John.* IV. 2. 185; *Mac.* III. 5. 2.  
**Be-lee'd**, *p.p.* driven into the lee of the wind.  
*Oth.* I. 1. 30.  
**Belied**, *p.p.* full of lies, false. *Luce.* 1533.  
**Belike**, *adv.* probably. *Two G.* I. 2. 85, &c.  
**Bell**, book & candle. In the ceremony of ex-  
 communication the bell was tolled, the for-  
 mula was read from the book of offices, and  
 three candles were extinguished. *John.* III.  
 3. 12.  
**Belocked**, *p.p.* locked. *M.* for *M.* V. 1. 210.  
**Bemadding**, *adj.* maddening. *Lear.* III. 1. 38.  
**Bemet**, *p.p.* met. *Lear.* V. 1. 20.  
**Be-mets**, *v.t.* to measure. *T.* of S. IV. 3. 113.  
**Bemock**, *v.t.* to mock. *Cor.* I. 1. 261.  
**Bemoiled**, *p.p.* bemired. *T.* of S. IV. 1. 77.  
**Bemonster**, *v.t.* to make monstrous. *Lear.* IV.  
 a. 63.  
**Bench**, *v.t.* to sit on the bench of justice. *Lear.*  
 III. 6. 40. *v.t.* to raise to the bench. *W. T.* I.  
 2. 314.  
**Bench-hole**, *sb.* the hole of a privy. *A. & C.* IV.  
 7. 1.  
**Bend**, *v.t.* to turn, direct; used of swords  
 and cannon. *R. 3. I. a. 95; Lear.* IV. a. 74;  
*John.* II. 1. 37. *v.t.* to incline. *Ham.* 1. 2.  
 115. *sb.* look. *J. C. I.* 2. 123.  
**Bennetted**, *p.p.* enclosed as in a net. *Ham.* V.  
 a. 29.  
**Benison**, *sb.* blessing. *Mac.* II. 4. 40; *Lear.*  
 I. 1. 268.  
**Bent**, *sb.* inclination, disposition. *M. A.* IV. 1.  
 183; *R. & J.* II. a. 143.  
**Ben veneto**, welcome. *L. L. L.* IV. 4. 164; *T.*  
 of S. I. 2. 282.

- v.t. to gray.* L. L. L. V. 2. 702.  
*v.t. to decry, cry out against.* Ham.  
 II. 2. 357.  
*Bergomask, sb.* a rustic dance which took its  
 name from Bergamo. M. N's Dr. V. 1. 360.  
*Bermoothes, sb.* the Bermudas. Tp. I. 2. 229.  
*Bescreamed, v.p.* screamed. R. & J. II. 2. 52.  
*Beseched*=*besought.* Ham. III. 1. 22; Comp.  
 807.  
*Besecming, sb.* appearance. Cym. V. 5. 409.  
*Beshrew, v.t.* to invoke mischief upon, curse;  
 used not very seriously. R. & J. V. 2. 26; M.  
 of V. II. 6. 52; John, V. 4. 49.  
*Besides, prep.* beside. Tw. N. IV. 2. 92; Cym.  
 II. 4. 149.  
*Beslubber, v.t.* to daub. 1 H 4. II. 4. 342.  
*Beamrich, v.t.* to soil. H 5. IV. 3. 110; Ham.  
 I. 3. 15.  
*Besom, sb.* a broom. 2 H 6. IV. 7. 34.  
*Besort, v.t.* to fit, suit. Lear, I. 4. 272. *sb.* what  
 is becoming. Oth. I. 3. 239.  
*Bespeak, v.t.* to speak to, address. Tw. N. V. 1.  
 102; R. 2. V. 2. 20.  
*Best, adj.* in the best=at best. Ham. I. 5. 27;  
 Pass. Pilg. 102.  
*Bestained, p.p.* stained. John, IV. 3. 24.  
*Bested, p.p.* situated. Worse *beated*=in a  
 worse plight. 2 H 6. II. 3. 56.  
*Bestow, v.t.* to place, put, dispose of. Tp. V. 1.  
 209; Oth. III. 1. 57. To settle in life. T. of  
 S. L. 1. 50; IV. 4. 35. Used reflexively. Mac.  
 III. 6. 24; Ham. III. 1. 33.  
*Bestraught, adj.* distraught. T. of S. Ind. II. 26.  
*Beteem, v.t.* to allow. M. N's Dr. I. 1. 131;  
 Ham. I. 2. 141.  
*Bethought, p.p.* minded. Lear, II. 3. 6.  
*Bethumped, p.p.* thumped. John, II. 2. 466.  
*Betid, p.p.* happened, befallen. Tp. I. 2. 31;  
 II. 2. V. 1. 42.  
*Betide, v.t.* to betide, chance. L. L. L. IV. 3.  
 382. *adv.* in good time. John, IV. 3. 98;  
 Ham. IV. 5. 49.  
*Betrim, v.t.* to trim. Tp. IV. 1. 65.  
*Retumbled, p.p.* tumbled. Lucr. 1037.  
*Bevel, adj.* sloping, slanting. Sonn. CXXI. 11.  
*Bewray, v.t.* to discover, disclose. Cor. V. 3.  
 95; Lear, II. 1. 109.  
*Bezonian, sb.* a base fellow. 2 H 4. V. 3. 118;  
 2 H 6. IV. 1. 134. Properly, a penniless  
 recruit.  
*Bias, adj.* protuberant, like the bias side of a  
 bowl. T. & C. IV. 5. 8. *adv.* awry. T. & C.  
 I. 3. 15.  
*Bibble-babble, sb.* idle babbling. Tw. N. IV. 2.  
 105.  
*Bickering, sb.* quarrel. 2 H 6. I. 1. 144.  
*Bid forth, invited out.* M. of V. II. 5. 11.  
*Biddy! chick!* a call to allure chickens. Tw.  
 N. III. 4. 128.  
*Bide, v.t.* to endure, undergo. Tw. N. I. 5. 71;  
 II. 4. 97, 127; R. & J. I. 1. 219.  
*Biding, sb.* abode. Lear, IV. 6. 228; Lucr. 530.  
*Bignary, sb.* marriage with one who had been  
 married before. R. III. 7. 189.  
*Bigger, sb.* a nightcap. 2 H 4. IV. 5. 79.  
*Bilbo, sb.* a Spanish rapier; so called from  
 Bilbao or Bilboa where there was a famous  
 manufactory. M. W. I. 1. 165; III. 5. 212.  
*Bilboes, sb.* stocks or fetters used on board ship.  
 They consisted of a bar of iron to which were  
 fastened rings for the prisoner's feet. Ham.  
 V. 2. 6.  
*Bill, sb.* a halibut. M. A. III. 2. 44; Lear, IV.  
 6. 92. A 'brown bill,' like the old brown  
 Bess, was browned to preserve it from rust.  
 2 H 6. IV. 20. 127; Lear, IV. 6. 92.  
*Bill, sb.* a public notice, advertisement. M. A.  
 I. 1. 39; J. O. IV. 3. 173.  
*Bird-bolt, sb.* a short blunt-headed arrow used  
 with a crossbow. M. A. I. 1. 42; Tw. N. I. 1. 100.  
*Birding, sb.* birdcatching, fowling. M. W. III.  
 3. 247.  
*Birding-piece, sb.* a fowling-piece. M. W. IV.  
 2. 59.  
*Birthdom, sb.* birth-right; here used for native  
 land. Mac. IV. 3. 4.  
*isson, adj.* purblind, dim-sighted. Cor. II. 2.  
 70. *Bisson rheum*=blinding tears. Ham. II.  
 2. 529.  
*Bite the thumb, to,* a gesture of contempt. It  
 was done by putting the thumb nail behind  
 the upper teeth and jerking it out with a  
 crack. R. & J. I. 1. 48.  
*Bite by the ear, to,* an action of endearment.  
 R. & J. II. 4. 81.  
*Bite by the nose, to.* To treat with indignity.  
 M. for M. III. 1. 109.  
*Bitter sweet, sb.* a kind of apple, also called  
 a bitter-sweet. R. & J. II. 4. 83.  
*Bitumed, p.p.* smeared with bitumen. Per. III.  
 1. 72; III. 2. 56.  
*Black-Monday, Easter Monday,* so called from  
 a terrible storm on Easter Monday 1360 from  
 which the English army before Paris suffered  
 severely. M. of V. II. 5. 75.  
*Blacks, sb.* black stuffs. W. T. L. 2. 132.  
*Bladed, p.p.* with fresh green blades or shoots.  
 M. N's Dr. I. 1. 211. *Bladed corn*=corn in  
 the blade. Mac. IV. 1. 53.  
*Blank, sb.* the white mark in the centre of a  
 target. W. T. II. 3. 5; Ham. IV. 1. 42.  
*Blank, v.t.* to blanch, make pale. Ham. III. 2.  
 239.  
*Blanks, sb.* blank charters, which after they  
 were sealed could be filled in with anything  
 which the king or his officers thought good.  
 R. 2. II. 1. 250. See I. 4. 48.  
*Blastments, sb.* blighting influences. Ham. I.  
 3. 42.  
*Blaze, v.t.* to publish. R. & J. III. 3. 151.  
*Blaze, v.t.* to dim with weeping, blur. M. of V.  
 III. 2. 50; T. of S. V. 1. 120; Oth. II. 1. 222.  
*Blench, v.t.* to flinch, start aside. Ham. II. 2.  
 626; T. & C. I. 1. 28; II. 2. 68.  
*Blenches, sb.* averrings. Sonn. CX. 7.  
*Blend, p.p.* blended. Comp. 215.  
*Blent, p.p.* blended, mixed. M. of V. III. 2.  
 183; Tw. N. I. 5. 257.  
*Blindworm, sb.* the slowworm. M. N's Dr. II.  
 2. 11; Mac. IV. 1. 16.  
*Blistered, adj.* puffed out, padded. H 2. 1. 32.  
*Bloat, adj.* bloated. Ham. III. 4. 182. The old  
 spelling is *blout*.  
*Block, sb.* the wood on which hats are made.  
 M. A. I. 1. 77. Hence, the fashion of a hat.  
 Lear, IV. 4. 187.

- Blood**, *sb.* disposition, temper. Ham. III. 2. 74.  
**Passion**, *Lear*, IV. 2. 64. A young high-spirited man. John. II. 1. 278, 461; J. C. I. 2. 131; IV. 3. 264.
- Blood**, *in*. In full vigour and condition. 1 H 6. IV. 2. 48. Worst in blood to run—in the worst condition for running. Cor. I. 1. 163.
- Blood-boltered**, *p.p.* clotted with blood. Mac. IV. 1. 123.
- Bloody flag**. The signal of war. H 5. I. 2. 201; Cor. II. 1. 84.
- Blow**, *v.t.* to inflate, swell. Tw. N. II. 5. 48; A. & C. IV. 6. 34.
- Blow**, *v.t.* to blossom. Two G. I. 1. 46; M. N's Dr. II. 1. 240.
- Blown**, *p.p.* in full blossom. M. A. IV. 1. 59; L. L. I. V. 2. 297.
- Blowse**, *sb.* a coarse beauty. T. A. IV. 2. 72.
- Blubbered**, *p.p.* with eyes and cheeks swollen with weeping. 2 H 4. II. 4. 421 (Stage direction).
- Blubbering**, *pr.p.* weeping noisily. R. & J. III. 3. 87.
- Blue**, *adj.* livid, dark, of the colour about the eyes. As. III. 2. 393; Lucr. 1587.
- Blue-cap**, *sb.* a Scotchman, from the blue bonnet which he wore. 1 H 4. II. 4. 392.
- Blue-eyed**, *adj.* with a dark circle about the eyes. Tp. I. 2. 260.
- Blurted at**, *p.p.* puffed at contemptuously. Per. IV. 3. 34.
- Blustrous**, *adj.* boisterous. Per. III. 1. 28.
- Boast**, *v.t.* to boast, woo. M. W. II. 1. 92; T. of B. I. 2. 95.
- Bob**, *v.t.* to beat smartly, thump. R. 3. V. 3. 334. To obtain by fraud, cheat. Oth. V. 1. 16; T. & C. III. 1. 75.
- Bob**, *sb.* a smart rap, jest. As. II. 7. 55.
- Bode**, *v.t.* to foreshadow evil. T. & C. V. 2. 191.
- Bodement**, *sb.* foreboding, presage. T. & C. V. 3. 80; Mac. IV. 1. 96.
- Bodge**, *v.t.* to budge. 3 H 6. I. 4. 19.
- Bodkin**, *sb.* a small dagger or stiletto. Ham. III. 1. 76.
- Bodykina**. A petty oath, the full form of which in Ham. II. 2. 554 is 'God's bodykina,' showing that it refers originally to the sacramental water. M. W. II. 3. 46.
- Boggle**, *v.t.* to start aside, like a frightened horse; to hesitate. A. W. V. 3. 232.
- Boggler**, *sb.* a swerver. A. & C. III. 13. 110.
- Bold**, *v.t.* to embolden. Lear. V. 1. 26.
- Bollin**, *sb.* bowlines. Per. III. 1. 43.
- Bollen**, *adj.* swollen. Lucr. 1417.
- Bolt**, *sb.* a blunt arrow. M. W. III. 4. 24.
- Boiled**, *p.p.* sifted. W. T. IV. 4. 375; H 5. II. 2. 137. Refined. Cor. III. 1. 322.
- Bolter**, *sb.* a sieve. 2 H 4. III. 3. 81.
- Bolting**, *sb.* sifting. T. & C. I. 1. 18.
- Bolting-hutch**, *sb.* a hutch in which meal was sifted. 1 H 4. II. 4. 495.
- Bombard**, *sb.* a leathern vessel for liquor. Tp. II. 2. 21; 1 H 4. II. 4. 497.
- Bombast**, *sb.* cotton wool used for padding. L. L. I. V. 2. 701; 1 H 4. II. 4. 359. Hence *adjectively* = tustian. Oth. I. 1. 13.
- Bone-robe**, *sb.* a harlot. 2 H 4. III. 2. 26.
- Bond**, *sb.* obligation, that to which one is bound. Lear. I. 1. 95.
- Bonnet**, *v.t.* to take off the bonnet, show courtesy. Cor. II. 2. 30.
- Book**, *sb.* used of any document or writing. 1 H 4. III. 1. 224, 270.
- Bookman**, *sb.* a student. L. L. I. II. 1. 227.
- Bookmates**, *sb.* fellow-students. L. L. I. IV. 1. 102.
- Boot**, *sb.* booty, prey. H 5. I. 1. 104; 2 H 6. IV. 1. 13. Profit, advantage. 1 & C. IV. 1. 9. What is given over and above. W. T. IV. 4. 651, 660. R. 3. IV. 4. 65.
- Boot**, *v.t.* to put on boots. 2 H 1. V. 3. 140.
- Boot**, *v.t.* to give to boot or into the bargain. A. & C. II. 5. 71.
- Boot**, *v.t.* to avail. R. 2. III. 4. 184.
- Boot-hose**, *sb.* a stocking to be worn with boots. T. of B. III. 2. 68.
- Bootless**, *adj.* profitless. Tp. I. 2. 35.
- Bootless**, *adv.* to no purpose. M. N's Dr. II. 1. 37; J. C. III. 1. 75.
- Boots**, *sb.* Give me not the boots = put me not to the torture of the boots, which were used to extort confessions. Two G. I. 1. 27.
- Bore**, *sb.* the calibre of a gun; hence, metaphorically, the importance of a question. Ham. IV. 6. 26.
- Bore**, *v.t.* to cheat, gull. H 8. I. 2. 128.
- Bosky**, *adj.* shrubby, woody. Tp. IV. 1. 81.
- Bosom**, *sb.* used metaphorically as the seat of confidence. J. C. II. 1. 305; V. 1. 7; Lear. IV. 5. 26; M. N's Dr. I. 1. 216.
- Bosom up**, *v.t.* to lock up as in the bosom. H 8. I. 1. 112.
- Bosomed**, *adj.* intimate. Lear. V. 1. 13.
- Botcher**, *sb.* a patcher of old clothes. Tw. N. I. 5. 51; Cor. II. 1. 98.
- Bots**, *sb.* small worms in horses. 1 H 4. II. 7. 11.
- Bottled**, *adj.* bloated, swollen with venom. R. 3. I. 3. 242; IV. 4. 81.
- Bottom**, *v.t.* to wind as thread. Two G. III. 2. 53.
- Bottom**, *sb.* a deep dell or vale. As. IV. 3. 79; 1 H 4. III. 1. 105.
- Bottom-grass**, *sb.* grass growing in a deep valley. V. & A. 236.
- Bought and sold**. Deceived, tricked. C. of E. III. 1. 72; John. V. 4. 10.
- Bounden**, *p.p.* bound, obliged. As. I. 2. 196; John. III. 2. 29.
- Bourn**, *sb.* boundary. Tp. II. 1. 152; W. T. I. 2. 134; Ham. III. 1. 79. Brook. Lear. III. 6. 27.
- Bow**, *sb.* yoke. As. III. 3. 80.
- Bow-hand**, *sb.* the left hand, which holds the bow. L. L. I. IV. 1. 135.
- Boy**, *v.t.* to represent a woman's part, which in Shakespeare's time was done by boys. A. & C. V. 2. 220.
- Boy-queller**, *sb.* boy-killer. T. & C. V. 5. 45.
- Brabble**, *sb.* quarrel, brawl. Tw. N. V. 1. 68.
- Brabbler**, *sb.* brawler, quarreller. John. V. 2. 162.
- Drace**, *sb.* armour to protect the arm. Per. II. 1. 133. State of defence. Oth. I. 3. 24.
- Brach**, *sb.* a bitch hound. 1 H 4. III. 2. 240; Lear. I. 4. 125.



- T. & C. v. 9. 5.*  
**Braid**, *adj.* deceitful. A. W. IV. 2. 73.  
**Braid**, *v.t.* to reproach, upbraid. Per. I. 1. 93.  
**Brainish**, *adj.* engendered in the brain. Ham. IV. 1. 11.  
**Brain-pan**, *sb.* the skull. H. 6. IV. 10. 13.  
**Brain-sick**, *adj.* distempered in brain, mad. H. 6. IV. 1. 111; T. & C. II. 2. 122.  
**Brain-sickly**, *adv.* madly. Mac. II. 2. 45.  
**Brake**, *sb.* a thicket. M. N's Dr. II. 1. 227; H. 8. I. 2. 75; V. & A. 237, 276.  
**Brave**, *adj.* fine, splendid. Tp. I. 2. 6, 411; Ham. II. 2. 312.  
**Brave**, *sb.* a boast, defiance. John. V. 2. 159; T. & C. IV. 4. 139.  
**Brave**, *v.t.* to make an ostentatious display. R. 2. II. 3. 112, 143. *v.t.* to defy. John. IV. 2. 243; V. 1. 70; R. 3. IV. 3. 57. To make brave or fine. R. 3. V. 3. 279.  
**Bravery**, *sb.* finery. As. II. 7. 80; T. of S. IV. 3. 57. Bravado, ostentatious display. J. C. V. 1. 10; Oth. I. 1. 100; Ham. V. 2. 79.  
**Brawl**, *sb.* a French dance. L. L. L. III. 1. 9.  
**Brawn**, *sb.* a boar. H. 4. II. 4. 123; H. 4. I. 1. 19. The muscular part of the arm. Cor. IV. 5. 126; T. & C. I. 3. 297.  
**Break cross or across**, a term in tilting to denote that the staff or shaft of the spear was not broken fairly by a blow in the direction of its length. M. A. V. 1. 139; A. W. II. 1. 70. See As. III. 4. 45.  
**Break**, *v.t.* to communicate. J. C. II. 1. 150. *v.t.* Mac. I. 7. 48; A. & C. I. 2. 184.  
**Break**, *v.t.* to fail to keep. Two G. v. 1. 4; M. of V. I. 3. 165.  
**Break up**, to carve; hence, to open a letter. L. L. L. IV. 1. 56; M. of V. II. 4. 10.  
**Breast**, *sb.* voice in singing. Tw. N. II. 3. 20.  
**Breath**, *sb.* gentle exercise. T. & C. II. 3. 121; IV. 5. 92.  
**Breatha**, *v.t.* to allow to take breath. H. 4. I. 1. 38. *v.t.* to take breath. H. 4. I. 3. 110. *v.r.* to give oneself exercise. A. W. II. 3. 271.  
**Breathed**, *p.p.* in good condition, trained. T. of S. Ind. II. 50; L. L. L. V. 2. 659; Tim. I. 1. 10.  
**Breathing**, *sb.* exercise. A. W. I. 2. 17; Per. II. 3. 101. Breathing time=time for exercise. Ham. V. 2. 181. Hence, rest from labour, delay. M. A. II. 1. 377; Lucr. 1720.  
**Breach'd**, covered as with breaches. Mac. II. 3. 120.  
**Breeching**, *adj.* liable to be breeched or flogged. T. of S. III. 1. 18.  
**Breed-bate**, *sb.* a raiser of strife. M. W. I. 4. 12.  
**Breese**, *sb.* the gadfly. T. & C. I. 3. 48; A. & C. III. 10. 14.  
**Brewage**, *sb.* liquor brewed. M. W. III. 5. 33.  
**Bribe-buck**, *sb.* a buck given away in presents. M. W. V. 3. 27.  
**Brief**, *sb.* a short summary. M. N's Dr. v. 1. 42; John. II. 1. 103.  
**Brief**, *adv.* in brief. As. IV. 3. 151; John. V. 6. 18.  
**Briefly**, *adv.* a short time since. Cor. I. 6. 16.  
**Bring**, *v.t.* to accompany, attend on a journey. M. for M. I. 2. 46; H. 5. II. 3. 2.
- Bring out**, to put out, disconcert. L. L. L. V. 2. 172.  
**Bring, to**. To be with a person to bring is to be with him to some purpose, which is vaguely hinted at. T. & C. I. 2. 305.  
**Broach**, *v.t.* to spit, transfix. H. 5. V. Prol. 32; T. A. IV. 2. 85.  
**Brock**, *sb.* a badger. Tw. N. II. 5. 114.  
**Brogues**, *sb.* thick shoes. Cym. IV. 2. 214.  
**Broll**, *sb.* tumult, strife. Oth. I. 3. 87.  
**Broke**, *v.t.* to negotiate, act as a go-between. A. W. III. 5. 74. Broking pawn=security held by a broker or agent. R. 2. II. 1. 293.  
**Broken**, of a mouth in which there are gaps in the teeth. A. W. II. 3. 66.  
**Broken music**. Some instruments, such as viols, violins, flutes, &c., were formerly made in sets of four, which when played together formed a 'consort.' If one or more of the instruments of one set were substituted for the corresponding ones of another set the result was no longer a 'consort' but 'broken music.' As. I. 2. 150; H. 5. V. 2. 263.  
**Broker**, *sb.* an agent, go-between. John. II. 2. 568; H. 6. IV. 1. 63; Ham. I. 3. 127.  
**Broker-between**, *sb.* a go-between, procurer. T. & C. III. 2. 211.  
**Brooch**, *sb.* ornament. R. 2. v. 5. 66; Ham. IV. 7. 94.  
**Brooch'd**, *p.p.* adorned as with a brooch. A. & C. IV. 15. 25.  
**Brooded**, *adj.* sitting on brood. John. III. 3. 32.  
**Brotherhood**, *sb.* a trading company or guild. T. & C. I. 3. 104.  
**Brownist**, *sb.* a follower of Robert Brown, who about the year 1581 founded the sect of Independents. Tw. N. III. 2. 34.  
**Bruit**, *sb.* rumour, report. H. 6. IV. 7. 64; T. & C. v. 9. 4.  
**Bruit**, *v.t.* to report, announce with noise. Mac. V. 7. 22; Ham. I. 2. 127.  
**Brush**, *sb.* a rude assault. H. 6. v. 3. 3; T. & C. v. 3. 34.  
**Bubukles**, *sb.* pimples. H. 5. III. 6. 108.  
**Buck**, *sb.* linen at the wash. H. 6. IV. 2. 51.  
**Buck of the first head**, a buck of the fifth year. L. L. L. IV. 2. 10.  
**Buckbasket**, *sb.* a basket for carrying linen to the wash. M. W. III. 3. 2, &c.  
**Bucking**, *sb.* washing. M. W. III. 3. 140.  
**Buckle**, *v.t.* to bow. H. 4. I. 1. 141. To encounter closely, cope. H. 6. I. 2. 95; IV. 4. 3.  
**Buckler**, *v.t.* to shield, protect. T. of S. III. 2. 241; H. 6. III. 3. 92.  
**Bucklers**, to give the bucklers as an acknowledgement of defeat. M. A. v. 2. 27.  
**Buck-washing**, *sb.* the washing of linen, washer-woman's work. M. W. III. 3. 166.  
**Budget**, *sb.* a leather bag or pouch. W. T. IV. 3. 20.  
**Bug**, *sb.* a bugbear, spectre. T. of S. I. 2. 211; W. T. III. 2. 91; Ham. V. 2. 22.  
**Building**, *sb.* build, frame. Sonn. LXXX. 12.  
**Bulk**, *sb.* the projecting part of a shop on which goods were exposed for sale. Cor. II. 2. 266; Oth. V. 1. 2.  
**Bully**, *sb.* a fine swaggering fellow. M. W. I. 3. 8; M. N's Dr. III. 1. 8; H. 5. IV. 1. 42.

**Bully-rook**, *sb.* a swaggering chieftain. *M. W.* I. 3. 2; II. 1. 200.

**Bung**, *sb.* a pickpocket. *H. 4. II. 4. 136.*

**Burgonet**, *sb.* a close-fitting helmet, first used by the Burgundians. *H. 6. V. 1. 200; A. & C. I. 3. 84.*

**Burst**, *p.p.* broken. *T. of S. Ind. I. 8.*

**Bush**, *sb.* A bush of ivy was formerly the sign of a vintner. *As. Epl. 4. 6.*

**Busky**, *adj.* woody. *H. 4. V. 1. 2.*

**Buss**, *sb.* a coarse and wanton kiss. *H. 4. II. 4. 292.*

**Buss**, *v.t.* to kiss. *John. III. 4. 35.*

**But**, *prep.* except. *H. 4. V. 3. 93; H. 6. II. 2. 82.*

**Butt**, *sb.* a tub; used contemptuously of a vessel. *Sp. L. 2. 146.*

**Buttery-bar**, *sb.* the buttery-hatch, or half door in the buttery, where beer is served out from the cellar. *Tw. N. I. 3. 74.*

**Buttons**, *sb.* buds. *Ham. I. 3. 40.*

**Butt-shaft**, *sb.* a blunt arrow, used for shooting at butts. *L. L. L. 1. 2. 181; R. & J. II. 4. 16.*

**Buxom**, *adj.* obedient, complaisant. *H. 5. III. 6. 27; Per. Prob. 23.*

**Buz**, *buz!* a contemptuous interjection. *Ham. II. 2. 412.*

**By**, *prep.* with reference to. *M. of V. II. 9. 26; A. W. V. 3. 237; L. L. L. IV. 3. 150.*

**By-drinkings**, *sb.* drinkings between meals. *H. 4. III. 3. 84.*

**By-peep**, *v.t.* to peep silly. *Cym. I. 6. 108.*

**By'r lady**, by our Lady. *M. W. I. 1. 28; Ham. II. 2. 445; III. 2. 140; R. 3. II. 3. 4.*

**By'r lakin**, by our little lady; a grotesque appeal to the Virgin. *Tw. III. 3. 1; M. N. Dr. III. 1. 14.*

**Caddis**, *sb.* worsted lace or trimming. *W. T. IV. 4. 208; H. 4. II. 4. 79.*

**Cade**, *sb.* a cask or barrel. *H. 6. IV. 2. 36.*

**Cadent**, *adj.* falling. *Lear. I. 4. 307.*

**Cage**, *sb.* a temporary prison, lock-up. *H. 6. IV. 2. 56.*

**Cain-coloured**, *adj.* red, of the colour of Cain's hair. *M. W. I. 4. 23.*

**Caitiff**, *sb.* a captive, slave; hence, a wretch. *A. W. III. 2. 117; R. 3. IV. 4. 100.* Used adjectively. *R. 2. I. 2. 33; R. & J. V. 7. 52.*

**Cake**. My cake is dough= my plans are frustrated. *T. of S. v. 1. 145.*

**Calculate**, *v.t.* to speculate upon the future. *J. C. I. 3. 65.*

**Caltiver**, *sb.* musket. *H. 4. IV. 2. 21; H. 4. III. 2. 202.*

**Call**, *sb.* a whistle by which birds are lured. *T. of S. IV. 5. 197; John. III. 4. 174.*

**Call**, *sb.* a trull. *W. T. II. 3. 90; Oth. IV. 2. 222.*

**Calling**, *sb.* appellation. *As. L. 2. 245.*

**Callin**, *sb.* guinea. *H. 4. II. 4. 40.*

**Cambyzes**, *retn.* A reference to Thomas Panton's play of Cambyzes. *H. 4. II. 4. 100.*

**Can**, *sb.* to be able, skilful. *Ham. IV. 7. 85. I can do no more—I can do no more.* *Ham. V. 2. 332.*

**Can**=gan=began. *L. L. L. IV. 5. 106; Per. III. Prob. 36.*

**Canakin**, *sb.* a little can. *Oth. II. 3. 71, 72.*

**Canary**, *sb.* a strong sweet wine from the Canary Islands. *Tw. N. I. 3. 85; M. W. III. 2. 89.*

**Canary**, *v.t.* to dance. *A. W. II. 1. 77.*

**Canary**, *v.t.* to dance canary. *L. L. L. III. 2. 12.*

**Canary**=quandary. *M. W. II. 2. 61, 64.*

**Candied**, *p.p.* sugared over. *Ham. III. 2. 65.*

**Frosen**, white with froak. *Tw. II. 2. 279; Tim. IV. 3. 226.*

**Candle-mine**, *sb.* a magazine of tallow. *H. 4. II. 4. 326.*

**Candle-wasters**, *sb.* persons who sit long into the night to study, book-worms. *M. A. V. 1. 28.*

**Candy**, *adj.* sugared. *H. 4. I. 3. 251.*

**Canker**, *sb.* the dog-rose or wild-rose. *M. A. I. 3. 28; H. 4. I. 3. 176.* A worm that destroys blossoms. *M. N. Dr. II. 2. 3; Ham. I. 3. 39.*

**Canker-bit**, *adj.* worm-eaten. *Lear. V. 3. 122.*

**Canker-bloom**, *sb.* the wild-rose. *Sonn. LVI. 5.*

**Canker-blossom**, *sb.* the worm which devours the blossoms. *M. N. Dr. III. 2. 28.*

**Canopy**, *v.t.* to cover as with a canopy. *Sonn. XII. 6; Tw. N. I. 1. 41.*

**Canstick**, *sb.* candlestick. *H. 4. III. 2. 131.*

**Cantle**, *sb.* a piece, slice. *H. 4. III. 2. 100; A. & C. III. 10. 6.*

**Canton**, *sb.* canto. *Tw. N. I. 5. 289.*

**Canvass**, *v.t.* to shake and toss as in a sieve, to take to task. *H. 4. II. 4. 243; H. 6. I. 3. 36.*

**Canzonet**, *sb.* a little song. *L. L. L. IV. 3. 124.*

**Capable**, *adj.* comprehensive. *Oth. III. 3. 459.*

**Sensible**. *As. III. 5. 23.* Sensitive, susceptible. *Ham. III. 4. 127; T. & C. III. 3. 310; John. III. 1. 12.* Able to possess. *Lear. II. 1. 87.*

**Capitalate**, *v.t.* to make terms of agreement, combine. *H. 4. III. 2. 100; Cor. V. 3. 82.*

**Capocchia**, *sb.* the feminine of Capocchio (Ital.), simpleton, a fool. *T. & C. IV. 2. 33.*

**Capriccio**, *sb.* caprice, fancy. *A. W. II. 3. 310.*

**Capricious**, *adj.* humorous, fantastical; with a pun on *Lat. capra*, a goat. *As. III. 3. 8.*

**Captain**, *adj.* chief, prominent. *Sonn. LII. 8; LXVI. 12.*

**Captious**, *adj.* either a contraction of 'capacious' or an invented word signifying capable of receiving. *A. W. I. 3. 208.*

**Captivate**, *v.t.* to take captive. *H. 6. I. 4. 115.*

**Captived**, *p.p.* taken captive. *H. 5. II. 4. 55.*

**Carack**, *sb.* a merchant vessel of large burden. *C. of E. III. 2. 140; Oth. I. 2. 30.*

**Caraways**, *sb.* comfits made with caraway seeds. *H. 4. V. 3. 3.* Roasted apples sprinkled with caraways. *Audit Fe.*

**Carbonado**, *sb.*

*V. 3. 61; Cor. IV. 5. 199.*

**Carbonado**, *v.t.* to slash, hack. *A. W. IV. 5. 107; Lear. II. 2. 41.*

**Carcenet**, *sb.* a necklace. *C. of E. III. 2. 7; Sonn. LII. 8.*

**Card**, *sb.* a chart, map. *Mac. I. 3. 17; Ham. V. 1. 149.* A cooling card, whatever be the origin of the expression, denotes a decisive stroke or move. *H. 4. V. 3. 34.* It is

- thought to be a cooling mixture, from 'card' to mix. If derived from the game of cards it is difficult to say what 'cooling' means.
- Card, *v.t.* to mix; used of liquids. *H. 4. III. 2. 62.*
- Card of ten, *sb.* a card with ten spots or pips. *T. of S. II. 1. 407.*
- Cardinally. A blunder for 'carnally.' *M. for M. II. 1. 81.*
- Card-maker, *sb.* one who makes cards for wool combing. *T. of S. Ind. II. 20.*
- Care, *v.t.* to take care. *Per. I. 2. 15.*
- Career, *sb.* a course run at full speed. *L. L. L. V. 2. 482; M. A. V. 1. 135.* To pass a career is to run a course at full speed. 'Conclusions passed the careers' may mean, if it have any meaning, the end came very swiftly. *M. W. L. 2. 184.* In *H. 5. II. 1. 132.* 'passes careers' is, perhaps, indulges in sallies of wit.
- Careful, *adj.* is not careful = does not care. *T. A. IV. 4. 84.*
- Carl, *sb.* peasant, rustic. *Cym. v. 2. 4.*
- Carlot, *sb.* peasant. *As. III. 5. 108.*
- Carnal, *adj.* flesh-devouring, cruel. *R. 3. IV. 4. 56.*
- Sensual. *Ham. V. 2. 302; Oth. I. 3. 335.*
- Carpet consideration, *on.* Of knights who were dubbed for some domestic service at court and not in the field of battle. *Tw. N. III. 4. 258.*
- Carpets, *sb.* table-cloths. *T. of S. IV. 1. 52.*
- Carpet-mongers, *sb.* carpet knights, effeminate courtiers who were more at home on carpets than on the field of battle. *M. A. V. 2. 32.*
- Carry coals, to perform a degrading service, submit to an indignity. *H. 5. III. 2. 50; R. & J. 1. 1. 2.*
- Carry-tale, *sb.* a talebearer. *L. L. L. V. 2. 463; V. & A. 657.*
- Carry out a side, a phrase at cards, to play the game successfully. *Lear. v. 1. 61.*
- Cart, *sb.* chariot. *Ham. III. 2. 165.*
- Carve, *v.t.* to use a complimentary gesture in carving. *M. W. L. 1. 3. 40; L. L. L. V. 2. 323.*
- Case, *v.t.* to strip off the case or skin of an animal. *A. W. III. 6. 111.* To put on a mask. *H. 4. II. 2. 55.*
- Case, *sb.* the skin of an animal. *Tw. N. v. 1. 168.*
- Case, *sb.* a set, as of musical instruments, which were in four. *H. 5. III. 2. 5.*
- Cashiered, *p.p.* properly, discarded. In Bar-dolph's language it probably means relieved of his cash. *M. W. L. 1. 184.*
- Cask, *sb.* casket. *H. 6. III. 2. 400.*
- Casque, *sb.* a helmet. *R. 2. I. 3. 81; Cor. IV. 7. 43.*
- Cassock, *sb.* a military cloak. *A. W. IV. 3. 192.*
- Cast, *v.t.* to dismiss. *Oth. I. 1. 150; II. 3. 14; V. 2. 257.* To empty. *M. for M. III. 1. 93.* To cast the water is to ascertain a disease by an inspection of the patient's water. *Mac. v. 3. 50.*
- Cast, *adv.* cast off. *As. III. 4. 16.*
- Cartaway, *sb.* an outcast. *R. 3. II. 2. 6; T. A. V. 3. 75; Lear. 744.*
- Castillano vulgo, Spanish of Sir Toby's invention, which has no meaning and was intended to have none. *Tw. N. L. 3. 45.*
- Cat, *sb.* the civet cat. *As. III. 2. 70; Lear. III. 4. 109.*
- Javaian, *sb.* a native of Cathay, a Chinese; a cant term. *M. W. II. 1. 148; Tw. N. II. 3. 50.*
- Later-cousins, *sb.* good friends; derived from *quatre cousins*, but without any authority. *M. of V. II. 4. 139.*
- Jattings, *sb.* fiddle-strings, made of catgut. *T. & Cl. III. 2. 305.*
- Cat o'mountain, *sb.* a wild cat; probably any ounce or small variety of leopard. *Tw. IV. 2. 262; M. W. II. 2. 27.*
- Jause, *conj.* because. *Mac. III. 6. 21.*
- Jautel, *sb.* deceit, stratagem. *Ham. I. 3. 15; Comp. 303.*
- Jautelous, *adj.* crafty, deceitful. *J. C. II. 1. 120; Cor. IV. 1. 35.*
- Cavalero, cavalier. *M. W. II. 3. 77; H. 4. V. 3. 62.*
- Javiere, *sb.* the roe of the sturgeon. *Ham. II. 2. 457.*
- Cease, *sb.* decess, extinction. *Ham. III. 3. 15.*
- Ceased, *p.p.* put off, stopped. *Tim. II. 1. 25.*
- Censer, *sb.* the censers or firepans which were used for burning perfumes had their lids embossed with figures in slight relief, to which the beadle is compared. *H. 4. V. 4. 21.*
- Censure, *sb.* opinion, judgement. *As. IV. 2. 9; H. 6. II. 3. 10; R. 3. II. 2. 144.*
- Censure, *v.t.* to judge, estimate. *M. A. III. 3. 231; John. II. 1. 328.* To pass judgement. *Two G. I. 2. 10.*
- Century, *sb.* a hundred. *Cym. IV. 2. 392.* A company of a hundred men. *Cor. I. 7. 3; Lear. IV. 4. 6.*
- Cerectio, *sb.* waxed linen, used for shrouds. *M. of V. II. 7. 51.*
- Cerements = cerectio. *Ham. I. 4. 48.*
- Ceremonies, *sb.* external adornments. *J. C. I. 1. 70.*
- Cerns, concerns. *T. of S. v. 1. 77.*
- Certainty, *sb.* assurance. *A. W. II. 2. 170; III. 6. 81.*
- Certes, *adv.* certainly. *Tw. III. 3. 50; Oth. I. 2. 16.*
- Cess, reckoning. Out of all cess = immediately. *H. 4. II. 1. 8.*
- Cesse = cease. *A. W. v. 3. 72.*
- Chace, *sb.* a term at tennis. *H. 5. I. 2. 266.*
- Chafe, *sb.* anger. *A. & C. I. 3. 82.* *v.t.* to make angry. *Two G. III. 1. 231; Cor. III. 3. 27.* *v.t.* to fret, fume. *M. W. v. 3. 9; Mac. IV. 1. 91.*
- Chair-days, *sb.* time of repose. *H. 6. v. 2. 48.*
- Chairs of order, the seats of the knights in St. George's Chapel, Windsor. *M. W. v. 3. 69.*
- Chaliced, *adj.* cup-shaped. *Cym. II. 3. 24.*
- Challenge, *v.t.* to claim as due. *R. 2. II. 3. 134; Oth. I. 3. 128.* To accuse. *Mac. III. 4. 51.*
- Challenger, *sb.* claimant. *H. 5. II. 4. 93; Ham. IV. 7. 24.*
- Chamber, *sb.* a rendering of the title *camere regie* which was given to London. *R. 3. III. 1. 1.*
- Chambers, *sb.* small chambers fired on festival occasions. *H. 4. II. 4. 37.*
- Chamberer, *sb.* an ecclesiastic man. *Oth. III. 1. 265.*
- Champaign, *sb.* open country. *Lear. 1. 2. 63; Tw. N. II. 5. 173.*

- Champion**, *v.t.* to engage in single combat. *Mac.* III. 1. 72.
- Changeable**, *adj.* of varying colour, like shot silk. *Tw.* N. II. 4. 76.
- Changeful**, *adj.* changeable. *T. & C.* IV. 4. 99.
- Channel**, *sb.* a gutter. *H. 4.* II. 1. 52.
- Channel**, *v.t.* to furrow. *H. 4.* I. 1. 7.
- Chanson**, *sb.* a song. *Ham.* II. 2. 438.
- Chanticleer**, *sb.* the cock. *TP.* I. 2. 385; *As.* II. 7. 32.
- Chape**, *sb.* the metal end of a scabbard. *A. W.* IV. 3. 164.
- Chapeless**, *adj.* without a chape, or metal end to the scabbard. *T. of S.* III. 2. 48.
- Chapless**, *adj.* without a jaw. *R. & J.* IV. 1. 83; *Ham.* V. 1. 97.
- Chapman**, *sb.* a merchant. *L. L. L.* II. 1. 16; *T. & C.* IV. 1. 75.
- Chaps**, *sb.* jaws. *Mac.* I. 2. 22; *John.* II. 1. 352.
- Character**, *sb.* a special mark or sign of office. *M. for M.* V. 1. 54.
- Character**, *sb.* handwriting. *Ham.* IV. 7. 53; *Lear.* I. 2. 66.
- Character**, *v.t.* to write, inscribe. *As.* III. 2. 6; *Ham.* I. 3. 59.
- Charactery**, *sb.* written characters. *M. W.* V. 5. 77; *J. C.* II. 1. 308.
- Chare**, *sb.* a turn of work. *A. & C.* IV. 15. 75; *V. 2.* 231.
- Charge**, *sb.* weight, importance. *W. T.* IV. 4. 261. Cost, expense. *John.* I. 1. 49; *J. C.* IV. 1. 9.
- Charges**, *sb.* to be at charges for = to be at the expense of. *R. 3.* I. 2. 256.
- Chargeful**, *adj.* expensive. *C. of E.* IV. 1. 29.
- Charge-house**, *sb.* a school-house. *L. L. L.* V. 1. 87. The origin of the term is not known.
- Chariest**, *adj.* most careful and scrupulous. *Ham.* I. 3. 36.
- Chariness**, *sb.* scrupulousness. *M. W.* II. 1. 102.
- Charles** wain, *sb.* the Great Bear. *H. 4.* II. 1. 2.
- Charm**, *v.t.* to produce as by enchantment. *M. N's Dr.* IV. 1. 88. To still, bring to silence. *M. A.* V. 1. 26; *Oth.* V. 2. 183.
- Charm**, *sb.* charmer. *A. & C.* IV. 12. 16, 25.
- Charmer**, *sb.* an enchantress. *Oth.* III. 4. 57.
- Charming**, *adj.* capable of producing fascination. *H. 4.* V. 3. 2; *Cym.* I. 3. 35; *V.* 3. 32.
- Charneco**, *sb.* a kind of wine, perhaps so named from Charneca, a village in Portugal. *H. 6.* II. 3. 63.
- Chary**, *adv.* carefully. *Sonn.* XXII. 11.
- Chat**, *v.t.* to gossip about. *Cor.* II. 1. 224.
- Chaudron**, *sb.* entrails. *Mac.* IV. 1. 33.
- Cheapan**, *v.t.* to bid for. *M. A.* II. 3. 33.
- Cheat**, *sb.* fraud. *W. T.* IV. 3. 28, 129.
- Cheater**, *sb.* an escheator or officer who collected fines due to the Exchequer. *M. W.* I. 3. 77. A swindler, rogue. *H. 4.* II. 4. 106, 111, 152. In the phrase 'game cheater' there is clearly a reference to the chetah or hunting leopard.
- Check**, *v.t.* to start, stop at the sight of game. *Tw.* N. II. 5. 125; *III.* 1. 71.
- Check**, *v.t.* to rebuke, chide. *J. C.* IV. 3. 97; *Lear.* II. 2. 249.
- Check**, *sb.* rebuke, reproof. *M. W.* III. 4. 84; *T. of S.* I. 1. 32.
- Cheer**, *sb.* countenance, aspect. *M. N's Dr.* III. 2. 96; *M. of V.* III. 2. 314. Cheerfulness. *R. 3.* V. 3. 74; *Ham.* III. 2. 174. Entertainment. *Ham.* III. 2. 229.
- Cheerly**, *adv.* cheerfully. *As.* II. 6. 14; *R. 2.* I. 3. 66.
- Cherry-pit**, *sb.* a childish game, in which cherry stones were pitched into a small hole. *Tw.* N. III. 4. 129.
- Cherubin**, *sb.* a cherub. *TP.* I. 2. 152; *Mac.* I. 7. 22.
- Cheveril**, *sb.* leather of kid skin. *R. & J.* II. 4. 87. Used as an adjective. *Tw.* N. III. 2. 13; *H. 8.* II. 3. 32.
- Che vor ye, I warn ye.** *Lear.* IV. 6. 246.
- Chew**, *v.t.* to ruminate. *J. C.* I. 2. 171.
- Chewet**, *sb.* a chough. *H. 4.* V. 1. 29. There may also be a reference to the other meaning of chewet or chuet, which is a pie of minced meat.
- Chide**, *v.t.* to scold, rebuke. *TP.* I. 2. 476; *M. N's Dr.* III. 2. 200. Used figuratively. *H. 4.* III. 1. 45; *H. 5.* II. 4. 125. *v.t.* to quarrel. *V. & A.* 46. Hence to cry out in a loud tone, resound. *T. & C.* I. 3. 54; *H. 8.* III. 2. 197.
- Chiding**, *sb.* used of a loud cry or noise. *M. N's Dr.* IV. 1. 120; *As.* II. 1. 7.
- Child-changed**, changed by his children's conduct. *Lear.* IV. 7. 17.
- Childed**, *p.p.* having children. *Lear.* III. 6. 117.
- Childing**, *adj.* fruitful. *M. N's Dr.* II. 1. 112.
- Childness**, *sb.* childish ways. *W. T.* I. 2. 170.
- Chill**, *I will.* *Lear.* IV. 6. 239, 247, 250.
- Chirurgically**, *adv.* in a surgeon-like manner. *TP.* II. 1. 140.
- Choler**, *sb.* anger. *M. W.* II. 3. 89; *R. 2.* I. 1. 153; *Ham.* III. 2. 315.
- Chop**, *v.t.* to clap, pop. *R. 3.* I. 4. 162.
- Chopine**, *sb.* a shoe with a high sole. *Ham.* II. 2. 447.
- Chopping**, *adj.* changing; as putting one word for another. *R. 2.* V. 3. 124. Or, mincing.
- Chough**, *sb.* the jackdaw. *TP.* II. 2. 266; *M. N's Dr.* III. 2. 21.
- Christendom**, *sb.* Christianity. *John.* IV. 1. 16.
- Christian name**, appellation. *A. W.* I. 1. 188.
- Christom**, *adj.* a corruption of chrisom, the white cloth which was put upon a child at baptism. A chrisom child was one which died within a month of its birth. *H. 5.* II. 3. 12.
- Chuck**, *sb.* chick, a term of endearment. *Tw.* N. III. 4. 126; *Mac.* III. 2. 45.
- Chud**, *I would.* *Lear.* IV. 6. 243.
- Chuff**, *sb.* a churl, boor. *H. 4.* II. 2. 94. Cotgrave has 'Marrouffe...a rich churle, or fat chuffe.'
- Churchman**, *sb.* an ecclesiastic. *M. W.* II. 3. 49, 57; *Tw.* N. III. 1. 2.
- Churl**, *sb.* a niggard, miser. *R. & J.* V. 3. 163; *Sonn.* I. 72.
- Churlish**, *adj.* niggardly. *As.* II. 4. 80.
- Cleatrice**, *sb.* a scar. *A. W.* II. 1. 43; *Cor.* II. 1. 164; *As.* III. 5. 23.
- Cleaster**, *Cirencester.* *R. 2.* V. 6. 3. The old spelling is Clester.
- Cide**, *v.t.* to decide. *Sonn.* XLVI. 9.



- whose eye was deadly. Tw. N. III. 4. 215; R. 3. IV. 1. 55.
- Cockered, *p.p.* pampered. John. V. 1. 70.
- Cockle, *sb.* corncockle, the *Agrostemma githago* of botanists. L. L. I. IV. 3. 383; Cor. III. 1. 70. Not the same as dandel.
- Cockle, *sb.* a cockle shell. Tam. of S. IV. 3. 66; Per. IV. 4. 2. Used adjectively. Ham. IV. 5. 95.
- Cockled, *adj.* inclosed in a shell. L. L. I. IV. 3. 338.
- Cockney, *sb.* a city-bred person, a foolish wanton. Tw. N. IV. 1. 15; Lear, II. 4. 123.
- Cock-shut time, twilight; when the net called a cock-shut is spread for catching birds. R. 3. V. 3. 70.
- Cod, *sb.* a pod. As. II. 4. 53.
- Coddling, *adj.* lascivious. T. A. V. 1. 99.
- Coffin, *sb.* the crust of a raised pie. T. A. V. 2. 189.
- Cog, *v.t.* to cheat. R. 3. L. 3. 48. *v.t.* to get by cheating. Cor. III. 2. 133.
- Cognizance, *sb.* a badge. 1 H. 6. II. 4. 108; J. C. II. 2. 89.
- Coign, *sb.* a corner-stone. Mac. I. 6. 7; Cor. V. 4. 2.
- Coil, *sb.* turmoil, confusion. Tp. I. 2. 207; John. II. 1. 165. With a reference to the other meaning of the word. Ham. III. 1. 67.
- Collegued, *p.p.* leagued. Ham. I. 2. 21.
- Collect, *v.t.* to gather, infer. 1 H. 6. III. 1. 35.
- Collection, *sb.* inference, conclusion. Ham. IV. 5. 9; V. 2. 199; Cym. V. 3. 432.
- Collied, *p.p.* blackened, darkened. M. N's Dr. I. 1. 145; Oth. II. 3. 206.
- Collup, *sb.* a slice of flesh. W. T. I. 2. 137; 1 H. 6. V. 4. 18.
- Coloquintida, *sb.* colocynth. Oth. I. 3. 355.
- Colour, *sb.* pretext. Lear. 267; A. & C. I. 3. 32. Bear no colour = allow of no excuse. J. C. II. 1. 29. To fear no colours = to fear no enemy; hence to be afraid of nothing. Tw. N. L. 3. 6; 2 H. 4. V. 3. 94.
- Colourable, *adj.* specious, plausible. L. L. I. IV. 2. 156.
- Colt, *sb.* a raw, untrained youth. M. of V. I. 2. 44.
- Colt, *v.t.* to play the fool with, pull. 1 H. 4. II. 2. 39.
- Comblinate, *adj.* betrothed, contracted. M. for M. III. 1. 231.
- Combine, *v.t.* to bind. M. for M. IV. 3. 249; As. V. 4. 156.
- Combustions, *adj.* combustible. V. & A. 1762.
- Come by, to get, acquire. Tp. II. 1. 290; M. of V. 2. 2. 3.
- Come near, to come to the point, speak plainly. Tw. N. II. 5. 29; 1 H. 4. L. 2. 14; R. & J. I. 5. 22.
- Come off, to come down with money, pay. M. W. IV. 3. 73. Come tardy off = uttered with hesitation. Ham. III. 2. 28.
- Comit, *sb.* commit. M. A. IV. 1. 318.
- Comitable, *adj.* helpful. A. W. I. 1. 36; Lear. 264. Cheerful. As. II. 6. 9; Cor. I. 3. 2.
- Conceding, *p.p.* strengthening, assisting. Lear. III. 2. 21; W. T. II. 3. 50.
- Coming-in, *sb.* income. M. of V. II. 2. 171; H. 3. IV. 2. 260.
- Conciding-on, *adj.* compliant. As. IV. 1. 113.
- Comma, used apparently to denote the smallest possible break or separation. Ham. V. 2. 42.
- Commandment, *sb.* command. Cor. II. 3. 238; John. IV. 3. 92. At commandment = at pleasure. 1 H. 4. III. 2. 27.
- Commence, *v.t.* to make a beginning upon. 1 H. 4. IV. 3. 125. A graduate at Cambridge was said to 'commence' B.A. or M.A. when he began to enjoy the full privileges of his degree.
- Commend, *v.t.* to commit, deliver. L. L. I. III. 1. 169; Lear, II. 4. 28.
- Comment, *sb.* power of observation. Ham. III. 2. 84.
- Commingled, *p.p.* mingled, tempered. Ham. III. 2. 74.
- Commission, *sb.* warrant, authority. R. & J. IV. 1. 64.
- Commit, *v.t.* to indulge unlawful love. Lear, III. 4. 83.
- Commix, *v.t.* & *i.* to mingle. Comp. 22; Cym. IV. 2. 55.
- Commixion, *sb.* mixture. T. & C. IV. 5. 124.
- Commixture, *sb.* mixture, composition. L. L. I. V. 2. 206; 1 H. 6. II. 2. 6.
- Commodity, *sb.* interest, advantage. John. II. 1. 573; M. of V. III. 3. 27. Cargo of merchandise. M. for M. IV. 3. 5; Tw. N. III. 1. 50.
- Commoner, *sb.* a prostitute. A. W. V. 3. 194; Oth. IV. 2. 73.
- Community, *sb.* common use, familiarity. 1 H. 4. III. 2. 77.
- Communal, *adv.* mutually. Ham. III. 2. 170.
- Comonty, Sly's version of comedy. T. of S. Ind. II. 140.
- Compact, *adj.* composed. M. N's Dr. V. 1. 8; As. II. 7. 5. Confederate. M. for M. V. 1. 242; Lear, II. 2. 125.
- Companion, *sb.* fellow; used contemptuously. M. W. III. 1. 123; M. N's Dr. I. 1. 15.
- Company, *sb.* companion. A. W. IV. 3. 37; M. N's Dr. I. 1. 219; H. 5. I. 2. 55.
- Comparative, *adj.* fertile in comparisons. 1 H. 4. I. 2. 90.
- Comparative, *sb.* a rival in wit. 1 H. 4. III. 2. 67.
- Compare, *sb.* comparison. Tw. N. II. 4. 204; T. & C. III. 2. 182.
- Compassed, *adj.* arched, round. V. & A. 1772; T. of S. IV. 3. 140; T. & C. I. 2. 120.
- Compassion, *v.t.* to pity. T. A. IV. 1. 124.
- Compassionate, *adj.* moving compassion, indulging in lamentation. R. 2. I. 3. 174.
- Compeer, *v.t.* to equal. Lear, V. 3. 60.
- Competitor, *sb.* a confederate. Tw. N. IV. 3. 12; R. 3. IV. 4. 506.
- Complain, *v.t.* to utter complainingly. Lear. 1829; R. 2. III. 4. 18.
- Complain of, To complain of good breeding is to lament the want of it. As. III. 2. 37.
- Complement, *sb.* outward demeanour. H. 5. II. 2. 134.
- Complemental, *adj.* courteous. T. & C. III. 1. 42.
- Complexion, *sb.* temperament. Ham. I. 4. 57.
- Complices, *sb.* accomplices, confederates. R. 2. II. 3. 165; 1 H. 4. I. 2. 165.
- Complot, *sb.* plot. 1 H. 4. III. 1. 127; R. 3. III. 1. 192.

- Comply, *v.t.* to use ceremony. *Ham.* II. 2. 390; *V.* 2. 195.
- Compose, *v.t.* to come to agreement. *A. & C.* II. 2. 15.
- Composition, *sb.* agreement, consistency. *Oth.* I. 3. 7.
- Composture, *sb.* compost. *Tim.* IV. 3. 444.
- Composure, *sb.* composition. *T. & C.* II. 3. 251; *A. & C.* I. 4. 22. Compact. *T. & C.* II. 3. 100.
- Compromised, *p.p.* mutually agreed. *M. of V.* I. 3. 79.
- Compt, *sb.* account, reckoning. *A. W.* V. 3. 57; *Mao.* I. 6. 26.
- Comptible, *adj.* susceptible, sensitive. *Tw.* N. I. 5. 187.
- Compulsatory, *adj.* compulsive, constraining. *Ham.* I. 1. 103.
- Compulsive, *adj.* impelling. *Ham.* III. 4. 86; *Oth.* III. 3. 454.
- Compunctious, *adj.* troubling the conscience. *Mao.* I. 5. 46.
- Con, *v.t.* to study, learn by heart. *M. N's Dr.* I. 2. 102; *Tw.* N. II. 3. 161. To con thanks = to be thankful. *A. W.* IV. 3. 174; *Tim.* IV. 3. 428.
- Conceit, *sb.* fancy, imagination. *As.* II. 6. 8; *Ham.* III. 4. 114; *IV.* 5. 45; *Lear.* IV. 6. 42.
- Intelligence, mental capacity. *As.* V. 2. 59.
- A fanciful device. *M. N's Dr.* I. 1. 33.
- Conceit, *v.t.* to form a conception. *Oth.* III. 3. 149. Used transitively in *J. C.* I. 3. 162; *III.* 1. 192.
- Conceited, *p.p.* possessed with an idea. *Tw.* N. III. 4. 322. Full of fancy or imagination. *W. T.* IV. 4. 204; *Lucr.* 1371.
- Conceitless, *adj.* witless. *Two G.* IV. 2. 96.
- Conceptious, *adj.* capable of conceiving. *Tim.* IV. 3. 187.
- Concurrence, *sb.* import. *Ham.* V. 2. 128.
- Concerning, *sb.* concern, affair. *M. for M.* I. 1. 57; *Ham.* III. 4. 191.
- Conclude, *v.t.* to be decisive. *John.* I. 1. 127.
- Conclusion, *sb.* an experiment. *Ham.* III. 4. 195; *A. & C.* V. 2. 358; *Lucr.* 1160. In *A. & C.* IV. 15. 28 it seems to mean resolution, settled demeanour; others interpret it of the power of drawing inferences.
- Concocted, a nonsense word in singing. *L. L. L.* III. 1. 2.
- Conspicible, *adj.* lustful. *M. for M.* V. 1. 98.
- Concupy, *sb.* perhaps for concupiscence. *T. & C.* V. 2. 177.
- Condition = on condition. *T. & C.* I. 2. 80.
- Condition, *sb.* rank. *M. of V.* IV. 3. 63; *Tw.* III. 1. 59. Character, disposition. *M. of V.* I. 1. 143; *R.* 3. IV. 4. 157.
- Condole, *v.t.* to mourn for. *H.* 5. II. 1. 133.
- Condolence, *sb.* lamentation. *Ham.* I. 2. 93.
- Consolation, *Per.* II. 1. 126.
- Conduce, *v.t.* to tend to come about. *T. & C.* V. 2. 127. A doubtful word.
- Conduct, *sb.* a guide. *Tw.* V. 2. 244; *R.* 2. IV. 1. 157. Escort. *M. of V.* IV. 2. 148; *Tw.* N. III. 4. 265.
- Confidence, a transfer for 'confidence.' *M. W.* I. 4. 172; *M. A.* III. 2. 3; *R. & J.* II. 4. 133.
- Confine, *sb.* a bound, limit to which anything is confined. *Tw.* IV. 1. 122; *Ham.* 2. 1. 155. A prison. *Ham.* II. 2. 238.
- Confident, *adj.* boundless. *Mao.* IV. 3. 35.
- Confine, *sb.* borders. *Cym.* IV. 2. 377.
- Confirm, *sb.* transfer for 'infirmary.' *A. & C.* II. 4. 64.
- Confined, *p.p.* fixed. *M. for M.* V. 1. 232.
- Confuse, *sb.* confusion. *T. & C.* I. 3. 7.
- Confound, *v.t.* to waste. *H.* 4. I. 3. 100; *Cor.* I. 6. 17; *H.* 5. III. 2. 13. To destroy. *M. of V.* III. 2. 278.
- longest, *v.t.* to heap up. *Comp.* 252.
- longied, *p.p.* taken leave. *A. W.* IV. 3. 262.
- Congreeing, *pr.p.* agreeing. *H.* 5. I. 2. 128.
- Congreeted, *p.p.* greeted. *H.* 5. V. 2. 31.
- Congruing, *pr.p.* agreeing. *Ham.* IV. 3. 66.
- Conjecture, *sb.* suspicion. *M. A.* IV. 2. 207; *Ham.* IV. 5. 15.
- Conjunct, *adj.* closely united. *Lear.* II. 2. 123; *V.* 1. 12.
- Conjunctive, *adj.* united. *Oth.* I. 3. 574.
- Conjunction, *sb.* incantation. *H.* 6. I. 2. 99; *Oth.* I. 3. 92. Entreaty, solemn appeal. *R.* 2. III. 2. 23; *R. & J.* V. 3. 68; *Ham.* V. 2. 98.
- Conscience, *sb.* inmost thoughts. *H.* 5. IV. 1. 123; *W. T.* III. 2. 47.
- Conscionable, *adj.* conscientious. *Oth.* II. 1. 242.
- Consent, *sb.* agreement, plot. *L. L. L.* V. 2. 460.
- Consequently, *adv.* accordingly. *Tw.* N. III. 4. 79. In consequence. *John.* IV. 2. 240; *R.* 2. I. 1. 102.
- Conserve, *v.t.* to preserve. *M. for M.* III. 1. 82.
- Consider, *v.t.* to requite, reward. *W. T.* IV. 2. 19; *IV.* 4. 225; *Cym.* II. 3. 32.
- Considerance, *sb.* consideration. *H.* 4. V. 2. 98.
- Considered, *adj.* deliberate. *Ham.* II. 2. 81.
- Considering, *sb.* consideration. *H.* 2. II. 4. 125; *III.* 2. 135.
- Consign, *v.t.* to allot, assign. *T. & C.* IV. 4. 47. *v.t.* to sign, in token of agreement. *H.* 5. V. 2. 90, 326.
- Consist, *v.t.* to insist. *H.* 4. IV. 2. 127; *Per.* I. 4. 83.
- Console, *v.t.* to console. *A. W.* III. 2. 132.
- Consort, *sb.* company, fellowship. *Two G.* IV. 1. 64; *Lear.* II. 1. 99. *v.t.* to accompany, attend. *C.* of *E.* I. 2. 28; *J. C.* V. 2. 89.
- Conspicuous, *sb.* powers of vision. *Oth.* II. 1. 70.
- Conspirant, *adj.* conspiring. *Lear.* V. 3. 132.
- Constancy, *sb.* consistency. *M. N's Dr.* V. 2. 52.
- Constant, *adj.* consistent. *Tw.* N. IV. 2. 33.
- Steady. *Tw.* II. 2. 119; *J. C.* III. 1. 60.
- Constantly, *adv.* firmly, surely. *M. for M.* IV. 2. 21; *T. & C.* IV. 2. 40.
- Constringed, *p.p.* compressed. *T. & C.* V. 2. 173.
- Construe, *v.t.* to interpret. *Tw.* N. III. 2. 62.
- Consul, *sb.* senator. *Oth.* I. 2. 25; *I.* 2. 42; *Cym.* IV. 2. 325.
- Contain, *v.t.* to restrain oneself. *Tim.* II. 2. 26; *T. & C.* V. 2. 120.
- Contain, *v.t.* to keep, retain. *M. of V.* V. 2. 202.
- Containing, *sb.* contents. *Cym.* V. 2. 430.
- Contemptible, *adj.* contemptuous, scornful. *M. A.* II. 3. 187.
- Contemptuous, *adj.* contemptuous. *H.* 2. I. 2. 9. 86.
- Content, *adj.* be content = to calm, restrain yourself. *J. C.* I. 3. 148; *IV.* 2. 42.

- Contentless, *adj.* discontented. Tim. IV. 3. 245.  
 Contention, *sb.* contention. A. & C. II. 2. 43.  
 Continent, *sb.* that which contains. Ham. IV. 4. 64; Lear, III. 2. 58; M. N. D. II. 1. 92.  
 Abstract, inventory. M. of V. III. 2. 131; Ham. V. 2. 115.  
 Continuata, *adj.* uninterrupted. Tim. I. 1. 11; Oth. III. 4. 178.  
 Continuer, *sb.* a stayer, used of a horse. M. A. I. 2. 243.  
 Contracting, *sb.* betrothal. M. for M. III. 2. 295.  
 Contraction, *sb.* the making of the marriage contract. Ham. III. 4. 46.  
 Contrary, *v.t.* to thwart, oppose. R. & J. I. 5. 87.  
 Contrarious, *adj.* contrary. 1 H 4. V. 1. 52.  
 Contradictory. M. for M. IV. 1. 62.  
 Contrive, *v.t.* to wear out, spend. T. of S. I. 2. 278. To conspire. J. C. II. 3. 16.  
 Contriver, *sb.* a schemer, plotter. J. C. II. 1. 158; Mac. III. 5. 7.  
 Control, *sb.* constraint. John, I. 1. 17.  
 Control, *v.t.* to check, confute, contradict. Tp. I. 2. 439.  
 Controller, *sb.* restrainer. 2 H 6. III. 2. 205; T. A. II. 3. 60.  
 Controlment, *sb.* constraint, restraint. John, I. 1. 20; M. A. I. 3. 21.  
 Convenient, *adj.* suitable, becoming. Cor. I. 5. 13; Lear, IV. 5. 31; M. of V. III. 4. 56.  
 Convent, *v.t.* to summon. M. for M. V. 1. 158; Cor. II. 2. 58; Tw. N. V. 1. 391.  
 Conventicle, *sb.* a secret assembly. 2 H 6. III. 2. 166.  
 Conversation, *sb.* behaviour, conduct. M. W. II. 1. 25; Oth. III. 3. 264.  
 Conversion, *sb.* changed condition. As. IV. 3. 137; John, I. 1. 189.  
 Convert, *v.t.* to change. Lucr. 592; Tim. IV. 1. 7.  
 Convertite, *sb.* a penitent. Lucr. 743; As. V. 4. 190; John, V. 1. 19.  
 Convey, *v.t.* to manage secretly. Mac. IV. 3. 71; Lear, I. 2. 109. To steal. M. W. I. 3. 32. *v.r.* to pass oneself off. H 5. I. 2. 74.  
 Conveyance, *sb.* crafty contrivance. M. A. II. 1. 253; 3 H 6. III. 3. 160.  
 Conveyers, *sb.* tricksters, cheaters. R. 2. IV. 1. 317.  
 Convict, *p.p.* convicted. R. 3. I. 4. 102.  
 Convicted, *adj.* defeated. John, III. 4. 2.  
 Convince, *v.t.* to overpower, defeat. Mac. I. 7. 64; IV. 3. 142. To convict. T. & C. II. 2. 130.  
 Convine, *v.t.* to feast together. T. & C. IV. 5. 272.  
 Convoy, *sb.* escort, means of conveyance. A. W. IV. 3. 103; IV. 4. 10.  
 Cony, *sb.* a rabbit. V. & A. 687; As. III. 2. 337.  
 Cony-catch, *v.t.* to cheat. M. W. I. 1. 128; I. 3. 36.  
 Cony-catched, *p.p.* cheated. T. of S. V. 1. 102.  
 Cony-catching, *sb.* cheating, practical joking. T. of S. IV. 1. 45.  
 Coplain hat, *sb.* a high crowned hat. T. of S. V. 2. 65.  
 Cope, *sb.* the armament. Per. IV. 6. 132.  
 Cope, *v.t.* to requite. M. of V. IV. 2. 422.  
 Copemate, *sb.* companion. Lucr. 395.  
 Copped, *adj.* round topped. Per. I. 1. 101.  
 Copulatives, *sb.* persons desiring to be coupled in marriage. As. V. 4. 58.  
 Copy, *sb.* theme, text. C. of E. V. 1. 62.  
 Tenure, *a* copyhold being held by copy of court roll. Mac. III. 2. 38.  
 Coragio (Ital.), courage! Tp. V. 1. 258; A. W. II. 5. 96.  
 Coram = quorum. M. W. I. 1. 6. 'A Justice of the Peace and Quorum is one without whom the rest of the Justices in some cases cannot proceed' (Cowell).  
 Coranto, *sb.* a quick, lively dance. A. W. II. 3. 49; Tw. N. I. 3. 137.  
 Corinth, said to be a cant term for a brothel. Tim. II. 2. 73.  
 Corinthian, *sb.* a wencher. 1 H 4. II. 4. 13.  
 Co-rival, *v.t.* to vie with. T. & C. I. 3. 44.  
 Corky, *adj.* shrivelled. Lear, III. 7. 29.  
 Cornuto, *sb.* a cuckold. M. W. III. 5. 71.  
 Corollary, *sb.* a supernumerary. Tp. IV. 1. 57.  
 Corporal, *adj.* bodily. M. for M. III. 1. 80; J. C. IV. 1. 33. Material, substantial. Mac. I. 3. 81.  
 Corporal of the field, a kind of adjutant, under the quarter-master general. L. L. I. III. 1. 189.  
 Corpse, corpses. 1 H 4. I. 1. 43; 2 H 4. I. 1. 192.  
 Correctioner, *sb.* one who administers correction, a headle. 2 H 4. V. 4. 23.  
 Correspondent, *adj.* answerable, obedient. Tp. I. 2. 297.  
 Corresponsive, *adj.* corresponding. T. & C. prol. 18.  
 Corrigible, *adj.* submissive to correction. A. & C. IV. 14. 74. Corrective. Oth. I. 3. 329.  
 Corral, *sb.* rival. 1 H 4. I. 3. 207.  
 Corroborate, a nonsense word used by Pistol. H 5. II. 1. 130.  
 Corrosive, *sb.* a biting or fretting remedy. 2 H 6. III. 2. 403. *adj.* giving pain. 1 H 6. III. 3. 3.  
 Corruptibly, *adv.* corruptively, so as to be corrupted. John, V. 7. 2.  
 Coralet, *sb.* cuirass. Cor. V. 4. 21.  
 Costard, *sb.* properly, an apple; ludicrously used for the head. M. W. III. 1. 14; Lear, IV. 6. 247.  
 Costermonger, *adj.* paltry. A costermonger, or costardmonger, was originally a seller of apples; hence, a petty trafficker. 2 H 4. I. 2. 191.  
 Co-supreme, *sb.* an equal in supremacy. Phom. 51.  
 Cote, *v.t.* to come up with, pass on the way. Ham. II. 2. 330.  
 Cote, *sb.* cot, cottage. As. II. 4. 83; III. 2. 448.  
 Cut-quan, *sb.* a man who busies himself in women's affairs. R. & J. IV. 4. 6.  
 Couch, *v.t.* to make to couch and lie close. Lucr. 507.  
 Couchings, *sb.* crouching, bowing. J. C. III. 1. 36.  
 Countenance, *sb.* favour, patronage. Ham. IV. 2. 16; Cor. V. 6. 40.  
 Counter, *adv.* to run or hunt counter is to follow the trace of the game backwards. C. of E. IV. 2. 39; 1 H 4. I. 2. 102.



- Counter, *sb.* a metal disk used in calculations. *As*, II. 7. 63; *W. T.* IV. 3. 38; *J. C.* IV. 3. 80.
- Counter-caster, *sb.* a reckoner, arithmetician. *Oth.* I. 2. 31.
- Counterchange, *sb.* exchange. *Cym.* V. 5. 396.
- Countercheck, *sb.* check, rebuff. *John.* II. 1. 224; *As*, V. 4. 84, 90.
- Counterfeit, *sb.* portrait. *M.* of V. III. 2. 115.
- A spurious coin. *John.* III. 1. 90; *J. C.* II. 4. 540.
- adj.* imitative. A 'counterfeit presentment' is a portrait. *Ham.* III. 3. 54.
- Counterfeitly, *adv.* feignedly. *Cor.* II. 3. 107.
- Counter-gate, *sb.* the Counter was the name of two prisons belonging to the Sheriffs of London, one in the Poultry, and the other in Woodstreet. *M. W.* III. 3. 85.
- Countermand, *v.t.* to contradict. *Lucr.* 276.
- To prohibit, keep in check. *C.* of H. IV. 2. 37.
- Counterpoint, *sb.* a counterpart. *T.* of S. II. 1. 333.
- Counter-sealed, *p.p.* sealed in duplicate. *Cor.* V. 3. 205.
- Countervail, *v.t.* to counterbalance, outweigh. *R.* & *J.* II. 6. 4.
- Country, *adj.* belonging to one's country. *Oth.* III. 3. 301, 337; *Cym.* I. 4. 62.
- County, *sb.* a count. *M. A.* II. 7. 195; *Tw. N.* I. 5. 320.
- Complement, *sb.* a union. *Sonn.* XXI. 5. A pair. *L. L. L.* V. 2. 535.
- Courage, *sb.* disposition, temperament. *Cor.* III. 3. 92; IV. 1. 3; *J. H.* II. 2. 57; *Tim.* III. 3. 34.
- Course, *sb.* the attack of the dogs in bear-baiting. *Mac.* V. 7. 2; *Lear.* III. 7. 54.
- Courses, *sb.* the principal sails of a ship. *TP.* I. 1. 53.
- Courser's hair, a horse's hair laid in water was believed to turn into a serpent. *A. & C.* I. 2. 200.
- Court-capboard, *sb.* a sideboard. *R.* & *J.* I. 5. 8.
- Court holy-water, *flattery.* *Lear.* III. 2. 10.
- Courier, *sb.* a wooer. *A. & C.* II. 6. 17.
- Court of guard, *sb.* a guard-house. *J. H.* II. 7. 4; *Oth.* II. 1. 220; II. 3. 216; *A. & C.* IV. 9. 2, 34.
- Courtship, *sb.* courtly manners. *L. L. L.* V. 2. 363; *J. H.* I. 3. 37.
- Cousin, *sb.* any one not in the first degree of relationship. Used of a nephew, *John.* III. 3. 71; a niece, *Tw. N.* I. 3. 5; an uncle, *Tw. N.* I. 5. 131; a brother-in-law, *J. H.* 4. III. 1. 51; and a grandchild, *John.* III. 3. 17.
- Covert, *sb.* covert. *M.* for *M.* IV. 3. 133; *H.* & *J.* IV. 2. 19.
- Cover, *v.t.* to lay the table for dinner. *M.* of V. III. 5. 65.
- Coverture, *sb.* cover, shelter. *M. A.* III. 1. 30.
- Covering. *Cot.* I. 9. 46.
- Covetousness, *sb.* eager desire. *John.* IV. 2. 29.
- Cowardship, *sb.* cowardice. *Tw. N.* III. 4. 423.
- Cowish, *adj.* cowardly. *Lear.* IV. 2. 12.
- Cowl-staff, *sb.* a staff or pole used for carrying a tub or basket borne by two persons. *M. W.* III. 3. 156.
- Coxcomb, *sb.* a fool's cap which was ornamented with a cock's comb. *M. W.* V. 5. 146; *Lear.* I. 4. 105.
- Cox my passion. A euphemism for 'God's passion.' *A. W. V.* 2. 42. See *T.* of S. IV. 1. 121.
- Coy, *v.t.* to fondle, caress. *M. N's* Dr. IV. 1. 2. v.t. to disdain. *Cor.* V. 1. 6.
- Joystril, *sb.* a groom. *Tw. N.* I. 3. 43.
- Cozen, *v.t.* to cheat. *M. W.* IV. 5. 95, 96; *M.* of V. II. 9. 38.
- Cozenage, *sb.* deceit. *M. W.* IV. 5. 64; *Ham.* V. 2. 67.
- Cozener, *sb.* a cheater. *J. H.* 4. I. 3. 255; *Lear.* IV. 6. 167.
- Cotier, a botcher, cobbler. *Tw. N.* II. 3. 97.
- Crab, *sb.* a wild apple. *TP.* II. 2. 171; *M. N's* Dr. II. 1. 48.
- Crack, *v.t.* to boast. *L. L. L.* IV. 3. 268. *sb.* an urchin. *J. H.* 4. III. 2. 34; *Cor.* I. 3. 74. The change of the voice on entering manhood. *Cym.* IV. 2. 236.
- Cracked within the ring. If the crack in a coin extended to the inner circle enclosing the sovereign's head, the coin was worthless. *Ham.* II. 4. 448.
- Cracker, *sb.* a boaster. *John.* II. 1. 147.
- Crack-hemp, *sb.* a rogue who deserves hanging. *T.* of S. V. 1. 46.
- Craft, *v.t.* have crafted fair=have made nice work of it. *Cor.* IV. 6. 118.
- Craftsmen, *sb.* mechanics. *R.* 2. I. 4. 28.
- Crank, *sb.* a winding passage. *Cor.* I. 1. 121.
- Crank, *v.t.* to wind crookedly, twist. *V. & A.* 682; *J. H.* 4. III. 1. 98.
- Crants, *sb.* a garland, chaplet. *Ham.* V. 1. 255.
- Crare, *sb.* a small vessel or fishing-boat. *Cym.* IV. 2. 205.
- Craven, *v.t.* to make cowardly. *Cym.* III. 4. 80.
- Craven, *sb.* a beaten cock. *T.* of S. II. 1. 228.
- Crazed, *adj.* damaged, having a flaw in it. *M. N's* Dr. I. 1. 92.
- Cream, *v.t.* to form a covering on the surface like cream. *M.* of V. I. 1. 89.
- Create, *p.p.* created. *M. N's* Dr. V. 1. 412; *John.* IV. 1. 107.
- Credent, *adj.* credulous. *Ham.* I. 3. 30. Credible. *W. T.* I. 2. 122. A credent bulk=a mass of credit. *M.* for *M.* IV. 4. 29.
- Credit, *sb.* belief, current opinion. *Tw. N.* IV. 3. 6.
- Crescent, *adj.* increasing. *Ham.* I. 3. 11; *A. & C.* II. 1. 10.
- Crescive, *adj.* growing, having the power of growth. *H.* 5. I. 1. 66.
- Cressets, *sb.* baskets of fire carried at the end of poles and serving as portable beacons. *J. H.* 4. III. 1. 15.
- Crest, *v.t.* to form the crest of. *A. & C.* V. 2. 25.
- Crestless, *adj.* not entitled to bear a heraldic crest. *J. H.* 6. II. 4. 85.
- Crimeful, *adj.* criminal. *Ham.* IV. 7. 7.
- Crisp, *adj.* curled. *TP.* IV. 1. 130; *J. H.* 4. 1. 3. 104.
- Critic, *sb.* a censorer, critic. *T.* & *C.* V. 2. 122. *adj.* censorious. *L. L. L.* IV. 9. 120.
- Critical, *adj.* censorious, cynical. *Oth.* II. 1. 220; *M. N's* Dr. V. 1. 94.
- Crone, *sb.* an old woman. *W. T.* II. 3. 74.
- Crop, *v.t.* to yield a crop. *A. & C.* II. 2. 233.
- Cross, *sb.* money, so called because stamped with a cross. *As*, II. 4. 21; *J. H.* 4. I. 2. 233.

Crowed, *p.p.* diminished with sneezes or sneezing. Tw. N. III. 4. 26.

Cross-garted, *adj.* wearing the garters above and below the knee so as to be crossed at the back of the leg. Tw. N. II. 3. 167.

Tw. N. III. 4. 22.

Cross-row, *sb.* the alphabet. B. 3. I. 2. 55.

Crow-flowers, *sb.* the commoner kinds of ranunculus. Ham. IV. 7. 170.

Crow-keeper, *sb.* a boy whose business it was to keep the crows from the corn. R. & J. I. 4. 6; Lear, IV. 6. 88.

Crowner, *sb.* coroner. Tw. N. I. 5. 142; Ham. V. 2. 4. 24.

Crownet, *sb.* coronet. T. & C. prol. 6; A. & C. IV. 12. 27; V. 2. 92.

Crudy, *adj.* raw, crude. H. 4. IV. 3. 126.

Cruel garters. A pun on 'cruel' and 'crewel' or worsted. Lear, II. 4. 7.

Crude, *sb.* a Portuguese coin worth between 6s. and 7s. Oth. III. 4. 26.

Crush, *v.t.* to crush a cup is equivalent to cracking a bottle. R. & J. I. 2. 86.

Cry, *sb.* a pack. M. N. Dr. IV. 1. 128; Cor. III. 3. 120. Report. Oth. IV. 2. 127; T. & C. III. 3. 184. *v.t.* Cried in the top of mine = loudly exceeded mine. Ham. II. 2. 499. Cried out in the top of question = shouted at the top of their voices. Ham. II. 2. 356.

Cry aim. See Aim.

Cry on, to cry aloud. B. 3. v. 3. 23; Ham. V. 2. 375; Oth. V. 2. 48.

Cub-drawn, *adj.* sucked dry by cubs. Lear, III. 2. 12.

Cubiculo, *sb.* bedroom. Tw. N. III. 2. 96.

Cuckoo-buds, *sb.* some species of ranunculus or crowfoot, but it is not certain which. L. L. I. V. 2. 906.

Cuckoo-flowers, called also ladies' smocks, and wild water-cress (*Cardamine pratensis*). Lear, IV. 4. 4.

Cudgelled, *p.p.* made by a cudgel. H. 5. v. 2. 93.

Cue, *sb.* a catchword; the signal to a player to be ready with his part. M. W. III. 3. 30; M. N. Dr. III. 1. 78. Used figuratively. Ham. II. 2. 567; Oth. I. 2. 83.

Quince, *sb.* armour for the thigh. H. 4. IV. 1. 105.

Cullion, *sb.* a base fellow. H. 5. III. 2. 22; H. 6. I. 3. 43.

Cullionly, *adj.* base, mean. Lear, II. 2. 36.

Culverin, *sb.* a kind of cannon. H. 4. II. 3. 56.

Cunning, *sb.* knowledge, skill, power. Oth. III. 3. 40; T. 3. 15. 4. 49; Ham. II. 2. 46. *adj.* knowing, skilful. Tw. N. I. 5. 29; Ham. III. 4. 120. Skillfully wrought. B. 2. I. 3. 163; Oth. V. 2. 11.

Cupboard, *v.t.* to board, store up. Cor. I. 2.

*v.t.* to bow, cinge. Ham. III. 4. 155.

*p.p.* congealed. Cor. V. 3. 66.

*sb.* nicety, scrupulous exactness, scrutiny. Lear, I. 2. 5; I. 2. 4; I. 4.

It shall be a  
faint, penitential. A. W. 2.

Cym. I. 4. 192. Wrought

with mine. V. & A. 734; H. 4. II. 3. 55. Delicate, excessively minute. W. T. IV. 4. 593; T. & C. III. 2. 70.

Curious-knotted, *adj.* laid out in fanciful plots. L. L. I. 1. 2. 249.

Curranee, *sb.* current, action of a current. H. 3. I. 2. 34.

Currents, *sb.* for occurrences, occurrences. H. 4. II. 3. 58.

Curry, *v.t.* to use flattery. H. 4. V. 2. 82.

Cursory, *adj.* cursory, hasty. H. 5. V. 2. 77.

Curst, *adj.* ill-tempered, crabbed. V. & A. 967; M. A. II. 1. 22; Lear, II. 1. 67.

Curstness, *sb.* ill-humour, spitefulness. A. & C. II. 2. 25.

Curtal, *adj.* having a docked tail. M. W. II.

114; C. of H. III. 2. 157.

Curtal, *sb.* the name of a horse, from his having a docked tail. A. W. II. 3. 65.

Curtle-axe, *sb.* a cutlass. A. 1. 3. 119; H. 5. IV. 2. 21.

Custalorum. A blunder for Custos Rotulorum. M. W. I. 2. 7.

Custard-coffin, *sb.* the raised crust of a custard. T. of B. IV. 3. 82.

Customer, *sb.* a loose woman. A. W. V. 3. 87; Oth. IV. 1. 123.

Cut, *sb.* a bottled horse. Tw. N. II. 3. 203.

Cut and longtail. All of every sort, both short and long tailed. M. W. III. 4. 47.

Cuts, to draw. To draw lots, by means of straws or sticks out of uneven lengths. C. of E. V. 1. 422.

Cuttle, *sb.* a bully. H. 4. II. 4. 139.

Cypress, *sb.* crape. Tw. N. III. 1. 132; W. T. IV. 2. 221.

Daff, *v.t.* to doff. Comp. 207; A. & C. IV. 4. 13; to put aside, put off. M. A. II. 3. 176; V. 2. 78; Oth. IV. 2. 156.

Dagonet. A foolish knight at the court of King Arthur. H. 4. III. 2. 300.

Daintry. Daventry. H. 6. v. 1. 6.

Dainty. To make dainty = to affect to be delicate or over-nice. R. & J. I. 5. 21.

Damascus, the traditional scene of Abel's murder. H. 6. I. 3. 39.

Damn, *v.t.* to condemn. J. C. IV. 2. 5; A. & C. I. 1. 24.

Damocles. Damsel. L. L. I. IV. 2. 120.

Dan. Lord, master; corrupted from dominus. L. L. I. III. 1. 182.

Dance, *v.t.* to make to dance. Cor. IV. 3. 122.

Dancing-horse. A famous horse belonging to Benkes, a Scotchman. L. L. I. 1. 57.

Dancing rapier, an ornamental sword. T. A. II. 1. 29.

Danger. To stand within a person's danger is to be in his power, to be liable to a penalty to be inflicted by him or at his suit. M. of V. IV. 1. 120.

Dank, *adj.* damp. M. N. Dr. II. 2. 75; R. & J. II. 3. 43; J. C. II. 2. 47.

Dankish, *adj.* dampish. C. of E. v. 2. 247.

Dankish, *sb.* a Dana. Ham. II. 2. 7.

Dare, *sb.* boldness, audacity. H. 4. IV. 2. 78. A challenge. A. & C. I. 2. 192.

- Daze**, *v.t.* to daze, terrify, make to crouch in fear. H. 5. IV. 2. 56; H. 5. III. 2. 282.
- Dawdly**, *adj.* full of defiance. Mac. V. 5. 6.
- Dawdling**, *adv.* in the dark. M. N's Dr. II. 2. 86; Lear. I. 4. 237.
- Dawn**, *adj.* dark. Lear. 379.
- Darnel**, *sb.* rye-grass, *Lolium temulentum*. H. 5. V. 2. 45; Lear. IV. 4. 5.
- Darrain**, *v.t.* to set in order, arrange. 3 H. 6. II. 2. 72.
- Dash**, *sb.* a mark of disgrace. Lear. 206; W. T. V. 2. 122. At first dash—at the first onset, from the first. 1 H. 6. I. 2. 71.
- Dash**, *v.t.* to disconcert, put out of countenance, depress. L. L. L. V. 2. 58; Oth. III. 3. 214.
- Date-broke**. Date-broke bonds are bonds which have not been met at the date at which they were due. Tim. II. 2. 37.
- Dateless**, *adj.* endless. Sonn. XXX. 6; R. 2. I. 3. 151; R. 2. J. V. 3. 115.
- Daub**, *v.t.* to colour, dissemble. R. 3. III. 5. 29; Lear. IV. 1. 53.
- Daubery**, *sb.* false pretence, imposition. M. W. IV. 2. 186.
- Day-bed**, *sb.* a couch or sofa. Tw. N. II. 5. 54; R. 3. III. 7. 72.
- Day-woman**, *sb.* a dairy woman. L. L. L. I. 2. 136.
- Dazzle**, *v.t.* to be dazzled. 3 H. 6. II. 1. 25; T. A. III. 2. 85.
- Deal**, *v.t.* to defen. John. II. 1. 147; L. L. L. V. 2. 274.
- Deal**, *sb.* a part, portion. No deal=nothing. Pass. P. 271. *v.t.* dealt on lieutenantry=acted by substitute. A. & C. III. 11. 39.
- Deal** in her command= wield her authority. Tp. V. 1. 271.
- Dear**, from its original sense of costly, precious, comes to mean great, intense, grievous. Dear groans. L. L. L. V. 2. 874. Dear guiltiness. L. L. L. V. 2. 801. Dear offence. John. I. 1. 257; H. 5. II. 2. 181.
- Deared**, *p.p.* endeared. A. & C. I. 4. 44.
- Dearly**, *adv.* heartily, greatly. Ham. IV. 3. 43. Excellently. T. & C. III. 3. 96; Cym. II. 2. 18.
- Dearth**, *sb.* scarcity, dearthness. Ham. V. 2. 123.
- Death-practised**, *adj.* whose death is plotted. Lear. IV. 6. 264.
- Deathman**, *sb.* executioner. Lear. IV. 6. 263; Lear. 1001.
- Death-taken**. Plague spots. T. & C. II. 3. 187.
- Debate**, *sb.* contest, quarrel. M. N's Dr. II. 1. 116; 2 H. 4. IV. 4. 2. *v.t.* to contend about. A. W. I. 2. 75; Ham. IV. 4. 66.
- Debatment**, *sb.* debate. M. for M. V. 1. 29; Ham. V. 2. 45.
- Debile**, *adj.* weak. A. W. II. 3. 39; Cor. I. 9. 48.
- Debitor and creditor**. An account book. Oth. I. 1. 31; Cym. V. 4. 171.
- Debauched**, *p.p.* debauched, dissolute. Tp. III. 2. 29; A. W. II. 3. 145.
- Debauch**, *p.p.* inebriated. C. of R. IV. 1. 31.
- Deceivable**, *adj.* deceptive. Tw. N. IV. 3. 21.
- Decent**, *adj.* becoming. H. 5. IV. 2. 125.
- Deception**, *adj.* deceptive. T. & C. V. 2. 123.
- Decent**, *hinder* for "concern." M. A. III. 4. 4.
- Deck**, *sb.* a pack of cards. 3 H. 6. V. 2. 44.
- Deck**, *v.t.* to bedew. Tp. I. 2. 135.
- Declare**, *v.t.* to make clear, explain. H. 5. I. 2. 96; Cym. V. 5. 434.
- Declension**, *sb.* deterioration, going from bad to worse. R. 3. III. 7. 28; Ham. II. 2. 149.
- Decline**, *v.t.* to bend, bow down. C. of R. III. 2. 44; 130; Lear. IV. 2. 22. To go through from beginning to end, as a schoolboy his declensions. R. 3. IV. 4. 97; T. & C. II. 3. 53.
- Declined**, *p.p.* fallen, humbled. T. & C. III. 3. 76; IV. 5. 180. A. & C. III. 12. 27.
- Dedicate**, *p.p.* dedicated. M. for M. II. 2. 154; 2 H. 6. V. 2. 57.
- Deed** of saying. The doing what has been said or promised. Tim. V. 1. 28.
- Deedless**, *adj.* inactive. T. & C. IV. 5. 28.
- Deem**, *sb.* doom, judgement, opinion. T. & C. IV. 4. 61.
- Deep-fet**, *adj.* deep-fetched. 2 H. 6. II. 4. 33.
- Deer**, *sb.* game. Lear. III. 4. 144.
- Defame**, *sb.* infamy. Lear. 768, 877, 1023.
- Default**, *sb.* fault. C. of R. I. 2. 52; 1 H. 6. II. 1. 60. In the default—at a pinch. A. W. II. 3. 242.
- Defeat**, *v.t.* to destroy. Oth. IV. 2. 160. To disguise, disfigure. Oth. I. 3. 266.
- Defeat**, *sb.* ruin, destruction. M. A. IV. 2. 48; Ham. II. 2. 598.
- Defeature**, *sb.* disfigurement. C. of R. II. 2. 98; V. 1. 299; V. & A. 736.
- Defence**, *sb.* fencing, swordplay, skill in weapons. Tw. N. III. 4. 240; Ham. IV. 7. 98.
- Defend**, *v.t.* to forbid. M. A. II. 1. 98; IV. 2. 21; R. 2. I. 3. 18.
- Defendant**, *adj.* defensive. H. 5. II. 4. 4.
- Defensible**, *adj.* capable of offering defence. 2 H. 4. II. 3. 38; H. 5. III. 3. 52.
- Defiance**, *sb.* renunciation. M. for M. III. 1. 123.
- Definement**, *sb.* definition, description. Ham. V. 2. 117.
- Deformed**, *adj.* deforming, disfiguring. C. of R. V. 1. 598.
- Deftly**, *adv.* dexterously. Mac. IV. 1. 68.
- Defunction**, *sb.* death. H. 5. I. 2. 51.
- Defunctive**, *adj.* funeral, becoming the dead. Phoen. 14.
- Defuse**, *v.t.* to render disordered, so as not to be recognized. Lear. I. 4. 2.
- Defused**, *adj.* disordered, shapeless. H. 5. V. 2. 61; R. 3. I. 2. 78.
- Defy**, *v.t.* to renounce. John. III. 4. 23; Tw. N. III. 4. 108.
- Degree**, *sb.* a step, as of a staircase or ladder. J. C. II. 1. 26; Cor. II. 2. 29.
- Deject**, *v.t.* to cast down. T. & C. II. 2. 125.
- Deject**, *adj.* dejected. T. & C. II. 2. 30; Ham. III. 1. 263.
- Delated**, *adj.* set forth in detail. Ham. 2. 2. 56. The folios read "dilated," probably another form of the same word.
- Delation**. Close delation=secret information. Oth. III. 3. 123.
- Delightable**, *adj.* delightful. R. 2. II. 1. 7.
- Delighted**, *sb.* delinquency. 2 H. 6. II. 3. 21.
- Delighted**, *adj.* pleased for delight. M. for M. III. 1. 125. Delightful. Oth. 2. 3. 202; Cym. V. 4. 102.

- Delve**, *v.t.* to dig. Ham. III. 4. 208; Sonn. LX. 10.
- Delver**, *sb.* a digger. Ham. V. 1. 15.
- Demean**, *v.r.* to behave. O. of E. IV. 3. 83; V. 1. 88.
- Demerit**, *sb.* merit, desert. Cor. I. 2. 276; Mac. IV. 3. 206; Oth. I. 2. 22.
- Demise**, *v.t.* to grant, transfer; as an estate for a term of years. R. 3. IV. 4. 247.
- Demurely**, *adv.* soberly, solemnly. M. of V. II. 2. 201; A. & C. IV. 9. 31.
- Demuring**, looking demurely. A. & C. IV. 15. 29.
- Denay**, *sb.* denial. Tw. N. II. 4. 127.
- Denay'd**, *p.p.* denied. s H 6. I. 3. 107.
- Denier**, *sb.* a very small coin, equal in value to the twelfth part of a French *écu*. T. of S. Ind. I. 9; s H 4. III. 3. 91; R. 3. I. 2. 252.
- Denotement**, *sb.* noting, observation. Oth. II. 3. 323.
- Denounce**, *v.t.* to declare. A. & C. III. 7. 5.
- Denunciation**, *sb.* formal announcement. M. for M. I. 2. 152.
- Deny**, *v.t.* to refuse. R. 2. II. 1. 204; Mac. III. 4. 128.
- Depart**, *sb.* departure. Two G. V. 4. 96; s H 6. I. 1. 2. Death. 3 H 6. II. 1. 110.
- Depart**, *v.t.* to part. John. II. 2. 563; Tim. I. 1. 263.
- Departing**, *sb.* parting, separation. 3 H 6. II. 6. 43.
- Depend**, *v.t.* to lean. Cym. II. 4. 91. To be dependent. Lear. I. 4. 271; M. for M. III. 2. 28. To impend. R. & J. III. 1. 124. To be in suspense. Cym. IV. 3. 23.
- Dependant**, *adj.* impending. T. & C. II. 3. 21.
- Depose**, *v.t.* to examine upon oath. R. 2. I. 3. 30.
- Depravation**, *sb.* detraction. T. & C. V. 2. 132.
- Deprave**, *v.t.* to vilify. M. A. V. 2. 95; Tim. I. 2. 145.
- Deprive**, *v.t.* to take away. Lucr. 1752; Ham. I. 4. 73.
- Deputation**, *sb.* office of deputy. T. & C. I. 3. 152.
- Deracinate**, *v.t.* to uproot, extirpate. H 5. V. 2. 47; T. & C. I. 3. 99.
- Derived**, *p.p.* descended. Two G. V. 2. 23; M. N's Dr. I. 1. 99.
- Derog**, *adj.* secret. Per. III. prol. 15.
- Derogate**, *v.t.* to degrade oneself, do that which is derogatory. Cym. II. 1. 48, 51.
- Derogate**, *p.p.* degraded, dishonoured. Lear. I. 4. 302.
- Derogately**, *adv.* depreciatingly. A. & C. II. 2. 34.
- Descent**, *sb.* the variations upon an air. Two G. I. 2. 94. Used figuratively. R. 3. III. 7. 49.
- Descent**, *v.t.* to sing variations upon an air. Lucr. 1234; R. 3. I. 1. 27.
- Descending**, *sb.* descent, lineage. Per. V. 1. 129.
- Descension**, *sb.* descent, decline. s H 4. II. 2. 193.
- Desery**, *sb.* discovery. The main desery stands on the hourly thought—the view of the main body is hourly expected. Lear. IV. 6. 217.
- Desery**, *v.t.* to discover. Lear. IV. 5. 13; R. 3. V. 2. 23.
- Deserv'd**, *adj.* deserving. Cor. III. 1. 292.
- Design**, *v.t.* to designate, mark out, prescribe. R. 2. I. 1. 203; Ham. I. 2. 94.
- Designation**, *sb.* design, enterprise. Cor. V. 6. 35; Oth. II. 1. 22.
- Desire**, ... of. This construction occurs in M. N's Dr. III. 2. 125, 193; M. of V. IV. 1. 402; As. V. 4. 56.
- Desperate**, *adj.* bold. R. & J. III. 4. 12.
- Despised**, *adj.* despicable. ul. R. 2. II. 3. 95.
- Despite**, *sb.* spite, malice. N. III. 4. 243; Oth. IV. 2. 116. *v.t.* to spite, vex. M. A. II. 2. 31.
- Detect**, *v.t.* to discover. 3 H 6. II. 2. 143; R. 3. I. 4. 141.
- Determinate**, *v.t.* to bring to end. R. 2. I. 3. 150. *p.p.* ended. Sonn. XXVII. 4. Determined upon. Tw. N. II. 1. 11. Decided. H 8. II. 4. 176; Oth. IV. 2. 232.
- Determination**, *sb.* the coming to an end of a lease. Sonn. XIII. 6.
- Determine**, *v.t.* to put an end to. s H 4. IV. 5. 82; s H 6. IV. 6. 9. *v.t.* to end, come to an end. Cor. III. 3. 43; V. 3. 120; A. & C. III. 13. 161.
- Detest**. A blunder for 'protest.' M. W. I. 4. 160; M. for M. II. 1. 69, 75.
- Devest**, *v.t.* to undress. Oth. II. 3. 182.
- Devote**, *adj.* devoted. T. of S. I. 1. 32.
- Devoted**, *adj.* consecrated, holy. R. 3. I. 2. 35.
- Dewlap**, *sb.* the loose flesh about the throat. M. N's Dr. II. 1. 50.
- Dexteriously**, *adv.* dexterously. Tw. N. I. 5. 66.
- Dexterity**, *sb.* swiftness. Ham. I. 2. 157.
- Diablo** (Span.), devil. Oth. II. 3. 160.
- Dialogue**, *v.t.* to converse, take both parts in a conversation. Tim. II. 2. 52.
- Dian's bud**, *sb.* perhaps the bud of the Agnus Castus or Chaste Tree. M. N's Dr. IV. 2. 78.
- Diaper**, *sb.* a towel. T. of S. Ind. I. 57.
- Dich**. Said to be a corruption of 'do it.' Tim. I. 2. 72.
- Dickon**, *Dick*. R. 3. V. 3. 305.
- Diet**, *sb.* prescribed regimen. Two G. II. 2. 25; Tim. IV. 3. 87.
- Diet**, *v.t.* to keep strictly, as by a certain regimen. Cym. III. 4. 183; A. W. V. 3. 221.
- Dieter**, *sb.* one who administers food in sickness. Cym. IV. 2. 51.
- Difference**, *sb.* a mark of distinction in heraldry. M. A. I. 2. 69. Variance, strife. Cor. V. 3. 201; J. C. I. 2. 40.
- Differency**, *sb.* difference. Cor. V. 4. 11.
- Diffidence**, *sb.* distrust, suspicion. John. I. 2. 65; Lear. I. 2. 161.
- Diffused**, *adj.* wild, irregular. M. W. IV. 4. 54.
- Digressing**, *pr. p.* transgressing. R. 2. V. 3. 66.
- Digression**, *sb.* transgression. Lucr. 202.
- Dig** L. L. I. 2. 121.
- Dig you den**, Give you good even. L. L. I. IV. 1. 42.
- Dildo**, the burden of a song. W. T. IV. 4. 195.
- Diminutives**, *sb.* the smallest pieces of coin. A. & C. IV. 12. 37.
- Dint**, *sb.* impression. V. & A. 354; J. C. III. 2. 198.
- Direction**, *sb.* military skill. R. 3. V. 3. 16.
- Directitude**. A blunder for some word which cannot be readily guessed. Cor. IV. 5. 222.

- Directive**, *adj.* capable of being directed. T. & C. I. 3. 356.
- Directly**, *adv.* clearly, undoubtedly. Oth. II. 2. 221; Cym. I. 4. 171.
- Disable**, *v.t.* to disparage. As. IV. 2. 34; V. 4. 80.
- Disanimates**, *v.t.* to discourage. 1 H. 6. III. 1. 183.
- Disappointed**, *adj.* unfurnished, unprepared. Ham. I. 5. 77.
- Disaster**, *v.t.* to injure, ruin. A. & C. II. 7. 18.
- Disbanish**, *v.t.* to drive from a seat. Cor. II. 2. 75.
- Disbranch**, *v.r.* to tear away as a branch. Lear, IV. 2. 34.
- Discandy**, *v.t.* to thaw. A. & C. III. 13. 165; IV. 12. 22.
- Discease**, *v.r.* to unmask. Tp. V. 1. 85; W. T. IV. 4. 648.
- Discernings**, *sb.* powers of discernment, perceptive faculties. Lear, I. 4. 248.
- Discharge**, *v.t.* to perform, as an actor his part. M. N. Dr. I. 2. 95; IV. 2. 8; Cor. III. 2. 106.
- Discharge**, *sb.* performance. Tp. II. 1. 254.
- Disciplin**, *p.p.* taught, trained. A. W. I. 2. 28.
- Disclaim** in. To disown. Lear, II. 2. 59.
- Disclose**, *v.t.* to hatch. Ham. V. 1. 310.
- Disclose**, *sb.* the chipping of the shell. Ham. III. 1. 174.
- Discomfit**, *sb.* discomfiture, discouragement. 2 H. 6. V. 2. 86.
- Discomfortable**, *adj.* having no word of comfort. R. 2. III. 2. 36.
- Discommend**, *v.t.* to disapprove. Lear, II. 2. 116.
- Discontent**, *sb.* a malcontent. 1 H. 4. V. 1. 76; A. & C. I. 4. 30.
- Discontenting**, *adj.* discontented. W. T. IV. 4. 543.
- Discourse**, *sb.* reasoning. Tw. N. IV. 3. 12; T. & C. II. 3. 183. Discourse of reason = the reasoning faculty, the power of arguing from premises to conclusion. Ham. I. 2. 120.
- Discover**, *v.t.* to reveal, disclose. Tw. N. II. 5. 173; R. & J. III. 1. 147.
- Discoverer**, *sb.* a scout. 2 H. 4. IV. 1. 3.
- Discovery**, *sb.* reconnoitring, the report of scouts. Mac. V. 4. 6; Lear, V. 1. 53.
- Disdained**, *adj.* disdainful. 1 H. 4. I. 3. 183.
- Disease**, *sb.* trouble, disorder. Lear, I. 1. 177.
- Disedge**, *v.t.* to take off the edge of appetite. Cym. III. 4. 96.
- Disfurnish**, *v.t.* to deprive. Tim. III. 2. 49. Two G. IV. 1. 14.
- Disgracious**, *adj.* wanting grace, unpleasing. R. 3. III. 7. 112; IV. 4. 177.
- Dishabited**, *p.p.* dislodged. John, II. 1. 220.
- Dishonest**, *adj.* unchaste. Tw. N. I. 5. 46; H. 5. I. 2. 49.
- Dishonesty**, *sb.* unchastity. M. W. IV. 2. 120.
- Dishonoured**, *adj.* dishonourable. Cor. III. 1. 60; Lear, I. 1. 231.
- Disjoint**, *p.p.* disjointed, out of joint. Ham. I. 2. 20.
- Dislike**, *v.t.* to displease. R. & J. II. 2. 6; Oth. II. 3. 49.
- Dislike**, *v.t.* to disguise. W. T. IV. 4. 666.
- Dislizen**, *v.t.* to efface, obliterate. A. & C. IV. 14. 12.
- Dismay**, *v.t.* to be filled with dismay. 1 H. 6. III. 3. 1.
- Disme**, *sb.* a tenth. T. & C. II. 2. 19.
- Disnatures**, *adj.* unnatural. Lear, I. 4. 305.
- Disorbed**, *p.p.* thrown out of its orbit or sphere. T. & C. II. 2. 46.
- Dispark**, *v.t.* to destroy the enclosures of a park. R. 2. III. 1. 23.
- Dispatched**, *p.p.* deprived, bereaved. Ham. I. 5. 75.
- Dispiteous**, *adj.* pitiless. John, IV. 1. 34.
- Disponge**, *v.t.* to squeeze out as if from a sponge. A. & C. IV. 9. 13.
- Dispose**, *sb.* disposal. Two G. II. 7. 86; John, I. 1. 263. Disposition. T. & C. II. 3. 174; Oth. I. 3. 403.
- Dispose**, *v.t.* to arrange, make terms. A. & C. IV. 14. 123.
- Disposed**, *adj.* in the humour for mirth. L. L. L. II. 1. 250; V. 2. 466; Tw. N. II. 3. 88.
- Disposer**, *sb.* manager. T. & C. III. 1. 95. Or it may be one who disposes or inclines others to mirth.
- Disposition**, *sb.* settlement, maintenance. Oth. I. 3. 237.
- Dispraisingly**, *adv.* disparagingly. Oth. III. 3. 72.
- Disproperty**, *v.t.* to take away. Cor. II. 1. 264.
- Dispurse**, *p.p.* disbursed. 2 H. 6. III. 2. 117.
- Disputable**, *adj.* disputations. As. II. 5. 46.
- Dispute**, *v.t.* to discuss, reason upon. W. T. IV. 4. 411; Mac. IV. 3. 220.
- Disquantity**, *v.t.* to diminish. Lear, I. 4. 270.
- Disseat**, *v.t.* to unseat, dethrone. Mac. V. 3. 21.
- Dissemble**, *v.r.* to disguise oneself. Tw. N. IV. 2. 5.
- Dissemble**, Blunder for 'assembly.' M. A. IV. 2. 1.
- Dissolution**, *sb.* melting. W. T. III. 5. 128; Lucr. 355.
- Distain**, *v.t.* to stain, defile. R. 3. V. 3. 320; T. & C. I. 3. 241.
- Distance**, *sb.* hostility, variance. Mac. III. 2. 225.
- Distaste**, *v.t.* to be distasteful. Oth. III. 3. 377. *v.t.* to make distasteful. T. & C. II. 2. 123. To loathe. T. & C. II. 2. 66.
- Distasteful**, *adj.* repulsive. Tim. II. 2. 220.
- Distemper**, *sb.* disturbance of mind. H. 5. II. 2. 54; Ham. II. 2. 53.
- Distemper**, *v.t.* to disturb. Tw. N. II. 1. 5.
- Distempered**, *p.p.* disturbed. John, III. 4. 134. Ill-humoured, discomposed. John, IV. 3. 22; Tp. IV. 1. 145.
- Distemperature**, *sb.* disorder of body. C. of E. V. 1. 82. Disturbance of mind. M. N. Dr. II. 1. 106; R. & J. II. 3. 40; Per. V. 2. 49.
- Discomposed**, *appearance*. 1 H. 4. V. 2. 3.
- Distilled**, *p.p.* melted. Ham. I. 2. 204.
- Distilment**, *sb.* distillation. Ham. I. 2. 64.
- Distinctly**, *adv.* separately. Tp. I. 2. 200; Cor. III. 1. 206; IV. 3. 48.
- Distinguishment**, *sb.* distinction. W. T. II. 1. 86.
- Distractions**, *sb.* divisions, detachments. A. & C. III. 7. 77.
- Distrain**, *v.t.* to seize, take possession of. R. 2. II. 3. 131; 1 H. 6. I. 3. 62.

- Distraught**, *adj.* distracted, mad. R 3. III. 5.  
 1; R. & J. IV. 3. 49.  
**Distressful**, *adj.* gained by misery and toil.  
 H 5. IV. 1. 287.  
**Disvalue**, *v.t.* to depreciate. M. for M. v. 2.  
 221.  
**Diavouch**, *v.t.* to contradict. M. for M. IV. 4. 2.  
**Dive-dapper**, *sb.* a didapper, dab-chick. V. & A.  
 86.  
**Diverted**, *p.p.* turned from its natural course.  
 Aa. II. 3. 37.  
**Divinable**, *adj.* separated, divided. T. & C. I.  
 3. 105.  
**Dividant**, *adj.* separate, different. Tim. IV. 3. 5.  
**Division**, *sb.* variation. 1 H 4. III. 1. 211; R. &  
 J. III. 5. 29.  
**Divorcement**, *sb.* divorce. Oth. IV. 2. 158.  
**Divulged**, *p.p.* published, proclaimed. Tw. N.  
 1. 5. 279. Well divulged = of good repute.  
**Dizzy**, *adj.* causing dizziness. Lear. IV. 6. 12.  
**Dizy-eyed**, *adj.* blinded, as if by giddiness.  
 1 H 6. IV. 7. 12.  
**Do**, in the phrases, **Do him dead** = put him to  
 death. 3 H 6. L. 4. 108. **Do to death** = put to  
 death. M. A. V. 3. 3; 2 H 6. III. 2. 179. **Do  
 me right** = give me satisfaction; by fighting,  
 M. A. V. 1. 149; or drinking, 2 H 4. V. 3. 76.  
 See Oth. II. 3. 89, 90. **Could not do withal** =  
 could not help it. M. of V. III. 4. 72.  
**Document**, *sb.* precept, instruction. Ham. IV.  
 5. 178.  
**Doit**, *v.t.* to put off. T. of S. III. 2. 102; John,  
 III. 1. 158.  
**Dog-spes**, *sb.* male apes. Aa. II. 5. 27.  
**Dog-fox**, *sb.* a male fox. T. & C. V. 4. 12.  
**Dogged**, *adj.* cruel, unfeeling. John, IV. 1. 129;  
 IV. 3. 149; 2 H 6. III. 1. 158.  
**Doit**, *sb.* the German *denier*. The smallest piece  
 of money, a half-farthing. Tp. II. 2. 33;  
 M. of V. I. 3. 141.  
**Dole**, *sb.* grief. Ham. I. 2. 13. **Distribution**.  
 2 H 4. L. 1. 160. **Portion**. W. T. I. 2. 163.  
**Don**, *v.t.* to put on. Ham. IV. 5. 58; A. & C.  
 II. 1. 33.  
**Doomed**, *p.p.* decided. Cym. V. 5. 420.  
**Dotant**, *sb.* dotard. Cor. V. 2. 47.  
**Double-fatal**, *adj.* fatal in two ways, the leaves  
 of the yew being poisonous and the wood  
 used for bows as instruments of death. R 2.  
 III. 2. 177.  
**Doubt**, *sb.* fear, apprehension. 3 H 6. IV. 8. 37.  
**Dout**, *v.t.* to put out, extinguish. H 5. IV. 2.  
 11; Ham. IV. 7. 122.  
**Dowhs**, *sb.* coarse linen. 1 H 4. III. 3. 70.  
**Dowls**, *sb.* a small particle of plumage, down.  
 Tp. III. 3. 65.  
**Down-ward**, *adj.* hanging down about the  
 ankle like fetters. Ham. II. 2. 80.  
**Down-sweep**, *adj.* dipping, like the discharge  
 from the eyes and nostrils. H 5. IV. 2. 48.  
**Draak**, *sb.* a stranger. Ham. II. 5. 625.  
**Draughting**, *sb.* haunting loose women. Ham. II.  
 1. 5.  
**Draak**, *sb.* refuse, dregs. M. W. IV. 2. 109; 1 H 4.  
 1. 109.  
**Draak**, *sb.* a jakes, privy. T. & C. V. 1. 22;  
 1. 209.  
**Draw**, *v.t.* to undraw, draw aside. M. of V. II.  
 2. 1; Tw. N. I. 5. 251. **To withdraw**. 2 H 4.  
 II. 1. 162.  
**Drawer**, *sb.* a tapster, waiter. M. W. II. 2. 165.  
 1 H 4. II. 4. 7.  
**Drawn**, *p.p.* having the sword drawn. Tp. II.  
 1. 308; M. N's Dr. III. 2. 402.  
**Drawn of heaviness** = emptied by sorrow. Cym.  
 V. 4. 168.  
**Drawn fox**. A hunted fox, and therefore full  
 of cunning. 2 H 4. III. 3. 129.  
**Dreadfully**, *adv.* with dread or apprehension.  
 M. for M. IV. 2. 150.  
**Dress**, *v.t.* to prepare, make ready. H 5. IV. 1.  
 10; T. & C. I. 3. 166.  
**Dribbling**, *adj.* used of an arrow weakly shot,  
 not aimed point blank. M. for M. I. 3. 2.  
**Drive**, *v.t.* to rush impetuously. T. A. II. 3. 64.  
**Drollery**, *sb.* a puppet show. Tp. III. 3. 21. A  
 humorous painting. 2 H 4. II. 1. 125.  
**Droplet**, *sb.* a little drop, tear. Tim. V. 4. 76.  
**Drouth**, *sb.* thirst. V. & A. 544. Per. III.  
 prol. 8.  
**Drover**, *sb.* drover. M. A. II. 1. 201.  
**Drowse**, *v.t.* to grow drowsy. 1 H 4. III. 2. 81.  
**Drugs**, *sb.* drudges. Tim. IV. 3. 254.  
**Drum**. John Dr. M's entertainment is a good  
 beating. A. W. III. 6. 42.  
**Drumble**, *v.t.* to be sluggish or awkward. M. W.  
 III. 3. 156.  
**Dry**, *adj.* thirsty. Tp. I. 2. 112; T. of S. V. 2. 144.  
**Dry-beat**, *v.t.* to thrash, cudgel. L. L. L. V. 2.  
 263. R. & J. III. 1. 82; IV. 5. 126.  
**Dryfoot**. To draw dryfoot is to track game by  
 the scent. C. of E. IV. 2. 39.  
**Ducdame**, the burden of a song, which is pro-  
 bably intentional nonsense. Aa. II. 5. 56, 60.  
**Dudgeon**, *sb.* the handle of a dagger. Mac. II.  
 1. 46.  
**Due**, *v.t.* to endure. 1 H 6. IV. 2. 34.  
**Duello**, *sb.* the duelling code. L. L. L. I. 2. 185;  
 Tw. N. III. 4. 337.  
**Dull**, *adj.* tending to produce dainess, soothing.  
 2 H 4. IV. 5. 2.  
**Dullard**, *sb.* a stupid, insensible person. Lear.  
 II. 1. 76; Cym. V. 5. 265.  
**Dumbed**, *p.p.* silenced. A. & C. I. 5. 50.  
**Dump**, *sb.* a melancholy strain. Two G. III. 2.  
 85; Lucr. 1227.  
**Dumps**, *sb.* low spirits, melancholy. M. A. II.  
 3. 73; R. & J. IV. 5. 129.  
**Dun**, *sb.* a dun horse. In R. & J. I. 4. 47 there  
 is an allusion to a rustic game 'dun's in the  
 mire,' in which a log of wood represented a  
 horse in the mire, which had to be dragged  
 out by the company.  
**Dun** the mouse, a proverbial expression, the  
 meaning of which is lost. R. & J. I. 4. 40.  
**Dup**, *v.t.* to do open, open. Ham. IV. 5. 53.  
**Durance**, *sb.* imprisonment. M. for M. III. 1. 67;  
 Tw. N. V. 1. 255. A suited durance to prison  
 dress. C. of E. IV. 3. 27; 1 H 4. I. 2. 48.  
**Dusty**. 'Dusty death,' in which the body re-  
 turns to dust. Mac. V. 5. 23.  
**Each**, *at*. Each joined to the other, *and* to-  
 end. Lear. IV. 2. 35.  
**Eager**, *adj.* eager, acid. Ham. I. 3. 89; South-  
 CXXIII. 2.

- Ban**, *v.t.* to yearn, bring forth young; used of ewes. 3 H 6. II. 5. 36.  
**Baning time**, *sb.* the time for ewes to yearn or bring forth their young. M. of V. I. 3. 88; Per. III. 4. 6.  
**Banling**, *sb.* a young lamb. M. of V. I. 3. 80.  
**Bar**, *v.t.* to plough, till. A. W. I. 3. 47; R. a. III. 3. 212; A. & C. I. 4. 49.  
**Baring**, *sb.* ploughing. A. & C. I. 2. 115.  
**Barthed**, *p.p.* buried. Tp. II. 1. 234.  
**Barry**, *adj.* slight, inconsiderable. 3 H 4. V. 2. 71; 3 H 6. III. 1. 133.  
**Bathe**, *v.t.* to eke out. Per. III. prol. 13.  
**Becstasy**, *sb.* mental disturbance, produced by joy, grief, or fear. M. of V. III. 2. 112; Tp. III. 3. 108; M. A. II. 3. 157; Mac. III. 2. 22; Ham. III. 1. 168.  
**Effect**, *sb.* the accomplishment of a purpose. Mac. I. 5. 48; Ham. III. 4. 129. Purport. As. IV. 3. 35; John. IV. 1. 38.  
**Effectually**, *adv.* actually, in effect. Sonn. CXIII. 4.  
**Effuse**, *sb.* effusion. 3 H 6. II. 6. 28.  
**Effuse**, *v.t.* to shed. 1 H 6. V. 4. 52.  
**Effust**, *adj.* readiest. M. A. IV. 2. 38.  
**Effusoon**, *adv.* immediately. Per. V. 1. 256.  
**Egal**, *adj.* equal. T. A. IV. 4. 4.  
**Equally**, *adv.* equally. R. 3. III. 7. 213.  
**Eggs**. Will you take eggs for money = will you be imposed upon? W. T. I. 2. 161.  
**Eglantine**, *sb.* the sweet-brair. M. N's Dr. II. 1. 251; Cym. IV. 2. 223.  
**Emma**, blunder for 'emigna'. L. L. L. III. 1. 73.  
**Eisel**, *sb.* vinegar. Sonn. CXI. 10; Ham. V. 1. 299.  
**Eke**, *adv.* also. M. W. I. 3. 105; II. 3. 77. M. N's Dr. III. 1. 97.  
**Elbow**, *v.t.* to stand by the elbow, keep close to. Lear. IV. 3. 44.  
**Eld**, *sb.* old age. M. W. IV. 4. 36; M. for M. III. 1. 36.  
**Elect**, *adj.* chosen. H 8. II. 4. 60.  
**Element**, *sb.* the sky. Tw. N. I. 1. 26; H 5. IV. 1. 107; J. C. I. 3. 128.  
**Elf**, *v.t.* to entangle, mat together. Lear. II. 3. 10.  
**Elf**, *sb.* a fairy. M. N's Dr. V. 1. 400; Tp. V. 1. 33.  
**Elf-locks**, *sb.* hair matted together; supposed to be the work of fairies. R. & J. I. 4. 90.  
**Elvish-marked**, *adj.* marked by fairies. R. 3. I. 3. 228.  
**Emballing**, *sb.* the being invested with the ball and sceptre at coronation. H 8. II. 3. 47.  
**Embarrasments**, *sb.* hindrances, restraints. Cor. I. 10. 22.  
**Embassade**, *sb.* embassy. 3 H 6. IV. 3. 32.  
**Embassage**, *sb.* embassy, message. M. A. I. 1. 282; R. a. III. 4. 93.  
**Embattle**, *v.t.* to form in order of battle. A. & C. IV. 4. 3.  
**Embattled**, *p.p.* arrayed. M. W. II. 2. 260. John. IV. 2. 200; H 5. IV. 2. 14.  
**Embayed**, *p.p.* land-locked. Oth. II. 1. 28.  
**Emblaze**, *v.t.* to blazon, proclaim. 3 H 6. IV. 10. 76.  
**Embrace**, *v.t.* to drive to extremities, hunt down. A. W. III. 6. 207.  
**Embossed**, *adj.* foaming at the mouth. T. of S. Ind. I. 27; A. & C. IV. 13. 3. Swollen, prominent. As. II. 7. 67.  
**Embound**, *p.p.* enclosed. John. IV. 3. 137.  
**Embowelled**, *p.p.* emptied, exhausted. A. W. I. 3. 247.  
**Embracement**, *sb.* embrace. C. of E. I. 2. 44; R. 3. II. 2. 32.  
**Embrasure**, *sb.* embrace. T. & C. IV. 4. 39.  
**Embowed**, *p.p.* bathed in blood. T. A. II. 3. 222.  
**Eminence**. Present him eminence = treat him with distinction. Mac. III. 2. 31.  
**Emmanuel**, formerly written at the head of letters and deeda. 3 H 6. IV. 2. 106.  
**Emmew**, *v.t.* to mow up, keep under. M. for M. III. 1. 91. A doubtful word.  
**Empale**, *v.t.* to encircle. T. & C. V. 7. 5.  
**Imperial**, blunder for 'emperor', Tit. IV. 3. 94; and 'imperial', Tit. IV. 4. 40.  
**Empire**, *sb.* empire, dominion. H 3. I. 2. 226; R. 3. III. 7. 136.  
**Empiricist**, *adj.* empirical, quackish. Cor. II. 1. 128.  
**Empoison**, *v.t.* to poison. M. A. III. 1. 86; Cor. V. 6. 11.  
**Emulate**, *adj.* jealous, envious. Ham. I. 2. 82.  
**Emulation**, *sb.* jealous rivalry. J. C. II. 3. 14; T. & C. II. 2. 212.  
**Emulous**, *adj.* envious. T. & C. II. 3. 79.  
**Enact**, *sb.* action. T. A. IV. 2. 118.  
**Enacture**, *sb.* enactment, performance. Ham. III. 2. 207.  
**Enave**, *v.r.* to hide oneself. Oth. IV. 1. 82.  
**Enchantingly**, *adv.* as if by enchantment. As. I. 1. 174.  
**Encompassment**, *sb.* circumvention. Ham. II. 1. 10.  
**Encounters**, *sb.* encounterers, combatants. L. L. L. V. 2. 82.  
**Encumbered**, *p.p.* folded. Ham. I. 5. 174.  
**End**, *v.t.* to get in the harvest. A corruption of 'in'. Cor. V. 6. 37.  
**End**. Still an end = continually. C. of E. IV. 4. 67. There an end = there is no more to say. Two G. I. 3. 65; R. a. V. 1. 69.  
**Endamage**, *v.t.* to damage. Two G. II. 3. 43; 1 H 6. II. 1. 77.  
**Endamagement**, *sb.* damage. John. II. 2. 209.  
**Endart**, *v.t.* to dart. R. & J. I. 3. 94.  
**Endeared**, *p.p.* bound, indebted. 3 H 4. II. 3. 11; Tim. I. 2. 233; III. 2. 36.  
**Ends**, *sb.* fragments. M. A. I. 1. 290; R. 3. I. 3. 337.  
**Enfeoff**, *v.t.* to give as a fief, or in fee simple. 1 H 4. III. 2. 69.  
**Enforce**, *v.t.* to urge, press hard. Cor. III. 3. 3; J. C. IV. 3. 112. To lay stress upon. Oth. II. 3. 227; J. C. III. 2. 43.  
**Enforcedly**, *adv.* by constraint. Tim. IV. 3. 222.  
**Enforcement**, *sb.* constraint. As. II. 2. 114.  
**Enfranchisement**, *sb.* enfranchisement. A. & C. III. 13. 149.  
**Enfreedoming**, *p.p.* setting at liberty. L. L. L. III. 1. 125.  
**Engaged**, *p.p.* left as a hostage. 3 H 6. IV. 2. 95; V. 2. 44. Plighted. Tim. II. 2. 12.  
**Bound**, entangled. Ham. III. 3. 44.

- Engsol**, *v.t.* to imprison. R. a. L. 3. 166.  
**Engine**, *sb.* a machine of war. T. & C. II. 3. 743; Cor. V. 4. 19; Oth. III. 3. 355. An instrument of torture. Lear, I. 4. 290.  
**Engineer**, *sb.* engineer. Ham. III. 4. 206; T. & C. II. 3. 8.  
**Engulf**, *v.t.* to swallow up. H. 5. IV. 3. 83; Oth. I. 3. 57.  
**Engrafted**, *p.p.* firmly fixed, closely attached. Lear, I. 1. 301; a H. 4. II. 2. 67.  
**Engross**, *v.t.* to make gross, fatten. R. 3. III. 7. 76.  
**Engrossment**, *sb.* accumulation. a H. 4. IV. 5. 80.  
**Enguard**, *v.t.* to guard, protect. Lear, I. 4. 349.  
**Enkindle**, *v.t.* to incite. Mac. I. 3. 121.  
**Enlard**, *v.t.* to fatten. T. & C. II. 3. 205.  
**Enlarge**, *v.t.* to set at liberty. Tw. N. V. 1. 285; H. 5. II. 3. 40.  
**Enlarge**, *sb.* liberty, release from imprisonment. L. L. L. III. 1. 5; Cym. II. 3. 125.  
**Enmesh**, *v.t.* to ensnare. Oth. II. 3. 368.  
**Enormous**, *adj.* irregular, monstrous. Lear, II. 2. 176.  
**Enough**, *adj.* enough; used as a plural. M. of V. III. 5. 24; H. 5. IV. 1. 240.  
**Enpatron**, *v.t.* to be a patron, to patronize. Comp. 224.  
**Enpierced**, *p.p.* pierced. R. & J. 1. 4. 19.  
**Enrank**, *v.t.* to place in order. a H. 6. L. 1. 115.  
**Enrapt**, *p.p.* inspired. T. & C. V. 3. 65.  
**Enridded**, *p.p.* lying in riddes. Lear, IV. 6. 71.  
**Enround**, *v.t.* to encircle. H. 5. IV. chor. 36.  
**Ensoonce**, *v.t.* to hide, shelter. M. W. II. 2. 27; III. 3. 96; Lear. 1515.  
**Enseamed**, *adj.* defiled, filthy. Ham. III. 4. 92. See Seam. To enseam a hawk was to purge it of grease.  
**Ensear**, *v.t.* to dry up. Tim. IV. 3. 187.  
**Enshield**, *adj.* enshielded, protected. M. for M. II. 4. 80.  
**Entame**, *v.t.* to tame, subdue. As. III. 5. 48.  
**Entertain**, *v.t.* to take into one's service, engage. Two G. II. 4. 104; M. W. I. 3. 10; M. A. I. 3. 60.  
**Entertain**, *sb.* entertainment. Per. I. 1. 119.  
**Entertainment**, *sb.* service. Cor. IV. 3. 49; A. W. III. 6. 13; IV. 1. 17. Strain his entertainment = press his engagement in the service. Oth. III. 3. 250.  
**Entitled**, *p.p.* having a title or claim. L. L. L. V. 2. 822; Sonn. XXXVII. 7.  
**Entreat**, *v.t.* to treat. T. & C. IV. 4. 115; R. 3. IV. 4. 151.  
**Entreatments**, *sb.* invitations, solicitations. Ham. I. 3. 122.  
**Entreats**, *sb.* entreaties. R. 3. III. 7. 225; T. A. L. 1. 449, 483.  
**Envious**, *adj.* malicious, spiteful. M. of V. III. 2. 244; R. & J. III. 1. 173.  
**Enviously**, *adv.* spitefully. Ham. IV. 5. 6.  
**Envy**, *sb.* malice, spite. Tp. L. 2. 259; M. of V. IV. 1. 10. Fame and envy = envied or hated fame. Cor. I. 8. 4.  
**Envy**, *v.t.* to be envious, show malice. John, III. 4. 73; H. 8. V. 3. 112; Cor. III. 3. 95.  
**Encompass**, *v.t.* to encompass. Oth. II. 1. 87.  
**Ever**, *sb.* a boon companion. M. W. IV. 3. 19; a H. 4. II. 2. 264.  
**Epileptic**, *adj.* pale with fright and distorted with attempting to laugh, like the face of one in a fit of epilepsy. Lear, II. 2. 87.  
**Epithet**, *sb.* expression, phrase. M. A. V. 2. 67; L. L. L. IV. 2. 8; Oth. I. 1. 14.  
**Epitheton** = epithet. L. L. L. I. 2. 15.  
**Equal**, *v.t.* & *a.* to match. 3 H. 6. V. 5. 55; a H. 4. I. 3. 67.  
**Equal**, *adj.* just, impartial. L. L. L. IV. 3. 384; H. 8. II. 4. 18.  
**Equality**, *sb.* equality, partnership. A. & C. V. 1. 48.  
**Ercles**, Hercules. M. N's Dr. I. 2. 31, 42.  
**Erection**, blunder for 'direction'. M. W. III. 5. 41.  
**Erewhile**, *adv.* a short time since. M. N's Dr. III. 2. 274; As. II. 4. 80.  
**Eringoes**, *sb.* the roots of the sea-holly; supposed to be a provocative. M. W. V. 5. 23.  
**Errant**, *adj.* deviating. T. & C. I. 3. 9.  
**Erring**, *adj.* wandering, roving. As. III. 2. 138; Ham. L. 1. 154; Oth. I. 3. 362.  
**First**, *adv.* formerly. As. III. 5. 95; H. 5. V. 2. 48.  
**scape**, *sb.* a freak, wanton act. T. A. IV. 2. 113; Oth. I. 3. 197.  
**Escapen**, Escape. Per. II. prol. 36.  
**Eschew**, *v.t.* to avoid. M. W. V. 5. 251.  
**Escot**, *v.t.* to pay for. Ham. II. 2. 362.  
**Esperance**, *sb.* hope. T. & C. V. 2. 121; Lear, IV. 1. 4.  
**Espial**, *sb.* spy. a H. 6. L. 4. 8; IV. 3. 6. Ham. III. 1. 32.  
**Essay**, *sb.* proof, trial. Lear, I. 2. 47; Sonn. CX. 8.  
**Estate**, *sb.* rank, dignity. Ham. III. 2. 273; V. 1. 244; Mac. I. 4. 37; R. 3. III. 7. 213.  
**Estate**, *v.t.* to settle, bestow. Tp. IV. 1. 85; As. V. 2. 13.  
**Esteem**, *sb.* estimation. Sonn. CXXVII. 12; T. & C. III. 3. 129. Our esteem = what we are worth. A. W. V. 3. 1.  
**Estimable**, *adj.* valuable. M. of V. I. 3. 167.  
**Estimable**, *wonder* = admiration affecting the judgement. Tw. N. II. 1. 28.  
**Estimate**, *sb.* the rate at which anything is valued. Cor. III. 3. 114.  
**Estimation**, *sb.* conjecture. a H. 4. I. 3. 272.  
**Estridge**, *sb.* ostrich. a H. 4. IV. 1. 98; A. & C. III. 13. 197.  
**Eternal**, *adj.* perhaps for 'infernal'. J. C. I. 2. 160; Ham. I. 5. 21; V. 2. 376; Oth. IV. 2. 132.  
**Eterne**, *adj.* eternal. Mac. III. 2. 38; Ham. II. 2. 512.  
**Eternize**, *v.t.* to immortalise. a H. 6. V. 3. 31.  
**Even**, *v.t.* to even o'er = to pass smoothly over in his memory. Lear, IV. 7. 80. To equal, keep up with. A. W. L. 3. 3; Cym. III. 4. 184.  
**Even**, *adv.* to go even = to agree. Tw. N. V. 1. 246; Cym. I. 4. 47.  
**Even**, *adj.* straightforward. Ham. II. 2. 298.  
**Even**, *sb.* the plain truth. H. 5. II. 1. 128.  
**Evened**, *p.p.* made equal, quits. Oth. II. 1. 308.  
**Even Christian**, fellow Christian. Ham. V. 1. 32.  
**Even-plashed**, *p.p.* smoothly intertwined. H. 5. V. 2. 42.  
**Ever**, *adv.* not ever = not always. H. 8. V. 1. 130.  
**Ever** among, *adv.* continually. a H. 4. V. 3. 23.



- Evil**, *sb.* the king's evil, scrofula. Mac. IV. 3.  
**Evil**, *sb.* a privy, jakes. M. for M. II. 172;  
 H 8. II. 1. 67; comp. s. Kings 1. 27.  
**Evil-eyed**, *adj.* malignant in aspect. Cym. I. 1.  
**Evisitae**, *v.t.* to avoid. M. W. V. 5. 242.  
**Examine**, *v.t.* to question, doubt. A. W. III.  
 5. 66.  
**Example**, *v.t.* to illustrate by example. L. L. L.  
 I. 2. 121; III. 1. 84; H 5. I. 2. 156.  
**Exasperate**, *p.p.* exasperated. Mac. III. 6. 38;  
 T. & C. V. 1. 34.  
**Exceed**, *v.t.* to be of surpassing excellence.  
 M. A. III. 4. 17; Per. II. 3. 16.  
**Except**. 'Except before excepted' is a common  
 phrase in old leases. Tw. N. L. 3. 7.  
**Exclaim**, *sb.* exclamation, outcry. T. & C. V. 3.  
 91; R 2. I. 2. 2.  
**Excrement**, *sb.* anything which grows out of  
 the body, as hair, nails, &c. Used of the  
 hair. Ham. III. 4. 121; O. of E. II. 2. 79. Of  
 the beard. M. of V. III. 2. 87; W. T. IV. 2.  
 734. Of the moustache. L. L. L. V. 1. 109.  
**Executor**, *sb.* executioner. H 5. I. 2. 203.  
**Exempt**, *adj.* separated, remote from. O. of E.  
 II. 2. 173; A 5. II. 1. 15.  
**Exempt**, *v.t.* to take away from, remove. A. W.  
 II. 1. 198; H 8. I. 2. 89.  
**Exequies**, *sb.* funeral ceremonies. 1 H 6. III. 2.  
 133.  
**Exercise**, *sb.* a religious service. W. T. III. 2.  
 242; R 3. III. 2. 112; III. 7. 64; Oth. III. 4. 41.  
**Exhalation**, *sb.* a meteor. John. IV. 4. 153-  
 1 H 4. II. 4. 352; J. O. II. 1. 44.  
**Exhale**, *v.t.* to draw out. R 3. I. 2. 58; R. & J.  
 III. 5. 13; 1 H 4. V. 1. 19.  
**Exhaust**, *v.t.* to draw out. Tim. IV. 3.  
**Exhibition**, *sb.* an allowance, pension. Two G.  
 I. 3. 69; Lear. I. 2. 25; Oth. I. 3. 238. Blun-  
 der for commission. M. A. IV. 2. 3.  
**Exigent**, *sb.* exigence, critical moment. J. C.  
 V. 1. 19; A. & C. IV. 14. 63. End. 1 H 6.  
 II. 5. 9.  
**Exion**, blunder for 'action.' 2 H 4. II. 1. 32.  
**Exorciser**, *sb.* a conjurer who raises spirits.  
 Cym. IV. 2. 276.  
**Exorcism**, *sb.* conjuration for raising spirits.  
 2 H 6. I. 4. 5.  
**Exorcist**, *sb.* a conjurer who raises spirits. A. W.  
 V. 3. 305; J. C. II. 1. 323.  
**Expect**, *sb.* expectation. T. & C. I. 3. 70.  
**Expect**, *v.t.* to await. M. of V. V. 1. 49; A. & C.  
 IV. 2. 23.  
**Expectance**, *sb.* expectation. T. & C. IV. 5. 146.  
**Expectancy**, *sb.* hope. Ham. III. 1. 160; Oth.  
 II. 1. 41.  
**Expedience**, *sb.* haste, speed. R 2. II. 1. 287  
 H 5. IV. 3. 70. Expedition. 1 H 4. I. 1. 33  
 A. & C. I. 2. 185.  
**Expeditant**, *adj.* expeditious, speedy. John. II. 1.  
 60, 223; IV. 2. 268; R 3. I. 2. 217.  
**Expeditively**, *adv.* quickly. A 5. III. 1. 18.  
**Expense**, *sb.* expenditure, spending. Lear. II. 1.  
 102; M. W. II. 2. 147. Hence, loss. Sonn.  
 XXX. 8.  
**Expire**, *v.t.* to bring to an end. Sonn. XXII. 4.  
**Expire**, *p.p.* terminated. R 3. III. 3. 23.  
**Expire**, *v.t.* to bring to an end. R. & J. I. 4.  
 109.  
**Exploit**, *sb.* action, military service. A. W. I. 2.  
 17; IV. 2. 41.  
**Expostulate**, *v.t.* to expound, discuss in detail.  
 Two G. III. 1. 251; Ham. II. 2. 86.  
**Expostulation**, *sb.* friendly discussion. T. & C.  
 IV. 4. 62.  
**Exposure**, *sb.* exposure. Cor. IV. 1. 36.  
**Express**, *v.t.* to give expression to, utter. W. T.  
 III. 2. 28. *v.r.* to reveal oneself, make oneself  
 known. Tw. N. II. 1. 16.  
**Express**, *adj.* expressive, perfect. Ham. II. 2.  
 317.  
**Expressive**, *adj.* communicative. A. W. II. 1. 54.  
**Expressly**, *adv.* distinctly, perfectly. Lear. 1397;  
 T. & C. III. 3. 114.  
**Expressure**, *sb.* expression. T. & C. III. 3. 104;  
 Tw. N. II. 3. 172. Impression, trace. M. W.  
 V. 5. 71.  
**Expulsed**, *p.p.* expelled. 1 H 6. III. 3. 25.  
**Exsufficate**, *adj.* inflated; and so, empty, un-  
 substantial. Oth. III. 3. 182.  
**Extant**, *adj.* existing, present. T. & C. IV. 5.  
 168.  
**Extend**, *v.t.* to seize upon. A. & C. I. 2. 105.  
 To show as a favour. A. W. III. 6. 73.  
**Extent**, *sb.* seizure. A 5. III. 1. 17. Violent  
 attack. Tw. N. IV. 1. 57. Condescension,  
 favour. Ham. II. 2. 390. Display. T. A. IV.  
 4. 3.  
**Extenuate**, *v.t.* to mitigate, weaken the force of.  
 M. N's Dr. I. 1. 120. To depreciate. J. C.  
 III. 2. 42.  
**Exteriorly**, *adv.* externally. John. IV. 2. 257.  
**Exterminated**, *p.p.* exterminated. A 5. III. 5. 89.  
**Extern**, *adj.* external. Oth. I. 1. 63. Used as a  
 substantive. Sonn. CXXV. 2.  
**Extinct**, *p.p.* extinguished. R 2. I. 3. 222;  
 Ham. I. 3. 118.  
**Extincted**, *p.p.* extinguished. Oth. II. 1. 82.  
**Extincture**, *sb.* extinction. Comp. 294.  
**Extirp**, *v.t.* to extirpate, uproot. M. for M. III.  
 2. 110; 1 H 6. III. 3. 24.  
**Extolment**, *sb.* praise. Ham. V. 2. 120.  
**Extracting**, *adj.* distracting, drawing everything  
 else away with it, absorbing. Tw. N. V. 1. 282.  
**Extrahunt**, *p.p.* extracted, derived. 3 H 6. II. 2.  
 142.  
**Extravagancy**, *sb.* vagrancy, aimless wandering.  
 Tw. N. II. 1. 32.  
**Extravagant**, *adj.* wandering, vagrant. Ham. I.  
 1. 154; Oth. I. 2. 137.  
**Extremes**, *sb.* extravagances, whether of action  
 or passion; excesses. John. IV. 1. 108; V. 7.  
 23; T. A. III. 1. 226; W. T. IV. 4. 6. Extrama-  
 rities. R. & J. IV. 1. 62.  
**Extremity**, *sb.* the utmost of anything, whether  
 of calamity, severity or folly. Ham. II. 2. 292;  
 R 3. I. 1. 65; J. C. II. 2. 31; M. W. IV. 2. 73-74.  
**Eyas**, *sb.* a nestling, a young hawk just taken  
 from the nest. Ham. II. 2. 355.  
**Eyas-musket**, *sb.* the young male of the sparrow-  
 hawk. M. W. III. 3. 22.  
**Eye**, *sb.* a shade of colour. T 2. II. 5. 55.  
**Eye**, *v.t.* to appear, look. A. & C. I. 2. 77.  
**Eyes**, *sb.* eyes. L. L. L. V. 2. 206; M. N's Dr.  
 I. 1. 242, &c.

- Face**, *v.t.* to repair a garment with new facings. *H. 4. IV. 1. 24.* To oppose with effrontery, bully. *T. of S. IV. 3. 125; V. 1. 124.* To face me out of my wife—to make me out of my wife by sheer impudence. *Tw. N. IV. 1. 101.* To face me out of his acquaintance—impudently to pretend not to know me. *Tw. N. V. 1. 91.* See *H. 5. III. 7. 90.* To face it with a card of ten (*T. of S. II. 1. 407*) is a term at primero, which seems to mean to stand boldly upon a ten with the risk of the adversary having a higher card.
- Face**, *v.t.* to act with effrontery. *H. 6. V. 3. 125.*
- Facinorous**, *adj.* facinorous, wicked. *A. W. II. 3. 35.*
- Fact**, *sb.* a deed; used in a bad sense. *Mac. III. 6. 10; H. 6. IV. 1. 30.* Those of your fact = those who have done as you have done. *W. T. III. 2. 85.*
- Factious**, *adj.* taking part in a quarrel. *Cor. V. 2. 30.*
- Faction**, *adj.* active in a quarrel. *R. 3. I. 3. 128; J. C. I. 3. 118.*
- Factor**, *sb.* agent. *H. 4. III. 2. 147; R. 3. III. 7. 134.*
- Faculty**, *sb.* power, ability. *A. W. I. 3. 232; Mac. I. 7. 17; Ham. II. 2. 317.* Quality, essential nature. *H. 5. I. 1. 66; J. C. I. 3. 67.*
- Fadge**, *v.t.* to turn out, succeed. *L. L. L. V. 1. 154; Tw. N. II. 2. 34.*
- Fading**, *sb.* the burden of a song. *W. T. IV. 4. 195.*
- Fall**, *sb.* failure. *W. T. II. 3. 170; V. 1. 27; Cym. III. 4. 66.*
- Fain**, *adj.* glad, pleased. *H. 6. II. 1. 8.*
- Obliged**. *H. 4. II. 1. 153; Lear. IV. 7. 38.*
- Fain**, *adv.* gladly. *Temp. I. 1. 72; As. I. 2. 170; Oth. IV. 1. 175.*
- Fair**, *sb.* fairness, beauty. *V. & A. 1083, 1086; M. N's Dr. I. 1. 182; As. III. 2. 99.*
- Fair**, *v.t.* to make beautiful. *Sonn. CXXVII. 6.*
- Fair-betrothed**, honourably contracted. *Per. V. 3. 71.*
- Fairing**, *sb.* anything bought at a fair. *L. L. L. V. 2. 2.*
- Fairy**, *sb.* an enchantress. *A. & C. IV. 8. 12.*
- Faithful**, *p.p.* credited. *Lear. II. 1. 72.*
- Faithless**, *adj.* unbelieving. *M. of V. II. 4. 38.*
- Faithor**, *sb.* evildoer. *H. 4. II. 4. 173.*
- Fall**, *sb.* a cadence in music. *Tw. N. I. 2. 4.*
- At fall** = at sobb. *Tim. II. 2. 214.*
- Fall**, *v.t.* to fall away, diminish. *H. 5. V. 2. 167.*
- To let fall**, brought forth. *John. III. 1. 90; M. of V. I. 3. 81.*
- Fall**, *v.t.* to let fall. *Temp. II. 1. 206; T. & C. I. 3. 179.* To bring forth. *M. of V. I. 3. 89.*
- Fall away**, *v.t.* to desert. *A. & C. IV. 6. 17; H. 8. II. 2. 129.*
- Fall**, *p.p.* swatted. *Cym. III. 7. 6.*
- Fall**, *sb.* desertion. *Tim. IV. 3. 401.*
- Fall**, *adj.* yellowish brown. *M. W. I. 3. 91.*
- Fall**, *v.t.* to perfume oneself, be untrue. *Cym. II. 3. 74.*
- Falseness**. *M. for M. II. 4. 170; J. C. III. 3. 107.*
- Famous**, *adj.* famous. *Sonn. LXXXIV. 11.*
- Famous**, *adj.* attendant spirit. *L. L. L. I. 2. 122.*
- Famous**, *p.p.* renowned. *Sonn. XXV. 9.*
- Fan**, *v.t.* to winnow, test. *Cym. I. 6. 177.*
- Fancy**, *sb.* love. *M. N's Dr. I. 2. 135; Tw. N. I. 1. 14.*
- Fancy**, *v.t.* & *i.* to love. *Two G. III. 1. 67; Tw. N. II. 5. 29; T. & C. V. 2. 165.*
- Fancy-free**, *adj.* free from the power of love. *M. N's Dr. II. 1. 164.*
- Fancy-monger**, *sb.* one who deals in love. *As. III. 2. 382.*
- Fancy-sick**, *adj.* love-sick. *M. N's Dr. III. 2. 96.*
- Fang**, *v.t.* to seize. *Tim. IV. 3. 23.*
- Fangled**, *adj.* given to novel fancies. *Cym. V. 4. 134.*
- Fantastic**, *adj.* created by fancy, imaginary. *R. 2. I. 3. 299.* Strange, prodigious. *T. & C. V. 5. 38.*
- Fantastical**, *adj.* imaginary, existing in the imagination. *Mac. I. 3. 53.* Imaginative. *Tw. N. I. 1. 15.*
- Fantasticoes**, *sb.* coxcombs. *R. & J. II. 4. 30.*
- Fap**, *adj.* drunk. *M. W. I. 1. 183.*
- Far**, *adv.* further. *W. T. IV. 4. 442.*
- Far**. To speak one far is to praise him excessively. *Cym. I. 2. 24.*
- Farced**, *adj.* stuffed out, pompous. *H. 5. IV. 1. 280.*
- Fardel**, *sb.* a burden, pack, bundle. *W. T. IV. 4. 728; Ham. III. 1. 76.*
- Far-fet**, *adj.* far-fetched, deep. *H. 6. III. 1. 293.*
- Farrow**, *sb.* the pigs of a litter. *Mac. IV. 2. 65.*
- Farthingale**, *sb.* a hoop petticoat. *Two G. II. 7. 51; IV. 4. 42; M. W. III. 3. 69.*
- Fartuous**, blunder for 'virtuous'. *M. W. II. 2. 100.*
- Fashions**, *sb.* a skin disease in horses (*Fr. farcin*). *T. of S. III. 2. 53.*
- Fast**, *p.p.* fasted. *Cym. IV. 2. 347.*
- Fast**, *adj.* firm, settled. *Lear. I. 1. 59.*
- Fast**, *adv.* unilaterally. *M. for M. II. 5. 121; H. 6. V. 2. 21.*
- Fastened**, *adj.* resolute, obdurate. *Lear. II. 1. 79.*
- Fastly**, *adv.* quickly. *Comp. 61.*
- Fat**, *adj.* cloying. *Tw. N. V. 1. 112.* *sb.* vat. *A. & C. II. 7. 122.* *v.t.* to fatten. *M. N's Dr. II. 1. 97; Ham. II. 2. 607; IV. 3. 23. 24.*
- Fatigate**, *adj.* wearied, fatigued. *Cor. II. 2. 121.*
- Fault**, *sb.* misfortune. *M. W. I. 3. 95; III. 3. 233; Per. IV. 2. 79.* A defect or interruption in the scent of the game. *Tw. N. II. 5. 140; T. of S. Ind. I. 20; V. & A. 694.*
- Favour**, *sb.* outward appearance, aspect. *M. N's Dr. I. 1. 126; As. IV. 3. 87; Mac. I. 3. 72.* In the plural, features. *H. 4. III. 2. 136; Lear. III. 7. 49.*
- Fay**, *sb.* faith. *R. & J. 1. 3. 128; Ham. II. 2. 271.*
- Fear**, *sb.* an object of fear. *M. N's Dr. V. 1. 21; Ham. III. 3. 25.*
- Fear**, *v.t.* to frighten. *M. for M. II. 2. 2; M. of V. II. 1. 9.* To fear for. *M. of V. III. 5. 33.*
- Fearful**, *adj.* terrible. *Tp. I. 2. 46.* Causing apprehension, alarming. *M. of V. I. 3. 176; Tw. N. I. 5. 22; John. IV. 2. 105.*
- Feat**, *adj.* neat, dexterous. *Cym. V. 3. 22.*
- Feat**, *v.t.* to fashion, form. *Cym. I. 2. 49.*

- Feater, adv.** more neatly or gracefully. *TP. II.* 1. 273.
- Featly, adv.** gracefully. *TP. I. a. 380; W. T. IV. 4. 176.*
- Feature, sb.** form, shape, the whole external appearance. *Two G. II. 4. 73; R. 3. I. 1. 19.*
- Federary, sb.** confederate. *W. T. II. 1. 90.*
- Fee, sb.** worth, value. *Ham. I. 4. 63.*
- Feeble, v.t.** to weaken. *John. V. 2. 146; Cor. I. 1. 199.*
- Feeder, sb.** servant. *As. II. 4. 99; A. & C. III. 13. 109.*
- Feeding, sb.** pasturage. *W. T. IV. 4. 169.*
- Fee-farm, sb.** a tenure unlimited in duration. *T. & C. III. 2. 53.*
- Fee-grief, sb.** a special grief, which none can share. *Mac. IV. 3. 196.*
- Felicitate, adj.** made happy. *L. L. I. 1. 76.*
- Fell, adj.** fierce, cruel. *M. N's Dr. II. 1. 20; Tw. N. I. 2. 22. sb.* skin, fleecy. *As. III. 2. 53; Mac. V. 5. 11; Lear. V. 3. 24. p.p.* fallen. *Lear. IV. 6. 54; T. A. II. 4. 30; Tim. IV. 3. 265.*
- Fell-lurking, adj.** lying in wait with a savage purpose. *H. 6. V. 1. 146.*
- Fellies, sb.** the parts which form the rim of a wheel. *Ham. II. 2. 517.*
- Fellow, sb.** equal. *TP. II. 1. 274; III. 1. 84; J. C. III. 1. 62. v.t.* to match with. *W. T. I. 2. 142.*
- Fellowly, adj.** companionable, sympathetic. *TP. V. 1. 64.*
- Fence, sb.** skill in fencing. *M. A. V. 1. 75; Tw. N. III. 4. 312; John. II. 1. 200.*
- Fendary, sb.** confederate. *M. for M. II. 4. 122; Cym. III. 2. 21.*
- Fere, sb.** consort, spouse. *T. A. IV. 1. 89; Per. prol. 21.*
- Fervency, sb.** eager haste. *A. & C. II. 5. 18.*
- Festinate, adj.** hasty. *Lear. III. 7. 10.*
- Festinely, adv.** hastily, quickly. *L. L. I. III. 1. 6.*
- Fet, p.p.** fetched. *H. 5. III. 1. 18.*
- Fetch, sb.** an artifice, contrivance. *Ham. II. 1. 38; Lear. II. 4. 90.*
- Fettle, v.t.** to prepare, trim up. *R. & J. III. 5. 154.*
- Few, in.** In few words. *H. 5. I. 2. 245. In short. TP. I. 2. 144.*
- Few, in a.** In few words. *T. of S. I. 2. 52.*
- Fewness, sb.** brevity. *M. for M. I. 4. 39.*
- Fie, sb.** a fig (Span.). *M. W. I. 3. 33.*
- Field, sb.** a battle-field, battle. *M. of V. II. 1. 26; H. 4. V. 3. 16; Oth. I. 3. 133; Lear. 58. 72.*
- Field-bed, sb.** a camp bed. *R. & J. II. 4. 40.*
- Fielded, adj.** in the battle-field. *Cor. I. 4. 12.*
- Fifteenth, sb.** the fifteenth part of a man's goods and personal estate. *H. 6. I. 1. 133. p4. fifteens. H. 6. IV. 7. 25.*
- Fig, v.t.** to taunt by an insulting gesture. *H. 4. V. 3. 123.*
- Fig, sb.** an insulting gesture of Spanish origin. *H. 5. III. 6. 62.* There is perhaps a reference to the poisoned fig of Spanish revenge.
- Fights, sb.** cloths hung round a ship to conceal the men from the enemy. *M. W. II. 2. 142.*
- Figa, sb.** an expression of contempt, accompanied by an insulting gesture in which the thumb was thrust between the first and second fingers and the hand closed. *H. 5. III. 6. 60; IV. 1. 60.*
- Figures, sb.** imaginary forms, ideas. *H. 4. I. 3. 209; M. W. IV. 2. 221; J. C. II. 1. 231.*
- File, sb.** list, catalogue. *Mac. III. 1. 95; V. 2. 2.*
- File, v.t.** to defile. *Mac. III. 1. 62. To smooth, polish. L. L. I. V. 1. 12. v.t.* to walk in file, keep pace with. *H. 8. III. 2. 171.*
- Fill-horse, sb.** shaft-horse. *M. of V. II. 2. 100.*
- Fills, sb.** shafts. *T. & C. III. 2. 48.*
- Filch, sb.** a term of contempt, applied to prostitutes. *Oth. V. 2. 231. General filches—common whores. Tim. IV. 1. 6.*
- Find, v.t.** to provide, furnish. *H. 5. I. 2. 72. To find out. Ham. III. 1. 193.*
- Find forth=find out.** *M. of V. I. 1. 143; C. of R. I. 2. 37.*
- Fine, sb.** end. *M. A. I. 1. 247; A. W. IV. 4. 35; Ham. V. 1. 115.*
- Fine, v.t.** to pay as a fine. *H. 5. IV. 7. 72. To put an end to. Lear. 936.*
- Fineless, adj.** infinite. *Oth. III. 3. 173.*
- Fire, sb.** virago. *Tw. N. III. 4. 302.*
- Fire-drake, sb.** a meteor, will o' the wisp. *H. 8. V. 4. 45.*
- Fire-new, adj.** fresh from the mint, brand new. *Tw. N. III. 2. 23; R. 3. I. 3. 256; Lear. V. 3. 132.*
- Firk, v.t.** to beat. *H. 5. IV. 4. 20. 33.*
- Firthing, sb.** first offspring. *T. & C. prol. 27; Mac. IV. 1. 147.*
- Fishified, p.p.** turned into fish. *R. & J. II. 4. 40.*
- Fisnomy, sb.** physiognomy. *A. W. IV. 3. 42.*
- Fit, sb.** a twist, contortion. *H. 8. I. 3. 7.*
- Fitchew, sb.** a pole-cat. *T. & C. V. 2. 67; Lear. IV. 6. 124; Oth. IV. 1. 130.*
- Fifful, adj.** full of fits or paroxysms. *Mac. III. 2. 23.*
- Fidly, adv.** properly, becomingly. *Cor. I. 1. 116; IV. 2. 34; Lear. I. 1. 203.*
- Filutent, sb.** what is befitting. *Cym. V. 5. 409; Per. IV. 6. 6.*
- Fitted, p.p.** tortured, as by fits. *Sonn. OXIX. 7.*
- Fives, sb.** Fr. *avives*, an inflammation of the parotid glands in horses. *T. of S. III. 2. 54.*
- Fixture, sb.** setting. *M. W. III. 3. 67.*
- Fixure, sb.** stability. *T. & C. I. 3. 102. Settling, fixedness. W. T. V. 3. 67.*
- Flaky, adj.** broken into flakes. *R. 3. V. 2. 88.*
- Flag-dragon, sb.** a snap-dragon, or small inflammable body floating in liquor, and to be swallowed burning. *L. L. I. V. 2. 45; H. 4. II. 4. 267.*
- Flag-dragon, v.t.** to toss down like a flag-dragon. *W. T. III. 3. 100.*
- Flag-jack, sb.** a pancake. *Per. II. 2. 87. 229.*
- Suffolk an apple turnover.**
- Flask, sb.** a powder horn. *L. L. I. V. 2. 691.*
- R. & J. III. 3. 132.**
- Flat, adj.** that's flat—that is positive. *L. L. I. III. 1. 202; H. 4. I. 3. 218; R. 3. V. 2. 88.*
- Flatlong, adv.** flat. *TP. II. 1. 20.*
- Flatness, sb.** completeness. *W. T. III. 2. 129.*
- Flamta, sb.** flattery. *W. T. IV. 3. 21.*
- Flaw, sb.** a gust or blast of wind. *Cor. V. 2. 121.*
- Ham. V. 2. 239. A flake of ice—R. 3. V. 2. 88.*

- IV. 4. 35. Passionate outburst. M. for M. II. 3. 21; Mac. III. 4. 63. v.f. to make a flaw in, to break. H 8. I. 2. 95; I. 2. 21.
- Flecked, p.p. spotted. R. & J. II. 3. 3.
- Fleer, *sb.* a sneer. Oth. IV. 1. 83. v.f. to grin, sneer. L. L. I. V. 2. 109; J. C. I. 3. 117; M. A. V. 1. 58.
- Fleet, v.f. to float. A. & C. III. 13. 171. To pass away rapidly, flit. M. of V. III. 2. 108; IV. 1. 135; John. II. 1. 285. v.f. to cause to pass rapidly. As. I. 1. 124.
- Fleeting, *adj.* inconstant, unstable. Lucr. 212; R 3. I. 4. 55; A. & C. V. 2. 240.
- Fleishment, *sb.* the encouragement given by a first success. Lear, II. 2. 130.
- Flewed, *adj.* with large hanging chaps. M. N's Dr. IV. 1. 105.
- Flexure, *sb.* bowing, bending. H 5. IV. 1. 272; T. & O. II. 3. 115.
- Flight, *sb.* a long and light-feathered arrow for shooting great distances. M. A. I. 1. 40.
- Flighty, *adj.* swift. Mac. IV. 1. 145.
- Flirt-gill, *sb.* a light wench. R. & J. II. 4. 162.
- Flood-gate, *adj.* rushing, impetuous. Oth. I. 3. 56.
- Flote, *sb.* flood, sea. Tp. I. 2. 234.
- Flourish, *sb.* ornament. R 3. I. 3. 241; Ham. II. 2. 91.
- Flourish, v.f. to embellish, gloss over. M. for M. IV. 1. 75.
- Flower-de-luce, *sb.* the iris, or fleur de lis. W. T. IV. 4. 127; H 5. V. 2. 224; H 6. I. 1. 80; I. 2. 90.
- Flush, *adj.* full of vigour. Tim. v. 4. 3; Ham. III. 3. 81; A. & C. I. 4. 52.
- Flushing, *sb.* filling to the full. Ham. I. 2. 155.
- Fluxive, *adj.* flowing with tears. Comp. 50.
- Flying at the brook. Hawking at waterfowl. H 6. II. 1. 1.
- Fob, v.f. to fob off—to put off with a jest. Cor. I. 1. 97.
- Fobbed, p.p. cheated, deluded. H 4. I. 2. 68.
- Foil, *sb.* defeat. H 6. III. 3. 11; V. 3. 23; Tp. III. 1. 46.
- Foil, v.f. to defeat, mar. Pass. P. 99.
- Foin, *sb.* a thrust in fencing. Lear, IV. 6. 251.
- Foin, v.f. to make a thrust. M. W. II. 3. 24; M. A. V. 1. 84.
- Foison, *sb.* plenty, abundance. Tp. II. 1. 163; IV. 1. 120; Mac. IV. 3. 88.
- Folly, *sb.* wantonness. T. & C. v. 2. 18; Oth. V. 2. 132.
- Folly-fallen, *adj.* grown foolish. Tw. N. III. 1. 75.
- Fond, *adj.* foolish. M. for M. v. 1. 105; Cor. IV. 1. 26; J. C. III. 1. 39.
- Fond, v.f. to dote. Tw. N. II. 2. 35.
- Fonder, *adj.* more foolish. T. & C. I. 2. 10.
- Fondling, *sb.* darling. V. & A. 229.
- Fondly, *adv.* foolishly. John. II. 1. 258; R 2. III. 2. 185.
- Foot, *sb.* a term of endearment and compassion. W. T. II. 1. 118; As. II. 1. 28; Lear, V. 3. 205.
- Foot-legged, *adj.* so foolish that the guardianship of it might be asked for as being unable to take care of itself. C. of E. II. 1. 41.
- Foot-loor, *adj.* born of fools. H 4. V. 5. 59.
- Foot, v.f. to spurn. M. of V. I. 3. 119; Cym. III. 5. 148. To strike or seize with the foot (of an eagle). Cym. v. 4. 116.
- Foot-cloth, *sb.* a saddle-cloth hanging to the ground. H 6. IV. 7. 51. Used as an adjective. H 6. IV. 1. 54; R 3. III. 4. 86.
- Footed, p.p. landed. H 5. II. 4. 143; Lear, III. 3. 14; III. 7. 45.
- Foot-land rakers, vagabond foot-pads. H 4. II. 1. 81.
- Fop, *sb.* a fool, trifler. Lear, I. 2. 14.
- Fopped, p.p. cheated, duped. Oth. IV. 2. 197.
- Foppery, *sb.* folly. M. of V. II. 5. 35; Lear, I. 2. 128. Deceit, trickery. M. W. V. 5. 131.
- Poppish, *adj.* foolish. Lear, I. 4. 182.
- For, *conj.* because. Tp. I. 2. 172; M. N's Dr. IV. 1. 187. In order that. H 6. III. 1. 9; III. 2. 154.
- For because, *conj.* because. W. T. II. 1. 7; John. II. 1. 182.
- For is equivalent to 'for want of' in the phrases: 'for action', H 5. I. 2. 114; 'for breath', Mac. I. 5. 37; 'for food', Cym. III. 6. 17; 'for hope', R 3. V. 3. 173; 'for succour', As. II. 4. 75. In the following passages it is equivalent to 'for fear of': Two G. I. 2. 136; H 6. IV. 1. 74; Per. I. 1. 40; Sonn. LII. 4.
- Forage, v.f. to range abroad, for prey. John, V. 1. 59; H 5. I. 2. 110.
- Forbid, p.p. under a curse, bewitched. Mac. I. 3. 21.
- Forbidden, p.p. forbidden. Comp. 164.
- Force, v.f. to strengthen. Mac. v. 5. 5. To regard, care for. L. L. I. V. 2. 440; Lucr. 2021. To urge, enforce. M. for M. III. 1. 110; Cor. III. 2. 51. To stuff. T. & C. II. 2. 232; V. 1. 64.
- Force, *of*, Of importance, weighty. H 6. III. 1. 157; H 6. I. 3. 166. Of necessity. M. N's Dr. III. 2. 40; M. of V. IV. 1. 56.
- Forced, *adj.* constrained, unnatural. W. T. II. 3. 78; IV. 4. 41; H 4. III. 1. 135.
- Force perform, in spite of opposition. John, III. 1. 142; H 4. IV. 1. 116; IV. 4. 46.
- Forceful, *adj.* powerful. W. T. II. 1. 163.
- Fordo, v.f. to undo, destroy. Ham. II. 1. 103; V. 1. 244; Lear, V. 255, 291; Oth. v. 1. 159.
- Fordone, p.p. exhausted. M. N's Dr. v. 1. 381.
- Fore-end, *sb.* the earlier part. Cym. III. 3. 73.
- Foregoers, *sb.* predecessors, ancestors. A. W. II. 3. 144.
- Forehand, *adj.* anticipated. M. A. IV. 1. 51. A forehand shaft was an arrow for shooting point blank. H 4. III. 2. 35. *sb.* advantage, superiority. H 5. IV. 1. 297. A prominent member, leader. T. & C. I. 3. 143.
- Foreign, *adj.* living abroad. H 8. II. 2. 129.
- Foreknowing, *sb.* foreknowledge. Ham. I. 2. 134.
- Forepast, *adj.* previous. A. W. v. 3. 121.
- Foresay, v.f. to predestine. Cym. IV. 2. 146.
- Forestall, v.f. to anticipate anything, and so deprive it of its value. T. & C. I. 3. 199; H 4. v. 2. 38.
- Forethink, v.f. to anticipate. H 4. III. 2. 28; Cym. III. 4. 172.
- Forethought, p.p. predestined. John. III. 512.

- Foreward, sb.** vanguard. R. 3. V. 3. 393.  
**Forfeit, adj.** liable to punishment. M. for M. II. a. 73; III. a. 206. **Forfeited.** M. of V. III. a. 319; IV. i. 230. *sb.* 'the forfeit of my servant's life' = the life which he has forfeited. R. 3. II. i. 99.  
**Forlorn, v.t.** to forlorn. R. a. IV. i. 129; Oth. v. a. 32, 186.  
**Forbidden, p.p.** forbidden. Lear. v. i. 12.  
**Forgetive, adj.** inventive. a H. d. IV. 3. 107.  
**Forgot, p.p.** you are thus forgot = you have thus forgotten yourself. Oth. II. 3. 188.  
**Fork, sb.** the forked tongue of a snake. M. for M. III. i. 16; Mac. IV. i. 16. The barbed head of an arrow. Lear. i. i. 146. The part where the body divides. Lear. IV. 6. 121.  
**Forked, adj.** barbed. As. II. i. 24. **Horned as a cuckold.** W. T. i. 2. 186.  
**Formal, adj.** rational. C. of E. v. i. 105; Tw. N. II. 5. 128. **Regular.** R. 3. III. i. 82.  
**Former, adj.** foremost. J. C. v. i. 80.  
**Formerly, adv.** previously. M. of V. IV. i. 362.  
**Forslow, v.t.** to delay. 3 H. 6. II. i. 56.  
**Forspeak, v.t.** to speak against. A. & C. III. 7. 3.  
**Forspent, p.p.** wearied, exhausted. 2 H. 4. I. i. 37; 3 H. 6. II. 3. 1.  
**Forted, adj.** fortified. M. for M. V. i. 12.  
**Forth, prep.** out of. M. N's Dr. I. i. 164; 1 H. 6. I. 2. 54; Cor. i. 4. 23.  
**Forthcoming, adj.** under arrest, ready to be produced when called for. 2 H. 6. II. i. 179.  
**Forth-right, sb.** a straight path. Tp. III. 3. 3 T. & C. III. 3. 158.  
**Fortune, v.t.** to assign as a man's fortune. A. & C. I. 2. 77. *v.i.* to happen. Two G. v. 4. 169.  
**Forwearied, p.p.** worn out, exhausted. John. II. i. 233.  
**Fosset-coller, sb.** a seller of taps. Cor. II. i. 79.  
**Foul, adj.** ugly. T. of S. I. 2. 69; As. III. 3. 39; V. & A. 133; Sonn. CXXVII. 6.  
**Foulness, sb.** ugliness. As. III. 3. 40; III. 5. 66.  
**Found, p.p.** well found = well furnished, or, according to some, well approved. A. W. II. 1. 105.  
**Founder, v.t.** to make a horse footsore. Tp. IV. i. 30; a H. 4. IV. 3. 39.  
**Foutra.** An expression of contempt. a H. 4. v. 3. 109, 120.  
**Fox, sb.** a broadsword. H. 5. IV. 4. 3.  
**Foxship, sb.** cunning and ingratitude, the characteristics of a fox. Cor. IV. 2. 18.  
**Fractal, p.p.** broken. H. 5. II. i. 130; Tim. II. 1. 22.  
**Fraction, sb.** breach, discord. T. & C. II. 3. 107.  
**Fractions, sb.** broken fragments, scraps. T. & C. v. 2. 158; Tim. II. a. 250.  
**Frame, sb.** order, disposition. M. A. IV. i. 130. Schmidt interprets it 'mould'. Form. M. 401 M. v. i. 61. **Contrivance.** M. A. IV. i. 19. *v.t.* to repair, resort. Per. prol. 32.  
**Frampold, adj.** turbulent, quarrelsome. M. W. II. a. 94.  
**Franchised, adj.** free. Mac. II. i. 28.  
**Frank, sb.** a sty. a H. 4. II. a. 160. *adj.* liberal. Lear. III. 4. 20.  
**Frankly, adv.** liberally. M. for M. III. 2. 106.  
**ranked, p.p.** shut up in a frank or sty. R. 3. I. 3. 314; IV. 5. 3.  
**rankin, sb.** a freeholder, yeoman. W. T. v. a. 173; 1 H. 4. II. i. 60; Cym. III. a. 79.  
**raught, sb.** freight, cargo, load. Tw. N. v. 2. 64; Tit. I. i. 72; Oth. III. 3. 449. *v.t.* to load, burden. Cym. I. i. 126. *p.p.* laden. M. of V. II. 8. 30. **Stored.** Two G. III. a. 70; H. 5. II. a. 139.  
**raughtage, sb.** freight, cargo. C. of E. IV. i. 87; T. & C. prol. 13.  
**raughting, p.p.** constituting the freight. Tp. I. 2. 13.  
**Frayed, p.p.** frightened. T. & C. III. a. 34.  
**Free, adj.** innocent. Ham. II. a. 590; III. a. 252. **Noble, generous.** Tw. N. I. 5. 292; T. & C. IV. 5. 139. **Careless, happy.** Tw. N. II. 4. 46.  
**freeness, sb.** generosity. Cym. v. 5. 421.  
**free-town.** Villafranca. R. & J. I. 1. 109.  
**French crown, sb.** the baldness caused by venereal disease. M. N's Dr. I. a. 97, 99.  
**Fresh, sb.** a spring of fresh water. Tp. III. a. 75.  
**Fresh-brook, sb.** a stream of fresh water. Tp. I. 2. 463.  
**Fret, v.t.** to eat or wear away. R. 2. III. 3. 167; Lear. I. 4. 307. *To agitate, vex.* 3 H. 6. II. 6. 35; Ham. III. a. 388 (with a play upon the word as in H. 8. III. a. 105). *To mark as with patterns, variegate, adorn.* J. C. II. i. 104; Ham. II. a. 313; Cym. II. 4. 82.  
**Fretful, adj.** fretting, gnawing. a H. d. III. a. 403.  
**Frets, sb.** the stops of a guitar or lute. Lucr. 1140; T. of S. II. i. 150, 153. They are pieces of wire fastened upon the instrument to guide the movement of the fingers.  
**Fretted, p.p.** variegated, various. A. & C. IV. 12. 8.  
**Fretten, p.p.** agitated, worried. M. of V. IV. i. 77.  
**Friend, sb.** at friend = friendly. W. T. v. 2. 140. *To friend* = as a friend. J. C. III. 2. 143; Mac. IV. 3. 10.  
**Friend, v.t.** to befriend, favour. H. 5. IV. 5. 17; M. for M. IV. 2. 116.  
**Friending, sb.** friendship. Ham. I. 5. 185.  
**Friperie, sb.** an old clothes shop. Tp. IV. 2. 225.  
**Frollic, adj.** merry. M. N's Dr. v. i. 394; T. of S. IV. 3. 184.  
**From, prep.** different from, contrary to. M. A. III. i. 72; Tw. N. I. 5. 201; V. i. 340; 1 H. 4. III. a. 31; J. C. II. i. 196.  
**Front, v.t.** to confront, oppose. A. & C. II. a. 62. *To stand in front of.* T. & C. IV. 5. 299. *v.i.* to march in front. H. 8. I. a. 42.  
**Frontier, sb.** an outwork in fortification. 2 H. 4. II. 3. 55. *Used figuratively.* 2 H. 4. I. 3. 19.  
**Frontlet, sb.** a band for the forehead; *used figuratively.* Lear. I. 4. 208.  
**Fruitful, adj.** bountiful. Oth. I. 3. 347. *Plentiful.* M. for M. IV. 3. 162.  
**Fruitfully, adv.** fully, plentifully. A. W. II. a. 73; Lear. IV. 6. 270.  
**Frush, v.t.** to bruise, batter. T. & C. v. 2. 20.  
**Frustrate, p.p.** frustrated. Tp. III. 3. 10; A. & C. v. 2. 2.

- Frutify**, blunder for 'certify.' *M.* of *V.* II. 2.  
 142.  
**Fubbed off**, *p.p.* put off with excuses. *H.* 4.  
 II. 1. 37. See *Fob*.  
**Full**, *v.t.* to fill to the full. *Sonn.* CXXXVI. 5;  
*Lear*, 128; *T. & C.* prol. 18.  
**Full**, *adj.* complete. *Oth.* II. 1. 36.  
**Fullam**, *sb.* a kind of false dice. *M. W.* I. 3. 94.  
**Fulsome**, *adj.* cloying, nauseous, disgusting.  
*Tw. N.* v. 1. 112; *John*, III. 4. 12; *B. & V.* 3.  
 132; *Oth.* IV. 1. 37. **Lustful**. *M.* of *V.* I. 3.  
 67.  
**Furniter**, *sb.* furnitory. *Lear*, IV. 4. 3.  
**Function**, *sb.* the active exercise of the faculties.  
*Mac.* I. 3. 140; *Oth.* II. 3. 354.  
**Furnace**, *v.t.* to emit as from a furnace. *Cym.*  
 I. 6. 66.  
**Furnished**, *p.p.* equipped. *W. T.* IV. 4. 599.  
**Furnishings**, *sb.* appendages, trimmings. *Lear*,  
 III. 2. 29.  
**Furniture**, *sb.* equipment, trappings. *A. W.*  
 II. 3. 65; *I. H.* 4. III. 3. 226.  
**Fust**, *v.t.* to grow fusty. *Ham.* IV. 4. 30.  
**Fustilarian**, *sb.* a term of abuse from Falstaff's  
 copious vocabulary. *H.* 4. II. 1. 66.  
  
**Gaberdine**, *sb.* a long coarse smock-frock. *Tw.*  
 II. 2. 49, 115; *M.* of *V.* I. 3. 112.  
**Gad**, *sb.* a pointed instrument. *T. A.* IV. 1. 103.  
 Upon the gad=on the spur of the moment,  
 hastily. *Lear*, I. 2. 26.  
**Gage**, *sb.* a pledge, pawn. *R. 2.* I. 1. 69; *IV.* 1.  
 34; *Lear*, 135. *v.t.* to pledge. *Ham.* I. 1. 91;  
*Lear*, 144. To engage. *M.* of *V.* I. 2. 130;  
*I. H.* 4. I. 173; *T. & C.* v. 1. 46.  
**Gain-giving**, *sb.* misgiving. *Ham.* v. 2. 226.  
**Gainsey**, *v.t.* to forbid. *T. & C.* IV. 5. 132.  
**Gait**, *sb.* proceeding. *Ham.* I. 2. 31.  
**Gall**, *v.t.* to jest bitterly. *H.* 5. v. 1. 78.  
**Gallant-springing**, *adj.* full of youthful promise.  
*R. 2.* I. 4. 226.  
**Gallian**, *adj.* Gallic, French. *Cym.* I. 6. 66;  
*I. H.* 6. v. 4. 139.  
**Galliard**, *sb.* a lively dance. *Tw. N.* I. 3. 127;  
*H.* 5. I. 2. 252.  
**Gallies**, *sb.* large galleys. *T.* of *S.* II. 1. 380.  
**Gallimaufry**, *sb.* a medley, hodgepodge (*Fr.*  
*gallimaufre*). *M. W.* II. 1. 119; *W. T.* IV. 4.  
 325.  
**Gallow**, *v.t.* to scare. *Lear*, III. 2. 44.  
**Gallowglasses**, *sb.* heavy armed foot-soldiers of  
 Ireland and the Western Isles. *H.* 6. IV. 9.  
 26; *Mac.* I. 2. 13.  
**Gallows**, *sb.* a gallows-bird, one that deserves  
 hanging. *L. L. L.* v. 2. 12.  
**Gambler**, *sb.* one who plays at a game; not  
 presently a gambler. *M. W.* III. 1. 37;  
*L. L. L.* 1. 2. 44; *H.* 5. III. 6. 119. A frolic-  
 some fellow. *A. W.* I. 2. 170; *H.* 8. I. 4. 45. A  
 prostitute. *A. W.* v. 3. 288; *Per.* IV. 6. 81.  
**Gan**, *part.* of *Gin*, begun. *Cor.* II. 2. 119;  
*V.* 2. 12.  
**Gargoy**, *sb.* a gazing pig was a pig dressed for  
 the table.  
**Gargoy**, *sb.* shouting, outcry. *H.* 5. v. 4. 3.  
**Gargoy**, *sb.* uproar, disturbance. *A. & C.* I.
- Garden-house**, *sb.* a summer house. *M.* for *M.*  
*V.* 1. 212, 229.  
**Garish**, *adj.* gaudy. *B. & J.* IV. 4. 89; *R. & J.* III.  
 2. 25.  
**Garnet**, *v.t.* to lay up, store up. *Oth.* IV. 2. 57.  
*sb.* a granary. *Th. IV.* 1. 111; *Cor.* I. 1. 254.  
**Gaskins**, *sb.* loose breeches. *Tw. N.* I. 5. 27.  
**Gasted**, *p.p.* frightened. *Lear*, II. 1. 57.  
**Gastness**, *sb.* ghostliness, terror. *Oth.* v. 1.  
 106.  
**Gaudy**, *adj.* festive. *A. & C.* III. 13. 183.  
**Gawl**, *sb.* a boy, trifling ornament. *M. N's Dr.*  
 I. 1. 33; *IV.* 1. 172; *John*, III. 3. 36.  
**Gaze**, *sb.* gazing-stock. *Mac.* V. 8. 24.  
**Gear**, *sb.* a turn, purpose. *M.* of *V.* I. 2. 110;  
 II. 2. 176. Matter, business. *B. & J.* 4. 158;  
*R. & J.* II. 4. 107.  
**Geck**, *sb.* a dupe. *Tw. N.* v. 1. 351; *Cym.* v.  
 4. 67.  
**Geminy**, *sb.* a pair. *M. W.* II. 2. 2.  
**Gender**, *sb.* race, kind, sort. *Ham.* IV. 7. 18;  
*Oth.* I. 3. 326. *v.t.* to procreate, breed. *Oth.*  
 IV. 2. 63.  
**General**, *sb.* the common people, the public.  
*J. C.* II. 1. 12; *Ham.* II. 2. 457. *adj.* common,  
 belonging to the public. General films=  
 public prostitutes. *Tim.* IV. 1. 6. General  
 ear=the ear of the public. *Ham.* II. 2. 520.  
 General louts=common clowns. *Cor.* III.  
 2. 66.  
**Generation**, *sb.* offspring. *W. T.* II. 1. 148; *R. 2.*  
 v. 5. 8; *T. & C.* III. 1. 146; *Lear*, I. 1. 119.  
**Generosity**, *sb.* nobility, those of noble birth.  
*Cor.* I. 1. 215.  
**Generous**, *adj.* nobly born. *M.* for *M.* IV. 6.  
 13; *Oth.* III. 3. 280.  
**Genius**, *sb.* the spirit which was supposed to  
 control the actions of men, the rational soul.  
*Th. IV.* 1. 27; *Tw. N.* III. 4. 142; *J. C.* II. 1.  
 66; *Mac.* III. 1. 56.  
**Gennet**, *sb.* a Spanish horse. *Oth.* I. 1. 113.  
**Gentility**, *sb.* gentle birth, good breeding. *A.*  
 I. 1. 22. Good manners. *L. L. L.* I. 2. 129.  
**Gentle**, *v.t.* to ennoble. *H.* 5. IV. 3. 63.  
**Gentle**, *adj.* noble, well born. *W. T.* I. 2. 391;  
*H.* 5. IV. chor. 45; *R. 2.* I. 3. 73. *adv.* gently.  
*T. & C.* IV. 5. 287; *A. & C.* v. 1. 78.  
**Gentles**, *sb.* gentle folk. *M. W.* III. 2. 92;  
*L. L. L.* IV. 2. 172; *M. N's Dr.* v. 1. 128.  
**Gentry**, *sb.* rank by birth. *M. W.* II. 1. 53; *Cor.*  
 III. 1. 144. Courtesy. *Ham.* II. 2. 22; *V.* 2.  
 114.  
**German**, *adj.* akin. *Tim.* IV. 3. 344; *Ham.* v.  
 2. 165.  
**German**, *sb.* a near kinsman. *Oth.* I. 1. 114.  
**Germane**, *adj.* akin. *W. T.* IV. 4. 802.  
**Germen**, *sb.* a germ, seed. *Mac.* IV. 1. 59; *Lear*,  
 III. 2. 8.  
**Geut**, *sb.* a halting place in a royal progress;  
 hence, the period of stay. *W. T.* I. 2. 41.  
**Geuts**, *sb.* deeds, exploits. *A. & C.* IV. 8. 2.  
**Ghost**, *v.t.* to haunt. *A. & C.* II. 6. 13. *sb.* a  
 corpse. *H.* 6. III. 2. 101; *Ham.* I. 4. 85.  
**Gib**, *sb.* an old tom-cat. *Ham.* III. 4. 190.  
**Gibbet**, *v.t.* to hang, as a barrel on the sling by  
 which it is carried. *H.* 4. III. 2. 284.  
**Gib cat**, *sb.* an old tom-cat. *H.* 4. I. 2. 82.  
**Gig**, *sb.* a top. *L. L. L.* IV. 3. 107; *V.* 1. 70, 73.

- Giglot**, *sb.* a wanton, loose woman. *M.* for *M.* v. 1. 352; *Cym.* III. 1. 31. Used adjectively. 1 H 6. IV. 7. 45.
- Gild**, *v.t.* to stain with red. *John*, II. 1. 316; *Mac.* II. 2. 55. (Comp. 'golden blood,' *Mac.* II. 3. 118.) To make drunk. *TP.* v. 1. 260.
- Gillyvors**, *sb.* gillyflowers, a further corruption of *Fr. giliares*. *W. T.* IV. 4. 82, 98.
- Gilt**, *sb.* used for gold in order to introduce a quibble. *H. 5.* II. chot. 26.
- Gimnal**, *sb.* a gimnal bit was either made of gimnal or double rings, or probably was itself double. *H. 5.* IV. 2. 49.
- Gimnor**, *sb.* a contrivance. 1 H 6. I. 2. 41.
- Gin**, *sb.* a snare. *Tw. N.* II. 5. 98; *Mac.* IV. 2. 35.
- Gin or gin**, *v.i.* to begin. *Mac.* I. 2. 25; *V.* 5. 49.
- Ging**, *sb.* a gang, pack. *M. W.* IV. 2. 123.
- Gingerly**, *adv.* nicely, carefully. *Two G.* I. 2. 72.
- Gird**, *v.t.* to taunt, rally. *Cor.* I. 1. 260. *v.i.* to crack jokes. 2 H 4. I. 2. 7. *sb.* a jest, sarcasm. *T.* of *B.* v. 2. 58; 1 H 6. III. 1. 131.
- Girdle**, *sb.* to turn the girdle with the buckle behind is said to be a phrase for chauncing one's humour; according to others it is a challenge at wrestling. *MLA.* v. 1. 143.
- Gis**, a corruption of 'Jesus.' *Ham.* IV. 5. 58.
- Give**, *v.t.* to display as armorial bearings. *M. W.* I. 1. 16; 1 H 6. I. 5. 29. To give up. *IV.* T. III. 2. 66.
- Give out**, *v.t.* to give up, give over. 2 H 6. IV. 2. 26. To exhibit, represent. *W. T.* IV. 4. 149; *Oth.* III. 3. 209. To report. *Cor.* I. 1. 197.
- Giving out**, *sb.* representation, statement. *M.* for *ML.* I. 4. 54; *Ham.* I. 5. 178; *Oth.* IV. 1. 131.
- Glad**, *sb.* gladness. *Per.* II. prol. 38.
- Glance**, *v.t.* to hint. *M. N's Dr.* II. 1. 76; *J. C.* I. 2. 324.
- Glances**, *sb.* side hits, oblique allusions. *As.* II. 7. 57.
- Glass-faced**, *adj.* with a face like a mirror. *Tim.* I. 1. 58.
- Gleek**, *v.i.* to scoff. *M. N's Dr.* III. 1. 150; *H. 5.* v. 1. 78. *sb.* a scoff. 1 H 6. III. 2. 123 *R. & J.* IV. 5. 115.
- Glib**, *v.t.* to gild. *W. T.* II. 1. 149.
- Glide**, *sb.* a sliding motion. *As.* IV. 3. 113.
- Glooming**, *adj.* full of gloom, gloomy. *R. & J.* v. 3. 305.
- Glow**, *v.t.* to make to glow, flush. *A. & C.* II. 2. 206.
- Gloze**, *v.t.* to comment, interpret. *H. 5.* I. 2. 40. To C. II. 2. 165. To use flattering speeches. *R. 2.* II. 1. 10; *T. A.* IV. 4. 35; *Per.* I. 2. 110.
- Glozes**, *sb.* fair speeches. *I. L.* 1. 14. 3. 370.
- Glut**, *v.t.* to swallow greedily. *TP.* I. 2. 69.
- Gluttoning**, *pr.p.* feeding greedily. *Sonn.* LXXV. 14.
- Gnarling**, *pr.p.* snarling. *R. 2.* I. 3. 292; 2 H 6. III. 1. 102.
- Go**, To go in the song = to join in the song. *M. A.* I. 2. 182. To go through = to complete a bargain. *M.* for *M.* II. 1. 225; *Per.* IV. 2. 47.
- Goblet**, *sb.* a small cup. 2 H 6. IV. 2. 85; *V.* 2. 58.
- God**, *v.t.* to make a god of, worship. *Cor.* v. 3. 11.
- God before, before God, I swear by God.** *H. 5.* I. 2. 307; *III.* 6. 165. Others take it as equivalent to 'God being our leader.'
- God bless the mark**, an apologetic phrase; originally employed to avert the evil omen, and perhaps accompanied by the sign of the cross. *M.* of *V.* II. 2. 25; *Oth.* I. 2. 33.
- God-den, good even.** *H. 5.* III. 2. 89; *Cor.* II. 1. 103; *IV.* 6. 20, 21; *R. & J.* I. 2. 57.
- God gi' god-den = God give you good even.** *R. & J.* I. 2. 58.
- God 'ild = God yield, God reward.** *As.* III. 3. 76; *V.* 4. 56; *Mac.* I. 6. 13; *Ham.* IV. 5. 42.
- God save the mark = God bless the mark.** *H. 4.* I. 3. 56; *R. & J.* III. 2. 53.
- God ye = God gi' you.** *R. & J.* II. 4. 115, 116.
- Gogs-wounds, for 'God's wounds.'** *T.* of *S.* III. 2. 162.
- Good**, *adj.* wealthy, substantial. *M.* of *V.* I. 3. 12, 16; *Cor.* I. 1. 16. Used as a vocative. *TP.* I. 1. 16; *W. T.* v. 1. 19; *Ham.* I. 1. 1.
- Good cheap**, *adj.* cheap. 1 H 4. III. 3. 52.
- Good-conceited**, *adj.* well conceived or devised. *Cym.* II. 3. 18.
- Good deed.** Indeed, verily. *W. T.* I. 2. 42.
- Good den, good even.** *John.* I. 2. 185; *T. A.* IV. 4. 43; *R. & J.* II. 4. 116, 117.
- Good even and twenty, good even twenty times over.** *M. W.* II. 1. 202, 203.
- Good-fer = good-year.** *M. W.* I. 4. 120.
- Good lady, a patroness.** *Cym.* II. 3. 158.
- Good leave, ready permission.** *As.* I. 2. 120; *M.* of *V.* III. 2. 326.
- Good life, lifelike truthfulness.** *TP.* III. 3. 86.
- Good name, good repute.** *M. W.* III. 3. 127.
- A song of good life = a song with a moral to it.** *Tw. N.* II. 3. 37.
- Good lord, a patron.** 2 H 4. IV. 3. 80.
- Good master, a patron.** *W. T.* v. 2. 128; *Oth.* I. 3. 77.
- Good-nights**, *sb.* serenades. 2 H 4. III. 2. 343.
- Good time, in.** Opportunely, happily. *H. 3.* II. 1. 45.
- Good-year.** What the good-year! is a petty curse. Perhaps a euphemism for the opposite, or a corruption of the Old English *godes years* = *Ital. mal anno*. *M. A.* I. 3. 21; *H. 4.* II. 4. 64, 101. In *Lear*, v. 1. 22, 'good-years' is supposed to be corrupted from *good-yeers*, the venereal disease, but no evidence is given for the existence of this word.
- Garbellid**, *adj.* bigbellied. 2 H 4. II. 2. 23.
- Gore blood, clotted blood.** *R. & J.* III. 2. 56.
- Gorge**, *sb.* the throat, gullet. *W. T.* II. 4. 44; *Ham.* v. 1. 207.
- Gorget**, *sb.* a piece of armour for the throat. *R. & J.* I. 3. 174.
- Gospelled**, *pr.p.* instructed in the message of the Gospel. *Mac.* III. 2. 28.
- Goss**, *sb.* gorse. *TP.* IV. 2. 180.
- Gossip**, *sb.* a sponsor. *Two G.* III. 2. 264; *V.* I. 2. 160.
- Goss**, *sb.* a kind of fish. *Mac.* IV. 2. 20.
- Gout**, *sb.* a drop. *Mac.* II. 1. 40.

- Governance, *sb.* government, control. = H 6. I. 3. 50.  
 Government, *sb.* self-control. = H 4. I. 2. 31; III. 1. 184; *Lancr.* 1400.  
 Grace, *sb.* excellence, virtue. R. & J. II. 3. 15.  
 Graced, *adj.* dignified. Mac. III. 4. 41; Lear, I. 4. 267.  
 Gracious, *adj.* virtuous. W. T. V. 1. 172. Favourable. A. & C. II. 2. 60.  
 Gracious, *adj.* pleasing, attractive. M. of V. III. 2. 76; Tw. N. I. 5. 281; John, III. 4. 81.  
 Full of grace and goodness. Ham. I. 1. 164.  
 Graft, *sb.* graft, scion. Lucr. 1062; Per. V. 1. 60. *v.t.* to graft. As, III. 2. 124; = H 4. V. 3. 3.  
 Graft, *p.p.* grafted. = H 6. III. 2. 214; R 3. III. 7. 127.  
 Grafter, *sb.* that from which a graft is taken. H 5. III. 5. 9.  
 Grain, *sb.* 'In grain' is used of a fast colour, that will not wash out, from the grain or kernes of which the purple dye was originally made. C. of E. III. 2. 108; M. N's Dr. I. 2. 97; Tw. N. I. 5. 255.  
 Grained, *adj.* close grained, tough. Cor. IV. 5. 124. Engrained. Ham. III. 4. 90.  
 Gramercy. Great thanks. Fr. *grand merci*. M. of V. II. 2. 128; R 3. III. 2. 108.  
 Grandam, *sb.* grandmother. M. of V. II. 2. 206; John, I. 1. 168, etc.  
 Grange, *sb.* a lone farm-house. M. for M. III. 1. 277; W. T. IV. 4. 309; Oth. I. 1. 106.  
 Granted, *p.p.* acknowledged. Cym. II. 1. 50.  
 Grate, *v.t.* to vex, annoy. Ham. III. 1. 3; A. & C. I. 1. 18.  
 Gratify, *v.t.* to reward. M. of V. IV. 1. 406; Cor. II. 2. 44.  
 Gratulity, *sb.* gratuity. Tw. N. II. 3. 27.  
 Gratulate, *v.t.* to congratulate. B 3. IV. 1. 10; T. A. I. 1. 221; Tim. I. 2. 131.  
 Gratulate, *adj.* gratifying. M. for M. V. 1. 535.  
 Grave, *v.t.* to entomb, bury. R 2. III. 2. 140; Tim. IV. 3. 166. To carve, engrave. Lucr. 735; M. of V. II. 7. 36.  
 Graymalkin, *sb.* a witch's familiar, in the shape of a grey cat. Mac. I. 1. 8.  
 Greasily, *adv.* sfilthily. L. L. L. IV. 1. 139.  
 Great morning = broad day-light. T. & C. IV. 3. 1; Cym. IV. 2. 61.  
 'Gree, *v.t.* to agree. Two G. II. 4. 183; T. of E. II. 1. 272, 299.  
 Greek, *sb.* a reveler, boon companion. Tw. N. IV. 1. 19; T. & C. I. 2. 118. 'Grig' is another form of the word.  
 'Greenly, *adv.* foolishly. H 5. V. 2. 149; Ham. IV. 5. 83.  
 Grief, *sb.* pain. = H 4. L 3. 51; V. 1. 134; = H 4. I. 1. 144.  
 Grief-shot, *adj.* stricken with grief. Cor. V. 1. 44.  
 Grime, *v.t.* to begrime. Lear, II. 3. 9.  
 Grim-looking, *adj.* grim-looking, grim-visaged. M. N's Dr. V. 1. 175.  
 Grime, *sb.* a griffin. Lucr. 543.  
 Grime, *sb.* a step. Tw. N. III. 2. 135; Oth. I. 3. 205.  
 Grizzle, *sb.* a tinge of grey. Tw. N. V. 1. 168.  
 Groat, *sb.* a coin worth fourpence. M. W. I. 1. 134, 166.  
 Gross, *adj.* palpable. M. for M. I. 1. 199; A. W. I. 3. 178; H 5. II. 2. 103.  
 Grossly, *adv.* palpably. C. of E. II. 2. 171; H 5. II. 2. 107.  
 Grossness, *sb.* passages of grossness = gross impositions. Tw. N. III. 2. 77.  
 Ground, *sb.* the plain-song or air on which variations are made. B 3. III. 7. 49.  
 Groundlings, *sb.* the spectators who stood on the ground in what corresponded to the pit of a modern theatre. Ham. III. 2. 12.  
 Grow, *v.t.* to accrue. C. of E. IV. 1. 18; IV. 4. 124.  
 Grow to, *v.t.* to have a strong flavour, like milk that is burnt. M. of V. II. 2. 18. Others understand by it, to have a certain tendency.  
 Grow to a point = come to the point. M. N's Dr. I. 2. 10.  
 Guard, *v.t.* to trim, ornament. M. A. I. 2. 288; M. of V. II. 2. 164; John, IV. 2. 10.  
 Guardage, *sb.* guard, safe-keeping. Oth. I. 2. 70.  
 Guardant, *sb.* a guard, sentinel. = H 6. IV. 7. 9; Cor. V. 2. 67.  
 Guards, *sb.* facings, ornaments. M. for M. III. 1. 97; M. A. I. 1. 189. The stars & and y of Ursa Minor. Oth. II. 1. 15.  
 Guerdon, *sb.* reward. M. A. V. 3. 5; L. L. L. III. 1. 170.  
 Guerdoned, *p.p.* rewarded. = H 6. L 4. 49; = H 6. III. 3. 191.  
 Guidon, *sb.* a standard or banner. H 5. IV. 2. 60. The old reading is 'Guard' on.  
 Guildier, *sb.* a Dutch coin. C. of E. I. 1. 8; IV. 1. 4.  
 Guiled, *adj.* full of guile, treacherous. M. of V. III. 2. 97.  
 Gules, *adj.* red, in heraldry. Tim. IV. 3. 59; Ham. II. 2. 479.  
 Gulf, *sb.* the swallow, gullet. Mac. IV. 1. 23.  
 Gull, *sb.* an unfledged nestling. = H 5. V. 1. 60; Tim. II. 1. 31. A dupe, fool. Tw. N. III. 2. 73; V. 1. 351; R 3. I. 3. 328. A trick. M. A. II. 3. 123.  
 Gull-catcher, *sb.* one who entraps foolish persons. Tw. N. II. 5. 204.  
 Gummied velvet. Velvet stiffened with gum. = H 4. II. 2. 2.  
 Gun-stones, *sb.* cannon-balls of stone. H 5. I. 2. 282.  
 Gust, *sb.* taste, relish. Tw. N. I. 3. 33; Sonn. CXIV. 11.  
 Gust, *v.t.* to taste, perceive. W. T. L. 2. 219.  
 Gyve, *v.t.* to fetter, catch. Oth. II. 2. 171.  
 Gyves, *sb.* fetters, shackles. = H 4. IV. 2. 44; Ham. IV. 7. 21.  
 Habillment, *sb.* dress, garment. Tit. V. 2. 11; B 2. I. 3. 28; A. & C. III. 6. 17.  
 Habit, *sb.* demeanour, deportment. M. of V. II. 2. 199; Tim. IV. 3. 239.  
 Habitudo, *sb.* habit, condition of body. Comp. 114.  
 Hack, *v.t.* to grow common. M. W. II. 1. 52.  
 Haggard, *sb.* a wild, untrained hawk. Tw. N. III. 1. 71; M. A. III. 1. 36. Used as an adjective. Oth. III. 3. 260.  
 Hagging, *adj.* hag-like, ugly. A. W. I. 2. 29.  
 Haggied, *p.p.* hacked, mangled. H 5. IV. 6. 11.



- Hag-seed**, *sb.* offspring of a hag. Tp. I. 2. 365.
- Hair**, *sb.* texture, nature. 1 H 4. IV. 1. 61.  
Against the hair=against the grain. M. W. II. 3. 41; T. & C. I. 2. 28.
- Halcyon**. The body of the halcyon or kingfisher, suspended by its beak, was believed to shew which way the wind blew. Lear, II. 2. 84.
- Hale**, *v.t.* to draw, drag, haul. M. A. II. 3. 62; Tw. N. III. 2. 64.
- Half-caps**, *sb.* half bows, caps half taken off, slight salutations. Tim. II. 2. 227.
- Half-cheek**, *sb.* a profile. L. L. L. V. 2. 620.
- Half-cheeked**, *adj.* a half-cheeked bit was perhaps a bit of which only one part remained. T. of S. III. 2. 57.
- Half-face**, *sb.* a thin face. John. I. 1. 92.
- Half-faced**, *adj.* showing the king's face in profile. John. I. 1. 94. Thin faced, wretched looking. 1 H 4. I. 3. 208; 2 H 4. III. 2. 283.
- Half-kirtles**, *sb.* A kirtle was a kind of jacket with a petticoat attached. Either of these was a half-kirtle. 2 H 4. V. 4. 24.
- Halfpence**, *sb.* small pieces. M. A. II. 3. 147. So Chaucer uses 'ferthing.'
- Half-sword**, *at.* Within half a sword's length, at close quarters. 1 H 4. II. 4. 182.
- Half-tales**, *sb.* tales of which only one-half is told. A. & C. II. 2. 137.
- Halidom**, *sb.* holiness, sanctity. Two G. IV. 2. 136.
- Hall**. A hall! was a cry to clear a space for dancing. R. & J. I. 5. 28.
- Hallowmas**, *sb.* All Saints' Day. Two G. II. 1. 27; M. for M. II. 1. 128; R. 2. v. 1. 80.
- Halt**, *adj.* lame. P. P. 308. *v.t.* to limp. Tw. N. v. 1. 106; A. & C. IV. 7. 16; Ham. II. 2. 339.
- Halting**, *adj.* limping; hence, loitering, dilatory. John. V. 2. 174. *sb.* hesitation. Cym. III. 5. 92.
- Hand**, *at.* By hand. John. v. 2. 75. 'Hot at hand' of horses is given to 'hot in hand,' that is, when they are held in. J. C. IV. 2. 23. Others understand it, when they are led by the hand, not mounted.
- Hand**, at any. In any case. T. of S. I. 2. 147, 227.
- Hand**, in any. At any rate. A. W. III. 6. 45.
- Hand**. In the hand of=led by. Cor. v. 3. 23; R. 3. IV. 1. 2. To hold hand with=to be equal to. John. II. 1. 494.
- Hand**, out of. At once. 1 H 6. III. 2. 102.
- Hands**. Give me your hands=applaud. M. N's Dr. v. 1. 444. See Tp. v. c. ii. 10.
- Handa**. A tall man of his hands=a stout, active fellow. M. W. I. 4. 27; W. T. v. 2. 176.
- Hands** of all. At any rate, in any case. L. L. L. IV. 3. 219.
- Handfast**, *sb.* custody. W. T. IV. 4. 793. Contract. Cym. I. 5. 78.
- Handshaw**, *sb.* a corruption of heronshaw, a heron. Ham. II. 2. 397.
- Handy-dandy**, *sb.* a game in which an object is rapidly passed from one hand to the other. Lear, IV. 6. 157.
- Hangers**, *sb.* the straps by which the sword was suspended from the girdle. Ham. V. 2. 157.
- Hangman**. The hangman boys=the young rascals, gallowbirds, crackhemp. Two G. IV. 4. 60.
- Hap**, *sb.* fortune, luck, chance. C. of R. I. 2. 30; R. 2. I. 2. 23; Ham. IV. 3. 70.
- Haply**, *adv.* perhaps. Tw. N. I. 2. 54; H. 5. IV. 7. 181.
- Happiest**, *adj.* most favourable. H. 8. prol. 24.
- Happily**, *adv.* haply, perhaps. M. for M. IV. 2. 98; T. of S. IV. 4. 54.
- Happiness**, *sb.* accomplishment. M. A. II. 3. 191; Ham. II. 2. 213.
- Happy**, *adj.* accomplished. Two G. IV. 2. 34; Cym. III. 4. 177.
- Happy**, *v.t.* to make happy. Sonn. VI. 6.
- Harbourage**, *sb.* shelter, refuge. John. II. 2. 234; Per. I. 4. 100.
- Hard** a keeping. Hard o' keeping, difficult to be kept. L. L. L. I. 1. 65.
- Hardiment**, *sb.* daring exploit, boldness. 1 H 4. I. 3. 101; T. & C. IV. 5. 28; Cym. V. 4. 75.
- Hardiness**, *sb.* bravery. H. 5. I. 1. 1. 1. 6. 22.
- Hardness**, *sb.* hardship. Oth. I. 3. 234; Cym. III. 6. 21.
- Harlot**, *adj.* lewd. W. T. II. 3. 4.
- Harlotry**, *sb.* a harlot. Oth. IV. 2. 239. A baggage. 1 H 4. III. 1. 199; R. & J. IV. 2. 14. Used adjectively. 1 H 4. II. 4. 437.
- Harness**, *sb.* armour. 1 H 4. III. 2. 101; Mac. V. 5. 52.
- Harnessed**, *p.p.* armed. John. v. 2. 132; T. & C. I. 2. 8.
- Harp**, *v.t.* to strike upon as a key note. Mac. IV. 2. 74.
- Harry**, *v.t.* to vex, annoy. A. & C. III. 3. 43.
- Harry ten shillings**. A piece of the value of ten shillings coined by Henry VII. 2 H 4. III. 2. 236.
- Hatch**, *sb.* a half door. John. I. 2. 172; V. 2. 138; Lear, III. 6. 76.
- Hatched**, *p.p.* closed with a half door. Per. IV. 2. 37. Engraved. T. & C. I. 3. 65.
- Hateful**, *adj.* malignant. R. 2. II. 2. 138.
- Hatefully**, *adv.* malignantly. V. & A. 940.
- Haught**, *adj.* haughty. R. 2. IV. 2. 254; 3 H 6. II. 1. 169.
- Haughty**, *adj.* lofty, highspirited. 1 H 6. IV. 1. 35; R. 3. IV. 2. 37.
- Haunch**, *sb.* rear. 2 H 4. IV. 4. 92.
- Haunt**, *sb.* resort, place of resort. As. II. 2. 221. Ham. IV. 2. 28; A. & C. IV. 14. 54.
- Have**. You have me=you understand me, catch my meaning. Ham. II. 1. 62.
- Have**, imperatively in the phrases: Have after=I'll follow. Ham. I. 4. 89. Have at=I'll begin or attack. W. T. IV. 4. 302; Ham. V. 2. 113.
- Have to**=I'll go to. T. of S. I. 2. 223.
- Have through**=I'll make my way through. 2 H 6. IV. 8. 63. Have with=I'll go with. Oth. II. 1. 286; Oth. I. 2. 53; L. L. L. IV. 2. 152.
- Have**, *sb.* possessor. Cor. II. 2. 89.
- Having**, *sb.* property, possessions. As. III. 2. 395; Tw. N. III. 4. 379.
- Havirour**, *sb.* behaviour. Tw. N. III. 4. 225; Ham. I. 2. 81.
- Havoc**, *sb.* to cry havoc was to give the signal for indiscriminate slaughter; to cry so

quarter. John. II. 1. 357; J. C. III. 1. 173; Ham. V. 2. 375. *v.t.* to cut to pieces, destroy. H 5. 1. 2. 173.

Hawking, *adj.* hawk-like. A. W. I. 1. 105.

Hay, *sb.* a term used by a fencer (Ital. *Asi*, you have it) when he hit his adversary. R. & J. II. 4. 27. A round dance. L. L. L. V. 1. 161.

Head, *sb.* an armed force. John. V. 2. 113; H 4. IV. 4. 28; Ham. IV. 5. 101. *v.t.* to behead. M. for M. II. 1. 251.

Head-lugged, *adj.* dragged by the head. Lear. IV. 2. 42.

Headman, *sb.* executioner. A. W. IV. 3. 342.

Head-stall, *sb.* the part of a bridle which goes over the head. T. of S. III. 2. 58.

Heady, *adj.* headstrong, impetuous. H 4. II. 3. 58; H 5. 1. 1. 34.

Heady-rash, *adj.* impetuously violent. O. of E. V. 1. 216.

Health, *sb.* welfare, well-being. M. of V. V. 1. 114; J. C. IV. 3. 56; Ham. I. 3. 21.

Healthful, *adj.* wholesome, salutary. O. of E. I. 2. 115.

Healthsome, *adj.* wholesome. R. & J. IV. 3. 34.

Heaps, *on.* In heaps. H 5. IV. 5. 18; V. 2. 39.

Hearted, *adj.* seated in the heart. Oth. I. 3. 373; III. 3. 448.

Hearten, *v.t.* to encourage, cheer. H 6. II. 2. 79; Lucr. 195.

Heart-heaviness, *sb.* heart-sorrow. As. V. 2. 50.

Heat, *p.p.* heated. John. IV. 1. 61. *v.t.* to run a course or heat in a race. W. T. I. 2. 96.

Heaves, *sb.* deep sighs. Ham. IV. 1. 1.

Heaviness, *sb.* sorrow, sadness. Tp. V. 1. 200; M. of V. II. 8. 52.

Heavings, *sb.* deep sighings. W. T. II. 3. 35.

Heavy, *adj.* sad, sorrowful. M. of V. V. 1. 130; V. & A. 830.

Hebenon, *sb.* possibly the yew (Germ. *eiben*). Ham. I. 3. 62. Ebony and hebenon have also been suggested.

Hectic, *sb.* fever. Ham. IV. 3. 68.

Hedge, *v.t.* to creep along by the hedge, skulk, move stealthily. T. & C. III. 3. 158; M. W. II. 2. 26; H 8. III. 2. 39.

Hedge-pig, *sb.* a young hedge-hog. Mac. IV. 1. 2.

Heel, *v.t.* to tread as in dancing. T. & C. IV. 4. 88.

Hefts, *sb.* heavings. W. T. II. 1. 45.

Heim, *v.t.* to steer. M. for M. III. 2. 152.

Help, *v.t.* to cure. Tp. II. 2. 97; Lucr. 1822.

Help, *sb.* cure. Mac. I. 2. 42.

Helpless, *adj.* incurable. Lucr. 756. Unavailable. R. & J. I. 2. 13; Lucr. 1027.

Hence, *adv.* henceforward. H 4. V. 5. 56; Oth. III. 3. 379.

Hence, *sb.* a page. M. N's Dr. II. 1. 127, 128; hence, a purpose for which to be. Ham. III. 3. 88. *v.t.* to take, clear. W. T. IV. 2. 133; M. for M. IV. 6. 14. *v.t.* a small herd. Cym. IV. 2. 287.

Hence, *sb.* run. Ham. IV. 5. 182.

Hence, *sb.* run. A. W. IV. 5. 18; R. & J. I. 2. 142.

Hermite, *sb.* a headman, one bound to pray for another. Mac. I. 6. 20.

Hest, *sb.* a command, behest. Tp. I. 2. 274; III. 1. 37.

Hey-day, *int.* a frolicsome cry. Tp. H. 2. 120. Used as a substantive for frolic. Ham. III. 4. 69.

Hide fox and all after, a game like hide-and-seek. Ham. IV. 2. 32.

Hie, *v.t.* to hasten. V. & A. 1189; Ham. I. 1. 154. *v.r.* Mac. I. 5. 26.

Hiema, *sb.* winter. M. N's Dr. II. 1. 109.

High and low, two kinds of false dice. M. W. I. 3. 95.

High-battled, *adj.* at the head of proud battalions. A. & C. III. 13. 29.

High-blown, *adj.* inflated. H 4. III. 2. 361.

High-day, *adj.* holiday. M. of V. II. 9. 98.

Highest, *adj.* highest. R. & J. II. 5. 9; Sonn. VII. 9.

High-repented, *adj.* deeply repented. A. W. V. 3. 56.

High-resolved, *adj.* resolute, firmly resolved. T. A. IV. 4. 64.

High-sighted, *adj.* supercilious. J. C. II. 1. 118.

High-stomached, *adj.* haughty. R. & J. I. 1. 18.

High-viced, *adj.* conspicuously wicked. Tim. IV. 3. 109.

Hight, is called. L. L. L. I. 1. 171, 258; M. N's Dr. V. 1. 140; Per. IV. prol. 18.

Hild, *p.p.* held. Lucr. 1257.

Hilding, *sb.* a menial, drudge. Cym. II. 3. 128; R. & J. II. 4. 44; III. 5. 169. *adj.* base, mean.

H 4. I. 1. 57; H 5. IV. 2. 29.

Hilt, *sb.* hilt; used of a single weapon. R. & J. I. 4. 60; J. C. V. 3. 43.

Himself, *by.* By his own hand. Cor. V. 2. 111.

Hind, *sb.* a farm servant, menial. As. I. 2. 20; M. W. III. 3. 90.

Hinge, *v.t.* to bend as a hinge. Tim. IV. 3. 111.

Hint, *sb.* occasion, the cause or motive of anything, whether action or speech. Tp. I. 2. 134; II. 2. 3; Cor. III. 3. 23.

Hip. To catch or have on the hip is a term of wrestling, and signifies to have the advantage of. M. of V. I. 3. 47; IV. 2. 334; Oth. II. 1. 114.

Hipped, *p.p.* perhaps, galled in the hips. T. of S. III. 2. 40.

History, *v.t.* to record. H 4. IV. 1. 203.

Hit, *v.t.* to agree. Lear. I. 1. 308.

Hitherto, *adv.* up to this point. H 4. III. 1. 74.

Hive, *v.t.* to dwell as in a hive. M. of V. II. 5. 28.

Hoar, *v.t.* to make hoary or white as with leprosy. Tim. IV. 3. 155. *v.t.* to become mouldy. R. & J. II. 4. 128.

Mobby-horse, *sb.* a principal figure in the old morris-dance. L. L. L. III. 1. 30; Ham. III. 2. 122. Hence used contemptuously of persons of light conduct. M. A. III. 2. 75; W. T. I. 1. 276.

Hob, nob, have or not have, hit or miss, come what may. Tw. N. III. 4. 281.

Hodge-podge, *sb.* probably a hodge-podge idiom, or *v.t.* to mix. M. W. V. 2. 220.

Hodge-podge, *v.t.* to mix, have up. Tp. I. 2. 128; 225. I. 1. 269; R. & J. IV. 4. 309.

- Holst**, *p.p.* holsted. Ham. III. 4. 207.  
**Hold**, *v.t.* to endure. Cor. III. 2. 80; Tim. I. 2. 159; Ham. V. 1. 182. *v.i.* to keep promise. M. N. Dr. I. 2. 114.  
**Hold**, *sb.* fortress. John. V. 7. 29; s H 4. Ind. 35.  
**Hold friends**, to continue friends. M. A. I. 1. 91.  
**Hold in**, to keep counsel. s H 4. II. 1. 85.  
**Holding**, *sb.* the burden of a song. A. & C. II. 7. 117. Fitness. A. W. IV. 2. 27.  
**Hold up**, to keep up a jest. M. A. II. 3. 126; M. N. Dr. III. 2. 239.  
**Holdname**=**halldom**. T. of S. V. 2. 99; R. & J. I. 3. 43; H 8. V. 1. 117.  
**Holp**, the past tense and past participle of 'help'. John. I. 1. 240; R 3. I. 2. 107; Tp. I. 2. 63; Cor. III. 1. 277.  
**Holy-ales**, *sb.* rural festivals on saints' days. Per. prol. 6.  
**Holy-thistle**, *sb.* also called Blessed Thistle, *Carduus benedictus*. M. A. III. 4. 80.  
**Homager**, *sb.* one who does homage, a vassal. A. & C. I. 1. 31.  
**Home**, *adv.* to the utmost, thoroughly. Cor. II. 2. 107; Mac. I. 3. 120; Cym. III. 5. 92.  
**Honest**, *adj.* chaste. M. W. I. 4. 148; II. 1. 247; Oth. IV. 2. 12.  
**Honesty**, *sb.* chastity. M. W. II. 2. 244; As. III. 3. 30. Decency. Tw. N. II. 3. 94; Ham. II. 2. 204. Liberality, generosity. Tim. III. 1. 29.  
**Honey-seed**, blunder for 'homicide.' s H 4. II. 1. 57.  
**Honey-stalks**, *sb.* the common purple clover. T. A. IV. 4. 91.  
**Honey-suckle**, blunder for 'homicidal.' s H 4. II. 1. 56.  
**Hood**, *v.t.* to cover with a hood, like a falcon till it was let fly at the game. H 5. III. 7. 121; R. & J. III. 2. 14.  
**Hoodman**, The one who was blinded at the game of blindman's buff. A. W. IV. 3. 136.  
**Hoodman-blind**, Blindman's buff. Ham. III. 4. 77.  
**Hoodwink**, *v.t.* to blindfold; hence to cover, conceal. Tp. IV. 1. 206.  
**Hoop**, *v.i.* to whoop, shout. As. III. 2. 203; H 5. II. 2. 108; Cor. IV. 5. 84.  
**Hope**, *v.t.* to expect. H 5. III. 7. 77; A. & C. II. 1. 38.  
**Horning**, *sb.* the making of cuckolds. T. A. II. 3. 67.  
**Horn-mad**, Like a mad bull; with a reference to horns being the emblem of a cuckold. M. W. I. 4. 31; C. of E. II. 1. 57; M. A. I. 1. 272.  
**Horologe**, *sb.* a clock. Oth. II. 3. 135.  
**Hose**, *sb.* breeches. As. H. 4. 7; II. 7. 260. Second hose or French hose were trunk hose which were made very full. M. of V. I. 2. 80; H 5. III. 7. 57.  
**Host**, *v.t.* to lodge. C. of E. I. 2. 9; A. W. III. 5. 97.  
**Hot-house**, *sb.* a bagnio; often used as a brothel. M. of V. II. 1. 66.  
**House**, *v.t.* to dwell, keep house. R. & J. III. 3. 126; Cym. III. 1. 2.  
**Housewife**, *sb.* housekeeper, mistress of a house. M. N. Dr. II. 1. 37; R. & J. IV. 2. 43; Oth. I. 3. 273. A hussey, wanton. s H 4. II. 2. 345; H 5. V. 1. 85; Oth. IV. 2. 95.  
**Housewifery**, *sb.* domestic management. H 5. II. 3. 65; Oth. II. 1. 113.  
**How**, *How go*=for what price. s H 4. III. 2. 42, 54; Per. IV. 6. 22.  
**How and which way**, *How or which way*. Redundant expressions. A. W. IV. 3. 136; S 2. II. 2. 109; s H 6. II. 1. 71, 73.  
**However**, *adv.* in any case. Tw. G. I. 2. 34; H 8. IV. 2. 106.  
**Hox**, *v.t.* to hough, hamstring. W. T. I. 2. 244.  
**Hoy**, *sb.* a small coasting vessel. C. of E. IV. 3. 40.  
**Hoysday**, *int.* an exclamation of surprise and contempt. R 3. IV. 4. 460.  
**Hug**, *v.t.* to lie close. John. V. 2. 122.  
**Hugger-mugger**, *adv.* secretly, by stealth. Ham. IV. 3. 84.  
**Hull**, *v.t.* to float, drift to and fro, like a ship at the mercy of the waves. Tw. N. I. 5. 217; R 3. IV. 4. 438; H 8. II. 4. 199.  
**Human**, *adj.* made of flesh and blood. As. V. 2. 74; M. N. Dr. II. 1. 101.  
**Humorous**, *adj.* capricious, full of fancies and humours. As. I. 2. 278; John. III. 2. 119; s H 4. IV. 4. 34.  
**Humour**, *sb.* characteristic disposition, affectation of manner or language. A word much abused in Shakespeare's time and ridiculed by him by being employed frequently without any meaning at all. L. L. I. III. 2. 23; M. W. I. 2. 135, 169, 171; L 3. 25, 30, 80.  
**Humphrey Hour**, R 3. IV. 4. 175. The meaning of this is lost. Steevens supposed that there was a reference to the phrase to dine with Duke Humphrey, that is, to wait up and down in St Paul's during the dinner hour and not to dine at all. But this does not help us.  
**Hungerly**, *adv.* hungrily. Tim. I. 2. 26; Oth. III. 4. 102. Scantly. T. of S. III. 2. 177.  
**Hungry**, *adj.* their hungry prey=the prey for which they hunger. s H 6. I. 2. 88.  
**Hunt**, *sb.* the game taken in the chase. Cym. III. 6. 90. The hunt is up=the game is afoot. T. A. II. 2. 1.  
**Hunt's up**, *sb.* 2 time to arouse the hunters early. R. & J. III. 3. 34.  
**Hurly**, *sb.* uproar. John. III. 4. 169; s H 4. III. 2. 25.  
**Hurly-burly**, *sb.* uproar, tumult. Mac. I. 2. 3. Used adjectively. s H 4. V. 1. 76.  
**Hurricane**, *sb.* a waterspout. T. of S. V. 2. 119; Lear, III. 2. 2.  
**Hurtle**, *v.t.* to dash. J. C. II. 2. 20.  
**Hurtless**, *adj.* harmless. Lear. IV. 3. 175.  
**Hurling**, *sb.* clashing, din. As. IV. 3. 122.  
**Husband**, *sb.* housekeeper. M. N. Dr. II. 2. 74; T. of S. V. 2. 71. *husbandman*. s H 4. V. 3. 12.  
**Husbandry**, *sb.* thrift, economy. Ham. IV. 1. 3. 77. Management, stewardship. M. of V. III. 4. 25; Tim. II. 2. 24.  
**Hush**, *adj.* still, silent. Ham. IV. 1. 3. 77.  
**Huswife**, *sb.* one who does housework, a housemaid. As. IV. 3. 27. *housewife*. C. of E. I. 2. 9.  
**Hyen**, *sb.* hyena. As. IV. 2. 121.

**Hyperion**, *sb.* Phœbus, the sun. H 5. IV. 1. 299; Ham. I. 2. 140; III. 4. 56.  
**Hyrcan**, *adj.* Hyrcanian. Mac. III. 4. 102.

**Ice-brook**. 'The ice-brook's temper' is the temper of steel produced by plunging it into ice-cold water as of the Salo by Bilbilis in Spain. Oth. V. 2. 253.

**Island-dog**. A white, curly-haired dog, with sharp-pointed ears, much in request among ladies as a lap-dog. H 5. II. 1. 44.

**Idle**, *adj.* trifling, insignificant. Tim. I. 2. 160.  
**Unoccupied**. Oth. I. 3. 140. Foolish, crazy. Ham. III. 2. 95; Lear, I. 3. 16. Useless, unprofitable. C. of E. II. 2. 180; Lear, IV. 4. 5.

**Idle**, *v.t.* to float idly. R. & J. II. 6. 19.

**Idle-headed**, *adj.* foolish. M. W. IV. 4. 36.

**I'faith**, *inf.* perhaps a corruption of 'in faith.' W. T. I. 2. 120.

**Ignomy**, *sb.* ignominy. M. for M. II. 4. 111; T. & C. V. 10. 33; T. A. IV. 2. 115.

**Ignorant**. Ignorant fumes = fumes that produce ignorance or unconsciousness. Temp. V. 1. 67.

**Ill-erected**, *adj.* built for an evil purpose, or with evil auspices. R. 2. V. 1. 2.

**Ill-favoured**, *adj.* ill-looking, ugly. W. T. I. 1. 311; As. III. 5. 53.

**Ill-favouredly**, *adv.* badly, ill. As. III. 2. 279; H 5. IV. 2. 40.

**Ill-habited**, *adj.* badly housed. As. III. 3. 10.

**Illness**, *sb.* badness, wickedness. Mac. I. 5. 21.

**Ill-nurtured**, *adj.* ill-bred, rude. 2 H 6. I. 2. 42; V. & A. 134.

**Ill-ta'en**, *adj.* misapprehended. W. T. I. 2. 460.

**Illume**, *v.t.* to illumine. Ham. I. 1. 37.

**Illustrate**, *adj.* illustrious. L. L. L. IV. 2. 65; V. 1. 128.

**Ill-twisting**, *adj.* twisting to a bad sense. Sonn. CXI. 12.

**Imagery**, *sb.* figures in painting. R. 2. V. 2. 16.

**Imaginary**, *adj.* belonging to the imagination. John, IV. 2. 265. Imaginary forces = powers of imagination. H 5. prol. 18.

**Imagined**, *adj.* belonging to the imagination. M. of V. III. 4. 53; H 5. III. chor. 1.

**Imaginations**, *sb.* imaginations. Mac. I. 3. 138.

**Imbar**, *v.t.* to bar in, secure. H 5. I. 2. 94.

**Immanity**, *sb.* savageness, ferocity. 1 H 6. V. 2. 123.

**Immask**, *v.t.* to hide in a mask, disguise. 2 H 4. I. 2. 201.

**Immediacy**, *sb.* direct holding of office. Lear, V. 3. 65.

**Inamoment**, *adj.* of no moment, insignificant. A. & C. V. 2. 264.

**Inamure**, *sb.* enclosing walls. T. & C. prol. 8.

**Inap**, *sb.* a scion or outshoot. 2 H 4. V. 5. 46; H 5. IV. 2. 45.

**Imp**, *v.t.* to graft; hence, to supply new feathers to a falcon's wing. R. 2. II. 1. 202.

**Impaint**, *v.t.* to paint, colour. 1 H 4. V. 1. 80.

**Improp**, *adj.* unsuitable, inappropriate. T. & C. IV. 2. 202.

**Impart**, *v.t.* to encircle. T. & C. V. 7. 5.

**Impart**, *v.t.* to afford, grant. Lear, 1039; Sonn. XXXII. 1. 1.

**Impartial**, *adj.* indifferent, taking no part. V. & A. 748; M. for M. V. 1. 166.

**Impartment**, *sb.* communication. Ham. I. 4. 59.

**Impasted**, *p.p.* formed into a crust, coagulated. Ham. II. 2. 481.

**Impawn**, *v.t.* to pawn, pledge. W. T. I. 2. 436.

**Impeach**, *sb.* impeachment, accusation. C. of E. V. 1. 269; 3 H 6. I. 4. 60.

**Impeach**, *v.t.* to bring into question, expose to reproach. M. N's Dr. II. 1. 214; M. of V. III. 2. 280; III. 3. 29; R. 2. I. 189.

**Impeachment**, *sb.* check, impediment. H 5. III. 6. 151.

**Imperceivable**, *adj.* dull of perception. Cym. IV. 1. 15.

**Imperious**, *adj.* imperial. Ham. V. 1. 236; T. & C. IV. 5. 172.

**Impetico**. To impocket, or impeticoat; a nonsense word. Tw. N. II. 3. 271.

**Implicated**, *p.p.* intertwined. Comp. 205.

**Implores**, *sb.* solicitors. Ham. I. 3. 129.

**Imposed**, *p.p.* laid as a wager. Ham. V. 2. 155, 171.

**Import**, *sb.* importance, moment. R. & J. V. 2. 19; Oth. III. 3. 316.

**Importance**, *sb.* import. W. T. V. 2. 20.

**Importunity**, *urgent request*. Tw. N. V. 1. 371; John, II. 1. 7. That which is imported, the question at issue. Cym. I. 4. 45.

**Importance**, *sb.* importance. Oth. I. 3. 20.

**Important**, *adj.* urgent. C. of E. V. 1. 138; M. A. II. 1. 74.

**Importing**, *adj.* full of meaning, significant. A. W. V. 3. 136.

**Importless**, *adj.* meaningless. T. & C. I. 3. 71.

**Impose**, *sb.* injunction. Two G. IV. 3. 8.

**Impose**, *v.t.* to enjoin. M. A. V. 1. 282.

**Imposition**, *sb.* injunction, command. M. of V. I. 2. 124. Penalty. M. for M. I. 2. 194; W. T. I. 2. 74.

**Imposthume**, *sb.* an abscess. Ham. IV. 4. 27; T. & C. V. 1. 24.

**Impotence**, *sb.* infirmity. Ham. II. 2. 66.

**Impotent**, *adj.* infirm. Ham. I. 2. 29.

**Imprese**, *sb.* a device with a motto. R. 2. III. 1. 25.

**Impress**, *v.t.* to compel to serve, press into service. Mac. IV. 1. 95; 1 H 4. I. 1. 21.

**Impressure**, *sb.* imprint, impression. As. III. 5. 23.

**Impudency**, *sb.* impudence. L. L. I. V. 1. 5.

**Impugn**, *v.t.* to oppose, resist. M. of V. IV. 1. 179; 2 H 6. III. 1. 281.

**Imputation**, *sb.* reputation. T. & C. I. 3. 139; Ham. V. 2. 140. That which may be ascribed to an act. Oth. III. 3. 406.

**In**, *prep.* on. M. N's Dr. II. 1. 85; R. 3. I. 4. 28; T. & C. IV. 2. 35. Into. M. for M. II. 3. 11; M. W. III. 5. 6; R. 3. I. 2. 261.

**In**, *v.t.* to get in, house. A. W. I. 3. 28.

**Inaidible**, *adj.* that cannot be helped, irremediable. A. W. II. 1. 122.

**Incapable**, *adj.* not susceptible. Cor. IV. 6. 120.

**Unable to comprehend**. Ham. IV. 3. 179.

**Incardinate**, *adj.* incarnate. Tw. N. V. 3. 125.

**Incardine**, *v.t.* to dye a deep red. Mac. II. 2. 60.

- Incarnal**, blunder for 'incarnate.' M. of V. II. 2. 29.
- Incensed**, *p.p.* instructed, informed. H 8. v. 2. 43.
- Incensment**, *sb.* exasperation. Tw. N. III. 4. 260.
- Incertainly**, *sb.* uncertainty. Sonn. CXV. 21.
- Incharitable**, *adj.* uncharitable. Tp. I. 1. 44.
- Inch-meal**, *by.* By inches, gradually. Tp. II. 2. 3.
- Incidency**, *sb.* incidence, liability to happen. W. T. I. 2. 403.
- Incision**, *sb.* blood-letting. L. L. L. IV. 3. 97.
- To make incision is to cut for the purpose of letting blood. M. of V. II. 1. 6; As. III. 2. 75.
- Incivil**, *adj.* rude, discourteous. Cym. v. 5. 292.
- Inclicable**, *adj.* inclining, disposed. Cor. II. 2. 60.
- Inclining**, *adj.* compliant, favourably disposed. Oth. II. 3. 346.
- Inclining**, *sb.* inclination, party. Oth. I. 2. 82.
- Inclip**, *v.t.* to encircle, embrace. A. & C. II. 7. 74.
- Include**, *v.t.* to conclude, close, end. Two G. V. 4. 160; T. & C. I. 3. 110.
- Inclusive**, *adj.* latent. A. W. I. 3. 232.
- Income**, *sb.* the coming in. Lucr. 334.
- Incontinent**, *adv.* immediately. As. V. 2. 42; B 2. V. 6. 48.
- Incontinently**, *adv.* immediately. Oth. I. 3. 306.
- Incony**, *adj.* dainty, delicate. L. L. L. III. 136; IV. 1. 244.
- Incorporeal**, *adj.* immaterial. Ham. III. 4. 118.
- Incorporate**, *p.p.* closely united. J. C. I. 3. 135.
- Incorporsed**, *p.p.* made one body. Ham. IV. 7. 88.
- Incorrect**, *adj.* unsubdued, unsubmissive. Ham. I. 2. 95.
- Increase**, *sb.* produce. Tp. IV. 2. 120; Cor. III. 3. 114.
- Increaseful**, *adj.* full of produce. Lucr. 958.
- Incredulous**, *adj.* incredible. Tw. N. III. 4. 88.
- Incurious**, *sb.* inroads into the enemy's country. T. & C. II. 1. 32.
- Ind or Inde**, *sb.* India. Tp. II. 2. 61; L. L. L. IV. 3. 222; As. III. 2. 93.
- Indent**, *v.t.* to make terms, compound. H 4. I. 3. 87.
- Indent**, *sb.* indentation. H 4. III. 1. 204.
- Index**, *sb.* the table of contents, originally placed at the beginning of a book; hence, introduction, prologue. B 3. II. 2. 149; IV. 4. 85; T. & C. I. 3. 343; Ham. III. 4. 52; Oth. II. 1. 263.
- Indifferency**, *sb.* impartiality. John. II. 1. 579.
- Moderate capacity, ordinary size. H 4. IV. 3. 23.
- Indifferent**, *adj.* ordinary, commonplace. T. of B. IV. 2. 94; Ham. II. 2. 321.
- Impartial**. B 2. II. 3. 125; H 8. II. 4. 17.
- Indifferent**, *adv.* tolerably, moderately, not exceptionally. Tw. N. I. 3. 143; I. 5. 265; Ham. III. 2. 123.
- Indifferently**, *adv.* moderately, tolerably. H 3. II. 2. 38; Ham. III. 2. 42.
- Indigest**, *sb.* a shapeless mass, chaos. John. V. 7. 26.
- Indigen**, *adj.* shapeless. Sonn. CXIV. 5.
- Indign**, *adj.* unworthy, disgraceful. Oth. I. 3. 274.
- Indirection**, *sb.* injustice, crooked policy. John. III. 2. 276; J. C. IV. 3. 75.
- Indirect** or oblique method. Ham. II. 2. 66.
- Indirectly**, *adv.* wrongfully, unjustly. John. II. 2. 49; H 2. II. 4. 94.
- Indistinguishable**, *adj.* mongrel, whose breed cannot be recognized. T. & C. V. 1. 33.
- Indite**, blunder for 'invite.' H 4. II. 2. 30; B. & J. II. 4. 135.
- Individable**. 'Scene individable' is perhaps a play in which the unity of place is preserved. Ham. II. 2. 418.
- Indrenched**, *p.p.* drenched, overwhelmed. T. & C. I. 2. 51.
- Indubitate**, *adj.* undoubted. L. L. L. IV. 2. 67.
- Induction**, *sb.* beginning, introduction. H 4. III. 1. 2; B 3. I. 1. 32; IV. 4. 5.
- Indue**, *v.t.* to endow, affect, qualify. Oth. III. 4. 146; Ham. IV. 7. 180.
- Indurance**, *sb.* durance, imprisonment. H 8. V. 1. 222.
- Inequality**, *sb.* inconsistency. M. for M. v. 2. 65.
- Inexorable**, *adj.* that cannot be sufficiently execrated. M. of V. IV. 1. 128.
- Infamelize**, *v.t.* to render infamous, defame. L. L. L. V. 2. 684.
- Infect**, *p.p.* infected. T. & C. I. 3. 187.
- Infection**, blunder for 'affection.' M. W. II. 2. 120; M. of V. II. 2. 133.
- Infer**, *v.t.* to allege, bring in as an argument. B 3. III. 2. 75; III. 7. 22; Tim. III. 5. 73.
- Infest**, *v.t.* to harass, vex. Tp. V. 1. 246.
- Infinite**, *sb.* infinity. Two G. II. 7. 70; M. A. II. 3. 106; T. & C. II. 2. 29.
- Infinitive**, blunder for 'infinitive.' H 4. II. 1. 26.
- Inform**, *v.t.* to take shape. Mac. II. 1. 48; *v.t.* to form, fashion; hence, to inspire, animate. Cor. V. 3. 71.
- Informal**, *adj.* crazy, irrational. M. for M. v. 1. 236.
- Information**, *sb.* informer, abstract for concrete. Cor. IV. 6. 33.
- Infusion**, *sb.* essential quality. Ham. V. 2. 122.
- Ingenious**, *adj.* delicately sensitive, intelligent. Ham. V. 1. 271; Lear. IV. 6. 287.
- Ingeniously**, *adv.* ingeniously. Tim. II. 2. 230.
- Ingraft**, *p.p.* ingrafted. Oth. II. 3. 145.
- Ingrate**, *adj.* ungrateful. Tw. N. V. 1. 126; John. V. 2. 151.
- Ingrateful**, *adj.* ungrateful. Tw. N. V. 2. 60; Cor. II. 2. 35.
- Inhabitable**, *adj.* uninhabitable. B 2. I. 2. 65.
- Inherit**, *v.t.* to possess. Tp. IV. 2. 124.
- To cause to possess, put in possession. B 2. I. 1. 85. *v.t.* to take possession. Tp. II. 2. 129.
- Inhooped**, *p.p.* enclosed or confined in a hoop, in which birds were made to fight. A. & C. II. 3. 38.
- Initiate**, *adj.* 'initiate fear' is that which attends the beginning of a career of guilt. Mac. III. 4. 143.
- Injuncted**, *p.p.* Oth. I. 2. 25.
- Injurious**, *adj.* insulting. H 6. I. 4. 31; Cor. III. 3. 60.
- Injury**, *sb.* insult. M. N. Dr. III. 2. 148.
- Inkhorn mate**, *sb.* a mix of contempt applied to a bookish man. H 6. III. 2. 95.

- Table**, *sb.* coarse tape. L. L. L. III. 2. 240; W. A. IV. 4. 202; Per. V. 1. 10.
- Inland**, *adv.* belongs to the interior of the country; hence, of refined. Aa. III. 2. 353. *adv.* in. = brought up in the interior; and so, out. Aa. III. 7. 96.
- Inly**, *adv.* inward. Two G. II. 7. 18; 3 H. 6. I. 4. 177. *adv.* inwardly. Ps. V. 2. 200; H. 5. IV. chor. 24.
- Inn**, *sb.* a temporary residence. R. 2. V. 2. 13.
- Innocent**, *sb.* an idiot, fool. A. W. IV. 3. 213; Lear, III. 6. 8; Per. IV. 3. 17.
- Inquire**, *sb.* inquiry. Ham. II. 1. 4; Per. III. 1. 22.
- Inquisition**, *sb.* inquiry. Tp. I. 2. 35; Aa. II. 2. 20.
- Insane**, *adj.* maddening, causing insanity. Mac. I. 3. 84.
- Insane**, *sb.* madness. L. L. L. V. 1. 28.
- Insconce**, *v.t. & r.* to shelter, hide. Lucr. 1515; M. W. II. 2. 27; III. 3. 96.
- Insculped**, *p.p.* engraved, cut; 'insculp'd upon' = cut in relief. M. of V. II. 7. 57.
- Insculpture**, *sb.* inscription. Tim. V. 4. 67.
- Inseparate**, *adj.* that cannot be divided. T. & C. V. 2. 148.
- Inset**, *v.t.* to set. 2 H. 4. I. 2. 19.
- Insinewed**, *p.p.* bound as by sinews. 2 H. 4. IV. 1. 172.
- Insinuate**, *v.t.* to coax, wheedle, ingratiate oneself. R. 2. IV. 1. 165; Cor. II. 3. 105; V. & A. 1012. *v.t.* to suggest, hint. L. L. L. V. 1. 27.
- Innuatation**, *sb.* a flattering proposal. John. V. 1. 68. Artful intention. Ham. V. 2. 59.
- Insisture**, *sb.* persistence. T. & C. I. 3. 87.
- Insociable**, *adj.* unsociable. L. L. L. V. 1. 20; V. 2. 809.
- Instalment**, *sb.* installation. R. 3. III. 1. 163. Perhaps = stall. M. W. V. 5. 67.
- Instance**, *sb.* motive. H. 5. II. 2. 119; R. 3. III. 2. 25. Proof, evidence. M. A. II. 2. 42; 2 H. 4. III. 1. 103. Token. Two G. II. 7. 70; Lucr. 1511. Example. Tw. N. IV. 3. 12. Anything given in proof, a sentence. M. A. V. 2. 78; Aa. II. 2. 156.
- Instant**, *adj.* instantaneous. Ham. I. 5. 71.
- Instant**, *adv.* immediately. Tim. II. 2. 239; Ham. I. 5. 94.
- Insufficiency**, *sb.* insufficiency. W. T. I. 2. 16.
- Insultment**, *sb.* insult, triumph over an enemy. Cym. III. 5. 143.
- Insuppressible**, *adj.* that cannot be suppressed. T. & C. II. 2. 134.
- Intellect**, *sb.* signification; and, perhaps, signification. A. L. L. IV. 2. 137.
- Intelligence**, *adj.* conveying intelligence. W. T. II. 3. 68.
- Intelligent**, *adj.* bearing intelligence, giving information. W. T. I. 2. 278; Lear, III. 1. 25; III. 3. 22; III. 7. 12.
- Intemperance**, *sb.* want of restraint, licentiousness. 2 H. 4. III. 2. 156; Mac. IV. 3. 66.
- Inward**, *v.t.* to direct. A. & C. V. 2. 202; Per. I. 2. 128. To mean. A. & C. II. 2. 40. To pretend. M. A. II. 2. 31; T. & C. IV. 1. 215; R. 3. III. 2. 2.
- Intensify**, *sb.* agitation, change. Aa. I. 2. 240; V. & A. 222. Aim; the main intentment = the chief attack. H. 5. I. 2. 144.
- Intensify**, *adj.* incapable of retaining. A. W. I. 3. 208.
- Intention**, *sb.* aim, bent. M. W. I. 3. 73; W. T. I. 2. 138.
- Intensively**, *adv.* attentively. Oth. I. 3. 155.
- Intermed**, *p.p.* intermed. Lear, 2. 1. 87.
- Interest**, *sb.* right, claim. John. V. 2. 89; 2 H. 4. III. 2. 98.
- Interrogatory**, *sb.* interrogatory. M. of V. V. 1. 208; A. W. IV. 3. 207.
- Intermission**, *sb.* pause, delay, interruption. M. of V. III. 2. 201; Aa. II. 7. 32; Mac. IV. 3. 232.
- Intermissive**, *adj.* intermitted, interrupted. 2 H. 6. I. 1. 88.
- Interrogatory**, *sb.* a question to be answered on oath. John. III. 1. 147.
- Interstissed**, *p.p.* woven into the tissue. H. 5. IV. 1. 279.
- Intervallum**, *sb.* interval. 2 H. 4. V. 2. 91.
- Intil**, *prep.* into. Ham. V. 1. 81.
- Intio**, *prep.* unto. A. W. I. 3. 260; Tw. N. V. 1. 87; H. 5. I. 2. 102; II. 2. 173.
- Intreasured**, *p.p.* stored up. 2 H. 4. III. 1. 85.
- Intrenchant**, *adj.* that cannot be cut, invulnerable. Mac. V. 2. 89.
- Intrinsc**, *adj.* tightly drawn. Lear, II. 2. 81.
- Intrinscale**, *adj.* tightly drawn, or perhaps, intricate. A. & C. V. 2. 307.
- Invasive**, *adj.* invading. John. V. 1. 69.
- Invectively**, *adv.* reproachfully, abusively. Aa. II. 2. 58.
- Investing**, *p.p.* enveloping, enwrapping. H. 5. IV. chor. 26.
- Investments**, *sb.* dress, apparel. 2 H. 4. IV. 1. 45; Ham. I. 3. 128.
- Invincible**, *adj.* an error for 'invisible.' 2 H. 4. III. 2. 337.
- Inviscd**, *adj.* perhaps, unseen. Comp. 222.
- Inviting**, *sb.* invitation. Tim. III. 6. 11.
- Invoke**, *v.t.* to invoke. R. 3. I. 2. 8; 2 H. 6. I. 2. 52.
- Inward**, *adj.* intimate. R. 3. III. 4. 8. Private, secret. L. L. L. V. 1. 102; M. A. IV. 2. 129.
- Inward**, *sb.* inside. Sonn. CXXVIII. 6. An intimate. M. for M. III. 2. 128.
- Inward**, *adv.* inwardly. M. of V. III. 2. 86; Ham. IV. 4. 28.
- Inwardness**, *sb.* intimacy. M. A. IV. 1. 247.
- Irk**, *v.t.* to vex, annoy; used impersonally. Aa. II. 2. 22; 2 H. 6. I. 4. 103; 3 H. 6. II. 2. 6.
- Irrcgular**, *adj.* disorderly, lawless. Cym. IV. 2. 315.
- Issued**, *p.p.* descended. Tp. I. 2. 50.
- Ita**, *post. pron.* ita. Tp. II. 2. 161; W. T. II. 3. 178; H. 5. V. 2. 40; Ham. I. 2. 216, 222.
- Iterance**, *sb.* repetition. Oth. V. 2. 120.
- Iteration**, *sb.* repetition. 2 H. 4. I. 2. 202; T. & C. III. 2. 183.
- Iwis**, *adv.* truly, certainly. M. of V. II. 9. 68; R. 3. I. 3. 202.
- Jack**, *sb.* the small bowl aimed at in the game of bowls. Cym. II. 2. 2. A term of contempt for a paltry fellow. R. 3. I. 3. 72; R. & J. II.

4. 160. The figure which struck the bell in old clocks. R. a. v. 5. 60; R. 3. IV. 2. 117.
- Jack-a-Lent, *sb.* a rag doll, thrown at in Lent. M. W. III. 3. 27; V. 5. 134.
- Jack guardant, *A* rascally sentinel. Cor. V. 2. 67.
- Jacks, *sb.* the keys of a virginal. Sonn. cxxviii. 5. 13. Drinking vessels. T. of S. IV. 1. 51.
- Jackanuce, *A* saucy Jack. H. 5. IV. 7. 148.
- Jade, *v.t.* to play the jade with, run away with. Tw. N. II. 5. 178. To drive like a jade. A. & C. III. 2. 34. To treat with contempt. H. 8. III. 2. 280.
- Jaded, *p.p.* worn out. H. 6. IV. 1. 52.
- Jar, *sb.* a tick of the clock. W. T. I. 2. 43.
- Jar, *v.t.* to tick. R. a. v. 5. 51. *v.t.* to quarrel. H. 6. III. 1. 70.
- Jars, *sb.* quarrels. H. 6. I. 1. 44.
- Jaunce, *v.t.* to fret a horse so as to make him prance. R. 2. v. 5. 94.
- Jaunt, *sb.* a prancing. R. & J. II. 5. 26.
- Jaunting, *pr. p.* prancing. R. & J. II. 5. 53.
- Jay, *sb.* used for a loose woman. M. W. III. 3. 44; Cym. III. 4. 57.
- Jennet, *sb.* a Spanish horse. V. & A. 260.
- Jerkin, *sb.* jacket. Tp. IV. 1. 236; T. & C. III. 3. 266.
- Jones, *sb.* the straps by which the legs of a hawk were fastened to the falconer's hand. Oth. III. 3. 261.
- Jest, *v.t.* to play a part in a masque. R. 2. I. 3. 95.
- Jes, *v.t.* to strut with head erect. Tw. N. II. 5. 36; Cym. III. 3. 5. To encroach. R. 3. II. 4. 51; T. A. II. 1. 64.
- Jig, *sb.* a merry dance. M. A. II. 1. 77; Tw. N. I. 3. 138. A ludicrous ballad or farce. Ham. II. 2. 522.
- Jig, *v.t.* to walk as one that dances a jig. Ham. III. 1. 190. To write jigs or doggrel ballads. J. O. IV. 3. 137. To sing like the tune of a jig. L. L. L. III. 1. 11.
- Jig-maker, *sb.* a composer of jigs. Ham. III. 2. 131.
- Joan, old. The name of a hawk. H. 6. II. 1. 4.
- John-a-dreams, John o' dreams, John the Dreamer. Ham. II. 2. 525.
- Joinder, *sb.* joining. Tw. N. v. 1. 160.
- Joined-stool, *sb.* a joint-stool, a folding stool. H. 4. II. 4. 418; H. 4. II. 4. 269; T. of S. II. 2. 299.
- Joint, *v.t.* & *t.* to unite, join. A. & C. I. 2. 96; Cym. V. 4. 142; V. 5. 440.
- Jointress, *sb.* a widow with a jointure, a dowager. Ham. I. 2. 9.
- Joint-ring, *sb.* a split-ring, gimmet-ring, of which the two halves were made to fit very closely. Oth. IV. 3. 73.
- Joint-stool, *sb.* a folding stool. R. & J. I. 5. 7; Lear, III. 6. 34.
- Joit-head, *sb.* blockhead. Two G. III. 1. 290; T. of S. IV. 1. 160.
- Jordan, *sb.* a chamber-pot. H. 4. II. 1. 22; H. 4. II. 4. 37.
- Journal, *adv.* journal, daily. M. for M. IV. 3. 99; Cym. IV. 2. 10.
- Journey-bated, *adv.* tired with marching. H. 4. IV. 3. 26.
- Jovial, *adj.* Jove-like. Cym. IV. 2. 211.
- Jowl, *v.t.* to knock, dash. A. W. I. 3. 20; Ham. V. 1. 84.
- Joy, *v.t.* to gladden. R. 3. I. 2. 220. To enjoy. R. 2. v. 6. 26. *v.t.* to be glad. R. a. H. 3. 15; V. 3. 95; H. 4. II. 1. 13. To have de. R. 3. IV. 4. 93; R. & J. II. 4. 116.
- Judicious, *adj.* judicial. Cor. V. 6. 122.
- Jump, *sb.* hazard. A. & C. III. 8. 6.
- Jump, *v.t.* to agree. Tw. N. v. 1. 259; R. 3. III. 1. 11. *v.t.* to hazard, risk. Mac. I. 7. 7; Cym. V. 4. 288. To expose to risk. Cor. III. 1. 154.
- Jump, *adv.* just, exactly. Ham. I. 1. 65; V. 2. 336; Oth. II. 3. 392.
- Junkets, *sb.* sweetmeats. T. of S. III. 2. 291.
- Just, *sb.* a tilt, tournament. R. a. v. 2. 52. *v.t.* to tilt. Per. II. 2. 116. *adv.* exactly. M. for M. III. 1. 68; V. 1. 202; M. A. II. 1. 29.
- Justicer, *sb.* justice, judge. Lear, III. 6. 23. 59; IV. 2. 79; Cym. V. 5. 224.
- Jutty, *sb.* projection. Mac. I. 6. 6.
- Jutty, *v.t.* to project over. H. 5. III. 2. 13.
- Juvenal, *sb.* a youth. L. L. L. I. 2. 8; III. 1. 67; M. N's Dr. III. 1. 97; H. 4. I. 2. 22.
- Kam, *adj.* crooked, awry. Cor. III. 1. 304.
- Kecksies, *sb.* hemlock and similar plants with hollow stalks. H. 5. v. 2. 52.
- Keesh, *sb.* a round lump of tallow or fat. H. 8. I. 2. 55.
- Keel, *v.t.* to cool. L. L. L. v. 2. 932, 939. (Others interpret it 'to scum or skim'.)
- Keep, *sb.* keeping, custody. T. of S. I. 2. 128.
- Keep, *v.t.* to live, dwell. T. & C. IV. 5. 228; Mac. V. 4. 9; Ham. II. 1. 8; M. of V. III. 3. 19. *v.r.* to restrain oneself. Two G. IV. 4. 11.
- Keeping, *sb.* maintenance. As. I. 1. 9.
- Keisar, emperor. M. W. I. 3. 9.
- Ken, *sb.* perception, sight, view. H. 4. IV. 2. 151; H. 6. III. 2. 113; Cym. III. 6. 6.
- Ken, *v.t.* to discern, know. H. 6. III. 2. 222; T. & C. IV. 5. 14; M. W. I. 3. 14.
- Kendal green, *sb.* a dark green cloth made at Kendal. H. 4. II. 4. 265.
- Kerchief, *sb.* originally a covering for the head, a handkerchief. M. W. III. 3. 62; IV. 2. 74; J. O. II. 1. 315.
- Kern, *sb.* a light armed foot soldier of Ireland and the Western Isles. R. 2. II. 1. 196; Mac. I. 2. 13, 30.
- Kersey, *sb.* coarse woollen cloth. M. for M. I. 2. 35; T. of S. III. 1. 62.
- Kettle, *sb.* a kettle-drum. Ham. V. 2. 222.
- Key, *sb.* a tuning key. Tp. I. 2. 83.
- Key-cold, *adj.* cold as a key. R. 3. I. 2. 5; Lear, III. 7. 174.
- Kibe, *sb.* a chilblain on the heel. Tp. II. 1. 292; Ham. V. 1. 153.
- Kicksnaw, *sb.* a trifle. Tw. N. I. 3. 122; H. 4. V. 1. 29.
- Kicky-wicky, *sb.* & *darling*; a pet term for wife or mistress. A. W. II. 3. 297.
- Kid-fox, *sb.* a fox cub. M. A. II. 5. 44.
- Kill! the cry of troops when charging the enemy. Cor. V. 6. 122; Lear, IV. 6. 22; V. & A. 622.

- Killen**, *v.t.* to kill. Per. II. prol. 20.  
**Killingworth**, *Kenilworth*. s H 6. IV. 4. 39. 44.  
**Kiln-hole**, *sb.* the first place of a kiln. M. W. IV. 2. 59; W. T. IV. 4. 247.  
**Kin**, *adj.* akin, related. M. for M. II. 4. 213; s H 4. II. 2. 120.  
**Kind**, *sb.* nature. J. O. I. 3. 64; Lucr. 1147; M. of V. I. 3. 86. *adj.* natural. Lucr. 1423.  
*adv.* kindly. Tim. I. 2. 225.  
**Kindle**, *v.t.* to incite. As. I. 1. 179. To bring forth young. As. III. 2. 338.  
**Kindless**, *adj.* unnatural. Ham. II. 2. 609.  
**Kindlier**, *adv.* more naturally. Tp. v. 1. 24.  
**Kindly**, *adj.* natural, seasonable. M. A. IV. 1. 73; As. II. 3. 53. *adv.* naturally, in a natural manner. R. & J. II. 4. 59; T. of S. Ind. I. 66.  
**Kingdomed**, *p.p.* like a kingdom. T. & C. II. 3. 185; comp. J. O. II. 1. 68.  
**Kinged**, *p.p.* furnished with a king, ruled. John. II. 1. 371; H 5. II. 4. 26. Made a king. R 2. V. 5. 36.  
**Kingly**, *adv.* royally. Sonn. CXIV. 10.  
**Kingly-poor**, *adj.* poor for a king. L. L. L. V. 2. 269.  
**Kirtle**, *sb.* a jacket, with petticoat attached. s H 4. II. 4. 297.  
**Kissing-comfits**, *sb.* comfits for sweetening the breath. M. W. V. 5. 22.  
**Kitchen**, *v.t.* to entertain in the kitchen. C. of E. V. 1. 415.  
**Knack**, *sb.* a knick-knack, trifle. M. N's Dr. I. 1. 34; W. T. IV. 4. 260.  
**Knap**, *v.t.* to gnaw, nibble. M. of V. III. 2. 10. To rap. Lear. II. 4. 125.  
**Knave**, *sb.* a lad, servant. J. O. IV. 3. 241; M. W. III. 5. 99.  
**Knee**, *v.t.* to go on one's knees. Cor. v. 2. 5. To kneel before. Lear. II. 4. 217.  
**Knit**, *sb.* texture or pattern in knitting. T. of S. IV. 1. 95.  
**Knolled**, *p.p.* tolled. As. II. 7. 114, 121; Mac. V. 3. 50.  
**Knot**, *sb.* used of folded arms. Tp. I. 2. 224; Tit. III. 2. 4. A plot or bed in a garden. R 2. III. 4. 46.  
**Knot-grass**, *sb.* the plant *Polygonum aviculare*, which was supposed to have the power of checking growth. M. N's Dr. III. 2. 329.  
**Knotty-pated**, *adj.* thick headed. s H 4. II. 4. 251.  
**Knowing**, *sb.* knowledge. Ham. v. 2. 44; Tim. III. 2. 74. Experience. Mac. II. 4. 4; Cym. I. 4. 30.  
**Known**, *p.p.* been acquainted. A. & C. II. 6. 86; Cym. I. 4. 36.  
**Laboursome**, *adj.* laborious, elaborate. Ham. I. 2. 59; Cym. II. 4. 167.  
**Labras**, *Lips*; Pistol's Spanish. M. W. I. 1. 106.  
**Lace**, *v.t.* to adorn, as with embroidery. Mac. II. 3. 118; Cym. II. 2. 22.  
**Laced mutton**, *sb.* a cant name for a courtesan. Two G. I. 1. 102.  
**Lade**, *v.t.* to empty, drain. s H 6. III. 2. 139.  
**Lady-smock**, *sb.* the plant *Cardamine pratensis*. L. L. L. V. 2. 205.  
**Lag**, *sb.* the lowest class. Tim. III. 6. 90. *adv.* late. R 3. II. 1. 90. *adj.* lag of =loitering behind. Lear. I. 2. 6.  
**Lag-end**, *sb.* the lag-end, last part. s H 4. V. 1. 24; H 8. I. 3. 35.  
**Laid**, *p.p.* waylaid. s H 6. IV. 10. 4.  
**Lakin**, *sb.* ladykin or little lady. Tp. III. 3. 1; M. N's Dr. III. 1. 14.  
**Lampass**, *sb.* a swelling of the bars of the palate in horses. T. of S. III. 2. 52.  
**Land**, *sb.* lawn. Tp. IV. 1. 450. See **Laund**.  
**Land-damn**, *an* incurable corruption in W. T. II. 1. 143.  
**Land-rakers**, *sb.* vagabonds. s H 4. II. 1. 81.  
**Languish**, *sb.* a lingering malady. R. & J. I. 2. 49; A. & C. V. 2. 42.  
**Languishing**, *sb.* lingering disease. A. W. I. 3. 235.  
**Lank**, *v.t.* to grow thin. A. & C. I. 4. 71.  
**Lap**, *v.t.* to wrap. R 3. II. 1. 115; Mac. I. 2. 54; Cym. V. 5. 360.  
**Lapse**, *sb.* slip, error. A. W. II. 3. 170. *v.t.* to fall away, especially from truth. Cor. V. 2. 19; Cym. III. 6. 12.  
**Lapsed**, *p.p.* caught, surprised. Tw. N. III. 3. 36. Fallen. Ham. III. 4. 107. 'Lapsed in time and passion' may mean fallen away from his duty by neglecting opportunity and indulging passion.  
**Lard**, *v.t.* to garnish. H 5. IV. 6. 8; Ham. IV. 5. 37. To fatten. s H 4. II. 4. 116; Tim. IV. 3. 12.  
**Large**, *adj.* free; and so, gross, licentious. Mac. III. 4. 11; M. A. II. 3. 206; IV. 1. 53.  
**Large-handed**, *adj.* grasping. Tim. IV. 1. 11.  
**Largess**, *sb.* bounty, present. R 2. I. 4. 44; Mac. II. 1. 14.  
**Lass-lorn**, *adj.* forsaken by his mistress. Tp. IV. 1. 68.  
**Last**, *in* the last = at last. Cor. V. 6. 42.  
**Latch**, *v.t.* to catch, lay hold of. Mac. IV. 3. 195; Sonn. CXIII. 6. In M. N's Dr. III. 2. 36 it seems to mean to take or hold as by a spell or charm; or perhaps, to close. For the sense of 'smear, anoint, there appears to be no evidence.  
**Late**, *adj.* lately appointed. H 5. II. 2. 61. Recent. Tp. V. 1. 145.  
**Lated**, *p.p.* belated, benighted. Mac. III. 3. 6; A. & C. III. 11. 3.  
**Latten**, *sb.* a mixed metal, made of copper and calamine. M. W. I. 1. 165. It is also used of tinned iron plates and in Cornwall for tin itself.  
**Laud**, *sb.* praise, glory. s H 4. IV. 5. 236; T. & C. III. 3. 179. *v.t.* to praise. s H 4. III. 3. 215; Cym. V. 5. 476.  
**Laund**, *sb.* lawn, glads. s H 6. III. 1. 2; V. & A. 813.  
**Launder**, *v.t.* to wash. Comp. 17.  
**Lavish**, *adj.* licentious. s H 4. IV. 6. 64.  
**Lavishly**, *adv.* licentiously, arbitrarily. s H 4. IV. 2. 57.  
**Lavolt**, *sb.* a dance by two persons, consisting chiefly of lofty bounds, and whirling round; a kind of waltz. T. & C. IV. 4. 88.  
**Lavolta**, *sb.* See **Lavolt**. H 5. III. 4. 33.  
**Law-days**, *sb.* court-days, when the judges sit. Oth. III. 3. 140.



- Lay**, *sb.* a wager, stake. *s* H 6. V. 2. 27; Oth. II. 3. 330.
- Lay by**, *v.t.* Stand still; a phrase borrowed from sailors. *s* H 4. I. 2. 40.
- Lay up**, *v.* H 5. V. 2. 248. See **Lay up**.
- Lay for**, *v.* To lay out for, venture for, strive to win. *Tim.* III. 5. 115.
- Lay up**, *v.* To fold up and put away. *s* H 4. V. 2. 95.
- Lazar**, *sb.* a leper. *H* 5. I. 1. 15.
- Lazar-like**, *adj.* leprous. *Ham.* I. 5. 72.
- Leading**, *sb.* generalship. *s* H 4. IV. 3. 17.
- Leaguer**, *sb.* camp. *A. W.* III. 6. 27.
- Lean-looking**, *adj.* lean-looking. *R* 2. II. 4. 11.
- Lean-witted**, *adj.* empty headed. *R* 2. II. 1. 115.
- Leas**, *sb.* fields of arable land. *TP.* IV. 2. 60; *H* 5. V. 2. 44; *Tim.* IV. 3. 193.
- Leasing**, *sb.* lying, falsehood. *Tw. N.* I. 5. 105; *Cor.* V. 2. 22.
- Leather-coats**, *sb.* golden russetings; a kind of apple. *s* H 4. V. 3. 44.
- Leave**, *v.t.* to part with. *Two G.* IV. 4. 79; *M.* of V. V. 2. 172; *Ham.* III. 4. 91. *v.t.* to cease. *Ham.* III. 2. 184.
- Leave**, *sb.* license, liberty. *3* H 6. III. 2. 34; *V.* & A. 568.
- Leavened**, *adj.* well made up. *M.* for *M.* I. 2. 52.
- Leech**, *sb.* a physician. *Tim.* v. 4. 84.
- Leer**, *sb.* complexion. *As.* IV. 1. 67; *T. A.* IV. 2. 119.
- Leese**, *v.t.* to lose. *Sonn.* V. 14.
- Leet**, *sb.* a minor court. *T.* of S. Ind. II. 89. The time at which such a court is held. *Oth.* III. 3. 140.
- Leg**, *sb.* a bow. *A. W.* II. 2. 10; *R* 2. III. 3. 175; *Cor.* II. 1. 77.
- Legs**, *v.t.* to allege. *T.* of S. I. 2. 28.
- Legerity**, *sb.* lightness, nimbleness, activity. *H* 5. IV. 1. 23.
- Leiger**, *sb.* an ambassador. *M.* for *M.* III. 1. 59.
- Leisure**, *sb.* time at one's own disposal. *R* 2. I. 1. 5; *R* 3. V. 3. 97, 238. By my good leisure = by the good use of my time with him. *M.* for *M.* III. 2. 261.
- Leman**, *sb.* a paramour. *M. W.* IV. 2. 172; *Tw. N.* II. 3. 26; *s* H 4. V. 3. 49.
- Lendings**, *sb.* superfluous ornaments. *Lear*, III. 4. 113.
- Length**, *sb.* delay, protraction. *A. & C.* IV. 14. 46. *v.t.* to lengthen. *Pass.* P. 210.
- Lenten**, *adj.* meagre, scanty; like a dinner in Lent. *Ham.* II. 2. 329; *Tw. N.* I. 5. 9.
- L'envoy**, *sb.* the epilogue. *L. L. L.* III. 1. 72, 73, &c.
- Lesson**, *v.t.* to teach, instruct. *Two G.* II. 7. 5; *R* 3. I. 4. 246; *Cor.* II. 3. 185.
- Let**, *v.t.* to hinder. *Ham.* I. 4. 85; *Tw. N.* v. 1. 256. To detain. *W. T. I.* 2. 41. To forbear. *Lucr.* 10. p. 3. caused. *Ham.* IV. 6. 11. *sb.* hindrance, impediment. *H* 5. V. 2. 65; *Lucr.* 330, 646.
- Let-alone**, *sb.* hindrance, prohibition. *Lear*, v. 3. 79.
- Lethe**, *sb.* oblivion. *Tw. N.* IV. 1. 66; *A. & C.* II. 7. 114. The blood shed by a deer at its fall. *J. C.* III. 1. 206.
- Level**, *sb.* aim, line of fire. *W. T. II.* 3. 6; *Ham.* I. 2. 2; *R.* & *J.* III. 3. 103. *v.t.* to aim. *R* 3. IV. 4. 202. To guess. *M.* of V. I. 2. 41. To be on the same level. *Oth.* I. 3. 240. *Evenly*. *Tw. N.* II. 4. 32.
- Lewd**, *adj.* base, vile. *R* 2. I. 1. 90; *s* H 4. III. 2. 13; *R* 3. I. 3. 61.
- Lewdly**, *adv.* wickedly. *s* H 6. II. 1. 167.
- Lewister**, *sb.* a libertina. *M. W.* V. 3. 23.
- Lewd-tongued**, *adj.* foul-spoken. *W. T. II.* 3. 172.
- Libable**, *adj.* subject, inclined. *John.* II. 1. 490; *IV.* 2. 226; *V.* 2. 107; *J. C.* I. 2. 199; *II.* 2. 204.
- Libbard**, *sb.* a leopard. *L. L. L.* V. 2. 551.
- Liberal**, *adj.* licentious. *M. A.* IV. 1. 93; *Ham.* IV. 7. 171. Liberal conceit = elaborate design. *Ham.* V. 2. 760. *adv.* liberal conceit = elaborately designed. *Ham.* V. 2. 169.
- Liberty**, *sb.* libertinism. *Tim.* IV. 1. 25; *Ham.* II. 1. 24. 32. Liberties of sin = licentious sinners. *C.* of E. I. 2. 102.
- Lie**, *v.t.* to lodge, dwell. *Two G.* IV. 2. 137; *M. W.* II. 1. 187, &c.
- Lief**, *adj.* dear. To have as lief = to hold as dear. Had as lief = would as willingly. *M. W.* IV. 2. 117; *M. A.* II. 3. 84.
- Lichest**, *adj.* dearest. *s* H 6. III. 1. 164.
- Lieger**, *sb.* an ambassador. *Cym.* I. 5. 80.
- Lien**, *p.p.* of *Lie*. *John.* IV. 1. 90; *Per.* III. 2. 85.
- Lieu**, *In lieu* of = in return for. *TP.* I. 2. 123; *M.* of V. IV. 1. 410; *John.* v. 4. 44.
- Lieutenantry**, *sb.* lieutenancy. *Oth.* II. 1. 173.
- On lieutenantry* = by proxy. *A. & C.* III. 11.
- la. O'life* = on my life, as my life. *W. T. IV.* 4. 264.
- Lifter**, *sb.* a thief. *T. & C.* I. 2. 129.
- Light**, *p.p.* lighted. *Per.* IV. 2. 77.
- Lightly**, *adv.* easily, readily. *C.* of E. IV. 4. 5; *H* 5. II. 2. 80. Usually. *R* 3. III. 1. 94.
- Light o' love**, The name of a tune. *Two G.* 2. 2. 83; *M. A.* III. 4. 44.
- Like**, *v.t.* to please. *Two G.* IV. 2. 56; *Ham.* II. 2. 80; *V.* 2. 276. To compare, liken. *s* H 4. II. 2. 97; *s* H 6. IV. 6. 48.
- Like**, *adv.* as. *Temp.* III. 3. 66; *C.* of E. I. 2. 83; *H* 5. II. 2. 183; *Cym.* III. 3. 41.
- Likelihood**, *sb.* sign, indication. *R* 3. III. 4. 37; *A. W.* I. 3. 128.
- Likely**, *adj.* probably. *s* H 4. I. 3. 63.
- Like well**, *v.t.* to be in good liking, good constitution. *s* H 4. III. 2. 92.
- Liking**, *sb.* condition of body. *M. W.* II. 2. 37; *s* H 4. III. 3. 6.
- Limbbeck**, *sb.* an alembic or retort. *Mac.* 2. 7. 67; *Sonn.* OXIX. 2.
- Limb-meal**, *adv.* limb by limb, piecemeal. *Cym.* II. 2. 147.
- Limbo**, *sb.* a region bordering on hell. *A. W.* v. 3. 261; *T. A.* III. 1. 149. Used for a prison. *C.* of E. IV. 2. 32. Limbo Patrum was the place where the souls of the fathers of the Old Testament remained till Christ's descent into Hell. *H* 8. V. 4. 67.
- Lime**, *sb.* bird-lime. *Two G.* II. 2. 68; *Mac.* IV. 2. 34; *Temp.* IV. 1. 246.
- Lime**, *v.t.* to put lime into liquor. *M. W.* 2. 2.

- 25** To smear with bird-lime. *W. N. III. 4. 62; Ham. III. 3. 62.* To cement. *3 H. 6. V. 1. 84.*
- Limit**, *v.t.*, appointed time. *R. 2. I. 3. 122; E. 3. III. 3. 8.* "Strength of limit" appears to mean the strength acquired during the usual period of lying in. *W. T. III. 2. 207.*
- Limit**, *v.t.* to appoint, define. *M. for M. IV. 2. 126; John. V. 2. 123; E. 3. V. 3. 25.* My limited service = the duty appointed me. *Mac. II. 3. 56.* Limited professions = professions which are under some restraint. *Tim. IV. 3. 437.*
- Limn**, *v.t.* to draw in colours. *As. II. 7. 194.*
- Line**, *v.t.* to draw, paint. *As. III. 2. 97.* To strengthen, fortify. *3 H. 4. II. 3. 86; H. 5. II. 4. 7; Mac. I. 3. 112.* *sb.* pedigree. *H. 5. II. 4. 88.*
- Lineal**, *adj.* due in virtue of descent. *John. II. 3. 82.* Lineal of = lineally descended from. *H. 5. I. 2. 82.*
- Line-grove**, *sb.* a grove of lime trees. *TP. V. 1. 10.*
- Link**, *sb.* a torch made of tow and pitch. *T. of S. IV. 2. 137; 3 H. 4. III. 3. 48.*
- Linsey-woolsey**, *sb.* literally, mixed stuff; jargon, gibberish. *A. W. IV. 1. 13.*
- Linstock**, *sb.* the stick which held the gunner's match. *H. 5. III. chor. 33.*
- Lip**, *v.t.* to kiss. *Oth. IV. 1. 72; A. & C. II.*
- Lispbury pinfold**. Perhaps the teeth. *Lear. II. 2. 9.* But the phrase has not been explained.
- Liquor**, *v.t.* to smear with oil. *M. W. IV. 5. 100; 3 H. 4. II. 1. 94.*
- List**, *sb.* desire, inclination. *Oth. II. 1. 105; Limit, boundary. 3 H. 4. IV. 1. 51; Tw. N. III. 2. 86; Ham. IV. 5. 99.* The space marked out for a combat, *lieta*. *Mac. III. 1. 71.*
- List**, *v.t.* to desire. *R. 3. III. 5. 84; V. & A. 564.* To please. *TP. III. 2. 29; Cor. III. 2. 128.*
- List**, *v.t.* to listen, hearken to. *Ham. 1. 3. 22.* *v.t.* to hearken to. *M. W. V. 5. 46; Comp. 4.*
- Lithest**, *adj.* yielding, pliant, gentle. *3 H. 6. IV. 3. 27.* In a secondary sense, "lazy, sluggish."
- Little**, *in*. In miniature. *As. III. 2. 148; Ham. II. 2. 184; Comp. 90.* In a small compass. *Tw. N. III. 4. 95.*
- Little**, *in*. In brief, briefly. *H. 8. II. 7. 11.*
- Liveliness**, *sb.* liveliness, animation. *A. W. I. 2. 58.*
- Lively**, *adj.* living. *T. A. III. 1. 105; Sonn. LXVII. 10; CLIII. 6.* Lifelike. *As. V. 4. 27.*
- Liver**, *sb.* the seat of the passions and emotions. *3 H. 4. I. 2. 126; TP. IV. 1. 56; M. A. IV. 1. 233; Tw. N. III. 2. 66.*
- Liver-ven**, *sb.* the style or humour of men in liver. *3 H. 4. I. 17. 3. 54.*
- Livery**, *sb.* the delivery of a freehold into the possession of the heir. *R. 2. II. 2. 204; II. 3. 205; 3 H. 4. IV. 3. 62.*
- Livery**, *v.t.* to dress. *Comp. 105.*
- Living**, *property*, possessions. *M. of V. III. 2. 126; 3 H. 4. IV. 5. 40.*
- Living**, *adj.* real, actual, valid. *As. III. 2. 430; Tw. N. III. 2. 439.*
- Loach**, *sb.* a small fish, the Cobble. *3 H. 4. II. 1. 108.*
- Loch**, *sb.* lubber, lout. *M. N's Dr. II. 2. 26. v.t.* to hang heavily, droop. *H. 5. IV. 2. 47.*
- Loekram**, *sb.* a kind of coarse linen, said to take its name from Loecran in Brittany. *Cor. II. 2. 205.*
- Locusta**, *sb.* it is doubtful whether the insect is referred to, or the fruit of the Carob tree or St. John's bread. *Oth. I. 3. 354.*
- Lode-star**, *sb.* the pole-star. *M. N's Dr. I. 1. 183; Lucr. 179.*
- Lodge**, *v.t.* to lay flat, beat down. *R. 2. III. 3. 162; Mac. IV. 1. 55.*
- Loggats**, *sb.* a game somewhat resembling bowls. The jack is a thick disc of lignum vitae, and the loggats which are thrown at it are truncated cones of about two feet and a quarter long. *Ham. V. 1. 100.*
- Long**, *v.t.* to belong. *M. for M. II. 2. 39; H. 5. II. 4. 80; Cor. V. 3. 170.*
- Long of**. Along of, in consequence of. *L. L. L. II. 2. 119; M. N's Dr. III. 2. 339.*
- Long-engrafted**, *adj.* long-grafted, inveterate. *Lear. I. 1. 301.*
- Long-grown**, *adj.* inveterate. *3 H. 4. III. 2. 156.*
- Longly**, *adv.* longingly. *T. of S. I. 1. 70.*
- Lool**, *v.t.* to luff, bring close to the wind. *A. & C. III. 10. 18.*
- Look**, *v.t.* to look after, search for. *M. W. IV. 2. 83; As. II. 5. 34.*
- Look upon**. To be a spectator. *IV. T. V. 3. 100; R. 2. IV. 1. 237; T. & C. V. 6. 10.*
- Loon**, *sb.* a low fellow. *Mac. V. 3. 11.*
- Loop'd**, *adj.* full of loop-holes or apertures. *Lear. III. 4. 31.*
- Loose**, *sb.* the discharge of an arrow. *L. L. L. V. 2. 752.*
- Loose**, *v.t.* to let loose, discharge as an arrow. *M. N's Dr. II. 1. 159; H. 5. I. 2. 207.*
- Loosely**, *adv.* wantonly. *3 H. 4. II. 2. 9; V. 2. 94.*
- Loop**, *sb.* the cuttings from the branches of a tree. *H. 8. I. 2. 96.*
- Lorded**, *p.p.* invested with the power of a lord. *Temp. 1. 2. 97.*
- Lording**, *sb.* a lording, little lord. *W. T. I. 2. 62.* A lord. *3 H. 6. I. 2. 145.*
- Lord's sake**, for the. The supplication of imprisoned debtors to the passers by. *M. for M. IV. 3. 22.*
- Lord's tokens**. Plague spots. *L. L. L. V. 2. 423.*
- Loss**, *v.t.* to cause the loss of. *Tw. N. II. 2. 21; 3 H. 4. III. 1. 187; Lear. 1. 2. 225.* To let slip, forget. *Ham. III. 2. 205.*
- Loss**, *sb.* desertion, abandonment. *W. T. II. 3. 192; III. 3. 51; H. 8. II. 2. 31.*
- Lot**, *sb.* "lots to blanks" = all the world to nothing. *Cor. V. 2. 10.* The comparison is not of the number but of the relative value of the lots and blanks.
- Lottery**, *sb.* allotment, prize in a lottery. *A. & C. II. 2. 248.*
- Lout**, *sb.* a clown. *John. II. 1. 309; Cor. III. 2. 66.*
- Love**, *sb.* Venus, the goddess of love. *C. of E. III. 2. 59; L. L. L. IV. 3. 380; V. 3. 388.*
- Love-day**, *sb.* a day of reconciliation. *T. A. I. 2. 491.*
- Love-in-idleness**, *sb.* the panny or heartsease. *M. N's Dr. II. 1. 168.*

- Lovely, adj. loving.* T. of S. III. 2. 125.  
*Lover, sb. friend.* M. of V. III. 4. 7. 17; Cor. V. 2. 24.  
*Love-shaken, p.p. shaken with the fever of love.* As. III. 2. 385.  
*Love, of all.* For love's sake, by all means. M. W. II. 2. 119; M. N's Dr. II. 2. 154. In Oth. III. 2. 13, the quartets have 'of all loves, the fancies 'for love's sake.'  
*Love-springs, sb. the tender shoots of love.* C. of E. III. 2. 3.  
*Low-crooked, adj. low bending.* J. C. III. 2. 43.  
*Lower chair.* A low seated, easy chair. M. for M. II. 1. 132.  
*Lown, sb. a base fellow.* Oth. II. 3. 95; Per. IV. 6. 19.  
*Lowt, v.t. to treat as a clown.* H. 6. IV. 3. 13.  
*Lozel, sb. a worthless, idle fellow.* W. T. II. 3. 109.  
*Labber, blunder for 'libbard' or 'leopard.'* H. 4. II. 1. 30.  
*Lace, sb. a pike or jack.* M. W. I. 2. 16, 22.  
*Lud stown.* London. Cym. III. 1. 32; I. 2. 99.  
*Lumpish, adj. dull, spiritless.* Two G. III. 2. 62.  
*Lunes, sb. lunatic, mad freaks.* W. T. II. 2. 30; M. W. IV. 2. 22; T. & C. II. 3. 139.  
*Lurch, v.t. to carry away the prize with ease; properly, to win a love set at cards or other game.* Cor. II. 2. 105. v.t. to skulk. M. W. II. 2. 26.  
*Lure, sb. the call or whistle by which the falconer attracts the hawk.* V. & A. 1057. The stuffed figure of a bird used for the same purpose. T. of S. IV. 1. 195.  
*Lush, adj. luxuriant, full of juice.* Temp. II. 1. 52.  
*Lust-breathed, adj. inspired by lust.* Lacer. 3.  
*Lusthood, sb. vigour of body.* M. A. V. 1. 76; T. & C. II. 2. 50.  
*Luxurious, adj. lascivious.* M. A. IV. 2. 42; H. 5. IV. 4. 20; Mac. IV. 3. 58.  
*Luxuriously, adv. lasciviously.* A. & C. III. 13. 120.  
*Luxury, sb. lust, lasciviousness.* M. W. V. 5. 98; H. 5. III. 5. 6; Ham. I. 5. 83.  
*Lyn, sb. a bloodhound; so called because he was held by a leam or leach.* Lear. III. 6. 72.  
*Maculate, adj. stained, impure.* L. L. L. I. 2. 67.  
*Maculation, sb. stain, spot.* T. & C. IV. 4. 66.  
*Made, p.p. fortunate.* M. N's Dr. IV. 2. 18; Tw. N. II. 5. 169; Oth. I. 2. 51. Fastened. C. of E. III. 1. 93.  
*Made up, adj. complete, perfect.* Tim. V. 1. 101; R. 3. I. 1. 21.  
*Maggot-pie, sb. a magpie.* Mac. III. 4. 125.  
*Magnifico, sb. a Venetian grandee.* M. of V. III. 2. 28; Oth. I. 2. 12.  
*Maid-child, sb. a female child.* Per. V. 2. 6.  
*Maidhood, sb. girlhood, maidenhood.* Tw. N. III. 2. 126; Oth. I. 1. 173.  
*Mail, sb. a coat of mail, suit of armour.* T. & C. III. 2. 132.  
*Mailed up, wrapped up.* H. 6. II. 4. 31. To mail a hawk was to wrap a cloth round it so that it could not stir its wings.  
*Main, sb. the mainland, continent.* Lear. III. 1. 6. The chief power. Ham. IV. 4. 15. A hand at dice. H. 4. IV. 1. 47.  
*Main-course, sb. the main-sail.* Tp. I. 2. 38.  
*Mained, p.p. maimed.* H. 6. IV. 2. 172.  
*Maintenance, sb. power of holding one's ground.* H. 4. V. 4. 22.  
*Majestical, adj. majestic, princely.* H. 5. IV. 2. 24; Ham. I. 1. 143.  
*Major, sb. the first proposition of a syllogism.* H. 4. II. 4. 544. A quibble on 'mayer.'  
*Make, v.t. to fasten.* As. IV. 1. 122. To do. As. I. 1. 31; Ham. I. 2. 164.  
*Make, v.t. to go, move; in the phrases 'make away,' R. 3. IV. 4. 529; 'make forth,' H. 5. II. 4. 5; J. C. V. 2. 25; 'make from,' Lear. I. 2. 145; 'make out,' Tw. N. II. 5. 65; 'make up,' John. III. 2. 5; H. 4. V. 4. 5. 58.  
*Makeless, adj. mateless, widowed.* Sonn. IX. 4.  
*Malapert, adj. pert, saucy.* Tw. N. IV. 1. 47.  
*Male, sb. male parent, father.* H. 6. V. 6. 15.  
*Malefaction, sb. crime.* Ham. II. 2. 621.  
*Malkin, sb. a slattern.* Cor. II. 1. 224; Per. IV. 3. 34. A diminutive of Matilda.  
*Mail, Mary.* Tp. II. 2. 50. Mistress Mail in Tw. N. I. 3. 135 is usually supposed to be a notorious person, Mary Frith or Moll Outpurse, but this is very improbable.  
*Mallard, sb. a wild drake.* A. & C. III. 10. 22.  
*Mallecho, mischievous, Span. malhecho.* Ham. III. 2. 146.  
*Malmsey, sb. a sweet wine, called also Malvoisie, from Napoli di Malvasia in the Morea.* L. L. L. V. 2. 239.  
*Malmsey-nose, adj. red-nosed, as from drinking malmsey.* H. 4. II. 1. 42.  
*Malt-horse, sb. a brewer's horse.* C. of E. III. 2. 32; T. of S. IV. 1. 132.  
*Malt-worms, sb. beer-drinkers.* H. 4. II. 1. 83; H. 4. II. 4. 361.  
*Mammering, p.p. hesitating.* Oth. III. 2. 70.  
*Mammet, sb. a doll.* H. 4. II. 3. 95; R. & J. III. 5. 186.  
*Mammoth, v.t. to tear in pieces.* Cor. I. 2. 71.  
*Man, v.t. to tame; used of a hawk.* T. of S. IV. 1. 196. To wield, handle. Oth. V. 2. 270.  
*Man=one, person.* M. A. III. 5. 39. No man=no one. M. W. V. 2. 15.  
*Manage, sb. the training and breaking in of a horse.* As. I. 1. 73; R. 3. III. 3. 179; H. 4. II. 3. 52. v.t. to handle, wield. H. 2. III. 2. 118; H. 4. III. 2. 292. To train, break in a horse. V. & A. 598.  
*Manager, sb. one who handles or wields.* L. L. L. I. 2. 182.  
*Manakin, sb. a little man.* Tw. N. III. 2. 57.  
*Mandradora, sb. the mandrake; *Atropa mandragora*.* Oth. III. 3. 330; A. & C. I. 2. 4.  
*Mandrake, sb. the plant *Atropa mandragora*, the root of which was supposed to resemble the figure of a man, and when torn up to cause madness or death.* H. 4. I. 2. 37; H. 6. III. 2. 312; R. & J. IV. 3. 47.  
*Man-entered, adj. initiated into manhood.* Cor. II. 2. 103.  
*Manifest, adj. conspicuous, well known.* Oth. I. 3. 54.  
*Mankind, adj. masculine.* W. T. IV. 2. 27; Oth. IV. 2. 16.  
*Manner.* In manner—as a manner, in common sense. R. 3. III. 2. 11. With the manner—*

- the fact. *L. L. L. I. 2. 206; z H. 4. II. 4. 347; W. T. IV. 4. 752.*
- Mannerly, *adv.* decently, in a becoming manner. *M. A. II. 1. 70; M. of V. II. 9. 100.*
- Mannish, *adj.* man-like, masculine. *As. I. 3. 123; Cym. IV. 2. 236; T. & C. III. 3. 217.*
- Man-queller, *sb.* manslayer, homicide. *z H. 4. II. 1. 58.*
- Mansoury, *sb.* dwelling-place. *Mac. I. 6. 5.*
- Mantle, *sb.* the scum on the surface of a standing pool. *Lear. III. 4. 139. v.t.* to form a mantle or scum on the surface. *M. of V. I. 1. 89.*
- Mantled, *p.p.* covered with a scum. *TP. IV. 2. 122.*
- Manure, *v.t.* to cultivate. *Oth. I. 3. 328.*
- Many, *sb.* the multitude. *z H. 4. I. 3. 92; Cor. III. 1. 66.*
- Many, *a.* *M. of V. III. 5. 73; As. I. 1. 121; B. 3. III. 7. 124.*
- Mappery, *sb.* study of maps. *T. & C. I. 3. 205.*
- Marbled, *adj.* marble-like. *T. of A. IV. 3. 191.*
- Marches, *sb.* borders. *H. 5. I. 2. 140; 3 H. 6. II. 1. 140.*
- Marchpane, *sb.* a kind of sweet biscuit, flavoured with almonds and various condiments. *R. & J. I. 5. 9.*
- Mare, *sb.* the nightmare. *z H. 4. II. 1. 83. To ride the wild mare = to play at see-saw. z H. 4. II. 4. 268.*
- Margent, *sb.* margin, edge. *M. N's Dr. II. 1. 85. Glosses were commonly given on the margin of books. Ham. V. 2. 162; R. & J. I. 3. 86.*
- Marian, *maid.* Robin Hood's mistress in the ballads; then, one of the principal figures in the morris-dance, not of unblemished character. *z H. 4. III. 3. 120.*
- Mark, *sb.* thirteen shillings and fourpence. *M. for M. IV. 3. 7; John. II. 1. 530; z H. 4. III. 3. 95.*
- Market, *sb.* 'he ended the market.' *L. L. L. III. 1. 111. In reference to the proverb 'Three women and a goose make a market.'*
- Mark-man, *sb.* marksman. *R. & J. I. 1. 212.*
- Marmoset, *sb.* a small monkey. *TP. II. 2. 174.*
- Marry, used in various exclamations, is perhaps a relic of an appeal to the Virgin Mary. *R. 2. IV. 1. 114; Tw. N. IV. 2. 109; R. 3. I. 3. 261; Ham. III. 2. 247. Nym's language is hard to interpret, but 'marry trap' may possibly mean 'marry, you are caught.' M. W. I. 1. 170.*
- Mart, *v.t.* to market, traffic. *Cym. I. 6. 151. v.t.* to vend, traffic with. *J. C. IV. 3. 11.*
- Martial, *adj.* Mars-like. *Cym. IV. 2. 310.*
- Martin's summer, *St.* the fine weather which sometimes comes about St Martin's day, the 11th of November. *z H. 6. I. 2. 131.*
- Martinsmas, *sb.* Martinmas; the 11th of November. *z H. 4. II. 2. 110. A well-preserved elderly man is compared to the bright days which sometimes come at the beginning of winter.*
- Mart, *v.t.* to disfigure, maltreat. *T. A. III. 1. 8; R. & J. IV. 5. 50.*
- Martred, *adj.* tortured, disfigured. *T. A. III. 1. 8.*
- Marigolds, *sb.* the flowers of the marigold. *Cym. II. 3. 25.*
- z.* massive. *TP. III. 3. 67; M. A. III. 3. 147; Ham. III. 3. 17.*
- Master of fence, *sb.* one who had taken the highest degree in the art of fencing. *M. W. I. 1. 205.*
- Masterdom, *sb.* supremacy. *Mac. I. 5. 71.*
- Masterly, *adj.* a masterly report is a report of proficiency. *Ham. IV. 7. 97.*
- Mastic, *adj.* mastic was used in stopping decayed teeth. *T. & C. I. 3. 173.*
- Match, *sb.* compact, bargain. *Cym. III. 6. 30; M. of V. III. 1. 46. To set a match = to make an appointment. z H. 4. I. 2. 119.*
- Mate, *v.t.* to match, cope with. *H. 2. III. 2. 274. v.t.* to confound, bewilder. *C. of E. III. 2. 54; V. 1. 281; Mac. V. 1. 86.*
- Material, *adj.* full of matter. *As. III. 3. 32.*
- Matin, *sb.* morning. *Ham. I. 5. 89.*
- Maugre, in spite of. *Tw. N. III. 1. 163; Lear. V. 3. 131.*
- Maund, *sb.* a basket. *Comp. 36.*
- Maw, *sb.* stomach. *Mac. III. 4. 73; John. V. 7. 37; H. 5. II. 1. 52.*
- May, *can.* *C. of E. III. 2. 1; M. of V. I. 3. 7; H. 5. II. 2. 100.*
- Mazzard, *sb.* the skull. *Ham. V. 1. 97; Oth. II. 3. 155.*
- Meacock, *adj.* spiritless, pusillanimous. *T. of B. II. 1. 315.*
- Mealed, *p.p.* mingled, compounded. *M. for M. IV. 2. 86.*
- Mean, *v.t.* to moan, lament. *M. N's Dr. V. 1. 330. sb.* in music, the intermediate part between the tenor and treble. *Two G. I. 2. 95; L. L. L. V. 2. 328; W. T. IV. 3. 46. Means. Two G. II. 7. 5; III. 1. 38; IV. 4. 113; M. for M. II. 4. 95; J. C. III. 1. 161.*
- Means, *To make means = to take measures. Two G. V. 4. 137; R. 3. V. 3. 40, 248; Cym. II. 4. 3.*
- Meander, *sb.* a winding path. *TP. III. 3. 3.*
- Measles, *sb.* scurvy wretches. *Cor. III. 1. 78.*
- Measurable, *adj.* fit, suitable. *L. L. L. V. 3. 97.*
- Measure, *sb.* a slow and stately dance. *M. A. II. 1. 80; R. 2. I. 3. 201, &c. The music which accompanied it. John. III. 1. 304.*
- Mechanic, *adj.* suitable to a handicraftsman. *A. & C. IV. 4. 32.*
- Mechanical, *sb.* a mechanic, handicraftsman. *M. N's Dr. III. 2. 0; z H. 6. I. 3. 106. Used as an adjective. z H. 4. V. 5. 58; J. C. I. 1. 3.*
- Meial, *sb.* a portrait in a locket. *W. T. I. 2. 307.*
- Medicinal, *adj.* medicinal. *M. A. II. 2. 5; T. & C. I. 3. 91.*
- Medicine, *sb.* a physician. *A. W. II. 1. 75; W. T. IV. 1. 508; Mac. V. 2. 27. v.t.* to restore by medicine, heal. *Oth. III. 3. 332; Cym. IV. 2. 247.*
- Mediterraneum, *sb.* the Mediterranean. *L. L. L. V. 1. 61.*
- Meed, *sb.* merit, desert. *z H. 6. II. 1. 36; IV. 8. 38; Tim. I. 7. 288; Ham. V. 2. 140.*
- Meered. He being the meered question = the question being limited to him. *A. & C. III. 13. 10.*
- Meet, *adj.* to meet with = to be even or quits with. *A. I. 2. 47.*

- Meetly, *adj.* fitting, suitable. A. & C. I. 3. 81.  
 Meet with, to encounter, counteract, check.  
 Tp. IV. 1. 266.  
 Meiny, *sb.* attendants, retinue. Lear, II. 4. 35.  
 Moll, *v.t.* to meddle. A. W. IV. 3. 257.  
 Memorial, *adj.* commemorative, bestowed as  
 a memorial. T. & C. V. 2. 80.  
 Memorize, *v.t.* to make memorable. H 8. III.  
 2. 53; Mac. I. 2. 40.  
 Memory, *sb.* memorial. As, II. 3. 3; Lear, IV.  
 7. 7; Cor. IV. 5. 77.  
 Mends, *sb.* the means of amending, remedy.  
 T. & C. I. 1. 68.  
 Mercatante, *sb.* (Ital.) a merchant. T. of S. IV.  
 2. 63.  
 Merchandized, *p.p.* made merchandize of.  
 Sonn. CII. 3.  
 Merchant, *sb.* a chap, fellow. 1 H 6. II. 3. 57;  
 R. & J. II. 4. 153. A merchantman. Tp. II.  
 1. 5.  
 Mercurial, *adj.* like Mercury's. Cym. IV. 2. 310.  
 Mercy. 'By mercy' said to be equivalent to  
 'by your leave.' Tim. III. 5. 55.  
 Mere, *adj.* absolute. M. of V. III. 2. 265; Mac.  
 IV. 3. 152; Oth. II. 2. 3. Your pleasure was  
 my mere offence=my offence was merely  
 your caprice. Cym. V. 5. 334.  
 Merely, *adv.* absolutely. Tp. I. 1. 59; Cor. III.  
 1. 305; Ham. I. 2. 137.  
 Merit, *sb.* reward, recompence. R 2. I. 3. 156.  
 Desert. A. & C. V. 2. 178.  
 Merriness, *sb.* mirth. L. L. L. I. 1. 202.  
 Mervailous, *adj.* marvellous; used by Pistol  
 without understanding the meaning. H 5. II.  
 1. 50.  
 Mashed, *p.p.* mashed. T. A. III. 2. 38.  
 Mess, *sb.* a party of four. L. L. L. IV. 3. 207; V.  
 2. 361; 3 H 6. I. 4. 73. Lower messes=persons  
 dining at the lower end of the table, inferiors.  
 W. T. I. 2. 227.  
 Metaphysical, *adj.* supernatural. Mac. I. 5. 30.  
 Mete, *v.t.* to measure, judge. 2 H 4. IV. 4. 77.  
 To mete at=to judge by, aim at. L. L. L. IV.  
 1. 134.  
 Mete-yard, *sb.* a measuring yard. T. of S. IV.  
 3. 153.  
 Methuein, *sb.* a kind of mead, or drink of  
 which honey was the chief ingredient. L. L. L.  
 V. 2. 233.  
 Methought, methought. W. T. I. 2. 154; R 3.  
 1. 4. 9.  
 Mew, *v.t.* to pen, imprison. M. N's Dr. I. 1.  
 71; R 3. I. 1. 38, 132.  
 Mew, *v.t.* to mew, like a cat. As, II. 7. 244.  
 Mieber, *sb.* a truant, sneak. 3 H 4. II. 4. 450.  
 Miching, *adj.* sneaking, stealthy. Ham. III. 2.  
 146.  
 Mickle, *adj.* great. H 5. II. 1. 70; R. & J. II.  
 3. 15.  
 Middle earth, the terrestrial world, regarded as  
 between heaven and hell. M. W. V. 5. 84.  
 Middle summer, midsummer. M. N's Dr. II.  
 1. 82.  
 Mightful, *adj.* powerful. T. A. IV. 4. 3.  
 Might=may. Ham. I. 1. 77.  
 Milch, *adj.* milk-giving. V. & A. 873; M. W.  
 IV. 4. 33. Hence, shedding tears. Ham. II.  
 2. 340.  
 Militarist, *sb.* a professional soldier. A. W. IV.  
 3. 161.  
 Millioned, *adj.* millionfold. Sonn. CXV. 9.  
 Mill-sixpences, first struck by the coming-mill  
 in 1561. M. W. I. 1. 158.  
 Mimic, *sb.* an actor. M. N's Dr. III. 2. 19.  
 Mince, *v.t.* to walk affectedly. M. W. V. 2. 9;  
 M. of V. III. 4. 67. To speak with affection.  
 H 8. II. 3. 31. *v.t.* to select. Lear, IV. 6. 122.  
 Mincing, *adj.* affected. 1 H 4. III. 1. 134.  
 Mind, *v.t.* to intend. 3 H 6. IV. 1. 106; M. N's  
 Dr. V. 1. 113. *v.t.* to remind. W. T. III. 2.  
 226; H 5. IV. 3. 13. To call to mind. H 5.  
 IV. chor. 53. *sb.* mind of love=loving mind.  
 M. of V. II. 8. 42. Mind of honour=honour-  
 able mind. M. for M. II. 4. 179.  
 Minded, *p.p.* disposed, affected. Lear, III. 2. 2.  
 Mindless, *adj.* careless, unmindful. W. T. I. 2.  
 301; T. of A. IV. 3. 93.  
 Mine, *poss. pron.* the revolt of mine=my revolt.  
 M. W. I. 3. 111. The ring of mine=my ring.  
 C. of E. IV. 3. 69.  
 Mineral, *sb.* a mine. Ham. IV. 1. 26.  
 Mingle, *sb.* mixture. A. & C. I. 5. 59. Make  
 mingle=mingle. A. & C. IV. 8. 37.  
 Minikin, *adj.* small and pretty. Lear, III. 6. 45.  
 Minim, *sb.* the shortest note in music; used for  
 a very short period. R. & J. II. 4. 22.  
 Minimus, *sb.* anything very short or small.  
 M. N's Dr. III. 2. 329.  
 Minion, *sb.* darling, favourite. John, II. 2.  
 392; Mac. I. 2. 19. Used with some con-  
 tempt. C. of E. II. 1. 87; 2 H 6. I. 3. 87. A  
 pert, saucy person. 2 H 6. I. 3. 141; R. & J.  
 III. 5. 152.  
 Minstrelay. For my minstrelay=in place of a  
 minstrel. L. L. L. I. 1. 177.  
 Minute-Jacks, *sb.* time-servers. Tim. III. 6.  
 107. See Jack.  
 Minutely, *adj.* occurring every minute. Mac.  
 V. 2. 18.  
 Mirable, *adj.* admirable. T. & C. IV. 5. 142.  
 Miracle, *v.r.* to make itself a miracle. Cym.  
 IV. 2. 29.  
 Misadventured, *adj.* unfortunate. R. & J.  
 prol. 7.  
 Misanthropos, *sb.* a hater of mankind. Tim.  
 IV. 3. 53.  
 Miscarry, *v.t.* to come to harm, perish. M. of  
 V. II. 8. 29; Tw. N. III. 4. 70; H 5. IV. 2.  
 155.  
 Mischief, *v.t.* to injure. Tim. IV. 3. 475.  
 Misconceived, *adj.* misjudging. 1 H 6. V. 4. 49.  
 Miscreant, *adj.* illegitimate. H 5. I. 2. 16.  
 Misdemean, *v.r.* to misbehave, misconduct  
 oneself. H 8. V. 3. 14.  
 Misdoubt, *v.t.* to mistrust. M. W. II. 1. 192;  
 R 3. III. 2. 89; A. & C. III. 7. 69.  
 Misdread, *sb.* dread of evil. Per. I. 2. 12.  
 Miser, *sb.* a wretch. 1 H 6. V. 4. 3.  
 Misgive, *v.t.* to forebode evil. Oth. III. 4. 89.  
 Misgoverning, *sb.* misgovernment. Lucr. 63.  
 Misgraffed, *p.p.* ill grafted. M. N's Dr. I. 1.  
 137.  
 Misguide, *v.t.* to mislead. Cor. I. 3. 93.  
 Mislike, *sb.* dislike. 3 H 6. IV. 2. 22. *v.t.* to  
 dislike. M. of V. II. 2. 2; A. & C. III. 7. 69.  
 247.

- Misordered**, *p.p.* disordered. *H* 4. IV. 2. 53.  
**Misprize** or **Misprize**, *v.t.* to undervalue, de-  
 spise. *As* I. 2. 177; *T.* & *C.* IV. 5. 74.  
**Misprised**, *adj.* mistaken. *M. N's Dr.* III.  
 2. 74.  
**Misprision**, *sb.* mistake. *M. A.* IV. 1. 187;  
*M. N's Dr.* III. 2. 90. **Contempt**. *A. W.* II.  
 3. 130.  
**Misprond**, *adj.* viciously proud. *3 H* 6. II. 6. 7.  
**Miss**, *sb.* misleading. *V.* & *A.* 53. **Feeling of**  
**loss**. *H* 4. V. 4. 105. *v.t.* to do without.  
*Th.* I. 2. 311.  
**Missing**, *adv.* with a feeling of loss. *W. T.*  
 IV. 2. 35.  
**Misive**, *sb.* a messenger. *Mac.* I. 5. 7; *A.* & *C.*  
 II. 2. 74.  
**Mist**, *v.t.* to cover with mist. *Lear*, V. 3. 262.  
**Mistaken**, *p.p.* misjudged. *H* & *I.* 1. 195.  
**Mistaking**, *sb.* mistake, error. *Th.* I. 2. 248;  
*M.* for *M.* III. 2. 190.  
**Mistemper**, *adj.* tempered to an evil purpose.  
*R.* & *J.* I. 1. 94. **Distemper**, *disordered*.  
*John*, V. 1. 12.  
**Mistship**, blunder for 'mistress-ship'. *T. A.*  
 IV. 4. 40.  
**Misthink**, *v.t.* to misjudge. *3 H* 6. II. 5. 108;  
*A.* & *C.* V. 2. 176.  
**Mistreadings**, *sb.* transgressions. *H* 4. III. 2.  
 12.  
**Mistress**, *sb.* the jack at the game of bowls.  
*T.* & *C.* III. 2. 52.  
**Mistrustful**, *adj.* producing distrust or appre-  
 hension. *V.* & *A.* 826.  
**Misuse**, *sb.* offence. *Oth.* IV. 2. 109. *v.t.* to  
 deceive. *M. A.* II. 2. 28.  
**Mobled**, *adj.* muffled or wrapped up about the  
 head. *Ham.* II. 2. 325.  
**Mockable**, *adj.* ridiculous. *As* III. 2. 49.  
**Model**, *sb.* mould, pattern. *R.* 2. III. 2. 153.  
**Plot**. *R.* 2. V. 1. 11.  
**Modern**, *adj.* commonplace, trite. *As* II. 7.  
 156; *A. W.* II. 3. 2; *Mac.* IV. 3. 170.  
**Modest**, *adj.* moderate. *Tw. N.* I. 5. 192; *Lear*,  
 II. 4. 25.  
**Modesty**, *sb.* moderation, freedom from exagger-  
 ation. *J. C.* III. 1. 213; *Ham.* II. 2. 461; III.  
 2. 21; *H* & *V.* 3. 64.  
**Module**, *sb.* mould, form. *A. W.* IV. 3. 114;  
*John*, V. 7. 58.  
**More**, *adj.* more. *As* III. 2. 278; *Mac.* V. 3. 35;  
*J. C.* II. 2. 72. *adv.* more. *M.* of *V.* I. 1.  
 108.  
**Moiety**, *sb.* a portion; not necessarily a half.  
*H* 4. III. 1. 96; *Ham.* I. 2. 90; *Lear*, I.  
 1. 7.  
**Moldwarp**, *sb.* a mole. *H* 4. III. 1. 149.  
**Molestation**, *sb.* disturbance. *Oth.* II. 7. 16.  
**Mome**, *sb.* a dolt, blockhead. *C.* of *E.* III. 1. 32.  
**Momentary**, *adj.* momentary, lasting for an  
 instant. *M. N's Dr.* I. 2. 143.  
**Monarch**, *sb.* the nickname of a crazy Italian  
 who was well known in London before 1580,  
 and supposed to be the sovereign of the  
 world. *L.* I. L. IV. 1. 102.  
**Monmouth cape**, cape made at Monmouth, and  
 worn by soldiers. *H* 5. IV. 7. 104.  
**Monstrous**, *v.t.* to make monstrous. *Cor.* II. 2.  
 82; *Lear*, I. 2. 223.  
**Monstrousness**, *sb.* monstrousness, unnaturalness.  
*T.* & *C.* III. 2. 87.  
**Montant**, *sb.* a term in fencing for an upright  
 thrust or blow. *M. W.* II. 3. 27.  
**Month's mind**, *sb.* a strong desire or longing.  
*Two G.* I. 2. 137.  
**Mood**, *sb.* anger, wrath. *Two G.* IV. 1. 51;  
*R.* & *J.* III. 2. 13.  
**Moon-calf**, *sb.* an abortion. *Th.* II. 2. 115.  
**Moonish**, *adj.* changeable as the moon, inco-  
 nstant. *As* III. 2. 430.  
**Moon's men**, night wanderers. *H* 4. I. 2. 35.  
**Mop**, *sb.* a grimace. *Th.* IV. 1. 47.  
**Mopping**, *sb.* making grimaces. *Lear*, IV. 1. 64.  
**Moral**, *sb.* latent meaning. *M. A.* III. 5. 78;  
*T.* of *S.* IV. 4. 79. *adj.* moralizing. *Lear*, IV.  
 2. 58; *As* II. 7. 29. *v.t.* to moralize. *As* II.  
 7. 29. **Perhaps** an adjective.  
**Moralize**, *sb.* a moralizer. *Oth.* II. 3. 331.  
**Moralize**, *v.t.* to interpret, expound. *R.* 3. III.  
 1. 23; *As* II. 1. 44.  
**More**, *adj.* greater. *C.* of *E.* II. 2. 174; *M. N's*  
*Dr.* III. 1. 200; *V.* & *A.* 78.  
**More and less**, great and small, high and low.  
*H* 4. IV. 3. 68; *Mac.* V. 4. 12; *Sonn.* XCVI. 3.  
**Morisco**, *sb.* a morris-dancer. *H* 6. III. 1. 365.  
**Morris-pike**, *sb.* a Moorish pike. *C.* of *E.* IV.  
 3. 28.  
**Mort**, *sb.* the notes on the trumpet sounded at  
 the death of the deer. *W. T.* I. 2. 118.  
**Mortal**, *adj.* deadly. *Tw. N.* III. 4. 286, 304;  
*John*, III. 1. 259; *3 H* 6. II. 2. 15. **Perhaps**,  
 excessive. *As* II. 4. 56.  
**Mortal-breathing**, *adj.* having breath like a  
 human being. *M.* of *V.* II. 7. 40.  
**Mortal-living**, *adj.* endowed with human life.  
*R.* 3. IV. 4. 26.  
**Mortally**, *adv.* like a mortal or human being.  
*Per.* V. 1. 105.  
**Mortal-staring**, *adj.* with a deadly stare. *R.* 3.  
 V. 3. 90.  
**Mortified**, *p.p.* deadened, insensible. *J. C.* II.  
 1. 324; *Mac.* V. 2. 5; *Lear*, II. 3. 15.  
**Mose**, *v.t.* to mose in the chine is a disease of  
 horses, supposed to be the same as mourning  
 in the chine; *Fr.* mourir, which also  
 means the mumps. *T.* of *S.* III. 2. 51.  
**Most**, *adj.* greatest. *H* 6. IV. 1. 58; *A.* & *C.*  
 II. 2. 169.  
**Mot**, *sb.* a motto, device. *Lucr.* 830.  
**Mother**. 'Whose mother was her painting' is  
 explained by Johnson 'a creature, not of  
 nature, but of painting.' *Cym.* III. 4. 52. *sb.*  
 the disease called also *Agutaria puerilis*, sup-  
 posed to be peculiar to women. *Lear*, II.  
 4. 26.  
**Mothly**, *adj.* full of moths, moth-eaten. *T.* of  
 S. III. 2. 49.  
**Motion**, *v.t.* to propose, counsel. *H* 6. I. 3. 63.  
*sb.* a puppet-show. *W. T.* IV. 3. 293; *Lucr.*  
 1256. *A.* puppet. *Two G.* II. 2. 100; *M.* for  
*M.* III. 2. 119. *sb.* solicitation, proposal, suit.  
*C.* of *E.* I. 1. 60; *Cor.* II. 2. 57; *H* & *I.* 4.  
 233. **Emotion**, feeling, impulse. *M.* for *M.*  
 I. 4. 59; *Tw. N.* II. 4. 18; *Ham.* III. 4. 79.  
**Motive**, *sb.* a mover, instrument, member. *Rim.*  
 V. 4. 27; *R.* 2. I. 2. 193; *T.* & *C.* IV. 5. 57.  
**Motley**, *sb.* the parti-coloured dress worn by

light  
ng.

domestic fowl. *As*. II. 3. 347; *Tw*. III. 1. 4.  
63. Used adjectively. *As*. II. 7. 13. 43. A  
fool. *As*. II. 3. 79; *Sonn*. IX. 2.  
Moley-minded, *adj.* crazy; with a brain as  
grotesque as his dress. *As*. V. 4. 41.  
Mought, might. *3 H* 6. v. 2. 45.  
Mould. Men of mould=men of earth, mortal  
men. *H* 3. III. 2. 23.  
Moulten, *adj.* having cast its feathers. *1 H* 4.  
III. 2. 152.  
Mountant, *adj.* lifted up. *Tim*. IV. 3. 135.  
Mountebank, *v.t.* to get by the tricks of a  
mountebank. *Cor*. III. 2. 139.  
Mousse, *sb.* used as a term of endearment.  
*L. L. L.* V. 2. 19; *Tw*. N. 1. 3. 69; *Ham*. III.  
4. 183. *v.t.* to tear in pieces, as a cat does  
a mouse. *M. N's Dr.* V. 1. 274; *John*. II. 1.  
334.  
Mouse-hunt, *sb.* a mouser; used of a cat, and  
applied to a hunter of women. *R. & J.* IV.  
11. It is also the provincial name of a small  
kind of weasel.  
Mouth, *v.t.* to join mouths, kiss. *M. for M.*  
III. 2. 194.  
Mouthed, *p.p.* put into the mouth. *Ham*. IV.  
2. 20. *adj.* gaping. *1 H* 4. I. 3. 97; *Sonn*.  
LXXVII. 6.  
Mouth-friend, *sb.* a friend in word only. *Tim*.  
III. 6. 99.  
Mow, *sb.* a wry mouth or grimace. *Tw*. IV. 1.  
47; *Ham*. II. 2. 38; *Cym*. I. 6. 41. *v.t.* to  
make grimaces. *Tw*. II. 2. 9.  
Mowing, *sb.* making grimaces. *Lear*. IV. 1. 61.  
Moy, *sb.* probably a cant word for a coin of  
some kind. *H* 3. IV. 4. 14.  
Much, used substantively, a great matter, a  
serious business. *1 H* 6. IV. 1. 102; *Oth*. IV.  
1. 254; *V. & A.* 411. *As* an ironical ex-  
pression of contempt. *2 H* 4. II. 4. 143; *Tim*. I. 2.  
119. *adj.* used ironically. *As*. IV. 3. 2.  
Muffer, *sb.* a wrapper for the face. *M. W.* IV.  
2. 73; *H* 3. III. 6. 32.  
Muleter, *sb.* a muleteer. *H* 6. III. 2. 68;  
*A. & C.* III. 7. 36.  
Mulled, *p.p.* flat, insipid. *Cor*. IV. 5. 239.  
Multipotent, *sb.* very powerful. *T. & C.* IV. 5.  
129.  
Mum, *int.* an expression enjoining silence;  
hush! *Tw*. III. 4. 59. Used as an adjective,  
silent. *E* 3. III. 7. 3. To play at numbedget  
(see *M. W.* V. 2. 6) was to be dumfounded.  
Mummer, *sb.* a masker or masquerader. *Cor*. II.  
1. 83.  
Mummy, *sb.* a preparation made originally from  
mummies, and used as a medicine as well as  
for magical purposes. *Mac*. IV. 1. 23; *Oth*.  
III. 4. 74.  
Munitions, *sb.* supplies of war. *Cor*. I. 2. 222.  
Munition, *sb.* stores for war. *John*. V. 2. 98;  
*1 H* 6. I. 2. 108.  
Mural, *sb.* a doubtful conjecture of Pope's in  
*M. N's Dr.* V. 2. 208, which is supposed to  
mean "wall".  
Murdering-place, *sb.* a cannon loaded with one  
shot. *Ham*. IV. 3. 95.  
Mure, *sb.* a wall. *1 H* 4. IV. 4. 114.  
Murt, *sb.* darkness, gloom. *A. W.* II. 2. 166.  
Murkier, *adj.* darkest. *Tw*. IV. 1. 23.

Murky, *adj.* dark, gloomy. *Mac*. V. 2. 43.  
Murrain, *sb.* a disease among cattle. *Tw*. III. 2.  
88; *T. & C.* II. 1. 20.  
Murrion, *adj.* infected with the murrain.  
*M. N's Dr.* II. 1. 97.  
Muscadell, *sb.* a sweet wine. *T. of S.* III. 2. 174.  
Muse, *v.t.* to wonder. *Mac*. III. 4. 85; *John*.  
III. 1. 317. *v.t.* to wonder at. *Tw*. III. 3. 35.  
Must, *sb.* a hole or gap in a hedge. *V. & A.*  
663.  
Muss, *sb.* a scramble. *A. & C.* III. 72. 91.  
Mustachio, *sb.* moustache, whisker. *L. L. L.*  
V. 1. 110.  
Mutable, *adj.* changeable. *Cor*. III. 1. 65.  
Mutine, *sb.* a mutineer. *John*. II. 378; *Ham*.  
V. 2. 6.  
Mutine, *v.t.* to mutiny, rebel. *Ham*. III. 4. 83.  
Mutiner, *sb.* a mutineer. *Cor*. I. 1. 234.  
Mutualities, *sb.* familiarities. *Oth*. II. 1. 267.  
Mystery, *sb.* a calling, profession. *M. for M.*  
IV. 2. 30; *Oth*. IV. 2. 30. Professional skill.  
*A. W.* III. 6. 68.  
Napkin, *sb.* a handkerchief. *As*. IV. 3. 94;  
*Mac*. II. 3. 6.  
Native, *adj.* belonging to one's home or place  
of birth. Native peace=domestic peace.  
*E* 2. II. 3. 78. Native punishment=punish-  
ment in their own country. *H* 3. IV. 1. 176.  
Native graves=graves at home. *H* 3. IV. 3.  
96. Connected by nature, kindred. *A. W.*  
I. 1. 238; *Ham*. I. 2. 47.  
Native, *sb.* natural source. *Cor*. III. 1. 129.  
Native, *adv.* naturally. *L. L. L.* 3. 2. 111.  
Natural, *sb.* an idiot. *Tw*. III. 2. 37; *As*. I. 2.  
52; *R. & J.* II. 4. 96.  
Naught, *adj.* be naught awhile= a mischief on  
you. *As*. I. 1. 32.  
Naughty, *adj.* wicked, bad. *M. for M.* II. 1.  
77; *M. of V.* III. 2. 18; *Lear*. III. 4. 116.  
Nave, *sb.* the hob of a wheel. *2 H* 4. II. 4. 276;  
*Ham*. II. 2. 518.  
Navigation, *sb.* sailing in ships. *Mac*. IV. 1. 50.  
Nayward. To lean to the nayward=to be in-  
clined to contradict. *W. T.* II. 2. 64.  
Nayword, *sb.* a pass-word. *M. W.* II. 2. 131;  
*V* 2. 5. A by-word. *Tw*. V. II. 3. 126.  
Ne. *Nor.* *A. W.* II. 2. 176; *Pen*. II. prol. 36.  
Neat, *sb.* a fist. *M. N's Dr.* IV. 1. 20.  
Near, *adj.* nearer. *E* 2. V. 1. 88.  
Near-legged, *adj.* knee-kneed. *T. of S.* III.  
2. 57.  
Nest, *adj.* trim, spruce. *Lear*. II. 2. 43.  
Neb, *sb.* a bill or beak. *W. T.* I. 2. 123.  
Necessary, *adj.* inevitable. *J. C. R.* 2. 35; *As*.  
III. 3. 52.  
Necessitated to=in need of. *A. W.* V. 2. 2.  
Needful, *adj.* urgent, important. *M. for M.* I.  
1. 26; *E* 3. V. 3. 41. This needful war=the  
war which stands in need of soldiers. *3 H* 4.  
II. 1. 147.  
Needless, *adj.* not wanting, having already  
enough. *As*. II. 1. 24.  
Needly, *adv.* of necessity. *E* 2. J. III. 2. 27.  
Need, *sb.* needa. *Pen*. V. prol. 5.  
Needs, *v.t.* to need. *M. N's Dr.* V. 2. 20.  
Neglectingly, *adv.* carelessly. *1 H* 4. I. 3. 30.

- Neglection, *sb.* neglect. 1 H 6. IV. 3. 49; T. & C. I. 3. 127; Per. III. 3. 20.
- Nelf, *sb.* a flat. 2 H 4. II. 4. 200.
- Neighbour, *adj.* neighbouring. 2 H 4. IV. 5. 124; As. IV. 3. 79.
- Neighbourhood, *adj.* intimately associated. Ham. II. 2. 12.
- Neighbourhood, *sb.* friendly relations. H 5. v. 2. 381.
- Nephew, *sb.* grandson. Oth. I. 2. 112. Cousin. 1 H 6. II. 5. 64.
- Nerve, *sb.* sinew. Tp. I. 2. 484; Ham. I. 4. 83.
- Nether-stocks, *sb.* stockings. 1 H 4. II. 4. 130.
- New-trothed, *p.p.* newly betrothed. M. A. III. 1. 38.
- Next, *adj.* nearest. W. T. III. 3. 129; 1 H 4. III. 3. 264; A. W. I. 3. 65.
- Nice, *adj.* fanciful, fastidious, scrupulous. M. of V. II. 1. 14; Two G. III. 1. 82. Dainty. 2 H 4. I. 2. 145; A. & C. III. 13. 180. Minutely accurate. T. & C. IV. 5. 250; Mac. IV. 3. 174. Fine, delicate. M. A. V. 1. 75. Trifling, insignificant. R. & J. III. 1. 159; V. 2. 18. To make nice of = to be scrupulous about. John, III. 4. 138.
- Nicely, *adv.* daintily, elegantly. Cym. II. 4. 90.
- Punctiliously. Lear. II. 2. 110. Minutely, sophistically, in a trifling manner. Tw. N. III. 2. 17; R. 2. II. 1. 84; H 5. I. 2. 15.
- Nicely-gawded, *adj.* daintily adorned. Cor. II. 2. 233.
- Nicens, *sb.* coyness. Cym. III. 4. 158.
- Nicety, *sb.* coyness. M. for M. II. 4. 162.
- Nicholas, St. Saint Nicholas' clerks = highway-men. 1 H 4. II. 1. 68.
- Nick, *sb.* in the nick = in the nick of time, at the right moment. Oth. v. 2. 217. Out of all nick = out of all reckoning. Two G. IV. 2. 76.
- Nick, *v.t.* to notch, as a fool. C. of E. v. 1. 175. To mark with folly. A. & C. III. 13. 8.
- Niece, *sb.* grand-daughter. John, II. 1. 64; R. 3. IV. 1. 2.
- Niggard, *v.t.* to stint, put upon short allowance. J. C. IV. 3. 228.
- Night-crow, *sb.* the night-heron. 3 H 6. v. 6. 45.
- Nighted, *adj.* night-like, dark. Ham. I. 2. 68; Lear. IV. 5. 13.
- Night-raven, *sb.* the night-heron. M. A. II. 3. 84.
- Night-rule, *sb.* night order, revelry, diversion. M. N's Dr. III. 2. 5.
- Nil. Will not. T. of S. II. 2. 273; Ham. v. 1. 29.
- Nine-fold. Explained very doubtfully as meaning 'nine foals' = nine-foal'd, or 'nine familiars'. Lear. III. 4. 126.
- Nine men's morris. A rustic game, so called from the counters (*Fr. merelles*) employed. It was frequently played in the open air. M. N's Dr. II. 1. 94.
- Nix, *sb.* the egg of a louse or other small insect. L. L. L. IV. 1. 150; T. of S. IV. 3. 110.
- No. No had! = had you not? John, IV. 2. 207.
- Nob, *sb.* a gold coin worth 6s. 8d. R. 2. I. 1. 30; 2 H 4. II. 2. 167.
- Noblesse, *sb.* nobility. R. 2. IV. 1. 122.
- Nobody. An allusion to the print of Nobody prefixed to the comedy of No-Body and Somebody. Tp. III. 2. 136.
- Nod, to give the nod' is said to be a phrase used in the game of cards called Noddy. T. & C. I. 2. 212.
- Noddy, *sb.* a simoleon. Two G. I. 2. 129, 122.
- Nointed, *p.p.* anointed. M. N's Dr. III. 2. 351; W. T. IV. 4. 813.
- Noise, *sb.* a band of musicians. 2 H 4. II. 4. 13.
- Noie, *sb.* noddle. M. N's Dr. III. 2. 17.
- Nonage, *sb.* minority. R. 3. II. 3. 73.
- Nonce. For the nonce = for the occasion. 1 H 4. I. 2. 201; Ham. IV. 7. 161.
- Noncome, blunder for 'non plus'. M. A. III. 5. 67.
- Non-regardance, *sb.* disregard, neglect. Tw. N. v. 1. 124.
- Nook-shotten, *adj.* full of nooks and corners. H 5. III. 5. 14.
- Northern man, a north country man. L. L. L. v. 2. 701.
- Nose-herb, *sb.* sweet-smelling plants. A. W. IV. 5. 20.
- Not. Not only. M. for M. IV. 1. 67; Cor. III. 2. 71; III. 3. 97.
- Notably, *adv.* excellently. M. N's Dr. v. 1. 368.
- Note, *sb.* list, catalogue. W. T. IV. 3. 49. The note of expectation = the list of expected guests. Mac. III. 3. 20. Stigma, mark of reproach. R. 2. I. 2. 53. Distinction, eminence. Cym. II. 3. 127. Knowledge, observation. Cym. IV. 3. 44; Lear. III. 1. 18.
- Notedly, *adv.* remarkably. M. for M. v. 1. 335.
- Nothing-gift, *sb.* a worthless gift. Cym. III. 6. 86.
- Not-pated, *adj.* crop-headed. 1 H 4. II. 4. 78.
- Nourish, *sb.* perhaps, nurse. 1 H 6. I. 1. 52.
- Nousle, *v.t.* to nurse, rear delicately. Per. I. 4. 42.
- Novum. A game at dice, called *novem quinque* from the two principal throws being nine and five. L. L. L. v. 2. 547.
- Noyance, *sb.* harm. Ham. III. 3. 13.
- Numbered, *adj.* perhaps, rich in numbers, plentifully provided. Cym. I. 6. 36. Theobald conjectured 'unnumber'd'.
- Nuncio, *sb.* a messenger. Tw. N. L. 4. 28.
- Nuncle, familiar form of 'uncle'. Lear. I. 4. 117, &c.
- Nuptial, *sb.* a wedding. Tp. v. 1. 308; M. N's Dr. I. 1. 125.
- Nurture, *sb.* good-breeding, culture. Tp. IV. 1. 189; As. II. 7. 97.
- Nuthook, *sb.* a cant word for a catchpole. M. W. I. 1. 171; 2 H 4. v. 4. 8.
- Nuzzle, *v.t.* to thrust in the nose. V. & A. 1215.
- O. A circle, anything round. L. L. L. v. 2. 45; M. N's Dr. III. 2. 128; H 5. prol. 13; A. & C. v. 2. 81.
- Oar, *v.r.* to row oneself. Tp. II. 2. 118.
- Oathable, *adj.* capable of taking an oath. Tim. IV. 3. 135.



- Ob. Abbreviation of *obolus*, a halfpenny. : H. 4. II. 4. 590.
- Obelance, *sb.* reverence. T. of S. Ind. I. 108.
- Objects, *sb.* anything presented to the sight, everything that comes in the way. Tim. IV. 3. 122.
- (Oblation, *sb.* offering. Sonn. CXXV. 10.
- Obliged, *adj.* bound by contract. M. of V. II. 6. 7.
- Oblivious, *adj.* causing forgetfulness. Mac. v. 3. 43.
- Obsequious, *adj.* belonging to funeral ceremonies. T. A. v. 3. 152; Ham. I. 2. 92. Careful in performing the funeral rites. 3 H. 6. II. 5. 118.
- Obsequiously, *adv.* as befits a funeral. R. 3. I. 2. 3.
- Observance, *sb.* observation. Oth. III. 3. 151.
- Homage, obsequious attention. 2 H. 4. IV. 3. 16; M. W. II. 2. 203. Ceremony. M. of V. II. 2. 204.
- (Observants, *sb.* obsequious attendants. Lear, II. 2. 109.
- Observation, *sb.* observance. M. N's Dr. IV. 1. 109. Attention, diligent care. Tp. III. 3. 87.
- Observe, *v.t.* to pay court or attention to. 2 H. 4. IV. 4. 30; Tim. IV. 3. 212; Ham. III. 1. 162.
- Observer, *sb.* one who pays court or homage. Ham. III. 1. 162.
- Observingly, *adv.* with careful observation, attentively. H. 5. IV. 1. 5.
- Obstacle, blunder for 'obstinate.' : H. 6. v. 4. 17.
- Obstruct, *sb.* obstruction, obstacle. A. & C. III. 6. 61.
- Occident, *sb.* the west. R. 2. III. 3. 67.
- Occidental, *adj.* western. A. W. II. 1. 166.
- Occulted, *adj.* hidden, secret. Ham. III. 2. 85.
- Occupation, *sb.* trade; used contemptuously. Cor. IV. 1. 14. The voice of occupation = the vote of working men. Cor. IV. 6. 97. A man of any occupation may mean one of the mechanics, but it probably implies also one who was prompt to seize an opportunity. J. C. I. 2. 269.
- Occurrence, *sb.* course of events. Tw. N. v. 1. 264.
- Occurrents, *sb.* occurrences, incidents. Ham. v. 2. 368.
- Odd, *adj.* unnoticed, that had been taken no account of. Tp. I. 2. 223; V. 1. 255. At odds. T. & C. IV. 5. 265.
- Oddly, *adv.* unevenly. T. & C. I. 3. 339.
- Odd-even, *sb.* doubtfully explained as the interval between midnight and one in the morning. (Oth. I. 2. 124.
- Odds, *sb.* superiority, advantage. As. I. 2. 169; L. 1. 1. 2. 185. At odds = at variance, quarrelling. R. 3. II. 1. 70; Mac. III. 4. 127.
- Odorous, blunder for 'odious.' M. A. II. 5. 1.
- Od's, A euphemism for 'God's' in the phrases 'Od's blessed will.' M. W. I. 1. 273. 'Od's nearthings.' M. W. III. 4. 50. 'Od's nouns.' IV. 1. 25. 'Od's lifelings.' Tw. N. v. 1. 287; 'Od's pitkins.' Cym. IV. 2. 293.
- Ocellades, *sb.* amorous glances. M. W. I. 3. 68; Lear. IV. 1. 25.
- O'erblow, *v.t.* to blow away. H. 5. III. 3. 31.
- O'ercount, *v.t.* to outnumber. A. & C. II. 6. 26, 27.
- O'ercrow, *v.t.* to triumph over. Ham. v. 2. 264.
- O'ergalled, *p.p.* excessively sore. T. & C. v. 3. 55.
- O'ergreen, *v.t.* to cover with green. Sonn. CXXII. 4.
- O'ergrown, *adj.* covered with hair. Cym. IV. 3. 33. See As. IV. 3. 107. Grown too old. M. for M. I. 3. 22.
- O'erlooked, *p.p.* bewitched. M. W. v. 5. 87; M. of V. III. 2. 15.
- O'ermaster, *v.t.* to hold by force. John. II. 1. 109.
- O'erparted, *adj.* having too difficult a part to play. L. 1. 1. 2. 588.
- O'erperch, *v.t.* to fly over. R. & J. II. 2. 66.
- O'er-raught, overlook. Ham. III. 1. 17.
- O'er-raught, *p.p.* cheated. C. of E. I. 2. 96.
- O'ershine, *v.t.* to outshine. 2 H. 4. IV. 3. 37.
- O'er-sized, *adj.* smeared over as with size. Ham. II. 2. 484.
- O'er-slip, *v.t.* to slip by, pass unnoticed. Two G. II. 2. 9.
- O'er-strawed, *p.p.* overstrewn. V. & A. 1143.
- O'er-teemed, *adj.* exhausted by bearing children. Ham. II. 2. 531.
- O'erwatched, *adj.* worn out with watching. J. C. IV. 3. 241; Lear, II. 2. 177.
- O'erweigh, *v.t.* to outweigh. M. for M. II. 4. 170; Ham. III. 2. 31.
- O'erwhelm, *v.t.* to overhang. H. 5. III. 1. 21; V. & A. 183.
- O'erwrested, *adj.* strained, forced. T. & C. I. 3. 157.
- Of. In adjectives, 'of charity.' Tw. N. v. 1. 237; 'of all loves.' M. N's Dr. II. 2. 154. After passives, of=by. M. A. IV. 1. 219; As. II. 1. 50. Of=on. M. A. III. 5. 40; M. of V. II. 2. 104.
- Off, *adv.* beside the mark, not to the purpose. Cor. II. 2. 64.
- Off-cap, *v.t.* to take off the cap. Oth. I. 1. 10.
- Offencel, *adj.* offensive, criminal. M. for M. II. 3. 26.
- Offenceless, *adj.* inoffensive. Oth. II. 3. 275.
- Offer, *v.t.* to attack. 2 H. 4. IV. 1. 69; 2 H. 4. IV. 1. 219. To attempt, venture. As. III. 2. 84; W. T. IV. 4. 805.
- Office, *v.t.* to office all = to perform all the domestic service. A. W. III. 2. 159. To keep officiously. Cor. v. 2. 68.
- Officed, *p.p.* holding office. W. T. I. 2. 172.
- Officed, *adj.* having a special function. Oth. I. 3. 271.
- Offices, *sb.* the apartments in a house set apart for domestic service. R. 2. I. 2. 69; Mac. II. 1. 14.
- Officious, *adj.* ready to serve. T. A. v. 2. 202.
- Old, *adj.* used as an intensive. M. W. I. 2. 4. 5; M. A. v. 2. 68; M. of V. IV. 2. 25.
- Old, *sb.* wold. Lear, III. 4. 125.
- Old, *adv.* of old. Per. I. prol. 1.
- Oldness, *sb.* old age. Lear, I. 2. 50.
- Omen, *sb.* a calamity preceded by portents. Ham. I. 2. 225.
- Omission, *sb.* omission. As. III. 5. 230.
- On=of. Tp. IV. 1. 157; Cor. I. 3. 72; H. 5. 1. 202; J. C. I. 2. 71; Cym. IV. 2. 298.

- Once.** At one time or other, sometime. *M. W.* III. 4. 203; *J. C.* IV. 3. 192. For once. *TP.* III. 2. 24; *M. N's Dr.* III. 2. 68; *J. H. & L.* 2. 139. Once for all. *Cor.* II. 3. 1; *C. of E.* III. 1. 69; *M. A. L.* 1. 320.
- Oncey,** *adv.* a word of which no satisfactory explanation has been given. *J. H. & L.* 1. 84.
- Onward,** *adv.* in advance. *Sonn.* 1. 24.
- Open,** *adv.* and *adv.* open. *Cor.* I. 4. 43; *C. of E.* III. 1. 73; *J. C.* I. 2. 267.
- Open,** *v.t.* and *i.* to open. *John.* II. 1. 536; *Ham.* I. 4. 50; *TP.* V. 1. 49; *Cor.* V. 3. 183.
- Open,** *adv.* plain, evident. *M. for M.* II. 2. 21; *Tw. N.* II. 5. 174. In open=in public. *H. & L.* 2. 405.
- Open,** *v.t.* to give tongue as a hound on scenting the game. *M. W.* IV. 2. 209.
- Opener,** *sb.* one who reveals or expounds. *H. & L.* IV. 2. 209.
- Operant,** *adv.* operative, active. *Tim.* IV. 3. 25; *Ham.* III. 2. 184.
- Opinion,** *sb.* self-conceit. *J. H. & L.* 1. 185; *L. L. L.* V. 2. 6. Credit, reputation, public opinion. *M. of V.* 1. 1. 91; *Cor.* I. 2. 275; *T. & C.* 1. 3. 125.
- Opinioned,** blunder for 'pinioned.' *M. A.* IV. 2. 69.
- Opposess,** *adv.* irresistible. *Lea.* IV. 6. 38.
- Opposite,** *sb.* an adversary. *M. for M.* III. 2. 175; *Tw. N.* III. 2. 68; *Ham.* V. 2. 62.
- Opposite,** *adv.* contradictory, hostile. *Tw. N.* II. 5. 162; *R. & J.* 1. 2. 94.
- Opposition,** *sb.* a combat, encounter. *J. H. & L.* 3. 99; *Oth.* II. 3. 184.
- Oppress,** *v.t.* to suppress. *Per.* III. prol. 29.
- Oppugnancy,** *sb.* opposition. *T. & C.* 1. 3. 111.
- Opulency,** *sb.* opulence. *Tim.* V. 1. 38.
- Or,** *adv.* before. *Ham.* I. 2. 183; *V.* 2. 30; *TP.* I. 2. 21; *V.* 2. 103, &c.
- Orb,** *sb.* orbit. *M. A.* IV. 2. 38; *R. & J.* II. 2. 110; *A. & C.* III. 13. 146. Circle. *M. N's Dr.* III. 1. 9. A celestial body. *M. of V.* V. 1. 60; *Cym.* I. 6. 35. The earth. *Tw. N.* III. 1. 43; *Ham.* II. 2. 507.
- Orbed,** *adv.* globular. *Tw. N.* V. 1. 278; *Ham.* III. 2. 266; *Comp.* 25.
- Order.** To take order=to take measures. *J. H. & L.* 2. 126; *R. & J.* 1. 4. 282.
- Ordinance,** *sb.* rank, order. *Cor.* III. 2. 22.
- Ordinance,** *John.* II. 1. 218.
- Ordinant,** *adv.* ordaining, controlling. *Ham.* V. 2. 48.
- Ordinary,** *sb.* a public dinner, at which each man pays his share. *A. W.* II. 3. 211; *A. & C.* 2. 230.
- Original,** *adv.* proud, haughty. *T. & C.* prol. 2.
- Original,** *sb.* origin. *M. N's Dr.* II. 2. 167; *J. H. & L.* 2. 131.
- Orison,** *sb.* prayer. *H. & L.* 2. 33; *Ham.* III. 2. 69.
- Or,** *sb.* remnant, refuse. *Tim.* IV. 3. 400; *T. & C.* V. 2. 196; *Lea.* 93.
- Orison,** *sb.* show, display. *M. of V.* II. 2. 205; *Ham.* 2. 24.
- Orisonation,** *sb.* display, outward show. *M. A.* IV. 2. 207; *J. H. & L.* 1. 21; *Ham.* IV. 2. 212.
- Orisonation,** *adv.* in another instance. *Tw. N.* V. 2. 298.
- Otherwhere,** *adv.* elsewhere. *C. of E.* II. 2. 204; *H. & L.* 2. 62. Some other where=anywhere else. *C. of E.* II. 2. 304; *R. & J.* 1. 2. 204.
- Otherwhiles,** *adv.* at other times. *J. H. & L.* 2. 7.
- Ottomite,** *sb.* Ottoman, Turk. *Oth.* I. 3. 33, 235.
- Unches,** *sb.* ornaments; properly the settings of jewels. *J. H. & L.* 4. 33.
- Ought.** *Owed.* *J. H. & L.* III. 2. 152.
- Unches,** *sb.* elves, goblins. *M. W.* IV. 4. 49; *V.* 5. 61.
- Unsel,** *sb.* the blackbird. *M. N's Dr.* III. 2. 128; *J. H. & L.* 2. 9.
- Out,** *adv.* fully. *TP.* I. 4. 41; *IV.* 2. 201. Comp. 'paint out,' *M. A.* III. 2. 119; 'speak out,' *H. & L.* 4. 140; 'beat out,' *Cor.* IV. 3. 127. At a loss; as one who has forgotten his part. *L. L. L.* V. 2. 152; *Cor.* V. 3. 21; *As.* IV. 1. 76. On the wrong track. *W. & L.* II. 1. 72; *Tw. N.* II. 3. 201. At variance. *M. of V.* III. 5. 34; *J. C.* I. 1. 18. In rage, worn out. *J. C.* I. 1. 18.
- Out=**out of. *J. H. & L.* 2. 27; *Cor.* V. 2. 42.
- Outbrave,** *v.t.* to excel in beauty. *Sonn.* LXIV. 12. To surpass in bravery. *M. of V.* II. 1. 28.
- Out-breathed,** *adv.* exhausted, out of breath. *H. & L.* 1. 1. 108.
- Outburn,** *v.t.* to burn out. *Pam. P.* 68.
- Outcrafty,** *v.t.* to overpower by craft. *Cym.* III. 4. 15.
- Outface,** *v.t.* to put out of countenance. *M. of V.* IV. 2. 17; *John.* V. 2. 49. To put a good face upon. *Pam. P.* 8.
- Outlook,** *v.t.* to stare, intimidate by looks. *John.* V. 2. 115.
- Outlustrer,** *v.t.* to excel in brightness. *Cym.* I. 4. 79.
- Out-peer,** *v.t.* to overpeer, surpass. *Cym.* III. 6. 87.
- Outprised,** *p.p.* exceeded in value. *Cym.* I. 4. 88.
- Outrage,** *sb.* outburst of fury. *John.* III. 4. 206; *R. & J.* 1. 4. 54; *R. & J.* V. 3. 216.
- Out-speak,** *v.t.* out-speak possession of a subject=describes something too great for subject to possess. *H. & L.* 1. 2. 223.
- Outsport,** *v.t.* to exceed in sporting. *Oth.* II. 3. 3.
- Outstrike,** *v.t.* to strike faster than. *A. & C.* IV. 6. 36.
- Outvied,** *p.p.* outbid; beaten by a higher card. *T. of E.* II. 1. 387.
- Outward,** *adv.* 'an outward man' is one not in the secret of affairs. *A. W.* III. 1. 12.
- Outwork,** *v.t.* to excel. *A. & C.* II. 2. 204.
- Outworth,** *v.t.* to exceed in value. *H. & L.* 1. 2. 223.
- Overeye,** *v.t.* to observe, survey. *T. of E.* II. 1. 62.
- Overgone,** *p.p.* overpowered. *J. H. & L.* 2. 212.
- Overhold,** *v.t.* to over-estimate. *H. & C.* II. 3. 120.
- Overlive,** *v.t.* to outlive. *J. H. & L.* 2. 212.
- Over-lucky,** *adv.* too lucky or lucky. *H. & L.* IV. 2. 212; *Lea.* II. 4. 20.
- Over-name,** *v.t.* to annaminate. *M. of V.* I. 2. 30.
- Overpassed,** *p.p.* passed, spent. *J. H. & L.* 3. 217.

- Over-see, *v.t.* to look down on, rise above. *M.* of V. I. 1. 12; *Ham.* IV. 5. 92.
- Over-red, *v.t.* to sneer with red. *Mac.* V. 3. 14.
- Over-switched, *adj.* over-switched, over-whipped. *H* 4. III. a. 340. Perhaps in a wanton sense.
- Oversee, *v.t.* to superintend, see to the fulfilment of. *Lucr.* 1205.
- Overseen, *p.p.* bewitched, paralysed. *Lucr.* 1206.
- Overswear, *v.t.* to swear over again. *Tw. N.* V. 1. 276.
- Over-top, *v.t.* to rise too high. *Th.* I. a. 81.
- Overture, *sb.* disclosure. *W. T.* II. 1. 172; *Lear*, III. 7. 80. Declaration. *Tw. N.* I. 5. 225.
- Overweigh, *v.t.* to outweigh. *M.* for *M.* II. 4. 257.
- Owe, *v.t.* to own, possess. *Th.* I. a. 407; III. 1. 45; *Cor.* III. a. 130.
- Own. Was his own = was in possession of his senses. *Th.* V. 1. 213.
- Oxlip, *sb.* the larger cowslip (*Primula elatior*). *M. N's Dr.* II. 1. 250; *W. T.* IV. 4. 125.
- Oyes, *sb.* give ear; a summons to attention uttered by the public crier (*Fr. oyez*). *M. W.* V. 5. 45; *T. & C.* IV. 5. 143.
- Pace, *v.t.* to teach a horse its paces. *H* 8. V. 3. 22; *A. & C.* II. a. 64. Metaphorically, *M.* for *M.* IV. 3. 137; *Per.* IV. 6. 68.
- Pack, *sb.* a confederacy. *M. W.* IV. a. 123; *C.* of E. IV. 4. 105.
- Pack, *v.t.* to shuffle cards unfairly. *A. & C.* IV. 14. 19. To conspire. *T. A.* IV. 2. 155.
- Packed, *p.p.* confederate. *C.* of E. V. 1. 219; *M. A.* V. 1. 208.
- Packing, *sb.* plotting, confederacy. *T.* of S. V. 1. 122; *Lear*, III. 1. 26.
- Paction, *sb.* compact. *H* 5. V. a. 393.
- Paddock, *sb.* a toad. *Ham.* III. 4. 100. A familiar spirit in the form of a toad. *Mac.* I. 1. 9.
- Page, *v.t.* to follow as a page. *Tim.* IV. 3. 224.
- Pagant, *v.t.* to make a show of, mimic. *T. & C.* I. 3. 151.
- Pain, *sb.* penalty. *M.* for *M.* II. 4. 86.
- Painful, *adj.* laborious, toilsome. *Th.* III. 1. 1; *T.* of S. V. 2. 149; *H* 5. IV. 3. 115.
- Painfully, *adv.* laboriously. *L. L. L.* I. 1. 74; *John*, II. 1. 223.
- Painted cloth. Cloth or canvas used for hangings and painted with figures, moral sentences, and mottoes. *Lucr.* 245; *L. L. L.* V. a. 579; *A* 3. III. a. 290; *H* 4. IV. a. 28.
- Pajock, *sb.* a peacock. *Ham.* III. a. 295.
- Palabras. Words (Spanish). *M. A.* III. 5. 18.
- Pocessapallabris = pocess palabras, few words. *T.* of S. Ind. I. 5.
- Palate, *v.t.* to savour of. *Cor.* III. 1. 104. To taste. *A. & C.* V. a. 7. To perceive by the taste. *T. & C.* IV. 3. 50.
- Pale, *sb.* paleness. *V. & A.* 50; *Lucr.* 1512; *W. T.* IV. 3. 4.
- Pale, *sb.* enclosure, confine. *V. & A.* 230; *R. 2.* III. 4. 20; *Ham.* I. 4. 28. *v.t.* to make pale. *Ham.* I. 5. 90.
- Paled, *adj.* pale. *Comp.* 192.
- Palmedoon, *sb.* palmedoon, stalk. *H* 4. II. 2. 15.
- Pall, *v.t.* to wrap oneself up. *Mac.* I. 5. 32.
- Pall, *v.t.* to grow rapid and tasteless, like wine; hence, to become worthless, decay. *Ham.* V. 2. 9; *A. & C.* II. 7. 82.
- Pallet, *sb.* a mean bed. *H* 4. III. 1. 120.
- Palliamment, *sb.* a robe. *T. A.* I. 1. 122.
- Palmer, *sb.* a pilgrim. *R. 2.* III. 3. 151; *R. & J.* I. 5. 102.
- Palmy, *adj.* victorious. *Ham.* I. 2. 113.
- Palker, *v.t.* to shift, equivocate. *J. C.* II. 2. 126; *Mac.* V. 8. 20; *A. & C.* III. 11. 63.
- Paly, *adj.* pale. *H* 5. IV. chor. 8; *R. & J.* IV. 1. 100.
- Pandarily, *adj.* pimping. *M. W.* IV. a. 122.
- Pang, *v.t.* to afflict with pangs, torture. *H* 8. II. 3. 15; *Cym.* III. 4. 98.
- Pantaloon, *sb.* an old fool; one of the characters borrowed like Harlequin from the old Italian comedy. *A* 2. II. 7. 158; *T.* of S. III. 1. 37.
- Pantler, *sb.* the servant in charge of the pantry. *W. T.* IV. 4. 56; *H* 4. II. 4. 258; *Oym.* II. 3. 129.
- Paper, *v.t.* to set down on paper, register. *H* 8. I. 1. 82.
- Paragon, *v.t.* to serve as a model for. *Oth.* II. 1. 62. To compare. *A. & C.* I. 5. 72.
- Paragoned, *p.p.* regarded as a model or pattern. *H* 8. II. 4. 230.
- Paraquito, *sb.* a little parrot. *H* 4. II. 3. 82.
- Parcel, *sb.* a part. *C.* of E. V. 1. 106; *H* 4. IV. 2. 36; *Cor.* I. a. 32. A small company. *L. L. L.* V. a. 160; *M.* of V. I. a. 119; *A. W.* II. 3. 58.
- Parcel, *v.t.* to particularise. *A. & C.* V. a. 163.
- Parcelled, *p.p.* divided severally. *R. 2.* II. a. 81.
- Parcel-bawd, *sb.* half bawd. *M.* for *M.* II. 63.
- Parcel-gilt, *adj.* partly gilt. *H* 4. II. 1. 94.
- Paré, *sb.* leopard. *Th.* IV. 1. 262; *A* 2. II. 7. 120.
- Pardon, *v.t.* to excuse, give leave to. *Two G.* III. a. 98.
- Paré, *sb.* apparel. *Lear*, IV. 1. 51.
- Parfect. Blunder for 'present.' *L. L. L.* V. a. 503.
- Paris-garden. A bear-garden in Bankside, Southwark. *H* 8. V. 4. 2.
- Pariah-top, *sb.* a large top which was formerly kept in every village for exercises in frosty weather. *Tw. N.* I. 3. 44.
- Paritor, *sb.* an apparitor, or officer of the Bishop's Court who carried out citations. *L. L. L.* III. 1. 128.
- Parle, *sb.* parlay, conference. *Two G.* I. a. 5; *John*, II. 1. 201; *Ham.* I. 2. 62. *v.t.* to converse. *L. L. L.* V. a. 122.
- Parious, *adj.* perilous, dangerous. *M. N's Dr.* III. 1. 14; *A* 3. III. a. 45; *R. 2.* II. 4. 35.
- Parmaceti, *sb.* spermaceti. *H* 4. II. 3. 52.
- Part, *adv.* in part, partly. *Two G.* III. 4. 377; *Oth.* V. a. 506.
- Part, *sb.* party, side. *H* 5. IV. 7. 123; *H* 4. III. 2. 81; *H* 6. V. a. 35.
- Part, *v.t.* to depart, go away. *Two G.* I. a. 72; *Lear*, I. a. 23. *v.t.* to leave. *R. 2.* III. a. 38.
- Part, *v.t.* to participate. *Tw. N.* I. 5. 102.
- Partake, *v.t.* to participate. *Tw. N.* I. 5. 102.

- Partaker, sb.** confederate. T. & C. II. 4. 100.  
**Parted, p.p.** endowed. T. & C. III. 3. 96.  
**Partial, adj.** a partial slander—the reproach of partiality. R. & J. 3. 241.  
**Partialism, v.t.** to make partial. R. & J. 2. 180.  
**Participate, adj.** participating. Cor. I. 2. 106.  
**adj.** having a coat of many colours, a fool. L. L. L. V. 2. 776.  
**particulary, adv.** halts not particularly—does not stop at particular persons. Tim. I. 2. 46.  
**Partisan, sb.** a kind of pike. R. & J. I. 2. 80, 101; Ham. I. 2. 140; A. & C. II. 7. 14.  
**Partlet, sb.** the name of the hen in the story of Reynard the Fox. W. T. II. 3. 75; H. 4. III. 3. 60.  
**Party, sb. part.** R. & J. III. 3. 115.  
**Party-verdict.** A party-verdict gave—had a share in giving the verdict. R. & J. 3. 234.  
**Paish, sb.** a grotesque word for the head. W. T. I. 2. 128. **v.t.** to beat, smite, dash. T. & C. II. 3. 213; V. 5. 10.  
**Pass, v.t.** to surpass, exceed belief. M. W. I. 2. 310; V. 2. 127. To die. A. & C. III. 3. 23; Lear. IV. 6. 47. To give verdict. M. for M. II. 1. 10, 23; Lear. III. 7. 24. To care for, regard. A. & C. IV. 2. 136. To make a thrust in fencing. Ham. V. 2. 300; comp. Tw. N. III. 2. 48. **v.t.** to pass for, represent. L. L. L. V. 1. 135. To transfer to. T. of S. IV. 4. 45. To transact, get through. T. of S. IV. 4. 57. To make a pass in fencing. M. W. II. 3. 26. To indulge in, as a jest. M. W. I. 1. 160; H. 5. II. 2. 132. **sb.** passage. Ham. II. 2. 77. Pass of pate=witty sally. Tp. IV. 1. 244.  
**Passable, adj.** capable of procuring a pass. Cor. V. 2. 13. That may be passed through. Cym. I. 2. 10.  
**Passado, sb.** a pass or motion forwards in fencing. L. L. L. L. 2. 184; R. & J. II. 4. 26; III. 2. 88.  
**Pass upon.** To impose upon. Tw. N. III. 1. 48; V. 2. 360.  
**Passage, sb.** motion. Cor. V. 6. 76; H. 2. II. 4. 165. The passing to and fro. C. of E. III. 1. 99; Oth. V. 1. 37. Departure, death. Ham. III. 3. 86. (In Ham. V. 2. 400, 'for his passage'—to accompany his departure instead of the passing bell.) Passing away. H. 6. II. 5. 102. Occurrence. A. W. L. I. 20; Ham. IV. 7. 123; Cym. III. 4. 94. Process, course. W. T. III. 2. 91; R. & J. prol. 9; T. & C. II. 3. 120. Thy passages of life—the actions of thy life. A. & C. III. 2. 8. Passages of grossness=gross impositions. Tw. N. III. 2. 77.  
**Passant.** A term of heraldry denoting the position of an animal walking. M. W. I. 1. 20.  
**Passenger, sb.** a passer by, wayfarer. R. & J. 2. 91; H. & C. III. 1. 129.  
**Passes, sb.** acts of deception. M. for M. V. 2. 379.  
**Passing, adv.** exceedingly. Two G. IV. 4. 133; M. A. II. 2. 81; Cor. I. 2. 207, &c.  
**Pastor, sb.** suffering. Ham. II. 2. 209. **Sho-hon,** disturbance of mind. Mac. III. 4. 37; IV. 2. 245; J. C. I. 2. 30. Sorrow, grief. A. & C. 2. 20; Tw. N. II. 4. 4.  
**v.t.** to express sorrow, grieve. Tp. V. 2. 24; Two G. IV. 4. 172; A. L. L. L. 2. 264.  
**Passionate, adj.** sorrowful. John. II. 1. 544.  
**Displaying emotion.** A. & C. I. 1. 104; Ham. II. 2. 432. **v.t.** to express with emotion. T. A. III. 2. 6.  
**Pasty measures,** a corruption of the Italian *passamezzo*, which denotes a measured and stately step in dancing. Tw. N. V. 1. 206.  
**Past-proportion, sb.** excessive magnitude. T. & C. II. 2. 29.  
**Pastry, sb.** the room in which the pastry is made. R. & J. IV. 4. 2.  
**Patch, sb.** a fool. M. N's Dr. III. 2. 9; M. of V. II. 5. 46; Mac. V. 3. 15.  
**Patched, adj.** motley, pled; from the parti-coloured dress worn by domestic fools. M. N's Dr. IV. 1. 215.  
**Patchery, sb.** trickery. T. & C. II. 3. 77; Tim. V. 1. 99.  
**Path, v.t.** to walk, go. J. C. II. 1. 82.  
**Fatethical, adj.** moving, persuasive. L. L. L. I. 2. 103; IV. 1. 150; A. & C. IV. 2. 126.  
**Patient, v.t.** to calm oneself. T. A. I. 1. 121.  
**Patine, sb.** a plate of metal. M. of V. V. 1. 50.  
**Patronage, v.t.** to patronize, support, protect. A. & C. III. 2. 48; III. 4. 32.  
**Pattern, sb.** an example, instance. B. 3. I. 2. 34; Oth. V. 2. 11. That which is made after a model. H. 5. II. 4. 61.  
**Pauca, few;** that is, few words. M. W. I. 1. 134; H. 5. II. 2. 83. In full, *pauca verba*. M. W. I. 1. 123; L. L. L. IV. 2. 171.  
**Paunch, v.t.** to rip up the belly. Tp. III. 2. 98.  
**Paved, adj.** pebbly. M. N's Dr. II. 1. 84.  
**Pavilioned, p.p.** tented, encamped. H. 5. I. 2. 129.  
**Pavin, sb.** a stately dance, of Spanish or more probably Italian origin. Tw. N. V. 1. 207.  
**Pawn, sb.** a pledge. B. 1. I. 3. 74; Lear. I. 2. 137.  
**Pax, sb.** a mistake for 'pix' or 'pyx'. The pax was a small piece of wood or metal, with the figure of Christ upon it, which was offered to the laity to kiss. The pix was a box containing the consecrated host. H. 5. III. 6. 45, 47.  
**Pay, v.t.** to hit, beat, punish. Tw. N. III. 4. 303; H. 4. II. 4. 213, 245; V. 3. 48. To reward, requite. C. of E. IV. 4. 10; Tp. II. 1. 36.  
**Payment, sb.** punishment. As. I. 2. 166; H. 5. IV. 8. 15.  
**Peace-parted, p.p.** having departed in peace. Ham. V. 1. 267.  
**Peach, v.t.** to impeach, accuse. M. for M. IV. 3. 12; H. 4. II. 2. 47.  
**Peak, v.t.** to grow thin. Mac. I. 2. 23. To mope. Ham. II. 2. 594.  
**Peaking, adj.** sneaking, cowardly. M. W. III. 5. 71.  
**Peasecod, sb.** the pod or husk containing the peas. M. N's Dr. III. 2. 122; Tw. N. I. 5. 167. Used for the plant itself. As. II. 4. 52.  
**Peet, sb.** a pet, darling. T. of S. I. 2. 78.  
**Peet, v.t.** to pitch. H. & C. V. 4. 92.  
**Pedant, sb.** a schoolmaster. L. L. L. III. 2. 170; Tw. N. III. 2. 82.  
**Peduncle, sb.** pedant, schoolmaster. T. of S. III. 2. 92.

- Peel**, *v.t.* to strip off the bark. *M. of V. I. 3. 83; Lucr. 1187.*
- Peened**, *adj.* shaven. *H. 6. I. 3. 30.*
- Peep**, *v.t.* to allow to peep out. *Lucr. 474.*
- Peevish**, *adj.* childish, silly. *E. 3. I. 3. 194; IV. 2. 100; Ham. I. 2. 100. Fretful, wayward. M. of V. I. 2. 86; T. of S. V. 2. 157.*
- Peevishly**, *adv.* ill-temperedly. *Tw. N. II. 2. 14.*
- Peg-a-Ramsey**, a name borrowed from an old song. *Tw. N. II. 3. 81.*
- Peise**, *v.t.* to weigh down, and so retard. *M. of V. III. 2. 22; E. 3. V. 3. 103.*
- Peised**, *p.p.* poised, balanced. *John. II. 1. 575.*
- Pelleted**, *p.p.* formed into pellets or small balls. *Comp. 18; A. & C. III. 13. 165.*
- Pelt**, *v.t.* to fling about opprobrious words. *Lucr. 1218.*
- Pelting**, *adj.* palky. *M. N's Dr. II. 1. 91; E. 2. II. 1. 60.*
- Pendulous**, *adj.* overhanging, threatening to fall. *Lear. III. 4. 69.*
- Penetrative**, *adj.* penetrating, touching the heart. *A. & C. IV. 14. 75.*
- Penitent**, *adj.* doing penance. *C. of E. I. 2. 52. Used as a substantive. A. W. III. 5. 97.*
- Pensioner**, *sb.* one of the body of Gentlemen Pensioners who attended upon the person of the sovereign. *M. W. II. 2. 29; M. N's Dr. II. 1. 10.*
- Pensive**, *adj.* pensive. *Comp. 219.*
- Pent-house**, *sb.* a lean-to building. *M. of V. II. 6. 1; M. A. III. 3. 110. Used of the eyelid which is overhung by the eyebrow. Mac. I. 3. 20.*
- Penurious**, *adj.* necessitous. *Tim. IV. 3. 92.*
- Peradventure**, *adv.* perhaps. *M. A. I. 2. 24; Cor. II. 1. 102, &c.*
- Perdu**, *sb.* a solemn sent on a forlorn hope. *Lear. IV. 7. 35.*
- Pardurable**, *adj.* lasting. *H. 5. IV. 5. 7; Oth. I. 3. 343.*
- Pardurably**, *adv.* lastingly. *M. for M. III. 1. 115.*
- Perdy**, *int.* by God, verily (*Fr. par Dieu*). *Tw. N. IV. 2. 81; H. 5. II. 1. 52. In C. of E. IV. 4. 74. 'perdie.'*
- Pergrinate**, *adj.* foreign. *L. L. L. V. 1. 15.*
- Peremptory**, *adj.* firmly determined. *John. II. 1. 454; Cor. III. 1. 286. Daring, audacious. L. L. L. IV. 3. 226; H. 4. I. 3. 17.*
- Perfect**, *adj.* fully satisfied. *Mac. III. Tim. I. 2. 92. Fully informed, certain. III. 3. 1; Mac. I. 5. 2; Cym. III. 1. 73.*
- Perfect**, *v.t.* to instruct fully. *M. for M. IV. 3. 146; Tp. I. 2. 75.*
- Perforce**, *adv.* violently. *C. of E. IV. 3. 95. 'Force perforce' in the same sense. John. III. 2. 149; H. 4. IV. 1. 116. Of necessity. Tp. V. 2. 133; E. & J. I. 5. 91.*
- Perforate**, *sb.* apostle. *H. 6. V. 3. 2.*
- Perforate**, *sb.* a confusion. *A. & C. IV. 2. 95. IV. 24. 209. v.t.* to put an end to. *Tim. I. 2. 92.*
- Perish**, *v.t.* to destroy. *H. 6. III. 2. 200.*
- Perishen**, *v.t.* to perish. *Per. II. prol. 3.*
- Perjure**, *sb.* a perjurer. *L. L. L. IV. 3. 47. v.t.* to make perjured, tainted with perjury. *A. & C. III. 12. 30.*
- Perpend**, *v.t.* to reflect. *M. W. II. 2. 119; Ham. v.t.* to consider. *H. 5. IV. 4. 8. adj.* bewildered, distracted. *Oth. v. 1. 733.*
- Persever**, *v.t.* to persevere. *As. V. 2. 4; Ham. I. 2. 92, &c.*
- Persuasive**, *adj.* persistent. *T. & C. I. 3. 21.*
- Personage**, *sb.* person, appearance, figure. *M. N's Dr. III. 2. 292; Tw. N. I. 5. 164.*
- Personal**, *adj.* present in person. *H. 4. IV. 3. 88.*
- Personate**, *v.t.* to represent. *Tw. N. II. 3. 173; Tim. I. 2. 69; V. 2. 35; Cym. V. 5. 434.*
- Perspective**, *sb.* an instrument for producing an optical deception. *A. W. V. 3. 48; Tw. N. V. 1. 224; E. 2. II. 2. 18. It was made in various forms.*
- Perspectively**, *adv.* as through a perspective. *H. 5. V. 2. 347.*
- Persuade**, *v.t.* to use persuasion. *M. for M. V. 1. 93; M. of V. III. 2. 283.*
- Persuaded**, *p.p.* best persuaded=having the best opinion. *Tw. N. II. 3. 162.*
- Pert**, *adj.* brisk, lively. *L. L. L. V. 2. 275; M. N's Dr. I. 1. 13.*
- Pertly**, *adv.* briskly. *Tp. IV. 1. 52. Sandily. T. & C. IV. 5. 219.*
- Perttaunt-like**, *adv.* a word not yet explained or amended. *L. L. L. V. 2. 67.*
- Perusal**, *sb.* survey, examination. *Ham. II. 1. 50.*
- Peruse**, *v.t.* to survey, examine. *C. of E. I. 2. 13; E. 2. III. 3. 53; E. & J. V. 3. 74; Ham. IV. 7. 137.*
- Pervert**, *v.t.* to turn aside, avert. *Cym. II. 4. 131.*
- Pester**, *v.t.* to disturb, encumber, import. *Mac. V. 2. 23; Ham. I. 2. 22; Cor. IV. 6. 7.*
- Petar**, *sb.* an engine filled with explosive materials, like a modern shell. *Ham. III. 4. 207.*
- Petitionary**, *adj.* supplicatory. *As. III. 2. 199; Cor. V. 2. 82.*
- Pew-fellow**, *sb.* companion, intimate associate. *E. 3. IV. 4. 52.*
- Phantasmie**, *sb.* a fantastical person. *L. L. L. IV. 1. 101; V. 1. 20.*
- Phantasma**, *sb.* phantasm, apparition. *J. C. II. 1. 65.*
- Phoeze**, *v.t.* to beat, chastise, torment. *T. of S. Ind. I. 1; T. & C. II. 3. 215.*
- Philip**, a familiar term for a sparrow. *John. I. 2. 331.*
- Philip and Jacob**, the first of May. *M. for M. III. 2. 224.*
- Philippian**, worn at the battle of Philippi. *A. & C. II. 5. 23.*
- Phraseless**, *adj.* indescribable. *Comp. 226.*
- Physical**, *adj.* salutary, wholesome. *Cor. I. 3. 20; J. O. II. 1. 261.*
- Pia mater**, the membrane which covers the brain. *Used for the brain itself. L. L. L. IV. 2. 71; Tw. N. I. 5. 123; T. & C. II. 2. 77.*
- Pick**, *v.t.* to pitch. *Cor. I. 2. 202.*
- Picked**, *adj.* refined, precise. *L. L. L. V. 2. 141; John. I. 2. 23; Ham. V. 2. 151.*
- Pickers**, *sb.* petty thieves; the fingers. *Ham. III. 2. 342.*
- Picking**, *adj.* minute, trifling. *H. 4. IV. 2. 22.*

- Pickthank**, *sb.* a sawing flatterer. *H* 4. III. 25.
- Piece**, *sb.* a vessel of wine. *T.* & *C.* IV. 2. 62. See *Reed*. viii. 20.
- Pied**, *adj.* parti-coloured, spotted. *TP.* III. 2. 7; *L.* 1. 1. V. 2. 904; *M.* of *V.* 1. 3. 80.
- Piedness**, *sb.* diversity of colour. *W.* T. IV. 4. 87.
- Pigeon-livered**, *adj.* the pigeon was supposed to have no gall. *Ham.* II. 2. 605.
- Pight**, *p.p.* pitched, fixed. *T.* & *C.* V. 10. 24; *Lear*, II. 2. 67.
- Pig-nuts**, *sb.* earth-nuts. *TP.* II. 2. 172.
- Pilcher**, *sb.* a scabbard. *R.* & *J.* III. 1. 84.
- Piled**. A quibble is intended between 'piled' = peeled, bald, and 'piled' as applied to velvet. *M.* for *M.* 1. 2. 35.
- Pill**, *v.t.* to pillage, plunder. *R.* 2. II. 1. 246; *R.* 3. 1. 3. 159.
- Pillcock**, a term of endearment. *Lear*, III. 4. 78.
- Pin**, *sb.* the bull's eye of the target. *L.* 1. 1. IV. 2. 138; *R.* & *J.* II. 4. 15.
- Pin and web**, the disease of the eye now known as cataract. *W.* T. 1. 2. 201; *Lear*, III. 4. 122.
- Pin-buttock**, *sb.* a narrow buttock. *A.* *W.* II. 2. 18.
- Pine**, *v.t.* to starve, wear out. *V.* & *A.* 602; *R.* 2. V. 1. 77.
- Pinfold**, *sb.* a pound. *Two* *G.* 1. 2. 114; *Lear*, II. 2. 9.
- Pink** *eyne*, small, half-shut eyes. *A.* & *C.* II. 7. 181.
- Pinked**, *adj.* pierced with holes. *H.* 8. V. 4. 50.
- Pioned**, *adj.* a very doubtful word, variously interpreted as 'covered with the marsh marigold, or simply 'dug'. *TP.* IV. 2. 64.
- Pioneer**, *sb.* pioneer. *H.* 5. III. 2. 92; *Ham.* 1. 5. 163.
- Pip**. 'A pip out' is a cant expression for being a little overtaken in liquor. A pip was a spot on cards and the reference is to a game called one and thirty. *T.* of *S.* 1. 2. 33.
- Pipe-wine**, *sb.* wine from the pipe or butt, with a reference to the other meaning of pipe. *M.* *W.* III. 2. 90.
- Pitch**, *sb.* the height to which a falcon soars. *H.* 6. II. 4. 11; *H.* 6. II. 1. 6. 12; *R.* 2. 1. 1. 109; *J.* *C.* 1. 1. 78. Hence used of height generally. *Tw.* *N.* 1. 1. 12; *Ham.* III. 2. 86.
- Piteously**, *adv.* so as to move pity. *T.* *A.* V. 1. 66.
- Place**, *sb.* dwelling-place, residence. *Oth.* 1. 3. 238; *Am.* II. 3. 27. The highest pitch of a hawk. *Mac.* II. 4. 12.
- Placket**, *sb.* a petticoat. *W.* T. IV. 4. 245, 622; *Lear*, III. 4. 100; *T.* & *C.* II. 3. 22.
- Plain**, *v.t.* to make plain. *Per.* III. prol. 14. *v.t.* to complain. *Lear*, III. 1. 39.
- Plaining**, *sb.* complaint. *O.* of *E.* 1. 2. 73; *R.* 2. 1. 275.
- Plain-song**, *sb.* the simple melody without variations. *H.* 5. III. 2. 6. 7; *H.* 2. 1. 3. 45. Used as an adjective. *M.* *N.* *S.* *De.* III. 2. 134.
- Plail**, *adj.* complaining. *Comp.* 2.
- Plaid**, *adj.* folded, intricate. *Lear*, 1. 2. 283.
- Plaid**, *sb.* folds. *Lucr.* 02.
- Plaid**, *adj.* made of plaid. *M.* for *M.* IV. 2. 30.
- Plant**, *sb.* the sole of the foot. *A.* & *C.* II. 7. 2.
- Plantage**, *sb.* plants, vegetation. *T.* & *C.* III. 2. 184.
- Plantain**, *sb.* the *Plantago major* or *media* which was used to stop bleeding. *L.* 1. 1. III. 2. 74; *R.* & *J.* 1. 2. 52.
- Plantation**, *sb.* planting, colonising. *TP.* II. 1. 143.
- Plash**, *sb.* a pool. *T.* of *S.* 1. 2. 23.
- Plate**, *v.t.* to clothe in plate armour. *Lear*, IV. 6. 169.
- Plated**, *p.p.* armed. *R.* 1. 2. 3. 28; *A.* & *C.* 1. 2. 4.
- Plates**, *sb.* pieces of silver money. *A.* & *C.* V. 2. 92.
- Platforms**, *sb.* plans. *H.* 6. II. 1. 1.
- Plausibly**, *adv.* by acclamation. *Lucr.* 1854.
- Plausible**, *adj.* persuasive, pleasing. *W.* 1. 2. 53; *IV.* 1. 29; *Ham.* 1. 4. 30.
- Play**, *v.t.* to play for. *H.* 5. IV. chor. 19.
- Play your prize**. To play a prize in a fencing school was to go through certain exercises in order to qualify for a degree. *T.* *A.* 1. 2. 390.
- Pleached**, *adj.* intertwined, folded. *M.* *A.* III. 1. 7; *A.* & *C.* IV. 14. 73.
- Pleasance**, *sb.* pleasure, merriment. *Oth.* II. 3. 203; *Pars.* P. 158.
- Pleasantly**, *adv.* sportively, jestingly. *T.* & *C.* IV. 5. 249.
- Please-man**, *sb.* a flatterer, parasite. *L.* 1. 1. V. 2. 463.
- Pleasure**, *v.t.* to gratify. *M.* *A.* V. 1. 129; *M.* of *V.* 1. 3. 7.
- Plenty**, *adj.* plentiful. *TP.* IV. 2. 110.
- Pliant**, *adj.* yielding, fit. *Oth.* 1. 3. 151.
- Plight**, *sb.* pledge. *Lear*, 1. 2. 103.
- Plot**, *sb.* a spot of ground. *John*, II. 1. 40. *H.* 6. II. 2. 60; *Ham.* IV. 4. 62.
- Plume up**, to prank up; hence to gratify. *Oth.* 1. 3. 399.
- Plummet**, *sb.* ignorance itself is a plummet o'er me = I am a plummet's depth below ignorance itself. *M.* *W.* V. 5. 173.
- Plumpy**, *adj.* plump. *A.* & *C.* II. 7. 122.
- Pluriary**, *sb.* a plethora, superabundance. *Ham.* IV. 7. 118.
- Point**, *sb.* a tagged lace. *T.* of *S.* III. 2. 49; *A.* & *C.* III. 12. 157; *Tw.* *N.* 1. 2. 25.
- Point**. At a point = prepared. *Mac.* IV. 3. 135. At point = completely. *Ham.* 1. 2. 200. At readiness, fully prepared. *Lear*, 1. 4. 246. At ample point = in full perfection. *T.* & *C.* III. 3. 89. To point = exactly. *TP.* 1. 2. 194.
- Point-device** or **Point-device**, *adj.* precise, finical. *Am.* III. 2. 401; *L.* 1. 1. V. 2. 21. *adv.* precisely, exactly. *Tw.* *N.* II. 3. 276.
- Point of war**, a set of notes on the trumpet. *H.* 4. IV. 1. 52.
- Pointing-stick**, *sb.* object of scorn. *H.* 6. II. 4. 46.
- Points**, *sb.* directions, commands; as if given by sound of trumpet. *Cor.* IV. 6. 125.
- Poise**, *sb.* weight. *Lear*, II. 2. 122; *Oth.* III. 3. 82. *v.t.* to weigh. *H.* 6. II. 2. 204; *R.* & *J.* 1. 2. 100. To counterbalance. *Oth.* 1. 3. 351.
- Poke**, *sb.* pocket. *Am.* II. 7. 20.
- Poking-sticks**, *sb.* irons for setting out the plate of ruffs. *W.* T. IV. 4. 228.

- Polack**, *sb.* a native of Poland. Ham. I. 2. 63; II. 2. 63, 75. Used as an adjective. Ham. V. 2. 387.
- Pole**, *sb.* standard. A. & C. IV. 15. 64.
- Pole-clipt**, *adj.* a pole-clipt vineyard is a vineyard in which the vines embrace or are twined about the poles. Tp. IV. 1. 68.
- Policy**, *sb.* cunning, stratagem. Cor. III. 2. 42, 48; T. & C. IV. 1. 17.
- Politic**, *adj.* relating to politics or state policy. Tw. N. II. 5. 174.
- Politician**, *sb.* a political intriguer. Tw. N. III. 2. 34; H. 4. I. 3. 241; Ham. V. 1. 86.
- Polled**, *adj.* clipped, laid bare. Cor. IV. 5. 215.
- Pollusion**, blunder for 'allusion.' L. L. L. IV. 2. 46.
- Pomander**, *sb.* a ball of perfume. W. T. IV. 4. 609.
- Pomewater**, *sb.* a large sweet apple, *Malus carbonaria*. L. L. L. IV. 2. 4.
- Pomgranet**, *sb.* pomegranate. H. 4. II. 4. 42.
- Pontic Sea**, *sb.* the Euxine. Oth. III. 3. 453.
- Poor-John**, *sb.* hake salted and dried. Tp. II. 2. 28.
- Poperin**, *adj.* a poperin pear, so called from Poperingus in Belgium. R. & J. II. 1. 38.
- Popinjay**, *sb.* a parrot. H. 4. I. 3. 59.
- Popular**, *adj.* vulgar. H. 5. IV. 1. 38.
- Popularity**, *sb.* vulgarity. H. 4. III. 2. 69; H. 5. I. 2. 59.
- Populous**, *adj.* numerous. A. & C. III. 6. 50.
- Porpentine**, *sb.* porcupine. H. 6. III. 1. 363; T. & C. II. 2. 27; Ham. I. 5. 20.
- Porringer**, *sb.* a bowl or basin. T. of S. IV. 3. 64; H. 8. V. 4. 50.
- Port**, *sb.* carriage, bearing. H. 5. prol. 6; M. of V. I. 2. 124. Gate. Cor. I. 7. 2; H. 4. IV. 5. 24.
- Portable**, *adj.* enduring. Mac. IV. 3. 89; Lear, III. 6. 115.
- Portage**, *sb.* port-hole. H. 5. III. 1. 10. Port dues, paid by a vessel on arriving in harbour. Per. III. 1. 35.
- Portance**, *sb.* carriage, deportment. Cor. II. 3. 232; Oth. I. 3. 139.
- Portly**, *adj.* of good demeanour or bearing. R. & J. I. 5. 68.
- Possess**, *v.t.* to give possession. A. & C. III. 11. 21. To inform. M. for M. IV. 1. 44; M. A. V. 1. 290; Tw. N. II. 3. 149. Followed by 'with.' John. IV. 4. 41.
- Possession**, *sb.* insanity, madness. C. of E. V. 1. 44.
- Poast**, *v.t.* to curdle. Ham. I. 5. 68.
- Possitable**, blunder for 'positively.' M. W. I. 2. 244.
- Post**, *sb.* a messenger. Tp. II. 1. 248; Cor. V. 6. 50. *v.t.* to convey swiftly. Cym. II. 4. 27.
- Poster**, *sb.* a swift traveller. Mac. I. 3. 33.
- Postern**, *sb.* the small back-gate of a fortress. R. & J. V. 17; Two G. v. 2. 9.
- Post-post-haste**, *adv.* with the utmost speed. Oth. I. 3. 46.
- Poey**, *sb.* a motto on a ring. M. of V. V. 2. 148, 151; Ham. III. 2. 162.
- Pot**, To the pot = to certain destruction; a figure borrowed from the kitchen. Cor. I. 4. 47.
- Potable**, *adj.* drinkable. H. 4. IV. 5. 269.
- Potch**, *v.t.* to poke, thrust. Cor. I. 20. 15.
- Pothecary**, *sb.* apothecary. R. & J. V. 3. 289; Per. III. 2. 9.
- 'Other**, *sb.* turmoil. Cor. II. 1. 234; Lear, III. 2. 52.
- 'otting**, *sb.* drinking. Oth. II. 3. 79.
- 'ottle**, *sb.* a tankard; strictly, a measure of two quarts. M. W. II. 2. 223; III. 5. 30; Oth. II. 3. 87.
- 'ottle-deep**, *adj.* to the bottom of the tankard. Oth. II. 3. 56.
- 'oulter**, *sb.* poulterer. H. 4. II. 4. 480.
- Pouncet-box**, *sb.* a box for perfumes, pierced with holes. H. 4. I. 3. 38.
- Pow, wow**, Pooh, pooh! Cor. II. 2. 157.
- Powder**, *v.t.* to salt. H. 4. V. 4. 112; M. for M. III. 2. 62.
- Powdering-tub**, *sb.* salting-tub. A hot salt-water bath was used in the treatment of venereal disease. H. 5. II. 1. 79.
- Power**, *sb.* an armed force. John. III. 3. 70; IV. 2. 110; Cor. I. 2. 32.
- Practic**, *adj.* practical. H. 5. I. 1. 51.
- Practice**, *sb.* artifice, plot. M. A. IV. 2. 190; Tw. N. V. 1. 360; H. 5. II. 2. 90.
- Practisant**, *sb.* accomplice in a plot. H. 6. III. 2. 20.
- Practise**, *v.t.* to plot, use stratagems. As. I. 1. 125; Oth. I. 2. 73.
- Praise**, *v.t.* to appraise. Tw. N. I. 5. 268.
- Frank**, *v.t.* to deck, dress. Tw. N. II. 4. 89; W. T. IV. 4. 10.
- Pray in aid**. To call in to help; a legal term. A. & C. V. 2. 27.
- Precedent**, *sb.* the rough draft of a document. John. V. 2. 3; R. 3. III. 6. 7. Prognostic, indication. V. & A. 26. *adj.* former. T. of A. I. 1. 133; Ham. III. 4. 98.
- Precept**, *sb.* a warrant, summons. H. 4. V. 2. 14; H. 5. III. 3. 26.
- Preceptial**, *adj.* consisting of precepts. M. A. V. 1. 24.
- reulously**, *adv.* carefully, in business of importance. Tp. I. 2. 141.
- Precipitate**, *v.t.* to fall headlong. Lear, IV. 6. 50.
- Precipitation**, *sb.* precipitousness. Cor. III. 2. 4.
- Precurser**, *sb.* forerunner. Phon. 6.
- Predict**, *sb.* prediction. Sonn. XIV. 2.
- Predominate**, *v.t.* to overpower. Tim. IV. 3. 222.
- Freien**, *v.t.* to promote, advance. Two G. II. 4. 257; E. 3. IV. 2. 22. To recommend. Cym. II. 3. 51.
- Present**, *offer*. M. N's Dr. IV. 2. 39; J. C. III. 1. 22.
- Pregnancy**, *sb.* readiness of wit. H. 4. I. 2. 192.
- Pregnant**, *adj.* ready-witted, clever. M. for M. I. 2. 12; Tw. N. II. 2. 29. Full of meaning. Ham. II. 2. 212. Ready. Ham. III. 2. 46; Lear, IV. 6. 227. Plain, evident. M. for M. II. 1. 23; Oth. II. 1. 239.
- Premised**, *p.p.* sent before the time. H. 6. V. 2. 41.
- Prenominate**, *v.t.* to name beforehand. T. & C. IV. 5. 250. *p.p.* aforesaid. Ham. II. 2. 43.
- Prensis**, *adj.* demure, grim. M. for M. III. 2. 94. 97.

- J. C. III. 2. 34.  
 Prepare, *sb.* preparation. 3 H 6. IV. 1. 131.  
 Preposterous, blunder for 'prosperous.' W. T. V. 2. 159.  
 Prescript, *sb.* direction, order. Ham. II. 3. 142; A. & C. III. 2. 5. *adj.* prescriptive. H 3. III. 7. 49.  
 Prescription, *sb.* order, direction. H 8. I. 2. 151.  
 Presence, *sb.* personal appearance or dignity. John. I. 2. 137; II. 2. 367. Presence-chamber. R. 2. I. 3. 289; R. & J. V. 3. 86.  
 Present, *sb.* the present time. Tp. I. 2. 25; Mac. I. 5. 58. Present store. Tw. N. III. 4. 380. *v.t.* to represent. M. A. III. 3. 79. To act the part of. Tp. IV. 1. 167; M. W. IV. 6. 20.  
 Presentation, *sb.* semblance. As. V. 4. 112; R 3. IV. 4. 84.  
 Presently, *adv.* immediately. Tp. I. 2. 125; J. C. III. 1. 28.  
 Presentment, *sb.* presentation. Tim. I. 1. 27. Representation. Ham. III. 4. 54.  
 Press, *sb.* a commission for pressing soldiers. 1 H 4. IV. 2. 13. A crowd. J. C. I. 2. 15. *v.t.* to force into military service. R. 2. III. 2. 58; 1 H 4. IV. 2. 16.  
 Press-money, *sb.* money given to soldiers on being pressed into the service. Lear. IV. 6. 87.  
 Pressure, *sb.* impression. Ham. I. 5. 100; III. 2. 27.  
 Press, *adj.* ready. M. of V. I. 1. 160; Per. IV. prol. 45.  
 Prester John. A fabulous eastern king. M. A. II. 1. 276.  
 Presupposed, *p.p.* imposed or suggested beforehand. Tw. N. V. 1. 358.  
 Presumise, *sb.* supposition previously entertained. 2 H 4. I. 2. 168.  
 Pretence, *sb.* intention. Two G. III. 1. 47; Cor. I. 2. 20.  
 Pretend, *v.t.* to intend. Two G. II. 6. 37; Mac. II. 4. 24.  
 Pretty, *adj.* used of time, like fair, tolerable. Lucr. 1233; R. & J. I. 3. 10.  
 Prevail, *v.t.* to avail. R. & J. III. 3. 60; H 3. III. 2. 16.  
 Prevailment, *sb.* influence. M. N's Dr. I. 1. 35.  
 Prevent, *v.t.* to anticipate. M. of V. I. 1. 61; Ham. II. 2. 305.  
 Preyful, *adj.* rich in prey. L. L. L. IV. 2. 58.  
 Prick, *sb.* a point on a dial. Lucr. 781; 3 H 6. I. 4. 34. The bull's eye of a target. L. L. L. IV. 2. 134. A prick. Tp. II. 2. 21; As. III. 2. 118. A shower. Lear. II. 3. 16.  
 Prick, *v.t.* to mark. 2 H 4. II. 4. 359; J. C. III. 2. 282. To stick. T. of S. III. 2. 70.  
 Prick, *sb.* a buck of the second year. L. L. L. IV. 2. 20.  
 Prick-song, *sb.* music sung from notes. R. & J. II. 4. 21.  
 Prick, *sb.* lust. Lucr. 438; Sonn. CXLIV. 8; Oth. III. 3. 104.  
 Prick, *sb.* a sting. W. T. IV. 2. 108.  
 Primal, *adj.* first, earliest. Ham. III. 3. 37; A. & C. 2. 41.  
 Prime, *adj.* principal, chief. Tp. I. 2. 72, 425.  
 Lucr. 339; Sonn. XLVII. 7.  
 Primer, *adj.* more important. H 8. I. 2. 67.  
 Primero, *sb.* a game at cards. M. W. IV. 5. 104; H 8. V. 1. 7.  
 Prime, *adj.* rarest. H 8. II. 4. 209.  
 Prime, *adj.* early, belonging to the spring. Ham. I. 3. 7.  
 Prince. To prince it = to play the prince. Cym. III. 3. 85.  
 Principally, *sb.* a being of the highest order. Two G. II. 4. 152.  
 Principals, *sb.* the main timbers in the roof of a building. Per. III. 2. 16.  
 Prince, *sb.* a saucy fellow. R. & J. I. 5. 88.  
 Print. In print = in perfect order, with exactness. As. V. 4. 94; Two G. II. 2. 175; L. L. L. III. 1. 173.  
 Printless, *adj.* leaving no trace. Tp. V. 2. 34.  
 Prison, *sb.* prison, gaol. As. II. 3. 8.  
 Prisonment, *sb.* imprisonment. John. III. 4. 161.  
 Privacy, *sb.* retirement. T. & C. III. 3. 100.  
 Private, *sb.* privacy. Tw. N. III. 4. 100. Private communication. John. IV. 3. 16.  
 Privilege, *v.t.* to invest with a privilege, give immunity to. R. 2. I. 2. 120; C. of R. V. 1. 95; Lucr. 601.  
 Prize, *sb.* a contest for a prize. M. of V. III. 2. 142; T. A. I. 1. 309. Privilege, 3 H 6. I. 4. 59; II. 1. 20. My prize = the winning of me. Cym. III. 6. 77. To make prize = to capture. R 3. III. 3. 187; A. & C. V. 2. 183.  
 Prized, *p.p.* estimated, rated. M. A. III. 2. 90; Tim. I. 1. 171.  
 Probal, *adj.* probable, reasonable. Oth. II. 3. 344.  
 Probation, *sb.* proof. M. for M. V. 1. 152; Oth. III. 3. 365. Trial, examination. Tw. N. II. 5. 142.  
 Process, *sb.* a story, narrative. R 3. IV. 3. 32; Ham. I. 5. 37; M. of V. IV. 1. 274. Course of law. Cor. III. 1. 314. Mandate, summons. Ham. IV. 3. 65; A. & C. I. 2. 28.  
 Procreant, *adj.* producing offspring. Mac. I. 6. 8.  
 Procurator, *sb.* a proxy. 2 H 6. I. 1. 3.  
 Procure, *v.t.* to cause (to come). R. & J. III. 5. 68. To play the procurer. M. for M. III. 2. 58.  
 Prodigious, *adj.* monstrous, portentous. M. N's Dr. V. 1. 419; John. III. 2. 45.  
 Prodigious, *adv.* portentously. John. III. 2. 51.  
 Proditor, *sb.* traitor. 2 H 6. I. 2. 31.  
 Proface, *int.* much good may it do you. 2 H 4. V. 3. 70.  
 Professed, *p.p.* that have made professions. Lear. I. 2. 275.  
 Progeny, *sb.* race, ancestry. 2 H 6. V. 4. 38; Cor. I. 2. 12. Decent. 2 H 6. III. 5. 62.  
 Progress, *sb.* a royal ceremonial journey. 2 H 6. I. 4. 76; Ham. IV. 3. 33. *v.t.* to go as in procession. John. V. 2. 45.  
*v.t.* to shape, define. A. & C. V. 2. 121.  
*sb.* plan. H 3. II. 4. 29.  
*adj.* tedious, causing delay. M. for M. II. 4. 162.



- Prologue, *v.t.* to preface. A. W. II. 1. 95.  
 Prolonged, *p.p.* deferred. M. A. IV. 1. 256;  
 B. 3. III. 4. 47.  
 Prompture, *sb.* prompting. M. for M. II. 4. 178.  
 Proof, *sb.* armour which has been tried and  
 proved impenetrable. B. 3. V. 3. 219; Mac.  
 I. s. 54. Resisting power, impenetrability.  
 B. s. I. 3. 73.  
 Propagate, *v.t.* to augment, improve. Tim. I.  
 1. 67.  
 Propagation, *sb.* augmentation. M. for M. I. 2.  
 154.  
 Propend, *v.t.* to incline. T. & C. II. 2. 190.  
 Propension, *sb.* inclination. T. & C. II. 2. 133.  
 Proper, *adj.* one's own. Tp. III. 3. 60; M. for M.  
 III. 1. 30. Handsome. Tp. II. 2. 63; John, I.  
 1. 250.  
 Proper-false, *adj.* handsome and deceitful.  
 Tw. N. II. 2. 30.  
 Properly, *adv.* peculiarly, as one's own posses-  
 sion. W. T. II. 1. 170; Cor. V. 2. 90.  
 Properly, *adj.* endowed with qualities. A. &  
 C. V. s. 83.  
 Properties, *sb.* the requisites of a play, except  
 the scenery and dresses. M. N's Dr. I.  
 108; M. W. IV. 4. 78.  
 Property, *sb.* a mere appendage or instrument.  
 M. W. III. 4. 10; J. C. IV. 1. 40. In Ham. II.  
 2. 97 it means either 'own person' or 'kingly  
 right'. *v.t.* to make a tool of. John, V. 2. 79;  
 Tw. N. IV. 2. 95.  
 Propontic, *sb.* the Sea of Marmora. Oth. III. 3.  
 456.  
 Proportions, *sb.* necessary number of troops.  
 H. 5. I. 2. 137, 304; Ham. I. 2. 33.  
 Propose, *v.t.* to converse, speak. M. A. III. 1.  
 3; Oth. I. 1. 25.  
 Proposer, *sb.* speaker, orator. Ham. II. 2. 297.  
 Propugnation, *sb.* means of resistance, defence.  
 T. & C. II. 2. 126.  
 Protrude, *v.t.* to delay. B. & J. II. 2. 78; IV. 1.  
 48. To protract. Per. V. 1. 26. To hinder  
 from exertion. A. & C. II. 1. 26.  
 Protest, *v.t.* to proclaim, display publicly. Mac.  
 V. 2. 11; M. A. V. 1. 140.  
 Protractive, *adj.* protracted. T. & C. I. 3. 20.  
 Provand, *sb.* provender, provisions. Cor. II. 1.  
 267.  
 Provincial, *adj.* belonging to an ecclesiastical  
 province. M. for M. V. 1. 318. 'Provincial  
 roses' are roses of Provins or Provence.  
 Ham. III. 2. 200.  
 Provision, *sb.* foresight. Tp. I. 2. 28.  
 Provokes, *v.t.* to urge, impel. H. 6. V. 5. 6.  
 Provoking, *pr.p.* investigating. Lear, III. 5. 2.  
 Prune, *v.t.* to trim and dress the feathers, as a  
 hawk does with its bill. Cym. V. 4. 118. *v.r.*  
 1. H. 4. I. 1. 98.  
 Puddle, *v.t.* to render turbid. Oth. III. 4. 243.  
 Pudency, *sb.* modesty. Cym. II. 5. 11.  
 Pugging, *adj.* thievish. W. T. IV. 3. 7.  
 Pulary, *adj.* unsifted: like a novice. As. III.  
 4. 60.  
 Pulisance, *sb.* strength. H. 5. III. chor. 2. An  
 armed force. John, III. 1. 130.  
 Pulisant, *adj.* powerful. B. 3. IV. 4. 434; Lear,  
 V. 3. 218.  
 Pulse, *v.t.* to vent. As. II. 7. 244.  
 Pulse-stocking. Pulse appears to have been a  
 dark grey, between russet and black. 1. H. 4.  
 II. 4. 78.  
 Pulpiter, *sb.* preacher: a conjectural reading in  
 As. III. 2. 163.  
 Pulsidge, blunder for 'pulse.' 1. H. 4. II. 4. 25.  
 un, *v.t.* to pound. T. & C. II. 1. 42.  
 unk, *sb.* a strumpet. M. W. II. 2. 141; M. for  
 M. V. 1. 179.  
 Punto, *sb.* 2 strokes or thrust in fencing. M. W.  
 II. 3. 24. Punto reverso, a back-handed stroke.  
 B. & J. II. 4. 27.  
 Purchase, *v.t.* to acquire, get. M. of V. II. 9.  
 43; 1. H. 4. IV. 5. 200; A. & C. I. 4. 14. *sb.*  
 acquisition, booty. 1. H. 4. II. 2. 101; H. 3. III.  
 2. 45; B. 3. III. 7. 187.  
 Purl, *v.t.* to curl. Lear, 1407.  
 urples, the purple orchis, *Orethys mascula*.  
 Ham. IV. 7. 171.  
 Pursuivant, *sb.* a messenger or attendant upon  
 a herald. 1. H. 6. II. 3. 5; B. 3. III. 4. 90.  
 Push, *int.* pish! a contemptuous exclamation.  
 M. A. V. 1. 38; Tim. III. 6. 119.  
 Push-pin, *sb.* a childish game. L. I. I. IV. 3.  
 169.  
 Put, *v.t.* to make, in the phrases 'put to know,'  
 M. for M. I. 1. 5; 'put to speak,' 1. H. 6. III.  
 1. 43; Cym. II. 3. 110.  
 Put in, to intercede. M. for M. I. 2. 103. To  
 put forward a claim. Tim. III. 4. 85.  
 Put on, to instigate. M. for M. IV. 2. 120;  
 Ham. III. 1. 2; V. 2. 394. To impose, lay to  
 one's charge. Ham. II. 1. 19.  
 Put on, or upon, to communicate, impart. Ham.  
 I. 3. 94; As. I. 2. 99; Tw. N. V. 1. 70.  
 Putter on, *sb.* instigator. W. T. II. 2. 142.  
 Putter-out, *sb.* one who puts out money at  
 interest. Tp. III. 3. 48.  
 Putting on, *sb.* instigation. Cor. II. 3. 260.  
 Puttock, *sb.* a kite. 3. H. 6. III. 2. 191; T. & C.  
 V. 1. 68.  
*sb.* a drab. 1. H. 6. I. 4. 107.  
*sb.* a pyramid. 1. H. 6. I. 6. 21. 32.  
 108, A. & C. II. 7. 40; pyramides,  
 A. & C. V. s. 61.  
 Quail, *v.t.* to overpower, quell. A. & C. V. s.  
 25. *v.t.* to faint, fail, slacken. As. II. s. 20;  
 Cym. V. 2. 120. *sb.* a cant word for a prostitu-  
 tute. T. & C. V. 1. 57.  
 Quaint, *adj.* fine, delicate, dainty, ingenious.  
 Tp. I. 2. 317; M. N's Dr. II. 2. 99; II. 2. 7;  
 1. H. 6. III. s. 274.  
 Quaintly, *adv.* ingeniously, delicately. Two G.  
 III. 1. 117; Ham. II. 2. 31.  
 Quaked, *p.p.* shaken, made to shudder. Cor. I.  
 9. 6.  
 Qualification, *sb.* appointment. Oth. II. 1. 26.  
 Quality, *v.t.* to moderate, soften, abate. M. for  
 M. I. 2. 66; IV. 2. 86; John, V. 1. 175; Lear,  
 I. s. 176.  
 Quality, *sb.* a profession, calling, especially the  
 profession of an actor. Two G. IV. 2. 11.  
 Ham. II. s. 363, 420. Professional skill. As.  
 I. s. 103.  
 Quantify, *sb.* a small portion. John, V. s. 97.  
 1. H. 4. V. 2. 70.

- proportion. *M. N's Dr.* I. 1. 39; *Ham.* III. 2. 177.
- Quarrel, *sb.* a cause of dispute. *R. a. I.* 3. 33.
- Quarrelsome, *adj.* quarrelsome. *Cym.* III. 4. 16a.
- Quarry, *sb.* a heap of slaughtered game. *Cor. I.* 1. 202; *Ham.* IV. 3. 206; *V.* 2. 375.
- Quart d'ecu. A quarter of a French crown. *A. W.* IV. 3. 31; *V.* 2. 35.
- Quarter, *sb.* position, station. *John.* V. 3. 80; *Tim.* V. 4. 6a. To keep fair quarter = to keep on good terms with. *U. of E.* II. 1. 108. In quarter = on good terms. *Oth.* II. 3. 180.
- Quartered, *adj.* belonging to the quarters of an army. *Cym.* IV. 4. 18.
- Quat, *sb.* a pimple. *Oth.* V. 1. 11.
- Quatch-buttock. A squat or flat buttock. *A. W.* II. 2. 18.
- Quean, *sb.* a wench, hussey. *M. W.* IV. 2. 180; *H. 4.* II. 2. 51.
- Queasiness, *sb.* nausea, disgust. *H. 4.* I. 1. 106.
- Queasy, *adj.* queamish, fastidious, excessively delicate. *M. A.* II. 1. 399; *Lear.* II. 1. 19. Disgusted. *A. & C.* III. 6. 80.
- Queen. To queen it = to play the queen. *W. T.* IV. 4. 460; *H. 8.* II. 3. 37.
- Quell, *sb.* murder. *Mac.* I. 7. 72.
- Quench, *v.t.* to grow cool. *Cym.* I. 5. 47.
- Quenchless, *adj.* unquenchable. *H. 6.* I. 4. 28; *Lucr.* 1554.
- Quern, *sb.* a handmill. *M. N's Dr.* II. 1. 36.
- Quest, *sb.* search, enquiry, pursuit. *M.* for *M.* IV. 1. 62; *M. of V.* I. 1. 172. Inquest, jury. *R. 3.* I. 4. 189; *Ham.* V. 2. 24. A body of searchers. *Oth.* I. 2. 46.
- Questant, *sb.* a seeker, aspirant. *A. W.* II. 1. 16.
- Question, *sb.* conversation. *As.* III. 4. 39; *V.* 4. 167. Subject of discussion. *M.* for *M.* II. 4. 90. To cry out on the top of question is to speak in a high key, dominating conversation, or louder than the occasion requires. *Ham.* II. 2. 356.
- Questionable, *adj.* inviting question or conversation. *Ham.* I. 4. 43.
- Questionless, *adv.* doubtless. *M. of V.* I. 1. 176; *Per.* V. 1. 45.
- Questrist, *sb.* searcher. *Lear.* III. 7. 17.
- Quick, *adj.* alive, living. *M. W.* III. 4. 90.
- Quick-witted, lively. *H. 4.* IV. 3. 107; *A. & C.* V. 2. 216. Pregnant. *L. L. L.* V. 2. 682.
- Quick, *v.t.* to make alive. *Per.* IV. 1. 28.
- Quicken, *v.t.* to refresh, revive. *M.* for *V.* II. 8. 24. *v.t.* to become alive, revive. *Lear.* III. 7. 39; *A. & C.* IV. 15. 39.
- Quib, *sb.* a subtlety, cavil. *H. 4.* I. 52; *Ham.* V. 1. 107.
- Quintess, *sb.* the settlement of an account. *Ham.* III. 2. 92; *Sonn.* GXXVI. 12.
- Quill, *in the.* Perhaps, in due form and order; a doubtful phrase. *H. 6.* I. 3. 4.
- Quibbles, *sb.* a noisy, legal quibble. *Ham.* V. 1. 102; *Tim.* IV. 3. 155.
- Quilt, *sb.* a flock bed. *H. 4.* IV. 2. 54.
- Quintess, *sb.* a figure set up for tilting at in country games. *As.* I. 2. 263.
- Quip, *sb.* a sharp jest, repartee. *Two G.* IV. 2. 101; *H. 4.* I. 2. 52.
- to sing in concert. *M. of V.* V. 1. 6a; *Cor.* III. 2. 113.
- Quit, *v.t.* to acquit. *A. W.* V. 3. 300. To requite. *R. a. V.* 1. 43; *Ham.* V. 2. 64. To remit. *C. of E.* I. 1. 23. To set free. *T. W. N.* V. 1. 329. *v.t.* to acquit oneself. *Lear.* II. 1. 32. *p.p.* quitted. *Tim.* I. 2. 148.
- Quit, *adj.* free, safe. *H. 4.* III. 2. 255.
- Quital, *sb.* requital. *Lucr.* 106.
- Quittance, *sb.* acquittance. *M. W.* I. 1. 10.
- Requital, *s. H. 4.* I. 1. 108; *H. 5.* II. 2. 34. *v.t.* to requite. *H. 6.* II. 1. 14.
- Quiver, *adj.* nimble. *H. 4.* III. 2. 301.
- Quoif, *sb.* a cap. *W. T.* IV. 4. 226; *H. 4.* I. 1. 147.
- Quoit, *v.t.* to throw like a quib. *H. 4.* II. 4. 206.
- Quote, *v.t.* to note, observe, examine. *T. & C.* IV. 2. 233; *Ham.* II. 1. 112; *T. A.* IV. 1. 90.
- Quotidian, *sb.* a fever of which the paroxysms return every day. *As.* III. 2. 363.
- Rabato, *sb.* a kind of ruff. *M. A.* III. 4. 6.
- Rabbit-sucker, *sb.* a sucking rabbit. *H. 4.* II. 4. 480.
- Rabblement, *sb.* rabble. *J. C. I.* 2. 245.
- Race, *sb.* a root. *W. T.* IV. 3. 90. Nature, disposition. *Ap.* I. 2. 358; *M.* for *M.* II. 4. 160.
- Breed. *A. & C.* I. 3. 37. *Mac.* II. 4. 15.
- Rack, *v.t.* to stretch, strain. *M. A.* IV. 1. 200; *M. of V.* I. 2. 181. *v.t.* to strain to the utmost. *Cor.* V. 2. 16.
- Rack, *sb.* a cloud or mass of clouds. *Ap.* IV. 1. 156; *Ham.* II. 2. 506; *A. & C.* IV. 14. 10; *Sonn.* XXXIII. 6. *v.t.* to move like vapour. *H. 6.* II. 1. 27.
- Rag, *sb.* a term of contempt for a beggarly person. *T. of S.* IV. 3. 112; *Tim.* IV. 3. 271.
- Raged, *p.p.* chafed, enraged. *R. a.* II. 2. 173.
- Ragged, *adj.* rugged, rough. *R. a.* V. 5. 21; *H. 4.* Ind. 35; *As.* II. 5. 15.
- Raging-wood, *adj.* raving mad. *H. 6.* IV. 7. 35.
- Rake up. To cover. *Lear.* IV. 6. 281.
- Ramp, *sb.* a wanton wench. *Cym.* I. 6. 134.
- Rampallian, *sb.* a term of abuse. *H. 4.* II. 1. 65.
- Ramping, *adj.* tearing, pawing. *H. 4.* III. 1. 153; *H. 6.* V. 2. 13. Rampant. *John.* III. 2. 122.
- Rampired, *adj.* barricaded. *Tim.* V. 4. 47.
- Rang, *v.t.* to stand in order. *Cor.* III. 1. 206.
- Ranged, *p.p.* orderly disposed. *A. & C.* I. 1. 34.
- Ranks, *sb.* ranks. *A. & C.* III. 13. 5.
- Rank, *sb.* a row. *As.* IV. 2. 80. Perhaps for rack, an smiling pace. *As.* III. 2. 103. *adj.* exuberant, excessive. *H. 3.* V. 2. 90; *Ham.* III. 4. 124; *IV.* 4. 22. *Lucr.* *M.* of *V.* I. 2. 81; *Cym.* II. 2. 24. Foul. *Ham.* III. 2. 50. *adv.* abundantly, excessively. *M. W.* IV. 6. 22; *T. & C.* I. 3. 106.
- Rankle, *v.t.* to envenom. *R. a.* I. 2. 302; *R. 3.* I. 2. 291.
- Rankly, *adv.* grossly. *Ham.* I. 2. 24.
- Rank, *sb.* exuberance. *John.* V. 4. 24; *H. 4.* IV. 2. 59. Insolence. *As.* I. 2. 92.



- Refigure, *v.t.* to represent. Sonn. VI. 10.  
 Reflex, *v.t.* to reflect. 1 H 6. v. 4. 87; *sb.* reflection, reflected light. R. & J. III. 5. 20.  
 Reform, blunder for 'inform.' M. A. V. 1. 262.  
 Refrain, *v.t.* to keep in check. 1 H 6. II. 2. 110.  
 Rest, *imp.* & *p.p.* bereaved. M. A. IV. 2. 198; Cym. III. 3. 103.  
 Refuge, *v.t.* to screen, palliate. R. 2. v. 5. 26.  
 Refuse, *v.t.* to reject, disown. M. A. IV. 1. 186; R. & J. II. 2. 34.  
 Regard, *sb.* look. M. for M. V. 1. 20; Tw. N. II. 5. 59. Consideration. Ham. II. 2. 79; III. 1. 87.  
 Regardfully, *adv.* respectfully. Tim. IV. 3. 81.  
 Regenerate, *p.p.* born anew. R. 2. I. 3. 70.  
 Regiment, *sb.* rule, authority. A. & C. III. 6. 95.  
 Region, *sb.* the sky, air. Ham. II. 2. 509; R. & J. II. 2. 21. Used as an adjective. Ham. II. 2. 607; Sonn. XXXIII. 12.  
 Regreet, *sb.* greeting, situation. M. of V. II. 9. 89; John. III. 1. 241.  
 Regreet, *v.t.* to greet again. R. 2. L. 3. 142. To salute. R. 2. L. 3. 67.  
 Reguerdon, *sb.* guerdon, reward. 1 H 6. III. 1. 170. *v.t.* to reward. 1 H 6. III. 4. 23.  
 Rehearse, *v.t.* to recite. M. N's Dr. V. 1. 404. To pronounce. R. 2. V. 3. 128.  
 Rein, *v.t.* to answer to the rein. Tw. N. III. 4. 358.  
 Rejoindure, *sb.* joining again. T. & C. IV. 4. 38.  
 Rejour, *v.t.* to adjourn. Cor. II. 1. 79.  
 Relapse, *sb.* rebound. H. 5. IV. 3. 107. A relapse of mortality is a deadly rebound.  
 Relation, *sb.* narrative. Tp. V. 1. 164; Per. V. 1. 124. The bearing of one event upon another. Mac. III. 4. 124.  
 Relative, *adj.* applicable, to the purpose. Ham. II. 2. 633.  
 Relenting, *adj.* pitiful, compassionate. 2 H 6. III. 1. 227; R. 3. IV. 4. 431.  
 Relish, *sb.* smack, flavour. Mac. IV. 3. 95; Ham. III. 3. 92.  
 Relume, *v.t.* to rekindle, light again. Oth. V. 2. 13.  
 Remain, *v.t.* to dwell. Tp. I. 2. 423; As. III. 2. 235. *sb.* stay. Cor. I. 4. 62. What is left. Cym. III. 1. 87.  
 Remains, used adjectively. As. II. 7. 39; T. & C. II. 2. 70.  
 Remarkable, *adj.* conspicuous. A. & C. IV. 15. 67; Cym. IV. 1. 14.  
 Remediate, *adj.* remedial, restorative. Lear, IV. 4. 57.  
 Remember, *v.t.* to mention. Tp. I. 2. 405; 2 H 4. V. 2. 122. To remind. John. III. 4. 96; R. 2. I. 3. 269. *v.r.* to call to mind past sins. Lear, IV. 6. 233.  
 Remembered, *p.p.* to be remembered = to remember. M. for M. II. 1. 110; R. 3. II. 4. 53.  
 Remiss, *adj.* careless, indifferent. Ham. IV. 7. 12.  
 Remorseful, *adj.* tender-hearted. Two G. IV. 3. 13; R. 3. I. 2. 156.  
 Remotion, *sb.* removal. Tim. IV. 3. 346; Lear, II. 4. 115.  
 Remove, *sb.* the raising of a siege. Cor. I. 2. 28.  
 Removed, *adj.* retired, sequestered. Ham. I. 4. 67; M. for M. I. 3. 8; As. III. 2. 250.  
 Removedness, *sb.* retirement. W. T. IV. 2. 41.  
 Removes, *sb.* stages of a journey. A. W. V. 3. 131.  
 Render, *sb.* an account. Tim. V. 1. 152; Cym. IV. 4. 11. *v.t.* to report. As. IV. 3. 123; 2 H 4. I. 1. 27.  
 Renegade, *sb.* renegade, apostate. Tw. N. III. 1.  
 Renege, *v.t.* to deny, disown. Lear, II. 2. 84; A. & C. I. 1. 8.  
 Renouncement, *sb.* giving up the world. M. for M. I. 4. 35.  
 Renown, *sb.* to make famous. Tw. N. III. 3. 24; H. 5. I. 2. 118.  
 Rent, *v.t.* to rend. M. N's Dr. III. 2. 215; Mac. IV. 3. 168.  
 Renying, *sb.* denying. Pass. P. 250.  
 Repair, *sb.* restoration, renovation. John. III. 4. 113. Resort. Ham. V. 2. 228. *v.t.* to betake oneself, come. L. L. L. V. 2. 292; Tim. III. 4. 69.  
 Repast, *v.t.* to feed. Ham. IV. 5. 147.  
 Repasture, *sb.* food. L. L. L. IV. 1. 95.  
 Repeal, *sb.* recall from exile. Cor. IV. 1. 47; J. C. III. 1. 54. *v.t.* to recall. Two G. v. 4. 143; Cor. V. 5. 5. To revoke. R. 2. III. 3. 40.  
 Repeating, *sb.* recall. J. C. III. 1. 51.  
 Repine, *sb.* repining, sadness. V. & A. 490.  
 Replenished, *adj.* accomplished, complete. W. T. II. 1. 79; R. 3. IV. 3. 18.  
 Replication, *sb.* reversion, echo. J. C. I. 1. 51. Reply. Ham. IV. 2. 13.  
 Report, *sb.* reputation, fame. M. for M. II. 3. 12; M. A. III. 1. 97. *v.r.* to report themselves = to represent what the artist intended. Cym. II. 4. 83.  
 Reportingly, *adv.* by report. M. A. III. 2. 116.  
 Reports, *sb.* reporters; abstract for concrete. A. & C. II. 2. 47.  
 Reposal, *sb.* the act of reposing. Lear, II. 1. 70.  
 Reprehend, blunder for 'represent.' L. L. L. I. 1. 184.  
 Reprisal, *sb.* prize. 1 H 4. IV. 1. 118.  
 Reproof, *sb.* disproof, refutation. 1 H 4. I. 2. 213; Cor. II. 2. 37.  
 Prove, *v.t.* to disprove, refute. M. A. II. 3. 241; 2 H 6. III. 1. 40.  
 Repugn, *v.t.* to oppose. 1 H 6. IV. 1. 94.  
 Repugnancy, *sb.* opposition. Tim. III. 5. 45.  
 Repugnant, *adj.* refusing obedience. Ham. II. 2. 49.  
 Refined, *p.p.* refined. T. & C. III. 2. 23.  
 Reputable, *adj.* inglorious. 1 H 4. III. 2. 44.  
 Reputing, *pr.p.* holding in esteem, valuing highly. 2 H 6. III. 1. 42.  
 Requicken, *v.t.* to revive. Cor. II. 2. 121.  
 Require, *v.t.* to ask. Cor. II. 2. 160; A. & C. III. 2. 12.  
 Requit, *p.p.* requited. Tp. III. 3. 71.  
 Rere-mice, *sb.* bats. M. N's Dr. II. 2. 4.

- Resemblance**, *sb.* probability, likelihood. *M.* for *M.* IV. 2. 203.
- Reserve**, *v.t.* to guard, preserve. *Ham.* III. 4. 75; *Oth.* III. 3. 295; *Per.* IV. 1. 40.
- Resolute**, *sb.* desperadoes. *Ham.* I. 1. 98.
- Resolution**, *sb.* certainty, assurance. *Lear.* I. 2. 108.
- Resolve**, *v.t.* & *i.* to dissolve. *Tim.* IV. 3. 442; *Ham.* I. 2. 130; *John.* V. 4. 25. To solve. *Per.* I. 1. 71. To satisfy. *TP.* V. 1. 248; *J. C.* III. 1. 131; *Lear.* II. 4. 25. To set at rest, free from doubt. *M.* for *M.* IV. 2. 225; *John.* II. 1. 371.
- Resolvedly**, *adv.* certainly, clearly. *A. W.* V. 3. 332.
- Respeak**, *v.t.* to echo. *Ham.* I. 2. 128.
- Respect**, *sb.* consideration. *John.* III. 1. 318; *Ham.* III. 1. 68. *Esteem.* *J. C.* I. 2. 59; *V.* 4. 45; *T. & C.* V. 3. 73. *v.t.* to regard. *M.* for *M.* III. 1. 76; *J. C.* IV. 3. 69.
- Respected**, blunder for 'suspected'. *M.* for *M.* II. 1. 169, &c.
- Respective**, *adj.* showing regard or consideration. *John.* I. 1. 188; *R. & J.* III. 1. 128. Worthy of regard. *Two G.* IV. 4. 200. Careful. *M.* of *V.* 1. 156.
- Respectively**, *adv.* regardfully, respectfully. *Tim.* III. 1. 8.
- Respite**, *sb.* the determined respite of my wrongs = the fixed period to which the punishment of my wrong-doing has been postponed. *R.* 3. V. 1. 19.
- Responsive**, *adj.* corresponding, suitable. *Ham.* V. 2. 159.
- Rest**, *v.t.* to remain. 1 *H.* 6. 1. 3. 70; *Cor.* IV. 1. 39. *sb.* to set up one's rest is to stand upon the cards in one's hand, to be fully resolved. *M.* of *V.* II. 2. 110; *C.* of *E.* IV. 3. 27.
- Rest**, *v.t.* to arrest. *C.* of *E.* IV. 2. 49, 45; *IV.* 3. 25.
- Re-stem**, *v.t.* to trace backwards, as a vessel its course. *Oth.* I. 3. 37.
- Restful**, *adj.* peaceful, quiet. *R.* 2. IV. 1. 12; *Sonn.* LXVI. 1.
- Restrain**, *v.t.* to withhold, keep back. *R.* 3. V. 3. 322.
- Restrained**, *p.p.* drawn tight. *T.* of *S.* III. 2. 59.
- Resty**, *adj.* idle. *Sonn.* C. 9; *Cym.* III. 6. 34.
- Resume**, *v.t.* to take. *Tim.* II. 2. 4.
- Retailed**, *p.p.* related, reported. *R.* 3. III. 1. 77.
- Retention**, *sb.* the power of retaining. *Tw. N.* II. 4. 99; *Sonn.* CXXII. 9. **Restraint**. *Lear.* V. 3. 47.
- Retentive**, *adj.* restraining. *Tim.* III. 4. 82; *J. C.* I. 3. 95.
- Retire**, *sb.* retreat. *John.* II. 1. 326; *H.* 5. IV. 3. 86.
- Retire**, *v.t.* to withdraw. *R.* 2. II. 2. 46. *v.s.* to retreat. *John.* V. 3. 13.
- Return**, *v.t.* to make known to, inform. *R.* 2. I. 3. 122; *H.* 5. III. 3. 46; *Per.* II. 2. 4.
- Revenge**, *sb.* vengeance. 1 *H.* 4. III. 2. 7.
- Revengefully**, *adv.* vindictively. *Cym.* V. 2. 4.
- Reverb**, *v.t.* to resound. *Lear.* I. 1. 156.
- Reverberate**, *adj.* resounding. *Tw. N.* I. 5. 292.
- Reverse**, *sb.* a back-handed stroke in fencing. *M. W.* II. 3. 27.
- Revocation**, *sb.* repeal, revocation. *H.* 2. I. 2. 106.
- Revolt**, *sb.* a revolter, rebel. *John.* V. 2. 251; *V.* 4. 7; *Cym.* IV. 4. 6.
- Re-word**, *v.t.* to repeat in the same words. *Ham.* III. 4. 143. To echo. *Comp.* 2.
- Rheum**, *sb.* any disorder affecting the mucous membrane, such as a catarrh or cold. *M.* for *M.* III. 1. 31; *W. T.* IV. 4. 410; *T. & C.* V. 3. 102; *A. & C.* III. 2. 57. Used of tears. *John.* III. 1. 22; *Ham.* II. 2. 529. Saliva. *M.* of *V.* 1. 118. Discharge from the nostrils. *C.* of *E.* III. 2. 131.
- Rheumatic**, *adj.* affected or attended with rheum. *V.* & *A.* 135; *M. W.* III. 1. 47; *M. N's Dr.* II. 1. 105. Blunder for 'lunatic'. *H.* 5. II. 3. 40.
- Rheumy**, *adj.* causing rheum. *J. C.* II. 1. 266.
- Rialto**, *sb.* the Exchange of Venice. *M.* of *V.* I. 2. 20.
- Rib**, *v.t.* to enclose. *M.* of *V.* II. 7. 51; *Cym.* III. 1. 19.
- Ribald**, *adj.* ribald, lewd. *A. & C.* III. 10. 10.
- Riched**, *p.p.* enriched. *Lear.* I. 1. 65.
- Richly**, *adv.* with rich lading. *M.* of *V.* V. 1. 277.
- Rid**, *v.t.* to destroy, make away with. *TP.* I. 2. 364; *R.* 2. V. 4. 11. To annihilate. 3 *H.* 6. V. 3. 27.
- Rift**, *v.t.* & *i.* to split. *TP.* V. 1. 45; *W. T.* V. 1. 66. *sb.* a cleft. *TP.* I. 2. 277; *A. & C.* III. 4. 32.
- Rigish**, *adj.* wanton. *A. & C.* II. 2. 245.
- Right**, *adv.* just, exactly. *M. N's Dr.* IV. 2. 31; 2 *H.* 6. III. 2. 40.
- Right-drawn**, *adj.* drawn in a rightful cause. *R.* 2. I. 1. 46.
- Rightly**, *adv.* directly. *R.* 2. II. 2. 18.
- Rigol**, *sb.* a circle. 2 *H.* 4. IV. 3. 36; *Lear.* 1745.
- Rim**, *sb.* the midriff. *H.* 5. IV. 4. 15.
- Ring**, *v.t.* to encircle. *John.* III. 4. 31; 1 *H.* 6. IV. 4. 14. *sb.* a ring was the prize in running and wrestling matches. *T.* of *S.* I. 1. 145.
- Ringlet**, *sb.* a small ring. *TP.* V. 2. 37; *M. N's Dr.* II. 1. 86.
- Ring-time**, *sb.* the time of exchanging rings, of betrothal. *A.* 7. 3. 20.
- Riot**, *sb.* dissolute living, revelling. *M. N's Dr.* V. 1. 48; *R.* 2. II. 1. 33.
- Rioting**, *sb.* revelling. *A. & C.* II. 2. 72.
- Riotous**, *adj.* dissolute. *Tim.* II. 2. 168.
- Ripe**, *v.t.* to ripen. *John.* II. 1. 472; 2 *H.* 4. IV. 1. 13. *v.t.* to grow ripe. *M. N's Dr.* II. 2. 112; *A.* 11. 7. 26. *adj.* ready to be satisfied. *M.* of *V.* I. 3. 64. Ready for representation. *M. N's Dr.* V. 1. 42. Boasting ripe = ready to reel. *TP.* V. 1. 279.
- Ripely**, *adv.* urgently. *Cym.* III. 3. 22.
- Ripeness**, *sb.* readiness. *Lear.* V. 2. 11.
- Ripening**, *sb.* ripening. *M.* of *V.* II. 8. 40.
- Rivage**, *sb.* the shore. *H.* 5. III. 2. 14.
- Rival**, *sb.* partner, companion. *Ham.* I. 2. 131; *M. N's Dr.* III. 2. 156. *v.t.* to be a competitor. *Lear.* I. 1. 154.
- Rivalry**, *sb.* participation, partnership. *A. & C.* III. 5. 8.
- Rive**, *v.t.* to burst, discharge as if by bursting. 1 *H.* 6. IV. 2. 29.

- Bivelled**, *adj.* wrinkled. T. & C. V. 2. 36.  
**Bivo**, a Bacchanalian exclamation. H. 4. II. 4. 324.  
**Road**, *sb.* a journey. H. 8. IV. 2. 17. An in-road, incursion. H. 5. I. 2. 138; Cor. III. 2. 5. A roadstead, port. M. of V. I. 2. 39; V. 2. 268.  
**Rob**, *v.t.* to steal from, or perhaps to steal simply. Tp. II. 2. 113.  
**Robustious**, *adj.* rudely violent, rough. H. 5. III. 7. 151; Ham. III. 2. 10.  
**Rock**, *v.t.* to shake (of the hand). Lucr. 264.  
**Roguing**, *adj.* vagrant. Per. IV. 2. 97.  
**Roguish**, *adj.* vagrant. Lear, III. 7. 104.  
**Roistering**, *adj.* roistering, blustering. T. & C. II. 2. 202.  
**Romage**, *sb.* bustle, turmoil. Ham. I. 2. 107.  
**Romish**, *adj.* Roman. Cym. I. 6. 152.  
**Rondure**, *sb.* circle, compass. Sonn. XXI. 8.  
**Ronyon**, *sb.* a scurvy wretch. Mac. I. 3. 6; M. W. IV. 2. 195.  
**Rood**, *sb.* a crucifix. Ham. III. 4. 14; R. 3. III. 2. 77.  
**Rooted**, *p.p.* under the same roof. Mac. III. 4. 40.  
**Rook**, *v.r.* to squat, cower. 3 H. 6. V. 6. 47.  
**Rooky**, *adj.* misty, gloomy. Mac. III. 2. 51. According to some, frequented by rooks.  
**Rogery**, *sb.* rogues, knavery. R. & J. II. 4. 154.  
**Rope-tricks**, *sb.* knavish tricks. T. of S. I. 2. 112.  
**Roping**, *p.p.* dripping. H. 5. III. 5. 23.  
**Rosed**, *p.p.* crimsoned. H. 5. V. 2. 323. **Rousy**. T. A. II. 4. 24.  
**Roted**, *p.p.* learned by heart. Cor. III. 2. 55.  
**Rother**, *sb.* a horned beast. Tim. IV. 3. 12.  
**Round**, *v.t.* to become round, grow big. W. T. II. 2. 16. *v.t.* to surround. M. N. Dr. IV. 1. 56; E. 2. III. 2. 161. To finish off. Tp. IV. 2. 126. To whisper. Pam. P. 349; John, II. 2. 566. *sb.* a circle. Mac. I. 5. 29; IV. 1. 130. *adj.* straightforward, direct, plain-spoken. Oth. I. 3. 90; Ham. III. 2. 191. *adv.* straightforwardly, directly. Ham. II. 2. 130.  
**Roundel**, *sb.* a dance in a circle. M. N. Dr. II.  
**Roundly**, *adv.* directly, without hesitation or reserve. As. V. 3. 11; R. 2. II. 2. 122.  
**Roundure**, *sb.* circuit, enclosure. John, II. 2. 259.  
**Rouse**, *sb.* a deep draught, bumper. Ham. I. 2. 127; I. 4. 8; II. 1. 58; Oth. II. 3. 66.  
**Rout**, *sb.* a crowd, mob. C. of E. III. 1. 107; J. C. I. 2. 76; 2 H. 4. IV. 2. 9. Uproar, brawl. Oth. II. 3. 222. Disorderly flight. 3 H. 6. V. 2. 31; Cym. V. 3. 41.  
**Rov**, *sb.* a verge or piazza. Ham. II. 2. 438.  
**Royal**, *sb.* a gold coin, worth 10s., referred to in R. 2. V. 3. 67; 1 H. 4. I. 2. 137; II. 4. 322; 2 H. 4. I. 2. 68.  
**Royally**, *v.t.* to make royal. R. 3. I. 3. 125.  
**Roughish**, *adj.* sourry; hence, coarse, rough. As. II. 2. 1.  
**Rush**, *sb.* an impediment, hindrance; from the game of bowls. John, III. 4. 126; E. 2. III. 4. 41; E. 3. II. 2. 288. *v.t.* to rush. I. 2. II. IV. 2. 141. A bowl  
 said to 'rub on' when it surmounts the obstacles in its course. T. & C. III. 2. 32.  
**Rubbed**, *adj.* red as a ruby. Per. V. prol. 2.  
**Rubious**, *adj.* red as a ruby. Tw. N. I. 4. 30.  
**Ruddock**, *sb.* the redbreast. IV. 2. 224.  
**Rudish**, *sb.* a rude fellow. S. III. 2. 20; Tw. N. IV. 2. 55.  
**Ruffian**, *adj.* boisterous, brutish; 3 H. 6. V. 2. 49. Applied to their curled heads. 2 H. 4. IV. 3. 266.  
**Rumie**, *v.t.* to be boisterous. T. A. I. 2. 313. *sb.* stir, bustle. II. 2. 304; Comp. 58. shaggy-haired.  
**Ruin**, *v.t.* 1. 156.  
**Ruin**, *v.t.* to ruin. Lucr. 944; 3 H. 6. V. 2. 83.  
**Ruined**, *adj.* ruinous. R. 2. III. 3. 34.  
**Ruinous**, *adj.* ruined. Tim. IV. 3. 465.  
**Rule**, *sb.* course of proceeding, behaviour. M. of V. IV. 2. 276; Tw. N. II. 3. 232.  
**Rumour**, *sb.* din, confused noise. John, v. 4. 45; J. C. II. 4. 18.  
**Rump-fed**, *adj.* pampered. Mac. I. 3. 6. Others explain it, fed on offal, or fat-rumped.  
**Runagate**, *sb.* vagabond. R. 3. IV. 4. 465; R. & J. III. 5. 90. Runaway. Cym. IV. 2. 62.  
**Runner**, *sb.* a fugitive. A. & C. IV. 7. 14.  
**Running banquet**, literally, a hasty refreshment; used figuratively. H. 8. I. 4. 12; V. 4. 69.  
**Rural**, *adj.* rustic. A. & C. V. 2. 233.  
**Rush**, *adv.* to thrust aside, pass by hastily. R. & J. III. 3. 26.  
**Rushing**, blunder for 'rustling.' M. W. II. 2. 68.  
**Russet**, *adj.* grey. Ham. I. 2. 166.  
**Russet-faced**, *adj.* grey-headed; of the jackdaw. M. N. Dr. III. 2. 21.  
**Ruth**, *sb.* pity. R. 2. III. 4. 106; Cor. I. 3. 201.  
**Ruthful**, *adj.* pitiful. 3 H. 6. II. 5. 95; T. & C. V. 3. 42.  
**Saba**, the queen of Sheba. H. 8. V. 5. 24.  
**Sables**, fur used for the trimming of rich robes. Ham. IV. 2. 81. With a pun on 'sable,' Ham. III. 2. 137.  
**Sack**, the name given to various white wines of Spain. Tp. II. 2. 126; Tw. N. II. 3. 206; 1 H. 4. I. 2. 11; 3 H. 4. IV. 3. 204.  
**Sackbut**, *sb.* a kind of trombone. Cor. v. 4. 52.  
**Sacred**, *adj.* consecrated, as an epithet of royalty. T. A. II. 1. 122; John, III. 1. 125, &c.  
**Sacrificial**, *adj.* devout, religious. Tim. I. 1. 81.  
**Sacring-bell**, *sb.* the little bell rung during mass at the consecration of the elements. H. 8. III. 2. 295.  
**Sad**, *adj.* grave, serious. M. A. I. 2. 125; M. of V. II. 2. 205. Gloomy, sullen. R. 2. V. 3. 70.  
**Sad-eyed**, *adj.* grave-looking. H. 8. I. 2. 202.  
**Sadly**, *adv.* gravely, seriously. H. 8. I. 2. 200; R. & J. I. 2. 207.  
**Sadness**, *sb.* seriousness, earnestness. 3 H. 6. III. 2. 77; R. & J. I. 2. 209.  
**Safe**, *v.t.* to render safe, protect safely. A. & C. I. 3. 55; IV. 2. 26.  
**Safety**, *sb.* custody. John, IV. 2. 128; R. & J. V. 3. 165.

- Sag, *v.t.* to droop, sink heavily. *Mac.* v. 3. 20.  
 Sanctuary, *sb.* a sanctuary. *T. & C.* v. 5. 14. The official residence in the arsenal at Venice.  
 Oth. I. 2. 150; I. 3. 115.  
 Said, *v.t.* said=well done. *As.* II. 6. 14; *Ham.* I. 5. 162.  
 Sain=said. *L. L. L.* III. 1. 82.  
 Saint, *v.t.* to play the saint. *Pam.* P. 342.  
 Sale-work, *sb.* work made for sale and not according to order or pattern. *As.* III. 5. 43.  
 Sallet, *sb.* a salad. *A. W.* IV. 5. 15; *Ham.* II. 2. 462; *Lear.* III. 4. 137. A close-fitting head-piece. *H. 5.* IV. 10. 12.  
 Salt, *sb.* salt-cellar. Two G. III. 1. 369. Used of tears. *Cor.* v. 6. 93; *Lear.* IV. 6. 199. *adj.* lecherous. *M.* for *M. V.* 1. 406; *Oth.* II. 1. 244. Stinging, bitter. *T. & C.* I. 3. 377.  
 Saltiers, blunder for 'satyra'. *W. T.* IV. 4. 314.  
 Salutation. Give salutation to my blood=effect my blood so as to cause it to rise. *Sonn.* CXXI. 6.  
 Salute, *v.t.* to meet, touch. *John.* II. 1. 590. Hence, to affect. *H. 8.* II. 3. 103.  
 Samingo, for Saint Domingo, the patron-saint of toppers. *H. 4.* V. 3. 79.  
 Sanctimonious, *adj.* holy. *TP.* IV. 1. 16.  
 Sanctimony, *sb.* holiness. *A. W.* IV. 3. 59; *T. & C.* v. 2. 140. A holy thing. *T. & C.* v. 2. 139.  
 Sanctuarize, *v.t.* to protect as a sanctuary. *Ham.* IV. 7. 128.  
 Sand, *sb.* a grain of sand. *Cym.* v. 5. 120.  
 Sand-blind, *adj.* purblind. *M.* of *V.* II. 2. 37, 77.  
 Sanded, *adj.* of a sandy colour. *M. N's* Dr. IV. 1. 123.  
 Sans (Fr.), without. *TP.* I. 2. 97; *As.* II. 7. 32, 166.  
 Sarum, Salisbury. *Lear.* II. 2. 89.  
 Sate, *v.t.* to satiate. *Ham.* I. 5. 56; *Oth.* I. 3. 352.  
 Satiated, *adj.* satiated. *Cym.* I. 6. 48.  
 Satire, *sb.* satirist. *Sonn.* C. 11.  
 Saucy, *adj.* lascivious, wanton. *M.* for *M.* II. 4. 45; *A. W.* IV. 4. 22.  
 Savage, *adj.* wild, uncultivated. *H. 5.* III. 5. 7.  
 Savageness, *sb.* wildness, tendency to licence. *Ham.* II. 1. 34.  
 Savagery, *sb.* wild growth. *H. 5.* v. 2. 47.  
 Saviour, *sb.* smell. *W. T.* I. 2. 221; IV. 4. 75. *John.* IV. 3. 122. Hence, quality. *Lear.* I. 4. 258. *v.t.* to smell. *Per.* IV. 6. 117. To be of a certain quality, smack. *Tw. N.* v. 1. 223, 322. *H. 5.* I. 2. 250.  
 Saw, *sb.* a saying, maxim. *As.* II. 7. 195. *Ham.* I. 5. 100.  
 Sawn, sown. *Comp.* 92.  
 Say, *sb.* a kind of silk. *H. 4.* IV. 7. 27. Assay, relish. *Lear.* v. 3. 143. *v.t.* to speak to the purpose. *Ham.* v. 2. 99.  
 Sayed, *p.p.* assayed, tried. *Per.* I. 1. 39.  
 Sblood, for 'God's blood'. *H. 4.* I. 2. 28; *H. 5.* IV. 8. 20.  
 Scabbidge, *sb.* the stage of a theatre. *T. & C.* I. 3. 158.  
 Scald, *adj.* scurvy, scabby. *H. 5.* v. 1. 3. 32. *A. & C.* v. 2. 215.  
 Scale, *v.t.* to weigh. *M.* for *M.* III. 1. 266; *Cor.* II. 3. 257.  
 Scaled, *adj.* scaly. *A. & C.* II. 5. 95. Scentured. *T. & C.* v. 5. 22.  
 Scall=scaled. *M. W.* III. 1. 123.  
 Scamble, *v.t.* to scramble. *John.* IV. 3. 246; *H. 5.* I. 1. 4.  
 Scamel, *sb.* probably a misprint for 'scammel', the scower. *TP.* II. 2. 176.  
 Scan, *v.t.* to examine. *Oth.* III. 3. 245.  
 Scandal, *v.t.* to defame. *Cor.* III. 1. 44; *J. C.* I. 2. 76.  
 Scandalized, *adj.* scandalous. *TP.* IV. 1. 90.  
 Scant, *adv.* scarcely. *R. & J.* I. 2. 104. *adj.* scanty. *Pam.* P. 409. Sparing, chary. *Ham.* I. 3. 122. Wanting. *Ham.* v. 2. 208. *v.t.* to cut short, limit. *Lear.* II. 4. 178; *M.* of *V.* II. 1. 27. To give grudgingly. *Lear.* I. 1. 281; *H. 5.* II. 4. 47.  
 Scantling, *sb.* a small portion. *T. & C.* I. 3. 341.  
 Scantly, *adv.* grudgingly. *A. & C.* III. 4. 6.  
 Scape, *sb.* a freak, escapade. *M.* of *V.* II. 2. 174; *W. T.* III. 3. 73; *Lucr.* 747. *v.t.* to escape. *John.* v. 6. 15.  
 Scarfed, *p.p.* decked with scarfs. *M.* of *V.* II. 6. 15. Worn like a scarf, loosely wrapped. *Ham.* v. 2. 13.  
 Scarf up, to bandage up, blindfold. *Mac.* III. 2. 47.  
 Scathe, *sb.* injury, damage. *John.* II. 1. 75; *R. 2.* I. 3. 317. *v.t.* to injure. *R. & J.* I. 5. 85.  
 Scathful, *adj.* harmful, destructive. *Tw. N.* v. 1. 59.  
 Sconce, *sb.* a round fort. *H. 5.* III. 6. 76. Hence, a protection for the head. *C.* of *E.* II. 2. 37. And hence, the skull. *Cor.* III. 2. 99; *Ham.* v. 1. 110. *v.t.* to ensconce, hide. *Ham.* III. 4. 4.  
 Scope, *sb.* space in which to act. *M.* for *M.* III. 1. 70. Liberty, freedom of action. *M.* for *M.* I. 1. 65. Scope of nature=something done within the limits of nature's operation, a natural effect. *John.* III. 4. 154.  
 Score, *v.t.* to cut, mark. *A. & C.* IV. 7. 32.  
 Soorn. To take or think score=to disdain. *As.* IV. 2. 14; *H. 5.* IV. 7. 107; *M. N's* Dr. v. 2. 138.  
 Soornful, *adj.* Soornful mark=object of scorn. *Lucr.* 520.  
 Soot, *sb.* a tax, contribution. *H. 4.* v. 4. 225.  
 Scotch, *sb.* a notch. *A. & C.* IV. 7. 10. *v.t.* to cut, slash. *Cor.* IV. 3. 125; *Mac.* III. 2. 13.  
 Scour, *v.t.* to hurry. *W. T.* II. 1. 33; *Tim.* v. 2. 15.  
 Scout, *v.t.* to be on the look out. *Tw. N.* III. 4. 193.  
 Scrimmer, *sb.* a fence. *Ham.* IV. 7. 122.  
 Scrip, *sb.* a written document. *M. N's* Dr. 1. 2. 2. A small bag. *As.* III. 2. 171.  
 Scrippage, *sb.* the contents of a scrip. *As.* III. 2. 171.  
 Scrowl, *v.t.* perhaps for 'scrawl'. *T. A.* II. 4. 3.  
 Scroyles, *adj.* scab, scrofulous, wretched. *John.* II. 1. 373.  
 Scrubbed, *adj.* scrubby, pithy. *M.* of *V.* v. 1. 162.  
 Scull, *sb.* a shoal of fish. *T. & C.* v. 2. 22.

- Sense**, *sb.* excuse. *M.* of *V.* IV. 1. 444; *Oth.* IV. 1. 80.
- Sent**, *sb.* the tail of a deer. *M. W. V.* 5. 20.
- Sdeath**, for 'God's death.' *Cor.* I. 1. 221.
- Sea-bank**, *sb.* the beach or shore. *M.* of *V.* V. 1. 11; *Oth.* IV. 1. 138.
- Seal**. To give seals to = to confirm, carry into effect. *Ham.* III. 2. 417.
- Sealed**, *adj.* stamped with the official seal. *T.* of *S.* Ind. II. 90.
- Sea-like**, *adv.* fit for sea. *A. & C.* III. 13. 171.
- Seam**, *sb.* grease, lard. *T. & C.* II. 3. 195.
- Sea-maid**, *sb.* a mermaid. *M. N's Dr.* II. 1. 154; *M.* for *M.* III. 2. 115.
- Sea-marge**, *sb.* sea-shore. *TP.* IV. 1. 69.
- Sear**, *v.t.* to scorch, shrivel up. *R.* 3. IV. 1. 61; *Mac.* IV. 1. 113. To wither. *Cym.* I. 1. 116.
- Search**, *v.t.* to probe, tent. *As.* II. 4. 44; *T. & C.* II. 2. 16; *J. C.* V. 3. 42. *sb.* a body of searchers. *Oth.* I. 1. 159.
- Seared**, *adj.* withered. *Comp.* 14.
- Season**, *v.t.* to mature, ripen. *Ham.* I. 3. 81; *III.* 2. 290. To qualify, moderate. *Ham.* I. 2. 198; *Cor.* III. 3. 64. To preserve, keep fresh. *A. W.* I. 1. 55; *Tw. N.* I. 1. 30. *sb.* seasoning, that which keeps anything from decay. *M. A.* IV. 1. 154; *Mac.* III. 4. 141.
- Seat**, *sb.* site. *Mac.* I. 6. 1.
- Seated**, *adj.* fixed, firm. *Mac.* I. 3. 136.
- Seconds**, *sb.* an inferior kind of flour. *Sonn.* CXXV. 11.
- Scet**, *sb.* sex. = *H. 4.* II. 4. 41. Cutting, scion. *Oth.* I. 3. 336.
- Secure**, *adj.* free from care, confident. *Ham.* I. 5. 61; *John.* IV. 1. 130.
- Securely**, *adv.* carelessly, confidently. *R.* 2. II. 1. 266; *T. & C.* IV. 5. 73.
- Security**, *sb.* carelessness, want of caution. *R.* 2. III. 2. 34; *J. C.* II. 3. 8; *Mac.* III. 5. 32.
- Seedness**, *sb.* sowing with seed. *M.* for *M.* I. 4. 42.
- Seel**, *v.t.* to close up, as the eyes of a hawk. *Mac.* III. 2. 46; *Oth.* I. 3. 270; *A. & C.* III. 13. 112.
- Seeming**, *sb.* fair appearance. *W. T.* IV. 4. 75.
- Appearance**, in a bad sense, hypocrisy. *M. A.* IV. 1. 57. *adv.* becomingly. *As.* V. 4. 72.
- Seen**. Well seen = well skilled. *T.* of *S.* I. 2. 134.
- Seethe**, *v.t.* & *v.i.* to boil. *Tim.* IV. 5. 433; *T. & C.* III. 2. 43.
- Segregation**, *sb.* dispersion. *Oth.* II. 1. 20.
- Seized**, *p.p.* possessed. *Ham.* I. 1. 89.
- Seld**, *adv.* seldom. *T. & C.* IV. 5. 150.
- Seldom** when, *adv.* rarely. *M.* for *M.* IV. 2. 89; = *H. 4.* IV. 4. 79.
- Seld-shown**, *adj.* rarely exhibited. *Cor.* II. 1. 299.
- Sell**, *adj.* belonging to oneself, one's own. *R.* 2. III. 2. 166; *Mac.* V. 8. 70. Same. *M.* of *V.* I. 1. 148; *R.* 2. I. 2. 23.
- Self-abuse**, *sb.* self-delusion. *Mac.* III. 4. 142.
- Self-admiration**, *sb.* self-approbation. *T. & C.* II. 3. 176.
- Self-aim**, *sb.* one's own business. *M. N's Dr.* I. 1. 213.
- Self-affected**, *adj.* self-loving. *T. & C.* II. 3. 250.
- Self-bounty**, *sb.* innate generosity. *Oth.* III. 3. 200.
- Self-breath**, *sb.* one's own breath or words. *T. & C.* II. 3. 182.
- Self-covered**, *adj.* 'Thou self-covered thing' = that hast disguised thyself in this unnatural shape. *Lear.* IV. 2. 62.
- Self-figured**, *adj.* devised by oneself. *Cym.* II. 3. 124.
- Self-sovereignty**. Here, self = same. *L. L. L.* IV. 1. 36.
- Semblable**, *adj.* like, similar. = *H. 4.* V. 1. 72; *A. & C.* III. 4. 3. Used as a substantive. *Tim.* IV. 3. 22; *Ham.* V. 2. 124.
- Semblably**, *adv.* similarly. = *H. 4.* 3. 21.
- Semblative**, *adj.* resembling, like. *Tw. N.* I. 34.
- Seniory**, *sb.* seniority. *R.* 3. IV. 4. 36.
- Sennet**, *sb.* a set of notes on a trumpet, announcing the arrival or departure of a procession. Used in stage directions. *J. C.* I. 2. 24; *Mac.* III. 1. 10, &c.
- Se'nnight**, *sb.* a week. *As.* III. 2. 333.
- Senoya**. Siennese, the people of Sienna. *A. W.* I. 2. 1.
- Sense**, *sb.* sensual passion. *M.* for *M.* I. 4. 59; *II.* 2. 169; *Per.* V. 3. 30. Spirit of sense = the most delicate faculty of perception. *T. & C.* I. 1. 58; *III.* 3. 106. To the sense = to the quick. *Oth.* V. 1. 11. Sense = senses. *Mac.* V. 1. 29.
- Senseless**, *adj.* without the faculty of hearing. *Cym.* II. 3. 58.
- Sensible**, *adj.* sensitive. *M.* of *V.* II. 8. 48; *Cor.* I. 3. 95.
- Sensibly**, *adv.* in the state of having feeling, in a sensible condition. *Cor.* I. 4. 53.
- Sentinel**, *v.t.* to guard. *Lucr.* 942.
- Separable**, *adj.* separating. *Sonn.* XXXVI. 6.
- Septentrion**, *sb.* the north. = *H. 6.* I. 4. 136.
- Sepulchre**, *v.t.* to entomb. *Lear.* II. 4. 134; *Lucr.* 803.
- Sequent**, *adj.* following, successive. *M.* for *M.* V. 1. 378; *Oth.* I. 2. 41. *sb.* a follower. *L. L. L.* IV. 2. 142.
- Sequester**, *sb.* sequestration, seclusion. *Oth.* III. 4. 40.
- Sequestration**, *sb.* separation. *Oth.* I. 3. 351.
- Sere**, *adj.* dry, withered. *C.* of *E.* IV. 2. 19.
- Sergeant**, *sb.* a sheriff's officer. *H. 8.* I. 1. 196; *Ham.* V. 2. 347.
- Serpio**, *sb.* a letter or eruption on the skin. *M.* for *M.* III. 1. 31; *T. & C.* II. 3. 81.
- Servant**, *sb.* a lover. *Two G.* III. 1. 106; *II.* 4. 1. 8, &c.
- Servanted**, *p.p.* subjected, made servants. *Cor.* V. 2. 89.
- Servicable**, *adj.* officious. *Lear.* IV. 6. 257.
- Offering service or devotion.** *Two G.* III. 2. 70.
- Sew**, *verb.* an exclamation urging to speed. *T.* of *S.* Ind. I. 6; *Lear.* III. 4. 104; *III.* 6. 76.
- Set**, *v.t.* to value. *Ham.* IV. 3. 64. *v.i.* to set out. *H. 5.* II. chor. 34. *sb.* setting, of the sun. *H. 5.* IV. 1. 269; *R.* 3. V. 3. 39; *Mac.* I. 1. 5.
- Setebos**. The chief deity of the Patagonians. *TP.* I. 2. 373.



- Setter, sb.** one who plans an appointment. *H. 4. II. 2. 53. See: H. 4. I. 2. 110.*
- Set to.** To set, as a broken limb. *H. 4. V. 1.*
- Seven-night, sb.** a week. *M. A. II. 1. 375; W. T. I. 2. 17.*
- Several, adj.** belonging to a private owner. *Bonn. CXXXVII. 9; L. L. II. 1. 223.*
- Severals, sb.** individuals. *W. T. I. 2. 226. Particulars. H. 5. I. 1. 86; T. & C. I. 3. 180.*
- Sewer, sb.** an officer whose duty it was to direct the placing of the dishes on the table: originally he had to taste them also. *Mac. I. 7 (stage direction).*
- Shadow, sb.** a shade, shady place. *As. IV. 1. 222. v.f. to protect, shelter. John. II. 1. 14.*
- Shadowed, p.p.** dark. *M. of V. II. 1. 2.*
- Shadowy, adj.** shady. *Two G. V. 4. 2; Lear, I. 1. 65.*
- Shag, adj.** shaggy. *V. & A. 295.*
- Shag-haired, adj.** shaggy haired, rough. *H. 6. III. 1. 367; Mac. IV. 2. 83.*
- Shales, sb.** shells, huaks. *H. 5. IV. 2. 18.*
- Shaune, v.f.** to be ashamed. *Cor. II. 2. 71; Mac. II. 2. 64.*
- Shard-borne, adj.** borne through the air on shards. *Mac. III. 2. 42.*
- Sharded, adj.** having shards. *Cym. III. 3. 20.*
- Shards, sb.** the scaly wing-cases of beetles. *A. & C. III. 2. 20. Potaherda. Ham. V. 1. 254.*
- Sharked up, gathered indiscriminately.** *Ham. I. 1. 98.*
- Sheaf, v.f.** to gather into sheaves. *As. III. 2. 113.*
- Shealed, adj.** shelled. *Lear, I. 4. 219.*
- Shearman, sb.** one who shears woollen cloth. *H. 6. IV. 2. 141.*
- Sheaved, adj.** made of straw. *Comp. 31.*
- Sheen, sb.** shine, brightness. *M. N's Dr. II. 1. 29; Ham. III. 2. 167.*
- Sheep-biter, sb.** a malicious, niggardly fellow. *Tw. N. II. 3. 6.*
- Sheep-biting, adj.** morose, malicious. *M. for M. V. 1. 359.*
- Sheep-cote, sb.** a shepherd's hut. *As. II. 4. 80. Lear, II. 3. 18.*
- Sheer, adj.** pure, unmixed. *R. 2. V. 3. 61.*
- 'Sheer ale'** may mean ale and nothing else. *T. of S. Ind. II. 95.*
- Shent, p.p.** reproved, scolded. *Tw. N. IV. 2. 112; Cor. V. 2. 104.*
- Sheriff's post.** Proclamations were affixed to the posts outside a sheriff's house. *Tw. N. I. 5. 157.*
- Sherris, sb.** wine of Xeres in Spain. *H. 4. IV. 3. 111. Also called Sherris sack. H. 4. IV. 3. 104.*
- Shine, sb.** brightness, lustre. *V. & A. 488, 728; Tim. III. 5. 102.*
- Shipman's card, the mariner's card, or chart.** *Mac. I. 3. 17.*
- Ship-tire, sb.** a head-dress, perhaps resembling a ship. *M. W. III. 3. 60.*
- Shive, sb.** a slice. *T. A. II. 1. 87.*
- Shock, v.f.** to encounter, meet in conflict. *John. V. 7. 117.*
- Shog, v.f.** to move, jog. *H. 5. II. 1. 47; II. 3. 47.*
- Shoon, sb.** shoes. *H. 6. IV. 2. 195; Ham. IV. 5. 26.*
- Shoot, sb.** shot. *H. 4. III. 2. 42.*
- Shore, v.f.** to put ashore. *W. T. IV. 4. 869.*
- Short, v.f.** to shorten, diminish. *Cym. I. 6. 200.*
- Used reflexively.** *Pam. P. 210.*
- Shot, sb.** a shooter, marksman. *H. 4. III. 2. 295; H. 6. I. 4. 53; H. 8. V. 4. 59.*
- Charge, reckoning at a tavern.** *Two G. II. 5. 7; Cym. V. 4. 158.*
- Shot-free, adj.** without having to pay the reckoning. *H. 4. V. 3. 30.*
- Shotten, adj.** having shed its rose. *H. 4. II. 4. 143.*
- Shoughs, sb.** rough-haired, shaggy dogs. *Mac. III. 1. 94.*
- Shouldered, p.p.** thrust violently out of place. *R. 3. III. 7. 128.*
- Shoulder-shotten, adj.** with the shoulder dislocated. *T. of S. III. 2. 56.*
- Shove-groat shilling.** A shilling used in the game of shove-groat or shovel-board, which appears to have been like the modern game of squayles. *H. 4. II. 4. 206.*
- Shovel-board, a shilling used in the game of shovel-board or shove-groat.** *M. W. I. 1. 159.*
- Show, sb.** appearance, figura. *Lacr. 1507; Cor. III. 3. 36; R. 2. III. 3. 71.*
- Shrew=beahrew.** *W. T. I. 2. 281; Cym. II. 3. 147.*
- Shrewd, adj.** mischievous, bad, evil. *M. W. II. 2. 232; As. V. 4. 179; M. N's Dr. II. 1. 33.*
- Shrewdly, adv.** badly: used in various senses as an intensive adverb. *H. 5. III. 7. 153; J. C. III. 1. 146; T. & C. III. 3. 228; Ham. I. 4. 1.*
- Shrewdness, sb.** mischievousness. *A. & C. II. 2. 69.*
- Shrieve, sb.** sheriff. *A. W. IV. 3. 213.*
- Shrift, sb.** confession and the accompanying absolution. *M. for M. IV. 2. 223; R. & J. II. 3. 56.*
- Shrill-gorged, adj.** shrill-throated. *Lear, IV. 6. 58.*
- Shrive, v.f.** to absolve after confession. *M. of V. I. 2. 144; R. & J. II. 4. 194.*
- Shriver, sb.** confessor. *H. 6. III. 2. 108.*
- Shriving time, time for shrift.** *Ham. V. 2. 47.*
- Shroud, v.f.** to hide oneself. *H. 6. III. 1. 1; IV. 3. 40. v.f. to take shelter. Tp. II. 2. 42.*
- Shrouds, sb.** sail ropes. *John. V. 7. 53; H. 6. V. 4. 18.*
- Shrow=shrew.** *L. L. I. V. 2. 46.*
- Shrowd, sb.** shelter, protection. *A. & C. III. 13. 71.*
- Shut up, concluded.** *Mac. II. 1. 16.*
- Sick, v.f.** to sicken. *H. 4. IV. 4. 128.*
- Sicken, v.f.** to impair, weaken. *H. 4. I. 1. 82.*
- Sick-fallen, adj.** fallen sick, diseased. *John. IV. 3. 153.*
- Side, v.f.** to take the side of. *Cor. I. 1. 197.*
- v.f.** to take a side in a quarrel. *Cor. IV. 2. 2.*
- Side sleeves, sb.** loose, hanging sleeves. *M. A. III. 4. 21.*
- Sieve, sb.** seat, bench. *M. for M. IV. 2. 202.*
- Rank, Ham. IV. 7. 77; Oth. I. 2. 22.**
- Used like 'stool'** for a discharge of sacrament. *Tp. II. 2. 120.*

- Sight**, *sb.* insight, experience, skill. T. & C. III. 3. 4. The aperture for the eyes in a helmet. = H. 4. IV. 2. 121.
- Sightless**, *adj.* blind, dark. Lucr. 101. Invisible. Mac. I. 5. 30; I. 7. 23. U. John, III. 1. 45.
- Sightly**, *adj.* pleasing to the eye. John, II. 1. 143.
- Sight-outrunning**, *swifter* than sight. Tp. I. 2. 203.
- Sign**, *v.t.* to mark, stamp. John, IV. 2. 222; H. 2. II. 4. 108; J. O. III. 1. 206. *v.t.* to be-token, bode. A. & C. IV. 3. 24.
- Significant**, *sb.* that which conveys one's meaning, a sign, token. = H. 6. II. 4. 26; L. L. L. III. 1. 131.
- Signory**, *sb.* a principality. Tp. I. 2. 71. A lordship. B. 2. III. 1. 22; I. 1. 89. The aristocracy, governing body. Oth. I. 2. 18.
- Signs**, *sb.* ensigns. H. 5. II. 2. 192; J. O. V. 1. 24; B. 2. II. 2. 74.
- Silent**, *adj.* silence, stillness. = H. 6. I. 4. 19.
- Silly**, *adj.* harmless, innocent. Two G. IV. 1. 72; V. & A. 1028. Plain, simple. Tw. N. II. 4. 47; Cym. V. 3. 86. Used as a term of pity. Pass. P. 123, 218; B. 2. V. 5. 25.
- Simple**, *sb.* a herb used in medicine. M. W. I. 4. 65; III. 3. 79; R. & J. V. 1. 40.
- Simpleness**, *sb.* folly. R. & J. III. 3. 77.
- Simplicity**, *sb.* folly. L. L. L. IV. 2. 23.
- Simular**, *adj.* dissembling, counterfeit. Lear, III. 2. 54; Cym. V. 3. 200.
- Since**, *adv.* when. M. N. D. II. 1. 149; T. of S. Ind. I. 84; = H. 4. III. 2. 206.
- Sinew**, *v.t.* to knit together. 3 H. 6. II. 6. 91; John, V. 7. 88.
- Sinews**, *sb.* nerves. Lear, III. 6. 105; V. & A. 903.
- Single**, *adj.* simple, silly. = H. 4. I. 2. 207; Cor. II. 1. 40. Sincere. H. 8. V. 3. 38.
- Single-soled**, *adj.* with but one sole, poor, mean. R. & J. II. 4. 60.
- Singly** counterpoised, counterpoised by a single person. Cor. II. 2. 91.
- Singularities**, *sb.* rarities. W. T. V. 3. 12.
- Singuled**, *p.p.* separated. L. L. L. V. 1. 85.
- Sink**, *v.t.* to make to fall. Tp. II. 1. 201; Cym. V. 3. 413.
- Sinking-sipe**, *adj.* ready to sink. O. of E. I. 1. 76.
- Sir**, *sb.* lord. A. & C. V. 2. 120. A gentleman. Tp. V. 2. 69; Tw. N. III. 4. 81. The title given to those priests who had taken a bachelor's degree at a university. Tw. N. III. 4. 206; IV. 2. 2.
- Sire**, *v.t.* to beget. Cym. IV. 2. 26.
- Sirrah**, a familiar address, applied both to men and women. Tp. V. 1. 287; A. & C. V. 2. 205.
- Sis**, used in addressing several persons and even women. Two G. IV. 2. 58; W. T. IV. 4. 73; A. & C. IV. 25. 65.
- Sit-reverence**, a corruption of 'save-reverence,' *expression* reverentia, an apologetic expression. O. of E. III. 2. 22. Used as an adjective. R. & J. I. 4. 42.
- Sit-sit**, *v.t.* to resemble closely, be akin to. Per. V. 102. 7.
- Sit-sit**, *adj.* neighbouring. Comp. 2.
- Sith**, *since*. *adv.* Ham. II. 2. 12. *conj.* Two G. I. 2. 126; Ham. II. 2. 6, &c.
- Sithence**, *since*. *adv.* Cor. III. 1. 47. *conj.* A. W. I. 3. 124.
- Sizes**, *sb.* portions, allowances. Lear, II. 4. 178.
- Skains-mates**, *sb.* knavish companions, scapegraces. R. & J. II. 4. 160.
- Skill**. It skills not = it matters not, makes no difference. T. of S. III. 2. 134; Tw. N. V. 1. 205; = H. 6. III. 1. 287.
- Skillless**, *adj.* unskilled, inexperienced, ignorant. T. & C. I. 2. 12; R. & J. III. 3. 130; Tw. N. III. 3. 9; Tp. III. 1. 53.
- Skillit**, *sb.* a pot. Oth. I. 3. 273.
- Skimble-skamble**, *adj.* wild, incoherent. III. 1. 154.
- Skin-coat**, *sb.* hide. John, II. 1. 130.
- Skipper**, *sb.* a flighty youngster. T. of S. II. 1. 341.
- Skir**, *v.t.* to move rapidly, scour. H. 5. IV. 7. 64. *v.t.* Mac. V. 3. 35.
- Slab**, *adj.* slabby, slimy. Mac. IV. 1. 32.
- Slack**, *v.t.* to neglect. M. W. III. 4. 115; Lear, II. 4. 248; Oth. IV. 3. 88. *v.t.* to slacken, languish. T. & C. III. 3. 24.
- Slackness**, *sb.* negligence. W. T. V. 1. 151; A. & C. III. 7. 28.
- Slander**, *sb.* reproach, diatribe. O. of E. IV. 4. 70; A. 4. IV. 1. 61; R. 2. I. 1. 113.
- Slandorous**, *adj.* disgraceful, ignominious. Lucr. 1001; John, III. 1. 44.
- Slave**, *v.t.* to make a slave of. Lear, IV. 1. 71.
- Sleave** or **Sleave-silk**, *sb.* floss silk. Mac. II. 2. 37; T. & C. V. 1. 35.
- Sledded**, *adj.* travelling in sledges. Ham. I. 1. 63.
- Sleek o'er**, *v.t.* to smooth. Mac. III. 2. 27.
- Sleeve-hand**, *sb.* a cuff, wrist-band. W. T. IV. 4. 217.
- Sleeveless**, *adj.* useless, unprofitable. T. & C. V. 4. 9.
- Sleided**, *adj.* untwisted. Per. IV. prol. 21.
- Sleight**, *sb.* artifice, stratagem. 3 H. 6. IV. 2. 20. Mac. III. 5. 26.
- 'Slid**, a corruption of 'God's Ild.' M. W. III. 4. 24; Tw. N. III. 4. 437.
- 'Slight**, for 'God's light.' Tw. N. II. 5. 58; III. 2. 14.
- Slighted**, clucked, threw contemptuously, or perhaps, by a dexterous movement. M. W. III. 5. 9.
- Slighted off**, put aside contemptuously. J. C. IV. 3. 5.
- Slipper**, *adj.* slippery. Oth. II. 1. 246.
- Slips**, *sb.* counterfeit coin. R. & J. II. 4. 51; V. & A. 515. The leash in which greyhounds were held before they were let slip at the game. H. 5. III. 1. 31.
- Silver**, *sb.* a branch torn from a tree. Ham. IV. 7. 174.
- Silver**, *v.t.* to tear off. Mac. IV. 1. 26; Lear, IV. 1. 24.
- '**, *adj.* sloppy. H. 5. III. 5. 13.
- '**, loose branches. M. A. III. 2. 36; = H. 4. I. 2. 34.
- Slough**, *sb.* the cast-off skin of a snake. Tw. N. II. 5. 161; H. 5. IV. 1. 25. A place deep with mud and mire. M. W. IV. 5. 69.

- Slovenry**, *sb.* slovenliness. H 5. IV. 3. 114.  
**Slowed**, *p.p.* retarded. R. & J. IV. 1. 16.  
**Slubber**, *v.t.* to slur over, do carelessly. M. of V. II. 8. 39.  
**Sluggardised**, *p.p.* made indolent. Two G. I. 2. 7.  
**Sluttry**, *sb.* sluttishness. M. W. V. 5. 50; Cym. I. 6. 44.  
**Smatch**, *sb.* a smack, taste. J. C. V. 5. 46.  
**Smatter**, *v.t.* to chatter. R. & J. III. 5. 172.  
**Smile**, *v.t.* to smile at. Lear, II. 8. 88.  
**Smilets**, *sb.* little smiles. Lear, IV. 3. 21.  
**Smirch**, *v.t.* to smear, soil. M. A. III. 3. 145; IV. 1. 135; Aa. I. 3. 114.  
**Smooth**, *v.t.* to flatter. R 3. I. 3. 48; Tim. IV. 3. 17.  
**Smoothing**, *adj.* flattering. R 3. I. 2. 169; s H 6. I. 1. 156.  
**Smother**, *sb.* thick, suffocating smoke. Aa. I. 2. 599.  
**Strug**, *adj.* trim, spruce. M. of V. III. 1. 49; s H 4. III. 1. 102.  
**Smutched**, *p.p.* smudged, blackened. W. T. I. 2. 121.  
**Sneak-cup**, *sb.* a fellow who shirks his liquor. s H 4. III. 3. 99.  
**Sneap**, *sb.* a snub, reprimand. s H 4. II. 1. 113.  
*v.t.* to pinch, nip. L. L. L. I. 2. 100; W. T. I. 2. 13; Lear. 333.  
**Sneek up**! a contemptuous expression = go and be hanged. Tw. N. II. 3. 101.  
**Snipe**, *sb.* a simpleton. Oth. I. 3. 39.  
**Snuff**, *an* object of contempt, at which men snuff. A. W. I. 5. 59. A quarrel. Lear, III. 1. 26. To take in snuff = to take offence at. L. L. L. V. 2. 22; s H 4. I. 3. 41.  
**Softly**, *adv.* gently. W. T. IV. 3. 76. Slowly. Ham. IV. 4. 2.  
**Soil**, *sb.* bluish, spot. Ham. I. 3. 15.  
**Soiled**, *p.p.* fed with fresh green food. Lear, IV. 6. 124.  
**Soilure**, *sb.* stain, defilement. T. & C. IV. 1. 56.  
**Solace**, *v.t.* to amuse. L. L. L. IV. 3. 337. *v.t.* to be happy, amuse oneself. R 3. II. 3. 30; Cym. I. 6. 86.  
**Solely**, *adv.* alone. W. T. II. 3. 17; Cor. IV. 7. 16.  
**Solicit**, *v.t.* to move, rouse. R. A. I. 2. 2; s H 6. V. 3. 190; Ham. V. 3. 359.  
**Soliciting**, *sb.* incitement, prompting. Mac. I. 3. 130. Courtship. Ham. II. 2. 126.  
**Soldare**, *sb.* a small coin. Tim. III. 1. 46.  
**Solve**, *sb.* solution. Sonn. LXII. 14.  
**Sometime**, *adv.* sometimes. s H 4. III. 1. 148; R. & J. I. 4. 77. Once. Cor. I. 9. 82. Formerly. Tp. V. 2. 86; Ham. III. 1. 114.  
**Sometimes**, *adv.* formerly, once upon a time. M. of V. I. 2. 163; R. A. I. 2. 54.  
**Sonance**, *sb.* sound. H 5. IV. 2. 35.  
**Sonsie**, a corruption of 'sanct' or 'sanctity' or 'saints'. M. of V. II. 2. 47.  
**Soon** at, in the phrases 'soon at night', 'this very night', M. W. I. 4. 8; s H 4. V. 5. 96; 'soon at five o'clock', 'at five this evening'. C. of E. I. 2. 26; 'soon at supper'. M. of V. II. 2. 5.  
**South**, *sb.* truth. Tw. N. II. 4. 47; W. T. IV. 4. 172. In south = in truth. M. of V. I. 2. 2.  
**Plattery**. R. A. III. 3. 126; Per. I. 2. 44.  
**Soothe**, *v.t.* to flatter. John, III. 2. 122; Cor. II. 2. 77.  
**Soothers**, *sb.* flatterers. s H 4. IV. 1. 7.  
**Soothing**, *sb.* flattery. Cor. I. 9. 44.  
**Sop o' the moonshine**, in allusion to an old dish called 'eggs in moonshine'. Lear, II. 2. 35.  
**Sore**, *sb.* a buck of the fourth year. L. L. L. IV. 2. 59, 60.  
**Sorel**, *sb.* a buck of the third year. L. L. L. IV. 2. 60.  
**Sorriest**, *adj.* most sorrowful. Mac. III. 2. 9.  
**Sorrow-wreath**, *adj.* folded in grief. T. & C. III. 2. 4.  
**Sorry**, *adj.* sad, sorrowful. C. of E. V. 1. 227; Mac. II. 2. 21.  
**Sort**, *sb.* rank. M. A. I. 2. 7, 33; H 5. IV. 7. 122.  
**Set**, company. M. N's Dr. III. 2. 13; B. A. IV. 1. 246; R 3. V. 3. 316. Manner. Tp. IV. 1. 146; M. of V. I. 2. 113. Lot. T. & C. I. 2. 376. *v.t.* to pick out. H 5. IV. 7. 77; Two G. III. 2. 92; R. & J. IV. 2. 34. To rank. Ham. II. 2. 274. To arrange, dispose. R 3. II. 2. 248. To adapt. s H 6. II. 4. 68. *v.t.* to associate. V. & A. 689. To be fitting. T. & C. I. 2. 209. To fall out, happen. M. A. IV. 1. 248; M. N's Dr. III. 2. 352.  
**Sortance**, *sb.* suitableness, agreement. s H 4. IV. 1. 11.  
**Sot**, *sb.* a fool, dolt. Tp. III. 2. 101; Tw. N. L. 5. 129.  
**Soul-fearing**, *adj.* soul-terrifying. John, II. 2. 383.  
**Souse**, *v.t.* to swoop upon. John, V. 2. 150.  
**Soused**, *p.p.* pickled. s H 4. IV. 2. 13.  
**Sowl**, *v.t.* to lug, drag by the ears. Cor. IV. 5. 213.  
**Span-counter**, *sb.* a boys' game in which the one wins who throws his counter so as to hit his opponent's or to lie within a span of it. s H 6. IV. 2. 166.  
**Spaniel**, *v.t.* to follow like a spaniel. A. & C. IV. 12. 22.  
**Spare**, *v.t.* to forbear to offend. M. for M. II. 3. 33.  
**Specialties**, *sb.* the articles of a contract. L. L. L. II. 1. 165; T. of S. II. 1. 127.  
**Speciously**, blunder for 'especially'. M. W. III. 4. 113.  
**Speculation**, *sb.* power of vision. T. & C. III. 3. 109; Mac. III. 4. 95. A scout, watcher. Lear, III. 1. 24.  
**Speculative**, *adj.* possessing the faculty of sight. Oth. I. 3. 271.  
**Sped**, *p.p.* despatched, done for. M. of V. II. 9. 72; R. & J. III. 2. 64.  
**Speed**, *sb.* fortune, success. T. of S. II. 2. 129; W. T. III. 2. 146.  
**Spoken** = speak. Per. II. prol. 12.  
**Spend**. To spend their mouths is used of dogs when they give tongue on scenting the game. V. & A. 692; H 5. II. 4. 70; T. & C. V. 2. 98.  
**Spear**, *v.t.* to har. T. & C. prol. 28.  
**Sphered**, *adj.* spherical, round. T. & C. IV. 5. 2.  
**Sperry**, *adj.* stony. M. N's Dr. II. 2. 99.  
**Spicery**, *sb.* spices. R 3. IV. 4. 424.  
**Spill**, *v.t.* to destroy. Ham. IV. 5. 22; Lear, III. 2. 8.

**Spillth**, *sb.* spilling, waste. Tim. II. 2. 169.  
**Spiriting**, *sb.* acting the spirit or sprite. Tp. I.

**Spl**, *sb.* hospital. H. 5. II. 1. 78; V. 1. 86.  
**Splital-horse**, *sb.* hospital. Tim. IV. 3. 39.  
**Spleen**, *sb.* fierce passion, temper. John. II. 1. 68; B. 3. V. 3. 350. Quick movement. John. II. 1. 448; V. 7. 50; M. N's Dr. I. 1. 146.  
**Fury**, Cor. IV. 5. 97. A fit of passion, caprice.  
**H. 4. V. 2. 19; V. & A. 907.** A fit of laughter; the spleen being supposed to be the seat of that emotion. Tw. N. III. 2. 75; L. L. L. III. 1. 77; M. for M. II. 2. 122.  
**Splenitive**, *adj.* impetuous, hasty tempered. Ham. V. 1. 285.  
**Spleeny**, *adj.* passionate, impetuous. H. 8. III. 2.

**Split**, *v.t.* to bind up with splints, like a broken limb. B. 3. II. 2. 118; Oth. II. 3. 329.  
**Split**, *v.t.* 'To make all split' denotes violent action or uproar. M. N's Dr. I. 2. 32.  
**Spot**, *sb.* a pattern in embroidery. Cor. I. 3. 56.  
**Spotted**, *p.p.* stained, polluted. M. N's Dr. I. 1. 110; B. 3. III. 2. 134.

**Spousal**, *sb.* marriage. H. 5. V. 2. 390; T. A. I. 1. 337.

**Sprag**, *adj.* sprack, quick, lively. M. W. IV. 1. 84.  
**Sprighted**, *p.p.* haunted. Cym. II. 3. 144.  
**Sprightly**, *adj.* high-spirited. John. IV. 2. 177.  
**Sprightly**, *adv.* with high courage. B. 2. I. 3. 3.

**Spring**, *sb.* a young shoot. V. & A. 656; Lucr. 920. The beginning. M. N's Dr. II. 1. 82; H. 4. IV. 4. 35.

**Springe**, *sb.* a snare for catching birds. Ham. I. 3. 115; V. 2. 317.

**Springhalt**, *sb.* a lameness in horses, called also string-halt, in which the legs are violently twitched up. H. 8. I. 3. 13.

**Spritely**, *adj.* 'spritely shows' are ghostly appearances. Cym. V. 5. 428.

**Spurs**, *sb.* the lateral roots of a tree. Tp. V. 1. 47; Cym. IV. 2. 58.

**Spy**, *sb.* 'the perfect spy of the time' may mean the most accurate information with regard to the time. Mac. III. 1. 130.

**Squandered**, *p.p.* scattered. M. of V. 1. 3. 22.  
**Squandering**, *adj.* roving, random. As. II. 7. 157.

**Square**, *adj.* suitable. Tim. V. 4. 36; A. & C. II. 2. 190. *sb.* the embroidery about the bosom part of a smock or shift. W. T. IV. 4. 512.

The most precious square of sense is the most delicately sensitive part. Lear, I. 1. 76. *v.t.* to quarrel. M. N's Dr. II. 1. 30; A. & C. II. 1. 45.

**Squarer**, *sb.* a quarreller. M. A. I. 1. 82.  
**Squash**, *sb.* an unripe peacock. M. N's Dr. III. 2. 191; Tw. N. I. 5. 166; W. T. I. 2. 160.

**Square**, *sb.* a square, rule. L. L. L. V. 8. 474; W. T. IV. 4. 348; H. 4. II. 2. 13.

**Squint**, *v.t.* to make to squint. Lear, III. 4. 122.  
**Squinty**, *v.t.* to look askant. Lear, IV. 6. 140.

**Stablish**, *v.t.* to establish. H. 6. V. 1. 10.

**Stablishment**, *sb.* establishment, settled government. A. & C. III. 6. 9.

**Stage**, *v.t.* to exhibit as in a theatre. M. for M. I. 2. 69; A. & C. III. 13. 30; V. 2. 217.

**Stagger**, *v.t.* to make to reel. B. 2. V. 5. 122. *v.t.* to hesitate. M. for M. I. 2. 169; As. III. 3. 40.

**Staggers**, *sb.* giddiness, bewilderment. A. W. II. 3. 170; Cym. V. 5. 234. A kind of apoplexy in horses. T. of S. III. 2. 155.

**Stain**, *sb.* tincture, tinge. A. W. I. 1. 122; T. & C. I. 2. 26. 'Stain to all nymphs', causing them to appear sullied by contrast. V. & A. p. *v.t.* to sully by contrast with greater brightness. A. & C. III. 4. 27.

**Stale**, *sb.* a decoy. Tp. IV. 1. 127; T. of S. III. 1. 90. A stalking-horse. O. of E. II. 1. 101. A laughing-stock. H. 6. III. 3. 260; T. A. I. 1. 304. A prostitute. M. A. II. 2. 26; IV. 1. 66. The urine of horses. A. & C. I. 4. 62. *v.t.* to render stale, make common. T. & C. II. 3. 201; Cor. I. 1. 95; J. C. I. 2. 73.

**Stalk**, *v.t.* to move stealthily, as one behind a stalking-horse. M. A. II. 3. 95; Lucr. 365.

**Stalking-horse**, *sb.* a real horse or the figure of a horse, used by sportsmen to get near their game. As. V. 4. 211.

**Stall**, *v.t.* to keep as in a stall, keep close. A. W. I. 3. 131. To install. B. 3. I. 3. 206. *v.t.* to dwell. A. & C. V. 1. 39.

**Stamp**, *v.t.* to mark as genuine, give currency to. Cor. V. 2. 22; Oth. II. 1. 247.

**Stanch**, *adj.* watertight, firmly united. A. & C. II. 2. 117. *v.t.* to quench thirst. T. A. III. 2. 14.

**Stanchless**, *adj.* insatiable. Mac. IV. 3. 78.

**Standing**, *sb.* continuance, duration. W. T. I. 2. 431. Attitude. Tim. I. 1. 31.

**Standing-bed**, *sb.* a bed standing on posts. M. W. IV. 5. 7.

**Standing-bowl**, *sb.* a goblet with a foot. Per. II. 3. 65.

**Standing-tuck**, *sb.* a rapier standing on end. H. 4. II. 4. 274.

**Stand upon**, to be incumbent upon, or of importance to. O. of E. IV. 1. 68; B. 3. II. 3. 138; B. 3. IV. 2. 59; Ham. V. 2. 63.

**Staniel**, *sb.* a kind of hawk, also called a kestrel. Tw. N. II. 5. 124.

**Stanza**, *sb.* a stanza. L. L. L. IV. 2. 107.

**Stanzo**, *sb.* a stanza. As. II. 5. 18, 19.

**Star**, *sb.* the pole-star. M. A. III. 4. 58; Sonn. CXVI. 7. Used figuratively for fortune. Tw. N. II. 5. 156. Out of thy star—out of thy sphere, above thee in fortune. Ham. II. 2. 141.

**Star-blasting**, *sb.* blighting by planetary influence. Lear, III. 4. 60.

**Stare**, *v.t.* to stand on end. J. C. IV. 3. 280.

**Stark**, *adj.* stiff. H. 4. V. 3. 49; B. & J. IV. 1. 103.

**Starkly**, *adv.* stiffly. M. for M. IV. 2. 70.

**Starred**, *p.p.* fated. W. T. III. 2. 120.

**Starting-hole**, *sb.* a refuge; hence, a subterfuge. H. 4. II. 4. 390.

**Startingly**, *adv.* by fits and starts, abruptly. Oth. III. 4. 79.

**Start-up**, *sb.* an upstart. M. A. I. 2. 69.

**Starve**, *v.t.* to be numb with cold. H. 6. III. 1. 243; T. A. III. 2. 252. *v.t.* to paralyze, disable. Tim. I. 2. 257. To nip with cold. Tw. O. IV. 4. 159.

**State**, *sb.* attitude. L. L. L. IV. 2. 125. A chair of state, with a canopy. Tw. N. II. 3. 90;

- 1 H. 4. II. 4. 436; Cor. V. 4. 22; Mac. III. 4. 5.  
 Estate, fortune. M. of V. III. 2. 262; A. V. 4. 18.  
 18. In the plural, 'states' denotes persons of high position. John, II. 2. 395; T. & C. IV. 5. 65.  
 Station, *sb.* attitude. Ham. III. 4. 58; A. & C. III. 3. 22.  
 Statist, *sb.* a statesman, politician. Ham. V. 2. 33; Cym. II. 4. 16.  
 Status, *sb.* statue. J. C. II. 2. 76; III. 2. 192; E. 3. III. 7. 25.  
 Statue, *sb.* a picture, image. Two G. IV. 4. 206.  
 Statues, blunder for 'statutes.' M. A. III. 3. 85.  
 Statute, *sb.* a bond, obligation. Ham. V. 2. 113; Sonn. CXXXIV. 9.  
 Statute-caps, *sb.* woollen caps, worn by citizens in accordance with an act of Parliament passed in 1571. L. L. L. V. 2. 281.  
 Stay, *sb.* a check, hindrance. John, II. 1. 455.  
 Stead, *v.t.* to help. Tp. I. 2. 165; M. of V. I. 3. 7.  
 Stead up, to supply, take the place of. M. for M. III. 1. 260.  
 Stealth, *sb.* a stealthy movement, a going secretly. M. N. Dr. III. 2. 310; Tw. N. I. 5. 316; Sonn. LXXVII. 7.  
 Steely, *adj.* unyielding. A. W. I. 1. 114.  
 Steep-up, *adj.* steep. Sonn. VII. 5; Pass. P. 122.  
 Steepy, *adj.* steep, precipitous. Tim. I. 2. 74; Sonn. LXIII. 5.  
 Steering, *sb.* steering, pilotage. R. & J. I. 4. 112; Per. IV. 4. 19.  
 Stelled, *p.p.* fixed. Lucr. 1444; Sonn. XXIV.  
 Starry. Lear, III. 7. 61.  
 Sternage. To sternage of = astern of, so as to follow. H. 5. III. chor. 18.  
 Stickler-like, *adj.* like a stickler, whose duty it was to separate combatants when they had fought enough. T. & C. V. 2. 18.  
 Stiff, *adj.* unpleasant. A. & C. I. 2. 104.  
 Stigmatic, *sb.* one marked by nature with deformity. 2 H. 6. V. 1. 215; 3 H. 6. II. 2. 136.  
 Stigmatical, *adj.* marked with the stigma of deformity. C. of E. IV. 2. 22.  
 Still, *adj.* constant. R. 3. IV. 4. 220; T. A. III. 2. 45. *adv.* constantly, always. Two G. II. 6. 24; IV. 4. 30; Ham. II. 2. 42.  
 Stillatory, *sb.* a still. V. & A. 443.  
 Still-breeding, *adj.* continually breeding. E. V. 5. 2.  
 Still-closing, *adj.* constantly closing again. Tp. II. 3. 64.  
 Still-peering, *adj.* a doubtful word. A. W. III. 2. 113.  
 Still-stand, *sb.* a halt. 2 H. 4. II. 3. 64.  
 Still-versed, *adj.* constantly disturbed. Tp. I. 220.  
 Stilly, *adv.* softly, gently. H. 5. IV. chor. 5.  
 Stint, *v.t.* to check, stop. T. & C. IV. 5. 93; Tim. V. 4. 83. *v.t.* to stop, cease. R. & J. I. 3. 48; Per. IV. 4. 42.  
 Stitchery, *sb.* needlework. Cor. I. 3. 75.  
 Stitchy, *sb.* a smithy, or smith's forge. Ham. 2. 86. *v.t.* to forge. T. & C. IV. 5. 225.  
 Stoccedo, *sb.* a thrust in fencing. M. W. II. 1. 234.  
 Stocaina = stocaina. R. & J. III. 1. 77.  
 Stock, *sb.* stocking. Tw. N. I. 3. 144; 2 H. 4. II. 4. 130. A thrust in fencing. M. W. II. 3. 26. *v.t.* to put in the stocks. Lear, II. 2. 139; II. 4. 191.  
 Stock-fish, *sb.* dried cod. Tp. III. 2. 79; M. for M. III. 2. 116.  
 Stockish, *adj.* insensible. M. of V. V. 2. 81.  
 Stock-punished, *p.p.* set in the stocks. Lear, III. 4. 140.  
 Stomach, *sb.* courage. Tp. I. 2. 157; 1 H. 4. I. 1. 120; Ham. I. 1. 100. Pride. T. of S. V. 2. 176; H. 8. IV. 2. 34. *v.t.* to be angry at. A. & C. III. 4. 12.  
 Stomaching, *sb.* resentment. A. & C. II. 2. 9.  
 Stone, *v.t.* to turn to stone. Oth. V. 2. 63.  
 Stone-bow, *sb.* a cross-bow for shooting stones. Tw. N. II. 5. 51.  
 Stonished, *p.p.* astonished, amazed. V. & A. 825.  
 Stoop, *adj.* stooping; unless the reading is corrupt. L. L. L. IV. 3. 89. *v.t.* to swoop down upon the prey. H. 5. IV. 1. 112; Cym. V. 3. 42; V. 4. 116.  
 Story, *v.t.* to narrate, give an account of. Cym. I. 4. 34; V. & A. 1013; Lucr. 106.  
 Stoup, *sb.* a drinking-cup or vessel. Tw. N. II. 3. 14, 129; Ham. V. 2. 68; V. 2. 278; Oth. II. 3. 30.  
 Stout, *adj.* haughty, proud. Tw. N. II. 5. 185; 2 H. 6. I. 1. 187; Cor. III. 2. 78. Bold, courageous. John, IV. 2. 173; Mac. I. 3. 95.  
 Stoutness, *sb.* stubbornness. Cor. III. 2. 127; V. 6. 27.  
 Stover, *sb.* fodder for cattle in winter. Tp. IV. 1. 63.  
 Straight, *adv.* straightway, immediately. Ham. V. 2. 4; M. of V. I. 1. 31, 82.  
 Strain, *sb.* a stock race. H. 5. II. 4. 51; J. C. V. 1. 59. Natural disposition. Lear, V. 3. 40.  
 Impulse, emotion. Cor. V. 3. 129; 2 H. 4. IV. 5. 171. *v.t.* to urge, press. Oth. III. 3. 250. *v.t.* to exert oneself, make unusual effort. W. T. III. 2. 51.  
 Strain courtesy, to vie in giving precedence, decline to go first. R. & J. II. 4. 55; V. & A. 888.  
 Strait, *adj.* narrow. Cym. V. 3. 7, 11. Tight. H. 5. III. 7. 57. Strict. M. of M. II. 1. 9; 1 H. 4. IV. 3. 79; Tim. I. 2. 96. Illiberal, mis- John, V. 7. 42.  
 , *p.p.* put to difficulty, at a loss. W. T. IV. 4. 365.  
 Straily, *adv.* strictly. R. 3. I. 2. 83; IV. 2. 17.  
 Straliness, *sb.* strictness. M. for M. III. 2. 269.  
 Strange, *adj.* foreign. A. V. I. 3. 34; 2 H. 4. IV. 4. 69. Unaccustomed. Mac. I. 3. 145. Unacquainted, unfamiliar. Mac. III. 4. 122. Unusual, original. L. L. L. V. 1. 6. Reserved, distant. Tw. N. II. 5. 18; R. & J. II. 2. 101. To make it strange = to treat as something unusual. Two G. I. 2. 102; T. A. II. 1. 81.  
 Strangely, *adv.* extraordinarily. Tp. IV. 2. 7; Mac. IV. 3. 150. Like a stranger. 2 H. 4. V. 2. 63; T. & C. III. 3. 38, 71.  
 Strangeness, *sb.* distant manner, reserve. Tw. N. IV. 1. 16; T. & C. II. 3. 125; V. & A. 300.  
 Strangered, *p.p.* estranged, alienated. Lear, I. 2. 207.

- Strangle**, *v.t.* to choke, extinguish. H 2. v. 1. 137; Mac. II. 4. 7.
- Strangled**, *p.p.* suffocated. R. & J. IV. 3. 35.
- Strappado**, *sb.* a military punishment in which a man was drawn up by his arms strapped behind his back and suddenly let fall. H 4. II. 4. 262.
- Stratagem**, *sb.* a deed of surprising violence. M. of V. V. 2. 85; H 4. I. 2. 8; R. & J. III. 5. 212.
- Straw**, *adj.* straw-like. T. & C. V. 5. 24.
- Stray**, *sb.* an act of wandering, dereliction. Lear, I. 2. 212. A body of stragglers. H 4. IV. 2. 120. *v.t.* to mislead. C. of E. V. 1. 51.
- Stretch**, *v.t.* to open wide. H 5. II. 2. 55.
- Screwments**, *sb.* things strewed. Ham. V. 1. 256.
- Stricture**, *sb.* strictness. M. for M. I. 3. 12.
- Stride**, *v.t.* to step beyond. Cym. III. 3. 35.
- Strike**, *v.t.* to lower the sail. R 2. II. 1. 266; 3 H 6. V. 1. 52. The full phrase is 'strike sail'; used figuratively in the sense of 'submit, give way.' H 4. V. 2. 18; 3 H 6. III. 3. 5.
- Strika**, *v.t.* and *i.* used of the supposed injurious influence of the planets, to blast. Cor. II. 2. 17; Ham. I. 2. 162.
- Strika**, *v.t.* to tap. A. & C. II. 7. 103.
- Strikers**, *sb.* a cant term for wenchers. H 4. II. 1. 82.
- Strong**, *adj.* determined, resolute. B 2. v. 3. 59; Lear, II. 2. 79.
- Stromers**, *sb.* browzers. H 5. III. 7. 57.
- Strayed**, *p.p.* destroyed. A. & C. III. 11. 54.
- Struck**, *p.p.* struck in years = advanced in years. R 2. I. 2. 92; T. of B. II. 1. 362.
- Stuck**, *sb.* a thrust in fencing. Ham. IV. 7. 162; Tw. N. III. 4. 303.
- Studied**, *p.p.* practised. M. of V. II. 2. 205; Mac. I. 4. 9.
- Stuff**, *sb.* baggage. C. of E. IV. 4. 153. Furniture. T. of B. Ind. II. 145. Matter, substance. Ham. II. 2. 324; Oth. I. 2. 2.
- Stuffed**, *p.p.* complete, full. W. T. II. 1. 185.
- Stored**, *filled*. M. A. I. 1. 56; R. & J. III. 5. 183.
- Sty**, *v.t.* to pen up as in a sty. Tp. I. 2. 342.
- Subduement**, *sb.* conquest. T. & C. IV. 5. 187.
- Subject**, *sb.* subjects. M. for M. II. 4. 27; III. 2. 145; Ham. I. 1. 72.
- Subscibe**, *v.t.* to be surety. A. W. III. 4. 89; IV. 5. 34. To yield, submit. H 6. II. 4. 44; Lear, III. 7. 65. *v.t.* to admit, acknowledge. M. for M. II. 4. 89; M. A. V. 2. 59. Followed by 'to.' Two G. V. 4. 145; A. W. V. 3. 96.
- Subscription**, *sb.* submission, obedience. Lear, III. 2. 12.
- Subtractors**, *sb.* detractors. Tw. N. I. 2. 37.
- Subtilties**, *sb.* illusions, false appearances, with a reference perhaps to the use of the word in confectionery to denote devices in confectionery. Tp. V. 2. 222.
- Subtle**, *adj.* smooth and deceptive. Cor. v. Success, *v.t.* to descend by order of succession. A. W. III. 7. 83; Oth. V. 2. 267.
- Succession**, *sb.* consequence. A. W. II. 2. 209.
- Succession**, *sb.* succession. W. T. I. 2. 304; H 4. 302; 45. Issue, event. R 2. IV. 4. 256; Cor. I. 2. 7.
- Successantly**, *adv.* in succession, one after another. T. A. IV. 4. 173.
- Successive**, *Successive* title = title to the succession. T. A. I. 1. 4.
- Successively**, *adv.* from one to another. R 2. III. 2. 73. In order of. H 4. IV. 5. 202; R 2. III. 7. 1.
- Sudden**, *adj.* hasty. As, II. 7. 151; Mac. IV. 3. 59.
- Suddenly**, *adv.* instantly. 3. IV. 2. 59, 20; M. W. IV. 1. 6; W. T. 200.
- Suffer**, *v.t.* to be put to. Tp. II. 2. 58; Two G. IV. 4. 17, 56.
- Sufferance**, *sb.* suffering. M. for M. II. 4. 167; Lear, III. 6. 113. Pat. forbearance. M. of V. I. 3. 111; H 5. 132. Loss. Oth. II. 2. 23. Death by execution. H 5. II. 2. 159.
- Suffered**, *p.p.* allowed to continue. V. A. 388; H 6. III. 2. 262; V. 1. 153; 3 H 6. IV. 8. 8.
- Suffiance**, blunder for sufficient. M. A. III. 5. 56.
- Suggest**, *v.t.* to tempt. R 2. III. 4. 75; H 5. II. 2. 114.
- Suggestion**, *sb.* temptation, prompting. Tp. IV. 1. 26; Mac. I. 3. 134. Cunning device. H 8. IV. 2. 35.
- Suit**, *sb.* attendance, service, due to a feudal superior. M. for M. IV. 4. 19. 'Out of suits with fortune' is out of fortune's service. As, I. 2. 252. *v.t.* to dress. Sonn. CXXXII. 12. *v.r.* to dress oneself. As, I. 3. 118; Cym. V. 1. 23. *v.t.* to agree, accord. M. A. V. 1. 7; Tw. N. I. 2. 50.
- Suited**, *p.p.* dressed. M. of V. I. 2. 79.
- Sullen**, *adj.* sad, mournful. John. I. 2. 28; H 4. I. 1. 102; R. & J. IV. 5. 82.
- Sullens**, *sb.* fits of sullenness. R 2. II. 1. 139.
- Sumless**, *adj.* inestimable. H 2. I. 2. 165.
- Summer-seeming**, *adj.* looking like summer, or appearing in summer only, and so, transitory. Mac. IV. 3. 84.
- Sumpter**, *sb.* a pack-horse. Lear, II. 4. 299.
- Superfluous**, *adj.* living in unnecessary plenty. Lear, IV. 2. 70; A. W. I. 1. 116.
- Superfluous**, *sb.* superfluity. Lear, III. 4. 35.
- Supernal**, *adj.* high. John. II. 1. 112.
- Superpraise**, *v.t.* to overpraise. M. N's Dr. III. 2. 153.
- Superscript**, *sb.* superscription. I. I. I. IV. 2. 135.
- Superserviceable**, *adj.* over-officious. Lear, II. 2. 29.
- Supersubtle**, *adj.* excessively cunning. Oth. I. 3. 363.
- Supervise**, *sb.* inspection. Ham. V. 2. 23.
- Supervisor**, *sb.* a looker on. Oth. III. 2. 222.
- Suppliance**, *sb.* temporary gratification, passing. Ham. I. 3. 9.
- Suppliant**, *adj.* auxiliary. Cym. III. 7. 14.
- Supplyment**, *sb.* supply, furnishing with. Cym. III. 4. 122.
- Supportable**, *adj.* endurable. Tp. V. 2. 245.
- Supportance**, *sb.* support. R 2. III. 4. 27; Tw. N. III. 4. 229.
- Supposal**, *sb.* opinion, notion. Ham. I. 2. 12.
- Suppose**, *sb.* supposition. T. of B. V. 4. 220; I. & C. I. 3. 21.

- Supposed, blunder for 'deposed.' *M. for M.* II. 2. 126.
- Supreme. Used as a substantive. *V. & A.* 596.
- Sur-addition, *sb.* surname. *Cym.* I. 2. 33.
- Surance, *sb.* assurance. *T. A. V.* 2. 45.
- Surcease, *sb.* cessation. *Mac.* I. 7. 4. *v.i.* to cease. *Locr.* 1766; *Ocr.* III. 2. 122; *R. & J.* IV. 1. 97.
- Sure, *adj.* secure, safe. *Two G. V.* 2. 12; *R. 3.* III. 2. 26. Betrothed, married. *M. W. V.* 5. 237; *As. V.* 4. 241. Trustworthy. *H. 4.* III. 1. 1.
- Surfeiter, *sb.* a glutton, reveller. *A. & C.* II. 1. 32.
- Surfeit-taking, *adj.* indulging to excess. *Locr.* 698.
- Serminus, *sb.* speculation, imagination. *Mac.* I. 3. 141; *T. A.* II. 3. 219.
- Surmount, *v.t.* to surpass. *L. L. L. V.* 2. 677; *R. 2.* II. 3. 64. *v.i.* to be surpassing, exceed. *H. 6.* V. 3. 191.
- Surprise, *v.t.* to seize, capture. *H. 4.* I. 2. 93; *H. 6.* IV. 9. 8.
- Sur-reined, *p.p.* over-worked or over-ridden. *H. 5.* III. 5. 19.
- Survey, *v.t.* to see, observe. *Mac.* I. 2. 31.
- Suspect, *sb.* suspicion. *V. & A.* 1010; *Sonn.* LXX. 3. 13; *R. 3.* I. 3. 89.
- respect, *M. A.* IV. 2. 76.
- Suspuration, *sb.* the act of drawing breath. *Ham.* I. 2. 79.
- Suspire, *v.t.* to draw breath, breathe. *John.* III. 4. 80; *H. 4.* IV. 5. 33.
- Swabber, *sb.* a bully, blusterer. *H. 5.* III. 2. 30.
- Swabbing, *adj.* swaggering, dashing. *As.* I. 3. 122. *Smashing.* *R. & J.* I. 2. 70.
- Swath, *sb.* the quantity cut by a mower at one sweep of his scythe. *T. & C.* V. 5. 25. Bandages, swaddling clothes. *Tim.* IV. 3. 22.
- Swathing clothes, *sb.* swaddling clothes, bandages in which newly born infants are wrapped. *H. 4.* III. 2. 122.
- Sway, *sb.* steady and equable movement, balanced order. *J. C.* I. 3. 3. This way of motion = this which controls or influences motion. *John.* II. 2. 57.
- Swayed, *p.p.* stained, broken. *T. of S.* III. 2.
- Sweep, *p.p.* oscillating, inclining. *H. 5.* I. 2. 75.
- Sway on. To move steadily on. *H. 4.* IV. 2. 24.
- Swear, *v.t.* to adjure. *Locr.* I. 2. 162.
- Swearing, *sb.* oaths, adjurations. *Tw. N.* V. 1. 277.
- Swear over. 'Swear his thought over by particular stars' = repeat your oath with reference to his thought by each etc. *W. T. L.* 2. 424.
- Sweat. The past tense and participles of 'sweat.' *M. of V.* III. 2. 205; *As.* II. 3. 58; *Tim.* VII. 2. 28.
- Sweep, *sb.* a sweeping train. *Tim.* I. 2. 127.
- v.t.* to walk in pomp. *H. 6.* I. 3. 82.
- Sweet and twenty = sweet kisses and twenty of them. *Tw. N.* II. 3. 52.
- Sweeting, *sb.* a term of endearment. *Tw. N.* II. 3. 43; *Oth.* II. 3. 252.
- Sweet-suggesting, *adj.* sweetly tempting. *Two G.* II. 6. 7.
- Swift, *adj.* quick, prompt. *M. A.* III. 2. 89; *As.* V. 4. 65.
- Will'd, *p.p.* swallowed greedily. *H. 5.* III. 2. 14.
- Wings, *v.t.* to beat. *T. of S.* V. 2. 104; *John.* II. 1. 288.
- Swings-buckler, *sb.* a rioter, blusterer. *H. 4.* III. 2. 24.
- Witzers, *sb.* Swiss guards. *Ham.* IV. 5. 27.
- Woopstake, *adj.* sweeping off all the stakes, indiscriminately. *Ham.* IV. 5. 248.
- Sword and buckler. The weapons of vulgar fighting men. *H. 4.* I. 3. 230.
- Sworder, *sb.* a fencer, gladiator. *H. 6.* IV. 2. 135; *A. & C.* III. 13. 31.
- Sword-men, *sb.* swordsmen. *A. W.* II. 2. 62.
- Sworn brother, *sb.* one pledged to share another's fortune, an intimate friend. *M. A.* I. 2. 73; *R. 2.* V. 1. 20.
- Sworn out, *p.p.* forsworn. *L. L. L.* II. 2. 104.
- Swoond, *v.t.* to swoon. *Tim.* IV. 3. 373; *Locr.* 1286.
- 'Wounds, for 'God's wounds.' *Ham.* II. 2. 604.
- Sympathize, *v.t.* to feel sympathy with. *R. 2.* V. 2. 45.
- Sympathized, *p.p.* equally matched. *Locr.* 1213; *L. L. L.* III. 1. 52. Equally shared. *C. of E.* V. 1. 397. Suitably expressed. *Sonn.* LXXXIII. 11.
- Sympathy, *sb.* equality. *R. 2.* IV. 1. 23; *Oth.* II. 1. 232.
- Table, *sb.* the tablet on which a picture is painted. *John.* V. 2. 323, 304; *A. W.* I. 2. 106. A tablet or note-book. *Ham.* I. 3. 98, 107. The palm of the hand. *M. of V.* II. 2. 167.
- Tables, *sb.* backgammon. *L. L. L.* V. 2. 256.
- Table-book, *sb.* memorandum book. *W. T.* IV. 4. 610; *Ham.* II. 2. 156.
- Tabled, *p.p.* set down in writing. *Cym.* I. 4. 6.
- Tabor, *sb.* a small drum. *Tw. N.* 2. 373; *Tw. N.* III. 2. 5; *M. A.* II. 3. 15.
- Taborer, *sb.* a player on the tabor. *Tw. N.* 2. 160.
- Tabourines, *sb.* drums. *T. & C.* IV. 5. 273; *A. & C.* IV. 2. 37.
- Tackled, *adj.* a tackled stair is a ladder of ropes. *R. & J.* II. 4. 204.
- Taffeta, *sb.* originally any kind of plain silk. *Tw. N.* II. 4. 77; *L. L. L.* 7. 2. 122.
- Tag, *sb.* the rabble. *Cor.* III. 2. 204.
- Taint, *sb.* blamish, stain. *Mac.* IV. 3. 224; *A. & C.* V. 2. 20. Discredit. *Locr.* 1. 2. 204.
- v.t.* to be infected. *Mac.* V. 3. 2. 94. To disparage. *Oth.* II. 2. 273. To begin, infect.

- Oth. I. 3. 272; IV. 2. 161. *p.p.* tainted. *s* H. 6. V. 3. 183.
- Tainture, *sb.* defilement. *s* H. 6. II. 1. 188.
- Take, *v.t.* to captivate. *TP.* V. 1. 313; *W. T.* IV. 4. 119. To strike. *R. 3.* I. 4. 159; *Tw. N.* II. 5. 75. To infect, bewitch. *M. W.* IV. 4. 32; *Ham.* I. 1. 163. To betake oneself to. *C.* of *R. v.* 1. 36, 94. To leap. *John.* V. 2. 138. Take air=get abroad. *Tw. N.* III. 4. 145. Take haste=make haste. *Tim.* V. 1. 213. Take head=take liberty or license. *John.* II. 1. 579. Take in=conquer, subdue. *Cor. I.* 2. 24; *A. & C. I.* 1. 23. Take me with you=let me follow your meaning. *R. & J.* III. 5. 142; *s* H. 4. II. 4. 506. Take off=remove, make away with. *Mac.* III. 1. 105. Take order=take measures. *M.* for *M.* II. 1. 246; *R. 2.* V. 1. 53. Take out=copy. *Oth.* III. 3. 296; *III.* 4. 180. Take peace=make peace. *H. 8.* II. 1. 84. Take scorn=scorn, disdain. *As.* IV. 2. 14; *H. 5.* IV. 7. 107. Take thought=indulge in sorrow. *J. C.* II. 1. 187. Take truce=make truce. *John.* III. 1. 17; *V. & A.* 82. Take up=buy on credit. *s* H. 6. IV. 7. 135. Make up a quarrel. *Tw. N.* III. 4. 320. *Levy.* *s* H. 4. II. 1. 199. Take to task, rebuke. *Two G.* I. 2. 135; *Cym.* II. 1. 4. Encounter. *Cor.* III. 1. 244.
- Taking, *sb.* blasting, malignant influence. *Lear.* III. 4. 61.
- Taking off, *sb.* making away with, killing. *Mac.* I. 7. 20; *Lear.* V. 1. 65.
- Taking up, *sb.* borrowing, obtaining on credit. *s* H. 4. I. 2. 46.
- Talents, *sb.* lockets made of hair plaited and set in gold. *Comp.* 204.
- Tall, *adj.* active, valiant, fine. *Tw. N.* I. 3. 20. *R. 3.* I. 4. 156.
- Tallow-catch, *sb.* a vessel filled with tallow. *s* H. 4. II. 4. 252.
- Tamed, *p.p.* A tamed piece is a vessel of wine which has become flat and stale. *T. & C.* IV. 1. 62.
- Tang, *sb.* a harsh sound, twang. *TP.* II. 2. 52. *v.t.* & *v.i.* to twang, sound loudly. *Tw. N.* II. 5. 163; *III.* 4. 78.
- Tanling, *sb.* anything tanned by the sun. *Cym.* IV. 4. 29.
- Tardy, *v.t.* to delay, retard. *W. T.* III. 2. 163.
- Target, *sb.* a target or small shield. *L. L. L.* V. 2. 556; *A. & C.* II. 6. 39.
- Tarre, *v.t.* to set on dogs to fight. *T. & C.* I. 3. 390; *John.* IV. 1. 117. To incite. *Ham.* II. 2. 370.
- Tarriance, *sb.* stay, tarrying. *Two G.* II. 7. 90; *Pass. P.* 74.
- Tarry, *v.t.* & *v.i.* to stay. *Two G.* II. 3. 39; *M.* of *V.* IV. 2. 18; *J. C.* V. 5. 25; *s* H. 4. III. 2. 304.
- Tartar, *sb.* Tartarus. *Tw. N.* II. 5. 205; *H. 5.* II. 2. 123.
- Tax, *v.t.* to tax. *s* H. 4. IV. 3. 92. To challenge. *Scm.* LXXII. 1; *R. 3.* IV. 1. 52.
- Taking, *sb.* challenge. *s* H. 4. V. 2. 51.
- Tamed gentle, *sb.* tiercel-gentle, the male peregrine falcon. *R. & J.* II. 2. 160.
- Taste, *sb.* trial, proof. *As.* III. 2. 106. *Lear.* I. 2. 47. In some taste=in some slight degree. *J. C.* IV. 2. 34. *v.t.* to try, prove. *Tw. N.* III. 4. 267; *III.* 1. 87; *s* H. 4. IV. 2. 129.
- Tattered, *adj.* ragged. *R. 2.* III. 3. 52.
- Tattering, *adj.* tattered, hanging in rags. *John.* V. 5. 7.
- Tawdry-lace, *sb.* a rustic neckpiece. *W. T.* IV. 4. 253.
- Tawny coats, the livery of persons belonging to the ecclesiastical courts. *s* H. 6. I. 3. 47.
- Tax, *sb.* reproach. *A. W.* II. 2. 173.
- Taxation, *sb.* satire, censure. *As.* I. 2. 91. Claim, demand. *Tw. N.* II. 5. 235.
- Taxing, *sb.* satire. *As.* II. 7. 86.
- Teen, *sb.* grief, vexation. *TP.* I. 2. 64; *R. 3.* IV. 1. 97.
- Teeth. 'From his teeth'=only in appearance, not from the heart. *A. & C.* III. 4. 10.
- Tell, *v.t.* to count. *TP.* II. 1. 289; *R. 3.* I. 4. 122. I cannot tell—I know not what to think. *M.* of *V.* I. 3. 97; *Cor.* V. 6. 15.
- Temper, *sb.* temperament. *J. C.* I. 2. 129; *Mac.* III. 1. 52. *v.t.* to mix. *M. A.* II. 2. 21; *Cym.* V. 5. 250. To soften by heat, as wax. *V. & A.* 565; *s* H. 4. IV. 3. 140. Or by moisture, as clay. *s* H. 6. III. 1. 311; *Lear.* I. 4. 326.
- Temperality, blunder for 'temper.' *s* H. 4. II. 4. 25.
- Temperance, *sb.* temperance. *TP.* II. 1. 42. Moderation, calmness. *Cor.* III. 3. 28; *Ham.* III. 2. 8. Chastity. *A. & C.* III. 23. 121; *Lucr.* 824.
- Temperate, *adj.* chaste. *TP.* IV. 1. 122.
- Tempered, *p.p.* disposed. *s* H. 4. I. 3. 235. Composed. *As.* I. 2. 14.
- Temple, *sb.* used of a church. *M.* of *V.* II. 1. 44; *M. A.* III. 3. 172.
- Temporary, *adj.* A temporary meddler is perhaps one who meddles in temporal matters. *M.* for *M.* V. 1. 145.
- Tenable, *adj.* capable of being kept. *Ham.* I. 2. 248.
- Tend, *v.i.* to attend, wait. *Ham.* I. 3. 83; *IV.* 3. 47. To be attentive. *TP.* I. 1. 2. *v.t.* to tend to, regard. *s* H. 6. I. 2. 264. To wait upon. *A. & C.* II. 2. 212.
- Tendance, *sb.* attention. *Tim.* I. 1. 57. Persons attending. *Tim.* I. 1. 80.
- Tender, *sb.* regard, care. *s* H. 4. V. 4. 49; *Lear.* I. 4. 250.
- Tender, *v.t.* to regard, hold dear. *TP.* II. 1. 270; *As.* V. 2. 77; *Ham.* I. 3. 107.
- Tender-hearted, *adj.* set in a delicate handle or frame. *Lear.* II. 4. 174.
- Tending, *sb.* attention. *Mac.* I. 5. 38.
- Tent, *sb.* a probe. *T. & C.* II. 2. 16. *v.t.* to probe. *Ham.* II. 2. 626; *Cor.* III. 1. 236. To cure. *Cor.* I. 9. 31. *v.i.* to lodge as in a tent. *Cor.* III. 2. 116.
- Tiercel, *sb.* the male goshawk. *T. & C.* III. 2. 26.
- Termagant, *sb.* a ranting character in the old miracle plays. *Ham.* III. 2. 25. Used adjectively. *s* H. 4. V. 4. 124.
- Terminations, *sb.* terms, expressions. *M. A.* II. 1. 256.
- Terrible, *adj.* indescribable. *Comp.* 24.
- Terrene, *adj.* terrestrial, earthly. *A. & C.* III. 23. 153.



- Tertian**, *sb.* a fever recurring every third day. H 5. II. 1. 124.
- Test**, *sb.* testimony, evidence. Oth. I. 3. 107.
- Tested**, *adj.* refined. M. for M. II. 2. 149.
- Tester**, *sb.* a sixpence. 2 H 4. III. 2. 296.
- Testered**, *p.p.* presented with sixpence. Two G. I. 4. 153.
- Testimonied**, *p.p.* attested, proved. M. for M. III. 2. 153.
- Testril**, *sb.* a sixpence. Tw. N. II. 3. 34.
- Tetchy**, *adj.* fretful, irritable. H 3. IV. 4. 168; R. & J. I. 3. 32.
- Tetter**, *sb.* an eruption on the skin. T. & C. v. 1. 27; Ham. I. 5. 71. *v.t.* to infect with tetter. Cor. III. 1. 79.
- Than**, *adv.* then. Lucr. 1440.
- Thane**, *sb.* an old title nearly equivalent to that of earl. Mac. I. 2. 45, &c.
- Thanking**, *sb.* thanks. A. W. III. 5. 101; Cym. v. 5. 407.
- Tharborough**, *sb.* thirdborough, constable. L. L. L. I. 1. 185.
- Theft**, *sb.* the thing stolen. Ham. III. 2. 94.
- Theoric**, *sb.* theory. A. W. IV. 3. 162; H 5. I. 1. 52; Oth. I. 1. 24.
- Thereabout**, *adv.* about that part. Ham. II. 2. 468.
- Thereafter**, *adv.* according. 2 H 4. III. 2. 56.
- Thereo**, *adv.* besides, in addition. W. T. I. 2. 391; Cym. IV. 4. 33.
- Thereunto**, *adv.* besides. Oth. II. 1. 142.
- Thews**, *sb.* muscles, sinews. J. C. I. 3. 81; Ham. I. 3. 12.
- Thick**, *adv.* rapidly, fast. 2 H 4. II. 3. 24; A. & C. I. 5. 63.
- Thicken**, *v.t.* to grow thick or dark. Mac. III. 2. 50; A. & C. II. 3. 27.
- Thick-pleached**, *adj.* thickly intertwined. M. A. I. 2. 10.
- Thick-skin**, *sb.* a stupid lout. M. W. IV. 5. 2 M. N's Dr. III. 2. 13.
- Thievery**, *sb.* that which is stolen. T. & C. IV. 4. 45.
- Think**, *v.t.* to indulge in sorrowful thoughts. A. & C. III. 13. 1. *v.t.* think much=think it to be a great thing. Tp. I. 2. 252. **Think scorn**=disdain. M. N's Dr. v. 1. 138; 2 H 6. IV. 2. 13.
- Thinking**, *sb.* thought. A. W. v. 3. 128; Oth. I. 2. 76.
- Thinks**. **Thinks't** thee!=seems it to thee. Ham. v. 2. 63.
- Thirdborough**, *sb.* a constable. T. of S. Ind. I. 12.
- This**=thus. V. & A. 205.
- Thiane**. Perhaps, in this way. M. N's Dr. I. 2. 55.
- Thorough**, *prep.* through. L. L. L. II. 1. 235.
- Thou**, *v.t.* to address one as 'thou.' Tw. N. III. 2. 42.
- Though**, *conj.* what though!=what matters it M. W. I. 2. 286; Aa. III. 3. 51; H 5. II. 3. 9.
- Thought**, *sb.* care, anxiety, sorrow, melancholy. Tw. N. II. 4. 115; Ham. III. 2. 65; IV. 2. 188; J. C. II. 1. 181; A. & C. IV. 6. 35. With a thought=as swift as thought, in a moment. Tp. IV. 1. 164; 2 H 4. II. 4. 242. So, 'upon a thought.' Mac. III. 4. 55.
- Thoughten**, *p.p.* be you thoughten=entertain the thought. Per. IV. 6. 115.
- Thought-executing**, *adj.* swift as thought in operation. Lear. III. 2. 4.
- Thoughtful**, *adj.* careful. 2 H 4. IV. 5. 73.
- Thought-sick**, *adj.* sick with anxiety or sadness. Ham. III. 4. 52.
- Thrall**, *sb.* slavery. Pass. P. 266. *adj.* enslaved. V. & A. 837.
- Thrall'd**, *p.p.* enslaved. Ham. III. 4. 74.
- Thrasonical**, *adj.* boastful. Aa. v. 2. 34; L. L. L. v. 1. 14.
- Threaden**, *adj.* made of thread. H 5. III. chor. 10; Comp. 33.
- Three-farthings**. The three-farthing pieces of Elizabeth, struck in 1561, were very thin, and were distinguished from the pence by having a rose behind the queen's profile. John. I. 1. 143.
- Three-man beetle**, a rammer worked by three men. 2 H 4. I. 2. 235.
- Three-man-song-men**, singers of glees in three parts. W. T. IV. 3. 44.
- Three-nooked**, *adj.* having three corners, Europe, Asia, and Africa. A. & C. IV. 6. 6.
- Three-pile**, *sb.* the richest kind of velvet. W. T. IV. 3. 14.
- Three-piled**, *adj.* having a thick pile. M. for M. I. 2. 33. *Used* figuratively, high-flown, superfluous. L. L. L. v. 2. 407.
- Threne**, *sb.* a funeral song, dirge. Phoen. 49.
- Thrift**, *sb.* success. M. of V. I. 1. 175.
- Thrifty**, *adj.* won by thrift. Aa. II. 3. 39.
- Throe**, *v.t.* to put in agony. Tp. II. 1. 231. To bring forth with agony. A. & C. III. 7. 81.
- Throng**, *v.t.* to fill as with a crowd. V. & A. 567.
- Thronged**, *p.p.* crowded, entirely possessed. Per. I. 1. 101; II. 1. 77. *Pressed*, as in a crowd. Lucr. 1217.
- Throstle**, *sb.* the song-thrush. M. N's Dr. III. 1. 130; M. of V. I. 2. 65.
- Through**, *adv.* To go through or be through with=to complete a bargain. M. for M. II. 1. 285; Per. IV. 2. 47; 2 H 4. I. 2. 45. **Thoroughly**. T. & C. II. 3. 232; Cym. IV. 2. 160.
- Throughfare**, *sb.* thoroughfare. M. of V. II. 7. 42; Cym. I. 2. 11.
- Thoroughly**, *adv.* thoroughly. Tp. III. 3. 24; Ham. IV. 5. 136.
- Throw**, *sb.* As this throw=at this cast or venture; a figure from dice or bowls. Tw. N. v. 1. 45.
- Thrum**, *sb.* the tufted end of a weaver's warp. M. N's Dr. v. 1. 291.
- Thrummed**, *adj.* made of loose tufts. M. W. IV. 2. 80.
- Thunder-stone**, *sb.* thunderbolt. J. C. I. 2. 49; Cym. IV. 2. 271.
- Thwart**, *adj.* perverse. Lear. I. 4. 305. *v.t.* to cross. Per. IV. 4. 20.
- Ticed**, *p.p.* enticed. T. A. II. 3. 92.
- Tickle**, *adj.* unstable, tottering. M. for M. I. 2. 277; 2 H 6. I. 2. 216. 'Tickle of the sere' is an expression used of a musket in which the 'sere' or trigger is moved with the least touch; hence 'lungs tickle of the sere' are such as are easily provoked to laughter. Ham. II. 2. 337.

- Table-brain**, *sb.* said to be a cant name for some strong liquor. *J. H. 4. 13. 4. 438.*
- Tickish**, *adj.* wanton. *T. & C. IV. 3. 62.*
- Tick-tack**, *sb.* a kind of backgammon. *M. for M. 1. 2. 196.*
- Tide**, *sb.* time, season. *John, III. 1. 86.* 'The tide of times' = the regular course of time. *J. O. III. 1. 257.* *v.t.* to bide. *M. N's Dr. V. 1. 205.*
- Tight**, *adj.* adroit, quick, smart. *A. & C. IV. 4. 15.* Of a ship, watertight, sound. *TP. V. 1. 224; T. of S. II. 1. 381.*
- Tightly**, *adv.* bristly, smartly. *M. W. 1. 3. 88; II. 3. 67.*
- Tike**, *sb.* *s. cur.* *Lear, III. 6. 73; H. 5. II. 1. 31.*
- Tilly-fally**, or **Tilly-vally**, *interj.* an exclamation of good-natured contempt. *s. H. 4. II. 4. 90; Tw. N. II. 3. 83.*
- Tilth**, *sb.* tillage. *TP. II. 1. 152; M. for M. 1. 4. 44.*
- Tilting**, *pp. contending.* *C. of R. IV. 2. 6.*
- Timbered**, *p.p.* too slightly timbered = made of too light wood. *Ham. IV. 7. 22.*
- Time**, *sb.* used for 'the time' or 'the times.' *Ham. III. 1. 70.* 'The time of scorn' = the scornful time. *Oth. IV. 2. 54.* 'The time' = the present condition of things. *John, IV. 2. 61; V. 7. 110; Mac. IV. 3. 10; Ham. 1. 5. 188.*
- Timeless**, *adj.* untimely. *R. 2. IV. 1. 5; R. & J. V. 3. 162.*
- Timely**, *adj.* opportune, welcome. *Mac. III. 3. 7. adv. early.* *Mac. II. 3. 51.*
- Timely-parted**, *adj.* recently dead. *s. H. 6. III. 2. 161.*
- Time-keeper**, *sb.* a time-server, one who complies with the times. *Tw. N. II. 3. 160; Cor. III. 1. 46.*
- Tinct**, *sb.* colour, dye. *Ham. III. 4. 91.* **Tincture**. *A. W. V. 3. 102; A. & C. I. 5. 37.*
- Tincture**, *sb.* dye, colour. *Sonn. LIV. 6; Two G. IV. 4. 160.*
- Tire**, *sb.* a head-dress. *Two G. IV. 4. 100; M. W. III. 3. 62.* **Furniture** of a bedroom. *Per. III. 2. 22.*
- Tire**, *v.t.* to feed ravenously, like a bird of prey. *V. & A. 56; 3 H. 6. I. 1. 569; Tim. III. 6. 5; Cym. III. 4. 97. v.t.* to make to feed ravenously. *Luce. 417.*
- Tiring-house**, *sb.* a dressing room. *M. N's Dr. III. 1. 4.*
- Track**, *sb.* phistic, a cough. *T. & C. V. 3. 101.*
- Take**, *v.t.* to take tithes. *John, III. 1. 134.*
- Tithing**, *sb.* a subdivision of a county. *Lear, III. 4. 140.*
- Title-head**, *sb.* title page. *s. H. 4. I. 1. 60.*
- Titles**, *sb.* trifles. *L. L. L. IV. 1. 85.*
- To**, *prep.* compared to. *TP. I. 2. 480; s. H. 6. III. 2. 25.* In addition to. *John, I. 1. 244; T. & C. I. 2. 7.*
- Toss**, *v.t.* to draw out, disentangle, as wool. *W. T. IV. 4. 760.*
- Tod**, *sb.* twenty-eight pounds of wool. *W. T. IV. 3. 34. v.t.* to yield a tod. *W. T. IV. 3. 33.*
- Togers**, *adv.* before. *L. L. L. III. 1. 83; T. A. III. 4. 204.*
- Toga**, *sb.* a long gown. *Cor. II. 3. 122.*
- Togged**, *adj.* wearing a toga, gowned. *Oth. 1. 2. 25.*
- Toll**, *v.t.* to extort painfully. *M. N's Dr. V. 1. 74; Ham. I. 1. 72.*
- Token**, *sb.* sign, pledge of love. *Two G. IV. 4. 79. v.t.* to betoken. *A. W. IV. 2. 63.*
- Tokened**, *adj.* marked with plague spots. *A. & C. III. 10. 5.*
- Toll**, *v.t.* to pay toll. *A. W. 3. 120. v.t.* to take toll. *John, III. 1. 1. 3. 120. v.t.* to sound for. *s. H. 4. I. 103.*
- Tomb**, *p.p.* buried. *Sonn. 13.*
- Tombola**, *sb.* coarse strum. *Cym. I. 5. 122.*
- Tongue**, *sb.* to utter with tongue. *Cym. V. 4. 148.* To denounce. *M. for M. IV. 4. 28.*
- Tongues**, *sb.* votes. *Cor. II. 3. 116; III. 1. 35.*
- Too much**, used substantively. *Ham. IV. 7. 110.*
- Too too**, *adv.* repeated for emphasis. *Two G. II. 4. 205; M. of V. II. 6. 42; Ham. 1. 2. 129; Luce. 174.*
- Top**, *v.t.* to surpass. *Mac. IV. 3. 57; Cor. II. 1. 23.*
- Topless**, *adj.* without a superior, supreme. *T. & C. I. 3. 152.*
- Topped**, *p.p.* having the top cut off. *Per. 1. 4. 9.*
- Torch**, *sb.* a torchbearer. *A. W. II. 1. 165.*
- Torch-staves**, *sb.* staves to which torches were affixed. *H. 5. IV. 2. 46.*
- Tortive**, *adj.* twisted. *T. & C. I. 3. 9.*
- Touch**, *sb.* sensation, delicate feeling. *TP. V. 1. 21; Two G. II. 7. 18; R. 3. I. 2. 17; Mac. IV. 2. 9.* **Trait**. *As. V. 4. 27; T. & C. III. 3. 175.* A dash, spice. *R. 2. IV. 4. 157.* **Touchstone**. *s. H. 4. IV. 4. 10; R. 3. IV. 2. 8.* 'Of noble touch' = of tried nobility. *Cor. I. 1. 49.* 'Brave touch' = fine test of valour. *M. N's Dr. III. 2. 70.* Slight hint. *H. 8. V. 1. 13.* 'To know no touch' = to have no skill. *R. 2. I. 3. 165; Ham. III. 2. 371.*
- Touch**, *v.t.* to test, prove. *John, III. 1. 100; Oth. III. 3. 81.*
- Tourney**, *v.t.* to tilt, run in a tournament. *Per. II. 1. 116, 120.*
- Touse**, *v.t.* to pull tear. *M. for M. V. 1. 313.*
- Toward**, *adj.* docile, tractable. *V. & A. 1157; T. of S. V. 2. 182. adv.* ready at hand, in preparation. *M. N's Dr. III. 1. 82; Ham. I. 1. 77.*
- Towards**, *adj.* docile. *Tim. III. 1. 17.*
- Towards**, *adv.* in preparation. *R. & J. 1. 5. 124.*
- Tower**, *v.t.* to soar, as a bird of prey. *John, II. 1. 250; V. 2. 129; Mac. II. 4. 12.*
- Toy**, *sb.* a trifle, idle fancy, folly. *M. N's Dr. V. 1. 3; Mac. II. 3. 99; John, I. 1. 232; Ham. 1. 4. 75.*
- Trace**, *v.t.* to follow. *s. H. 4. III. 2. 48; Ham. V. 2. 125.*
- Track**, *sb.* track. *Tim. I. 2. 52.* **Course**. *Sonn. VII. 12; H. 8. I. 1. 45.*
- Trade**, *sb.* resort, traffic. *R. 2. III. 3. 156; s. H. 4. I. 2. 174.* 'The trade of most professions' = where more performances are to be met with. *H. 8. V. 1. 36.* **Business**. *Tw. N. III. 2. 63; Ham. III. 2. 346.*
- Traded**, *adj.* practised, experienced. *John, IV. 3. 109; T. & C. II. 6. 64.*
- Trade-fallen**, *adj.* fallen out of employment. *s. H. 4. IV. 2. 32.*
- Traducement**, *sb.* calumny. *Cor. I. 6. 6.*
- Trader**, *sb.* trader, merchant. *M. of V. 1. 2.*

- Train**, *sb.* an allotment, bait. *Mac. IV. 3. 118.*  
*v.t.* to entice, decoy. *John. II. 4. 175;*  
*T. A. V. 3. 104.*
- Tractous**, *adj.* treacherous. *W. T. IV. 4. 521.*
- Trammel** *up.* To entangle as in a net. *Mac. I. 7. 3.*
- Tranced**, *p.p.* entranced. *Lear. V. 3. 218.*
- Tranect**, *sb.* a ferry; a doubtful word. *M. of V. III. 4. 53.*
- Translate**, *v.t.* to transform. *M. N's Dr. III. 1. 122; Ham. III. 1. 113.*
- Transport**, *v.t.* to remove from the world. *M. for M. IV. 3. 72; M. N's Dr. IV. 2. 4.*
- Transportance**, *sb.* conveyance. *T. & C. III. 2. 12.*
- Traah**, *v.t.* to lop, cut off the branches. *Th. 1. 2. 81.* To check the pace of a dog when it outstrips the rest. *T. of S. Ind. 1. 17; Oth. II. 1. 312.*
- Travail**, *v.t.* to labour, toil. *A. W. II. 3. 165; Tim. V. 1. 17.*
- Travel**, *sb.* wandering, roaming. *Oth. 1. 3. 139.*  
*After a demure travel of regard,* allowing his look to pass gravely from one to another. *M. N. II. 5. 59. v.t.* to stroll. *Ham. II. 2. 343.*
- Travel-stained**, *adj.* travel-stained. *2 H. 4. IV. 3. 40.*
- Traverse**, *v.t.* to march to the right or left. *2 H. 4. III. 2. 291; Oth. 1. 3. 378. v.t.* to parry. *M. W. II. 3. 25. adv.* across. *As. III. 4. 45.*
- Traversed**, *p.p.* crossed, folded. *Tim. V. 4. 7.*
- Tray-trip**, *sb.* a common game at dice which depended on throwing a trey. *Tw. N. II. 5. 207.*
- Treach**, *sb.* traitor. *Lear. 1. 2. 133.*
- Treaculous**, *adj.* treacherous. *Mac. II. 3. 138.*
- Treasure**, *v.t.* to enrich. *Shon. VI. 3. sb.* treasury. *Shon. CXXXVI.*
- Treasury**, *sb.* treasure. *W. T. IV. 4. 361; H. 5. 1. 2. 165; 2 H. 4. I. 3. 134.*
- Truction**, *sb.* entreaties. *A. & C. III. 11. 62.*
- Treatise**, *sb.* discourse. *V. & A. 774; Mac. V. 3. 120.*
- Treble**, *v.t.* 'treble thee o'er'—makes thee thrice as great. *Th. II. 1. 221.*
- Treble-dated**, *adj.* living for three generations. *Phon. 17.*
- Trench**, *v.t.* to cut. *V. & A. 1032; Two G. III. 2. 7.* To dig, cut furrows in. *2 H. 4. I. 1. 7.* To divert from its course by digging. *2 H. 4. III. 1. 112.*
- Trenchant**, *adj.* sharp, cutting. *Tim. IV. 3. 115.*
- Trencher-friends**, *sb.* parasites. *Tim. III. 6. 206.*
- Trencher-knight**, *sb.* a servant who waits at table. *L. L. L. V. 2. 64.*
- Trey**, *sb.* a three at cards or dice. *L. L. L. V. 2. 222.*
- Tribulation** of Tower-hill. Perhaps refers to some puritan congregation. *H. 8. v. 4. 62.*
- Tribunal** plebs, blunder for 'tribunus plebis'. *T. A. IV. 3. 92.*
- Trice**, *sb.* a short space of time. *Tw. N. IV. 2. 133; Lear. 1. 2. 219.*
- Trick**, *sb.* a peculiar feature, characteristic expression of look or voice. *A. W. I. 1. 107; John. 1. 1. 85; Lear. IV. 6. 102. Custom,*
- habit. M. for M. V. 2. 300; 2 H. 1. 2. 200.*
- Knack**, *art.* *Ham. V. 1. 99.* **Trifle**, *adv.* *Shon. IV. 4. 62; W. T. II. 1. 51. v.t.* to dress up, adorn. *H. 5. III. 6. 80. To draw, in the language of heraldry. Ham. II. 2. 479.*
- Tricking**, *sb.* ornaments. *M. W. IV. 4. 79.*
- Tricky**, *adj.* full of tricks, sportive. *Th. 1. 2. 226; M. of V. III. 5. 74.*
- Trife**, *v.t.* to reduce to insignificance. *Mac. II. 4. 4. sb.* toy. *Th. V. 1. 112; M. N's Dr. I. 1. 34.*
- Trigon**, *sb.* a triangle. *2 H. 4. II. 4. 288.* When the three superior planets, Mars, Jupiter, and Saturn, met in one of the fiery signs, Aries, Leo, or Sagittarius, they were said to form a fiery trigon.
- Trill**, *v.t.* to trickle. *Lear. IV. 3. 13.*
- Triple**, *adj.* third. *A. W. II. 2. 112; A. & C. I. 1. 12.*
- Triple-turned**, *adj.* thrice false. *A. & C. IV. 12. 13.*
- Triplex**, *sb.* triple time in music. *Tw. N. V. 1. 41.*
- Tristful**, *adj.* sorrowful. *Ham. III. 4. 50.*
- Triumph**, *sb.* a tramp card. *A. & C. IV. 14. 20.*
- Triumviry**, *sb.* a body of three. *L. L. L. IV. 3. 53.*
- Trojan**, *sb.* a cant term for a boon companion or irregular liver. *2 H. 4. II. 1. 77.*
- Troll**, *v.t.* to sing in turn. *Th. III. 2. 226.*
- Troll-my-dames**, *sb.* the French game of *trou madame*. *W. T. IV. 3. 92.* It appears to have been like the modern bagatelle.
- Troop**, *v.t.* to march in company. *2 H. 4. IV. 2. 62; Lear. 1. 2. 134.*
- Tropically**, *adv.* figuratively. *Ham. III. 2. 247.*
- Troth**, *sb.* truth. *M. N's Dr. II. 2. 25; Oth. IV. 5. 198. Faith. Lear. 572; M. N's Dr. II. 2. 42.*
- Troth-plight**, *sb.* betrothal. *W. T. L. 2. 278. 2. 2. betrothed. W. T. V. 3. 151; H. 5. II. 1. 21.*
- Trow**, *v.t.* to think, believe. *Lear. 2. 4. 135.*
- To know. H. 8. I. 1. 122. 'Trow you = do you know! can you tell! As. III. 2. 129. 'I trow' is an expression of slight surprise or contempt. R. & J. II. 5. 64; M. W. I. 4. 140; II. 2. 64.*
- Truant**, *v.t.* to play the truant. *C. of E. III. 2. 17.*
- Truckle-bed**, *sb.* a low bed which runs on castors and can be pushed under another. *M. W. IV. 5. 7; R. & J. II. 1. 30.*
- True**, *adj.* honest. *M. W. II. 2. 149. M. A. III. 3. 54.*
- Truepenny**, *sb.* an honest fellow. *Ham. I. 3. 150.*
- Said also to be a mining term, denoting an indication in the soil where ore is to be found.*
- Truncheon**, *v.t.* to cudgel. *2 H. 4. II. 4. 152.*
- Truncheon**, *sb.* a person carrying a truncheon. *H. 8. V. 4. 54.*
- Trundle-tail**, *sb.* a long-tailed dog. *Lear. III. 4. 73.*
- Trunk sleeve**, *sb.* a full sleeve. *T. of S. IV. 3. 149.*
- Truncheon**, *adj.* full-blown. *Lear. 2.*
- Try**, *sb.* trial test. *Tim. V. 1. 21. To bring to try is to bring a step or piece to trial as far as possible, so as to lie to. Th. I. 2. 32.*

- Tub-fast**, *sb.* the abstinence which attended the use of the tub or salt bath employed in the cure of venereal disease. Tim. IV. 3. 87.
- Tuck**, *sb.* a rapier. Tw. N. III. 4. 244. : H 4. II. 4. 574.
- Tucket**, *sb.* a preliminary flourish on the trumpet. H 5. IV. 2. 35.
- Tuition**, *sb.* protection. M. A. I. 2. 283.
- Tumbler**, *sb.* a tumbler's hoop was decked with particoloured ribands. L. L. L. III. 1. 190.
- Tun-dish**, *sb.* a funnel. M. for M. III. 2. 182.
- Turk**, *sb.* the Grand Turk, the Sultan. : H 4. III. 2. 331; H 5. V. 2. 222. To turn Turk is to prove a renegade, to change completely for the worse. Ham. III. 2. 287. M. A. III. 4. 57. Turk Gregory = Pope Gregory VII. : H 4. V. 3. 46.
- Turiyod**, a name given to mad beggars. Lear. II. 3. 21.
- Turn**, *v.t.* to modulate or adapt. As. II. 5. 3. To return, give back. R 2. IV. 1. 39. *v.i.* to change, alter. Two G. II. 2. 4. To return. H 5. II. 2. 82; R 3. IV. 4. 184.
- Turnbull Street**, **Turnmill Street** near Clerkenwell, notorious for prostitutes. : H 4. III. 2. 329.
- Twangling**, *adj.* twangling, jingling. Tp. III. 2. 126; T. of S. II. 1. 159.
- Tweak**, *v.t.* to twitch. Ham. II. 2. 601.
- Tween**, *prep.* between. V. & A. 269; Ham. V. 2. 42.
- Twelve score**, **twelve score yards**. M. W. III. 2. 34; : H 4. II. 4. 598; : H 4. III. 2. 52.
- Twiggen**, *adj.* made of twigs or wicker work. Oth. II. 3. 152.
- Twilled**, *adj.* a word of which the meaning is unknown. Tp. IV. 1. 64. It has been variously supposed to signify 'covered with sedge or reeds,' or 'ridged,' or 'fringed with matted grass,' or 'smeared with mud.'
- Twink**, *sb.* a twinkling, an instant. Tp. IV. 1. 43; T. of S. II. 1. 312.
- Twire**, *v.i.* to twinkle. Sonn. XXVIII. 12.
- Twist**, *sb.* a thread. Cor. v. 6. 96.
- Twist**, *prep.* betwixt. V. & A. 76; Tp. I. 2. 240.
- Type**, *sb.* badge, distinguishing mark. R 3. IV. 4. 244; H 2. I. 3. 31.
- Tyrannically**, *adv.* violently. Ham. II. 2. 356.
- Tyrannous**, *adj.* tyrannical. W. T. II. 3. 268.
- Cruel**, *inhuman*. R 3. IV. 3. 1; Ham. II. 2. 422.
- Umber**, *sb.* a brown colour or pigment. As. I. 3. 214.
- Umbered**, *p.p.* darkened, embrowned. H 5. IV. chor. 9.
- Umbrage**, *sb.* shadow. Ham. V. 2. 125.
- Unable**, *adj.* weak, feeble. H 5. epil. 1; Lear. I. 1. 62.
- Unaccommodated**, *p.p.* unfurnished with what is necessary. Lear. III. 4. 111.
- Unactive**, *adj.* inactive. Cor. I. 1. 102.
- Unadvised**, *adj.* without intention. Lucr. 1. 288; Two G. IV. 4. 127. Inconsiderate, rash. John. H 2. 45; V. 2. 132.
- Unadvisedly**, *adv.* inconsiderately. R 3. IV. 4. 290.
- Unagreeable**, *adj.* unsuitable. Tim. II. 2. 41.
- Unanely**, *adj.* without having received extreme unction. Ham. I. 5. 77.
- Unapproved**, *adj.* unconfirmed. Comp. 13.
- Unaptness**, *sb.* disinclination. Tim. II. 2. 140.
- Unattainted**, *adj.* unimpaired, unprejudiced. R. & J. I. 2. 90.
- Unavoided**, *adj.* inevitable. R 2. II. 1. 268; R 3. IV. 4. 217.
- Unbanded**, *adj.* without a band. As. III. 2. 398.
- Unbarbed**, *adj.* unarmoured, bare. Cor. III. 2. 99.
- Unbated**, *adj.* unblunted. Ham. IV. 7. 139; V. 2. 328.
- Unbegot**, *adj.* unbegotten. R 2. III. 3. 88.
- Unbid**, *adj.* uninvited. : H 4. V. 1. 18.
- Unbidden**, *adj.* uninvited. : H 6. II. 2. 55.
- Unblown**, *adj.* unopened. R 3. IV. 4. 10.
- Unbolt**, *v.i.* to open, reveal. Tim. I. 1. 51.
- Unbolted**, *adj.* unsifted, coarse. Lear. II. 2. 71.
- Unbonneted**, *adj.* without taking off the cap, on equal terms. Oth. I. 2. 27.
- Unbookish**, *adj.* ignorant, unskilled. Oth. IV. 1. 102.
- Unbraced**, *adj.* unbuttoned. J. C. I. 3. 48; Ham. II. 1. 78.
- Unbraided**, *adj.* perhaps for 'embroidered.' W. T. IV. 4. 204.
- Unbreathed**, *adj.* unexercised, untrained. M. N. Dr. v. 1. 74.
- Unbroke**, *adj.* unbroke. R 2. IV. 1. 215.
- Uncapable**, *adj.* incapable. M. of V. IV. 1. 5. Oth. IV. 2. 235.
- Uncape**, *v.i.* to throw off the hounds, uncouple. M. W. III. 3. 176.
- Uncase**, *v.t.* to undress. L. L. L. V. 2. 707; T. of S. I. 1. 212.
- Uncharge**, *v.t.* to acquit of blame, make no accusation against. Ham. IV. 7. 68.
- Uncharged**, *adj.* unassailed. Tim. V. 4. 55.
- Unchary**, *adj.* heedlessly. Tw. N. III. 4. 227.
- Unchecked**, *adj.* uncontradicted. M. of V. III. 1. 2.
- Unchilded**, *p.p.* deprived of children. Cor. v. 6. 153.
- Uncivil**, *adj.* unmannerly, rude, uncivilized. Two G. v. 4. 17; Tw. N. II. 3. 132; : H 6. III. 1. 310.
- Unclass**, *v.t.* to disclose, reveal. M. A. I. 1. 325; W. T. III. 2. 168.
- Unclew**, *v.t.* to unwind, unfasten, undo. Tim. I. 1. 168.
- Uncolned**, *adj.* not stamped and passed from one to another like current coin, but plain metal which had received no impression. H 5. v. 2. 161.
- Uncolled**, *adj.* deprived of one's horse. : H 4. II. 2. 42.
- Uncomprehensive**, *adj.* incomprehensible. T. & C. III. 3. 198.
- Unconfinable**, *adj.* unrestrainable. M. W. II. 2. 21.
- Unconfirmed**, *adj.* inexperienced. M. A. III. 3. 124; L. L. L. IV. 2. 19.
- Uncouth**, *adj.* unknown, strange. As. II. 6. 61; T. A. II. 3. 212.
- Unction**, *sb.* an ointment, salve. Ham. III. 4. 145; IV. 7. 122.

- Uncurse, *v.t.* to free from a curse. R 3. III. 2.  
 137.  
 Undeaf, *v.t.* to free from deafness. R 2. II.  
 16.  
 Undeclared, *adj.* not marked by any feat of arms.  
 Mac. V. 7. 20.  
 Under, *adj.* 'the under fiends' = the fiends  
 below. Cor. IV. 5. 98.  
 Underbear, *v.t.* to undergo, endure. John, III.  
 1. 65; R 2. I. 4. 29.  
 Underborne, *p.p.* bordered, or perhaps lined.  
 M. A. III. 4. 27.  
 Undercrest, *v.t.* to wear as a crest. Cor. I. 9. 72.  
 Undergo, *v.t.* to undertake. Two G. V. 4. 42;  
 J. C. I. 3. 123. To endure, sustain, enjoy.  
 M. for M. I. 1. 24; Ham. I. 4. 34.  
 Undergoing, *adj.* enduring. Tp. I. 2. 157.  
 Under-sinker, *sb.* an under-drawer or tapster.  
 1 H 4. II. 4. 26.  
 Undertake, *v.t.* to engage with. M. W. III. 5.  
 127; Tw. N. I. 3. 61. To assume. T. of S.  
 IV. 2. 106.  
 Undertaker, *sb.* one who takes upon himself the  
 business of others, as surety or agent. Tw. N.  
 III. 4. 349. 'Let me be his undertaker' = let  
 me be responsible for him. Oth. IV. 1. 224.  
 Undervalued, *adj.* inferior in value. M. of V.  
 I. 1. 165; II. 7. 53.  
 Underwrite, *v.t.* to subscribe to, submit to.  
 T. & C. II. 3. 137.  
 Underwrought, *p.p.* undermined. John, II. 1.  
 95.  
 Undeserve, *sb.* a person of no merit. 2 H 4.  
 II. 4. 406; J. C. IV. 3. 12.  
 Undeserving, *adj.* undeserved. L. L. L. V. 2.  
 366. Taken by some as a substantive, in the  
 sense of 'want of merit'.  
 Undisposed, *adj.* not inclined to merriment.  
 C. of E. I. 2. 20.  
 Undistinguished, *adj.* that cannot be distinctly  
 traced, inexplicable. Lear, IV. 6. 272.  
 Undividable, *adj.* undivided. C. of E. II. 2. 124.  
 Undone, *p.p.* solved. Per. I. 1. 117.  
 Undeared, *p.p.* unploughed. Sonn. III. 2.  
 Uneath, *adv.* hardly, with difficulty. 2 H 6. II.  
 4. 6.  
 Unethical, *adj.* ineffectual. Ham. I. 5. 90.  
 Unexperient, *adj.* inexperienced. Comp. 318.  
 Unexpressive, *adj.* inexpressible. As. III. 2. 10.  
 Unfair, *v.t.* to deprive of beauty. Sonn. V. 4.  
 Unfathered, *adj.* not produced in the ordinary  
 course of nature. 2 H 4. IV. 4. 122.  
 Unfellowed, *adj.* without an equal. Ham. V.  
 2. 130.  
 Unfenced, *adj.* unprotected, defenceless. John.  
 II. 1. 286.  
 Unfolding, *adj.* 'the unfolding star' is the star  
 which by its rising marks the time for letting  
 the sheep out of the fold. M. for M. IV. 2.  
 278.  
 Unfool, *v.t.* to take away the reproach of folly.  
 M. W. IV. 2. 120.  
 Unfurnish, *v.t.* to deprive. W. T. V. 1. 123.  
 Unfurnished, *p.p.* unprovided with a com-  
 panion. M. of V. III. 2. 126.  
 Ungentured, *adj.* without the power of pro-  
 creation. M. for M. III. 2. 184.  
 Ungird, *v.t.* to relax. Tw. N. IV. 1. 15.  
 Ungored, *adj.* unwounded. Ham. V. 2. 266.  
 Ungot, *p.p.* unbegotten. M. for M. V. 1. 142.  
 Ungotten, *p.p.* unbegotten. H 5. I. 2. 287.  
 Ungacious, *adj.* graceless, wicked. Tw. N. IV.  
 1. 51; Ham. I. 3. 47.  
 Ungravelly, *adv.* without dignity or seriousness.  
 Cor. II. 2. 233.  
 Unhair, *v.t.* to strip the hair from. A. & C. II.  
 5. 64.  
 Unhaired, *adj.* unbearded. John, V. 2. 133.  
 Unhandsome, *adj.* unbecoming. As. epil. 2;  
 1 H 4. I. 3. 44. Ungenerous. Oth. III. 4. 151.  
 Unhappied, *p.p.* rendered unhappy. R 2. III.  
 1. 10.  
 Unhappily, *adv.* unluckily, unfortunately.  
 Ham. IV. 5. 13; Lear, I. 2. 157.  
 Unhappiness, *sb.* mischievousness, capacity for  
 evil. R 3. I. 2. 25. Mischief. M. A. II. 1. 261.  
 Unhappy, *adj.* mischievous, unlucky. A. W.  
 IV. 5. 66; Cym. V. 5. 153.  
 Unhatched, *p.p.* undisclosed. Oth. III. 4. 142.  
 Unhacked. Tw. N. III. 4. 257.  
 Unheart, *v.t.* to dishearten. Cor. V. 1. 49.  
 Unheedy, *adj.* inconsiderate. M. N's Dr. I. 1.  
 237.  
 Unhelpful, *adj.* unavailing. 2 H 6. III. 1. 218.  
 Unhoused, *adj.* without the care of a household,  
 unmarried. Oth. I. 2. 26.  
 Unhoused, *p.p.* without having received the  
 sacrament. Ham. I. 5. 77.  
 Unhurtful, *adj.* harmless. M. for M. III. 2.  
 175.  
 Unimproved, *p.p.* unchecked, ungovernable.  
 Ham. I. 1. 96.  
 Unintelligent, *adj.* not being aware. W. T. I. 1.  
 16.  
 Union, *sb.* a large pearl. Ham. V. 2. 283.  
 Unjoined, *adj.* disjointed, incoherent. 1 H 4.  
 1. 3. 65.  
 Unjust, *adj.* dishonest. W. T. IV. 4. 688;  
 1 H 4. IV. 2. 32.  
 Unjustly, *adv.* dishonestly, unfairly. A. W.  
 IV. 2. 76.  
 Unkennel, *v.t.* to disclose. Ham. III. 2. 86.  
 Unkind, *adj.* unnatural. Lear, I. 2. 263; III. 4.  
 73; As. II. 7. 175. Childless. V. & A. 204.  
 Unkinged, *p.p.* deprived of royalty, dethroned.  
 R 2. IV. 1. 220; V. 5. 37.  
 Unkinglike, *adj.* unkingly. Cym. III. 5. 7.  
 Unkiss, *v.t.* to undo by a kiss. R 2. V. 1. 74.  
 Unlace, *v.t.* to undo. Oth. II. 3. 104.  
 Unlike, *adj.* unlikely. M. for M. V. 1. 32;  
 Cor. III. 1. 48.  
 Unlived, *p.p.* deprived of life. Lucr. 1754.  
 Unlooked, *adj.* unexpected. R 3. I. 3. 214.  
 Unlustrous, *adj.* dim, wanting lustre. Cym. I.  
 6. 109.  
 Unmanned, *adj.* untamed, untrained, used of  
 a falcon. R. & J. III. 2. 14.  
 Unmastered, *adj.* unrestrained. Ham. I. 3. 32.  
 Unmeasurable, *adj.* immeasurable. M. W. II.  
 1. 109; Tim. IV. 3. 178.  
 Unmeet, *adj.* unfit. M. A. IV. 1. 184.  
 Unmeritable, *adj.* devoid of merit. R 3. III. 7.  
 155; J. C. IV. 1. 12.  
 Unmeriting, *adj.* undeserving. Cor. II. 1. 45.  
 Unmuzzled, *adj.* unrestrained. Tw. N. III. 2.  
 130.

- Unswerved, adj.** strengthless. Ham. II. 2. 496.  
**Unstable, adj.** ignoble. A. & C. III. 11. 50.  
**Unnumbered, adj.** innumerable. J. C. III. 1. 63; Lear, IV. 6. 21.  
**Unowned, adj.** unowned, having no owner. John, IV. 3. 147.  
**Unparagoned, adj.** matchless. Cym. I. 4. 87; II. 2. 12.  
**Unpartial, adj.** impartial. H. 8. II. 2. 107.  
**Unpathed, adj.** trackless. W. T. IV. 4. 578.  
**Unpaved, adj.** without stones. Cym. II. 3. 34.  
**Unpay, v.t.** to do away by payment. = H. 4. II. 2. 130.  
**Unpeaceable, adj.** quarrelsome. Tim. I. 2. 280.  
**Unperfect, adj.** imperfect. Sonn. XXXIII. 1.  
**Unperfectness, sb.** imperfection. Oth. II. 3. 298.  
**Unpinked, adj.** not pinked or pierced with eyelashes. T. of S. IV. 1. 136.  
**Unpitied, adj.** unmerciful. M. for M. IV. 2. 13.  
**Unplausive, adj.** unapplying, disapproving. T. & C. III. 3. 43.  
**Unpoliced, adj.** devoid of policy or foresight. A. & C. V. 2. 311.  
**Unpossessing, adj.** without possessions. Lear, II. 2. 60.  
**Unpossible, adj.** impossible. R. 3. II. 2. 126.  
**Unpregnant, adj.** unable to conceive, having no sense or understanding. M. for M. IV. 4. 23; Ham. II. 2. 595.  
**Unprevailing, adj.** unavailing. Ham. I. 2. 107.  
**Unprizable, adj.** invaluable. Cym. I. 4. 99; Tw. N. V. 1. 58.  
**Unprized, adj.** unvalued. Lear, I. 1. 262. Or perhaps, priceless.  
**Unprofitd, adj.** profitless. Tw. N. I. 4. 22.  
**Unproper, adj.** not one's own, common. Oth. IV. 1. 69.  
**Unproperly, adv.** improperly. Cor. V. 3. 54.  
**Unproportioned, adj.** unsuitable, not in harmony with the occasion. Ham. I. 3. 62.  
**Unprovide, v.t.** to unfurnish, make unprepared. Oth. IV. 1. 218.  
**Unprovided, p.p.** unprepared. H. 3. IV. 1. 283.  
**Unfurnished, Per.** II. 1. 166.  
**Unprovident, adj.** improvident. Sonn. X. 2.  
**Unqualified, adj.** deprived of one's faculties. A. & C. III. 11. 44.  
**Unquestionable, adj.** averse to conversation. As. III. 2. 593.  
**Unquiet, sb.** disquiet. Per. prol. II. 31. *adj.* restless. M. of V. III. 2. 308.  
**Unquietness, sb.** disquiet, disturbance. M. A. I. 3. 30; Oth. III. 4. 133.  
**Unraised, adj.** depressed, not elevated. H. 3. prol. 2.  
**Unraked, adj.** not raked together, not made up for the night. M. W. V. 5. 48.  
**Unready, adj.** unready. = H. 6. II. 1. 39, 40.  
**Unrecalling, adj.** past recall. Lear. 993.  
**Unreconcilable, adj.** unamiable. Ham. II. 1. 34.  
**Unreconcilable, adj.** irreconcilable. A. & C. V. 1. 47.  
**Unrecurring, adj.** incurable. T. A. III. 1. 90.  
**Unremovable, adj.** irremovable. Lear, II. 4. 24.  
**Unremovably, adv.** irremovably. Tim. V. 1. 207.  
**Unreprovable, adj.** not to be reprovied. John, V. 7. 48.  
**Unresisted, adj.** irresistible. Lear. 282.  
**Unrespected, adj.** unregarded. Sonn. XXIII. 2; 247. 10.  
**Unresponsive, adj.** heedless. R. 3. IV. 2. 29.  
 An 'unresponsive sieve' or 'volder is one into which things are carelessly thro T. & C. II. 2. 72.  
**Unrest, sb.** disquiet. R. 2. II. 4. 22; R. 3. IV. 4. 29; Lear. 1795.  
**Unreverend, adj.** irreverent. Two G. II. 6. 14; M. for M. V. 3. 307.  
**Unrevereent, adj.** irreverent. T. of S. III. 2. 114; R. 2. II. 1. 123.  
**Unrightful, adj.** illegitimate. R. 2. V. 1. 63.  
**Unrolled, p.p.** struck off the roll. W. T. IV. 3. 130.  
**Unrooted, p.p.** driven from the root, hampecked. W. T. II. 3. 74.  
**Unroot, v.t.** to uproot. A. W. V. 1. 6.  
**Unrough, adj.** beardless. Mac. V. 2. 10.  
**Unsatiate, adj.** insatiate. R. 3. III. 5. 87.  
**Unscanned, adj.** unobservant, inconsiderate. Cor. III. 2. 313.  
**Unseam, v.t.** to rip open. Mac. I. 2. 22.  
**Unseasonable, adj.** not in season. Lear. 581.  
**Unseasoned, adj.** unseasonable. = H. 4. III. 1. 105. Untrained. A. W. I. 1. 86.  
**Unsecret, adj.** wanting in secrecy, or reticence. T. & C. III. 2. 133.  
**Unseeming, p.p.** not seeming. L. I. L. II. 1. 156.  
**Unseminared, p.p.** deprived of seed or virility. A. & C. I. 5. 11.  
**Unseparable, adj.** inseparable. Cor. IV. 4. 16.  
**Unset, p.p.** unplanted. Sonn. XVI. 6.  
**Unsevered, adj.** inseparable. Cor. III. 4. 42.  
**Unshaked, p.p.** unshaken. J. C. III. 1. 70; Cym. II. 1. 68.  
**Unshape, v.t.** to disorder, derange. M. for M. IV. 4. 23.  
**Unshaped, adj.** without form, artless. Ham. IV. 5. 2.  
**Unshapen, adj.** misshapen. R. 3. I. 2. 531.  
**Unshunnable, adj.** inevitable. Oth. III. 3. 275.  
**Unshunned, adj.** inevitable. M. for M. III. 2. 63.  
**Unstaid, p.p.** untried, inexperienced. Ham. I. 3. 102.  
**Unstaying, adj.** unresting. M. for M. IV. 2. 92. A doubtful word.  
**Unsmirched, adj.** unsoiled. Ham. IV. 5. 119.  
**Unsorted, adj.** unsuitable. = H. 4. II. 3. 12.  
**Unsphere, v.t.** to remove from its orbit. W. T. I. 2. 42.  
**Unspoke, p.p.** unspoken. Lear, I. 1. 290.  
**Unsquar'd, p.p.** unsuitable. T. & C. I. 1. 139.  
**Unstanch'd, p.p.** that cannot hold water. Tw. I. 1. 52. Unsequenable. = H. 4. II. 4. 33.  
**Unstate, v.t.** to deprive of dignity. Lear, I. 2. 108; A. & C. III. 12. 39.  
**Unsubstantial, adj.** insubstantial, immaterial. R. & J. V. 3. 103; Lear, IV. 2. 7.  
**Unsure, adj.** insecure, unsafe. = H. 4. I. 3. 29; Ham. IV. 4. 131. Unertain. John, III. 1. 283; Oth. III. 3. 31; Mac. V. 4. 29.  
**Unsure, p.p.** rendered insecure. John, II. 1. 471.

- Unswear, *v.t.* to recant, retract. John. III. 1. 245; Oth. IV. 2. 31.
- Untainted, *p.p.* unblemished. Sonn. XIX. 11. Not stained by any charge of crime. R. 3. III. 6. 9.
- Untangle, *v.t.* to disentangle, unravel. Tw. N. II. 2. 41; R. & J. I. 4. 91.
- Untaught, *adj.* rude, unmannerly. M. for M. II. 4. 214; H. 4. I. 3. 43; R. & J. V. 3. 219.
- Untempering, *adj.* incapable of exercising any softening influence. H. 5. V. 2. 241.
- Untent, *v.t.* to bring out of a tent. T. & C. II. 3. 178.
- Untented, *adj.* that cannot be tented or probed, incurable. Lear. I. 4. 322.
- Unthread, *v.t.* to withdraw the thread from. John. V. 4. 11.
- Unthrif, *sb.* a prodigal, spendthrift. Sonn. IX. 9; XIII. 13; R. 2. II. 3. 122. *adj.* prodigal, good for nothing. Tim. IV. 3. 311; M. of V. V. 1. 16.
- Unthrifty, *adj.* good for nothing. M. of V. I. 3. 177; R. 2. V. 3. 1.
- Untie, *v.t.* to solve. Cym. V. 4. 149. To dissolve, break. Tp. V. 1. 253.
- Untirable, *adj.* indefatigable. Tim. I. 1. 11.
- Untoward, *adj.* refractory, unmannerly. T. of S. IV. 5. 79; John. I. 1. 243.
- Untraded, *adj.* unbackneyed. T. & C. IV. 178.
- Untraced, *v.t.* to retrace. M. of V. II. 6. 10; John. V. 4. 52; V. & A. 908.
- Untreasured, *p.p.* robbed, deprived as of treasure. As. II. 2. 7.
- Untried, *p.p.* unexamined. W. T. IV. 3. 6.
- Untrimmed, *p.p.* with hair dishevelled or hanging loose, as was the custom with brides. John. III. 1. 809.
- Untrod, *adj.* untrodden, pathless. J. C. III. 1. 136.
- Untrussing, *sb.* unfastening the points of one's dress. M. for M. III. 2. 190.
- Unbacked, *p.p.* dishevelled. Comp. 31.
- Unvalued, *adj.* inestimable. R. 3. I. 4. 27.
- Unwares, *adv.* unintentionally. 3 H. 6. II. 5. 62.
- Unwarily, *adv.* unexpectedly, at unawares. John. V. 7. 63.
- Unweighed, *adj.* inconsiderate, reckless. M. W. II. 2. 23.
- Unweighing, *adj.* thoughtless. M. for M. III. 2. 147.
- Unwitted, *p.p.* deprived of intelligence. Oth. II. 3. 182.
- Unworthy, *adj.* undeserved. R. 3. I. 2. 82.
- Unyoke, *v.t.* to put off the yoke, as at the end of a day's work. Ham. V. 1. 59. *v.t.* to disjoin. John. III. 2. 241.
- Unyoked, *adj.* uncontrolled, licentious. H. 4. I. 2. 222.
- Up, *adv.* up in arms. H. 4. III. 2. 120; H. 4. I. 1. 126; M. 3. IV. 4. 530.
- Upcast, *sb.* the final throw at the game of bowls. Cym. II. 2. 2.
- Updill, *v.t.* to fill up. R. & J. II. 3. 7.
- Uphearded, *p.p.* hearded, stored up. Ham. I. 1. 256.
- Uplocked, *p.p.* locked up. Sonn. LII. 2.
- Upmost, *adj.* uppermost, topmost. J. C. II. 1. 24.
- Up-pricked, *p.p.* pricked up. V. & A. 271.
- Upright, *adv.* upward, straight up. Lear. IV. 6. 27; H. 6. III. 1. 369.
- Uprise, *sb.* the rising of the sun. T. A. III. 1. 129; A. & C. IV. 12. 18.
- Uprising, *sb.* ascent. L. L. L. IV. 1. 2.
- Uproar, *v.t.* to throw into confusion. Mac. IV. 3. 99.
- Upshoot, *sb.* the decisive shot. L. L. L. IV. 1. 138.
- Uppring, *sb.* a boisterous bacchanalian dance. Used adjectively. Ham. I. 4. 9.
- Upstaring, *p.p.* standing on end. Tp. I. 2. 223.
- Upwarmed, *p.p.* raised in swarms. H. 4. IV. 2. 30.
- Up-till, *prep.* up to, against. Pass. P. 382.
- Upward, *adv.* upwards. H. 8. II. 4. 36. *sb.* top. Lear. V. 3. 136.
- Urchin, *sb.* a hedgehog. Tp. I. 2. 326; T. A. II. 3. 101. A goblin. M. W. IV. 4. 49.
- Urchin-shows, *sb.* apparitions of urchins or goblins. Tp. II. 2. 5.
- Urchin-snouted, *adj.* with a snout like an urchin or hedgehog. V. & A. 1105.
- Usance, *sb.* interest. M. of V. I. 3. 46, 109, 122.
- Use, *sb.* interest. M. for M. I. 1. 41; M. A. II. 1. 288; Tw. N. III. 1. 57. *v.t.* to behave oneself. H. III. 1. 176. 'In use' = in trust, not in absolute possession. M. of V. IV. 1. 383; A. & C. I. 3. 44.
- Uses, *sb.* manners, usages. Ham. I. 2. 134.
- Usuring, *adj.* taking usury, usurious. Tim. III. 5. 110; IV. 3. 516.
- Utis, *sb.* boisterous merriment, outcry. H. 4. II. 4. 22.
- Utterance, *sb.* 'To the utterance' = Fr. & utterance. Mac. III. 1. 72. 'At utterance' = at all hazards. Cym. III. 1. 73.
- Vacancy, *sb.* leisure. A. & C. I. 4. 26.
- Vade, *v.t.* to fade. Pass. P. 131, 132.
- Vagrom, blunder for 'vagrant'. M. A. III. 3. 26.
- Vail, *sb.* the setting or going down of the sun. T. & C. V. 8. 7. *v.t.* to let fall, lower. M. of V. I. 1. 28; H. 6. V. 3. 25; Ham. I. 2. 70. *v.t.* to bow. Per. IV. prol. 29.
- Vails, *sb.* profits or perquisites received by servants. Per. II. 1. 157.
- Vain, *adj.* 'for vain' = to no purpose. M. for M. II. 4. 12.
- Vainly, *adv.* erroneously. H. 4. IV. 3. 239.
- Vainness, *sb.* boastfulness. Tw. N. III. 4. 389.
- Vanity, *H. 3. chor. 20.*
- Valance, *sb.* fringed. T. of S. II. 2. 356.
- Valenced, *p.p.* fringed. Ham. II. 2. 442.
- Valiantness, *sb.* bravery. Cor. III. 2. 229.
- Validity, *sb.* strength, efficacy. Ham. III. 2. 179.
- Valued, *p.p.* 'the valued file' is the catalogue in which the items are distinguished according to their worth, a price list. Mac. III. 1. 25.
- Van, *sb.* the vanguard, first line of battle. A. & C. IV. 4. 2.
- Vantage, *sb.* advantage, profit. John. II. 1. 120; Cor. I. 1. 124. Opportunity, occasion. M. W.

- IV. 6. 43; M. of V. III. 2. 176.** 'Of vantage,' from an advantageous position. Ham. III. 3. 53. 'To the vantage, to boot, into the bargain. Oth. IV. 3. 86. Superiority. M. N.'s Dr. I. 2. 102; H. 5. III. 6. 153; IV. 2. 297; s H. 4. II. 3. 53.
- Vanbrace, sb.** armour for the fore arm. T. & C. I. 3. 297.
- Vary, adv.** vary. L. L. L. v. 2. 487.
- Variance, sb.** quarrel. A. & C. II. 6. 138.
- Vaslet, sb.** a servant. H. 5. IV. 2. 2; T. & C. I. 1. 2. Used as a term of reproach, like knave. Tp. IV. 1. 170; M. A. IV. 2. 74.
- Variety, sb.** rabble. A. & C. V. 2. 56.
- Varnished, p.p.** painted. M. of V. II. 5. 33.
- Vary, sb.** variation, caprice. Lear, II. 2. 85.
- Vassalage, sb.** vassals, subjects. T. & C. III. 2. 40.
- Vast, adj.** waste, desolate, and in a secondary sense limitless. R. 3. I. 4. 30; T. A. IV. 1. 53; V. 2. 36; John, IV. 3. 152. sb. a boundless ocean. W. T. I. 1. 33; Per. III. 1. 1. 'Vast of night' is the desolate and dark period of night, when no living thing can be seen. Tp. I. 2. 307; Ham. I. 2. 198.
- Vastidity, sb.** vastness, immensity. M. for M. III. 1. 69.
- Vastly, adv.** desolately, like a waste. Lucr. 1700.
- Vasty, adj.** vast, boundless. M. of V. II. 7. 41; s H. 4. III. 1. 52.
- Vaultings, sb.** vaults, caverns. H. 5. II. 4. 124.
- Vaulty, adj.** arched, vaulted. John, III. 4. 30; V. 2. 52; R. & J. III. 5. 22.
- Vault, sb.** the van, first beginning. T. & C. 1700. 27.
- Vault-couriers, sb.** fore-runners. Lear, III. 2. 5.
- Vaulter, sb.** a boaster. T. A. V. 3. 113.
- Vaward, sb.** the vanguard. H. 5. IV. 3. 130; Cor. I. 6. 53. The forepart. M. N.'s Dr. IV. 2. 110; s H. 4. I. 2. 109.
- Vegetives, sb.** vegetables, plants. Per. III. 2. 36.
- Velure, sb.** velvet. T. of S. III. 2. 62.
- Velvet-guards, sb.** velvet trimmings, applied metaphorically to the persons who wear them. s H. 4. III. 1. 561.
- Veney, or Venuo, sb.** a bout or turn at fencing. s M. W. L. 1. 2. 296. Used figuratively. L. L. L. v. 1. 62.
- Venge, v.t.** to avenge. R. 2. L. 2. 36; Lear, IV. 2. 80.
- Vengeance, sb.** mischief. As. IV. 3. 48; T. A. II. 3. 113. Used adverbially. Cor. II. 2. 6.
- Vengeful, adj.** revengeful, vindictive. s H. 6. III. 2. 98; T. A. V. 2. 51; Sonn. XCIX. 13.
- Venom, used adjectively,** venomous, pernicious. R. 3. I. 2. 291; Lear. 820.
- Venomed, p.p.** poisonous. R. 3. I. 2. 20; Tim. IV. 3. 282.
- Venomous, adj.** 'venomous wights' are those filled with venom and spite. T. & C. IV. 2. 12.
- Vent, sb.** a discharge. A. & C. V. 2. 352. 'Full of vent,' like wine, full of working, effervescent, opposed to 'muddled.' Cor. IV. 3. 238. It is also explained as a hunting term of dogs full of the scent of the game and eager for pursuit. v.t. to dispose of, vend. Cor. I. 2. 209.
- Ventages, sb.** apertures. Ham. III. 2. 572.
- Ventricle, sb.** a cavity. The old anatomists divided the brain into three ventricles, in the hindmost of which, the cerebellum, they placed memory. L. L. L. IV. 2. 70.
- Verbal, adj.** playing with words. Cym. II. 3. 111.
- Verge, sb.** compass. R. 2. II. 1. 102; R. 3. IV. 1. 59.
- Verified, perhaps blunder for** 'tified.' M. A. V. 1. 222.
- Veronese, a ship of Verona.** with II. 1. 26.
- Vernal, blunder for 'universal.'** R. & J. II. 4. 219.
- Verse, v.t.** 'Versing love' = making love in verse. M. N.'s Dr. II. 2. 67.
- Very, adj.** true. Two G. III. 2. 41; M. of V. III. 2. 226.
- Via! inter.** away with you, get forward; on! M. W. II. 2. 159; M. of V. II. 2. 11.
- Viand, sb.** food, victuals. Cor. I. 1. 103.
- Vice, sb.** the buffoon in the old morality plays. Tw. N. IV. 2. 134; R. 3. III. 1. 82; Ham. III. 4. 98. v.t. to screw. W. T. I. 2. 416.
- Vicious, adj.** blameable, wrong. Oth. III. 3. 145; Cym. v. 3. 65.
- Victual, sb.** victuals. M. A. L. 1. 30.
- Vie, v.t.** to stake at cards, hence, to challenge, contend with. A. & C. V. 2. 98; T. of S. II. 1. 311; Per. III. 1. 26.
- Vieview, adj.** invisible. M. for M. III. 1. 184.
- Vigilant, blunder for 'vigilant.'** M. A. III. 3. 100.
- Villagery, sb.** village population, peasantry. M. N.'s Dr. II. 1. 35.
- Villain, sb.** a bondman, serf. As. I. 1. 59; Lear, III. 7. 78. Used in familiar address, without any opprobrious sense, like 'rogue.' W. T. I. 2. 136; Tw. N. II. 5. 16; T. & C. III. 2. 35.
- Villain-like, adv.** villainously. Lear, v. 3. 98.
- Villanous, adv.** villainously. Tp. IV. 1. 230.
- Villany, sb.** mischief. M. W. II. 1. 102; T. of S. IV. 3. 145.
- Villago, Ital. vigliacco, a base coward.** s H. 6. IV. 2. 48.
- Vindicative, adj.** vindictive. T. & C. IV. 3. 107.
- Vinewrest, adj.** mouldstiff. T. & C. II. 2. 15.
- Viol, sb.** a six-stringed violin. R. 2. I. 3. 162.
- Viol-de-gamboys, sb.** a base viol or violoncello. Tw. N. I. 3. 27.
- Violent, v.t.** to act violently, rage. T. & C. IV. 2. 4.
- Virgin, v.t.** 'to virgin it' is to play the virgin, remain a virgin. Cor. v. 3. 42.
- Virginal, adj.** maidenly. s H. 4. v. 2. 52; Cor. V. 2. 42.
- Virginaling, p.p.** playing with the fingers as upon the virginals. W. T. I. 2. 125.
- Virtue, sb.** valour, courage. Lear, v. 3. 103; Cor. I. 2. 41. Essence, essential quality. Tp. I. 2. 27; M. N.'s Dr. IV. 1. 174; Tim. III. 5. 8.
- Virtuous, adj.** efficacious, powerful. Oth. III. 4. 112. Essential. M. N.'s Dr. III. 2. 367; s H. 4. IV. 3. 76. 'Virtuous season' = benignant influence. M. for M. II. 2. 168.
- Visited, p.p.** attacked by the plague. L. L. L. v. 2. 422.



- Visitings, *sb.* attacks. Mac. I. 3. 45.  
 Visor, *sb.* a mask. M. A. II. 1. 99; L. L. L. v. 2. 227.  
 Visaments, *sb.* advisements, in Sir Hugh Evans's language. M. W. I. 3. 39.  
 Visard, *sb.* a mask. R. 3. II. 2. 28; Mac. III. 2. 34.  
 Visarded, *p.p.* masked, disguised. M. W. IV. 6. 40; T. & C. I. 3. 83.  
 Visard-like, *adj.* like a mask. 3 H 6. I. 4. 116.  
 Voice, *sb.* vote. R. 3. III. 2. 53; Cor. II. 2. 144.  
*v.t.* to vote, nominate. Cor. II. 3. 242. To proclaim. Tim. IV. 3. 87.  
 Void, *v.t.* to avoid. Cor. IV. 5. 82. To quit. H. 5. IV. 7. 62. To emit, vomit. M. of V. I. 3. 118; H. 5. III. 5. 52; Tim. I. 2. 143.  
 Voiding-lobby, *sb.* an ante-room into which the apartments of a mansion as it were emptied themselves. 3 H 6. IV. 1. 61.  
 Volable, *adj.* quick-witted. L. L. L. III. 1. 67.  
 Volley, *v.t.* to discharge, utter with violence. A. & C. II. 7. 118; V. & A. 92.  
 Volquemen, *sb.* Vexin. John. II. 1. 527.  
 Voluntary, *sb.* a volunteer. John. II. 1. 67; T. & C. II. 1. 106.  
 Votaresa, *sb.* a female votary. M. N's Dr. II. 1. 123; Per. IV. prol. 4.  
 Votarist, *sb.* a votary. M. for M. I. 4. 5; Oth. IV. 2. 190.  
 Vouch, *sb.* testimony, guarantee. M. for M. II. 4. 156; Cor. II. 3. 124; Oth. II. 1. 147. *v.t.* to assert, solemnly affirm, warrant. Tp. II. 1. 60; Mac. III. 4. 34; Oth. I. 3. 103.  
 Vowed, *p.p.* sworn. M. for M. V. 1. 209; L. L. L. v. 2. 356.  
 Vow-fellow, *sb.* one bound by the same vow. L. L. L. II. 1. 38.  
 Voyage, *sb.* enterprise. M. W. II. 1. 129; Tw. N. III. 1. 86.  
 Vulgar, *adj.* common, ordinary. Tw. N. III. 1. 135; Ham. I. 2. 99; I. 3. 61. Public. A. & C. III. 13. 119; Sonn. cxlii. 2. Common to all. John. II. 1. 387. 'The vulgar heart' = the heart of the people. 3 H 6. I. 2. 90. 'A vulgar station' = a standing place in the crowd. Cor. II. 1. 231. *sb.* the common people. H. 5. IV. 7. 80; J. C. I. 1. 75. The common tongue. A. & V. 1. 53.  
 Vulgarly, *adv.* publicly. M. for M. V. 1. 160.  
 Waft, *v.t.* to beckon. M. of V. v. 1. 11; C. of E. II. 2. 111. To turn. W. T. I. 2. 372. To convey. John. II. 1. 73; 3 H 6. IV. 1. 114.  
 Waftage, *sb.* conveyance by water. C. of E. IV. 1. 95; T. & C. III. 2. 11.  
 Wafture, *sb.* the gesture of waving. J. C. II. 1. 246.  
 Wag, *v.t.* and *v.t.* to move, stir. R. 3. III. 5. 7. To move to and fro. Ham. III. 4. 36; V. 2. 220; M. of V. IV. 1. 76. To go one's way. M. W. I. 3. 7; M. A. v. 1. 26.  
 Wage, *v.t.* to stake. Lear. I. 2. 358; Cym. I. 4. 144. To venture, hazard. 1 H 4. IV. 4. 20; Oth. I. 3. 30. To remunerate. Cor. V. 6. 40. *v.t.* to outland. Lear. II. 4. 212. To be on an equality. A. & C. v. 1. 31; Per. IV. 2. 24.  
 Wagging, *sb.* wagging, shaking. M. A. II. 1. 119.  
 Waggon, *sb.* chariot. W. T. IV. 4. 118; R. & J. I. 4. 59.  
 Waggoner, *sb.* charioteer. R. & J. I. 4. 64; III. 2. 2.  
 Walful, *adj.* doleful. Two G. III. 2. 69.  
 Walnropes, *sb.* waggon-ropes. Tw. N. III. 2. 64.  
 Waist, *sb.* the part of a ship between the quarter-deck and fore-castle. Tp. I. 2. 197.  
 Wake, *sb.* waking. 1 H 4. III. 1. 219; Lear. I. 2. 15; III. 2. 34. *v.t.* to keep late revels. Ham. I. 4. 8; Sonn. Lxi. 13.  
 Wakes, *sb.* feasts, late revels. L. L. L. v. 3. 218; W. T. IV. 3. 109; Lear. III. 6. 77.  
 Wallet, *sb.* a bag, knapsack. Tp. III. 3. 46; T. & C. III. 3. 145.  
 Wall-eyed, *adj.* fierce-eyed; properly used of eyes in which the iris is white or wanting in colour. John. IV. 3. 42.  
 Wall-newt, *sb.* a lizard. Lear. III. 4. 135.  
 Wan, *v.t.* to turn pale. Ham. II. 2. 580.  
 Wanon, *sb.* 'with a wanion' = with a vance. Per. II. 1. 17.  
 Wanting, *pr.p.* deficient in, unskilled in. R. a. III. 3. 179.  
 Wanton, *sb.* one brought up in luxury, an effeminate person. John. v. 1. 70; Ham. v. 2. 310. *v.t.* to play, dally. W. T. II. 2. 18; V. & A. 106.  
 Wantonly, *adv.* playfully, sportively. Sonn. LIV. 7.  
 Wantonness, *sb.* sport, frivolity. John. IV. 1. 16; T. & C. III. 3. 137. Lasciviousness. M. W. IV. 2. 223. Affection. Ham. III. 1. 152.  
 Want-wit, *sb.* an idiot. M. of V. I. 2. 6.  
 Wappened, *p.p.* worn out, stale. Tim. IV. 3. 38.  
 Ward, *sb.* guardianship. A. W. I. 2. 5. Defence. L. L. L. III. 1. 133. Guard in fencing, posture of defence. Tp. I. 2. 471; 1 H 4. II. 4. 215. Prison, custody. 3 H 6. v. 1. 112. A cell. Ham. II. 2. 252. A bolt. Tim. III. 3. 38; Lucr. 303. *v.t.* to guard. R. 3. v. 3. 254; T. & C. I. 2. 292.  
 Warden, *sb.* a large baking pear. W. T. IV. 3. 48.  
 Warder, *sb.* a guard. Mac. I. 7. 65; IV. 2. 56. A truncheon. R. 3. 1. 115.  
 'Ware, beware. L. L. L. v. 43; T. & C. v. 7. 12.  
 Ware, *adj.* aware. A. & II. 4. 58; R. & J. I. 2. 131.  
 War-man, *sb.* warrior. L. L. L. v. 2. 666.  
 War-marked, *adj.* bearing the marks of war. A. & C. III. 7. 45.  
 Warn, *v.t.* to summon. John. II. 1. 201; R. & J. v. 3. 207. 'God warn us' = God forbid. A. & IV. 2. 77.  
 Warp, *v.t.* to change, turn, distort. A. & II. 7. 127; A. W. v. 3. 49.  
 Warrant, *v.t.* to guarantee, attest. M. A. IV. 2. 268; Cor. II. 1. 142. To secure. M. for M. IV. 2. 26; C. of E. IV. 4. 3. 'Lord warrant us!' = Lord protect us! A. & III. 3. 5.  
 Warranted, *p.p.* 'Upon a warranted need' = upon an occasion which required a warrant or guarantee. M. for M. III. 2. 152.  
 Warranties, *sb.* security, guarantee. 3 H 6. I. 2. 13.  
 Warranty, *sb.* authorisation, warrant.

- mon. M. of V. I. 1. 130; Ham. V. 1. 230; Oth. V. 2. 60.*
- Warner, sb.** the keeper of a warren, a game-keeper. *M. W. I. 4. 28.*
- Wash, sb.** used of the sea. *Ham. III. 2. 166.*
- Washford, Wexford.** *H. 6. IV. 7. 63.*
- Wasph-headed, adj.** irritable, petulant. *TP. IV. 2. 99.*
- Wassail, sb.** a drinking bout, carousing. *L. I. I. V. 2. 318; Mac. I. 7. 44.*
- Waste, sb.** In the way of waste'=for the purpose of ruining us. *M. W. IV. 2. 226.*
- Wat, a familiar name for a hare.** *V. & A. 607.*
- Watch, sb.** want of sleep, wakefulness. *Ham. II. 2. 148. A watch candle which marked the hours. R. 3. V. 3. 63. A stated interval of time. R. 2. V. 5. 52. v.t. to keep from sleeping, and so to tame. T. of S. IV. 1. 106; T. & C. III. 2. 45; Oth. III. 3. 23. v.t. to keep awake, sit up. R. 2. II. 1. 77.*
- Watch-case, sb.** a sentry box. *H. 4. III. 2. 17.*
- Watching, sb.** waking. *Mac. V. 1. 12.*
- Water-gall, sb.** a secondary rainbow. *Lac. 1588.*
- Waterish, adj.** well-watered. *Lear. 1. 2. 261.*
- Watery.** *(Oth. III. 3. 15.*
- Water-rugs, sb.** rough water-dogs. *Mac. III. 2. 64.*
- Waters, sb.** 'for all waters'=ready for anything. *Tw. N. IV. 2. 68. The origin of the expression is not certain.*
- Water-work, sb.** painting in water colour. *H. 4. II. 1. 158.*
- Watery, adj.** watering, as with eager desire. *T. & C. III. 2. 22.*
- Wave, v.t.** to beckon. *Ham. I. 4. 61. v.t. to waver. Cor. II. 2. 19.*
- Wawl, v.t.** to cry as an infant. *Lear. IV. 6. 184.*
- Wax, sb.** 'a man of wax' is a man as perfect as if he had been modelled in wax. *R. & J. I. 3. 76. In 'a wide sea of wax, Tim. I. 1. 47, there is a reference to writing-tablets covered with wax. v.t. to grow. Cor. II. 2. 103; Ham. I. 3. 22.*
- Waxen, grow.** 'Waxen in their mirth'=grow merrier and merrier. *M. N's Dr. II. 1. 56. adj. soft as wax, penetrable. R. 2. I. 3. 75. Perishable, easily effaced. H. 5. I. 2. 232.*
- Way, sb.** course of life or conduct, practice. *Mac. V. 3. 22; H. 6. I. 3. 61; III. 1. 157.*
- Opinion, way of thinking.** *H. 8. V. 1. 26.*
- Ways, in the phrase, 'come your ways'=come along. As. I. 2. 221; Ham. I. 3. 135.**
- Weak, v.t.** to grow weak. *Lear. I. 4. 248.*
- Well, sb.** welfare, happiness. *John. IV. 2. 65; Cor. I. 2. 153; Ham. III. 3. 14. Communion with. Cor. II. 3. 189; Mac. III. 4. 76; V. 2. 27; Lear. I. 4. 230.*
- Weakness, sb.** commonwealth's men, statesmen. *Cor. II. 1. 99.*
- Wealth, sb.** welfare, prosperity. *M. of V. V. 1. 229; Ham. IV. 4. 27.*
- Weaponed, adj.** armed with a weapon. *Oth. V. 2. 144.*
- Well, sb. fashion.** *M. for M. III. 2. 78; As. II. 2. 201; A. W. I. 2. 210; W. T. IV. 4. 327. v.t. to be worn, be in fashion. A. W. I. 2. 172. As a verb. v.t. H. 4. II. 4. 443; V. & A. 908.*
- To grow fitted by use like a garment.** *Tw. N. II. 4. 31. v.t. to fatigue, exhaust. As. II. 4. 28; A. W. V. 1. 4.*
- Weather, sb.** 'keeps the weather'=keeps on the windward side, has the advantage. *T. & C. V. 3. 26.*
- Weather-bitten, adj.** tormented by the weather. *W. T. V. 2. 60.*
- Weather-fend, v.t.** to protect from the weather. *TP. V. 1. 20.*
- Web and pin, sb.** the disease of the eyes now called cataract. *Lear. II. 4. 122.*
- Wee, adj.** very small, tiny. *M. W. I. 4. 22.*
- Weed, sb.** a garment. *M. N's Dr. II. 2. 256. Cor. II. 3. 229.*
- Weeding, sb.** weeds. *L. I. I. 1. 1. 96.*
- Week, sb.** to be 'in by the week' is a colloquial phrase for being a close prisoner. *L. I. I. V. 2. 61.*
- Ween, v.t.** to suppose, imagine. *H. 6. II. 5. 88; H. 8. V. 1. 136.*
- Weeping-ripe, adj.** ready to weep. *L. I. I. V. 2. 274; H. 6. I. 4. 172.*
- Weepings, sb.** lamentations. *C. of E. I. 1. 71.*
- Weet, v.t.** to know. *A. & C. I. 1. 39.*
- Weigh out= outweigh.** *H. 8. III. 1. 88.*
- Weird, adj.** fatal, belonging to fate. The weird sisters are the Fates. *Mac. I. 3. 32; I. 5. 8. III. 1. 2.*
- Welkin, sb.** the sky. *TP. I. 2. 4; Tw. N. II. 3. 59. Used adjectively, sky-blue. W. T. I. 2. 136.*
- Well, sb.** a spring of water. *Sonn. CIV. 9. Pass. P. 281.*
- Well-a-day, int.** alas! *M. W. III. 3. 106; Tw. N. IV. 2. 116. Used substantively. Per. IV. 4. 49.*
- Well-a-near, int.** alas! like 'well-a-day'. *Per. III. prol. 51.*
- Well-breathed, adj.** well exercised, in good training. *V. & A. 678.*
- Well-desired, adj.** much sought after, in great request. *Oth. II. 1. 206.*
- Well-famed, adj.** famous. *T. & C. IV. 5. 173.*
- Well-favoured, adj.** good-looking. *Two G. II. 1. 54; M. A. III. 3. 15.*
- Well-foughten, adj.** well fought. *H. 5. IV. 6. 18.*
- Well-found, adj.** fortunately met with. *Cor. II. 2. 48. Well-furnished, skilled. A. W. II. 1. 105.*
- Well-graced, adj.** graceful. *R. 2. V. 2. 24.*
- Well-learned, adj.** well instructed, versed in learning. *R. 3. III. 5. 202.*
- Well-liking, adj.** in good condition, plump. *L. I. I. V. 2. 288.*
- Well-seen, adj.** well-skilled. *T. of S. I. 2. 134.*
- Well-took, adj.** well taken. *Ham. II. 2. 83.*
- Welsh hook, sb.** a hedging bill, with a curved blade and long handle. *H. 4. II. 4. 372.*
- Wend, v.t.** to go. *C. of E. I. 2. 138; M. N's Dr. III. 2. 372.*
- Westward ho! a cry of the watermen on the Thames.** *Tw. N. III. 2. 146.*
- Wezend, sb.** the windpipe. *TP. III. 2.*
- What is he for a fool? what manner?** *hot M. A. I. 5. 47.*
- Wheel, sb.** either the burden or refrain of song, or the spinning wheel to which it might be sung. *Ham. IV. 5. 172.*

- Wheel, *v.t.* to fetch a compass, go round. Cor. I. 6. 19. To roam. T. & C. V. 7. 2.
- Wheeling, *adv.* rounding. Oth. I. 1. 137.
- Wheels, 'To go on wheels' = to go smoothly round. A. & C. II. 7. 93. 'To set on wheels' = to cause to go smoothly. Two G. III. 1. 317. In each instance there is a pun intended.
- Wheson, whitson. = H 4. II. 1. 96.
- Whelk, *sb.* a pimple, pustule, wheel. H 5. III. 6. 108.
- Whelked, *adj.* covered with whelks or knobs. Lear, IV. 6. 72.
- Whelm, *v.t.* to overwhelm. M. W. II. 2. 143.
- When! an exclamation of impatience. Tp. I. 2. 316; B 2. I. 1. 162.
- When as, *adv.* when. V. & A. 999; Sonn. XLIX. 3; Pass. P. 299. Since. T. A. IV. 4. 92.
- When! can you tell! an expression of contempt. O. of E. III. 1. 52; I H 4. II. 1. 43.
- Where, used substantively. Lear, I. 1. 264. *adv.* whereas. M. of V. IV. 1. 22; I H 6. V. 3. 14; Cor. I. 1. 104.
- Whereagainst, *adv.* against which. Cor. IV. 5. 113.
- Whereas, *adv.* where. = H 6. I. 2. 58.
- Wherein, *adv.* in what dress. As. III. 2. 234.
- Whiffer, *sb.* one who went in front of a procession to clear the way. He was so called from the whistle or staff with which he was armed which was originally a kind of axe. The whiffers in Norwich carried a sword of lath or latten. H 5. V. chor. 12.
- While, till. Mac. III. 1. 44.
- While as, while. = H 6. I. 1. 225.
- While-ere, a short time before. Tp. III. 2. 127.
- Whiles, *adv.* while. Tp. II. 1. 217; As. IV. 3. 47. Till. Tw. N. IV. 3. 29.
- Whipping-cheer, *sb.* the entertainment of the lash. = H 4. V. 4. 5.
- Whipster, *sb.* a schoolboy still liable to be whipped. Oth. V. 2. 244.
- Whipstock, *sb.* the handle of a whip. Tw. N. II. 3. 28; Per. II. 2. 51.
- Whir, *v.t.* to hurry away. Per. IV. 1. 21.
- Whisk, *adv.* hushed, still. Tp. I. 2. 379.
- Whit, *sb.* 'no whit' = no lot, not at all. B 2. II. 2. 203; J. C. II. 1. 122. Not a whit. Ham. V. 2. 292.
- White, *sb.* the bull's eye of a target. T. of S. V. 2. 182.
- White-livered, *adj.* cowardly, faint-hearted. H 5. III. 2. 34; B 3. IV. 4. 465.
- Whitely, *adj.* pale-faced, the old reading in L L L. III. 1. 108.
- Whither, *adv.* whithersoever. = H 4. V. 3. 22.
- Whiting-time, *sb.* bleaching time. M. W. III. 3. 140.
- Whitster, *sb.* a bleacher. M. W. III. 3. 14.
- Whittle, *sb.* a common clasp-knife. Tim. V. 1. 293.
- Who, pron. he who. Two G. V. 4. 79; Oth. III. 3. 157. Whoever. W. T. V. 1. 109; J. C. I. 3. 80; Ham. IV. 3. 204.
- Whole, *adj.* sound. Mac. III. 4. 72. Restored to health. = H 4. IV. 1. 25; J. C. II. 2. 297.
- Wholesome, *adj.* sound, healthy. Ham. I. 5. III. 4. 62.
- Whoreson, *sb.* bastard. Lear, I. 1. 24. Used with coarse familiarity as a substantive. B. & J. IV. 4. 19; H 8. I. 3. 39; and as an adjective, Tp. I. 1. 46; = H 4. I. 2. 16, &c.
- Why, 'For why' = because. Two G. III. 1. 99; B 2. V. 1. 46.
- Wicked, *adj.* baneful, mischievous. Tp. I. 2. 321.
- Wide, *adv.* wide of the mark, far from the purpose, remote from. M. A. IV. 1. 63; T. & C. III. 1. 97; M. W. III. 2. 58.
- Widow, *v.t.* to dower. M. for M. V. 1. 429.
- To be widow to. A. & C. I. 2. 27.
- Widowhood, *sb.* rights as widow. T. of S. II. 1. 125.
- Wight, *sb.* a person, being. T. & C. IV. 2. 12; Oth. II. 3. 96.
- Wightly, *adj.* nimble. L L L. III. 1. 198. The old reading is 'whitely' and is perhaps right though it introduces an inconsistency.
- Wild, *adj.* rash, heedless. W. T. II. 2. 182; IV. 4. 577; Cor. IV. 1. 36. *sb.* weak. = H 4. II. 1. 60.
- Wilderness, *sb.* wildness. M. for M. III. 2. 142.
- Wildly, *adv.* disorderly, in confusion. John. IV. 2. 128.
- Wild-mare, *sb.* 'to ride the wild-mare' is to play at see-saw. = H 4. II. 4. 268.
- Wilful-blame, *adj.* deliberately incurring blame. = H 4. III. 1. 177.
- Wilful-opposite, *adj.* wilfully obstinate, capriciously hostile. John. V. 2. 124.
- Wimpled, *adj.* blindfolded. L L L. III. 1. 281. A wimple was a wrapper for the neck.
- Winchester goose, *sb.* a cant name for a venereal swelling in the groin, the stews in Southwark being in the jurisdiction of the Bishop of Winchester. = H 6. I. 3. 33.
- Wincot, Wilmeote near Stratford on Avon. T. of S. Ind. II. 23. Called Wincot in = H 4. V. 1. 42.
- Wind, *sb.* 'to have the wind of' = to keep to windward of, be in a position of advantage. T. A. IV. 2. 132. *v.t.* to scent. T. A. IV. 2. 97. To make to turn or wheel. = H 4. IV. 2. 109. To entwine, enfold. M. N's Dr. IV. 1. 45. *v.t.* to wheel. J. C. IV. 1. 32. To gain one's confidence surreptitiously. Lear, I. 2. 202. *v.r.* to insinuate oneself. Cor. III. 3. 64.
- Windgalls, *sb.* swellings near the fetlocks of a horse. T. of S. III. 2. 23.
- Windlasses, *sb.* circuitous courses, roundabout ways. Ham. II. 1. 65.
- Window-horn, *sb.* lattice-work embroidery worn by women across the bosom. Tim. IV. 3. 126.
- Windowed, *sb.* placed in a window. A. & C. IV. 1. 72. Full of holes. Lear, III. 4. 31.
- Winding, *adj.* winding. Tp. IV. 2. 128.
- Wind-shaken, *adj.* tossed by the wind. Oth. II. 1. 13.
- Wind-swift, *adj.* swift as the wind. B. & J. II. 3. 2.
- Windy, *adj.* 'to keep on the windy side' is to be in a position of advantage. The figure is taken from seamanship and is equivalent to keep to windward of, have the weather-gage of. M. A. II. 1. 227; Tw. N. III. 4. 121.
- Wink, *sb.* the closing of the eyes. Tp. II. 4.
- Wubbut, outcry. W. T. IV. 4. 600.

- 285; W. T. I. 2. 317. *v.t.* to close the eyes. Tp. II. 2. 216; V. & A. 90.
- Winking, *adj.* closed. John. II. 2. 213. Blind, with closed eyes. Cym. II. 4. 89. *sb.* 'given my heart a winking' = closed the eyes of my heart. Ham. II. 2. 137.
- Winter-ground, *v.t.* to protect a plant from frost. Cym. IV. 2. 229.
- Wipe, *sb.* a mark of infamy, a brand. Lucr. 537.
- Wise, *sb.* manner, fashion. Pass. P. 277.
- Wiseness, *sb.* wisdom. Ham. V. 1. 286.
- Wish, *v.t.* to commend. T. of S. I. 2. 113; I. 2. 60, 64. To desire. M. for M. V. 1. 79; L. L. L. V. 2. 400.
- Wishful, *adj.* longing. 3 H 6. III. 1. 14.
- Wisp, *sb.* 'a wisp of straw' was the badge of a scold. 3 H 6. II. 2. 144.
- Wist, knew. 1 H 6. IV. 1. 180.
- Wistly, *adv.* wistfully. Lucr. 1355; R. 2. V. 4. 7.
- Wit, *sb.* mental faculty, sense. M. A. I. 1. 66; Tw. N. IV. 2. 93. Intelligence, wisdom. Two G. I. 2. 34; M. W. V. 5. 134; Lucr. 153. *v.t.* to know. Per. IV. 4. 31. 'To wit' = namely, that is to say. M. of V. II. 9. 90; H 5. I. 2. 50.
- Witch, *sb.* used of a man. C. of E. IV. 4. 160; A. & C. I. 2. 40; Cym. I. 6. 166.
- Wit-cracker, *sb.* a jester. M. A. V. 4. 102.
- With, *prep.* after passive participles = by. Tp. II. 2. 112; M. A. II. 1. 64; W. T. V. 2. 68. 'He is not with himself' = he is beside himself. T. A. I. 1. 368.
- Withers, *sb.* the juncture of the shoulder bones of a horse at the bottom of the neck. Ham. III. 2. 253; 1 H 4. II. 1. 8.
- Withold, a corruption of Vitalis. Lear. III. 4. 125.
- Without, *prep.* beyond. M. N's Dr. IV. 1. 158; Tp. V. 1. 271.
- Without-door, *adj.* external. W. T. II. 1. 69.
- Witness, *sb.* testimony, evidence. M. W. IV. 2. 220; Ham. I. 2. 194.
- Wit-snapper, *sb.* a picker up of wit. M. of V. III. 5. 55.
- Wittily, *adv.* ingeniously. V. & A. 471.
- Witting, *pr.p.* knowing. 1 H 6. II. 5. 16.
- Wittingly, *adv.* knowingly, intentionally. 3 H 6. II. 2. 8; Ham. V. 1. 11.
- Wittol, *sb.* a contented cuckold, who is aware of his wife's unfaithfulness. M. W. II. 2. 313.
- Wittolly, *adj.* cuckoldly. M. W. II. 2. 283.
- Witzy, *adj.* cunning. M. A. IV. 2. 27; E 3. IV. 2. 42. Intelligent. 3 H 6. I. 2. 43.
- Wive, *v.t.* and *v.t.* to marry. M. of V. I. 2. 145. Tw. N. V. 1. 206.
- Woe, *sb.* used adjectively, woeful, sorry. Tp. V. 1. 139; 2 H 6. III. 2. 73; A. & C. IV. 14. 133; Sonn. LXXI. 8.
- Wolvish-ravens, *adj.* devouring greedily like a wolf. R. & J. III. 2. 76.
- Woman, *v.t.* 'can woman me' = can make me show my woman's feelings. A. W. III. 2. 53.
- Woman-queller, *sb.* a woman slayer. 2 H 4. II. 2. 58.
- Woman-tired, *adj.* hen-pecked. W. T. II. 3. 74.
- Womb, *v.t.* to enclose. W. T. IV. 4. 301.
- Womby, *adj.* hollow. H 5. II. 4. 124.
- Wonder, *v.t.* to wonder at. Lucr. 1596.
- Wondered, *p.p.* able to perform wonders. Tp. IV. 1. 123.
- Wonder of = wonder at. M. N's Dr. IV. 1. 136.
- Wonder-wounded, *adj.* struck with astonishment. Ham. V. 1. 280.
- Wood, *adj.* mad. M. N's Dr. II. 1. 129; 2 H 6. IV. 7. 35; V. & A. 740.
- Woodbine, *sb.* the bindweed or convolvulus. M. N's Dr. II. 2. 25; IV. 1. 47.
- Woodland, *sb.* forest land; used adjectively. A. W. IV. 5. 49.
- Woodman, *sb.* a forester, huntsman. M. W. V. 5. 30; Cym. III. 6. 28. Used in a wanton sense. M. for M. IV. 3. 170.
- Woodmonger, *sb.* a dealer in wood. H 5. V. 1. 69.
- Woollen, *sb.* 'to lie in the woollen' (M. A. II. 1. 33) is generally explained to lie in the blankets without sheets. But it may mean, to be buried in flannel, a practice enforced by law in Shakespeare's time. *adj.* coarsely dressed. Cor. III. 2. 9.
- Wooward, *adj.* 'to go wooward' = to wear woollen only, without linen, a form of penance. L. L. L. V. 2. 717.
- Woo't, or Wo't = wilt thou. Ham. V. 1. 298; 2 H 4. II. 1. 63.
- Word, *sb.* a watch-word. Ham. I. 5. 110; Lear. IV. 6. 93. A motto. Per. II. 2. 21. 'With a word' or 'at a word' = in short, in truth. 1 H 4. II. 4. 283; M. W. I. 2. 109. 'I am at a word' = I am as good as my word. M. W. I. 3. 15. See 2 H 4. III. 2. 319. *v.t.* to describe. Cym. I. 4. 16. To ply or put off with words. A. & C. V. 2. 191. To repeat in words. Cym. IV. 2. 240.
- Work, *sb.* a fortification. H 8. V. 4. 61; Oth. III. 2. 3.
- Working, *sb.* an operation of the mind. Ham. II. 2. 580; 2 H 4. IV. 2. 22. Action. 2 H 4. V. 2. 90.
- Worky-day, *adj.* work-day, common. A. & C. I. 2. 55.
- World, *sb.* 'to go to the world' = to be married. M. A. II. 1. 331; A. W. I. 3. 20. 'A woman of the world' = a married woman. As. V. 3. 5.
- Worm, *sb.* a serpent. M. for M. III. 1. 17; Mac. III. 4. 29. Used as an expression of pity or contempt, like 'creature'. Tp. III. 2. 31; M. W. V. 5. 87.
- Worse, *adj.* and *adv.* worse. Tp. IV. 1. 27; Ham. III. 4. 157; Oth. I. 1. 95; IV. 2. 105.
- Worship, *sb.* honour, dignity. W. T. I. 2. 314; John. IV. 3. 72; E 3. I. 1. 66. *v.t.* to honour. H 5. I. 2. 233; 2 H 6. IV. 2. 81.
- Worth, *sb.* wealth. Tw. N. III. 3. 17; Lear. IV. 4. 10; Oth. I. 2. 28. 'His worth of contradiction' = his full quota or proportion. Cor. III. 3. 26.
- Worthy, *v.t.* to gain reputation for, make a hero of. Lear. II. 2. 128.
- Wot = know. L. L. L. I. 1. 91; H 5. IV. 1. 299.
- Wotting, *pr.p.* knowing. W. T. III. 2. 77.
- Would = wouldst. M. W. II. 2. 31; H 5. V. 2. 174.
- Wound, *p.p.* twined, twisted about. Tp. II. 2. 19.

- Woundless, *adj.* invulnerable. Ham. IV. i. 44.  
 Wrangler, *sb.* an opponent, adversary. H 5. I. 2. 264; T. & C. II. 2. 75.  
 Wrath, *adj.* wroth, angry. M. N's Dr. II. 1. 20.  
 Wrath-kindled, *adj.* inflamed by anger. R 2. I. 1. 152. ②  
 Wreak, *sb.* revenge. Cor. IV. 5. 91; T. A. IV. 3. 33; IV. 4. 11. *v.t.* to revenge. R. & J. III. 5. 102; T. A. IV. 3. 51.  
 Wreakful, *adj.* revengeful. T. A. V. 2. 32; Tim. IV. 3. 229.  
 Wreathe, *v.t.* to twine, fold. Two G. II. 1. 19.  
 Wreathed, *p.p.* twined, folded. Aa, IV. 3. 109; V. & A. 879; T. A. II. 3. 25.  
 Wreckful, *adj.* destructive. Sonn. LXV. 6.  
 Wrest, *sb.* a tuning-key. T. & C. III. 3. 23.  
 Wretch, *sb.* used as a term of endearment. R. & J. I. 3. 44; Oth. III. 3. 90; A. & C. V. 2. 306.  
 Wretched, *adj.* hateful, vile. R 3. v. 2. 7; Lucr. 999.  
 Wring, *v.t.* to writh. M. A. V. 1. 28; Cym. III. 6. 79.  
 Wringing, *sb.* torture. H 5. IV. 1. 253.  
 Wrinkle, *v.t.* to make wrinkled. T. & C. II. 2. 79.  
 Writ, *sb.* scripture. A. W. II. 1. 141; 2 H 6. I. 3. 61; R 3. I. 3. 337. A written document. Ham. V. 2. 51; T. A. II. 3. 264. 'For the law of writ and the liberty' may mean, for observing the parts set down for them and for freedom of improvising. Ham. II. 2. 421. Or it may refer to the two forms of dramatic composition as represented by Seneca and Plautus respectively.  
 Write, *v.t.* to describe oneself, claim to be. A. W. II. 3. 208; 2 H 4. I. 2. 30; Lear, V. 3. 33. 'Writ as little beard' = claimed or professed to have as little beard. A. W. II. 3. 67.  
 Writhled, *adj.* shrivelled, wrinkled. 1 H 6. II. 3. 23.  
 Wrong, *sb.* 'you have done yourself some wrong' = you have not done yourself justice; an ironical way of saying you have uttered a falsehood. Tp. I. 2. 443.  
 Wroth, *sb.* wrath, so spelt for the rhyme. M. of V. II. 9. 78. So 'wrath' for 'wroth'. M. N's Dr. II. 1. 20.  
 Wry, *v.t.* to swerve. Cym. v. 1. 5.  
 Yare, *adj.* ready, active, quick. Tp. v. 1. 224; M. for M. IV. 2. 61; Tw. N. III. 4. 244; A. & C. III. 7. 39. As an adverb. Tp. I. 1. 7; A. & C. V. 2. 286.  
 Yarely, *adv.* briskly, deftly. Tp. I. 1. 4; A. & C. II. 2. 216.  
 Yaw, *v.t.* to move unsteadily as a ship which does not answer her helm. Ham. V. 2. 120. An intentionally obscure passage.  
 Yclad, *p.p.* clad. 2 H 6. I. 1. 33.  
 Ycleped, or Ycliped, *p.p.* called. L. L. L. I. 1. 242; V. 2. 602.  
 Yeard. Diminutive of Edward. M. W. I. 1. 160.  
 Yeard, *v.t.* and *v.i.* to grieve. M. W. III. 5. 45; R 2. V. 5. 76; H 5. II. 3. 3; J. C. II. 2. 129.  
 Yetward, Edward. 1 H 4. I. 2. 149.  
 Yellowness, *sb.* jealousy. M. W. I. 3. 111.  
 Yellows, *sb.* the jaundice in horses. T. of S. III. 2. 54.  
 Yeoman, *sb.* the attendant upon a sheriff's officer. 2 H 4. II. 1. 4.  
 Yerk, *v.t.* to jerk, kick. H 5. IV. 7. 83. To strike with a quick motion. Oth. I. 2. 5.  
 Yeat, *sb.* foam. W. T. III. 3. 94.  
 Yeaty, *adj.* foamy, frothy. Mac. IV. 1. 53; Ham. V. 2. 199.  
 Yield, *v.t.* to reward, requite. A. & C. IV. 2. 33.  
 Yoke-fellow, *sb.* companion. H 5. II. 3. 56; IV. 6. 9; Lear, III. 6. 39.  
 Yond, *adv.* yonder. Tp. I. 2. 409; R 2. III. 3. 91.  
 Yore, *sb.* Of yore = of old time. Sonn. LXVIII. 14.  
 Young, *adj.* early. R. & J. I. 1. 166. Recent. H 8. III. 2. 47.  
 Youngling, *sb.* a youngster, stripling. T. A. II. 1. 73; IV. 2. 93.  
 Youngly, *adv.* early in life. Cor. II. 3. 244; Sonn. XI. 3.  
 Younger, *sb.* a youngster, novice. 1 H 4. III. 3. 92; 3 H 6. II. 1. 24.  
 Y-raviah, *v.t.* to ravish. Per. III. prol. 35.  
 Yslaked, *p.p.* sunk to repose. Per. III. prol. 1.  
 Zany, *sb.* a buffoon, who awkwardly imitated the real fool. L. L. L. v. 2. 403; Tw. N. 1. 5. 06. Zanni is John in the dialect of Bergamo.